

the g
kille

San

3.
most
The
fathe

4.
prow
gran
bed

5.
son
Bhisi
by Sh

6.
single
battle
at Ka

1. O descendant of Kuru, O lord, ...ans and the Mlechhas and many ...ces drink the waters of the following . The magnificent Ganga, Sindhu, ...i, Godavari, Narmada, the large ...alled Vahuda, Satadru, Chandra- ...e large river called Yamuna, Dres- ...i, Vipasa, Vipapa, Stulavaluka, ...vati, Krishnavena, Iravati, Vitasta, ...hini, Devika, Vedamrita, Vedavati, ...va, Ikshumalavi, Karishini, Chitra- Chitrasena, Gomati, Dhutapapa, ...aki, Kousaki, Nischita, Kirtya, Nichita, ...tarini, Rashasi, Katakumva, Saraju, ...ranmati, Vetravati, Hastisama, Disa, ...avati, Venna, Bhimarathi, Kaveri, ...uluka, Vina, Satavala, Nivara, Mahila, ...projoga, Pavitra, Kundala, Rajani, ...ramalini, Purvabhirama, Vira, Bhima, ...ghavati, Palasini, Papahara, Mahendra, ...atalvati, Kasisini, Asikini, Kusacheva, ...akari, Pravara, Mena, Hema, Dhritavati, ...uravati, Anushna, Saivya, Kapi, Sadanira, ...dhrishya, the mighty river Kushadhara, ...adakanta, Siva, Viravati, Vastu, Suvastu, ...ampana, Heranwati, Vara, great river ...anchami, Rathachitra, Jyotiratha, Vi- ...wamitra, Kapinjala, Upendra, Vahula, ...uchira, Modhuvahini, Vinadi, Pinjala, ...ena, the great river Tungavena, Vidisa, ...rishnavena, Tamra, Kapila, Calu, Suvama, ...edaswa, the great river Harisrava. Sigra, ...ichala, Bheradwaji, Kousika, Sana and ...handrama, Durgamantrasila Bramhavod- ...hya, Vrihadvati, Yavaksha, Rohi, Yamvunadi, Sunasa, Tamasa, Dasi, Vasa, Varuna, and Asi, Nila, Dhritiamati, the great river P...nasa, T...masi, Vrishava, Bramha-medh... Vrihadhani. ...isless a...se and many other

32—... Destroying ... days that slayer of heroes, having ...ved most difficult feats, has now set ...the sun.

...5—16. As the result of my evil counsels, ...t scion of the Bharata race, scattering ...e Indra himself an inexhaustible shower ...arrows, killed in battle one hundred milli- ...of warriors in ten days. He now lies on ...bare ground though he deserved it not ...the field of battle deprived of life like a ...dent tree uprooted by the wind.

...7. Seeing the son of Shantanu, Bhishma, ...earful prowess, how could the army of Panchalas strike him down?

...8. How did the Pandavas fight with ...ishma? O Sanjaya, how is it that Bhisma ...uld not conquer when Drona is still alive.

...19. When Kripa was near him, when ...rona was there, how could Bhisma that ...foremost of warriors be killed?

20. How could Bhisma, who was an *...iratha* and who could not be resisted even ...the celestials be killed in battle by the ...anchala Prince Shikhandin?

Punchalas, the Kausijas, the Nikaparisthas, the Dhurandharas, the Sodras, the Madra Bhujingas, the Kasis, the further Kashis, the Jatharas, the Kukuras, the Dasarns, the Kuntis, the Avantis, the further Kuntis, the Gomantas, the Mandakas, the Shandas, the Vidarbhas, the Rupavahikas, the Aswakas, the Pansurashtras, the Goparashtras, the Karityas, the Adhirjoyas, the Kuladyas, the Mallarashtras, the Keralas, the Vasatrasyas the Apavahas, the Sakaras, the Vakratapas the Sakas, the Vedihas, the Magadhas, the Swashas, the Malayas, the Vijayas, the Angas, the Vangas, the Kalingas, the Yakrillomas, the Mallas, the Sudellas, the Prahradas, the Mahikas, the Sasikas, the Valhikas, the Vatadhanas, the Abhiras, the Kalajoshakas, the Aparantas, the Parantas, the Panabhas, the Charmamandlas, the Atavisikharas, the Merubhutas, the Upavirttas, the Anupavrittas, the Surashtras the Kakoyas, the Kuttas, the Mahsyas, the Kakshas, the Sanudranishkutas, the Andhras many other hill tribes, the Angamalajas, the Manavanjakas, the Mahyuttas, the Pravisheyas, the Bhargavas, the Pandras, the Bhargas, the Kiratas, the Sudeshnas, the Yamunas, the Sakas, the Nishadas, the Nishadhas, the Anartas, the Nairetas, the Durgalas, rhe Pratimasyas, the Kuntalas, the Kusalas, the Tiragrahas, the Ijakas, the Kanyakagunas, the Tilabharas, the Sameras the Madhumattas, the Sukandkas, the Kashmiras, the Sindhu-son viras, the Gandharvas, the Darsakas Abhisaras, the Utulas. the Saivalass, the Valhikas the the Darvis, the Vanavadarvas, the Vatagas, the Amarathas, and the Uragas, the Vahuvadhas, the Kauravyas, the Sudamanas the Sumalikas, the Vadhrus, the ...who are ... the kalindas, the Upatyakas, ... and ce... ...manas, the Kusaviudas opposed, as the shore ..., the Kuru- that chastiser of foes, who was ... the ocean of arrows and weapons, an ocean ... which arrows were the terrible crocodiles, bows were the waves, maces and swords were the sharks, steeds and elephants were the eddies, the foot soliders were like so many thousands fishes, and the sounds of conchs and drums its roars,—an inexhaustible and agitated ocean without an island and without a raft to cross it, an ocean that swallowed up horses and elephants and foot soldiers by millions,—an ocean that drowned all hostile heroes, and that consumed in wrath,—the wrath which was its ocean fire?

33. Who were in his front when that chastiser of foes Bhisma achieved great feats in battle for the good of Duryodhana?

34. Who were they that protected the right of that immeasurably powerful warrior? Who were they that resisted the enemy's warriors from his rear with patience and energy?

Tanganas, the further Tunganas. The Mlecchas, the Krurus, the Yavanas, the Chinas, the Kamvojas, the Darunas, the Sukritvahas, the Kulathas, the Hunas, the Parasikas, the Ramanas, and the Dasamalikas. Besides this country is the abode of many Kshatryas, Vaisyas and Sudra.

67—70. There are the Sudraviras, the Daradas, the Kasmeras, the Pattis, the Kasiras, the Atriyas, the Bharadwajas, the Stanopi Shikas, the Poshakas, the Kalingas and many other Kiratas, the Tomeras, the Hansamargas and Karamanjakas. These and other kingdoms are in the east and in the north.

71—72. O lord, I have briefly mentioned them. If the resources of the earth are properly developed, she is then like an all-yielding cow, from which the threefold objects of Dharma, Artha and Kama might be milked. Brave kings, learned in Dharma and Artha have become covetous of earth.

73. From the thirst of wealth, they would even abandon their lives in battle. Earth is the stay of creatures endued with celestial bodies as well as human bodies.

74. O foremost of the Bharata race, with the desire of enjoying earth they have become like dogs that snatch meat from one another.

75—76. O descendant of Bharata, their ambition is unlimited; it is for this the Kurus and the Pandavas are trying, to get possession of the earth by negotiations, by disunion, by gift and by battle. O foremost of men, if earth be properly treated, she becomes the father, the mother, the children, the sky and the heaven of all creatures.

Thus ends the ninth chapte[r] … tion of Bharata in … Vinirmana of th[e]…

4. The first of the Yugas is Krita. O lord, after the expiry of the Krita comes Treta, after Treta comes Dwapara. After that last of all comes Kali.

5. O foremost of the Kurus, O best of kings, the length of life in the Krita Yuga is four thousand years.

1. O ruler of men, the length of life in Treta is three thousand. In the present age, in this Dwapara, persons remain on earth for two thousand years.

7. O best of the Bharata race, in Kali there will be no fixed period for men's life on earth, they will die even in the womb or after birth.

8—11. O king, in the Krita Yuga, men are born and beget children by hundreds and thousands; they possess great strength and power and wisdom, wealth and beauty. Great ascetic Rishis, capable of great deeds and possessing high-souls, virtuous, and truthful are born in that age. The Khashtriyas of that age are handsome, able-bodied, greatly energetic, accomplished in archery, highly skilled in battle and very brave. O king, in the Krita Yuga, all the Kshatriya kings were lords paramount.

12. In Treta age are born brave Khashtryas who are subject to none who are long lived, who are heroic, and who wield the bow in battle with great skill.

13. O king, when Dwapara comes in, all the four orders of men become capable of great exertions. They possess great energy and they desire to … quer one another.

CHAPTER XI.

(BHUMI PARVA).

Dhritarashtra said:—

1. O Sanjaya, you have described to me Jamvukhanda. Tell me now its dimensions and extent.

2. O Sanjaya, tell me also of the extent of the oceans, of Sakadwipa, and of Kusadwipa,

3. Of Salmali Dwipa and of Krauncha-dwipa. O son of Gavalgani, tell me also of Rahu, Soma and Surya.

Sanjaya said:—

4. O king, there are many islands in this earth. But I shall describe to you only seven islands and also the moon, and the sun and the planets.

5. O king, the Jamvu mountain extends for full eighteen thousand and six hundred Yojanas.

6. The extent of the salt sea is said to be double of it. This sea is covered with many kingdoms. It is adorned with gems and corals.

7. It is adorned with many mountains that are variegated with metals of various kinds. It is circular in form like a sea, and is thickly peopled by the Siddhas and the Charanas.

8. O descendant of Bharata, O scion of the Kuru race, I shall now speak to you in detail of Sakadwipa. Hear as I discribe it.

9. O that island is twice as large as
the Jaresides the son king of kings, the
ocean all, O Sanas large as that island.
10. ata (of his ne Bharata race, Saka-
d ero of fearfued on all sides by the sea
of battle, Bhisma doms are full of righteous-
ome to me. Th never die.
ofvould be killed.
on reatest anguis is no famine there. The
the 75—76. O ssess forgiveness and great
on ief blaze fo best of the Bharata race, I
gre isma, cely spoken to you about Saka-
17 dertook hat else, O king, do you desire
of fe sons
be their
gy Dury

Dhritarashtra said:—

77. You have briefly told me of Saka-
that a. O greatly wise one, tell me now
of mything in detail.

Sanjaya said:—

13. O king, there are seven mountains in that island. They are decked with jewels, there are mines of gems and precious nes. There are many rivers in that nd. Hear, as I tell you their names.

14. O king, every thing there is charming and delightful. The first of those mountains is called Meru. It is the abode of the celestials, the Rishis and the Gandharvas.

15. O king, the next mountain stretching eastward is called the Malaya. It is there that the clouds are born, and it is from that place that they disperse on all sides.

16. O descendant of Kuru, the next is the large mountain, called Jaladhara. From it, Indra daily takes water of the best quality.

17—18. O ruler of men, it is from that water that we get showers in the rains. Next is the great mountain, called Raivataka, over which has been permanently placed in the sky the constellation *Rohini*. This arrangememt has been made by the Grandsire (Bramha) himself. O great king, on the north of this mountain, is one called Syama.

19. It is as bright as the newly risen clouds. It is high, beautiful and bright. O king, as the colour of that mountain is black, all the people that live there are dark.

Dhritarashtra said:—

20. O Sanjava, a great doubt has arisen in my mind. Why, O son of Suta, people of that country are dark?

Sanjaya said:—

21. O great king, O descendant of Kuru in all islands men may be found who are fair and those who are dark, and those also who are born by the mixture of the white and the black races.

22. But because the people are all dark there, that mountain is called the Dark mountain. O chief of the Kurus, next to this is the great mountain, called Durgasaila.

23. Then is the mountain, called Keshari. The breezes, that blow from that mountain, are all charged with effluvia. The height of this mountain is double of the one just mentioned.

24. O descendant of Kuru, it is said by the learned that there are seven *Varsas* in that istand. The *Varsa* of Meru is called Mahakasha, that of the water-giver (Malaya) is called Kumudattra.

25. That of Jaladhara is called Sukumara and that of Syama, called Manikanchana.

26—27. That of Keshara is called Mandaki and that of the next mountain is called Mahapunam. In the midst of that island is a large tree called Saka. In height and

breadth that tree is equal to that of the Jamvu tree in Jamvudwipa. The people always worship that tree.

28. In that island there are many charming countries in which Siva is worshipped. The Siddhas, the Charanas and the celestial go there.

29. O king, the people there are all virtuous. O descendant of Bharata, all the four orders of men there are engaged in their respective duties. There occurs not a case of theft.

30. O king, being free from old age and death, and possessing long life, the people there grow like rivers in the rains.

31. The rivers there are all full of sacred water. Ganga herself, distributed as she is in various countries, is also there. Sukumari, Kumari, Sita and Kaviraka,

32. Mahanadi, the Manijala, Chakshas, and the river Vardanika, O descendant of Kuru, O best of the Bharata race,

33. These and many other rivers by hundreds and thousands all full of sacred water are there. O perpetuator of the Kuru race, Vasava (Indra) draws water from them to shower as rain.

34. It is impossible to mention the names and lengths of these rivers. All of them are the foremost of all rivers, and they are all sin-cleansing.

35. As every body has heard, in the island of Saka there are four sacred countries. They are the Mrigas, the Masakas, the Manasas and the Mandagas.

36. The Mrigas are generally Brahmanas engaged in the duties of their own. Many virtuous Kshatriyas are among the Masakas who grant every wish of the Brahmanas.

37. O king, the Manasas follow the duties of the Vrisyus. Having all their desires gratified, they are brave and firmly devoted to *Dharma* and *Artha*.

38. The Mandagas are all brave Sudras and they are all virtuous. O king, in these countries, there is no king, no punishment, and no person who deserves to be punished.

39. They are all engaged in the practice of their respective duties and they all protect one another. So much can be said of the Saka island and so much only could be heard of that greatly powerful island.

Thus ends the eleventh chapter, the description of Saka dwipa in the Bhumi of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XII.

(BHUMI PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O descendant of Kuru, O great king, I shall tell you what is heard of the islands in the north. Hear.

2. There is that ocean the water of which is *Ghee*. Next to it is the ocean, the water of which is curd. Next is the ocean, the water of which is wine, and then comes a ocean of water.

3. O king, the islands are double in area of one another as they proceed further towards the north. O king, they are surrounded by these oceans.

4. In the middle island, there is a large mountain called Goura which is made of red arsenic. O king, on the western island there is a mountain, called Krishna; it is a favourite abode of Narayana.

5. There Keshava protects celestial gems. From that place, when gracious, he bestows happiness on creatures.

6. O king, along with the kingdoms in these islands, *Kusa* grass in Kusadwipa and the *Salmali* tree in Salmalikadwipa a[re] worshipped.

7. O king, in the Krauncha islan[d] the mountain called Maha Krauncha whic[h] is a mine of all kinds of gems is always worshipped by all the four orders of men.

8—9. O king, there is the mountai[n] called Gomanta which is huge in size an[d] which consists of all k[...] On i[ts] summit lives Narayana [...]ose the[y] have obtained salvation [...]h pro[s]perity and possessed of [...]us. [...] great king, in Kusadwip[a] [...] mountain abounding in cor[...]

10. It is called after tha[...] mountain is made of gold an[...] sible. O descendant of K[...] another greatly effulgent mou[...] Kumuda.

11. The fourth mountain the[...] Pushpavati, the fifth Kusesaya, [...] Harigiri. These are the six chie[f moun]tains.

12. The intervening spaces betwee[n] [one] another of these six mountains incr[ease] in the ratio of one to two, as they proc[eed] further and further towards the north. [The] first Varsa is called Audbhida, the seco[nd] is Venumandala,

13. The third is Suratha, the fourt[h] Kamvala, the fifth is called Dhritimat, the sixth is named Probhakara.

14—15. The seventh is called Kapila. These are the seven successive Varsas. The celestials and the Gandharvas and other creatures of the universe take pleasure to sport in them. The dwellers of these Varsas never die. O king, there is not any robber or any Mlechha race there.

16—17. O king, all the dwellers are generally white in complexion. They are very delicate. O ruler of men, I shall describe all that has been heard by me. O king, hear with attention. O great king, there is a great mountain called Krauncha in the Krauncha island.

18. Next to Krauncha is Vamanaka, next to Vamanaka is Andhakaraka, next to Andhakaraka is that foremost of all mountains which is called Mainaka.

19—20. O king, next to Mainaka is that best of mountains called Govinda, next to Govinda is the Navida mountain. O perpetuator of the Kuru race, the intervening spaces between one another of these mountains increase in the ratio of one to two. I shall speak of the countries that are situated there. Hear as I tell of them.

21. The country near Krauncha is called ... that near Vairana is Mohanuga ... next to Mohanuga, O perpetuator of the Kuru race, is called Ushna.

22. Next to Ushna is Pravarka, next to Pravarka is Andhakaraka, next to Andhakaraka is named Munidesha,

23. Next to Manidesha is Dhunduvisana frequented by the Siddhas and the Charanas. O king, the people of this regions are white.

24. O king, all these countries are inhabited by the celestials and the Gandharvas. In Pushkara (island) there is a mountain called Pushkara, full of gems and jewels.

25. There dwells the divine creator of the worlds himself. All the celestials and great Rishis always worship him,

26. With gratifying words and respectful adoration. O king, various gems from Jambudwipa are used there.

27—28. O king, in all these islands Brahmacharjya, truth, self-control, also health and length of life are in the ratio of one to two as the island are more and more remote northwards. O king, O descendant of Bharata, the land in all these islands is but one country.

29—30 For it is said to be the one country in which is seen but one religion. The supreme lord of creation himself, lifting up the rod of chastisement always lives there and protects these islands. O king, he is their ruler, he is their source of happiness, he is their father, he is their grandfather.

31—32. O foremost of men, it is he who protects there all mobile and immobile creatures. O descendant of Kuru, cooked food comes there of itself and all creatures eat it every day. O mighty-armed hero, next to these regions is seen the region named Syama.

33-34. It is like a star in shape having four corners. O king, it has thirty three *Mandalas*. O descendant of Kuru, there live four great elephants adored by all. O best among the Bharata race, they are Vamana, Airavata, Supratika with rent temples and also another.

35. I cannot venture to calculate the proportions of these four elephants. Their length, breadth and thickness have ever remained unascertained.

36—37. O king, winds blow in these regions irregularly from all directions. These winds are seized by these elephants with the tips of their trunks, which are like the lotus in complexion, which are very bright and which they are capable of drawing up in this way. As soon as they seize them, they let them out.

38. O king, having been thus let out by these elephants, these winds come over to this earth, and for their coming creatures breathe and live.

Dhritarastra said :—

39. O Sanjaya, you have told me in detail about the first subject. You have also told me the position of the islands. O Sanjaya, tell me now the rest.

Sanjaya said :—

40. O great king, I have described to you all the islands. O Kuru chief, now also the what I say about the heavenly bodies late the about Sarbhanu. ot being

41. O king, it is heard by us that rrate to planet Sarbhanu is a globe. Its diameter nderful is twelve thousand *Yojanas*. fought to me.

42. And because it is very large, its circumference is forty two thousand *Yojanas* arrayed O sinless one, thus say the learned men were all old. na thus

43—46. O king, the diametre of the moon is said to be eleven thousand *Yojanas*. O Kuru chief, the circumference of our imme- famous planet of cool rays is said Bhisma. thirty-eight thousand and nine dvance. *Yojanas*. O descendant of Kuru thinking for heard that the diametre of the me;—namely fast-going and light-giving Pandavas and the and *Yojanas*, and O king, of their respective is thirty-five thousand eig

O sinless one, O descendant of Bharata, these are all the calculations of Arka.

47. The planet Rahu on account of its great bulk covers both the sun and the moon in due time (during eclipses). I tell you all this in brief.

48. O great king, with the help of the eye of science, I have told you all that you asked me. Be blessed.

49. I shall now tell you of the construction of the universe as narrated in the *Shastras*. Therefore, O descendant of Kuru, pacify your son Duryodhana.

50. O best of the Bharata race, hearing this delightful Bhumi Parva, a Kshatriya obtains prosperity, the fruition of all his desires and the approbation of the pious.

51—52. The king who hears this on the full-moon or the new-moon day and observes the vows with care, obtains long life, fame, and prowess. His ancestral manes become pleased. You have now heard of all the merits that flow from this Bharata Varsa in which we live.

Thus ends the twelveth chapter, the Uttara Kurus in the Bhumi of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XIII.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA).

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. O descendant of Bharata, possessing the knowledge of the past, present and future and seeing all present before his eyes, the learned son of Govalgana came quickly from the field of battle, and rushing with grief to the presence of the king, told
37. D...rashtra who was in great anxiety that
duties ...randfather (of the Kurus) Bhisma was
desires ...d.
devoted

...jaya said :—

38. O great king, I am Sanjaya, O fore-
and they ... of the Bharata race, I bow to you.
countrie... son of Shantanu, Bhisma, the grand-
and no ...er of the Kurus, is killed.

39. ... That foremost of all warriors, that
of their ...ess personified of all bow-men, that
one anot...dfather of the Kurus, to-day lies on a
Saka is ...of arrows.
heard of ... O king, relying on whose energy, your
Thus ends ...ed in that match at dice, that great
cription of Sa...w lies in the field of battle killed
Bhisma Parva. ...din.

...ghty car-warrior, who on a
...formerly defeated in a great
... of the earth assembled

7. He who fearlessly fought in battle with Rama the son of Jamadagni, he whom even Jamadagni's son could not kill, even that great Bhisma has been to-day killed by Shikhandin.

8. Resembling the great Indra in bravery, the earth herself in patience, the Himalayas in firmness, and the ocean in gravity,

9. That invincible warrior who had arrows for his teeth, the bow for his mouth, and the sword for his tongue, that best of men, has to-day been killed by the prince of Panchala.

10. Seeing him ready for battle, the great army of the Pandavas trembled in fear like a herd of kine on seeing a lion.

11. Alas (even that great Bhisma) th... slayer of hostile heroes after having protect...ed your army for ten nights and havin... achieved feats exceedingly difficult to be ac...complished, to-day has set like the sun.

12. Scattering thousands of arrows wh... the greatest composure, he who like Indra, daily killed ten thousand warriors and that too (continually) for ten days,

13. O king, that descendant of Bh... even he, now killed by the enemy, lies, and he does not deserve it, on the bare gr... like a large tree broken by the wind.

Thus ends the thirteenth chapter, ... news of Bhisma's death in the Bhagavatgi... of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XIV.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)

—Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. How has that foremost of all ... Kurus Bhisma been killed by Sikhand... How did my sire (Bhisma) who was li... second Indra fall down from his car ?

2. O Sanjaya, what happened to my s... when they were deprived of the powe... Bhisma who was like a god and who le... life of celebacy for his father ?

3. On the fall of that foremost of m... Bhisma who possessed great wisdom, grea... ability for action, great powers and grea... energy, what did our warriors think in the... minds ?

4. Hearing that the foremost of me... the best of the Kurus, the unwavering her... (Bhisma) is killed, my heart is possesse... by great grief.

5. When he advanced who followed him and who went in front? Who stood by his side and who advanced with him?

6. Who are those brave warriors that followed that foremost of all car-warriors, that great bowman, that best of the Khashtryas (Bhisma) when he penetrated into the ranks of the enemy?

7—8. When he attacked the enemy's rank who were the warriors that opposed that chastiser of foes who resembled the sun and who, spreading terror among the foes destroyed their ranks as the sun destroys darkness, and who achieved exceedingly difficult feats amongst the ranks of the the Pandavas?

9. O Sanjaya, how did the Pandavas oppose in battle that invincible son of Shantanu that accomplished warrior when he attacked them?

10—13. How did Kunti's son overthrow in battle that unconquerable one, that fearful bowman scattering fearful arrows, and cutting off the enemies' heads, that invincible hero, modest in every thing, that fore-most of all men, stationed on his charriot Kas hero, having arrows for his teeth, with t at for his wide open mouth, with the ai ible sword for his tongue; how was he I erthrown, who was never vanquished l fore and ... the balls have been iade by the men, elephants and horses, in hich arrows and javelins and swords and larts have formed the dice, who were those lutched gamblers that gamble, by taking heir very lives who won, who lost, who cast e dice with success and who else have been t lled besides the son of Shantanu, Bhisma. ell me all, O Sanjaya, for hearing that evavrata (of his men) that father of mine, at hero of fearful deeds, that ornament f battle, Bhisma is killed, peace cannot ome to me. Thinking that all my sons vould be killed, I am affected with the reatest anguish.

75—76. O Sanjaya, you make my ief blaze forth as fire with *Ghee*. Seeing isma, celebrated in all the worlds, who dertook a great task, killed, I am sure, sons are lamenting. I desire to hear their sorrows that have been produced y Duryodhana's act.

77. Therefore, O Sanjaya, tell me all hat had happened in the battle, the result of my wicked son's folly.

78—79. O Sanjaya, ill or well, tell me every thing. Tell me all in full and in detail,—all that was achieved in the battle by Bhisma ever desirous of victory,—by that great warrior skilled in all weapons. How did the battle take place between the

21—22. O Sanjaya, he who always considered himself equal to the mighty son of Jamadagni, he whom Jamadagni's son himself could not conquer, he who resembled Indra in prowess, tell me how such a hero, Bhisma, born as he was in the race of *Maharathas*, was killed in battle. Without knowing all the particulars, I cannot get rest.

23. O Sanjaya, (tell me) what great bowmen of my army, did not abandon that hero of unfading energy and what brave warriors at the command Duryodhana stood around that hero in order to protect him?

24. O Sanjaya, when all the Pandavas with Shikhandin at their head advanced againt Bhishma, I hope the Kurus stood by the side of that great hero of immeasurable prowess.

25. Hard as my heart is, it is surely made of stone that it does not break on hearing the death of that foremost of men, Bhisma.

26. There were truth, intelligence and policy to an immeasurable extent in that irresistible chief of the Bharata race. How could he be killed in battle? Wi ...s. ...p to your face,

27—28. He was like a me injury and for- twang of his bow was the r in the forest. the arrows were its sho ...rd of the earth, hear the sound of his bow w... of horses and elephants and immeasurably powerful kings, all that which has been seen by the help of Yoga power. Do not grieve. All this was pre-ordained.

7—10. Bowing down my head to your father (Vyasa) that wise son of Parasara, through whose grace I have acquired excellent and celestial vision, the power of seeing and hearing from a great distance, and knowing other peoples' hearts and also the past and the future,—the delightful power of going through the sky, also the knowledge of all the persons that violate the ordinances and also the power of not being cut by weapons in battle, I shall narrate to you the romantic and the highly wonderful and hair-stirring battle that was fought amongst the Bharatas,—now listen to me.

11. When the troops were arrayed according to the rule, when they were all ready for battle, O king, Duryodhana thus spoke to Dushasana.

12. "O Dushasana, let cars be immediately ordered for the protection of Bhisma. Speedily urge all our troops to advance.

13. What I have been thinking for many years has now come to me;—namely the meeting of the Pandavas and the Kurus at the head of their respective armies.

35. Who placed themselves just in front of him to protect him? Who were the heroes that protected the front of that brave warrior when he fought?

36. Who were they that placed themselves on his left and attacked the Srinjayas? Who were they that protected the irresistible ranks of his advanced guard?

37. Who protected the wings of that warrior who has gone away to his last journey? O Sanjaya, who were they that fought with the enemy's warriors in general engagement?

38. If he was protected by our warriors and if they protected by him, how is it that he could not defeat in battle the Pandava army,—invincible though it was?

39. O Sanjaya, how could the Pandavas succeed in striking Bhisma who was like *Parameshti* himself, that lord and creator of all creatures?

40. O Sanjaya, you tell me of the disappearance of Bhisma, that foremost of men who was our main stay and relying on whom, the Kurus were fighting with their *Kurumen the* L

' has that greatly powerful
' on whose prowess my son
Pandavas, been (to-day)

to Indra in the great deeds he has performed has been killed, what can be a greater grief to me than this?

49. That great intelligent one, who was not killed even by that slayer of hostile heroes, that Rama, the son of Jamadagni who defeated in battle all the Kshatriyas, has now been killed by Shikhandin.

50—52. There is no doubt the son of Drupada Shikhandin, who has killed in battle that best of the Bharata race, that hero skilled in the greatest of weapons, that brave and accomplished warrior learned in every weapon, is therefore superior to the invincible and greatly powerful son of Vrigu (Parashuram) in energy, prowess and might. (Now tell me) who were the warriors that followed that chastiser of foes in that great battle?

53. Tell me how the battle was fought between the Pandavas and Bhisma? O Sanjaya, my army, deprived of its hero, is now like a woman without a protector.

54—55. That army is now like a panic-stricken herd of kine deprived of its herdsman. When he who possessed prowess superior to that of every man, has fallen in the field of battle, (I guess) what is the mind of my army. O Sanjaya, what power is there in our life

56. When we have caused our greatly

news of Bhisma's death in the Bhagavat ... of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTE[R XIII.]

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA).

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. O descendant of Bharata, possessing the knowledge of the past, present and future and seeing all present before his eyes, the learned son of Govalgana came quickly from the field of battle, and rushing with grief to the presence of the king, told Dh...rashtra who was in great anxiety that the grandfather (of the Kurus) Bhisma was

[San]jaya said :—

O great king, I am Sanjaya, O foremost of the Bharata race, I bow to you. ... son of Shantanu, Bhisma, the grand...er of the Kurus, is killed.

That foremost of all warriors, that ...ess personified of all bow-men, that ...dfather of the Kurus, to-day lies on a ...of arrows.

O king, relying on whose energy, your ...ved in that match at dice, that great ...ow lies in the field of battle killed ...in.

...ighty car-warrior, who on a ...formerly defeated in a great ... of the earth assembled

37. du... desi... dev... 3... and cou... and ... 3... of t... one Sak... hear ... *Thus ... cription ... Bhisma Pa...*

us- an ...es ...ng ...O r. on of nd

—

CHAPTER XIV.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)

—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. How has that foremost of all ... Kurus Bhisma been killed by Sikhand... How did my sire (Bhisma) who was li... second Indra fall down from his car?

2. O Sanjaya, what happened to my s... when they were deprived of the powe... Bhisma who was like a god and who le... life of celebacy for his father?

3. On the fall of that foremost of m... Bhisma who possessed great wisdom, grea... ability for action, great powers and grea... energy, what did our warriors think in the... minds?

4. Hearing that the foremost of me... the best of the Kurus, the unwavering her... (Bhisma) is killed, my heart is possesse... by great grief.

...or ...ns, ...nor ...can ...tly by ...ell ...ad. ...er- ...or ...O ...ng

kings who are on my side and those who are on the side of the enemy, those that have joined the opposite parties of the battle. Alas, cruel are the Kshatriya duties as fixed by the Rishis, for the Pandavas desire to obtain the sovereignty by even causing the death of Shantanu's son and we too desire to obtain sovereignty by offering that great vow-observing hero as a sacrifice.

66. The sons of Pritha, as well as my sons are all performing the duties of Kshatriyas. Therefore none of them incurs any sin. O Sanjaya, even a very virtuous man should do it when a great calamity comes.

67—68. The display of prowess and the great strength has been considered to be the duty of a Kshatriya. How did the Pandavas oppose my father Bhisma, the son of Shantanu, that invincible but modest hero when he was destroying the troops of the enemy? How were the troops arranged and how did he fight with the illustrious enemies?

69. O Sanjaya, how was my father Bhishma killed in battle? Duryodhana, Karna and the great skillful Sakuni, the son of Suvala,

70—74. And the wily Dushasana,—what did they say when Bhisma was killed? Entering that fearful abode of destructive battles' play in which ... large planets appeared in the sky like so many blazing ...es.

3. When the sun rose, he appeared as ...he had been divided into two parts. When that luminary rose in the sky he ...peared to blaze forth in flames.

4. Carnivorous animals, jackals and ...ows cried from all directions which ...peared in a blaze expecting to feed on ...ead) bodies.

5—6. Every day the venerable grand-...ther of the Kurus (Bhisma) and the son of ...haradwaja (Drona) when they rose in the ...orning with concentrated mind, said ...ictory to the Pandavas" Those chas-...rs of foes fought for your sake only be-...use they had given the pledge.

... Your father Devavrata learned in the ...es of war duly calling all the kings be-...re him thus spoke to them these words.

8. "O Khashtryas, this broad door is ...ide open for you to enter heaven. Go ...hrough it to the abodes of Indra and ...ramha.

9. The ancient Rishis have pointed out to ...ou these eternal paths. However fight in ...he battle with all attention.

10. Nabhago, Yayati, Mandhata, Nahusa and Vrigu all secured success and armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas and in what manner was the battle fought?

Thus ends the fourteenth chapter. Dhrita-rastra's queries in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XV.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. O great king, you are in every way a deserving person. This question is worthy of you. You should not however lay blame on Duryodhana.

2. The man who suffers evil for his own misconduct should not attribute it to others.

3. O king of kings, the man who does all sorts of harm to other men deserves to be killed by all men for his these censurable deeds.

4. The Pandavas are thoroughly unacquainted with the ways of wickedness. For a long time looking up to your face, they (silently) suffered the injury and forgave them though exiled in the forest.

5--6. O king, O lord of the earth, hear of the Kuru army, ... and immeasurably the sun himself. ... has been seen

19. O best of the Bhârata race, O king, according to the orders issued by the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, all the great bowmen of royal birth who were on your side took up their respective positions.

20. Saivya, the ruler of the Govasanas accompanied by the chiefs marched on a great elephant worthy to be used by kings. It had a banner flying from its back.

21. The lotus-complexioned Ashwathama ever ready for emergency marched at the very head of all the troops with his standard that bore the device of a lion's tail.

22. Srutayudha, Chritasena, Purumitra, Vivinsati, Salya, Bhurisrava, and the car-warrior Vikarna,

23. These seven great bowmen clad in excellent armour and riding on their excellent cars followed the son of Drona but marched in front of Bhisma.

24. The golden standards of these warriors, beautifully placed at the flag-staff of their excellent cars looked highly effulgent.

25. The standard of Drona, that foremost of preceptors, bore the device of a golden altar, adorned with a water pot and a figure of a bow.

14. I do not think there is any thing more important in this battle than the protection of Bhisma. If properly protected he will kill the Pandavas, the Somokas and the Srinjayas.

15. That pure-souled warrior (Bhisma) has said, "I shall not kill Shikhandin. I have heard he was a woman before. For this reason he should be renounced by me in battle."

16. For this, Bhisma should be specially protected. Let all my soldiers take up their respective positions and resolve to kill Shikhandin.

17. Let all the troops for the east, west, north and south skilled in all weapons protect the grand father (Bhisma),

18. Even a highly powerful lion may be killed, if left unprotected, by an wolf. Let us not therefore allow (by any means) Bhisma to be killed by Shikhandin as a lion killed by a jackal.

19. Yudhamanyu protects the left and Uttamanjas protects the right of Phalguna (Arjuna). Thus protected by these two Phalguna himself protects Shikhandin.

20. O Dushashana, act in such a way that Shikhandin, who is protected by Arjuna and whom Bhishma will avoid may not (finally) kill the son of Ganga (Bhisma).

Thus ends the ... *colloquy betw*...VAT GITA PARVA).

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. O descendant of Bharata, possessing the knowledge of the past, present and future and seeing all present before his eyes, the learned son of Govalgana came quickly from the field of battle, and rushing with grief to the presence of the king, told Dh...rashtra who was in great anxiety that ...randfather (of the Kurus) Bhisma was ...

37. dut... desi... devo...

...jaya said :—

3... O great king, I am Sanjaya, O foremost of the Bharata race, I bow to you. ...son of Shantanu, Bhisma, the grand...er of the Kurus, is killed.

3... That foremost of all warriors, that ...ess personified of all bow-men, that ...dfather of the Kurus, to-day lies on a ...of arrows.

and cou... and ... of th... one Sak... hear...

O king, relying on whose energy, your ...ved in that match at dice, that great ...ow lies in the field of battle killed ...in.

Thus ... *cription* ... *Bhisma Pa*...

...ighty car-warrior, who on a ...formerly defeated in a great ... of the earth assembled

7. The elephants and chariots adorned and decked with gold looked like resplendent clouds charged with lightning.

8. The line of chariots standing in countless number looked like so many cities; your father (Bhisma) standing there looked as brilliant as full moon.

9. Then the warriors armed with bows, swords, scimitars, maces, javelins, lances, and shining weapons of various kinds took up their respective positions.

10. O king, elephants, foot soldiers, car-warriors and horsemen stood there by hundreds and thousands like a net work.

11. Thousands of brilliant standards of various forms were seen, belonging both to ourselves and to the enemy.

12—13. Thousands of bright and beautiful fire-like blazing banners, decked with gold and gems were gazed at by the heroic warriors clad in armour, each one of whom longed for battle.

14. Many foremost of men, with bull-like large eyes, with quivers and with finger protectors stood at the head of their respective troops.

15—17. The son of Suvala, Sakuni, Salya, Jayadratha, the two princes of Avanti, Vinda and Anuvinda, the ...Kamvoja, ...of ...e ...e ...n ...e ...es ...he ...d ...n

news of Bhisma's death in the ... *of the Bhisma Parva.*

CHAPTER XIV.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)

—Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. How has that foremost of all Kurus Bhisma been killed by Sikhand... How did my sire (Bhisma) who was li...ke second Indra fall down from his car ?

2. O Sanjaya, what happened to my s... when they were deprived of the powe... Bhisma who was like a god and who le... life of celebacy for his father ?

3. On the fall of that foremost of m... Bhisma who possessed great wisdom, gre... ability for action, great powers and gre... energy, what did our warriors think in the... minds ?

4. Hearing that the foremost of me... the best of the Kurus, the unwavering her... (Bhisma) is killed, my heart is possesse... by great grief.

22. All the warriors headed by Dhristadumna trembled (when they saw him.) O king; these are the eleven great divisions of your army.

26—27. The seven divisions of the Pandava army were also protected by foremost of men. The two armies facing each other looked like two mighty oceans at the end of *Yuga*, oceans agitated by fearful Makaras and huge crocodiles. O king, we never before saw or heard of two such armies meeting each other as these two armies of the Kurus.

Thus ends the sixteenth chapter, the description of the troops in the Bhagavat Gita of the Bhisma Para.

CHAPTER XVII.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Just as the holy Rishi Krishna Daipayana Vyasa said, so exactly in that manner those rulers of earth who had assembled there met together.

2. On the day on which the battle commenced the moon approached the constellation Magha. The seven large planets appeared in the sky like so many blazing fires.

3. When the sun rose, he appeared as if he had been divided into two parts. When that luminary rose in the sky he appeared to blaze forth in flames.

4. Carnivorous animals, jackals and crows cried from all directions which appeared in a blaze expecting to feed on (dead) bodies.

5—6. Every day the venerable grandfather of the Kurus (Bhisma) and the son of Bharadwaja (Drona) when they rose in the morning with concentrated mind, said "Victory to the Pandavas" Those chastisers of foes fought for your sake only because they had given the pledge.

7. Your father Devavrata learned in the rules of war duly calling all the kings before him thus spoke to them these words.

8. "O Khashtryas, this broad door is wide open for you to enter heaven. Go through it to the abodes of Indra and Bramha.

9. The ancient Rishis have pointed out to you these eternal paths. However fight in the battle with all attention.

10. Nabhago, Yayati, Mandhata, Nahusa and Vrigu all secured success and obtained the highest region of bliss by such feats.

11. In a Kshatrya to die of a disease is a sin. To die in the field of battle is his eternal duty.

12, O best of the Bharata race, having been thus addressed by Bhishma, the kings looked beautiful in their excellent cars. They then went to the heads of their respective troops.

13. O best of the Bharata race, the son of Vikartana Karna, with his friends and relatives, however, laid aside his weapons for Bhisma.

14. Then your sons and all the kings that were on his side without Karna marched making the ten points of horizon resound with their warcries.

15. O king, their troops looked splendid with white umbrellas, banners, standards, elephants, horses, cars and foot-soldiers.

16. The earth trembled with loud sounds of drums, tabors and cymbals and also with the clatter of the wheels of cars.

17. The great car-warriors adorned with golden bracelets and armlets looked as effulgent as so many hills of fire.

18. With his large palmyra standard with five stars, Bhisma, the Generalissimo of the Kuru army, looked as resplendent as the sun himself.

19. O best of the Bhārata race, O king, according to the orders issued by the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, all the great bowmen of royal birth who were on your side took up their respective positions.

20. Saivya, the ruler of the Govasanas accompanied by the chiefs marched on a great elephant worthy to be used by kings. It had a banner flying from its back.

21. The lotus-complexioned Ashwathama ever ready for emergency marched at the very head of all the troops with his standard that bore the device of a lion's tail.

22. Srutayudha, Chritasena, Purumitra, Vivinsati, Salya, Bhurisrava, and the car-warrior Vikarna,

23. These seven great bowmen clad in excellent armour and riding on their excellent cars followed the son of Drona but marched in front of Bhisma.

24. The golden standards of these warriors, beautifully placed at the flag-staff of their excellent cars looked highly effulgent.

25. The standard of Drona, that foremost of preceptors, bore the device of a golden altar, adorned with a water pot and a figure of a bow.

26. The standard of Duryodhana, that guided many hundreds and thousands of troops bore the device of an elephant made in gems and jewels.

27. Paurava, the ruler of Kalingas, Sudakshina, the ruler of the Komvojas, Kshemadhanyan, and Salya,—those great car-warriors took up their positions in front of Duryodhana.

28. Taking a position in the very front in a costly car with his standard that bore the device of a bull, the king of the Maghadhas marched against the enemy.

29. The large force of the people of the east which looked like the fleecy clouds of autumn was protected by the Anga prince and the greatly powerful Kripa.

30. Placing himself at the head of his troops with his beautiful silver standard which bore the device of the boar, the illustrious Jayadhratha looked highly effulgent.

31. One hundred thousand cars, eight thousand elephants and sixty thousand horsemen were under his command.

32. That large army with innumerable cars and elephants and horses under the command of the king of the Sindhus looked very grand.

33. With sixty thousand cars and ten thousand elephants the king of the Kalingas with Ketumat marched.

34. His elephants each looking like a hill adorned with machines, lances, and standards looked very beautiful.

35. The king of the Kalingas with his high fire-like effulgent standard, with his white umbrella and *charanas* looked exceedingly beautiful.

36. Ketumat also, O king, riding an elephant with a highly excellent and beautiful hook stood in the battle like the sun amidst the clouds.

37. King Bhagadatta, blazing in his own effulgence, marched on an elephant like the weilder of thunder (Indra).

38. The two princes of Avanti, named Vinda and Anuvinda who were considered as equal to Bhagadatta followed Ketumat on two elephants.

39—40. O king, *Vuhas* (particular formation), consisting of many cars were arrayed by Drona and the royal son of Shantanu and Drona's son and Valhika and Kripa ; the elephants formed the bodies, the wng, the heads and the horses the kiings. With face towards all sides, that fearful *Vuha* seemed to smile. It appeared to be ready to leap forward.

Thus ends the seventeenth chapter, the description of the troops in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XVIII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O king, a loud uproar was soon after heard. It was made by the combatants ready to fight. It made alll hearts tremble.

2. With the sounds of conchs and drums, the roarings of elephants and the clatter of the car-wheels, the earth seemed to be rent into two.

3. The sky and the earth were soon filled with the neighing of horses and the shouts of the soldiers.

4. O invincible hero, the troops of your sons and those of the Pandavas both trembled when they met each other.

5. Elephants and cars decked with gold looked beautiful as clouds decked with lightning.

6. O king, the standards of various forms belonging to the warriors on your side, adorned with golden rings, looked like blazing fire.

7. O descendant of Bharata, these standards on your side and those on their side resembled the banners of Indra in his celestial mansions.

8. Those heroic warriors, all clad in golden armours and endued with the effulgence of the blazing sun looked like the fire or the sun.

9. O king, all the foremost warriors amonght the Kurus with excellent bows and arrows, with leathern fences in their hands and with standards

10. Those great bowmen with large eyes as those of the bulls all stood at the head of their respective troops. The following (heroes) of your side protected Bhisma from behind

11. . Namely Dushasana, Durvishaha, Durmukha, Dussaha, Viomsati and Chitrasena and that great car-warrior Vikarna.

12. Amongst them were Satyavrata, Purumitra, Jaya, Bhuresrava, and Sala. Twenty thousand car-warriors followed them.

13—14. The Avishahas, the Surasenas, the Sivis, the Vasatis, the Salyas, the Matsas, the Amvastas, the Trigarttas, the Kekayas, the Sanviras, the Kitavas, and the people of the eastern, western and the northern countries,— these twelve brave races, even reckless of their life, marched with the firm resolve to fight.

15. These heroes protected the grandfather (Bhisma) with a grand array of cars: with an army that consisted of ten thousand strong elephants.

16—18. The Magadha king followed that large array of cars. Those that protected the cars and those that protected the elephants, numbered six millions. The foot-soldiers, who marched in advance, armed with bows, swords and shields, numbered many hundred thousands. They fought with their nails and darts. O descendant of Bharata, O great king, your son's eleven Akshauhini of soldiers looked like Ganga separated from the Jamuna.

Thus ends the eighteenth chapter, the description of troops in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XIX.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. Having seen our eleven Akshauhinis placed in battle-array, how did Yudhisthira, the son of Pandu, make his counter-array with his troops which were smaller than ours?

2. O Sanjaya, how did the son of Kunti form his counter array of troops against Bhisma who knew all kinds of *Vyuhas*, those of the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Asuras and the men.

Sanjaya said :—

3. Seeing the troops of the Kurus placed in battle-array, the virtuous-minded son of Pandu, Dharmaraja Yudhisthira, thus spoke to Dhananjaya (Arjuna).

4. "We know from the words of Vrihaspati that few (troops) must be made to fight by forming them in a solid array, and many may be expanded according to pleasure.

5. When a few have to fight with many, the *Vyuha* should be made the *Needle-mouthed.* Our troops in comparison to those of our enemies are but few.

6. O son of Pandu, keeping always in mind this precept of the great Rishi, array our troops." Having heard this, that Pandava thus spoke to Dharmaraja Yudhisthira.

7. O foremost of kings, that immoveable *Vyuha* called *Vajra* which was designed by the wielder of thunderbolt (Indra), —that impenetrable *Vyuha* I shall make to-day.

8. He who is like a raging tempest, he who is irresistible in battle by any foe, that foremost of heroes, Bhima, will fight at the head of our troops.

9. That foremost of men who knows all the appliances of battle, becoming our leader, will stand in front of our army, and crush the prowess of the enemy's troops.

10—11. That foremost of all warriors, Bhima, will lead us,—seeing whom all the warriors, headed by Duryodhana, will fly in terror as small animals fly at the sight of a lion. Our fears being all dispelled, we shall all seek his shelter as if he were a wall, as the celestials seek the shelter of Indra."

12. There breathes none in the world who can cast his eye on that foremost of men, Vrikodara of fearful deeds, when he is enraged.

13. Having said this, the mighty-armed Dhananjaya (Arjuna), did as he said. Falguna (Arjuna), quickly placing his troops in battle-array, marched against the enemy.

14. Seeing the Kuru army on the march, the great Pandava army appeared like the full, immoveable and rolling and surging Ganga.

15. Bhimasena, the greatly powerful Dhristadyumna, Nakula and Sahadeva and king Dhrishtaketu become the several leaders of the (Pandava) force.

16. The king Virata, accompanied by his brothers and sons, and surrounded by one *Akshauhini* of soldiers, marched in the rear, and protected the army from behind.

17. The greatly effulgent twin sons of Madri (Nakula and Sahadeva) became the protectors of Bhima's chariot. The sons of Draupadi and the son of Subhadra—all possessing great heroism—protected him from behind.

18. Behind him stood Shikhandin, who was protected by Arjuna. O best of the Bharata race, he advanced with the firm determination to kill Bhisma.

19. Behind Arjuna stood the mighty Yuyudhana; and the two Panchala princes, Yudhamanyu add Uttamaunjas protected Arjuna's chariot,

20—23. Along with the Kekaya brothers and Dhristaketu and the greatly courageous Chekitana. Bhimasena, the wielder of the mace made of the hardest metal, moving with fearful speed, can dry up even the sea. " O king, (look) the sons of Dhritarashtra with their counsellors look on him". O King, pointing out Bhimasena, this was what Vibhatsu (Arjuna) spoke.

24. O descendant of Bharata, when Partha (Arjuna) was thus speaking, all the troops worshiped him on the field of battle with congratulatory words.

25. Then king Yudhisthira, surrounded by huge and various elephants each resembling a moving hill, took up his position in the centre of the army.

26. The illustrious Yajnasena the greatly powerful Panchala king placed himself behind Virata (king) with one *Akshauhini* of soldiers.

27. O king, the standards of those kings' cars bore various devices. They were all adorned with excellent ornaments of gold. They were as effulgent as the moon or the sun.

28. Asking the kings to move onward, the great car-warrior Dhristadyumna, accompanied by his brothers and sons, protected Yudhisthira from behind.

29. Shadowing all the great standards of the cars on your side, a huge ape stood (as standard) on Arjuna's car.

30. Many hundreds and thousands of foot-soldiers, armed with swords, spears and scimitars, marched ahead protecting Bhimasena.

31—32. Ten thousand elephants with juice trickling down their cheeks and mouth, each endued with great courage, each as huge as a hill, each blazing with golden caparisons, each emitting the fragrance of lotuses, followed the king like so many moving mountains.

33. The illustrious and invincible Bhimasena, whirling his fearful mace looking like a *parigha* (weapon), seemed to crush your son's army.

34. He was incapable of being looked at like the sun. He was scorching, as it were, the enemy's army. None of the warriors could even look at him from a near point.

35. This *Vyuha*, called *Vajra*, with its face turned to all sides, had, as it were, the bows (of the warriors) as its lightnings. This extremely fearful *Vyuha* was protected by the wielder of *Gandiva* (Arjuna).

36. Thus placing their troops in this counter-array, the Pandavas waited for battle. Protected as it was by the Pandavas, that *Vyuha* became impenetrable in the world.

37. At the dawn of day when the armies were waiting for the sunrise, a wind began to blow with drops of water. Though there were no clouds, yet the roars of thunder were heard.

38. Dry winds began to blow from all sides, carrying showers of sharp pointed stones and pebbles. A thick dust rose and covered the world with darkness.

39. O best of the Bharata race, large meteors fell ; and striking against the rising sun, they fell in fragments with loud noise.

40—41. O foremost of the Bharata race, when the armies thus stood in battle-array, the sun rose bereft of its splendour, and the earth trembled with loud sounds. The roars of thunder were again and again heard on all sides.

42—45. So thick was the dust that rose that nothing could be seen. The high standards (on the cars) adorned with strings of bells, decked with golden ornaments, garlands of flowers and rich cloths and graced with banners, and looking like the sun in splendour, being suddenly shaken by the wind, gave out a loud jingling noise like that of a forest of palmyra trees. Having thus placed their troops in battle-array against the army of your son, and sucking, as it were, the marrow of our warriors and looking at Bhimasena who stood at the head of the army with his mace in hand, it was thus that those foremost of men, the Pandavas, who ever take delight in battle, stood.

Thus ends the nineteenth chapter, the array of the Pandava troops in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XX.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, when the sun rose, of the two armies, one commanded by Bhisma and the other by Bhima, which first cheerfully met the other, desirous as they were both to fight ?

2. To which side were the sun, the moon and the wind adverse ? Against whom did the beasts of prey utter inauspicious sounds ? Who were those young heroes whose countenances were ever cheerful ? Tell me all this in detail.

Sanjaya said :—

3. O king, when placed in battle-array, both the armies were equally cheerful. Both the armies looked equally beautiful. They looked like two blossoming woods, and they were full of elephants, cars and horses.

4. O descendant of Bharata, both the armies were huge and fearful. None of them could bear the other. Both of them were arrayed as if they would conquer the very heavens. Both of them consisted of excellent soldiers.

5. The armies of Dhritarashtra's party stood facing the west, the Pandavas stood facing the east,—all ready for fight. The Kuru troops looked like the army of the Danava chief, while the Pandava troops looked like the army of the celestials.

6. The wind blew from behind the Pandavas. The beasts of prey yelled, from behind the troops of your sons. The elephants, belonging to your son, could not bear the strong odour of the juice emitted by the large (Pandava) elephants.

7. Duryodhana rode on a lotus-complexioned elephant with its temples rent, adorned with a golden *Kaksha* and clad in steel armour. He was in the very centre of the Kurus. He was being adored by eulogists and bards.

8—9. A white umbrella adorned with a golden chain, as effulgent as the moon, was held over his head. The ruler of Gandhara, Sukani, followed him with innumerable mountaineers of Gandhara. The venerable Bhisma was at the head of the army. With a white umbrella held over his head, with a white head dress (on his head) with a white bow and sword (in his hand), with a white banner (on his car) and with white horses (yoked to his car) he looked like a (great) white mountain.

10. In the division that was under Bhisma's direct command, were all the sons of Dhritarashtra, also Sala who was a countryman of the Valhikas, also all those Kshatriyas called Amvastas, also the heroic dwellers of the couutry of the five rivers.

11. The illustrious Drona, the preceptor of almost all the kings, with a bow in hand, and with never-failing heart, stationed on a golden car yoked with red horses, remained behind all the troops thus protecting them like Indra.

12. In the midst of all the troops fought Vardhakshatri, Bhurisrava, Purumitra, Jaya, and the Salyas, the Matsyas and all the Kekeyas with their elephant corps.

13. The son of Saradwata, the warrior who ever fights in the front, that illustrious great bow-man called Gautama, learned in all the modes of warfare, took up his position in the northern portion of the army with the Sakas, the Kiratas, the Yavanas and the Palavas.

14. That large force which was well protected by the great car-warriors of the Vrishni and the Bhoja races and also by the warriors of Saurashtra,—all well-armed and well-skilled in the use of arms,—the force which was under the command of Kritavarmana marched to the south of your army.

15. Ten thousand *Sansaptaka* car-warriors who were created for either the death or the fame of Arjuna, who were all greatly accomplished in arms, who intended to follow Arjuna at every step, marched out with the Trigarttas.

16—17. O descendant of Bharata, in your army, there were one hundred thousand elephants of the greatest fighting powers. To each elephant was assigned one hundred car-warriors, to each car was assigned one hundred horse men, to each horse man, ten bowmen, to each bow-man, ten soldiers armed with shield. Thus, O descendant of Bharata, were your troops placed by Bhisma in battle-array.

18. On every succeeding morning your generalissimo Bhisma, the son of Shantanu, sometimes placed your troops in the human, sometimes in the celestial, sometimes in the Gandharva and sometimes in the Asura *Vyuhas*.

19. With innumerable great car-warriors, roaring like the very ocean, the army of Dhritarashtra's son, arrayed by Bhisma, stood ready for battle, facing the west.

20. O king, your army looked terrible, but the Pandava army appeared to me very large and invincible, for Arjuna and Krishna were its leaders.

Thus ends the twentieth chapter, the description of troops in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XXI.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing the vast army of Dhritarashtra's son, the son of Kunti, king Yudhisthira, was filled with grief.

2. Having seen the impenetrable *Vyuhas* formed by Bhisma and having concluded it

to be really impenetrable, the king became pale and he thus spoke to Arjuna.

3. "O mighty-armed hero, O Dhananjaya, how shall we be able to fight with the Dhritarashtra's son's army when the grandfather himself commands it.

4. Immovable and impenetrable is this *Vyuha*, formed according to the rules of the *Shastras*, by that chastiser of foes, Bhisma, of unfading glory.

5. O chastiser of foes, we are doubtful of success. How can victory be ours in the face of this (Kuru) army?"

6. O king, that chastiser of foes, Arjuna, thus spoke of your army to the son of Pritha, Yudhisthira, who was in great grief.

7. "O king, hear how a few men, endued with every quality can defeat a large army.

8. O king, you are without malice, I shall therefore tell you of the means. The Rishi Narada as well as Bhisma and Drona know it.

9. In the days of yore, at the battle between the celestials and the Danavas, the Grandfather himself said (the following) to Indra and the other celestials.

10. 'They that are desirous of victory do not so much conquer by might and prowess as by truth, compassion, piety and virtue.'

11. Therefore knowing the difference between piety and impiety and understanding what is meant by covetousness and having recourse to only exertion, fight without any arrogance; for victory is certain to be there, where righteousness is.

12. O king, for this reason, know that victory is certain to us in this battle. Narada said, 'Victory is certainly there where Krishna is.'

13. Victory is inherent to Krishna; it follows Madhava (Krishna); victory is one of his attributes, so is humility.

14. Govinda (Krishna) possesses might which is infinite. Even in the midst of countless foes, he is without and beyond all pains. He is the most eternal *Purusha*. Victory is certainly there where Krishna is.

15—16. In the days of yore, undestructible and invincible Hari appeared and thus spoke loudly to the celestials and the Asuras, 'Who amongst you would be victorious?' The conquered (the celestials) said, 'With Krishna in front we shall win victory.' It was through the grace of Hari that the celestials headed by Indra obtained (the sovereignty) of the three worlds.

17. Therefore I do not find any cause for sorrow. You have the lord of the universe and the lord of the celestials to wish victory to you."

Thus ends the twenty-first chapter, the colloquy between Arjuna and Yudhisthira in the Bhagavatg Gita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XXII.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O best of the Bharata race, then king Yudhisthira, after placing his troops duly in battle-array against the army of Bhisma, thus spoke,

2. "The Pandavas have now placed their troops in counter-array in the way laid down in the *Shastras*. O sinless ones, fight with fairness with the desire of obtaining the highest heaven."

3. In the centre stood Shikandin and his men protected by Arjuna. Dhristadyumna was in the front protected by Bhima.

4. O king, the southern division of the army was protected by that great bowman, the handsome Yuyudhana, that foremost of the Satwata heroes, who was equal to Indra himself.

5. Yudhisthira was on a car which was worthy of carrying Indra himself. It was adorned with an excellent standard decked with gold and gems. It was furnished with golden traces. He stood in the midst of his elephant corps.

6. His milk-white umbrella, with ivory handle, held over his head, looked exceedingly beautiful. Many great Rishis walked round the king uttering the words of praise.

7. Many priests, Brahmanas, Rishis, Siddhas, as they walked round him, chanted hymns in his praise. They wished him the destruction of his enemies by the help of *Japas* and *mantras*, efficacious drugs and various propitiatory ceremonies.

8. The illustrious Kuru chief then gave away to the Bramhanas kine, fruits, flowers, golden coins and cloths. He marched like Indra, the chief of the celestials.

9. Arjuna's car, furnished with hundreds of bells, decked with gold, fitted with excellent wheels, endued with the effulgence of fire and yoked with best steeds, looked as brilliant as one thousand suns.

10. On this (grand) car, which was driven by Keshava (Krishna) stood the ape-bannered hero with Gandiva (bow) and arrows in his hand,—a great bow man whose equal there is none on earth or none will be.

11—13. He who assumes the most terrible appearance for crushing your sons, he who without any weapon but only with his bare arms pounds to dust men, horses and elephants,—that mighty-armed Bhimasena, that Vrikodara, accompanied by the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) protected the (Pandava) car-warriors. Seeing the invincible Vrikodara like a fearful lion of sportive gait, like a proud leader of a herd of elephants, like the great Indra himself, your soldiers, with their strength weakened by fear, began to tremble like elephants sunk in mud.

14. O best of the Bharata race, then Janardana (Krishna) thus spoke to that invincible hero Gudakesha standing in the midst of his troops.

15. "He who scorches us with his wrath, he who stays in the midst of his forces, he who will attack our troops like a lion, he who has performed three hundred *Ashwamedha* sacrifices, that banner of the Kuru race, that Bhisma, is yonder.

16. Innumerable troops cover him on all sides as the clouds cover the bright luminary, the sun. O best of men, killing the troops, fight with that foremost chief of the Bharata race.

Thus ends the twenty-second chapter, the colloquy between Krishna and Arjuna in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XXIII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having seen the army of Dhritarashtra's son approach with the desire to fight, Krishna spoke these words to Arjuna for his benefit.

The Deity said :—

2. "O mighty-armed hero, purifying yourself, utter, on the eve of battle, the hymn to Durga, so that you may defeat the foe."

Sanjaya said :—

3. Being thus addressed by the greatly wise Vasudeva, the son of Pritha, Arjuna alighted from his car and chaunted the following hymn with joined hands.

Arjuna said :—

4. O lord of the *Yogins*, O dweller of the Mandara forest, O identified Deity with Bramha, I bow to you. O Goddess free from decrepitude and decay, O Kali, O wife of Kapala, O Deity of black and brown colour,

5. I bow to you. O giver of benefits to your devotees, O Mahakali, I bow to you. O wife of the universal destroyer, I bow to you. O proud one, O rescuer from dangers, O possessor of every auspicious attribute, I bow to you.

6. O goddess who has sprung from the *Katar* ace, O worshiped of all, O fearful one, O giver of victory, O victory itself, O bearer of the banner of peacocks' plumes, O wearer of ornaments,

7. O wielder of fearful spear, O holder of sword and shield, O the younger sister of the cowherd chief, O eldest one, O goddess born in the race of Nanda gopa,

8. O lover of buffalo's blood, O deity born in the race of *Kusika*, O wearer of yellow robes, O devourer of Asuras, O lover of battle, I bow to you.

9—10. O Uma, O Sakamvari, O white-coloured deity, O black-coloured goddess, O destroyer of Kaitava Asura, O yellow-eyed one, O various eyed one, O smoke-coloured eyed one, I bow to you. You are the Vedas, you are the Srutis, you are the highest virtue. You are propitious to Brahmanas who are engaged in sacrifices, you possess the knowledge of the past, you are ever present in the sacred abodes erected in your honour in the Jamvudwipa.

11. You are the science of Brahma among sciences, you are that sleep of creatures, which has no waking, O mother of Skanda, O possessor of the six attributes, O Durga, O dweller of inaccessible regions,

12. You are described as *swaha*, as *sadha* as *Kala*, as *kashta*, as *Saraswati*, as *Savitri*, the mother of the *vedas* and as the science of the Vedanta.

13. O great goddess, with my inner soul purified, I adore you. Let, through your grace, victory always attend me in the field of battle.

14. You always live in inaccessible regions where there is fear, in places of difficulty, in the abodes of your worshippers and in the nether region. You always vanquish the Asuras.

15. You are consciousness, you are sleep, you are illusion, you are modesty, you are

beauty. You are the twilights, you are the day, you are Savitri, you are the mother.

16. You are contentment, you are growth, you are light, you support the sun and the moon, you make them shine. You are the prosperity of those that are prosperous. The *Sidhas* and the *Charanas* see you in the *Samadhi*.

Sanjaya said :—

17. Knowing Partha's (Arjuna's) great devotion, Durga, who is always graciously inclined towards mankind, appeared in the sky. In the presence of Govinda (Krishna) she thus spoke to Arjuna.

The goddess said :—

18. "O son of Pandu, you will vanquish your enemy in no time. O invincible one, you have Narayana himself to help you.

19. You are incapable of being defeated by any foe, not even by the wielder of thunder-bolt (Indra).

Sanjaya said :—

Having said this, that boon-giving goddess disappeared.

20. The son of Kunti, (Arjuna), considered himself blessed by obtaining that boon. Partha then mounted his excellent chariot.

21. Then Krishna and Arjuna, both seated in one car, blew their celestial conchs. The man, who chants this hymn in the morning,

22—23. Has nothing to fear from the *Yakshas*, the *Rakshasas* and *Pishachas*. He will have no enemies. He will have no fear from snakes and all animals that have poisonous stings and teeth, and also from kings. He is certain to win victory in all disputes. If bound, he will be freed from the bonds.

24. He is certain to get over all difficulties, he is certain to be freed from thieves. He will ever win victory, and the goddess of prosperity.

25. He will live with health and strength for one hundred years. I have known all this through the grace of the greatly wise Vyasa.

26. Your wicked sons, however, having been entangled in the meshes of death do not, out of ignorance, know them to be Nara and Narayana.

27—28. Entangled in the net of death, they do not know that the last hour of their kingdom has come. Dwaipayana (Vyasa) Narada, Kanwa, the sinless Rama had dissuaded your son. But he did not accept their words. Where there is piety there are glory and beauty. Where there is modesty there are intelligence and prosperity. Where there is righteousness, there is Krishna, and where there is Krishna, there is victory.

Thus ends the twenty-third chapter, the hymn to Durga in the Bhagavat Gita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XXIV.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, the warriors of which side first advanced to the fight? Whose hearts were filled with confidence and who were spiritless from melancholy?

2. In that great battle that makes every one's heart tremble, who were they who struck the first blow; were they my men or did they belong to the Pandavas? O Sanjaya, tell me all this in detail.

3. Among whose troops did the garlands of flowers and unguents emit fragrant scents? Whose troops with fearful roars uttered merciful words?

Sanjaya said :—

4—5. The warriors of both the armies were cheerful in the beginning. The garlands of flowers and unguents emitted equal fragrance. O best of the Bharata race, fearful was the encounter that took place between the troops arrayed for battle.

6. The loud sounds of musical instruments, mingled with that of the conchs and drums,and the shouts of brave warriors, that rose fearfully roaring at one another, were awful.

7. O best of the Bharata race, dreadful was the battle fought by the troops of both parties all staring at one another and all filled with joy. The elephants uttered terrible roars.

Thus ends the twenty-fourth chapter, the colloquy between Dhritarashtra and Sanjaya in the Bhagavat Gita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XXV.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. What did my sons and the Pandavas do, O Sanjaya, when desirous of battle they all assembled on the holy field of Kukukshetra ?

Sanjaya said :—

2. Seeing the Pandava army in battle-array, Duryodhayana came to the Preceptor and said :—

3. " Behold, O Preceptor, the grand army of the Pandavas, drawn up in battle-array by your intelligent pupil the son of Drupada.

4. There are in it mighty bowmen, equals of Bhima and Arjuna in battle. There are Yujudhana, Virata and the great car-warrior Drupada.

5. There are Dhristaketu, Chekitan and valiant king of Kashi , Purujit, Kunti-Bhoja and that king of men, Sabhbya.

6. There are mighty Yudhamanyu, heroic Uttamaujas, Subhadra's son and sons of Draupadi, all great car-warriors.

7. O best of Brahmanas, learn, I shall tell you also for your information who are the most distinguished amongst us, and who are the leaders of my army.

8. Yourself, and Bhisma, and Karna, and ever-victorious Kripa ; Ashwathama, Vikarna and the son of Shaumadatta.

9. There are (besides these) many warriors, all well-skilled in the art of war and (all) armed with various weapons, ready to die for me.

10. Our army protected by Bhisma is unlimited (more than sufficient) ; their army protected by Bhima is limited, (may be sufficient).

11. Therefore all of you, place yourselves at the head of your respective phalanx, and protect (and support) Bhisma only."

12. Then the oldest of the Kurus, the mighty grandsire Bhisma, roaring like a lion, blew his conch, thus affording him (Duryodhana) great delight.

13. And then conchs, drums, trumpets and cymbals were all at once sounded, and there rose a great uproar (from all sides).

14. Then Madhaba (Srikrishna) and the son of Pandu (Arjuna) seated in a great car yoked with white steeds, blew their celestial conchs.

15. Hrishikesha blew the *Panchajanya*, Dhananjaya *Debdatta*, and the doer of fearful deeds, Bhima his great conch *Paundra*,

16. The son of Kunti, king Yudhisthira, *Ananta Bejaya*, and Nakul and Shahadeva *Sughosha* and *Mani Pushpaka* respectively.

17. The great bowman the king of Kashi, the mighty car-warrior Shikhandin, Dristadyumna, Virata, and ever-victorious Shatyaki,

18. Drupada, and the sons of Draupadi, and the mighty armed son of Subhadra, O king of all the world, each blew his conch seperately.

19. Echoing heaven and earth, the tumultous din rent the hearts of Dhritarashtra's people.

20. O king of the world, the ape-standard son of Pandu seeing Dhritarashtra's people marshalled in battle bent, and missiles having been just began to be discharged, raised up his bow, and spoke thus to Hrishikesh :—

21. " O undeteriorating one, place my car between the two armies,

22. While I see those who stand here desirous of battle, and with whom I shall have to fight in this war-struggle.

23. I shall see those who have assembled here to fight, wishing to do good to the evil-minded son of Dhritarashtra."

Sanjaya said :—

24. O Bharata, thus addressed by Gudakesh (Arjuna), Hrishikesh, placing the excellent car between the two armies,

25. In front of Bhisma, Drona and all the kings of the earth, said, " Behold, Partha, the assembled Kauravas."

26. Partha saw in the two armies fathers, grand-fathers, preceptors, maternal uncles, brothers, sons, grandsons, friends, fathers-in-law, and well-wishers.

27. Seeing in the two armies all friends and kinsmen (present), the son of *Kunti* was overcome with pity, and with great despondency said :—

28. " Seeing, O Hrishikesh, these kinsmen present here with the desire to do battle my limbs are languid, my mouth is dried up.

29. My body trembles, my hairs stand on end, my *Gandiva* (bow) slips from my hand and my skin burns.

30. I am unable to stand, my mind is whirling and I see, O Keshub, evil omens.

31. I don't see any good by killing kinsmen in this battle. I desire, O Krishna,

neither victory nor sovereignty, nor pleasures.

32. What is sovereignty, what is enjoyment, what is even life to us, O Govinda, when those, for whose sake we wish to have sovereignty, enjoyments and pleasures (in this world),

33. Are all present here in this battle, giving up all hopes of life and wealth! Preceptors, fathers, grand-fathers and sons,

34. Maternal uncles, fathers-in-law. grandsons, brothers-in-law and relatives,—I do not desire to kill them, O Madhusudana, even if they kill me;

55. Not even for the sake of the sovereignty over the three worlds, much less for that of this earth! What pleasure will be ours, O Janardana, by killing Dhritarashtra's sons!

36. Even killing these felons, we shall incur sin. Therefore, it is not proper that we shall kill our own kinsmen, these sons of Dhritarashtra. How can we, O Madhava, be happy by killing our own relatives?

37. If they, blinded by avarice, cannot see the sin they commit by exterminating the (Kuru) race, and playing enmity with friends,

38. Why should we not, O Janardana, who know that sin is the result of exterminating the race, learn to desist from it?

39. On the extinction of a family, the old and ever continuing family-rites are destroyed, (no body being alive to solemnise them). When religious rites are thus destroyed, sin predominates over all.

40. From the pedominance of sin, O Krishna, women become corrupt, and then O descendant of Vrishni, cross-breeds (mixed-castes) are born.

41. Such cross-breeding leads both the exterminator of the race and the race itself to hell. The (deceased) ancestors whose *sradha* ceremonies have ceased, (to whom children have stopped to give food and water), fall (from heaven to hell).

42. Both the caste and family-rites of the exterminators of the race, (who are) guilty of the sin of cross-breeding, are destroyed.

43. We have heard, O Janardana, that those whose family-rites are thus destroyed, live for ever in hell.

44. Alas, we are engaged in committing a great sin! We are to kill our own kinsmen for the greed of the pleasures of sovereignty!

45. Better would it be if unretaliating and unarmed myself, the armed sons of Dhritarashtra kill in battle!"

Sanjaya said :—

46. Having thus spoken on the field of battle, Arjuna, with a sorrowful heart, sat down on the car, casting aside his bow and arrows.

Thus ends the twenty-fifth chapter, Arjuna's dejection of mind in the Bhagavatgita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XXVI.

(BHAGAVAT GITA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. To him, whose heart was overcome with pity, whose eyes were full of tears, who was dejected and despondin g, the slayer of Madhu (Krishna) spoke thus :—

2. "Whence, O Arjuna, has come upon you in this great crisis such delusion,—a delusion unworthy of the Aryans, irreligious (undeserving of heaven) and breeder of infamy?

3. Be not effeminate, Partha. It does not suit you. Arise, O terror of foes, shake off this mean weakness of heart."

Arjuna said :—

4. "O slayer of enemies, O slayer of Madhu, how shall I attack in this battle with arrows Bhisma and Drona, deserving of my worship?

5. It is better for one to live on alms than to kill (such) preceptors of great glory. By killing preceptors, even if they are eager for worldly gains, it would be enjoying blood-stained pleasures.

6. We do not know which of the two is better for us,—to vanquish or to be vanquished? Even those, whom having killed we do not desire to live, those sons of Dhritarashtra, stand before us!

7. I am afraid of the sin of race extermination. I am confounded about my duty. I ask you,—tell me what is assuredly good for me. I am your disciple, instruct me; I am at your disposal.

8. Even if I get the undisputed sovereignty over the most prosperous kingdom of the world, or that over the celestials, I do

not see that which can remove my grief most painful (killing) to my senses!"

Sanjaya said :—

9. Having spoken thus to Hrishikesh, O terror of foes, Gudakesh said to Govinda, "I shall not fight"; and remained silent.

10. To him, who was overcome with despondency in the midst of the two armies, Hrishikesha thus spoke smiling.

The great one said :—

11. "You grieve for those that deserve no grief; and (at the same time) you utter words of wisdom. (But) men of knowledge do not grieve for the living or for the dead,

12. Neither I, nor you, nor these kings were ever non-existent; (and again) none of us will hereafter cease to exist.

13. As childhood, youth and old age are (changes) in the body of man, so death is but a change of this body to another. A man of knowledge is not deluded by it.

14. The contacts of senses (with external objects), O son of *Kunti*, which produce cold, heat, pleasure and pain, are not permanent, having beginning and end. Therefore, O Bharata, bear them.

15. The man, who is learned in true knowledge, whom they (contact of senses) afflict not, and to whom pain and pleasure are alike, merits *Moksha* (final emancipation).

16. There is no existence of that which is *Ashat* (unreal), and there is no non-existence of that which is *Sat* (real). The truly learned men perceive the correct conclusion of the both.

17. Know, that which pervades all this (universe) is indestructible. None can destroy that imperishable (principle).

18. The (material) body (only) of the everlasting, indestructible, infinite and embodied Self is said to be perishable. Therefore, O Bharata, engage in battle.

19. He, who thinks that It (the great Self in man) is the killer and he who thinks that It is killed, both know nothing. It neither kills, nor is killed.

20. It is never born, It never dies; having existed, It does not exist no more. Unborn, everlasting, unchangeable, ancient, It is not killed, Its body being killed.

21. How and whom can that man, O Partha, who knows It (self) to be unborn, indestructible, everlasting and imperishable, kill or cause to be killed?

22. As a man, casting off worn-out clothes, puts on other new ones, so embodied Self, casting off old bodies, enters into other new ones.

23. Weapon does not cut It; fire does not burn It; water does not moist It, and wind does not dry It.

24. It is said that It is not to be cut, not to be burnt, not to be moistened and not to be dried up. It is everlasting, all-pervading, stable, firm, eternal, ever-continuing, not perceivable, inconceivable and unchangeable.

25. Therefore knowing It (the great Soul in man) to be such, you ought not to grieve.

26. (And again) if you think, O mighty armed, that It (Self) constantly takes birth and constantly dies, even then you ought not thus to grieve.

27. For, death is certain to one who is born; and birth is certain to one who is dead. Therefore, for such unavoidable things, you ought not to grieve.

28. In the beginning, O Bharata, all beings are unmanifest; in the middle they are manifest, and after destruction, they are unmanifest again. What lamentation could there be then for it?

29. One sees it as a wonder, another speaks of it as a wonder; others again hear of it as a wonder; but even hearing of it, no one understands it.

30. This indestructible embodied Self, O Bharata, is in the bodies of every one; therefore, you ought not to grieve for (the death of) all beings.

31. (And again) looking to your own duty pertaining to your caste, you ought not to waver; for there is nothing better for a *Kshatrya* than a righteous battle.

32. Happy are those *Kshatrya* who obtain such battle to fight,—a battle coming of itself and being the open gate to heaven.

33. If you will not fight this righteous battle, you will incur sin for abandoning your own duty and fame;

34. And all men will proclaim your everlasting infamy. To him, who is honoured, infamy is a greater (calamity) than death.

35. And all great car-warriors will think that you abstain from the battle through fear. You will be lightly thought of by those who honoured you before.

36. Decrying your power, your enemies will say things unutterable. What can be more painful than this!

37. If killed, you will attain to heaven; and if victorious, you will enjoy the whole world. Therefore, being resolved to fight, arise, O son of *Kunti*.

38. Considering pleasure and pain, gain and loss, victory and defeat, all the same, be ready for fight; and then, you will incur no sin.

39. The knowledge now imparted to you is relating to *Sankhya* (the mystery of knowing Self). Now listen to *Yoga*, (the mystery of living in Self), which, if well-possessed, O Partha, cuts off *Karma bandhana* (the law of re-births, resulting from the effects of actions).

40. In this (Yoga) even the first attempt is not fruitless; there are no obstacles in it. Even a little of this delivers one from the great danger (of worldly births).

41. In this, O son of Kuru, there is mind's but one state, consisting of *firm devotion*; whereas undevotional men's minds are many-branched and attached to endless pursuits.

42—43. Those that are not learned, those that delight in the *Vedas*, those that say that there is nothing else, those that are fond of worldly pleasures, those that regard heaven as the highest object for acquisition, say flowery words on the birth resulting from the fruits of actions, and on multifarious rites that promise to give wealth and enjoyments.

44. Devotional feelings never arise in those, whose minds have been stolen by the words of the lovers of enjoyment and wealth.

45. The Vedas, O Arjuna, relate of the three qualities. Be free from them,—by being unaffected by the pairs of opposites *i. e.*, (heat and cold; pain and pleasure); by preserving courage; by being free from anxiety for new acquisitions; or from anxiety for the protection of old ones; and by being self-possessed.

46. The (water of the) small tank serves the same purposes as (that of) the great lake. Like the above, the Bramhana, learned in *devotion*, serves the same purposes as those of all the Vedas.

47. Your concern is only with actions, never with their fruits. Let not the fruits of actions be your motive. (At the same time) let not your inclination be towards naction.

48. Casting off all attachments, considering success and non-success the same, O Dhananjaya, perform actions. Such equanimity is called *Yoga*.

49. Religious rites, O Dhananjaya, is far inferior to *devotion*; therefore take shelter in *devotion*. The men who look to the fruits of their actions are pitiable.

50. *Devotional* men do not see the difference between good and bad works in this world. Therefore apply yourself to *devotion*. Cleverness in action is *devotion*.

51. The wise, possessed of *devotion*, giving up the fruits of action and being freed from shackles of births, repair to the place where there is no unhappiness.

52. When your understanding (mind) has gone beyond all delusion, then will you attain to the indifference to all that you have heard or will hear.

53. When your mind, confounded by (all) that you have heard, will stand firm in contemplation, then will you acquire *devotion*.

Arjuna said :—

54. "What are the characteristics, O Keshava, of one whose mind is steady, and whose understanding is *devotional*? How does the man of steady-mind speak, how does he sit, how does he move?"

The great One said :—

55. "When a man, O Partha, abandons all his mental desires, and becomes pleased in his self by his own self, is called one of Steady-Mind.

56. Who is not moved in misery, who has no cravings for pleasure, and who is freed from attachment, anger and fear, is called the Sage of Steady-Mind.

57. His mind is steady who has no attachment for any thing; and who neither feels exultation, nor aversion on receiving either the good or the bad.

58. His mind is steady who withdraws all his senses from all the (worldly) objects of senses, as a tortoise withdraws his limbs.

59. The objects of senses draw back from an abstinent person, but not so his passions. But the passions fly from him who has seen the Supreme.

60. The madly boisterous senses, O son of *Kunti*, steal by force the mind of even that wise man who is striving (for emancipation).

61. The man of *Yoga* solely depends upon Me, keeping all his senses under control. His mind is steady who has controlled his senses.

62. Pondering over worldly matters breeds attachment for them; from this attachment desire is produce; from desire anger is begot.

63. From anger is produced the want of indiscrimination; from want of indiscrimination, confusion of memory; from the con-

fusion of memory, loss of reason ; and from loss of reason, final destruction (ruin).

64. The self-controlled man, who moves among the objects of senses, having his senses under his control, and being free from affection or aversion, attains to peace.

65. Peace being attained, all his miseries are destroyed. He, whose mind has attained to peace, soon becomes steady.

66. Undevotional man has no understanding, he has no contemplation, he has no peace. And where is happiness for him who has no peace ?

67. The understanding of that man is destroyed whose mind follows the roving senses, as the wind destroys a boat in a sea.

68. Therefore, O mighty armed, his mind is steady whose senses are brought under control from all objects of senses.

69. When it is night for all beings, the self-controlled man is wide awake ; when all men are awake, then such sages would see night.

70. He, in whom all objects of senses enter,—like the ocean in which various waters enter, but do not make any increase or decrease,—attains to peace, but not he who desire to have objects of senses.

71. The man, who moves about casting off all desires, and being freed from attachments, cravings for things, and egoism (pride), attains to peace.

72. This is, O Partha, living in Self (God.) After attaining it, no delusion exists ; and remaining in this state at the time of one's death, one attains to *Brahma Nirvana.*"

CHAPTER XXVII

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

Arjuna said :—

1. "If knowledge, O Janardana, O Keshava, is considered by you superior to action why then do you prompt me to this fearful action ?

2. You confound my mind by equivocal words, (praising action once and praising knowledge next). Tell me definitely what is good for me."

The great one said :—

3. "I have told you, O sinless one, there are two paths in this world, that of the *Sankhyas* by *Jnana-yoga* (knowledge) and that of *Yogees* by *Karma-yoga* (action).

4. Man does not attain freedom from action by not performing action. By asceticism also, he does not attain to final emancipation.

5. None ever remains for a moment without performing some action. All perform actions impelled by the qualities (laws) of Nature.

6. The deluded man, who, controlling his organs of actions, ponders in his mind over the objects of senses, is a hypocrite.

7. But he, who restraining his senses by his mind, performs *Karma-yoga* by the organs of actions, is superior (to all).

8. Therefore, always perform action, for action is better than inaction ; and your body cannot be supported (kept alive) without performing action.

9. The world is bound in (by the laws) of action, except the action of Sacrifice. Therefore, O son of Kunti, being free from attachment, perform actions.

10. In olden times, Creator, having created men with Sacrifice, said :—"Multiply by this. May it be the giver of all that you desire.

11. Please the celestials by this (Sacrifice) ; may the celestials please you. Thus pleasing each other you will attain to the highest good."

12. Being pleased by the Sacrifice, the celestials will give you your desired enjoyments. Therefore, he who enjoys himself without giving to the givers (celestials) is a thief.

13. The good men, who eat the leavings of the Sacrifice, are freed from all sins, but the bad men, who cook food for themselves, incur sin.

14. Creatures are the out-come of food. Food is produced by rain. The rain is produced by Sacrifice. The Sacrifice is produced by action.

15. Action is produced from Brahma ; Brahma is produced from the Imperishable. Therefore, all-pervading Brahma is always in the Sacrifice.

16. The sensual sinful man, who does not conform, O Partha, to this Revolving Wheel, lives in vain.

17. But the man, who is attached to his own Self, who is pleased with his own Self, and who is contented with his own Self, has no actions to perform.

18. He has no concern in actions done or not done in this world. Nor has he any dependence on any being.

19. Therefore, being freed from all attachments, perform actions. For, the

man who performs actions without attachment, attains to the Supreme.

20. By performing actions alone, Janaka and others attained to final emancipation (Sidhwi). (And again) having regard to keeping the people to their rites, you ought to perform actions.

21. Whatever a great man does, so do the mass. What great men consider authorities, the mass follow.

22. There is, O Partha, nothing to do for Me in the three worlds. I have nothing to acquire which has not been (already) acquired ; still I do perform actions.

23. If, O Partha, out of idleness I do not engage in actions, all men would follow my example.

24. If I do not perform actions, all the worlds will be destroyed. I shall be the cause of cross-breedings, and I should be the ruining of the people.

25. Ignorant men act with attachment to actions ; but the learned act without attachment to actions. Desiring to stick men to their duties,

26. A wise man should not confuse the mind of the ignorant who are attached to actions. He should make them take to actions, by himself acting without attachments.

27. Every thing in every way is done by the qualities (laws) of Nature (alone). He whose mind is deluded by egoism considers himself the doer of actions.

28. But, O mighty-armed, the wise men, who know the difference (of Self) from qualities (laws of Nature) and from actions, feels no egoism, knowing that qualities deal with qualities.

29. The man of perfect knowledge should not shake the belief of the men of imperfect knowledge, who, being deluded by the qualities of Nature, form attachments to the actions done by the qualities (laws) of Nature.

30. Therefore, dedicating all actions to Me, and knowing the Mystery of Self, engage in battle without desires, without any feelings (for any body) and without any mental trouble.

31. Those men who without cavil always follow my this opinion, being full of faith, are released from *Karmabandhanam*.

32. Know, those men, that carp at my opinion and do not follow it, are devoid of conscience and bereft of all knowledge and ruined.

33. Even a man of knowledge acts according to his own nature. All beings follow Nature. What then restraints (of the organs of action) will avail ?

34. All senses have each their likes and dislikes for respective fixed objects. But no one should be under their control, for they are one's (great) opponents, (hinderances to final emancipation).

35. One's own *Dharma*, even if imperfectly performed, is superior to the perfectly performed *Dharma* of others. Death is preferable in performing one's own *Dharma* for the *Dharma* of others is dangerous."

Arjuna said :—

36. "Then, O descendant of *Vrishni*, by whom impelled does man commit sin, though unwilling, as if driven by (some mysterious) force ?"

The great One said :—

37. "It is desire, it is wrath, born of the qualities of Passion (*Raja Guna*). It is greatly ravenous; it is greatly sinful. Know this to be the great enemy in this world (for final emancipation).

38. As fire is enveloped by smoke, a mirror by dust, the fœtus by the womb, so this (true knowledge) is enveloped by Desire.

39. O son of Kunti, the knowledge is always enveloped by this constant enemy of the man of knowledge. Desire, is like an insatiable fire.

40. It is said that its seat is in the senses, in the mind and in the understanding. By their help it deludes man, enveloping his knowledge.

41. Therefore, O best of the Bharata race, bringing your senses under control, cast off this sinful thing which destroys both Knowledge and Science (experience).

42. It is said, great are the senses (over material body) ; greater than the senses is the mind ; greater than the mind is the understanding. That which is greater than the understanding is the (Self.)

43. Thus, O mighty-armed, knowing that which is greater than understanding, (*i. e.*, Self), restraining Self by Self, destroy this unconquerable enemy, Desire.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

The great One Said :—

1. "I told this imperishable (system of) *Yoga* to Vivaswata ; Vivaswata declared it to Manu ; Manu declared it to Ikshaku.

2. Coming down thus, from generation to generation, it became known to the royal sages. But, O terror of foes, this *Yoga* was lost to the world by long lapse of time.

3. You are my devotee and friend; I have, therefore, told you that old *Yoga* to-day, for it is a great Mystery."

Arjuna said:—

4. "Later is Your birth; prior is the birth of Vivaswata. How then shall I know that you first told it?"

The great one said:—

5. "Many births of yours and mine, O Arjuna, have taken place. I know them all, O terror of foes, but you know not.

6. Though I am unborn (having no birth); though I am imperishable, though I am master of the elements, yet out of my *Maya* (power of illusion) I take birth, resting on (material) Nature.

7. Whensoever, O Bharata, virtue languishes and sin predominates, I create myself.

8. I take birth, age after age, for the protection of the good and the destruction of the wicked, and for the establishment of piety (true religion).

9. He, who truly knows my these (wilful) births and wonderful deeds, after casting off his body, is not born again. He comes to Me.

10. Many holy sages, who are freed from attachment, fear and wrath, who are full of Me and who depend upon Me, have attained to my essence.

11. I bestow my favours (on all men) in the way in which they worship Me. All men, O Partha, follow in my path, in every way.

12. Desiring success of actions, men worship the Celestials (such as Indra &c), for in this world the success of action is soon attained.

13. According to qualities and (fruits of) actions, I have created four castes. Though I am their Creator, yet know me as being not a Creator and not perishable.

14. Actions do not touch me. I have no attachment in the fruits of actions. He who knows me as such is not tied down by actions.

15. Knowing this, men of old, desirous of emancipation, performed actions. Therefore, you too perform action, as was done by men of old in olden times.

16. Even men of true knowledge is confused about what is action and what is inaction. I shall speak to you about that action, learning which you will be freed from the (worldly) evils.

17. One must know what is action, one must also know what is forbidden action, and one must again know what is inaction. The nature of action is abstruse.

18. He, who sees inaction in action, and action in inaction, is a wise man, a *Yogee*, and a doer of all actions.

19. The learned men call him wise whose all actions are free from desires and will; and whose actions are burnt down by the fire of knowledge.

20. Getting rid of the attachment (desire) for the fruits of actions,—being ever contented, and depending on none, although (such men) engages in action, they do nothing at all.

21. Being devoid of desires and having the mind and the senses under control, casting off all concerns, he, who performs action for the preservation of the body, incurs no sin.

22. Being contented with what is earned spontaneously, rising superior to the pairs of opposites, being free from all jealousy, (such a man), being equable in success or failures, is not fettered by actions, although he performs actions.

23. The acts of the man who is devoid of attachment, who is free from passions and whose mind is steady in knowledge, are all destroyed.

24. *Brahma* is the vessel of libation, *Brahma* is the libation itself, *Brahma* is the fire, *Brahma* is the pourer of libation to him who thus meditates upon *Brahma* in all his actions, *Brahma* is the goal to which he proceeds.

25. Some *Yogees* perform the Sacrifice to the Celestials; others (however) offer up (such) Sacrifice in the Sacrifice of Brahma-Fire.

26. Others offer up in the fire of Self-restraint all his senses, such as the senses of hearing and others. Others again offer up the objects of sense, such as sound into the fire of senses.

27. Others offer up all the actions of the senses, and those of the life-breaths, into the *Yoga*-fire of self-restraint, kindled by knowledge.

28. Some perform the Sacrifice for gaining possessions, some the Sacrifice of penance; others again Sacrifice of concentration of mind; some perform the Sacrifice of Vedic study, some that of knowledge, others again the Sacrifice of asceticism of rigid vows.

29. Some offer up the upward life-breaths to downward life-breaths, and the downward life-breaths to upward life-breaths. Stopping up the motions of both the upward and downward life-breaths, some devote themselves to the restraint of the life-breath itself. Others, who take limited food, offer the life-breath to life-breath.

30. All these men, learned in the (various) Sacrifices, having their sins destroyed by Sacrifice, and eating the remnants of the Sacrifice, which is ambrosia, go to the eternal *Brahma*.

31. O best of Kurus, this world is not for those who do not perform any Sacrifice, what to speak of the future world!

32. Thus Sacrifices of various sorts are in the Vedas. Know them all as the results of actions; and knowing this, you will be freed (from the fetters of the world).

33. The Sacrifice of knowledge, O terror of foes, is superior to the Sacrifice for gaining possessions (in this world or in the future), for, O Partha, all actions are wholly and fully comprehended by knowledge.

34. Learn knowledge by reverently saluting the learned, by asking them questions, by doing service to them. The men of knowledge and the men that know the Truth, will teach you knowledge.

35. Having learnt it, O son of Pandu, you will not again fall into delusion. And by means of it, you will see all beings first in yourself and then in Me.

36. If you be the greatest sinner amongst all sinful men, you will (still) cross over the ocean of your sin by means of the boat of knowledge.

37. As, O Arjuna, a blazing fire reduces all wood to ashes, so the fire of knowledge reduces all actions to ashes.

38. There is nothing in this world which so much purifies (man) as knowledge. The man, perfected by *Yoga*, learns it within himself in time.

39. The man of faith, the man of assiduousness, the man of self-restraint, obtains knowledge; and obtaining knowledge, he gains the highest tranquillity (Mukti) without delay.

40. He, who is ignorant, who has no faith, and whose mind is full of misgivings and doubt, is lost. Not this world, not the next, not (any) happiness is for him whose mind is full of doubts.

41. Actions, O Dhananjaya, do not fetter him, who is self-possessed, whose doubts have been removed by knowledge and who has placed all his actions in *Yoga*.

42. Therefore, Oh descendant of Bharata, destroying with the sword of knowledge these misgivings of yours produced from ignorance, engage in *Yoga* of action,—Arise."

CHAPTER XXIX.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

Arjuna said :—

1. "O Krishna, you praise Karma Sanyasa (renunciation of action) and also Karma *Yoga* (the pursuit of action). Tell me definitely, which of the two is superior?"

The great One said :—

2. "Both renunciation of action and pursuit of action are means for emancipation. But of these two, pursuit of action is superior to renunciation of action.

3. He, who has no aversion and no desire, should for all times be considered an ascetic. For, O mighty-armed, he, who is free from the pairs of opposites, is easily released from the fetters of the world.

4. Fools, not wise men, say that *Shankhya* (renunciation of action to know God) and *Yoga* (pursuit of action living in God) are distinct. He who practises one, fully earns the fruits of the both.

5. The place which the follower of *Shankhya* obtains ; is also gained by the followers of *Yoga*. He sees truly who sees the *Sankhya* and the *Yoga* as one and the same.

6. O mighty-armed, asceticism is difficult to be attained without the *Yoga of action*. The sage, possessed of *Yoga of action*, attains to *Brahma* without delay.

7. He, who is possessed of *Yoga*, whose mind is pure, who is self-restrained, who has controlled his senses and who sees his self in every being, is not fettered by performing actions.

8—9. The man of knowledge, the man of *Yoga*, thinks,—*I am doing nothing*. When he sees, hears, touches, smells, eats, moves, sleeps, breathes, talks, throws out excretions, takes, opens and closes his eye-lids, he thinks that his senses (merely) deal with the objects of senses.

10. He, who performs actions, dedicating them to *Brahma* and casting off all attachments for their fruits, is not touched by sin, as the lotus-leaf is never wet with water.

11. The *Yogees* perform actions, attaining purity of self, the body, the mind, the

understanding, even the senses, being free from all attachments.

12. The *Yogee*, abandoning the desire for the fruits of actions, attains to the highest tranquility, and the *Non-yogee*, being attached to the fruits of action, is tied down (to re-births) on account of desire.

13. The self-restrained embodied self (man), renouncing all actions by his mind, (but performing actions by his body) lives at ease within the city of mine gates, (his body) doing nothing and causing nothing to be done.

14. The Lord does neither create the capacity of action in man, nor the cause of actions, nor the connection of action and its fruits. The Nature only works.

15. The Lord receives no one's sins, nor virtues of any. Knowledge is enveloped by ignorance. For this reason creatures are deluded.

16. To those who have destroyed this ignorance by the knowledge of Self, this knowledge like the Sun shows forth the Supreme.

17. Those, whose mind is in Him, whose very self is He, who is devoted to Him, whose goal is He, depart, never to return, their sins having been destroyed by knowledge.

18. The truly wise men look on a Brahmana, endued with learning and humility, and on a cow, an elephant, a dog and a *Chandala*, as all alike.

19. Even here the material world is conquered by those whose minds rest on equability. As *Brahma* is faultless and equable, therefore they rest in *Brahma*.

20. The man, who rest in *Brahma*, whose mind is steady, and who is not deluded, does not exult on obtaining any thing agreeable or does not grieve for getting any thing disagreeable.

21. One, whose self is not attached to external objects, obtains the happiness that is in one's self; and he, having his self united with *Brahma*, obtains the happiness which is imperishable.

22. The pleasures, derived from objects of sense, are the sources of misery, and they have a beginning as well as an end. Therefore, O son of Kunti, a wise man does not feel any pleasure in them.

23. He who is able to bear the agitation of desire and wrath, even in this world, before the dissolution of the body, is united with God; he is happy.

24. That *Yogee*, whose happiness is within himself, whose recreations are within himself, and whose light comes from within himself, becoming one with *Brahma*, obtains *Brahma Nirvana* (Self extinction in God.)

25. The *Rishis*, whose sins are destroyed, whose misgivings are perished, who are self-restraint and who are engaged in doing good to all beings, obtain *Brahma Nirvana*.

26. Absorption in *Brahma* here in this world and hereafter in the next is obtained by those *Yogees* who are free from wrath and desire, whose minds are under control and who have the knowledge of Self.

27—28. The *Yogee*, who being intent to obtain emancipation, has restrained his senses, mind and understanding, who is freed from desire, wrath and fear, who, excluding from his mind all external objects of sense, directing his sight between the brows, mingles into one the upward and the downward life-breaths and make them pass through the nostril, is sure to obtain emancipation.

29. He, who knows Me as the enjoyer of all sacrifices and penances, the great Lord of all the worlds and the friend of all creatures, obtains peace."

CHAPTER XXX.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

The great One said:—

1. He, who performs actions that ought to be performed, regardless of their fruits, is a *Sanyasi* or *Yogee*, but not he who discards the sacrificial fire and abstains from all actions.

2. To the devotees who are free from desire and wrath, and a *Yogee* who has not renounced all his resolves,

3. To the sage who desires to rise to *Yoga*, action is said to be the means; and when he has risen to *Yoga*, *Shamadhi* (cessation of all actions) is said to be the means.

4. When one is no longer attached to the objects of sense, nor to actions, and when one renounces all his resolves, then is he said to have risen to *Yoga*.

5. One should elevate his self by self; one should not degrade his self; a man's self is his friend; and his own self is also his enemy.

6. To him, who has subjugated his self, his self has become a friend; but to him, who has not subjugated his self, his self behaves like an enemy.

7. The self of one who has subjugated his self, and who has attained peace, is absolutely fixed in itself in the midst of cold and heat, pleasure and pain, honour and dishonour.

8. That *Yogee* is said to have risen to *Yoga*, whose self is contented with knowledge and science (experience), who is unmoved, who is self-restrained, and to whom clay, stone and gold are alike

9. He is distinguished above all others who considers alike his well-wishers, friends and enemies, and those that are indifferent, and those that take part with both sides, and those who are objects of hatred and those that are related to him and those that are good and those that are wicked.

10. A devotee, remaining in a secluded place, should always devote his mind in contemplation, along with his mind, and self-restrained, with no expectations, and with no concern (with any thing.)

11—12. Fixing his seat firmly on a clean spot, not too high and not too low, and spreading over it a piece of cloth, a deer-skin and *kusa* (grass),—there, seated on that seat, with his mind fixed on one point, and restraining his mind and senses, one should practise contemplation for the purification of his self.

13. Holding body, head and neck even, unmoved and steady, and fixing his sight on the tip of his own nose, and without looking about in all directions,

14. With his self in tranquillity, freed from fear, adhering to the practices of *Brahmacharies,* he should restrain his mind, fix his heart on Me and sit down, regarding Me as his final goal.

15. Thus constantly devoting his self to abstraction and contemplation, the *Yogee,* whose mind is restrained, attains that peace which culminates in final absorption and assimilation with Me.

16. Devotion is not achieved by the man, O Arjuna, who eats too much, or eats nothing, who is addicted to too much sleep, or is always awake.

17. The devotion that destroys misery is achieved by the man who is temperate in food and amusements, who toils duly in all his works and who is temperate in both sleep and vigils.

18. When his mind, having been well restrained, becomes fixed on one's own self, then, that man, being indifferent to all objects of desire, is called a *Yogee*.

19. A light, in a place where there is no air, flickers not : this has been cited as a simile to a *Yogee* whose mind has been restrained, and who devotes himself to abstraction.

20. That (state) in which mind, being restrained, ceases to work, in which one, seeing the self by self, is pleased in self,

21. In which one experiences that infinite felicity which is beyond the sphere of the senses, and which *Budhi* (understanding) can only grasp, and adhering to which one never swerve from the truth,

22. Acquiring which one considers no other acquisition higher than it, and adhering to which, one is not moved even in the greatest misery,

23. That state should be understood to be called *Yoga*, in which there is a complete severence of all connection with pain. Such *Yoga* should be practised with steadiness, and with an undesponding heart.

24. Abandoning without exception all desires, that are produced from resolves, and restraining by mind only the entire group of the senses,

25. One should, by slow degrees, cease to think the objects of senses, with the help of his understanding, and controlled by patience, and then directing his mind to self.

26. Whereas the restless and unsteady mind wants to stray away, one should always restrain it and fix it steadily on the self alone.

27. To such a *Yogee*, whose mind is in peace, whose passions have been suppressed, who has become one with *Brahma*, and who is free from sin, highest felicity indeed comes by itself.

28. Thus constantly devoting his self to abstraction, a *Yogee*, being freed from sin, easily acheives the supreme happiness, —namely the contact with *Brahma*.

29. I am never lost to him, and he is never lost to Me, who sees Me in everything, and sees every thing in Me.

30. He, who has devoted his self to abstraction, looking alike on everything, sees his self in all creatures in his self.

31. He, who worships Me abiding in all creatures, and thinking that all is one, lives in Me, whatever may be the mode of his living.

32. The *Yogee*, O Arjuna, who casts an equal eye everywhere, looking alike pain and pleasure, and considering all things as his own self, and the happiness and the misery of others as his own, is deemed to be the best."

Arjuna said :—

33–34. "I cannot see, O destroyer of Madhu, how can this *Yoga by-Equanimity*, which you have declared to me, be made to have a continual existence. For, O Krishna, mind is fickle, boisterous, perverse and obstinate; and I think to restrain it is as difficult as to restrain the wind."

The great One said :—

35. "The mind, O mighty-armed, is surely difficult to be restrained, and it is restless. With constant practice, however, and with the abandonment of desire, O son of Kunti, it may be restrained.

36. It is my belief that devotion is difficult to be achieved by one who does not restrain his self. But it can be achieved through proper expedients by one whose mind is restrained and who is assiduous."

Arjuna said :—

37. "What is the end of him, O Krishna who has not earned success in devotion, being not assiduous, and having a mind shaken off from devotion, though full of faith?

38. Does he, O mighty-armed, having fallen from both, go to ruin like a broken cloud, being without support and deluded of the path to *Brahma* ?

39. It is you, O Krishna, who can entirely destroy this doubt of mine; for none else can destroy it."

The great one said :—

40. "O Partha, neither in this world, nor in the next such a man is ruined, for, O dear friend, none, who performs good deeds, comes to an evil end.

41. He, who has not been able to achieve *Yoga*, goes to the worlds of those who perform good acts. He lives there for many years, and is then born into a family of holy and rich men;

42. Or he is born into a family of intelligent devotees; for, such a birth as this is difficult to attain to this world.

43. There comes he in contact with the knowledge of *Brahma*, which belonged to him in his former life; and then, O descendant of Kuru, he works again for perfection.

44. Even though unwilling, he is led to work on for perfection on account of the devotional practice practised in his former birth. Although he only wishes to learn *Yoga*, he still rises above the fruits of action, laid down in the sacred word, the *Vedas*.

45. The devotee, having been cleared of his sins, attains to perfection after many births, by working with great efforts, and he then reaches the supreme goal.

46. The *Yogee* is considered to be superior to the ascetics who perform penances,—superior even to a man of true-knowledge; he is higher than the men of action. Therefore, O Arjuna, become a *Yogee*.

47. Even amongst all *Yogees*, he, who being full of faith, worships Me with his inmost self being intent on Me, is considered by Me, to be the most devout.

CHAPTER XXXI.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)

Continued.

The great One said:—

1. "Now hear, O Partha, how you can, without doubt, know *Me* fully, by fixing your mind on *Me*, practising *Yoga*, and taking refuge in *Me*.

2. I shall now tell you exhaustively about Knowledge together with science (experience) knowing which there will remain nothing more (for you) in this world to know.

3. One only among thousands of men tries to get perfection; and even among those that are assiduous and have achieved perfection, only very few know *Me* truly.

4. (Earth, Water, Fire, Air, Space, Mind, Understanding, and Consciousness) thus is *My Nature* divided eight-fold.

5. But this is lower form of *My Nature*. Know there is another form of *My Nature* higher than this, which is animate and by which, O mighty-armed, the universe is upheld.

6. Know, that all things have these (Earth, Water &c.) for their source. I am the productive Cause and the destroying Agent of all the Universe.

7. There is, O Dhananjaya, nothing higher than *Myself*. All this is woven on *Me* like a row of pearls in a string.

8. I am the *taste* in water, I am the *light* in the Sun and the Moon; I am "*Om*" in all the Vedas, the *sound* in space, and *manliness* in man.

9. I am the *fragrance* in the earth, the *refulgence* in the fire; I am the *life* in all beings, and the *penance* in ascetics.

10. Know *Me*, O Partha, to be the ever-lasting *seed* of all beings. I am the *intelligence* of all intelligent men, and the *glory* of all glorious objects.

11. I am the *strength* of the strong who are freed from desire and thirst. And I am the *love*, O the Best of Bharata race, among all beings, unopposed to virture.

12. And all existing things of *Satya*, *Raja* and *Tama Gunas* (the qualities of goodness, of passion and of darkness), are all from *Me*. I am, however, not in them; they are in *Me*.

13. This whole universe, deluded by these three qualities, does not know *Me*, who am beyond them, and undecaying.

14. The *Illusion* of *Mine*, developed from the said three qualities, is marvellous; and difficult to transcend. Those, that resort to *Me* alone, cross beyond this *Illusion*.

15. Ignorant men, the doers of evil, and the worst of their species, being deprived of their knowledge by this *Illusion* and wedded to the state of demons, do not resort to *Me*.

16. O Arjuna, four classses of doers of good acts worship me, namely he who is distressed, he who seeks after knowledge, he who wants wealth and he who is possessed of knowledge.

17. Amongst these (four classes of men) he, who is the possessor of knowledge, being devoted, and having faith on only the *One*, is considered to be superior to the rest. For to a man of (true) knowledge, I am dear above every thing and he is dear to Me.

18. All these four classes of men are noble, but, a man, who is possessed of knowledge, is considered by *Me* as *My* own self. For he, with his self devoted to abstraction, has taken *Me* to be the goal than which there is nothing higher.

19. The man of knowledge reaches *Me* at the end of many lives, believing that *Vasudeva* is all this, (everything and all things of the universe). But such a high-souled man is exceedingly rare.

20. Those, that are deprived of knowledge by desire, reach other gods (divinities), by observing various (religious) regulations, and by being uncontrolled by their own nature.

21. Whichever form (of deity) a worshipper wishes to worship with faith, I make his faith steady in that form.

22. Endued with this faith, such a worshipper adores the deity (in that form), and obtains from it all that he desires, though they are really given by *Me*.

23. But the fruits thus obtained by men of no knowledge are perishable. Those that worship the divinities (gods) go to the divinities; while those that worship *Me* come to *Me*.

24. The undiscerning ones regard *Me*, who am really unmanifest, to have become manifest; because they do not know *My* transcendent and inexhaustible state, than which there is nothing higher.

25. Shrouded by the delusion of *My* inconceivable power, I am not manifest to all. This deluded world, knows not *Me* who am unborn and undecaying.

26. O Arjuna, I know the things that are past; I know all things that are present, and (I know also) all things that will be in the future. But there is none who knows *Me*.

27. All beings, O terror of foes, at the time of their birth, are deluded by this delusion arising, O Bharata, from the pairs of opposites, and from the results of desire and aversion.

28. But the men of meritorious acts, whose sins have all come to an end, worship *Me*, being freed from the pairs of opposites and firm in their faith.

29. Those, who depending on me, tries to obtain release from decay and death, know *Brahma*, the entire *Adhyatma* and all actions.

30. And they, who know *Me* with *Adhibhuta*, the *Adhidaiva* and the *Adhiyajna*, having their minds fixed in abstraction, know *Me* at the time of their departure (from this world)."

CHAPTER XXXII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

Arjuna said :—

1. "What is *Brahma*, what is *Adhyatma* and what is, O best of men, *Action*? And again, what is (meant by) *Adhibhuta*, *Adidaiva*,

2. And *Adhiyajna*, and how (they are in this body), O destroyer of Madhu? And how, too, are you to be known by those who restrain their selves, at the time of their death."

The great one said :—

3. "The *Brahma* is the supreme, and the indestructible. *Adhyatma* is called *Its*

manifestation, and the offering (to the divinities), which is the cause of the production and the development of all things, is called *Action*.

4. *Adhibhuta* is all perishable things. *Adhidaiba* is the (primal) *Male-Being*. And O best of men, *Adhiyajna* is I myself in this body.

5. He, who casts off this body and departs from this world, remembering Me in his last moments, comes to *My* essence. There is no doubt in it.

6. And again, whichever form of divinity he remembers when he finally leaves this body and departs from this world, to him, O son of Kunti, he goes, having habitually meditated upon him.

7. Therefore, think and remember *Me* at all times, and engage in battle. Fixing your mind and understanding on *Me*, you will surely come to *Me*. There is no doubt in it.

8. He, who thinks of the Supreme Divine Being, O Partha, with a mind not running to other objects, and possessing of concentration of mind in continuous meditation, goes to the Supreme Being.

9—10. He attains to that transcendent and Divine Being, who, possessed of reverence for Him, with a steady mind and power of devotion, properly concentrating the life-breath between the brows, meditates on that ancient Seer,—the ruler of all the minutest of the minute, the supporter of all,—whose form is inconcievable, whose brilliance is that of the sun and who is beyond all darkness.

11. I shall tell you briefly about the seat which the persons, learned in the Vedas, say indestructible, which is entered by ascetics, who are freed from all desires, and which, wishing to obtain, men follow the path of *Brahmacharis*.

12—13. He reaches the highest goal who casts off his body and departs, by stopping all passages (senses), confining the mind within itself, placing his own life-breath between the eye-brows, adhering to uninterrupted meditation, uttering the one syllable *Om*, which is *Brahma*, and thinking *Me*.

14. To that *Yogee*, O Partha, I am easy of access who always meditate on *Me*, by withdrawing his mind from all other objects, and who constantly practises abstraction.

15. Those high-souled men, who achieve the highest perfection, attaining to *Me*, do not again take birth, which is the abode of sorrow, and transient.

16. All (beings of all) the worlds, O Arjuna, from the world of *Brahma*, have to take rebirth. But, O son of Kunti, after attaining to *Me*, there is no rebirth.

17. Those who know the day of *Brahma*, as being of one thousand ages, and a night of his, as being of one thousand ages (*yuga*) know Day and Night.

18. On the advent of Day, all things that are manifest are produced from the unmanifest, and on the advent of Night, all things dissolve into that which is called unmanifest.

19. The same assemblage of beings, being manifest (born), again and again, dissolves on the advent of Night, and O Partha, on the advent of Day, they spring forth again, being constrained by the force of actions.

20. But there is another entity, unmanifest and eternal, which is beyond the unmanifest beings, and which is not destroyed when all entities are destroyed.

21. It is called unmanifest and indestructible; they call it the highest goal. Attaining to it, none has to come back.

22. The Supreme Being, O Partha, in which all beings dwell, and by whom an beings are permeated, is to be attained by faith, undirected to any other objects.

23. I will state the times, O best of the Bharata race, at which *Yogees*, departing from this world, go—never to return, or, to return.

24. Departing from the world in the Fire, the Flame, the Day, the Bright-Fortnight, the Six months of the norther Solstice, one, if he knows Him, goes to *Brahma*, (never to return again).

25. Departing from this world in Smoke, Night, the Dark-Fortnight, the Six months of the southern Solstice, one goes to the Lunar Light and returns to the world again.

26. The Bright and the Dark, these two paths are considered to be eternal paths in this world. By the one, one goes never to return; by the other, one goes to come back.

27. Knowing these two paths, O Partha, no *Yogee* is deluded, and therefore, O Arjuna, at all times, be possessed of *oYga*.

28. The meritorious fruits, prescribed in the Vedas, for sacrifices, for penances, for gifts,—knowing all this, a *Yogee* attains to it, the highest and primeval seat."

CHAPTER XXXIII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

The great one said:—

1. "I shall now speak to you, O enviless one, all that mysterious knowledge, along with experience, by knowing which you will be freed from evil.

2. It is the chief science and the chief mystery; it is the chief means of purification. It is consistent with the sacred laws, easy to practise, directly apprehensible, and imperishable.

3. Those men, O terror of foes, who have no faith in this sacred doctrine, return to this mortal world without attaining to *Me*.

4. This whole universe is pervaded by *Me* in *My* unmanifest form. All things live in it.

5. And again all things are not in *Me*. See my divine power. Supporting all entities and producing all entities, My Self does not live in those entities.

6. As the great and ubiquitous atmosphere (without tainting) live, occupying space, so similarly all things live in *Me*.

7. All entities, O son of Kunti, attain to My nature at the end of a *Kalpa*. And again at the beginning of a *Kalpa* I bring them forth.

8. Controlling My Nature Myself, I bring forth again and again this whole assemblage of entities, which has no will of its own.

9. But, Arjuna, these acts of mine do not fetter me, I sit like one unconcerned and unattached to those actions.

10. Through *Me*, the supervisor, primal Nature produces all movables and unmoveables. Thus, O son of Kunti, the universe revolves.

11-12. Not knowing My supreme Nature, the deluded people of vain hopes, vain acts, vain knowledge, of confounded minds, of the delusive nature of *Ashuras* and *Rakshashas*, disregard *Me* as I have assumed a human body.

13. But high-souled and divine-natured devotees, O Partha, knowing *Me* as the origin of all things, worship *Me* with minds directed to nothing else.

14. Always glorifying *Me*, exerting themselves with firm vows, bowing down to *Me* with reverence, being always devoted to *Me*, they worship *Me*,

15. Others again, performing the Sacrifice of knowledge, worship *Me* as one, as distinct, as pervading the universe in many forms.

16. I am the *Vedic* Sacrifice; I am the Sacrifice laid down in the *Smriti*; I am the *Sabda* (mantra); I am the sacrificial libation; I am the fire; I am the offering.

17. I am the Father of the universe, its Mother, its Creator, its Grandsire. I am the Thing to be known, and the Means by which every thing is purified. I am the *Om*, the *Rik*, *Saman* and *Yajus* (Vedas).

18. I am the goal, the supporter, the lord, the on-looker, the asylum, the friend, the source, the support, the receptacle and the imperishable seed.

19. I produce heat; I produce and stop showers. I am immortality, and I am also death. I am, O Arjuna, that which exists and which does not exist.

20. Those, who know the three knowledges, who drink the *Shoma* juice, who offer sacrifices, and whose sins are washed away, seek admission into heaven. Reaching the holy world of the lord of the celestials, they enjoy the celestial pleasures of the gods in the celestial world.

21. And having enjoyed the pleasures of the extensive heaven, when their merits are exhausted, they again enter into the mortal world. Those that wish for the objects of desire, and act according to the doctrines of these Vedas, obtain going and coming (births and deaths).

22. I give new gifts to those men,—and preserve those that have been already acquired,—who worship *Me*, meditating on *Me* and who are constantly devoted to *Me*.

23. Even those, O son of Kunti, who endued with faith, worship other gods, worship *Me* though not in the regular way.

24. For I am the enjoyer, as well as the giver of fruits of all sacrifices. But they do not know *Me* truly, and therefore they fall from heaven.

25. Those who worship the *Pitris*, go to the *Pitris*, those who worship the *Bhutas*, go to the *Bhutas*, but those who worship *Me*, come to *Me*.

26. I accept leaf, flowers, fruit, water, from him who is pure, and who with faith offers them to *Me*, if they are presented with devotion.

27. Whatever you do, O son of Kunti, whatever you eat, whatever you sacrifice, whatever you give, whatever penance you perform, do it in a way which may be an offering to *Me*.

28. Thus will you be freed from the bonds of action, the fruits of which are both good and bad. With your self endued with renunciation and devotion, you will be freed (from the laws of rebirth), and you will come to *Me*.

29. I am alike to all beings. No one is hateful, none is dear to *Me*. In whatever way they worship, if they worship with reverence, they are in *Me*, and I am in them.

30. If even an exceedingly wicked man worship *Me*, without worshipping any one else, he should certainly be regarded as a good (man), for his efforts are well-directed.

31. Such a man soon becomes devout and virtuous-minded, and attains eternal peace. Learn, O son of Kunti, he, who is devoted to *Me*, is never lost.

32. Even those persons, Partha, who are of sinful birth, who are women, *Vaishyas* or *Sudras*, attain to the supreme goal, if they come to *Me*.

33. What then should I speak of holy Bramhins and royal sages who are my devotees? Having come to this miserable and mortal world, O Partha, worship *Me*.

34. Fix your mind on *Me*, become *My* worshipper, become *My* devotee, bow to *Me*. Thus making *Me* your goal, and devoting yourself to abstraction, you will certainly come to *Me*."

CHAPTER XXXIV.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

The great one said :—

1. "And again, O mighty-armed, listen to *My* words relating to the great Self. I tell them to you out of a wish for your welfare, and you, too, will be delighted with them.

2. The hosts of gods and great sages do not know my origin, for I am in every way the source of the gods and sages.

3. He, who knows *Me* to be unborn, free from delusion, without beginning, the supreme Lord of all the world, is released from all sins.

4. Intelligence, knowledge, absence from delusion, forgiveness, truth, self-restraint, tranquility, pleasure, pain, birth, fear and also security,

5. Harmlessness, equanimity of mind; contentment, penance, offering gifts, fame, infamy,—all these attributes of being arise from *Me* alone.

6. The seven great *Rishis*, and also the four ancient *Manus*, pertaining my nature, were all born from my mind, (by *My* mere thinking). From them are all things born.

7. He, who knows correctly these emanations and mystic powers of *Mine*, becomes possessed of unswerving devotion,—there is no doubt about it.

8. The truly wise man, endued with *My* nature, worship *Me*, believing that I am the origin of all, and from *Me* all things proceed.

9. Such men placing their minds on *Me*, devoting their lives to *Me*, instructing each other and speaking about *Me*, are always contented and happy.

10. To such men I give that knowledge by which they attain to *Me*.

11. Out of compassion for them I, remaining in their hearts, destroy, in such men, the darkness of ignorance, with the lamp of knowledge."

Arjuna said :—

12. "You are the supreme *Brahma*, the supreme asylum, the holiest of the holy, the everlasting divine Being, the first of gods, unborn, the great Lord.

13. All the *Rishis*, as well as the divine sages *Narada*, *Asita*, *Devala*, are thus. And you too, O Keshava, tell me yourself that it is so.

14. I believe all that you tell me, O holy one, for neither the gods nor the demons understand your manifestations.

15. O best of beings, Creator of all things, God of gods, Lord of the universe, you only know yourself by your great Self.

16. Kindly tell me without reservation your divine emanations, by which emanation you remain pervading all these worlds.

17. O you of mystic powers, how shall I know you by always meditating on you. In what particular entity (manifestation), should I meditate on you?

18. O Janardana, declare to me yourself, your powers and emanations, for hearing this ambrosia, I am not satiated."

The great One said :—

19. "Well, O best of Kurus, I shall declare to you my divine emanations, but I shall only tell you the chief ones, for there is no end of emanations.

20. O Gudakesh, I am the Self in the heart of every being. I am the beginning, the middle and the end of every thing.

21. I am *Vishnu* amongst the *Adityas*, all-resplendent Sun among all shining bodies. I am *Marichi* among *Maruts*, and the Moon among constellations.

22. I am the *Shama Veda* among the Vedas, I am *Indra* among the celestials. I am mind among the senses, I am the consciousness of all living things.

23. I am *Shankara* among the Rudras, I am the lord of treasures among *Yakshas*, I am *Pavaka* among the *Vasus*, and I am the *Meru* amongst the mountain peaks.

24. Know me, Partha, as *Vrihaspati* among family priests, and *Skanda* among commanders of forces. I am ocean among all waters.

25. I am *Bhrigu* among the great *Rishis*; I am *Om* among all words, I am *Japa Sacrifice* among all sacrifices. I am the *Himalaya* among mountains;

26. And the fig tree among all trees; I am *Narada* among celestial *Rishis*, and *Chitraratha* among *Gandharvas*. I am *Kapila* among all ascetics successful in *Yoga*.

27. Know me to be *Uchaisraba* amomg all horses, produced by the churning for ambrosia, and *Airavata* among the great elephants. I am king among men.

28. I am thunder among weapons; I am *Kamadhuka* among cows; I am *Kandarpa* that generates. I am *Vasuki* among serpents;

29. I am *Ananta* among *Nags*. I am *Varuna* among aquatic beings, I am *Aryaman* among the Pitris, and Yama among the dispensers of justice and punishment.

30. I am *Pralhad* among *Daityas*, and the *Kala* among those who count. I am lion among the beasts of prey, and *Gadura* among birds.

31. I am the wind among those that move, *Rama* among the wielders of weapons. I am *Makara* among fishes, I am the Ganges among all rivers and streams.

32. O Arjuna, I am the beginning, the middle and the end of all created things. I am the knowledge of the Supreme Self among all kinds of knowledge, and I am the argument of all debators.

33. I am the first letter of the Alphabet and *Danda* (copulative) among all *Shamashes* (compounds). I am the Eternal Time, I am the Creator with face turned to every side.

34. I am the Source of all that is to be. Among females, I am Fame, Fortune, Speech, Memory, Intellect, Courage, and Forgiveness.

35. I am *Vrihat Saman* among *Sam* hymns, and *Gayetri* among metres. I am *Margasirsha* among months, and among seasons I am the spring that is full of flowers.

36. I am the dice-game among cheats, I am the glory among the glorious. I am victory, I am industry, I am the goodness of the good.

37. I am *Vasudeva* among *Vrishnis* and *Arjuna* among the *Pandavas*. I am *Vyasa* among *Rishis*, and *Ushanas* among the Seers.

38. I am the rod of the chastisers, and the policy of those that seek victory. I am silence in secrets, and the knowledge of the learned.

39. I am, O Arjuna, that which is the seed of all things. There is nothing movable or immovable which can exist without Me.

40. O terror of foes, there is no end of my divine emanations; the extent of my emanations in part has only been declared to you to cite instances.

41. Whatever thing there is of power or glory or splendour, know them to be produced from portions of my energy.

42. O Arjuna, what have you to do, knowing all this at large? Know, I stand, supporting this entire universe with only a portion of my Self.

CHAPTER XXXV.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Arjuna said —

1. "The excellent and mysterious words, relating to the Supreme Self and the individual Self, which you have spoken to me, have removed my delusion.

2. O lotus-eyed one, I have heard elaborately from you the mystery of production and dissolution of things, and also about your inexhaustible greatness.

3. O great Lord, what you have said of yourself is even so (perfectly true). I desire to see, O best of beings, your divine form.

4. If, O Lord, you think that I am competent to see that form, then, O Lord of mystic powers, show me your inexhaustible form."

The Great One Said :—

5. "Behold, Partha, my forms by hundreds and thousands. They are various, divine, and different in colour and form.

6. Behold the *Adityas*, the *Vasus*, the *Rudras*, the *Aswins*, and the *Maruts*. Behold, O Bharata, innumerable wonders, not seen by you before.

7. Behold, Gudakesh, the entire universe of movables and immovables and whatever else you wish to see, all collected together in my this body.

8. But you are not fit to see Me with your these eyes. Therefore, I give you divine sight. Behold now my great mystic nature."

Sanjaya continued :—

9. O great king, having said this, the mighty lord of mystic powers, Hari, revealed to Partha his great divine form.

10. With many mouths and eyes, with many wonderful aspects, with many celestial ornaments, with many upraised celestial weapons,

11. Adorned with celestial garlands and robes, embalmed with celestial fragrance, and full of every wonder; it is resplendent and infinite with faces turned on all sides.

12. If splendour of one thousand suns burst forth all at once in the sky, that would be something like the splendour of that great One.

13. Then the son of Pandu (Arjuna) saw the entire universe, divided and subdivided into many parts, but all collected together in the body of that God of all gods.

14. Then filled with amazement, Dhananjaya, with his hairs standing on end, his head lowly bowed down and his hands joined together, addressed the great God thus :—

Arjuna said :—

15. "I behold, O Great God, all the celestials and all the varied hosts of creatures. I behold *Brahma* seated on his lotus-seat; I behold all the great *Rishis* and divine *Nagas*.

16. O you of infinite forms, I behold you on every side with innumerable arms, bellies, mouths, and eyes. O Lord of the universe, O you of universal form, I do see neither your end, nor middle, nor the beginning.

17. I behold you immeasurable,—you whom it is difficult to look at. I behold you, bearing your diadem, mace and discus glowing on all sides, possessing a mass of energy, and being subdued with the effulgence of the blazing fire of the sun.

18. You are imperishable and the Supreme object of this universe. You are undecaying and the guardian of everlasting virtue. I find you the eternal great Being.

19. I behold you without beginning, middle and end. I behold you possessing infinite prowess and innumerable arms, having the sun and the moon as your two eyes, and the blazing fire as your mouth; I behold you heating the universe with your own great energy.

20. The space between heaven and earth and all the points of the horizon are pervaded by you alone. The three worlds tremble, O Supreme Self, at the sight of your this marvellous and fierce form.

21. Hosts of celestials enter into you; some perhaps being afraid pray with joined hands, saying *Hail to thee*. Hosts of great *Rishis* and *Sidhyas* praise you with innumerable hymns of praise.

22. The *Rudras*, the *Adityas*, the *Vasus*, the *Saddhyas*, the *Viswas*, the *Aswins*, the *Maruts*, the *Ushmapas*, the *Gandharvas*, the *Yakshas*, the *Asuras*, and hosts of *Sidhyas* see you; and they are all amazed.

23. O mighty-armed, all creatures are frightened, and I am seeing also your mighty form with many mouths and eyes, with innumerable arms, thighs, feet and bellies, and terrible on account of many tusks.

24. I can no longer command courage, or enjoy peace of mind, seeing your mighty form which is touching the very skies, which is fiery radiant, many winged, widely open-mouthed and with large and blazing eyes.

25. Seeing your mouth terrible with tusks and fearful as the all-destroying Fire at the final end of the *Yuga*, I cannot recognise the points of the horizon or command my peace of mind.

26. All the son of Dhritarashtra, together with the host of kings, Bhisma Drona and Suta's son, Karna, with even the principle warriors of our side,

27 Are quickly entering your terrible mouths, rendered more terrible by thy tusks. Some, with their heads crushed, stick at the interstices of your teeth.

28. As many currents of waters, flowing through different channels, roll rapidly into the ocean, so these heroes of the world enter into your blazing mouth.

29. As insects for their own destruction rush in increasing speed into the blazing fire, so these men, with unceasing speed enter into your mouth for their own destruction.

30. Devouring all these men from every side, you lick them with your flaming mouths. O Vishnu, your fearful splendour,

filling the whole universe with your great energy, heat everything.

31. Tell me who are you with this fearful form. I bow down my head to you; be gracious to me, O chief of the gods. I desire to know you, Primeval One; for I do not understand your actions.

The Great One said :—

32. "I am (now) the full manifestation of Death, the Destroyer of the worlds. All these warriors, standing in different divisions, will cease to be, even if you do not kill them.

33. Therefore, arise and gain glory. Vanquishing the foe, enjoy this great kingdom. All these men are already slain by me. Be my instrument only.

34. Kill Drona, Bhisma. Jayadratha Karna and all these brave warriors, they are already killed by me. Do not be dismayed. Fight,—you will conquer your foes in battle."

Sanjaya said :—

35. Hearing these words the diadem-decked Arjuna, trembling, and with joined hands, bowed to Krishna. Making his salutations, overwhelmed with fear, he once more with chocked voice said to him.

Arjuna said :—

36. "It is quite natural, O Hrishikesha, that the universe is delighted and charmed in singing your praise, and *Rakshasas* are scattered away in fear and hosts of *Siddhyas* are bowing (at your feet).

37. And why should they not bow down to you, O Supreme Self, for you are greater than *Brahma*, you are the primal Cause. O Infinite One, O God of the gods, O Refuge of the universe, you are indestructible, you are that which *is* and that which *is not*, and that which is beyond both the existent and non-existents.

38. You are the First God, the Ancient Being; you are the Supreme Refuge of the world. You are the Knower and the Object to be known; you are the highest abode. O Infinite One, the whole universe is pervaded by you.

39. You are *Vayu*, *Yama*, *Agni*, *Varuna* *Chandra*, *Prajapati* and Grandsire. I bow down my head to you a thousand times. Again and yet again I bow down my head to you.

40. My salutation to you in front; my salutation to you from behind. O you All, my salutation to you from every side. You are all, your energy infinite, your prowess immeasurable; you embrace all.

41—42. O *Krishna*, O *Jadava*, O friend, O undecaying One, O Infinite one, I beg your pardon for whatever has been said carelessly by me, and whatever disrespect has been shown to you not knowing your greatness, and considering you friend from want of judgment or from love, either out of mirth or on occasions of play lying, sitting or at meals, while alone or in the presence of others.

43. You are the Father of the universe, of movables and immovables; you are the great Master deserving of all worship. There is none equal to you. How can there be one greater than you whose power is matchless in these worlds.

44. Therefore, O Lord, O adorable One, bowing to you, prostrating before you, I ask your grace. You should overlook my faults, O God, as father does his son's, a friend his friend's, a lover his lover's.

45. Seeing your this form unseen before, I have been delighted, but my mind has been frightened. Show me your ordinary form, O God. Be gracious, O Lord of the gods, O Refuge of the universe.

46. I desire to see you as before, with diadem, discus and mace. O you of thousand arms, O you of universal form, be of that four-armed form."

The great One said :—

47. "Being pleased with you, O Arjuna, I have by my mystic powers, shown to you this my Supreme form, glorious, universal, infinite and Primeval, which has been seen by none before, except now by you.

48. Except by you only, O Kuru warrior, I cannot be seen in this form by any one in this word,—not even by the study of the Vedas, or by sacrifices, gifts, actions or severest penances.

49. Have no fear or perplexity of mind at seeing my this fearful form. Freed from fear, with a joyful heart, behold my other form."

Sanjaya said :—

50. Having said all this to Arjuna, Vasudeva once more showed him his own ordinary form. The high-soulded One, once more assuming his gentle form, comforted Arjuna who was much agitated.

Arjuna said :—

51. "Seeing your this gentle human form, O Janardana, I have come to my right mind and to my normal state."

The great One said :—

52. "The form of mine, which you have (just now) seen, is difficult to be seen. Even the celestials are always eager to see my this great form.

53. Not by the study of the *Vedas*, not by penances, gifts or sacrifices, can I be seen in this form of mine which you have seen.

54. But by exclusive devotion to me, O Arjuna, O chastiser of foes, I can, in this form, be known, truly seen and attained to.

55. O Arjuna, he who does everything for *Me*, who has only *Me* for his supreme objects, who is freed from all attachments and who is without enmity towards any beings, comes to *Me*.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Arjuna said :—

1. "Of those worshipers, who constantly adore you and who meditate on you as Imperishable and Unmanifest, who are the best acquainted with devotion ?"

The great One said :—

2. "Those that constantly adore me, fixing their minds on me, and being endued with the highest faith, are considered by me as men having the greastest devoton.

3. Those, however, who worship the Imperishable, the All-pervading, Inconcievable, the Indifferent, the Immutable, the Eterenal,

4. Who, restraining the entire groups of senses, are equal-minded in respect of all things, and are engaged in doing good to all creature, come to *Me*.

5. Difficulty to attain me is greater to those who seek for the Unmanifest, for, the way to the Unmanifest is hard to find by man.

6—7. I, without delay, become deliverer from the ocean of this world of those, who, reposing all actions on *Me* and considering *Me* the highest object of attainment, worship *Me*, meditating on *Me* with exclusive devotion, and fixing their minds on *Me*.

8. Fix your mind on *Me* alone; place your understanding also on *Me*. You will thus, after death, live in *Me*; there is not the least doubt in it.

9. If, however, O Dhananjaya, you are unable thus to fix your mind on *Me*, then, try to obtain *Me* by devotion arising from continued application.

10. If you are not able even to have continued application, let your actions be performed for *Me* with your highest aim. For, by performing acts for *My* sake, you will attain to perfection.

11. If even this you are unable to do, then resort to devotion in *Me*. Subduing your Self, abandon the desire for the fruits of actions.

12. Knowledge is superior to application; meditation is better than knowledge; abandonment of the desire for the fruits of action is better than meditation; peace is the immediate result of such abandonment.

13—14. He is dear to *Me* who has no hatred for anything, who is friendly and compassionate, who is free fron egoism, who has no vanity, who is alike in pleasure and pain, who is forgiving, contented, always devoted, whose self is subdued, purpose is firm, mind and understanding are fixed on *Me*.

15. He is dear to *Me*, who is not troubled by the world, and the world is not troubled by him; and who is free from joy, fear and anxieties.

16. He is dear to *Me* who is pure, diligent, unconcerned, and free from all distress, and desireless for the fruits of actions.

17. He is dear to *Me* who has no joy, and no aversion, who neither grieves nor desires, who renounces both good and evil, and who is full of faith in *Me*.

18. He is dear to *Me* who is alike to friend and foe, in honour and dishonour, in cold and heat, in pleasure and pain, and who is free from attachments.

19. He is dear to *Me* who is taciturn, who is contented with anything that come to him, who is homeless, steady-minded, full of faith, and to whom censure and praise are the same.

20. Those who resort to this righteousness that leds to immortality, and which has been declared to you by *Me*,—such devotees of faith, who regard *Me* as the highest object for attainment, are the most dear to *Me*."

CHAPTER XXXVII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)--*Contd.*

The Great One said :—

1. "This body, O son of Kunti, is called *Kshetra*. The learned call him who knows it, *Kshetrajna*.

2. Know me, O Bharata, as *Kshetrajna* in all *Kshetras.* I consider the knowledge of *Kshetra* and *Kshetrajna* to be the true knowledge.

3. Hear from *Me* in brief what is *Kshetra* what it is like, what changes it undergoes, and whence it comes. Know also what is *Kshetrajna*, and what are his powers.

4. All this has, in many ways, been sung by many *Rishis* in various verses and well-settled texts, full of reason and indicating *Brahma*.

5. The elements, egoism, intellect, Nature, ten senses, the mind, the five objects of senses,

6. Desire, aversion, pleasure, pain, body consciousness, courage,—all these five have been declared to be *Kshetra* in its modified form.

7—8. Purity, constancy, self-restraint, forgiveness, uprightness, absence of vanity, ostentation and egoism, abstention from fear, indifference to objects of senses, perception of misery and evil of birth, death decrepitude and disease,

9. Freedom from attachment, absence of love for son, wife, home and the rest, and constant equanimity of heart in good and evil,

10. Unswerving devotion to *Me* without meditation on anything else, frequenting of lonely places and hatred for concourse of men,

11. The firm knowledge of the relation between the great Self and the Individual Self, perception of the object of true knowledge,—all this is called Knowledge; and all that is contrary to this is called Ignorance.

12. I shall now declare to you that which is the object of knowledge, and knowing which one obtains immortality. It is the Supreme *Brahma*, having no beginning, and who is neither existent nor non-existent.

13. (It is the Supreme *Brahma*) whose hands and feet are on all sides, whose eyes, heads and faces, are on all sides, who hears on all sides, who dwells pervading all in this world;

14. Who, being devoid of the senses, is possessed of all the qualities of the senses, who sustains all things but has no attachment for any thing, who having no attributes, possesses all attributes,

15. Who is within and without all creatures, immobile and mobile, who is not knowable, on account of his subtlety, who is remote yet near;

16. Who, being undistributed in any thing, remain as if distributed in every thing; who is the sustainer of all beings, and the destroyer and the creator of all;

17. Who is the light of all luminous bodies, who is beyond all darkness; who is knowledge, the object of knowledge and the end of knowledge; who is seated in the hearts of all.

18. Thus in brief *Kshetra*, Knowledge, and the object of knowledge are declared to you. Knowing all this, O my friend and devotee, attain to *Yoga* (assimilation with *Me*.)

19. Know that *Prakriti* and *Purusha* are both without beginnings; and know all modifications (of matter) and all qualities (pleasure and pain &c.) spring from *Prakriti* (Nature).

20. *Prakriti* is the source of the workings of causes and effects. *Prakriti* is the source of the capacity of enjoying pleasures and pains.

21. Self, dwelling in Nature (having a material body), enjoys the qualities that are born in Nature. The cause of the birth in good or in evil works is its connection with such qualities.

22. The Supreme *Purusha* in the (human) body is the surveyor, adviser, supporter, and enjoyer; he is the mighty Lord and Supreme Self.

23. He who thus knows *Prakriti* and *Purusha* with the qualities, in whatever state he may be, is never born again.

24. Some by meditation see the Self in his (own) self by (his own) Self. Some again (see) by *Sankhya Yoga* and some again by *Karma Yoga*.

25. Others again worship Him, hearing of Him from others, although they do not know this (Mystery of Yoga.) Even these men, if devoted to what is heard of the true Knowledge, pass over death, (and attain to final emancipation.)

26. O best of the Bharata race, know whatever entity, movable and immovable, comes into existence, it is out of the connection of *Kshetra* and *Kshetrajna*.

27. He sees truly who sees the Supreme Lord alike in all beings and who sees the Imperishable in the perishable.

28. For he who sees the Great Lord, dwelling alike in every thing and every where, does not destroy himelf by himself, and thus reaches the highest goal.

26. He sees truly who sees all actions worked by Nature alone, and self not to be the doer.

30. When one sees the various entities existing in One, and the birth of every thing from that One, he is then said to attain to *Brahma*.

31. This inexhaustible Supreme Self, O son of Kunti, without having beginning, and without having attributes, does not act at all. It is in no way stained, even when it remains in (human body.)

32. As Space for its subtility—and as it is ubiquitous—is never tainted, so Self, stationed in every body, is never tainted.

33. As the single sun, O Bharata, lights up all this entire world, so *Purusha* lights up the entire sphere of matters.

34. Those who, by the eye of Knowledge, know the distinction between *Prakriti* and *Purusha*, and the release from the nature of all entities, attain to the Supreme."

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)--*Contd.*

The Great one said:—

1. "I shall again speak to you that great Science of all Sciences, that excellent Science, knowing which all the *Rishis* have attained to the highest (and final) emancipation from this body.

2. Resorting to this great Science, and thus attaining to My Nature, men have no more rebirths, not even at the time of a new Creation. They are not disturbed even at the dissolution of the universe.

3. The Great *Brahma* is the womb in which I place the germ. Thence, O Bharata, take place the births of all beings.

4. Whatever is born, O son of Kunti, of them is *Brahma* the womb, and I the seed-imparting Sire.

5. *Satya*, *Raja* and *Tama*, these three qualities of Nature, O mighty-armed, bind down the Eternal Self in the body of beings.

6. Amongst the three, *Satya*, from its untainted nature, from its being enlightening, and as it is free from mysery, keeps the Self bound with the attachment of happiness and knowledge.

7. *Raja*, having desire for its essence, is born of thirst and attachment; therefore, O son of Kunti, it binds the embodied Self with the attachment of work.

8. *Tama* is born of ignorance, and therefore it deludes all embodied selves. O Bharata, it binds the Self with error, indolence, and sleep.

9. *Satya* unites the Self with pleasure, *Raja*, with work; but, O Bharata, *Tama*, shadowing knowledge, binds Self with error.

10. *Satya* remains if *Raja* and *Tama* are repressed; *Tama* remains if *Satya* and *Raja* are repressed; and, Oh Bharata, *Raja* remains if *Tama* and *Satya* are repressed.

11. When in this body knowledge pervades all, then should one know that *Satya* has been developed.

12. When, O chief of Bharata's race, avarice, activity, fondness of works, want of tranquillity, and desire, are born in this body, then should one know that *Raja* has been developed.

13. When, O son of the Kuru race, gloom, inactivity, error, and delusion, are born in this body, then should one know that *Tama* has been developed.

14. When a man dies when his *Satya* is developed, he goes to the sinless region of those that know the Supreme.

15. Dying, when *Raja* prevails, he goes among those who are attached to works. Dying in *Tama* he is born in the womb that produces ignorant men.

16. The fruit of *Satya* is good and untainted; the fruit of *Raja* is misery, and that of *Tama* is ignorance.

17. From *Satya* is produced knowledge, from *Raja* avarice, and from [illegible] error, delusion and ignorance.

18. Those that live in *Satya* [illegible] those that are addicted to *Raja* live in the middle; and those that are of *Tama*, having the lowest quality, go down.

19. When an observing man comes to know these three qualities to be the only agents of all works, and recognises Him who is beyond all qualities, he then attains to My Nature.

20. The embodied self (man) by transcending three qualities, which are the sources of all bodies, attains immortality, being freed from birth, death, old age, decay and misery."

Arjuna said:—

21. "What are the characteristics, O Lord, of that man who has transcended the three qualities? What is his conduct? How can a man transcend these three qualities?"

The great One said:—

22. "He who has no aversion for knowledge, work [illegible] ignorance (the results of the three qualiti[illegible]) when they are present, and he who does not desire them when they

are absent, has transcended the three qualities.

23. He, who remains all unconcerned, being not shaken by the three qualities, who sits and moves not, thinking that it is the qualities and not he, who is engaged in their functions, has transcended the three qualities.

24. He, to whom pain and pleasure are alike, who is self-restrained, to whom a sod of earth, a stone, a piece of gold, are all alike; to whom agreeable and the disagreeable are the same, to whom praise and censure are alike, has transcended the three qualities.

25. He, to whom honour and dishonour are the same, to whom friends and foes are alike; who has discernment, and who has renounced all self-exertion, has transcended the three qualities.

26. He who worships *Me* with exclusive devotion, transcends the three qualities and becomes fit for admission into the nature of *Brahma*.

27. For, I am the embodiment of *Brahma* of immortality, of imperishability, of eternal piety and ever-continuing felicity."

CHAPTER XXXIX.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

The great One said :—

1. "They say that the *Aswattha* tree with its roots above and branches below is (like the) eternal. Its leaves are the *Chhandas*. He who knows it knows the *Vedas*.

2. Its branches which are enlarged by the qualities are stretched upwards and downwards; its sprouts are the objects of senses. Its roots, leading to actions, are extended downward to this world of men.

3—4. Its form cannot be known in this world, nor its end, its beginning, nor its support. Cutting this *Aswattha* of strong roots with a sharp weapon, one should seek for that place going whither none returns again,—resolving—"I shall seek the protection of that Primeval Sire from whom the original course of this worldy life has flowed."

5. Those that are free from delusion and pride, that have subdued the evil of attachments, that are steady in contemplation of the relation of the Supreme to the individual Self, from whom desires have gone away, and who is free from the pairs of opposites, go undeluded to that eternal seat.

6. The Sun lights not that place, nor the Moon, nor the fire. Going there none returns,—that is my Supreme seat.

7. An everlasting portion of *Me* (My Self), becoming an individual Self in this world, draws to itself the five senses with the mind as the sixth. They all depend on Nature.

8. When (this Self) the king of the body, assumes or quits the body, it departs taking them away, as the wind takes away the fragrance.

9. Presiding over the ear, the eye, the organs of touch, taste and smell, and the mind, It (the Self) enjoys all objects of senses.

10. Those that are deluded do not see It when It remains in the body, or when It quits it, when It enjoys, or when It is joined with qualities. But those see It who have the eye of knowledge.

11. Devotees who are trying to attain to emancipation see It in their own bodies. But those that are senseless, and whose minds are not restrained, do not see It, although they too are trying for emancipation.

12. The refulgence in the Sun which illuminates the vast universe, that which is in the Moon, and in the Fire, know It to be mine.

13. Entering into the earth I uphold every thing by My Force, and becoming savoury Moon, I nourish all plants.

14. Becoming the vital heat in the bodies of creatures, and mixing with the upward and downward breaths, I digest the four kinds of food.

15. I am in the hearts of all. Memory, and knowledge, and the loss of both, are all from *Me*. I am the objects of knowledge to be known from the *Vedas*. I am the author of the *Vedantas*, and again I alone am the object to be known of the *Vedas*.

16. There are two entities in this universe,—namely the Perishable and the Imperishable. All creatures are the Perishable, and the unconcerned One is the Imperishable.

17. But there is another, namely the Supreme Being, called *Paramatma*, who being the everlasting Lord, and pervading the three worlds, sustains them.

18. As I transcend the Perishable, and as I am higher than even the Imperishable, I am celebrated in the world and sung in the *Vedas* as *Purushattama*.

19. He, who without being deluded, knows *Me* to be this Highest Being, O

Bharata, knowing all this, worships *Me* with all thoughts.

20. I have thus, O holy one, declared to you this knowledge, the greatest of all mysteries. Knowing this, O Bharata, one becomes gifted with intelligence, and he has done all that he needs do."

CHAPTER XL.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—
Continued.

The Great one said :—

1. "Fearlessness, purity of heart, perseverence, *Yoga* meditation, gifts, self-restraint, sacrifice, study of the Vedas, penances, uprightness,

2. Non-doing of injury, truth, freedom from anger, renunciation, tranquillity, freedom from fault-finding, compassion for all, absence of covetousness, gentleness, modesty, absence of restlessness,

3. Vigour, forgiveness, firmness, cleanliness, absence of quarrelsomeness, freedom from vanity,—O Bharata, all these belong to him who is god-like.

4. Hypocrisy, pride, conceit, wrath, rudeness, and ignorance, O Partha, belong to him who is demoniac.

5. Godliness is considered to be the means for emancipation, and demoniacness for bondage of births. You need not grieve, O son of Pandu, for you are born to be god-like.

6. There are two kinds of created beings in this world, namely God-like and demoniac.

7. The Godlike has been fully described by me. Now hear from me, Partha, something of the demoniac. Persons of demoniac nature know not what is action and what is inaction. Neither purity, nor good conduct, nor truth exists in them.

8. The demoniac say, the universe is void of truth, of a guiding principle and of a ruler. They say universe has been produced only by the union of one another, and by lust.

9. Believing and depending on this, these men of lost self, of little intelligence, and of fearful deeds, these enemies of the world, are born for the destruction of the piety of the universe.

10. Being endued with hypocrisy, conceit and folly, and cherishing insatiable desires, they believe in false things, and perform sinful practices.

11. Cherishing boundless thoughts,—thoughts which are limited by death only,—and considering the enjoyment of their desires as the highest aim of life,—they believe that this is all.

12. Bound in hundred nooses of Hope, and addicted to lust and wrath,—they eagerly desire to possess unfair hoards of wealth, so that they may gratify their desires.

13. This is obtained to-day by *Me*,—*I* shall obtain this to-morrow,—*I* have this wealth,—this wealth again will be *mine* in addition to what *I* already possess,—

14. This enemy of *mine* has been killed by *Me*,—*I* shall kill other enemies also,—*I* am the lord,—*I* am the enjoyer,—*I* am successful,—*I* am powerful and happy,—

15. *I* am wealthy,—*I* am nobly born,—who is there in this world as *I* am,—*I* shall sacrifice,—*I* shall make gifts,—*I* shall be merry,—(thus say the demoniac), deluded by ignorance.

16. Tossed about by innumerable thoughts, enveloped by delusion, and attached to the enjoyment of desires, these men sink into the lowliest hell.

17. These men, being self-conceited, stubborn, and full of pride and intoxication of wealth, perform Sacrifices, that are nominal, that rest on hypocrisy, and do not follow the prescribed rules.

18. These men, the servitors, being full of vanity, power, pride, lust and wrath, hate *Me* in their own bodies as well as in those of others.

19. These cruel haters of *Me*, these sinful, vilest men among men, are hurled continually down by *Me* into demoniac wombs (to be demoniac in their next births).

20. O son of Kunti, these men, taking births into demoniac womb, deluded birth after birth, go down to the vilest state.

21. Threefold is the way to hell, ever ruinous to self, namely, lust, wrath and avarice. Therefore, one should, above all, renounce these three.

22. Being freed from these three gates of darkness, O son of Kunti, a man works out his own good. He then reaches the highest goal.

28. He who renounces the ordinances of the *Vedas*, acts only under the impulse of desire. Such a man can never attain to perfection, happiness, or the highest goal.

24. Therefore, the *Vedas* should be your authority in determining what you should do, and what you should not do. It is your

duty to work in this world, having ascertained what are the ordinances of the *Vedas*."

CHAPTER XLI.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—
Continued.

Arjuna said:—

1. "What is the state, Krishna, of those that neglects the ordinance of the scriptures, and perform sacrifices with faith? Is it one of *Satya*, *Raja*, or *Tama?*"

The great one said:—

2. "The faith of man is of three kinds. They are born according to his individual nature. They are also of *Satya*, *Raja*, and *Tama*. Hear what they are.

3. The faith of man, O Bharata, is according to his own nature. A man may be full of faith, and as his faith is, so he will be.

4. Those who are of the *Satya* quality worship the celestials; those of *Raja* worship *Yakshas* and *Rakshas*, and those of *Tama* do the same to departed spirits and ghosts.

5. Those who practise severe penances not ordained by the *Vedas*, who are full of hypocrisy and pride, desire, attachment and violence,

6. Who has no discernment, but who torture their physical organs, thereby torturing *Me* who seat within the body, should be known to be of demoniac nature.

7. Food which is dear to all is also of three kinds. Sacrifice, penance, and gifts are also of three kinds. Hear from *Me* their distinction.

8. The food that increases longivity, energy, strength, health, and well-being and joy, and which is savoury, indigenous, nutritive and agreeable, is liked by men of *Satya* nature.

9. The food which is bitter, sour, salted, over-hot, pungent, dry and burning, and which produces pain, grief and disease, is desired by a man of *Raja* temperament.

10. The food which is cold, not savoury, stinky, corrupt, filthy and a refuse, is liked by men of *Tama*.

11. *Satya* Sacrifice is one which, being prescribed by the *Shastras*, is performed by a man who desires no fruit from it, and who performs it by believing it to be only a duty.

12. But, O chief son of Bharata, *Raja* Sacrifice is that which is performed in expectation of receiving fruits from it and for ostentatious show.

13. And *Tama* sacrifice is that which is performed against the ordinances of the *Shastras* in which food is not distributed; *Mantras* are not recited, fees are not paid to the assisting priests and which is void of faith.

14. Reverence to Celestials, regenerate ones, preceptors, and learned men, and purity, uprightness, the practices of a *Brahmachari*, and abstention from injury, constitute the penance of body.

15. The words that does not disturb any body and which is agreeable, true and beneficial, and the diligent study of the *Vedas*, is the penance of speech.

16. Serenity of mind, gentleness, taciturnity, self-restraint, and purity of disposition, constitute the penance of mind.

17. Now *Satya* Penance is that in which this three-fold penance is performed with perfect faith, with devotion and without the desire for fruit.

18. *Raja* Penance is that which is performed with hypocrisy for gaining respect, honour, and revenue, and which is unstable and transient.

19. *Tama* Penance is that which is performed under a deluded belief, and with torture of one's self, and for the destruction of another.

20. *Satya* gift is that which is given because it ought to be given; it is given to one who cannot return it in any way; it is given in a proper place, at a proper time, and to a proper person.

21. *Raja* gift is that which is given reluctantly, for return of some sort of service or benefit, and with an eye to fruit.

22. *Tama* gift is that which is given without respect and with contempt to an unworthy object in an improper place and at an improper time.

23. OM, TAT, SAT, these are the three-fold designation of *Brahma*. The *Brahmanas*, the *Vedas* and the *Jagmas* are all ordained in ancient time by *Brahma*.

24. Therefore, uttering the syllable OM, all utterers of *Brahma* begin their sacrifices, gifts and penances, as ordained in the *Shastras*.

25. Uttering TAT, the various sacrifices, gifts and penances are performed by those who desire emancipation, and who do it without expectation of fruit.

26. SAT denotes existence and goodness, O Partha; it is used in any suspicious acts.

27. Constancy in sacrifices, penances and gifts is also called SAT. For its sake an act is also called SAT.

28. Whatever oblation is offered in a sacrifice, whatever is given away, whatever penance is performed, and whatever is done, if done without faith, is, O Partha, the opposite of SAT. It (opposite of SAT,) will do no good to the life in this world or hereafter in the next."

CHAPTER XLII.

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Arjuna said:—

1. "O mighty-armed, I desire to know the true nature of *Sanyasa* (Renunciation) and *Tyaga* (Abandonment). O slayer of Keshi, I want to know them distinctly."

The great one said:—

2. "Rejection of works with some desire is known by the learned as *Sanyasa*. But the abandonment of the desire for the fruit of all works, is called *Tyaga*, by the discerning man.

3. Some wise men say that work itself should be abandoned considering it to be evil; others say that the works of sacrifice, gifts and penance should not be renounced.

4. O best of Bharata's son, listen to my opinion about *Tyaga*, for O powerful of men, *Tyaga* is of three kinds.

5. The works of sacrifice, gifts and penance should not be renounced. They should indeed be performed, for, sacrifices, gifts and penances are the means for the purification of the wise.

6. But these works should be performed without attachment and without the desire for fruit. Partha, this is my decided opinion.

7. The Renunciation of work is not proper. It is the result of delusion and arises from *Tama*.

8. When work is abandoned from bodily fear and from the consideration of pain, such abandonment arises from *Raja*, and one who makes such abandonment never obtains the fruit of *Tyaga*.

9. The abandonment of attachment and the fruit of actions which are performed, because they are prescribed in the *Shastras*, O Arjuna, is considered to be of the quality of *Satya*.

10. He, who has such *Tyaga*, being possessed of intelligence and with doubts dispelled, has no aversion for an unpleasant action, and has no attachment for pleasant ones.

11. Actions cannot be absolutely abandoned by man; therefore he, who abandons the fruit of actions, is a true *Tyagee*.

12. Those, that do not abandon the desire for the fruit of actions, have after death threefold fruits,—good, bad and indifferent.

13. Listen to me, O mighty-armed, (I shall declare to you) the five causes for the completion of actions, as told in the *Sankhya* which treats with the annihilation of actions.

14. Substratum (body), Agent (mind), Organs (physical), Efforts (vital breaths), and Duties (senses),—these are the five causes.

15. With body, speech or mind, whatever work, good or bad, a man performs, these five are their causes.

16. Such being the case, he who, owing to his uncultivated understanding and dull mind, sees his own self as the sole agent of all actions, sees nothing.

17. He who has no egoism, and whose mind is not sullied, does not kill,—or fettered by action,—if he kills all these people.

18. Knowledge, the object of Knowledge and the Knower, form the threefold impulse of action. Instrument, action and the [illegible] Agent form the threefold con[illegible] of action.

19. Knowledge, Action and Agent have threefold enumeration, according to the difference of qualities. Listen to them now.

20. *Satya* Knowledge is that by which One Eternal Essence undivided in the divided is seen in all things.

21. *Raja* Knowledge is that which sees various Essences of different things, on account of their separateness.

22. *Tama* Knowledge is that which sees each single object as if it were the whole, which is without reason, and without truth, and which is mean and low.

23. *Satya* Action is that which is prescibed in the *Shastras*, which is performed without attachment, desire or aversion, and without the desire for any fruit by the performer.

24. *Raja* Action is that which is attended with great trouble and which is performed by one who desires for the fruit of action, and who is filled with egoism.

25. *Tama* Action is that which is performed from delusion, without regard to

consequences, and with one's own loss and injury as well as of others.

26. *Satya* Agent is he who is free from attachment, and egoism, who is full of constancy and energy, and who is unmoved both in success and failure.

27. *Raja* Agent is he who is full of affections, who desires for the fruit of actions, who is covetous, cruel and impure, and feels both joy and sorrow.

28. *Tama* Agent is he who is void of application, who is without discernment, who is obstinate, deceitful malicious, idle, desponding, and procrastinating.

29. Listen to the three-fold division of intellect and constancy. O Dhananjaya, I shall exhaustively and distinctly speak to you on this matter.

30. *Satya* Intellect, O Partha, is that which knows action and inaction, what ought to be done and what ought not to be done, and which knows fear and fearfulness, bondage and deliverance.

31. *Raja* Intellect, O Partha, is that by which one imperfectly discerns right and wrong, and what ought to be done and what ought not to be done.

32. *Tama* Intellect, O Partha, is that by which, being one covered by ignorance, considers wrong to be right, and sees all things in a reverse state.

33. *Satya* Constancy, O Partha, is that by which through devotion one controls the function of the mind, the life-breaths and the senses.

34. *Raja* Constancy, O Partha, is that by which through attachment one holds to religion, and profit, wishing for fruit.

35. *Tama* Constancy, O Partha, is that through which undiscerning person does not abandons sleep, fear, sorrow, dependency and folly.

36—37. Now hear from *Me*, O best of Bharata race, what are the three kinds of happiness. *Satya* Happiness is that in which one finds pleasure from repetition of enjoyment, which brings an end to all pain, which is like poison in the beginning, but ambrosia afterwards, which is born out of serenity, and is produced by knowledge.

38. *Raja* Happiness is that which arises from the contact of the senses with their objects, and which resembles ambrosia in the beginning and poison next.

39. *Tama* Happiness is that which deludes the self in the beginning and in its consequences, and which arises from sleep, indolence and foolishness.

40. There is none, either among the beings on earth or among the celestials in heaven, which is free from these three qualities born of Nature.

41. O chastiser of foes, the duties of Brahmanas, Kshatryas, Vaisyas, and Sudras are each distinguished by these three qualities, born of nature.

42. Tranquillity, self restraint, penances purity, forgiveness, rectitude, knowledge, experience and faith, these are the distinctive features of a Brahmana.

43. Bravery, energy, firmness, skill, firmness in battle, liberality, majesty,—these are distinctive features of a Kshatrya.

44. Agriculture, tending of cattle and trade,—these are the duties of a Vaisya. The natural duty of a Sudra is service.

45. Every man, if he engages in his own natural duty, attains to perfection. Hear, how man attains to perfection by performing his own natural duties.

46. Worshiping Him, from whom are the life of beings, and by whom all the universe is pervaded, by the performance of his own duty man is sure to attain to perfection.

47. Better is one's own duty, though performed imperfectly, than another's duty well-performed. Man incurs no sin by performing his duty prescribed by Nature.

48. Man must not, O son of Kunti, abandon his natural duties, however bad they might be—for all actions are enveloped by error as fire by smoke.

49. He whose mind is unattached to any thing, who has subdued his self, and whose desire is gone, through *Sanyasa*, obtains the supreme perfection of freedom from action.

50. Learn in brief, O son of Kunti, how a man, obtaining perfection, attains to *Brahma*, the Supreme End of Knowledge.

51. Having a pure mind, restraining his self by constancy, renouncing all objects of sense, and casting off affection and aversion,

52. He who resides in a lonely place, eats little, restrains his speech, body and mind, who is ever intent on meditation and abstraction, who is unconcerned,

53. Who is free from egoism, violence, pride, lust, wrath, surroundings, who is devoid of selfishness and is tranquil, becomes fit for assimilation with *Brahma*.

54. Becoming one with *Brahma*, and obtaining tranquillity in spirit, man grieves not and desires not. Seeing all beings alike, he obtains the highest devotion to *Me*.

55. By devotion he truly knows Me, truly what I am and who I am. Then knowing Me truly, he forthwith enters into Me.

56. Even performing all actions at all times, such a man, having his refuge in Me, obtains through My favour that state which is eternal and imperishable.

57. Mentally dedicating all actions to Me, resorting to mental abstraction, being devoted to Me, fix your thoughts constantly on Me.

58. Fixing your thoughts on Me, you will surmount all difficulties through My favour. But if from self-conceit you do not listen to Me, you will surely perish.

59. If out of self-conceit you think. "I will not fight,"—Your this resolution will be in vain, for surely will Nature rule you.

60. Bound by your own Duty, ordained by Nature, you will involuntarily do that, which, out of delusion, you do not wish to do.

61. The Lord, O Arjuna, as if mounted on a machine, sits in the heart of all beings, turning them as He pleases by His illusive power.

62. O Bharata, seek shelter under Him in every way. By his favour, you will get Supreme Peace and the Eternal Seat.

63. I have thus declared to you the knowledge which is more mysterious than any other mystery. Reflect on it fully, and then act as you like.

64. Once more hear My supernatural words, the most mysterious mystery of all. You are very dear to Me; therefore, I tell you what is good for you.

65. Fix your heart on Me, become My devotee, sacrifice to Me, bow down to Me,—you will then come to Me. I tell you the truth, for you are very dear to Me.

66. Forsaking all religious duties, come to Me,—come to Me as thy sole refuge. I shall deliver you from all your sins. Do not grieve.

67. This knowledge that I have told you must not be declared by you to one who does not practise penances, who is not a devotee, who never waits on a preceptor, and who always culminates Me.

68. He, who will inculcate this supreme knowledge to those who are devoted to Me, offering Me his highest devotion, being freed from all doubts, will come to Me.

69. Amongst men none can be dearer to Me than such a man. None on earth can do Me greater service also than he.

70. And he, who will study this holy conversation between us, will offer to Me the sacrifice of Knowledge. This is my opinion.

71. Even he, who, with faith and without evil, will hear it, being freed from (the bond of births), will obtain the blessed seat of those that perform pious acts.

72. Have you heard, O Partha, this knowledge with mind undirected to any other object? Has, O Dhananjaya, your delusion, caused by ignorance, been destroyed?"

Arjuna said :—

73. "O undecaying One, through your favour my delusion is gone, I now know what I am. I am now firm. My doubts have been dispelled. I will obey you. I will do thy bidding."

Sanjaya said :—

74. O king, I heard this wonderful and hair-stirring words of Vasudeva and Partha.

75. Through the favour of Vyasa, I myself heard this mysterious, great and best words from the very lips of the Lord of Yoga, Srikrishna.

76. O king, I am feeling more and more pleasure as much as I am remembering the holy and wonderful words between Srikrishna and Arjuna.

77. O king, I am feeling more and more pleasure as much as I am remembering the wonderful manifestation of Srikrishna.

78. Wherever exist the Lord of Yoga Srikrishna and the great bowman Arjuna, there certainly do wealth, victory and glory exist.

Thus ends the forty-second chapter, the conversation between Krishna and Arjuna, in the Bhagavat-Gita of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLIII.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA).

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing Dhananjaya (Arjuna) take up once again his Gandiva and arrows, the great car-warriors (of the Pandava army) sent up a tremendous shout.

2. Those heroes, the Pandavas, and the Somakas, and those that followed them, blew their sea-born conchs in great delight.

3. Drums and *Pasis* and *Krakachas* and cow-horns were beat and blown together and the uproar made was very loud.

4. O ruler of men, then there came the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Pitris, the Siddhas and the Charanas with the desire of witnessing (the battle).

5. The highly blessed *Rishis* came there in a body with Satakratu (Indra) at their head, so that they might see the great slaughter.

6—8. O king, seeing the two armies, which resembled two oceans, ready for the battle and marching continually forward, the brave king Yudhisthira, Dharmaraja, put off his armour and cast aside his excellent weapons. Then soon alighting from his chariot, he proceeded with joined hands, and with restrained speech towards the direction where the hostile host stood looking at the grand father and facing the east.

9. Seeing him proceed, the son of Kunti, Dhananjaya, soon alighted from his car and followed him accompanied by all his brothers.

10. The lord Vasudeva also followed him. The chief kings also (of Yudhisthira's army) followed him in great anxiety.

Arjuna said :—

11. "O king, what is this you are doing that abandoning us you proceed on foot, face eastwards to the enemy's army."

Bhima said :—

"O great king, where are you going, O ruler of earth, putting aside your armour and weapons, you go towards the enemy's warriors clad in armour, thus abandoning your brothers.

Nakula said :—

13. O descendant of Bharata, you are my eldest brother. Fear troubles my heart on account of your this proceeding (towards the enemy) : Tell us where you are going.

Sahadeva said :—

14. O king, when these hostile troops, both numerous and terrible, stand here to fight with us, where do you go to their directions ?

Sanjaya said :—

15. O descendant of Kuru, though he was thus addressed by his brothers, yet he continued to proceed without uttering a word.

16. To them then the high-souled and the greatly wise Vasudeva thus smilingly spoke " His intention is known to me."

17. Having (first) paid his respects to all the *Gurus*, such as Bhisma, Drona, Kripa and Salya, he will fight with the enemy.

18—21. It is heard in the old history that he, who, having paid his respects to his reverend preceptors and relatives, according to the *Shastras*, fights with those that are his superiors, is certain to win victory in battle. This is my opinion. When Krishna was saying this, a loud uproar of " Alas " and " Oh " rose in the ranks of the troops of Dhritarashtra's son ; but the others remained quiet. Seeing Yudhishthira, the heroic warriors of Dhritarashtra's son thus talked amongst themselves, " This fellow is an infamous wretch of his race. It is apparent that this king is coming in terror to Bhisma.

22—24. Yudhishthira with his brothers has become a seeker after Bhisma's protection. When Dhananjaya is protector and the sons of Pandu, Vrikodara (Bhima), Nakula and Sahadeva, why does this Pandava (Yudhishthira) come (to Bhisma) in fear. Though celebrated in the world, this one could never have been born in the Kshatriya order, for he is weak and his heart is filled with fear of battle." Then those warriors all praised the Kurus.

25—27. Becoming greatly pleased, all of them waved their garments with cheerful hearts, O king, all the warriors then blamed Yudhisthira with his brothers along with Keshava (Krishna). O king, then the Kuru army crying shame to Yudhisthira again became quiet. What will this king say ? What will Bhisma say in reply ?

28—30. What will Bhima who is ever boastful of his prowess in battle and what Krishna and Arjuna say ? What has Yudhisthira to say ? O great king, the curiosity of both the armies in respect of Yudhisthira was great. (In the mean time) the king entered the hostile army full of arrows and darts. He then quickly proceeded towards Bhisma, surrounded by his brothers. Seizing his feet with his two hands, the king (Yudhisthira), the son of Pandu, then thus spoke to Bhisma, the son of Shantanu, who was then ready for battle.

Yudhisthira said :—

31. O invincible one, I bow to you. We shall fight with you. Grant us your permission ; give us your blessings.

Bhisma said :—

32. O ruler of earth, O great king, O descendant of Bharata, if you had not come to me in this battle, I would have cursed you for bringing about your defeat.

33. O son, I am pleased with you. O son of Pandu, fight and obtain victory. Whatever else you have desired to obtain, get them all in this battle.

34. O s[illegible]n of Pritha, ask for a boon which you desire to get. O great king, if it so happens, then defeat will not be yours.

35. O king, a man is the slave of wealth, but wealth [illegible] no one's slave. This is very true. I am bound to the Kurus by wealth.

36. O descendant of Kuru, it is for this I am, like a eunuch, uttering these words that I am bound to the Kurus by wealth. Except battle,—What do you desire?

Yudhisthira said :—

37. O greatly wise one, desiring my welfare from day to day look after my interests. Fight for the sake of the Kurus,—this is my prayer.

Bhisma said :—

38. O king, O descendant of Kuru, what can I do for you. I shall of course fght on behalf of your enemies. Tell me what can I do for you?

Yudhisthira said :—

39. O sire, I bow to you, I ask you (tell us) how we shall be able to vanquish you who are invincible. Tell me this, it is for my benefit,—if you see any good in it.

Bhisma said :—

40. O son of Kunti, I do not see the person who,—even if he be the lord of the celestials—can defeat me in battle when I fight.

Yudhisthira said :—

41. O grandfather, I bow to you. I ask you,—tell us how your death might be caused by your enemy.

Bhisma said :—

42. O sire, I do not find the man who can defeat me in battle. The time for my death is not yet come. (On some future occasion) come to me.

Sanjaya said :—

43. O descendant of Kuru, Yudhisthira then once more saluted him and accepted his words with bent head.

44. That mighty-armed hero surrounded by his brother then went towards the chariot of the preceptor (Drona) through the lines of soldiers who all looked at him.

45. Then bowing down to Drona and walking round him, he spoke these words to that invincible hero,—words beneficial to him.

Yudhisthira said :—

46. 'O invincible hero, I ask you, (tell me) how I may fight without incurrring any sin, and how, O Brahmana, with your permission I may vanquish all my enemies'.

Drona said :—

47. O king, if, having resolved to fight, you failed to have come to me, I would have cursed you for bringing about your defeat.

48. O Yudhisthira, O sinless one, I am now pleased and honoured by you. I give you permission. Fight and win victory.

49. I shall also fulfil your desire. Tell me what you have to say. Battle excepted, tell me what you desire to get.

50. A man is the slave of wealth; but wealth is the slave of none. O king, this is a great truth. I am bound to the Kurus by their wealth.

51. It is for this like a eunuch I am telling you the following—"Battle excepted, what do you wish to get?" I shall fight on behalf of the Kurus; but I shall pray for your victory.

Yudhisthira said :—

52. O Brahmana, pray for my victory and advise me what is good to me. Fight for the Kurus. This is the boon I ask from you.

Drona said :—

53. O king, victory is certain to you,—who have Krishna as y[illegible]unsellor. I wish that you will defeat yo[illegible] [illegible] this battle. [illegible] and [illegible]

54. Where there is righteousness there is Krishna. Where there is Krishna, victory is certain to be there. O son of Kunti, go and fight. Ask me, what shall I speak to you?

Yudhisthira said :—

55. O foremost of Brahmanas, I ask you, hear what I have to say. How shall we in battle defeat you who are invincible?

Drona said :—

56. As long as I fight, so long victory cannot be yours. O king, therefore with the help of your brothers try to kill me soon.

Yudhisthira said :—

57. O mighty-armed one, tell us the means of your death. O preceptor, prostrating myself to your feet I ask you this. I bow to you.

Drona said :—

58. O son, I cannot see such an antagonist who may kill me when I stand in battle, when I fight with my anger excited and when I scatter incessantly shower of arrows.

59. O king, except when I shall be prepared for death, having abandoned my arms and withdrawing myself from all surrounding sights, none will be able to kill me. What I tell you is true.

60. I tell you also that having heard something very disagreeable from some creditable source, I will abandon my arms in the battle.

Sanjaya said :—

61. O king, having heard these words of the wise son of Bharadwaja and also having honoured the preceptor, he (Yudhisthira) went towards the son of Saradwata (Kripa).

62. Bowing down to Kripa and walking round him, O king, Yudhisthira, accomplished in speech, thus spoke to that greatly brave warrior.

Yudhisthira said :—

63. "O preceptor, with your permission I will fight without incurring sin. O sinless one, if I get your permission, I shall (certainly) defeat my enemy."

Kripa said :—

64. "If having resolved to fight, you failed to have come to me, I would have cursed you, O king, for bringing about your defeat.

65. A man is the slave of wealth, but wealth is the slave of none. O king, this is the truth. I am bound to the Kurus by wealth.

66. O king, I must fight for them. I therefore speak like a eunuch in telling you, "Battle excepted, what do you desire to get?"

Yudhisthira said :—

67. O preceptor, I ask you therefore, listen to me.

Sanjaya said :—

Saying this, the king became greatly agitated. Being deprived of his sense, he stood silent.

68. Knowing however what he desired to say, the son of Gautama (Kripa) thus spoke to him, "O king, I am incapable of being killed. Fight and win victory.

69. I am pleased by your coming. O king, rising every day (from my bed), I shall pray for your victory. I truly speak this to you.

70. O king, having heard these words of Gautama (Kripa) and after having paid him due respect, the king went to the place where the Madra king was.

71. Bowing to Salya and walking round him, the king spoke to that invincible warrior these words beneficial to him.

Yudhisthira said :—

72. O invincible hero, if I fight with your permission, I will not incur sin. With your permission I shall defeat my enemies.

Salya said :—

73. If having resolved to fight, O king, you failed to have come to me, I would have then cursed you for bringing about your defeat.

74. I am very much pleased with you. I am much honoured by you. Let it be as you desire, I give you permission, fight and win victory.

75. O hero, speak, what do you want? What shall I give you. O king, battle excepted, what do you desire to get?

76. A man is the slave of wealth, but wealth is the slave of none. O king, this is the truth. I am bound to the Kurus by wealth.

77. O nephew, it is for this I am speaking to you like a eunuch. I shall do as you desire. Battle excepted, what do you wish to get?

Yudhisthira said :—

78. O king, think daily of what is beneficial to me. Fight as you please with the foes. This is the boon I ask from you'

Salya said :—

79. O fire of kings, in the present circumstance what help can I render to you? I shall of course fight on behalf of your enemy, for I have been made one of their party by the Kurus with their wealth.

Yudhisthira said :—

80. O Salya, this was the boon I asked during the preparations for this battle. The prowess of the Suta's son (Karna) should be weakened by you in battle.

Salya said :—

81. O Yudhisthira, O son of Kunti, your this desire will be fulfilled. Go, fight as you please. I shall pray for your victory.

Sanjaya said :—

82. Having received the permission of his maternal uncle (Salya) the king of the Madra, the son of Kunti (Yudhisthira), surrounded by his brothers, came out of the vast (Kuru) army.

83. Vasudeva (Krishna) then went to Radha's son (Karna) on the field of battle. For the sake of the Pandavas, the eldest brother of Gada, then, thus spoke to Karna :

84. "O Karna, I have heard that from the hatred you bear for Bhisma you will not fight. O son of Radha, come to our side, so long Bhisma is not killed.

85. O son of Radha, when Bhisma will be killed, you may come back and fight on Duryodhana's side, if you have no particular leaning for any party.

Karna said :—

86. O Keshava, I shall not do anything that is disagreeable to Dhritarashtra's son (Duryodhana), I am ever devoted to him, know, that my life has been cast off for him.

Sanjaya said :—

87. Having heard these words, Krishna stopped, O descendant of Bharata, he then returned to the Pandavas headed by Yudhisthira.

88. Then, in the midst of all the warriors, the eldest Pandava thus loudly exclaimed "He, who will choose us, will be considered by us as our ally."

89. Thereupon Yuyutsu thus spoke with a cheerful heart to the son of Kunti, Dharmaraja Yudhisthira.

90. I shall fight under you in this battle, O sinless one. I shall fight on your side, if you accept me.

Yudhisthira said :—

91. Come, come, all of us will fight with your foolish brothers. O Yuyutsu, both Vasudeva and all of us say.

22. "I accept you, O mighty-armed hero, fight for my cause. It appears the thread of Dhritarashtra's line, as well as his funeral cake, will rest on you.

93. O prince, O effulgent one, accept us that accept you; the wrathful and foolish Duryodhana will not live.

Sanjaya said :—

94. Then abandoning the Kurus, your son, Yuyutsu, went over to the army of the Pandavas with the beat of drums and cymbals.

95—96. Those foremost of men then all ascended their respective chariots. They placed their troops in battle-array.

97. They ordered thousands of drums and cymbals to be played. Those foremost of men themselves also sent up lion-like roars.

98. Seeing those foremost of men, the Pandavas, seated on their cars, the kings with Dhrishtadyumna and others once more sent up shouts of joy.

99. Seeing the nobleness of the Pandavas, who had paid due honour to those that deserved it, all the kings highly praised them.

100. They talked amongst themselves about the friendship, compassion and kindness to kinsmen displayed on every occasion by those high-minded men.

101. "Excellent"—Excellent"—were the words shouted everywhere. Eulogistic hymns for those illustrious men were chaunted by all. The minds and hearts of every one were attracted towards them.

102. Both the Aryas and the Mlechhas that saw or heard of this conduct of the Pandavas all wept with their voice choked with tears.

103. Those greatly powerful also ordered hundreds and hundreds of large drums and *Pushkaras* to be sounded and thousands and thousands of conchs all as white as the milk of the cows to be loudly blown.

Thus ends the forty-third chapter, going to Bhisma &c, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLIV.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. When the troops of my side and those of the foe were thus placed in battle-array, who struck first, the Kurus or the Pandavas?

Sanjaya said :—

2. Having heard the words of his brother, your son Dushasana advanced with his forces with Bhisma at their head.

3. Desiring to fight with Bhisma, the Pandavas cheerfully advanced with Bhimasena at their head.

4—5. Thereupon lion-like roars, clamorous shouts, the noise of *Krakachas*, the blare of cow-horns and the sounds of drum, cymbals and tabors arose in both the armies. The soldiers of the enemy rushed upon us and we also rushed upon them with loud shouts.

6. The vast armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas shook in that fearful and bloody battle by the sounds of conchs and cymbals, as a forest is shaken by the wind.

7. The great noise,made by those troops consisting of kings, elephants and horses, rushing upon one another in an evil hour, was like that of the ocean in a tempest.

8. When that loud and hair-stirring noise rose, the mighty Bhimasena roared like a bull.

9. Bhimasena's roars rose above the sounds of conchs, and drums, the roarings of elephants and the lion-like shouts of the warriors.

10. The shouts of Bhimasena drowned the neighings of thousands of horses in both the armies.

11. Hearing those shouts of Bhimasena whose roarings resembled that of the clouds and the report of the thunder, your soldiers were filled with fear.

12. Hearing those roars of that hero (Bhima), the horses and the elephants (of both the armies) ejected urine and excreta, as other animals do at the roars of the lion.

13. Roaring like a deep mass of clouds and assuming a fearful appearance, that hero filled your sons with great alarm and then rushed upon them.

14—17. Then all the brothers, your sons Duryodhana, Durmukha, Durshaha, that great car-warrior Dushashan-Durmar-shana, Vivingsati, Chi[illegible]na, the great car-warrior Vikarna[illegible]d also Purumitra, Jaya, Bhoja, the[illegible]ve son of Somadatta,— all [illegible], shaking their bows which [illegible]ooked like so many masses of clouds charged with flashes of lightning, and taking out long arrows looking like so many snakes that have cast off their sloughs, surrounded that great bowman (Bhima) and covered him with a shower of arrows, as clouds cover the sun.

18—19. The sons of Draupadi, the great car-warrior (Abhimanyu) son of Subhadra, Nakula and Sahadeva, Dhrishtadyumna, the son of Prishata, all rushed against the warriors of Dhritarashtra's son and tore them asunder with sharp arrows as the summits of mountains are broken down by the thunder-bolt.

20. In that first encounter that resounded with the terrible twang of the bow and flappings of the leathern fences,none of your party or of that of the enemy turned them back.

21. O best of the Bharata race, O king, I saw the lightness of hands of the disciples of Drona who shot countless arrows and always succeeded in hitting the marks.

22. The twang of the bows did not stop for a moment and the blazing arrows flashed through the air like meteor falling from the sky.

23. O descendant of Bharata, all the kings stood like spectators and saw the interesting and awful battle between kinsmen.

24. O king,then those great car-warriors' remembering the great injuries they had suffered, challenged one another in anger and tried their utmost (to win victory).

25. The two armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas, full of elephants, horses and cars, looked exceedingly beautiful on the field of battle, like painted figures on canvas.

26. Then all the kings took up their bows. The sun was covered by the dust raised by the combatants.

27—30. Under the command of your son, they rushed upon the enemy at the head of their respective troops. Fearful was the uproar made by the elephants and horses of the kings rushing to the charge, mingled with the lion-like shouts of the warriors and the din made by the sounds of conchs and drums. The uproar of that ocean (the battle field), which had arrows for its crocodiles bows for its snakes, sword[illegible] tortoises and the forward leaps of the warriors for its tempest, look[illegible]ed like a real ocean agitated by a tempest. Thousands of kings commanded by Yudhisthira attacked the ranks of your son with their respective troops.

31—32. While fighting, or retreating, or rallying again, neither the men of our side nor those of the enemy's could be distinguished. But your father (Bhisma) shone transcending all that countless host in that fearful and terrible battle.

Thus ends the forty-fourth chapter, the commencement of the battle, in the Bhisma-vadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLV.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O king, in the morning of that awful day commenced the fearful battle that mangled the bodies of so many kings.

2. Desiring victory in battle, the loud shouts that the Kurus and the Srinjaya made, resembling those of so many lions, caused the earth and the sky to be resounded.

3. A tremendous uproar was heard mingled with the flappings of the leathern

fences and the blare of conchs. Lion-like roars rose from men shouting at one another.

4. O best of the Bharata race, the twang of the bow-strings, the heavy tread of infantry, the furious neighing of horses,

5. The falling of sticks and iron hooks, the clash of weapons, the jingle of bells round the necks of elephants rushing upon one another,

6. The clatter of the wheels of cars that resembled the roars of clouds,—all these mingled together,—produced a hair-stirring uproar.

7. All the Kuru warriors, reckless of their lives, with cruel intentions, rushed upon the Pandavas with their standards upraised.

8. O king, taking up a fearful bow that resembled the rod of death himself, the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, rushed upon Dhananjaya (Arjuna) on the field of battle.

9. The greatly powerful Arjuna also, taking up the bow Gandiva which is celebrated all over the world, rushed upon the son of Ganga (Bhisma) on the field of battle.

10. Both those two foremost heroes of the Kuru race desired to kill each other. Though the mighty son of Ganga pierced Partha with his arrows, yet he could not make him waver.

11. O king, that son of Pandu (Arjuna) also could not make Bhisma waver in battle. The great bowman Satyaki rushed against Kritavarmana,

12-14. The fight between these two (heroes) was extremely fearful and hairr-stiring. Satyaki wounded Kritavarmana and Kritavarmana wounded Satyaki with loud shouts and thus they weakened each other. Pierced all over the body with arrows, those two great warriors shone like two blossoming *Kinsukas*, when they are adorned with flowers in spring. The great bowman Abhimanyu fought with Vrihadvala.

15. O king, the ruler of Kosala, soon, in that battle, cut off the standard and overthrew the charioteer of the son of Subhadra, (Abhimanyu).

16. When his charioteer was overthrown, Subhadra's son was filled with wrath. O king, he pierced Vrihadvala with nine arrows.

17. That chastiser of foes, (Abhimanyu) with a couple of sharp arrows cut off his standard, with one (arrow) he cut down one of the protectors of his car-wheels and with another his charioteer.

18—19. Those (two) chastisers of foes fought on and weakened each other with sharp arrows. Bhimasena fought with your son Duryodhana, that great car-warrior who had injured (the Pandavas) in pride. Both of those Kuru chiefs are foremost of men and both of them are great car-warriors.

20—23. They covered each other, on the field of battle, with showers of arrows. O descendant of Bharata, seeing the fight between these two illustrious and accomplished warriors learned in all the modes of warfare, all creatures were filled with amazement. Dushasana rushed against the great car-warrior Nakula and pierced him with many sharp arrows. The son of Madri laughingly cut off with his sharp arrows the standard and the bow of his adversary. He then wounded him with twenty-five small-headed arrows.

24. Your son who is ever difficult to be vanquished then killed in that fearful battle Nakula's horses and then cut down his standard.

25. Durmukha rushed upon the mighty Sahadeva. He fought with him in that terrible battle and pierced him with a shower of arrows.

26. The heroic Shahadeva soon overthrew in that fearful battle Durmukha's charioteer with a sharp arrow.

27. Both of them were irresistible in fight. Each, attacking the other, and ... desirous of warding off each other's attack, struck terror into each other with fearful arrows.

28. The king Yudhisthira himself fought with the ruler of the Madra. The Madra king cut off the bow of Yudhisthira.

29. Thereupon, the son of Kunti, took up another bow which was stronger and capable of inparting greater velocity.

30. The king, then saying in great wrath "Wait" "Wait" covered the king of Madra with straight arrows.

31—34. O descendant of Bharata, Dhristadyumna rushed against Drona. In great anger Drona cut off in that battle the hard bow of the illustrious Panchala prince,—the bow which was ever capable of taking the lives of the foes. He shot in that battle a fearful arrow which was like the second rod of Yama. The arrow thus shot penetrated into the body of the prince. Taking up another bow and fourteen arrows, the son of Drupada pierced Drona with his arrows. Enraged with each other they fought on.

35. O king, the impetuous Sankha met Somadatt'a son who was equally impetuous

in battle and he shouted out to him "Wait" "Wait".

36. That hero then pierced his right arm in that fight. Thereupon the son of Somadatta wounded Sankha on the shoulders.

37. O king, the battle that was fought between these two proud heroes soon became as fearful as the battle between the celestials and the Asuras.

38. O king, that high-souled great car-warrior Dhristaketu angrily rushed upon Valhika who was the very embodiment of anger.

39. O king, great Valhika, sending up a lion-like roar, weakened the wrathful Dhristaketu with countless arrows.

40—41. The king of the Chedis, then becoming exceedingly angry, quickly pierced Valhika with nine arrows in that battle. Like an infuriated elephant attacking another infuriated elephant, they roaerd against each other in great anger. They fought in great wrath and they looked like the planets *Angaraka* and *Vudha*.

42. The doer of cruel deeds, Ghatatkacha, O descendant of Bharata, wounded that mighty and angry Rakshasha (Alambusha with ninety sharp arrows.

43. Alambusha, in that great battle, wounded the mighty son of Bhimasena (Ghatatkacha) in many places with straight arrows.

44. Wounded with arrows they appeared in that battle like the mighty Indra and the powerful Vala in the battle between the celestials and the Danavas.

45. O king, the mighty Shikhandin attacked Drona's son. But Aswathama severely wounded Shikhandin with a sharp arrow and thus made him tremble.

46. O king, Shikhandin also wounded the son of Drona (Ashwathama) with a sharp and excellent weapon.

47—48. They brought on striking each other with various kinds of arrows. O king, Virata, that commander of an army, rushed against the heroic Bhagadatta in battle. Becoming exceedingly angry, Virata shot at Bhagadatta a shower of arrows, as the clouds shower rain on a mountain. But that ruler of earth, Bhagadatta, soon covered Virata with arrows as clouds cover the sun. The son of Saradwata, Kripa, attacked the ruler of the Kaikeyas named Vrihadkshatra.

52. O descendant of Bharata, Kripa covered him with a shower of arrows. Vrihadkshatra also covered the angry son of Gautama with a shower of arrows.

53. Having killed each other's steeds and cut off each other's bows, those (two) warriors were both deprived of their cars. Becoming exceedingly angry, they attacked each other with swords.

54—56. The battle they then fought was fearful and unparalled. That chastiser of foes, king Drupada, angrily rushed on the ruler of Sindhu, Jayadratha. The Sindhu king wounded Drupada in that battle with three arrows, and Drupada too wounded him in return. The battle they fought was fearful and terrible.

57—58. It gave satisfaction to the hearts of all spectators; it was like the conflict between the planets *Sukra* and *Angaraka* your son Vikarna with fleet steeds attacked the greatly powerful Sutasoma and they began to fight. Though Vikarna wounded Sutasoma with many arrows, yet he failed to make him waver.

59—61. Sutasoma also could not make Vikarna waver. It was a wonderful sight. That great car-warrior, that foremost of men, that greatly powerful Chekitan rushed upon Susarman for the sake of the Pandavas. O king of kings, Susarman however checked the advance of that great car-warrior Chekitan with heavy showerof arrows. Chekitana also becoming exceedingly angry showered on Susarman a shower of arrows as a mass of clouds shower rains on a mountain.

62. O king, the greatly powerful Sakuni attacked the mighty Prativindhya as a lion attacks an infuriated elephant.

93. The son of Yudhisthira in great anger wounded Suvala's son with many sharp arrows as Maghavat (Indra) mangles a Danava.

64. In that terrible battle, Sukuni also wounded Prativindhya and mangled the body of that greatly intelligent warrior with sharp arrows.

65. O great king, Srutakarman attacked in that battle the great car-warrior, the mighty Sudhakshina, the king of the Kambhojas.

66. O king of kings, Sudhakshina wounded that great car-warrior the son of Sahadeva, but he could not make him waver; he stood as the Mainaka mountain.

67. Thereupon Srutakarman in great anger weakened that great car-warrior of the Kambhojas with countless arrows and mangled him in many parts of his body.

68. That chastiser of foes, Iravan rushed in great anger on the wrathful Srutayush in that great battle.

69. The mighty son of Arjuna, that great car-warrior, then killing the horses of his adversary, sent up a loud roar. O king, all the kings praised him (by his this great feat).

70. Srutayusha, in great anger, killed in that battle the horses of the son of Arjuna with a great mace and then they fought on.

71. The two princes of Avanti, Vinda and Anuvinda attacked in that battle the great car-warrior the brave Kuntibhoja who was with his son at the head of his troops.

72. We saw wonderful prowess in those two princes, for they fought with great coolness, though they had to fight with a very large number of troops.

73. Anuvinda hurled a mace at Kuntibhoja, but he (Kuntibhoja) soon covered him with a shower of arrows.

74. The son of Kuntibhoja wounded Vinda with many arrows but he too wounded him in return. The battle they fought was wonderful.

75. O respected one, the Kekaya brothers at the head of their troops attacked in that battle the five Gandharva princes with their troops.

76. Your son Viravahu fought with that foremost of car-warriors, Uttara, the son of Virata and wounded him with nine arrows.

77. Uttara also wounded him with many sharp arrows; O king, the ruler of Chedi attacked in that battle Uluka.

78. He wounded Uluka with a shower of arrows and Uluka too wounded him with sharp arrows with excellent wings.

79. O king, the battle they fought was fearful in the extreme, for, being unable to defeat each other, they fearfully mangled each others body.

80. Thus in that great battle thousands of single combats were fought between car-warriors, elephant-men, horse-men and foot-soldiers of both the sides.

81. For a short time the battle looked beautiful, but O king, it soon grew furious and nothing could be seen.

82. In that battle elephants rushed against elephants, car-warriors against car-warriors, horsemen against horsmen and foot-soldiers against foot-soldiers.

88. The battle then became confused and fearful in the extreme. The heroes rushed against one another in a great number;

84. The celestial Rishis, the Siddhas and Charanas who were present, saw that battle as if it were the battle between the gods and the demons.

85. Thousands of elephants and cars, countless horsemen and foot-soldiers, appeared to have altered their character.

86. O foremost of men, it was seen that car-warriors, elephants, horsemen and foot-soldiers, all fought with one another, again and again, on the same places.

Thus ends the forty-fifth chapter, the single combats, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLVI.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O king, O descendant of Bharata, I shall now describe to you the fight of hundreds and thousands of foot-soldiers, who were in utter forgetfulness of all considerations for others.

2. The son did not recognise the father and the father the son. The brother did not recognise his own brother and the sister's son did not recognise his maternal uncle.

3. The maternal uncle did not recognise his sister's son, and the friend did not recognise the friend. The Pandava and the Kuru forces fought as if they had been possessed by demons.

4. O foremost of men, some warriors attacked with their cars the cars of the enemies, and crushed the yokes of those cars to pieces.

5. The shafts of cars broke dashing against shafts of other cars, the spikes of car-yokes broke against spikes of car-yokes. Some unitedly attacked others that were united but all were eager to take one another's life.

6—8. Some cars were obstructed by other cars and they were unable to move. Huge elephants with rent temples fell upon other huge elephants. They angrily tore one another's body with their tusks. O king, others, again, attacking other impetuous and huge ones with huge standards on their backs, being wounded by tusks, roared in great agony.

9. Disciplined by training and urged on by pikes and hooks, elephants not in rut attacked those that were in rut.

10. Huge elephants, attacked by those that were in rut, ran away in all directions, uttering cries like those of cranes.

11—12. Many huge elephants, well-trained and with juice trickling down from their rent temples and mouth, having been wounded by swords, lances and arrows, shrieked aloud. Pierced in their vital parts they fell down and expired. Uttering fearfu cries, some ran away in all directions.

13--15. O king, the foot-soldiers, that protected the elephants, that possessed broad chests, that were capable of effectually striking the foe, armed with pikes, bows, bright battle-axes, maces, clubs, arrows, lances, shafts and heavy iron-mounted bludgeons and swords of the brightest polish, ran in every direction with the firm resolve of taking one another's life.

16. The swords of brave combatants who rushed against one another having been steeped in blood shone with great brilliancy.

17. The whizing noise of the swords, made by their whirling and falling by heroic arms, became very loud.

18—19. O descendant of Bharata, crushed with maces and clubs, cut off with tempered swords, pierced and grinded by the tusks of elephants, the combatants sent forth heart-rending wails as those of men doomed to hell.

20. Horsemen on fleet horses with tails like the plumes of swans, rushed upon one another.

21. Hurled by them, long, fleet and polished and sharp-pointed darts, decked with gold, fell (on all sides) like so many snakes.

22. Some heroic horsemen on fleet [illegible] leaped up and cut off the heads [illegible] car-warriors who were [illegible] on their cars.

23. [illegible]-warrior, getting a body [illegible] within shooting distance, killed many with straight arrows furnished with broad heads.

24. Many infuriated elephants adorned with gold trappings and looking like newly-risen clouds threw down the horses and crushed them with their legs.

25. Being struck on their frontal globes and flanks, and mangled by lances, many elephants roared aloud in great agony.

26. In the bewildering confusion of the melee, many elephants threw steeds with their riders and crushed them down.

27. Overthrowing with their tusks steeds and their riders, some elephants roved about and crushed cars with their standards.

18. Some huge male elephants, from excess of energy and with the temporal juice gushing down from their temples in large quantities, killed horses with their riders by their trunks and legs.

29. Polished, sharp-pointed and fleet arrows resembling snakes fell upon the heads, the temples and the flanks and the limbs of elephants.

30. O king, fearful, polished javelins resembling large meteoric flashes being hurled by heroic arms fell everywhere piercing through bodies of men and horses, and cutting through coats of mail.

31. Taking out their sharp swords from sheathes made of leopard's and tiger's skins, many killed their adversaries in battle.

32. Many warriors, though attacked and their bodies cut open, fell upon their antagonists with swords, shields and battle-axes.

33. Dragging down and overthrowing cars with their horses by their trunks, some elephants roved about in all directions, guided by the cries of those behind them.

34—36. Some pierced by javelins, some cut down by battle-axes, some crushed by elephants, some trodden down by horses, some cut by the car-wheels and some by axes, O king, loudly called for their kinsmen. Some called upon their sons, some upon their fathers, some upon their brothers some upon their relatives, some upon their meternal uncles, some upon their sister's sons, and some upon their friends and others.

37. O descendant of Bharata, a large number of combatants lost their weapons, many had their [illegible] broken [illegible] some were seen to cry piteously for their desire for life; with arms torn off or sides pierced or cut open.

98. O king, some having but little strength, and lying on the field of battle asked for water from excessive thirst.

39. O descendant of Bharata, some, weltering in blood and becoming greatly weakened, censured themselves and your sons assembled (in that battle.)

40. O exalted one, but there were others,—the brave Kshatriyas, who having wounded one another, did not abandon their weapons nor did they set up any wails.

41—44. There were some, who, lying on those places where they lay, roared in joy, and bitting from wrath their own lips with their teeth, looked at one another with faces rendered fearful by the contraction of their eye-brows. Others, possessing great strength and tenacity, wounded with arrow, remained perfectly silent smarting under their pains. Other brave car-warriors, deprived of their own cars in battle and thrown down and wounded by huge elephants, asked to be taken up on the cars of others. O king, many looked beautiful like blossoming *kinsukas*.

45—47. In that fearful battle, destructive of heroes, the father killed the son and the son killed the father, the sister's son killed

the meternal uncle, the meternal uncle killed the sister's son Friends killed friends and kinsmen killed kinsmen. Thus took place the great slaughter in that great battle between the Kurus and the Pandavas.

48. In that fearful and terrible battle in which no consideration was shown, the Pandavas (at last) began to waver before Bhisma.

49—50. O best of the Bharata race, O king, the mighty-armed Bhisma, with his great standard made of silver and adorned with the device of a palmyra with five stars, sitting upon his excellent car, shone like the moon on the Meru mountain.

Thus ends the forty-sixth chapter, the great slaughter, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLVII.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. O king, when the greater part of that fearful day passed away, Durmukha, Kritavarmana, Kripa, Salya and Vivingsati, urged by your son, came to Bhisma and began to protect him in that fearful battle which was so destructive of the foremost of men.

3. O best of the Bharata race, protected by those five great car-warriors, that great hero penetrated the Pandava army.

4. O descendant of Bharata, the palmyra standard of Bhisma was seen to glide continuously through the Chedis, the Kashis, the Karushas and the Panchalas.

5. That hero (Bhisma) cut off the heads (of the foes) and their cars with yokes and standards with broad-headed, swift and perfectly straight arrows.

6. O best of the Bharata race, Bhisma seemed to dance on his car as it moved about. Some elephants vitally wounded by him, shrieked in great agony.

7. Thereupon Abhimanyu angrily rushed towards Bhisma's car on his own car yoked with excellent horses of brown colour,

8. And adorned with a standard decked with pure gold and resembling a Karnikara tree, he attacked Bhisma and those five foremost of car-warriors.

9. Striking with a sharp arrow the palmyra standard (of Bhisma) that hero fought with Bhisma and those other warriors who were protecting him.

10. Wounding Kritavarmana with one arrow and Salya with five, he weakened his great grandfather with nine arrows.

11. With one arrow shot from his bow drawn to its fullest extent, he cut off (Bhisma's) standard adorned with gold.

12. With one broad-headed and straight arrow capable of penetrating every thing, he cut off the head of Durmukha's charioteer.

13—14. With another sharp arrow, he cut down the gold-decked bow of Kripa. With many sharp arrows that great car-warrior wounded them all. Seeing his lightness of hand, even the celestials were pleased.

15. Seeing the great exactness of Abhimanyu's aim, all the car-warriors with Bhisma at their head, considered that he possessed the great capacity (of his father) Dhananjaya.

16. His bow, sending forth sound like the twang of *Gandiva* while stretched and restretched, seemed to revolve like a circle of fire.

17. Then that chastiser of foes, Bhisma rushing on him with great impetuosity, soon, wounded the son of Arjuna with nine arrows.

18. He too with three broad-headed arrows cut off the standard of that greatly powerful warrior. Of rigid vows, Bhisma also struck his adversary's charioteer.

19. O sire, Kritavarmana, Kripa and Salya, piercing Arjuna's son, all failed to make him, waver for he stood firm like the Mainaka mountain.

20. Though surrounded by those great car-warriors of Dhritarashtra's army, the heroic son of Arjuna still showered, on those five car-warriors, a down pour of arrows.

21. Baffling their great weapons by a shower of arrows and pouring on Bhisma a shower of his arrows, the mighty son of Arjuna sent up a loud roar.

22. When he was thus struggling in the battle, and afflicting Bhisma with (his) arrows, the strength of his arms we saw then was very great.

23. Possessed of such great power, Bhisma shot his arrows at him. But he (Abhimanyu) cut off in the fight all the arrows shot from Bhisma's bow.

24. Then that brave bowman cut off, with nine arrows, the standard of Bhisma

in that great battle. When this great deed was done, the people sent forth a loud shout.

25. Adorned with jewels and made of silver, that tall palmyra-deviced standard, O descendant of Bharata, cut off by the arrows of Subhadra's son, fell down on the ground.

26. O best of the Bharata race, seeing that standard cut down by the arrows of Subhadra's son, the proud Bhima sent up a loud shout to cheer up the son of Subhadra.

27. Then in that great battle, the mighty Bhimasena caused many powerful celestial weapons to appear.

28. The high-souled great grandsire (Bhisma) then covered Subhadra's son with thousands of arrows.

29. Thereupon ten great bowmen and mighty car-warriors of the Pandava (army) soon rushed on their cars to protect the son of Subhadra.

30. O king, these were Virata and his son, the descendant of Prishata, Dhrishtadyumna, Bhima, the five Kekaya brothers, and Satyaki.

31. As they were rushing upon him with great impetuosity, the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, in that great battle, wounded the Panchala princes with three arrows and Satyaki with ten.

32. With one winged arrow as sharp as a razor shot from his bow drawn to its fullest stretch, he cut off the standard of Bhimasena.

33. O foremost of men, the lion-deviced standard of Bhimasena, made of gold, being cut off by Bhisma, fell from the car.

34. Thereupon Bhima wounded the son of Shantanu with three arrows, Kripa with one and Kritavarmana with eight.

35. The son of Virata, Uttara, also riding on an elephant with upraised trunk attacked the king of Madra.

36. But Salya checked the great impetuosity of that foremost of elephants rushing towards his car.

37. But that foremost of elephants angrily placed his leg on the yoke of (Salya's) car and killed his four large and swift horses.

38. The king of Madra, staying on the car the horses of which had been killed, hurled an iron dart, which resembled a snake, in order to kill Uttara.

39. His armour being cut through by the dart, he lost consciousness and fell from the elephant, the hook and the lance also fell loosened from his grasp.

40. Salya then took up his sword, and jumping down from his excellent car, he with great force cut off the large trunk of that great elephant.

41. His armour pierced all over with a shower of arrows and his trunk cut off, that elephant sent forth a loud shriek. He then fell down and expired.

42. O king, performing this great feat, the Madra king soon got on the car of Kritavarmana.

43—47. Seeing his brother Uttara killed and seeing Salya on the Kritavarmana's car, Virata's son Sweta blazed up in anger as fire blazes forth with *Ghee*. That great warrior stretching his large bow that looked like that of Indra, rushed upon Salya, the king of Madra with the desire of killing him. Surrounded on all sides with innumerable car-warriors, he advanced towards Salya's chariot and poured upon him a shower of arrows. Seeing him rush to the fight with the prowess of an infuriated elephant, seven car-warriors of your side surrounded him on all sides with the desire of protecting the ruler of Madras who seemed to be already within the jaws of death.

48—49. Those seven warriors were Brihadvala, the king of the Kosalas, Jayatsena of Magadha, Rukmaratha, the brave son of Salya, Vinda and Anuvinda of Avanti, Sudakshina the king of the Kambhojas, and Jayadratha, the king of the Sindhus and the kinsman of Vrihadkshatra.

50. The stretched bow of these illustrious warriors, decorated with various colours, looked like the flashes of lightning in the clouds.

51. They all poured on the head of Sweta a continuous shower of arrows as the clouds, tossed by the wind, pour rain on the mountain breast when summer is passed.

52. That great bowman, that commander of the forces, being greatly enraged at this, struck their bows with seven broad-headed arrows of great impetuosity.

53. O descendant of Bharata, we saw those bows were cut off. Then within half the time of a wink of the eye they took up other bows.

54. That mighty-armed and high-souled warrior then with seven swift arrows again cut off the bows of those bowmen.

55. Those heroes, those great car-warriors whose large bows had been cut down, swelled in wrath, and grasping darts, sent forth a loud shout.

56—58. O best of the Bharata race, they hurled these seven darts on Sweta's chariot. Those blazing darts, which flew like large meteors with the sound of thunder, were all cut down by that great warrior with seven broad-headed arrows before they could reach him. O best of the Bharata race, then taking up an arrow which was capable of penetrating into every part of their body, he hurled it on Rukma ratha. That great arrow penetrated into his body.

59. Then, O king, being thus struck by the arrow, Rukmaratha sat down on his car and lost all consciousness.

60. His charioteer, however, without betraying any fear, carried him away, senseless and fainted, from the field of battle.

61. Then taking up six other arrows decked with gold, Sweta cut off the standards of his six adversaries.

62. Wounding their horses and charioteers also and covering those six warriors with a continuous shower of arrows, that chastiser of foes, went towards the car of Salya.

63. O descendant of Bharata, when that great general (Sweta) was rushing with great force towards the car of Salya, loud cries of "Oh" "Alas," rose in your army.

64. Then your great son, with Bhisma, at the head and with many other heroic warriors and troops, went towards Sweta's car.

65—67. He thus rescued the Madra king who was at the point of death. Then a fearful and hair-stirring battle was fought between your troops and those of the enemy in which cars and elephants all got mixed up in confusion. The old grandfather of the Kurus poured showers of arrows on Subhadra's son, on Bhimasena and on that great car-warrior Satyaki and also upon the king of the Kekayas, on Virata, on the descendant of Prishata, Dhrishtadyumna, and also upon the Chedi troops.

Thus ends the forty-seventh chapter, the fight with Sweta, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, when that great bow-man Sweta went towards Salya's chariot, what did the Kurus and the Pandavas do ? What did Bhisma, the son of Shantanu do ? Tell me all this, I ask you.

2. O king, hundreds and thousands of the foremost of Kshatriyas, all brave great car-warriors placed their general Sweta in their front,

3. And displaying their prowess to your royal son, O descendant of Bharata, desired to rescue Sweta, with Shikhandin at their head.

4. Those great-car-warriors rushed towards Bhisma's car decked with gold, with the intention of killing that foremost of warriors. The battle that was then fought was fearful.

5. I shall describe to you that wonderful and fearful battle that was fought between your warriors and those of the enemy.

6. The son of Shantanu made many cars empty, for that foremost of all car-warriors cut off many heads by showering his arrows.

7. Possessing the prowess of the sun, he covered the very sun with his arrows. As the rising sun dispels the darkness from around him, so did he remove the foe from around him in that great battle.

8. O king, in that great battle, hundreds and thousands of arrows were shot by him. They were very powerful and they possessed great impetuosity. They killed countless Kshatriyas in that battle.

9. O king, in that great battle, he cut off the heads of hundreds of heroic warriors and elephants clad in thorny mail as summits of mountains are felled by thunderbolt.

10. O king, cars were seen to mingle with cars. One car was seen upon another car and a horse upon another horse.

11. O king, impetuous horses carried here and there the youthful riders killed and hung from their saddle with their bows till in their hands.

12. With swords and quivers stil attached to their person and their armours loosened, hundreds of dead warriors lay on the ground sleeping on beds worthy of heroes.

13. Rushing upon one another, falling down and rising up again, and rushing again having risen up, the combatants fought hand to hand.

14. Struck by one another, many rolled on the field of battle. Infuriated elephants ran in all directions and hundreds of car-warrior's were killed.

15. Car-warriors, with their cars, were crushed (by the elephants). Some warriors fell on their cars killed by other warriors with their arrows.

16—17. Many great car-warriors were seen to fall down from high, their charioteers being killed. A thick dust covered all sides. Then the warriors knew their adversaries by the twang of the bow. From the pressure also on their bodies the combatants guessed their enemies.

18. O king, the warriors fought on with arrows guided by the twang of the bow-strings. Even the very his sing sound of the arrows shot by the combatants at one another could not be heard.

19—20. So loud was the sound of drums that it seemed to pierce the cars. In that tumultuous and hair-stirring uproar, even the names of the combatants could not be heard. Even the father could not recognise his own son.

21. One of the wheels being broken, the yoke being torn off, one of the steeds being killed, the brave car-warrior was overthrown from the car along with his charioteer.

22. Thus many brave warriors, deprived of their cars, were seen to run (in all directions.)

23. He, who was killed, had his head cut off; he, who was not killed, was mortally wounded. When Bhisma attacked, there was none who was not wounded.

24. In that fearful battle Sweta killed innumerable Kurus. He killed hundreds of noble princes.

25. He cut off with his arrows the heads of hundreds of car-warriors and also their arms decked with *Angadas*, and also their bows.

26—27. O king, O best of the Bharata race, car-warriors and car-wheels, the cars themselves, both small and costly standards, many horses and innumerable men and hundreds of elephants were destroyed by Sweta.

28. From fear of Sweta, we abandoned Bhisma that foremost of warriors; we left the battle and retreated to the rear and therefore we now see your exalted self.

29. O descendant of Kuru, retreating beyond the range of arrows and abandoning the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, in that battle, all the Kurus stood (as spectators), though armed for the battle.

30. Ever cheerful even in the hour of cheerlessness, that foremost of men, Bhisma, alone, of our army, stood in that fearful battle as immovable as the mountain Meru.

31. Killing the foes like the sun at the end of the winter, he stood effulgent with the golden rays of his car, as the sun shines with his rays.

32. That great bow-man shot showers of arrows and struck down his enemies in that battle as Vishnu, armed with the discus, struck down the Asuras.

33. While being thus slaughtered (by Bhisma) in that fearful battle, the warriors broke away from their ranks and fled from him (Bhisma) as if he was a fire fed with fuels.

34. While fighting with the great warrior (Sweta), that chastiser of foes, Bhisma, was the only one who was cheerful. Ever devoted to the welfare of Duryodhana, he began to consume the warrior (Sweta.)

35. O King, reckless of his own life, abandoning all fear, he slaughtered the Pandava troops in that great battle.

36. Seeing that (Pandava) general striking Duryodhana's troops, your father Bhisma, also called Devavrata, rushed upon him.

37. Thereupon Sweta covered Bhisma with a great net of arrows. Bhisma also covered Sweta with a shower of arrows.

38. Roaring like two bulls, they rushed against each other like two gigantic mad elephants or like two angry tigers.

39. Baffling each other's weapons by means of their weapons those (two) foremost of men, Bhisma and Sweta fought with each other with the desire of taking each other's life.

40. If Sweta did not protect it, in one single day Bhisma could have in anger consumed the Pandava army with his arrows.

41. Seeing the grandfather made to retreat by Sweta, the Pandavas grew exceedingly delighted, but your son became very much cheerless.

42. Thereupon Duryodhana surrounded by many kings, rushed in anger against the Pandava troops in that great battle.

43. Then Sweta abandoned the son of Ganga, Bhisma, and began to slaughter your son's troops with great impetuosity as the wind up-roots trees with great violence.

44. O king, having routed your army, Virata's son (Sweta) senseless in anger again rushed towards the place where Bhisma stood.

45—46. Those two mighty and great warriors, both blazing with their arrows, fought with each other like Vritra and Vasava in the days of yore, both eager to kill each other. Having drawn his bow to

the fullest stretch, Sweta wounded Bhisma with seven arrows.

47. The brave one (Bhisma) then put forth his prowess; he quickly checked his adversary's valour as a mad elephant checks another mad elephant.

48. That delighter of the Kshatriyas, Sweta, then struck Bhisma; and the son of Shantanu pierced him in return with ten arrows.

49—53. Though thus wounded, that great warrior stood as unmoved as a mountain. Sweta again wounded the son of Shantanu with twenty-five straight arrows at which every one was astonished. Then smiling and licking with his tongue the corners of the mouth, Sweta cut down Bhisma's bow into ten parts with ten arrows. Then taking up a winged arrow made of iron, he crushed the palmyra on the top of the standard of that exalted one (Bhisma). Seeing the standard of Bhisma cut down, your sons thought that Bhisma was killed. The Pandavas in great delight blew their conchs.

54. Seeing the palmyra-standard of the illustrious Bhisma cut down, Duryodhana, in great anger, urged his army to the battle.

55—64. They all carefully protected Bhisma who was then in great distress. To them that stood there as spectators, the king (Duryodhana) thus exclaimed. "Either Sweta or Bhisma will die (to day)". Having heard the words of the king, the great car-warriors soon with four kinds of troops advanced to protect the son of Ganga. O descendant of Bharata, Valhika, Kritavarmana, Kripa, Salya, the son of Jarasandha, Vikarna, Chitrasenaand Vivingsati, all, with great speed, surrounded him on all sides and poured a continuous shower of arrows. That high-souled and mighty warrior then soon checked those wrathful warriors with sharp arrows by displaying his own lightness of hands. Checking them all as a lion checks a herd of elephants, Sweta cut off Bhisma's bow with a thick shower of arrows. Then the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, took up another bow in that battle and wounded Sweta with arrows furnished with the feather of *Kanka* birds. Then that commander (Sweta) in great anger wounded Bhisma in that battle with innumerable arrows in the very sight of all. Seeing Bhisma, that foremost of all the warriors, checked in the battle by Sweta, the king (Duryodhana) became exceedingly cheerless, and your whole army felt themselves in great distress.

65. Seeing the heroic Bhisma checked and wounded by Sweta with his arrows, all thought that Bhisma had been killed.

66—71. Thereupon your father Devavrata, seeing his standard cut down and the army checked, grew greatly enraged and shot at Sweta innumerable arrows. O king, that foremost of heroes Sweta however baffled all those arrows of Bhisma, and he once more cut off with a broad-headed arrow the bow of your father. O king, throwing aside that bow, the son of Ganga took up in great anger another strong and large bow, and aiming seven large broad-headed arrows, killed the four horses of the general Sweta, then he cut down his standard and then the head of his charioteer. Thereupon that great car-warrior jumped down from his car the horses and the charrioteer of which had been killed.

72—77. Seeing Sweta, that foremost of car-wariors, deprived of his car, the grandsire began to strike him on all sides with showers of arrows. Wounded in this great battle with arrows shot from Bhisma's bow, leaving his bow on his car, he took up a dart decked with gold, and, taking up that terrible and fearful dart which resembled the fatal rod of Death and which was capable of killing even Death himself, Sweta thus spoke in anger to the son of Shantanu, Bhisma. "O foremost of men, wait a little and see my prowess." Having said this to Bhisma that greatly powerful and high-souled bow-man hurled that dart resembling a snake.

78. O king, then loud cries of "Oh" and "Alas" rose among your sons when they saw that fearful dart which was as effulgent as the rod of death.

79. Having been hurled from Sweta's hand,—that dart which resembled a snake that had just cast off its slough, fell with great force like a meteor from the sky.

80—81. Your father Devavrata, then, without the slightest fear, with eight sharp and winged arrows, cut down into nine parts that fearful dart which was decked with pure gold and which appeared to be covered with flames of fire.

82. All your troops, O best of the Bharata race, then sent up a loud shout of joy. Virata's son, however, having seen his dart cut down into fragments, lost all sense in anger.

83. Like one whose heart was overcome by the approaching death, he could not settle what to do. O king, deprived of his senses by anger, Virata's son, with smiles,

84. Took up in great cheerfulness a fearful mace for Bhisma's destruction. With eyes red in anger, and looking like a second Yama armed with the rod,

85. He rushed upon Bhisma as a swollen river rushes upon a rock. Considering his great impetuosity as incapable of being checked, the greatly fearful Bhisma,

86. Who is ever skilful in knowing the prowess of others, suddenly jumped down on the ground to avoid that blow. O king, Sweta, however, whirling that heavy mace in anger,

87—88. Hurled it on Bhisma's car like the deity Maheswara (Siva). By the fall of that mace intended for Bhisma's destruction, that car, with its standard, charioteer and horses, was reduced to ashes. Seeing Bhisma, that foremost of car-warriors fighting on foot,

89—91. Many car-warriors, Salya and others soon came to his help. Getting up on another car and stretching his bow, Bhisma slowly advanced towards Sweta. In the meantime he heard a voice in the sky. It was celestial and fraught with his own good. It said, "O Bhisma, O Bhisma, O mighty armed hero, fight without losing a moment.

92. This is the moment fixed by the creator for getting success over this one." Having heard these words uttered by the celestial messenger,

93—94. Bhisma carefully determined to kill Sweta. Seeing that foremost of car-warriors fighting on foot, many great car-warriors rushed unitedly to his rescue. They were Satyaki, Bhimasena, and that descendant of Prishata, Dhristadyumna,

95. The Kekaya brothers, Dhrishtaketu and the greatly powerful Abhimanyu. Seeing them coming to his rescue, with Drona, Salya, and Kripa,

96. That high-souled hero (Bhisma) stopped them all as a mountain resists the wind. When the illustrious warriors of the Pandava army were thus checked,

97—98. Sweta took up a sword and cut off Bhisma's bow. Throwing off that bow the (Kuru) grandfather having heard the words of the celestial messenger set his heart to destroy Sweta as soon as possible. Though baffled, your father Devavrata,

99. That great car-warrior, soon took up another bow as effulgent as the bow of Indra. He stringed it in a moment.

100. O best of the Bharata race, then your father, seeing that great car-warrior Sweta,—though he was then surrounded by those foremost of men (the Pandava warriors) with Bhimasena at their head,

101—103. The son of Ganga (Bhisma), rushed forward to attack Sweta alone. Seeing Bhishma coming, the greatly powerful Bhimasena wounded him with sixty arrows. But that great car-warrior, your father Devavrata, checked Bhimasena, Abhimanyu and other car-warriors with some fearful arrows. He then struck him (Sweta) with three straight arrows.

104. The (Kuru) grandfather, struck Satyaki in that great battle with one hundred arrows, Dhristadyumna with twenty and the Kekaya brothers with five.

105. Having thus checked all those great bowmen with fearful arrows, your father Devavrata rushed towards Sweta alone.

106. Then taking up an arrow which resembled Death himself which was capable of bearing a great strain and which was incapable of being resisted, the mighty Bhisma placed it on his bow-string.

107. That winged arrow, endued with the force of the Brahma weapon, was seen by the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Pishachas, the Uragas and the Rakshashas.

108. That arrow, as effulgent as the fire went through his armour and struck into the earth with a flash like that of the thunder-bolt.

109. As the sun hurriedly retires to his western chamber taking with him the rays of light, so did it pass away out of Sweta's body taking with it his life.

110. When he was thus killed by Bhisma in that battle, we saw him fall down like a loosened peak of a mountain.

111. All the great Kshatrya car-warriors, on the Pandava side, lamented (for his death). But your son and all the Kurus were filled with great delight.

112. O king, seeing Sweta killed, Dushashana danced in joy over the field of battle in accompaniment of the loud music of conchs and drums.

113. When that great bowman, was killed by that ornament of battle, Bhisma, the great bowmen of the Pandava side, with Shakhandin at their head, trembled in fear.

114. O king, when the general (Sweta) was killed, Dhananjaya (Arjuna) and the Vrishni chief (Krishna) slowly withdrew their troops.

115. O descendant of Bharata, both your troops and theirs withdrew and both your troops and theirs frequently sent up loud shouts.

116. O chastiser of foes the great (Pandava) car-warriors entered their camp in great cheerlessness, thinking of the great

slaughter made by their general (Sweta) in that great single combat.

Thus ends the forty-eighth chapter, the death of Sweta, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XLIX.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, when their general Sweta was killed by the foe in that battle, what did those great bowmen, the Panchalas and the Pandavas do ?

2. When they heard that their general Sweta had been killed, what took place between those that fought to kill him and those that retreated before them.

3. O Sanjaya, your words please me for they speak of our victory. My heart does not feel any shame in remembering our transgression.

4—5. The old Kuru chief (Bhisma) is ever cheerful and devoted to us. Though he (Duryodhana) provoked hostilities with that intelligent son of his uncle, (Yudhisthira), yet he once sought the protection of the Pandavas. At that time abandoning everything, he lived in misery.

6—7. In consequence of the prowess of the Pandavas and in consequence of receiving checks everywhere, and also in consequence of placing himself amid entanglement, Duryodhana had (for sometime) recourse to honourable behaviour. Once that wicked-minded prince had to seek their protection, why, therefore, O Sanjaya, had Sweta, who was devoted to Yudhisthira, been killed?

8. This narrow-minded prince (Duryodhana) with all his prosperity has been hurled to the nether regions by a number of wretches. Bhisma did not like this war, nor did the preceptor (Drona),

9. Nor did Kripa, nor Gandhari ; nor did I, O Sanjaya, like it. Nor did the Vrishni chief, Vasudeva (Krishna), nor that son of Pandu, Dharmaraja (Yudhisthira),

10—12. Nor did Bhima, nor Arjuna, nor those two foremost of men, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva. Though always forbidden by me, by Gandhari, by Vidura, by Rama the son of Jamadagni, and by the illustrious Vyasa, yet, O Sanjaya, the wicked-minded and sinful Duryodhana with Dushasana always followed the evil counsels of Karna and Suvala's son (Sakuni), and behaved maliciously with the Pandavas.

13—14. O Sanjaya, I think that he has fallen into great distress. After the death of Sweta and the victory of Bhisma, what did Partha, accompained by Krishna, in anger do ? O child, it is Arjuna whom I fear, and my that fear cannot be dispelled.

15. The son of Kunti, Dhananjaya, is brave, and he possesses great activity. I have no doubt he will, with his arrows, cut into fragments the bodies of his enemies.

16. Seeing that son of Indra, who is equal in battle to Upendra, the younger brother of Indra,—who is a warrior whose wrath and purposes are never futile,—what became the state of your mind?

17. He is brave, he is learned in the Vedas, he is as effulgent as the fire and the sun. He possesses the knowledge of *Aindra* weapon ; that high-souled warrior is ever victorious when he falls upon his foe.

18. His weapons always fall on the foe with the force of the thunder-bolt. His arms are astonishingly quick to draw the bow-string. That son of Kunti is a great car-warrior.

19. O Sanjaya, the invincible son of Drupada also is exceedingly wise. What did Dhristadyumna do when Sweta had been killed in battle.

20. I have no doubt that in consequence of the wrongs they suffered before,and in consequence of the death of their general, the hearts of the Pandavas blazed up.

21. O Sanjaya, thinking of their anger, I never, by day or by night, enjoy any peace of mind on account of Duryodhana. How did the great battle take place ? Tell me all about it.

Sanjaya said :—

22. O king, hear about your great transgressions. You should not put all blame on Duryodhana.

23. Your understanding is like building an embankment when the waters have escaped. It is like the digging of a well when the house is on fire.

24. O descendant of Bharata, when the forenoon had passed away and the general Sweta had been killed by Bhisma in that great fearful battle,

25. That chastiser of foes, Sankha, the son of Virata, that hero who always took delight in battle, seeing Salya stationed with Kritavarman,

26. Blazed up in anger as fire with *Ghee*. That great car-warrior, having stretched his bow that resembled the bow of Indra himself,

27. Rushed upon the Madra king with the intention of killing him. He was supported on all sides by innumerable car-warriors.

28—29. Pouring a shower of arrows, Sankha rushed towards the car of Salya. Seeing him advance like a mad elephant, seven great car-warriors on your side surronnded him in order to rescue the Madra king who was almost within the jaws of death.

30. Roaring like the clouds and taking up a bow full six cubits long, the mighty-armed Bhisma rushed upon Sankha in battle.

31. Seeing that great car-warrior and great bowman thus rush (towards) Sankha, the Pandava army began to tremble like a boat tossed by the tempest.

32. Then Arjuna quickly advanced and placed himself in front of Sankha in order to protect him from Bhisma. Then a great battle was fought between Bhisma and Arjuna.

33. O best of the Bharata race, then Salya jumped down from his large car with his mace in hand, and killed the four horses of Sankha's car.

34. Sankha leaped down from his car thus deprived of its horses, and taking a sword, he ran towards the car of Vibhatsu. He then got on it and once more was at his ease.

36. There were shot from Bhisma's car innumerable arrows with which both the sky and the earth were covered.

37. That foremost of heroes, Bhisma killed with his arrows innumerable troops of the Panchalas, the Matsyas, the Kekayas and the Prabhadraka hosts.

38. Abandoning the battle with the son of Pandu viz., Sabyasachin (Arjuna), Bhisma rushed towards Drupada, the Panchala king, who stood surrounded by his troops.

39—41. As a forest is consumed by fire at the end of winter, so were the troops of Drupada seen to be consumed (by Bhisma). Bhisma stood in that battle like a blazing fire without smoke, or like the sun at mid-day, scorching every thing around. The Pandava troops could not even look at Bhisma.

42. Afflicted with fear, the Pandava troops looked around, and not finding any protector, they appeared like a herd of kine afflicted with cold.

43. O descendant of Bharata, being slaughtered in great numbers and crushed when retreating, the Pandava troops cried "Oh" and "Alas."

44—45. Then the son of Shantanu, Bhisma, with his bow always drawn to a circle, poured a continuous shower of arrows that resembled so many poisonous snakes. Creating continuous lines of arrows in all directions, that vow-observing hero killed innumerable car-warriors of the Pandava's.

46. When the Pandava troops were thus routed and crushed all over the field, the sun set, the night came, and nothing could be seen.

47. O best of the Bharata race, seeing Bhisma still proudly standing in battle, the sons of Pritha withdrew their forces.

Thus ends the forty-ninth chapter, First day's battle, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER L.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA),—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O best of the Bharata race, when the troops were withdrawn on the first day (of battle) and when Duryodhana was exceedingly glad in seeing Bhisma angry in the field of battle,

2. Dharmaraja Yudhisthira soon went to Janardana with all his brothers and with all the kings on his side.

3. Being greatly afflicted with the defeat and seeing Bhisma's prowess, O king, he thus spoke to the Vrishni chief (Krishna).

4. "O Krishna, behold that greatly powerful and mighty bowman Bhisma. He consumes my troops with his arrows as fire consumes dry grass.

5. How shall we even look at that illustrious one who is consuming my troops like fire fed with Ghee.

6. Seeing that foremost of men, that great warrior, armed with bow, my troops afflicted with his arrows, fly away (in all directions).

7. Even angry Yama himself, or the wielder of the thunder-bolt (Indra) or the wielder of the noose, Varuna, or the holder of the mace, Kubera, may be defeated in battle;

8. But the greatly effulgent and mighty car-warrior Bhisma is incapable of being defeated. Such being the case, I am sinking in the fathomless ocean (Bhisma) without a boat.

9—10. O Keshava, O Govinda, when Bhisma is my foe, it is preferable for me to retire into the forest and live there. It is wrong to sacrifice these rulers of earth to

death in the person of Bhisma. Learned as he is in all weapons, O Krishna, he will annihilate my army.

11. As insects rush into the blazing fire for their own destruction, so do my troops in this fearful battle.

12—14. O Vrishni chief, using prowess for the sake of acquiring a kingdom, I am being (unconsciously) led to destruction. My heroic brothers are all wounded with arrows for my sake. They are deprived of both sovereignty and happiness only through the great love they bear for their eldest brother. We highly regard life, for, under the circumstances, life is very precious. During the remainder of my days I will practise the severest asceticism. O Keshava, I shall not bring about the destruction of my friends.

15. The mighty Bhisma continuously kills with his celestial weapons many thousands of my car-warriors who are foremost of heroes.

16. O Madhava, tell me soon what should be done for my good. As regards Arjuna, I see he is indifferent in this battle, he behaves like a spectator.

17. The greatly powerful Bhisma alone, remembering Kshatriya duties, fights with all the prowess of his arms and to the utmost of his power.

18. With his great mace that kills the heroes, this illustrious one (Bhisma), with the best of his powers, achieves the most difficult feats on foot-soldiers, horses, cars and elephants.

19. O sire, this hero, however, is incapable of destroying in a fair fight the troops of our army if he tries for one hundred years.

20. This your friend (Arjuna) alone is learned in all weapons. Seeing us consumed by Bhisma and the illustrious Drona, he only looks on us with indifference.

21. The celestial weapons of Bhisma and those of the illustrious Drona are continuously consuming all the Kshatriyas.

22. O Krishna, such is the prowess of Bhisma: if he is angry, he will, with the help of the kings (on his side), certainly annihilate us.

23. O lord of *Yoga*, search out that great bow-man, that mighty car-warrior who will be able to extinguish Bhisma's prowess, as rain-charged clouds extinguish a forest-fire.

24. O Govinda, through your grace the Pandavas will recover their kingdom when their enemies will be killed, and they will be happy with their kinsmen."

25. Having said this, the high-souled son of Pritha, in great grief, remained silent for a long time in a reflected mood.

26. Seeing the Pandava (Yudhisthira) afflicted with grief and deprived of his senses by sorrow, Govinda thus spoke, giving excessive delight to all.

27. "O best of the Bharata race, do not grieve. You should not grieve, when all your brothers are heroes and illustrious bow-men.

28. I am also engaged in doing good to you, so are the great car-warriors Satyaki, the revered Virata and Drupada and also the descendant of Prishata, Dhristadyumna.

29. O best of kings, O monarch, all these kings with their troops are all in your favour. They are all devoted to you.

30. This great car-warrior, this descendant of Prishata, this Dhristadyumna, who had been placed in command of your troops, is always desirous of your welfare. He is ever engaged in doing what is agreeable to you.

31. O mighty-armed hero, so also is Shikhandin who is certain to be the slayer of Bhisma." Having heard this the king (Yudhisthira) thus spoke to that great car-warrior Dhristadyumna,

32. In that assembly and in the hearing of Vasudeva. "O Dhristadyumna, O descendant of Prishata, mark the words I speak to you.

33. The words uttered by me should not be transgressed. You have been appointed the commander of our forces with the approval of Vasudeva.

34. O foremost of men, as in the days of yore, Kartikeya was the commander of the celestial army, so are you the commander of the Pandava army.

35. O foremost of men, putting forth your prowess, kill the Kurus. O sire, I shall follow you Bhima and Krishna,

36. The sons of Madri, the sons of Draupadi clad in armour and also all the other foremost of kings, O best of men, (will also follow you)."

37. Then giving delight to all who heard him, Dhristadyumna thus spoke; "O son of Pritha, I am the ordained slayer of Drona.

38. I shall now fight with Bhisma, Drona, Kripa, Salya, Jayadratha, and all the other proud kings."

39. When that chastiser of foes, that foremost of princes, that descendant of Prishata (Dhristadyumna) defiantly spoke thus, the Pandava warriors, who were all

greatly powerful, who were all incapable of being defeated, sent forth a loud shout.

40. Then the son of Pritha, Yudhisthira, thus spoke to the descendant of Prishata (Dhristadyumna), the commander of his army. "A *Vyuha* called *Krauncharuna* which is destructive of all foes

41. And which was spoken of by Vrihaspati to Indra in the days of old when the celestials and the Asuras fought, —kindly now form that *Vyuha* destructive of the hostile troops.

42. It was never before seen by any one. Now let the kings see it with the Kurus." Having been thus addressed by that foremost of men, as Vishnu is addressed by the wielder of thunder-bolt,

43—45. He (Dhristadyumna) placed Dhananjaya in front of the whole army in the next morning. The standard of Dhananjaya, (Arjuna) which had been made by the celestial artificer at the command of Indra, looked exceedingly beautiful when it moved through the sky. Adorned with banners of the rain-bow colours, when it coursed through the air like a ranger of the skies, looking like a fleeting vapoury mansion in the sky, O sire, it appeared to glide dancingly along the path by which the car went.

46. The wielder of *Gandiva* with that jewelled standard, and that standard itself with the wielder of *Gandiva*, looked exceedingly grand, as the self-create (Brahma) with the sun.

47. The king Drupada, surrounded by a large number of troops, stood at the head of that *Vyuha*, becoming as if its head. The two kings Kuntibhoja and Saivya became its two eyes.

48. O best of the Bharata race, the ruler of the Dasarhas, the Prayagas, the Daserakas, the Anupakas and the Kiratas were placed in its neck.

49. O king, Yudhisthira with the Patacharas, the Hundas, the Puravakas, and the Nishadas, became its back.

50. Bhimasena, the descendant of Prishata Dhristadumna, the sons of Draupadi, Abhimanyu, and that great car-warrior Satyaki became its two wings.

51—52. They were backed, O descendant of Bharata, by the Pishachas, the Daradas, the Pandras, the Kundavisas, the Mandakas, the Ladakas, the Tanganas, the further Tanganas, the Valhikas, the Tittiras, the Pandyas, the Uddras, the Saravas, Tumbhumas, the Vatsas, and the Nakulas.

53—54. Nakula and Sahadeva stood in the left wing. On the joints of the wings stood ten thousand car-warriors and on the head stood one hundred thousand and on the back one hundred millions and on the neck one hundred and seventy thousand.

55. On the joints of the wings, on the wings and the extremeties of the wings, stood innumerable elephants looking like so many blazing mountains.

56. The rear was protected by Viratas backed by the Kekayas, the ruler of the Kasis, and with the king of the Chedi, with thirty thousand cars.

57. O descendant of Bharata, thus forming this great *Vyuha* the Pandavas, all clad in armour waited for the morning.

58. Their clean, costly and white umbrellas, as brilliant as the sun, shone on the back of their elephants and over their chariots.

Thus ends the fiftieth chapter, Krauncha Vyuha making of the Pandavas, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LI.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:

1—5. O Sire, O descendant of Bharata, seeing that great and fearful *Vyuha*, formed by the immeasurably powerful Pandava, your son (Duryodhana) came to the preceptor, Kripa, Salya, Somadatta's son, Vikarna, Aswatthaman and all his brothers headed by Dushasana, and also all other mighty heroes, assembled there for battle, spoke these words giving great pleasure to all, "You are armed with various kinds of weapons, you are learned in the Shastras. O great car-warriors, each of you singly is capable of destroying the Pandavas with all their troops.

6. How easy it is for you then (to destroy them) when you are united. Our army protected by Bhisma is unlimited and their army protected by Bhima is limited.

7—9. Let the Samsthanas, the Surasenas, the Venikas, the Kukkuras, the Rechakas, the Trigarttas, the Madrakas, the Yavanas, with Satrunjaya and Dushasana, and with also that great hero Vikarna, Nanda, Upananda, and Chitrasena, with the Manibhadrakas protect Bhisma with their respective troops."

10. O Sire, then Bhisma, Drona and your sons formed a great *Vyuha* to resist that of the sons of Pritha.

11. Then, like the lord of the celestials (Indra), Bhisma surrounded by innumerable troops, advanced at the head of a mighty army.

12—14. O king, that great bowman, that greatly powerful son of Bharadwaja (Drona) followed him with the Kuntalas, the Dasarnas, the Magadhas, the Vidarbhas, the Melakas, the Karnas, and the Paravarnas, the Gandharvas, the Sindhusauviras, the Sivis, and the Vasatis with their all combatants. Sakuni with all his troops protected the son of Bharadwaja.

15—16. Then king Duryodhana with all his brothers accompanied by the Aswalakas, the Vikarnas, the Vamanas, the Kosalas, the Daradas, the Vrikas, the Kshudrakas and the Malavas, cheerfully advanced against the Pandava army.

17. O sire, Bhurisrava, Sala and Salya, Bhagadatta, Vinda and Anuvinda of Avanti protected the left wing.

18. Somadatta, Susarman, the ruler of Kambhojas, Sudhakshina, Satayus and Srutayus protected the right wing.

19. Aswatthaman, Kripa, the Satwata hero Kritavarmanan, with large number of troops, protected the rear.

20. Behind them stood many chiefs, Ketumat, Vasudana and the powerful prince of Kashi.

20. O descendant of Bharata, then all your troops, when they were cheerfully waiting for battle, blew their conchs and sent forth lion-like roars.

22. Hearing these shouts, the greatly powerful and the venerable Kuru grandsire uttered a lion-like roar and then blew his conch in great delight.

23. Their conchs, drums, Peshis and cymbals were sounded by all, which created a fearful din all over the field of battle.

24. Krishna and Arjuna, riding on the same car yoked with (four) white horses, blew their excellent conchs adorned with gold and jewel.

25. Hrishikesha (Krishna) blew the conch called Panchajanya and Dhananjaya Devadatta. That doer of fearful deeds, Vrikodara (Bhima) blew his huge conch, called Paundra.

26. The son of Kunti, Yudhisthira, blew the conch called Anantavijaya, Nakula and Sahadeva blew Sughosha and Manipushpaka.

27—28. The King of Kashi, and Saivya and Shikhandin, the great car-warrior Dhristadyumna and Virata and the great car-warrior Satyaki and that great bowman the Panchala king, and also the five sons of Draupadi, all blew their large conchs and sent forth lion-like roars.

29—30. That great uproar, thus uttered by those heroes resounded through the sky. O great king, thus again the Kurus and the Pandavas advanced against each other with the intention of fighting a great battle.

Thus ends the fifty-first chapter, Kuru Vyuha, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LII.

(BHISMA VADHA PARVA)—

Continued

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. When my troops and the troops of our foe were thus placed in battle-array, how did then the foremost of warriors Bhisma begin to strike?

Sanjaya said :—

2. When all the troops were thus placed in battle-array, the warriors all clad in armours waited with their excellent standards upraised.

3. O king, seeing his army look like the infinite ocean, your son Duryodhana, who stood within it, spoke thus to all his troops "You are all clad in armour. Now begin the fight".

4. Then all the (Kuru) warriors, full of cruel intentions and devoid of the desire of living, rushed upon the Pandavas with their standards all upraised.

5. Then a fearful hair-stirring battle took place. The cars and elephants all go mixed up.

6. Arrows with beautiful feathers and with sharp points shot by the car-warriors fell on the elephants and the horses.

7—9. When the battle thus began, the venerable Kuru grandfather, the mighty-armed and terribly powerful Bhisma, clad in armour, took up his bow and rushed upon them. He poured a shower of arrows on the heroic son of Subhadra, on Bhimasena, on the great car-warrior Arjuna, on the ruler of the Kekayas, Virata, Prishata prince Dhristadyumna and also on the Chedi and the Matsya warriors.

10. The great (Pandava) *Vyuha* wavered at that great attack made by that (Kuru) hero. The battle that was then fought by the combatants was fearful.

11. Many horsemen and car-warriors and best of horses fell in quick succession. Many car-warriors of the Pandava began to run away.

12. Then that foremost of men, Arjuna, seeing the great car-warrior Bhisma (destroying the Pandava troops) thus angrily spoke to the Vrishni prince (Krishna his charioteer) "Go to the place where the grandfather is."

13. "O descendant of Vrishni, it is apparent that Bhisma, in anger, will annihilate our troops for the good of Duryodhana.

14—15. O Janardana, Drona, Kripa, Salya, Vikarna with the sons of Dhritarashtra headed by Duryodhana and protected by this great bowman (Bhisma) will destroy the Panchalas. O Janardana, I shall, therefore, kill Bhisma for the good of my troops."

16. To him thus spoke Vamdeva. "O Dhananjaya, O hero, be careful, for I shall soon take you near the grandfather's car."

17. O king, having said this, Sourin (Krishna) took that world-renowned chariot in front of Bhisma's car.

18—19. With countless banners flying, with horses as handsome as a flight of cranes, with the standard upraised; with the ape (on that standard) roaring fearfully, that son of Pandu (Arjuna) came slaughtering the Kurus and the Surasenas on his large car as effulgent as the sun; the rattle of the car-wheel of which resembled that of the clouds.

20—23. That enhancer of the joy of his friends soon came to the fight. The son of Shantanu, Bhisma, protected by the warriors headed by the Sindhu king and by the warriors of the east and also by the Kekayas impetuously met him who was rushing like a mad elephant, thus frightening the brave warriors and destroying the troops with his sharp arrows. Except the Kuru grandsire, and those car-warriors, Drona and Vikartana's son, who else was able to withstand in battle the wielder of Gandiva? O king of kings, Bhisma, the grandfather of the Kurus,

24. Struck Arjuna with seventy-seven arrows, Drona struck him with twenty-five, Kripa with fifty,

25. Duryodhana with sixty-four, Salya with nine, Drona's son (Aswatthama) that foremost of men, with sixty, Vikarna with three, the Sindhu king with nine, and Sakuni with five; O king, Artayani struck the Pandava with three broad-headed arrows. Though struck on all sides, with sharp arrows, that great bowman,

26—31. That mighty-armed one, stood unmoved as a mountain. Thereupon, that greatly powerful hero (Arjuna), of immeasurable strength, pierced Bhisma with twenty-five, Kripa with nine, Drona with sixty, Vikarna with three, Artayani with three and also the king (Duryodhana) with five arrows. Then Satyaki, Virata, Prishata prince Dhistadyumna, the sons of Draupadi, and Abhimanyu all came there to help him. Then the Panchala prince, supported by the Somakas, rushed upon the great bowman Drona who was aiding the son of Ganga (Bhisma). Then Bhisma, that best of all car-warriors, soon wounded that son of Pandu

32—36. With eighty sharp arrows, on seeing which your warriors were all very much delighted. Having heard the joyous shouts of the warriors, that foremost of car-warriors, that greatly powerful Dhananjaya rushed amongst those foremost of car-warriors. O king, he sported with his bow aiming (with success) his arrows at those great car-warriors. Then, that ruler of men, Duryodhana, seeing his troops much afflicted by that son of Pandu, spoke thus to Bhisma, "O sire, O son of Ganga, this mighty Pandava, accompanied by Krishna, cuts down our roots by destroying our troops though you and that foremost of car-warriors, Drona, are alive.

37. O king, it is only for you that Karna has laid aside his weapons and does not fight with the sons of Pritha, though he is a great friend of mine.

38. O son of Ganga, therefore do that by which this Falguna (Arjuna) might be killed." O king, having been thus addressed, your father Devavrata

39—40. Said "Fie to Khastriya usage" and then he went towards the car of Partha. O king, all the chiefs, then seeing both those two warriors face to face for fight with white horses yoked to their chariots, sent up a lion-like roar. They also blew their conchs. Then Drona's son and your son, Duryodhana and Vikarna

41—42. All stood, O sire, surrounding Bhisma in that great battle. So did the Pandavas also stand surrounding Dhananjaya in that fearful battle. The fight then began. The son of Ganga wounded Partha with nine arrows.

43—48. Arjuna wounded him in return with ten arrows. Then with one thousand arrows well-shot, the Pandava Arjuna, ever celebrated for his skill in arms, covered Bhisma on all sides. That net of arrows of Partha, O king, was soon dispelled by

another counter-net of arrows shot by the son of Shantanu, Bhisma. Both being well-pleased and both taking delight in battle, fought with each other, none of them gaining any advantage over the other. The continuous downpour of arrows shot from Bhisma's bow were all baffled by those shot from the bow of Arjuna. So also the shower of arrows shot by Arjuna, was all cut down to the ground by the Ganga's son. Arjuna then wounded Bhisma with twenty-five sharp arrows. Bhisma also in that battle wounded Partha in return with nine arrows.

49—50. Those two great warriors, those two chastisers of foes, wounded each other's horses, and cut down each other's car-wheels and shafts. Then, O king, Bhisma, that best of heroes,

51—52. Struck Vasudeva on his breast with three arrows. O king, struck with three arrows the slayer of Madhu (Krishna) shone like a budded *Kinsuka* tree. Then seeing Madhava thus pierced, Arjuna

53—56. Wounded the charioteer of the son of Ganga with three arrows. Trying to strike each other's charioteers, they could not take aim at each other in that fight. O king, for the great ability and dexterity of the charioteers of both those warriors, their cars made beautiful circles by advancing and retreating. O king, seeking opportunity to strike each other, they often changed their positions to take aim at each other. Both of them blew their conchs and often sent forth lion-like roars.

57—58. With the sound of their conchs and the rattle of their car-wheels, the very earth appeared to be rent asunder. She began to tremble. Subterranean noise was heard. O foremost of the Bharata race, none could detect any defect in any of them.

59. Both of them possessed great prowess and great courage in battle. Each was other's match. Seeing his (Bhisma's) standard alone, the Kurus could come near him;

60—62. So could the Pandavas also come to Partha by recognising his standard alone. O king, seeing the prowess thus displayed by those two foremost of men, O descendant of Bharata, all persons in that great battle were filled with wonder. None marked any difference between the two. Both of them were perfectly invisible by their continuous showers of arrows.

63—65. Soon again both of them became visible. Seeing their great prowess, the Gandharvas, the Charanas, the great Rishis and the celestials thus spoke to one another, "Those (two) great car-warriors, when angry, are incapable of being vanquished even by all the worlds including the celestials, the Gandharvas and the Asuras. This exceedingly wonderful battle will be considered wonderful by all the worlds,"

66—68. Such a battle as this will never take place again. Bhisma is incapable of being vanquished in battle by the greatly wise Partha though he showers his arrows on the bow, car and steed of the forms. So also is that great bowman, the Pandava (Arjuna), incapable of being vanquished in battle by even the celestials. Bhisma is not competent to defeat him. As long as the world would last, so long would this battle be fought equally on both the sides."

69. O king, we heard these words full of praise of both the son of Ganga and the son of Pritha.

70—71. O descendant of Bharata, when these two were fighting with each other, other warriors of your side and of that of the Pandavas killed one another with sharp swords and polished battle-axes, with innumerable arrows and various kinds of other weapons.

72. So long that fearful battle continued, heroic warriors of both sides cut one another down. O king, the battle that was fought between Drona and the Panchala prince was also very fearful.

Thus ends the fifty-second chapter, fight between Bhisma and Arjuna, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LIII.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, tell me how that great bowman Drona and the Panchala prince, the scion of the Prishata race, fought with each other in that great battle.

2. When Shantanu's son, Bhisma, could not escape the son of Pandu (Arjuna) in battle, O Sanjaya, I consider Destiny to be supreme over exertion.

3. When enraged in battle Bhisma could destroy all the mobile and immobile creatures; O Sanjaya, why could he not then escape the Pandava (Arjuna) in battle with his great prowess?

Sanjaya said :—

4. O king, hear about this fearful battle. The son of Pandu (Arjuna) is incapable of being vanquished by even the celestials with Indra at their head.

5. With various kinds of arrows, Drona wounded Dhristadyumna and he cut down his charioteer from his place on the car.

6. O sire, the angry warrior, (Drona) also with four arrows, wounded the four excellent horses of Dhristadyumna.

7. The brave Dhristadyumna also wounded Drona with nine sharp arrows, exclaiming "Wait" "Wait."

8. Thereupon the greatly powerful and high-souled son of Bharadwaja (Drona) covered with his arrows the angry Dhristadyumna.

9. He then took up a terrible arrow for the destruction of the Prishata prince. It resembled in force the thunder-bolt of Sakra. It looked like a second rod of Yama.

10. O descendant of Bharata, seeing that arrow aimed by the son of Bharadwaja, all the troops cried "Oh" and "Alas".

11. But we then saw the great prowess of Dhristadyumna. He stood immovable like a mountain in that battle.

12. He cut down that terrible and blazing arrow which was rushing towards him like his own death. He then poured a shower of arrows on the son of Bharadwaja.

13. Seeing that very great difficult feat achieved by Dhristadyumna, the Panchalas and the Pandavas were all filled with delight. They, again and again, sent forth loud shouts.

14. Then with the desire of killing him, that greatly powerful prince shot at Drona a dart of great force adorned with gold and *Vaidurja* gems.

15. Thereupon the son of Bharadwaja smilingly cut down into three parts that dart adorned with gold and gems that was coming towards him with great force.

16. O king, having seen his dart thus baffled, the greatly powerful Dhristadyumna poured a shower of arrows on Drona.

17. Then that great car-warrior, Drona, baffling that shower of arrows, cut off the bow of the son of Drupada at a favourable opportunity.

18. When his bow was thus cut off in that battle, that highly and illustrious warrior hurled on Drona a mace with the firmness of a mountain.

19. Having been thus hurled by his hand, that fearful mace flew through the sky for the destruction of Drona. Then again we saw the wonderful prowess of Bharadwaja's son.

20.—21. He baffled that mace decked with gold, and having baffled it, he shot at the Prishata prince many sharp arrows well-tempered, and furnished with golden wings. Penetrating the armour of the Prishata prince, they drank his blood.

22. Then the illustrious Dhristadyumna took up another bow, and with all his strength he wounded Drona with five arrows.

23. Then those two foremost of men, covered with blood, looked as beautiful as the *Kinsuka* flowers in spring.

24—25. Then that high-souled hero, (Drona) cut down his bow and with countless arrows covered the Prishah prince (Dhristadyumna) on all sides as clouds shower rains on a mountain.

26—27. He felled his adversary's charioteer from his place, he also cut down his four horses with four sharp arrows. With another arrow he cut off the leathern fence of Dristadyumna's hand.

28. When his bow was thus cut down again, when he was thus deprived of his car and when his steeds were thus killed and his charioteer overthrown, the Panchala prince, displaying great prowess, jumped down from his car with a mace in hand.

29. But, O descendant of Bharata, before he could come down from his car, Drona cut down his mace into many fragments. It was a wonderful feat.

30. Then the mighty-armed Panchala prince took up a large and beautiful shield decked with hundred (golden) moons and also a large sword of excellent make.

31. He, then with great impetuosity, rushed towards Drona with the intention of killing him, as a hungry lion runs towards a mad elephant in the forest.

32—33. Then we again saw the wonderful prowess of Bharadwaja's son,—wonderful was the lightness of hands in using the weapon, and also his strength of arms. He alone checked the Prishata prince with a shower of arrows. Though he possessed great prowess, he could not proceed further.

34. We then saw that the great car-warrior Dhristadyumna stood where he was. He warded off those showers of arrows using his arms with great dexterity.

35. Then the greatly strong and mighty Bhimasena soon came there with the desire of helping the Prishata prince in that combat.

36. O king, he wounded Drona with seven sharp arrows. He soon took up the Prishata prince on a car.

37. Then king Duryodhana asked the ruler of Kalinga to go to the rescue of

Bharadwaja's son with a large number of troops.

38. O lord of men, then those countless Kalingas rushed against Bhima at the command of your son.

39. Then that foremost of car-warriors, Drona abandoned the Panchala prince and met Virata and Drupada, both together.

40. Dhristadyumna then went to support Yudhisthira in battle. Then a fearful and hair-stirring battle was fought

41. Between the Kalingas and the illustrious Bhima,—a battle which was fearful and all-destroying.

Thus ends the fifty-third chapter, fight between Dhristadyumna and Drona, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LIV.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1—2. How did the Kalinga king, that commander of a large army, having been asked by my son and supported by his troops, fight in battle with that doer of wonderful deeds, the mighty Bhimasena, that hero who roved over the field of battle with his club ?

Sanjaya said :—

3. O great king, thus asked by your son, the mighty Kalinga king accompanied by large army, advanced towards the chariot of Bhima.

4—5. O descendant of Bharata, Bhimasena, then, supported by the Chedis, rushed towards that large and mighty Kalinga army consisting of many cars, horses, and elephants. It was armed with great weapons. It was advancing towards him with Ketumat, the son of the Nishadha king, at its head.

6. Inflamed in anger, Srutayush, clad in armour, followed by his troops in battle-array and accompanied by king Ketumat, came in front of Bhima.

7. The Kalinga king with many thousand cars, and Ketumat with ten thousand elephants and also the Nishadas,

8. All, O king, surrounded Bhimasena on all sides. Then the Chedis, the Matsyas, and the Karushas with Bhimasena at their head,

9. And with many other kings, rushed with great force against the Nishadas. Then took place a fearful and terrible battle

10. Between the warriors of both the sides,—all rushing forward with the desire to kill one another. Fearful was the battle that was fought between Bhima and his adversaries.

11—13. O great king, it resembled the battle that was fought between Indra and the great host of the Danavas. O descendant of Bharata, loud uproar rose from that mighty army fighting in that battle. It resembled the sound of the roaring ocean. O king, they cut down one another and made the whole field resemble a crematorium strewn with flesh and blood. Impelled by the desire to kill, they could not distinguish friends from foes.

14. Those brave warriors who were incapable of being easily defeated, cut down even their own friends. Fierce was the struggle that took place between the few and the many,

15. Between the Chedis and the Kalingas with the Nishadas. Displaying their prowess to the best of their power, the powerful

16—17. Chedis abandoned Bhimasena and turned back. When the Chedis turned back, that son of Pandu, Bhimasena met all the Kalingas. He did not turn back depending on the strength of his own arms. The greatly powerful Bhimasena did not move; from his car,

18. He covered the Kalingas with showers of sharp arrows. Then that great bowman, the Kalinga king and that car-warrior, his son,

19. Named Sakradeva, both attacked the Pandava (Bhima) with ten arrows. But shaking his beautiful bow, the mighty-armed Bhimasena,

20. Fought with the Kalinga king, depending only on his own prowess of arms. Sakradeva shot innumerable arrows in that battle,

21. And killed Bhimasena's horses with them. Seeing that chastiser of foes deprived of his car,

22. Sakradeva rushed upon him; and shot many sharp arrows, O great king, on Bhimasena; the mighty Sakradeva poured a shower of arrows as clouds pour rain after the summer is gone.

23. But the greatly strong Bhima stayed on that car, the horses of which had been killed. He hurled from it at Sakradeva a mace made of the hardest iron.

24—25. Killed by that fearful mace, O king, the son of the Kalinga king fell down with his standard and charioteer. Then that great car-warrior the Kalinga king, seeing his son killed,

26—27. Surrounded Bhima on all sides with innumerable troops; then the greatly strong and mighty-armed Bhima took up a sword with the desire of performing a great feat. O king, that foremost of men also took up a matchless shield made of the hide of a bull.

28—29. It was adorned with stars and crescents made of gold. The Kalinga king also in great anger rubbed his bow-string and took up a poisoned *Sakti*. He shot it at Bhimasena with the desire of killing him.

30. O king, Bhimsena however soon with his big sword cut down that sharp arrow which was rushing towards him with great impetuousity.

31. He then in great delight sent up a loud shout which filled the troops with terror. The Kalinga king, being very much enraged in fighting with Bhimasena,

32—33. Soon hurled upon him fourteen darts with heads made of stone. The mighty-armed Pandava (Bhima) soon cut them down into many fragments, O king, before they could reach him. Having cut down in that battle those fourteen arrows, Bhima,

34—35. That foremost of men, on seeing Bhanumat rushed upon him. Bhanumat thereupon covered Bhima with a shower of arrows. He set up a loud shout making the sky resound with it. Bhima however could not bear that lion-like shout in that battle.

36. Possessing as he does a fearfully loud voice, he also sent up a very loud shout. At his fearful shouts, the Kalingas were filled with great alarm.

37. O best of men, they no longer considered Bhima as a human being. O king of kings, then setting up a loud shout, Bhima,

38—39. With a sword in his hand, jumped upon the excellent elephant (of Bhanumat); and with the help of the tusk of that great elephant, he got on its back. Then with his huge sword, he cut down Bhanumat in two distinct parts. Having killed the Kalinga prince, that chastiser of foes,

40. Made his huge sword, which was capable of bearing a great strain, discend on the neck of the elephant. His head thus cut off, that great elephant fell with a tremendous roar,

41. As a mountain peak falls when eaten up by (the waves of the) sea. O descendant of Bharata, jumping down from that falling elephant, that descendant of Bharata,

42—45. Clad in armour, stood on the ground with his sword in his hand. Cutting down many elephants on all sides, he roved about making his way (through the troops of the enemy). He appeared to be like a moving wheel of fire. He slaughtered innumerable horsemen, elephants and car-warriors and foot soldiers. That foremost of men, the mighty Bhima was seen to move about the field with the speed of the hawk, cutting off with his sharp sword the bodies and heads of countless men (on foot) and also of those who were on elephant.

46. Thus fighting on foot in great rage like Yama himself at the universal dissolution, he struck terror into the hearts of his enemies. Those brave warriors all became confounded.

47. Only those that were foolish came rushing at him who was roving about that field of battle with sword in his hand.

48. That mighty chastiser of foes, cut off the shafts and yokes of those warriors on their cars, and he then killed them.

49. O descendant of Bharata, Bhimasena was seen to display various kinds of motions. He wheeled about and whirled about on high. He made side-thrusts, jumped forward, ran above and leapt high.

50. O descendant of Bharata, he was seen to rush forward and rush upward. Some, mangled by that illustrious son of Pandu with his sword,

51—52. Shrieked aloud; some, mortally wounded, fell down and was killed. O discendant of Bharata, many elephants, some with their trunks and the tusks cut off, others with their temporal globes cut open, fell down uttering fearful cries.

53—57. O king, broken lances, heads of elephant-drivers, beautiful housing of elephants, chords as shining as gold, collars, darts, mallets, quivers, various kinds of machines, beautiful bows, short arrows with polished heads, hooks and screws, various sorts of bells and belts decked with gold,—these were seen falling or already fallen on the field of battle. With elephants having the fore parts and hind parts of their bodies and trunks cut off or entirly killed, the battle field appeared to be strewn with fallen cliffs. Having thus killed many huge elephants that foremost of men then began to destroy the horses.

58. O descendant of Bharata, that hero felled many foremost of horse-men. O sire that battle that was fought between him and those soldiers was exceedingly fearful.

59—60. Hilts, traces, golden saddles, girths, covers for the horses, bearded darts,

costly swords, armours, shields, and beautiful ornaments, were seen by us strewn over the ground in that great battle.

61—63. He caused ... rth to be covered with blood, thus ... ing her look as if she were variegated with lilies. The mighty Pandava, jumping high and dragging down some car-warriors, cut them down with their standards. Often jumping up and frequently rushing on all sides, that greatly powerful hero roved about and filled all the troops with wonder. Some he killed by his legs, some he dragged down and pressed them into the earth.

64. Others he cut down with his sword, others again he frightened with his terrible roars. Others he threw down by the force of his thighs.

65—68. Others again fled away on simply seeing him. It was thus that the great and powerful army of the Kalingas surrounded Bhimasena and rushed upon him. O best of the Bharata race, seeing Srutayush at the head of the Kalinga troops, Bhimasena rushed at him. Seeing him come, the Kalinga king wounded Bhimasena with nine arrows. Wounded by those arrows shot by the Kalinga king, like an elephant pierced by the hook,

69—70. Bhimasena blazed up in wrath like a fire fed with fuels. Then that best of charioteers, Asoka, soon brought a car decked with gold, and he caused Bhima to mount upon it. Therupon that chastiser of foes, the son of Kunti (Bhima) soon mounted on that car.

71—73. Then he rushed towards the Kalinga king, shouting "Wait" "Wait". Then the greatly powerful Srutayush, in great anger, shot at Bhima many sharp arrows and thus displayed his great lightness of hands. O king, thus wounded by those nine sharp arrows shot by the Kalinga king from his exeellent bow, that great warrior Bhima blazed up in anger like a snake struck with a rod.

74. Then that foremost of powerful men, that son of Pritha, Bhima in great anger drew his bow to its highest stretch, and killed the Kalinga king with seven iron arrows.

75. With two arrows he killed the two powerful protectors of his car-wheels; he also killed Satyadeva and Satya.

76. The high-souled Bhima then with many sharp arrows caused the destruction of Ketumat.

77. Thereupon the Kalinga warriors in great anger met the angry Bhimasena in battle backed by many thousands of combatants.

78. O king, armed with darts and maces and swords and lances and scimitars and battle-axes, the Kalingas by hundreds and thousands surrounded Bhimasena.

79. Resisting that shower of arrows, that great warrior (Bhima) then took up his fearful mace. He then jumped down from his car in great speed.

80—83. Bhima then killed seven hundred heroes; that chastiser of foes then sent two thousand Kalingas to the region of Death. It was a wonderful feat; it was thus that the heroic and the fearfully strong Bhima again and again killed in that battle a very large number of the Kalingas. Elephants were deprived of their riders by that son of Pandu. Afflicted with arrows they roved about the field, treading down innumerable troops and uttering roars like those of the clouds.

84. Then the mighty-armed Bhima with his sword in his hand blew in great delight his fearfully roaring conch.

85. With that tremendous sound the hearts of the Kalinga troops began to tremble in fear. O chastiser of foes, the Kalingas appeared to have lost all consciousness.

86—88. All the combatants and all the animals trembled in fear. By Bhimasena's roving about over the field of battle like an infuriated elephant, and by his frequent jumping up,—a short of trance came over the foe. The whole Kalinga army trembled in fear like a large lake agitated by an aligator.

89—90. Struck with panic, the Kalingas, fled away in all directions. When they were rallied again, the commander of the Pandava army (Dhristadyumna) then ordered his troops, exclaiming "fight".

91. Having heard the word of their commander, many heroes headed by Shikhandin came to the help of Bhima, supported by many well-skilled car-warriors.

92. The Pandava, king Yudisthira Dharmaraja followed all of them behind with a large force of elephants, each of the colour of clouds.

93. Thus urging all his troops, the Prishata prince surrounded by many great warriors went to protect one of the wings of Bhima's troops.

94. To the Panchala prince, there was none dearer than life on earth except Satyaki and Bhima.

95. That slayer of hostile heroes, the Prishata prince saw that chastiser of foes, the mighty-armed Bhimasena fighting among the Kalingas.

96. O chastiser of foes, O king, He sent forth many loud shouts and filled all his troops with delight. He blew his conch and uttered a lion-like roar.

97. Seeing the red standard of Dhristadyumna's car decked with gold and yoked with milk white steeds, Bhimasena became much encouraged.

98. The high-souled Dhristadyumna, seeing Bhimasena attacked by the innumerable Kalingas rushed to his rescue.

99. Seeing Satyaki at a distance, those two greatly powerful heroes Dhistadyumna and Vrikodara furiously fell upon the Kalingas.

100. The foremost of men, the descendant of (Sini), that best of all warriors (Satyaki) also soon came to the spot and defended the wings of both Bhima and the Prishata prince.

101. With his big bow in his hand, he created a great havoc. Making himself fierce in the extreme, he began to kill the enemy.

102. Bhima caused a river of blood to flow,—it was made of the flesh and blood of the Kalingas.

103. O king, seeing Bhima in this fearful fight, all the troops exclaimed, "This one who is fighting in Bhima's shape with the Kalingas is Yama himself."

104. Having heard their cries, the son of Santanu, Bhisma, surrounded on all sides by many warriors, soon came to Bhima.

105. Thereupon Satyaki, Bhima, and the Prishata prince Dhristadyumna all rushed towards Bhisma's car decked with gold.

106. All of them soon surrounded the son of Ganga. Without losing a moment they wounded Bhisma each with three fearful arrows.

107. Your father Devavrata, wounded each of these mighty bowmen with three straight arrows in return.

108. Having checked those mighty car-warriors with thousands of arrows, he killed with his arrows the horses of Bhima clad in golden armour.

109. The greatly strong Bhima however stood on the car, the horses of which were killed. He then with great force hurled a dart at Bhisma.

110. Your father Devavrata cut off in that battle that dart before it could reach his car. It then fell in fragments on the ground.

111. Then that foremost of men, Bhimasena took up a heavy and mighty mace made of *Saikya* iron. He then jumped down from his car.

112. But Dhristadyumna soon took up that foremost of car warriors on his own car. He then took away that illustrious hero in the sight of all the warriors.

113. Satyaki however, in order to do what is agreeable to Bhima, cut down with his arrows the charioteer of the revered Kuru grandfather.

114. When his charioteer was thus killed, that foremost of car-warriors Bhisma was borne away from the battle field by his horses which ran with the speed of wind.

115. O king, when that great car-warrior was thus carried away from the field of battle, Bhima blazed up like a great fire when it consumes dry grass.

116. Having killed all the Kalingas, O best of the Bharata race, he stood in the midst of the troops, and none dared to withstand him.

117. O best of the Bharata race, praised by the Pandavas and the Matsyas, he embraced Dhristadyumna and then went to Satyaki.

118. That foremost of the Yadus, that irresistible hero Satyaki then thus spoke to Bhimasena in the presence of Dhristadyumna.

119. "By good luck the Kalinga king, also the Kalinga prince Ketumat and also Sakradeva of that country and also all the Kalingas have been killed by you in this battle.

120. The army of the Kalingas, consisting of many thousands of cars, elephants, horses, noble warriors and heroic combatants, has been destroyed by your prowess of arms alone".

121. Having said this, the mighty-armed grandson of Sini the chastiser of foes embraced the son of Pandu (Bhima). He then quickly got upon his car. Then that great car-warrior began to kill the troops in anger, thus strengthening the hands of Bhima.

Thus ends the fifty-fourth chapter, the death of the Kalinga king, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LV.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. O descendant of Bharata, when that day passed away, when the destruction of

cars, elephants, horses, foot-soldiers and horsemen went apace,

2. The Panchala prince fought with Drona's son (Ashwathaman), Salya, and the illustrious Kripa.

3. The mighty heir-apparent of the king of Panchala with many sharp arrows killed the horses of Drona's son, who is celebrated all over the world.

4. Deprived of his horses, Drona's son soon got upon the car of Salya and showered his arrows on the Panchala prince.

5. O descendant of Bharata, seeing Dhrishtadyumna fighting with Drona's son, the son of Subhadra (Abhimanyu) ran up showering his fearful arrows.

6. O best of the Bharata race, he wounded Salya with twenty-five arrows and Kripa with nine arrows and Ashwathaman with eight.

7. Drona's son also soon wounded Arjuna's son with many winged arrows ; Salya also pierced him with twelve arrows,—Kripa shot at him three sharp arrows.

8. Your grandson Lakshmana then rushed at Subhadra's son in anger, and a fearful battle began between the two.

9. In that fight Duryodhana's son in anger wounded Subhadra's son with many sharp arrows. O king, it was a wonderful feat.

10. O best of the Bharata race, the light-handed Abhimanyu, also being very much enraged, soon wounded his cousin with five hundred arrows.

11. O king, Lakshmana also with his arrows cut down (his adversary's) bow staff, on seeing which all the troops sent up a loud shout.

12. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, Subhadra's son, throwing aside the broken bow, took up another beautiful and tough bow.

13. Thereupon those two foremost of men, thus fighting together with the desire of counteracting each other's feats, wounded each other with innumerable sharp arrows.

14. O king, Duryodhana, on seeing his mighty son thus hard pressed by your grand son ran towards the spot.

15. When your son went to the spot, all the kings surrounded Arjuna's son with many thousands of cars.

16. O king, being as invincible and powerful as Krishna himself, that hero, being thus surrounded by those heroes, was not the least agitated.

17. Seeing Subhadra's son fighting, Dhananjaya (Arjuna) hastened to the spot in great anger, with the intention of rescuing his son.

18. Thereupon the kings headed by Bhisma and Drona and accopompanied by many elephants, horses and cars rushed with great force on Sabyasachin (Arjuna).

19. Then a thick shower of dust, being raised by foot-soldiers, horses and cars and cavalry-men, covered the sky.

20. When those thousands of elephants and hundreds of kings came within the reach of Arjuna's arrows, they could not make any further advance.

21. All the troops sent up loud shouts, and all directions became dark. Then the army of the Kurus assumed a fearful and dreadful aspect.

22. Neither the sky, nor the sun, nor the cardinal points, nor the earth, O best of men, could be distinguished, in consequence of the continuous showers of arrows shot by Kiritin (Arjuna).

23. Many elephants were deprived of their standards, and many car-warriors were also deprived of their horses. Having abandoned their cars, many car-warriors were seen wandering (over the field).

24. Many other car-warriors, deprived of their cars, were seen to rove about with their weapons in their hands and other arms adorned with *Angadas*.

25. O king, horsemen, urging their horses and elephant-men urging their elephants fled away in all directions from the fear of Arjuna.

26. Kings were seen falling form their cars ; elephants and horses were also seen to fall cut down by Arjuna's arrows.

27—28. Assuming a fierce countenance, Arjuna cut down with fearful arrows the upraised arms of warriors with maces in their hands, also with swords, darts, quivers arrows, bows, hooks and standards.

29—32. O sire, O descendant of Bharata, spiked maces broken in fragment, mallets, bearded darts, short arrows, swords, sharp edged battle-axes, lances, broken shields, armours, standards, every sort of weapons, umbrellas with golden staves, iron-hooks, goads, whips, and traces were all seen strewn over the field of battle in heaps.

33. O sire, there was none in your army who could advance against Arjuna in battle.

34. O king, whoever advanced against that son of Pritha, was immedeately shot down and sent to the abode of Yama.

35. When all your troops broke down and fled away, Arjuna and Vasudeva blew their excellent conchs.

36. Your sire Devavrata then, on seeing the Kuru army routed, smilingly thus spoke to the heroic son of Bharadwaja (Drona) on that field of battle.

37. "This mighty and heroic son of Pandu Dhananjaya, accompanied as he is by Krishna, is treating our troops as he alone is able to deal with them.

38. Seeing him resemble to-day the destroyer himself at the universal dissolution, we find that he is invincible to-day.

39. This our vast army is now impossible to be rallied. Behold, looking at me, they are running away.

40. Robbing the vision of the world, the sun is going down that best of mountains, called Asits.

41. O foremost of men, I think, the time has come now to withdraw our army. The troops will never fight, they are tired and struck with panic."

42—43. Having said this to Drona that foremost of all preceptors, that great car-warrior Bhisma withdrew his army. Then when the sun went down, O sire, both the armies were withdrawn and twilight came in.

Thus ends the fifty-fifth chapter, second day's battle, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LVI.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. When night passed away and morning dawned, the son of Santanu Bhishma, the revered grand-sire of the Kurus gave the order for the Kuru army to be ready for fight.

2. That chastiser of foes, the son of Santanu, with the desire to win victory for your son then formed that great *Vyuha* called *Garuda*.

3. On the back of that *Garuda* (the king of the bird) your father Devavrata himself stood. Its two eyes were made by the son of Bharadwaja (Drona) and the Satwata Kritavarman.

4. Those two illustrious heroes, Ashwathaman and Kripa, backed by the Trigarthas, the Matsyas, the Kekayas and the Vatadhanas stood at its head.

5—6. O sire, Bhurisravas, Sala, Salya Bhagadatta, the Madrakas, the Sindhu-arvaras, the Panchanadas with Jayadrhatha stood at its neck. At its back stood king Duryodhana with all his followers.

7. O great king, Vinda and Anuvinda of Avanti, the Kamvojas with the Sahas and also the Surasenas formed its tail.

8. The Magadhas, the Kalingas with all the Daserakas clad in armour, formed the right wing of that *Vyuha*.

9. The Karushas, the Vikanjas, the Mundas, the Kanadivrishas, with Vrihadvala formed its left wing.

10. That chastiser of foes, Sabyasachin (Arjuna) seeing the enemy's troops formed into a *Vyuha*, with the assistance of Dhristadyumna formed his troops into a counter *Vyuha*.

11. In opposition to your *Vyuha*, that son of Pandu formed a *Vyuha* after the shape of the half-moon.

12. On its right side stood Bhimasena surrounded by kings of various countries all abundantly provided with arrows.

13. Next to him stood those two great car-warriors Virata and Drupada; next to them was Nila armed with poisonous weapons.

14. Next to Nila stood the great car-warrior Dhrishtaketu backed by the Chedis the Kasis, the Karushas and the Pandavas.

15. Dhrishtadyumna with Shikhandin with the Panchalas and the Pravadrakas and also with other troops stood in the middle.

16. Dharmaraja Yudhisthira was also there surrounded by his innumerable elephants. Next to them, O king, stood Satyaki and the five sons of Draupadi.

17. Next to them was Iravan. Next to Iravan was Bhimasena's son (Ghatotkacha) with the great Kekaya car-warriors.

18. Next to them, on the left side, was that foremost of men, Arjuna who had as his protector Janardana (Krishna) the protector of the whole universe.

19. It was thus the Pandavas formed their *Vyuha* for the destruction of your sons and those who have taken your side.

20. Then commenced the battle between your troops and the foes; all struck at one another; elephants and cars mixed up in one confusion.

21. O king, innumerable elephants and cars were seen everywhere. They rushed upon one another for the purpose of slaughter.

22. The rattle of innumerable car-wheels mingled with the beat of drums created a tremendous din.

23. O descendant of Bharata, the shouts of the heroic combatants of your army and those of your enemies when killing one another, reached the very heavens.

Thus ends the fifty-sixth chapter, Garuda and half-moon Vyuha making, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LVII.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1—4. When your troops and those of the Pandavas were placed in battle array, that great car-warrior Dhananjaya made a great slaughter by cutting down with his arrows many leaders of car-warriors ; your troops though thus slaughtered in the battle by the son of Pritha who resembled the destroyer himself at the end of a Yuga, yet fought with the Pandavas with perseverance. Desiring to win blazing glory and making death their final goal with minds undirected to anything else, they broke the Pandava ranks in many places, but their ranks also were in many places broken.

5. Then both the Kuru and the Pandava army broke and fled away. Nothing could then be distinguished.

6. A thick cloud of dust rose covering the sun. No body could distinguish any of the cardinal points.

7. O king, everywhere the battle raged the combatants were guided only by the indications afforded by colours, by watchwords, by names and by tribal distinctions.

8. O sire, O king, the *Vyuha* protected as it was by the son of Bharadwaja (Drona) could by no means be broken.

9. So did the formidable Pandava *vyuha* remain unbroken, protected as it was by Sabyasachin (Arjuna), and well-guarded by Bhima.

10. O king, the cars and the elephants of both the armies and other combatants came out of their respective arrays and engaged in the fight.

11. In that fearful battle, horse-men cut down horsemen with sharp and polished swords and long lances.

12. Car-warriors getting car-warriors within reach cut them down with their arrows decked with golden wings.

13. Elephant-riders of both the armies cut down one another when they got them in close quarters with their broad-headed arrows and lances.

14. Innumerable foot-soldiers angrily and at the same time cheerfully cut down one another with short arrows and battle axes.

15. O king, car-warriors, getting elephant riders within reach cut them down with the elephants. Elephant riders also cut down car-warriors.

16. O best of the Bharata race, horsemen with their lance cut down car-warriors in that battle ; car-warriors also cut down horse-men.

17. In both the armies, foot-soldiers cut down many car-wsrriors, many car-warriors cut down innumerable foot-soldiers with their sharp weapons.

18. Elephant-riders cut down horse-men and horse-men cut down warriors who were on the back of elephants ; every thing appeard to be exceedingly wonderful.

19. Foot soldiers were seen to be cut down by the foremost of elephant-riders and the elephant-riders were also to be seen cut down by the foot-soldiers.

20. Hundreds and thousands of foot soldiers were seen to be cut down by horsemen, and horsemen by foot-soldiers.

21—23. O best of the Bharata race the battle field, strewn with broken standards bows, lances, housings of elephants, costly blankets, bearded darts, maces, clubs with iron spikes, *Kampanas*, various sorts of armours, arrows with golden wings, looked as if it werecovered with garlands of flowers.

24. The ground becoming muddy with flesh and blood, became impassable with the bodies of men, horses and elephants, that were killed in that fearful battle.

25. O descendant of Bharata, saturated with human blood, all dust disappeared. All the cardinal points became perfectly clear.

26. O descendant of Bharata, innumerable headless bodies were seen rising from the ground, an omen to indicate that the destruction of the world is near.

27—29. In that fearful and terrible battle, car warriors were seen to run away in all directions; then Bhisma, Drona, Jayadhratha the king of the Sindhus, Purumitra, Vikarna, the son of Suvala Sakuni, these invincible and lion-like heroes broke the Pandava rank.

30—31. O descendant of Bharata, Bhimasena, the Rakshasha Gatotkacha, Satyaki, Chekitana, the sons of Draupadi,

backed by all the kings, chastised your troops and your sons, as the celestials did the Danavas.

32. Those foremost of Khashtriyas struck one another in battle. They became terrible to look at. Covered with blood, they shone like the *kinsuka* flowers.

33. O king, vanquishing their adversaries, those foremost of warriors of both the armies looked like the brilliant stars in the sky.

34. Then your son Duryodhana supported by one thousand car-warriors rushed to battle with the sons of Pandu and the Rakshasha (Ghatotkacha).

35. The Pandavas also with many thousand troops rushed in battle against those chastiser of foes, the heroic Bhisma and Drona.

36. The diadem-decked hero (Arjuna) also rushed in anger against those foremost of kings. Then the son of Arjuna, Abhimanyu and Satyaki both rushed against the forces of the son of Suvala, Sakuni.

37. Then again commenced a fearful and hair-stirring battle between the troops of both the sides,—both parties being eager to defeat one other.

Thus ends the fifty-seventh chapter, commencement of the third day's battle, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LVIII.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. *Having seen Arjuna in battle, the kings angrily surrounded him on all sides with many thousands of cars.*

2. O descendant of Bharata, having surrounded him with many thousand cars, they covered him from all sides with many hundreds of arrows.

3—6. They angrily hurled at Falguna's (Arjuna's) car bright and sharp pointed lances, maces, clubs with spikes, bearded darts, battle-axes, mallets, and bludgeons. That shower of weapons came to him like a flight of locusts. But Pritha's son checked it with his gold decked arrows. Seeing on that occasion the extraordinary lightness of the hands of Vivatsu (Arjuna), the celestials, the Danavas, the Gandharvas, the Pishachas the Uragas and the Rakshashas praised Falguna, exclaiming "Excellent" "Excellent."

7. The heroic Gandharas with Suvala's son at their head surrounded Satyaki and Abhimanyu.

8. Then those brave warriors led by Suvala's son angrily cut down into fragments the excellent car of the Vrishni hero (Satyaki) with various kinds of weapons.

9. O chastiser of foes, in that fearful battle, Satyaki abandoned his own car and mounted on that of Abhimanyu.

10. Then those two heroes, mounting on the same car, began to slaughter the army of Suvala's son (Sukani) with innumerable sharp-pointed arrows.

11. Drona and Bhisma fighting bravely began to slaughter the troops under Dharmaraja Yudhisthira with sharp arrows furnished with feathers of *Kanka* bird.

12. Then the son of Dharma (Yudhisthira) and the two sons of Madri, in the very sight of the whole army, began to chastise the troops of Drona.

13. Then the battle that was fought was fearful and terrible, like the one that was fought in the days of yore between the celestials and the Danavas.

14. Bhimasena and Ghatotkacha both performed great feats. Then Duryodhana came and checked them both.

15. O descendant of Bharata, the prowess that we saw displayed by the son of Hirimva was exceedingly wonderful ; for he transcended even his father (Bhima).

16. Then the Pandava Bhimasena angrily and smilingly wounded the vindictive Duryodhana in the breast with an arrow.

17. Then king Duryodhana, mortally wounded by that arrow, sat down on his car and fainted.

18. O king, seeing him senseless, his charioteer speedily carried him away from the field of battle. Then the troops that supported Duryodhana broke and fled away.

19. Then striking those flying Kuru troops with his sharp-pointed arrows Bhima pursued them.

20. Then that foremost of warriors, the Prishata prince and the Pandava king Dharmaraja Yudhisthira, O descendant of Bharata, in the very sight of Drona and Ganga's son (Bhisma),

21. Slaughtered their troops with sharp arrows, each capable of destroying hostile heroes. Your those troops thus fled from the battle ;

22. And those two great car-warriors Bhisma and Drona could not stop them. Though attempted to be stopped by Bhisma and the high-souled Drona,

23. Those troops fled away in the very sight of Drona and Bhisma. When those

thousands of car-warriors fled away in all directions.

24. O chastiser of foes, then Subhadra's son (Abhimanyu) and that best of the Sini's race, both mounting the same car began to slaughter the army of the son of Suvala.

25. Sini's grandson and that foremost of the Kuru race looked as effulgent as the sun and the moon when they are seen both in the sky after the last lunation of the dark fort-night has passed away.

26. O king, then Arjuna angrily poured shower of arrows on your army as clouds pour rain in torrents.

27. Thus slaughtered in the battle with the arrows of Partha, the Kuru army, trembling in grief and fear fled away.

28. Seeing the army flying, the mighty Bhisma and Drona botn enraged and both eager to do Duryodhana's good tried to stop them.

29. Then king Duryodhana himself cheering his troops stopped them from flying away in all directions.

30. Thereupon all the Khashtriya car-warriors stopped, each on the spot from which they saw your son.

31. O king, then the common soldiers, having seen them stop, stopped of their own accord from shame and from the desire of displaying their prowess.

32. O king, the army thus rallied appeared then like the surging sea at the time of moon's rising.

33. Having seen his army railled for fight, king Suyodhana soon went to the son of Santanu and thus spoke to him.

34—35. "O grandfather, hear what I say; O descendant of Bharata, O scion of the Kuru race, when you, and that foremost of men learned in arms, Drona, with his son and with all our other friends, and also the great bowman Kripa are alive, I do not consider it creditable that my troops should run away.

36. I do not consider the Pandavas a match for you, or for Drona or for Drona's son or for Kripa.

37. O grandfather, the Pandavas are certainly being favoured by you. O hero, therefore you forgive them this slaughter of my troops.

38. O king, you should have told me, before this battle began, that you would not fight with the Pandavas.

39. O descendant of Bharata, hearing such words from you and from the preceptor (Drona), I would have then with Karna reflected what we should have done.

40. O foremost of men, if I do not deserve to be abandoned by you two, then fight at the utmost of your power."

41. Having heard these words, Bhisma laughed and turned his eyes in anger. He then thus spoke to your son.

42. "O king, I have innumerable times said to you words worthy of your acceptance and fraught with your good. The Pandavas are invincible even to the celestials with Vasava at their head.

43. O foremost of kings, what I am capable of doing, aged as I am, I shall certainly do in this battle to the utmost of my power. See it now with your kinsmen.

44. In the sight of all I shall today alone chastise the Pandavas with their troops and with all their kinsmen."

45. Haviug been thus addressed by Bhisma, O king, your son was filled with delight. He ordered conchs to be blown and drums to be beat.

46. O king, having heard the loud uproar, the Pandavas blew their conchs and ordered their drums and cymbals to be sounded.

Thus ends the fifty-eighth Chapter, colloquy between Bhisma and Duryodhona, in the Bhismavadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LIX.

(BHISMAVADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said:—

1—2. When enraged by the words of my son, O Sanjaya, Bhisma took that fearful vow in the battle, what did he do to the Pandavas, and what did the Panchalas do to the grandsire? O Sanjaya, tell me all this.

Sanjaya said:—

3. O descendant of Bharata, when the morning of that day passed away and when the sun in his westward course had gone some portion of his path,

4. And when the illustrious Pandavas had won the victory, your father Devavrata learned in the precepts of morality,

5. Rushed on the fleetest steed towards the Pandava army, followed by a very large force and by all your sons.

6. Then O descendant of Bharata, a fearful and hair-stirring battle between ourselves and the Pandavas began in consequence of your sinful policy.

7. The twang of bows and the flapping of bowstrings mingling together, made a loud uproar which resembled the noise of splitting hills.

8. "Stay", "Hear stand I", "Turn back" "Stand" "I wait for you" "Strike" these were the words that were heard everywhere.

9. The sound of the fall of armours, of crowns and diadems and of standards, resembled the sound of falling stones on hard grounds.

10. Hundreds and thousands of heads and arms adorned with ornaments, fell on the ground and moved in convulsions.

11. Some brave combatants with heads cut off still stood with weapons in their grasp and with bows.

12. A fearful river of blood began to run there. It was of impetuous current, it was miry with flesh and blood and the dead bodies of elephants appeared in it like (sub-marine) rocks.

13. It flowed from the bodies of horses, men and elephants. It was delightful to vultures and jackals. It ran towards the ocean of after-life.

14. O king, O descendant of Bharata, a battle like the one that was faught between your sons and the Pandavas was never before seen or heard of.

15. Chariots could not makes their way, for the way was blocked by the bodies of combatants. The field of battle with the bodies of the killed elephants appeared to be strewn over with blew peaks of hills.

16. O sire, strewn with various coloured armours and turbans, the battle field looked beautiful like the autumn sky.

17. Though mortally wounded, some warriors were seen to rush upon the enemy in battle with cheerfulness and pride.

18. Many, fallen on the field of battle, cried aloud, "O father, O brother, O friend, O kinsman, O companion, O maternal uncle, do not abandon me."

19. Others cried, "Come, come to this side, why are you frightened? Where do you go? I stand in battle. Do not be afraid."

20. In that great battle, the son of Santanu, Bhisma, with his bow drawn to a circle, shot arrows with blazing points which resembled snakes of virulent poison.

21. O descendant of Bharata, showering continuous arrows in all directions, that hero of rigid vows (Bhisma) struck the Pandava warriors calling each by name.

22. O king, displaying his great lightness of hands and dancing as it were along the track of his car, he appeared to be present everywhere like a circle of fire.

23. In consequence of his great lightness of hands, the Pandavas and the Srinjayas saw that hero in that battle multiplied to one thousand fold, though he was really alone.

24. Everyone present there considered Bhisma as having multipled his self by illussion. They now saw him on the east, and on the very next moment, they saw him on the west.

25. Now they beheld him on the North, and on the next moment they beheld him on the South. Thus the son of Ganga was seen to fight on all directions (simultaneously).

26. There was none amongst the Pandavas who was able even to look at him. What they all saw were only innumerable arrows shot from his bow.

27. Having seen him achieve such great feats and slaughter their ranks, the heroic warriors (of the pandava side) uttered many lamentations.

28—36. Thousands of kings came in contact with your father who was thus roving over the field in a super-human way. They fell into that fire Bhisma as flights of senseless insects fall on a blazing fire for their own destruction. Not a single arrow of that light-handed hero was futile. They cut down innumerable men, elepahants and steeds. With one single straight arrow he felled down one big elephant, as a hill is brought down by the thunder-bolt. Your sire, with sharp arrows, pierced at a time two or three elephant riders clad in armour. Whoever came near that foremost of men Bhisma in that battle, was seen the very next moment to fall down on the ground. The vast army of Dharmaraja Yudhisthira, having been thus slaughtered by the greatly powerful Bhisma, gave way in one thousand directions. Thus afflicted by that shower of arrows, that vast army began to tremble even in the presence of Vasudeva (Krishna) and the illustrious Partha (Arjuna). Though the heroic leaders of the Pandu army tried their utmost, yet they could not prevent the great car-warriors of their side from running away. The prowess with which Bhisma routed that vast army was equal to that of the lord of the celestials himself.

37. O great king, that great army was so completely routed that no two persons were seen together; cars, elephants, and horses were pierced all over their bodies, and

the standards and arrows were strewn over the field.

38—42. The Pandava army cried "Oh" and "Alas", and became deprived of its senses. Father struck the son and the son struck the father ; friends fought with dearest friends as if all were under the influence of fate. O descendant of Bharata, many men of the Pandava army were seen with dishevelled hair to run away throwing aside their armours. The Pandava army uttered loud lamentations. Even the very leaders of their car-warriors were seen to be as confounded as a very herd of kine. Having seen the army thus routed, that delighter of the Yudu race (Krishna) stopped that best of car (belonging to Arjuna) and thus spoke to Partha :—"O son of Pritha, the honr has now come which was desired by you.

43—45. O foremost of men, strike Bhisma or else you will lose your senses. O hero, formerly in the assembly of the kings you said, "I will kill all the warriors of the sons of Dhritarastra, headed by Bhisma and Drona, all who will fight me in battle. O Vivatsu, O son of Kunti, O chastiser of foes, make your words now true. Your army is routed on all sides.

46. Behold, all the kings of Yudhisthira's army are flying away, on seeing Bhisma in battle who looks like the destroyer himself with his wide open mouth.

47—48. Having been afflicted with fear, they are running away, as do the small animals at the sight of the lion." Having been thus addressed, Dhananjaya thus spoke to Vasudeva. "Plunging through this sea of the hostile army, drive the horses to the spot where Bhisma is. I shall fell down (today) that invincible warrior, the revered Kuru grandsire.

49. O king, then Madhava drove those silver-white steeds to the place where the car of Bhisma was,—the car which like the very sun was incapable of being gazed at.

50. Having seen the mighty-armed son of Pritha thus rush to fight with Bhisma, the great army of Yudhisthira rallied for battle.

51. Then that foremost of Kuru warriors Bhisma again and again roared like a lion. He then covered the car of Dhananjaya with a shower of arrows.

52. In a moment (Arjuna's) car with its standard and charioteer became invisible, having been covered with that shower of arrows.

53. The greatly powerful Vasudeva however, fearlessly and patiently drove the horses now wounded by Bhisma's arrow.

54. Then Partha took up his celestial bow whose twang resembled the roar of the clouds, and cut down Bhisma's bow with his sharp arrows.

55. Your father, the Kuru hero, took up another bow when he saw the one in his hand cut down. He strung it within the twinkling of an eye.

56. He drew that bow, the twang of which resembled the roar of the clouds, with his two hands. But Arjuna, now excited with anger, again cut down that bow.

57. Thereupon the son of Santanu (Bhisma) praised his lightness of hand by saying, "O Partha, O son of Pandu, O mighty-armed hero, 'Excellent, Excellent.'

58. O Dhananjaya, such a great feat is indeed worthy of you. I have been pleased with you. O son, fight hard with me."

59. Having thus praised Partha, and having taken up a large bow, that great hero hurled his arrows at Partha's car.

60. Vasudeva then displayed his great skill in the guiding the horses. He baffled those arrows by driving the car in quick circles.

61. Then, O sire, Bhisma with great force pierced both Vasudeva and Dhananjaya with keen arrows all over their bodies.

62. Wounded by those arrows of Bhisma those foremost of men looked like two roaring bulls with scratches of horns on their bodies.

63. Excited with wrath, Bhisma covered the two Krishnas on all sides with hundreds and thousands of arrows.

64. With his sharp arrows the angry Bhisma made the Vrishni chief (Krishna) to shiver ; laughing loudly also he made Krishna very much astonished.

65—66. Then seeing the great prowess of Bhisma and the mildness with which Arjuna fought, and also seeing that Bhisma was showering a continuous shower of arrows in that battle and that he was appearing like the all consuming sun in the midst of the two armies,

67. And marking also that that hero (Bhisma) was killing the foremost warriors of Yudhisthira's army and that he was making a great havoc amongst the troops as if the hour of dessolution had come,

68. The exalted Keshava, that slayer of hostile heroes, that high-souled one became unable to see what he saw. He thought that the army of Yudhisthira could not survive that slaughter.

69. Bhisma was capable of destroying all the Daityas and Danavas in a single day ;

with how much ease then could he kill the Pandavas with all their soldiers and followers.

70—71. The vast army of the illustrious Pandava (Yudhisthira) again began to fly away. Having seen the Somakas routed, the Kurus, gladdening the heart of the grandsire rushed to battle with great cheerfulness. (Seeing) all this, Krishna reflected :—"Clad in armour I will kill Bhisma today for the sake of the Pandavas.

72—73. I will lighten the burden of the Pandavas. Though struck with keen arrows in the battle, Arjuna does not what he should do, from respect for Bhisma." While Krishna was thus reflecting the grandsire again hurled his arrows on Partha's car.

74. In consequence of those various arrows flying in all directions, all sides were completely enshrouded. Neither the sky, nor the directions, nor the earth, nor the brilliant sun could be seen.

75—82. The winds that blew appeared to be mixed with smoke; all the directions seemed to be agitated. Drona, Vikarna, Jayadhratha, Bhurisrava, Kritavarman, Kripa, Srutayusha, the ruler of Amvartha, Vinda and Anuvinda, Sudhashkhina, the people of the westsrn country, the various tribes of Souviras, the Vasistas, the Khudrakas, and the Malavas,—all these at the command of the Gautamas royal son soon came to Kiritin (Arjuna) for battle. The grandson of Sini saw that Kiritin was surrounded by many thousands of horse and footsoldiers and car-warriors and great elephants. Having seen Vasudeva and Arjuna thus surrounded by infantry and elephants and horses and cars on all sides, that foremost of all wielders of arms, that chief of the Sinis, soon went to that place. That foremost of bowmen, the Sini chief quickly rushed upon those troops and soon came to Arjuna's aid, as Vishnu came to the slayer Vritra. That foremost of Sini warriors cheerfully thus addressed the troops of Yudhisthira who were all frightened by Bhisma, and whose elephants, horses cars and numberless standards had been mangled and broken into pieces and who were all flying away from the battle-field "O Khastriyas, where do you go? This is not the duty of virtuous men as declared by the ancients.

83—84. O foremost of heroes, do not violate your pledges; observe your own duties as heroes." Having seen that the foremost of kings were flying away from the field of battle and having also marked the mildness with which Partha fought and seeing also that Bhisma was exerting himself with all his powers and that the Kurus were rushing from all sides, the younger brother of Vasava, the illustrious protector of all the Dasarhas become unable to bear it all. He thus spoke to the famous grandson of Sini and praised him much :—"O hero of the Sini race, those that are retreating are indeed retreating. O Satwata chief, those that are still staying,—let them also go away.

85. Behold, I shall soon fell Bhisma down from his car and also Drona in this battle with all their followers. O Satwata chief, there is none in the Kuru army who can escape me when I am angry.

86—89. Therefore taking up my fearful discus I shall (to-day) kill Bhisma of rigid vows. O grandson of Sini, killing in battle, these two foremost of car-warriors, namely Bhisma and Drona with all their followers, I shall gladden the heart of Dhananjaya and the king (Yudhisthira) and also of Bhima and the twin Aswinas. Killing all the sons of Dhritarashtra and all those foremost of kings who have taken their side, I will with great joy secure a kingdom to-day for Ajatasatru." Having said this, the son of Vasudeva threw off the reins of the horses and jumped down from the car. Whirling with his right arm his discus with a beautiful shape and with sharpness as that of a razors, which was as effulgent as the sun and possessed the force of one thousand thunderbolts, the high-souled Krishna rushed with great force towards Bhisma making the earth tremble under his feet.

90. That chastiser of foes, the younger brother of the chief of the celestials, angrily rushed towards Bhisma who stood in the midst of his troops, as a lion, from the desire of killing a large elephant, rushes towards it.

91—94. The end of his yellow garments waving in the air looked like a cloud charged with lighting. That lotus of a discus, the Sudarsana, having for its stalk the beautiful arms of Sourin (Krishna) looked as beautiful as the primival lotus, which was as bright as the morning sun which caused that lotus to bloom. The beautiful leaves of that lotus were as sharp as the edge of a razor. Krisnas body was the beautiful lake, his arms where the stalk upon which shone that lotus. Seeing the younger brother of Mohendra excited with anger and that he was loudly roaring, that he was armed with discus, all creatures uttered loud wails. They thought the distruction of the Kurus was near at hand. Armed with his discus, Vasudeva looked like the *Samvanta* fire that appears at the end of a Yuga for consuming the world.

95—96. The preceptor of the universe blazed up like a fearful comet risen for consuming all creatures. Having seen that

foremost of men, that divine personage advancing armed with discus, Santanu's son (Bhisma) who stood on his car with his bow and arrow in hand thus fearlessly spoke, "Come, come, O lord of the gods, O deity that had the universe for your abode, O god armed with mace, sword and Saranga, I bow to you.

97. O lord of the universe, forcibly fell me down from this excellent car. O refuge of all creatures, O Krishna in this battle, if I be killed by you, great will be my good fortune both in this world and in the next.

98. O Vrisni and Andhaka chief, you give me the greatest respect. My dignity will be celebrated all over the three worlds." Having heard these words of the son of Santanu (Bhisma), Krishna still impetuously rushed towards him and said.

99. "You are the root of this great slaughter on earth. You will see Duryodhana killed to-day. A wise minister who treads the path of virtue should restrain a king who is addicted to the evil of gambling.

100 That wretched king who transgresses his duty should be abandoned as one whose intellegence has been misdirected by fate." Haviug heard these words, the royal Bhisma thus spoke to the chief of the Yadu race :—"Destiny is all power.

101. The Yadus for their benefit abandoned Kansa. I said this to the king (Dhritarastra) but he did not heed my words."

102. Meanwhile, jumping from his car, Partha of mighty and long arms himself soon ran after that Yadu chief possessing massive and long arms. He soon came to him and seized him by his two arms.

103. That first of all gods, Krishna was excited with rage. Therefore, though thus seized, Vishnu (Krishna) forcibly dragged Jishnu (Arjuna) after him, like a tempest carrying away a tree.

104. The high-souled Partha, however, seized with great force his legs as he was rushing towards Bhisma ; O king, he succeeded in stopping him with great difficulty on the tenth step.

105. When Krishna stopped, Arjuna, adorned with a beautiful golden garland cheerfuly bowed to him and he then thus spoke to him :—"Quell our wrath O Keshava, you are the refuge of the Pandavas.

106. O Keshava, I swear by my sons and brothers that I will not withdraw from the acts to which I have pledged myself.

107. O younger brother of Indra, at your command, I will certainly annihilate the Kurus." Having heard that promise and pledge by Arjuna, Janardana became gratified. He was ever engaged in doing what is agreeable to that foremost of the Kurus, Arjuna. He therefore, discus on arms, once more mounted on the car.

108. That chastiser of foes once more took up the reins. Then taking up his couch called Panchajanna, Sourin (Krishua) filled the sky and all the directions with its sounds.

109. Thereupon when the Kuru heroes saw Krishna adorned with necklace and Angada and ear-ring, with carved eyelashes smeared with dust and with milk-white teeth take up his couch, they sent up a loud cry.

110. The sounds of cymbals, drums and kettle-drums and the rattle of car-wheels and also those of smaller drums, mingling with those lion-like shouts sent up by all the Kuru troops became a fearful uproar.

111. The twang of Partha's Gandiva which resembled the roarings of thunder filled the skyand all the directions. Shot from the bow of the Pandava, bright and blazing arrows flew in all directions.

112. Then the Kuru king with a large force and with Bhishma and Bhurisrava's son with arrows in their hands' resembling a comet risen for consuming a constelletion rushed against him.

113. Bhurisrava hurled at Arjuna seven javelins with wings of gold, Duryodhana hurled a fearful lance, Salya a mace and Santanu's son (Bhisma) a dart.

114. Thereupon baffling the seven javellins with seven arrows, which were as fleet as arrows, shot by Bhurisrava, Arjuna cut off with his sharp arrow the lance hurled by Duryodhana.

115. That hero cut down with two arrows the blazing dart, as effulgent as lightning that came towards him hurled by Santanu's son and the mace hurled by the Madra king.

116. Then drawing with his two hands and with great force his beautiful and irrisisting powerful bow Gandiva he invoked with proper mantras the exceedingly wonderful and fearful weapon named Mohendra. He made it appear in the sky.

117. With that great weapon which was as effulgent as the blazing fire, that illustrious great bowmen, adorned with diadem and garland of gold checked the entire Kuru army.

118. Those arrows from Partha's bow cut off the arms, bows, standard-tops and cars ; penetrated igto the ranks of the kings and of the huge elephants and horses of the enemy.

119. Having filled all directions with those sharp and terrible arrows Partha adorned with diadem and garland of gold agitated the hearts of his foes by the fearful twang of his Gandiva.

120. In that fierce battle, the sounds of conchs and beat of drums and the deep rattle of cars were all silenced by the twang of the Gandiva.

121. Having known that twang to have been produced by the Gandiva, king Virata, and other foremost of men, and the brave Panchala king Drupada all went to the place with undepressed hearts.

122. All the troops stood struck with fear each at the spot where he heard that twang of the Gandiva. None dared to go to the place whence rose that sound.

123—126. In that fearful slaughter of the kings, heroic warriors as well as car-warriors with their charioteers were killed. Elephants with bright golden housings and gorgions standards wounded with broad headed arrows that fell upon them suddenly fell down dead with their bodies mangled by Kiritin. Forcibly struck by Partha with his winged arrows and sharp broad headed arrows, the yantras and indragalas of the standards of innumerable kings were cut down. Innumerable foot soldiers, car-worriors, steeds and elephants fell fast on the field, their limbs paralysed or themselves speedily deprived of life afflicted by Doananjaya with those arrows. O king, many were the warriors who in that terrible fight had their armours and bodies cut through, by that weapon named after Indra.

127. With those fearful and sharp arrows, Kritin (Arjuna) made a river of blood to flow on the field of battle, its blood was supplied from the mangled bodies of the soldiers. Its froth was made by their feet.

128. Its current was broad and it ran fearfully. The bodies of dead elephants and horses formed its banks. Its mire consisted of the entrails, the marrow and the flesh of human beings and of the huge Rakshashas.

129. Innumerable crowns of human heads covered with hair formed its floating moss, and heaps of human bodies formed its sand-banks. They caused that river to flow in one thousand directions ; armours strewn all over it formed its waves, and the bones of human beings and elephants and horses formed its stones and pebbles.

130—132. Its banks were infested by large numbers of jackals and wolves and cranes, and vultures and crowds of Rakshasas and herds of hydas. Those that were alive saw that fearful river of fat, marrow and blood caused by the showers of arrows shot by Arjuna ; it resembled the great Vaitarani (river). Having seen the foremost of warriors thus killed by Falguna (Arjuna), the Chedies, the Panchalas, the Kamshas, the Matsyas, and all the Pandava warriors, those foremost of men, all highly elated with victory sent up loud shouts that frightened the Kuru warriors.

133. They sent forth that shout indicative of victory on seeing the foremost warriors of the Kuru army, the very combatants who were protected by the (Kuru) leaders thus killed by Kritritin (Arjuna) that terror of foes, who frightened them all as a lion frightens a herd of small animals.

134—137. Then the wielder of Gandiva and Janardana, with great delight attacked loud shouts. The Kurus with Bhisma and Drona and Duryodha and Valika all mortally wounded by the weapons (of Arjuna) then saw the sun withdraw his rays. Seeing also the *Mohendra* weapon spread out and causing as it were the end of the *Yuga*, they withdrew their forces for the night's rests. Thus having achieved a great feat and won great renown and having seen the sun assume a red colour and the evening twilight set in and having completed his work (for that day), Arjuna retired with his brothers to the camp for the night's rest. Then when darkness set in, a fearful and great uproar was made by the Kuru troops.

138. All said :—"In to-day's battle, Arjuna has killed ten thousand car-warriors and seven hundred elephants. All the people of the western country, the various tribes of the Souviras, the Kshudrakas and the Malavas have all been killed.

139—141. The feat achieved to-day by Dhananjaya is indeed a very great one ! None else is capable of doing it. The king of the Amvartas, Srutayush, Durmavshava, Chitrasena, Drona, Kripa, the Sindhu king, Valhika, Bhurisravas, Salya, Sala, a hundreds of other warriors with Bhisma at their head have to-day been defeated by the wrathful son of Pritha, Kiritin, the great car-warrior of the world." O descendant of Bharata, talking thus, all the troops of of your army went to their tents from the field of battle.

142. All the troops of the Kuru army frightened by Kiritin then went into their tents illuminated by thousands of torches and by innumerable lamps,

Thus ends the fifty-nineth chapter, third day's battle in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LX.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O descendant of Bharata, when the night passed away, the illustrious Bhisma with his wrath excited followed by a very large number of troops, going at the head of the Kuru army charged the enemy's troops.

2. Drona, and Duryodhana, Valhika, Durmarshana, Chitrasena, the mighty Jayadratha and other royal heroes backed by a large number of troops accompanied him.

3. Surrouned by these great and mighty car-warriors all possessing great prowess and energy, O king, he shone in the midst of those foremost of royal heroes like the lord of the celestials in the midst of the celestials.

4. The magnificent standards on the backs of the elephants stationed in front of the various divisions of the army waved in the air and looked highly beautiful with yellow, black and brown colours.

5. That great army with the royal son of Santanu (Bhisma) at its head and with other great car-warriors and with elephants and horses, looked as resplendent as a mass of clouds charged with lightning or as the sky with gathering clouds in the season of rains.

6. Then like the fearful current of the ocean-going Ganga, that great Kuru army, protected by Santanu's son rushed with great force towards Arjuna.

7. With various kinds of forces possessing great strength and also with innumerable elephants, horses and foot soldiers and car-warriors, the *Vyuha* made by the ape-bannered hero (Arjuna) looked from the distance like a great mass of clouds.

8. That illustrious hero, that foremost of men, standing on his car furnished with high standard and yoked with white steeds went against the enemy's army supported by a large force.

9. Seeing that ape-bannered hero accompanied by that foremost of the Yadu race, all the Kurus with your sons were filled with dismay.

10. Your troops saw that best of *Vyuhas* which was protected by that great car-warrior of the world Kiritin (Arjuna). It had thousands of weapons up-raised and on each of its corners stood four thousand elephants.

11. This *Vyuha* of to-day was like the one which was formed on the day previous by that foremost of Kurus, king Dharmaraja Yudhisthira and the like of which had never been seen or heard fo before by any man.

12. Then thousands of drums were loudly beat on the field of battle. There rose from every quarter sounds of conchs and trumpets and lion-like shouts.

13. Then bows of loud twang, drawn by heroic warriors, with arrows fixed on the bowstrings and the sounds of conchs rose above the uproar made by drums and cymbals.

14. The entire sky was filled with the sounds of conchs ; dust filled every place with that dust the atmosphere appeared as if a canopy had been overspread Having seen that canopy, all the brave warriors rushed to the battle.

15. Car-warriors struck with car-warriors were cut down with their charioteers, horses, cars and standards. Elephants struck by elephants and foot soldiers struck by foot soldiers all fell (on the filled of battle).

16. Impetuous horsemen struck down by impetnous horsemen fell with fearful countenances. All appeard to be exceedingly wonderful.

17. Excellent shields adronded with golden stars and possessed of the effulgence of the sun, broken by battle axes, lances and swords dropped on the field of battle.

18. Many car-warriors, mangled and bruised by the tasks and the powerful trunks of elephants fell down with their charioteers, many foremost of car-warriors, struck by the foremost of car-warriors fell on the earth.

19. Having heard the wails of horsemen and foot soldiers, struck with the tusks and other limbs of elephants or crushed by their huge animals fell down on the field of dattle.

20. Then when horsemen and foot soldiers were falling fast, and elephants, horses and cars were flying away in fear, Bhisma surrounded by many great car-warriors got a sight of the ape-bannered warrior (Arjuna).

21. The palmyra-bannered hero, the son of Santanu, who had five palmyras on his standard, then rushed upon the diadem, decked warrior (Arjuna) whose car was yoked with excellent steeds which possessed

wonderful energy and which blazed like the lighting.

22. O king, thus against that son of Indra who was like Indra himself rushed many warriors headed by Drona, Kripa, Salya, Vivingsati, Duryodhana and also Somadatta's son.

23. Then the heroic son of Arjuna Abhimanyu learned in all the weapons and clad in a handsome golden armour, rushed out of the ranks and attacked all your warriors.

24. That son of Arjuna baffled the weapons of all the mighty warriors. He looked effulgent as the exalted Agni on the sacrificial alter when invoked with high *Mantras*.

25. Then the greatly powerful Bhisma created a river in that field of battle. Its water was made by the blood of foes. But he quickly avoided the son of Subhadra and charged the great car-warrior Partha.

26. Then Arjuna, adorned with diadem and garlands, with his wonderful Gandiva in his hand, the twang of which resembled the roars of clouds, shot showers of arrows and baffled the showers of arrows (shot by Bhisma).

27. That illustrious ape-bannered hero then poured upon Bhisma that foremost of all wielders of arms a shower of sharp arrows and broad-headed polished shafts.

28. Your troops then saw that shower of arrows, shot by that great ape-bannered hero, opposed and dispersed by Bhisma, as the sun dispels darkness.

29. Then the Kurus, the Srinjayas, and all other people saw the single combat between those two foremost of men, Bhisma and Arjuna both distinguished by the fearful twang of their bows.

Thus ends the sixtieth chapter, Bhisma and Arjuna's single combat, in the Bhisma badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXI.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O sire, Drona's son, Bhurisrava, Salya, Chitrasena, the son of Samyamani, all these fought with Subhadra's son.

2. When he was fighting with these five foremost of men, all saw him endued with great prowess, like a young lion fighting with five elephants.

3. None among them equalled the son of Arjuna in sureness of aims, in bravery, in prowess, in lightness of hand or in the knowledge of weapons.

4. When Partha saw that chastiser of foes, his son thus fighting and displaying his prowess in battle, he sent up a lion-like shout.

5. O king, having seen your grandson thus afflict your army, your warriors surrounded him from all sides.

6. Then that chastiser of foes, the son of Subhadra, depending on his own prowess and might, advanced with undepressed heart against the army of the Kurus.

7. When he was thus fighting with the enemy in that battle, his great bow, as effulgent as the sun, was seen by everybody to be incessantly drawn for the purpose of striking at the enemy.

8. Wounding the son of Drona with one arrow and Salya with five, he cut down the standard of Samyamani's son with eight arrows.

9. With another sharp arrow, he cut down the great dart with a golden staff which resembled a snake and which was hurled against him by Somadatta's son.

10. Arjuna's son baffled in the very sight of Salya his hundreds of fearful arrows and killed his four steeds.

11. Bhurisrava, Salya, Drona's son, Samyamani and Sala were all seized with panic by seeing the prowess of Arjuna's son. They could not stay before him.

12—13. O great king, then urged by your son the Trigartas, the Kekeyas numbering twenty-five thousand, all of whom were foremost of men accomplished in arms and who who were incapable of being defeated by any enemy in battle, surrounded Kiritin with his son in order to kill them both.

14. O king, that chastiser of foes, the generallissimo of the Pandava army, the Panchala prince saw (from a distance) the cars of the father and the son surrouded.

15—16. Followed by many thousands of horsemen and footsoldiers and many hundreds of elephants and cars and the Madras and the Kekayas, with his bow drawn in wrath and with all his troops behind him he advanced.

17. That division of the Pandava army, protected by that illustrious and firm bowman and furnished with cars, elephants and horsemen looked exceedingly resplendent as it advanced on battle bent.

18. When he was thus going to Arjuna's aid, he struck Somadatta's son on his shoulder joint with three arrows.

19. Wounding the Madrakas with ten sharp arrows, he soon killed the warrior who was protecting the rear of Kritavarman.

20. That chastiser of foes then, with a broad-headed arrow killed Damana, the son of Paurava.

21. Then the son of Samyamani wounded the invincible Panchala prince with ten arrows, and his charioteer with ten more.

22. Then that great bowman having been thus wounded, licked with his tongue the corners of his mouth and cut down his enemy's bow with a broad-headed and sharp arrow.

23. The Panchala prince soon wounded his foe with twenty-five arrows and then, O king, he killed his horses and then his two wheel-protectors.

24. O best of the Bharata race, Samyamani's son then stood on the car the horses of which were killed, and stared at the illustrious son of the Panchala king.

25. Then taking up a fearful sword made of steel, he walked on foot and came to Drupada's son who was on the car.

26—27. The Pandava soldiers as well as the Prishata prince Dhristradyuma saw him coming like a surging wave which resembled a snake fallen from the sky. He whirled his sword and looked like the sun. He advanced with the gait of an enraged elephant.

28--29. Thereupon inflamed with rage, the son of the Panchala king, beholding Samyamani's son rush towards him, with a sharp sword and buckler in grasp, and seeing the other approach his car and beyond the range of arrows, crushed his, head with the stroke of his heavy mace.

30. Then, O monarch, when he was falling down dead, his resplendent sword and shield, loosened from his hands, fell down on the ground, together with his body.

31. Thus that high-souled Panchala prince endued with dreadful might won great fame, by thus having crushed his adversary with his club.

32. Then, O Sire, when that mighty car-warrior and fierce bowman, that prince, was slain, loud cries of "Oh" and "Alas" were heard in your army.

33. Thereafter, beholding his own son slain, Samyamani inflamed with wrath, impetuously fell upon the Panchala prince, ever invincible in battle.

34. Then all the monarchs belonging to the Kuru and the Pandava armies saw those two heroes, those foremost of car-warriors, engaged in battle.

35. Then Samyamani, that slayer of hostile heroes, excited with rage, struck the son of Prishata with three arrows, like an elephant rider striking the beast with the hook.

36. Similarly, Salya also, that beautifier of an assembly, angrily wounded Prishata's heroic son on the breast. Thereupon there commenced another battle.

Thus ends the sixty-first chapter, the slaughter of the son of Samyamani, in the Bhishma-badha of the Bhishma Parva.

CHAPTER LXII.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. I consider, O Sanjaya, destiny to be superior to human endeavour, in as much as, the troops of my son are always being slaugtered by those of the sons of Pandu.

2. You always, O Suta, tell me, that my troops are slaughtered, whilst on the other hand you say that the Pandava forces are not slaughtered and are all filled with delight.

3. You always, O Sanjaya, speak of my troops as being destitute of manliness, as felled and falling and massacred.

4. Though they are fighting to the best of their powers, and striving hard to secure victory, yet you always tell me that the Pandavas are gaining victory over them, whilst they are becoming reduced in number.

5. So, O son, I am always hearing of numerous causes of insufferable and poignant grief, engendered by the misdeeds of Duryodhana.

6. I could discover no measure by which the Pandavas could be reduced, also by which, O Sanjaya, my sons would be able to secure victory in this battle.

Sanjaya said :—

7. Listen, O monarch, with patience, to the description of the destruction of human hosts and of the hosts of steeds elephants and cars; this mighty evil owes its origin to you.

8. Dhristadyumna, being afflicted by Salya with nine arrows, was inflamed with wrath; and he afflicted the ruler of the Madras, in return, with darts made of steel.

9. Then we saw the highly wonderful prowess of the son of Prishata, as he speedily checked (the carreer of) Salya, the ornament of assemblies.

10. No weakness was detected in any one of them, when enraged, they were engaged in the battle. The combat between them seemed to last only for a moment.

11. Then, O mighty monarch, in that fight, Salya cut down the bow of Dhristyadyumna with a keen-pointed yellow dart.

12. Also, O Bharata, he covered Dhristadyumna with showers of arrows, like clouds, swelling with rain, covering a mountain at the rainy season.

13. When Dhristadyumna was being thus tormented, Abhimanyu, inflamed with wrath, rushed with voilence against the car of the king of the Madras.

14. Then the highly excited nephew of Krishna, that hero of immeasurable soul, having reached near the car of the Madra king, pierced Atrayani with three whetted shafts.

15. Thereat, O monarch, your troops desirous of resisting the son of Arjuna in battle, speedily formed themselves in a circle around the chariot of the ruler of the Madras.

16. Duryodhana, Vikarna, Dushasana, Vivingsati, Dumarsana Dusaha, Chitrasena, Durmukha,

17. Satyavrata, Purumitra and the mighty car-warrior Vikarna,—these stationed themselves in the field for protecting the chariot of the ruler of the Madras.

18. Thereat Bhimasena, excited with rage, and Dhristadyumna of Prishata's race, the sons of Draupadi and Abhimanyu, the twin sons of Pandu by Madri,

19. These ten warriors opposed the ten warriors of Dhritarastra's hosts, discharging O monarch, weapons of diverse shape.

20. It is, O monarch, through the wicked policy of yours that those warriors inflamed with rage then approached and encountered one another in battle, out of a desire for slaying one another.

21. When those ten warriors, wrought up with wrath, met the other ten in that awful battle, the rest of the car-warriors of your army and of the army of your foes became sight-seers.

22. Those mighty car-warriors shooting weapons of diverse shape and roaring at one another began to smite one another.

23. Then in that battle, inflamed with wrath and desirous of slaying one another, those heroes roared at one another, and boasted of their prowess.

24. Then, O monarch, those kinsfolk that had met together, burning with jealousy and challenging one another, fell upon one another, discharging mighty weapons at the same time.

25. Inflamed with wrath, Duryodhara in that fierce battle pierced Dhristadyumna with four whetted arrows; and, in battle, the feat was wonderful.

26. Durmarsana pierced him (Dhristadyumna) with twenty shafts, Chitrasena with five, Durmukha with nine, Dussaha with seven,

27. Vivingsati with five, and Dushasana with three. Them, O monarch, that son of Prishata, the slayer of his foes, pierced,

28-31. In return, each with twenty shafts, displaying great lightness of hands. O Bharata Abhimanyu, in that battle, pierced Satyavrata and Purumitra, each with ten shafts. The sons of Madri, the delighters of their mother, in that battle covered their maternal uncle with a shower of sharp shafts; and that seemed indeed marvellous Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Salya covered with innumerable arrows those nephews of his, those two foremost of car-worriors, who were desirous of counteracting the stratagems of their uncle (Salya himself.) Though thus covered over with arrows, the twin sons of Madri flinched not.

32. Thereafter the Pandava Bhimasena endued with great might beholding Duryodna and desirous of putting an end to the strife, grasped his mace.

33. Seeing that mighty-armed Bhimsena with uplifted mace look like the Kailasa mount towering with its peaks, your sons fled out of terror.

34. Duryodhana however wrought up with anger urged against Bhima the Magadha division consisting of ten thousand swift-coursing elephants.

35. King Suyodhana, then accompanied by that division of elephants, and placing the ruler of the Maghads in front of him, advanced towards Bhimasena.

36. Thereat Vrikodara, beholding that division of elephants make towards himself, descended from his car, holding a mace in his hands and roaring out like a lion.

37. Grasping a mighty and heavy mace made of the essence of adamant, Bhimasena charged that division of elephants, like Death himself with his mouth wide open.

38. Then like the slayer of Vritra moving amidst the Danava host, the mighty armed Bhimsena, endued with great strength,

careerd on the field of battle, slaughtering elephants with his mace.

39. Then at the deafening shouts of the roaring Bhima—shouts that were capable of producing a tremour in the heart and in the mind,—the elephents huddling together were deprived of the power of moving.

40. Then the sons of Droupadi, the mighty car-warrior the son of Subhadra, and Nakula, Sahadeva, and Dhristadyumna the son of Prishata,

41. Supporting Bhima's car, proceeded behind him, checking the foe with their shower of arrows, like the clouds drenching the mountains with rain.

42. With *Khuras* and *Khurapras* and *Vallas* and *Anjalikas*, all well-sharpened and tempered, the Pandava warriors cut down the heads of those who were fighting on the backs of elephants.

43. In consequence of the thick falling of the heads (of elephant-riders), their arms decked with ornaments and their hands grasping the iron hook, a shower of stones appeared to fall.

44. And elephant-riders deprived of heads, seated as they were on the necks of those beasts, appeared like trees on a mountain with their heads broken.

45. We also saw many other mighty elephants, felled and falling, slain by Dhristadyumna, the high-souled son of Prishata.

46. Thereafter, the ruler of the Magadma territory, goaded in that battle, against the car of Subhadra's son, an elephant that resembled Airavata itself.

47. Then the heroic son of Subhadha, that slayer of hostile heroes, beholding that mighty elephant of the ruler of the Magadhas make towards himself, killed it with a single shaft.

48. Then the nephew of Krishna that conqueror of hostile cities cut down with a *Valla* of silvery wings, the head of the king who could not extricate himself himself from the (falling) elephant.

49. Then Bhimasena the son of Pandu, also penetrating that division of elephants, careered in the field, crushing the elephants, like Indra crushing the mountains.

50. In that battle, we also beheld elephants smashed by Bhimasena, each with a single stroke, like cliffs rent open by the thunder-bolt.

51. Elephants prodigious like mountains were slain, having their tusks broken, their temples, their bones, their backs, and their frontal globes smashed.

52. We saw, O monarch, some of those beasts slain, and some with mouths foaming; (we saw) other mighty elephants with their frontal globes smashed, vomitting blood in profusion.

53. Some fell down on the ground overwhelmed with terror, and they resembled huge hills and were soiled in every part of their body with fat and blood, and were almost bathed in marrow and brain matter.

54. Bhima careered in the field like the Destroyer himself with his mace in his hand. Vrikodara whirling his mace that was drenched with the blood of the elephants,

55. Appeared dreadful like Pinaki (Siva) himself wielding the bow Pinaka. Crushed by the wrathful Bhimasena, the elephants,

56—57. Sorely afflicted, suddenly fled away, smashing the ranks of your own army. The mighty bowmen and car-warriors headed by the son of Subhadra, protected that hero as he battled, like the immortals protecting the wielder of the thunderbolt. Grasping his blood-stained mace almost bathed in the blood of elephants,

58—60. Bhimasena of fierce soul then appeared like the destroyer himself. Then O Bharata, we saw Bhimasena whirling his mace in all directions appear like the god Siva in the course of his wild dance. We beheld, O mighty monarch, his heavy and sounding mace that resembled the club of the destroyer himself, the whizz of which equalled the roar of Indras thunder, which was fierce to look at , and which was stained copiously with blood and smeared with marrow and hair,

61. And (lastly) which resembled the Pinaka of the enraged Rudra engaged in slaughtering animals. Just as a herdsman belabours his herd with a cudgel,

62. So Bhima belaboured the elephant division with his mace. Smitten by that mace, as also by means of arrows on all sides,

63. The elephants hastily fled away from the field, smashing the chariots of their own host. Like a tempest driving away clouds, Bhimasena driving away from the field those elephants, stood there like the wielder of the trident (Siva) standing on the cremation ground.

Thus ends the sixty-second chapter, the display of Bhima's prowess, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXIII.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that division of elephants had been crushed, your son Duryodhana, commanded his whole forces saying, 'Kill Bhimasena.'

2. Thereat, the entire army, at the command of your son, rushed agaimst Bhimasena, setting up at the same time a dreadful uproar.

3—5. That infinite army, whose impetus it would have been impossible even for the gods to bear, that army which was incapable of being crossed like the sea on a *Parva* day, that army that swarmed with car-warriors, steeds and elephants and that resounded with the blare of conchs, the rattle of chariots, and the soudd of drums, that numbered innumerable foot soldiers and car-warriors, that was shrouded in a cloud of dust—that veritable ocean of advancing hostile forces that was incapable of being agitated, Bhimasena withstood in battle, like the banks resisting the surging sea.

6. Then, O monarch, we beheld in that battle, the marvellous aud super-human feat achieved by the high-souled son of Pandu, namely Bhimasena.

7. Undauntedly did Bhimasena check, with his mace, the rulers of men who, excited with wrath, had been advancing towards him, on their steeds, chariots and elephants.

8. Bhima, that foremost of those endued with might, having thus checked with his mace the career of the vast army, stood in that dreadful confusion, immovable as the mount Meru itself.

9. In that most terrific, fierce and ruthless encounter, his brothers, and sons, and Dhristadyumna the son of Prishata,

10. And the sons of Draupadi, and Abhimanyu and the ever-victorious Sikhandin, these mighty warriors did not forsake Bhimasena, as they all apprehended danger.

11. Thereafter taking up his huge and heavy mace made of *Saikya* iron, he (Bhimasena) rushed against your warriors, like the Destroyer himself wielding his club.

12. Smashing down hosts of charioteers and also hosts of steeds, that mighty and heroic Bhima careered on the field like fire spreading at the end of a Yuga.

13. Slaughtering in that battle numerous warriors, like Death himself destroying animals at the end of a *Yuga*, smashing with the impetus of his thighs hosts of cars, that son of Pandu,

14. Began to crush your army with the greatest ease, like an elephant crushing a a cluster of reeds. Dragging down warriors from the terraces of their respective cars, and felling elephant-riders from the back of the elephants on which they were fighting,

15. And horse-soldiers from the back of the steeds, and crushing foot-soldiers as they stood on the ground, Bhima killed all with his mace, like a tempest breaking down trees with its violence.

16. Bhimasena produced a fierce carnage in the forces of your son. Smeared with fat, marrow, serum and flesh, and bespattered with blood,

17. His mace, that dealt death to steeds and elepahants, appeared exceedingly terrible. With corpses and carcasses of steeds, men and elephants and horse-soldiers,

18. The field of battle wore the appearance of the (gloomy) abode of Death. Like the Pinaka of the enraged Rudra engaged in slaughtering animals,

19. Like the dreadful club of the destroyer himself, and like the effulgent thunderbolt of Indra himself, was seen the terrible-looking and death-dealing club of Bhimasena.

20. The appearance of that high-souled son of Kunti, as he whirled his mace, became as terrible as that of the Destroyer himself at the time of the universal destruction.

21. Beholding him repeatedly smash that mighty host and advance like Death himself, all the warriors became cheerless.

22. Uplifting his mace, in whichsoever direction the son of Pandu turned his eyes O Bharata, from that diretion, all the soldiers fled (deserting their ranks.)

23—24. Beholding Vrikodara of fierce deeds armed with his mace and unconquered by the sea of soldiers and seeing him break the ranks and devour the hostile troops, like Death himself with his gaping mouth, Bhisma rushed at him with great impetuousity,

25. Riding on his car of great effulgence and of rattle as loud as the rumble of clouds, and covering the sky with the shower of his arrows, like *Parjannya* pouring down rain.

26. Seeing him make towards himself like the Destroyer with wide upon mouth

the mighty-armed Bhimasena inflamed with rage, rushed towards him.

27. That very moment, the heroic grand son of Sini namely Satyaki fell upon the grand-sire (Bhisma), and he began to slay his enemies with his strong bow, agitating the army of your son the while.

28. That at time, O Bharata, all the warriors of your army were unable to check him, as he advanced, borne by steeds of argentine effulgence, discharging (right and left) his shafts well-whetted and furnished with beautiful wings.

29. Then the Rakshasa Alambhusa pierced him with ten shafts only. Piercing him in return with fine arrows, the grand-son of Sini, advanced on his car.

30. Seeing that heroic warrior of the race of the Vrishnis thus advancing, and whirling in the midst of his enemies, and checking the foremost of the Kurus and uttering repeated war-cries in the battle,

31. Your warriors showered their arrowy down-pour on him, like rain clouds drenching the mountains with torrents of rain. They were unable to check the career of that hero who appeared like the mid-day sun in his full glory.

32. At that time, O king there was none (in your army) who was not cheerless, except the son of Somadatta, by name Vurisravas. This one seeing the car-warriors of his side routed, O Bharata, grasping his bow of fierece impetus, rushed at Satyaki desirous of fighting with the latter.

Thus ends the sixty-third chapter, the encounter between Satyaki and Vurisravas, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXIV.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then, O monarch, inflamed with wrath he pierced Satyaki with nine arrows, like an elephant-driver piercing the animal with the iron hook.

2. Thereat, before the very eyes of the spectators, Satyaki of immeasurable soul shrouded, with his arrows of straight-joints, him of the Kourava host.

3. Thereupon king Duryodhana, encircled by his uterine brothers, surrounded (for supporting him) the son of Somadatta, who had been striving hard in the encounter.

4. In the same manner, the Pandavas endued with great might, speedily forming themselves in a circle round Satyaki, stood (ready) in that battle.

5. Then, O Bharata, Bhimasena wrought up with wrath, with his upraised mace, opposed your sons headed by Duryodhana himself.

6—9, Supported by many thousand of cars, and excited with rage and fury, your son Nandaka pierced Bhimasena of great might with keen-pointed shafts whetted on stone and winged with the feathers of the *Kanka* bird. Then also, O monarch, Duryodhana excited with rage, in that fierce fight, struck Bhimasena on the breast with nine whetted shafts. Theaeafter the mighty-armed Bhimasena endued with superior strength mounted on his own most excellent chariot and thus addressed his charioteer Visoka. "These heroic and mighty car-worriors, these sons of Dhritarashtra endued with prowess,

10. Excited with anger, are all striving to slay me in battle. Them will I undoubtedly slay today before your very eyes.

11—12. Therefore, a charioteer, do you drive my steeds carefully in this encounter." Having thus spoken, O ruler of men, the son of Pritha pierced your son with ten keen-pointed shafts ornamented with gold. He also pierced Nandaka in return, in the centre of his breast, with three arrows.

13. Thereat Duryodhana, having pierced in return Bhima of superior strength with sin arrows, pierced Visoka with another three well-sharpened shafts.

14. In that battle, O king, as if smiling, Duryodhana with these arrows cut off the eflulgent bow of Bhima near the grasp.

15. Then in that battle, Bhima, beholding his charioteer Visoka afflicted with sharp shafts discharged by the mighty bowman, namely your son,

16. And unable to brook it and inflamed with wrath, took up another bow of celestial make, in order, O mighty sovereign, O foremost of men, to encompass the death of your son.

17. Inflamed with wrath, he also took up an arrow with a horse-shoe head, furnished with feathery wings; and with it, Bhima severed the excellent bow of the king (Duryodhana).

18. Thereat your son overwhelmed with fury, throwing off that severed bow, swiftly took up another bow of tougher make.

19. O monarch placing on his bow-string a fierce *Visikha* shaft that resembled in

effulgence the bludgeon of Death himself, your son, excited to the highest pitch of fury struck Bhimasena with it, on the centre of his breast.

20. There-with struck home and afflicted sore, he (Bhima) squatted on the terrace of his car; and when he was thus seated, he was overwhelmed with a swoon.

21. Beholding Bhima thus afflicted, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host headed by Abhimanyu, all of excellent parts could not brook it.

22. Then these warriors, without the least flurry, poured on the head of your son a mighty shower of arrows of fierce velocity.

23. Meanwhile Bhimasena of mighty prowess having regained conciousness, pierced Duryodhana with three shafts and again with another five.

24. That fierce bowman, that son of Pandava then pierced Salya with twenty-five shafts furnished with golden wings. Thus pierced, the latter fled from the field of battle.

25—26. Thereat your fourteen sons namely, Senapati, Susena, Jalasandha, Sulochana, Ugra, Bhimaratha, Bhima, Viravahu, Aloluka, Durmukha, Dushpradharsa, Vivatsu, Vikata and Soma, then encountered Bhima (in that battle).

27. With their eyes coppery in rage, and shooting myriads of shafts, they rushed against Bhimasena, piercing him simultaniously.

28. Then the heroic Bhimasena of superior might, beholding your sons, began to lick the corners of his mouth like a wolf in the midst of inferior beasts.

29. Then that mighty-armed son of Pandu, swooping down with great violence like Garuda himself, cut off with a horse-shoe-headed shaft the head of Senapati.

30. Then with a cheerful soul, laughing all the while, that one of strong arms, piercing Jalasandha with three shafts, transported him to the abode of Death.

31—36. Then slaying Susena also, he despatched him to Death. With a broad-headed arrow he felled on the ground the head of Ugra furnished with a helmet and graced with a couple of *Kuldalas*, and looking like the (charming) moon itseelf. Thereafter Bhima the son of Pandu, piercing in that battle Viravahu, along with his steeds, standards and charioteer with seventy arrows, despatched him to the other world. Then as if smiling, Bhimasena, O monarch, conveyed to the abodes of Death the two brothers Bhima and Bhimaratha. Then in that fierce contest, with an arrow furnished with a horse-shoe head, Bhima, despatched Sulochana to the regions of Death, before the eyes of all the soldiers. Then the rest of your sons who were there, beholding in the field the prowess of Bhimsena, and while being thus struck by that high-souled warrior, all ran away from the field of battle, afraid of Bhima.

37—38. Thereupon the son of Santanu thus addressed the mighty car-warriors of his army:—'This fierce bowman, Bhima, inflamed with wrath, is slanghtering in battle the mighty sons of Dhritarashtra, accomplished in weapons, heroic, courageous and united though they are. Do you all receive that son of Pandu in battle."

39. Thus spoken to, all the warriors belonging to the army of Dhritarashtra's son, furious in rage, rushed at Bhimasena endued with superhuman strength.

40. Suddenly, O ruler of men, Bhagadatta, mounted on an elephant with rent temples, rushed towards the spot where Bhima was stationed.

41. Rushing to the encounter, he, in that battle, intercepted Bhimasena from the view, (covering him) with shafts whetted on stone like clouds intercepting the sun from the view.

42. Then the mighty car-warriors headed by Abhimanyu, who all relied on the strength of their arms, could not brook this interception of Bhima.

43. So, all those heroes opposed Bhagadatta on all sides with a shower of arrows, and they also began to pierce the elephant from all sides with an arrowy down pour.

44. That elephant of the ruler of the Pragytisas, O king, being struck by all those mighty warriors, with showers of weapons of diverse discription,

45. And with blood spattered on its body, became, in that battle, worthy of being looked at, like masses of rain-clouds tinged with the rays of the sun.

46. That elephant, shedding temporal juice, being goaded by Bhagadatta, rushed against all those (heroes), like Death incarnate urged on by the Destroyer himself.

47. It doubled its speed and shook the earth under neath its tread. Then all those mighty car-warriors, seeing that dreadful aspect of the animal,

48—49. And considering it irristible, lost their heart. Then that king the foremost of men, excited with wrath, struck Bhimasena on the centre of his chest, with

a straight shaft. That mighty car-warrior and bowman, being pierced by that monarch,

50. With his limbs stiffened in consequence of a swoon, caught hold of his flag-staff. Beholding them terrified, and seeing Bhima overwhelmed with a swoon,

51—52. The powerful Bhagadatta endued with great prowess uttered a loud roar. Then O monarch, the Rakshasa Ggatotkacha of dreadful appearance seeing Bhima in that plight became inflamed with fury, and even there disappeared from the sight. And spreading a terrible illusion capable of enhancing the apprehension of the cowards,

53. He re-appeared within a moment assuming a dreadful form, and riding on an Airavatata the creation of his own illusive powers.

54. Other elephants guarding the points of the compass, namely, Anjana, Vamana Mahahadma, followed it, all of pure effulgence.

55. All these three mighty elephants ridden by Rakshshas were possessed of prodigious bodies with the temporal juice profusely exuding from their temples.

56. And they were endued with prowess strength and might and great fleetness and courage. Then Ghatotkacha goaded his own elephant in battle,

57, Being desirous, O afflicter of your foes, of slaying Bhagadatta along with his elephant. Goaded by the Rakshasas, of great strength, the other elephants,

58. Each possessed of four tusks, fell, from all sides, with fury, upon the elephant of Bhagadatta, striking the latter at the same time with their tusks.

59. Wounded with arrows, and afflicted by those elephants, and smarting with pain, the elephant of Bhagadatta set up a mighty roar that resembled the rumble of the thunderbolt of Indra.

60. Hearing those deep and dreadful cries of the roaring elephant, Bhisma thus spoke to Drona and king Suyodhana.

61. "This mighty bowman Bhagadatta fighting in this battle with the wicked-souled son of Hidimva, is involved in a great peril.

62. This Rakshasa is of prodigious stature, and king Bhagadatta also is very wrathful. Surely encountering each other in the fight they both will prove like the Death and the Destroyer.

63. Even now do we hear the mighty up-oar of the enraptured Pandavas, as also the distressful and loud cries of the frightened elephant (of Bhagadatta).

64. Good betide you, we shall now proceed to protect the king: uprotected, in battle, he will soon be deprived of his life.

65. Therefore, O warriors of extraordinary prowess, make haste; O sinless ones, do not delay. This hair-stirring and ruthless combat is deepening more and more.

66. This leader of a division is devoted to us, is the son of an illustrious dynasty and is endued with bravery. O you of unfading renown, it is proper that his rescue should be effected by us."

67. Listening to those words of Bhisma, all the monarchs forming in serried files and headed by the son Bharadwaja, with a desire for rescuing Bhagadatta,

68—69. Proceeded in all haste to the spot where the latter was. Beholding them advance, the Panchalas, together with the Pandavas headed by Yudhisthira himself, pursued the enemy from behind. Beholding that mighty host, the foremost of the Rakshasa endued with prowess,

70. Uttered a deafeaning roar, that resembled the roar of thunder. Hearing his roar and seeing those fighting elephants,

71. The son of Santanu, namely, Bhishma again addressed the son of Bharadwaja saying:—' I do not like to fight with the wicked-souled son of Hidimva.

72, At present he is surcharged with strength and prowess and is well-supported. He is now incapable of being defeated even by the wielder of the thunderbolt himself.

73. He is sure in his aims and can strike home; our vehicles are all fatigued and we have been wounded and lacertated in our fight with the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

74. Therefore we do not like to fight any longer with the Pandavas. Proclaim therefore, the withdrawal of our divisions for this day. Tomorrow shall we again battle with the enemy."

75. Hearing these words of the grandsire, and afflicated as they were with the fear of Ghatotkacha, they (the Kouravas) deightedly did what the former said availing themselves of the pretext of the advent of night.

76. Upon the withdrawal of the Kurus, the victorious Pandavas sent up their war crees accompanied with the blare of conchs and cornets.

77. Thus, O foremost of the Bharata race, did the battle rage that day, between

the Kurus and the Pandavas headed by Ghatotkacha.

78. Thereafter, the Kouravas, at night fall, hastily repaired to their own encampments, being ashamed and being vanquished by the Pandavas.

79. Those mighty car-warriors, the sons of Pandu, with their bodies mangled with shafts in battle, O king-retired to their camps, with hearts over-flowing with joy.

80. And, O mighty monarch, they proceeded placing Bhimasena and Ghatotkacha at their van, and O mighty sovereign, worshipping them out of great delight.

81. They uttered diverse cries that became mingled with sounds of the tabors, and they uttered also their war-cries which again were mingled with the blare of their conchs.

82. Those high-souled warriors, uttering leonine roars and shaking the earth with their tread, O sire, agitated the hearts of your sons.

83. Then those repressors of their foes retired to their camps at the advent of night. King Duryodhana, on the other hand, distressed in consequence of the slaughter of his brothers,

84. Reflected for some moments, overwhelmed with tears and grief. Then making all the necessary arrangements for his camp according to the rules of military sciences he began to meditate, afflicted (as he was with) the death of his brother and overcome with piognant grief on their account.

Thus ends the sixty-fourth chapter, the withdrawal of the troops at the end of the fourth day's combat, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXV.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Hearing of those feats achieved by the sons of Pandu—feats which are difficult of being achieved even by the celestials themselves, O Sanjaya, I have been filled with apprehension and amazement.

2. Hearing also of the humiliation of my sons in every way, O Sanjaya, I have been seized by a burning anxiety as to what the *finale* (of this war) will be.

3. The prophecy of Vidura does consume my heart; and, O Sanjaya, I see that through the influence of (adverse) destiny every-thing is happening even as he had said.

4. The smiters of the Pandava hosts are battling with those foremost of warriors headed by Bhisma, who are endued with heroism and accomplished in (the use of) all weapons.

5. What asceticism those high-souled and greatly powerful sons of Pandu have observed, what boon, O child, have they secured, what knowledge have they cultivated,

6. In consequence of which they suffer no reduction, like the stars in the firmament? I can not bear the repeated slaughter of my warriors by the sons of Pandu.

7—8. Through the disposal of Destiny, a highly severe chastisement has overtaken me alone. Tell me truly, O Sanjaya, every thing, about why my sons have become liable to slaughter and why the sons of Pandus have been exempted from it. I can not discern, O afflicter of your enemies, the termination of this ocean of distress,

9. Like a man desirous of swimming over the vast sea with his two arms. I now certainly see that a terrible calamity has overtaken my sons'.

10. No doubt, Bhima will slay all my sons. I do not find that hero who can protect my sons in battle.

11—12. The destruction of my sons in battle is certain, O Sanjaya. Therefore, O Suta, it behoves you to tell me who am questioning you, in detail and truly, the real cause of these events, as also, what Duryodhana did, seeing his own troops turn their faces away from the field of battle.

13. Bhisma, Drona, Kripa, and the son of Souvala, and Jayadratha, and the mighty bowman the son of Drona, and the mighty Vikarna,—what did all these warriors do?

14. What, O highly wise one, was the resolution of these high-souled warriors, when, O Sanjaya, my sons turned away their faces from the field?

Sanjaya said:—

15. Hear, O king, with perfect attention, and hearing do you understand what you hear. There was nothing the result of incantation and nothing the production of illusion.

16. Neither, O monarch, did the sons of Pandu create any new source of apprehension. Those warriors endued with strength are fighting their battles according to the rules of fair combat.

17. The sons of Pritha, O Bharata, desirous of securing illustrious fame, ever perform all acts—even the maintenanee of their lives—in perfect accordance with the rules of morality.

18. Attended by excellent prosperity and endued with great strength and conforming to all morality, they never turn back from the fight. Victory ever attends righteousness.

19. For this reason, O ruler of earth, the sons of Pritha are unslayable in battle and are ever courted by victory. Your sons are of wicked intentions and are intent on perpetrating sin ;

20—21. And are cruel and of low deeds ; therefore are they always worsted in the battle. O ruler of men, various heartless injuries were done to the Pandavas by your sons, like men of low extraction. Disregarding all those offences of your sons,

22. O elder brother of Pandu, the sons of Pandu tried always to keep them hidden and uuknown. O ruler of men your sons do not pay them proper respect.

23. Let your sons now reap the fruit,—that resembles the poisonous fruit of the *Kimpaka* tree,—of that their persistent course of sinful actions. [illegible] ivine [illegible] own [illegible]

[illegible] mighty monarch, do you with your sons and relatives, taste that mortal fruit, in as much as, O king, you did not seem to be awakened though always warned by your well-wishers.

25. Always forbidden by Vidura, Bhisma, Drona of high soul, his son, as also by me, you did not pay any regard,

26. To our words, salutary and intended for your good though they were, even as a sick man rejects wholesome medicines. Accepting the views of your sons, you expected to see the Pandavas vanquished.

27. Hear again the true reason,—about which you had asked me—for the victory of the sons of Pandu, O foremost of the Bharatas.

28. I shall exactly tell you, O subjugator of your foes, as I myself have heard it. The grandsire himself was questioned, on this point by king Duryodhana.

29—30. Beholding his brothers, all accomplished car-worriors, worsted in battle, your son Duryodhana, O Kourava, with his heart overwhelmed with sorrow, asked this question to the grandsire, approaching him with humility, on the advent of night. O ruler of men, hear from me what your son did say at the time.

Duryodhana said —

31. Drona, yourself, Salya, Kripa, the son of Drona, Kritavaman, the son of Hridika, and Sudakshina the ruler of the Kamvojas,

32. Bhurisravas, Vikarna and Bhagadatta endued with prowess—these heroes are all regarded as mighty car-warriors ; all these men are the sons of illustrious dynasties and are ever ready to shuffle off their mortal coil.

33. I consider these to be a match for the three worlds united together. The whole Pandava army can not withstand your prowess.

34. Regarding these things, a doubt has arisen in my mind. Tell me, who am asking you, of him, relying on whom the sons of Kunti are gaining victory over us at each step.

Bhisma said :—

35-36. Hear, O king, the words that I am going to say to you, O you of the Kuru race. I did frequently address you to the same effect, urging you to conclude peace with the sons of Pandu. I consider this to be prf[illegible] both to you and to the earth, O lo[illegible] who [illegible] supreme, he

37. [illegible] you, O king, enjoy [illegible] be so of this earth with your broth[illegible] highest centented heart, and enhancing [illegible] eings, of your relatives and gratifying eve[illegible] else.

38. O Sire, you paid no heed to words before, though I cried myself hoa[illegible] Now this evil has overtaken you, in as m[illegible] as you have ever despised the sons Pandu.

39. Hear from me as I speak, O king O lord, the reason why those sons of Pandu, who are never tired in the performance of pious acts, are unslayable.

40. There was not, is not, or will not be a person, who would have been, is or will be able to conquer the Pandavas, protected as they are by the wielder of the Sarnga bow.

41. Hear from me, you who are versed in morality, the ancient history that was related to me, O sire, by the sages of tranquil souls.

42. In the days of yore, all the celestials and sages, assembled together, danced attendance upon the grandsire (Brahma) on the mountain Gandhamadana.

43. Seated at his ease in their midst, the lord of people, saw an excellent chariot, burning with effulgence, stationed in the firmament.

44. Having ascertained everything about that chariot by means of his contemplation,

and folding his palms together, Brahma, with his soul filled with delight bowed down his head to the *Purusha*, the highest of all Divinities.

45. Also the sages and the celestials, beholding the figure thus revealed in the heavens, stood with hands folded and with their gaze fixed on the marvel of marvels.

46. Then Brahma best conversant with with morality, the foremost of those versed in the *Vedas* and the creator of the worlds, having worshipped that form duly, chaunted this hymn of praise.

47. "Thou art the glory of the universe, and hast the universe as thy form. Thou art the lord of the universe; thou art the protector of it; thou hast thy senses under thy thorough control. Thou art the Lord paramount of this universe, thou art the Vasudeva; I seek refuge in thy divine self that art the soul of *Yoga*.

48. Victory unto thee that art the divine and paramount Lord of this universe; victory unto thee, who art ever anxious for the world's welfare. Victory unto thee, the lord and the master of the *Yogins*; victory ...hee that art identified with the ocean tresseu ...rgy. his brother...

84. R...y unto thee the Lord of the lords whelmed...rse, that hast the lotus springmaking ...hy navel and that hast expanded fo... Victroy unto thee that art the incarn... of gentleness, thee that art the son of (O thou, the Lord of the past, the ...ent, and the future.

...o. O thou, the receptacle of innumerable ...alities, victory be unto thee, the refuge of ...l things; O thou that art *Narayana*, and ...hat art incomprehensible, victory be unto thee, the wielder of the Sarnga bow.

51. Victrory be unto thee, O thou that hast the universe for thy form, that art free from the influence of all maladies. O Lord of the universe, O thou of long arms, victory be unto thee who art devoted to further the welfare of the worlds.

52. O great Serpent, O huge Boar, O Lord, O thou possessed of the lion's manes, victory be unto thee. O thou whose raiments are yellow, O Lord of the several points of the compass, O thou that art like the abode of the universe, O infinite one, O thou that dost suffer no deterioration,

53. O thou that art the Manifest, O thou that art the Unmanifest, O thou of senses thoroughly controlled, O thou that art like the infinite space, O thou that ever achievest the acts beneficial to the worlds, O thou that are beyond all measurement, O thou that alone art conversant with thy nature, O thou that art ever deep and the fulfiller of desires, victory be unto thee.

54. O thou that hast no end, O thou that art known as Brahma, O thou that art eternal, and art the protector of all creatures, O thou that art ever successful, O thou whose understanding is accomplished in all things, O thou that art conversant with all righteousness, O thou that art ever attended with victory,

55. O thou of mysterious self, O thou that art the soul of all *Yoga*, O thou that art the origin of every thing that has sprung into existence, O thou that art the knowledge of the souls of every being, O master of the univbrse, victory be unto thee that art the creator of all beings.

56. O thou that art self-create, O thou of eminent parts, O thou that art ever active for bringing about the destruction of all beings, O thou that art the inspirer of all thoughts in the mind, victory be unto thee, the beloved of those that are conversant with Brahma.

57. O thou that art ever engaged in the acts of creation and destruction, O represser of all desires, O most exalted Divinity, O thou the origin of *Amrita*, O thou whose existence only is a reality, O thou that art the ... doth appear at the end of a *Yuga*, O thou ... art the bestower of ... victory,

58. O thou that art the Lord of lords of men, O Divine one, O thou that hast the lotus growing from thy navel, O thou endued with great might, O thou that art self-create, O thou that art the elements in their nascent condition, O thou that art the soul of all performances, victory be unto thee, the giver of all things.

59. The goddess of earth constitutes thy feet, the cardinal and subsidiary points of the compass repressent thy arms; the celestial regions constitute thy head; thy form is composed of myself; the celestials compose thy limbs, and the sun and the moon thy two eyes.

60. Asceticism and truth born of acts of piety constitute thy strength. Thy energy is fire, thy breath the wind. And wate s have been created from thy perspiration.

61. The twin Acwins ever constitue thy ears, the goddess of learning is thy tongue, the *Vedas* are thy knowlege and in thee is this world stationed.

62. O thou that art the Lord of Yoga and the *Yogins*, we know neither thy extent nor thy measure, neither thy energy nor thy prowess, nor thy strength, nor thy origin.

63. O god, cherishing reverence for thee, and betaking to thy ways by the perform-

ance of vows &c, we do ever worship Vishnu, the Supreme Lord, the God of gods.

64. The sages, the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the Rakshas, the Pannagas, the Pishachas, and men, and the animals, and birds and men and reptiles,

65. All these have been created by me in the first instance, on earth, through thy grace. O thou that hast the lotus springing from thy navel, O thou of expanded eyes, O Krishna, O soother of all afflictions,

66. Thou art the refuge of all created beings and thou art their bodies! Thou hast the universe for thy mouth; O thou that art the Lord of the celestials, the gods are ever happy through thy grace only.

67. O god, through thy grace the earth hath ever been freed from all her apprehensions. So, O thou of expanded eyes, be thou the propagator of the Yadu race.

68. Gratify my solicitation O Lord, for the sake of establishing righteousness, for for slaying the sons of Diti and for upholding the universe

69. O Vasudeva all that is supremely mysterious regarding thee, O Lord, all that have been exactly sung by me, through thy grace.

70. Having created the divine Sankarsana thyself out of thy own self, thou didst then, O Krishna create thyself as Pradumnya, born out of thy own self.

71. From Pradumnya thou didst then creat Anirudha known as the undeteriorating Vishnu. And it was Anirudha who did create me Brahman as the supporter of the universe.

72. Thus created by the essence of Vamdeva, I have been created by thyself. Dividing thyself into portions, O Lord create thysslf among humanity.

73. There, for the well-being of the world, slaughtering the Asuras, and establishing righteousness and winning glory, thou shalt again attian to the best Yoga.

74. O thou of immeasurable prowess, the regenerate sages and the celestials sing of thy wonderful self out of devotion for thee, under those various appellations that are ascribed to thee.

75. O thou of excellent arms, all the host of beings find their support in thee, having sought shelter in thee, the giver of boons. The *Vipras* eulogise thee as the bridge of the universe, having no beginning, middle or end, and as posessed of infinite Yoga prowess."

Thus ends the sixty-fifth chapter, the eulogy to Vishnu, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXVI.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Bhisma said :—

1. Thereupon that almighty Divinity, the Lord of the lords of people, thus replied to Brahma in a soft and sonorous voice.

2. "I have come to know, O sire, all that you desire, through my Yoga power. It will be even as you desire." Saying this he disappeared then and there.

3. Then the celestials, the sages, and the Gandharvas were all filled with great wonder; and urged by curiosity they then thus spoke to the Grandsire Brahma.

4. "Who indeed is he, O master, that was even now adored by your illustrious self with bows and with humility, and who was eulogised in so high terms? We desire to hear about him."

5. Thus spoken to, the almighty Grandsire thus replied to the celestials, the regenerate sages, the Gandharvas and every one else in soft and sweet words.

6. "O foremost of the celestials he who is disignated That, he who is supreme, he who is existent at present, and will be so for all future periods, he who is the highest self, he who is called the soul of beings, and he who is the paramount Lord,

7. I was holding conversation even with his ever-contented self; that Lord of the universe has been entreated by me to show his grace on the earth,

8. To take his birth in the world of men and to be known as the son of Vasudeva (I entreated him saying) :—'For slaughtering the Asuras, do thou take thy birth on the face of the earth.

9. Those Daityas, and Danavas, and Rakshasas of dreadful appearance and of great might who were slain in battle, have been born among men.

10. For slaying them, the almighty Lord of great strength, being accompanied by Nara, shall wonder over the earth assuming a human form.

11. Those ancient and illustrious sages namely Nara and Narayana, are incapable of being vanquished in battle by even the gods united together.

12. Together, those two sages Nara and Narayana, of immeasurable effulgence, will be born in the world of men, and they that are fools will not recognise them as such.

13. That Lord of the universe, whose son Brahma am, that Vasudeva, the Paramount Lord of all the worlds should always be worshipped by you.

14. O you foremost of celestials, endued with great prowess and bearing the conch, the discus and the mace, he should never be disregarded by you as a man.

15. He is the supreme mystery; he is the suprme shelter; he is the supreme Brahma, and he is the supreme glory.

16. He is undeteriorating, unmanifest and eternal. He is designated the Purusha, he is ever sung but never known by any body.

17, He is the supreme energy, his is the supreme felicity, he is the supreme truth. Thus has Viswakarman sung.

18. Therefore the Lord Vasudeva of infinite prowess should never be disregarded as a man by the celestials and the Asuras headed by Indra himself.

19. That one of perverted undersaanding who, out of contempt, calls Hrishikesa a man is said to be the vilest of all creatures.

20. He is spoken of as a great sinner who disregards Vasudeva for his having incarnated himself as a man.

21. Men speak of him as a great sinner, who does not know that Divine one, that soul of the mobile and the immobile, that one of pure effulgeuce, that one bearing the mark of Srivatsa on his breast, that one from whose navel a lotus has sprung.

22. Disregarding that wearer of the diadem and the gem Koustuva, that giver of assurances of safety to his friends, that one of illustrious soul, a man becomes sunk in the dreadful mire of sin.

23. Every one, having known all these truths, should do obeisance, O best of the celestials, to Vasndeva that Lord of the lords of people."

Bhisma said :—

24. That almighty one (the Grandsire), having thus spoken to the gods and the sages in the days of yore, repaired to his own residence' leaving all creatures behind.

25. Thereafter the celestials, together with the Gandharvas, the sages, and the Apsaras, having listened to that discourse delivered by Brahma, went to Heaven with joyful hearts.

26, It was this, O sire, that was heard by me from the sages of accomplished understanding when they were speaking of Vasudeva the ancient one, amongst their assembly.

27. O you conversant with the *Shastras*, I also heard this from Rama the son of Jamadagni, from the highly intelligent Markendeya and also from Vyasa and Narada.

28. Having heard the truth about the subject, and having heard of Vasudeva as the undeteriorating Lord of illustrious soul, the supreme Master of the Lords of people,

29. From whose self has sprung Brahma the father of all the universe, why should not men adore and worship that Vasudeva?

30. You have been, O sire, forbidden in days past, by the sages of accomplished understandings (who said to you), 'Do not risk a battle with Vasudeva the weilder of the bow,

31. As also with the Pandavas'. But out of folly, you could not comprehend my word; I do regard you therefore as a cruel Rakshasa; and you are encompassed in ignorance.

32. For this reason it is that you despise Govinda and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu; for, what other man could despise the divine Nara and Narayana?

33. I therefore, O monarch, say to you that this one is eternal and undeteriorating pervading the whole universe, immutable, the ruler, the creator, the supporter and the truly existent.

34. That preceptor of the mobile and the immobile creations, that supreme Lord, supports the triune world; he is the Warrior, the Victory, the Victorious, and the Lord of all nature.

35. He is permeated, O king, with the quality of goodness and is free from the slightest tinge of the qualities of passion and dullness. Righteousness is where Krishna is; and victory is where rightiousness is.

36. The sons of Pandu are, O king, supported by the supreme excellence of his *yoga* of self; and, with certitude, victory will court them.

37. He it is who inspires the sons of Pandu with an intelligence that brings about their prosperity; he it is who charges them with strength in battle; he it is who ever protects them from danger.

38. This one is that eternal Deity that pervades all creatures, and is ever blessed. He, of whom you have asked me, is celebrated under the name of Vasudeva.

39. He is adored and served with restrained hearts alike by the Brahmanas, the Kshatriyas, the Vaisyas, and the Sudras, each having distinguising features of their own, and performing their own duties,

40. He it is, whom, at the end of the Dwapara *Yuga* and in the beginning of the

Kali *Yuga* Samkarsana had eulogised, in the manner of devotees.

41. It is that Vasudeva the creator of the universe who does repeatedly create, *Yuga* after *Yuga*, all the regions of the celestials and the mortals, all the sea-girt cities, and also all the regions of human habitation.

Thus ends the sixty-sixth chapter, the story of the world's creation, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXVII.

(BHISMA-BHADA [PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Duryodhana said :—

1. In all the worlds, Vasudeva is spoken of as the Highest Being; O grandsire, I desire to know all about his nativity and his glory.

Bhisma said :—

2. Vasudeva is the Supreme Being, the God of all gods. There is to be seen none, O foremost of the Bharatas, superior to Him of eyes resembling lotus petals.

3. Markaudeya speaks of Govinda as the great mystery, as all beings, as the Soul of all, as the Highest Soul and as the Foremost of all male beings.

4. He created these three things viz., Water, Air, and Fire. Having created this Earth, that Divine Master, the Lord of all the worlds,

5. That Highest Soul, that Foremost of all Beings, laid himself down on the waters. Therein, that Divine One composed of all energies, was lulled in sleep through his Yoga.

6. He created Fire from His mouth, and Wind from His vital breath. That undeteriorating One created Words and the Vedas from His mind.

7. At first, He created these worlds as also the celestials along with all the sages. He also created decrepitude and death of all creatures and also their growth and birth.

8. He is righteousness itself and is versed in all duties. He is the giver of boons and the gratifier of all our desires. He is the Actor himself as well as the Act itself, and he is the Divine and the Sole Master.

9. That undeteriorating Lord of illustrious soul, at first created the Past, the Present and the Future and also the creator of the worlds viz (Brahma).

10. He created Samkarshana the First-born of all created being. He created the divine Sesha who is otherwise known as Ananta,

11. And who supports all creatures and upholds the Earth with all her mountains. Through devout meditation, the Vipras come to know Him of supreme energy.

12—13. That Foremost of all male beings slew the mighty Asura named Madhu who was born out of the secretion of His ears, who was furious and of fierce actions and fierce intentions, when he was on the point of destroying Brahma. In consequence of His slaying that Asura, the celestials, the Danavas, and the mortals,

14. And the sages call Janardana by the name of the Slayer of Madhu. The great Boar, the Lion, and the three-treaded Lord,

15. Hari is the Father, and the Mother, of all living creatures. Neither there was, nor there will be, any one superior to Him of eyes like lotus petals.

16. From His mouth, O monarch, He created, the Regenerates, from His arms the Kshastriyas, from His thighs the Vaisyas and from His legs the Sudras.

17—18. With ascetic austerities devoutly serving in the days of the full moon and the new moon Keshava the Divine, the creator of all corporal creatures, the Essence of Brahma and of Yoga, one surely attains to Him. Keshava has been called the Supreme energy and the Grandsire of the worlds.

19. The sages, O ruler of men, call Him Hrishikesha or the Lord of the senses. Know Him also to be the supreme Teacher, the Father, and the Preceptor.

20. Regions of undeteriorating blessedness is secured by him on whom Krishna becomes gracious. He that seeks protection from Keshava in seasons of danger, and

21. He that always reads of His themes, becomes happy and attended will all blessings. Those who attain to Krishna are never again befooled.

22. That Janarddana ever saves those who are overwhelmed with great terror. O descendant of the Bharata race, perfectly aware of this fact, Yudhisthira,

23. With his whole soul, has sought shelter in Keshava, the Supreme God, the Lord of the worlds, the Master of all Yoga and the Lord of this Earth.

Thus ends the sixty-seventh Chapter, the nativity and glory of Keshava, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHPTER LXVIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Bhisma said :—

1. Hear, O monarch, from me this hymn, chaunted by Brahma himself, and recounted in the days of yore to men on Earth by the Brahmanical sages and the celestials.

2. "Thou art the Master of the Sadhyas and the celestials, and art the Lord of the god of gods, the Protector of people and the Knower of all hearts. Thus has the sage Narada sung of thee.

3. Markandeya has spoken of thee as the Past, the Present, and the Furture, the the Sacrifice of all sacrifices and the Austerity of all austerities.

4. The almighty Bhrigu has sang of thee that thou art the God of all gods, and thine is the ancient and excellent semblance that is ascribed to Vishnu.

5. Dwipayana spoke of thee that thou art the Vasudeva among the Vasus, the consolidator of the sway of Sakra (Indra) and the God of gods and of all created beings.

6. In the days of yore, on the occasion of the creation of creatures, thou hast been called Daksha, the Lord of creation. Angiras has spoken of thee as the creator of all corporeal beings.

7. Devala has sung of thee that the Unmanifest All is in thy form and the Manifest is in thy mind, and that the celestials have all sprung from thy speech (breath).

8. The heavens are pervaded with thy head ; thou dost sustain the Earth with thy two arms ; the triune world is inside thy abdomen ; thou art the Eternal Male Being.

9. Persons purified by the performance of austerities, know thy divine self even to be such. To the sages gratified with a knowledge of the self, thou art the foremost of all true existent entities.

10. O Slayer of Madhu, thou art the sole refuge of the royal sages, who are of illustrious nature, who never turn back from the fight, and who are devoted to all their duties.

11. Even thus is that almighty and excellent Being Hari always adored and eulogised by sages conversant with the Yoga who are headed by Sanatkumara."

12. Thus, O Sire, has been described to you, in detail and in brief, the real nature of Keshava. Now turn your heart in love to Keshava.

Sanjaya said :—

13. Your son, O mighty monarch, listening to this sacred story, began to regard highly Keshava and those mighty car-warriors, the sons Pandu.

14.—15. Thereafter, O monarch, Bhisma, the son of Santanu, again addressed him saying—"You have now heard, O monarch, the true description of the glory of the high-souled Keshava and of Nara, about which you asked me. You have also heard of the purpose for which both Nara and Narayana have taken their births among men.

16. You have also learnt why those two heroes are invincible and why they have not been ever vanquished in battle ; as also why the sons of Pandu, O king, are unslayable in battle by anybody.

17. Towards the Pandavas endued with fame, Krishna bears an unshaken affection. Therefore it is, O foremost of sovereigns, that I advice that peace be concluded with the Pandavas.

18. Controlling your passions do you rule this earth with your powerful brothers around you. You shall surely reap destruction if you disregard the divine Nara and Narayana."

19. Having spken thus, O ruler of men, your father became silent ; and dismissing the king, he entered his own tent.

20. The king also retired to his own tent having bowed down to that one of illustrious soul. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, he slept away that night on a (milk) white bed.

Thus ends the sixty-eighth chapter, the glory of Krishna, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that night had passed away and when the sun had risen, the two armies O mighty monarch, encountered each other for battle.

2. Looking at each other in that battle, they rushed against each other in serried files, inflamed with rage and desirous of slaying and conquering each other.

3. In consequence of your wicked counsel, O king, the Pandavas and the Dhritarashtras, filled with joy, clad in mail and formed in battle array, rushed against one another for striking one another.

4. O monarch, Bhisma protected on all sides the array of his troops that figured the Makara. O king, so also, the sons of Pandu protected the array that they had formed with their troops.

5. Then, O mighty monarch, your sire Devavrata, that foremost of car-warriors, marched forth surrounded by a mighty host of cars.

6. And other car-warriors, foot-soldiers tuskers and horse-soldiers, followed him each stationed in his proper rank.

7. The sons of Pandu endued with fame, seeing the Kauravas ready for the encounter, formed their troops in that invincible and excellent array that figures a hawk.

8. And in the backs of that hawk-like array shone Bhimasena possessed of great strength. In its eyes were Sikhandin and the irrepressible Dhrishtadyumna the son of Prishata.

9. In its head was stationed the heroic Satyaki of invincible prowess ; and in its neck was Partha wielding the Gandiva bow.

10. The high-souled Drupada ever-attended with prosperity, along with his son, and supported by a Aukshahini of troops, formed its left wing.

11. Its right wing was formed by Kaikaya the commander of a division consisting of a Aukshahini ; in its back were the sons of Drupadi and the highly powerful son of Subhadra.

12. In its tail was the heroic and ever prosperous king Yudhisthira himself endued with great prowess, and supported by his twin brothers Nakula and Sahadeva.

13. Then in the battle that commenced Bhima, penetrating through the mouth of the Makaralike array of the Kauravas, approached Bhisma and covered him over with arrows.

14. Thereupon Bhisma endued with great prowess, discharged powerful weapons that confounded in that fierce encounter the array of troops belonging to the sons of Pandu.

15. Upon the confusion of the forces, Dhananjaya proceeding hastily, pierced Bhishma with a thousand shafts, at the van of battle.

16. Having baffled in that battle the weapons discharged by Bhisma, Dhananjaya stood ready for the encounter, supported by his own division filled with joy.

17—19. Thereupon king Duryodhana that foremost of those endued with strength, that great car-warrior seeing that terrible slaughter of his army and remembering the death of his brothers, in that battle, speedily apporached the son of Bharadwaja, and addressing him said :—O preceptor, O sinless one, you are my constant well-wisher. Relying on you as also on the grandsire, we expect without doubt to conquer in battle even the very celestials themselves.

20. Not to speak of the sons of Pandu, who are of puny might and prowess ? Good betide you. Act in such a way that the sons of Pandu may be slain."

21. Thus spoken to on the field by your son, Drona penetrated the Pandava array even before the very eyes of Satyaki.

22. Thereat, O Bharata, Satyaki impeded the progress of Drona. Thereupon ensued an encounter that was fierce and terrible to look at.

23. Then in that battle, the highly powerful son of Bharadwaja, burning with rage as if smiling, struck the grandson of Sini with ten shafts on his shoulder-joint.

24. At this, Bhimasena waxing wroth, pierced Bharadwaja with arrows, desirous O monarch, of rescuing Satyaki from Drona that foremost of all wielders of weapons.

25. Thereat Drona and Bhisma and also Salya, O sire, inflamed with rage, covered Bhimasena in that battle with (a thick shower of) arrows.

26. Then, O sire, Abhimanyu waxing wroth, and the sons of Draupadi also, pierced with their whetted shafts all those warriors with uplifted weapons.

27. Then in that fierce battle, the mighty bowman Shikhandin rushed against Bhisma and Drona, both of great prowess, who inflamed with wrath, had fallen upon his own troops.

28. Grasping a very tough bow of which the twang resembled the rumble of the clouds, that hero speedily poured down a shower of arrows, shrouding the sun itself.

29. But the grandsire of the Bharatas, meeting with Shikhandin in the battle avoided him, remembering the femininity of his sex.

30. Thereat, O mighty monarch, urged by your son, Drona rushed into the encounter, in order to protect Bhisma.

31. Shikhandin also encountering Drona the foremost of all wielders of weapons,

shunned him out of fear, like one flying from the blazing fire that burns at the end of a Yuga.

32. Then O ruler of earth, your son, supported by a mighty division, advanced to rescue Bhisma, out of a desire for securing great fame.

33. So also, O monarch, the Pandavas firmly setting their heart upon victory rushed at Bhisma, placing Dhananjaya at their head.

34. Then a fierce and wonderful encounter, like that between the celestials and the Asuras, ensued between those two hosts each desirous of winning victory and great fame in battle.

Thus ends the sixty-ninth chapter, the commencement of the fifth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXX.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Bhisma, the son of Santanu, fought a fierce battle, desirous of saving your sons from their fear of Bhimsena.

2. In that morning, a most dreadful battle was fought between the kings of the Kurava and the Pandava hosts, in which many best warriors were slain.

3. When that furious and dreadful engagement raged, a terrible din arose, that touched the very heavens.

4. The clangour that was made was deafening in consequence of the roars of stricking elephants and the neighs of steeds and the blare of conchs and the sound of drums.

5. Those mighty warriors endued with great prowess, fighting with one another out of a desires for victory, roared at one another, like bulls amongst a herd of kine.

6. O foremost of the Bharatas, heads cut off with keen-edged arrows, falling in that b ıttle, appeared like a shower of stones from the skies.

7. Many heads, O foremost of the Bharatas, were seen lying on the field of battle, graced with ear-rings and head-gears, and effulgent like gold itself.

8. The ground was strewn over with limbs severed by *Visikha*, with head graced with ear-rings, and with arms decorated with ornaments &c.

9—10. In a moment the earth literally became covered over with bodies cased in armours, with decorated arms, with faces charming like the moon and beauti fied with eyes with coppery corners, and O monarch, with the of dead bodies of elephants, steeds and men.

11. Under the thick cloud of dust (raised by the warriors) in which the whistling weapons flashed like lightning, the sound emitted by the various implements of war resembled the roars of thunder.

12. That dreadful and fierce fight, O Bharata, between the Kurus and the Pandus created a river of blood in the field of battle.

13. In that fierce, dreadful, terrifying and hair-stirring battle, the Kshastriyas incapable of being represscd in battle began to shower a veritable down-pour of arrows.

14. Afflicted with that shower of arrows, the elephants of your army as well as of the enemy's army, began to shriek aloud and run hither and thither with uplifted trunks.

15. Nothing could be heard in consequence of the flappings produced by bows of great toughness, belonging to cool-headed warriors excited with fury.

16. As head-less trunks stood up in th a sea of blood, other kings rushed into batt l endeavouring to slay their enemies.

17. Heroes of immeasurable prowesse possessed of arms resembling bludgeoms, slew one another in that battle, with shafts and *Saktis* and maces and swords.

18. Pierced with shafts and deprived of their riders who used to guide them with hooks, elephants began to course (madly) through the field ; steeds ran about in all direction having their riders slain.

19. Many warriors of your army and many belonging to the host of enemy, afflicted with shafts-wounds, running hither and thither (with pain), (at last) jumped up and fell down.

20—21. In that fight between Bhima and Bhisma, heaps of arms, heads, bows maces, legs and ornaments and bracelets were seen rising over the field.

22. There was also seen here and thera O ruler of men, large number of running steeds and retreating elephants.

23. The Kshastriyas, urged on by Destiny, began to slay one another in that battle, with maces, swords, lances and straight-jointed shafts.

24. Other heroes accomplished in battle struck one another in that battle with their bare arms, that resembled bludgeons made wholly of iron.

25. O king, other heroic warriors of your army fought on with those of the Pandava host, and slew one another by striking one another with clenched fists, knees, palms and blows.

26. With the fallen, the falling, and with those rolling on the ground in agony, the battle, O lord of men, became indeed very dreadful.

27. Car-warriors deprived of their cars, grasping well-tempereds swords, rushed at one another desirous of slaying one another.

28. Thereupon king Duryodhana surrounded by a large number of the Kalingas and placing Bhisma at the head, charged the Pandava host.

29. So also, the Pandavas, surrounding Vrikodara and riding on fleet animals in that battle, rushed, inflamed with wrath, against the divison led by Bhisma.

Thus ends the seventieth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing his brother (Bhima) and other kings (of the Pandava host) engaged with Bhisma, with weapons uplifted, Dhananjaya rushed against the son of Ganga.

2. Hearing the blare of the conch *Panchajanya*, and the twang of the bow Gandiva, and seeing the standard of the son of Pritha (Arjuna), every one of us was seized with terror.

3—4. O mighty monarch, we then beheld the standard of that wielder of the Gandiva bow,—standard that resembled a lion's tail in shape and looked like a blazing mountain in the air ; that could not be obstructed by the trees ; that appeared like the risen comet ; and that was of diverse hue and variegated and of celestial make and bore the device of the monkey.

5. In that terrible encounter, the warriors saw Arjuna's gold-mounted Gandiva appear beautiful like flashes of lightning illumining a mass of clouds in the welkin.

6. While he was slaying the warriors of your army, we heard shouts, that resembled those of Indra himself, uttered by Arjuna, as also the dreadful sounds he produced by striking his palms against his arms.

7. Arjuna poured in torrents his arrowy showers in all the drections of the compass, like a rain-cloud surcharged with lightning and thunder and assisted by violent tempest pouring rain.

8. Then Dhanjaya, possessed of dreadful weapons, rushed against the son of Ganga. Confounded with his weapons we then were unable to distinguish between the east and the west.

9. Then O foremost of the Bharata, your warriors, not knowing which point of the compass they were in, with their animals exhausted, steeds slain and hearts confounded, and huddling close to one another,

10. Threw themselves upon the protection of Bhisma, along of with your sons. In that battle Bhisma the son of Santanu became their refuge.

11. Seized with panic, car-warriors jumped down from their cars and cavalry-soldiers from the back of their steeds ; and foot-soldiers fell down even on the ground where they stood.

12. Hearing the twang of the bow Gandiva, that resembled the rumble of thunder, O Bharata, all your warriors were struck with terror and began to fall off their ranks.

13. Then, with fleet and mettled chargers of the Kamvoja breed, and surrounded by many thousand Gopas and an army of the Gopayanas,

14. And O ruler of men, supported, by the Madras, the Souviras, the Gandharas the Trigarttas, and the foremost of all Kalinga warriors, the king of the Kalingas,

15. And king Jayadratha accompanied by many kings and followed by a numerous force consisting of various races headed by Dussasana himself,

16. And supported by fourteen thousand picked cavalry-sol diers urged by your son, encompassed on all sides the king of the Suvalas.

17. Then in that battle, united together and riding on their respective vehicles, those foremost of Bharata's race, namely the sons of Pandu, began to slaughter the warriors of your army.

18. A thick cloud of dust, raised by car-warriors, elephants, steeds and foot soldiers, made the battle that raged all the more terrible.

19. Bhisma then, supported by a mighty force consisting of elephant-warriors, car-warriors and cavalry-soldiers, all armed with *Tomaras*, *Narachas* and *Prasas*

fell to fight with the diadem-decked Arjuna.

20—21. The ruler of Avanti encountered the king of the Kasis. Bhimasena engaged the ruler of the Sindhus; and *Ajatasatru* (Yudhisthira) with his sons and his counsellors, engaged with the renowned Salya the foremost of the Madras. Vikarna became engaged with Sahadeva, and Chitrasena with Sikhandin.

22. The Matsyas, O ruler of men encountered Duryodhana along with Sakuni. Drupada, Chekitana and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki

23. Engaged with the illustrious Drona, supported by his son. Kripa and Kritavarman both charged Dhristadyumna.

24. Thus, running steeds and wheeling and whirling cars and elephants, in that battle, engaged with one another, all over the field.

25. Flashes of lightning illumined the welkin although there was no cloud, and the points of the compass were shrouded in thick clouds of dust; and O ruler of men, large meteors were seen falling with terrible sounds.

26. A mighty tempest, raged and a shower of dust began to fall. The sun disappeared in the firmament being shrouded by the dust-clouds raised by the troops.

27. All the warriors, overwhelmed with that dust and fighting with their various weapons, were greatly confounded.

28. The whizzing noise produced by the arrows capable of piercing through every armour and discharged by the arms of heroes, was indeed deafening.

29. O foremost of the Bharatas, weapons endued with the pure effulgence of the stars, illumined the firmament when they were shot by excellent arms.

30. In all directions were scattered, O foremost of the Bharatas, bucklers made of bull's hide, of variegated appearance, and covered with a net-work of gold.

31. In all directions were seen heads and limbs falling, being cut off with swords of the effulgence of the sun.

32. Mighty car-warriors, having the wheel, the axle and the terraces of their cars broken, fell down on the ground, with their steeds slain and their long arms severed.

33. Steeds fell down on the battle-field mangled with the cut of weapons, and cars wheeled around deprived of their warriors.

34. O Bharata, wounded with arrows, with their bodies mangled, and their harnesses on, excellent steeds ran there dragging the car-yokes after them.

35. Many warriors, O king, with their cars, horses and drivers were seen slain in that battle by a single elephant possessed of great strength.

36. In that battle scenting the odour of the temporal juice shed by other compeers, many elephants began to snuff the air in the very midst of that slaughter of troops.

37. The field of battle was covered with elephants bearing wooden edifices and guides, as they fell down deprived of live being struck with piked lances.

38. In the midst of large forces, many elephants with the standards and warriors on their back, fell down on the ground being crushed by other huge compeers urged on by their guides.

39. In that battle, O king, were seen many chariot-shafts to be broken by elephants using their trunks that resembled the body of the serpent chief.

40. In that battle car-warriors, the yokes of whose cars had been shattered, were seized by the hair by the tuskers; and dragged down like branches of trees they were thoroughly crushed.

41. Other prodigious elephants, dragging cars entangled with other cars, ran in all directions uttering loud roars.

42. The appearance of those elephants dragging those chariots looked beautiful like that of others of their species tearing lotus-stems growing in the lakes.

43. Thus then the extensive field of battle was strewn over with cavalry-soldiers, and mighty car-warriors and their tall standards.

Thus ends the seventy-first chapter, the fierce fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXII.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O ruler of men, Sikhandin, with the king of the Matsyas *viz* Virata, speedily rushed against Bhisma, that mighty bowman difficult of being defeated in battle.

2. Dhananjaya in that battle rushed against Drona, Kripa, Vikarna, and many

kings, all mighty-bowmen, brave, and endued with great prowess,

3. As also, against that great warrior, the ruler of the Sindhus supported by his friends and ministers, and, O foremost of the Bharatas, against many other kings from the West and the South.

4. Bhimasena, in that fight, rushed against your vindictive son Duryodhana that mighty bow-men, as also against his, brother Dussaha.

5. Sahadeva rushed against the two mighty car-warriors, both skilful bow-men and invincible in battle, namely, Sakuni and Uluka who were father and son.

6. That mighty car-warrior, O great monarch, namely Yudhisthira, who had been shamefully deceived by yours son, proceeded in that battle against the elephant division of the Kurus.

7. That brave son of Pandu by Madri namely Nakula, who was capable of wringing tears from the foe, encountered in battle that excellent division of car-warriors consisting of the Trigartas.

8. Satyaki, Chekitana, and the son of Subhadra endued with great prowesss, all invincible in battle, rushed against the Salyas and the Kaikayas.

9. The Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, and Dhristaketu, both incapable of being conquered, charged in that battle the car-division of your sons.

10. Then, O king, the mighty car-warrior, that generalissim Dhristadyumno of immeasurable soul, engaged with Drona of fierce achievements.

11. Thus the warriors of your army, all heroic and mighty bow-men, encouutering the Pandavas in the battle, began to smite one another down.

12. When the sun reached the meridian and when the sky burned with his fiery rays, the Kurus and the Pandus began to kill one another.

13. Then chariots, mounted with flag-staffs from the topsof of which pennons were fluttering, and variegated with gold and covered with tiger-skins, appeared beautiful, as they drove through the scene of battle.

14. A dreadful din was created by those warriors as they engaged in the fight out of a desire for conquering one another, and as they roared like roaring lions themselves.

15. The strokes that the heroic Srinjayas and the Kurus dealt to one another in that conflict and that were terrible and wonderful, were also seen by us.

16. Neither, O monarch, O afflicter of your enemies, were we able to see the firmament, the sun or the cardinal and subsidiary quarters, in consequence of their being shrouded on all sides by a thick discharge of arrows.

17. The effulgence, like that of blue lotuses, of *Saktis* with shinning heads, of hurled lances, of well-tempered swords,

18. As also the effulgence of the coats of mail and of diverse and woncerful ornaments, filled the firmament and the cardinal and subsidiary quarters with its flashes.

19. Then, O monarch, here and there, the field of battle appeared beautiful being strewn over with the bodies of monarchs, which were effulgent like the sun or the moon.

20. Excellent car-warriors, all foremost of men, encountering one another in battle, appeared beautiful, O king, like planets in the heavens.

21. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely Bhisma, waxing wroth opposed Bhimasena of great prowess even before the very eyes of the assembled troops.

22. Then shafts furnished with golden wings whetted on stone,smeared with oil and charged with impetus, wounded Bhima in that battle, being shot by Bhisma himself.

23. Thereat the mighty Bhimasena hurled at Bhisma, O Bharata, his lance charged with fierce momentum and resembling an enraged snake.

24. But in that combat Bhisma cut off with his straight arrows, that lance furnished with a golden staff as it coursed swiftly towards himself.

25. Thereafter, O Bharata, with a whetted and well-tempered *Valla* Bhisma cut in twain the bow of Bhimasena.

26—27. Thereupon, speedily rushing at Bhisma, Satyaki in that encounter, with numerous keen-pointed and sharp-edged shafts discharged with a bow-string drawn back to the ear, pierced, O ruler of men, your own father. Thereat aiming a sharp and very dreadful arrow,

28. Bhisma felled the charioteer of that Vrishni hero from his seat on the box of the chariot. Upon the death of the driver, the steeds, O king, of that warrior, bolted away.

29. Those steeds wildly careered over the field of battle, endued as they were with the fleetness of the mind or the wind. Thereupon a loud uproar was sent up by all the the troops.

30. Exclamations of *Oh!* and *Alas!* were uttered by the warriors of the Pandava army. *Run, Seize, Hold the steeds, Go in haste,*

31. Such cries followed the chariot of Yuyudhana. During this interval, Bhisma the son of Santanu,

32. Began to slay the troops of the Pandavas, like the slayer of Vritra himself slaying the hosts of the Danavas. Thus slaughtered by Bhisma, the Panchalas supported by the Somakas,

33. Setting their hearts fixed on battle, rushed against Bhisma. Other warriors of the host of the sons of Pritha, headed by Dhristadyumna himself rushed in battle against the son of Santanu, inflamed with a desire for slaughtering the army of your son.

34. So also, O king, the warriors of your army headed by Bhisma and Drona, rushed with impetuousity against the enemy. Thereupon these raged a seceond battle.

Thus ends the seventy-second chapter, the prowess of Bhisma, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then the mighty car-warrior Virata pierced with three arrows the mighty car-warrior Bhisma, and the latter's steeds with another three arrows.

2. Thereat Bhisma the son of Santanu, that mighty bow-man endued with great strength and lightness of hands, pierced him in return with ten shafts furnished with wings of gold.

3. Then that fierce bow-man and mighty car-warrior of firm hands, namely, the son of Drona, pierced with six shafts the wielder of the Gandiva bow between his breasts.

4. Thereat that slayer of his foes, that humiliator of his antagonists, namely, Phalguna (Arjuna), cut down the bow of Drona's son and pierced him sore in return with five sharp arrows.

5. Then the latter, endued with great impetuousity, overwhelmed with fury, not brooking the severing of his bow by Partha (Arjuna) in the battle, grasped another bow,

6. And, O king, pierced Phalguna (Arjuna) with ninety keen-pointed shafts; then with seventy excellent arrows he pierced the son of Vasudeva.

7. Thereupon with eyes coppery in rage, Phalguna with Krishna breathing long and hot and reflecting again and again,

8—9. And also that grinder of foes that foremost of mighty heroes pressing his bow with his left arm, and excited with rage, and wielding the Gandiva bow, placed on the bow-string sharp and straight and fierce shafts capable of depriving a foe of his life; and therewith, in that battle, speedily pierced the son of Drona.

10. Those shafts, in that battle, penetrating through the armour of the son of Drona drank his life-blood. But thus pierced by the wielder of the Gandiva-bow Drona's son did not flinch.

11. Discharging similar arrows at the son of Pritha, O king, he stood unwavering in battle, desirous of protecting Bhisma of illustrious vows.

12. That great feat of his which consisted in his encountering the two Krishnas together in battle, was greatly applauded by the foremost among the Kurus.

13. Having obtained from Drona various rare weapons together with the method of their withdrawal, he every day undauntedly fought amidst that host.

14. "This is the son of my preceptor; this is the very dear son of Drona; especially he is a Brahmana, and so worthy of my veneration."

15. Thinking thus, that grinder of enemies the brave Vivatsu (Arjuna), that foremost of car-warriors, showed mercy towards Bharadwaja's son.

16. Thereafter in that encounter leaving alone the son of Drona, Kunti's son (Arjuna) borne by white chargers, endued with great prowess, fought on displaying great lightness of hands and spreading slaughter in the ranks of the enemy.

17. Duryodhana pierced the mighty bow-man Bhimasena with ten shafts furnished with vulture-feathers and whetted on stone and decked with gold.

18. Excited with wrath, Bhimasena grasped a variegated bow of tough make, capable of depriving the foe of his life, as also ten sharp arrows.

19. Thereafter taking a steady aim with those keen-pointed shafts charged with great energy and fierce impetus, and drawing the bow-string back to his ears, Bhimasena struck home the ruler of the Kurus on his broad chest.

20. Thereupon the gem that was hanging in the breast of Duryodhana by golden

threads, being surrounded by those arrows, appeared charming like the sun in the heavens surrounded by the planets.

21. But your son endued with great energy, thus pierced by Bhimasena, did not brook it cooly, like a snake not bearing the sound of the tread of man.

22. Thereafter inflamed with rage, O king, he pierced Bhima with numerous shafts furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone, with a view to protect his own soldiers.

23. Thus fighting with each other and mangling each other (with shafts) in that battle, those two sons of yours, both endued with great prowess appeared beautiful like two gods.

24. Then that foremost of men, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely, the son of Subhadra, pierced Chitrasena with innumerable short arrows and also Purumitra with seven shafts.

25. And that heroic one equal to Sakra himself in battle, piercing Satyavrata with seventy shafts, seemed to dance about on the field causing us much pain.

26. Chitrasena pierced him in return with ten shafts, Satyavrata with nine, and Purumitra with seven.

27. Thus pierced the son of Arjuna while still shedding blood, severed the beautiful and mighty bow of Chitrasena that was capable to holding the foe at bay.

28. Penetrating his coat of mail, Arjuna's son, pierced him with a shaft on the breast. Thereat the heroic princes of your army all mighty car-warriors,

29. Uniting together, and inflamed with rage, pierced Arjuna's son with numerous keen-pointed arrows. But the latter, conversant with excellent weapons, wounded all of them with sharp arrows.

30. Beholding that feat of his, your sons in that battle surrounded him on all sides, who was consuming the warriors of your army

31. Like a blazing fire consuming a heap of fuel in the summer season. Thus smiting down your soldiers the son of Subdhra appeared highly beautiful.

32. Beholding those feats of Abhimanyu the son of Subhadra, O king, your grandson Lakshmana speedily faced him desirous of battle.

33. Thereupon waxing wroth Abhimanyu that mighty car-warrior pierced Lakshmana of auspicious marks and his charioteer, with six well sharpened arrows.

34. So also, O king, Lakshmana pierced the son of Subhadra with sharp arrows; and O mighty sovereign, the feat seemed to be marvellous.

35. Thereat that mighty car-warrior the son of the Subhadra, slaying the four steeds of Lakshmana, as also his charioteer, rushed at him covering him with sharp shafts.

36, Then standing on his chariot of which the steeds were slain, Lakshmana the slayer of inimical heroes, excited with the wrath, hurled a lance aiming at the car of Subhadra's son.

37. Then Abhimanyu, cut down with his keen-pointed arrows, that dreadful and irressitible lance that resembled a snake and that was coursing swiftly towards himself.

38. Thereupon Goutama (Kripa) taking Lakshmana upon his chariot carried him away from the field before the very eyes of the troops.

39. Then in that general and dreadful engagement, the fighters rushed, one against another, smiting one another and desirous of depriving one another of his life.

40, The mighty bowmen of your army and the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host, all ready to lay down their lives in battle, began to slay one another.

41. Having dishevelled hair, deprived of their armours, shorn of their cars, and with their bows severed, the Srinjaya fought on with their bare arms.

42. Then the mighty-armed Bhisma endued with great strength, waxing wroth, began to slay with weapons of celestials make, the Pandavas of high-soul,

43. In that battle, the earth was then strewn our with the corpses and falling bodies of car-warriors, cavalry-soldiers, men, and horses, and of elephants deprived of their guides.

Thus ends the seventy-third chapter, the single combats, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXIV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then O king, the mighty-armed Satyaki, invincible in battle, drawing in that battle, an excellent bow capable of bearing a great strain,

2. Discharged numerous arrows furnished with wings and resembling snakes of

virulent venom, displaying at the same time his great and wonderful lightness of hands.

3—4. While slaying the enemy in that battle, so swiftly did he draw his bow, take out his arrows (from his quiver), place them on his bow-string, discharge them at the foe, and again take out other arrows and let them off, that he appeared to be highly beautiful like a mass of clouds pouring showers of rain.

5. The king Duryadhana beholding him swell like a raging fire, O Bharata, despatched against him a division consisting of ten thousand cars.

6. Then Satyaki of infal'iable prowess endued with great strength, that mighty bow man, slew all those excellent bowmen with weapons of celestial make.

7. Having accomplished that fierce feat and grasping his bow, that hero encountered Bhurisravas in that battle.

8. *Bhurisravas that enhancer of the glory of the Kurus, seeing that division of his troops felled by Yuyudhana (Satyaki) wating wroth rushed against Satyaki.

9—11. Stretching his mighty bow that resembled that of Indra himself (rain-bow) in hue, he, O monarch, discharged thousands of arrows, that looked like snakes of virulent poison, that were endued with the energy of the thunderbolt itself displaying in the act his wonderfull lightness of hands. Thereupon the followers of Satyaki unable to bear those shafts of fatal touch, O monarch, fled in all directions, abandoning, O king, in battle Satyaki ever invincible in fight.

12. Seeing this, the ten highly powerful sons of Yuyudhana, all mighty car-warriors of great fame, clad in armours of best make possessing various weapons and diverse standards,

13. Approaching in that fierce conflict that mighty bowman named Bhurisravas, who bore the device of a sacrificial stake on his standard, thus addressed the latter in wrath in that dreadful fight.

14. "O kinsman of the Kuravas, O mighty one, come give us battle; fight with us either jointly or separately.

15. Vanquishing ourselves in battle you may earn great glory, or crushing you in combat we shall attain to great gratification."

16. Thus spoken to, that foremost of men possessed of great strength and heroism and proud of his prowess, seeing them ready for the fight, thus replied to them.

17. "You have spoken well O heroes; if indeed this be your desire, fight with me in a body[putting forth all your endeavours. I will slay all of you in battle."

18. Thus spoken to, those heroes all mighty bowmen and endued with great lightness of hand, poured a thick shower of arrows on that subduer of his enemies.

19. That afternoon, O mighty sovereign a dreadful battle was fought on the field between Bhurisravas alone on side and many united together on the other.

20. O monarch, they then covered that single-handed foremost of car-warriors with an arrowy downpour, like rain clouds drenching a mighty cliff in the rainy season.

21. But that mighty car-warrior cut down those numerous shafts discharged by them,—shafts, which resembled the mace of Death or the thunder-bolt itself in their noise,—even before they could reach him.

22—23. Those ten warriors then completely surrounding that mighty-armed hero, strove to slay him. But, O Bharata, Somadatta's son, inflamed with wrath, cutting off their bows, severed their heads in that conflict with arrows of diverse descriptions. Thus slain, they fell down on the ground like trees crushed by the thunderbolt.

24. Beholding those mighty sons of his slain in battle, that hero of the Vrishni race namely Satyaki, rushed against Bhurisravas, O king, thundering out of his war-cry.

25. Those two heroes both endued with great prowess, then made their cars collide against one another; and in that conflict slaying the steeds of one another's chariot,

26. And thus deprived of the use of their respective chariots, those two mighty, powerful heroes, jumping down on the ground, rushed against one another, whirling mighty swords and bucklers.

27. Then those two foremost of men thus standing prepared for the encounter, appeared exceedingly beautiful. Thereafter approaching Satyaki who was armed with a sword of best make,

28—30. Bhimsena, O monarch, hastily took him up on his chariot. Your son also, O king, in that conflict, speedily took up Bhurisravas on his car before the very eyes of all the assembled bowmen. When thus the battle raged, the son of Pandu (Arjuna), inflamed with wrath began to fight with that mighty car-warrior viz, Bhisma, O foremost of the Bharatas. When then the orb of the day assumed a crimson hue, Dhananjaya displaying great activity,

31. Slew twenty-five thousand mighty car-warriors of the hostile host. These warriors, being commanded by Duryodhana to slay the son of Pritha,

32. Approaching him met with their destruction, like insects burning on fire. Thereupon the Matsyas and the Kekyas all accomplished in the science of bowmanship,

33. Surrounded the mighty car-warrior Arjuna along with his son. At that moment the sun having gone down below the horizon,

34—35. All the warriors were overwhelmed with confusion. Then your Sire Devavrata whose steeds were completly exhausted, O mighty sovereign, caused the withdrawal of the forces. After that (fierce) encounter beteen the Kurus and the Pandavas,

36. The troops, overwhelmed as they were with great apprehension, retired to their respective encampments. Thereafter repairing to their respective camps, O Bharata, the Pandavas along with the Srinjayas, as also the Kurus, duly rested (for the night).

Thus ends the seventy-fourth chapter, the end of the fifth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXV.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then O monach, when the night had worn away, the Kurus and the Pandavas, having duly rested, again marched forth for battle.

2. Then O Bharata, a loud clangour arose there, as mighty car-warriors prepared themselves for battle, as tuskers were equipt for the coming conflict,

3. As the foot-soldiers donned their coats of mail, and as steeds were furnished with trappings &c. Then O Bharata, on all sides was heard tremendous sound of drums and blare of conchs.

4. Thereafter king Yudhisthira addressing Dhristadyumna said :—"Arrange, O mighty-armed hero, the troops in the the *Makara* array that is calculated to extirpate the enemy."

5. Thus spoken to by the son of Pritha (Yudhisthira), that mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna, O sovereign, proclaimed that order among the car-warriors (for forming the *Makara* array).

6. King Drupada and the Pandava Dhananjaya formed its head. Sahadeva along with the mighty car-warriors Nakula constituted its two eyes.

7. Bhimasena endued with great strength, O king, formed its beak. The son of Subhadra, the sons of Drupadi, the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha,

8. Satyaki and the very virtuous king Yudhistfiira were stationed on the neck of that array. Virata, the leader of a division, O monarch, formed its back.

9. The five Kekaya brothers, united with Dhristadyumna and supported by a mighty division, stationed themselves on its left wing.

10. Dhristaketu the foremost of men and Chekitana endued with prowess, stationing themselves on the right wing, prepared themselves for the defence of array.

11. O might monarch, at the feet of of that array were stationed the ever-properous and mighty car-warriors namely the Kuntivoja, and Satanika supported by a large division.

12. The fierce bowman Sikhandin, of great prowess being surrounded by the Somakas, together with Iravan, was stationed in the tail of that arrray.

13. Thus O Bharata, disposing their troops in this array, the Pandavas, O mighty monarch, donning their mails and desirous of battle, at sunrise,

14. Rushed against the Kouravas with impetuosity, supported by their elephant-warriors, car-warriors, cavalry and infantry as also with their standard, and umbrellas, and effulgent and shining weapons upraised.

15. Beholding the troops of the Pandavas thus disposed of, your sire Devavrata O king, arranged his trooqs in a counter-array figuring a huge crane.

16. In its beak was placed that mighty bowman the son of Bharadwaja; and O ruler of men, Aswatthaman and Kripa formed its two eyes.

17. Kritavarman the foremost of all bowman together with the king of the Kamvojas and with the Valhikas, was, O foremost of men, placed in the head of that array.

18. Surasena and your son Duryadhana, O Bharata, surrounded by numerous kings, was stationed in its neck, O mighty sovereign.

19. The ruler of the Pragjyotisas, united with the Madras, the Souviras and the Kekayas, and supported by a large division,

was, O foremost of men, placed in its breast.

20. Susarman, the ruler of Prasthala, clad in mail, and supported by his own division, stationing himself in its left wing, stood ready for battle.

21. The Tasaras, the Yavanas, the Sakas, together with the Chulikas, placing themselves in the right wing of that array prepared for battle, O Bharata.

22. Srutayush and Satayush and the som of Somadatta, O Sire, supporting one another, stood in the rear of that array.

23. Then the Pandavas rushed to batte with the Kurus. At sun rise, O mighty monarch, the engagement commenced.

24. Elephants rushed against car-warriors and car-warriors proceeded against elephants. Horse-soldiers rushed against horse-soldiers, and car-warriors also advanced towards horse-soldiers.

25. Horse-soldiers, O king, also rushed against horses and elephants in that dreadful fight; as also, O king, elephant-riders proceeded against elephant-riders and cavalry.

26. Car-warriors encountered foot-soldiers, and cavalry-soldiers also engaged with the infantry. Thus, O king, excited with wrath, they rushed against one another in that battle.

27. The army of the Pandavas, defended by Bhimasena, Arjuna, and the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, as also by other mighty car-warriors, appeared beautiful like the sky bespangled with stars in a dark night.

28. So also, your troops, O king, with Bhisma, Drona, Kripa, Salya, Duryodhana and others, appeared beautiful like the firmament covered with the planets.

29. Bhimasena the son of Kunti, endued with great prowess, beholding Drona, rushed against the division of Bharadwja's son, being borne by fleetest steeds.

30. The highly powerful Drona, waxing wroth, in that battle, O monarch, pierced Bhisma with nine shafts made of iron, directiug them towards his vital parts.

31. Thus wounded sore in that battle by the son of Bharadwaja, Bhima dispatched the latter's charioteer to the regions of the of Death.

32. Then that son of Bharadwaja endued with prowess, himself holding the reins of his steeds, began to consume the Pandava host like fire consuming a heap of cotton.

33. Thus slaughtered by Bhisma and Drona, O foremost men, the Srinjayas with the Kekayas took to their heels.

34. So also your soldiers, mangled by Bhima and Arjuna, were deprived of their senses even where they stood, like an excellent damsel fainting away in consequence of wounded pride.

35. In that battle, in which many excellent heroes lost their lives, the array of your soldiers as well as that of the Pandavas was shattered and broken; and O Bharata, great distress overwhelmed the two armies.

36. Then, O Bharata, we beheld a delightful sight, when your warriors fought with the enemy, both inspired with a singleness of purpose.

37. In that battle, O lord of men, the Pandavas and the Kouravas, fought with one another hurling weapons at one another.

Thus ends the seventy-fifth chapter, the commencement of the sixth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Our army is endued with many excellent attributes and composed of various kinds of troops, and its efficiency is great. O Sanjaya it is disposed of in perfect accordance to the rules of the military science; so it should to be ever crowned with success.

2. The warriors therein are very much devoted to our interests, and are ever attached to us. They are disciplined and free from the vices of lust and anger. Their prowess has been tested before.

3. They are neither very old nor very young; they are neither lean nor very corpulent. They are of active habits, well-built, strong-bodied, and free from any disease.

4. They are clad in coats of mail and well-furnished with offensive weapons; they are accomhlished in the use of all kinds of weapons, and are masters in fighting with swords, with maces and even with bare arms.

5. They are well-practised in the use of lances, sabres, darts, iron bludgeons, short shafts, javelins and mallets.

6. They are well-discipline d in the excer cise of all kinds of weapons, and are ex-

perts in mounting on and descending from vehicles, in moving forward and in falling back,

7. In striking down effectually, in marching forward, and in retreating back; they have been examined in the management of steeds, elephants, and chariots.

8. Being duly tested? they have been employed on pay and not for the sake of family-relationship,

9. Nor for the sake of friendship, nor for connections through marriage and birth. They are all honourable and prosperous; and all their relatives have been honoured and well-treated by ourselves.

10—12. We have done many good services to them; they are also all illustrious men, possesssd of great intelligence. They are again defended, O son, by many best of men endued with great lightness, of great achievements, of world-wide renown and resembling the Protectors of the worlds themselves; they are protected by numerous Kshatriyas esteemed throughout the earth, who have, out of their own accord, taken our side with their followers and forces. Truly our army is like the vast ocean swelling with the waters of various streams flowing into it from all sides.

13. Our army teems with chariots, which though destitute of wings are capable of moving like the winged rangers of the sky; it abounds also in elephants. Myriads of fierce warriors constitute the waters of that ocean and the various vehicles constitute its numerous waves.

14. Innumerable maces, darts, arrows and lances form the oars plied on it. It abounds in standards and ornaments, and is full of cloths of gold embossed with gems.

15. The running vehicles constitute the wind that lashes that ocean into fury. It really resembles the extensive and shoreless sea roaring (in fury).

16. That army of ours is again protected by Drona and Bhisma; so also it is defended by Kritavarman, Kripa and Dussasana, and by others headed by Jayadratha,

17. By Bhagadatta and Vikarna, by the son of Drona, by Souvala and by the ruler of the Valhikas. Thus protected by many foremost of men, all endued with strength and possessed of generous souls,

18–19. If that army be still slaughtered in battle, it is indeed due to predestined Fate. Neither man, nor illustrious and ancient sages, O Sanjaya, ever saw on earth such extensive preparations for battle. That such a large army well-supplied with the implements and sinews of war,

20. Should be slain in battle, alas, what can it be due to but Destiny? All this appears to be unnatural, O Sanjaya.

21. Vidura had often advised what would have been beneficial and profitable; but my wicked son Duryodhana would not accept his counsel.

22. I think the prophetic and high-souled Vidura had foreseen all that is happening at present; and hence his thought was so.

23. Or it may be, O Sanjaya, that all this had been predestined by the Creator; and what is pre-ordained by Him must happen as ordained and can not be otherwise.

Thus ends the seventy-sixth chapter, the thoughts of Dhritarastra, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. Through your own wickedness, O monarch, have you been overwhelmed with this calamity. Those faults, O foremost of the Bharatas, in that sinful conduct towards the Pandavas, of which you were cognisant, O king, were not descried by Duryodhana. It was through your fault, O ruler of men, that the game at dice was played in days past;

3. And it is through your fault also that this battle with the Pandavas has been brought about. Do you now reap the fruit of that sin which you have already committed.

4. One reaps the fruits of actions done by himself; so, O monarch, do you reap here and hereinafter the fruits of your own actions.

5. O monarch, though overwhelmed with this calamity, be still patient, and listen to the account of the battle as it happened, as I, O sire, go on recounting it.

6. Having shattered the ranks of your mighty army with his well-sharpened shafts Bhimasena, endued with heroism, encountered all the younger brothers of Duryodhana.

7. Duryodhana, Durvisaha, Dussaha, Durmada, Jaya, Jayasena, Vikarna, Chitrasena, Sudarsana,

8—9. Charuchitra, Suvarman, Duskarma, and Karna—beholding these and many

other mighty car-warriors of the Dhartarastras near enough to himself, all excited with wrath, Bhimasena, endued with great strength, in that battle penetrated into the ranks of your mighty army protected by Bhisma himself.

10. Then seeing him standing amongst them, all those kings said :—'Let us torture this one till he is deprived of his life.'

11. Then that son of Pritha (Bhima), encompassed by those brothers of his, all resolved (to slay him), appeared like the sun surrounded by the unpropitious planets at the time of the world's annihilation.

12. Though then the son of Pandu (Bhima) was in the very heart of the Kaurava array, fear did not overwhelm him as it did not overwhelm Indra in the midst of the Danava host during the fight, in days of old, between the Asuras and the celestials.

13. Then hundreds and thousands of car-warriors furnished with all kinds of weapons, all ready for the battle, assailed his single self with dreadful arrows.

14. Thereat the heroic Bhima, unmindful of the sons of Dhritarastra, slew in that battle many foremost (hostile) warriors, including elephant-riders, cavalry-soldiers, car-warriors and others.

15. And knowing the intention of those cousins of his who were all resolved to slay him, Bhimasena, possessed of great strength determined, O king, to slay them all.

16. Thereafter, leaving aside his car and grasping his mace, that son of Pandu (Bhima) began to smite down that ocean-like host belonging to the sons of Dhritarastra.

17. When Bhimasena had thus broken the Kaurava host, Dhristadyumna the son of Prisata, abandoning Drona hied there where Suvala's son was.

18. That foremost of men, checking the mighty army of your sons, approached, in that battle, the car of Bhima left empty by himself.

19. Seeing, in that conflict, Visoka the charioteer of Bhimasena, Dhristadyumna, O mighty monarch, became depressed in mind and was deprived of his senses.

20. Overwhelmed with grief, his voice choked up with tears and breathing heavily, he questioned Visoka saying :—"Where is Bhimasena, dearer to me than my own life?"

21. Thereupon, folding his palm, Visoka thus replied to Dhristadyumna saying :—"Leaving me here, the mighty son of Pandu (Bhima), possessed of great strength,

22. Has, alone and unsupported, entered into the ocean-like host of the sons of Dhritarastra. He said to me, O foremost of men, these cheerful words.

23. 'Wait for me, O charioteer, restraining the steeds for a moment only, until I slay these that are resolved to destroy me.'

24. Beholding then the highly powerful Bhima running mace in hand, all the car-warriors were transported with joy.

25. And when that awful and general engagement raged, O monarch, your friend, breaking through the hostile ranks, penetrated into it."

26. Listening to these words of Visoka, Dhristadyumna the son of Prisata, possessed of great strength, replied to the charioteer on the field of battle saying:—

27. 'If to-day, discarding my affection for the Pandavas, I am to abandon Bhimasena in the fight, what need have I then of my very life?'

28. What will the Kshastriyas say of me if I return without Bhima, (from the field of battle)? What will they say of me when they will hear that Bhima alone entered into the hostile ranks though I was there to help him in the conflict?

29. The gods headed by Sakra himself visit him with evil, who abandoning his supporters in battle, returns home unscathed.

30. Moreover that highly powerful Bhima is my friend and relative. He is devoted to to me, and I cherish a great devotion for that slayer of foes.

31. I shall therefore penetrate there where Vrikodara has already gone. See me slay the foes like Vasava slaying the Danavas."

32. Having thus spoken, that hero, O Bharata, advanced through the centre of the hostile ranks following the track (opened and) marked by Bhima with the elephants crushed by his mace.

33. Then he (Dhristadyumna) beheld Bhima consuming the troops of the enemy and crushing, in the conflict, many kings, like so many trees.

34. The car-warriors, the cavalry-soldiers, the foot-soldiers and the tuskers, being thus slaughtered in the fight, began to utter loud distressful cries.

35. Cries of 'Oh' and 'Alas', O sire, arose from the ranks of your soldiers, as they were slaughtered by the accomplished Bhima versed in diverse modes of warfare.

36. Thereafter they (the Kaurava combatants) exercised in all sorts of weapons, surrounding Vrikodara, began fearlessly to

pour a shower of weapons on him from all sides.

37. Then that highly powerful son of Prisata, beheld that foremost of all wielders of weapons, that hero of world-wide fame, that son of Pandu, viz., Bhimasena, charged on all sides by the serried and mighty ranks of the enemy ;

38. And approaching Bhimasena, the son of Prisata comforted him whose body was mangled with shaft-cuts, who was treading on foot and vomitting the poison of his anger and who was wielding his mace like the Destroyer himself at the time of the universal annihilation.

39. That high-souled hero (Dhristadyumna) quickly plucked off the arrows from Bhima's body, and took him up on his car ; and embracing the latter warmly, the former comforted him even in the very midst of the enemy.

40. Thereat, in that conflict, your son, approaching his brothers, quickly said to them. "This wicked-souled son of Drupada has now joined Bhimasena.

41. We shall proceed against him in close array in order to slay him, even before he, our enemy, challenges us to fight." Hearing these words, the sons of Dhritarastra, urged on by the command of their elder brother and unable to put up with the foe,

42. With uplifted weapons fell to slaughter him (Dhristadyumna), like so many dreadful comets falling down at the hour of destruction at the end of a Yuga. Grasping beautiful bows and shaking the earth with the twang of their bows and the rattle of their car-wheels, those heroes,

43. Showered arrows on the son of Drupada, like the clouds showering rain on mountain breasts. But the latter, accomplished in various modes of warfare, though thus wounded with keen-pointed shafts did not flinch.

44—45. On the other hand, O king, highly inflamed with rage against your sons, like Indra against the Asuras, that mighty car-warrior, the youthful son of Drupada, beholding your heroic sons stay before him in battle and exert their best for slaying him, placed on his bow-string the fierce dart called *Pramohana*, with a view to slay them all. Then those heroic warriors, having their senses and mind confounded by being struck with the *Paramohana* weapon lost all consciousness.

46. Seeing those sons of yours overwhelmed with a swoon and deprived of their senses, like those whose hour has come, the Kaurava troops fled in all directions, with their steeds, elephants and chariots.

47. Meanwhile, Drona, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, encountering Drupada, pierced him with three fierce arrows.

48. Thus, O king, wounded sore by Drona, that ruler of men, Drupada, fled from the field of battle, remembering his former enmity (with Bharadwaja's son).

49. Thereupon, the highly powerful Drona, having vanquished Drupada, sounded his conch. Hearing the blare of his conch, all the Somakas were struck with terror.

50. Then Drona, endued with great energy,that foremost of wielders of weapons, heard that your sons had been deprived of their senses in battle through the influence of the *Pramohana* weapon.

51. Thereupon, desirous of rescuing the princes, Drona hastily left that part of the field where he was (and went where your sons were) ; there, that mighty bowman possessed of great prowess,namely the son of Bharadwajá, beheld

52. Dhristadyumna and Bhima career through that dreadful field ; and that mighty car-warrior likewise beheld your sons overwhelmed with a swoon.

53. Thereupon, he fixed on his bowstring the weapon known as *Prajnana* (capable of imparting consciousness) and therewith cut off the *Pramohana* weapon. Then your sons, those mighty car-warriors, regained their senses.

54. Thereupon, desirous of battle, they again encountered Bhima and the son of Prisata in battle. Then king Yudhisthira summoning his troops addressed them saying:—

55. "Let twelve heroic car-warriors headed by Subhadra's son, protected with coats of mail,proceed following, to the best of their abilities, the track of Bhima and the son of Pri·a·a.

56—58. Let intelligence be brought (of those two heroes). My mind is not unmisgiving." Thus commanded, the five Kekaya princes, the sons of Draupadi, and the highly powerful Dhristaketu, all powerful warriors, endued with heroism and proud of their manliness, saying 'yea' (to the words of Yudhisthira) marched forward when the sun had reached the meridian, placing Abhimanyu at their head and being supported by a mighty division of troops.

59. Those grinders of foes forming their troops in the array known as *Suchimukha*, penetrated, in that battle, into that car-division of the sons of Dhritarastra.

60—61. Your troops, O ruler of men, struck with the fear of Bhimasena and deprived of their senses by Dhristadyumna, were not able to bear the charge of those fierce bowmen headed by Abhimanyu as the rushed, like a lady in the streets deprived of her consciousness by a swoon.

62. Desirous of rescuing Dhristadyumna and Vrikodara,those fierce bowmen ownings standards decked with glod, approached the former breaking through the hostile ranks.

63. Those two heroes *viz* Vrikodara and Dhristadyumna himself, became filled with delight, and fell (with increased ardour) to slaughter your troops.

64. Then the prince of the Panchalas, the heroic of son of Prisata, beholding his own preceptor suddenly make towards himself, disisted from compassing the death of your sons.

65. Then placing Vrikodara on the car of the Kekaya king he, inflamed with rage, rushed against Drona who was accomplished in the use of arrows and all other kinds of weapons.

66. Then the highly-powerful son of Bharadwaja, that grinder of foes, excited with wrath severed, with a broad-head shaft, the bow of Dhristadyumna as the latter rushed against him with impetuousity.

67. Bearing in mind the broad he had eaten of his master king Duryodhana and desirous of encompassing his good, he (Drona) directed hundreds of other various shafts towards the son of Prisata.

68. Thereafter, grasping another bow, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely the son of Prisata, pierced Drona with seventy shafts all furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone.

69—70. Then again Drona, that grinder of foes, cut down Dhristadyumna's bow; and his four steeds he despatched to the dreadful abode of Death with four excellent arrows; and, O Bharata, Drona also despatched to Death Dhristadyumna's charioteer with a broad-headed shaft.

71. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, Dhristadyumna, possessed of long arms, speedily jumping down from his chariot of which the steeds were slain, mounted on the excellent car of Abhimanyu.

72. Then the Pandava host, consisting of chariots, elephants and steeds, began to quake with the fear (of Drona), even before the very eyes of Bhimasena and the intelligent son of Prisata.

73. Beholding their array thus shattered by Drona of immeasurable prowess, all those mighty car-warriors were not able to check the former.

74. That army, then thus slaughtered by Drona with his keen-pointed arrows, began to whirl about, like the agitated sea, on the field of battle.

75. Beholding the hostile troops in that plight, your warriors were filled with delight; and also beholding the aged preceptor consume the hostile array on all sides, O Bharata, the warriors sent up loud exclamations of "well-done" "well-done."

Thus ends the seventy-seventh chapter the prowess of Drona, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereafter king Duryodhana, having regained his senses, once more opposed the invincible Bhima with a shower of arrows.

2. Once more uniting together, your sons, all mighty car-warriors, encountering Bhima in battle, began to fight with him in all earnestness.

3. The mighty-armed Bhimasena also approaching his chariot mounted on it, and proceeded to that part of the field where your sons were.

4. Taking up a woundefully tough bow, endued with great energy, capable of nepriving the enemy of his life, and diversely varigated, he (Bhima) began to pierce your sons with innumerable shafts in that battle.

5. Then king Duryodhana sortly wounded the mighty Bhima in his very vital parts with a *Naracha* of exceeding sharpness.

6. Thus deeply pierced by your son, that fierce bow-man, with eyes red in rage and out of fury drawing his bow-string fiercely,

7. Pierced Duryodhana on this two arms and breast, with three arrows; but O king, thus struck the latter wavered not,like a monarch of mountains.

8. Beholding those two enraged heroes strike one another in battle, the younger brothers of Duryodhana, all of whom were ready to lay down lives their in battle,

9. Bearing in mind their pre-concerted plan of afflicting Bhima of fierce deeds, began with an earnest determination, to strike him(from all sides).

10. Then the highly powerful Bhima beholding them make towards himself in battle, O monarch, rushed against them like an elephant encountering his compeers.

11. Then excited to fury, that hero endued with great fame and energy, afflicted your son Chitrasena, O monarch, with a long shaft.

12. Then in that conflict, O king, the discendant of the Bharata race smote your other sons with diverse kinds of arrows furnished with golden wings and charged with great impetus.

13. Then those twelve mighty car-warriors including Abhimanyu and others, arranging their troops in proper order,

14. And being despatched by the very virtuous king Yudhisthira to follow behind Bhima, encountered, O mighty monarch, your princely sons, all excellent car-warriors.

15. Beholding those warriors on their chariots resemble the sun or the fire itself in effulgence, beholding all those fierce bow-men of burning effulgence and exceeding beauty,

16. Shine resplendent in that conflict being decorated with diadems of gold—your sons all endued with great strength abandoned fighting with Bhima. But the son of Kunti was unable to brook the sight of their leaving the combat alive.

Thus ends the seventy-eighth chapter, the prowess of Bhima, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Abhimanyu accompanied by Bhimasena, once more running after them, afflicted your sons in battle.

2—3. Thereupon their mighty car-warriors of your army including Duryodhana and others, seeing Abhimanyu and Bhimasena joined with the son of Prisata in the midst of their own troops, grasped their bows and carried along by fleet steeds, rushed to the place where those heroes were stationed. Then, in that afternoon O monarch, there ensued a terrible fight,

4. Between the mighty warriors of your army and those of the enemy, O Bharata. Then Abhimanyu, slaying the steeds of Vikarna in that terrible conflict,

5. Pierced the latter with twenty-five short shafts ; then that mighty car-warrior Vikarna, leaving his chariot of which the steeds were slain,

6. Ascended, O king, the resplendent car of Chitrasena ; them thus seated on the same chariot, namely those two brothers, the perpatuator of Kuru's race,

7—9. The son of Arjuna, O Bharata, covered with a shower of arrows. Then Durjaya and Vikarna pierced the nephew of Krishna with five shafts made entirely of iron. But the nephew of Krishna moved not in the least, and remained firm like the immovable Meru. In that conflict, O sire, Dussasana fought with the five Kekaya brothers ; O mighty monarch, the battle that raged between them was indeed very wonderful. The sons of Droupadi, excited with rage, in that battle, checked Duryodhana,

10—11. Your son ; and O monarch, every one them pierced him with three shafts each. Your invincible son, O monarch, in that conflict, pierced the sons of Droupadi separately with arrows of exceeding sharpness. Pierced with their arrows in return and bespattered with blood, he (Duryodhana) appeared highly beautiful,

12—14. Like a mountain washed with spring-watter mixed with red chalk. The highly powerful Bhisma also, O king, in that battle began to afflict the Pandava host like a herdsman belabouring his herd (with his cudgel). Thereupon, O ruler of men, the twang of Partha's Gandiva was heard, when he was engaged in slaughtering the right wing of your army. In that battle, headless trunks stood up by thousands,

15-16. In the host of the Kurus as well as in that of the Pandavas. O Bharata that ocean of troops of which blood formed the waters, the arrows the eddies, the elephants the islands, and the steeds the fishes, that ocean was crossed by those foremost of men on their chariots that served the purpose of boats. Many foremost warriors, with arms severed, armours shattered, and bodies mangled,

17. Were seen lying prostrate there, by hundreds and by thonsands. With the carcasses of infuriate elephants slain and bespattered with blood,

18. The field of battle, O foremost of the Bharatas, appeared beautiful as if strewn with hillocks. The wonderful sight that we beheld, O Bharata, was, that among your as well as their army,

19. There was no man who was not inflamed with a desire for battle. Thus did those heroic warriors of your army fight on with those of the Pandavas, desiring great renown and ardently longing for securing victory in battle.

Thus ends the seventy-ninth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then when the sun assumed a crimson hue, king Duryodhana, ardently longing for battle, rushed towards Bhima, out of a desire for slaying him.

2. Beholding that best of human heroes, that most implacable enemy of his, make towards himself Bhimasena, excited to the highest pitch of wrath, said these words :—

3. 'The hour has come that I have been looking forward to so anxiously for all these years. To-day I will slay you, if indeed you you do not abandon fighting.

4. Slaying you, I will this day soothe the sorrows of Kunti, and also those of Droupadi; to-day will I avenge the woes that we did suffer during our exile in the woods.

5. O son of Gandhari, inflated with pride in days past, you disregarded the sons of Pandu. Reap now the dire fruit of that act of yours.

6. Acting upon the counsel of Karna and of the son of Suvala, and thoroughly desregarding the Pandavas, you formerly treated the latter as it had pleased you.

7. You also despised the descendant of the Dasarhas (Krishna) when he begged you (for peace). Filled with joy, you sent Uluka to us with your messages.

8. For all these act of yours, I will, this day, slay you with all your relations, and will avenge all those wrongs you did formerly inflict on us."

9. Having spoken these words, and bending and repeatedly stretching his bow and taking up terrible arrows that resembled the thunder-bolt itself in effulgence, Bhima,

10. Excited with rage, quickly shot at Suyodhana thirty-six arrows resembling the flames of a blazing fire, looking like the thunderbolt and coursing straight through the air.

11. Thereafter he struck Duryodhana's bow with two arrows, his charioteer with another two; and with four others, he despatched the latter's fleet steeds to the abode of Death.

12. Then that grinder of foes, with two other arrows drawn a long way back at the time of being discharged, cut down, in that conflict, the umbrella of the king from his excellent car.

13. With three more arrows he cut down the excellent standard that was indeed blazing. Having severed it, he uttered a loud roar even before the very eyes of your son.

14. And that beautiful standard, decked with diverse kinds of gems, suddenly fell down on the ground from the chariot, like lighting from the clouds shooting down on the earth.

15. And all the rulers of men then beheld that blazing and propitious standard of the Kuru king, effulgent like the sun, bearing the device of an elephant and embossed with gems, fall down, (served by Bhima).

16. Then the mighty car-warrior Bhima, as if smiling, struck Duryodhana with ten shafts, in that battle, like an elephant-rider piercing the huge animal with the hook.

17. Thereupon the king of the Sindhus, that foremost of car-warriors, that highly powerful one, stationed himself on the flank of Duryodhana, being supported by many excellent warriors.

18. Then that foremost of car-warrior, namely Kripa took upon his own car, O king, the vindictive Duryodhana, that descendant of the Kuru race, endued with immeasurable energy.

19. Then in that conflict, king Duryodhana, pierced deep and afflicted sore by Bhimasena, squatted down on the terrace of his car.

20. Thereafter king Jayadratha, desirous of slaying Bhima, surrounded him on all sides with thousands of chariots, and warriors, and thus intercepted him.

21. Thereupon, O king, Dhristaketu, and Abhimanyu endued with prowess, the Kekayas, and the sons of Draupadi, engaged with your sons.

22. The high-souled Abhimanyu quickly struck them all piercing each with five shafts,

23.—24. Resembling the thnnder-bolt itself or the mace of Death, shot from his beautiful bow. Thereupon all of them, unable fo bear it, showered an arrowy down pour on that excellent car-warrior namely Subhadra's son, like clouds showering rain on the Meru mountain. Thus afflicted in the battle, that hero, accomplished in the use of weapons, and invincible in fight,

25. Namely, Abhimanayu, O king, made your warriors tremble, like the wielder of the thuder-bolt making the Asuras tremble in the war between them and the celestials.

26. Thereafter, O Bharata, that foremost of car-warrior, hurled at Vikarna fourteen mortal broad-headed shafts that looked like snakes of most virulent venom.

27. Possessed of great prowess, and as if dancing in battle, with those shafts he cut down the standard of Vikarna from this car and also slew his charioteer and steeds.

28. Again that mighty car-warrior *viz* the son of Subhadra shot at Vikarna other arrows, well-tempered, keen-pointed and straight-coursing.

29. Those arrows decked with the feathers of the *Kanka* bird, coming upon Vikarna and passing through his body stuck on the ground like so many hissing snakes.

30. Those arrows, with wings and points decorated with gold, and bathed in the blood of Vikarna, and stuck on the earth, appeared to the vomit-blood.

31. Beholding Vikarna thus penetrated through and through, his other uterine brothers, rushed in that conffict against those warriors who were headed by the son of Subhadra.

32. When those warriors formidable in battle riding on their own chariots quickly came upon the combatants of the Pandavas army seated on their cars tike so many effulgent suns, they began to pierce one another in that battle.

33. Then Durmukha piercing Srutakarman with five swift-coursing arrows cut down the latter's standard with a single arrow, and pierced his charioteer also with seven others.

34. Advancing closer, with six arrows he piereed Srutakarman's steeds caparisoned with a net-work of gold and fleet as the wind itself; he also felled the latters charioteer.

35. Thereupou standing on that chariot of his of which the steeds were slain, that mighty car-warrior Srutakarman, excited to the highest pitch of fury, hurled a great dart blazing like a fierce meteor.

36. That very resplendent dart charged with great energy, penetrating through the massive armour of the renowned Durmukha, and shattering it, stuck itself on the ground.

37. Thereupon Sutosoma, possessed of great prowess, beholding Srutakarman dedeprived of his chariot, took him up on his car even before the very eyes of the assembled host.

38. Thereafter, O monarch, Srutakirti possessed of heroism, rushed, in that battle, against yonr illustrious son Jayatsena, out of a desire for slaying him.

39—40. Then in that conflict. O monarch, yonr son Jayatsena, with a sharp-edged *Kshurapra* (horse-shoe-headed shaft), as if smiling, cut off the bow of that high-souled warrior, namely Srutakirti, O Bharata, as the latter came repeatedly stretching it. Thereupon Satanika seeing his uterine brother deprived of his bow,

41. Endued as he was with great energy, quickly rushed to the spot, every moment uttering rors resembling those of a lion. Then in that conflict stretching his bow with a strong hand, Satanika,

42. With great lightness of hands, pierced Jayatsena with ten sharp arrows and then uttered a loud roar like that of an elephant in rut.

43. Then again with another sharp arrow capable of penetrating through all kinds of mail, Satanika deeply pierced Jayatsena on the breast.

44. At this crisis, Duskarna, who was near his brother, overwhelmed with wrath cut off the bow and arrows of the son of Nakula (Satanika)

45. Thereat, grasping another bow of excellent make and capable of bearing great strain, the highly powerful Satakina fixed on the bow-string shafts of exceeding sharpness.

46. Then he (Satanika) challenged Duskarna, before his brothers,saying 'Wait' "Wait," and then he discharged at him those keen-pointed arrows that resembled so many blazing snakes.

47. Then the former cut off the latter's bow with a single shaft; and pierced his charioteer with two shafts; and, O sire, in that conflict the former also quickly pierced the latter with feathered shafts.

48. Thereafter that sinless warrior, with twelve shafts of great sharpness, pierced all the steeds of Duskarna,—steeds that we e flect as the mind and decked with gold trappings.

49. Then highly excited with rage, he in that conflict, deeply pierced Duskarna on the chest, with another broad-headed arrow well-directed and swift-coursing.

50. There at the latter fell down on the ground like a tree smitten by the thunderbolt. Beholding Duskarna slain, the five mighty car-warriors, O king,

51. Encompassed Satanika on all sides, out of a desire for slaying him; and they began to strike the illustrious Satanika with a showers of arrows.

52. Thereupon the five Kekaya princes excited with rage, rushed (to the rescue of

Satanika). Beholding them advance, your sons all mighty car-warriors,

53. O mighty monarch, encountered them like so many elephants encountering their huge compeers. Durmukha, Durjaya, the youthful Durmarsana,

54. Satrunjaya and Satrusata,—all these illustrious warriors, proceeded, O king, in a body against the Kekaya brothers.

55. Riding on their chariots resembling (fortified) cities, to which were harnessed steed decked with precious caparisions and which were decorated wonderful streamers of variegated hue.

56. Those heroes, wielding excellent bows, owning finest armours and best standards, entered the hostile array like lions going from one forest to another.

57. Then between them and the foe, raged a fierce and dreadful combat in which cars and elephants got entangled together and in which the combatants (mercilessly) slew one another,

58. Out of a feeling of animosity, they fought the dreadful fight that lasted for a few moments only before sun-set, adding to the population of Death's kingdom,

59—60. Then car-warriors and cavalry-soldiers were strewn by thousand on the field of battle. Thereupon excited with wrath, the son of Santanu namely Bhisma, with straingt-knotted shafts, began to slay the troops of the high-souled Pandavas. With his arrows he also despatched to the regions of Death the troops belonging to the Panchala princes.

61. Thus, O king, having broken the ranks of the Pandava host, the grandsire withdrawing his forces, retired to his own encampment.

62. The very virtuous king Yudhisthira also, seeing Dhristadyumna and Vrikodara, smelt their heads, and with a delighted heart repaired to his camps.

Thus ends the eightieth chapter, the withdrawal of the forces after the sixth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O mighty monarch, those heroes literally bespattered with blood, keeping alive their enmity for one another, retired to their respective tents.

2. Threafter having rested awhile, and having duly praised one another (for the feats achieved), they again were seen clad in coats of mail, standing desirous of battle.

3. Then, O monarch, your son Duryodhna, covered with stains of blood all over the body, and overwhelmed with anxious thought, from confidence, asked the grand-sire Bhishma saying :—

4. "Our troops are fierce and formidable and duly arranged; and they carry mighty standards; and yet those heroic and fleet host of car-warriors belonging to the Pandava army, penetrating and slaughtering and crushing,

5. And confouuding us all, has earned great fame in battle. I have also been wounded deeply by those dreadful shafts resembling the club of Death himself, that have been shot by Bhima, who broke through our *Makara*-array that was strong as the thunder-bolt itself.

6. Beholding Bhima, I have been, O sire, unmanned with fear; even now I can not regain the equilibrium of my mind. O you of never-failing aim, I desire, through your grace, to obtain victory and to slay the sons of Pandava."

7. Thus addressed by Duryodhana and knowing him to be possessed by great grief, that high-souled son of Ganga, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, endued with intelligence, smiling, replied to the former with a cheerless heart :—

8. "Breaking through the hostile ranks with the greatest exertions and with all my power, O prince, I wish to give you victory and joy. For your sake, I do never disemble.

9. These mighty car-warriors, who have sided with the Pandavas in this battle, are innumerable, formidable, all foremost heroes, endued with renown and accomplished in the use of weapons; they are indefatigable and seem to vomit forth the venom of their wrath in battle.

10 These heroes are not to be so easily vanquished; they entertain feelings of the bitterest hostility for you, and are morever swelling with their powers. Yet O monarch, I will, with all my soul, fight these heroes to the bitter end.

11. For your sake, O generous hero this day will I have no regard for my life in battle. For your sake, will I consume all the regions with their myriad celestials and Daityas, what to speak of your enemies?

12. I will encounter, O king, the Pandavas, and there by encompass all that is

agreeable to you." Hearing these words, Duryodhana became inspired with confidence, and his heart swelled in joy.

13. Then with a delighted heart, he gave the word of command to the troops and all the assembled kings, saying' Proceed'. At his command the army consisting of chariots, steeds, foot-soldiers, and elephant-riders, began to advance (in battle array).

14. That extensive army of yours, O king, equipped with various sorts of implements of war, was filled with delight. O king, your army, teeming with elephant-riders, cavalry-soldiers and foot-soldiers, arranged in battle order, appeared exceedingly beautiful.

15. The division of tuskers composed of large numbers and goaded on by skilful riders, appeared charging from all sides of the field; and your troops were also formed into order by many princely warriors, accomplished in the use of offensive and defensive weapons.

16. A cloud of dust,—resembling in hue the rays of the rising sun and intercepting from the view the sun itself—that was raised by the divisions of cars, elephants, infantry and cavalry as they movedover the field in due order, appeared exceedingly beautiful.

17. Just as lightning, flashing amidst a mass of clouds in the firmament, appears beautiful, so the streamers of variegated hue mounted on cars and the backs of elephants, fluttering in the air and whirling along the welkin, appeared highly effulgent.

18. A dreadful and deafening din was created by monarchs stretching and twanging their bows,—din that resembled the roar of the ocean, when in the Satya era, it was churned by the hosts of celestials and Asuras.

19. At that moment, that army of your sons, uttering fierce war-cries, comprising in it combatants of diverse hues, looking so resplendent, and capable of slaughtering the enemy's host, appeared like the clan of clouds that are seen at the expiration of a Yuga.

Thus ends the eighty-first chapter, the colloquy between Bhisma and Duryodhana, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, the son of Ganga, seeing your son plunged in thought, once more addressed these delightful words to him.

2. "Myself, Drona, Salya, Kritavarman, of the Satwata race, Ashwathaman, Vikarna, Somadatta with the Shindhus,

3. And Vinda and Anuvinda of Avanti, and Valhika with the Valhikas, and the mighty king of the Trigarttas and the formidable sovereign of of the Magadhas,

4. Vrihadvala the ruler of the Kosalas Chitrasena, Vivingsati, with many thousand of car-warriors, decorated with tall standards,

5. And a large number of country-born steeds, O king, mounted with excellent horse soldiers, and innumerable huge elephants infuriate with shedding temporal juice from their temples and mouth,

6. And many heroic foot-soldiers accomplished in the use of various kinds of weapons, and born in various countries, are all prepared to fight for your sake.

7. These and many others, prepared to lay down their very lives for your sake, are I consider, capable of obtaining victory even over the gods in battle.

8. It is my bounden duty, O king, to tele always what will be for your good. The Pandavas are incapable of being vanquished even by the very gods led by Vasava himself.

9. They are supported by the son of Vasudeva himself in battle, and are endued with prowess equal to that of the great Indra himself. But, O foremost of kings, I will ever carry out your commands.

10. Either I will conquer the Pandavas in battle, or they will conquer me." Having thus spoken, Bhisma gave to Duryodhana the excellent herb called *Visalya-Karanee*, (that which kills all pain),

11—12. That most efficacious remedy for healing all wounds. Therewith your son cured himself of all his wounds. Then at the fair dawn, the most powerful Bhisma that foremost of men accomplished in the art of arraying troops, formed with his own troops, the array called *Mandala*, bristling with the glitter of various kinds of weapons.

13. The array teemed with excellent warriors, as also with tuskers and infantry and it was surrounded on all sides with many thousand cars,

14. And with large divisions of cavalry armed with scimitars and lances. Near every elephant were stationed seven car-warriors, and near every car were placed seven horsemen.

15. Behind every horsemen were stationed ten bowmen, and behind each bowman were placed seven foot-soldiers. Thus, O monarch, your troops urged by mighty and great car-warriors,

16. Stood ready for the fierce encounter being protected by Bhisma. Then a thousand horsemen, and as many tuskers,

17. And ten thousand chariots, along with your heroic sons, all accoutred in mail, headed by Chitrasena, supported the grandsire.

18. It was seen that as Bhisma was supported by those heroic warriors themselves endued with great strength and clad in mail, they were in their turn protected by the grandsire.

19. Duryodhana also, on that battle-field, occupying his car and clad in mail, and endued with all grace, looked beautiful like Indra himself in paradise.

20. Then, O Bharata, loud were the war cries uttered by your sons, and deafening was clatter of chariots and the sound of the musical instruments.

21. Then that mighty and impenetrable *Mandala*, array of those slayers of enemies *viz* the sons of Dhritarastra, formed by Bhishma himself, began to march forward facing the west.

22. Invulnerable in battle by the enemies, O monarch, that array appeared beautiful in every part. Then beholding that formidable *Mandala*, array,

23. King Yudhisthira himself formed his troops in the array known as *Vajra*. Thus when the troops were thus formed into battle array, and were stationed in proper ranks,

24. The car-warriors and cavalry soldiers uttered their war-cries (resembling leonine raors). Then, desirous of battle, fierce warriors began to leave their ranks,

25. And those heroes supported by their respective divisions, began to smite down one another. The son of Bharadwaja encountered the ruler of the Matsyas, and the son of Drona engaged Sikhandin.

26. King Duryodhana himself rushed against the son of Prisata; the twins Nakula and Sahadeva proceeded against the king of the Madras.

27. Vinda and Anuvinda from Avanti went against king Iravat. All the other monarchs engaged Dhananjaya in battle.

28—29. Putting forth all his exertions, Bhimasena checked the son of Hridika in battle. Endued with great prowess Arjuna's son, O king engaged in battle, your sons *viz* Chetrasena Vikarna, and Durmarsana. Against that fierce bow-man, *viz* the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, Hidimva, the ruler of the Rakshas,

30—31. Rushed with impetuosity, like an infuriate elephant meeting a compeer in the same state. Then O monarch, the Rakshasa Alamvusha excited with wrath rushed in that battle, against Satyaki invincible in battle surrounded though he was with his own division. Exerting himself well, Bhurisravas engaged in that conflict Dhristaketu.

32. Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, engaged king Srutayusa; and in that battle Chekitana fought with Kripa.

33. The rest putting forth all their endeavours advanced against the mighty car-warrior Bhima. Thereafter thousands of monarchs surrounded Dhananjaya on all sides,

34. Wielding in their hands darts, lances arrows, maces, and bludgeons; thereat, highly enraged, Arjuna addressed the descendant of the Vrishini race (Krishna) saying :—

35. "Behold, O Madhava, the troops of the sons of Dhritarastra formed in battle array by the high-souled son of Ganga, who is versed in all the modes of forming soldiers in battle array.

36. Behold also, O Madhava, innumerable heroes all ardently longing for battle. Behold also, O Kesava, the king of the Trigarttas supported by his brothers.

37. Today, before your very eyes, I will O Janardana, slay all these, O foremost of the Yadus, who are desirous of fighting with me in the battle."

38. Having thus spoken, the son of Kunti, rubbing his bow-string poured an arrowy down-pour on those hosts of kings.

39. Those fierce bowmen also covered him in return with showers of shafts, just as clouds, in the season of rain, fill the tanks with showers of rain.

40. Then, O ruler of men, when in that great battle the two Krishnas were seen to be covered with fast-falling arrows, loud shouts of 'Oh!' 'Oh!' were heard in your troops.

41. The celestials, the divine sages, the Gandharvas, and the mighty reptiles, were all overwhelmed (with amazement beholding Krishna and Arjuna thus situated.

42. Thereafter waxing wroth, Arjuna invoked, O king, the weapon called *Aindra* ; then wonderful was the prowess that we beheld of Vijaya,

43. In as much as he baffled the thick shower of arrows discharged by his enemies with myriads of shafts shot by himself. There was none, O ruler of men, that was not wounded,

44. Among those thousands of kings, steeds and tuskers. The rest, O sire, the son Pritha pierced, each with two or three shafts.

45. While being thus slaughtered by the son of Pritha, they sought protection from the son of Santanu ; and then Bhisma became the rescuer of those warriors who resembled men sinking in the fathomless deep.

46. Then those flying and broken ranks of your army, moving and falling back upon the divisions of Bhima, created a great confusion in the latter ranks, like the raging tempest agitating the mighty main.

Thus ends the eighty-second chapter, the commencement of the seventh day's battle, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the battle thus raged, when Susarman had turned away from the battle, when the high-souled son of Pandu (Arjuna) had broken your ranks,

2. When your army resembling the mighty main had been greatly agitated, and when the son of Ganga had swiftly advanced towards Vijaya,

3. King Duryodhana, beholding the prowess of the son of Pritha in that battle, hastily approaching all those kings thus addressed them all ;

4. Also, addressing the heroic Susarman endued with great strength, and stationed at their head, Duryodhana said these words, amidst all the soldiers, imparting delight to them all.

5. 'This Bhisma, this son of Santanu, this foremost of the Kurus, has resolved to fight with Dhananjaya, heedless of his very life and to the best of his abilities.

6. Do you all, putting forth all your energies in battle, and supported by your respective divisions, protect the grandsire of the Bharatas, as he rushes against the army of the enemy."

7. Saying 'yea,' all those divisions, led by foremost of kings, O mighty monarch, moved near the grandsire.

8. Thereupon the son of Santanu *viz* Bhisma, while thus advancing, suddenly encountered the mighty Arjuna of the Bharata race, coming towards himself,

9. Riding on his highly resplendent chariot that bore the standard marked with the emblem of the mighty ape, to which were yoked mighty white steeds, and that produced a clatter resembling the rumble of clouds.

10. Beholding the diadem-decked Dhananjaya rush to battle, all yonr troops, seized with panic, set up a dreadful uproar.

11. Beholding Krishna resembling another Aditya and holding the reins in his hands, look like the sun in the meridian, your soldiers were unable to fix their eyes on him.

12. So also the troops of the Pandavas were unable to gaze at Bhisma the son of Santanu, borne by white steeds, holding a white bow, and looking like the white planet (Sukra) rising in the skies.

18. He was also surrounded on all sides by the Trigarttas of high-soul, along with their brothers, sons, and many other car-warriors.

14. Meanwhile the son of Bharadwaja in that conflict, pierced the king of the Matsyas with one winged arrow ; and he cut down the bow and the standard of the latter with one shaft each.

15. Thereupon Virata the leader of a division leaving aside his severed bow, hastily grasped another of tougher make and capable of bearing great stsain,

16. As also, arrows of the shape of snakes of virulent poison, and resembling blazing serpents. In return, he pierced Drona with three shafts, his steeds with four,

17, His standard with one, and his charioteer with five. Virata also pierced the bow of Drona with one shaft. Thereupon that foremost of the regenerates, Drona, waxed irascible.

18. Thereafter with eight straight-knotted shafts, Drona slew Virata's steeds, and,

O foremost of the Bharatas, his charioteer also with one shaft furnished with wings.

19. Thereat that foremost of car-warriors viz, Virata, jumping down from his chariot, of which the driver and the steeds had been slain, swiftly ascended the car of Sankhya.

20. Then, the father and the son (Virata and Sankhya) riding on the same car, putting forth all their energies, endeavoured to check the son of Bharadwaja with a mighty shower of arrows.

21. Thereupon that highly-powerful son of Bharadwaja, waxing wroth, with great lightness (of hand) hurled, in that battle, a shaft resembling a snake of virulent venom, at Sankhya.

22. That arrow, penetrating through Sankhya's heart and drinking his life blood, struck on the ground with its body soaked in the crimson fluid.

23. Pierced by the shaft of Bharadwaja's son, Sankhya quickly dropped down from his car, loosing hold of his bow and arrows and before the very presence of his father.

24. Beholding his own son slain, Virata, fled out of fear, leaving Drona in battle who then looked like Death himself with yawning jaws.

25. Thereafter in that battle, the son of Bharadwaja, resisted, by hundreds and by thousands, the mighty army belonging to the sons of Pandu.

26. Sikhandin also, O mighty sovereign, encountering the son of Drona in the conflict, wounded him between the brows with three swift-coursing long shafts.

27. With those three arrows stuck on his fore-head, that foremost of men (Drona's son) appeared beautiful like the Meru mountain decked with three golden peaks towering high.

28--29. Thereupon waxing wroth, within half the time taken up by the wink, Ashwathaman cut off in that combat Shikhandin's charioteer, standard, horses and weapons covering them, O king, with innumerable arrows. Then that foremost of car warriors jumped down from the car of which, the steeds had been slain,

30. Grasping a whetted and effulgent sword and buckler. Then that afflicter of foes, namely Shikhan l'n, waxing wroth began to move about on the field of battle like a hawk.

31. As he (Sikhandin) whirled about on the field, O mighty monarch, Drona's son could not find any vulnerable point; and this seemed indeed very wanderful.

32. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, Drona's son inflamed with rage, sped, in that battle many thousands of shafts (against Sikhandin).

33. Then that foremost of those possessed of prowess (Sikhandin), cut off with his sharp-edged sword the dreadful shower of arrows that was falling fast upon him.

34. Thereafter the son of Drona cut off Sikhandin's glittering shield charming with a hundred moon; then in that battle he also shattered into pieces the latter's sword.

35—36. Then O monarch he (Drona's son) pierced Sikhandin with myriads of shafts furnished with wings. Thereat Sikhandin, whirling the fragment of his sword splintered by the arrows (of Drouni), hurled it at the latter, like a blazing serpent. Beholding that fragment of the sword that then resembled the all-destructive fire (at the end of a Yuga) come swiftly towards himself,

37. The son of Drona cut it off in the battle, displaying great lightness of hand; then also he pierced Sikhandin with many shafts made wholly of iron.

38. Thus wounded sore with sharp arrows, Sikhandin quickly ascended, O monarch, the car of the high-souled Satyaki, that scion of the dynasty of Madhu.

39. Then Satyaki, inflamed with wrath, in that conflict, covered, on all sides, the ruthless Rakshasas Alamvusha, with his dreadful arrows.

40. Thereat, O Bharata, that foremost of the Rakshasas cut off Satyai's bow with a crescent-shaped arrow in that combat, and pierced the latter with numerous arrows.

41. Spreading an illusion through his Rakshasa prowess, he covered Satyaki with an arrowy downpour. Then we did behold the wonderful prowess of the grandson of Sini,

42. In as much as though pierced in that battle, with those sharp arrows, he did not flinch in the least. Then that descendant of the Vrishni race placed on his bow-string the *Aindra* weapon,

43. Which that renowned scion of Madhus race had obtained from Vijaya himself. That weapon then reducing into ashes the Rakshasi illusion,

44. Poured a shower of dreadful shafts on Alamvusha from all sides, like clouds in the rainy season covering the mountain top with (thick showers of rain.)

45. Thus afflicted sore by that high-souled scion of Madhu's race, the Rakshasa fled out of fear, leaving Satyaki (victorious) on the field.

46. Then having vanquished that foremost of the Rakshasas who could not be vanquished even by Indra himself, the grandson of Sini uttered a loud roar, even before the very eyes of your warriors.

47. Then Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, began to slaughter your warriors with many well-sharpened shafts; and afflicted with fear these latter began to break away.

48—49. Meanwhile, that mighty son of Drupada, namely, Dhristadyumna, O king, in that battle covered your son, the ruler of men, with innumerable straight-knotted shafts. Thus covered with the arrows shot by Dhristadyumna, O Bharata,

50. Your son, that lord of men, neither wavered nor was agitated with fear; on the other hand, he quickly pierced Dhristadyumna with arrows, in that conflict,

51. Numbering sixty (first) and thirty (next). All this seemed highly wonderful. Thereupon the generalissimo of the Pandavas, waxing wroth, O Bharata, cut off Duryodhana's bow.

52. Also that mighty car-warrior slew the four steeds of the latter in battle, and quickly pierced his person with seven shafts of exceeding sharpness.

53. Thereupon that mighty-armed Duryodhana endued with great strength jumping down from his car the steeds of which were slain, rushed on foot towards Prisata's son with sword uplifted.

54. At that moment the highly powerful Sakuni desirous of rescuing the king, approached the spot and placed the monarch on his car before the presence of all warriors.

55. Then vanquishing the Kuru king, Prisata's son that slayer of hostile heroes, began to slaughter your troops like the wielder of the thunderbolt slaying the Asuras.

56. Then in that battle, Kritavarman afflicted the mighty car-warrior Bhima, virtually covering the latter (with arrows), like masses of clouds covering the sun.

57. Thereupon that scorcher of foes' Bhimasena, waxing irascible and smiling the while, shot, in that combat, myriads of shafts towards Kritavarman.

58. Wounded with those arrows that *Atiratha* of the Satwata race swelling with all prowess, quaked not, O mighty monarch; but, on the other hand, pierced Bhima with many keen-pointed arrows.

59. Thereat the highly-powerful Bhimsena slaying Kritavarman's four steeds, felled his charioteer and his well-cleansed standard.

60. Then that slayer of hostile heroes (Bhima) pierced Kritavarman with arrows of diverse sorts; thus mangled and mutilated with arrows, the latter looked like a porcupine.

61. Thereafter leaving his chariot of which the steeds were slain, Kritavarman ascended the car of your brother-in-law Vrisaka, O monarch, before the eyes of your son.

62. Bhimasena also, inflamed with wrath rushed at your troops; and excited to the highest pitch of fury, he began to slaughter them like the god of Death himself wielding his mace in his hands.

Thus ends the eighty-third chapter, the single combats, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

BHISMA-BADHA PARVA—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said:—

1. I have heard, O Sanjaya as you have discoursed on, of the numerous and wonderful single combats fought between my warriors and those of the sons of Pandu.

2. But, O Sanjaya, you never speak of my soldiers being delightful (on such occasions). You always speak of the warriors of the Pandavas as cheerful, and never and routed.

3. You always speak of my warriors as depressed in mind, vanquished and shorn of energy in battle. O Suta, indubitably all this is brought about by Destiny.

Sanjaya said:—

4. Your warriors strive in battle to the best of their strength and ardour, displaying, O foremost of the Bharatas, their manliness as much as possible.

5, Even as the very tasteful water of the celestial river Ganga flowing into that of the mighty main, attains saline properties,

6. So also, O monarch, the manlines of the illustrious warriors of your army opposed by that of the heroic sons of Pandu becomes baffled in battle.

7. It behoves you not, O foremost of the Kurus, to attribute blame to your own warriors, who exert themselves to the best

of their might, and achieve feats that are difficult of being dnne so.

8. From your own fault, and from that of your son, O ruler of men, this great and dreadful destruction (of the creatures of) the earth has come to pass, adding considerably to the population of Death's kingdom.

9. It behoves you not, O king. to grieve for what has come to pass in consequence of your own faults. The kings do not pay any the least regard to their lives in this battle.

10. The rulers of men (assembled on the field), desire to attain to the regions of those that perform pious acts. Always cherishing a desire for attaining Paradise, they are fighting agitating the hostile army.

11. That afternoon, O mighty monarch' a great destruction of creatures took place' Hear of me, with singleness of attention' of that battle that resembled that between the gods and the Asuras.

12. The two (royal) brothers from Avanti, both mighty bow-men, possessed of great might, and exceeding effulgence, and both formibable in battle, beholding Iravat, rushed at him.

13—14. Then the combat that was fought between them was dreadful and horripilating. Thereupon Iravat waxing wrath, quickly pierced those two brothers of godly presence, with straight-knotted shafts of exceeding sharpness. Those two warriors versed in diverse modes of warfare pierced Iravat in return, in that battle.

15. As they fought on, O king, strking their best to slay their mutual foes and desirous of avenging what is done to one another, there could be found no distinction between them.

16. Then in that conflict, Iravat, O king, with four arrows, despatched the four steeds of Anuvinda to the regions of Death.

17. Also, O sire, with a couple of keen-eged broad-headed arrows, the former cut off the standard and bow of the latter in that battle. All this, O king, seemed to be wonderful.

18. Thereupon Anuvinda leaving his own car, ascended that of Vinda; thereafter he grasped an excellent bow of great toughness and capable of bearing a great strain.

19. Then those two foremost of car-warriors endued with heroism and riding on one and the same car, both belonging to the country of Avanti, began to shower incessantly arrows on the high-souled Iravat.

20. Shot by them both, swift-flying arrows decked with gold, intercepting the rays of the orb of the day, (literally) covered the sky.

21. Thereupon, inflamed with wrath, Iravat poured an arrowy downpour on the two brothers both mighty car-warriors; and he felled their charioteer.

22. When deprived of life, the charioteer fell down on the earth, the chariot was dragged in all directions in consequence of its horses being unrestrained.

23. Obtaining victory, O monarch, over the two brothers, the son of the daughter of the king of the Nagas displaying his manliness, began speedily to spread havoc among your soldiers.

24. Thus slaughtered in battle, the mighty army of the sons of Dhritarastra performed various movements like a man reeling through the effects of poisoning.

25. Then the son of Hidimba, the foremost of the Rakshasas endued with great strength, riding on his chariot of solar hue and furnished with a standard, rushed against Bhagadatta.

26. Thereupon the ruler of the Pragjyotisas mounted on his prince of elephant like the wielder of the thunder-bolt mounting on his *Airavat* in the days of yore at the time of the battle caused by the insult offered by Taraka.

27. Then there came the celestials along with the Gandharvas and the sages. They were unable to find out any distinction between the son of Hidimva and Bhagadatta.

28. As the lord of the celestials (Indra) waxing wroth had struck terror into the hearts of the Danavas, so did also the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, O king, in that battle frighten and crush the Pandava troops.

29. Thus routed by him on all directions, the Pandava troops, O Bharata, did not find, in their whole host, an one competent to save them.

30. We then only beheld the son of Bhimasena (Gatotkacha), O Bharata, riding on his car; the rest of the car-warriors, with minds distracted (with fear) had fled (in all directions),

31. Then, O Bharrata, when the Pandava forces rallied, a dreadful and fierce roar was sent up by your troops in that battle.

32. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, in the fierce engagement that commenced, Gatotkacha covered Bhagadatta with a

shower of arrows, like a rain-cloud covering the Meru mountain with a downpour of rain.

33. Then king Bhagadatta, severing those arrows shot from the bow of the Rakshasa, in that combat quickly pierced the the son of Bhimasena in all his vital parts.

34. Wounded with innumerable straight-jointed shafts, that foremost of the Rakshasas did not flinch, (but stood firm) like a mountain though cleft open.

35. Then the ruler of the Pragjyotisas inflamed with rage, in that battle sped fourteen *Tomaras* against the Rakasha, who (easily) cut them off.

36. Then that Rakshasa of mighty arms, cutting off those *Tomaras*, pierced Bhagadatta with seventy shafts of exceeding sharpness, all resembling the thunderbolt of Heaven.

37. Thereupon the king of the Prajyotisas, in that combat, as if smiling, despatched, O Bharata, to death the four horses of the Rakshasa.

38. Standing on his car of which the steeds were slain, that foremost of the Rakshasas endued with prowess, hurled at the elephant of Bhagadatta, a *Sakti*, with great force.

39. Then the ruler of the Pragjyotisas cut off that *Sakti* falling with great vehemence and furnished with a golden staff, into three splinters; and the *Sakti* fell shattered on the ground.

40. Seeing his *Sakti* splintered into pieces, the son of Hidimva fled out of fear like Namuchi the foremost of the Daityas flying, in the days of yore, from the fight with Indra.

41. Obtaining victory, O king, in battle over that heroic and highly powerful Rakshasa of illustrious renown who is incapable of being vanquished even by the god of Death and Varuna themselves,

42. Bhagadatta riding on his elephant crushed in that battle, the troops of the Pandavas, even like a wild elephant, that roves, O king, trampling lotus-stems (underneath its huge feet.)

43. The ruler of the Madras encountered in battle the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva. He covered his two nephews, both sons of Pandu, with an arrowy down-pour.

44. Sahadeva finding himself encountered by his uncle in battle, shrouded him with a net-work of arrows, like clouds shrouding the solar orb.

45. Shrouded by that net-work of shafts, the Madra king wore an appearance indicative of joy; the twins also were greatly delighted for the sake of their mother.

46—47. Thereafter in that combat, that mighty car-warrior (the Madra king), O king, with four excellent arrows despatched smilingly Nakula's four steeds to the mansion of Death. Then that mighty car-warrior Nakula jumping down from his car of which the horses were slain,

48. Ascended the vehicle of his illustrious brother. Then in that battle the heroes, mounted on the same car, stretching their tough bows,

49. Waxing irascible and becoming formidable in battle, covered the king of the Madras (with shafts). Covered with innumerable staight-jointed arrows

50. Shot by his nephews, that foremost of men (the Madra king) moved not, but stood still even like a mountain; then as if smiling, he baffled that shower of arrows.

51. Thereupon the highly powerful Sahadeva, inflamed with wrath, grasping a dart, rushed at the ruler of Madras and then hurled it at him, O Bharata.

52. That dart shot by him and coursing swiftly like the Garuda himself, penetrating through the body of the Madra king, fell down on earth.

53. Thus deeply pierced, and smarting with pain, that mighty car-warrior squatted down on the terrace of his car, and O mighty monarch he was overhelmed with a swoon.

54. In that battle, seeing him (the Madra king) senseless and fallen on the car and afflicted by the twins, his charioteer drove him on his vehicle away from the field of battle.

55. The sons of Dhritarastra beholding the car of the ruler of the Madras turn away from the field, were all depressed in mind and thought that he was no longer alive.

56. Obtaining victory in battle, over their uncle, the sons of Madri, greatly delighted blew their conchs and roared out their war cries.

57. Thereafter filled with delight, they rushed against your host, O ruler of men, like the immortals Indra and Upendra, O king, rushing against the host of the Daityas.

Thus ends the eighty-fourth chapter, the single combats, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then when the sun shone on the meridian, king Yudhisthira, behoding Sruta yusa, urged his own steeds towards him.

2. Then the king rushed at Srutayusa, that subduer of foes, wounding the latter at same time with nine straight knotted-shafts of exceeding sharpness.

3. That king, that mighty bowman, (Srutayusa) resisting in battle, the shafts, shot at him by the son of Pandu, sped at Kunti's son a group of seven arrows.

4. Those arrows penetrating through Yudhisthira's armour drank, in that battle, his life-blood, as if plucking out all vitality envigorating the frame of that high-souled warrior.

5. Pierced deep by that illustrious sovereign, the son of Pandu, in that combat struck the former on his breast with an arrow resembling in shape the ear of a boar.

6. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely the son of Pritha, with another broad-headed shafts, quickly felled on the ground from his car, the standard of the illustrious Srutayusa.

7. Then that ruler of earth Srutayusa, beholding his standard felled, pierced, O king, the son of Pandu with seven arrows of great sharpness.

8. Then Yudhisthira the son of Dharma burnt with rage, like the fire that burns at the end of a Yuga consuming all creatures.

9. Beholding the son of Pandu blaze forth in rage, the celestials, the Gandharvas and the Rakshasas became afflicted O monarch, and the whole world was seized upon by anxiety.

10. Then this thought prevailed in the minds of all beings present, namely 'This king, waxing wroth, will today consume the triune world.'

11. Then, O king, when the son of Pandu was thus enraged, the Rishis and the celesu tials performed many benedictory ceremonies for the peace of the worlds.

12. Then that king (Yudhisthira) possessed with anger and constantly licking the corners of his mouth, assumed a dreadful appearce like that of the sun that rises at the end of a Yuga.

13. Thereupon, O ruler of men, all the warriors of your army, became despondent of their lives, O Bharata.

14. But that highly-renowned one (Yudhisthira) restraining that wrath of his, with patience, severed the mighty bow of Srutayusa near the grasp.

15. Thereafter in that combat the king (Yudhisthira, pierced the latter whose bow had been severed, with a long arrow between his breasts, even before the very eyes of all the troops.

16. Then, O monarch, with great quickness, Yudhisthira endued with great prowess, slew the steeds of the illustrious Srutayusa as also his charioteer, with swift-flying arrows.

17. Then deserting his car of which the steeds were slain, and beholding the manliness of the monarch (Yudhishthira), Srutayusa fled with all haste from the field of battle.

18. When that mighty-bowman Srutayusa was vanquished in battle by the son of Dharma, the troops of Duryodhana, O king, turned their faces away from the field of battle.

19. Acheiving this feat, O mighty monarch, Yudhisthira the son of Dharma fell to slaughter your army, like the Destroyer himself with gaping mouth.

20. Then Chekitana that descendant of of the Vrishni race, covered that foremost of car-warriors namely the son of Gotami, with numerous arrows, before the very eyes of all the troops.

21. Resisting also those arrows, in that combat, Kripa the son of Saradwata pierced O monarch, with winged shafts, Chekitana who had been fighting very heedfully.

22. Then, O Bharata, with a broad-headed shaft the former severed the latter's bow ; as also with great lightness of hand he overthrew with another broad-headed arrow the latter's charioteer.

23. Kripa also slew Chekitana's steeds and the charioteers of those who were protecting him in the flank. Then he of the Satwata race quickly jumping down from his car grasped a mace.

24. Then that foremost of all wielders of maces slaying the steeds of the son of Gotami with that mace capable of crushing heroes, felled the latter's charioteer.

25. Then standing on the ground, the son of Gotami shot at him sixteen shafts ; and those shafts penetrating through him of the Satwata race, struck on the surface of the earth.

26. Then Chekitana, inflamed with rage and desirous of slaying the son of Gotami, once more hurled that mace at the latter, like Purandara hurling his thunder-bolt at Vritra.

27. Thereat the son of Gotami, with many thousands of arrows resisted that mighty and huge mace made entirely of adamant, that was falling swiftly on him.

28. Thereupon Chekitana, O Bharata, drawing his sword out of its sheath, with admirable activity rushed at the son of Gotami.

29. Thereupon Kripa also having laid aside his bow and grasping his sword highly polished, with great impetuosity rushed at Chekitana.

30. Then those two (heroes) endued with strength and armed with swords of excellent make, began to smite one another with their well-sharpened weapons.

31. Then those two foremost of men, struck with the vehemence of one another's swords (blows) fell down on the earth inhabitted by all sorts of creatures.

32. Their limbs were stiffened in a swoon and they lost their consciousness through the fatigue (of their exertions). Thereupon the king of the Karushas, out of friendship, rushed (to the rescue of chekitana,

33. And that hero invincible in battle seeing Chekitana in that plight, placed him on his car before the very eyes of all the troops.

34. So also, O ruler of men, your heroic brother-in-law Sukani, quickly took up on his chariot that foremost of car-warriors namely the son of Gotami.

35. Thereafter Dhristaketu endued with great strength, waxing wroth, pierced, O king. the son of Somadatta, on the breast, with ninety shafts.

36. The son of Somadatta, O mighty monarch, with those arrows stuck on his breast, appeared highly beautiful like the mid-day sun covered with its own rays.

37. Then in that conflict, Bhurisravas deprived the mighty car-warrior Dhristaketu (of the use) of his chariot, having slain its steeds and driver with excellent arrows.

38. Beholding him deprived of his car in consequence of its driver and steeds being slain, Somadatta's son covered him in the battle with a thick shower of arrows.

39. Then, O sire, deserting that car of his, the high-minded Dhristaketu ascended the vehicle belonging to Satanika.

40. Then, O monarch, Chitrasena, Vikarna, and Durmersana, all good car-warriors, clad in armours of gold, rushed against the son of Subhadra.

41. Then a dreadful combat ensued between Abhimanyu and these warriors, that resembled, O king, the fight between the body and its three humours *viz.* wind, bile, and phlegm.

42. Depriving, O monarch, your sons of their chariot, in that great battle, that foremost of men, Abhimanyu did not slay them recollecting the words of Bhima.

43—45. There after as the battle raged, the son of Kunti (Arjuna) owning white steeds, beholding Bhisma who was unconquerable even by the celeltials themselves in battle and who was supported by many thousands king proceed to rescue your sons from Abhimanyu—a mere boy, though a mighty car-waraior still alone—adressed these words to the son of Vasudeva. "O Hrishikesha, urge the steeds to the spot where those numerous warriors are.

46. O Madhava, so guide the steeds that these numerous heroes irrepressible in battle and all accomplished in the use of weapons, may not slay our troops."

47. Thus spoken to by Kunti's son of immeasurable prowess, he of the Vrishni race drove in the thick of the battle that car to which were yoked white steeds.

48. When wrought up with wrath Arjuna rushed against your army, O Sire, a tremendous uproar was set up by your troops.

49. The son of Kunti then having approached those monarchs protected by Bhisma himself, addressing, O king, Susarman, spoke these words to him :—

50. "I know you to be one of the foremost in battle ; your enmity for us in days gone by, was also implacable. To-day, reap the mortal fruit of that wicked behaviour of yours.

51—52. To-day I shall transport you to your grand-sires who had long being dwelling in the regions of the dead." Hearing these insulting words spoken by that slayer of foes namely Vibhatsu, Susarman, the commander of a car-division spoke nothing well or ill in reply.

53. Surrounded by innumerable monarchs, he attacked the heroic Arjuna from all sides, namely in the front, in the rear and in the two flanks.

54. O sinless one, encircling Arjuna in that battle, Susarman along with your sons covered the former with arrows, like clouds covering the orb of the day.

55. Then commenced a sanguinary engagement between your warriors and those of the Pandavas, in which blood flowed like streams of water.

Thus ends the eighty-fifth chapter, the encounter between Arjuna and Susarman, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then the highly powerful Dhananjaya wounded with those arrows, breathing like a trodden snake, forcibly cut off, in that battle, the bows of those mighty car-warriors, discharging shaft after shaft.

2. Within a moment having severed the bows of those highly powerful monarchs in the battle, O king, that illustrious hero setting his mind upon their destruction began to pierce them simultaneously with his arrows.

3. Wounded by the son of Sakra (Ajuna), O king, they rolled on the field weltering in their blood, with their bodies mutilated, their heads severed their armours shattered and their lives taken out of them.

4. Many, of them afflicted with the arrows shot by the son of Pritha (Arjuna), fell down on the earth ; and undergoing diverse contortions simultaneously gave up their lives. Beholding those princes slain in battle, the ruler of the Trigarttas proceeded (to battle) riding on his own car.

5. Then thirty-two of those car-warriors, protecting his (Trigarta king's) rear, rushed at the son of Pritha. Thereafter those warriors encircled Pritha's son and drawing their bows emittings fierce twangs,

6. Covered the latter with a thick shower of arrows, just as clouds charged with rain drench with showers of their contents the mountain breast. Afflicted with that shower of arrows, Dhananjaya inflamed with rage in that battle,

7. With sixty shafts, cleansed with oil, slew all those warriors protecting the rear of the Trigartta king. Vanquishing those sixty car-warriors inbattle, filled with delight, the illustrious Dhananjaya,

8. Ever-attended with victory, hied to slay Bhisma, having slain that division of kings. The king of the Trigarttas beholding those mighty car-warriors, his friends slain,

9. Speedily advanced towards the son of Pritha in order to slay him, placing in his front a large number of kings. Beholding that foremost of those versed in the use of weapons, namely Dhananjaya, thus assailed, the Pandava warriors headed by Sikhandin,

10. Grasping in their hand well-sharpened weapons, rushed in battle desirous of protecting the car of Arjuna. Beholding those royal heroes accompanied by the Trigartta king make towards himself, the son of Pritha,

11. That fierce bowman, destroyed them in battle, with arrows of exceeding sharpness shot from the Gandiva bow. Desirous of encountering Bhisma in battle, Dhananjaya then observed many kings including Duryodhana and the ruler of the Sindhus.

12—13. Then that highly powerful and wonderfully-intelligent hero of infinite prowess and great energy, fighting with them for a moment only and checking them, and then avoinding the king (Duryodhana) and Jayadratha and others, proceeded towards the son of Ganga, holding in his hands his bow and his arrows. Then the illustrious Yudhisthira of fierce prowess, excited with wrath speedily rushed to the battle.

14. Avoiding in battle the ruler of the Madras of infinite renown who was allotted to his share and who was his kinsmen, Yudhisthira accompanied by the sons Madri and also by Bhimasena, proceeded, desirous of battle, toward Bhisma the son of Santanu.

15. Though assailed in battle by all the sons of Pandu, all mighty car-warriors united in a body, the son of Santanu begotten upon Ganga, that high-souled warrior versed in all modes of warfare, flinched not in the least.

16. Then king Jayadratha, highly intelligent and endued with great strength, and never failing in his aims in battle, advancing upon those mighty car-warriors forcibly severed their bows by means of his own excellent bow.

17. Then the illustrious Duryodhana, having anger for his poison, waxing wrath in battle, wounded Yudhisthira, Bhima, Arjuna, and the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) with arrows resplendent like fire itself.

18. Pierced with arrows shot by Kripa, Salya, Sala and Chitrasena, O master, the Pandava brothers excited to the highest pitch of fury, resembled the celestials wounded with arrows shot by the united hosts of the Daityas.

19. Beholding Sikhandin with his bow severed by the royal son of Santanu, the illustrious Ajatasatru (Yudhisthira) waxing wroth, angrily said these words to the former.

20. " Having said to me even before your father these words viz,—' *I will slay with my showers of arrows of the effulgence of the resplendent sun, Bhisma of great vows. This I say you forsooth,'*—you made a promise.

21. You have not redeemed that promise of yours, in as much as you have not yet slain Devavrata in battle. O hero, be not of a man of empty promises. Preserve your virtue, your race and your fame.

22. Behold Bhishma of tremendous impetuosity falling upon my host of troops destroying it with a shower of arrows of excessive effulgence, like the Destroyer himself destroying everything in a moment,

23. Having your bow severed, shunning the fight, vanquished by the royal son of Santanu, whither are you going forsaking your friends and your uterine brothers ? this does not befit you.

24. Beholding Bhisma of infinite prowess and seeing this army broken and routed, O son of Drupada, you are indeed seized with panic, in as much as your countenance has assumed a pallid hue.

25. But, behold, O hero Dhananjaya has engaged in dreadful fight with Bhisma even without your knowledge. Celebrated through out the world, why to-day, O hero are you afraid of Bhisma ? "

26. Hearing this hard-worded speech full of instructions delievered by the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, that high-souled hero Sikhandin considering it to be good counsel, hastened, O king, to bring about the slaughter of Bhisma.

27. When Sikhandin had been thus advancing with great momentum to fall upon Bhisma, Salya checked him with a weapon dreadful and difficult of being baffled.

28. Beholding that weapon effulgent like the fire that appears at the Yuga's end (for destroying the world) shot at him, the son of Drupada, of prowess resembling that of the great Indra, was not at all confounded.

29. On the other hand, that fierce bowman stood there resisting that weapon with numerous arrows. Thereafter Sikhandin fixed on his bow-string the *Varuna* weapon that was capable of counteracting (the fiery weapon of Salya).

30—31. The celestials in the heavens and the rulers of the earth, all beheld that weapon (fiery dart of Salya) baffled by Sikhandin's (Varuna) arrow. In that battle, O king, the high-souled and heroic Bhisma also uttered his war-cry having cut off the bow and wonderfully variegated standard of the royal son of Pandu viz Yudhishthira of the Ajamida race. Thereupon seeing Yudhisthira overwhelmed with fear, leaving aside his bow and his arrows,

32—33. And grasping a mace, Bhimasena rushed on foot against Jayadratha in that battle. Then Jayadratha simultaneously pierced Bhimasena who was thus furiously rushing at him with a mace in hand with five hundred sharp-pointed terrible shafts, each resembling the mace of the Destroyer himself. Without paying the least heed to those arrows, the highly active Vrikodara with heart burning in wrath,

34—35. Slew in that battle all the steeds of the king of the Shindhus, steeds that resembled (in speed) pegions themselves. Then your son Chitrasena of unequalled prowess and resembling the sovereign of the celestials himself, beholding Bhishmasena, rushed to battle with a view to slay the latter, riding swift on his car and with weapons raised over head. Bhimasena also, roaring and uttering his war-cry, rushed against him mace in hand.

36. Beholding that mace, resembling the mace of Death himself, thus raised overhead (by Bhima), every one of the Kuru warriors, eager to avoid its fall, deserting the van of your son,

37. Fled in all directions, in that confounding dreadful and ruthless crush of combatants. O Bharata, your son Chitrasena beholding that mighty mace course towards him, was not confounded at heart.

38. Grasping a resplendent sword and a buckler, Chitrasena leaving his car and jumping down from it on level ground like a lion jumping down from the crest of a cliff, stood on his legs on the field of the battle.

39. Meanwhile that mace falling upon that beautiful car with its steeds and elephants, crushed it in battle, and fell on the ground like a blazing and fierce meteor dropping down from the skies.

40. Seeing that very wonderful feat achieved by your son), your warriors, O Bharata, were filled with delight ; and they unitedly uttered their war-cries and began to praise your son.

Thus ends the eighty-sixth chapter, the breaking of Chitrasena's car, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

(BHISMABADHA PARVA)- *Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Approaching the highly intelligent Chitrasena who had been deprived of his car, your son Vikarna picked him up on his own chariot.

2. When that dreadful and confounding battle was thus raging, Santanu's son Bhisma quickly rushed against Yudhisthira.

3. Then the Srinjayas with their cars, elephants and steeds, began to quake (with fear); and they regarded Yudhisthira to be inside the jaws of Death.

4. On the other hand, that descendant of Kuru's race, that lord Yudhisthira, united with his two twin brothers (Nakula and Sahadeva), encountered that foremost of men, that fierce bowman namely Bhisma, the son of Santanu.

5. Thereafter that son of Pandu shooting in that battle thousands of arrows, covered Bhishma, like clouds covering the orb of the day.

6. Those arrows duly discharged by Yudhisthira, the son of Ganga received in distinct sets of hundreds and thousands.

7. Also, O Sire, a net-work of arrows woven by Bhima was seen in the heavens resembling flights of insects ranging through the skies.

8. In half a wink's time, Bhisma the son of Santanu, in that battle made the son of Kunti disappear in battle, covering him with distinct sets of arrows.

9. Thereat king Yudhisthira inflamed with rage, sped at that high-souled grand-sire of the Kurus, a Naracha that resembled a snake of virulent venom.

10. Then in that battle, O king, the mighty car-warrior Bhisma, with a razor-sharp arrow, cut off that Narach discharched from the bow of Yudhisthira, even before it could reach him.

11. In that battle, Bhisma, having cut off that Naracha that resembled the Destroyer himself, slew the steeds caparisoned with golden ornaments, of that foremost of the Kurus (Yudhisthira).

12. Leaving his car the steeds of which were slain, Yudhisthira the son of Dharma, quickly ascended the car of the high-souled Nakula.

13. Thereafter Bhisma that conqueror of hostile fortresses, excited with wrath, approaching the twins in battle, covered them with numerous shafts.

14. Then O mighty monarch, beholding the twins thus afflicted with the arrows shot by Bhisma, Yudhisthira began to reflect anxiously, desirous of finding out a means for the death of Bhisma.

15. Thereafter, O king, Yudhisthira urged the kings on his side and his relatives, saying "Uniting together do you all slay Bhisma the son of Santanu."

16. Then hearing the command of Pritha's son, all the rulers of earth surrounded the grand-sire with a mighty host of cars.

17. Thus encircled, your father Devavrata played with his bow and arrows felling, O king, numerous mighty car-warriors.

18. The sons of Pritha then beheld that foremost of the Kurus, career on the field of battle, like a lion-cub in the woods amidst a herd of deer.

19. Beholding him utter loud war-cries in battle and frighten heroes with his shafts, O monarch, the Pandava warriors were seized with terror, like a herd of deer at the sight of a lion.

20. Then the Kshatriyas, in that battle, beheld the movements of that foremost of the Bharatas, resemble the movements of fire aided by a strong wind, when it consumes a heap of straw.

21. Then in that battle Bhisma felled the heads of car-warriors like expert men felling ripe palm-fruits from their trees.

22. As those heads, O mighty monarch, fell down on the surface of the earth, a great noise was produced like that of a shower of stones.

23. As that dreadful and fierce battle raged, a great a confusion set in, O king, among all the ranks of the soldiers.

24. When the arrays were thus shattered by Bhisma, the Kshatriyas challenging one another encountered one another for battle..

25. Sikhandin approaching the grand-sire of the Bharatas, assailed him with vehemence saying 'stay'.

26. Then Bhisma remembering the femininity of Sikandin, and for that reason neglecting him in battle, rushed against the Srinjayas.

27. Thereupon the Srinjayas, beholding Bhisma in that battle, were filled with delight and they uttered numerous war-cries that became mingled with the blare of the conchs.

28. Then, O lord, when the sun was on the western side of the meridian, there commenced a battle in which car-warriors and elephant-riders encountered one another.

29. Then Dhristadyumna the prince of the Panchalas, and also the mighty car-warrior Satyaki, began to torment your troops with showers of *Saktis* and *Tomaras*.

30. They also, O monarch, slew in battle your warriors with innumerable shafts. O foremost of men, your troops, though thus smitten down in battle,

31. Did not desert the fight having formed a laudable determination (to fight to the last); and those foremost of car-warriors began to slay (the hostile troop) to the best of their energies.

32. Then, O monarch, a loud cry of agony was set up by your high-souled warriors as they were slain by the illustrious son of Prisata.

33. Hearing that distressful cry uttered by your troop, Vinda and Anuvinda of the Avanti country, both mighty car-wrriors, rushed to encounter the son of Prisata.

34. Then those mighty car-warriors both endued with great activity, slaying the steeds of Prisata's son, shrouded him with a shower of arrows.

35. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior the Panchala prince quickly jumping down his car, ascended with agility the chariot of the highly illustrious Satyaki.

36. Thereupon king Yudisthira surrounded by a mighty division of troops rushed to those two afflicters of foes *viz* the princes of Avanti both inflamed with wrath.

37. So also, O sire, your sons putting forth all their energies, remained in battle surrounding Vinda and Anuvinda.

38. In that battle Arjuna also inflamed with many wrath fought with many best of Kshatriyas like the wielder of the thunderbolt fighting against the Asuras.

39. Drona also, that well-wisher of your son, excited with wrath began to consume all the Panchalas like fire consuming a heap of cotton.

40. Your sons, O ruler of men, headed by Duryodhana himself surrounding Bhisma, fought on with the Pandavas.

41. Then, O Bharata, when the lustrous orb assumed a crimson hue, king Duryodhana addressing all your warriors said, "make hasten :"

42. When they thus fought on achieving feats difficult of being accomplished, the sun being lost to the sight ascended the western hills.

43. Then in a moment, towards nightfall, a dreadful river surging with billows of blood infested by packs of jackals, began to flow accross the field of battle.

44. Then the field of battle assumed a dreadful sight abounding as at did with the spirits of the dead and the ominous jackals howling (hediously).

45. Rakshasas, and Pisachas and other feeders on flesh were seen on all sides by hundreds and by thousands.

46. Arjuna having conquered the kings headed by Susarman along with their followers, proceeded through the divisions towards his own tent.

47. That descendant of the Kuru race, *viz* the lord Yudhisthira also proceeded, O king, surrounded by his troops and accompanied by his brothers, towards his own tent at the advent of night.

48. Bhimsena also, O foremost of kings having vanquished in battle the kings, all good car-warriors, headed by Duryodhana himself, retired to his own camp.

49. In that great battle also, king Duryodhana surroundiug Bhisma the son of Santanu, speedily proceed towarded his own tents.

50. Drona and his son, Kripa and Salya and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, bringing up the rear of the whole host of the Kurus, wended towards their respective tents.

51. So also, O monarch, Satyaki and Prisata's son Dhrishtadyumna having slain many warriors in the battle proceeded towards their tents.

52. Thus, O mighty monarch, your warriors as also those of the Pandavas, all chastisers of their enemies, returned to their encampments when the shades of night had fallen on this earth.

53. Then, O mighty monarch, the Pandavas and the Kurus repairing near their respective encampments entered them exchanging greetings with one another.

54. Then duly arranging for sccuts and out-posts and for protecting their persons, and drawing out the arrows from their bodies and having bathed in various waters,

55. And being praised by the ministrels and bards and arranging for the performance of benedictory rites, those illustrious heroes then began to sport accompanied by songs and sounds of musical instruments.

56. For a short while only did that scene resemble paradise itself, and those foremost of mortals for a while desisted from talking of the battle.

57. When those two armies, abounding in elephants and steeds and men exhausted with fatigue, were lulled in the arms of sleep O king, they indeed presented a charming signt.

Thus ends the eighty-seventh chapter, the withdrawal of the troops after the seventh day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having passed that night and having enjoyed a peaceful slumber, those rulers of men belonging to the hosts of the Kurus and the Pandavas, again marched out for battle.

2. Then a tremendous din was created by those two hosts when they marched out for baftle,—din that resembled the uproar of the ocean itself.

3. Thereupon king Duryodhana, Chitrasena, Vivinsati, Bhisma the foremost of all car-warriors, the son of Bharadwaja endued with prowess,

4. These mighty car-warriors of the Kaurava host clad in mail and united together and with great care, formed, O king, the battle-array of their troops against those of the Pandavas.

5. Your sire Bhisma, O ruler of men, formed a mighty array resembling the dreadful ocean itself, having for its waves and currents the vehicles (of the warriors).

6. Then Bhisma the son of Santanu marched out in the van of all the troops, supported by the Malavas, the Southerners and Avantyas.

7. Behind him came the son of Bharadwaja endued with prowess, being supported by the Pulindas, the Kshudrakas and the Malavas.

8. After Drona marched Bhagadatta endued with great prowess and determined (to fight to the last), being supported by the Magadhas, the Kalingas, and the Pisachas, O ruler of men.

9. After Bhagadatta, came Vrihadvala the ruler of the Kosalas, being supported by the Melakas, the Tripuras and the Chichias.

10. After Vrihadvala came the heroic Trigartta, the ruler of Prasthala, accompanied by numerous Kamvojas and thousands of Yavanas.

11. After Trigartta, O Bharata, the valiant son of Drona rushed to battle, resounding the earth with his war-cries.

12. After the son of Drona proceeded king Duryodhana accompanied by the whole army and surrounded by his uterine brothers.

13. After Duryodhana marched Kripa, the son of Saradwata. Thus marched out the mighty array that resembled the ocean itself.

14. In that array, O lord, streamers, white umbrellas, precious armours of wonderful workmanship, and many bows, shone resplendent.

15. Seeing that mighty array of your warriors, the mighty car-warrior Yudhistuira speedily addressing Prisata's son, the generalissimo of his army said these words.

16. 'Behold, O mighty bowman, this array of troops already formed, resembling the very ocean ; O son of Prisata, without loss of time, do you also arrange your troops in counter-array."

17. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, the valiant son of Prisata formed the dreadful array known as *Sringátaka* that is capable of penetrating through the hostile array.

18. In its two horns was placed Bhimasena and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki, supported by many thousands of car-warriors and cavalry and infantry.

19. In its navel was the ape-bannered Arjuna owning white steeds ; and O foremost of men, in its middle was king Yudhisthira and the sons of Pandu begotten upon Madri.

20. Other mighty bowmen, all rulers of earth, and versed in the art of forming arrays with their troop filled up that array.

21. Abhimanyu and the mighty car-warrior Virata, the sons of Draupadi, and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha were commanded to bring up the rear.

22. Thus, O Bharata, forming this mighty array, the heroic sons of Pandu occupied the field anxiously longing for battle and for victory.

23. Loud noise of the drums, mingled with the blare of conchs and the slapping of the armpits and the war-cries and shouts of the warriors, became dreadful, and filled all the quarters of heaven.

24. Thus those heroes, O king, encountering one another in battle, gazed at one another with winkless eyes.

25. Then, O foremost of men, challenging one another by their appellations, the warriors became engaged with one another.

26. There raged a fierce and frightening battle betweeen your warriors and those of the enemy, as they smote down one another.

27. Whetted long shafts, O Bharata, began to rain on all sides of the field of battle, like dreadful reptiles with mouths wide open.

28. Resplendent darts cleansed with oil and shot with great force, began to fall, O king, like flashing forks of lightening from the clouds.

29. Maces, covered with shining pieces of cloth and decked with gold were seen to fall on the field like so many beautiful crests of mountains.

30. Swords resplendent like the clear blue sky, glittered there. Bucklers made of bull's hide and decorated with hundred moons, O Bharata,

31. Falling on all sides, appeared beautiful, O king. O ruler of men, when the two armies fought with cach other in that battle,

32. They appeared beautiful like the hosts of the celestials and the Daityas engaged with one another (in days gone by). From all sides they rushed against one another in that battle.

33. Excellent royal car-warriors rushing against their antagonist car-warriors fought on in that dreadful battle having the yokes of their chariots entangled with one another.

34. On all sides, O foremost of the Bharatas, were seen scintieations of fire mixed with smoke emitted from the tusks of elephants in consequence of friction, as they fought on with one another.

35. Some elephant-warriors struck down with *Prasas*, falling on the ground appeared like mountaint-rees overthrown from the peaks.

36. Heroic foot-soldiers of diverse appearance were seen to slay one another and to battle with lances that looked like their nails.

37. The combatants of the Kuru and the Pandava troops nearing one another, began to despatch one another to the regions of Death, with arrows of diverse shapes.

38. Thereafter Bhisma the son of Santanu, rushed against the Pandava host, filling the heavens with the clatter of his car and confounding the enemies with the twang of his bow.

39. The car-warriors of the Pandava host also setting up a dreadful noise, rushed towards Bhisma, firmly resolved to fight and headed by Dhristadyumna himself.

40. Then, O Bharata, raged the battle between your as well as the enemy's troops, consisting of men, steeds, cars and elephants —battle in which the combatants became entangled with one another.

Thus ends the eighty-eighth chapter, the commencement of the eighth. day's combat, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA) :—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. The Pandavas were unable to look at Bhisma burning like the solar disc, when inflamed with wrath he rushed to (the thick of the) fight.

2. Thereafter the whole army, by the order of the son of Dharma, rushed against the son of Ganga when the latter was wounding them with whetted shafts.

3. But Bhisma ever proud in battle, began to fell with his shafts, the Somakas, the Srinjayas and the Panchalas, all mighty wielders of the bow.

4. Though thus slaughtered by Bhisma, the Panchalas with the Somakas impetuously rushed against Bhisma, abandoning all fear of death.

5. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely Bhisma the son of Santanu, in that battle, O king, cut off the arms and heads of all those combatants.

6. Your sire Devavrata deprived car-warriors of their car ; and the heads of horse-soldiers fell fast as they rode on theif chargers.

7. We also beheld, O mighty monarch elephants deprived of their riders and fallen on the filled like so many hills and also paralysed by the weapons of Bhishma.

8. Not a single person of the Pandava host remained there on the field of battle, except, O ruler of men that foremost of car-warriors namely Bhimasena endued with great prowesss.

9—10. Encountering Bhisma in battle, Bhima began to resist the former ; a dreadful, fierce and deafening uproar arose among all the troops when Bhima and Bhisma thus encountered each another. Thereupon the Pandavas greatly delighted roared out their war-cries.

11. Thereupon king Duryodhana surrounded by his uterine brothers, protected Bhisma when that battle destructive of creatures was raging furiously.

12. Then that foremost of car-warriors Bhima, slew the charioteer of Bhisma; thereupon the steeds having none to check them ran away dragging the chariot.

13. Then that slayer of enemies, Bhima, with an arrow of the shape of horse-shoe and of exceeding sharpness, cut off quickly the head of Sunabha; and the latter fell down on the ground.

14. When that mighty car-warrior that fierce bowman namely your son Sunabha was slain in battle, O Sire, his other seven uterine brothers, all brave heroes, could not brook it in battle.

15. Adityaketu, Vahvasin, Kundadhara, Mohadura Aparajita, Panditaka, and Vishalaksha, all difficult of being conquered in battle,

16. These seven grinders of foes, clad in coats of mail and owning wonderful armours and weapons, rushed to battle against the son of Pandu, desirous of fighting with him.

17. Then in that battle, Mahendra pierced Bhima with nine winged shafts resembling the thunder-bolt itself, like the slayer of Vritra piercing Namuchi (in the days of yore).

18. Adityaketu pierced Bhima with seventy shafts, Vahvasin with five, Kundadhara with ninety and Vishalaksha with seven.

19. That conqueror of foes, namely Aparajita himself, O mighty monarch, that mighty-carwarrior, pierced the highly-powerful Bhimasena, with innumerable shafts.

20. Panditaka pierced Bhima with three shafts in that battle. But Bhima did not tolerate these wounds inflicted by his enemies in that battle.

21. Then that grinder of foes (Bhima) pressing his bow with his left hand, with a staight-knotted shaft cut off in that battle, the head of

22. Your son Aparajita, graced with a well-formed nose. When he was thus conquered by Bhima, his head fell down on the ground.

23. Then the former, with another broad-headed-shaft, despatched the mighty car-warrior Kundadhara to the region of Death, even before the very eyes of the troops.

24. Then that one of immeasurable soul (Bhima), placing on his bow-string another shaft, sped it, O Bharata, against Panditaka in that battle.

25. That shaft slaying Panditaka penetrated into the earth, even as a serpent urged by fate, enters the earth having bitten a person whose hour has come.

26. Thereafter that generous-hearted hero, O ruler of earth, remembering the woe he (with his brothers) had to undergo, cutting off with three shafts the head of Vishalaksha felled it on the ground.

27. He also pierced the mighty car-warrior Mahendra with a long shaft between his breasts, and O king, (thus stricken), the latter fell down dead on the ground.

28. Severing the umbrella of Adityaketu with a shaft, Bhima cut down the former's head, O Bharata, with a broad-headed arrow of exceeding sharpeness.

29. Thereafter inflamed with rage, with a straight-knotted shaft Bhima despatched Vahvasin to the abode of Death.

30. Then O ruler of men, the rest of your sons fled away in all directions, considering that the words he had uttered in the assembly-hall to be true.

31. Thereupon king Duryodhana, afflicts ed with the calamity that had befallen hil brothers, commanded his troops saying, "Slay this Bhima."

32. Thus, O ruler of men, your sons, alexcellent bow-men, beholding their brothers slain, remembered the words,

33. Salutary and wholesome, that the wonderfully-wise Kshatiya had said. Those words of that true speaking one has now been realised,

34. Words, beneficial and true, to which you paid no heed in past days, being possessed by covetousness and folly, as also, O lord of wealth, by the affection for your sons.

35. From the way in which that hero (Bhima) of long-arms is slaying the Kauravas, it may be asserted that, that mighty son of Pandu has surely taken his birth for the destruction of your sons.

36. Thereafter king Duryodhana possessed with overwhelming grief, approached Bhisma, and O Sire, began to lament before him in great sorrow.

37. 'My heroic brothers have all been slain in battle by Bhimasena; and other soldiers, though striving their best to resist him, are all being slain and slaughtered.

38. Though you are always in our midst, yet you always neglect us. Alas! what a wrong course have I taken! Behold my evil Destiny!'

Sanjaya said :—

39. Hearing this, your father Devavrata, inflamed with rage, said these words to Suyodhana, with his eyes overflowing with tears.

Bhisma said :—

40. 'Even this had been said before by myself, by Drona, by Vidura and by the illustrious lady Gandhari. But then, O sire, you did not pay any heed to it.

41. O Grinder of foes, I have made arrangements with you that, neither myself nor the preceptor Drona shall survive this war.

42. I tell you truly that, every one of the host of Dhritarastra whom Bhima will meet in battle, he will slay in fight.

43. Therefore, O king, with all your patience, and forming a firm resolution for battle, do you fight with the sons of Pritha, looking upon paradise as your final goal.

44. The sons of Pandu cannot be vanguished even by the celestials headed by Indra himself. Therefore, O Bharata, forming a firm determination for fight, do you fight on (with the Pandavas).

Thus ends the eighty-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Adityaketu and others, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XC.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Seeing my sons, so many in number, slain by one, what, O Sanjaya, did, Bhisma Drona, and Kripa do?

2. Day by day, O Sanjaya, my sons are being destroyed. Indeed O Suta, I consider them to be completely struck down by (Evil) Destiny.

3—5. In as much as, my sons are never victorious and are ever vanquished in battle, in as much as my sons remaining amidst, Drona, Bhisma, the illustrious Kripa, and the heroic son of Somadatta, and Bhagadatta, and O son, Aswathama, and many orther heroic and valiant worriors of high-soul, are still slaughtered in battle, what can it be but (adverse) Fate?

6. The wicked Duryodhana did not listen to our advise before. Forbidden, O son by myself, by Bhisma, by Vidura,

7. By his mother Gandhari ever anxious to compass his good, that perverse Duryodhana did not comprehend our words before, through his folly. Now he reaps the fruits of his own actions,

8. In as much as, day by day, waxing wroth in battle, Bhimasena is despatching my sons to the abode of death.

Sanjaya said :—

9. Those excellent words of Khattwa have now been verified, which, O lord, uttered as they were for your good, you did not pay any heed to before.

10. 'Withhold your sons from the dice, do not persecute the sons of Pandu',—these words, spoken by your well-wishing friends,

11. You did not listen to, like one on death-bed neglecting wholesome medicine. It is now that you realise those words spoken by the righteous.

12. Disregarding the salutary advices offered by well-wishing friends like Bhisma Drona, Vidura and others, the descendants of the Kuru race are reaping destruction.

13. Now, O monarch, the inevitable consequence of all that has arrived. Listen now from me as to how the battle was fought.

14. At mid-day, O king, the battle raged fiercely and the carnage that took place was exceedingly terrible. Hear me narrate it.

15. Then at the command of the son of Dharma (Yudhisthira), all the troops of the Pandava host inflamed with rage, rushed against Bhisma, out of a desire for slaying him.

16. Dhristadyumna, Sikhandin and the mighty car-warriors Satyaki, uniting together their divisions, rushed, O mighty monarch, against Bhisma.

17. Then the mighty car-warriors Virata and Drupada accompanied by all the Somakas rushed even against Bhisma himself.

18. The Kekayas, and Dhristaketu, and Kuntivoja, clad in mail and supported by their armies, rushed, O monarch, against Bhisma himself.

19. Arjuna, the sons of Drupadi, and the highly powerful Chekitana, rushed against the kings commanded by Duryodhana himself.

20. Thereafter, the valiant Abhimanyu, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Hidimva, and Bhimasena himself, all wrought up with wrath, assaulted the Kouravas.

21. Thus were the Kouravas slain in battle by the Pandavas divided in two divisions; so also, O monarch, the Pandavas were slaughtered by the Kouravas in that fight.

22. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely Drona, excited with rage, rushed against the Somakas and the Srinjayas, despatching them to the mansion of Death.

23. Then the high-souled Srinjaya, set up a loud and distressful cry when, O king they were thus being slaughtered in battle by that great bowman the son of Bharadwaja.

24. Innumerable Kshastriya warriors, smitten by Drona were seen to convulse like persons suffering from agonising ailments.

25. They groaned and moaned and cried and uttered cries of agony in consequence of which a confused noise was heard, resembling that produced by men struck with famine.

26. On the other hand, the highly puissant Bhimasena, waxing wroth, caused a dreadful carnage among the Kourava ranks like another god of Death himself.

27. In that fierce fight, as the troops slew one another, a terrible river started up into existence on the field of battle, of which the waves and currents were formed of blood.

28. That great battle, O mighty monarch, between the Kurus and the Pandavas, was indeed very dreadful in its aspect; and it considerably swelled the population of of Death's domain.

29. Thereafter Bhima inflamed with rage, fell with impetuousity upon the elephant-division of the Kurus, and many were the beasts that he sent to the regions of Death.

30. There, in that battle, O Bharata, many were the elephants that pierced with *Nacharas* by Bhima, fell and were confounded and shrieked and careered in all directions.

31. Huge elephants, with their trunks cut off, and their bodies mangled, fell down on the earth, O sire, screaming like cranes.

32. Nakula and Sahadeva, both together, charged the cavalry-division. Those horses decked with golden chains and caparisons of the same metal,

33. Were seen to be slain by hundreds and by thousands; and, O monarch, the earth was strewn over with falling horses.

34. The earth looked awful, O foremost of men, being covered over with horses of diverse appearance, some of which were tongueless, some of which, again were breathing hard, some moaning and some deprived of their lives.

35. The earth also, O Bharata, appeared kwfully beautiful being overstrewn with aings slain by Arjuna in the encounter.

36. With shattered chariots, and torn flags and umbrellas of great effugence, with rent *chamaras* and fans, and with mighty weapons splintered into pieces,

37. With garlands and necklaces of gold, with heads graced with ear-rings, with bracelets, with head-gears fallen off from the heads, and with streamers,

38. With well-made car-bottoms, and O king, with reins and riggings—covered with all these things, the earth appeared as beautiful as she appears during the spring being strewn over with blossoms.

39. Such also was the carnage caused in the Pandava host, O Bharata, when the son of Santanu, and Drona that foremost of car-warriors were enraged;

40. As also when Aswathaman, and Kripa and Kritavarman (were wrought up with rage). So also your troops underwent destruction when the other side was inflamed with wrath.

Thus ends the ninetieth chapter, the eighth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. When, O king, that dreadful battle destructive of excellent heroes was thus raging, Suvala's prosperous son Sakuni rushed against the Pandava hosts.

2. Also, O king, that slayer of foes, that son of Hridika, of the Satwata race, proceeded in battle against the Pandava divisions.

3—5. Several warriors of your army, with a mighty division of horses consisting of best animals of the Kamvoja breed, of those born in lands watered by many rivers, of those belonging to Aratta, Mahi, Sindhu, and Vanayu, of those that were white-hued, of those born in mountainous tracts, and of those exceedingly swift and endued with the fleetness of wind, and of those of the Tittiri breed, surrounded on all sides the Pandava army. With many steeds duly clad in mail and decked with caparisons of gold,

6. All best of their class, and fleet as the wind itself, the highly puissant son of the Pandava (Arjuna), of cheerful appearance and the slayer of his foes, rushed against that division of horses belonging to the enemy.

7. This prosperous son of Arjuna by name Iravat, endued with great prowess

was begotten by the highly intelligent Partha (Arjuna) on the daughter of the sovereign of the Nagas.

8. Her husband having been slain by Suparna (Garuda), she was helpless and completely depressed in mind ; she was then bestowed upon Arjuna by the illustrious Airavata.

9. As she came to him under the influence of desire, the son of Pritha accepted her as his wife. Thus it was that Arjuna's son was begotten upon another's wife.

10. This son of Arjuna was brought up in the regions of the Nagas, and was protected by his mother. He was abandoned by his wicked-souled uncle from his animosity for the son of Pritha.

11. Hearing that Arjuna had come to the regions of Indra, that handsome, highly puissant and accomplished Iravat of prowess that could not be baffled, hied to those regions.

12. That mighty-armed hero of infallible prowess, approaching his father did obeisance to him, duly folding his palms.

13. He introduced himself to the illustrious Arjuna saying—'I am your son Iravat, O lord, may good betide you.'

14. He also reminded Arjuna of the circumstances under which the latter met his mother. Then the son of Pandu also remembered them aright.

15. Then in the mansion of the chief of the celestials, the son of Pritha embracing his son equal to him in his acquirements, was highly delighted.

16. Then that mighty-armed hero (Iravat), O king, was thus cheerfully commanded by Arjuna, in the celestial regions with regard to his own business (namely the impending war with the Kurus).

17. 'O son, when the battle would take place, you should render us assistance.' He then said 'yea' to the words of his father ; and now that the hour has arrived, he also presented himself,

18. O king, surrounded by parti-coloured horses, countless in number. Those horses caparisoned with trappings of gold and of diverse hues and great fleetness,

19. O king, suddenly appeared on the field like swans on the bosom of the mighty-main. Those horses encountering your division of fleetest steeds,

20. Struck one another with their chests and noses. Overthrown by their own impetuosity, O king, they began to fall down suddenly on the earth.

21. When those two horse divisions thus clashed against one another (and some fell down), a terrible sound, resembling that of Suparna's swoop was heard there.

22. So also, O mighty monarch, those who rode on these steeds nearing one another in that dreadful battle, fell upon slaughtering one another mercilessly.

23. When that general and dreadful encounter raged fiercely, the chargers of the two hosts, seized with panic, coursed wildly all over the field.

24. Warriors, mutilated with shafts, with their chargers slain, and themselves exhausted with fatigue, began to perish, cutting one another with their swords.

25. Then when that horse-division was considerably thinned and very few survived, O Bharata, the younger brothers of Suvala's son (Skuni), all endued with heroism, rode out in the van (of the hostile ranks),

26. On horses, the contact of whose dash was overthrowing like the vehemenee of the wind, which were equal to the wind in fleetness, and which were all excellent chargers, well-broken and youthful.

27. Gaya,Gavaksha, Vrisava, Charmavan, Arjava and Suka, these six highly puissant heroes rode out of the mighty ranks the Kauravas,

28, Supported by Sakuni and their respective mighty divisions consisting of highly powerful warriors, themselves covered with armours, accomplished in battle, fierce in aspect and possessed of great strength.

29. Breaking through that invincible cavalry division of Iravat, desirous of victory and longing for paradise and endued with great strength,

30. Those Gandhara heroes formidable in battle cheerfully penetrated into it. Thereupon the highly puissant Iravat, beholding them very delightful,

31—32. Thus commanded his own warriors adorned with wonderful ornaments and weapons, saying:—'Adopt such measures by which these warriors of Dhritarashtra's son may all be destroyed with their weapons and vehicles.' Saying 'Yes,' all those warriors belonging to Iravat,

33. Slew in battle that division of your army difficult of being conquered by the enemy.* Beholding their division crushed by the division of Iravat,

34. The sons of Suvala not tolerating it in battle, rushing at Iravat, surrounded him on sides.

35. Piercing Iravat with sharp lances and urging their warriors against him,

those heroes careered over the field creating a great confusion.

36. Then Iravat pierced with sharp lances by those high-souled warriors and covered with blood that was trickling down from his wounds, appeared like an elephant pierced with the hook.

37. Single-handed as he was, he was smitten sore by many, on his chest, his back, and his flanks; but O king he flinched not in consequence of his great patience.

38. Thereupon Iravat, conqueror of hostile cities, waxing wroth, piercing all of them with whetted shafts, deprived them of their senses.

39. Then drawing out all those lances from his own body, that subduer of enemies wounded the sons of Suvala in battle even with those very lances.

40. Then drawing his sharp sabre and holding his buckler, he (Iravat) quickly ran on foot desirous of slaying the sons of Suvala, in that battle.

41. Then all those sons of Suvala regaining consciousness, possessed by rage, once more rushed towards Iravat.

42. Iravat also proud of his strength, and displaying the lightness of his hands by whirling his sword, rushed against all those sons of Suvala.

43. Those sons of Suvala, riding on fleet chargers could find no opportunity for striking Iravat moving as he was with great agility.

44. Then beholding Iravat standing on foot on the ground, those warriors once more surrounding him close, endeavoured to capture him.

45. Then Iravat, that slayer of foes, beholding them very near to himself, with his sword, cut off their right and left arms (lit: with which they wielded their swords and their bows respectively), and also mutilated their bodies.

46. Their weapons and their hands furnished with these, fell down on earth, and they thenselves deprived of life and with their bodies mangled, fell down dead.

47. Only Vrisava, O mighty monarch, with his body mangled with wounds, escaped, with difficulty, alive from that most terrible combat destructive of heroes.

48. Then your son Duryodhana beholding all those heroes crushed, waxing wroth, said these words unto the Rakshasa of fearful appearence,

49. That fierce bowman, that subduer of foes, that one of great illusive energies, *viz* Alumvusha the son of Rishyasringa, who was the sworn enemy of Bhimasena, in consequence of the latter's slaughter of Vaka.

50. 'Behold O hero, how this puissant son of Arjuna, versed in illusions, has done me this terrible wrong in the shape of destroying my forces?

51. You are also, O sire, capable of going every where at your unrestrained will and are also versed in all weapons of illusion; you are moreover the sworn enemy of Pritha's son; so slay me this one in battle.'

52. Saying 'yea' (to Duryodhana's words), that Rakshas of terrible appearance rushed, uttering his war-cries, to the spot where the youthful son of Arjuna was.

53. Alamvusha was supported by the heroic lancers of his own division, all accomplished in smiting and well-mounted, skilful in fight, bearing resplendent lances.

54. He was desirous, O king, of slaying in battle the highly puissant Iravat, along with the two thousands excellent cavalry that survived the recent conflict.

55. The most agile and puissant Iravat also, that slayer of enemies, waxing wroth began to resist the Rakshasa who was desirous of slaying him.

56. That Rakshasa (Alamvusha) endued with great strength, beholding Iravat make towards himself, speedily began to put forth his illusions.

57. He then created, as many illusive chargers, all mounted by fierce Rakshasas, bearing in their hands lances and battle axes.

58. These two thousand well-disciplined smiters, advancing with wrath, and encountering Iravat's division, were both speedily despatched to the regions of the departed.

59. When both the divisions of Iravat and Alamvusha were slain in battle, those two heroes, both formidable in battle, encountered each other like Indra and Vritra.

60. Seeing that Rakshasa invincible in battle make towards himself, the highly puissant Iravat, excited with wrath, began to resist him;

61. And when the former had come very near to him, with his sword he cut off that wicked one's bow and shafts into five fragments each.

62. Seeing his bow severed, he speedily mounted on the sky, confounding as it were with his illusive powers Iravat who was greatly excited with rage.

63—64. Thereupon mounting on the sky, that unapproachable hero Iravat, versed in

all duty and capable of assuming any from at will, confounding with his illusive powers that Rakshasa, cut off the latter's limbs in that battle. Thus was that foremost of Rakshasas cut into pieces again and again.

65. But, O mighty monarch, Alumvusha was again born anew, in the fulness of his youth. Illusion is natural with them (the Rakshasas) and their age and appearance are the result of their will.

66—67. Thus the limbs of the Rakshasa again and again cut to pieces, appeared very beautiful. Thereupon the enraged Iravat repeatedly cut that Rakshasa endued with great strength with his battle axe of exceeding sharpness. Cut like a tree by that powerful Iravat, that heroic

68. Rakshasa uttered a dreadful roar; that created a terrible sound. Cut with the strokes of the battle-axes, the Rakshasa shed blood profusely.

69. Thereafter that son of Rishyasringa possessed of great strength, beholding his puissant antagonist blaze forth in that battle, became inflamed with fury and put forth his own powers in that battle.

70. Assuming a dreadful and prodigious form he tried to capture the son of Arjuna, namely the illustrious Iravat.

71. In the very thick of the fight, before the very eyes of all the combatants, seeing that illusion put forth by that wicked-souled Rakshasa,

72. Iravat, highly excited with rage, himself began to create great illusions. Then when that unreceding hero was overwhelmed with rage in that battle,

73. A Naga related to him through his mother came to his support; surrounded on all sides by numerous Nagas, O king, in that battle,

74. That Naga, assumed a prodigious form mighty like that of Ananta himself. Thereafter with those innumerable and diverse kinds of Nagas, he covered the Rakshasa.

75. Thus surrounded by the Nagas, that foremost of the Rakshsas, reflecting for a while, assumed the form of Garuda and devoured all those serpents.

76. When that Naga, related to him through his mother's side had been thus devoured through the illusive powers of Alamvusha, Iravat became confounded and the Rakshasa slew him with his sword.

77. Then that Rakshasa felled on the earth the head of Iravat graced with ear-rings and a diadem, and effulgent like the moon or the lotus.

78. When that heroic son of Arjuna had been slain by the Rakshasa, the sons of Dhritarastra with all their partisan kings, were relieved of their anxiety.

79. In that great and dreadful battle between those two armies, awful was the carnage that then took place.

80. Horses and elephants, and foot-soldiers, mixing with one another, was slain by the tuskers; and car-warriors, and horse-soldiers, and tuskers were also slain in that battle by foot-soldiers.

81. Then, O king, in that dreadful engagement, divisions of foot-soldiers and car-warriors and numerous horses, belonging to your as well as their (*Pandavas)* host, were slain by car-warriors.

82. Meanwhile Arjuna also unaware o the fate of the son of his loins, slew in that battle those heroic kings who were engaged in supporting Bhisma.

83. Thereafter, O monarch, your warriors and the Srinjayas, by thousands, gave up their lives in battle slaying one another.

84. Car-warriors, with dishevelled hair, with their arrows, swords, and bows severed, fought on with their naked arms meeting one another.

85. The highly powerful Bhisma also shew in that battle mighty car-warriors with shafts capable of penetrating into the very vitals, agitating the whole host of the Pandavas.

86. By him (Bhisma) many warriors and tuskers, and horse-soldiers and car-warriors and steeds of Yudhisthira's army, were slain.

87. In that battle, O Bharata we beheld the prowess of Bhisma, of Bhimasena and also, O Bharata, of the son of Prisata.

88. The battle that that mighty bowmen of the Satwata race namely Satyaki, fought, was indeed very fierce. Beholding the prowess of Drona, the Pandavas were seized with terror.

89. 'Single-handed can this Drona slay us in battle with all our soldiers; what to speak of him when he is supported by a large body of warriors of world-spread renown.'

90. Even these were the words that the sons of Pritha said, O monarch, when, O foremost of the Bharatas, they were greatly afflicted by him in that fierce fight.

91. All the heroes endued with great strength, of those two armies, did not give or take quarter; they fought on as if possessed by Rakshasas or evil spirits.

92. And, O sire, the bowmen of your army and those belonging to the army of the Pandavas, were all excited to the highest pitch of fury. We indeed did not then find any one pay the least heed to his life in that battle destructive of heroes, and that resembled the fight of the Daityas themselves.

Thus ends the ninety-first chapter, the slaughter of Iravat, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA):—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Describe to me, O Sanjaya, what the highly puissant sons of Pritha did when they heard that Iravat had been slain in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

2. Beholding Iravat slain in battle, the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha the son of Bhimsena, sent forth a terrible roar.

3. As he roared, the earth having the oceans for her raiments, with her mountains and forests, O king, quaked violently with the echo of his roars ;

4. As also the firmament and all the cardinal and subsidiary quarters. As your soldiers heard, O Bharata, that terrible uproar,

5. Their thighs were petrified and they trembled and perspired ; and O foremost of kings, all of them became depressed at heart.

6. And they fled on all sides like herds of elephants frightened by a lion. Then the Rakshasa, uttering those loud roars that resembled the rumble of the thunderbolt,

7. Balancing his resplendent trident, and assuming a dreadful appearance, and surrounded by foremost of Rakshasas of fearful mein and armed with diverse weapons,

8. Advanced, greatly excited with rage, like the Destroyer at the time of universal annihilation. Beholding that irate hero of dreadful apperance make towards himself,

9. And seeing also his own troops, one and all, turning their faces away from the field of battle from fear of that Rakshasa, king Dhuryodhana rushed against Ghatotkacha,

10—12 Grasping a bow with arrows fixed on the string and uttering his war-cries incessantly and loud. Behind him followed the ruler of the Bangas himself, supported by ten thousand elephants prodigious like the hills and with the temporal juice flowing down. Beholding your son surrounded by the elephant-division rush to battle, O mighty monarch, that night-ranger became inflamed with wrath ; then raged a combat, dreadful and hair-stirring,

13. Between the Rakshasa, O mighty monarch, and the division of Duryodhana. Beholding that elephant-division like a mass of clouds in the horizon,

14. The Rakshasas, highly enraged, rushed at it, with weapons in their hands, and uttering various war-cries, like clouds charged with lightning.

15. With arrows, darts, sabres, shafts, lances, mallets, and battle-axes, they began to slay the warriors fighting from the backs of elephants.

16—17. They slew those huge elephants with blocks of stones and large trees. We beheld, O mighty monarch, elephants with temples rent, and bodies bathed in blood and mangled with wounds, slain by those rangers of night. When that division of elephant-riders, was shattered and thinned in number,

18, Duryodhana himself, O mighty monarch, rushed against the Rakshasas, influenced by great animosity and heedless of his own life.

19. That highly powerful hero sped arrows of exceeding sharpness at those Rakshasas, and that fierce bowman slew many of the Rakshasas that were fighting there.

20—22. Your irate son Duryodhana, O foremest of the Bharatas, that mighty car-warrior slew with four shafts, the four Rakshasas viz Vigavanta, Maharoudra, Vidyutjwihva, and Pramathin. Once more, that one of immeasurable soul shot, O foremost of Bharatas, a shower of arrows incapable being buffled, at the host of the Rakshasas. Beholding, O sire, that marvellous feat achieved by sour son,

23. The highly powerful son of Bhimasena blazed forth with rage ; then stretching his mighty bow effulgent like the thunderbolt of Indra,

24. He rushed against the irate Duryodhana with violence. Beholding him rush forward like death incarnate urged on by the Destroyer himself,

25. Your son Duryodhana, O monarch, did not waver at all. Then Ghatotkacha

with his eyes coppery in wrath thus addressed Duryodhana angrily saying :—

26. "This day will I liquidate the debt I owe to my fathers and mothers who had so bong been exiled by your heartless self.

27. The sons of Pandu, O monarch, were deceitfully defeated by you at a game of dice. The daughter of Drupada by name Krishna, while in her courses and so clad in one garment only,

28. O perverse-minded wretch, was was brought in the midst of the court-hall and was persecuted by you in various ways. While she was dwelling in her hermitage in the woods, out of a desire for compassing your good, the wicked-souled

29. Ruler of the Sindhus oppressed her disregarding my sires. O you the disgrace to your family, these and many other such insults

30. Will I this avenge, if indeed you do not fly forsaking the field of battle.' Having thus spoken, and stretching his mighty bow Hidimva's son,

31. Biting his lips with his teeth and licking the corners of his mouth, covered Duryodhana with a mighty shower of arrows, like clouds washing the mountain breast with torrents of rain in the rainy season.

Thus ends the ninety-second chapter, the fight of the son of Hidimva, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then that shower of arrows, which it was difficult even for the Danavas to withstand, was borne by that foremost of kings Duryodhana, like a mighty elephant bearing a shower of rains.

2. Thereafter your son possessed with rage, and breathing like a snake was involved in a very hazardous situation in that battle, O foremost of the Bharatas.

3. Then he (Duryodhana) shot (at the Rakshasa), twenty five keen-pointed darts of exceeding sharpness ; those darts, O king, fell upon that foremost of Rakshasas with great force,

4. Like enfuriate snakes falling upon the mountain Gandhamadana. Pierced with those arrows, and shedding blood copiously like an elephant in rut (shedding the temporal juice),

5. That cannibal formed a fixed resolution for destroying the king. Thereafter the Rakshasa grasped a mighty lance, capable of penetrating even through rocks,

6. Blazing with effulgence, burning like a fierce meteor and resembling the flashes of lightning in radiance. That mighty-armed hero then desirous of slaying your son, raised that lance.

7. Beholding that lance raised, the ruler of the Bangas, speedily urged his elephant of proportions huge like a hill, against the Rakshasa.

8. This king, in that battle, riding on his excellent elephant of great strength and fleetness, reached the spot where Duryodhana's car was stationed ;

9. And he covered the car of your son Duryodhana with the body of his elephant. Seeing the way (to Duryodhana's car thus covered by the highly intelligence ruler of the Bangas,

10. Ghatotkacha, O mighty monarch, with eyes coppery in anger, sped that raised dart of great fierceness at the elephant.

11. Struck with that dart, O king, hurled by the hand of Ghatotkacha, the elephant bleeding profusely, fell down dead.

12. The mighty ruler of the Bangas quickly leaping up from his elephant, jumped down on the surface of the earth.

13. King Duryodhana seeing that excellent elephant felled and his army shattered, was overwhelmed with grief.

14. Holding before his mind's eye the paramount duty of a Kshastriya, and also from his own pride, king Duryodhana, though worsted, stood immovable like the everlasting hills.

15. Then placing on his bow-string whetted shafts blazing like the Fire of dissolution, and highly excited with rage, he discharged them at that dreadful ranger of the night.

16. Seeing those arrows falling like the thunderbolt of Indra, the high-souled Ghatotkacha foiled their aim by the alacrity of his movements.

17. Like clouds at the end of a Yuga, once more did he fiercely roar out, with eyes coppery in rage, striking terror into the hearts of all soldier.

18. Hearing that deafening roar uttered by the fearful Rakshasa, Bhisma the son of Santanu, coming to the preceptor Drona, addressed him saying :—

19. 'As I hear these dreadful roars uttered by the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, I think it sure that the son of Hidimva is engaged with king Duryodhana himself.

20. In battle, this Rakshasa could not be conquered by any creature. So hie yourself to the king and rescue him. May good betide you.

21. That hero of eminent parts viz., Duryodhana has been assaulted by the high-souled Rakshasa. Now, O afflicter of foes, even this (to protect the king) is our incumbent duty."

22. Having heard the words of the grandsire, the mighty car-warriors, without delaying and at the top of their speed, rushed where the ruler of the Kurus was.

23. Drona and Somadatta, and Valhika and Jayadratha and Kripa and Bhurisravas, Salya and the two princes of Avanti and also Vrihadvala,

24. And Aswathaman, and Vikarna, and Chitrasena and Vivinsati,—these and thousands of other car-worriors, along with those that followed them,

25—26 Proceeded, desirous of rescuing your son Duryodhana who had been hotly pressed. Beholding that invincible division protected by many mighty car-warriors make towards himself with hostile intentions, that foremost of Rakshasas possessed of mighty arms, remained immovable like the Mountain Mainaka,

27. Holding a massive bow and surrounded by his relations armed with bludgeous and mallets, and diverse other kinds of weapons.

28. Then commenced a fierce engagement capable of making the hair stand erect, between those foremost amongst Duryodhana's host and those amongst the Rakshasa's kinsmen.

29. On all sides of the field of battle, the twanging of bows was heard, O mighty monarch, like the crackling of burning bamboos.

30. The din produced by the stroke of weapons against the armours of the combatants, resembled, O king, the sound produced by the rending of mountains.

31. The appearance of lances hurled by the arms of heroes was, O ruler of men, like that of serpents coursing swiftly through the welkin.

32. Thereafter excited to the highest pitch of fury, that foremost of Rakshasas possessed of mighty arms stretching his mighty bow, uttered a terrible yell.

33. He then burst asunder the bow of the preceptor Drona with a cresent-shaped arrow. Then with a broad-headed arrow, having crushed the standard of Somadatta, he broke out into another yell.

34. He pierced Valhika with three shafts, between his breasts; then he pierced Kripa with one shaft and Mitrasena with three.

35. With another well-directed and well-aimed shaft shot by his bow drawn to its fullest stretch, he struck Vikarna on the soldier-joint as the lattar neared him;

36—37. Then Vikarna, bathed in blood, squatted down on the terrace of his car. Thereafter that Rakshasa of infinite soul, excited with wrath, sped, O foremost of the Bharatas, five and ten darts at Bhurisravas; and these darts penetrating through the latter's armour stuck on the surface of the earth.

38. He also wounded the drivers of Vinvinsati and the son of Drona; both of them fell down on their seats in the car, loosening their grasp of the reins of steeds.

39. He cut down, O monarch, the standard of the king of the Sindhus bearing the device of the boar and decked with gold, with a crescent-shaped shaft; and with another, he burst the latter's bow asunder.

40. Then again with eyes red in rage, the Rakshasa slew with four lances the four steeds of the high-souled princes of Avanti.

41. Then, O mighty monarch, he pierced prince Vrihadvala with another sharp and well-tempered arrow, shot from his bow drawn to its fullest stretch.

42. That one (Vrihadvala) thus deeply pierced and smarting with pain, sat down on the terrace of his chariot. Then that lord of the Rakshasas possessed with furious wrath, and stationed on his car,

43. Shot many keen-pointed shafts of great sharpness that resembled snakes of virulent poison; these shafts, O mighty monarch, penetrated through Salya accomplished in battle.

Thus ends the ninety-third chapter, the fight of Hidimva's son, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCIV.

BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having made all your warriors turn their faces away from field of battle, the Rakshasa, O foremost of the Bharatas, assaulted Duryodhana out of a desire for slaying him.

2. Beholding him make towards the king with impetuousity, your warriors, all invincible in battle, rushed at him, desirous of doing away with him.

3. Those mighty car-warriors, stretching their bows that looked like large palmyar trees, and uttering their war-cries loud as the roars of the lions, rushed at him shooting weapons at him.

4. Then they covered him with an arrowy downpour, like clouds covering the moudtains with a downpour of rain in the rainy season.

5. Thus pierced sore, and greatly afflicted like an elephant smitten with the hook, the Rakshasa then at once rose to the sky like the son of Vinatal Garuda,

6. Then he uttered a loud roar that resembled the rumble of autumnal clouds; and that dreadful roar reverberated through the susidiary and cardinal points of the compass.

7. King Yudhisthira hearing those war-cries of the Rakshasa, thus spoke, O foremost of the Bharatas, to Bhimasena the subduer of foes.

8. "Surely the Rakshasa is fighting with mighty car-warriors of the host of Dhritarastra's son, in as much as we can hear, (even at this distance), the noise created by his fierce cries.

9. I also perceive that that foremost of Rakshasas has now to bear a burden unequal to his strength ; on the other hand, the grand-sire inflamed with rage is exerting for slaughtering the Panchalas.

10. For the protection of these latter, Phalguna is engaged with the foe. Having heard, O mighty armed hero, of these two tasks both of which demand prompt attention,

11. Hie yourself for rescuing the son of Hidimva involved in a great predicament." Accepting the words of his brother, without the least delay, Vrikodara

12. Proceeded to the battle, terrifying all the kings with his fierce war-cries, and, O king, with an impetuousity like that of the ocean in the days of the full moon or the new moon.

13. Him followed Satyadhri and Sanchitti ever invincible in battle, and Srenimat and Vasudhara and the puissant son of the king of the Kasis,

14. The sons of Droupadi, all mighty car-warriors headed by Abhimanyu, and Kshatradeva, the powerful Kshatradharman,

15. And Nila the sovereign of the low countries accompanied by his own divisions. They surrounded the son of Hidimva with a mighty division of cars.

16. With six thousand highly infuriated elephants, all potent smiters, those heroes began to protect Ghatotkacha that foremost of the Rakshasas.

17. These warriors made the very earth quake with their fierce war-cries, the clatter of their car-wheels, the sound produced by the hoofs of their galloping horses.

18. Hearing that noise of the assualting army, the warriors of the army of your sons, wore a pallid countenance being agitated with the fear of Bhimasena ;

19—20. And leaving Ghatotkacha alone, they turned back from the field of battle. But the combatants of your army and those of the enemy's host were both untreating ; so there once more ensued, O mighty monarch, a terrible battle, between these high-souled warriors. Mighty car-warriors hurling weapons of various shapes,

21. Rushed at one another and then smote down one another. Thus raged the most dreadful combat capable of inspiring terror into the hearts of the cowards.

22. Horse-soldiers encountered elephant-riders and foot-soldiers fought with the car-warriors ; challenging one another in battle they rushed against one another, O king.

23. In consequence of this onslaught of cars, horses, elephants, and infantry, a thick and impenetrable cloud of dust appeared, being raised by the car-wheels and tread of the foot-soldier.

24. Then the field of battle, O king, was shrouded by a thick cloud of dust of the reddish hue of smoke; and none was able to distingush between his friend and his foe.

25. Father could not distinguish his son nor the son his father, in that horripilating-carnage where no consideration was of any avail.

26. The clashing of weapons and the yells of men, O foremost of the Bharatas, created a fierce din, that resembled the roar of demons themselves.

27. On the field of battle a river started up into existence, of which the currents, were constituted by the gore of elephants, horses,

and men, and the weeds and moss by the hair (of the warriors).

28. A deafening noise, like that produced by a shower of stones, was heard there, as the heads of the combatants fell on the field severed from their trunks.

29. The earth was covered with headless trunks with mutilated elephants and with horses with limbs mangled and hacked to pieces.

30. Mighty car-warriors, putting forth all their energies, rushed to smite down one another, hurling at the same time weapons of various kinds.

31. Urged on by their riders, encountering one another, horses dashed against one another, and fell down on the field deprived of life.

32. Combatants, with eyes crimsoned in rage, meeting one another, struck one another with their breasts, and thus killed one another.

33. Goaded on by their riders, elephants slew their hostile compeers with the ends of their tusks, in that battle.

34. These elephants decked with fluttering pennons and shedding blood in copious quantities, and bespattered with it, appeared like clouds adorned by forks of lightening.

35. Some of these with bodies mangled with tusk wounds, others with their temples rent by broad-headed shafts, careered all over the field roaring like roaring clouds.

36. Some with their trunks cut in twain, others with their bodies mutilated, fell down in that sanguinary battle, like mountains having their wings cut off.

37. Other huge elephants having their sides opened by their hostile compeers, copiously shed blood like mountains discharging liquified red chalk.

38. Others, slain with lances and pierced with Tomaras, with their riders killed, looked like mountains deprived of their crests.

39. Others, possessed with fury, and inflamed with shedding the temporal juice, and having none to restrain them, began to crush in that battle, horses and cars and soldiers by hundreds.

40. So also horses pierced with lances and darts by cavalry-soldiers, dashed against their assailants, as if agitating all the points of the compass.

41. Car-warriors born in noble families, and reckless of their lives, meeting their hostile compeers, fought on dauntlessly depending on their own excellent strength.

42. Those heroes accomplished in battle, O king, desirous of securing either fame or paradise, smote down one another in that fierce carnage, as if in a Sayambara.

43. When that hair-stirring comba was thus raging, the troops belonging to Dhritarastra's army were generally made to turn back their faces from the field of battle.

Thus ends the ninety-fourth chapter, the fight of Hidimva's son, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. There upon king Duryodhana, seeing his own troops slain, inflamed with wrath, rushed against that subduer of foes namely Bhimasena.

2. Grasping a huge bow effulgent like the thunder-bolt of Indra himself, he covered the son of Pandu with a thick shower of arrows.

3. Fixing on his bow-string a crescent-shaped and exceedingly sharp arrow furnished with wings of down, and inflamed with rage, he burst assunder the bow of Bhimasena.

4. At this opportunity, that mighty car-warrior Duryodhana without the least delay placed on his bow-string another sharp arrow capable of penetrating even through the very mountains.

5. Then that mighty-armed hero, with that arrow struck Bhimasena on the breast. The latter thus pierced deeply, smarting with pain, and licking the corners of his mouth,

6. Cought hold of the staff of his standard decked with gold (for support). Thereupon Ghatotkacha seeing Bhimasena thus depressed,

7. Blazed up with rage, like a conflagration capable of consuming everything. The mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host headed by Abhimanyu,

8. Now rushed impetuously at the king uttering their fierce war-cries. Beholding those enraged warriors rush with impetuousity,

9. The son of Bharadwaja spoke these words to the mighty car-warriors of your army :—"Good betide youall ; hie yourselves and strive to rescue the king,

10. Who is now involved in a great predicament and is being sunk into the sea of danger. These irate car-warriors of the Pandava army, these fierce bow-men,

11. Placing Bhimasena at their head, are rushing at Duryodhana, hurling diverse kinds of weapons, determined to secure success,

12. Roaring out their fierce war-cries and frightening thereby the rulers of earth belonging to our party." Hearing these words of the preceptor, your warriors headed by Somadatta,

13. Rushed against the ranks of the Pandavas. Kripa, Bhurisravas, Salya, the son of Drona, Vivingsati,

14. Chitrasena, Vikarna, the ruler of the Sindhus, Vrihadvala aud the two Avanti princes, both great bow-men, all in a body surruounded the Kuru ruler (for the aiding him).

15. Proceeding only twenty steps, the Pandavas and the Dhartarastras began to stirke one another, out of a desire for slaying one another.

16. The mighty-armed son of Bharadwaja also, having spoken the above words, stretched his mighty bow and afflicted Bhima with twenty-six shafts.

17. Then again that hero of mighty-arms speedily covered him with a shower of arrows, like clouds covering the mountains with rains in the rainy season.

18. But the highly puissant Bhimasena, that fierce bow-man, without the least delay, pierced Drona in return in his left side with ten shafts of great sharpness.

19. Thus deeply pierced and overwhelmed with pain, the preceptor worn out as he was with age, squatted down on the terrace of his chariot being deprived of his consciousness.

20. Beholding him (Drona) highly pained, king Duryodhana himself and the irate son of Drona, both together rushed against Bhimasena.

21. Seeing them both rush against himself like the Destroyer him at the end of a *Yuga*, the mighty-armed Bhimasena speedily took up a mace;

22. And jumping down from his car he stood fixed like the immovable hills, uplifting his heavy mace that resembled the bludgeon of Death himself.

23. Beholding him stand with his uplifted mace like the crested Kailasa mountain, the Kuru king and the son of Drona, united together, rushed against him.

24. Thereupon the highly puissant Bhimasena also rushed with impetuousity against those two foremost of powerful heroes who were rushing unitedly against himself.

25. Beholding the enraged Bhima of terrible expression thus fall upon them, the mighty car-warriors of the Kourava host proceeded to meet him without delay.

26. Headed by the son of Baradwaja, those heroes, out of a desire for slaying Bhimasena, hurled at the latter's breast weapons of diverse descriptions.

27. Thus united together, they sorely pressed that son of Pandu (Bhima) on all sides. Beholding that mighty car-warrior thus involved in a predicament and thus afflicted,

28. The mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host, such as Abhimanyu and others, rushed forward desirous of rescuing him, setting their own dear lives at naught.

29. The heroic ruler of the low countries, that dear-loved friend of Bhima, by name Nila, of complexion blue like the clouds, excited with wrath, rushed at the son of Drona.

30. That fierce bowmen (Nila) ever longed for an encounter with the son of Drona. Now stretching his mighty bow he pierced with many a winged shaft the son of Drona,

31. Just as, O mighty monarch, in the days of yore, Sakra pierced the Danava Viprachchiti, invincible in battle and the terror of the celestials,

32. Who, possessed by rage, struck terror into the three worlds by the display of his energy. Thus pierced by Nila with well-directed shafts,

33. Drona's son, shedding blood profusely, became possessed with wrath; then drawing his wonderful bow whose twang resembled Indra's thunder,

34. That foremost of intelligent heroes resolved to slay Nila in battle. Thereafter fixing on the bowstring broaded-headed shafts, resplendent and variegated by the forger himself,

35. He (Drona's son) slew with these the four horses of Nila and cut down his standard too. With the seventh arrow, he pierced Nila himself on the chest.

36. Thus deeply pierced and sorely pained, Nila squatted down on the terrace of his car. Beholding king Nila, of appearance like a mass of blue clouds, thus confounded,

37. Ghatotkacha excited with wrath and surrounded by his kinsmen, impetuously rushed against Drona's son that ornament of battle.

38. Other inferior Rakshasas invincible in battle also rushed to the fight. Seeing that Rakshasa of dreadful aspect make towards himself,

39. The highly puissant son of Bharadwaja, without the least delay rushed against the former and excited with wrath he slew many Rakshasas of dreadful visage,

40. Who were stationed in the front of in Ghatotkacha ; beholding his own troops turn faces away from the field of battle, in consequence of the shafts shot from the bow of Drona,

41. The huge-bodied Gatotkacha, the son of Bhimasena became wrought up with rage, and brought into existence an awful and terrible illusion.

42. Then therewith that ruler of the Rakshasas of potent illusive powers, confounded in battle Drona's son. Then all your warriors were repulsed through the illusion of the Rakshasa.

43. They (your warriors) saw one another mangled and lying on the surface of the battle field, writhing in convulsions, distressed and weltering in their own blood.

44. Drona, Duryodhana, Salya Aswathaman, and other foremost bowmen of the Kourava host were seen to fly away from the field of battle.

45. All the car-warriors appeared to be smashed, the kings felled, the horses and cavalry hacked to pieces by thousands.

46. Beholding this (illusive) scene your warriors, O king, ran towards the encampments, although myself and Devavrata cried at the top of our voice saying, O king,

47. "Go on fighting, fly not, this illusion has been set forth by Ghatotkacha ?" But confounded as they were, they did not stop ;

48. They also did not believe the words we uttered, as they were inspired with terror. Beholding them fly, the Pandavas winning victory,

49. Began to shout their war-cries, being joined by Ghatotkacha himself. They uttered continued yells of triumph, which became mixed with the blare of conchs and sound of drums.

50. Thus it was that your whole army was broken and routed in all directions by the wicked-souled son of Hidimva at the time when the sun set.

Thus ends the ninety-fifth chapter, the display of illussion by Hidimva's son, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhishma Parva,

---

CHAPTER XCVI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that dreadful battle was over, king Duryodhana, approaching the son of Ganga, and saluting him with humility,

2. Began to describe everything that had taken place, namely, the victory won by Ghatotkacha, and the defeat he himself has suffered.

3. That invincible warrior, O king, then spoke these words, sighing repeatedly and addressing the grandsire of the Kurus namely Bhisma.

4. "Just as the son of Vasudeva has been relied upon by the foe, so relying upon yourself, I have commenced this dreadful war with the Pandavas, O lord.

5. My troops counting eleven Aukshahini in number, as also my own self, O grinder of foes, are all under your command.

9. Though thus supported, yet, O foremost of the Bharatas, I have been worsted in battle by the Pandava combatants headed by Bhimasena and dependent on Ghatotkacha.

7. This it is that is corroding my limbs like fire burning a withered tree. Therefore, O you of eminent parts, O slayer of foes, through your grace, I wish,

8. O gransire, to slay that worst of Rakshasas myself, mainly depending upon your invincible self. It behoves you to see that my wish is fulfilled."

9. Hearing, O foremost of the Bharatas, these words of the king, Bhisma the son of Santanu addressed these words to Duryodhana.

10, "Hear, O king the words that I shall speak to you, O scion of the Kuru race, about how you should conduct yourself, O grinder of foes.

11. O sire, O slayer of foes, you should ever carefully protect yourself in battle, under all circumstances. O sinless one, you should always engage with the very virtuous king Yudhisthira,

12. Or with Arjuna or with Bhimasena or with the twins Nakula and Sahadeva. Keeping in view the duty of a king, a king strikes another royal compeer.

13. Myself, Drona, Kripa, the son of Drona, Kritavarman of the Satwata race, Salya, Somadatta's son, the might car-warrior Vikarna,

14. Your heroic brothers headed by Dussasana,—we shall all fight with that highly puissant Rakshasa for your sake.

15—17. Or if you bear implacable hatred for that fierce prince of Rakshasas, let this ruler of earth namely Bhagadtta, who is equal to Indra in battle, encounter in battle that evil-minded one." Having thus addressed the king, Bhimsa eloquent in speech thus spoke to Bhagadatta even before that foremost of kings:—"Proceed, O mighty monarch, without delay, against the son of Hidimva, invincible in battle.

18. Putting forth all your energies do you resist that Rakshasa of cruel deeds before the eyes of these bowmen, even as Indra risisted Taraka in days gone by.

19. Your weapons are of celestial make and O represser of your foes, your prowess is divine. And before this, you have had encounters with many a host of Asuras.

20. O foremost of kings, you are a match for the Rakshasa in this fierce battle; and supported by your own divisions, O king, do you slay that foremost of Rakshasas."

21. Hearing these words of Bhisma the generalissimo of the Kouravas, Bhagadatta rushed towards the enemy uttering his war cries.

22. Beholding him rush like a mass of roaring clouds, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host inflamed with wrath advanced with impetuousity.

23. Bhimasena, Abhimanyu, the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, the sons of Drupadi, Satyadhriti, Kshatradeva, and O sire,

24. Vasudeva, the ruler of the Chedis, the ruler of the Dasarnas,—all these warriors assaulted Bhagadatta. Bhagadatta also mounted on his elephant Supratika, charged these heroes.

25. Then ensued a dreadful combat of awful aspect, between the Pandava hosts and Bhagadatta's divisions, increasing the population of Death's domain.

26. Fleet arrows charged with energy and shot by car-warriors, O mighty monarch, began to fall on elephants and chariots.

27. Huge-elephants with rent temples and goaded on by their riders, approached and fell upon one another dauntlessly.

28. Excited to the highest pitch of fury and blind with shedding the temporal juice, those elephants approaching one another ripped one another open with the point of their tusks resembling hard bludgeons.

29. Horses, graced with long-flowing tails and mounted by lancers, urged on by their riders, vehemently dashed against one another totally undaunted.

30. Foot-soldiers struck by orther foot-soldiers with lances and darts, fell down on the ground by hundreds and thousands.

31. Car-warriors riding on their cars, O king, having slain many heroes with *Karnis* (barbed arrows) *Nalikas* (fire-arms) and shafts to began to vociferate their war-cries.

32. When that hair-stirring combat was thus raging, the fierce bowmen Bhagadatta assailed Bhimasena,

33. On his elephant with rent temples and with the temporal juice trickling down in seven distinct lines like so manay rillets flowing down the mountain breast.

34. That sinless one advanced on the neck of Supratika, scattering thousands of arrows, like the almighty Purandara riding on the Airavata.

35. That ruler of men afflicted Bhima with an arrowy down-pour, like clouds afflicting the mountains with a down-pour of rain at the end of the summer.

36. Then that fierce bowman Bhimasena excited with rage, slew with his showers of arrows those warriors numbering more than hundred who were engaged in protecting Bhagadattas feet.

37. Seeing them slain, the highly powerful Bhagadatta, inflamed with wrath, goaded his foremost elephant towards the chariot of Bhimasena.

38. Like an arrow shot from the bowstring, that elephant, O subduer of foes, directed by Bhagadatta, impetuously rushed against Bhimasena.

39. Beholding that elephant thus advance furiously, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host headed by Bhima assaulted it.

40. The five Kekaya brothers, Abhimanyu the sons of Draupadi, the heroic ruler of the Dasarhas, Kshatradeva, and O sire,

41. The ruler of the Chedis, and Chitraketu, all these powerful warriors wrought up with wrath, displaying their excellent weapons of celestial make,

42—44. Surrounded that single elephant on all sides. That huge elephant pierced with many shafts and shedding blood profusely, appeared beautiful like the king of mountains decked with red chalk solution. The ruler of the Dasarhas, mounted on an elephant prodigious like a mountain, dashed against the elephant of Bhagadatta. Beholding that elephant rush towards himself that foremost of elephants,

45. Namely Supratika withstood it like the banks of the ocean resisting its surging waves. Beholding the excellent elephant of

the high-souled ruler of Dasarhà thus checked,

46. The troops of the Pandavas, all applauded Bhagadatta saying 'excellent' 'excellent' Thereupon the ruler of the Pragjyotisas waxing wrath, with fourteen lances,

47—48. Struck, O foremost of men, the elephant of the Dasarha king ; these lances penetrating the fine armour and caparisons of gold covering the elephant's body, entered into it like snakes entering into their holes on ant-hills. That elephant, O foremost of the Bharatas, thus deeply pierced and extremely pained,

49. With its fury quenched, turned back with great vehemence ; then that elephant uttering dreadful roars of agony ran,

50. Crushing the army to which it belonged, like the strong wind crushing the trees with its velocity. When that elephant of the Dasarha king was defeated, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host,

51. Uttering their war cries aloud, proceeded for battle. Then placing Bhima at their head they assailed Bhagadatta,

52—53. Shooting arrows and weapons of various descriptions and shapes. Thereupon hearing the war-cries of those advancing and irate warriors longing for vengance, that fierce bowman Bhagadatta dauntless through rage, goaded his own elephant.

54. That foremost of elephants, thus urged on by the press and stroke of the toe and the hook, in that battle became destructive like the fire of dissolution.

55. Then, O king, the elephant careered, hither and thither, and crushed divisions of cars and elephants and horses mounted by cavalry-soldiers.

56. It also crushed foot-soldiers by hundreds and by thousands. Thus agitated by it, that mighty army of the Pandavas,

57. Contracted, O monarch, like a piece of hide held over a blazing fire. Beholding his own army thus routed by the highly intelligent Bhagadatta,

58. Ghatotkacha excited to the highest pitch of fury, rushed against the former. That being of fierce aspect, with countenance and eyes flashing fire,

59. Burning with rage, assuming a dreadful form, took up a resplendent trident capable of rending even the mountains.

60. Then that highly powerful hero desirous of slaying the elephant, hurled the lance, emitting scintillations of fire from all sides.

61. Beholding that lance swiftly course towards the elephant, the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, sped a dreadful crescent-shaped arrow of exceeding sharpness and effulgence.

62. Then with that arrow, that hero endued with energy, cut off the fierce trident ; and that trident of golden effulgence then fell down on the ground divided in twain,

63. Like the mighty thunderbolt of Indra discharged by him, dropping through the skies. Then beholding that trident fallen and severed in twain, that ruler of the earth Bhagadatta,

64. Took up a lance furnished with a golden staff and blazing like the flames of fire, and then hurled it at the Rakshasa saying 'Stay' 'Stay.'

65. Beholding it course through the air like the thunderbolt itself, the Rakshasa lightly jumped up and caught hold of it uttering fierce war-cries.

66. Then before the very eyes of the Pragjyotisas, O Bharata, he broke it into pieces placing it on his thighs. This feat was indeed wonderful.

67. Beholding that mighty feat achieved by the puisssant Rakshasa, the celestials in the heavens, along with the Gandharvas and the sages were amazed.

68. The Pandavas also, O mighty monarch, headed by Bhimasena, filled the earth with their shouts of 'well-done' 'well-done.'

69. Hearing the roars of the delighted Pandavas of high soul, the highly powerful Bhagadatta that fierce bowman was unable to brook them.

70. Then stretching his mighty bow equal to the thunderbolt of Indra in effulgence, he assailed with vehemence the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas,

71. Discharging, as he advanced, resplendent darts of exceeding sharpness and of the effulgence of fire. He pierced Bhima with one shaft and the Rakshasas with nine,

72. Abhimanyu with three, and the Kekayas with five. Then with a shaft of straight joints, shot from his bow drawn to its fullest length,

73. He pierced in that battle the right arm of Kshatradeva, and suddenly the latter's excellent bow with shafts fixed on the string fell down, loosend from the grasp.

74. Then again he pierced the five sons of Droupadi with five shafts, and inflamed with rage he slew the chargers of Bhimasena.

75. Then with three shafts he cut down Bhima's standard bearing the device of the lion, and with another three winged shafts he penetrated the latter's charioteer.

76, The charioteer Visoka thus deeply pierced and extremely pained by Bhagadatta in the conflict, squatted down on the terrace of the car, O foremost of the Bharatas.

77. Then O mighty monarch, that foremost of car-warriors Bhima, thus deprived of the use of his car, quickly leapt off from his excellent chariot wirh a mace in hand.

78. Beholding him with the uplifted mace resemble a crested mountain, your troops, O Bharata, were seized with panic.

76. At this juncture, O king, that son of Pandu, whose charioteer is Krishna, came destroying his foes right and left,

80. To that part of the field where those two foremost of the men, those two mighty car-warriors, viz Bhimasena and Ghatotkacha, father and son, were engaged with the ruler of the Pragyotisas.

81. Beholding his brothers, all mighty car-warriors, thus engaged in battle, that son of Pandu (Arjuna), O foremost of the Bharatas, joined the fight scattering his shafts on all sides.

82. Then that mighty car-warrior namely Duryodhana himself in all haste urged on his army teeming with chariots and elephants.

83. Thereupon that son of Pandu owning white steeds, rushed with velocity against the mighty army of the Kouravas that was speedily advancing.

84, Then in that combat, O Bharata, Bhagadatta also, crushing the ranks of the Pandavas with that elephant of his, assailed Yudhisthira himself.

85. Thereat, O sire, a fierce battle commenced between Bhagadatta on one side, and the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, and the Kekayas on the other, all with weapons upraised.

86. In the course of that combat, Bhimsena apprised Kesava and Arjuna of the slaughter of Iravat as it had happened.

Thus ends the ninety-sixth chapter, the prowess of Bhagadatta, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCVII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Hearing his son Iravat slain, Dhananjaya, overwhelmed with grief and sighing like a snake,

2—3. Spoke, O king, these words addressing the son of Vasudeva, even on the field of battle. "Surely the high-minded Vidura of great wisdom divined beforehand this dreadful destruction of the Kurus and the Pandavas. It was therefore that he forbade king Dhritarastra.

4. Innumerable other heroes, O slayer of Madhu, have been slain by ourselves and the Kouravas in this sanguinary war.

5. For the sake of wealth, O foremost of men, vile deeds are being perpetrated. Fie on that wealth for the sake of which this destruction of kinsmen is being perpetrated.

6, Death is preferable, for him who has no wealth, to the acquistion of wealth by the slaughter of his kins-men. What good O Krishna, shall we reap, slaughtering these our kinsmen assembled together.

7. In consequence of the faults of Duryodhana and those of Sakuni the son of Suvala, and in consequence of the wicked counsels of Karna, the Kshatriyas are suffering destruction.

8. Now, O slayer of Madhu, do I realise what a great act of piety, O mighty-armed, one, did the king (Yudhisthira) do by begging of Suyodhana,

9. Either half of the kingdom or else five villages only. But the pervert Duryodhana turned deaf ears to our solicitations. Beholding these Kshatriyas, all brave warriors, prostrate on the surface of the earth.

10. I can not but reproach myself. Fie fie on the life of a Kshatriya. These Kshatriyas may consider me incapable of battling any longer,

11. But, O slayer of Madhu, this battle with my kinsmen does not at all please me. However, swiftly drive the horses towards the army of the sons of Dhritarastra.

12. I shall cross this ocean of battle incapable of being crossed by the strength of my arms. Surely, O Madhava, this is not the time for the display of feminine sentiments."

13. Thus spoken to by the son of Pritha, that slayer of hostile heroes Kesava, urged on those cream-coloured steeds endued with the fleetness of the wind.

14. Thereupon a deafening uproar was set up by your troops, O Bharata, like that of the ocean lashed into fury by the wind in the day of the new moon or the full moon.

15. Then in the afternoon, O mighty monarch, the battle that was fought between Bhisma and the Pandavas, resembled in its din the rumble of the rain cloud Parjanya.

16. Then your sons, O king, surrounding Drona like the Vasus encircling Vasava, assailed Bhimasena.

17. Thereafter Bhisma the son of Santanu, Kripa the foremost of car-warriors, Bhagadatta and Susarman rushed against Dhananjaya.

18. The son of Hridika and Valhika both assailed Satyaki. King Amvastaka encountered Abhimanyu.

19. The rest of the warriors, O mighty monarch, engaged with other great car-warriors of the hostile party. Then commenced an awful engagement whose aspect was indeed terrible.

20. Bhimasena beholding your sons, O ruler of men, in battle, blazed forth in anger like the sacrificial fire blazing forth with clarified butter.

21. Your sons, O king, covered that son of Kunti with a shower of arrows like clouds covering a mountain with torrents of rain during the rainy season.

22. Then, O ruler of men, when thus covered with arrows by your sons, that hero Bhima, agile as a tiger, began to lick the corners of his mouth.

23. Thereafter, O Bharata, he felled Vyudoraska with a sharp arrow furnished with a head like that of a horse-shoe; and the latter was deprived of his life.

24. Then again with an well-tempered and well-sharpened broad-headed shaft, he felled Kundalin, like a lion felling a small deer.

25. Then Bhima fixed on his bow-string arrows well-tempered and of exceeding sharpness. Getting near your sons, O sire, he let these arrows go with great lightness and with good aim.

26. These arrows sped by that firm bowman Bhimasena began to overthrow your sons, all mighty car-warriors, from their seats.

27. Bhima felled Anaghristti, Kunaveda, Vairata, Deerghalochana, Deerghavahu and Kanadhwaja.

28. When falling, these heroes, O scion of the Bharata race, appeared beautiful like blossoming mango trees falling down in the spring.

29. Then considering the highly puissant Bhima to be the Destroyer incarnate, the rest of your sons, O ruler of men fled with haste.

30. Then Drona covered that hero (Bhima) who had been consuming your sons, with a shower of shafts, like showers of rain covering the mountain breast.

31. Then indeed we beheld the wonderful proewss of the son of Kunti, in as much as, though opposed by Drona himself, he succeeded in slaughtering your sons.

32. Just as a heifer bears the shower of rain falling from the skies, so did Bhima bear the arrowy downpour discharged by Drona, like one undaunted.

33. Really, O mighty monarch, Vrikodara achieved marvellous feats, in as much as he succeeded in slaying your sons and opposing Drona simultaneously.

34. Then the elder brother of Arjuna played amidst your heroic sons like, O monarch, a powerful tiger roving amidst a herd of deer.

35. Just a wolf, remaining inside a herd of cattle, chases and terrifies them, so, in that battle, did Vrikodara crush and frighten your sons.

36. The son of Ganga, Bhagadatta, the mighty car-warrior Gotami's son, all opposed in battle Arjuna himself the son of Pandu.

37. Then that *Atiratha* checking the enemies' weapons with his own weapons, despatched many mighty heroes of the hostile rank to the regions of Death.

38. Then Abhimanyu with his shafts, deprived that foremost of car-warriors, viz king Amvasta of world-wide fame, of his car.

39. Deprived of his car and wounded by the illustrious son of Subhadra, he quickly jumped down from his car in shame and O lord of men.

40. Hurled his sword at the high-souled son of Subhadra. Thereafter that highly-powerful hero ascended the car of the son of Hridika.

41. Then that slayer of hostile hero, namely Abhimanyu, versed in all the modes of warfare, beholding the swiftly advancing sword, evaded its strake by the agility of his movements.

42. Beholding the sword thus baffled by the son of Subhadra, in that battle, the troops, O ruler of men, set up an uproar crying 'well-done' 'well-done.'

43. Other warriors of the Pandava host headed by Dhrishtadyumna himself, engaged with your warriors ; so also your warriors fought against the troops of the Pandavas.

44. Then when they were thus slaughtering one another mercilessly and achieving feats difficult of being accomplished, fierce was the battle that raged between your and their warriors.

45. In that battle the warriors, O sire, dragging one another by the hair, fought on striking one another with their finger-nails, their teeth, their blows and thighs,

46. Their sabres and palms and sinewy arms. Availing themselves of one another's weaknesses, they despatched one another to the regions of Death.

47. Father slew son and son slew father. In that battle men fought on making the best use of all their limbs.

48. Beautiful bows with their staves decked with gold, O Bharata, loosened from the hold of slain warriors, and precious ornaments,

49. And whetted shafts furnished with golden or argentine wings and cleansed with oil and resembling snakes that have recently cast of their slough, shone on the field (as they lay scattered thereon).

50. Swords with hilts made of ivory and decked with gold, and bucklers, belonging to bowmen, embossed with gold, lay scattered on the field, loosened from the grasp of their wielders.

51. Lances and darts and battle-axes, and javelins, all decked with gold and of golden hue,

52. And, O sire, beautiful coats of mail, heavy and light bludgeons, maces, battle-axes and small arrows,

53. And diverse-sharped, caparisons for elephants, and *chamaras* and fans and numerous bows variegated and decorated with gold, lay scattered on the field.

54. Men lying on the field with diverse weapons in grasp looked as if alive, though those mighty car-warriors were all deprived of the vital breaths.

55. With their bodies crushed with strokes of maces, their heads smashed with the blows of bludgeons, and thoroughly mangled by the cars and elephants and steed, men lay on the field.

56. Then the surface of the earth covered over with carcasses and corpses of of men and elephants and steeds, appeared, O king, as if covered with hillocks.

57.—58 The field of battle was strewn over with fallen darts, swords, arrows, lances, sabres, axes, piked stakes, iron crows, battle-axes, clubs and bludgeons, and *Sataghnees* and bodies mutilated with weapons.

59. O slayer of enemies, the earth covered with some warriors silent in death, with others weltering in their blood and with some again moaning feebly, became highly beautiful.

60—61. O Bharata, the field of battle assumed a beautiful aspect, being strewn over with arms of mighty warriors smeared with sandal-paste and adorned with leathern fences and bracelets, as also with well-shaped thighs resembling the trunks of elephants, and with severed heads of large-eyed combatants, graced with gems and ear-rings.

62. Covered over with blood-soiled armours and golden ornaments, the field of battle appeared most beautiful as if scattered over with fires of mild flames.

63. With ornaments of various kinds loosened from their places, with bows fallen about, with shafts of golden wings lying about,

64. With many broken cars decked with rows of bells, with numerous slain steeds bespattered with gore and their tongues protruding,

65. With car-bottoms, and standards, quivers, pennons, huge milk-white conchs, belonging to mighty warriors,

66. With trunkless elephants, scattered on the field, the earth appeared charming like a damsel adorned with various sorts of ornaments.

67—68. Then also with other elephants pierced with lances and pained to the extreme, and repeatedly uttering shrieks of agony with their trunks, the field of battle appeared beautiful as if covered with moving mountains. With blankets of various colours, and caparisons of elephants,

69. With well-shaped hooks having their handles decked with lapises, with bells of huge elephants scattered here and there,

70. With clean housings of wonderful workmanship, with the skins of *Ranku* deer, with beautiful neck-laces and golden girths,

71. With many broken implements of war, with golden darts, with many gold-fringed breast-plates of steeds soiled with dust,

72. With severed arms of horse-soldiers, adorned with bracelets and scattered about, with well-polished lances of keen-points and with resplendent swords,

73. With variegated turbans fallen off and lying about, with wonderful crescent-shaped arrows of golden effulgence,

74. With housings of steeds, with skins of *Ranku* deer, torn and soiled, with beautiful and precious gems that had graced the turbans of the kings,

75. With umbrellas, and *chamaras* and fans scattered about, with moon-like or lotus-like faces of warriors conspicuous with charming ear-rings,

76. And graced with well-clipped beards, and beautified, O king, with *Kundalas* of golden effulgence,

77. The earth looked like the sky bespangled with the stars and the planets. Thus, O Bharata, the two mighty armies crushed one another,

78. Encountering one another in battle. When, O Bharata, the two armies were crushed and exhausted and completely broken,

79. The hideous pall of night fell over the earth and the fight could no longer be discerned. Then the Kurus and the Pandavas withdrew their forces from the field.

80. When that hideous night, fierce and dreadful, set in, both the Kurus and the Pandavas, having withdrawn their forces, entered their encampments and retired to their respective tents.

Thus ends the ninety-seventh chapter, the withdrawal of the forces in the eighth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCVIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then king Duryodhana, Sakuni the son of Suvala, your son Dussasana and the invincible son of Suta,

2. These assembled together, O monarch, began to consult as to 'how could the sons of Pandu with their partisans be conquered in battle.'

3. Thereafter king Duryodhana, addressing the son of Suta and the highly powerful son of Suvala, spoke to all his counsellors thus :—

4. "Even Drona, Bhisma, Kripa, Salya, and the son of Somadatta cannot withstand the sons of Pritha in battle. I know not what the cause may be.

5. Thus unslain, they (the Pandavas) are every day reducing my troops in great number. Therefore, O Karna, I am becoming weaker in strength, and my store of weapons is also being exhausted.

6. I am deceived by the warlike Pandavas, who cannot even be slain by the celestials themselves. I am doubtful of the means as to how to smite them down in battle." To these words of the ruler of men, O king, Suta's son replied :—

Karna said :—

7. "Grieve not, O foremost of the Bharatas, I will compass your pleasure. Let Bhisma the son of Santanu be speedily withdrawn from the battle.

8. When, O scion of the Bharata race, the son of Ganga shall cease to fight, and when he shall lay aside his weapons, I will slay the sons of Pritha together with all the Somakas,

9. In the battle even before the eyes of Bhisma himself. O king, I pledge my troth for this. Bhisma always uses the Pandavas liniently.

10. Bhisma also is incapable of conquering these mighty-car-warriors (the Pandavas) in battle. Moreover Bhisma is proud in battle and is very fond of battle.

11. How could he, O sire, then conquer the Pandavas who have mustered a mighty force. Therefore, without the least delay, hying yourself towards the tent of Bhisma,

12. Persuade that venerable and old hero to lay aside his weapons. Thus when Bhisma will lay aside his weapons, you shall see the Pandavas slain,

13. With all their kinsmen and allies, by my single self in battle"

Sanjaya said :—

Thus spoken to by Karna, your son Duryodhana,

14—15. Then said these words addressing his brother Dussasana :—'Look to it, O Dussasana, that all my retinue may without delay be dressed and ready'. Having thus spoken, O king, to Dussasana, that ruler of men addressed Karna saying :

16. "Having persuaded that foremost of men, Bhisma, to withdraw himself from the battle, I shall soon come back to you, O repressor of foes.

17. When Bhisma will be withdrawn from the fight, you shall slay the Pandavas

in battle." Then, O ruler of men, your son, without any more loss of time, set out,

18—19. Accompained by his brothers, and looking like Indra surrounded by the celestials. Thereafter, his brother Dussasana, helped that foremost of kings equal to a tiger in strength, to mount on his steed. Decked with bracelets, with a diadem on his head, and, O king, his arms graced with other ornaments,

20—22. That son of yours, O monarch, shone brightly as he went towards Bhisma's tent. Smeared with fragrant sandal paste of the colour of *vandi* flowers and of the effulgence of gold, and vested in dirtless raiments, and proceeding with the playful gait of the lion, O king, Duryodhana appeared beautiful like the bright-rayed orb of day in the skies. As that foremost of men (Duryodhana) proceeded towards the tent of Bhisma,

23. Numerous fierce bowmen of world-wide fame with bows in hand, as also his brothers all mighty bowmen, followed him like the celestials following Vasava.

24. Mounted on other horses, elephants and chariots, other foremost of men, O Bharata, surrounded him on all sides.

25. Many of his friends bearing weapons came there for protecting the king, and they accompained him like the celestials accompanying Indra in heaven.

26. Thus honoured by the Kurus, that highly puissant king of the Kurus repaired to the son of Ganga of illustrious fame,

27—28. Followed and surrounded by his uterine brothers, he proceeded, raising his right arm sinewy like the trunk of the elephant and capable of crushing all his foes, and therewith accepting the homages offered by men on all sides with their raised and folded palms.

29. He heard sweet words uttered by the assembled inhabitants of various countries. That illustrious one was applauded and eulogised by the bards and minstrels.

30—31. That lord paramount of all men honoured all these men in return. Many high-souled persons then sorrounded him on all sides with golden lamps, lighted and fed with fragrant oil. Thus surrounded by those lighted lamps made of gold, king Duryodhana,

32. Shone resplendent like the moon surrounded by blazing mighty planets. Then attendants, graced with golden turbans, and bearing canes and *Jharjharas* in their hands,

33. Gradually cleared the crowd that surrounded the king on all sides. Thereafter, the king, reaching the beautiful tent of Bhisma,

34. And then descending from his horse, that ruler of men approached Bhisma. Thereafter doing obeisance to Bhisma, he seated himself on a beautiful seat,

35. Made of gold, of exquisite workmanship and overspread with an excellent coverlet. Then he thus spoke to Bhisma, with his palms folded, his voice choked in grief and his eyes bathed in tears.

36. "Relying upon you, O slayer of foes, we are even capable of vanquishing in battle the celestials and the Asuras united together, with Indra at their head,

37. What to speak of the sons of *Pandu* though they may be warlike and supported by their friends, allies, and kinsmen. Therefore, O son of Ganga, O lord, it behoves you to be merciful on me.

38. Do you slay the heroic sons of Pandu like the great Indra slaying the Danavas. 'O monarch, I shall slaughter all the Somakas,

39. The Panchalas, the Kekayas, along with the Karushas, O Bharata.' These were your words to me, verify them by slaying the assembled sons of Pritha,

40. As also the Somakas, all fierce bowmen. Prove, O Bharata, the truth of your words. But if out of mercy, or out of your hatred, O lord,

41. For my unfortunate self, you are inclined to spare the sons of Pandu, then permit Karna, that ornament of battle, to join the fight.

42. He will conquer the sons of Pirtha together with all their friends, allies and kinsmen." Having thus spoken, your royal son Duryodhana stopped, without saying no other word to Bhisma of dreadful prowess.

Thus ends the ninety-eighth chapter, the colloquy between Bhisma and Durycdhana, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER XCIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA) :—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereupon the high-souled Bhisma, thus deeply pierced by the dagger-like words of your son and overwhelmed with grief, spoke not even a single disagreeable word to your son.

2. Thus mutilated with those 'wordy daggers' and sighing like a snake, and meditating for a while, and possessed with rage and sorrow,

3. And raising, out of wrath, his two eyes, as if, O Bharata, desirous of consuming the universe with the celestials, the Gandharvas, and the Asuras, that foremost of those learned in the ways of the world (viz Bhisma),

4. Coolly addressed these words to your son:—"Why, O Duryodhana, are you piercing me with these harrowing words of yours,

5. Me who am ever endeavouring, to the best of my abilities, to accomplish what will be for your benefit, me who am ready to lay down my very life in battle, for doing good to you?

6. Is not this the sufficient indication (of his invincibility) that heroic son of Pandu (Arjuna), gratified Agni by allowing it to consume the Khandava forest, after having vanquished his opponents in battle?

7. When, O mighty-armed hero, that son of Pandu released, with force, you captured by the Gandharvas, that indeed is indication enough (of his prowess.)

8. On that occasion, when all your uterine brothers of great heroism, as also, O lord, Radha's son of Suta race had fled forsaking you, the rescue effected by Arjuna is indeed indication enough of his prowess.

9. That in the kingdom of Virata, single-handed, he encontered our assembled host is indication enough.

10. That vanquishing the wrathful Drona and myself in battle, he succeeded in taking off our raiments, is indication enough.

11. That he conquered the great bowman, the son of Drona, as also the son of Saradwata on the occasion of the capture of Virata's kine, is indeed indication enough.

12. That conquering Karna ever bragging of his manliness, he gave his robes to Uttara is a sufficient indication.

13. That the son of Pritha vanquished in battle the Nivatakavacha brothers difficult of vanquishment by Indra himself is indication enough of his valour.

14. What man is capable of conquering the mighty son of Pandu, who is protected by the Protector of the worlds, the wielder of the conch, discus and the mace divine.

15. The son of Vasudeva is of infinite prowess, and is the Destroyer of this creation. He is the Lord of all, the God of Gods, the Supreme Soul and Eternal.

16. Diversely, O king, has He been described by Narada and other illustrious sages. But through your folly, O Suyodhana, you do not seem to recognise what you should do and what you should not.

17. A man on the brink of death sees everything to be made of gold; so also, O son of Gandhari, you see everything to be invested with a yellow hue.

18. You have yourself sowed implacable enmity between yourself on the one side and the Pandavas and Srinjayas on the other. Let us now see you fight with them in battle. Display your manliness.

19. I, however, O foremost of men, shall slay the assembled Panchalas and Somakas excepting only Sikhandin.

20. Either slain by them in battle, I shall go to the mansion of Death or slaying them I shall afford delight to you.

21. In the palace of Drupada, Sikhandin was first born as a woman; then through the virtue of a boon he became a male being. This one is the Sikhandini of old.

22. Even if I were to loose my life, O Bharata, I shall not slay him. This one is the same Sikhandini whom the creator made a female.

23. Pass the night in tranquil sleep, O son of Gandhari; tomorrow I shall fight a terrible fight, of which men shall speak so long as the earth will endure."

24. Thus spoken to, your son, O ruler of men, came out and saluting the reverend signor, with his head, he (your son) repaired to his own tent.

25. Thereafter the king, reaching his own tent, and ordering his illustrious officers to retire, that destroyer of foes entered his own camp.

26. There in his tent that ruler of men passed the night. When the night had passed away, the king, rising at the break of day,

27. Ordered, his royal warriors saying:—'Arrange the forces in battle-order. To-day, waxing irascible in battle, Bhisma shall slay the Somakas.'

28. Having heard those copious lamentation of Duryodhana in the night, and regarding them, O king, as commands to himself,

29. The son of Santanu was greatly depressed; and he censured the life of dependency and reflected for a long time, desirous of encountering Arjuna in battle.

30. Coming to know from outward expressions what the son of Ganga had been thinking of, Duryodhana, O mighty monarch ordered Dussasana saying:—

31. "O Dussasana, without delay draw up our chariots for protecting Bhisma. Urge to battle all our two and twenty divisions.

32. Even that for which we have been longing all these years, have now come to pass, viz, the slaughter of the Pandavas with all their troops and the acquisition of the kingdom by ourselves.

33. Therefore, I now consider our highest duty to be the protection of Bhisma. Protected and assisted by us, he will slay the Parthas in battle.

34. That pure-souled one had said :— 'I will not slay Sikhandin ; for this one was a female before, O king, so I should avoid him in battle.

35. All the world know, that to compass the pleasure of my father, O mighty armed one, I formerly relinquished a swelling kingdom and the company of woman.

36. Therefore, O foremost of men, I will not slay in battle females or those who were females before. I tell this truly.

37. Before the commencement of the battle I have told you,—and you have heard —that this Sikhandin was born formerly as a female and was called Sikhandini.

38. Born as a female child she has come to be a man. If now I am to fight with him I will sped my shafts towards him on no account.

39. I will, O sire, slay all other Kshatriyas in battle, who, desirous of victory to the Pandavas, shall happen to encounter me in the van of the battle.'

40. Thus did that foremost of the Bharatas, accomplished in the vedas, namely the son of Ganga address me. So I consider our foremost duty to be the protection of Ganga's son to the best of our abilities.

41. If left unprotected, in a great forest, even a wolf can slay a lion. We should not allow Ganga's son to be slain by Sikhandin like a lion slain by a wolf.

42. Our maternal uncle Sakuni, Salya, Kripa, Drona, and Vivinsati, should protect, putting forth their best energies, the son of Ganga. If he is duly protected, victory indubitably will be ours."

43. Hearing these words of Duryodhana, all those warriors surrounded on all sides with a host of cars, the son of Ganga.

44. Then your sons, surrounding Ganga's son, proceeded to battle shaking the earth and the heavens and agitating the Pandavas.

45. The mighty car-warriors of the Kurus, clad in armour, and supported by those cars and many elephants, formed themselves in battle-array encircling Bhisma.

46. Protecting that mighty car-warrior Bhisma, they stood like the celestials protecting the wielder of the thunder-bolt in the battle between themselves and the Asuras.

47—49. Thereafter king Duryodhana addressing his brothers once more said :— "Yudhamanyu protects the left wheel of Arjuna's chariot and Uttamaujas protects the right. Thus protected, Arjuna protects Sikhandin. O Dussasana, so arrange, that Sikhandin, thus protected by Arjuna, may not slay Bhisma left unprotected by ourselves." Hearing the words of his brothers, your son Dussasana,

50. Placing Bhisma at the van proceeded to battle, surrounded by the troops. Beholding Bhisma thoroughly encompassed by a host of cars,

51. Arjuna, the foremost of car-warrior said to Dhristadyumna ;—"Let, O Prince of the Panchalas, Sikhandin, that foremost of men be placed face to face with Bhisma. I myself will be his protector, O prince.

Thus ends the ninety-ninth chapter, the colloquy between Duryodhana and Dussasana in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER C.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereafter, Bhisma the son of Santanu advanced with his troops ; and he formed his own troops in the array known as *Sarvatobhadra*.

2. Kripa, Kritavarman, the mighty car-warrior Saivya, Sakuni, the ruler of the Sindhus, and Sudakshina, the ruler of the Kamvojas,

3. All these, O Bharata, accompanied by Bhisma, and along with your sons stationed themselves in the van of all the troops, and in the very head of the Kaurava array.

4. Drona, Bhurisravas, Salya and Bhagadatta, O sire, clad in mail, stood defending the right wing of that array.

5. Aswathaman, Somadatta, and the two princes of Avanti, both mighty car-

warriors, supported by a large division, defended the left wing.

6. King Duryodhana, surrounded by the Trigarttas on all sides, stood, O monarch, O Bharata, in the centre of the array facing the Pandavas.

7. That foremost of car-warriors Alamvusha, and the mighty car-warrior Srutayulha, cased in armour, stood in the rear of the array behind all the troops.

8. Thus, O Bharata, your warriors, having formed this mighty array and cased in armour, appeared as if leaping forward.

9. Then king Yudhisthira and that son of Pandu, Bhimasena, and Nakula and Sahadeva the two sons of Madri,

10. All cased in mail, stood in the van of their array at the front of all the troops. Dhristadyumna, Virata, the mighty car-warrior Satyaki.

11. All these warriors stood prepared for battle, with their mighty divisions desirous of destroyiug the ranks of the enemy. Sikhandin, Arjuna, the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha,

12. The mighty-armed Chekitana, the highly puissant Kuntivoja, all these, O mighty monarch, stood ready for fight, surrounded by their large divisions.

13. That fierce bow-man Abhimanyu, the highly powerful Drupada, and the Kekaya brothers, cased in armour, stood ready for combat.

14. Thus the heroic Pandavas forming this mighty and invincible counterarray, stood, cased in mail, prepared for the ensuing struggle.

15. Your warriors, O king, supported by large divisions and placing Bhisma at their head, charged, putting forth all their energies, the sons of Pritha on the field.

16. So also, O king, the Pandavas headed by Bhimasena himself, and desirous of wining victory, rushed to battle with a view to encounter Bhisma.

17. With their war-cries and confused uproars and the blare of *Krakachas* and sound of drums, cymbals, cow-horns, and *panavas*, and the roars of their elephants.

18. And with fierce yells, the Pandavas rushed to battle. With the sound of our drums, cymbals, conchs, *Dunduvis*,

19. With fierce war-cries, and other kinds of shouts, hastily did we advance to meet the foe,

20. All inflamed with rage. Thereupon ensued an awful and fierce engagement, in which the soldiers, rushing at one another, smote one another down.

21. Then the earth began to tremble with the loud din. Birds uttering fierce shrieks hovered over our heads.

22. The sun that had risen in all splendour, now became bedimmed in effulgence; and dreadful winds began to blow portending ominous results.

23. Fearful jackals yelling terribly roved there, harbingering, O mighty monarch, a great carnage.

24. The points of the compass, O king, appeared to be blazing, and showers of stone began to fall, as also showers of bones mixed copiously with blood.

25. Tears dropped from the eyes of the animals that were all weeping; and O ruler of men, preyed upon by anxiety, they frequently discharged urine.

26. O foremost of the Bharatas, fierce war-cries of heroes were drowned by the terrible uproar uttered by Rakshasas and cannibals.

27. Jackals, vultures, crows and dogs yelling various shrieks, began, O sire, to pounce and swoop down upon the ranks of soldiers.

28. Blazing meteors, striking against the solar disc, began to drop down suddenly on earth portending mighty terrors.

29. Thereafter the two mighty arrays of the Pandavas and the Kouravas, during that dreadful fight, began to shake owing to the tremendous din produced by the blare of conchs and the sound of drums, like forests shaken by the tempest.

30. The din that was produced by the two armies teeming with royal warriors, and horses, which have encountered each other in an inauspicious moment, became deafening, like that made by the ocean when it is lashed into fury by the tempest.

Thus ends the hundredth chapter, the sighting of omens, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereafter the generous hero Abhimanyu borne by excellent steeds of tawny colour, rushed against the mighty divisions of Duryodhana,

2—3. Showering an arrowy downpour like the clouds showering rain. All your warriors, O scion of the Kuru race, were

not able to resist that slayer of foes, that enraged son of Subhadra, who had then, armed with weapons, plunged into the illimitable ocean of the Kaurava army.

4. Arrows capable of crushing the foes, O king, being discharged by him in that battle, conveyed many heroic Kshatriyas to the mansion of the king of the departed.

5. Inflamed with rage, Subhadra's son discharged in that battle fierce arrows that resembled the mace of Death, and blazing snakes of virulent venom.

6. That son of Phalguna, soon shattered into pieces may cars with their rider and many elephant-warriors with the elephants they rode upon.

7. When he was achieving these wonderful feats in battle, the rulers of earth greatly delighted worshipped and applauded the son of Phalguna.

8. That son of Subhadra, O Bharata, scattered your divisions, like the tempest scattering a heap of cotton on all sides in the firmament.

9. Thus scattered by him, your troops, O Bharata, could not find a protector, like elephants sunk deep in mire.

10. Thus routing all your troop, O foremost of men, Abhimanyu stood, O king, like a blazing fire with not a streak of smoke.

11. Your troops, O king, could not bear that slayer of foes, like insects failing to bear a blazing fire, when urged on by Fate.

12. That mighty car-warrior of the Pandava host smiting all his opponents, appeared like Vasava the wielder of the thunder-bolt.

13. His bow of golden stave, moving on all sides, appeared beautiful, O king, like flashes of lightning illumining the rain-clouds.

14. Arrows, well-sharpened and well-tempered, shot from that bow, in that battle, appeared, O king, like flights of bees coming out from a blossoming tree in a forest.

15. When that high-souled son of Subhadra thus careered through the field on his car of golden sides, his foes could not detect any weakness in him.

16. Confounding Kripa, Drona, Drona's son of great prowess, and the ruler of the Sindhus, that fierce bow-man began to move with celerity and grace on the field of battle.

17. When, O Bharata, he thus consumed your ranks, I saw his bow drawn as to resemble a circle and the solar disc of effulgence.

18. Beholding him fall upon them with celerity, the heroic Kshatriyas considered, in consequence of the feats accomplished by him, that the world contained two Phalguna.

19. Thus crushed by him, O monarch, the mighty army of the Bharatas, reeled here and there like a woman intoxicated with drink.

20. Thus shattering the mighty hostile army and causing the mighty car-warriors to tremble, the delighted his forces like Vasava (delighting the gods) having conquered Maya.

21. Crushed by him, your troops in that battle, uttered terrible cries of distress resembling the rumbling of the rain clouds.

22. Then O Bharata, hearing that fierce distressful shriek uttered by your troops, that resembled the roar of the tempest-tossed ocean in a Parva,

23. Your son Duryodhana, O king, addressing Rishyasringa's son said :—'Single-handed the nephew of Krishna, O mighty-armed hero, like a second Phalguna,

24. Is tossing in rage my army like Vritra tossing the celestial host. I do not see any other efficacious medicine for him in battle,

25. Save and except, O foremost of the Rakshasas, your ownself who have seen the end of all learning. So encountering without delay the heroic son of Subhadra, do you slay him in battle.

26. We on the other hand headed by Bhisma and Drona shall slay Arjuna in battle." Thus spoken to that prince of the Rakshasas, possessed of might and prowess,

27. Complying with the commands of your son, speedily rushed to battle uttering deafening roars like those of clouds in the rainy season.

28. In consequence of those fierce roars of his, the mighty army of the Pandavas became agitated in all parts, like the ocean becoming agitated by the tempest.

29. Many were they, O king, who terrified at his roars, fell down on the surface of he earth giving up their dear lives.

30, The nephew of Krishna, filled with delight grasping a bow with arrows fixed on the string, rushed against the Rakshasa, as if dancing in the terrace of his car.

31. Then that Rakshasa, encountering the son of Arjuna, began to crush, in rage, the latter's divisions even, those that were not far from him.

32. Thus slaughtering the vast army of the Pandavas, the Rukshasa rushed at it like Vala rushing at the celestial host.

33. Great was the carnage that was produced, O sire, in the ranks of the enemy, when they were assailed and slaughtered by the Rakshasa of fearful aspect.

34. Then with a thousnnd arrows, the Rakshasa routed the vast army of the Pandavas, displaying the superiority of his prowess.

35. Thus slaughtered by that Rakshasa of dreadful expression, the division of the Pandavas fled in all directions out of great apprehension.

36. Thus crushing the troops in battle like an elephant crushing a lotus, that highly puissant Rakshasa rushed against the sons of Draupadi.

37. Thereat inflamed with rage, the sons of Draupadi, all mighty bowmen accomplished in smitting down the foe, rushed against the Rakshasa, like the five planets rushing at the sun.

38. Then that foremost of the Rakshasas sorely afflicted by those warriors endued with prowess, appeared like the moon afflicted by the five planets at the time of the dreadful dissolution at the end of a Yuga.

39. Then the highly powerful Prativindhya penetrated the Rakshasa with whetted arrows, sharp as battle axes and with keen points.

40. With his armour penetrated by those arrows, that foremost of the Rakshasas appeared beautiful like a mass of rain cloud fringed by the rays of the solar orb.

41. Struck with those arrows furnished with golden wings, the son of Rishyasringa, O king appeared beautiful like an immovable hill with its crest on fire.

42. Thereafter the five brothers, in that fierce conflict, afflicted that foremost of the Rakshasas, with whetted shafts furnished with golden wings.

43. Thus pierced by those dreadful arrows resembling furious snakes, Alamvusha, O king, became infuriated like a prince of elephants.

44. Thus, O monarch, deeply pierced and sorely afflicted by those mighty car-warriors within a few moments, the Rakshasa remained unconscious in a swoon for, a long time.

45. Thereafter regaining consciousness, and swelling through fury to double his dimensions, the Rakshasa cut off the bows, arrows and standards of his adversaries.

46. Then that mighty car-warrior Alamvusha as if dancing on the terrace of his car, wounded every one of the brothers with five shafts each, smiling all the while.

47. Then that highly powerful Rakshasa excited to the highest pitch of fury slew the steeds and charioteers of his high-souled foes, with great activity.

48. Then again, waxing wroth, he pierced them with arrows duly-whetted, of diverse shapes, and discharged by hundreds and thousands.

49. Then that Rakshasa that ranger of the nights, depriving those mighty champions of their cars, rushed against them desirous of slaying them.

50 Seeing his brother thus afflicted by the wicked-souled Rakshasa in battle, the son of Arjuna rushed against the former.

51. Then between them commenced a combat that resembled that between Vritra and Vasava. Your troops as also those of the Pandavas, all mighty car-warriors, then began to look at that fight.

52. Those two highly powerful heroes, O monarch, meeting one another in dreadful fight, both burning with rage and with eyes red in rage,

53. And both resembling the All-destructive fire, began to eye one another. That encounter between them became dreadful and destructive of forces, like that in the days of old, between Sakra and Samvara, during the battle between the gods and the demons.

Thus ends the hundred and first chapter, the commencement of the ninth day's fight, the encounter between Alamvusha and Abhimanyu, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How, O descendant of the Bharata race, did Alamvusha fight with the heroic son of Arjuna who had been slaying mighty car-warriors in battle?

2. How did also the son of Subhadra that slayer of hostile heroes, fight with the son of Rishyasringa? Describe all this in detail to me as it actually happened in the battle.

3—4. What did also Bhima, that foremost of car-warriors and the Rakshasa Ghotatkacha and Nakula and Sahadeva and the car-warriors Satyaki and Dhananjaya do to my troops in that battle? Tell me all this truly, O Sanjaya, for you are well-acquainted with the incidents of the battle.

Sanjaya said :—

5. I shall describe to you, O sire, in detail, the hair-stirring battle that was fought between the prince of the Rakshasas and the son of Subhadra ;

6. As also the prowess that Arjuna and Bhimasena the son of Pandu, and Nakula and Sahadeva did display in battle ;

7. As also how your warriors, headed by Bhisma and Drona, fearlessly achieved many wonderful feats in battle.

8. In that battle uttering fierce roars at Abhimanyu the mighty car-warrior, Alamvusha, repeatedly challenging the former,

9. Rushed at him saying "Stop, Stop." Abhimanyu also, incessantly roaring like a lion,

10—11. Rushed at that mighty bowman, the son of Rishyasringa, that implacable enemy of his father. Thereupon these two foremost of car-warriors, man and Rakshasa, impetuously met one another on their respective cars, like a deity and a Danava. The foremost of the Rakshasas was possessed of illusive powers while Phalguna's son was accomplished in the use of celestial weapons.

12. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, Krishna's nephew, piercing the son of Rishyasringa with three shafts of exceeding sharpness, again pierced him with five.

13. Thereupon Alamvusha, inflamed with rage, pierced Krishna's nephew on the breast with nine swift-coursing shafts, like a guide piercing a huge elephant with the hook.

14. Then that ranger of the night, endued with great lightness, afflicted Arjuna's son in battle, O Bharata, with thousands of arrows.

15. Thereat Abhimanyu, waxing wroth, with nine straight-knotted and whetted shafts, pierced that foremost of the Rakshasas on his broad chest.

16. Those shafts, then piercing through his body, penetrated into his very vitals. His body mangled with those shafts, the foremost of the Rakshasas appeared beautiful,

17. Like a mountain overgrown with blossoming *Kinsuka* trees. Struck with those arrows furnished with golden wings, that highly powerful,

18. And foremost Rakshasa, appeared beautiful like a mountain on fire. Thereupon, O monarch, the vindictive son of Rishyasringa, waxing wroth,

19. Pierced, with winged shafts, that nephew of Krishna, who resembled the great Indra himself. Those sharp arrows, resembling the rod of Death, discharged by the Rakshasa,

20. Piercing through Abhimanayu, penetrated the surface of the earth. So also, gold-decked arrows shot by the son of Arjuna,

21. Piercing Alamvusha entered the earth. Then the son of Subhadra with his straight shafts,

22. Compelled the Rakshasa to turn his face away from the field, like Sakra repulsing Maya in the great battle between the celestials and the Asuras. Thus repulsed and afflicted by the foe in battle, the Rakshasa,

23. That afflicter of enemies, created a veil of impenetrable darkness through his illusive prowess. Then, O ruler of men, every body was covered by the gloom ;

24. And none was able to discern Abhimanyu, or his friends or enemies. Then, beholding that palpable darkness of great fearfulness, Abhimanyu,

25. That delighter of the Kuru race, invoked into existence the solar weapon of great effulgence. Then, O monarch, the world was again disclosed to the sight.

26—27. And with that weapon Abhimanyu destroyed the illusion of that wicked-souled Rakshasa. Then waxing wroth, that foremost of men, endued with great prowess, covered the prince of the Rakshasas in that battle with a net-work of straight-knotted shafts. Various other kinds of illusion was created by that Rakshasa ;

28. But Phalguna's son, of immeasurable soul, and versed in the use of all weapons, destroyed them all. Then the Rakshasa, his illusions all neutralised, and himself afflicted with shafts,

29. Fled out of fear, forsaking his chariot even where he was. When that Rakshasa, ever fighting unfairly, had been thus speedily vanquished,

30. The son of Arjuna began to crush your troops in battle like an infuriated excellent elephant agitating a lake having lotuses blooming in its waters.

31. Thereupon Bhisma the son of Santanu beholding the troops thus routed by the son of Subhadra, checked the latter with a mighty shower of arrows.

32. Then the mighty car-warriors of the Dhritarastra's host encircling that single hero, began to pierce him forcibly with many arrows.

33. Thereat that hero (Abhimanyu) equal in prowess to his father and to the son of Vasudeva in strength and powers,

34. That foremost of all wielders of weapon, performed in battle many a wonderful feat worthy of his father and his maternal uncle.

35. Thereupon that heroic Dhananjaya, highly enraged, desirous of rescuing his son, rushed to the spot where the latter was, slaying your troops as he came.

36. So also, O monarch, your sire Devavrata encountered the son of Pritha in battle, like Rahu meeting the lustrous orb.

37. Thereupon, O ruler of men, your sons with cars, steeds, and elephants, surrounded Bhisma in battle and began to protect him.

38. So also, O king, the Pandavas, clad in mail, surrounding Dhananjaya, O foremost of the Bharatas, began to put forth all their energies in battle.

39. Then, O king, the son of Saradwata, who was stationed in front of Bhisma, pierced Arjuna with a number of twenty-five arrows.

40. Rushing against him like a tiger rushing against an elephant, Satyaki pierced him with whetted shafts, desirous of doing good to the Pandavas.

41. The son of Gotami also with great celerity and waxing wroth, pierced the descendant of Madhu's race, on the breast with nine shafts decked with golden wings.

42. Thereat the grandson of Sini also highly inflamed with rage, bending his bow quickly fixed on the bow-string a shaft capable of doing away with the son of Gotami.

43. Then the irate son of Drona seeing the effulgent dart course swiftly like the thunder-bolt of Indra, speedily cut it in twain.

44. Thereupon that foremest of car-warriors the grandson of Sini, forsaking Gotama's son in battle, rushed towards Drona's son, like Rahu in the firmament rushing towards the moon.

45. Then the son of Drona cut off the bow of Satyaki in twain, O Bharata; then he pierced him whose bow had been cut with numerous shafts.

46. Then taking up another bow capable of slaying the foe and of bearing great strain, Satyaki pierced the son of Drona on the breast and on the arms with a group of sixty shafts, O king.

47. Thus pierced and pained, the latter became unconscious and he sat down on the terrace of his car and supported himself by holding the flagstaff.

48. Then Drona's son possessed of great prowess regaining consciousness and waxing wroth, pierced the descendant of the Vrishni race with a *Naracha*.

49. That *Naracha* penetrating Sini's grandson, entered the surface of the earth like a powerful young snake entering its hole in the spring.

50. Then with another broad-headed arrow Drona's son cut down the excellent standard of him of Madhu's race; and then uttered a fierce war-cry.

51. Once more he covered Satyaki with a dreadful group of arrows, O monarch, like clouds covering the sun at the expiration of the summer season.

52. Satyaki also, O mighty monarch, destroying that net-work of arrows, speedily scattered on Drona's son a large number of arrows.

53. Then that grandson of Sini, freed from that net-work of arrows, like the sun emerging out of the clouds, began to scorch the son of Drona (with his arrows).

54. Inflamed with ire, the highly puissant Satyaki once again covered Drona's son with a thousand shafts; and then uttered his war-cry.

55. Then beholding his son in that plight, like the moon devoured by Rahu, the highly powerful son of Bharadwaja rushed against the grandson of Sini.

56. Then in that great battle, he pierced him of the Vrishni race with arrows of exceeding sharpness, desirous of rescuing his own son so afflicted by the latter (Satyaki).

57. Then abandoning that mighty car-warrior that son of the preceptor Drona, Satyaki, pierced Drona with twenty shafts of sharpness like that of the battle axe.

58. At this crisis, that afflicter of foes that mighty car-warrior the son of Kunti, (Arjuna) waxing wroth, rushed against Drona.

59. Then Drona and Arjuna met in that fierce battle, like, O mighty monarch, Venus and Jupiter meeting one another on the heavens.

Thus ends the hundred and second chapter, the encounter between Drona and Arjuna, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How did those two foremost of men, those two fierce bowmen, namely Drona and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu encountering each other, fight with each other to the best of their abilities ?

2. The son of Pandu is ever dear to the highly intelligent son of Bharadwaja; so also, O Sanjaya, the preceptor is always dear to Partha in battle.

3. Those two foremost of car-warriors ever delighting in battle, namely Dhananjaya and the son of Bharadwaja, how did those two heroes, like two fierce lions encountering one another, fight one another putting forth all their energies ?

Sanjaya said :—

4. In battle neither Drona regard the son of Pritha as dear to him, nor does the son of Pritha, keeping in view the duty of Kshatriyas, regard the preceptor as dear to him.

5. Kshatriyas, O king, never shun any one in battle; they fight with their fathers or brothers without the slightest regard for them.

6. Then, O Bharata, Drona was pierced in battle with three shafts by the son of Pritha; but the former regarded not those arrows shot from Arjuna's bow.

7. Once more did the son of Pritha cover him in that battle with a shower of shafts; and Drona, then blazed up with anger like a raging forest conflagration,

8. Within a short while, with straight-jointed shafts, covered Arjuna in that battle, O foremost of kings, O Bharata.

9. Thereafter king Duryodhana commanded king Susarman to protect in battle the flanks of Drona.

10. Thereupon the ruler of the Trigarttas waxing wroth, and stretching his bow full, covered the son of Pritha, O foremost of king, with many shafts tipped with iron.

11. Those arrows, O king, discharged by Drona and Susarman, shone, O mighty monarch, in the heavens like a row of crane in the firmament in Autumn.

12. Those arrows, reaching, the son of Kunti, entered into him, like, O lord, a flight of birds entering a tree bending with the burden of its tasteful fruits.

13. Thereupon Arjuna, that foremost of car-warriors, uttering his war-cry in battle, pierced the ruler of the Trigarttas and his son with myriads of shafts.

14. Thus pierced by Partha who then looked like the Destroyer himself at the end of a Yuga, they rushed even towards Partha himself resolved to die in battle.

15—16. They also poured a shower of arrows towards the chariot of Pandu's son. Then the latter received that shower of arrows, O foremost of kings, with another shower discharged by himself, like a mountain receiving a shower of rain. Then in that battle we beheld the wonderful lightness of Vibhatsu's hands.

17. In as much as, single-handed, he baffled the indefeasible shower of arrows poured by many, like the wind scattering masses of clouds.

18. The celestials and the Danavas all become pleased with that feat of Pritha's son. Thereafter Arjuna waxing wroth on the Trigarttas, O Bharata,

19. Discharged, O monarch, the *Vayavya* weapon at the head of the hostile ranks. Thereupon raged a tempest agitating the whole welkin,

20. And felling rows of trees, and killing hosts of troops. Thereat Drona beholding that fierce *Vayavya* weapon,

21. Discharged, O mighty monarch, a terrible weapon named Saila. When, O ruler of men, that weapon was shot by Drona in battle,

22—23. The wind subsided, and points of the compass shone brightly. Thereafter that heroic son of Pandu, made the car-division of the Trigarttas despondent and destitute of prowess, and compelled them to turn their faces away from the field of battle. Thereat Duryodhana, and Kripa that foremost of car-warriors,

24. Aswathaman, Salya, Sudakshina the ruler of the Kamvojas, the two Avanti princes Vinda and Anuvinda, and Valhika with the Valhikas,

25. These warriors, along with a mighty division of cars, surrounded Pritha's son on all directions. Also Bhagadatta and Srutayusha, endued with great strength,

26. With a mighty elephant division, surrounded Bhima on all directions. Also, O ruler of men, Bhurisravas, Sala and Suvala's son,

27. With a shower of resplendent shafts of exceeding sharpness, resisted the two sons of Pandu. In that battle Bhisma, supported by Dhritarastra's sons along with their divisions,

28. Reaching near Yudhisthira, surrounded him on all sides. Then Vrikodara the

son of Pritha, beholding the elephant division advance towards himself,

29. Licked the corners of his mouth, like the king of beasts in the forest. Thereafter that foremost of car-warriors, grasping his mace, in that fierce battle,

30. Speedily jumped down from his car and struck terror into the hearts of your troops. Then those elephant-warriors, beholding him stand with mace in hand,

31. Surrounded him on all sides with great carefulness. Then that son of Pandu, standing in the midst of that elephant division, appeared beautiful,

32. Like the sun shining in the midst of a mass of clouds. Then that foremost of the Pandavas, began to agitate that division of elephants,

33. Like the tempest scattering away a mighty net-work of clouds. Then those tuskers, slaughtered by the highly powerful Bhimasena in battle,

34. Began to utter distressful shrieks like masses of roaring clouds. Mangled with the tusks of those elephants in many parts of his body,

35. The son of Pritha appeared beautiful like a blossoming Asoka tree. Catching the tuskers by their tusks, he rooted the tusks out,

36. And with those tusks wounding the elephants on their frontal globes felled them in battle, like the Destroyer himself wielding his mace.

37. Wielding his mace bathed in blood, with his person be-spattered with fat and marrow, and smeared with gore Bhima appeared beautiful like the Rudra himself.

38. Thus slaughtered, the surviving remnant of that huge elephant division ran away in all directions, O king, crushing their own ranks.

39. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, owing to those huge elephants running away in all directions, the army of Duryodhana was once more compelled to turn their faces away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the hundred and third chapter, the prowess of Bhima, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CIV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. At mid-day, O mighty monarch, commenced a combat between the Somakas and Bhisma, that become dreadful and destructive of many creatures.

2. That foremost of car-warriors *viz* the son of Ganga began to consume the ranks of the Pandava host, with his sharp shafts discharged by hundreds and thousands.

3. Then your father Devavrata crushed that army like a herd of heifer grinding (under their tread) a heap of paddy sheaves.

4. Then Dhristadyumna, Sikhandin, Virata and Drupada, encountering Bhisma in battle began to pierce that mighty car-warriors with numerous shafts.

5. Thereat, O Bharata, piercing Dhristadyumna and Virata with three shafts, Bhisma discharged a *Naracha* at Drupada.

6. Then those fierce bowmen, pierced by Bhisma that grinder of foes, waxed wroth, O king, in battle like a snake trampled under the feet.

7. Then Sikhandin pierced the grandfather of the Bharatas, but the latter of undeteriorating renown struck him not, remembering his femiminity.

8. Then Dhristadyumna blazing up with rage like fire, pierced the grandsire, with three shafts on the breast and the arms.

9. Drupada with twenty-five, Virata with ten, Sikahndin with twenty-five arrows pierced Bhisma.

10. That hero (Bhisma) thus deeply pierced, O mighty monarch, and bathed in copiously flowing blood, appeared beautiful like flowering red *Asoka* tree in the spring.

11. Then the son of Ganga pierced them in return each with three straight-going shafts; and O sire, he burst open the bow of Drupada with a broad-headed arrow.

12. The latter then taking up another bow pierced Bhisma with five arrows and his charioteer with three whetted shafts on the field of battle.

13. Thereupon, O monarch, Bhima, the five sons of Draupadi, the five Kekaya brothers, and Satyaki of the Satwata race,

14. Headed by king Yudhisthira himself rushed at the son of Ganga, desirous of rescuing the Panchalas headed by Dhristadymna.

15. So also, O ruler of men, your warriors anxious for protecting Bhisma, rushed against the Pandava host, supported by their respective divisions.

16. Thereupon ensued a fierce and sanguinary engagement between your army and theirs both teeming with men, steeds, chariots and elephants—engagement that

considerably swelled the population of Death's domain.

17. Car-warriors meeting car-warriors despatched them to the abode of Death; so also others, men, horse-soldiers, elephant-riders encountering one another,

18--19. Conveyed one another to the abode of Death, with their straight-knotted shafts; and in that field of battle, O ruler of men, many cars deprived of their riders with numerous dreadful arrows, and with their drivers slain, careered on the field being dragged on all sides.

20. Crushing, O king, innumerable men and steeds in that battle, those cars of the velocity of wind appeared beautiful like ærial castles.

21. Many car-warriors deprived of their cars, clad in armour and possessed of strength all decked with ear-rings and turbans and with bracelets and garlands,

22. All resembling sons of the gods and equal to Sakra in prowess in battle, prosperous as Vaisravana himself and wise in polity as Vrihaspati himself,

23. Ruling over vast dominions, and all heroic warriors, O ruler of men, flying hither and thither, were slain like ordinary men.

24. Huge tusked elephants also, O foremost of men, deprived of their excellent riders, fell down crushing their own ranks and uttering distressful cries.

25. With their armours, variegated standards, *chamaras,* white umbrellas with golden staves, and lances shattered, O sire,

26. The huge elephants ran in all the ten points of the compass, resembling newly-risen clouds, and roaring also like them.

27. So also, O ruler of men, elephant-riders, deprived of their elephants, were seen to run in all directions in that general engagement between your army and theirs.

28. We also beheld steeds born in various regions, decked with golden caparisons, and fleet as the wind itself, by hundreds and by thousands.

29. We also beheld horse-soldiers, deprived of their chargers chase and chased by, one another in that battle, with swords in their grasp.

30. An elephant meeting a flying compeer in that great battle, rushed with velocity crushing foot-soldiers and steeds.

31. Also, O king, in that battle one elephant crushed many cars, and cars also, passing over fallen steeds, crushed them in battle;

32. And also, O king, horses again crushed the foot-soldiers in that battle. Thus, O king, they crushed one another in various modes.

33. When that awful and fierce battle was thus raging, there started up into existence on the field of battle a hideous river, having blood for its stream,

34. Choked with piles of bones, and having the hair (of slain warriors) for its moss and weeds. It had cars for its lakes arrows for its eddies and horses for its fishes; and it was inaccessible.

35. It abounded in pebbles consisting of the heads of warriors; as also in sharks &c formed by the elephants. It had armours and head-gears for its froth and bows for its current and swords for its tortoises;

36. The trees on its banks were formed of the numerous standards; it had men for its banks which it ate away constantly. It was infested by swans consisting of cannibals, and it considerably increased the population of Death's domain.

37. Many heroic Kshatriyas all mighty car-warriors crossed that river on their rafts consisting of cars, steeds and elephants, totally driving away fear from their hearts.

38. Just as the river *Vaitarani* conveys all departed spirits to the dominions of the ruler of spirits, so, in that afternoon, that river carried away (with its bloody currents) all cowards that became overwhelmed with a swoon.

39. Then in that battle the Kshatriyas beholding that awful carnage, exclaimed saying:—Through the folly of Duryodhana, Kshatriyas are being thus destroyed.

40. Why did Dhritarastra of wicked soul, that ruler of men, infatuated by covetousness, harbour feelings of envy against the sons of Pandu, all endued with many virtues."

41. Various exclamations of this kind, purporting to be applauses to the Pandavas and censures to your sons, were heard there addressed to one another.

42. Hearing these exclamations vociferated by all the warriors, your son Duryodhana, that offender of all men,

43. Addressing Bhisma, Drona, Kripa and Salya said, O Bharata:—"Do you go on fighting with self-confidence? Why do you tarry at all?".

44. Then ensued a battle between the Kurus and the Pandavas, O king, that owed its origin to that game at dice and that brought about awful carnage.

45. Now do you see, O son of Vichitraviryya, the dreadful fruit of your refusal

to accept the salutary advices (of your friends,) though warned against it by many high-souled heroes.

46. Neither the sons of Pandu, O king, with their soldiers and followers, nor the Kauravas pay any the least heed to their lives in that battle.

47. For this reason, O foremost of men, a dreadful destruction of men is taking place, brought about by Destiny or by your wicked policy, O king.

Thus ends the hundred and fourth chapter, the general engagement, in the Bhismabadha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then that foremost of men Arjuna, conveyed, with his whetted shafts, the kings that followed Susarman to the abode of the lord of departed spirits.

2. Thereupon in that battle Susarman pierced Pritha's son with many shafts; he then pierced the son of Vasudeva with seventy shafts and Arjuna again with nine.

3. Baffling those arrows with his showers of arrows, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Sakra, despatched the warriors that supported Susarman to the mansion of Death.

4. Thus slaughtered by Pritha's son, as if by the Destroyer himself at the expiration of a Yuga, those mighty car-warriors, seized with panic, ran away from the field of battle.

5. Some leaving their horses, some their cars, and some their elephants, O sire, fled in all the directions of the compass.

6. Others, on the other hand, seizing steeds, elephants and chariots in that battle, fled away, O ruler of men, at the top of their speed.

7. In that fierce fight, foot-soldiers, abandoning their weapons, and without paying any heed to any one, fled, O Bharata, hither and thither.

8. Though they were repeatedly forbidden by the Trigartta ruler Susarman as also by many other foremost sovereigns they did not tarry on the field any longer.

9. Seeing that army thus routed, your son Duryodhana, placing Bhisma at the head of all the troops, and himself marching in the van,

10. Assaulted Dhananjaya putting forth all his energies, desirous of saving, O ruler of men, the life of the king of the Trigarttas.

11. Susarman alone, accompanied by his brother, was standing against Arjuna in battle, scatterring various kinds of shafts, the rest of his men having ran away.

12. So also, O king, the Pandavas, clad in armour, rushed, with all their energies, to the spot where Bhisma was, desirous of rescuing Partha.

13. Though perfectly cognisant of the dreadful prowess of the wielder of the Gandiva bow, the Pandava heroes with loud cries of 'Oh!' and 'Alas!' advanced towards Bhisma from all sides.

14. Then that hero, owning the standard bearing the device of the palmyra tree, covered the Pandava host in that battle with straight-knotted shafts.

15. When the sun reached the meridian, O mighty sovereign, the Kurus mingling pell-mell with the Pandavas fought on fiercely.

16. Then the heroic Satyaki piercing Kritavarman with five swift-coursing arrows stood in the field shooting shafts by hundreds and by thousands.

17. So also king Drupada piercing Drona with sharp shafts again pierced the latter with seventy shafts and his charioteer with five shafts.

18. Bhimasena, piercing the Valhika king, his great grandsire, uttered his war-cry that resembled the tiger's roar in the woods.

19. The son of Arjuna being pierced by Chitrasena with many swift-coursing arrows, pierced him in return on the breast with three shafts.

20. Encountering one another in battle, those two foremost of men, appeared beautiful, O king, like Venus and Saturn shining in the heavens.

21. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, that son of Subhadra, endued with prowess, slaying Chitrasena's four steeds and charioteer with nine shafts, uttered his fierce war-cry.

22. Then that mighty car-warrior Chitrasena, jumping down with agility from the car of which the steeds were slain, ascended with quickness, O ruler of men, the chariot of Durmukha.

23. The highly puissant Drona also penetrating Drupada with straight shafts, pierced with quickness the latter's charioteer.

24. Thereupon king Drupada thus afflicted before the army, fled, borne away by fleet steeds, remembering his former enmity.

25. Bhimasena in a moment deprived king Valhika of his horses, car and driver, before the very eyes of the troops.

26. Thus involved in a perilous situation and seized with panic, O mighty monarch, that foremost of men Valhika, jumping down from his own vehicle,

27. Ascended, in that fierce battle, that of Lakshana. Satyaki, having repulsed Kritavarman in battle,

28. Approached the grandsire Bhisma, shooting various kinds of arrows. Then he, having pierced the grandsire with sixty whetted shafts furnished with feathery wings,

29. Seemed to dance on the terrace of his car, wielding his massive bow. Thereupon the grandsire hurled at him a mighty lance made entirely of iron,

30. Decked with gold, charged with great velocity and looking beautiful like a daughter of a Naga. (Beholding) that irresistible lance swiftly course towards himself like death itself,

31. That high-formed hero of the Vrishni race baffled it with the swiftness (of his movements); and that dreadful lance, even without reaching him of the Vrishni race,

32—33. Fell down on the surface of the earth, like a mighty meteor of blazing effulgence. Thereupon, O king, that descendant of the Vrishni race, swiftly taking up his own lance of golden effulgence, sped it at the car of the grandsire. That lance sped with the strength of Satyaki's arm in that battle,

34. Flew swiftly, like the last night (of worldly existence) of a doomed man. Then O Bharata, Bhisma cut in twain that swift-coursing lance,

35—36. With two sharp arrows having horse shoe-heads; and the lance fell down on the ground. Having severed that lance, the son of Ganga, that grinder of foes, waxing wroth and smiling the while, pierced Satyaki on the breast with nine arrows. Thereupon with all their chariots, elephants and horses, the Pandavas, O elder brother of Pandu,

36. Surrounded Bhisma on all sides, in order to rescue him of Madhu's race. Then between the Kurus and the Pandavas, both desirous of securing victory, commenced a fierce fight making the hair stand erect.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifth chapter, the combat between Bhisma and Satyaki, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CVI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)— *Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding, O king, Bhisma inflamed with rage in battle, surrounded by the Pandavas, like the sun in the heavens surrounded by the clouds at the end of the summer,

2. Duryodhana, O monarch, said to Dussasana :—"This heroic Bhisma, this mighty bowman and slayer of heroes,

3. Is surrounded on all sides, O foremost of the Bharatas, with the heroic Pandava warriors. It behoves you, O hero, to look to the protection of that (high-souled one).

4. Our grandsire Bhisma, being well-protected in battle, will slay all the Panchalas with the Pandavas.

5. Therefore I think the protection of Bhisma to be our foremost duty. This fierce bowman Bhisma of illustrious vows is our protector.

6. Therefore surrounding the grandsire with all our troops, do you protect him as he accomplishes difficult feats in battle."

7. Thus spoken to, your son Dussasana stood with his mighty army, surrounding Bhisma in that battle.

8. Then Sakuni the son of Suvala with hundred thousands cavalry soldiers, holding resplendent spears, swords and lances,

9. And forming a proud and strong detachment of troops, bearing standards, and supported by well-disciplined and well-accomplished foot-soldiers all excellent fighters,

10. Began to oppose Nakula, Sahadeva, and Yudhisthira the son of Pandu, surrounding those foremost of men on all sides.

11. Then king Duryodhana despatched a detachment of ten thousand horses all brave warriors, for checking the Pandavas.

12. As these highly fleet chargers resembling so many Sarudas rushed to battle, the earth, O king, struck with their hoof quaked and produced a loud din.

13. The dreadful clatter of the hoofs of steeds that was then heard resembled the crackling sound produced by a bamboo forest on the top of a hill, when set on fire.

14. As these rushed to the charge, there arose a thick cloud of dust, that mounting to the solar orbit shrouded the sun itself.

15. Then the army of the Pandavas was agitated by the charge of that fleetest horse division, like a mighty lake agitated in consequence of a flight of swans suddenly alighting on its waters.

16. Nothing could be heard in consequence of their neighs. Then king Yudhisthira, and the two sons of Pandu begotten upon Madri,

17—18. Quickly checked the furious charge of those horsemen in battle, like, O mighty monarch, the banks withstanding the waves of the mighty main swollen with the waters of the rainy season on the day of the full moon. Thereupon, O king, these car-warriors, with their straight-knotted shafts,

19. Began to sever the heads of these horse-soldiers from their trunk; then, O mighty monarch, they fell down slain by these firm bowmen,

20. Like huge elephants falling down in mountain caves, slain by their compeers. Those warriors of the Pandava, army also with sharp lances and straight shafts,

21. Cut down the head of those horsemen, coursing all over the field. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, the horse-riders thus struck with swords,

22. Began to drop their heads like mighty trees dropping the fruits. Slain on all sides, horses with their riders

23. Were seen fallen and falling. When being thus slaughtered, the horses began to fly away struck with terror,

24. Like so many deer flying for the sake of preserving their lives at the sight of a lion. The Pandavas then, O monarch, confounding their foes in battle,

25. Blew their conchs and struck up their drums in battle. Then dejected in consequence of the defeat of his troops, Duryodhana

26. Said, O foremost of the Bharatas, these words to the king of the Madras: "This eldest son of Pandu, supported by his twin brothers in battle.

27. Is routing my army, O mighty-armed king, before your very eyes. Do you check him, O mighty-armed one, like the banks of the sea checking its fury.

28. You are well-known for the irresistibleness of your strength and prowess." Then hearing these words of your son, the highly puissant Salya,

29—31. Supported by a division of cars, hied to the spot where king Yudhisthira was. Then the son of Pandu checked in battle that detachment of Salya falling upon him with great fury. Then that mighty car-warrior the very virtuous king Yudhisthira quickly pierced the king of the Madras with ten shafts between his breasts; and Nakula and Sahadeva pierced him with seven straight shafts.

32. The king of the Madras in return pierced them all with three shafts each; then again he pierced Yudhisthira with sixty shafts of exceeding sharpness;

33. He also wounded the two terrified sons of Madri with two shafts each. Thereupon the mighty armed Bhima, beholding the king,

34. Staying within the reach of the Madra-king's car, as if within the very jaws of death, rushed in that battle to the side of Yudhisthira.

35. Then when the sun, rising on the western quarter, was scorching the earth, a fierce and sanguinary engagement commenced.

Thus ends the hundred and sixth chapter, the encounter between Salya and Yudhisthira, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CVII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thereupon your father, waxing wroth, began to pierce the sons of Pritha and their troops, with excellent shafts of exceeding sharpness.

2. Piercing Bhima with twelve, Satyaki with nine shafts, Nakula with three, Sahadeva with seven, he pierced

3. Yudhisthira with twelve shafts on the arms and on the breast. Then that highly powerful hero, having pierced Dhristadyumna also, uttered a loud roar.

4. Nakula pierced him in return with twelve shafts, the descendant of Madhu's race, with three, Sahadeva with seventy, Partha with nine, Dhristadyumna with seventy and Bhimasena with seven shafts.

5. Then Yudhisthira pierced the grandsire in return with twelve shafts. Drona having pierced Satyaki began to pierce Bhima,

6. Each time with five whetted shafts resembling the rods of Death himself. Those two heroes, each then with three straight shafts, pierced in retun,

7. That foremost of Brahmanas namely Drona, like a guide piercing a mighty ele-

phant with the hook. The Souviras, the Kitavas, the Easterners, the Westerners, the Northerners, the Malavas,

8. The Avisapas, the Surasenas, the Sivis and the Vasatis, these did not avoid Bhisma though fearfully slaughtered by him in battle with whetted shafts.

9. So also many other kings, come from various other realms, rushed at the Pandavas, bearing in their hands weapons of diverse kinds.

10. The Pandavas also surrounded the grandsire on all sides. That invincible one (Bhisma) surrounded by that mighty division of cars,

11. Blazed forth destroying the foe, like a terrible conflagration in a wood. His car was his fire chamber, his bow was his flames, his sword, darts, and maces were his fuels.

12. His arrows were the scintillations, and Bhisma himself was the fire that consumed the forest of the Kshatriyas. With arrows furnished with golden wings and the feathers of vultures and charged with great energy,

13. With barbed arrows, with *Nalikas* and *Narachas*, Bhisma covered that army of the Pandavas. He felled with whetted shafts elephants and car-warriors.

14—16. He made the large detachment of car-warriors look like a palmyra-forest with its trees deprived of their tops. In that battle, O king, that mighty-armed hero, the foremost of all wielders of weapons, made cars, elephants and steeds deprived of their riders. Hearing the twang, that resembled the rumbling of the thunder, of your father's bow, O Bharata, all creatures began to tremble, and O foremost of the Bharatas, then the arrows of your father seemed to be incapable of being baffled.

17—20. Then the arrows, shot from the bow of Bhisma, did not only strike against the armours of combatants but penetrated through them. We saw, O monarch, many cars dragged over the field, by the fleet steeds that were harnessed to them, in consequence of the death of the heroes that rode them. Four and ten thousand car-warriors belonging to the Chedis, the Kashis and the Karushas, all well-known, and born of illustrious family, never retreating from field and owners of golden standards, prepared to lay down their lives in battle, encountering Bhisma who looked like Death himself with mouth wide open, were all despatched to the regions of the departed along with their steeds, cars and elephants.

21. We beheld, O monarch, chariots by hundreds and thousands then, some with their *Akihas* shattered and bottoms broken, some with their wheels broken.

22. Then, O monarch, with cars broken along with their wooden fences, with fallen car-warriors, with arrows, with beautiful but broken armours, with battle axes,

23. With maces, with short arrows, and whetted shafts, with car bottoms, with quivers, shattered wheels, O sire,

24. With arms, bows, words, and heads graced with ear-rings, with finger-protecters and gloves, and broken standards,

25. With bows splintered into pieces, the earth become strewn over. Then, O king, elephants with their riders slain, and slaughtered horsemen,

26—27. Began to fall down dead on the field by hundreds and by thousands. Striving their least, the heroic warriors of the Pandava army could not rally the car-warriors who, afflicted by the arrows of Bhisma, were flying then in all directions. That mighty host (of the Pandavas), slaughtered by Bhisma who equalled even Indra in prowess,

28. Were so completely broken that no two persons were seen to fly together. With its chariots, elephants and horses laid low and with its standards and flags overthrown in profusion,

29. The army of the sons of Pandu, deprived of its consciousness began to utter cries of "Oh" and "Alas." In that battle father slew his own son and son slew his own father,

30. And friend slew his dear friend urged on to the deed by Destiny. Many combatants of the Pandava army, doffing their armours,

31—32. Were seen to run away in all directions with their hair dishevelled. Then the troops belonging to the son of Pandu were seen to run hurriedly in fear like a herd of bulls throwing aside the yokes of cars; and the cries of distress that these troops then uttered were indeed fearful. Then the descendant of the Yadava race beholding the army thus routed,

33. Spoke to Vibhatsu the son of Prit , reining in the excellent chariot he drove: "O Partha, the hour which you so ardently looked forward to, has now arrived.

24. Now strike, O foremost of men, or you shall be unconscious being overwhelmed by a swoon. O hero, the words you uttered before in the assemblage of kings,

35—36. In the city of Virata, before Sanjaya himself, O Pritha's son, those words are 'I will slay all the combatants of Dhritarastra's son along with their followers, headed by Bhisma and Drona, all who will fight with me.' O son of Kunti, O grinder of foes, do you now verify those words of yours.

37. Remembering the duties of a Kshatriya go on fighting without harbouring any anxious feeling." Thus spoken to, by the son of Vasudeva, with his head hung down and looking askance,

38. Arjuna as if unwilling said these words to the former. "Either to acquire monarchy with hell at the end by the slaughter of those who ought not to be slain,

39. Or to suffer the woes of an exiled life,—which of these should now be considered as my duty? However, O Hrishikesha, urge the steeds on, I shall do your biddings.

40. I will lay low Bhisma the grand-sire of the Kurus." Thereupon that descendant of Madhu's race, drove those steeds of argentine hue,

41. To the spot, O king, where Bhisma, incapable of being gazed at like the sun himself, was staying. Thereupon the mighty army of king Yudhisthira returned to the charge,

42. Beholding the mighty-armed son of Pritha rush for an encounter with Bhisma in that terrible fight. Thereupon, O foremost of the Kurus, Bhisma uttered his war-cry even like a roaring lion,

43. And then quickly covered the car of Dhananjaya with a shower of arrows. Within a moment Arjuna's car with the steeds and charioteer,

44. Were lost to view in consequence of that thick arrowy shower. But the son of Vasudeva, with the least delay and with patience, fearlessly

45. Drove forward those steeds mangled with the shafts of Bhisma. Then the son of Pritha taking up his bow of celestial make, and of twang as loud as the rumble of clouds,

46—47. Felled the bow of Bhisma having burst it open with whetted shafts. Then deprived of his bow, that foremost of the Kurus, viz. your father, within a moment made another bow ready for use. But Arjuna, waxing wroth, cut off even that bow of his.

48. Then the son of Santanu highly praised Arjuna's lightness of hand saying:—"Well-done well-done, O mighty-armed one, well-done O son of Kunti."

49. Having thus applauded Partha and taking up another bow of great excellence, Bhisma sped, in that battle, arrows against the chariot of the former.

50. Then the son of Vasudeva displayed superior skill in the management of horses in as much as he baffled Bhisma's arrows by a swift whirling of the car in a circular motion.

51. Mangled with the shafts of Bhisma, those two foremost of men, (Arjuna and Krishna) then appeared beautiful like two heifers, enraged, and mangled with scratches of their horns.

52—54. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, that mighty-armed descendant of Madhu's race, viz., the son of Vasudeva, seeing that Arjuna was fighting mildly, and that Bhisma was continually pouring his showers of arrows in battle, also that the latter standing in the centre of the two hosts, was scorching (every thing) like the sun himself and was slaying the foremost combatants of the army of Pandu's son, and was producing in the army of Yudhisthira a total annihilation like that at the end of a Yuga, was unable to bear it any longer.

55. Then, O sire, throwing away the reins of Partha's steeds of argentine hue, that illustrious Yogin (Krishna) waxing irascible, jumped down from that huge chariot.

56—57. Then roaring repeatedly like a lion, Krishna endued with strength and fleetness, and of incomparable effulgence, that lord of the universe, having his bare arms for his weapons and wielding the whip in his hands, and with his eyes coppery in rage, rushed towards Bhisma, splitting the earth with his tread, and desirous of slaying the latter.

58. In that mighty battle, the hearts of your warriors were filled with terror as they beheld him of Madhu's race near Bhisma, ready to fall upon the latter.

59. Then, O mighty monarch, exclamations of 'Bhisma is slain, Bhisma is slain,' were heard there, uttered by your troops inspired with the fear of Vasudeva's son.

60. Then Janarddana, vested in yellow silk raiments and blue in complexion like the *lapis lazuli*, rushing towards Bhisma appeared beautiful like a rain cloud charged with lightning.

61. Just as the king of beasts uttering loud roars rushes towards the leader of an elephant-herd, so then that foremost of Madhu's race rushed impetuously towards Bhisma, uttering loud roars.

62. Then beholding in that dreadful battle, Krishna of eyes like lotus petals

rush furiously towards him, Bhisma began to stretch his strong and mighty bow.

63. Then addressing Govinda with a dauntless heart, he said :—" Come, come, O you of eyes like lotus petals ! O god of gods, I do bow down unto you.

64. Lay me low, O foremost of the Satwata race, this day in this dreadful fight ! O sinless one, slain by you in this battle, O god,

65. I shall reap great good, O Krishna, in every respect in this world. O Govinda to-day, in the three worlds, have I attained great honour in battle.

66—68. Strike me as it pleases you, O sinless one, as I am merely a slave of yours." Meanwhile the mighty-armed son of Pritha, running behind Keshava, seized the latter embracing him with his two arms. That foremost of men viz Krishna of eyes like expanded lotuses, thus held by the son of Pritha proceeded even carrying the latter with him. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, that puissant warrior, the son of Pritha, forcibly encircling (with his two arms) the two legs

69—71. Of Hrishikesha stopped him when he was going to take the tenth step. Then his friend Arjuna, highly distressed, afflictionately addressing Kesava, who was then breathing like a snake and whose eyes were rolling in wrath, said :—' Stop, O mighty-armed one ! It behoves you not to falsify those words of yours viz '*I will not fight*,' that you had spoken before, O Kesava. Then, O descendant of Madhus race, men will call your a liar.

72. Let all the burden be on me, I will slay the grandsire ! Iswear, O Kesava, by my weapons, by my truth and by my good achievements,

73. That, O destroyer of foes, I will do everything by which the destruction of the enemy may be accomplished. Even this day behold the invincible mighty car-warrior overthrown

74. By me, with the least difficulty like the crescent moon at the end of a Yuga." Hearing those words of the high-souled Phalguna, that descendant of Madhu's race,

75—76. Without speaking any thing, again mounted the chariot in rage. Then Bhisma the son of Santanu, once more covered those two foremost of men on their cars, with an arrowy downpour, like clouds drenching the mountain breast with showers of rain. Then your sire Devatra took the lives of all hostile warriors,

77. Like the sun drawing energies from all things with his rays at the end of the winter season. As the sons of Pandu broke the ranks of the Kuru troops in battle.

78. So your father also broke the Pandava ranks in battle. The soldiers thus routed, and despondent and cheerless,

79—81. Slain, by hundreds and thousands, by Bhisma, were unable to gaze at the incomparable Bhisma, who was scorching the foe like the sun in the meridian. The Pandava troops then afflicted with terror, O monarch, (fearfully) looked at Bhisma who was achieving great feats with his superhuman prowess. Then, O Bharata, the Pandava troops thus crushed by Bhisma,

82. Could not find a protector, like kine sunk in slough, or like an ephemeral ant afflicted by a powerful creature.

83. The combatants of the Pandava hosts, O Bharata were unable to look at that mighty car-warrior Bhisma, who was incapable of being shaken, who with his arrowy showers was afflicting the hostile kings, and who in consequence of his blazing shafts looked like the shining sun.

84. While he was thus crushing the Pandava troops, the sun of thousand rays went below the horizon. Then the hearts, of all those warriors exhausted with fatigue, yearned for the order of withdrawal.

Thus ends the hundred and seventh chapter, the termination of the ninth day's battle, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CVIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. While they were thus fighting and when the sun set, the pall of hideous twilight enveloped the earth, and the battle became lost to view.

2—4. Then, O Bharata, king Yudhisthira, beholding that twilight had set in, and that his own soldiers, slaughtered by Bhisma, had thrown down their weapons, andthat terror-struck and repulsed from the field of battle, they are flying away in all directions ; beholding also the mighty car-warrior Bhisma inflamed with rage in battle and afflicting everybody, and seeing also the mighty car-warriors of the Somakas defeated and cheerless, pondered a while and then commanded the withdrawal of the forces.

5. Then king Yudhisthira withdrew his troops; so also the withdrawal of your forces was also done at the same time.

6. Then the mighty car-warriors, having withdrawn their forces, O foremost of the Kurus, entered their tents, with their bodies mangled with wounds.

7. The Pandavas, afflicted with the arrows of Bhisma and thinking of the feats achieved in battle, did not obtain any peace.

8. Having vanquished the Pandavas and the Srinjayas in battle and adored and honoured by your sons, Bhisma then, O monarch,

9. Accompanied by the delighted Kurus, entered his tent. Then night set in, that renders all creatures unconscious (in sleep).

10. In the beginning of that dread time of night, the Pandavas along with the Vrishnis and the invincible Srinjayas, sat together for consultation.

11. The highly powerful heroes, accomplished in drawing conclusion from inferences, coolly consulted about what would be most profitable to them under these circumstances.

12. Thereafter king Yudhisthira, O king, having pondered for a considerable length of time, addressed these words to the son of Vasudeva, casting his eyes on the latter.

13. "Behold, O Krishna, the high-souled Bhisma of fierce prowess crush my army like an elephant crushing a forest of reeds.

14. We dare not even look at that illustrious warrior when he licks, like a raging conflagration, all my troops up.

15. The mighty puissant Bhisma, possessed of sharp weapons and inflamed with rage in battle, appears like the mighty snake Takshaka of great ferocity and virulent venom.

16—17. Indeed the god of Death wrought up with wrath and shooting whetted shafts from his bow, or the king of the celestials armed with the thunder-bolt, or Varuna holding his mighty noose or the god of wealth wielding his mace, may be vanquished in battle. But Bhisma enraged in battle could not be vanquished.

18. When, O Krishna, such is the state of affairs, I am, in consequence of the weakness of my own understanding, sunk in sorrow, having to fight with Bhisma as an opponent in battle.

19. I will again retire, O invincible one, to the forests; even that is better for me now. Battle I no longer like, O Krishna, as Bhisma always slaughters our troops.

20. Just as an insect rushing at a blazing fire reaps only death, so have I reaped the same result having dared a combat with Bhisma.

21. Put as I may, my prowess forth, O descendant of the Vrishni race, I am being driven to destruction for the sake of my kingdom. My brave brothers are all sorely afflicted with the shafts of Bhisma.

22. Through their fraternal affection, they had to go into exile into the woods, for me, deprived of their kingdom. So also, O slayer of Madhu, Krishna had to undergo various troubles for me only.

23. I prize life very much; and it is dear and scarce to be obtained. If I can save it now, I shall husband out the rest of it in the performance of excellent deeds of piety.

24. If, indeed, I and my brothers be worthy of your grace, then O Keshava, advise me what will be beneficial to me, without clashing against our prescribed duties."

25. Hearing these many words of Yudhisthira describing the state of affairs in detail, out of compassion, Krishna spoke these words in reply to console the former.

26. "O son of Dharma, do not indulge so much in grief, O you who are always firm in truth, you who have got, heroic and invincible warriors, all slayers of foes, in your brothers.

27. Arjuna and Bhimasena are both powerful like the Wind and the Fire respectively. The twin sons of Madri equal in prowess even the Lord of the celestials himself.

28. Out of the friendship that exists between us, employ me also (to perform the task of slaying Bhisma). O son of Pandu, I will fight Bhisma. For you, O mighty monarch, what could I not do in battle.

29. Summoning that foremost of men Bhisma in battle, I will slay him, even before the very eyes of the Dhritarastra's troops, if indeed Arjuna desists from slaying the former.

30. If, O son of Pandu, by the slaughter of Bhisma you see victory certain to yourself, then even this day riding on a single car, I will slay the venerable grandsire of the Kurus.

31. Behold, O king, my prowess in battle, to be equal to that of the great Indra himself. I will overthrow him (Bhisma) from his car, in spite of his shooting mighty weapons.

32. He that is inimical to the sons of Pandu, is surely inimical also to myself.

Those that are friendly to you are also so to me and those that are friendly to me are also so to you.

33. Your brother, Arjuna, is my friend, relative and pupil; O ruler of earth, I can cut off and give away my own flesh for Arjuna's sake.

34. This foremost of men also will lay down his own life for my sake. This, O sire, is our understanding, that we will protect one another.

35—36. So, O most excellent king, command me so that I may fight for you. The vow that formerly Partha took at Upaplavya saying 'I will slay the son of Ganga' before the presence of all creatures, even that vow of intelligent Partha should be kept inviolate.

37. But if the son of Pritha permits me, I will with certitude do it for him. As it seems to me the task of Phalguna is easy and it is not difficult for him to perform.

38. Arjuna will slay in battle, Bhisma that conqueror of hostile cities. Putting forth his energies in fight, Partha can achieve what is incapable of being achieved.

39. Arjuna is capable of slaying in battle, O ruler of men, the very immortals along with the Daityas and Danavas, exerting their best in the fight, what to speak of Bhisma.

40. The highly puissant Bhisma the son of Santanu, now perverted in his judgment, decayed in intelligence and in vitality surely knows not what he ought to do."

Yudhisthira said :—

41. It is even so as you say, O mighty-armed descendant of Madhu's race. All these (universe) taken together are not capable of bearing your force.

42. I am sure of obtaining all those things that I may desire,—I, O foremost of men, on whose side you are staying.

43. O foremost of those that are ever-victorious, with yourself as our master, we can conquer in battle, even the celestials with Indra at their head, what to speak of Bhisma that mighty car-warrior.

44. For my own glorification, I dare not falsify your words; so do you render me assistance, O Madhava, as promised, without fighting on my behalf.

45. Before this battle there was an understanding between me and Bhisma. He said:—'I will give you good counsel, but will not fight for your interests.

46. I shall fight for the interests of Duryodhana; this I speak to you, O lord, for certain.' Therefore, O you of Madhu's race, he may offer us salutary advise which will enable us to obtain the kingdom.

47. Therefore once more accompanied by you, O slayer of Madhu, we shall repair to Bhisma for enquiring of him the means of his own death.

48. So, O descendent of the Vrishni race, repairing speedily with you to that foremost of men Bhisma, we shall seek counsel from that descendant of Kuru's race.

49. He, O Janarddana, will truly offer us salutary advice; and O Krishna, in battle we will do, what he shall advise.

50. O you of firm vows, he will give us counsel as well as victory. We became fatherless when we were mere children. It was he who reared us.

51. O Madhava, even such an aged grandsire, I want to slay—him who is the father of our dear-loved father! Fie on the life of a Kshatriya."

Sanjaya said :—

52. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, he of the Vrishni race, said to that delighter of the Kuru race—"O highly wise king, your words find an echo in my soul.

53. Devavrata of fierce vows, is well-accomplished in weapons. He can consume the foe even by his glances only. Let us go to that son of the ocean-going Ganga for asking the means of his death.

54. It behoves him to speak the truth, specially when questioned by you. Therefore let us go to the grandsire of the Kurus for asking him about the means of his death.

55. Repairing to that aged son of Santanu, we shall seek counsel of him. And following the advice he will offer we shall fight with the enemy.

56. Having thus consulted, the heroic Pandavas, together with the highly powerful son of Vasudeva, went, O elder brother of Pandu,

57. Towards the tent of Bhisma, having previously cast off their armours and dresses. Then entering the tent, they all touched his feet with their hands.

58. Then, O mighty monarch, the Pandavas, saluting that foremost of the Bharatas with their bent heads, sought his protection.

59. Then the mighty-armed Bhisma the grand-sire of the Kurus thus addressed them saying:—"All hail, O you of Vrishni's race, all hail, O Dhananjaya.

60. Welcome to the son of Dharma, and also to Bhima and the twins. What act enhancing your delight shall I do now?

61. I shall do it with all my soul even if it be exceedingly difficult of being accomplished," When the son of Ganga had thus repeatedly addressed them with affection,

62. King Yudhisthira with a cheerful heart spoke these words to him affectionately. "O you who are acquainted with all these things, how shall we conquer and how shall we acquire our kingdom?

63. How may stop be put to this destruction of creatures? Say, O lord, all this to me. Tell us yourself the means of your own death.

64. How, O hero, shall we be competent enough to withstand you in battle? You do not disclose even the slightest weakness to your enemy, O grandsire of the Kurus, whereby to overthrow you.

65. You are always seen in battle with your bow drawn to a circle. None can mark when you take up your shafts, place them in the bow-string or draw the string for shooting them.

66. O slayer of hostile heroes, slaying as you do, car-warriors, horsemen and elephant-riders, we behold you, O mighty-armed one, as a second sun on the chariot.

67. What person, O foremost of the Bharatas, dare vanquish you this day, when showering a arrowy downpour, you spread havoc among my troops.

68. My mighty army is every day being reduced by you in battle. How could we vanquish you in battle, how could sovereignty be ours?

69. How also could my troops be saved from this destruction? O grandsire, tell me the means for accomplishing all these ends." Thereupon, O elder brother of Pandu, the son of Santanu said these words to the Pandavas.

70. "O son of Kunti, so long as I am alive, you will not be able to obtain victory, O you who know everything. This I tell you truly.

71. When I shall be slain in battle, the Pandavas will surely win victory, in battle. Smite me down without delay, if you at all long to have victory in this war.

72. I permit you, O sons of Pritha, to strike me as you please. Indeed I consider it to be a favourable circumstance for you that you know me (to be invincible). When I shall be slaughtered, all else will be slaughtered. So do as I tell you."

Yudhisthira said:—

73. Tell us the means by which we may be able to vanquish your enraged self in battle—you who resemble the very god of Death himself wielding the mace.

74. We can vanquish the wielder of the thunder-bolt, or Varuna, or Yama himself, but you are incapable of being defeated by the celestials and Asuras united together with Indra at their head.

Bhisma said:—

75. O son of Pandu, O mighty-armed one, what you have said is indeed true. I am indeed incapable of being vanquished by the celestials and the Asuras united together with Indra at their head,

76. When with my weapons and my excellent bow in hand I engage myself in battle with care. But when I lay aside my weapons, even these mighty car-warriors may slay me.

77. One who lays his weapons aside, one who is fallen, one whose armour and standard have been shattered, one who flies away, one who is panic-struck, one who says "I am yours,"

78. One who is a female, one who bears a feminine designation, one who is disabled, one who has got only one son, and one who is a mean fellow,—with these I do not like to fight.

79. Hear also, O foremost of kings, about the vow that I had formerly taken. Beholding any inauspicious sign I would under no circumstance fight.

80. That mighty car-warrior, O king, that son of Drupada, who belongs to your army, who is known under the name of Sikhandin, who is wrathful in battle, valiant and ever attended with victory,

81. He was a female before, but afterwards attained manhood. You all know truly how all this came to pass.

82. Let the heroic Arjuna clad in male placing Sikhandin in front of him assail me with exceedingly sharp shafts.

83. Beholding then an inauspicious O man in the person of him who was female before, I will not strike though I may be armed with arrows.

84. Availing himself of that opportunity, let Pandu's son Dhananjaya quickly pierce me, O foremost of the Bharatas, on all sides.

85. Except the illustrious Krishna or Dhananjaya the son of Pandu, I do not find any one in the three worlds who can slay me in battle.

86—87. Therefore let Vibhatsu armed with weapons and exerting in battle to the best of his abilities and wielding his excellent bow, overthrow me in battle, placing (this Sikhandin or) any one else before him. Thus victory will be yours with certainty. O formost of kings, O you of chaste vows, do as I tell you. Then you shall be able to slay in battle all the Dhartarastras assembled together.

Sanjaya said :—

88. Then the sons of Pritha, ascertaining all these things, went back to their own camps, having saluted the high-souled Bhisma the grand-sire of the Kurus.

89. When Ganga's son ready to repair to the regions of the departed, had thus spoken, Arjuna, afflicted with grief and with his face covered with blushes of shame, said :—

Arjuna said :—

90. " How, O Madhava, shall I fight in battle, with the venerable and aged preceptor of the Kurus, the grand-sire of accomplished understanding and intelligence.

91. O Vasudeva, while playing in the days of childhood, I used to soil the garments of the high-souled and illustrious one by climbing on his lap with my body smeared with dust.

92. O elder brother of Gada, in my childhood, climbing on the lap of the high-souled father of Pandu (our father), I used to say 'Father';

93. 'I am not your father, but your father's father, O Bharata' even these were the words he used to say in reply to me. Oh he who used to treat me thus how could he be now slain by me!

94. Let him slay all my troops. I will not fight with that high-souled one, whether thereby I reap victory or death. What do you, O Krishna, think ?"

Vasudeva said :—

95. O Jishnu, having promised to slay Bhisma in battle, how can you desist from slaying him without transgressing the duties of a Kshatriya ?

96. Overthrow, O son of Pritha, this Kshatriya ever invincible in battle, from his car. Without slaying Ganga's son in battle you can not hope to win victory.

97. It have been foredoomed, O Partha, by the gods that Bhisma shall go to the abode of Death. That must come to pass which has been destined by the gods.

98. Except yourself, O invincible one, none including the wielder of the thunderbolt himself will be able to fight with Bhisma who resembles Death himself with wide open mouth.

99. Do you slay Bhisma, with great coolness. Hear also these words of mine which were said to Sakra formerly by the highly intelligent Vrihaspati.

100. 'One ought to slay even an aged man, or a person who is older than himself, or one who may be endowed with all virtues, if he comes as an enemy, or indeed any one else who comes for destroying him.

101. This, O Dhananjaya, is the eternal duty prescribed for Kshatriyas *viz*, they should fight, protect their subjects, and perform sacrifices, all without any maliciousness.

Arjuna said :—

102. Surely, O Krishna, Sikhandin has been born as the Death of Bhisma; for in soon as Bhisma sees the Panchala prince, he desists from striking.

103. Therefore placing Sikhandin in front of him (Bhisma) and stationing him as our van, we shall, by this means, overthrow the son of Ganga. This is my opinion.

104. With my shafts I will check other fierce bow-men of the enemy's host; and Sikhandin will fight with that foremost of warriors namely Bhisma.

105. I have heard that foremost of the Kurus *viz* Bhisma say—'I will never strike Sikhandin, in as much as formerly born as a daughter he attained manhood subsequently.'"

106. Having formed this resolution the Pandavas with him of Madhu's race went back to their tents with cheerful hearts, and with the permission of the illustrious Bhisma.

Thus ends the hundred and eighth chapter, the consultation after the withdrawal of troops from the ninth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How did Sikhandhin proceed in battle against the son of Ganga? How also did Bhisma advance against the Pandavas? Speak to me of all these, O Sanjaya.

Sanjaya said :—

2. Then towards the hour of sunrise, all the Pandava warriors, with the sound of drums, cymbals and Anakas,

3. And with the blare of conchs of the hue of curds, all around, placing Sikhandin at their van, marched forth in battle-array.

4. O mighty monarch, they disposed of their troops in an array capable of destroying all the foes; and O ruler of men, Sikhandin then occupied the van of all the troops.

5. Then Bhimasena and Dhananjaya became the protectors of his car-wheels. Behind him were the sons of Draupadi and the highly puissant son of Subhadra.

6. Then Satyaki and Chekitana, each a mighty car-warrior, became the protector of these last named. Behind them came Dhristadyumna protected by the Panchalas.

7. Then king Yudhisthira that mighty lord, with his twin brothers, Nakula and Sahadeva, proceeded to battle, O foremost of the Bharatas, uttering his war-cries aloud.

8. After him came Virata supported by his own divisions and then came, O mighty-armed one, king Draupada.

9. The five Kekaya brothers, and the highly powerful Dhristaketu, protected, O Bharata, the rear of the Pandava forces.

10. Having thus disposed of their troops in battle-array, the Pandavas, all prepared to lay down their lives in battle, charged your divisions.

11. The Kauravas also, O king, placing at the van of all their troops the mighty car-warrior Bhisma, advanced against the Pandavas.

12. That invincible warrior Bhisma, was protected by your sons, all endued with great might. Next behind him came the mighty bowman Drona along with his highly puissant son Aswathaman.

13. Next behind came Bhagadatta supported by a division of elephants. Kripa and Kritavarman followed Bhagadatta.

14. After them came the powerful Sudakshina, the king of the Kamvojas, Jayatsena of the Magadha kingdom, and the son of Suvala, and Vrihadvala.

15. Other mighty royal bowmen headed by Susarman protected, O Bharata, the rear of your troops.

16. Day after day Bhisma the son of Santanu used to dispose of his troops in battle arrays such as *Pisachas*, *Rakshasas*, and *Asuras*.

17. Then ensued a fight, as they slew one another, between your troops and theirs, that added considerably to the population of Death's domain.

18. The sons of Pritha headed by Arjuna, placing Sikhandin in front of them, advanced towards Bhisma in battle, shooting arrows of various descriptions.

19. Then, O Bharata, your troops wounded with shafts shot by Bhima, exhausted with the loss of blood, repaired to the regions of the departed.

20. Then Nakula, Sahadeva, and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki, all approaching your troops began to afflict them with force.

21. Thus, O foremost of the Bharatas, slaughtered in battle, your troops were unable to resist the mighty army of the Pandavas.

22. Then your troops, being thus slain, crushed and afflicted by the mighty car-warriors, fled in all directions.

23. Being thus slaughtered, O foremost of the Bharatas, by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, with their sharp arrows, your troops could not find a protector.

Dhritarastra said :—

24. Tell me, O Sanjaya, what did the mighty Bhisma wrought up with wrath do, when he saw my troops thus afflicted by the Parthas in battle ?

25. Tell me also, O sinless one, how that afflicter of foes, that puissant hero confronted the Pandavas and slew the Somakas ?

Sanjaya said :—

26. I shall tell you, O monarch, what did your father do, when the troops of your sons were afflicted by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas.

27. The heroic Pandavas, O elder brother of Pandu, with cheerful hearts, advanced slaying the forces of your son.

28. Then, O foremost of men, Bhisma did not tolerate that slaughter of men, elephants and steeds, of your host, by the enemy.

29—31. Then that fierce bowmen, that invincible hero, ready to lay down his life in battle, showered upon the Pandavas, the Panchalas and the Srinjayyas, a downpour of sharp lances, and *Vatsadantas* and *Anjalikas*. Then, O king, wielding his weapons Bhisma with his shafts repulsed the five foremost and mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host who had been vigorously exerting themselves in battle. He held them in check by showering on them many weapons both

offensive and defensive, all sped with wrath and force.

32. Wrought up with rage, he slew in battle countless numbers of elephants and steeds. Then, O king, that foremost of men overthrowing many car-warriors from their cars,

33. Many horse-soldiers from the back of horses, and also many foot-soldiers, and elephant-riders from the back of the elephants, inspired terror into the hearts of the foe.

34. Then like the Asuras assailing the wielder of the thunderbolt, the Pandavas assailed, in a body, that single-handed mighty car-warrior Bhisma who was moving swiftly up and down the field of battle.

35. Then Bhisma was seen in all directions, with a terrible form and shooting sharp arrows of which the touch was as fatal as that of Indra's thunderbolt.

36. As Bhisma fought on, his bow that resembled the mighty bow of Indra (Rainbow) was seen to remain continuously in a circular form.

37. Then, O ruler of men, your sons beholding those mighty feats of Bhisma in battle, were amazed, and highly honoured the grandsire.

38. Then like the immortals looking, in the days of yore, at Viprachitti, the Parthas with depressed hearts began to look at your heroic father who was fighting fiercely;

39—40. And they were unable to resist him who then looked like Death's self with wide-open mouth. On the tenth day of the battle, Bhisma began to consume with his sharp arrows the car-host of Sikhandin like fire consuming a forest. Then Sikhandin with three arrows pierced Bhisma between his breasts,

41. Bhisma—who then resembled an enraged snake of virulent venom or the Destroyer himself let loose by time. Thus sorely pierced by Sikhandin Bhisma looking at him

42. And waxing wroth, as if unwillingly said these words with a smile :—"Whether you strike me (with arrows) or not, I will never fight with you;

43. You are even now the same Sikhandin as the creator made you before." Hearing these words of his, Sikhandin overwhelmed with rage,

44. Said these words to Bhisma in battle licking at the same time the corners of his mouth. "I know you, O mighty-armed hero, to be the destroyer of the Kshatriyas.

45. I have heard of the battle you fought with the son of Jamadagni; I have also heard of your divine prowess.

46. Knowing your prowess, I will still fight with you this day, desirous of doing a good turn to the Pandavas and to myself, O afflicter of foes.

47. O foremost of men, I will fight with you this day on the field of battle, and will, without doubt, slay you in battle. This I swear by my troth before you.

48. Having heard these words of mine do what you think to be your duty. Whether you strike me or not, you shall not escape me alive this day. So, O ever-victorious Bhisma, let your eyes take a good view of this world, (as they will no longer see its charms)."

Sanjaya said :—

49. Having thus spoken, he, with five shafts of depressed knots, pierced Bhisma in battle who had already been deeply pierced with the former's wordy arrows.

50. Hearing those words of Sikhandin, the mighty car-warrior Savyasachi (Arjuna) thinking that that was the right moment (to strike Bhisma) urged the former on saying :—

51. 'I shall fight behind you crushing the enemy with my arrows'; now inflamed with wrath, do you assail Bhisma of dreadful prowess.

52. O mighty-armed hero, Bhisma will not be able to cause pain to you in battle, Therefore, O mighty hero, do you now assail Bhisma putting forth all your energies.

53. If, O sire, you do return without slaying Bhisma in battle, you, along with myself, shall be exposed to the derision of the world.

54. O hero, so exert yourself, that we may not be held in ridicule in this fierce battle. Struggling vigorously in battle, do you slay the grand-sire.

55. I, myself O mighty hero, shall look to your protection, repulsing all the car-warriors of the enemy's host. Do you overthrow the grandfather.

56. Drona and his son, Krishna, Suyodhana, Chitresana, Vikarna, Jayadratha the king of the Sindhus,

57. The two *Avanti* princes Vinda and Anuvinda, and Sudakshina the ruler of the Kamvojas, the heroic Bhagadatta, the mighty ruler of the Magadhas,

58. The valiant son of Somadatta, the Rakshasa, Alamvusha, and the ruler of the Triggarttas along with all the mighty car-warriors,—

59. All these warriors, I will resist like the banks resisting the waves of the mighty main. I will also hold at bay the mighty warriors of the Kuru army all united against us and fighting with us. Do you overthrow the grand-sire.

Thus ends the hundred and ninth chapter, the interchange of words between Bhisma and Sikhandin in the commencement of the tenth day's battle, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma-parva.

CHAPTER CX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How did Sikhandin the prince of the Panchalas waxing wroth in battle rush against the son of Ganga, the grandfather of the Kurus, of illustrious soul and of regulated vows?

2. Who were those mighty car-warriors that actively defended Sikhandin in that occasion needing great activity, with their weapons upraised and heart longing for victory?

3. How did also Santanu's son, Bhisma possessed of great prowess, fought on the tenth day, with the Pandavas and the Srinjayas?

4. I am unable to brook the thought of Bhisma overthrown by Sikhandin in battle. Was then his (Bhisma's) car shattered or his bow burst?

Sanjaya said :—

5. Neither was the bow of Bhisma broken nor was his car shattered to fragments, when, O foremost of the Bharata, he fought on with the foe,

6. Slaying them in battle with many shafts of straight knots. Many hundreds and thousands of mighty car-warriors belonging to your army,

7. Many huge-tusked elephants, O king, as also many well-caparisoned chargers, advanced to battle, with the grandsire at their head.

8. In perfect harmony with his vow, O foremost of the Kurus, the ever-victorious Bhisma continuously went on slaughtering the troops of the Pandavas.

9. The Panchalas accompanied by the Pandavas were incapable of withstanding that fierce bowman as he fought on, slaying the foe with his shafts.

10. When the tenth day arrived, Bhisma scattered the hostile army with his whetted shafts, by hundreds and thousands.

11. Then the Pandavas could not vanquish in battle that fierce bowman that sire of Pandu, who then resembled the Destroyer himself with his noose in hand.

12 Thereupon, O mighty monarch, the invincible Vibhatsu, the conqueror of the god of wealth, who was able to use his weapons even with his left hand, rushed to the spot terrifying all the car-warriors present.

13. Then like the Destroyer himself, Pritha's son carreered through the field, roaring constantly like a lion, twanging his bow-string and shooting myriads of arrows.

14. Terrified at his roars, your warriors, O foremost of the Bharatas, fled, O king, out of panic, like deer flying at the sight of a lion.

15. Then beholding the son of Pandu, to be the master of the field, and seeing his own troops greatly afflicted, Duryodhana, oppressed with fear thus addressed Bhisma :—

Duryodhana said :—

16. "Yonder stands the son of Pandu, owning cream-coloured steeds and Krishna himself for his charioteer, consuming my ranks, O sire, like fire itself consuming a forest.

17. Behold, O son of Ganga, O foremost of warriors, my troops routed and afflicted in battle, on all sides by that son of Pandu.

18. Just as a herds-man be labours his herd in the forest (with a cudgel), so, O afflicter of foes, see my army belaboured by Arjuna (with his arrows).

19. Routed and shattered by the arrows of Dhananjaya as my troops are, the invincible Bhima also is slaughtering them.

20. Satyaki, Chekitana, the twin sons of Madri by Pandu, and also Abhimanyu of great prowers,—all these warriors are crushing my hosts.

21. The heroic Dhristadyumna, and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, are also forcibly routing and driving away my troops in this fierce battle.

22. Of these troops who are being thus slaughtered by all these mighty car-warriors, I see no other refuge, regarding the staying on the field and fighting with the foe, O Bharata,

23. Than yourself, O foremost of men, who are equal to the celestials in battle. Therefore do you speedily confront those warriors, and so became the protector of my afflicted army."

24. Thus spoken to, O mighty monarch, your sire Devavrata, reflecting for a moment only and forming his determination,

25. Spoke these words to your son, consoling him therewith :—"O Duryodhana, O ruler of men, hear patiently what I now speak to you.

26. Before the battle commenced, O mighty hero, I vowed to you, that slaying ten thousand high-souled Kshatriya warriors

27. Every day, I would desist from fighting. O foremost of the Bharatas, I have acted up to my words.

28. This day, O highly puissant hero, I shall perform a marvellous feat. Either slain I shall lie on the field, or I will to-day slay the Pandavas.

29. To-day, O foremost of male being I will liquidate the debt I owe to you,—debt arising out of the food you gave me—by shuffling off this mortal coil in the very thick of battle."

30. Having thus spoken, O foremost of the Bharatas, that invincible hero scattering his arrows broadcast among the Kshatriyas, rushed against the ranks of the Pandavas,

31. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, the Pandavas began to resist the son of Ganga wrought up with rage, remaining in the centre of his divisions and looking like a snake of virulent poison.

32. Then, O delighter of the Kuru race, on that the tenth day of the battle, Bhisma exhibiting his own prowess, O king, slew hundreds and thousands of warriors.

33. Of those who were the foremost princes amongst the Panchalas, he robbed the strength, like the sun drawing moisture with its rays.

34. Having slain ten thousand swift-moving elephants and also, O monarch, ten thousand chargers with their riders,

35. And full hundred thousands of foot soldiers, that foremost of men, Bhisma, seemed to blaze forth like fire without a streak of smoke.

36. None among the Pandava host was then able to look at him, as he then shone like the lustrous orb of the day shining in the Northern solstice.

37. Then those Pandava troops and the mighty car-warriors of the Srinjaya clan, thus afflicted by Bhisma, in battle, rushed to slay that fierce bowmen.

38. Then fighting with tremendous odds, Bhisma the son of Santanu looked like the mount Meru enveloped by clouds on all sides.

39. Your son Duryodhana supported by a mighty division protected Ganga's son by surrounding him on all sides. Then ensued a terrible combat.

Thus ends the hundred and tenth chapter, the coloquy between Bhisma and Duryodhana in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O king, Arjuna beholding Bhisma's prowess in battle, addressed Sikhandin saying :—"Confront the grandsire.

2. You should entertain no fear from Bhisma to-day, I will dislodge him from his excellent car with my sharp arrows."

3. Thus spoken to by Partha, and having listened to the former's words, Sikhandin, O foremost of the Bharatas, rushed against the son of Ganga.

4. Then also, O king, Dhristadyumna and the mighty car-warrior the son of Subhadra, filled with delight at having heard Arjuna's word, rushed against Bhisma.

5. Also the two aged warriors Virata and Drupada, and Kuntivoja each protected with an armour, rushed against Ganga's son before the very eyes of your son.

6. Nakula, and Sahadeva, and the highly powerful Dharmaraja Yudhisthira, as also the other inferior soldiers, O ruler of men,

7. All advanced against the son of Ganga. As to your warriors who confronted, to the best of their abilities and to the best of their energies, those united and mighty car-warriors of the enemy, hear me speak.

8. Chitrasena, O king, confronted in battle Chekitana who had been proceeding against Bhisma in battle like a tiger-cub rushing against a bull.

9. Kritavarman checked Dhristadyumna, O king, who having speedily approached Bhisma was then displaying his prowess in battle.

10. O monarch, then with great activity Somadatta's son encountered Bhimasena

inflamed with rage and exerting for the slaughter of Ganga's son.

11. Then Vikarna, desirous of protecting the life of Bhisma checked the heroic Nakula who had been shooting myriads of shafts.

12. Then Kripa, the son of Saradwata, wrought up with rage, checked, in battle, Sahadeva proceeding towards the car of Bhisma.

13. Then the powerful Durmukha rushed against the highly powerful Rakshasa of fearful deeds, that son of Bhimasena who was deirous of slaying Bhisma.

14—18. Your son (Duryodhana) resisted Satyaki proceeding to battle. Sudakshina, the ruler of the Kamvojas, checked, O king, Abhimanyu as he was rushing against the car of Bhisma. Aswathaman inflamed with wrath, O Bharata, checked the two aged warriors, those crushers of foes, Virata and Drupada. Then the son of Bharadwaja carefully fighting checked the son of Pandu (Yudhisthira), as he was proceeding desirous of slaying Bhisma. Then, O king, the fierce bow-man Dussasana checked in battle, Arjuna himself, who desirous of reaching near Bhisma was advancing, placing Sikhandin before him, and illumining the ten points of the compass.

19. Other warriors of your host resisted in that batle the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host as they were proceeding towards Bhisma in battle.

20. Then excited to the highest pitch of fury, the mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna rushed against Bhisma, repeatedly addressing the troops thus in a loud voice,

21. "Yon delighter of the Kurus Arjuna himself is rushing towards Bhisma. Rush you then upon the latter, and be not afraid. Bhisma will never be able to assail you.

22. Even Vasava himself is not capable of withstanding Arjuna in battle, what to speak of the heroic Bhisma whose energy is gone and life is exhausted ?"

23. Hearing these words of their generalissimo, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host, with delighted hearts, rushed against the car of the son of Ganga.

24. Then those warriors of your army, all foremost of men, cheerfully resisted that onslought of the Pandavas that looked like a furiously advancing mass of living energy.

25. Then, O mighty monarch, the great car-warrior Dussasana, desirous of saving Bhisma's life, confronted Dhananjaya, dismissing all fear from his mind.

26. So also the heroic Pandavas rushing towards the car of Ganga's son, assailed your sons, all mighty car-warriors.

27. Then, O monarch, we beheld a wonderful incident, namely that reaching Dussasana's car Partha could not advance further.

28. Just as the banks resistl the mighty main with its waters agitated, so did your son resist that son of Pandu inflamed with rage.

29. Both of them were excellent car-warriors, both were invincible, O Bharata, and both resembled the moon and the sun in splendour and beauty.

30. Then like Maya and Sakra encountering each other in the days of yore, those two heroes encountered each other in battle, highly excited with wrath, and desirous of slaying one another.

31. Then, O monarch, Dussasana wounded the son of Pandu with three shafts in battle, and the son of Vasudeva with twenty.

32. Thereat Arjuna waxing wroth upon beholding him of the Vrishni race afflicted with arrows, sped hundred long shafts at Dussasana in that encounter.

33. Those shafts, penetrating through the latters armour's drank his life-blood. Thereupon, inflamed with rage, Dussasana pierced Pritha's son with five shafts.

34. Then again, O foremost of the Bharata, he pierced Arjuna with three shafts of exceeding sharpness, on the forehead. Then with those arrows, stuck on the forehead, Pandu's son appeared beautiful like

35. The mount Meru with its crests towering high in the heavens. Pierced deeply by your son wielding the bow, that mighty bowman

36. Partha appeared beautiful like the flowering *Kinsuka* tree. Then that son of Pandu, greatly excited afflicted Dussasana,

37. Like the enraged Rahu afflicting the fullmoon on the fifteenth day of the light half of a month. Then thus afflicted by the powerful Partha, your son, O ruler of men,

38. Pierced the former with arrows winged with the feathers of the Kanka bird and whetted on stone. Then Partha bursting open Dussasana's bow and shattering his car with his arrows,

39. Shot at him numerous dreadful arrows resembling the mace of Death himself.

Then your son cut off those arrows before they could reach him,

40. Sped though they were by Partha exerting his best in battle. Indeed this appeared to be marvellous. Once more your son pierced the son of Pritha with shafts of exceeding sharpness.

41. Thereupon wrought up with rage Partha fixing on his bow-string arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone, discharged them at your son.

42. These shafts, O monarch, entered into the body of the illustrious Dussasana, like swans, O Bharata, diving into the waters of a lake.

43. Thus your son sorely afflicted by the illustrious son of Pandu, quickly avoiding him proceeded towards the chariot of Bhisma.

44. Then indeed Bhisma was like an island to him who was sinking into the fathomless deep (of pain). Then, O ruler of men, regaining his senses, your son,

45. Endued with bravery, and prowess, again began to check Partha with well-sharpened shafts, like Indra resisting Vritra. Your son of huge stature, penetrated Arjuna through and through but the latter did feel no pain at all.

Thus ends the hundred and eleventh chapter, the encounter between Arjuna and Dussasana, in the Bhisma-bad'ha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA) :—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. The son of Rishyasringa, that fierce bowman resisted in battle Satyaki, who clad in mail was rushing towards Bhisma in battle.

2. Thereupon, O king, he of Madhu's race, wrought up with rage, wounded the Rakshasa with nine shafts, as if smiling.

3. So also, O king, the enraged Rakshasa with nine shafts afflicted the illustrious grandson of Sini of the race of Madhu.

4. Then that slayer of hostile heroes that descendant of Madhus race viz the grandson of Sini, excited to the highest pitch of fury, shot numerous shafts at the Rakshasa in battle.

5. Then the mighty-armed Rakshasa, O you of prowess incapable of being baffled, pierced Satyaki with sharp arrows and uttered aloud his war-cry.

6. Then that powerful descendant of Madhus race also, though deeply pierced by the Rakshasa, depending on his own energy, smiled and uttered his war-cry.

7. Then, Bhagadatta, wrought up with wrath in battle, pierced with whetted shafts that descendant of Madhu's race, like a guide piercing a huge elephant with a hook.

8. Then leaving alone the Rakshasa in battle, that foremost of car-warriors namely the grandson of Sini, hurled darts of depressed knots against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas.

9. Then the ruler of the Pragjyotisas with a sharp-edged broad-headed shaft cut off the the mighty bow of the descendant of Madhu's race, displaying great lightness of hand.

10. Thereupon that slayer of hostile heroes, taking up another bow of great toughness, pierced the enraged Bhagadatta with sharp shafts in battle.

11—13. Thus deeply pierced, that mighty bow-man, licking the corners of his mouth, hurled at Satyaki an iron lance decked with gold and lapises, of great toughness, and terrible like the mace of Death. Then Satyaki with his arrows cut off that lance, O king, that had been coursing swiftly towards him, being shot by the force of Bhagadatta's arm. Then that lance fell down with force on the ground like a large meteor shorn of its splendure.

14. Beholding that lance to be baffled, your son, O ruler of men, checked him of Madhu's race, surrounding him with a large number of cars.

15. Then seeing that mighty car-warrior of the Vrishni race thus surrounded, king Duryodhana highly excited with rage, thus spoke to his brothers :—

16. "Do you all so strive, O Kurus, that this Satyaki may not return back with his life from this mighty host of chariots.

17. If he be slain, I may then consider the whole host of the Pandavas as nothing more than slain." Then accepting his words by saying 'yea', the mighty car-warriors,

18—19. Stationed in front of Bhisma began to fight with the grandson of Sini. Then the powerful ruler of the Kumvojas checked, in battle, Abhimanyu who had been vigorously advancing against Bhisma. Then the son of Arjuna having pierced the king with arrows of depressed knots,

20—21. Once more wounded the king with sixty-four arrows. Thereupon Sudakshina also, desirous of saving Bhisma's life in

battle, pierced Abhimanyu with five shafts and the latter's charioteer with nine arrows. Then the battle that ensued consequent upon the encounter of those two heroes, was exceedingly fierce.

22—23. Sikhandin that grinder of foes rushed against the son of Ganga. The two old mighty car-warriors, Drupada and Virata, inflamed with rage, rushed to fight with Bhisma, holding at bay the army of the Kauravas as they advanced. Thereupon that foremost of car-warriors namely Aswathaman, wrought up with wrath confronted both those warriors in battle.

24. Then, O Bharata, a dreadful fight ensued between him and the old heroes. O afflicter of foes, with ten broad-headed shafts Virata wounded

25. The mighty bowman, the son of Drona, the ornament of the field of battle as he advanced with velocity towards them. Drupada also with his sharp arrows pierced Aswathaman.

26. Then Ashwathaman pierced with numerous shafts those two mighty warriors who having neared the son of the preceptor, had been wounding him with arrows.

27. Still the heroes Virata and Drupada advanced towards Bhisma; we then beheld an admirable feat achieved by those two old warriors,

28. In as much as they repulsed all the dreadful arrows shot by Drona's son. Then Kripa the son of Saradwata rushed against the advancing Sahadeva,

29—30. Like one infuriated elephant rushing against a compeer in the same state, in the woods. Then the heroic Kripa quickly pierced that mighty car-warrior the son of Madri with seventy shafts all decked with golden wings. Then the son of Madri burst his bow in twain with his strong shafts.

31. Then the former pierced the latter whose bow has been cut asunder with nine shafts. The latter then taking up another bow capable of bearing great strain,

32. And desirous of saving the life of Bhisma and excited with anger, struck cheerfully on the breast the son of Madri with ten shafts of exceeding sharpness.

33. So also, O king, urged by the desire for slaying Bhisma, the son of Pandu also worked up with rage struck the wrathful son of Saradwata on his breast.

34—35. Then ensued a fierce fight of terrible aspect and capable of inspiring terror. Then that afflicter of foes viz., Vikarna, desirous of rescuing the grandsire, and waxed up with rage, pierced Nakula in battle with no less then sixty shafts. Thus deeply pierced by your highly intelligent son, Nakula also

36. Penetrated Vikarna with seven and sixty sharp arrows. Then for the sake of Bhisma, those two foremost of men, those two afflicters of foes,

37—41. Those two heroes began to assail one another like two heifers amongst a herd of kine. Then for the sake of protecting Bhisma, the mighty Durmukha confronted the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, who had been advancing to the fight slaying your troops. Then, O king, the son of Hidimva excited with wrath, struck that afflicter of foes viz., Durmukha on the breast with an arrow of straight knots. Then the heroic Durmukha, having cheerfully pierced Bhimasena's son with sixty keen-pointed arrows, uttered his war-cry, standing at the van of the army. Then that mighty car-warrior, the son of Hridika checked that foremost of car-warriors Dhristadyumna as he was advancing desirous of slaying Bhisma. Then the son of Prishata having pierced Hridika's son with five iron darts,

42—43. Once more quickly struck him between his breasts with fifty shafts. Similarly, O king, Hridika's son pierced the son of Prisata with nine arrows excedingly sharp and effulgent and furnished with wings made of the feathers of Kanka birds. Then for the sake of Bhisma, a fierce battle raged between them,

44—45. As they struck one another with great ardour, like that between Vritra and the great Indra. Bhurisravas speedily came upon the mighty Bhimasena who had been falling upon Bhisma. Then the son of Somadatta wounded Bhima in the centre of his chest,

46. With a long shaft of great sharpness and golden wings. With that shaft stuck on his breast, the puissant Bhimasena appeared beautiful,

47—48. Like the Krouncha mountain, O foremost of kings, in the days of yore bearing the lance of Skanda. Then these two foremost of men, inflamed with fury, sped at one another, arrows of solar effulgence and burnished by the forgers themselves. Then Bhima desirous of slaying Bhisma fought with that mighty car-warrior viz Somadattas son,

49. Similarly the latter longing for the victory of Bhisma, struggled with the former, both striving to counteract one another in his feats.

50. The son of Bharadwaja held in check that son of Kunti, Yudhisthira, who

was coming upon Bhisma, surrounded by his large division.

51. Then, O king, hearing the clatter of Drona's chariot, that resembled the rumble of the rain-cloud Parjanya, the Prabhadrakas, O sire, quaked (with fear).

52. Thus assailed by Drona that mighty division of the son of Pandu could not stir one step forward, though striving vigorously.

53. Then your son Chitrasena, with a fearful expression, checked in battle Chekitana advancing, O ruler of men, against Bhisma.

54. Then for the sake of Bhisma, that mighty car-warrior (Chitrasena) endued with prowess and a praiseworthy quickness of hand, fought, O Bharata, to the best of his abilities, with Chekitana ;

55. Similarly Chekitana also fought with him with equal ardour. Then fierce was the battle that commenced consequent upon their encountering each other.

56. Then, O Bharata, Arjuna though repeatedly resisted by your son, repulsed the latter's divisions and began to crush your troops.

57. But Dussasana resisted Partha to the best of his powers, determined, O Bharata that the latter might not slay Bhisma.

58. Thus the army of your son being thus slaughtered, the foremost of car-warriors began, O Bharata, to betray signs of agitation.

Thus ends the hundred and twelfth chapter, the single-combats between the hostile heroes, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. Then that foremost of men, the valiant Drona, that fierce bow-man possessed of the prowess of an infuriate elephant and of great energy taking up and shaking his bow capable of checking even an infuriate elephant, began to crush the arrayed lines of the Pandavas, having penetrated into their very midst.

3. That highly powerful one conversant with the nature of all omens beholding various omens on all sides, thus addressed his son who had also been consuming the ranks of the enemy.

4. " This indeed is the day, O son, on which the highly powerful son of Pritha desirous of slaying Bhisma in battle, will exert his utmost.

5. My arrows are coming out of their own accord, and my bow seems to gape. My weapons are falling off when I am trying to fix them on the bow-string, and my mind is losing its ardour and warmth.

6. Animals and birds are emitting fearful and inauspicious cries on all sides. The vultures are swooping down upon the mighty host of the Bharatas.

7. The sun seems to be waned in its effulgence ; all the points of the compass have assumed a crimson hue. The earth seems to be pained and to utter cries and to tremble on all sides.

8. The *Kanka* birds, the vultures and the cranes are incessantly uttering cries. The jackals are uttering inauspicious and dreadful yells foreboding a terrible calamity.

9. Mighty meteors seem to shoot out from the centre of the solar disc. The constellation Parigha with trunkless form seems to over-ride the sun.

10. The solar and the lunar discs have assumed dreadful aspects, foreboding terrible calamity to the kings, in the shape of the mangling of their bodies.

11. The images of gods consecrating the temples of the Kuru king are laughing trembling and dancing, and lamenting.

12. The planets are revolving, keeping the inauspicious sun to their left ; and the charming deity of the moon is risen with his horns downwards.

13. The persons of kings belonging to the host of Dhritarastra's son appear to have lost all splendour, and though clad in armour, they do not seem to be shining.

14. A loud uproar set up by the two armies is being heard, as also the blare of the conch Panchajanya, and the twang of bow of Gandiva.

15. Surely Vibhatsu will, with the help of his excellent weapons, leaving other warriors in battle, confront the grandsire.

16. The pores of the hair of my body are being contracted, and my mind misgives, thinking, O hero of long arms, of the battle that will ensue between Bhisma and Arjuna.

17. Placing before him that prince of the Pachalas, who is of sinful soul and who is ever inclined to deceitful behaviour, Partha is proceeding for battle towards Bhisma.

18. Bhisma had said before, *I will never slay Sikhandin. He was created a female*

by the Creator, but has become a man out of chance only.

19. This mighty son of Yajnasena is thus reckoned as an inauspicious sign. The son of the ocean-going Ganga will not therefore strike that inauspicious person.

20. Thus as I reflect, my mind misgives, knowing that Arjuna is rushing against the old grandsire of the Kurus, highly wrought up with rage.

21. These three namely, the wrath of Yudhisthira, the encounter between Bhisma and Arjuna and my exertions in this battle are surely very harmful to the creatures.

22. The son of Pandu is highly intelligent, endued with strength, heroic, accomplished in the use of weapons, possessed of great agility and lightness; he is capable of shooting his arrows to a great distance, and is firm in shooting them and is conversant with the nature of omens.

23. He is invincible in battle even by the celestials headed by Vasava himself. He is mighty, quick-witted, indefatigable and the foremost of all warriors;

24. He is ever victorious in battle and possessed of dreadful weapons. Avoiding his path do you repair to Bhisma of regulated vows.

25—27. This day you will behold in battle a terrible massacre. Auspicious, mighty and gold-decked armours of heroes will be splintered into pieces with arrows of close knots; the tops of standards, the *lomaras* and bows, and resplendent and sharp lances, and darts of the effulgence of gold and the caparisons of elephants shall this day be torn and broken by the enraged diadem-decked Arjuna.

28. This is not the time, O son for dependants to take care of their own lives. So, keeping paradise in view, do you rush to battle for winning victory and fame.

29. Yonder is Arjuna, with his banner bearing the emblem of [an ape, crossing on his car the dreadful current of battle, having cars, elephants and chargers for its eddies and which is incapable of being crossed over.

30. Devotion to the Brahmanas, self-control, benevolence, asceticism, and laudable good conduct—these are to be found in that king only who owns for his brothers Dhananjaya,

31. The mighty Bhimasena and the two sons of Pandu begotten upon Madri, and who have the son of Vasudeva of the Vrishni race for his saviour.

32. It is the wrath, engendered by grief, of that Yudhisthira whose person have been consumed by the austerities of asceticism, that is consuming the host of the wicked-souled son of Dhritarastra.

33. Yonder is seen the son of Pritha having Vasudeva for his protector, and checking all the troops of Dhsitarastra's host.

34. Yon is seen the army agitated by the diadem-decked Arjuna, like the waters of the ocean agitated by a mighty whale.

35. Listen to the cries of 'Alas and Oh' and to the shrieks of agony and distress! Go, confront the son of the Panchala king. I will confront Yudhisthira.

36. Protected as it is on all sides with *Atirathas*, the centre of the very strong array of the mighty king's troops is difficult of being penetrated into, like the bowels of sea being difficult of access.

37. Satyaki, Abhimanyu, Dhristadyumna and Vrikodara, and the twins Nakula and Sahadeva are all engaged in protecting that foremost of men *viz* king Yudhisthira.

38. Blue-complexioned like the younger brother of Indra, and tall like a mighty Sala tree, yonder is Abhimanyu rushing to fight at the head of his division, like a second Phalguna.

39. Make your excellent weapons ready, grasp your mighty bow, and then rush against the royal son of Prisata and fight also with Vrikodara.

40. What person wishes not his dear-loved son to live for eternal years? But in view of the duties of Kshatriyas, I do command you to fight.

41. Yonder is Bhisma, equal in battle to Death himself or Varuna, O son, consuming the hostile host.

Thus ends the hundred and thirteenth chapter, the colloquy between Drona and Aswathaman in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXIV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having heard those words of the high-souled Drona, Bhagadatta, Kripa, Salya, Kritavarman,

2. The princes Vinda and Anuvinda from Avanti, Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus, Chitrasena, Vikarna and Durmarsana and others,

3. These ten warriors of your army engaged with Bhimasena in battle, supported by a large division consisting of troops recruited from various countries,

4. And desirous, O king, of winning great fame in that battle for Bhisma's sake. Then Salya pierced Bhimasena with nine arro ;

5. Kritavarman pierced him with three shafts, Kripa with nine, and, O sire, Chitrasena, Vikarna and Bhagadatta

6. Each pierced Bhimasena with ten arrows separately. The ruler of the Sindhus pierced Bhimasena with three arrows.

7. Vinda and Anuvinda pierced the son of Pandu, with five shafts each; and Durmarsana pierced him with twenty shafts of exceeding sharpness.

8—9. Then, O mighty monarch, that slayer of hostile heroes, *viz.*, the heroic son of Pandu wounded, one after another, all those mighty car-warriors of the Dhritarastra host, of world-wide fame. He pierced Salya with seven arrows, Kritavarman with eight;

10. And, O Bharata, he cut in the middle Kripa's bow with arrows fixed on the string, in that battle. Then again he pierced the latter whose bow had been cut in twain with seven shafts.

11. He also wou Vinda and Anuvinda with three sha each, and Durmarsana with twenty and Chitrasena with five.

12. Then Bhima having pierced Vikarna with ten arrows and the ruler of the Sindhus with five, roared out in delight; and then again he pierced Jayadratha with three arrows.

13. Thereafter that foremost of car-warriors, that son of Gotami, taking up another bow and waxing wroth, pierced Bhima with ten shafts of great sharpness.

14. Then like a huge elephant pierced with the hook, the mighty Bhimasena, pierced with those ten arrows, was worked up with rage, O monarch,

15—16. And he pierced the son of Gotami with numerous arrows in battle. Then with three arrows, that one of effulgence like that of the Destroyer himself despatched to the regions of Death, the steeds and driver of the ruler of the Sindhus. Then that mighty car-warrior quickly jumping down from the car, the steed of which were slain,

17—18. Discharged sharp arrows towards Bhimasena in that battle. Then, O sire, with a couple of broad-headed arrows Bhima cut in twain the bow, O foremost of the Bharatas, of the illustrious ruler of the Sindhus. Then the latter, O king, with his bow burst, his horses and charioteer slain, and deprived of his car,

19. Speedily ascended, O king, the chariot of Chitrasena. Then that son of Pandu achieved marvellous feats in that battle,

20. In as much as piercing all those mighty car-warriors with arrows and resisting them, he deprived, O sire, the ruler of the Sindhus, of his car, before the eyes of all on-lookers.

21. Then Salya did not tolerate the the prowess of Bhimasena; and fixing sharp arrows burnished of the forgers,

22. He pierced Bhima in battle, exclaiming 'Stay, Stay.' Then Kripa and Kritavarman, and the highly powerful Bhagadatta,

23. And Vinda and Anuvinda from Avanti, and Chitrasena, and Durmursana Vikarna, the valiant ruler of the Sindhus,

24. All these subduers of foes, then quickly pierced Bhima (with arrows), for rescuing Salya. He (Bhima) also pierced them in return, each with five shafts,

25. He pierced Salya first with seventy shafts and again with ten shafts. Salya also first piercing him with nine arrows next wounded him with five.

26. Then he pierced Bhima's charioteer deeply into the vitals with a broad-headed shaft. Then the mighty Bhimasena, beholding his charioteer Visoka thus mangled,

27—29. Wounded the king of the Madras in the breast and arms with three arrows. He then also pierced other bowmen in that battle, each with three shafts, and then roared aloud like a lion. Then all those bowmen, fighting with care, pierced Pandu's son, versed in all modes of warfare, in his vitals, each with three shafts of keen points. Though thus deeply pierced that fierce bowman Bhimasena was not pained in the least,

30. Like a mountain washed with thick shower of rain poured down by the clouds. Then possessed with anger that mighty car-warrior of the Pandavas,

31. Of illustrious fame, having pierced the king of the Madras with three shafts, wounded the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, O king, with hundred shafts in battle.

32. Then that high-famed warrior having pierced Kripa with many arrows, cut off the bow and the arrows of the illustrious descendant of the Satwata race,

33—34. With horse-shoe-headed arrow of great sharpness, displaying the while great lightness of hands. Then that afflicter of foes Kritavarman taking up another bow, struck Vrikodara between his two brows with a long and sharp shaft. Bhima then wounding Salya in battle with nine shafts wholly made of iron, pierced, Bhagadatta with three and Kritavarman with eight arrows, and each of the other warriors including the son of Gotami &c, with two shafts.

35. Those heroes also, O king, pierced him with exceedingly sharp arrows. Though thus pierced by all those mighty car-warriors with all kinds of weapons,

36—38. Yet regarding them as mere straws, he careered through the field without the least pain. Those foremost of car-warriors also patiently sped at Bhima sharp arrows by hundreds and thousands. Then the highly powerful heroic Bhagadatta let go his lance of great velocity and of a golden staff at that illustrious warrior Bhima. The mighty-armed king of the Sindhus hurled at the latter a lance and a battle-axe.

39—40. Kripa hurled at Bhima a Sataghni, and, O king, Salya a fierce dart; of the other warriors each, aiming at Bhima, forcibly let go five shafts whetted on stone. Then the son of the wind-god (Bhima), with a horse-shoe-headed arrow, cut that lance in twain.

41. He also severed that battle-axe as if it were sesamum stalk with three arrows; he broke into pieces the Sataghni with nine shafts furnished with wings of the feathers of *Kanka* birds.

42. Then Bhimasena ever proud in battle cut off every weapon into three parts; and he also pierced all those fierce bowmen opposed to him, each with three arrows.

43. Then when the combat was thus raging fiercely, Dhananjaya came there on his car, and beheld Bhima that mighty car-warrior,

44. Slay in battle his opponents and fight with them with his arrows. Then beholding those two illustrious sons of Pandu together,

45—46. Your warriors, all foremost of men, did not cherish any hope of victory then. Then Arjuna, who was proceeding desirous of slaying Bhisma, with Sikhandin before him, seeing Bhima fight with the ten mighty car-warriors of your army, confronted them in battle.

47. Then, O monarch, out of a desire for doing an act pleasurable of Bhima, Vibhatsu pierced those heroes who had been so coolly fighting with Bhima in battle.

48. Thereupon king Duryodhana urged king Susarman for bringing about the slaughter of Arjuna as also of Bhima.

49. "Go you, O Susarman, speedily surrounded by a large host of your troops. Slay me these two sons of Pandu, viz., Dhananjaya and Vrikodara."

50. Hearing these words of the king, the chief of the Trigarttas, the ruler of Prasthala, assaulting the two bowmen Bhima and Arjuna,

51. Surrounded them on all sides with many thousand chariots. Then ensued a fierce battle between Arjuna and his opponents.

Thus ends the one hundred and fourteenth chapter, the prowess of Bhimasena in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Arjuna covered over with his arrows of straightknots that mighty car-warrior Salya who had been fighting very carefully.

2. He pierced Susarman and Kripa, each with three shafts; then in that battle, the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, Jayadratha, the ruler of the Sindhus,

3. Chitrasena, Vikarna, Kritavarman, Durmarsana and, O king, the foremost car-warriors from Avanti,

4. All these warriors were pierced each with three shafts winged with *Kanka* and peacock feathers, by the *Atiratha* Arjuna, who had been afflicting your army.

5. Then, O Bharata, Jayadratha who was riding on the car of Chitrasena, having pierced Partha in battle, pierced Bhima also with his arrows.

6. Salya and Kripa those foremost of car-warriors also pierced in battle, Jishnu with myriads of shafts, O king, each capable of penetrating into the very vitals.

7—8. Then, O ruler of men, your sons headed by Chitrasena, in that battle quickly pierced Bhima and Arjuna, O sire, each shooting five arrows of exceeding sharpness. Then these two foremost of car-warriors the

two illustrious descendants of the Bharata race, viz., the sons of Kunti,

9. Afflicted in battle the mighty division of Trigartta troops; thereupon Susarman pierced Partha in battle with nine swift-coursing arrows.

10—12. And then he roared out his fierce war-cry, striking terror into the heart of the enemy's host. Other heroic car-warriors pierced Bhimasena and Dhananjaya with straight-going exceedingly sharp arrows, all furnishd with golden wings. Those two foremost descendants of the Bharata race, viz., the two sons of Kunti, sporting on their cars amidst those car-warriors, appeared beautiful, and resembled two enraged lions looking out for flesh amidst a herd of cows.

13. Cutting off the bows and arrows of the heroes in battle, those two fierce warriors began to fell the heads of men by hundreds.

14. Many cars were shattered; and steeds by hundreds were slain and in that fierce conflict, elephants with their riders fell on the ground by hundreds.

15. Here and there car-warriors and horse-men were slain; and many were seen to tremble on all sides.

16. The earth become strewn over with slain elephants, and mangled foot-soldiers and chargers, and with cars broken into splinters.

17. In that battle we beheld the marvellous prowess of the mighty Arjuna, in as much as, checking those heroes by his shafts, he slew troops by hundreds.

18. Then Kripa and Kritavarman, and Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus, and Vinda and Anuvinda from Avanti, did not abandon the fight.

19. Then the fierce bowman Bhima and the mighty car-warrior Phalguna began to crush severely the dreadful army of the Kurus.

20. Thereupon, the rulers of earth quickly began to pour on the car of Dhananjaya thousands and thousands of arrows.

21. Then checking those mighty car-warriors with the net-work of arrows woven by himself, Partha began to despatch them to the regions of Death.

22. Then in that battle, the mighty car-warrior Salya inflamed with wrath, pierced, as if sporting, Jishnu on the breast with broad-headed and straight-knotted shafts.

23. Then Partha having cut off the former's bow and gloves with five arrows, pierced him in his vital parts with arrows of great sharpness.

24. Thereupon taking up another bow capable of bearing great strain, the ruler of the Madras waxing wroth, pierced Jishnu in battle,

25. With three arrows, and the son of Vasudeva with five and Bhimasena on the breast and arms with nine shafts.

26. Then, O monarch, Drona and the king of the Magadhas, both being commanded by Duryodhana,, hied to that spot,

27. Where the two mighty car-warriors, Partha and Bhimasena, the sons of Pandu, had been slaughtering the mighty divisions of the Kourava host.

28. O foremost of the Bharatas, then Jayatsena in that battle pierced Bhimasena possessed of terrible weapon, with eight sharp arrows.

29. Then Bhima piercing him with ten shafts again pierced him with five, and he felled the latter's charioteer from his seat on the box of the car.

30. Then borne by the unrestrained steeds flying hither and thither, the ruler of the Magadhas was carried away from the field of battle even before the every eyes of the on-looking troops.

31. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, Drona availing himself of an weakness of Bhima pierced the latter with eight keen-pointed darts whetted on stone.

32. Then, O Bharata, Bhima, that hero ever proud in battle, pierced his sire-like preceptor first with five broad-headed arrows and then with another sixty of the same.

33. Arjuna also having pierced king Susarman with many shafts of iron, began to scatter the latter's host like a tempest scattering mighty masses of clouds.

34. Thereupon, Bhisma, king Duryodhana himself, the ruler of the Kosalas and Vrihadvala, all excited with rage assailed in a body Bhimasena and Dhananjaya.

35. So also the Pandava heroes, Prisata's son Dhristadyumna and others, rushed against Bhisma who then resembled Death with mouth wide open.

36. Sikhandin also approaching the grandsire of the Bharatas delightedly rushed at him, harbouring no fear from that mighty car-warrior.

37. The Parthas accompanied by the Srinjayas, and headed by Yudhisthira himself, with Sikhandin at their van fought on with Bhisma,

38. Similarly all your warriors with Bhisma of regulated vows at their forefront fought with the Partha warriors headed by Sikhandin.

39. Then the contest that ensued between the sons of Pandu and the Kouravas for the conquest of Bhisma, became terrible to the extreme.

40. In that battle, O ruler of men, that may be compared to a game at dice, for the sake of victory or the reverse, Bhisma was the stake of your warriors.

41. Then, O foremost of kings, Dhristadyumna urged on the troops to assail Ganga's son exclaiming, "Fear not, O excellent car-warriors."

42. Hearing the words of their generalissimo, the division of the Pandavas disregarding their lives quickly rushed at Bhisma.

43. Like the banks receiving the surging waves of the mighty main, Bhisma also, O monarch, that foremost of car-warrior, received that assailing host of the enemy.

Thus ends the hundred and fifteenth chapter, the prowess of Bhima and Arjuna, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXVI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How, O Sanjaya, did the highly puissant son of Santanu, viz., Bhisma fight on the tenth day with the Pandavas and the Srinjayas?

2. How did also the Kurus, check the Pandavas in battle? Describe to me the fierce battle that Bhisma, that ornament of battle-field, fought with the foe.

Sanjaya said :—

3. I shall, O Bharata, rehearse to you as to how did the Kurus fight with the Pandavas, and how also did that battle rage.

4. Day after day, the irate mighty car-warriors of your army were conveyed to the regions of the departed by the excellent weapons shot by the diadem-decked Arjuna.

5. That conqueror of assembled enemies, viz., Bhisma, that foremost of Kuru heroes ever redeeming his vows, also destroyed the hosts of the Pandavas.

6. Beholding Bhisma fighting at the head of the Kurus and Arjuna at the head of Panchala troops, we were unable, O afflicter of foes, to divine as to which side would be victorious.

7. Then in that battle on the tenth day when Bhisma and Arjuna confronted one another, the carnage that was caused was indeed terrible to the extreme.

8. Then Bhisma, the son of Santanu, that hero conversant with excellent weapons, slew, O afflicter of foes, many warriors by millions and thousands.

9. Many were the number of those unretreating heroes, whose names and designations and families were not known, who lay slaughtered by Bhisma on the field of battle.

10. Having consumed the Pandava ranks for ten days, the high-souled Bhisma, O afflicter of foes, became disregardful of his life.

11—12. Then wishing his quick slaughter at the face of the armies, and thinking—'I will no longer slay foremost of car-warriors in battle,'—your mighty-armed father Devavrata, addressing Yudhisthira who was then near him said these words :—

13. "O Yudhisthira, O very wise one, O you familiar with all the Sastras! Hear, O sire, I speak these words, that are fraught with moral teachings and that are capable of securing paradise for any one.

14. O Bharata, O sire, I am disgusted with this body of mine. I have passed my days in slaying numerous creatures in battle.

15. So if you desire to do me a good turn, strive your best for slaying me, placing the Panchalas and Srinjayas with Partha, before yourself."

16. Ascertaining that to be the desire of Bhisma, king Yudhisthira of unerring sight rushed against Bhisma in battle with the Srinjayas for his supporters.

17. Thereupon, O king, Dhrishtadyumna and Yudhisthira the son of Pandu, having heard those words of Bhisma urged on their forces saying :—

Yudhisthira said :—

18. Proceed, fight! conquer Bhisma in battle; you will be protected by Jishnu of unerring aim who is ever the conqueror of foes;

19. This fierce bowman the son of Prisata the commander of our hosts and Bhimasena also, will assuredly protect you all in battle.

20. Ho Srinjayas, entertain no fear of Bhisma in battle to-day! Placing Sikhandin in our van we will assuredly conquer Bhisma in battle."

Sanjaya said:—

21. Then on the tenth day, making all these arrangements, the Pandavas determined to conquer or to go to the regions of Brahma; and infuriate with rage, they encountered Bhisma.

22. Placing Sikhandin and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu at their head, they struggled arduously to overthrow Bhisma.

23. Then numerous heroic rulers of various countries commanded by your son, accompanied by their sons, and by their own mighty divisions,

24. As also your highly puissant son Dussasana supported by all his uterine brothers, then began to support Bhisma staying in the midst of the troops.

25. Then all your warriors placing before them Bhisma of regulated vows began to fight with the Parthas having Sikhandin at their van.

26. Then that hero having the ape as the device on his standard, placing Sikhandin before him and accompanied by the Chedis and Panchalas, rushed against Bhisma the son of Santanu.

27. The grandson of Sini fought with Drona's son, Dhristaketu with the descendant of Puru and Yudhamanyu with king Duryodhana and his ministers.

28. Then, O afflicter of foes, Virata supported by his division confronted Jayadratha with his troops, that heir of Vridhakshatra.

29. Yudhisthira encountered the king of Madras supported by his soldiers. Bhimasena also, well protected, assaulted the elephant division of the enemy.

30. The prince of the Panchalas wrought up with rage and supported by his uterine brothers rushed against Drona's son invincible, irresistible, and foremost of all wielders of weapons.

31. That subduer of enemies, viz., prince Vrihadvala, confronted Subhadra's son who bore the device of a lion on his standard and whose flag resembled a shaking *Karnikara* flower.

32. Then your sons accompanied by other monarchs, fell upon Sikhandin and that son of Pandu namely Dhananjaya, desirous of slaying them both.

33. Then when the fighters of the two hosts rushed impetuously against one another in that terrible combat, the earth shook underneath their tread.

34. Beholding Santanu's son in battle, the divisions of your army and those of the enemy clashed against one another, O Bharata.

35. Then when, infuriated, those two hosts rushed against one another, terrible was the din that filled all the different quarters of the earth, O Bharata.

36. And the din become still more awful being aggravated by the blare of conchs and the sound of drums and the roars of elephants and the war-cries of the troops.

37. Then the radiance emitted from the bracelets and diadems of all the royal warriors—radiance resembling the splendour of the sun or the moon—become bedimmed.

38. Clouds of dust were raised in which played the lightning consisting of the flashes of weapons. The twang of bows also became tremendous.

39. The whizzing of arrows, the blare of conchs, the loud sound of the drums, and the clatter of cars of the warriors of both the hosts were indeed awful.

40. The sky over the head of the two armies assumed a lowering aspect in consequence of the numerous darts, javelins, lances and arrows shot and hurled by them.

41. In that dreadful battle, car-warriors and horsemen, smote down one another. Elephants crushed elephants, and foot-soldiers slew foot-soldiers.

42. Then, O foremost of men, like the fight between two hawks for a piece of meat, the fight, for the sake of Bhisma, between the Pandavas and the Kurus, become very awful.

43. Then dreadful was the encounter in that battle between those two armies, each desirous of slaughtering and gaining victory over its rival.

Thus ends the hundred and sixteenth chapter, the advice of Bhisma, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXVII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then for the sake of Bhisma's slaughter, the highly powerful Abhimanyu, O mighty monarch, engaged with your son supported by his large division.

2. Thereupon king Duryodhana waxing wroth, pierced Krishna's nephew on the breast first with nine arrows of straight-knots, and then again with three shafts.

3. Then in that battle, Krishna's nephew, inflamed with wrath, let go at the car of

Duryodhana his lance that looked like the sister of Death himself.

4. Your son that mighty car-warrior, O ruler of men, with a horse-shoe-shaped arrow cut off in two that dreadful lance coursing swiftly towards himself.

5. Then the battle that raged between the two horses became awful and admirable to look at; and, O Bharata, it was gratifying to the senses and applauded by the rulers of earth.

6. The two heroes, viz., the son of Subhadra and the chief of the Kurus, fought fiercely with one another, the former for bringing about the slaughter of Bhisma and the latter for gaining victory over Arjuna.

7. Then that afflicter of foes, viz., Drona's son that foremost of Brahmanas encountering Satyaki in battle and waxing wroth, pierced the latter on the breast with a long shaft.

8. Then that grandson of Sini also possessed of generous heart, with nine shafts winged with *Kanka* feathers, pierced the preceptor's son, O Bharata, in all his vital parts.

9. Thereupon Ashwathaman pierced Satyaki in that battle, first with nine shafts, and next with thirty more on the breast and the arms.

10. Then that illustrious descendant of the Satwata race that great bowman thus deeply pierced by the son of Drona struck the latter with three shafts in return.

11. The mighty car-warrior, the descendant of the Kuru having covered that fierce, bow-man, viz., Dhristaketu with his shafts, wounded the latter on many parts of his body.

12. Similarly the mighty car-warrior Dhristaketu endued with great might, pierced in that battle that descendant of Kuru with three hundred shafts of great sharpness.

13. Thereupon the descendant of Puru, that mighty car-warrior, having cut off the bow of Dhristaketu uttered a loud roar and pierced the latter with many sharp arrows.

14. The latter then taking up another bow, wounded, O king, that descendant of Kuru, with seventy-three sharp shafts whetted on stone.

15. Then those two fierce bow-men, both mighty car-warriors, and of gigantic proportions pierced each other with their thick arrowy showers.

16. Then, O Bharata, those two heroes waxed up with rage, having cut off one another's bow and slain one another's steeds, and being thus deprived of the use of their cars, rushed against one another for fighting with the sword.

17—18. Then, O king, taking up two resplendent shields, made of bull's hide, and embossed and decked with hundred beautiful stars and moons on the ground, as also taking up two swords of dazzling effulgence, those two warriors assailed one another, like two lions, in the deep woods, both striving to consort with the same lioness in her season.

19. Longing to get near each other, they wheeled and moved, displaying various charming circles and various forward and backward movements.

20. Then the wrathful descendant of Puru, with his huge sword, struck Dhristaketu on the frontal bone, saying at the same time 'Stop, stop.'

21. The ruler of the Chedis also, with the sharp end of his mighty sword, wounded that descendant of Puru, that foremost of men, on his shoulder joint.

22. Then, O mighty monarch, those two subduers of foes, rushing against one another in that fierce combat, fell down, overthrown by one another's velocity,

23. Thereupon your son Jayatsena taking up the descendant of Puru carried him away from the field of battle on his own vehicle.

24. The highly powerful son of Madri, viz., Sahadeva, possessed of great prowess and heroism bore away Dhristaketu from the field on his own car.

25. Chitrasena having pierced Susarman with many iron shafts, again pierced him with sixty and again with nine shafts.

26. Susarman also waxing wroth in battle, O ruler of men, pierced your son with sets of ten sharp arrows each time.

27. He also pierced Chitrasena, O king, with nine shafts of depressed knots; then the latter inflamed with rage in battle pierced the former in return (with many shafts compassing the death).

28. Then in that conflict for Bhisma O king, Subhadra's son, acquiring great fame and honour fought with prince Vrihadvala,

29. Displaying his prowess, for helping his father Arjuna then rushing at the car of Bhisma. Then the ruler of the Kosalas having pierced Arjuna's son with five darts made of iron,

30. Once more pierced him with twenty shafts of staight-knots. Then Subhadra's son pierced the ruler of the Kosalas with eight iron-made darts.

31. But he could not make the latter tremble in battle before him, and so again pierced him with many arrows. Then the son of Phalguna cut off the bow of the Kosala king once more ;

32. And he struck him with thirty shafts furnished with wings of the *Kanka* feather. Thereupon that prince Vrihadvala taking up another bow,

33—34. And waxing irascible, pierced with many an arrow the son of Phalguna. Indeed, O afflicter of enemies, the battle, that took place for the sake of Bhisma, between them both, O king, inflamed with anger and both well-versed in all manner of warfare, was like that between Vali and Vasava in the days of yore on the occasion of the war between the celestials and the Asuras.

35. Bhimasena then fighting with the elephant division looked highly beautiful, like the wielder of the thunderbolt himself running upon the mountains.

36. Those elephants, huge-bodied like the hills, being thus slaughtered in battle fell down on the earth in large numbers, filling the earth with their roars.

37. Those elephants prodigious like hills and resembling broken heaps of antimony appeared beautiful, as they lay prostrate, like so many mountains covering the earth's surface.

38. Then king Yudhisthira that great bowman, protected by a mighty division encountering the Madra king in battle began to afflict him sorely.

39. The highly powerful ruler of the Madras also, for the sake of rescuing Bhisma began to afflict that mighty car-warrior the son of Dharma in battle.

40. The king of the Sindhus having pierced Virata with nine shafts of straight-knots once more pierced him with thirty shafts of keen edges.

41. Then Virata also that leader of a division, O king, in return pierced the ruler of the Sindhus with thirty sharp arrows between his breast.

42. Then those two kings of the Matsyas and the Sindhus, both of charming appearance and both furnished with beautiful armours, weapons and standards, and both wielding excellent bows and swords, appeared highly resplendent.

43. Then Drona being engaged in that dreadful battle with the son of the Panchala king, fought on fiercely with arrows of close knots.

44. Then Drona, O mighty monarch, having cut off the mighty bow of Prisata's son, pierced the latter with a set of fifty shafts.

45. Then that slayer of hostile heroes namely Prisata's son, took up another bow, and then he hurled at Drona a terrible mace resembling the bludgeon of Death himself.

46. Then Drona with fifty shafts, in that battle repulsed that mace decked with plates of gold as it flew swiftly towards himself.

47. Then, O king, that mace cut into fragments by the arrows shot from Drona's bow, and splintered and shattered into pieces, fell down on the surface of the earth.

48. Beholding his mace thus destroyed that afflicter of foes, viz., the son of Prisata hurled at Drona his lance, excellent, and made of iron.

49. Drona, O Bharata, cut off that lance with nine arrows in the battle ; and he then began to afflict the great bowman, viz., Prisata's son in battle.

50. Then, O mighty monarch, for the sake of Bhisma, raged the fierce battle between Drona and Prisata's son,—battle that was dreadful to the extreme and terrible in its aspects.

51. Then Arjuna sighting the son of Ganga rushed at him discharging sharp arrows, like an infuriate elephant rushing in the woods at a compeer in the same state.

52. The highly puissant king Bhagadatta confronted Arjuna, and held the latter in check with a thick shower of arrows.

53. Thereupon Arjuna pierced the elephant of Bhagadatta rushing towards himself in battle, with many keen-pointed and iron-made arrows, all bright as silver.

54. The son of Kunti, O king, urged on Sikhandin, saying "Advance, advance upon Bhisma and slay him."

55. Thereupon, O elder brother of Pandu the ruler of the Pragjyotisas abandoning Pandu's son in battle, rushed swiftly, O king, towards the chariot of Drupada.

56. Thereat Arjuna, O mighty monarch, quickly advanced towards Bhisma, with Sikhandin in front of him, and then there raged a (dreadful) fight.

57. Thereupon, in that battle your warriors, uttering fierce yells, rushed quickly at the son of Pandu. Then all this appeared marvellous.

58. Then, O ruler of men, the army of your sons consisting of various divisions, Arjuna began to scatter away like a strong gale scattering away clouds in the welkin.

59. Then Sikhandin confronting the grandsire of the Bharatas, pierced patiently the latter with myriads of shafts.

60. Then Bhisma began to consume the Kshatriyas in battle, like a fire, having his chariot for its fire-chambers, his bow for its flames, his swords, lances and maces for its fuel and his numerous shafts for its dreadful scintillations.

61. Just as a conflagration fed with a constant supply of fuel leaps from house to house being aided by a breeze, so also did Bhisma then burn the hostile troops displaying his weapons of celestial make.

62. Then that mighty car-warrior Bhisma, holding in check the division of the son of Pandu (Arjuna), slew those Somakas in battle who followed Partha,

63. With arrows furnished with golden wings and of great sharpness and depressed knots; and he filled the points cardinal and subsidiary of the compass with the echoes of his war-cries.

64. He dislodged car-warriors from their cars, and felled, O king, horsemen with their chargers; he also made the mighty car-division look like Palmyra groves, with trees deprived of their leafy heads.

65. Then Bhisma that foremost of all wielders of weapons deprived, O king, the cars, the chargers and the elephants, of their respective riders, in that battle.

66. The troops then, O king, began to tremble, hearing the twang of his bow-string and the slap of his palms, that resembled the thunder itself.

67. Indeed, O lord of men, the arrows of Bhisma did never fail to hit their marks. Shot from his bow, the arrows did not stick merely on the skin of warriors and animals.

68. Then, O king, O ruler of men, we beheld cars deprived of their riders, dragged on all side, with the velocity of the wind by the fleet steeds that were yoked to them.

69—71. Full fourteen thousand high-famed mighty car-warriors of illustrious extraction, ready to sacrifice their lives in battle, and unretreating and heroic, and owner of standards adroned with gold, all belonging to the race of the Chedis, the Kasis and Karushas, confronting the heroic Bhisma who then appeared like Death himself with mouth wide open, were swiftly despatched to the other world with all their cars, elephants and chargers. There was not a single mighty car-warrior, O king, among the Somakas,

72—73. Who having confronted Bhisma in that battle, was able to return alive from the engagement. Beholding all those warriors despatched to the domain of the lord of the departed, people then thought high of Bhisma's prowess. No car-warrior then ventured to encounter that hero.

74. Save and except that heroic son of Pandu, owning cream-coloured steeds, and having Krishna for his charioteer, and that prince of the Panchalas, Sikhandin of immeasurable energy.

Thus ends the hundred and seventeenth chapter, the dreadful battle and carnage, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXVIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O foremost of men, Sikhandin having encountered Bhisma in battle, pierced the latter on his breast with ten broad-headed shafts of great sharpness.

2. Then the son of Ganga looked at Sikhandin with his eyes blazing in rage, and, O Bharata, he seemed to burn the latter by his glance only.

3. But, O king, remembering his femininity, Bhisma did not wound him before the eyes of all in that battle. The latter however comprehended it not.

4. Therefore, O monarch, Arjuna said to Sikhandin, "swiftly rush at the grandsire and slay him.

5. What is that you want to speak, O hero? Slay the mighty car-warrior Bhisma, I do not see a man in the whole army of Yudhisthira,

6. Who is able to fight with Bhisma in battle, except yourself, O best of men? This I say to you forsooth."

7. Thus spoken to by Pritha's son, O foremost of the Bharatas, Sikhandin speedily covered the grandsire with arrows of various description;

8. But disregarding those arrows, your sire Devavrata, wrought up with wrath engaged to fight with Arjuna by means of his shafts.

9. That mighty car-warrior also despatched the forces of the Pandavas to the other world, O sire, with his sharp-pointed shafts.

10. On the other hand, O king, the sons of Pandu, supported by mighty divisions covered Bhisma over, like clouds covering the orb of the day.

11. Then, O foremost of the Bharata, that chief of the Bharatas thus surrounded on all sides, began to consume those heroes in battle like a raging conflagration burning the woods.

12. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of your son as much as he simultaneously fought with Arjuna aud protected the grand-sire.

13. Then all people were gratified with the feat achieved by your high-minded son Dussasana wielding his bow;

14. For then he, single-handed, fought with the Pandavas including Arjuna himself; he then fought so fiercely that the Pandavas were unable to resist him.

15. In that battle car-warriors were deprived of their cars by Dussasana; mighty horse-men and highly powerful elephant-riders,

16. Mangled with his shafts, fell down on the surface of the earth. Huge-tusked elephants afflicted with arrow-wounds ran in all directions.

17. Just as fire fed with fuel fiercely blazes forth with terrible flames, so did your son consume the troops of the Panadvas.

18. None of the heroic car-warriors of the Pandava host, O Bharata, was then able to vanquish, nay to encounter, that warrior of gigantic stature,

19. Except Arjuna the son of the great Indra, having white steeds and owning Krishna for his charioteer. Then, O king, the ever-victorious Arjuna defeating Dussasana in battle,

20. Rushed against Bhisma even before the very eyes of the people assembled there. Though vanquished, your son then depending greatly upon the strength of Bhisma's arms,

21. Furiously fought with the Pandavas comforting his own troops at the same time. Arjuna also, O king, engaged in battle appeared very beautiful.

22. Sikhandin also, O monarch, pierced the grandsire in battle with sharp arrows, of which the touch resembled that of the bolt of heaven and which were mortal like the virulent venom of snakes.

23. These shafts, O ruler of men, did not cause any the slightest pain to your father, and then the son of Ganga received those arrows with a smile.

24. Just as a man burning with thirst eargerly welcomes a shower of rain, so did also the son of Ganga receive the shower of arrows discharged by Sikhandin.

25. Then, O mighty monarch, the Kshatriyas beheld Bhisma look terrible, as he consumed the ranks of the high-souled Pandavas.

26. Then your son commanded, O sire, all your troops saying :—"Assail from all sides the heroic Phalguna.

27. The valiant Bhisma conversant with all duties will protect us in battle." Then those troops of yours dismissing all fears fought on with the Pandavas.

28. (Again did Duryodhana say) "Yonder is Bhisma, with his tall standard marked with the device of a golden palmyra, striving for saving the honour and armours of all the Dhritarastra warriors.

29. Even the celestials striving vigorously cannot overcome the mighty and high-souled Bhisma in battle, what to speak of the sons of Pritha who are mere mortals.

30. Therefore, O warriors, do you not run away getting Phalguna as an adversary in battle. I myself, putting forth my best energies, shall this day battle against the Pandavas,

31. United with all these rulers of earth, all exerting their best in battle." Hearing those words of your son wielding the bow,

32. All the valiant and highly powerful warriors wrought up with rage, belonging to the clans of the Videhas, the Kalingas, the Daserakas, and many other tribes,

33. Fell upon Arjuna in battle. The Nishadas, the Souviras, the Valhikas, the Daradas, the Westerners, the Northerners and the Malavas,

34. Abhishas, the Surasenas, the Sivis, the Vasatis, the Salavas, the Sakas, the Trigarttas, the Ambhasthas with the Kekayas,

35—38. Then rushed upon the son of Pritha like a flight of insects rushing at the flames of a fire. Then, O mighty monarch, that highly powerful hero Dhananjaya, always dreaded in battle, invoking celestial weapons, fixed them on his bowstring, and aiming them at those hundreds of enemy's divisions of car-warriors swiftly consumed them all, by means of those powerful darts of great velocity, like fire burning down a flight of insects. Then the bow Gandiva of that resolute bowman appeared resplendent as he shot myriads upon myriads of arrows from it. Then, O mighty monarch, those Kourava warriors with their tall standards splintered into pieces,

39—41. Ventured not, even in a body, to proceed against Arjuna owning the standard marked with the device of an ape. Afflicted with shafts by the diadem-decked Arjuna, car-warriors fell with their standards, horse-riders with their horses and elephant-riders with their elephants. Then the earth become soon covered with divisions of kings flying in all directions in consequence of the shafts shot by the arms of Arjuna. Then having completely crushed the enemy's ranks, the son of Pritha,

42. Sped numerous shafts at your son Dussasana. Those iron-tipped arrows, having pierced Dussasana,

43. Penetrated the earth like so many snakes entering their holes in ant-hills. Then Arjuna slew the steeds and charioteer of the latter.

44. Then that valiant hero deprived Vivinsati of his car with twenty shafts and wounded the latter with five shafts of straight-knots.

45. Then the son of Kunti, owning white steeds, having pierced Kripa, Vikarna, and Salya with many iron arrows, deprived them of their cars.

46. Thus deprived of their chariots, O sire, Kripa, Salya, Dussasana, Vikarna and Vivinsati,

47. All fled away from the field of battle being completely worsted by Savyasachin. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, having vanquished the mighty car-warriors at the forenoon,

48. Partha then blazed forth in battle like fire without even one curl of smoke. He then, in consequence of his pouring arrowy showers, looked like the sun scattering his myriad rays in all directions.

49. He felled also, O mighty monarch, many rulers of the earth all mighty car-warriors, having compelled them to turn their faces away from the field of battle.

50. Then, O Bharata, between the armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas, he caused a mighty river of bloody current to flow.

51. Large bodies of elephants, steeds and car-warriors were slain by car-warriors; and many were the car-warriors slain by elephants and many the horse-men slain by foot-soldiers.

52. In all directions then fell many heads and bodies cut in the middle, of car-warriors, horsemen and elephant-riders.

53. The field of battle, O king, became strewn with fallen and falling bodies of many royal car-warriors even then decked with bracelets and graced with ear-rings.

54. The field was also covered over with many bodies mangled by car-wheels and trampled upon by elephants. Foot-soldiers, and horsemen with their chargers fled away in all directions.

55. Elephants and car-warriors fell in all directions. Many were the cars that then lay scattered on the field with their wheels, standards and yokes splintered into pieces.

56. Then the field of battle bespattered with the gore of elephants, horses and car-warriors, appeared beautiful like the autumnal sky covered with specks of red cloud.

57. Dogs, crows, vultures, wolves and jackals and other beasts set up loud yells, at the sight of food that was then before them.

58. Then, when Rakshasas and evil spirits were seen to roar there, various kinds of winds began to blow in all directions.

59. Strings of gold and precious standards were seen suddenly to be fluttered by the wind, and began to tremble.

60. Thousands of white umbrellas, and many mighty car-warriors with their standards, were seen strewn on the surface of the earth.

61. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Bhisma having invoked into existence a celestial weapon rushed at the son of Kunti even before the very eyes of all bowmen.

62. Then clad in mail Sikhandin confronted him rushing in battle. Whereupon Bhisma withdrew that dart resembling fire itself.

63. Meanwhile Kunti's son owning white steeds having confounded the grand sire began to slaughter your forces.

Thus ends the hundred and eighteenth chapter, the fierce battle and carnage, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXIX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the division of the two armies strong in numbers and arranged in order of battle, met one another, all the unretreating heroes, O Bharata, then rushed to battle, keeping in view the regions of Brahma.

2. In that pell-mell fight, neither similar divisions fought with their similars, nor car warriors with car-warriors, nor foot-soldier-with foot-soldiers.

3. Horsemen then fought not with horsemen and elephant-riders fought not with other elephant-riders. But like men siezed with fury, O Bharata, they indiscriminately slaughtered one another, O monarch, in that battle.

4. Fierce and great was the carnage that then spread itself among the ranks of the two armies, as men and elephants, by hundreds, were scattered slain in all directions.

5. In that fierce battle the slaughter was indiscriminate. Then, O Bharata, Salya, Kripa, Chitrasena,

6. Dussasana and Vikarna, all riding on resplendent chariots, and all mighty heroes, made the host of the Pandavas tremble in battle before them.

7. The army of the Pandavas thus slaughtered by those high-souled warriors, was caused to wheel in various motions, like a bark tossed by the wind on the waters (of the sea).

8. Just as bleak wintry cold penetrates into the very vitals of the kine, so did then Bhisma cut the army of the sons of Pandu to the very quick.

9. Then many elephants of your army looking like newly-formed clouds, were felled by the high-souled son of Pritha in that battle.

10. The leaders of hosts of combatants were then seen to be crushed and mangled by the son of Pritha with his arrows and lances shot by thousands.

11—12. Mighty elephants fell there setting up loud yells of agony and distress. The field of battle then looked beautiful being strewn over with the ornament-decked bodies of slain warriors of high soul, as also with their heads graced with ear-rings. In that conflict, O monarch, so destructive of mighty heroes,

13—14. When both Bhisma, and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu were displaying their prowess, your sons beholding the grandsire strive vigorously in battle, O king, rushed at the head all of their troops. Desirous of death in battle, and looking upon heaven as their final goal,

15. They rushed against the Pandavas in that battle destructive of many heroes. The Pandavas also, O monarch, remembering the diverse woes and hardships

16. Inflicted, O ruler of men, on them by you and your son and dismissing all fears, and desirous of attaining to the regions of Brahma,

17. Cheerfully fought on with your troops and your sons. Then that mighty car-warrior the commander of the Pandava host addressing his troops said :—

18. "Rush you, O Somakas, together with the Srinjayas at the son of Ganga." Hearing those words of their commander-in-chief, the Somakas and the Srinjayas,

19. Though afflicted with showers of arrows rushed at the son of Ganga. Thus assailed, O king, your father, the son of Santanu,

20. Influenced by wrath fought with the Srinjayas. To your highly renowned father, O sire, in the days of yore, the intelligent Rama,

21. Imparted a lesson in the use of weapons that were capable of destroying the hostile ranks. Depending upon that instruction of his and thinning the ranks of the enemy,

22. The old grandsire of the Kurus, viz., Bhisma that slayer of hostile heroes day after day slaughtered ten thousand warriors belonging to the Pandava host.

23. On that the tenth day of the battle, O foremost of the Bharatas, from among the Matsyas and the Panchalas, Bhisma, single handed,

24. Having slain ten thousand elephants, slew also seven mighty car-warriors. Then the great grandsire also slew five thousand car-warriors.

25. In that fierce battle in addition to all this, fourteen thousand foot-soldiers, one thousand elephants, and ten thousand steeds

26. Were slain, O ruler of men, by your father through his superior education. Then reducing in number all the divisions led by rulers of earth,

27. Bhisma slew Satanika the dear-loved brother of Virata. Having slain Satanika in battle, the valiant Bhisma

28. Felled thousand royal warriors with broad-headed shafts. All those Kshatriyas of the Pandava host, that followed Dhananjaya,

29—30. Approaching Bhisma, were despatched to the abode of Death. Thus covering the ten points of the compass with the net-work of his arrows, as also the army of the Parthas, Bhisma remained the master of the situation. On that the tenth day of the battle, achieving marvellous feats,

31. Bhisma stayed between the two armies, holding his bow and arrows in his hands. O king, then none of the royal warriors were able to look at him,

32. Who then resembled the summer sun scorching the world from the meridian. Just as in the days of yore, Sakra afflicted the hosts of the Daityas,

33. So did, O Bharata, Bhisma then afflict the ranks of the Pandavas. Then beholding Bhisma thus display his prowess in battle, the slayer of Madhu,

34. That son of Devaki, joyfully addressed Dhananjaya saying :—"Yonder is Bhisma, the son of Santanu staying between the two armies.

35. Slay him by putting forth your prowess, and victory will be yours. Check him through your prowess even there where he is penetrating our ranks.

36. None among us, O lord, is capable of bearing the shafts of Bhisma save and except your mighty self." Then, O king, thus urged on, Dhananjaya owning a standard bearing the device of an ape,

37—38. Rendered Bhisma with his standard, chariot and horses, invisible by his shafts. Then that foremost of the Kuru chiefs (Bhisma) also, with the shower of his own arrows scattered the arrowy downpour discharged by that son of Pandu. Thereupon the king of the Panchalas, and the valiant Dhristaketu,

39. Pandu's son Bhimasena, Prisata's son Dhristadyumna, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, Chekitana, the five Kekaya brothers,

40. The mighty-armed Satyaki, the son of Subhadra, Ghatatkacha, the sons of Drupada, Sikhandin, the highly powerful Kuntivoja,

41. Susarman, and Virata, these and many other mighty heroes of the Pandava host were then afflicted by the shafts of Bhisma.

42. Then from the ocean of grief in which they were sunk, they were rescued by Phalguna. Thereupon grasping an excellent weapon Sikhandin

43. Assailed Bhisma, being protected by the diadem-decked Arjuna. Then slaying all the followers of Bhisma, and knowing what should be done in battle after what,

44. The unvanquished Vibhatsu rushed even at Bhisma himself. Then Satyaki, Chekitana, Dhristadyumna of the Prisata race,

45. Virata and Drupada, the two sons of Madri begotten by Pandu, all rushed against Bhisma, their attack being covered by the firm bowman Arjuna.

46. Then in that battle, Abhimanyu and the five sons of Draupadi all with weapons upraised rushed against Bhisma.

47. All those firm bowmen, never receeding from the fight, pierced Bhisma on many parts of his body with arrows steadily directed.

48. Then baffling all those arrows shot by those foremost rulers of earth, that warrior of undepressed soul (Bhisma) penetrated into the ranks of the Pandavas.

49. The grandsire then repulsed all those arrows as if in sport. He did not aim any shaft at the prince of the Panchalas, but laughingly looked at him now and then.

50. Remembering Sikhandin's femininity Bhisma sped not a single arrow at the former. But that mighty car-warrior then slew seven of the best car-warriors of Drupada's division.

51. Then as the Matsyas, the Panchalas and the Chedis rushed against that single-handed warrior, loud became the din and confusion that then arose.

52. Then like clouds covering the sun, all those heroes, O afflicter of foes, covered on all sides with foot-soldiers, horse-men and car-warriors and with a net-work of arrows,

53. That single-handed son of Bhagirathi, viz., Bhisma, who was then scorching the foe in battle. Then in that battle between Bhisma on one side and all the Pandava heroes on the other—battle that resembled the one between the gods and the Asuras—Kiritin placing Sikhandin in front of him began to pierce Bhisma,

Thus ends the hundred and nineteenth chapter, the prowess of Bhisma, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXX.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus all the Pandavas, placing Sikhandin before them and surrounding Bhisma on all sides began to pierce him in battle.

2. Then with terrible *Sataghnis*, with bludgeons, battle-axes, maces, mallets, thick short clubs, and lances, and other missiles,

3. With arrows furnished with golden wings, with darts, javelins and *Kampanas*, with *Narachas*, *Vatsadantas*, and *Bhusundis*,

4. The Srinjayas united together began to wound Bhisma in battle. Then when his armour was shattered and he himself overwhelmed with many arrows.

5—7. Bhisma experienced no pain, pierced though he was to the very vitals. On the other hand Bhisma then appeared fearful to his enemies like the all-destructive fire at the expiration of a Yuga,—fire, whose flames were constituted by his effulgent arrows and bow, whose (friendly) gale was constituted by the vibrations of air produced by the shafts shot by him, whose heat was constituted by the clatter of his car-wheel, whose splendour was constituted by his mighty weapons, tongues by his variegated bow and fuel by the destruction of heroes. Wheeling in the midst of those car divisions, he sometimes came out of the press,

8. And sometimes again was seen to career rapidly through them. Thereafter without regarding the king of the Panchalas and Dhristaketu,

9—11. Bhisma, O rule of men, penetrated into the very heart of the Pandava ranks. Then with arrows of excellent make and great sharpness, all capable of penetrating all kinds of armour and producing great whizz, and charged with great velocity, Bhisma pierced deeply the following six car-warriors, viz., Satyaki, Bhima, Dhananjaya the son of Pandu, Drupada, Virata, and Dhristadyumna of Prisata's race. These mighty car-warriors also resisting those sharp arrows shot by Bhisma,

12. Pierced him with force, each shooting ten arrows. Those dreadful arrows which that mighty car-warrior Sikhandin shot,

13. And which were furnished with wings of gold and whetted on stone, quickly penetrated the body of Bhisma. Thereupon the diadem-decked Arjuna waxing wroth rushed at Bhisma,

14. And placing Sikhandin before him, he cut off the bow of the latter. Then the following seven mighty car-warriors did not brook that cutting off of Bhisma's bow, warriors namely,

15. Drona, Kritavarman, Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus, Bhurisravas, Sala, Salya, and Bhagadatta.

16. These seven car-warriors waxing irascible and displaying weapons of celestial make rushed against the diadem-decked Arjuna.

17. Indeed excited to the highest pitch of fury they fell upon that son of Pandu shrouding him (with those arrows). Great was the din that arose as they rushed against Phalguna's chariot.

18. Hearing that dreadful din, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host rushed to battle desirous of rescuing that foremost of the Bharatas, viz., Phalguna.

19. Then Satyaki, Bhimasena, Prisata's son Dhristadyumna, both Virata and Drupada, the Rakshasa Ghatatkacha,

20. The enraged Abhimanyu, all these seven warriors seized with fury and wielding variegated bows rushed to battle, at the top of their speed.

21. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, like the battle between the celestials and the Danavas, the battle between those seven car-warriors of each army raged fiercely causing the hair to stand erect.

22. In that battle, protected as he was by Dhananjaya, that excellent warrior Sikhandin, with ten shafts pierced Bhisma whose bow had been cut off.

23. He then pierced the latter's charioteer with ten shafts and with another one shaft cut off his standard. Then Ganga's son took up another bow of superior toughness.

24—25. But that again was cut off with three sharp shafts by Phalguna. Thus that scorcher of foes that son of Pandu namely Savyasachin, excited with wrath again and again cut off all the bows that Bhisma took up. Then excited with wrath in consequence of his bows being cut off and licking the corners of his mouth,

26. Bhisma took up a lance with lightness, that was capable of rending even the breasts of mountains; and inflamed with rage he hurled that lance at the car of Phalguna.

27. Beholding that lance course towards himself like the blazing bolt of Heaven, the son of Pandu took up five sharp broad-headed arrows.

28. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, inflamed with rage, Arjuna with those five arrows, splintered into five fragments that lance hurled with strength of Bhisma's arms.

29. Then shattered by the wrathful Arjuna decked with a diadem, that lance fell down like forks of lightning torn away from large masses of clouds.

30. Belolding his lance severed, Bhisma became inflamed with rage; and that hero that subduer of hostile cities began to think with the help of his understanding thus :—

31. "I can slay even with a single bow all these Pandavas, if the highly powerful Visaksena (Krishna) be not their protector.

32. I shall not fight with the Pandavas for two reasons, viz., for the unslayableness of the Pandavas and for the femininity of Sikhandin.

33. Formerly on the occasion of his marrying Kali, my father gratified with me, accorded me two boons, viz., death at my pleasure, and unslayableness in battle.

34. I now think that the proper time for my death has arrived." Ascertaining this to be the intention of Bhisma of immeasurable energy,

35. The *Rishis* and *Vasus* stationed in the firmament then thus addressed Bhisma saying:—"What you have resolved upon O sire, is also our dear will.

36. Therefore, O monarch, follow up in action what you have resolved; and withdraw your heart from fight." At the conclusion of these words there began to blow an auspicious breeze,

37. Fragrant and moistened with sprinkles of water, from all directions. Celestial drums were also sounded emitting great din.

38. And, O sire, over Bhisma fell a shower of blossoms. As those *Rishis* and *Vasus* spoke, O king, none heard then

39. Save the mighty-armed Bhisma and myself through the prowess of the sage (Vyasa). O ruler of men, great was the flurry that was then found among the Gods,

40. As they thought of the fall of Bhisma, that favourite of all the worlds. Then hearing those words of the celestials, that hero of great ascetic wealth, viz.,

41. Santanu's son Bhisma assailed not Vibhatsu, although he was then being pierced by sharp shafts capable of penetrating through all armours.

42. Then, O mighty monarch, Sikhandin inflamed with wrath struck the grandsire of the Bharatas on the breast with nine shafts of great sharpness.

43. Then, O mighty monarch, Sikhandin inflamed with wrath struck the grandsire of the Bharatas on the breast with nine shafts of great sharpness.

44. Then smiling and stretching his bow Gandiva, Vibhatsu wounded Ganga's son with twenty-five short thick shafts.

45. Then again under the influence of wrath, Dhananjaya pierced him quick on all parts of his body and to the vitals, with one hundred shafts more.

46. Thus pierced by many other warriors with thousands of arrows, the mighty car-warrior Bhisma pierced them all in return quickly with his own arrows.

47. Then Bhisma of prowess unfailing in battle, with his own shafts of depressed knots simultaneously baffled all these arrows shot by the hostile warriors.

48. Those arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone that Sikhandin the mighty car-warrior shot at him could not produce any the slightest pain to him.

49. Thereupon inflamed with wrath the diadem-decked Arjuna placing Sikhandin before him rushed at Bhisma and cut off the latter's bow.

50. Then he pierced Bhisma with ten arrows and with another cut down the latter's standard; then with ten other arrows he caused Bhisma's charioteer to tremble.

51—52. Then that son of Ganga took up another bow of great toughness. Then in that battle, within a twinkling of the eye, Arjuna cut off with three sharp broad-headed arrows that bow as soon as it was taken up. Thus Arjuna cut off successively all the bows that the son of Ganga took up one after another.

53. Thereupon Bhisma the son of Santanu did no longer assail Vibhatsu; then the latter pierced the former with twenty-five small arrows.

54. That mighty bowman thus deeply pierced addressing Dussasana said:—"This mighty car-warrior of the Pandava host, viz., Pritha's son Arjuna, inflamed with rage,

55. Is afflicting me in battle with many thousands of arrows. This one is incapable of being conquered even by the wielder of the thunderbolt.

56. Regarding me, I may say that all the heroic celestials, Danavas and Rakshasas, united together, can not vanquish me in battle, what to speak of human car-warriors?"

57. Thus when they were conversing with one another, Arjuna, placing Sikhandin before him, began to pierce Bhisma in battle with shafts of great sharpness.

58. Thus pierced with sharp arrows by the wielder of the Gandiva, Bhisma once more addressing Dussasana smilingly said:

59. "These arrows of touch resembling that of the thunderbolt, coming in an unbroken line towards me have been discharged by Arjuna. Surely they are not Shikhandin's.

60. Eating into my very vitals, anb penetrating even through my invulneraple armour, these arrows are striking me

like so many bludgeons. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

61. Of the touch like that of a Brahmana's rod, of velocity like that of the thunderbolt and incapable of being repulsed, these arrows are sucking out my vital energies. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

62. Of touch heavy like that of a mace or a bludgeon these arrows are destroying my vital breaths like so many messengers of Death. Surely they are not Sikhandin's.

63. Like infuriate snakes of virulent venom with their tongues protruding out, these arrows are penetrating into my very vitals. Surely these are not Sikhandin's.

64. These are the arrows of Arjuna and not of Sikhandin, arrows that are cutting me to the quick like the bleakness of winter cutting kine to the quick.

65. Save and except the heroic wielder of the Gandiva bow, that owner of the standard marked with the device of an ape, *viz.*, the ever-victorious Arjuna, all the other monarchs united together can not afflict me."

66. Having thus spoken, the highly powerful Bhisma, as if desirous of consuming the Pandavas, hurled at Pritha's son a (terrible) lance.

67. Thereupon with three arrows cutting that lance into three pieces, Arjuna felled it down on the ground, O Bharata, even before the very eyes of all the Kurus heroes.

68. Thereafter Ganga's son grasped a buckler of the polish of gold, as also a resplendent sword, desirous of reaping either victory or death.

69. But before he (Bhisma) could descend from his chariot, Arjuna with his shafts splintered that buckler into hundred fragments. Indeed that looked like something marvellous.

70. Thereupon, king Yudhisthira urged on his own division saying :—"Assail the son of Ganga. Entertain not the slightest fear."

71. Thereupon from all sides, those troops, with darts, lances, arrows, battle-axes, excellent swords, long shafts of great sharpness,

72. With *Vatsadantas*, and broad-headed arrows, rushed against that single warrior. Then loud was the din of war-cries that rang through the Pandava ranks.

73. Similarly, O king, your sons all desirous of seeing Bhisma victorious rushed forward for rescuing that single hero, and they also set up a mighty uproar caused by their yells and war-cries.

74. Then on that the tenth day when Bhisma and Arjuna contested with one another, fierce was the fight that raged between your soldiers and those of the enemy.

75. Then at the spot where the hostile troops clashed and smote down one another an eddy seemed to start up into existence like that occurring at the spot where Ganga meets the ocean.

76. Deluged with blood the earth then assumed a hideous aspect, and her undulalations were lost to sight.

77. Having slain ten thousand warriors on that the tenth day of the fight, Bhisma stood on the field while his vitals were being pierced into by Arjuna.

78. Then Partha, holding his bow and standing at the head of his divisions, broke the Kuru ranks in the very centre of their array.

79. Then afraid of that son of Kunti *viz.*, Dhananjaya the owner of cream-coloured steeds and afflicted with his sharp arrows, we then began to fly away from the field of battle.

80. Then the Souviras, the Kitavas, the Westerners, the Northerners and the Malavas, the Abhishahas, the Surasenas, the Sinis, the Vasatis,

81. The Salwas, Sakas, the Trigarttas, the Amvastas, the Kekayas,—all these illustrious warriors, afflicted with shafts, and pained with their cuts,

82. Did not abandon Bhisma in battle who had been fighting with the diadem-decked Arjuna. Then surrounding the single car-warrior Bhisma, large numbers of the enemy,

83. Covered him with arrowy showers, having at first defeated the rest of the Kuru warriors. "Slay" "Seize" "Fight" "Cut into pieces,"

84. Such were the cries, O king, that were then heard round Bhisma's chariot. Bhisma then slaughtered his foes by hundreds and thousands.

85—86. But then there was not even a space of two fingers in all his body that was not mangled with shafts. Thus then your father, mangled with keen-pointed darts shot by Phalguna, fell down from his car on the field with his head laid towards the East, a little before sunset before the very eyes of your sons.

87. Then at the overthrow of Bhisma loud lamentations of "Alas" and "Oh"

were heard, O Bharata, among the kings, and the celestials in the heaven.

88. Beholding the illustrious grandsire fall, we all became dejected and depressed at heart.

89. That foremost of all bowmen, that mighty-armed hero fell like an uprooted standard in honour of Indra, causing the earth tremble for the while.

90. Covered closely with arrows he did not then touch the earth's surface. Then as that mighty bowman, that foremost of all male beings lay prostrate on his arrowy bed,

91. Being overthrown from his car, a divine inspiration took possession of him. The rain-cloud Parjannya then poured down its contents and the earth quaked.

92. When falling Bhisma had marked the sun to be then on the Southern solstice and that hero considering that hour to be inauspicious for paying his debt to nature did not allow his senses to depart.

93. He then also heard divine utterance in the heaven, viz., "Why should that foremost of all wielders of weapons, Oh, why should the illustrious son of Ganga,

94. Why should that foremost of men give up his life when the sun is in the Southern solstice?" Hearing those words Ganga's son said "I am still alive."

95. Then desirous of yielding his life up during the Northern solstice, the grandsire of the Kurus, viz., Bhisma though fallen on earth still retained his vital breaths.

96. Ascertaining that to be his intention, Ganga, the daughter of the Himalayas sent great sages under the disguise of swans then to Bhisma.

97. Then those sages disguised under the forms of swans inhabiting the Manasa lake flew to the sky, and in a line came to see Bhisma, the grandsire of the Kurus,

98. At the spot where that foremost of men was lying on his arrowy bed. Then coming to Bhisma those sages under the forms of swans,

99. Beheld that perpetuator of the Kuru race, viz., Bhisma laid on his bed of arrows Then beholding that illustrious one, and circumbulating

100. That foremost of the Bharatas, that son of Ganga, the sages, knowing the sun to be then in the Southern solstice addressing one another said :—

101. "Why should the high-souled Bhisma pass away when the sun is in the Southern solstice." Having thus spoken, the swans flew towards the Southern directions.

102. Then that highly intelligent Bhisma beholding them and reflecting for a while said to them, "I shall not yield up my life,

103. As long as the sun will remain in the Southern solstice. This indeed is my determination, I shall repair to my own former abode,

104. When the sun will be in the Northern solstice; this, O Swans, I tell you forsooth. I shall retain my vital breaths looking anxiously forward for the Northern solstice.

105. In as much as my giving up of my life is under my thorough control, therefore shall I retain it desirous of dying during the Northern solstice.

106. The boon that my illustrious father accorded me, viz., that I shall die at my own pleasure, let that boon be true.

107. As the yielding up of my vital breaths lies entirely with me, I shall retain them." Having then thus spoken to the swans, he remained (motionless) on his arrowy bed.

108. Thus when the crest of the Kurus, viz, the highly puissant Bhisma was overthrown the Pandavas and the Srinjayas set up a loud war-cry.

109. When that grandsire of the Bharatas, possessed of great strength was overthrown, O foremost of the Bharatas, your sons knew not what to do.

110. Then the Kurus were totally confounded; and Kripa and Duryodhana and others began to wail aloud drawing long and heavy sighs.

111. With their senses deprived of their powers in consequence of grief, they remained inert and reflected for long and did not think of fighting.

112. They could not then rush against the Pandavas as if their thighs were locked and seized in a vice. When that unslayable son of Santanu. viz, Bhisma endued with great prowess was overthrown,

113. O king, the destruction of the Kuru monarch became apparent. Mangled with sharp shafts and with our foremost heroes slain,

114. And crushed completely by Savyasachin (Arjuna), we did not then know what to do. Then obtaining victory, and a highly blessed state of existence (hereafter), the Pandavas,

115. All endued with heroism and possessed of bludgeon-like arms, blew their

mighty conchs and, O ruler of men, the Somakas together with the Panchalas then were filled with great delight.

116. Then when thousands of drums were struck up, the highly powerfnl Bhimasena uttered his fierce war-cries and slapped his arms.

117. On the fall of that illustrious son of Ganga, the heroic combatants of the two armies laying down their weapons, fell to thinking.

118. Some wept aloud, some ran wildly, some were overwhelmed with swoon; some then censured the life of a Kshatriya and some worshipped Bhisma.

119. The sages and the Patriarchs all applauded Bhisma. The ancestral manes of the Bharata race also began to praise him.

120. Then the highly intelligent son of Santanu, viz., Bhisma endued with great prowess, betaking himself to the Yoga taught in the *Upanishadas* and reiterating prayers in his mind, remained quite, anxiously looking forward for his last hour.

Thus ends the hundred and twentieth chapter, the overthrow of Bhisma, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXI.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. How then, O Sanjaya, did my warriors fair, when they were deprived of the aid of the valiant Bhisma of god-like nature, who lived a life of celibacy for the sake of his father?

2. Even then did I regard the Kurus slain by Pandavas, when out of despise, Bhisma desisted from wounding the son of Drupada (Sikhandin).

3. Wretch that I am, I hear this day the news of my father's death. Alas, what greater amount of grief can overtake me, O Sanjaya.

4. Surely, O Sanjaya, my heart is made of the hardest adamant, in as much as, it does not burst forth at the news of Bhisma's slaughter.

5. Tell me, O you of illustrious vows, what did that foremost of the Kurus, that one ever desirous of victory namely Bhisma do, when he was overthrown in battle.

6. Oh, I can not brook even the thought of Devavrata's slaughter in battle. He, who was not formerly slain by the celestial weapons of Jamadagni's son, alas, even he is now slain by Sikhandin the prince of the Panchalas!

Sanjaya said :—

7. Overthrown at the hour of evening, Bhisma, the grandsire of the Kurus, infused grief into the hearts of the Dhartarastras and delight in to those of the Panchalas.

8. He then lay on his arrowy bed with his skin not touching the earth. When Bhisma was overthrown from his car and when he fell on the earth's surface,

9. Loud wails of 'Alas' and 'Oh' were uttered by all creatures. When that ornament of an assembly, when that boundary-tree of the Kurus was overthrown,

10. The Kshatriyas, O king, of the two armies were all seized with panic. Beholding Santanu's son Bhisma, with his armour and standard shattered,

11. The Kurus and the Pandavas, both ceased fighting, O ruler of men; then a pall of darkness overspread the firmament, and the luminary of the day lost its effulgence.

12. On the fall of Bhisma, the son of Santanu, the earth seemed to shriek out fierce yells. *This one is the best of all the Veda-knowing sages—This one is the foremost of those conversant with the Vedas,*

13. These were the words that creatures then addressed to that foremost of men lying on his arrowy bed. "Formerly knowing his sire Santanu to be under the influence of desire, this one,

14. This foremost of men, deprived himself of the pleasure of carnal intercourse," Even thus, was the foremost of the Bharatas lying on his arrowy bed,

15. Addressed by the seers and Siddhas and Charanas. On the fall of Bhisma, the son of Santanu and the grand-sire of the Bharatas,

16. Your sons, O sire, knew not what to do; and, O Bharata, their faces became cheerless and their appearance lost all beauty and charm;

17. And they stood, ashamed and overwhelmed with bashfulness and with countenances cast down. The Pandavas on the other hand having obtained victory, and remaining the masters of the field,

18. Blew their mighty conchs decorated with net-works of gold. Then, O sinless one, when thousands of trumpets were blown giving breath to their joys,

19. We beheld, O monarch, the valiant Bhimasena, that son of Kunti, dance in consequence of his ecstatic delight.

20. He then slew many hostile warriors possessed of great strength. A great confusion then overwhelmed the Kurus.

21 Karna and Duryodhana breathed long and heavily. When Bhisma the grandsire of the Kurus was overthrown,

22. Distressful cries of *Alas* and *Oh* arose from all directions; and all regard for every thing (life and limb) was lost. Beholding Bhisma overthrown, your son Dussasana

23. Ran at the top of his speed towards the division of Drona. Clad in mail and supported by his own division, he was commissioned by his royal brother for the protection of Bhisma.

24. Now that foremost of men went to the division of Drona, making at the same time his own troops cheerless. Beholding him approach the Kurus surrounded him,

25. Desirous, O king, of hearing what Dussasana might say. Then that descendant of the Kuru race spoke to Drona of the slaughter of Bhisma.

26. Hearing that doleful news, Drona suddenly fell down from his car; but the valiant son of Bharadwaja soon regaining consciousness,

27—28. Prevented his own troops, O sire, from fighting any longer. Beholding the Kurus desist from the fight, the Pandavas also prevented their own divisions from fighting, through messengers riding fleet chargers. When the troops of both the armies had ceased fighting,

29. All the kings doffing their armours approached Bhisma. Then hundreds and thousands of warriors giving up fighting,

30. Respectfully paid their homages, (to Bhisma) like the immortals paying homages to the creator himself. Then approaching that foremost of the Bharatas lying on his arrowy bed, all those heroes,

31. The Kurus and the Pandavas saluting him stood there. Then to those Kurus and the Pandavas who stood before him having at first saluted him,

32. The virtuous-souled son of Santanu viz., Bhisma spoke these words:—"Hail, O eminent heroes, hail, O mighty car-worriors.

33. O god-like heroes, I am indeed pleased by looking at you." Having thus addressed them, he with his head hanging down once more said:—

34—35. "My head is greatly hanging down; give me a pillow to place my head on." Thereupon the kings fetched many pillows made of fine stuff and very soft, and also excellent. But the grandsire liked them uot. Thereupon that foremost of men smiling said to those kings:—

36—37. "O kings, these pillows do not suit a hero's bed." Then beholding that foremost of men, that chief of all car-warriors in the three regions, viz., Pandu's son Dhananjaya of long arms, Bhisma addressed him saying:—"O mighty-armed Dhananjaya, my head his hanging, O son, give me a pillow that you think to be suited to this bed of mine.

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-first chapter, the withdrawal of the forces after the tenth day's fight, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then Arjuna, fixing the string on his mighty bow and saluting the grandsire and with his eyes overflowing with tears thus spoke.

2. "Command me, O foremost of the Kurus, O chief of all wielders of weapons. I am your slave, O invincible one. What, O grandsire, shall I do for you."

3. The son of Santanu then thus replied to him saying:—"My head, O sire, is hanging down. Fetch me, O foremost of the Kurus, O Phalguna, a pillow,

4. That will be suitable to my bed, and, O hero, give that to me soon. You only, O Partha, are equal to the task, you are the foremost of all the bowmen;

5. You are conversant with the duties of a Kshatriya and are endowed with keen intelligence and modesty and bravery." Then Phalguna of great might saying *yea* to his words, prepared to do what Bhisma bade him do.

6. Then taking up the Gandiva bow and shafts of close knots, and purifying them with *Mantras* and obtaining the permission of that illustrious car-warrior of the Bharatas, Arjuna,

7—8. With those sharp arrows charged with great velocity supported Bhisma's head. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, seeing that Savyasachin had rightly divined his thought, Bhisma of illustrious soul conversant with the essence of all things became gratified with Arjuna; and then greatly praised Dhananjaya for having given him that pillow.

9. Then casting his glances on the Bharatas present there, Bhisma said to that descendant of the Bharatas, namely Kunti's son, that foremost of all warriors, and that enhancer of the delight of his friends:—

10. "O son of Pandu, you have indeed fetched me a pillow becoming my bed. Had you fetched me something else, I would have cursed you in rage.

11. O mighty-armed hero this indeed is the way in which a Kshatriya not transgressing his duties, should sleep on the battle-field lying on an arrowy bed."

12. Having thus spoken to Vibhatsu' he said to all the kings and princes present there, the following words.

Bhisma said :—

13. Behold you all, the pillow the son of Pandu has supplied me with! I shall lie on this bed until the sun rolls back to the Northern solstice.

14—15. Those kings that will then come to me shall see me (give up my life). When the maker of the day (sun), on his swift moving car yoked with seven horses, will proceed towards the point of the compass occupied by Vaisravana, then shall I yield up my vital breaths, like a friend, bidding adieu to his dear friend.

16. O kings, dig up an entrenchment around here; mangled with hundreds of arrows as I am, I will offer my homages to the sun. You, O kings, do desist from the battle, vanishing all thoughts of hostility.

Sanjaya said :—

17. Thereafter there came several practioners of the healing art, all well-trained and skilful in drawing out shafts, carrying with them all the necessary balms and appliances.

18. Beholding them, Ganga's son said to your son :—"Paying proper respect to these physicians, and rewarding them with money, do you dismiss them.

19. Reduced to this condition, what necessity have I of physicians? I have attained to that blessed existence that is so applauded in those that observe the Kshatriya duties.

20. As I lie on this arrowy bed, it is not indeed my duty to allow myself to be treated by these physicians. I should like, O rulers of earth, to be consumed even by these arrows,"

21. Having heard those words of his, your son Duryodhana dismissed all those physicians, having honoured them duly.

22. Then the rulers of the various countries, beholding the religious firmness of Bhisma of infinite prowess, were greatly amazed.

23. Then having offered that pillow to your sire, all those kings, together with the mighty car-warriors of the Kurus and the Pandavas,

24. Again approached the illustrious Bhisma prostrate on his excellent bed of arrows. Then having saluted and three times circumambulated that illustrious one viz.,

25—27. Bhisma, and having arranged for his protection, the heroes entered their respective camps, for taking rest, at the hour of sun-set, with their bodies bespatterd with blood, and thoughtful and extremely pained. Then approaching, at a suitable season, the Pandavas,—those mighty car-warriors cheerfully seated together and rejoicing at the fall of Bhisma,—the mighty Madhava said these words to Yudhisthira the son of Dharma.

28. "Through good fortune, O best of the Kurus, have you attained victory; through good fortune has Bhisma, that mighty car-warrior of un-erring aim, incapable of being slain by men, been overthrown.

29. Or it may be, that having, through Destiny, obtained you that slay with your very glances for a foe, that one though conversant with the use of all weapons has been destroyed by your angry looks."

30. Being thus spoken to, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira replied to Janarddana saying:—"Victory comes to a man through your grace, and defeat overtakes him through your wrath.

31. You are our sole refuge, O Krishna: You give assurances of safety to your devotees. Victory is not a marvel for those whom, O Keshava,

32. You always protect in battle, and for whose welfare you always concern yourself. Having yourself for our protector, I do not consider anything wonderful for us."

33. Thus spoken to, Janarddana smilingly replied:—"Indeed, O foremost of all the rulers of earth, these are words suited to fall from your lips only."

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-second chapter, the giving of a pillow to Bhisma, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIII.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, after the night had passed-away, all the kings belonging to the Pandava and Dhartarastra hosts approached the grandsire.

2. Then all the Kshatriyas, having saluted that foremost of the Kurus, that hero prostrate on a hero's bed, that chief of all Kshatriyas, stood near him.

3. Repairing there by thousands, maidens covered the son of Santanu on all parts of his body, with pulverised sandal-wood, field-paddy, and garlands of flowers.

4. Women, old men and children, and numerous other, spectators approached the son of Santanu, like the Bhutas approaching the rising luminary of the day.

5. Trumpeteers, courtezans, mimes, actors and dancers and artizans, in crowds, repaired to that venerable grandsire of the Kurus.

6. Desisting from fight and doffing their armours and laying aside their weapons, the Kurus and the Pandavas together,

7. Approached the invincible Devavrata that subduer of foes. Then as in former days, they were friendly to one another, and addressed one another in agreeable words.

8. Then that assembly crowded with numerous Bharata kings, and ornamented by the presence of Bhisma, appeared beautiful like a conclave of the gods in the heavens.

9. And that assembly of kings paying their respects to the son of Ganga, appeared beautiful like that of the gods adoring their lord the venerable Grandsire (Brahma).

10. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, Bhisma, having overcome his pain by his patience, and afflicted with many darts, breathed like a snake.

11. His body was burning with the pain caused by the arrows stuck therein, and he was being deprived of his senses in consequence of the weapon-cuts. Beholding those kings, he then said :—"Bring me water."

12. Thereat those Kshatriyas, O king, brought many excellent viands, and jars filled with cold water.

13. Thereupon Santanu's son beholding water brought for him said :—"This day forward, O son, I will no longer use articles of human enjoyment.

14. I have passed away from the society of men, and am now lying on this bed of arrows. I am lying here expectant of the change in the courses of the sun and moon."

15. Having thus spoken, and censuring those kings with (cruel) words, Bhisma said, O Bharata :—"I desire to see Arjuna."

16. Thereupon that mighty-armed hero Arjuna approaching and saluting the grandsire stood there with palms folded, and said "What shall I do."

17. Beholding that son of Pandu stand before him with folded palms, the virtuous-souled Bhisma highly pleased, said these words to Dhananjaya :—

18. "My body is burning, and I am covered with your arrows. All the vital parts of my body are suffering extreme pain and my mouth is becoming dry.

19. Afflicted as my body is with extreme pain, give me water, O Arjuna, to drink. It is you alone, O mighty bowman, that are capable of supplying me with proper drink now."

20. Thereupon the highly puissant Arjuna saying "yea" to Bhisma's words, mounted on his chariot. Then fixing the string to his mighty bow Gandiva, he began to stretch it.

21. Then hearing the twang of his bow and the slap of his arms that resembled the rumble of thunder, the troops and kings there, were inspired with terror.

22. Thereafter that foremost of car-warriors (Arjuna) circumambulating that prostrate chief of the Bharatas, that foremost of all wielders of weapon, viz., Bhisma,

23. And fixing on his bowstring an effulgent arrow inspired with aphorisms and identified with the Parjannya weapon, before the very eyes of all the people present,

24. Penetrated the earth a little to the right of the spot where Bhisma lay. Thereupon, there gushed out a jet of water pure and auspicious,

25. And cool and nectar-like and fraught with celestial fragrance and tastefulness. Then with that cool jet of water did the son of Pritha gratify

26. That foremost of the Kurus, viz., Bhisma of god-like achievements and prowess. Then seeing that feat of Pritha's son, that resembled that of Indra himself,

27. All the rulers of the earth present there, were filled with wonder. Then beholding that feat of Vibhatsu that indicated his superhuman prowess,

28. The Kurus began to shiver like kine afflicted with the chill of winter. Out of amazement the kings then began to waive their garments ;

29. And the sound of drums and the blare of conchs on all sides became deafening. Then, O king, Santanu's son, being greatly gratified, thus addressed Vibhatsu,

30. Applauding him before all the heroic rulers of earth. "O mighty-armed hero, this feat is not a marvel in respect to you, O delighter of the Kurus.

31. You have been spoken of by Narada as an ancient sage, O you of dazzling effulgence. Having the son of Vasudeva for your help-mate, you shall achieve great feats,

32. That even the lord of the celestials with his heavenly host dare not accomplish. Those that are conversant with the knowledge of every thing, regard you, O Arjuna, to be the foremost bowman among all the Kshatriyas.

33. Among all human wielders of bows, you are unrivalled ; you are the foremost of all men. As man is the foremost of all created beings of this world, as Garuda is the chief of all winged creatures,

34. As the Ocean is the chief of all reservoirs of water, as the cow is the best of all quadruped animals, as the sun is the foremost of all luminaries, as the Himavat is the chief of all mountains, as the Brahmana is the foremost of all castes, so are you the foremost of all wielders of bows.

35. The son of Dhritarastra paid no heed to the (salutary) counsel repeatedly offered by myself, by Vidura, Drona, Rama, Janarddana and Sanjaya.

36. Reft of his reason, and like one senseless, Duryodhana then disregarded our words. Past all counsel, he shall have soon to lie on the field crushed by the might of Bhima."

37. Hearing these words of Bhisma, Duryodhana, the lord of the Kurus, became depressed at heart. Then the son of Santanu, casting his eyes on him once more said :—" Hear me, O king, renounce your wrath.

38. You have seen, even now, O Duryodhana, how the intelligent Partha created that jet of water, cool and fraught with nectarious fragrance.

39. There is none in the universe who can achieve the self-same feat. The weapons of which the presiding deities respectively are *Agni*, *Varuna*, *Soma*, *Vayu*, *Vishnu*,

40. Indra, Pasupati, *Paramesthi*, *Prajapati*, *Dhata*, *Tashtra*, *Savita*, and *Vivavasu*,

41. All these weapons are known to Dhananjaya only, as also to Krishna, the son of Devaki, and not to any one else.

42. This son of Pandu, O sire, is incapable of being defeated in battle, by the celestials and the Asuras united together. These are the super-human feats achieved by this illustrious hero.

43. Therefore, O monarch, let peace be soon concluded with that truthful hero that ornament of the field, accomplished in all modes of warfare.

44. As long as the mighty-armed Krishna is under his own control let, O sire, O foremost the Kurus, peace be made with this heroic sons of Pritha.

45. As still, O king, these your uterine brothers and these myriad kings here survive the battle, let peace be concluded.

46. As long as Yudhisthira does not burn down your army with his eyes flashing the fire of wrath, let peace be concluded with him, O sire.

47. As long as Nakula, Sahadeva, and Pandu's son Bhimasena, do not totally crush your army down, let peace be made with them.

48. It likes me best to see amity established between you and the heroic Pandavas. Let the war terminate with my fall. Let, O sire, peace be concluded with the Pandavas.

49. Let these words, O sinless one, uttered by me, be agreeable to you. This conclusion of peace do I consider to be beneficial to you and to your dynasty.

50. Renouncing your wrath, do you conclude peace with the sons of Pritha. Enough has already been accomplished by Phalguna. Let amity be established among you with the death of Bhisma. Let the rest (of the warriors) live! Relent, relent, O monarch!

51. Give half of your kingdom to the Pandavas. Let Yudhisthira repair to Indraprastha. Be not despised by the rulers of the earth for having brewed intestine broils. Do not, O foremost of the Kurus, attain a sinful notoriety.

52. With my passing away, let peace be enjoyed by the people ; let these kings embrace one another out of friendship.

Let father be reconciled to his son, let nephew be reconciled to his uncle; let brother he reconciled to his brother, O king.

53. If through perverted understanding, and possessed by folly, you do not listen to these reasonable words of mine, then—this I tell you for certain—you shall have to rue your folly hereinafter. Therefore let the war end here."

54. Having, out of affection, spoken these words to Duryodhana among all those kings, the son of Ganga remained silent; though his vital parts were then being consumed by those arrow-wounds, he, overcoming his agony, kept himself tranquil.

Sanjaya said:—

55. Hearing these salutary and peaceful words of counsel, fraught with virtue and worldly profit, your son refused to act up to them, like a dying man refusing to take medicine.

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-third chapter, the counsel of Bhisma, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIV.

(BHISMA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. After Bhisma the son of Santanu had ceased speaking, O mighty monarch, all the rulers of earth that had come there, went back to their respective quarters.

2. Hearing of the slaughter of Bhisma, that best of men, Vikartana's son, terrified to a certain extent, quickly came to the spot where Bhisma lay.

3. There he saw the illustrious hero lying on his arrowy bed, like the heroic lord Kartikeya lying after his birth on his bed of reeds.

4. Then the highly effulgent Vrisha (Karna), with his voice choked with tears of grief, approaching that hero lying with his eyes shut, fell at his two feet.

5. "I am Radha's son, O foremost of of the Kurus, who, whenever he became the object of your sight, was looked upon with enmity by you." These were the words he then addressed to Bhisma.

6—7. Hearing those words of his, the venerable Kuru grandsire, viz., the son of Ganga, slowly looking at him with his eyes covered with film, and seeing the place to be solitary and dismissing his guards and embracing Karna with one arm like a father embracing his son, thus affectionately addressed him saying:—

8. "Come, come, you were ever my opponent, and ever tried to outvie me. Every thing would not surely have faired well with you, had you not come here.

9. You are the son of Kunti, and not that of Radha; Adhiratha is not you father; all this, O mighty-armed one, regarding you, I have heard from Narada,

10. As also from Vyasa. All this therefore can not but be true. I tell you, O son, forsooth, that I entertain no malice agajnst you.

11. I used to apply harsh words to you only for reducing your prowess. O you of excellent vows, you abuse the Pandavas without any reason whatsoever.

12. Your very birth was attended with transgression of virtue. Therefore is your intellect thus (perverted). In consequence of your arrogance and also association with the mean, your heart harbours malice against even the meritorious.

13. For this reason did I use harsh language against you in the assembly of the Kurus. I know your prowess in battle incapable of being borne by the foe,

14. Your devotion to the Brahman, your bravery, and your great love for deeds of benevolence. Among men there is none capable of rivalling you, O you resembling an immortal.

15. Apprehending intestine quarrels, I always applied harsh words to you. In archery, in fixing the arrows on the string, in lightness of hands, in the force of your weapons,

16. You are equal to Phalguna or the illustrious Krishna. In the city of the Kasis, O Karna, holding the bow single-handed.

17. You humiliated in battle all the other kings, for securing the bride for the king of the Kurus. Even the invincible king Jarasandha endued with might,

18. Ever boastful in battle, could never cope with you in fight. You are devoted to the Brahmanas, you always love fair fight. In prowess and in might,

19. You certainly are equal to a celestial child, and are far-superior to men. I relinquish to-day the wrath I formerly harboured against you.

20. Human effort can never overcome Destiny. O slayer of your foes, the Pandavas are your uterine brothers.

21. O mighty-armed hero, if you desire to do what is agreeable to me, then be re-

conciled to them. O son of the Sun, let hostilities see their end at my fall. Let all kings of the earth be relieved of their burden of anxiety and dangers.

Karna said :—

22. I know all this, O mighty-armed hero; there is nothing to be doubted in what you have spoken. You speak truly, O Bhisma. I am Kunti's son, and not that of a charioteer.

23. I was however disowned by Kunti, and I have been brought up by a charioteer. Having enjoyed the wealth of Duryodhana so long, I can not venture to disappoint his hopes.

24—25. Like the son of Vasudeva who is firmly resolved to do good to the Pandavas, I also, have set at naught, O you that bestow profuse gifts to the Brahmanas, my wealth, my sons, my wife and even my own body and honour. Death resulting from disease is not, indeed, a meet end for a Kshatriya, O you of Kuru's race.

26. For the interests of Duryodhana, I have hitherto always incited the Pandavas against me; the result is inevitable and none possibly can prevent it.

27. What person ever ventures to overcome Destiny by human endeavour? Numerous portents, O grandsire, indicating the destruction of the earth,

28. Were seen and declared in the assembly by you. I perfectly know that the Pandavas and the son of Vasudeva

29. Are invincible by other men. Even with them do I propose to fight. I have firmly set my heart upon vanquishing the sons of Pandu in battle.

30. I can not, on the other hand, renounce this fierce hostility that I cherish for the Pandavas. With a joyful heart performing the duties of my order, I will fight with Dhananjaya.

31. Determined as I am to fight, it behoves you, O sire, to accord me your permission. With your permission, O hero, I intend to fight.

32. It also befits you, to forgive me any cruel word I might have uttered against you at any time, as also any act injurious to you, that I might have done, through malice or fickleness.

Bhisma said :—

33. If indeed you can not cast off the fierce hostility you have inbibed against the Pandavs, then O Karna, I accord you my permission. Fight, actuated by a desire for attaining paradise.

34. Free from wrath and malice, do you carry out the commissions of the king, to the best of your abilities and energies, and observant of the conduct of the righteous.

35. I do accord you my unqualified permission; attain what you desire to attain. Through the instrumentality of Dhananjaya, you shall attain to those (posthumous) regions that are secured by the observance of a Kshatriya's duties.

36. Casting off arrogance and depending on your own prowess and strength, engage yourself in the fight; for, what is there more desirable to a Kshatriya than a righteous battle?

37. For long and strenuously, did I strive to bring about peace. But I failed to accomplish the task; this, O Karna, I tell you forsooth.

Sanjaya said :—

38. When Ganga's son had thus spoken, the son of Radha, having saluted and propitiated the former, mounted his chariot and drove towards the pavilion of your son.

Thus ends the hundred and twenty-fourth chapter, the meeting of Bhisma and Karna, in the Bhisma-badha of the Bhisma Parva.

FINIS BHISMA PARVA.

A PROSE ENGLISH TRANSLATION

OF

THE MAHABHARATA

(TRANSLATED LITERALLY FROM THE ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT).

DRONA PARVA.

EDITED AND PUBLISHED BY

MANMATHA NATH DUTT. M.A., M.R.A.S.,

RECTOR, KESHUB ACADEMY;

Author of the English Translations of the Ramayana, Vishnupuranam, Srimadbhagavatam, Kamandakiya Nitisara, Bhagavat Gita and many other works.

CALCUTTA.

PRINTED BY H. C. DASS, ELYSIUM PRESS,

65/2 BEADON STREET.

1897.

DRONA PARVA.

CONTENTS.

killed by the former. Krishna asks Yudhishthira not to fight with Drona. The fight between Yudhishthira and Kritavarman and the former is worsted by the latter. The fight between Ghatotkacha and Ashwathaman and the former is made insensible. The fight between Bhima and Duryodhana. The fight between Karna and Sahadeva. The fight between Virata and Salya—that between Alamvusha and Arjuna, Chitrasena and Nakula, Vrishasena and Drupada. Dusshasana defeats Prativindhya. The fight between Sakuni and Nakula. Dhristadyumna fights with Drona. Dhristadyumna kills Drumasena. Sakuni is sent to the battle-field by Duryodhana and is discomfitted by Arjuna. The fight between Alamvusha and Ghatotkacha and the former is killed by the latter. The fight between Karna and Ghatotkacha. Atayudha comes to the battle-field. Ghatotkacha meets. The fight between Bhima and Alayudha. The fight between Alayudha and Ghatotkacha,and the latter cuts off the former's head. Ghatotkacha makes a great slaughter of Duryodhana's army. Ghatotkacha is slain and the grief of the Pandavas. Vasudeva's joy and he explains the cause to Arjuna. Yudhishthira's grief at the death of Ghatotkacha and Vyasa consoles him. The Pandava leaders all proceed against Drona and the fight between the two parties. Arjuna's permission to the soldiers to sleep. Drona promises to kill all the Panchalas and describes Arjuna's strength to Duryodhana. The fierce encounter between the Kurus and Pandavas. Drona kills the three grand-sons of Drupada. Drupada and Virata fall upon Drona who kills them both. Dhristadyumna's promise to kill Drona on that very day. Bhima and Dhrishtadyumna attack Drona's army. The fierce fight between the leaders of both the parties. The encounter between Karna and Bhima, and that between Drona and Arjuna.. Dusshasana is defeated by Dhristadyumna. The fight between Kritavarma and his three brothers and Dhristadyumna, Nakula and Sahadeva. Dhristadyumna attacks Drona and Duryodhana proceeds to the rescue of the latter. Satyaki attacks Duryodhana. Arjuna falls upon the Kurus and Drona upon the Panchalas. Krishna advises Pandavas to kill Drona by unfair means. Arjuna does not accept the advice. Bhima kills an elephant by name Ashwathaman and informs Drona of the death (of his son) Ashwathaman. Drona does not believe him. Drona kills the Panchalas by means of Brahma weapon. Drona asks Yudhisthira about the truth of the report. Krishna requests Yudhisthira to save his army by speaking an untruth. Bhima also requests him to do the same. Yudhishthira does the same and Drona's dejection. The fight between Drona and Dhristadyumna. Dhristadyumna urged by Bhima cuts off Drona's head. The Kurus fly away at the sight of Drona's death. Kripa informs Ashwathaman of Drona's death who promises to kill the Pandavas and Panchalas. An account of the Narayana weapon. Yudhisthira's address to Arjuna who speaks of their unrighteousness and Bhima vindicates it.—P. 260—346.

Narayanastra-Mokshana Parva.

Dhristadyumna ridicules Satyaki and the latter falls upon him. A reconciliation is brought about with great difficulty by Krishna and Yudhishthira. Aswathaman kills the Pandava army and invokes the *Narayana* weapon. Krishna advices the Pandavas to throw down their arms—that being the only means to pacify the *Narayana* weapon, They all agree except Bhima who promises to fight with Aswathaman. Bhima is stupified. Arjuna and Krisnna get down from the car and make Drona to give up his arm. The *Narayana* weapon is pacified. Duryodhana asks Aswathaman to use the same weapon again, but he expresses his inability to use it for the second time. The fight between Aswathaman and Satyaki. Kripa, Karna, Duryodhana, Dushasana and Vrishasena all proceed against Satyaki. Satyaki is rendered insensible by Aswathaman. A dreadful combat beween Bhima and Aswathaman. Aswathaman invokes the fiery weapon. Arjuna baffles it. Aswathaman asks Vyasa about the cause of the failure of his weapon. He recounts the history of Narayana. Aswathaman hearing it, retires from the battle field. Arjuna meets Vyasa and enquires him about the invisible person who helped him on the day of Jayadratha's death. Vyasa says that he was Mahadeva. Mahadeva's spoiling Daksha Yajna. An account of Mahadeva.

P. 346—375.

THE MAHABHARATA

(IN ENGLISH)

DRONA PARVA.

CHAPTER I.

DRONABHISHEKA PARVA.

Having saluted the Supreme Deity (Narayana) and the highest of all male beings Nara and also the Goddess of Learning (Sarasvati), let us cry "Success"!

Janamejaya said :—

1—2. Hearing that his sire Devavrata of unequalled might, energy, sturdiness, prowess and vigour, had been slain by Sikhandin the son of Panchala, O Brahminical sage, what did the very powerful monarch Dhritarastra with eyes blinded with fast-falling tears, do ?

3. His son, O worshipful one, desired to obtain monarchy after having defeated the mighty warriors, the sons of Pandu, through the assistance of Bhisma, Drona, and other such heroes.

4. O illustrious ascetic, tell me all that the foremost of the Kuru dynasty did, when that chief of all bowmen (Bhisma) had been killed.

Vaishampayana said :—

5. Having heard that his sire (Bhisma) had been slain in battle, that ruler of men, Dhritarastra of the Kuru dynasty knew no rest of mind, being worn out with anxiety and sorrow.

6. When that foremost of the Kurus had been thus brooding over his grief, there came again to him the pure-souled son of Gavalgani.

7. O great king, Dhritarastra, the son of Ambika, then thus questioned Sanjaya who had that night returned from the camp to the city named after the elephant.

8. Hearing of the death of Bhisma, he became exceedingly cheerless, and longing for the victory of his sons, he broke out into lamentations like one sorely distressed.

Dhritarastra said :—

9. O son, having bewailed the high-souled Bhisma of terrific might, what did the Kurus, goaded by Destiny, do ?

10. When that unconquerable and high-souled hero was slain, what, for sooth, did the Kurus, deep down into the sea of sorrow, do ?

11. Verily, O Sanjaya, the innumerable and excellent army of the high-souled sons of Pandu, can strike the worlds with keenest apprehension.

12. Therfore, O Sanjaya, recount to me what the kings did, when Devavrata, the foremost of the Kurus, had been slain.

Sanjaya said :—

13. Hear, O monarch, with singleness of mind, the words, falling from my lips, regarding what your sons did when Devavrata had fallen.

14—15. O monarch, when Bhisma of invincible prowess had been slain, your own warriors and also those of the Pandava host, began to think of the duties of the Kshatriya sect ; and, O lord of men, at the thought, they wondered and were delighted ; and in obedience to their sectarian duties, they bowed down to the illustrious Bhisma.

16. Then those foremost of men prepared for Bhisma of infinite energy a bed furnished with a pillow, made of close-knotted arrows.

17—18. Having arranged for Bhisma's safety and having greeted one another, and with the permission of the son of Ganga and having circumambulated him and looking at each other with eyes coppery with anger, those Kshatriyas, goaded by Destiny, again issued forth for fighting with one another.

19. Then to the voice of the trumpets and to the roar of the drums, the army of your sons and that of their adversaries, formed in battle-array.

20-21. When, O greatest of kings, the son of Janhavi (Bhisma) had fallen and when the greater part of the day had worn out, these foremost of the Bharata race, overpowered by the influence of their wrath, and having their reasons bewildered through fate, and neglecting the salutary counsel of the illustrious son of Ganga, came out in haste grasping their weapons.

22. Owing to your own foolishness and that of your sons, and owing to the death of the son of Santanu, the descendants of the Kuru race together with all the (assembled) kings, appeared to be summoned by the God of death.

23. Like a herd of goats without a herdsman in a wood infested with beasts of prey, they were exceedingly oppressed with fear, being deprived of Devavrata.

24. On the fall of that foremost of the Bharata race, the army of the Kurus resembled the heavenly dome stripped of the stars, or the sky deprived of the atmosphere;

25. Or the earth with her crops blighted; or a discourse teeming with unrefined expressions; or the army of the Asuras when in the days of yore, Vali had been (thoroughly) humiliated,

26. Or a charming lady deprived of her lord; or a stream the waters of which had been dried up; or a doe deprived of her mate, surrounded by wolves in the forests,

27. Or the wide, extended, mountain-cava having its lion slain by the fabulous *Sarava*. Or the slaughter of Janhavi's son, O foremost of the Bharata race, the army of the Bharatas

28. Resembled a tiny bark thrown up and down on the bosom of the mighty main, driven by the gale rushing from all sides. It was then greatly harassed by the powerful Pandava heroes of infallible aims.

29. Then that host, with its elephants, horses and car-warriors, was much distressed, and exceedingly jeopardised and rendered helpless and terror-stricken.

30. Then, in that army, bereft of Devavrata, the kings and the (common) soldiers, individually struck with panic, seemed to be sinking into the nethermost regions.

31. Thereafter the Kouravas remembered Karna, who was equal to Devavrata himself, and who was the foremost of all wielders of weapons, and resplendent like a guest.

32. Then like the heart of a distressed person looking for a friend, their hearts turned towards him (Karna); and, O Bharata, the kings then broke out into exclamations saying, "O Karna, O Karna."

33—35. "That son of Radha, that benefactor of ours, that progeny of Suta, he that will sacrifice his life in battle, that one of illustrious renown with his followers and friends, has refrained from fighting these ten days; summon him without delay. That foremost of men, that hero of mighty arms, Karna, had been reckoned by Bhisma as only an *Ardharatha*, in the presence of all the Kshatriyas, during the tale of car-warriors of valour and prowess, in spite of his being equal to two *Maharathas*.

36. Indeed in that enumeration of *Rathas* and *Atirathas*, Karna was thus reckoned,—Karna who is the foremost (of all fighters), who is held in high respect by the heroes, and who would dare give battle even to Yama, Kuvera, Varuna, and Indra.

37. Out of wrath (excited by this classification of himself) he had thus addressed, O king, the son of Ganga:—'O Kourava, I will not fight so long as you live;

38. If you shall slay in battle the sons of Pandu, O you of Kuru's race, I will retire into the woods with the permission of Duryodhana.

39. If, O Bhisma, on the contrary, you, being slain by the Pandavas, are transported to heaven, then will I, riding on a single car, slay those whom you consider to be the mightiest of all car-warriors.'

40. Having thus spoken, the mighty-armed Karna of illustrious renown, refrained, with the permission of your son, from taking part in the battle for these ten days."

41. O Bharata, Bhisma of immeasurable prowess, displaying his might in battle, slew a large number of warriors of the Pandava host in that (sanguinary) engagement.

42. On the fall of that most powerful hero of unerring aim, your sons remembered Karna, like persons desirous of crossing (the ocean) remembering a raft.

43. Your sons and the warriors of your party, together with the (assembled) monarchs then, began to bewail saying 'Karna' they also said 'It is time for you to come.'

44. As during emergencies the heart flies to a friend, so our hearts then flew to Karna of irrepressible manhood who had acquired his knowledge of weapons from the son of Jamadagni.

45. O monarch, he only was capable of saving us from the great dangers of battle,

like Govinda always protecting the celestials from all calamities.

Vaisampayana said :—

46. Thereupon breathing (heavily) out like a snake, Dhritarastra spoke these words to Sanjaya who had been thus repeatedly extolling Karna.

Dhritarastra said :—

47. As your heart then were drawn towards Karna, the son of Vikartana, you surely saw that son of Radha, that descendant of Suta, who was ever-ready to lay down his life for you.

48. Did that Karna, of infallible prowess in battle, disappoint Duryodhana and his brothers, who had been all exceedingly distressed, panic-struck and anxious for being extricated from their difficulties ?

49. Was that foremost of bowmen in battle capable of filling up the void created by the fall of Bhisma, the shelter of the Kurus ?

50. Supplying the gap, was Karna successful in striking terror into the hearts of the enemy? Did he also succeed in fructifying the hopes of victory cherished by my sons?

Thus ends the first chapter, the questions of Dhritarastra, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER II.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)— *Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Adhiratha's son of the Suta caste, knowing that Bhisma had fallen, became desirous of saving, like a brother, the army of your son from the calamity it was in, like a boat split in the midst of the unfathomable deep.

2. Having heard that the son of Santanu, that foremost of men, the never-dropping one, and the best of all car-warriors, had been slain, O king, Karna the represser of enemies and the foremost of all bowmen, speedily arrived at the field of battle.

3. When that excellent of car-warriors, Bhisma had been slain by the enemy, Karna soon (came to the battle field), desirous of saving the army of your son resembling a boat sunk in the deep, like a father anxious for rescuing his sons.

Karna said :—

4 —5. When that Bhisma, who was endued with resoluteness, intelligenee, prowess, energy, truthfulness, self-control, and with all the other attributes of a hero; who was proficient in the use of celestial weapons ; in whom there were humility, bashfulness, sweet speech and harmlessness ; who was always grateful, the slayer of the enemies of the twice-borns ; in whom there resided all these virtues for ever like the stain in the moon,—when even that Bhisma the destroyer of hostile heroes had obtained his quietus, I consider the remaining warriors as already slain.

6. Owing to the constant connection with action, there is nothing in this world that is eternal. When that one of illustrious vows (Bhisma) has been killed to-day, what man can say with certitude that to-morrow the sun will rise?

7. When that one of prowess equal to that of the *Vasus*, when he that was born of the energy of the *Vasus*, when that ruler of earth has gone back to the *Vasus*, do you then lament for your wealth, your sons, and this army ?

Sanjaya said :—

8. When that giver of boons, that most puissant hero, that lord of men, that one of great vigour had been slain, and when the Bharatas had been vanquished, Karna, with a sorrowful heart, and shedding copious tears, began to comfort (the Kurus).

9. Having heard, O monarch, these wordr of the son of Radha, your sons and yous soldiers, out of grief, broke out into loud lamentations and shed tears from their eyes, which were as copious as their wails were loud.

10. When the sanguinary engagement waged anew and the Kourava host led by kings once more roared forth (their battle-cry), then that foremost of all *Maharathis* (Karna) addressed these words to the mighty car-warriors, that imparted joy to their hearts.

11. "This transient world is ever flying (towards death) ; considering this I always regard everything as unsteady. When you were all present here, how could that foremost of the Kurus (Bhisma), who resembled a mountain in steadiness, be slain in battle ?

12. When like the sun dropping down on the earth, that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Santanu has fallen, the monarchs (of the Kuru army) are hardly capable of withstanding Dhananjaya, like trees unable

to withstand the hurricane that uproots even the hills.

13. As that high-minded one did, so to-day will I protect, in this dreadful battle, this army of the Kurus, whose appearance is cheerless and whose zeal has been destroyed by the enemy, which is helpless, and whose best warriors have already been slain.

14. This heavy burden now devolves on myself; I see that this world is transitory. That most excellent of warriors has also fallen in battle. Why shall I then entertain any apprehension for fighting?

15. Coursing (swiftly) in the battle-field, I shall send, by means of my straight-going shafts, to the abode of Death, the foremost descendants of Kuru's race (Pandavas). Considering fame to be the best of all worldly possessions, I shall kill them in the engagement, or myself lie on the field being slain by them.

16. Yudhisthira is endued with resoluteness, intelligence, piety and vigour; Vrikodara equals a hundred elephants in might; Arjuna also is youthful and the begotten son of the foremost of celestials; so the army belonging to them is not to be easily vanquished even by the immortals.

17. As no one ever returns alive from the jaws of death, so no coward ever returns (alive) after having confronted that hostile army to which belong the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva), each resembling Death himself in battle, and in which are Satyaki and the son of Devaki.

18. Great power, begot of austerities, should be opposed by ascetic wealth. So should the wise oppose might with might. My mind is decided upon withstanding the enemy and it is resolutely fixed upon ensuring the safety (of my own troops.)

19. For certain, O charioteer, I shall to-day oppose their force, and shall defeat them by simply going to the field. This conflict of friends (internecine war) ought not to be tolerated by me. He that helps in rallying a routed army is the true friend.

20. I shall either achieve this pious act of manliness or shall follow Bhisma, renouncing my vital breaths. I shall either slay in battle my myriad enemies, or slain by them I shall attain to the posthumous regions of the heroes.

21. I regard, indeed, this to be my bounden duty, O charioteer, when women and infants wail aloud for assistance, and when Dhartarastra's pride has been humiliated. So I shall this day conquer the enemies of the monarch (Duryodhana).

22. Preserving the Kurus and massacring the sons of Pandu even at the cost of my very life in this dreadful fight, and despatching to Death my myriad enemies in this battle, I shall bestow this monarchy on the son of Dhritarastra.

23. Fasten on me this magnificient, golden and resplendent armour radiant with gems and jewels. Let also my helmet lustrous like the sun and my bows and arrows resembling fire, poison or serpents, be donned.

24. Fasten sixteen quivers (to my chariot); fetch strongest bows, and also arrows, spears, heavy maces, and my conch with its body variegated with gold.

25. Procure also my standard, variegated, beautiful, magnificient, made of gold, burning with the lustre of a lotus, bearing the emblem of the elephant's girth, after having cleansed it with a fine piece of cloth, and having decorated it with festoons of flowers and a net-work of fine wires.

26. O son of a charioteer, bring me also, in all haste, fleetest horses, of the colour of tawny clouds, stout, washed with water hallowed by *Mantras*, and decorated with rich caparisons made of effulgent gold.

27. Procure, in all haste, a chariot, most magnificient, festooned with garlands of gold, adorned with gems resembling the Sun and the Moon, furnished with all necessary objects and offensive weapons, and yoked with lusty horses.

28. Bring me also beautiful bows of great toughness and bow-strings of finest make, capable of throwing (arrows at great distances), and some large quivers well-stuffed with shafts and several cuirasses (to cover my person).

29. O hero, bring speedily all auspicious articles required at the time of setting out (for battle), and brass and golden vessels filled with curds. Bring garlands of flowers and decorate my person with them; strike up, also, kettle-drums for victory.

30. Drive, O charioteer, quickly thither where Keeritin (diadem-decked), Vrikodara, the virtuous Yudhisthira and the twins are. Confronting them, either I shall slay them, or being slain in battle by my foes, I shall follow Bhisma.

31. That host to which belongs, Yudhisthira, firm in truth, in which are Bhima and Arjuna, and which contains the son of Vasudeva, Satyaki and the Srinjayas, that host I consider to be incapable of being vanquished by these monarchs.

32. Even if all-devouring Death were to guard Arjuna in the encounter, with the utmost heed, still would I slay him, con-

fronting him in battle; or myself hie to the regions of Death following the trail of Bhisma.

33. It is not that, I say, that I shall not go amidst those heroes. Those that sow dissensions among friends, that are of veering devotion and of impious souls, those are not my allies.

Sanjaya said :—

34. Karna then drove out for victory, mounting on an excellent chariot, most lavishly furnished, invulnerable, with a magnificient pole, adorned with gold, auspicious, with (fluttering) penons, and to which were harnessed steeds fleet like the wind.

35—36. Worshipped by the best of the car-warriors of the Kuru party, like Indra by the immortals, that high-souled and most terrible of all wielders of bow, endowed with immeasurable vigour like the sun himself,—riding on his chariot decorated with gold, gems and jewels, mounted with a magnificient standard, to which were harnessed finest animals and the rattle of which resembled the rumbling of clouds,—went, attended by a mighty host, to the battle-field where that foremost of the Bharata race (Bhisma) had obtained his quietus.

37. Then that son of Adhiratha, the mighty bowman and warrior Karna, blessed with a handsome appearance and effulgent like fire, riding on his own auspicious chariot resplendent like fire, shone like the monarch of the celestials himself riding on his own heavenly chariot.

Thus ends the second chapter, the setting out of Karna, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER III.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—8. Seeing the most worshipful champion, the high-souled grandsire Bhisma of immeasurabte prowess, the death of all Kshatriyas, lie on a bed of arrows and resemble the mighty main dried by violent storms, and seeing that hero dragged down from his car by the celestial weapons of Savyasachin, (Arjuna), the hope your sons cherished for victory was gone as also their armours and peace of mind. Seeing that one who was always like an island to persons going down into the unfathomable deep in their attempt to cross it; seeing him pierced with shafts that had flown in an uninterrupted stream like that of the *Yamuna*, him who appeared like the unbearable Mainaka hurled on the earth by Mahendra; seeing that hero fallen on the surface of the earth like the sun dropped down from the heavens; seeing him who resembled the unconquerable Vritra when he had been vanquished in the days of yore by Vasava; seeing that stupifier of the consciousness of all heroes, that most excellent of champions, that foremost of all bowmen; seeing that hero and foremost of men, your father Bhisma of illustrious vows, that grandsire of the descendant of the Bharatas thrown down and lying prostrate on the field, pierced through and through by the arrows of Arjuna; seeing that hero resting on a couch worthy of a hero,—the son of Adhiratha dismounted from his chariot, greatly distressed and overwhelmed with grief and with his consciousness well-nigh clouded.

9. He (Karna) walked towards him (Bhisma) on foot, distressed and with eyes blinded with fast-falling tears. Then saluting him and folding his palms and having paid his respects, Karna thus spoke.

10. "I am Karna; good betide you; speak to me, O Bharata, in auspicious and sweet language; turn your eyes on me.

11. None can expect to reap the fruits of his meritorious deeds here, since you, O venerable pious old man, lie prostrate on the ground being slain (by your enemies).

12. In replenishing the treasury, in matters of counsel, in arranging troops for battle, and in the handling of arms, I do not, O foremost of the Kurus, find any one else among the Kurus equal to you.

13. I do not see any one else that endued with a pure intelligence, will save the Kurus from their terror. Having slain numerous warriors, you are now repairing to the regions of the Pitris.

14. O foremost of the Bharatas, from this day forward, the sons of Pandu possessed with ire, will slay the Kurus, as tigers slaughter deer.

15. To-day the Kurus will realise the vigour of Savayasachin, who produces the twang of the Gandiva bow; to-day they will be frightened by him as the Asuras were frightened by the wielder of the thunderbolt.

16. To-day the whizzle, resembling the rumble of thunders, of arrows shot from the Gandiva, will strike terrorin to the hearts of the Kurus and other rulers of earth.

17. O hero, to-day the shafts of the diadem-decked Arjuna, will burn down the sons of Dhritarastra, just as a swelling

forest-conflagration of terrible flames burns down the trees.

18. Fire and wind coursing together, consume numerous copses, creepers and trees in that part of a forest through which they pass.

19. There can be no doubt that the son of Pritha is like a raging fire; and, O foremost of men, without doubt Krishna resembles the strong wind (that accompanies fire).

20. Hearing the sound of the conch *Panchajannya* and the twang of the bow Gandiva, all the soldiers will be terror-stricken.

21. O hero, bereft of you, the monarchs will not be able to bear the rumble of the advancing chariot mounted with the banner having for its emblem the (terrible) ape, that belong to that represser of foes (Arjuna).

22. What other monarch, except yourself, is capable of combating with Arjuna, all whose super-human deeds the wise extol.

23. Superhuman was indeed the combat he had with the high-souled Tryamvaka (the three-eyed god). From him did he (Arjuna) secure a boon which is difficult of being obtained by the mean-minded.

24—25. That son of Pandu ever boastful of his prowess is protected by Madhava. What other person can overcome him in battle who could not be vanquished even by you before,—you who, endowed with great prowess, had defeated in battle, Rama, that terrible destroyer of the Kshatriya race, held in high honour by the celestials and the Asuras.

26. With your permission I, as I am unable to tolerate him any longer, can to-day slay, with the dint of my weapons, that son of Pandu, that foremost of warriors in battle who is like a serpent of virulent venom, and is terrible, heroic and capable of slaying his enemies even by his very glances."

Thus ends the third chapter, the eulogy of Karna, in the Dronabhiseka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER IV.

(DRONABHISEKA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. When he had been thus speaking, the venerable grandsire of the Kurus, pleased with him, addressed to him these words suitable to season and place.

2—3. "May you be the refuge of your friends, even as the ocean is the refuge of the rivers, the sun of the other planets, the pious of the truth, fertile soil of the seeds, and Parjannya of the created beings. May your relations depend on you even as the immortals depend upon the thousand-eyed Indra.

4. May you be the humiliator of the pride of your enemies; and may you be the enhancer of the delight of your friends, the Kouravas, as Vishnu is of the denizens of heaven.

5. O Karna, ever anxious to perform the pleasures of the son of Dhritarastra, you, with the strength and vigour of your arms, did defeat the Kamvojas, having gone to their country, namely Rajapura.

6. You also vanquished the monarchs who was stopping at Girivraja and who was headed by Nagnajit, as also the Amvasthas, the Videhas and the Gandharvas.

7. O Karna, in days gone by, you brought under the authority of Duryodhana the Kiratas obstinate in battle and peopling the strongholds of the Himavat.

8. The Utkalas, the Mekhalas, the Poundras, the Kalingas, the Nishadhas, the Trigartas, and the Valhikas, were also worsted in battle by you.

9. O Karna, desirous of doing good to Duryodhana, you defeated in battle in various lands, O hero, numerous highly vigorous clans.

10. May you, O son, be the shelter of all the Kouravas, even as Duryodhana is, with his friends, relatives and kinsmen.

11. I do bid you farewell in benedictory language; go, and fight with the enemy; command the Kurus in battle, and secure victory for Duryodhana.

12. Like Duryodhana, you are to us our grandson. Therefore, by the ordinances, we are the same to you as we are to him.

13. O foremost of men, the intelligent hold that in this world the connection of the pious with the pious is more closer in respect of relationship than that through the uterus.

14. Therefore being faithfully united with the Kurus, and believing their army to be your own, do you, like Duryodhana himself, protect it:"

15. Having heard these words of him (Bhisma) and having bowed down to his feet, Karna, the son of Vikartana, went to the place where all the bowmen were assembled.

16. Beholding that matchless and extensive encampment of the innumerable army,

Karna encouraged that host of well-accoutered and broad-chested soldiers.

17—18. All the Kurus, having Duryodhana at their head, were greatly delighted; and seeing that mighty-armed and high-souled Karna come with the intent of battle and place himself at the command of the whole host, the Kurus welcomed him, with sounds produced by the striking of the arm-pits, with rending shouts, twang of bow-strings, roars like that of lions and diverse other kinds of sounds.

Thus ends the fourth chapter, the consolation afforded by Karna, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER V.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—*Contd*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, seeing that foremost of men Karna seated on his car, Duryodhana highly enraptured, spoke these words.

2. "I consider this army, protected by you, to have found a suitable commander in you. Do you now decide that which will be beneficial (to this army) and which is practicable."

Karna said :—

3. O foremost of men, yourself speak to us, since you are the wisest of kings. A third person cannot so well descry as to what should be done, as he who is interested in any affair.

4. All these rulers of men are desirous of hearing your words; and I am sure you will never speak unjust words.

Duryodhana said :—

5. Owing to his prowess, seniority, knowledge of the Srutis, and the support he obtained from all the warriors, he (Bhisma) was the leader of our host.

6. In the fair battle of these ten days that highly glorious one of generous soul, O Karna, slew a large number of my foes and protected my own army.

7. When that one, who accomplished many difficult acts, is gone to heaven, O Karna, whom do you consider capable of leading (this host into battle)?

8. Like an unmanned boat in waters, the army cannot stand in battle even for a short while without a leader, O Karna, O you who are foremost in battle.

9. An army without a commander is like a boat with none to steer her through, or like a chariot without a driver, going any where.

10. Just as a foreign trader in an unknown country reaps all distress, so an army without a commander is exposed to all dangers.

11. Therefore do you look among all these high-souled warriors of ours and find out a proper person who may, as a commander, fill the place of Santanu's son.

12. The person, whom you will consider to be fit to lead our army, in battle, will undoubtedly be chosen to be so unanimously,

Karna said :—

13. All these foremost of men of high soul are worthy of the leadership (of this host). There is no necessity for making any selection.

14. All of them are perfectly acquainted with the geneologies (of princes) and with the vital parts of the body; they are possessed of prowess, might and intelligence; they are grateful, highly intelligent and ever unretreating from battle.

15. But all of them cannot at the same time assume the leadership; therefore only one among them is to be chosen, in whom there reside superior qualities.

26. If you promote one among several contending rivals, the rest, it is clear, being depressed, will not fight with a desire for doing your good.

17. But this foremost of all the wielders of weapons, this preceptor and teacher, of all the warriors, this Drona who is venerable in years, is worthy of being elected generalissimo.

18. When the indomitable Drona, who is foremost among those conversant with Brahma and is equal to Suka and Angirasa in learning, is here, who else is worthy of being selected as a leader?

19. O Bharata, there is not even a single warrior among this mighty host of kings, who will not follow Drona when he goes to fight.

20. O monarch, this one is the foremost of all leaders of warriors; he is the foremost of all wielders of arms, as also of all intelligent persons, and he is also your preceptor (in arms).

21. As the immortals desirous of defeating the Asuras in battle made Kartikeya their leader, so, do you, O Duryodhana,

soon elect this one (Drona) as the leader of your army.

Thus ends the fifth chapter, the counsel of Karna, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER VI.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thereupon having listened to the words of Karna, king Duryodhana thus addressed Drona who was standing in the midst of the soldiers.

Duryodhana said —

2—3. Amongst all this numerous host of kings, there is none who can be as good a protector as you, owing to the superiority of the order to which you belong, to the nobility of your birth, to your knowledge of the Sastras, your age, your intelligence, prowess, skilfulness, invincibility, perfect acquaintance with worldly matters, moral purity, self-control, asceticism, seniority, and gratefulness, as also owing to your being endued with all desirable qualities.

4. Like Indra protecting the celestials, do you protect ourselves. O foremost of the twiceborn ones, being led by yourself, we desire to obtain victory over our enemies.

5. Like Kapala amongst the Rudras; like Pavaka amongst the Vasus; like Kuvera amongst the Yakshas; like Vasava amongst the Marutas;

6. Like Vasistha amongst the Vipras, like Bhaskara (sun) amongst the lustrous bodies, like Yama amongst the Pitris, like Varuna amongst the creatures of the waters;

7. Like the moon amongst the stars, like Usanas amongst the sons of Diti, you are the foremost amongst all commanders of armies; therefore be you our leader.

8. Like Indra slaying the Danavas, do you slay our enemies, O sinless one, by arranging in battle-array this eleven Akshauhini of soldiers which will be placed under your complete disposal.

9. Like the son of Pavaka proceeding before the celestials, do you proceed at the head of this our army; we will follow you in battle like a herd of bulls following the leader.

10. That fierce bowman, that mighty champion, Arjuna, stretching his celestial bow, will not strike us seeing you go before us.

11. O foremost of men, if you accept our leadership, then I am sure to conquer in battle Yudhisthira with all his friends and followers.

Sanjaya said :—

12. When Duryodhana had finished his address, the kings, imparting great delight to your sons by their loud defiant shouts, exclaimed "Victory to Drona."

13. Then the soldiers also filled with delight, and desirous of earning fame, began to extol that foremost of regenerate ones, with Duryodhana at their head. Thereupon, O monarch, Drona spoke these words to Duryodhana.

Thus ends the sixth chapter, the request of Duryodhana, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER VII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Drona said :—

1. I am versed in the Vedas and in their six auxiliaries; and in the science of practical life concerning itself with men. I know the weapons of Tryamvaka and various other weapons and *Mantras.*

2. Those qualities,—which, you, desirous of victory, have ascribed to me, bringing them to play, I will offer battle to the sons of Pandu.

3. But, O monarch, I shall never slay the son of Prisata in battle; O foremost of men, he has been created to kill me.

4. I shall encounter the hostile array and kill the Somakas. In battle, the Pandavas will not meet me with delightful hearts.

Sanjaya said :—

5. O monarch, then your son, with the permission of Drona, made him the commander of his troops, with ceremonies enjoined by the ordinances for such occasions.

6. As in days of yore, the gods with Indra at their head, invested Skanda with their leadership, so now did the monarchs headed by Duryodhana, invest Drona with the command of the troops.

7. Thereupon on Drona's investiture with the command, the delight (of troops) was manifest by the sound of musical instruments and the deafening blare of the conchs.

8.—9. Then honouring Drona with shouts the like of which fill the ear during a holy day, with souuds of benedictory utterances, with eulogies, songs, and cries of bards, ministrels and panegyrists, with the cries of victory uttered by the foremost of regenerate ones, and with the frolics of mimes, the Kouravas considered the sons of Pandu as already worsted in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

10. Then having been installed on the command of the army, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Varadwaja, arranging the troops in battle-array, marched out, accompanied by your sons, from a desire of giving battle.

11. Donning their armours, the king of the Shindhus, and the Kalingas, and Vikarna, your son, stationed themselves in the right wing of Drona.

12. Then accompanied by a numerous and picked cavalry recruited from men belonging to the Gandhara tribe and armed with lustrous lances, Sakuni marched out as their support.

13. Then Kripa, Kritavarman, Chitrasena, and Vivinsati, having Dussasana at their head, proceeded, covering the left wing.

14. Then riding on horses of great fleetness, the Kamvojas headed by Sudakshina, and the Sakas with the Yavanas, marched forth, forming the support of the last mentioned party.

15—17. Then the Madras, the Trigartas, the Amvasthas, the warriors from the West and the North, the Malavas, the Sivis, the Surasenas, the Sudras with the Malavas, the Souviras, the Kitavas, the warriors from the East and the South,—all these with your son Duryodhana at their head, and the son of Suta at their rear, cheering the hearts of their own partisans, marched forth, and increased the strength of the (advancing) troops. Karna, the son of Vikartana, then marched at the head of all bowmen.

18. His mighty standard, huge and resplendent, and marked with the device of the elephant's girth, imparting delight into the hearts of his own soldiers, burned with effulgence equal to that of the sun.

19. All the kings and the Kurus, seeing Karna, did pay no heed to the calamity that had befallen them in the shape of Bhisma's death, and they all were shorn of their sorrow.

20. Numerous warriors, highly delighted, forming into groups, thus began to talk, "Surely the Pandavas, seeing Karna in the field, will not stay a while in battle.

21. Truly, Karna is powerful enough to gain victory in battle over the celestials led by Vasava himself, not to speak of the sons of Pandu, who are devoid of prowess and energy alike.

22. The sons of Pritha were tenderly treated by the mighty-armed Bhisma in battle. But Karna shall slay them in the encounter with sharpened arrows."

23. O lord of people, thus talking to one another with joyful looks, and honouring and eulogising the son of Radha, they marched along (in battle-array).

24. Our own army, O monarch, was arrayed in the form of a *Sakata* (or car); and the army of our high-souled enemies, O Bharata, was formed in the shape of a Krouncha (crane),

25—27. By the very virtuous Yudhisthira with a delighted heart. At the head of their array stood the two foremost of men, Visaksena (Vishnu) and Dhananjaya, with their banner, bearing the emblem of the ape, uplifted. That banner of Partha of immeasurable prowess, the hump of the whole army and the refuge of all wielders of bow, that banner which reached the orbit of the sun, seemed to illumine the whole army of Yudhisthira of high soul.

28. That banner of the most intelligent Partha appeared like the burning sun when at the end of a Yuga, it rises to consume the earth.

29. Of all the warriors Arjuna is the foremost of all the bows Gandiva is the best. Vasudeva is the foremost of all created beings, and Sudarsana is the best of all kinds of discus.

30. The chariot, to which were harnessed white horses, carrying these four kinds of energy incarnate, stood at the head of the hostile array, like the discus of Kala raised (for being hurled).

31. Thus those two high-souled heroes stood at the head of their armies. Karna stood at the head of your army and Dhananjaya at the head of the hostile troops.

32. Then, in that battle, the Kouravas and the Pandavas, looked at each other possessed with ire, and each desirous of slaying the other.

33. Thereafter when the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja, flew suddenly to the fight, the earth began to shake with the sound of terrible wails.

34. Then thick clouds of dust, blown up by the storm, and resembling heaps of tawny silk, intercepted from the view the welkin and the sun.

35. Though the sky was cloudless yet a shower of flesh, bones and blood fell on the earth; and vultures, hawks, cranes, Kankas, and crows, by thousands,

36. Swooped on your army, over and over again, O king; the jackals yelled forth; and many dreadful and fierce rangers of the sky,

37. Repeatedly placed your army to their right, being desirous of devouring flesh, and thirsting for blood.

38. On the field of battle, illuminating the welkin, dropped many a burning meteor accompanied with thundering sounds and vibrating motions and covering with their tails large areas.

39. Then, O monarch, when the commander of the host (Drona) set out for battle, the wide circumference of the lustrous orb of day, emitted flashes of lightning and thundering sounds.

40. These and many other terrible portents appeared indicating a great loss of life of many heroes in the ensuing encounter.

41. Thereafter the fight between the Kurus and the Pandus, both desirous of killing one another, commenced; and the terrible din rising therefrom filled the whole world.

42. Then, burning with wrath, the Pandavas and the Kouravas, all first-class smiters, began to pierce one another with sharpened weapons, ardently longing for victory.

43. Then that mighty champion (Drona) of great effulgence, charged, with headlong speed, the army of the sons of Pandu, shooting hundreds of sharpened shafts.

44. Beholding Drona charge, the Pandavas along with the Srinjayas received him, O monarch, with showers of shafts in distinct sets.

45. That mighty host (of the Pandavas) along with the Panchalas agitated and routed by Drona, was shattered like rows of cranes by the wind.

46. In the encounter, invoking various celestial weapons Drona, in a moment, sorely oppressed the Pandavas and the Srinjayas.

47. The Panchalas having Dhristadyumna at their head, being slaughtered by Drona, like the Danavas by Vasava, began to quake.

48. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, the heroic Yajnasena, versed in the knowledge of the celestial weapons, produced by his showers of arrows many a breach, in the columns of Drona.

49. Then that powerful son of Prishata, checking the showers of Drona's arrows with those of his own, slew many a Kuru warrior.

50. Thereupon Drona of mighty arms, again rallying his soldiers and re-arranging them, charged the son of Prishata in battle.'

51. Then towards the son of Prishata he directed a close shower of arrows, like Meghavat exceedingly enraged shooting his shafts towards the Danavas.

52. Thus agitated by Drona with his arrows, the Pandavas and Srinjayas, again and again, broke their lines, like a herd of inferior beasts attacked by a lion.

53. Then, O monarch, like a circle of firebrands, the mighty Drona careered through the army of the Pandavas; and that was a wonderful sight.

54—55. Riding on his own excellent cars, that resembled a city careering through the skies; that was well-supplied with the implements of war according to the military science, the banner of which was fluttering on the air, the rattle of which was resounding all round the field, the steeds of which were well-driven, and the flagstaff of which was shining like a rod of crystal—riding on such a chariot, Drona inspired the hostile army with terror and massacred it (right and left).

Thus ends the seventh chapter, the display of Drona's prowess, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER VIII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing Drona thus destroy their horses, drivers, cars and elephants, the Pandavas were greatly afflicted, and could not check his career.

2. Thereupon king Yudhisthira said to Dhristadyumna and Dhananjaya, 'Check the career of the Pot-born Drona by surrounding him with great heed.'

3. Thereupon the mighty car-warriors namely Arjuna, and the son of Prishata together with their followers, encompassed Drona, as he was rushing at them.

4. The Kekayas, Bhimasena, the son of Subhadra, Ghatotkacha, Yudhisthira, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, the king of the Matsyas, the son of Drupada,

5. And the five sons of Draupadi greatly delighted, and Dhristaketu along with Saty . . the wrathful Chekitana, and Yuyutsu th. . ghty car-warrior,

6. And, O monarch, all the other rulers of earth who followed the Pandavas in battle, achieved many feats (of valour), in accordance with their prowess and nobility of birth.

7. Seeing the Pandavas protect their army in battle, the son of Bharadwaja, rolling his eyes in anger, cast his glances (on the army).

8. Working himself up with ire, that one (Drona), indomitable in war, seated on his chariot, blew the Pandava host off like the storm blowing thick clouds off.

9. Charging cars, steeds, men, and elephants on all sides, Drona roamed in the field like one insane, and though grown up in years, he resembled one endued with the energy of youth.

10. O monarch, his horses, of chestnut colour, of excellent breed, of wind-like speed, and of indefatigable energy, assumed a beautiful appearance being bespattered with blood.

11. Beholding that one of regulated vows rush at them like the god of Death enraged, all the warriors of the Pandavas sped on all directions.

12. As some fled, and some rallied and some looked at Drona, and some stood on the field, the noise (of the confusion) they caused was dreadful and deafening.

13. That noise that imparted delight to the heroes, and enhanced the terrors of the cowards, filled the whole interval between he earth and the skies.

14. And again did Drona, shouting forth his own name, made himself terrible in battle by piercing his enemies with hundreds of arrows.

15. O sire, then the mighty Drona careered fiercely amid the army of the sons of Pandu, like the god of Death himself ; and he appeared like one young, though bearing the weight of years.

16. Severing down many heads as well as arms decorated with ornaments, and rendering the seats of many a car empty, he sent up terrific roars.

17. In consequence of his rapturous roars, and of the fleetness of his arrows, O master, the warriors began to shake in battle, like kine shivering with cold.

18. A terrible sound caused by the rattle of Drona's chariot, by the contraction and stretching of his bow-string, and by the twang of his bow, filled the concave dome.

19. Thousands of arrows shot from his bow fell, covering cardinal points, upon the elephants, steeds, chariots, and foot-soldiers (of the hostile array)

20. Then the Pandavas along with the Panchalas, rushed at Drona wielding a bow of great strength, and resembling a blazing fire in consequence of his weapons.

21. Then he began to despatch them with their elephants, steeds, and foot-soldiers to the regions of Death ; and within a short while Drona made the earth muddy with blood.

22. A net-work of arrows, woven by Drona who had been scattering celestial weapons, and shooting shafts on all sides, was seen to overshroud the cardinal points.

23. Like flashes of lightning amid dense masses of clouds, his standard could be seen whirling amongst foot-soldiers,chariots, horses and car-warriors.

24. Afflicting with arrows the five foremost among the Kekayas, and the king of the Panchalas,Drona,of irrepressible vigour, armed with a bow and arrows, charged the division commanded by Yudhisthira.

25. Thereupon, Bhimasena, and Dhananjaya, and the grandson of Sini, and the sons of Drupada and the son of Saibya, the ruler of the Kasis, and Sibi himself, greatly delighted and sending up loud shouts, covered Drona with a stream of shafts.

26. Then numerous arrows shot from the bow of Drona, and adorned with golden wings, piercing through the bodies of elephants and young steeds, stuck themselves on the ground, with feathers crimson with blood.

27. Then the field of battle, being covered over with fallen bands of warriors, (shattered) chariots and carcasses of elephants and horses mangled with arrows, appeared like the firmament overhung with dense masses of black clouds.

28. Then Drona desirous of the prosperity of your sons, having in battle trampled down the divisions led by the grandson of Sini, Bhima, and Arjuna and having crushed the son of Subhadra, and the king of the Panchalas and the ruler of the Kasis, and many other warriors,

29. And having achieved these and other wondrous feats in battle, O foremost among the Kurus, that high-souled one, Drona, left this world for heaven, after having consumed this earth like the sun that

rises at the time of the world's annihilation, O monarch.

30—36. Having achieved these great feats of valour, that chastiser of hostile armies, that possessor of a golden car, that hero, who had killed in battle hundreds of thousands of the soldiers of the Pandavas, was himself slain by the son of Prishata. Having slain more than two Akshauhini of unreturning heroes, that Drona of (unrivalled) intelligence, at last attained to the highest state of existence. O monarch, having achieved these most difficult feats, that one of a golden car was slain by the Pandavas and the Panchalas of inauspicious and heartless of deeds. When the preceptor was slain in battle, O king, a loud roar of all creatures as also of the warriors filled the sky. The loud cry of 'O fie' uttered by creatures arose in the welkin resounding through the earth, the heavens and the interval between them, and the cardinal and the subsidiary quarters. Then all the celestials and the Pitris, and the friend of the mighty car-warrior Bharadwaja (Drona), saw him slain in battle. The son of Pandu having obtained victory gave forth roars resembling those of a lion ; and the (foundation of) the earth shook with those loud leonine roars of theirs.

Thus ends the eighth chapter, the audition of the account of Drona's death, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER IX.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. What was Drona doing when the Pandavas and the Srinjayas slew him in battle,—he who was so skilful in the use of weapons amongst all wielders of arms ?

2. Did his chariot give way ? Did his bow snap in two in the act of smiting ? Did Drona go mad, and for that reason met with his death ?

3—5. O son, how was it that the son of Prishata, the prince of the Panchalas, slew that invincible hero, who scattered thick shower of arrows decked with golden wings, who was (wonderfully) light-handed ; that foremost of the regenerate who was proficient in everything, thoroughly familiar with all modes of warfare, and capable of shooting his shafts to a long distance ; who was self-controlled, skilful in the use of weapons, and blessed with the possession of celestial weapons, that mighty warrior who performed many dreadful feats and who was ever heedful in fight ?

6. Since that heroic Drona was slain by Parshata of illustrious soul, it is evident, I think, that Destiny is more powerful than exertion.

7. In that mighty warrior, the knowledge of all the four kinds of weapons was present. Do you say to me that that Drona, that preceptor of all wielders of arrows and weapons is slain ?

8. Hearing the death that hero of golden car covered over with tiger-skins, whose effulgence was like that of gold, I cannot to-day discard my grief.

9. Surely, O Sanjaya, no man ever dies through sorrow caused by another's calamity ; since I, unfortunate as I am, am still alive having heard of Drona's death.

10. I do consider Destiny to be, by far, the superior ; and exertion is of no avail. Surely my heart is so hard as if it were made of adamant,

11—13. Since it does not break into hundred pieces, although I have heard of the slaughter of Drona. How could he had been struck by death, on whom the Brahmanas and the princes danced attendance being desirous of receiving lessons in the Vedas and in divination, and in the use of bows. I can not even conceive the fall of Drona which is like the drying up of the ocean, the removal of the Meru mountain and the dropping of the lustrous orb from the heavens. He was the represser of the wicked and the protector of the pious.

14—15. That afflicter of enemies, who has sacrificed his life for the pitiable Duryodhana, on whose prowess rested the hope of victory of my wicked sons, who was equal to Vrihaspati and Usanas in intelligence,—how could he have been slain ? His stout chestnut-coloured steeds, decked with golden trappings,

16. Fleet as the wind, yoked to his car, beyond the reach of all weapons in battle, endued with great strength, emitting neighs (in joy), well-trained, of the Sindhu breed, excellently dragging the chariot,

17. Of great sturdiness, were exhausted in the very midst of the fight ? Unmoved in battle by the sight of the elephants as those huge monsters roared out with the sound of conchs and kettledrums,

18. By the twangs of bow-strings, and showers of arrows and other weapons, foretelling victory over enemies (by their mere appearance), of inexhaustible breath, and indefatigable,

19. Those fleet horses harnessed to the car of the son of Bharadwaja, were they

over-powered? Even such steeds were yoked by that foremost of human heroes to his golden car.

20. Why could he not cross the ocean of the Pandava army, mounted on his own best of cars effulgent like gold?

21. What feats did that son of Bharadwaja achieve in battle, who made all the heroes cry, and on whose knowledge of weapons all the bowmen in the world depend?

22—23. What feats did Drona perform in battle, Drona who was endued with great strength and was ever devoted to truth? What car-warriors felled in battle Drona of fierce deeds, that foremost of bowmen, that foremost of commanders who was like Sakra himself in heaven? Did the Pandavas fly on all directions seeing him of the golden car,

24—25. Him endued with great might who invoked in the battle many celestial weapons? Did the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, with his younger brothers, and his army having the prince of the Panchalas for its reins, encompass Drona on all sides? Surely Partha checked the career of other car-warriors with his straight-going arrows.

26. Then, of course, the son of Prishata, that perpetrator of evil deeds, assaulted Drona. Indeed I do not see any one capable of bringing about the death of Drona,

27—29. Save the fierce warrior Dhristadyumna supported by Arjuna himself. I think that when these heroes namely the Kekayas, the Chedis, the Karushas, the Matsyas, and the other rulers of earth, encompassing the preceptor hemmed him in on all sides, like ants pressing upon a serpent, and that when he was occupied in the achievement of some difficult feat, then the vilest among the Panchalas must have slain him. He who, having studied the four Vedas along with their auxiliaries, and the Histories constituting the fifth Veda,

30—31. Became the refuge of the Brahmanas as the ocean is that of the rivers, that afflicter of enemies who led the life both of a Brahmana and a Kshatriya, how could that Brahmana, venerable in years meet his death through weapons. Intolerant in spirit, he was ever humiliated, and had to undergo troubles for my sake.

32—33. Through the son of Kunti he reaped the fruits of his own actions however undeserving he might have been of them. How could that one, on whose feats of valour depends the world of bowmen, who was ever devoted to truth, and of pious deeds, who was foremost like the Sakra in heaven, who was endued with great vigours and strength, how could that one be slain by persons hankering after prosperity?

34. How could that one of great lightness of hand, endued with might, a firm wielder of bow and the grinder of his foes, how could that one be slain by the sons of Pritha like a *timi* slain by the smaller fishes?

35. He, meeting whom no person desirous of victory, ever returned with life, he whom when alive the following two sound never left, namely,

36. The sound of the recital of Vedic verses, by those desirous of acquiring Vedic knowledge, and the twang of the bowstrings, caused by those wishing to acquire skill in bowmanship; he who was never depressed, who was the foremost among men, and was ever attended with prosperity and was invincible,

37—38. He who was equal to the elephant and the lion in prowess, even he has been slain! I can not even tolerate the thought of Drona's death. How, O Sanjaya, the son of Prishata, slew in battle that most invincible hero whose might was never checked and whose fame was never soiled even before the very eyes of the foremost of men? Who were those persons who fought in Drona's front, and protected him from near?

39. Who were they who brought up his rear and obtained that end which is so difficult of being attained? Who were they that covered the right and the left wings of that high-souled one?

40. Who went before him when that hero fought in the battle? Who were they that courted death that stood face to face to them regardless of their body?

41—44. Who were those heroes that attained the highest state of existence, in the battle with Drona? Did those vile Kshatriyas entrusted with the protection of Drona, out of apprehension, abandon him in (the thick of) the fight? Was he slain by the foe while there helpless? Out of fear Drona would never turn his back on the field of battle, though the danger might be very great. How could he have been slain by the enemy? O Sanjaya, although in a very critical situation, an illustrious person should do this, namely, display his prowess to the best of his might; all this was in Drona. O son, my mind is loosing consciousness; refrain for a while from this discourse. O Sanjaya, regaining my consiousness, I shall again question you.

Thus ends the ninth chapter, the grief of Dhritarastra, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER X.

DRONABHISHEKA PARVA—
Continued.

Vaishampayana said:—

1. Thus having questioned the son of Suta, Dhritarastra, sorely oppressed with the sorrow of his heart and despondent of the victory of his sons, dropped down on the ground.

2. Seeing him unconscious and fallen down on the ground, the attendants sprinkled him with very cold and holy-scented water, fanning him all the while.

3. Beholding that great king fallen down, the Bharata ladies surrounded him on all sides, and began to chafe him (gently) with their hands.

4. Then those beautiful ladies, with their voices choked up with the vapour of grief, gently raised the monarch from the surface of the earth, and placed him on his throne.

5. Placed on the throne, the monarch overwhelmed by the influence of the swoon, remained motionless, while he was fanned from all sides.

6. Slowly regaining consciousness, that ruler of earth began to quake, and he again questioned the son of Gavalgani, of the Suta tribe, regarding the events of the battle, as they occurred.

Dhritarastra ssid:—

7—9. That Ajatasatru (Yudhisthira) who like the rising sun drives away darkness by his own radiance, who (charges an enemy), like a tremendous and infuriated elephant in rut, incapable of being defeated by a rival leader of herds, charging a rival proceeding with cheerful face towards a female of the species, what great warrior of of my host faced that Ajatasatru, as he charged, in order to keep him away from Drona? That foremost of men, that hero, who has slain in battle many brave warriors,

10. That mighty-armed, intelligent and and brave hero of invincible might, who, single-handed, can consume the whole host of Duryodhana by means of his terrible glances,

11. That destroyer by his glances, that one ever inclined to gain victory, that wielder of bow, that hero of eternal renown, that self-controlled warrior held in high respect by the whole world—what warriors of my army did surround that hero?

12. Who were those warriors of my host that encountered that irrepressible prince, that wielder of bow, that hero of unfading glory, that foremost of men, that son of Kunti?

13—14. That hero who rushing with headlong speed charged Drona, who achieves grand feats at the expense of the enemy, that most puissant one of gigantic stature and great vigour, who equals ten thousand elephants in strength,—what warriors surrounded that Bhimasena as he charged my army?

15. As that mighty car-warrior of excessive energy, Vibhatsu, resembling a dense mass of rain-clouds, came, creating terrible sounds like the clappings of the thunder-bolt, like *Parjanya* itself

16. Showering torrents of arrows like Indra showering rain, and causing the cardinal quarters to reverberate with the sound of his palms and rattle of his chariot-wheels,

17. (When that terrible hero) whose bow was effulgent like a flash of lightning, whose chariot resembled a cloud having for its thunder the rattle of its wheels, (that hero) the whizz of whose arrows made him all the more fierce,

18—20. Whose ire is like a dreadful cloud, who is fleet like the mind or the wind, who always pierces the enemy to the very core of his heart, who, armed with shafts, is dreadful to gaze at, who profusely fills all the cardinal quarters with human blood like Death himself, who, with a terrific roar and a dreadful countenance, wielding the Gandiva, pours, in one continuous shower, on the head of my warriors led by Duryodhana, shafts whetted on stone and decked with the feathers of vultures,—when that intelligent Vijaya came, what became the state of your mind?

21. When that son of Pritha bearing the device of the foremost of apes on his banner, came, overspreading the sky with his shower of shafts, what became the state of your mind at the sight of him?

22. Did Arjuna rush to battle, killing your warriors by the very twang of his bow Gandiva, and achieving dreadful feat (as he advanced)

23. Did Dhananjaya deprived you of your lives with his arrows, like the hurricane scattering masses of gathering clouds, or felling forests of reed by blowing through them?

24. What man is powerful enough to encounter the wielder of the Gandiva bow in battle? Even hearing him to be on the head of the (hostile) array, all ranks of soldiers give way.

25. In that battle, in which soldiers trembled and even heroes were inspired with fear, who were they that did not forsake Drona, and who were those mean fellows that fled out of terror?

26. Who were they that, in that battle, shunning this mortal coil, courted Death standing before them in the shape of Dhananjaya who had obtained victory even over superhuman combatants?

27. My warriors cannot withstand the impetus of that one having white horses harnessed to chariot, nor can they bear the twang of the Gandiva, that resembles the rumbling of clouds in the rainy season.

28. I consider that chariot which has Vishaksena for its driver, and Dhananjaya for its warrior, to be unconquerable even by the celestials and Asuras united together.

29. Delicate, youthful, brave, of a handsome appearance, that son of Pandu who is intelligent, skilful, accurate in his memory, of prowess incapable of being thwarted, in battle,

30. When that Nakula giving forth a loud roar and afflicting the whole army, rushed upon Drona, what warriors tried to check his career?

31. When Sahadeva, resembling an infuriated snake of mortal poison, rushed at Drona, afflicting his enemies, when that one owning white horses and incapable of being conquered in battle,

32. When that one of illustrious vows, of never-failing aim, of bashful nature and invincible prowess, when that Sahadeva charged, who were those heroes that withstood him?

33. That hero who having completely crushed the army of king Souvira, took for his consort the desirable princess of the Bhojas and graceful in limbs of the body,

34. That foremost of men Yuyudhana who is ever endued with truthfulness, resoluteness, bravery, and Brahmacharyya,

35. That warrior possessed of great physical strength, who always does what is true, who is never depressed, and who is invincible, and equals Vasudeva in battle and is considered to be a second Vasudeva,

36. Who, by the teachings of Dhananjaya has become foremost in the act of using arrows, who is equal to the son of Pritha in the use of weapon, what warrior of my army kept him away from Drona?

37. That foremost hero among the Vrishnis, that bravest among all wielders of bow, who is equal to Rama himself in the use of weapons, in glory and in prowess,

38. That one of the Satwata race in whom there are truth, firmness, intelligence, prowess, the knowledge of the Vedas, and the most excellent weapons, as the triune world is in Kesava himself,

39. That mighty champion who is endued with all virtues, and who is incapable of being opposed even by the celestials, what warriors (of my army) approaching him, surrounded him on all sides?

40. That foremost among the Panchalas, that hero of noble extraction, and a favourite of all high-born persons, always achieving excellent feats in battle, namely Uttamaujasa,

41. That one ever intent on doing good to Dhananjaya, and born for doing evil only to me, who resembles Yama, or Vaisravana, or Aditya, or Mahendra, or Varuna,

42. That prince renowned as a great car-warrior, and ever ready to sacrifice his life in the very thick of battle, what heroes of my army surrounded him?

43. That one who alone deserting the Chedis had sided with the Pandus, namely Dhristaketu, what heroes surrounded him when he advanced towards Drona?

44. That heroic Ketumat, who slew the Prince Durjaya when he took shelter in Girivraja, what hero of my army kept him (Ketumat) away from Drona?

45—46. What warriors of my army encountered Sikhandin when he rushed at Drona—Sikhandin, the foremost of men, who has realised the pleasures (in himself) of manhood and femininity, that son of Jajnasena, who is ever cheerful in battle, and who became the cause of the death of the high-souled Devavrata in battle?

47. That most excellent hero among the Vrishnis, that foremost of all wielders of bow, that hero, in whom reside all virtues even in a greater degree than in Dhananjaya himself,

48. In whom always exist truth, (the knowledge of) the best weapons, and Brahmacharyya, who is equal to the son of Vasudeva in prowess, and to Dhananjaya in strength,

49. Who resembles Aditya in effulgence, Vrihaspati in intelligence—namely, the high-souled Abhimanyu who is like Death himself with a gaping mouth,

50. What heroes surrounded him when he advanced towards Drona? That youthful hero of unripe understanding, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Subhadra's son,

51—52. When he charged Drona, what became the state of your mind then?

When those foremost of princes, the son of Draupadi, in battle rushed at Drona like streams flowing towards the ocean, what heroes obstructed them? Those boys, who having abandoned all boyish sports, for twelve years,

53. And observing excellent vows danced attendance on Bhima in order to receive lessons in the use of weapons, those boys, namely Kshatranjaya, Kshatradeva, Kshatravarma, and Manada,

54. Those heroic sons of Dhristadyumna, what warriors kept them away from Drona? That one whom the Vrishnis consider superior in battle to hundred warriors,

55. That mighty warrior Chekitana, what hero of my army tried to keep him away from Drona? The five Kekaya brothers, virtuous and endued with prowess incapable of being thwarted,

56. Resembling the *Indragopakas* (in complexion), furnished with red armours and weapons and banners, those heroes who are the sons of the sister of the Pandavas' mother and who ever long for the victory of the Pandavas,

57—60. What heroes of my army surrounded them when they assaulted Drona with a view to kill him? That lord of battles, desirous of slaying whom the enraged monarchs united together for six months in Varanavata could not defeat, that best of all wielders of bows, that hero of great strength and unerring aim, that foremost of men, Yuyutsu, who in a battle in Varanasi, overthrew from his car with a broad-headed shaft, the great warrior the son of Kasiraja, desirous of siezing a maiden, what hero kept him away from Drona? That mighty warrior Dhristadyumna, that principal counslleor of the sons of Pritha,

61—62. Who is ever engaged in doing harm to Duryodhana, who has been created to slay Drona, what warriors of my side surrounded him, when consuming in battle all warriors, and shattering all the ranks of my soldiers, he advanced towards Drona? That foremost of all men conversant with the weapons, who has been reared, as it were, on the very lap of Drupada,

63. That Sikhandin, guarded by Arjuna's weapons, what warriors of my army kept him away from Drona? That one who, as if with a leathern belt, encompassed this extensive earth,

64—66. With the deafening rattle of his chariot, that foremost of warriors, the chief of all slayers of enemies, who in lieu of other sacrifices accomplished ten horse-sacrifices with ample food, drink and Dakshina, that one who ruled his subjects, as if they were his own sons, that son of Usinara who in his sacrifice gave away kine as numerous as the sand that overspread the banks of the Ganges-stream, whose this deed no man has been or will be able to imitate;

67—69. After the accomplishment by him of this feat, the very gods had exclaime saying 'We do not see in the three worlds with all their mobile and immobile creations, a second person save Usinara's son, who has attained to regions, after death, which are unattainable by human beings'—who amongst my warriors, opposed that Saivya, that grandson of the Usinara's son, while he assaulted Drona?

70. What warriors of my host obstructed that squadron of cars, belonging to Virata, the king of the Matysas, the slayer of his enemies, as it careered towards Drona?

71. That one endued with great strength and prowess, born of Vrikodara in the course of a single day, that heroic Rakshasa of potent illusive powers, of whom I entertain great apprehension,

72. Who is always desirous of victory for the sons of Pritha, who is a thorn in the sides of my sons, what hero of my army kept that Ghatotkacha of gigantic body away from Drona?

73. O Sanjaya, what cannot be vanquished by them for whose interests these and other such numerous (heroes) are ever ready to sacrifice their lives in battle?

74. Those sons of Pritha, whose well-wisher and refuge is that wielders of *Saranga* bow, those sons, how could they suffer defeat in battle?

75. The son of Vasudeva is the supreme preceptor of the worlds, the Lord of all and the Eternal; that master Narayana, that one of divine soul is the refuge of men in battle.

76. His divine achievements are extolled by the wise; I shall also recite them with reverence, regaining my equanimity.

Thus ends the tenth chapter, the words of Dhritarastra, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XI.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Hear, O Sanjaya, of the celestial feats of the son of Vasudeva,—feats which Govinda achieved and which no other person has ever been able to achieve.

2. While he was being reared in the family of the cowherds, that illustrious one, even in his early years, made the might of his arms, O Sanjaya, known to the three worlds.

3. (Even then) he slew the Asura *Haya-raja* (prince of steeds) who was equal to the *Uchaisravas* in might and the wind itself in fleetness, and who infested the woods on the shores of the Yamuna.

4. In his early years, he killed with his two arms only, the Danava in the form of a bull, of terrible deeds and born as Death himself to the cows.

5. He of eyes resembling lotus petals, also slew the great Asuras, named, Pralamva, Naraka, Jamva, Peeta, as also, Mura of god-like nature.

6. Also Kansa of great vigour who was protected by Jarasandha himself, was slain with his followers, in battle, by Krishna with his prowess alone.

7—8. The mighty sovereign of the Surasenas, by name Sunaman, of great prowess in battle, the master of a complete *Akshouhini*, endued with activity and the second brother of Kansa the ruler of the Bhojas, with all his soldiers, was consumed in battle by that slayer of enemies, viz., Krishna with Valadeva as his second.

9. That highly passionate Brahmanical sage, by name Durvasa, was adored by him (Krishna) along with his wives. The sage (pleased with him) accorded boons to him.

10. That one of eyes resembling lotus petals, that most puissant hero, (Krishna), carried away the daughter of the king of the Gandharas, after having defeated, at a *Sayamvara* (Self-choice), all the rulers of the earth.

11. Like horses, those exasperated kings were harnessed to his bridal chariot, and lacerated with the cut of his whip.

12. That Janarddana, through the instrumentality of another, slew Jarasandha of mighty arms, the lord of a complete *Akshauhini*.

13. That puissant one, slaughtered, like a beast, the king of the Chedis, that powerful leader of kingly hosts, when the latter disputed with him about the (sacrificial) *Arghya*.

14, Madhava, by his prowess, hurled into the bosom of the sea, the fortress of the Danavas known as Soubha, situated in heaven, protected by Salwa and considered to be invulnerable.

15. He obtained victory in battle over the Angas, the Bangas, the Kalingas, the Magadhas, the Kasis, the Kosalas, the Vatsyas, the Gargas, the Karushas and the Poundras,

16. The Avantyas, the Southerners, the Mountaineers, the Daserakas, the Kashmirakas, the Auroshikas, the Pishachas, the Samudgalas,

17. The Kamvojas, the Vatadhanas, the Cholas, the Pandyas and, O Sanjaya, the Trigarttas, the Malavas, the Daradas incapable of being defeated,

18. The Khasas and the Sakas, comfrom various directions, and the Yavanas with their followers,—that one of eyes resembling the petals of a blue lotus, conquereed all these tribes in battle.

19. In days gone by, entering into the abode of the sea-monster Makara, he defeated in battle Varuna, surrounded by all kinds of sea-animals, and hidden underneath watery depths.

20. Hrishikesha obtained the celestial conch called Panchajanya, after having slain in battle Panchajana, who lived in the nether regions.

21. That puissant hero, obtained his indomitable weapon of fire, the discus (Sudarsana),by propitiating Hutasana (Fire) by helping it to burn down the Khandava forest, in which act he was assisted by the son of Pritha (Arjuna).

22. Riding on the son of Vinata, and creating quite a panic in the city of the Immortals, that hero carried away the Parijata tree from the abode of the great Indra.

23. That act Sakra submissively brooked, for he was perfectly acquainted with the prowess of Krishna. We have never heard of a king who has not been worsted by Krishna (in battle).

24. That most marvellous act, which he achieved in my assembly hall, O Sanjaya, who else, save that one of eyes resembling lotus petal, is capable of doing?

25. Since inspired by reverence I have heen able to recognise Krishna as the Lord, every thing in the Vedas is well-known to me and is before my eyes.

26. Verily, O Sanjaya, none can reach the end (of the account) of achievements of Hrishikesha who is endued with prowess, and intelligence.

27. Then also Gada, Samva, Pradyumna, Viduratha, Agaboha Anirudha, Charudeshna along with Sarana,

28. Ulmuka, Nisata, the powerful Jhilhivobhru, Prithu, Viprithu, Somika and Arimejoya,

29. These and other most puissant Vrishni heroes, skilled in the art of smiting, will, standing on the field, betake to the ranks of the Pandava host,

30. Being called to do so by that foremost of Vrishni warriors, viz., Keshava of high soul; then me-seems, everything (on my side) will be in great dangers.

31. The heroic Rama, decked with garlands of wild flowers, equal in strength to two thousand elephants, resembling the peak of the Kailasa mountain and armed with the plough, will be there where Janarddana is.

32. That son of Vasudeva, whom all the regenerate ones call the Father of all, O Sanjaya, will battle for the interests of the sons of Pandu?

33. When that one, O son, O Sanjaya, clothes himself in mail for the interests of the Pandavas, none will come forth as his antagonist.

34. If, per chance, the Kurus obtain victory over the Pandavas then that one of the Vrishni race, for the interests of these latter will take up his excellent weapon (the discus).

35. Then that foremost of men, that mighty-armed hero, having slain in battle the Kauravas and the (assembled) monarchs will offer the whole earth to Kunti.

36. What other car can encounter in battl, that car of which the driver is Hrishikesha and the warrior is Dhananjaya?

37. In any way, I do not see victory for the Kurus. Recount to me then, all as to how the battle raged.

38. Arjuna is the soul of Kesava, and Krishna is the soul of the diadem-decked (Arjuna). In Arjuna victory ever resides, and eternal glory is in Krishna.

39. In all the regions, Vibhatsu is unconquerable. All virtues are in Kesava in an extraordinary degree.

40. Duryodhana, through foolishness cannot recognise Krishna or Kesava; he is befooled by Destiny and the noose of Death hangs over him.

41. Duryodhana knows not Krishna of the Dasarha race, and Arjuna the son of Pandu; they both are supreme Divinities, of high soul, known on earth as Nara and Narayana.

42—44. On earth they appear to men as two different persons, though in reality they are of one and the same soul. That highly-renowned invincible pair, can with the fiat of their will slay this host, if only they wish it. But for humanity's sake, they do not wish it. O son, the slaughter of Bhisma and Drona, of high souls, appears to be like the overturning of the Yuga and the stupefaction of the senses. In this world neither by Brahmacharyya, nor by the study of the Vedas,

45. Nor by the performance of rites, or by the dint of weapons, can any one be saved from Death. Those two heroes, held in high honour by the worlds, accomplished in the use of weapons, and invincible in battle,

46. Namely, Bhisma and Drona,—hearing of their death, why do I, O Sanjaya, still live? That prosperity, seeing which attend Yudhisthira before, we were so jealous,

47. To-day, deprived of that prosperity, we shall have to live, in consequence of the death of Bhisma and Drona. This complete annihilation of the Kurus has come consequent upon my actions.

48. For the destruction of those, O you of the Suta caste, who are ripe for it, even the straw behave like a thunder-bolt. In this world Yudhisthira is going to obtain prosperity which is infinite,

49. Yudhisthira, through whose wrath Bhisma and Drona have met their ends. Righteousness has naturally attached itself to Yudhisthira, while it is hostile to the cause of my sons.

50. Time so cruel, that [illegible] for destroying every one, cannot be overcome! O son, things calculated in one way even by intelligent persons,

51. Result in an altogether different way, through the agency of Destiny; this is my belief. Therefore relate to me truly all that occurred, on the advent of that dreadful but enevitable calamity (the death Drona), generating most grieving thoughts, and incapable of being crossed over by us.

Thus ends the eleventh chapter, the lamentation of Dhritarastra, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Alas! I shall relate to you everything, as I saw with my own eyes, how Drona fell being slain by the Pandus and the Srinjayas.

2. The mighty car-warrior, the son of ...adwaja, having been installed as the ...mander of the army, said these words ... your son, in the very midst of the ...oldiers.

3. " O monarch, in as much as, to-day ...u have honoured me with the generalship ... this army, immediately after that fore-...most of the Kouravas, the son of the river (Ganga),

4. O Bharata, reap the adequate fruit of that act of yours. What desire of yours shall I fulfil now? Ask whatever boon you may like?"

5. Thereupon king Duryodhana, accompanied by Karna, Dussasana and others, thus spoke to the invincible preceptor, the foremost of all victors.

6. "If you would at all accord me a boon, then having captured that foremost of car-warriors, Yudhisthira alive, do you bring him to me."

7. Thereupon the preceptor of the Kurus hearing these words of your son, spoke the following words, thereby imparting great delight to the troops.

8. "Fortunate is the king, the son of Kunti, whose capture only you desire. O invincible one, you do not ask for any other boon, such as his slaughter.

6. Why, O foremost of men, do you not desire his slaughter? For what reason do you not allude to his death? Surely O Duryodhana, you are not wanting in policy.

10. It is wonderful that the virtuous king Yudhisthira should have none deadly inimical to him. As you desire him to live, either you intend to preserve your own race,

11. Or, O foremost of the Bharatas, having defeated the Pandavas in battle, you desire to re-establish brotherly feelings (with them), by giving them back their kingdom.

12. Praised be that king the son of Kunti. The birth of that intelligent one was auspicious. The fact of his being *Ajatasatru* (having no enemy) is verified to-day, in as much as even you are affectionate towards him."

13. O Bharata, when your son had been thus addressed by Drona, the feeling that was then present in his heart, suddenly ...ound vent.

14. Even beings like Vrihaspati himself ...nnot suppress the outward manifestations ...ernal feelings. Therefore, O monarch, ... transported with joy, spoke these

15. "On the event of the death of the son of Kunti in battle, O preceptor, victory cannot be mine. If Yudhisthira were to be slain, Partha is sure to slay all of us.

16. Even the immortals cannot slay all of them in battle; so he that will survive the rest of them is sure to extirpate us all.

17. If Yudhisthira, ever truthful to his promises, be brought here alive, he being once more defeated at dice, the Pandavas obedient to him, will again repair to the woods.

18. In this way, it is obvious, that my victory will endure for a long time. It is for this that I do never desire the death of the virtuous king Yudhisthira."

19. Being apprised of his crooked intentions, Drona of keen intellect and conversant with the science of polity, accorded the boon to him after a little reflection, modifying it thus.

Drona said :—

20. "If in battle, the heroic Arjuna does not protect king Yudhisthira, then you may already regard the foremost of the Pandavas, brought under your control.

21. Even the celestials with Indra at their head, and united with the Asuras themselves, can not cope with Partha in battle; for this reason, O son, I do not venture to advance against him.

22. No doubt, he is my disciple, and I am senior to him in the use of weapons. But he is youthful, blessed with a good fortune, and assiduous in (the execution of) his intents.

23. Moreover, he has obtained weapons from Indra and Rudra; besides he has been, O king, incensed by you. It is for these reasons, that I venture not to perform what you ask me to do.

24. Withdraw Arjuna from the battle by what means so-ever that can be done. On Partha being removed, the righteous Yudhisthira is as good as vanquished by you.

25. O foremost of men, victory depends on his capture, and not on his death; and his capture can be brought about by this artifice.

26. I, having siezed that king devoted to truth and righteousness, will, O monarch, no doubt, bring him under your control to-day,

27. Provided, he remains even for a moment before me in battle; of course, if that foremost of men, the son of Kunti Dhananjaya be removed from the field of battle.

28. But, O king, before the eyes of Phalguna, Yudhisthira cannot be captured in battle, even by the celestials and the Asuras exerting jointly with Indra at their head."

Sanjaya said :—

29. When under these circumscriptions, Drona had promised the capture of king Yudhisthira, your greatly-foolish sons regarded the latter as already seized.

30. Your son was perfectly aware of the partiality Drona cherished for the Pandavas; so to make Drona strictly redeem his promise, Duryodhana gave publicity to that counsel.

31. Thereafter, O grinder of your foes, Drona's promise regarding the seizure of amongst the eldest of the Pandavas, was proclaimed all his soldiers by Duryodhana himelf.

Thus ends the twelfth chapter, the granting of a boon by Drona, in the Dronabhisheka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XIII.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When Drona had promised the capture of the king under these limitations, your soldiers, hearing of the probable capture of Yudhisthira,

2—3. Uttered many loud shouts like the roars of lions, accompanying them with the noise of their (flying) shafts and the sound of their conchs. The virtuous king Yudhisthira, O Bharata, was soon apprised, in detail, of everything regarding the purposes of the son of Bharadwaja, by his trusty emissaries. Thereupon having summoned together all his brothers and the other monarchs of his host,

4. The very righteous king addressed these words to Dhananjaya :—"O foremost of men, to-day you have heard of the design of Drona.

5. Adopt such course of action, as will prevent the execution of that design. True it is that Drona the destroyer of his foes, has pledged his oath with certain limitations;

6. But those limitations, O mighty warrior, have been all made dependent on you, by him (Drona). Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you this day fight by my side, so that Duryodhana may not secure the fruition fo his desire through the agency of Drona."

Arjuna said :—

7. As, the slaughter of my own preceptor can never be perpetrated by me, so also, O monarch, I can never agree to abandon you.

8. Rather, O son of Pandu, I would give up my life in battle, than be antagonistic to my preceptor, at any time.

9. Having captured you in battle, the son of Dhritarastra, desires to possess the kingdom; but in this world of living beings, he will never obtain the fruition of his desire.

10. The conclave dome with the stars may drop down; the earth itself may be shattered to pieces; yet Drona will never capture you, so long as I live.

11. Even if the wielder of the thunderbolt himself, or Vishnu accompanied by the the celestials, assists him in battle, still, he shall never capture you in battle.

12. O foremost of monarchs, so long as I am alive, you need not entertain any apprehension from Drona the foremost of all wielders of weapon or any body else.

13. Moreover, O foremost of kings, I say that my resolution is decided. I never think of purjuring myself; I never think of my defeat. I never think of keeping the least part, of any vow I may take, unredeemed.

Sanjaya said :—

14. Thereupon, O monarch, in the camp of the Pandavas, chonchs and drums and *Mridangas* together with the *Anakas*, were simultaneously sounded.

15. There arose also loud shouts, like the roar of lions, uttered by the high-souled Pandavas; and the deafening sound resulting from the twang of their bow-strings and the striking of their palms against their arms, reached the very skies.

16. Hearing that blare of the conchs sounded by the highly-puissant sons of Pandu, your soldiers in their camp struck up various instruments.

17. Thereafter, O Bharata, your, as well their, divisions were formed into battle-array; and slowly they advanced desirous of encountering one another in battle.

18. Then raged a dreadful and hair-stirring battle, between the Pandavas and the Kurus, as also between Drona and the Panchalas.

19. Struggling to the best of their endeavours, to slay the divisions of

the Srinjayas could not accomplish their [purp]ose, as the divisions were protected by [Drona] himself.

[2]0. So also the car-warriors of your [so]n's host, skilful in smiting down the enemy [cou]ld not vanguish the Pandava division [protected] by the diadem-decked Arjuna himself.

... Protected by Drona and Arjuna [respecti]vely, the two armies, appeared to [be st]ill like two blossoming forests, in the [silence o]f the night.

... Then, O monarch, that one (Drona) [on] the golden car like the sun him[self in ra]diance, crushing hosts of the Panda[vas, careere]d at will through its various divi[sions].

... [The]n the Pandavas and the Srin[jayas consi]dered, through fright, that single [warrior,] mounted on a swift-moving car [of grea]t activity in battle, as multiplied ...

... [dre]adful shafts shot by him, whizzed in all directions, terrifying, O monarch, the army belonging to the son of Pandu.

25. Drona then appeared like the mid-day sun burning with a hundred light rays that drew out the perspiration from the body.

26. O Bharata, as the Danavas were unable to look at the great Indra, so none among the army of the sons of Pandu, was able to look at his wrathful self (Drona) in battle.

27. Then that most puissant son of Bharadwaja, stupefying the whole host, speedily blew off the division of Dhristadyumna with his sharpened arrows.

28. Obstructing the points of the compass, and overspreading the whole welkin with his straight-going shafts, Drona commenced crushing the division of the Pandava host, even at the place where the son of Prishata was.

Thus ends the thirteenth chapter, the solemn declaration of Drona to capture Yudhisthira, in the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XIV.

(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Drona creating great confusion [amo]ng the ranks of the Pandava host, [roame]d ... under foot, like a forest-confla[gration burnin]g down trees.

2. The Srinjayas began to tremble with fear, seeing that enraged hero of the golden car (Drona), consume their division like a raging conflagration.

3. In that battle, they heard the twang of the constantly stretched bow of that warrior of great activity,—twang that resembled the rumbling of the thunder.

4. Terrible shafts shot by that one of great lightness of hands, completely crushed car-warriors and cavalry and elephants horses and infantry,

5. At the expiration of the Summer, like the rain-cloud, assisted by the strong gale, showering its contents, Drona, pouring streams of iron-tipped arrows, struck terror into the hearts of his enemies.

6. Then, O king, that puissant one careering through the troops of the enemy and agitating them, aggravated their fears.

7. Like flashes of lightning traversing dense masses of clouds, his bow of golden effulgence, was repeatedly seen to flash in his whirling car that resembled a mass of cloud itself.

3. That hero, ever devoted to truth, endued with intelligence, and ever firm in righteousness, then caused a dreadful river with swelling currents, to flow there, that appeared like the one seen at the end of a Yuga ;

9.. That had its origin in the flow of Dronas wrath ; that was infested with numerous carnivorous animals ; that was filled with waves consisting of the troops ; that ate away the trees (standing on its banks) consisting of heroic warriors ;

10. That had blood for its waters, cars, for its eddies, elephants and horses for its banks, armours for its rows of lotuses, and flesh for the mire filling its bed ;

11. That had, fat, marrow and bones, for its beaches, and excellent head-gears for its froth ; that had the raging encounter for the cloudy canopy over its surface, and the split lances for the fishes that abounded in it ;

12. That was inaccessible in consequence of the corpses of large number of men, elephants and horses ; that flew in strong currents constitued by the impetus of the shafts ; that had the slain bodies for logs of timber floating on it ; that swarmed with tortoises constitued by cars ;

13. That had heads for pebbles scattered on its banks ; that had scimitars for the fishes abounding in it ; that had elephants and chariots for its lakes ; that was adorned with may ornaments ;

14. That had mighty car-warriors for its hundred little whirlpools; that was ornamented with little wavelets constituted by the dust of the earth; that was capable of being crossed over in battle by those endued with great prowess, and incapable of being crossed by the cowards;

15. That had heaps of corpses obstructing its navigation; that was haunted by Kankas, and vultures; that carried, by thousand, mighty car-warriors to the regions of Death;

16. That was infested by snakes consisting of the (broken) spears; that abounded in aquatic fowls consisting of living fighters, that had torn umbrellas for its large swans, and (fallen) diadems for its smaller birds;

17. That had wheels (or discs) for its turtles, and maces for its sharks, and arrows for its smaller fishes; that was resorted to by fearful swarms of crows, vultures and jackals;

18. And, O foremost of kings, that bore in hundreds to the regions of the ancestral manes, beings slain by the powerful Drona in that battle,

19. That was choked up with heaps of dead bodies; that had hair for its mosses and weeds. O monarch, such a river Drona caused to flow, that enhanced the apprehension of the cowards.

20. Then all those divisions having Yudhisthira at their head, assaulted on all sides that mighty car-warrior Drona who had been uttering loud shouts.

21. Then all your heroic troops endued with steady prowess received (unflinchingly) that rushing army on all sides; the result was horripilating.

22. Sakuni. conversant with hundred kinds of deceitful practices, encountered Sahadeva, piercing the latters charioteer, chariot and flag-staff with sharpened shafts.

23. Thereupon the son of Madri, wrought up with ire, cut down with his arrows, the standard, bow, charioteer, and steeds of the son of Suvala, and then pierced the latter with sixty shafts.

24. Thereupon the son of Suvala, grasping a mace, jumped down from his best of cars; then with the stroke of his mace, he felled, O king, the driver of Sahadeva, from his chariot.

25. Then, O monarch, those two heroic mighty warriors deprived of their cars, armed with their clubs, began to roam in the field of battle like two mountains adorned with peaks.

26. Drona, having pierced the king of the Panchalas with ten swift-going (was, in return, pierced by him with n shafts; and he then again pierced latter with a still larger number of arrows

27. Bhimasena pierced Vivinsati w twenty keen-pointed shafts; but b so pierced, he did not tremble; and t indeed marvellous.

28. But, O mighty sovereign, suddenly deprived Bhimasena of h standard and bow; and then t highly applauded him.

29. But the latter did not tol act of prowess achieved by his in battle; and then with his mac the excellently-trained horses of

30. Then like an infuriate rushing at an infuriated rival, Vivinsati, grasping a buckler, ju from his car the steeds of which slain, and assaulted Bhimasena.

31. The heroic Salya, pierced, smilingly, his own dear nephew Nakula, as if in dalliance, with arrows, in order to excite the latter's wrath.

32. But the mighty Nakula, cutting down, in that battle, Salaya's steeds, umbrella, standard, charioteer and bow, blew his conch.

33. Dhristaketu having sundered in twain various shafts shot by Kripa, pierced the latter with seventy arrows; and then with three more cut off the device on Kripa's standard.

34. Thereupon Kripa encompassed him with a mighty shower of arrows; thus holding Dhristaketu in check, the Vipra fought on with him, in battle.

35. Satyaki pierced Kritavarman in the middle of his breast with a *Naracha*; then again piercing him with seventy arrows, he drove many more inside the latter's body laughing all the while.

36. The warrior of the Bhoja race, then pierced Satyaki with seven and seventy keen-pointed arrows; but he failed to move the latter like the fleet wind failing to move the mountain.

37. Senapati sorely pierced Susarman to the very quick. The latter also struck the former on the shoulder-joint with a *Tomara* (or lance),

38. King Virata, with the highly puissant Matsyas, oppossed in battle the son of Vikartana. And there raged a wonderful combat.

39. Then a great feat was a the son of the charioteer, whe

quickly formed Drona's support, out of a ...ire for capturing Yudhisthira. Thereupon a dreadful fight ensued.

Thus ends the nineteenth chapter, the fight of Arjuna, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja, having passed the night, thus addressed Sujodhana saying :—'I am yours.'

2. Having made arrangements for Partha's encounter with the host of the Samsaptaka, (you have done well).' When the son of Pritha had gone out to slay the Samsaptaka,

3. Drona, having formed his soldiers in battle-array, charged the mighty host of the Pandavas, O foremost of the Bharatas, with the desire of capturing the very virtuous king Yudhisthira.

4. Beholding the son of Bharadwaja, form his forces in an array figuring the appearance of *Suparna*, Yudhisthira disposed his forces in counter-array in the shape of a semi-circle.

5. The mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadwaja himself formed the mouth of the *Suparna* ; and king Duryodhana along with his uterine brothers and his followers formed its head.

6. Kritavarman and the effulgent Goutama formed its two eyes ; Bhutasarman, Kshemasarman, the puissant Koraskatsha,

7. The Kalingas, the Singhalas, the Easterners, the Sudras, the Ahiras, the Kamvojas, as also the Hansapadas,

8. The Sur isenas, the Madras, the Kekayas, the Daradas, with hundreds and thousands of elephants, steeds, chariots, and foot-soldiers, formed its neck.

9. Bhurisrava, and Salya, Somadatta as also Vahlika, these heroes surrounded by a Akshouhini of soldiers stationed themselves in the right flank.

10. Vinda and Anuvinda of the kingdom of Avanti, and Sudakshina ... badge ruler of the Kam... ...ions in the ... When that fierce and panic... ing battle was thus raging, Drona confound-

the Gandharas, the Sakunas, the Eastern the Highlanders and the Vasatis w... stationed in the back of that *Suparna.*

12. In the tail was stationed Karn... son of Vikartana, supported by his relatives and friends and surrounded ... large force recruited from various regio...

13. Jayadratha, Bhimaratha, Sam... the Yajas, the Vojas, Bhuminjaya, Vri... Kratha, and the ruler of the Nishadha ... great prowess,

14. O monarch, these, surrounded ... mighty hosts, accomplished in fighting, ... keeping the region of Brahma before t... view, stationed their selves in the boson... that array.

15. That array formed by Drona a... composed of foot-soldiers, horses, char... and elephants , appeared to dance like ... ocean lashed into fury by the tempest.

16. From the wings and flanks of ... array, warriors, desirous of battle, bega... rush out like clouds surcharged ... thunder and lightning, rushing (in ... welkin) from all direction of the com... during the season of summer.

17. In the heart of that array, the r... of the Pragjyotisas, mounted on an ... phant equipped according to rule ... monarch, shone like the sun at the t... its rising.

18. O monarch, adorned with gar... of flowers, and having a white uml... held over his head, he shone like the ... in all her digits, rising in conjunctio... the constellation Krittika.

19. His elephant blinded with ichor, appeared like a mass of blac... mony and like a mighty mountain ... by the downpour of rain from thick cl...

20. He was also surrounded by m... a war-like sovereign of moutain lan... armed with various weapons ; and he ... sembled Sakra himself encompassed by ... celestials.

21. Beholding that superhuman ... invincible in battle by the enemies, ... Yudhisthira spoke these words to th... of Prishata.

22. "O mighty warrior, O you... own steeds white as the pigeons, do ... adopt such measures so th... may ... this day be subjugated b... ...ah... (Drona). ...hero (Satya-... ...peedily grasped

Dhristadyumna ... Drona with thirty arrows furnished with *Kanka*-feathers.

4. O descendant of Kuru's race, it ... oves you not to feel anxious so long as ... n alive. Drona shall never be able to ... uish me in battle.

... jaya said :—

... Having thus spoken, the highly ... sant son of Drupada the owner of ... on-white steeds, scattering arrows (on ... direction) himself rushed at Drona.

... Beholding evil omen in the person ... Dhristadyumna stationed before him, ... a while Drona became all but chereful.

7. Seeing this, your son Durmukha ... t grinder of foes, desirous of doing an act ... reeable to Drona, set aimself to oppose ... ristadyumna.

8. Then, O Bharata, ensued a terrible ... l dreadful battle between the war-like ... of Prishata and the heroic Durmu- ...

9. The son of Prishata, speedily cover- ... Durmukha with his net-work of arrows, ... cked the career of the son of Bharadwaja ... a thick shower of shafts.

... o. Seeing Drona covered, your son ... ckly came to his help and confounded ... son of Prishata, with a downpour of ... of various appearance.

... When the prince of the Panchalas ... the forsmost of the Kurus were thus en- ... ed in battle, Drona crushed, with his ... ws, diverse divisions of Yudhisthira's ...

... Just as masses of clouds are torn into ... by the vehemence of the wind, so the ... belonging to the son of Pritha was ... red at many places.

... For a short while only, O monarch, ... engagement was agreeable to look at ; ... ter which it became like the battle of de- ... ented persons in which no consideration ... as made in favovr of any one.

34. The combatants were no longer able ... listinguish between their own men and ... enemies ; and the battle raged, the ... riors being guided by conjecture and ... ch-words.

5. On the gems embossed on their head- ... ears, on their necklaces, ornaments and ... mours ... of light, like the rays of the ... per it to be reflected.

... battle, the cars, the ele- ... among them ... adorned with flut- ... was deprived of ... cloud

warriors and mighty elephants slew other elephant.

38. And in a moment a dreadful battle raged between elephants bearing raised standards and their powerful rivals rushing at them.

39. And in consequence of those prodigious creatures rushing against one another and tearing another with their tusks, fire and smoke were engendered there by such friction of bodies and clashing of tusks.

40. Deprived of the flag-staffs on their backs, those elephants, owing to the fire enkindled by the friction of their tusks, appeared like masses of clouds charged with lighting covering the skies.

41. The earth, over-spread with dragging (their rivals) and falling and roaring elephants, appeared like the autumnal clouds.

42. There arose a roar, emitted by those elephants when they were being slaughtered by showers of shafts and spears, that resembled the rumbling of clouds during a cyclone.

43. Some of those huge elephants being struck with arrows and some with lances, were inspired with panic, and others began to roar aloud.

44. Some elephants being struck by a keen- others with their tusks gave out fierce roars of distress that resembled the rumbling of all-destructive clouds (at the end of a Yuga).

45. Some elephants turned back by powerful rivals, being urged on by the strokes of the hooks, again returned to the charge, crushing the hostile ranks (in their march).

46. Elephant-drivers assaulted other elephant-drivers with shafts and lances ; and they fell down on the ground from their respective elephants and lost hold of their weapons and hooks.

47. Many elephants, deprived of the riders on their backs, coursed wildly hither and thither resembling clouds torn from prodigious masses, and they fell down, encountering one another.

48. Bearing on their backs slains and fallen warriors or those whose weapons had fallen off their grasps, huge elephant roamed in all direction as if deprived of their mates.

49. Then ... that carnage, elephants fell down utter ... roars, being pierced or in the a...

... 11. ... cessful ... O monarch, having ... spaces, another bow, struck Drona ... thirty arrows furnished with *Kanka*-feathers.

64. When that fierce and panic-inspiring battle was thus raging, Drona confound-

earth suddenly quaked and emitted loud sound.

51. The ground, strewn with mangled elephants and their drivers and with broken standards appeared as if it were covered over with hills.

52. In that battle elephant-drivers riding on their respective beasts, and their beasts torn with broad-headed shafts by car-warriors of might, fell scattering their lances and hooks on all sides.

52. Other elephants, smitten with long-shafts, gave forth crane-like cries and ran on all sides, crushing friends and foes alike.

54. Strewn with carcasses and corpses of elephants, horses, car-warriors and heroes, the field, O monarch, became miry with flesh and blood.

55. Huge cars with wheels and without wheels and having their riders on, were thrown up by elephants, being smashed with the point of their tusks.

56. Cars without riders, steeds deprived of their riders, and elephants having their drivers slain, ran in all directions being overwhelmed with panic.

57. In that battle, father slew his son and son slew his father; thus raged the fierce fight in which nothing could be distinguished.

58. In that gory mire men sank ankle-deep; and they looked like mighty trees the lower portion of which were enveloped in a forest conflagration.

59. Their garments and coats of mail and umbrellas and standards being steeped in blood, everything in that battle appeared to be crimson.

60. Large bodies of fallen steeds and car-warriors and men were again hacked into pieces by rolling car-wheels.

61. That sea of troops appeared vested with a terrible beauty, having elephants for its strong currents, slain warriors for its (floating) moss, and (shattered) cars for its fearful eddies.

62. Warriors desirous of the wealth of victory launching into that sea on board the vessels consisting of their respective vehicles, produced stupefaction in their enimies instead of themselves sinking down to the bottom.

93. When all the warriors having proper individual devices (of heraldry) were covered over with showers of arrows, none among them lost heart, though every body was deprived of his particular badge.

64. When that fierce and panic-inspiring battle was thus raging, Drona confounding the senses of his enemies, at last rushed at Yudhisthira.

Thus ends the twentieth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXI.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)

continued

Sanjaya said:—

1. Seeing Yudhisthira approach him, Drona received him with a continuous downpour of arrows, like one undaunted.

2. Thereupon a very great confusion arose in the army of Yudhisthira which resembled that which prevails in a herd of elephants when the leader is attacked by a lion.

3. Then the heroic Satyajit of prowess invincible, beholding Drona the preceptor desirous of capturing Yudhisthira, rushed at him with fury.

4. Then the war-like Acharyya and the prince of the Panchalas fought with one another, agitating the armies hostile to each, like Indra and the son of Virochona.

5. Then the mighty warrior Satyajit of prowess invincible, displaying excellent weapons, pierced Drona with a keen-pointed shaft.

6. Thereafter he discharged at the charioteers of Drona, five arrows deadly as the venom of snakes, and each resembling Death himself. (Struck by those arrows) the charioteer lost all consciousness.

7. Then he suddenly pierced Drona's horses with ten swift-going-arrows. Thereafter wrought up with ire, he pierced the two *Parshni*-drivers of Drona with ten shafts each.

8. Then at the head of his division, he wheeled in circular motion riding on his chariot. Then filled with rage he cut down the flag-staff of Drona, the grinder of foes.

9. Then that crusher of foes, Drona, seeing these feats of his enemy in battle, thought in his mind that his (foe's) hour was come.

10. Then having severed the bow of his enemy Satyajit along with arrows placed on it, the preceptor Drona pierced him with ten whetted shafts capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

11. Thereupon that puissant hero (Satyajit), O monarch, having speedily grasped another bow, struck Drona with thirty arrows furnished with *Kanka*-feathers.

12. Beholding Drona thus resisted in that battle by Satyajit, O monarch, the Pandavas shouted forth and waived their garments.

13. Inflamed with warth, the mighty Vrika pierced Drona on the chest with six shafts. O king, that feat appeared, indeed, marvellous.

14. Then that mighty car-warrior Drona endued with great speed, being completely covered by an arrowy downpour, put forth all his energy causing his eyes to expand with rage.

15. Thereafter Drona, having cut asunder the bows of Satyajit and Vrika, killed the latter along with his driver and horses, with six shafts.

16. Thereafter Satyajit having taken up a bow still tougher, pierced Drona, along with his steeds, drivers and standard, with several shafts.

17. Humiliated in battle by the prince of the Panchalas, Drona was no longer able to brook it; then for the destruction of his enemy, he speedily shot shafts at him.

18. Then pouring arrows by thousands, Drona covered the steeds, the standards, the handle of the bow and the two *Parshni*-drivers of his enemy.

19. Inspite of his bows being thus repeadly cut off, the prince of the Panchalas conversant with the knowledge of excellent weapons, continued to fight with him of the chestnut steeds (Drona).

20. Then beholding Satyajit swell with energy in that battle, Drona with a half-moon-shaped arrow, severed the head of that one of illustrious soul.

21. When that mighty car-warrior the leader of the Panchalas was slain, Yudhisthira being afraid of Drona, fled away, being borne by fleet steeds.

22. The Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, the Chedikas, the Karusas and the Kosalas, desirous of rescuing Yudhisthira, rushed at Drona with delight.

23. Thereupon, the preceptor, the crusher of large bodies of foes, desirous of capturing Yudhisthira, consumed those troops like fire consuming heaps of cotton.

24. Then Satanika the younger brother of the king of the Matsyas, seeing Drona repeatedly consume the divisions, rushed at him.

25. Then deeply piercing Drona and his charioteer and steeds, with six shafts effulgent like the rays of the sun and polished by the forgers, Satanika uttered loud shouts.

26. Engaged in a heartless act and attempting to accomplish a difficult one, he covered the mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadwaja, with an arrowy down-pour.

27. Then Drona, with a shaft like a razor speedily severed from his trunk, the head graced with ear-rings, of Satanika thus roaring at him. Thereat all the Matsyas took to their heels.

28. Having vanquished the Matsyas, the son of Bharadwaja obtained victory over the Chedis, the Karusas, the Kekayas, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, and the Pandus.

29. Beholding that one of the golden car, endued with bravery, excited with wrath, consume their divisions like fire burning down a forest, the Srinjayas trembled.

30. The twang of the bowstring of that one of great activity was heard in all directions, when he stretched his bow to slay his enemies.

31. Fierce arrows, discharged by that one endued with great lightness of hands, crushed elephants and steeds and foot-soldiers, car-warriors and warriors riding on elephants.

32. As at the expiration of the Winter, mighty masses of thundering rain-clouds assisted by violent winds, pour down showers of rain, so Drona pouring showers of arrows, struck terror into the hearts of his opponents.

33. That puissant hero, that mighty warrior, that giver of assurances of safety to his friends, traversed in all directions, agitating the host of the enemy.

34. The bow of golden effulgence of Drona of immeasurable prowess was seen in all directions, like flashes of lightning illumining the clouds.

35. As he careered with speed in that battle, the device of an altar decorating his banner, O Bharata, appeared like the crest of the Himalayas.

36. Drona caused a dreadful carnage among the host of the Pandavas, like that which Vishnu the revered of all the celestials and the Asuras, caused among the host of the latter.

37—43. That hero of truthful speech endowed with great wisdom and strength, and endued with invincible prowess, that Drona of generous heart, created a river on the field of battle, that was dreadful and capable of enhancing the fear of the cowards. Armours constituted its bellows, and standards its whirlpools; and it carried away a large number of mortals as it flowed. Elephants and horses formed its great alligators and swords were its fishes,

and it was incapable of being tided over. It was terrible-looking and the bones of heroes formed the peblebs (in its bed) and drums and cymbals its tortoises. Shields and armours constituted its boats and the hair of warriors the moss and weeds that floated over it. Shafts constituted its wavelets, and bows its currents; and it abounded in snakes formed of the arms of warriors. It was of fierce current and carried away the Kurus and the Srinjayas alike. The heads of human beings formed its stones, and their thighs its fishes, and the maces its rafts; it was covered with froth formed of head-gears, and was infested with reptiles formed of the entrails (of animals) of awful appearance; it carried away heroes (to the other world); its mire was constituted by flesh and blood. Elephants were its alligators and standards the trees (on its banks). It drew down in its bottom thousands of Kshastriyas. It was fierce, clogged with corpses, and had horse-soldiers for its sharks; and it was extremely difficult of being crossed over! and it flowed to the regions of Death.

44. That river swarmed with hosts of monsters and dogs and jackals. It was haunted by cannibals of dreadful appearance on all sides.

45. Thereupon seeing that mighty car-warrior Drona consume their hosts like the god of Death himself, the Pandava warriors headed by the sons of Kunti, rushed at him from all sides.

46. Firmly united together, those heroes surrounded Drona on all [sides who was burning down every thing, like the sun scorching the world with his rays.

47. Then for supporting that heroic warrior, with upraised weapons, your warriors, princes and monarchs, rushed (into the thick of the fight).

48. Then Sikhandin pierced Drona with five straight-jointed shafts, Kshatradharma with twenty, and Vasudeva with five.

49. Uttamoujas in that battle, pierced him with three shafts, Kshatradeva with five, Satyaki with hundred and Yudhamanyu with eight.

50. Yudhisthira pierced Drona with a dozen shaft,and Dhristadyumna pierced him with ten and Chekitana with three shafts.

51. Then Drona of never-failing aim and resembling an elephant with rent temples, passing over the car host of the Pandavas, felled Dhirasena.

52. Then getting near king Kshema, who was fighting fearlessly, Drona pierced him with nine arrows, and he fell down dead from his chariot.

53. Penetrating into the heart of the (hostile) host, resisted in all directions, he became the protector of all others, and had no need of protecting himself.

54. He then struck Sikhandin with twelve arrows and Uttamoujas with twenty shafts. And with a broad-headed arrow he despatched Vasudeva to the regions of Death.

55. With eighty shafts he pierced Kshemavarman, and with twenty-six he struck Sudakshina. With broad-headed shafts he brought down Kshetradeva from the terrace of his car.

56. Having pierced Yudhamanyu with sixty-four shafts and Satyaki with thirty, that one owning the golden chariot rushed at Yudhisthira with violence.

57. Then that foremost of kings Yudhisthira speedily fled away from the preceptor being borne by his fleet steeds. Then the prince of the Panchalas charged Drona.

58. Drona struck him along whith his horses, charioteer and bow. Then from his car he fell down dead like a luminary dropped from the heaven.

59. Upon the death of that renouned prince of the Panchalas, loud cries of 'kill Drona, kill Drona' were herd there.

60. Then that puissant Drona began to crush the host of the Panchalas, the Matsyas the Kekayas, the Srinjayas, the Pandavas, all burnrng with rage.

61. Satyaki, Chekitan, Dhristadyumn and Sikhandin, Vardakshemi, the son of Chitrasena and Senavindu, and Suvorcha.

62. These and numerous other rulers of different countries, were all defeated by Drona who was supported by the Kurus.

63. O Monarch, your warriors having been crowned with victory in that dreadful battle began to slaughter the Pandavas as they were flying in all directions.

64. O Bharata, the Panchalas, the Kekayas, and the Matsyas, thus slaughtered on all sides, like the *Danavas* by Indra, began to quake (with fear).

Thus ends the twenty-first chapter, the fight of Drona, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When in that fierce fight, the son of Bharadwaja had shattered the host of the Pandavas and the Panchalas, did any one else approach him for battle?

2—5. Alas, seeing Drona stationed in battle, like an yawning tiger or an elephant with rent temples, prepared to sacrifice his life in fight, clad in coat of mail, proficient in all modes of warfare, that illustrious bowman, that foremost of men, that producer of apprehensions in his enemies, grateful, devoted to truth, always desirous of doing good to Duryodhana,—alas seeing him stationed at the head of his forces, did any one meet him with a praiseworthy determination for fight,—determination that invests Kshatriyas with renown, that cowards can not form, and that distinguishes the foremost of men? Relate to me, O Sanjaya, who were those heroic warriors, that encountered the son of Bharadwaja, seeing him stationed at the head of his army?

Sanjaya said :—

6. Seeing the Panchalas, the Pandavas, the Matsyas, the Srinjayas, the Chedis and the Kekayas, fly from the field having been broken in their ranks by the shafts of Drona,

7. Seeing them thus routed by those thick showers of swift-falling arrows discharged from the bow of Drona, like frail barks driven adrift by the surging bellows of the mighty main,

8. The Kouravas uttering many loud war-cries, and with the sound of many other musical instruments, impeded the flight of the chariots, the elephants and the men (of the hostile host) on all sides.

9. Beholding them (the routed army), king Duryodhana standing in the midst of his own troops and surrounded by his own kinsmen greatly delighted, smilingly said these words to Karna.

Duryodhana said :—

10. Behold, O son of Radha, the ranks of the Panchalas shattered by the shafts of Drona, the resolute bowman, like a herd of wild deer frightened by a lion.

11. Meseems they will never again seek to fight, in as much as they are now broken by Drona like mighty trees broken by the tempest.

12. Afflicted by the gold-winged shafts of the illustrious Drona, they are flying away by diverse paths; and they seem to whirl round and round.

13. Impeded by the Kouravas and by the high-souled Drona, they are huddling together, like a herd of elephants encompassed in a conflagration.

14. Like a tree penetrated by a cluster of bees, they are being pierced by the keen-pointed arrows of Drona; they are huddling together as they are hastening away from the field of battle.

15. O Karna, there the highly enraged Bhima, forsaken by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, and surrounded by my own warriors, affords great joy to me.

16. With certitude, that fool to-day beholds the world full of Drona. Surely that son of Pandu has to-day become hopeless of his life and his kingdom.

Karna said :—

17. Never will this mighty-armed hero abandon fighting so long life will remain in him; nor will this foremost of men brook the war-cries of others.

18. I think also, that the Pandavas, brave, endued with might, learned in the use of weapons, and invincible in battle, will never be routed in battle.

19. Remembering the woes inflicted on them by our attempts at poisoning and burning them, and by our defeating them at dice, as also bearing in mind the hardships they had to undergo in their exile in the woods, the Pandavas, I think, will never abandon battle.

20. Already the mighty-armed Vrikodara of immeasurable prowess, has turned back; this son of Kunti will now certainly slay many foremost of our car-warriors.

21. He will slay crowds upon crowds of our host, using his sword, bow, darts, iron mace, and horses, elephants, men and chariots as implements for striking.

22. Car-warriors headed by Satyaki, and the Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, and specially the Pandavas, are following him (in battle).

23. Those mighty car-warriors, brave, endued with strength and prowess, are again urged on to battle, by the wrathful Bhima.

24. Those foremost of the Kurus desirous of supporting Vrikodara, are surrounding Drona on all sides, like the clouds surrounding the sun.

25. Inspired with a singleness of purpose, they will surely afflict the unprotected Drona of resolute vows, like flights of insects about to die afflicting a burning lamp.

26. Accomplished in the use of weapons, certainly they are capable of encountering the son of Bharadwaja. I consider the burden now devolving on him to be very heavy.

27. Let us then swiftly repair to the spot ere Drona is stationed. Let not the Pandavas slay Drona, like a pack of wolves slaying a mighty elephant.

Sanjaya said :—

28. O monarch, hearing the words of the son of Radha, king Duryodhana, with his brothers rushed where the car of Drona was.

29. Then there arose a mighty uproar caused by the Pandava warriors, who actuated by the desire for slaying the unsupported Drona had all returned to the field, riding on best steeds of various colours.

Thus ends the twenty-second chapter, the fight of Drona, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXIII.

SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Describe to me, O Sanjaya, the distinctive marks of the cars of all those heroes, who, wrought up with rage and headed by Bhima, then rushed at Drona.

Sanjaya said :—

2. Seeing Vrikodara rush into battle, (on a car drawn by steeds of chappled hue) the heroic grandson of Sini advanced, being borne by steeds of the colour of silver.

3. Inflamed with ire, the invincible Yudhamanyu proceeded towards the car of Drona, being borne by excellent steeds of variegated hue.

4. The son of the ruler of the Panchalas, namely Dhristadyumna, proceeded, being borne by steeds of great fleetness caparisoned with gold trappings and of the hue of pigeons.

5. Desirous of supporting his father (Dhristadyumna) and wishing his complete success, Kshatradarman of regulated vows followed (in a car drawn by chestnut steeds).

6. Kshastradeva, the son of Sikhandin, himself urging well-trapped steeds of the hue of lotus-leaves, and with pure white eyes, advanced towards Drona.

7. Steeds of the Kamvoja breed beautiful to look at and decked with the feathers of the *Suka* bird, bearing Nakula, quickly made against your army.

8. O Bharata, delighted steeds of the colour of clouds, inflamed with rage, bore Uttamoujasa to battle against the invincible Drona who was standing with arrows fixed (on the bow-string.)

9. Steeds of the fleetness of wind and of variegated hue, carried Sahadeva with uplifted arms to that dreadful battle.

10. Steeds of the hue of the tusks of elephants, of the fleetness of wind, of black mein and of great impetuosity, carried king Yudhisthira, the foremost of men.

11. Riding on horses caparisoned with gold trappings, and all fleet as the wind, many warriors followed Yudhisthira.

12. After king Yudhisthira, came Drupada, the ruler of the Panchalas, with a golden umbrella held over his head and himself protected by all those soldiers.

13. That mighty warrior among all monarchs, namely, Santabhi, advanced, borne by excellent steeds capable of putting up with every noise.

14. Accompanied by various mighty car-warriors, Virata speedily followed him. The Kekayas, and Sikhandin, and Dhristakstu.

15—17. Surrounded by their respective forces, followed the king of the Matsyas. Excellent steeds of the colour of trumpet-flowers bearing this latter, appeared very beautiful. Fleet steeds decked with golden chains and resembling turmeric in colour, appeared highly beautiful as they carried the son of that slayer of foes, namely, Virata the royal chief of the Matsya. The five Kekaya brothers were borne by horses of crimson colour.

18. All these heroes accomplished in battle, having complexions effulgent like gold, owning standards of red hue, and bedecked with golden chains,

19—20. Were seen, clad in mail, and showering arrows, like the clouds showering (torrents of) rain. Steeds of the hue of ivory and that of unbaked earthenware pots, carried Sikhandin, the Panchala prince of immeasurable energy. In all, twelve thousand mighty car-warriors of the Panchala race proceeded in battle.

21. Of these twelve thousands, six thousand followed Sikhandin. O sire, the son of Sisupala, the foremost of men,

22. Was borne by sportive steeds of the hue of antilopes. Dhristaketu, the foremost of the Chedis, endued with great prowess,

23—24. And invincible in battle, was carried by horses of Kamvoja breed and of variegated hue. Excellent steeds of the Sindhu breed, of beautiful limbs and of the colour of the smoke emitted by burning straws, quickly bore the prince of the Kekayas, namely, Vrihatkshastra. Possessed of eyes of the hue of jasmine, of lotus-hue, of Valhika breed, and decked with gold trappings, such steeds

25. Bore the heroic son of Sikhandin *viz.*, Kshatradeva. Decorated with caparison of gold, and of the hue of silk, steeds,

26. Of quiet nature, bore into battle Senavindu, that chastiser of foes. Excellent steeds of the colour of cream, carried into battle the youthful,

27—28. Delicate and mighty car-warrior, the son of the king of the Kasis. White horses, having black necks, and endued with the fleetness of the mind, and obedient to the (reins of the) driver, O monarch, bore prince Prativindhya. Steeds of the hue of the *Masa* flower carried in battle Sutasoma, the son of Partha, whom the latter had obtained through (the favour of) Soma.

29. Of the radiance of a thousand Moons, he was born in the city of the Kurus, known as Udayendu. In as much as, in an assembly of the *Somas* he won great renown, he came to be styled Sutasoma.

30. Steeds, resembling the flower of the *Sala* in hue, and radiant like the rising sun, bore the glorious son of Nakula, by name Satanika.

31. Decked with caparisons of gold, and possessed of the hue of the peacock's neck, steeds bore in battle, that foremost of men Srutakarman, the son of Droupadi (by Bhima).

32. Excellent steeds of the colour of the feathers of the kingfisher, carried into battle, Srutakirti, the son of Droupadi, who was equal to Partha in his knowledge of the *Srutis*.

33. Tawny-coloured steeds bore in battle prince Abhimanyu, who is said to be one and a half time superior in battle to both Krishna and Partha.

34. Huge-bodied steeds bore to battle Yuyutsu, who alone, among the sons of Dhritarastra, had sided with the Pandavas, (deserting his own brothers).

35. Steeds, plump, decked with golden caparisons, and of the hue of the stalk of paddy, bore to that dreadful battle, Vardhakshemi of great activity.

36. Steeds, having black legs, caparisoned with golden breast-plates, and obedient to the driver, bore to battle, the youthful Souchithi.

37. Quiet steeds of the hue of red silk, decked with chains of gold and having their backs covered with armour of the same metal, bore Srenimat.

38. Crimson steeds bore the assaulting Satyadhriti, who was proficient in the sciences dealing with the use of weapons and the bow and also in the divine Vedas.

39. He that was the commander of the Panchala forces, and that considered Drona to be the victim destined to fall by his hand, that Dhristadumnya was borne by steeds of the hue of pigeons.

40. Satyadhriti and Souchithi both irrepressible in battle followed him, as also Srenimat, Vasudana, and Vibhu the son of the ruler of Kasis.

41. These were borne by fleet steeds of the best Kamvoja breed, decked with chains of gold. Resembling Yama, or Vaisravana, they proceeded striking terror into the hearts of his enemies.

42. The Pravadrakas of the Kamvoja country, six thousand strong, with uplifted arms, with excellent steeds of various hues, with gold-decked standards mounted on their cars,

43. With their stretched bows discharging arrows that produced confusion in the hostile host, and with a determination to die together, followed Dhristadyumna.

44. Excellent steeds of the hue of yellow silk, decorated with beautiful chains of gold cheerfully bore Chekitana.

45. Borne by excellent steeds of the best breed, and of the colour of rainbow, came Kuntibhoja or Purujit the maternal uncle of Savyasachin.

46. Steeds of the appearance of the star-studded firmament, bore king Rochamana to battle.

47. Steeds of the colour of the red deer having white stripes all over their body, bore the prince of the Panchalas, the son of Gapati, by name Singhasena.

48. Excellent steeds of the hue of the mustard flowers belonged to that foremost among the Panchalas, who was well known as Janamejaya.

49. Fleet, huge-bodied steeds of the hue of *Masa*, decked with gold chains, with backs white like the hue of curds and faces beautiful like the moon, speedily bore the ruler of the Panchalas.

50. Brave and gentle steeds resembling reed-stalks, and of the hue of the palms of the lotus, bore Dandadhara.

51. Steeds, of the hue of donkeys, with backs of the hue of mice, and with necks proudly drawn up, bore Vyagradatta.

52. Dark-spotted steeds, decorated with beautiful garlands, bore that foremost of men Sudhanwan, the prince of the Panchalas.

53. Steeds of the impetuousity of Indra's thunderbolt, of the hue of the *Indragopakas*, and variegated with patches, bore Chitrayudha.

54. Decorated with golden garlands, and having bellies of the hue of the *Chakravaka*, steeds bore the son of the ruler of the Kosalas, by name Sukshatra.

55. Excellent and tall steeds, of huge bodies, variegated hue, exceedingly docile and caparisoned with golden chains, bore Satyadhriti accomplished in battle.

56. Sukla proceeded to battle with standards, armours, bow and steeds, all of the same white colour.

57. Ocean-bred steeds of the hue of the moon, bore Chandrasena of fierce energy, the son of Srudrasena.

58. Steeds of the hue of the blue lotus, and decked with ornaments of gold, and adorned with beautiful garlands of flower, bore to battle Saiva owning a beautiful chariot.

59. Excellent steeds of the hue of the *Kalaya* flower, covered with red and white stripes, bore to battle Rathasena difflcult to be repressed in battle.

60. Steeds of the hue of the blue parrot, bore that king who had slain the Pattacharas, and who was regarded as the best hero among all men.

16. Superior steeds of hue resembling that of the *Kinsuka* flowers, bore Chitrayudha, decorated with beautiful garlands, and owning beautiful armour, weapons and standard.

62. King Nila proceeded to battle, with standards, armour, bow and steeds, all of the same blue colour.

63. Chitra advanced to battle, with car-fence and standard and bow, all set with various kinds of gems, and with excellent steeds and beautiful banners and banner-staffs.

64. Excellent steeds that resembled in colour the hue of the *Puskara* flower, bore Hemvarna the son of Rochamana.

65. Mettled chargers of gentle appearance, possessed of vertæbral columns erect like reed-stalks, having white testes and endued with the colour of the hen's eggs, bore Dandaketu.

66—70. The heroic Sarangadwaja endowed with the wealth of energy, the ruler of the Pandyas, mounted on chargers of the colour of the moon-beams, and clad in coats of mail set with lapises, rushed at Drona stretching his bow of superior make. His dominions having been invaded, and his relatives having escaped, his sire had been slain, O monarch, in battle by Krishna; securing weapons then from Bhisma, Drona, and Rama, and Kripa, he became, in the use of weapons, equal to Rukmi, Karna, Arjuna and Achyuta. He then became intent on destroying the city of Dwaraka, and on subjugating the whole world. But his wise friends out of a desire to do good to him, prevented him from that course. Abandoning all thoughts of revenge, he is now ruling his own dominions.

71. Steeds of the hue of the *Atarusha* flower bore one hundred and forty thousand foremost car-warriors who followed that king of the Pandya.

72. Chargers of various hues and appearance and stature and face, bore the heroic Ghatotkacha, the device on whose banner was a car-wheel.

73. Setting at naught the opinions of the assembled Bharatas, that prince who alone out of his reverence for Yudhisthira had sided with him abandoning all his cherished hopes,

74. That mighty-armed Vrihanta of red eyes was borne by huge-bodied, greatly powerful steeds, as he sat in his chariot.

75. Excellent steeds of the hue of gold followed behind the virtuous Yudhisthira, that foremost of kings, as he advanced on his car.

76. Hosts of the Pravadrakas of divine appearance, proceeded to battte, on superior chargers of various beautiful colorus.

77. All of them possessing golden standards, full of energy and accompanied by Bhimasena, appeared, O monarch, like the celestials headed by Indra.

78. Dhristadyumna liked that assembled host very much. But the son of Bharadwaja, excelled the rest of the warriors in splendour.

79. O monarch, his standard, with a black deerskin fluttering from its top and bearing the beautiful waterpot, and made of the finest gold, appared exceedingly beautiful.

80. The standard of Bhimasena bearning the device of a mighty lion in silver, with two eyes of the *lapis lazuli*, appeared highly resplendent.

81. The standard of Yudhisthira endued with great energy bearing the emblem of the golden moon surrounded by the planets, looked exceedingly charming.

82. Two prodigious *Mridangas* of celestial make called *Nanda* and *Upanandaka* were tied to it. Struck by machanical arrangements, they emitted melodies that enhanced the joy of all.

83. For striking terror into the hearts of the enemy, we saw that tall and fierce standard of Nakula, mounted on his car, that bore the device of Sarabha having golden back.

84. On the standard of Sahadeva, was seen a charming swan of irrepressible might made of silver, decked with bells and banners, and capable of enhancing the grief of the enemy.

85. The standards of the five sons of Draupadi bore as their device the beautiful images of Dharma, Maruta, Sakra, and of the twin Aswins of high-soul.

86. On the car of the youthful Abhimanyu, O monarch, there was a standard of best make, bearing the device of a golden peacock, which was as radiant as molten gold.

87. O monarch, the device of a vulture enhanced the beauty of the standard of Ghatotkacha; his steeds had the power of ranging everywhere at will, like those of Ravana in days of yore.

88. In the hands of Yudhisthira was the bow called Mahendra of celestial make; the celestial Vyavya was, O king, in the hands of Bhimasena.

89. For preserving the triune world Brahma had created a bow; that bow of celestial make and ever indestructible, was in the hands of Phalguna.

90. The *Vaishnava* bow was wielded by Nakula and the bow *Aswina* by Sahadeva; the Poulasta of terrible appearance and celestial make, was held by Ghatotkacha.

91. O Bharata, these five jewels of bows, namely the *Rudra*, the *Agneya*, the *Kouveryya*, the *Yamya* and the *Girisha* were held by the five sons of Droupadi.

92. That foremost of bows of best make called *Rudra* which the son of Rohini had obtained, that bow was given, out of delight, to the high-souled son of Subhadra, by Rama.

93. These and many other standards, decked with gold, of heroic warriors were seen there, that enhanced the grief of the foes.

94. Then, O monarch, the host led by Drona, which abounded in myriads of standards and which numbered not a single coward, looked like images painted on canvas.

95. Then in that battle we heard, O monarch, the names and lineage of various heroic warriors, as they rushed at Drona, like to what is heard at a *Swayamvara*.

Thus ends the twenty-third chapter, the description of standards &c, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXIV.

(SAMSAPTAKA BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. O Sanjaya, those heroic sovereigns who now returned to the charge, being headed by Vrikodara, were capable of crushing even the host of the celestials themselves.

2. Led by Destiny, man surely engages in any action, and it is through the decrees of Destiny that his various acts are attended with various results.

3. That Yudhisthira, who wandered exiled in the woods, for a long time, wearing matted locks and black deer-skin and who also had to wander *incognito*,

4. Even that very Yudhisthira is now leading this mighty host in battle! What else but evil, can befall my son through this adverse influence of Destiny?

5. Surely man is born subject to the decrees of Destiny; and so he is compelled by it to do what he does not at all desire.

6. Becoming addicted to the vice of gambling at dice, Yudhisthira reaped great affliction; but now through the agency of Destiny, he has again been united to his supporters.

7. 'To-day the Kekayass are rallying to me; the Kousikas, the Kosalas, the Chedis, the Vangas and others are all betaking to me.

8. All this extensive earth has taken my side, O sire, and not that of the sons of Pritha.' O Suta, these were the words that were spoken to me by the wicked Duryodhana before.

9. Drona, guarded amidst this host of his warriors, was slain by the son of Prisata in battle; what can it be but the decree of Fate?

10. Amidst that royal host how could Death approach that mighty-armed Drona who ever delighted in battle, and who was accomplished in the use of all sorts of weapons?

11. I am plunged in distress and a swoon overwhelms me. Oh, I can not live hearing both Bhisma and Drona slain.

12. O Suta, that which the prophetic Khatwa said to me, seeing me, infatuated with the affection for my son, O sire, everything of that has now overtaken me and Duryodhana himself.

13. It would have been very cruel had I saved the rest of my progeny by abandoning Duryodhana, but then the rest could have lived.

14. The monarch, that abandoning righteousness, pursues interest, is debarred from the enjoyment of felicity and imbibes meanness.

15. O Sanjaya, to-day, when the hump of this kingdom has been crushed, I see that nothing will be left of it, as it has lost all energy (by the death of Drona.)

16. When those two foremost of men, *viz*. Bhisma and Drona of forgiving nature who used to be our primary support, when they both have been killed, how can any thing remain of this kingdom?

17. Relate to me, in detail, as to how that battle raged; who were they that fought, who assaulted (the enemy) and what mean fellows fled, out of terror?

18. Tell me also what that foremost of car-warriors, namely, Dhananjaya, did? We are much afraid of him and of his brother, Vrikodara, who is our (implacable) enemy.

19. Tell me, O Sanjaya, of the terrible collusion that took place between the Pandava hosts and the remnant of my army, when the former returned to the charge?

20. What also, O sire, was the state of your mind when they returned to the attack. What heroes of our army withstood them on the field of battle?

Thus ends the twenty-fourth chapter, the words of Dhritarastra, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXV.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the Pandava host returned to the battle, a mighty apprehension took possession of ourselves covered (by the arrows) like the lustrous rob covered over by a (continuous) mass of rain-clouds.

2. Thick clouds of dust raised by them covered over your army; and our sight being intercepted, we thought Drona to be slain.

3. Beholding those mighty and heroic warriors intent on the perpetration of a very heartless act (*i.e.*, the slaughter of Drona), Duryodhana encouraged his troops without the least delay, saying :—

4. "O rulers of men, do you check the Pandava host, according to your strength energy, and prowess and according to the opportunities that may present themselves."

5. Thereafter your son Durmarsana beholding Bhima near him, fell upon him; and desirous of saving Drona's life, he covered the latter with a downpour of arrows.

6. Wrought up with ire, he assaulted Bhima with his arrows, even like Death himself in that battle. Bhima also pierced him with arrows and thus a fierce combat raged between them.

7. In that battle, heroic warriors endowed with prudence, and accomplished in smiting, being commanded by their leaders withstood their adversaries, disregardful of their kingdom and the fear of death.

8—9. Like one infuriate elephant resisting another, Kritavarman checked the grandson of Sini. That fierce bowman, the ruler of the Sindhus, with his keen-pointed shafts kept the mighty warriors Kshatra varman away from Drona, as the former advanced towards the latter. Kshatravarman cutting down the bow and banner of the ruler of the Sindhus,

10. And excited with wrath, pierced him in his vitals with ten *Narachas*. Thereupon the ruler of the Sindhus, with an admirable lightness of hand, taking up another bow,

11—14. Pierced Kshatravarman in that battle with arrows, all made of iron. With all his endeavours, Suvahu kept away from Drona, his brother, the mighty and heroic car-warrior Yuyutsu, who was fighting for the Pandavas. Yuyutsu cut off with two whetted and well-tempered and razor-like arrows, the two arms of Suvahu which were wielding the bow and the arrows and which resembled a couple of bludgeons. The ruler of the Madras, resisted king Yudhisthira of righteous soul, that foremost of the Pandavas, like the banks resisting the agitated ocean. Him the righteous king Yudhisthira covered with many shafts capable of penetrating into the very vitals.

15—17. The lord of the Madras piercing Yudhisthira with sixty-four arrows uttered a loud war cry; but while the former was still roaring, with two razor sharp arrows, the foremost of the Pandavas severed his bow and banner. At this the warriors shouted forth (in joy). Then king Valhika also at the head of his army, resisted, with his arrows, king Drupada as the latter was advancing leading a formidable division. Thereat between those two old men supported by their respective army, a fierce encounter raged,

18—21. Which resembled that between two mighty leaders, with rent temples, of two different herds of elephants. Vindha and Anvindua of the Avanti country, at the head of their army, encountered Virata, the ruler of the Matsyas, at the head of his troops, like Indra and Agni encountering the Danava Vali, in the days of yore. Then between the Matsyas and the Kekayas a confused combat raged in which the horses, warriors, the car-warriors and the elephant-warriors fought undauntedly, and which resembled the encounter between the celestials and the Asuras. Bhutakarma, the ruler of the Savas, kept away from Drona, Nakula's son, Satanika, as the latter advanced discharging a net-work of arrows. Thereat the son of Nakula with three well-sharpened *Vallas* (broaded-headed arrows),

22—26. Made Bhutakarma headless and armless in that battle. Vivinsati checked the heroic Sutasoma endued with prowess, as he was advancing towards Drona discharging innumerable shafts. Sutasoma also excited with anger and clad in mail pierced his uncle Vivinsati with straight-going shafts, and he desisted from attacking the latter. Then Bhimaratha, with six swift-going shafts, made wholly of iron, despatched Salwa together with his steeds and charioteer to the regions of Death. O mighty monarch, the son of Chitrasena resisted your grandson Srutakarman, as the latter rushed at (Drona), being drawn by steeds resembling peacocks. Those two grandsons of yours, of prowess difficult of being checked, desirous of slaying each other,

27—29. Fought admirably with each other for bringing about the success of their respective sire's purposes. The son of Drona, seeing Prativindhya stand before him in that battle, checked him with arrows, in order to do honour to his sire. Wrought up with rage, Prativindhya with whetted shafts pierced him who bore the device of the lion's tail in his banner and who was anxious to serve his father's interests. O foremost of men, like a sower sowing seeds in the sowing season,

30—35. The son of Droupadi, covered the son of Drona with an arrowy downpour. The son of Dussasana resisted the mighty car-warrior Srutakirti, the son of Arjuna by Droupadi, as the latter was rushing at Drona. But that son of Krishna equal to Krishna (in prowess), cutting off with three wellsharpened *Vallas*, the bow, banner, and charioteer of the former (the son of Dussasana), advanced towards Drona. Lakshmana checked that slayer of Pattachara who is regarded, O king, as the bravest among the two hosts. But the latter, O Bharata, appeared resplendent, having cut off Lakmshana's bow and banner-mark and showering myriad shafts on him. The youthful Vikarna, endued with great intelligence, opposed, in that battle, the youthful Sikhandin, the son of Yajnasena, as he advanced. Thereat the son of Yajnasena covered the former with a net-work of arrows.

36—39. Your son endued with prowess appeared beautiful by defeating that shower of arrows. Angada checked the heroic Uttamaujasa, with a down-pour of arrows, as the latter advanced in that battle against Drona. The awful encounter between those two foremost of men enhanced the delight of all the soldiers as also of them both. The mighty bowman Durmukha endued with prowess, resisted with shafts called *Vatsadantas*, the heroic Purujit as the latter advanced towards Drona. But this latter struck Durmukha between his two eye-brows with a *Naracha*.

40—41. Thereupon the countenance of Durmukha appeared charming like a lotus with its stem. Karna checked with an arrowy shower the Kekaya brothers owning crimson standards, as they rushed towards Drona. Greatly afflicted, they also covered Karna with a down-pour of arrows.

42. Karna also covered them repeatedly with showers of arrows. Neither they nor Karna was to be seen being covered over with (clouds of) shafts.

43—46. Their steeds, drivers and standards and cars were all lost to sight being covered with thick arrowy showers. Your three sons, *viz.*, Duryaja, Jaya, and Vijaya resisted the three, *viz.*, king Nila, the ruler of Kasis, and king Jayatsena. Then the fierce combat between them afforded delight to the lookers-on like that between a tiger, a lion, and a wolf on the one side and a bear, a buffalo and a bull on the other side. Kshemadhuri and Vrihanta, these two brothers together wounded with keen-pointed shafts, him of the Satwata race, as he advanced towards Drona in that

battle. Then the battle between those brothers and Satyaki became exceedingly wonderful,

47—48. Like that between a lion and a couple of leader-elephants with rent temples in the woods. Excited with wrath the ruler of the Chedis, kept away, by discharging shafts, from Drona, king Ambastha who always delighted in battle. Then Amvastha pierced him with a long shaft that penetrated into his very bones.

49—53. Loosing hold of his bow furnished with arrows, he fell down from his chariot. The generous son of Saradwata namely Kripa, with arrows called *Kshudrakas*, resisted Vardhakshemi of the Vrishni race, whose very appearance reflected wrath. Then those that saw Kripa and him of the Vrishni race—the heroes accomplished in various modes of warfare—engaged in battle with each other, became absorbed in that encounter, and they could attend to no other action. The son of Somadatta for adding to the glory of Drona, opposed the ever vigilant king Manimanta as the latter rushed towards Drona. Tho son of Somadatta then with great activity, cut off the the latter's bowstring, banner, charioteer, umbrella and flag-staff and felled him from his car. Then the slayer of foes, Yupaketu (owning the devise of a sacrifical stake on his standard) jumping down, with lightness, from the car,

54. Cut off with a best-tempered sword king Manimanta with his steeds, charioteer, standard and chariot. Thereafter remounting his own chariot, and grasping another bow,

55—58. And himself urging his steeds, he began to consume the host of the Pandavas. Vrishasena, a worthy combatant, checked with an arrowy shower, king Pandya who was rushing to batte like Indra rushing after the Asuras for slaying them. With maces, bludgeons, scimitars, axes stones, and other weapons, and with short clubs, mallets, discs, *Vindipalas*, battle-axes, and with dusts, wind, fire, water, ashes, gravels, straw, trees, afflicting, smiting, breaking, slaying, routing and throwing down, and terrifying the hostile troops, came Ghatotkacha, desirous of getting near Drona.

59. Excited with wrath, the Rakshasa Alumvusha began to strike that Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha) with various kinds of weapons and various implements of war.

60. The encounter that then took place between those two foremost of the Rakshasas, resembled that which took place between Sumeru and the king of the immortals, in days gone by.

61. Good betide you. Thus amidst that dreadful general engagements, hundreds of single combats were fought between the car-warriors, elephant-warriors, horse-warriors and foot-soldiers of your army and theirs.

62. Indeed the battle that then raged between the warriors that were intent on destroying and protecting Drona, indeed such a battle was never seen or heard of before.

63. Many were the combats that were seen raging on that field ; O lord, some of which were dreadful, some worderful and some exceedingly terrible.

Thus ends the twenty-fifth chapter, the description of single combats, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXVI.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When the Pandavas returned and when divisions clashed against divisions, how did the warriors of my army and those belonging to the sons of Pritha, endued with activity, fight?

2. What also did Arjuna do to the car-warriors of the *Samsaptaka* host, and what, O Sanjaya, did the *Samsaptakas* do to Arjuna in return?

Sanjaya said :—

3. When the Pandavas did return to the charge and when divisions clashed against divisions, your son (Duryodhana) himself at the head of the elephant division, rushed at Bhimsena.

4. Like an elephant challenged by another or like a bovine bull summoned by a rival, Bhimasena, challenged by the king himself, rushed against that elephant division.

5. And, O sire, that son of Pritha, accomplished in battle, and endued with strength of arms, soon shattered that host of elephants.

6. Those elephants, prodigious like mountains, and with ichor exuding from all parts of their bodies, were crushed and compelled to turn back by the *Nurachas* of Bhimasena.

7. Indeed as a raging tempest tears away a net-work of clouds, so did the son of the Wind (Bhima) shatter that host (of elephants).

8. Scattering arrows on that herd of elephants, Bhima appeared beautiful, like the sun scattering his shining rays on all objects of the world.

9. Afflicted with the shafts of Bhima and bespattered with blood, those elephants looked beautiful like various masses of clouds in the heavens streaked with the rays of the sun.

10. Thereupon Duryodhana excited with wrath, approached and pierced with whetted shafts the son of the Wind who was afflicting his [(Duryodhana's) own division of elephants.

11. Thereat, with blood-red eyes, Bhima within a while, desirous of dragging the king to destruction, began to pierce the latter with winged shafts.

12. Then Duryodhana, covered with arrows on all parts of his body, and wrought up with rage, began to pierce the son of Pandu, *viz.*, Bhimasena, with *Narachas* of the effulgence of the rays of the sun, laughing all the while.

13. Duryodhana had an (artificial) elephant embossed with gems and jewels as the device gracing his banner; this elephant together with the former's bow, the son of Pandu severed with two *Vallas* in all haste.

14. Beholding Duryodhana afflicted by Bhima, O sire, the sovereign of the Angas, riding on an elephant, came with a view to afflict Bhima.

15. Seeing that best of elephants make towards himself with a roar resembling the rumble of the clouds, Bhima struck it sore with a *Naracha* between its two frontal globes.

16. That *Naracha*, penetrating through the body of the elephant at last struck on the ground. Then that elephant fell like a mountain struck with the thunder-bolt.

17. The *Mlechha* king who could not extricate himself from the dropping elephant was also falling with it; with an admirable lightness of hand, Vrikodara cut off the head of that monarch.

18. At the fall of the heroic ruler of the Angas, his division fled in all directions. Horses, elephants and car-warriors, seized with panic, began to crush the foot-soldiers in their flight.

19. When that host had been thus broken and routed in all directions, the sovereign of the Pragjyotisas rushed at Bhima, riding on his elephant.

20. With its two forelegs and its trunk contracted and with its eyes rolling and inflamed with fury, that elephant seemed to consume the son of Pandu.

21. It then shattered to pieces the car of Vrikodara together with the steeds harnessed thereto. Thereat running on his legs Bhima hid himself underneath body of the elephant.

22. The son of Pandu did not really fly, for he was acquainted with the science called *Anjalikavedha*; getting underneath the elephant's body, he began to strike it with his bare arms repeatedly.

23. He began to afflict that elephant that was intent on slaying him; whereupon the elephant began to whirl round like a potter's wheel in rapid motion.

24. Possessed of the might of ten thousand elephants, the glorious Vrikodara, having struck the elephant, came out from underneath its body and stood before Supratika.

25. Holding down Bhima with its trunk, Supratika then struck him with its knees; and winding its trunk round the neck of Bhima, it really tried to kill him.

26. Whirling round Bhimasena freed himself from the twine of the elephant's trunk. Then once more Vrikodara got under the body of that elephant.

27. Then when he saw a rival elephant of his own army make towards the one (underneath which he was standing), Bhima issuing out from under the body of the elephant, ran away with speed.

28. Thereupon a loud cry of 'Alas, Bhima is slain by the elephant' was set up by all the troops, O sire.

29. Frightened by that elephant, the Pandava army suddenly fled, O king, there where Vrikodora was standing.

30. Thereupon, considering Vrikodara to be slain, king Yudhisthira assisted by the Panchalas, environed Bhagadatta on all sides.

31. That foremost of car-warriors Yudhisthira, having surrounded Bhagadatta with cars on all sides, covered the latter with keen-pointed shafts by hundreds and thousands.

32. Baffling those myriad shafts with his iron hook, the Mountain-king, (Bhagadatta) agitated with his elephant the host of the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

33. Then, O ruler of men, we did indeed, behold a wonderful feat achieved in that battle by the old Bhagadatta, through the instrumentality of his elephant.

34. Then the sovereign of the Dasarnas advanced against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, mounted on a swift-coursing elephant, exuding the temporal juice and moving in a tortuous motion.

35. Then the encounter that ensued between those two elephants of prodigious appearance, resembled the fight, in the days of yore, between winged mountains covered with trees.

36. Thereafter the elephant of the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, turning and wheeling round, slew the elephant of the king of the Dasarnas, by ripping open its flanks.

37. King Bhagadatta also, with seven *Tomaras* of the effulgence of the sun's rays, slew his adversary riding on an elephant just when the latter was about to slip down from his seat.

38. Thereupon Yudhisthira lacerating king Bhagndatta (with many shafts), surrounded him on all sides with a numerous host of car-warriors.

39. Mounted on his elephant and surrounded on all sides by the car-warriors, he (Bhagadatta) appeared beautiful like fire illumining a mountain surrounded by forests.

40. Then mounted on his elephant, he remained inside that compact circle of fierce bow-men riding on chariots and pouring showers of arrows.

41. Thereafter the king of the Pragjyotisas, poking his prodigious elephant, urged it towards the chariot of Yuyudhana.

42. Thereat the mighty elephant twining with its trunk the car of Sini's grandson, threw it violently to a distance ; but Yuyudhana escaped.

43. His charioteer jumping upon the car, urged the mighty steeds of the Shindhu breed yoked thereto, and stopped reaching the spot where Satyaki was standing.

44. Then that elephant, availing itself of that breach in the circle of cars, came speedily out of it and began to overthrow all the rulers of the earth.

45. Those foremost of men being frightened by that swift-coursing elephant, regarded that single one to be multiplied into hundred elephants, in that battle.

46. The Pandavas crushed by Bhagadatta mounted on his elephant, appeared like the Danavas crushed by Indra mounted on the Airavata.

47. When the Panchalas were flying on all sides, a deafening and dreadful din was created by their elephants and steeds.

48. Thus when the Pandavas were being afflicted by Bhagadatta in that battle, Bhima wrought up with wrath once more rushed against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas.

49. Then that e,ephant drenching with the woater spouting from its trunk the horses of the advancing Bhima, frightened them, and they carried away Bhuma from the field.

50. Thereafter Ruchiparvan the son of Kirti speedily rushed at him, mounted on his chariot and pouring showers of arrows like Death himself.

51. Then that ruler of the mountain tracts possessed of shapely limbs, despatched, with a straight shaft, Ruchiparvan to the regions of the son of Vivaswan (Death).

52. On the fall of that hero (Ruchiparvan), thc son of Subhadra, the sons of Droupadi, Chekitana, Dhristaketu, and Yuyutsu, began to afflict that elephant,

53. Desirous of slaying it ; and uttering dreadful roars, they began to pour on it their arrows like showers of rain.

54. Then that elephant urged with heels toes, and the hook, by its skilful rider, rushed (at them) with speed, with its trunk stretched and eyes and ears fixed.

55. Then trampling upon the steeds of Yuyutsu, the animal crushed his charioteer ; and, O monarch, Yuyutsu fled, forsaking his car, in all haste.

56. Then the warriors of the Pandava host out of a desire for slaying that foremost of elephants, speedily drenched it with the shower of their arrows, uttering loud shouts all the while.

57. At this juncture, your son with speed rushed, against the car of Subhadra's son. King Bhagadatta riding on his elephant and discharging arrows at the foe,

58. Appeared resplendent like the sun scattering his rays on the earth. Then the son of Arjuna pierced him with twelve shafts and Yuyutsu with ten.

59. The sons of Droupadi and Dhiristaketu also pierced him with ten shafts ; with those arrows shot with great care stuck on its body, the elephant appeared beautiful,

60. Like a mighty rain-cloud struck with the rays of the sun. Urged on by the skill and vigour of its rider, and smitten with the shafts of the enemy,

61. That elephant began to throw down right and left, the warriors of the hostile host. Like a cow-herd belabouring with his cudgel the herd in the forest,

62. Bhagadatta began to smite the hostile troops repeatedly. Like the cawing of the crows pounced upon by the hawks,

63. A confused noise was heard among the Pandava hosts, as they fled with speed.

64. O monarch, then that foremost of elephants being struck with the hook resembled the winged mountains of yore. It struck panic into the hearts of the enemy, like to what the merchants (on board) experience when the (tempest-tossed) sea rushes against them.

65. O monarch, then in that battle, a loud din, was raised by the elephants, car-warriors steeds and kings, as they fled ni fear; and that din filled the earth, the welkin, the cardinal and subsidiary directions of the compass.

66. That monarch (Bhagadatta) with that foremost elephant of his, thoroughly agitated the host of the enemy, like Virochana agitating in battle the celestial host well-protected by the immortals in the days of yore.

67. The friend of fire (tempest) then began to blow violently. A cloud of dust in a moment covered the firmameut and the forces. People began to regord that single elephant at muntiplied into many and careering in all directions.

Thus ends the twenty-sixth chapter, the fighting of Bhagadatta, in the Samsaptaka of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXVII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. As you have enquired of me of the feats of Partha in that battle, hear, O you of mighty arms, what he achieved in that battle.

2. Seeing the cloud of dust and hearing the noise created by the troops when Bhagadatta was achieving feats of valour, the son of Kunti thus addressed Krishna.

3. "O slayer of Madhu, as the ruler of the Pragjyotisas has advanced with impetuousity to the battle, riding on his elephant, this loud noise may be attributed to him.

4. Well-versed in the management of his vehicle the elephant, he is in no way inferior to Indra in battle; and I think, he is either the first or the second of all the elephant warriors on the face of this earth.

5. His elephaut is also the foremost of of the species, whom no rival dares encounter in battle; the animal is well accomplished in all tactics and indefatigable and beyond the reach of all weapons in battle.

6. O sinless one, that elephant capable of bearing the showers of all kinds of weapon and even the tongues of fire, will alone, this day, destroy all the troops of the Pandavas.

7. Save and except us two, there is none who is capable of resisting that animal. Therefore with speed do you drive where the ruler of the Pragjyotisas is.

8. I will, this very day, send, as a dear guest to the slayer of Vala (Indra), this my adversary who is proud of the prowess of his elephant and of his venerable age, in battle."

9. No sooner had Arjuna uttered these words than Krishna drove to the spot where Bhagadatta had been crushing and shattering the Pandava army.

10. As Arjuna winded his way towards Bhagadatta, the fourteen thousand mighty car-warriors, viz., the *Samsaptakas* summoned him delightfully from behind.

11. Of these fourteen thousand, ten thousand mighty car-warriors belonged to the Trigartta clan, and the (remaining) four sand were the followers of the son of Vasudeva.

12. Beholding then the ranks of his own army broken by Bhagadatta and O sire, being summoned on the other-hand by the *Samsaptakas*, Arjuna was seen devided in his heart (purpose).

13. He began to reflect :—'Which of these two acts will now be beneficial for me viz., to turn back to the *Samsaptakas*, or to repair to Yudhisthira.'

14. Then, O perpetuator of the race of the Kurus, deciding with the help of his understanding, Arjuna set his heart steadily on the destruction of the *Samsaptakas*.

15. Then that son of Vasava bearing the device of the monkey-chief on his standard, suddenly wheeled round with the intent of slaughtering, single handed, those thousands of car-warriors in battle.

16. Even this was what both Karna and Duryodhana had decided to be the means for bringing about the death of Arjuna; and for this they had planned the double encounter.

17. Then the son of Pandu wavered between his two purposes (of slaying the *Samsaptakas*, and of meeting Bhagadatta). But he baffled the purposes of his enemies by slaying then the foremost among the *Samsapatakas*,

18. Thereat, O monarch, the mighty car-warriors of the *Samsaptaka* host showered upon Arjuna hundreds and thousands of straight-jointed shafts.

19. Covered with those shafts, neither the son of Kunti, namely Partha, nor Krishna the assuager of the grief of men, nor horses nor chariots, O monarch, could be seen.

20. Then when Janarddana was overwhelmed with a swoon, and was covered with drops of perspiration, the son of Pritha fell to slaughter them in large numbers with his *Brahma* weapon.

21. Hundreds of arms with arrows, bow-strings and bows in their grasps, being severed, and also, standards, horses, charioteers, and car-warriors, all fell down on the earth.

22. Elephants, resembling in stature huge hills covered with trees, or masses of rain clouds, and furnished with trappings, having their riders slain, fell down on the ground being struck with the arrows of Partha.

23. Greatly afflicted with the shafts of Partha, steeds with riders on their backs, fell down dead on the ground, with their caparisons and reins severed and their *Vandha* rent.

24. Severed by Kiritin with his broad-headed arrows, the arms of men, having swords, lances and rapiers for their nail, and grasping bludgeons, mallets, and battle-axes, fell down.

25. Heads, O sire, resembling the rising sun, or the lotus or the moon, being severed by the arrows of Arjuna, fell down on the earth.

26. When the enraged Phalguna had been thus slaying his foes, the forces seemed to be on fire, being struck with beautiful but deadly shafts of various appearances.

27. Then all beings honoured Dhananjaya, who had been agitating the forces like an elephant crushing the lotus-stalks, by saying 'Well done,' 'Well-done.'

28. Beholding that feat of the son of Pritha, which was equal to the one achieved by Vasava himself, Madhava, highly amazed thus spoke to the former, with his hands folded.

29. 'I think, O Partha, the feat you have to-day achieved in battle is difficult of being performed even by Indra, or Yama or Kuvera himself.

30. I have seen you to-day slay simultaneously in battle, hundreds and thousands of mighty car-warriors of the *Samsaptaka* host.'

31. Then completely slaying those *Samsaptakas* who stayed in battle, Partha said to Krishna, 'Now hasten towards Bhagadatta.'

Thus ends the twenty-seventh chapter, the slaughter of the Samsaptakas, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Upon Partha's desire for advancing against the divison of Drona, Krishna urged his steeds covered with golden caparisons, fleet as the mind and white in hue.

2. Beholding that foremost of the Kurus make towards his brothers afflicted sore by Drona, king Susarman with his brothers followed him, desirous of battle.

3. The invincible Arjuna owning white steeds then thus addressed Krishna saying :—' O Achyuta, this Susarman assisted by his brothers challanges me (to fight).

4. O slayer of foes, on the other hand, the ranks of my troops are being shattered, (by Drona) ; to-day my mind is undecided in its purposes, which is caused by the *Samsaptakas*.

5. Shall I slay the *Samsaptakas* or shall I save my own army afflicted by the foe. Know this to be what I am thinking of ; tell me what would be beneficial for me ?

6. Thus spoken to, the descendant of the Dasarhas (viz. Krishna), turned the car, and drove the son of Pandu to the spot whence the ruler of the Trigarttas was summoning Arjuna.

7. Thereat Arjuna piercing Susarman with seven swift-coursing arrows, cut down his standard, bow and chariot with a couple of razor-sharp arrows.

8. Then with six swift-flying arrows Partha speedily despatched to the mansion of Death the brother of the ruler of the Trigarttas, with his steeds and charioteers.

9. Thereat Susarman, aiming at Arjuna, hurled an iron dart resembling a snake and he threw a lance at the son of Vasudeva.

10. Having cut down the dart with three shafts and the lance also with another three, Arjuna compelled Susarman to turn back, depriving him of his senses by means of an arrowy down-pour.

11. None among your host ventured to oppose him, O monarch, as he came looking

fierce and showering arrows like Vasava pouring rain.

12. Then Dhananjaya advanced slaying all the mighty car-warriors of the Kouravas, with his arrows,just as fire advances consuming heaps of straw and fuel &c.

13. Like the touch of fire, people were unable to bear the unbearable impetuousity of that intelligent son of Kunti.

14. The son of Pandu overwhelming with his arrowy showers the hostile host, made, O monarch, towards the rulers of the Pragjyotisas, like Suparana pouncing down (upon his prey).

15—16. Then the ever-victorious Arjuna held in his grasp the bow, that was prolific of benefit for the sinless Pandavas, and that was capable of enhancing the grief of the enemy in battle, for the destruction of the Kshastriyas, brought about, O king, by your son's recourse to the deceitful game at dice.

17. Then, O monarch, your troops being thus agitated by the son of Pritha, was broken like a frail bark grounded on a rock.

18. Thereupon, ten thousand bowmen, brave and inflamed with a fierce determination for battle, and disregardful of victory or defeat, turned upon (Arjuna).

19. With their hearts shorn of fear, those mighty warriors completely encompassed him. Thereat Partha capable of bearing all burdens how heavy sover, took up that burden in that battle.

20. Then Partha began to crush your forces just as an infuriate elephant of six years of age, with rent temples crushes and tears an assemblage of lotus plants.

21. When the troops were being thus crushed, Bhagadatta, the ruler of men, riding on the self-same elephant, rushed suddenly at Dhananjaya.

22. Thereupon Dhananjaya that foremost of men, received him. (Bhagadatta), opposing him with his car. Then a fierce encounter raged between that car and that elephant.

23. Riding on their car and elephant respectively which were equipped according to the rules of the military science, those two heroes Dhananjaya and Bhagadatta careered through the field of battle.

24. Then staying on his elephant that resembled a mass of clouds, the mighty Bhagadatta showered upon Dhananjaya a down-pour of arrows, like Indra showering rain.

25. Then the son of Vasava (Arjuna) endued with prowess, cut off with his arrowy showers, the arrows of Bhagadatta, before they could even reach him.

26. Then, O sire, the king of the Pragjyotisas, baffling that shower of arrows, pierced the mighty-armed son of Pritha, as also Krishna, with his arrows.

27. Thereafter covering Krishna and Partha with a thick net-work of arrows, Bhagadatta urged his elephant towards them in order to slay them.

28. Thereat beholding that infuriate elephant make towards themselves like Death himself, Janarddana with swiftness moved his car in a manner as to leave the elephant on the left.

29. Thus Dhananjaya, though he got an opportunity of slaying that mighty elephant and its rider from the right side, yet did not avail himself of it, recollecting the laws of fair combat.

30. The elephant, O sire, trampling down upon other elephants, cars and steeds, sent them all to the regions of Death. Thereat Dhananjaya was inflamed with wrath.

Thus ends the twenty-eighth chapter, the fight of Bhagadatta, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXIX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Wrought up with rage, what did Arjuna the son of Pandu do to Bhagadatta? What did also the ruler of the Pragjyotisas do towards Pritha's son? Tell me all as it happened.

Sanjaya said :—

2. When Krishna and Arjuna were both thus engaged with the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, all creatures regarded them as placed within the teeth of Death.

3. Then, O mighty monarch, from the back of the elephant he rode, the ruler of the Pragjyotisas poured incessant showers of arrows on the two Krishnas (Arjuna and Krishna) stationed on the same chariot.

4. Thereafter Bhagadatta, with iron shafts furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and discharged from a full-drawn bow, pierced the illustrious son of Devaki.

5. Those superbly ornamented arrows of the touch of fire, shot with force by Bhagadatta, entered the earth, having pierced through the son of Devaki.

6. The son of Pritha then cut off Bhagadatta's bow, and slew that warrior who was supporting the latter from his flanks; he then engaged with the Pragjyotisa king as if in sport.

7. Thereat Bhagadatta sped at Arjuna fourteen lances of great sharpness and of the solar effulgence; but Arjuna cut each of them into three pieces.

8. Thereafter Arjuna shattered into pieces the armour covering Bhagadatta's elephant, with a mighty shower of arrows; the armour then dropped down on the earth.

9. With its armour shattered, and mangled with numerous arrow-wounds, that elephant appeared like a prince of mountain shorn of its cloudy envelope, and with its breast drenched with showers of rain.

10. Thereupon the ruler of the Pragjyotisas hurled at Vasudeva's son a dart having a golden staff and an iron head; but Arjuna cut that dart in two.

11. Thereafter having severed with arrows the umbrella and the standard of the king, Arjuna quickly pierced the ruler of the mountain-provinces with ten shafts, smiling the while.

12—13. Then that ruler of the Pragjyotisas was sorely wounded by Arjuna's arrows furnished with beautiful wings formed of the feathers of the *Kanka* birds. Thereafter Bhagadatta, O ruler of men, waxing wroth, hurled lances at the head of Pandu's son owning white steeds. And then he uttered a loud war-cry. Then by those lances, the diadem of Arjuna was displaced.

14. Then putting his displaced diadem in its proper place, Phalguna said to king Bhagadatta:—"Take you a full view of this world."

15. Thus spoken to, king Bhagadatta, inflamed with rage, took up a lustrous bow and covered Pandu's son and Govinda with a shower of arrows.

16. The son of Pritha then having cut-off Bhagadatta's bow and quivers, quickly pierced the latter in all his vital limbs with two and seventy arrows.

17. Thus pierced and pained to the extreme, Bhagadatta invoked the Vaishnava weapon and inspiring its hook with sacred aphorisms, he let it go, in rage, at the breast of Pandu's son.

18. Thereupon Kesava, covering Pritha's son, recieved upon his own breast that weapon capable of slaying every being, hurled by Bhagadatta.

19. On the breast of Keshava that weapon became changed into a celestial garland. Thereafter with a sorrowful heart Arjuna thus addressed Keshava:—

20. "*O sinless one, without fighting for you, I will drive your steeds, in battle.* Even these, O lotus-eyed one, were the words you spoke before. Why then do you not keep your promise inviolate?

21. It is only then when I shall be involved in a calamity or shall be incapable of resisting (my foes and their weapons), it is then only that you shall take it upon yourself to protect me; but not when I am competent and standing thus.

22. Equipped with my bows and arrows, I am competent enough to conquer the worlds with all the celestials, Asuras, and mortals dwelling in them; this fact indeed you also know."

23. Thereupon the son of Vasudeva addressing Arjuna spoke these words in reply:—"Hear, O sinless one, O son of Pritha, this ancient and mysterious piece of history.

24. Ever occupied as I am in achieving the welfare of the worlds I have four semblances. Dividing myself into parts I do try to bring about the world's benefit.

25. One of my semblances, remaining on earth, is even now practising ascetic austerities. Another keeps an eye over the world engaged in good and evil deeds.

26. My third semblance, staying in the world of men, is engaged in the performance of acts, and my fourth semblance sleeps a sleep extending over four thousand years.

27. This last-mentioned semblance of mine that awakes at the end of the every thousand years, accords excellent boons at that time, to those who really deserve them.

28. On one such occasion, the Earth knowing that the boon-giving hour has come, solicited a boon for her son Naraka; hear, I shall tell it to you.

29. "Possessed of the *Vaishnava* weapon let my son be unslayable, both by the gods and the demons. It behoves you to grant me that weapon."

30. Listening then to that prayer for the boon that the earth wanted me accord to her son, I gave the excellent and irresistible *Vaishnava* weapon to him.

31. I then said:—"O Earth, let this weapon be infallible in protecting Naraka. None, I say, will be able to slay him.

32. Protected by this weapon, your son, the crusher of hostile hosts, will, in all times and everywhere, be invincible."

33. Then saying "Be it so", that intelligent goddess went away, satisfied at the fruition of her desire. Her son Naraka, that afflicter of hostile heroes, also accordingly became invincible.

34. Then, O son of Pritha, that weapon of mine was secured by the ruler of the Pragjyotisas from Naraka; and O sire, there is none unslayable by it in all the worlds, not excluding Indra and Rudra themselves.

35. For your sake therefore, O Arjuna, I did baffle the weapon. Now slay the mighty Asura deprived of his excellent weapon.

36. Now slay in battle your invincible opponent Bhagadatta, that enemy of the gods, like myself slaying, in days of yore, Naraka, for the worlds' benefit."

37. Thus spoken to by the high-souled Kesava, Pritha's son, suddenly covered Bhagadatta with a shower of sharp arrows.

38. Then the mighty-armed and high-souled Arjuna dauntlessly wounded Bhagadatta's elephant between its frontal globes with a (long) lance.

39. Then like the thunder-bolt rending a mountain open, that dart flying towards the elephant penetrated into its body to the very wings, like a snake entering into its hole in an ant-hill.

40. Then like the wife of a poor man, refusing to carry out the orders of her husband, that elephant though often urged by Bhagadatta, refused to obey his orders.

41. With its limbs paralysed it fell down striking the earth with its tusks. Then that huge elephant gave up its breath uttering a yell of distress.

42. Thereafter the son of Pandu pierced the heart of king Bhagadatta with a crescent-shaped arrow of straight knots.

43. His bosom being torn open by the diadem-decked Arjuna. king Bhagadatta lost the grasp of his bow and arrows, being deprived of vitality.

44. The precious cloth that had constituted his turban now fell off from his head like a petal falling off from a lotus when its stem is struck violently.

45. He himself decorated with a garland of gold fell down from the back of his mountain-like elephant, decked also with trappings of gold, like a blossoming *Karnikara* tree falling down from the crest of a hill, being uprooted by the violence of the wind.

46. Then in that battle, the son of Indra having slain that monarch equal to Indra in prowess and who was a friend of Indra, began to crush, inspired with the hopes of victory, other warriors of your army, like a violent gust of wind crushing large number of trees.

Thus ends the twenty-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Bhagadatta, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXX.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having slain the ruler of the Pragjyotisas who was the friend and favourite of Indra, and who was possessed of immeasurable prowess, the son of Pritha circumambulated him.

2. Thereafter, Vrisaka and Achala, the two sons of the king of the Gandharas, both competent to subjugate hostile cities, began to afflict the son of Pandu in battle.

3. Those two heroic bowmen assailing Arjuna simultaneously from the rear and the van, began to pierce him with swift-flying arrows coursing with vehemence.

4. Thereupon with whetted shafts Pritha's son cut off into fragments the steeds' the charioteer, the bow, the standard, the umbrella and the chariot of Vrisaka the son of Suvala.

5. Thereafter Arjuna with showers of arrows and various other weapons, began to afflict the Gandharas headed by Suvala and others.

6. Then wrought up with wrath, Dhananjaya despatched, by means of his arrows, to the regions of Death, five hundred heroic Gandhara warriors with their weapons held over their heads.

7. Meanwhile the mighty-armed Vrisaka alighting from his chariot of which the horses were slain, ascended the car of his brother with agility, and grasped another bow.

8. Then those two heroic brothers Vrisaka and Achala, both riding on the self-same car, began incessantly to pierce Pritha's son with their arrowy downpour.

9. Then those two kings, your brothers-in-law, viz., Vrisaka and Achala of illustrious souls, began to wound Partha sorely, like Vala or Aritra wounding Indra himself.

10. The two Gandhara kings of unerring aims, again and again pierced Pandu's son like the summer and the rainy months of the year piercing the world with heat and rain respectively.

11. Thereat, O monarch, Arjuna with a single shaft slew those two foremost of men, those two princes, viz, Vrisaka and Achala who had been riding on the same chariot side by side.

12. Thereupon those two heroic brothers with red eyes, possessed of long arms, having similar features and looking like two lions, fell down from their car.

13. Then their bodies, so much tended by their friends and favourites, falling from the car, lay prostrate on the Earth, spreading sacred fame in all the ten points of the compass.

14. Thereafter, O ruler of men, your sons beholding their two unretreating and heroic maternal uncles slain, began unceasingly to discharge weapons.

15. Then, conversant with hundred kinds of illusion, Sakuni beholding his two brothers slain spread a mighty illusion for confounding the two Krishnas.

16. Then clubs, iron-balls, *Sataghnis*, rocks, darts, maces, bludgeons, swords, tridents, mallets, battle-axes,

17. *Kampanas* scimitars, nails, *Mushalas*, axes, razors, horse-shoe-headed arrows, *Nalikas*, *Vatsadantas* and shafts of bony-heads,

18. Discuses, *Vishikhas*, lances, and many other kinds of weapons began to fall upon Arjuna from all the cardinal and subsidiary points of the compass.

19. Also asses, camels, buffalos, tigers, lions, deer, leopards, bears, wolves, vultures, monkeys, and various reptiles,

20. And diverse kinds of Rakshasas, and flights of birds, all burning with hunger and rage, assailed Arjuna from all sides.

21. Thereat that heroic son of Kunti, by name Dhananjaya, versed in the use of celestial weapons, discharging a net-work of arrows, simultaneously attacked them all.

22. Attacked by that hero with excellent and strong arrows, those beasts and reptiles and birds, emitting loud yells of agony, began to give the ghost up on the field of battle.

23. Thereupon Arjuna's chariot was enveloped in a pall of gloom and harsh voices were heard to reproach Arjuna from within that gloom.

24. Then in that fierce battle, Arjuna, with a mighty and lustrous weapon of the finest make called *Gotishka*, dispelled that dreadful and palpable darkness capable of inspiring every one with terror.

25—26. When that gloom had been dispelled, frightful waves of waters started into existence. Thereupon for destroying these water-waves, Arjuna discharged the Aditya weapon; that weapon then dried up almost all the water-waves. Thus various kinds of illusions created by Suvala's son,

27. Arjuna smilingly nullified by means of the virtue of his weapons. When all his illusions had been nullified, struck with the arrows of Arjuna and seized with terror,

28. Sakuni fled like a mean deserter being borne away by fleet coursers. Then Arjuna conversant with the use of all weapons, displaying to his foes his great light-handedness,

29. Poured showers of arrows on the host of the Kouravas. Then that army of your son, thus smashed by Pritha's son,

30. Became split up in twain, like a current of Ganges water dividing into two streams when it is, obstructed by a hillock. Some among those foremost of men, then sought shelter from Drona;

31. And others, O king, being afflicted sore by the diadem-decked Arjuna, flew towards Duryodhana's division. Then we could not see Arjuna, as the army was enveloped in a cloud of dust.

32. I could then only hear the twang of the Gandiva-bow on my right side, as also the sound and blare of conch-shells, and drums, and the din of many other musical instruments.

33. But rising above all those noise and din, the twang of the Gandiva reached the very heavens. Then on the Southern part of the field, again raged a fight between numerous warriors on the one side,

34. And Arjuna on the other. I, however, followed Drona's division. Then the diverse divisions of Yudhisthira's army began to strike down the enemy's host on the field.

35. Then, O Bharata, like wind scattering masses of clouds in the heavens, Arjuna began to scatter the various divisions composing the army of your son.

36. None could then ressist that fierce bowmen, that excellent of all male beings, as he advanced, like Indra, pouring incessantly showers of arrows.

37. Then all those troops of yours, thus slaughtered by Partha, and overwhelmed with intense pain, began to fly, and in flying crushed many of their own number.

38. The arrows, sped by Arjuna, furnished with wings of *Kanka* feather and capable of piercing into every body, began to fall even like flights of locusts covering all the ten points of the compass.

39. Those arrows, O sire, penetrating through horses, car-warriors, elephants and foot-soldiers, entered the earth, like snakes entering their holes in ant-hills.

40. Arjuna did not shoot more than one arrow at any elephant, man, or horse. Each of these, afflicted by one shaft only, began to fall down and give up the ghost on the field.

41. Over-strewn with slain men, and elephants, and horses mangled with arrows, and filled with the yells of dogs and jackals, the field of battle assumed an awful appearance.

42. Afflicted with arrows, then father deserted his son, friend forsook his friend, and son abandoned his father. Then with their hearts intent on saving themselves, men even forsook their very vehicles, being pained by the arrows of Partha.

Thus ends the thirtieth chapter, the retreat of Sakuni, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXI.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA).—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. What, O Sanjaya, was the state of your mind when my army was routed and crushed by Pandu's son and when you speedily fled away from the field?

2. The re-assembling of broken and routed troops is ever very difficult; tell me all about it, O Sanjaya.

Sanjaya said:—

3. In spite of all these, O ruler of men, many excellent heroes, desirous of doing good to your son and of keeping their reputation unsullied, followed Drona's track.

4. During that fierce encounter, they dauntlessly followed their commander, achieving numerous feats of valour, with weapons upraised and with Yudhisthira within accessible distance.

5. Availing themselves of an error of the heroic Bhimasena, of Satyaki of immeasurable prowess and of the mighty Dhristadyumna, the Kuru leaders fell upon the Pandava divisions.

6. The fierce Panchalas urged on their troops saying "There is Drona, there is Drona," whilst your sons urged on the Kurus, saying, 'Let not Drona be slain'.

7. Then one side saying "Fall upon Drona, fall upon Drona," and the other side saying, "Let not Drona be slain," a game of dice seemed to be played between the Kurus and the Pandavas, in which Drona was the stake.

8, Dhristadyumna, the Panchala prince, proceeded to those spots wheresoever Drona sought to assail the car divisions of the Panchalas.

9. Thus during that sanguinary engagement in which no rule for selection of antagonists was followed, heroes encountered heroes, uttering aloud their respective war-cries.

10. The Pandavas then became incapable of being shaken by their enemies, whilst they themselves, keeping alive the memory of all the wrongs they had to suffer, made the ranks of their foes tremble with fear before them.

11. Then in that fierce fight, the naturally modest Pandava warriors, under the influence of animosity and urged on by their energy, rushed to battle reckless of their lives and desirous of slaying Drona.

12. When those heroes of immeasurable energy played in that battle, as if in a game of dice, staking their very lives, there seemed to be a collision of iron against adamant.

13. Even the oldest men could not recollect, O monarch, of having seen or heard of such a battle before.

14. In that battle distinguished by the slaughter of heroes, the earth seemed to tremble, being oppressed with the burden of the living oceans that rushed against one anoanother.

15. The fierce yells uttered by your troops, tossed and agitated as they had been, filling the very heavens, seemed to penetrate even to the heart of the army of the *Ajatasatru* Yudhisthira.

16. Meanwhile the Pandava hosts' having reached by thousands Drona who' had been coursing through the field of battle became shattered and broken with the sharp shafts of the latter.

17. When those troops were thus being crushed by Drona of marvellous achievements, the generalissimo of the Pandava hosts himself encountered Drona.

18. Then we beheld the marvellous fight between Drona and the Panchala

prince, and my firm conviction is that that battle has no parallel.

19. Then like fire burning down houses, Nila resembling a veritable fire, of which the arrows were the scintillations, the bow the flames, began to consume the Kuru army.

20. Thereat seeing Nila consume the troops, the highly puissant son of Drona, who had long been desirous of fighting with the former, smilingly addressed these smooth words to him (Nila).

21. "What do you gain, O Nila, by consuming with your arrowy flame so many of my common soldiers? Fight with me single-handed as I am; and waxing wroth, do you strike me as you can."

22. Then Nila, possessed of a countenance beautiful like a full-blown lotus, began to pierce with his arrows him whose body resembled a cluster of lotuses and whose eyes resembled lotus-petals.

23. Thus pierced deeply by him, Drona's son, with ten whetted and broad-headed arrows, cut off the bow, the standard, and the umbrella of his adversary.

24. Then jumping down from his car, Nila, armed with an excellent sword and buckler, desired to sever from Aswathaman's trunk his head, like a bird (bearing away its prey in its clutches).

25. Thereat, O sinless one, Drona's son with a broad-headed shaft smilingly severed from Nila's trunk his head graced with a fine nose and decked with ear-rings, and resting on elevated shoulders.

26. Then Nila, whose countenance resembled in splendour the full moon, whose eyes were like petals of lotuses, whose stature was tall, whose complexion was like that of the lotus, thus slain, fell down on the earth.

27. After Nila of furious energy had been thus slain by the preceptor's son, the host of the Pandavas, was greatly agitated with grief.

28. Then, O sire, all the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host began to think, "How indeed, would the son of Vasava (Arjuna) be able to save us from our foes,

29. When that heroic and mighty warrior is engaged in the southern part of the field in crushing the enemies' troops, and in slaughtering the remnant of the *Samsaptaka* and the *Narayana* troops."

Thus ends the thirty-first chapter, the slaughter of Nila, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXII.

(SAMSAPTAKA-BADHA PARVA)—*continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Vrikodara could not tolerate that slaughter of his own troops. He therefore, wounded Valhika with sixty, and Karna with ten shafts.

2. Thereupon Drona, desirous of taking his life out of him, pierced him in all his vital parts, with whetted shafts of exceeding sharpness, all coursing in straight lines.

3. Once more, desirous of giving Bhima no respite, Drona stuck twenty-six arrows, all resembling fire in touch and venomous serpents in fierceness, on the former. Then again Karna pierced him with twelve and Aswathaman with seven arrows;

4. King Duryodhana also covered him with six arrows. The highly puissant Bhimasena also pierced them in return;

5. He pierced Drona with fifty shafts and Karna with ten arrows, and Duryodhana with twelve and Drona's son with eight swift-coursing arrows.

6. Then uttering a loud war-cry, he engaged himself in battle. In that fight in which the warriors fought heedless of their lives and in which death seemed to be the common lot of all,

7. Ajatasatru (Yudhisthira) urged on his troops to the rescue of Bhima. Those troops then approached Bhimsena of infinite prowess.

8—9. Then, Yuyudhana and others, the twin sons of Madri by Pandu, and other car-warriors headed by Bhima, assembled and united together and wrought up with rage, all foremost of men, fell upon Drona's division protected by many foremost archers, desirous of breaking and shattering it.

10. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely Drona, received unflinchingly those highly puissant heroic car-warriors, all masters in the art of fighting.

11. Then your troops, disregarding their kingdoms and the fear of death, encountered those of the Pandavas. Horse-soldiers slew horse-soldiers, and car-warriors slew car-warriors.

12. There were then veritable showers of lances and swords; and the battle was fought with battle-axes. Dreadful sword-fights producing great carnage were also fought.

13. The battle was all the more dreadful in consequence of the tremendous rush

of elephants against elephants. Some fell down from the backs of the elephants, some from the backs of the horses, topsy turvy.

14. Others fell down, O sire, from their chariots, with hearts torn open with arrows. In that terrible crush as men fell down deprived of their armours,

15. Elephants crushed their heads having attacked them on the breast. Elsewhere might be seen elephants crushing other excellent prostrate warriors.

16. Many elephants (as they fell down) striking the earth with their tusks, were seen to mangle therewith large bodies of car-warriors. With darts sticking to their trunks, many other

17—18. Elephants careered through the field crushing men by hundreds. Some elephants again pressed and squeezed many fallen men, steeds, car-warriors and elephants, all furnished with iron armours, as if they were merely thick stalk of reeds. On beds of arrows furnished with vulterine feathers, many rulers of men,

19. Endued with modesty, laid themselves down with pain, their hour having come. In that battle father rushing on his car, slew his own son ;

20. Son also, out of confusion and disregardful of anything, fell upon his own father. Axels of cars were shattered, standards were torn to pieces, umbrellas were felled to the earth ;

21. Dragging halves of broken yokes, horses began to ran away. Arms with swords in their grasps fell, as also heads graced with ear-rings.

22. Chariots, dashed against the earth by powerful elephants, became splintered into pieces. Wounded severely by elephants, steeds fell down with their riders.

23. Then there raged a fierce and dreadful fight in which nobody payed any regard to others. "Alas ! Oh father ! Oh son ! Where are you, O friend ! stay ! Where do you run to !

24. Smite ! Catch ! Slay !" These and many other exclamations, mingled with loud laughters, roars, and war-cries, were uttered and heard there.

25. The blood of men and steeds and elephants mingled together, flowed in one current, and caused the Earth's dust to disappear, and inspired terror into the hearts of the cowards.

26. In that fight one hero having his car-wheel entangled with that of another and being too near to use any other weapon, smashed the other's head with a mace.

27. In that battle where there was no chance of safety, heroes, desirous of each other's safety, dragged one another by the head and fought with one another with blows, teeth and nails.

28. Upraised arms, with swords in grasp, of some heroes, were severed ; the arms of others with bows or hook or arrows in grasp, were also lopped off.

29. Here one warrior loudly challenged another ; there, another turned away his face from the field. Another lopped off from the trunk the head of another who happened to encounter him.

30. Some rushed to fight uttering fierce yells. Some became inspired with terror at the sound. Some slew with his sharp arrows a friend or a foe.

31. Here an elephant huge like the summit of a hill, slain by a lance, lay on the field, like a flat island in a river during the summer season.

32. There like a mountain with rellets flowing down its breasts, stood an elephant exuding the temporal juice, having crushed with its huge legs a car-warrior together with his steeds and charioteer.

33. Many weak-hearted cowards were overwhelmed with swoons at the sight of heroes accomplished in the use of weapons fighting with one another, literally bathed in blood.

34. Everything rolled in confusion and nothing could be distinguished. Soldiers enveloped in dust fought on regardless of one another.

35. Then the generalissimo of the Pandava troops saying "This is the opportune moment" quickly led the Pandavas ever endowed with activity, to the battle.

36. At his command the mighty-armed Pandavas, like a flock of swans descending on the breast of a lake, came down upon Drona's car, spreading slaughter as they proceeded.

37. Then near the chariot of the invincible Drona, loud cries of "Seize," "Do not fly," "Be not afraid" "Cut to pieces" were heard.

38. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna, Drona's son, king Jayadratha, the two princes from Avanti, *viz.*, Vinda and Anuvinda, and Salya, checked that assault (of the Pandava troops).

39. Those irressistible and invincible warriors, the Panchalas and the Pandavas, all inflamed with righteous indignation, did not avoid Drona, though afflicted with showers of arrows.

40. Thereat Drona, excited to the highest pitch of fury, spread a great carnage among the ranks of the Chedis, the Panchalas, and the Pandavas, by means of arrows which he discharged by hundreds.

41. Then, O sire, the twang of his bow and the slap of his palms were heard in all the points of compass, resembling the rumble of thunder, and inspiring terror into the hearts of many a man.

42. At this juncture, the ever-victorious Arjuna, having vanquished the numerous host of the *Samsaptakas*, came to the spot where Drona had been crushing the Pandava ranks.

43. Then Phalguna showed himself in that part of the field, after having vanquished and slain the *Samsaptakas* and crossed many a lake whose waters were constituted by gore and whose mighty eddies were constituted by the numerous shafts.

44. Then we beheld the standard, bearing the emblem of the ape, of that one of illustrious renown and equal to the sun in effulgence, shine on that part of the field.

45. Having dried up the *Samsaptaka* ocean with his weapons that constituted his rays, that son of Pandu then looking like the sun during the Dissolution period at the end of a *Yuga*, began to scorch the Kourava ranks.

46. Like the comet risen at the end of a *Yuga* burning every creature, Arjuna then began to blast with the power of his weapons the Kuru hosts.

47. Pierced by him with thousands of shafts, elephant-riders, horse-soldiers and car-warriors, fell down on the earth, with hair dishevelled and bodies mangled with arrow-wounds.

48. Some uttered distressful cries, some emitted loud roars; others again struck by the shafts of Pritha's son, fell down deprived of life.

49. Remembering the duties of a warrior, Arjuna then desisted from slaying those among the hostile warriors who were falling or fallen or those who turned away from the field of battle.

50. The Kuru warriors then, deprived of their cars, and filled with wonder, and with their faces turned away from the field of battle, began to utter cries of "Oh"! and "Alas" and called upon Karna saying "O Karna, O Karna."

51. The son of Adhiratha then hearing those distressful cries of those who deserved his help, proceeded to face Arjuna, saying at the same time, "Be not afraid, O warriors."

52. Then that foremost of the Bharata combatants, that delighter of all the Bharata heroes, *viz.*, Karna, that foremost of all conversant with the use of weapons, invoked into existence the *Agneya* weapon.

53. Dhananjaya however with the network of arrows woven by himself, repulsed the arrowy downpour of that hero (Karna) of bright shafts and effulgent bow.

54. Similarly the son of Adhiratha repulsed the arrows of Arjuna of blazing energy. Thereafter the former repulsing the weapons of the latter with his own weapons and discharging myriads of shafts, uttered loud roars.

55. Meanwhile Dhristadyumna, Bhima, and Satyaki, these mighty car-warriors, having approached Karna, pierced him each with three straight-flying arrows.

56. Thereupon Radha's son, having at first resisted Arjuna's weapons by his arrowy showers, cut off the bow of those three warriors with three darts.

57. Then with their bows severed, those warriors appeared like serpents without venom. Then from their respective cars, hurling lances at the foe, they uttered loud war-cries.

58. Then those mighty and blazing lances hurled with fury by the arms of those heroes, coursed swiftly towards Adhiratha's son, looking like so many (flying) snakes.

59. Severing each of those lances with three swift-coursing arrows and speeding at the same time myriads of shafts at Arjuna the highly puissant Karna uttered a loud roar.

60. Then Arjuna also piercing Radha's son with seven swift-flying arrows, slew the younger brothers of Karna with three shafts of great sharpness.

61. Thereafter Pritha's son having slain Satrunjaya also with six straight-going arrows, speedily deprived Vitapa of his head with lances, as the latter stood on his chariot.

62. Thus those three uterine brothers of Suta's son were slain by the single-handed diadem-decked Arjuna even before the very eyes of all the Dhartarastras.

63. Then like a second son of Vinata, Bhima jumping down from his chariot, slew with his sword of excellent make five and ten warriors of Karna's party.

64. Then once more ascending his car and taking up a bow he pierced Karna

with ten and his horses and charioteer with five shafts.

65. Dhrishtadyumna also grasping an excellent sword and an effulgent buckler, slew Chandravarman and Vrihatkshatra the ruler of the Nishadhas.

66. Thereafter mounting on his chariot and taking up a bow, the prince of the Panchalas pierced Karna with seventy-three shafts uttering loud shouts all the while.

67. The grandson of Sini, of splendour equal to that of Indra himself, also grasping a fresh bow pierced the son of Suta with sixty-four arrows and uttered a roar like that of a lion.

68. Then with two well-directed broad-headed shafts he burst open Karna's bow; and once more he pierced Karna on the arms and breast with three shafts.

69. Thereupon king Duryodhana, Drona, and Jayadratha, with a combined effort, rescued Radha's son who had been sinking in the ocean of Satyaki.

70. Then hundreds of foot-soldiers, horse-men, elephant-riders and car-warriors, all accomplished in smiting, rushed to the rescue of Karna, inspiring terror into the hearts of the enemy.

71. Dhristadyumna, Bhima, Subhadra's son and Arjuna and Nakula and Sahadeva, all then protected Satyaki in that conflict.

72. Thus for the destruction of all the bowmen, raged the awful battle between your warriors and those of the enemy, in which everybody fought reckless of his life.

73. Foot-soldiers, car-warriors, elephant-riders and horse-men were engaged with elephant-riders, horse-men, car-warriors and foot-soldiers; car-warriors fought with elephants, infantry and cavalry; and cars and and infantry were engaged with cars and elephants.

74. Horses were seen engaged with horses, elephants with elephants, car-warriors with car-warriors and foot-soldiers with foot-soldiers.

75. Thus raged between those high-souled and fearless warriors, the fierce fight marked by carnage, enhancing the delight of the flesh-eating animals and adding to the population of Death's domain.

76. In that battle many were the car-warriors, elephant-riders and foot-soldiers and horse-men that were slain. Elephants were crushed by their rivals. Car-warriors with weapons held over head, were slain by car-warriors and horse-men by horse-men and large bodies of infantry by infantry.

77. Elephants were slain by car-warriors, steeds were crushed by excellent elephants, men were killed by horses, and horses again by excellent car-warriors. With their eyes, tongues, and teeth protruding out, and with their armours and ornaments shattered, many a creature lay on the earth deprived of the vital spark.

78. Others, again, of dreadful aspect being slain by others armed with various and excellent weapons, fell down on the earth; they then were pressed inside the earth being trod upon by elephants and steeds, and being crushed and mangled by sharp edges of car-wheels.

79. When that dreadful destruction of beings went on enhancing the joys of beasts and birds of prey and cannibals, mighty heroes, inflamed with wrath, coursed over the field of battle smiting one another with impetuosity.

80. When the ranks of both the armies were greatly thinned, the combatants, with bodies bespattered with blood, looked at one another. At that moment, O Bharata, the orb of the day disappearing below the horizon, the two armies slowly returned to their respective encampments.

Thus ends the thirty-second chapter, the terrible carnage, in the Samsaptaka-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA.)

Sanjaya said :—

1. Ourselves being at first broken and routed by Arjuna of immeasurable prowess, and also the vow of Drona being unfulfilled in consequence of Yudhisthira being well guarded,

2. All your warriors, with their armours shattered, were then regarded as vanquished. Soiled with dust and sorely pierced with anxiety, they began to look askance at all the ten quarters of heaven.

3. Withdrawing from the field with the consent of Bharadwaja's son, after being vanquished by their adversaries of unerring aim, and humiliated by them in the conflict,

4. They heard, as they retired, the infinite virtues of Phalguna extolled by all beings, as also of the friendship of Keshava for Arjuna spoken of by all.

5—6. Then they passed the night like doomed men, in silence and in anxious contemplation. At the break of day, king

Duryodhana depressed at the aggrandisement of the enemy, inflamed with rage, addressed these words, before all those warriors to Drona, out of affection and affectionate angers, "O you learned in the art of speaking,

7. Indubitably, O foremost of the twice-born ones, you have taken us to be men doomed to be slaughtered for your sake, in as much as, to-day getting Yudhisthira near you, you did not seize him.

8. The enemy whom you would seize in battle could not escape you if once you get him within sight, even if he be protected by the immortals themselves.

9. Pleased with me, you accorded me, a boon; but now you seem unwilling to verify your words. Noble men do never falsify the hopes of those who are devoted to them,"

10. Thus spoken to, Bharadwaja's son felt greatly ashamed ; then he thus addressed the king in reply :—" It behoves you not to entertain such an uncharitable opinion regarding myself, who am ever striving to bring about your good.

11. All this universe, with all the celestials, Asuras, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the reptiles and the Rakshasas, is not competent enough to conquer that army (of the Pandavas) when it is protected by the diadem-decked Arjuna.

12. Except that of the three-eyed Mahadeva, whose might can avail anything against that army which number among it Govinda the world's creator, and have Arjuna for its generalissimo ?

13. But this, O sire, I tell you truly, and this will never be false, that to-day I shall slay a mighty hero, the foremost among the many car-warriors of the enemy.

14. I will also form an array that will be invulnerable even to the celestials themselves. Do you, by some means or other, take Arjuna away from the field.

15. There is nothing unknown to him, nothing incapable of being achieved by him in battle,—he who have acquired all knowledge of warfare from different quarters."

16. After Drona had spoken in the above manner, the host of the *Samsaptakas*, once more challenging Arjuna led him to the Southern part of the field.

17. Then there took place a battle between Arjuna and his opponents, the like of which had never been seen or heard of before.

18. Then the array formed by Drona ishoneresplendent, O king, and it appeared incapable of being looked at, like the midday sun shining in the meridian and scorching the world underneath.

19. Then, O Bharata, at the command of his father's eldest brother, Abhimanyu penetrated, in that battle, into that impenitrable array (of the Kurus) figuring the discus.

20. Having achieved many difficult feats and having slain thousands of warriors, Subhadra's son encountered six warriors simultaneously. At last succumbing to Dusasana's son,

21. O ruler of earth, O afflicter of your foes, he gave his life up in battle. At the death of Abhimanyu we were enraptured and the Pandavas were depressed with grief. After Subhadra's son had been slain, the troops were withdrawn by us.

Dhritarastra said :—

22. Hearing of the death of the youthful son of that foremost of men (Arjuna), my heart, O Sanjaya, seems to be split up into pieces.

23. Heartless, indeed, are the duties of the Kshatriyas as specified by the law-givers, in as much as these duties even enjoin a hero, desirous of sovereignty, to shoot weapons at a mere child.

24. Describe unto me, O Gavalgana's son, how did so many warriors accomplished in the use of weapons, slay that veritable child, brought up in luxury, and careering (then) dauntlessly in the field ?

25. Tell me, O Sanjaya, how in battle did the dauntless son of Subhadra, endued with immeasurable might sport, having penetrated into our car-division.

Sanjaya said :—

26. That which you ask me to describe, O foremost of kings, *viz.*, the slaughter of Subhadra's son, I shall describe in detail, Hear, O king, attentively.

27. I shall tell you, how that hero played amidst us, having penetrated into our ranks ; as also how, many irresistible heroes inspired with hopes of victory were afflicted by him.

28. Like the denizens of a wood abounding in numerous copses, creepers and trees, when encompassed by a terrible forest-conflagration, the combatants of your host were then all seized with panic.

Thus ends the thirty-third chapter, the consultation for forming the circular array, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. The five Pandava brothers, all of fierce deeds in battle, and all incapable of being overcome by fatigue as is apparent from their achievements, when aided by Krishna, could not be vanquished even by the celestials.

2. In righteousness, in deeds, in lineage, in intelligence, in renown, in fame and in prosperity—in all these virtues, there neither was nor is, nor will be, a person equal to Yudhisthira.

3. King Yudhisthira is constantly in the enjoyment of heavenly bliss, in consequence of his devotion to truth, righteousness, control of passions, worship of the Vipras and such other qualities.

4. The Destroyer at the end of a Yuga, the highly puissant son of Jamadagni, and Bhimasena on his car, O king, these three are held to be equal (in prowess).

5. Of the wielder of Gandiva ever competent to fulfil his vows in battle, of that son of Pritha, I do see no equal on the face of the earth.

6. Devotion to the elders, secrecy of counsels, modesty, self-control, beauty of person and heroism, these six virtues are ever present in Nakula.

7. In knowledge of the *Srutis*, in gravity, in humility, in righteousness, in personal beauty and in prowess, the heroic Sahadeva equals the two immortals *viz*, the twin Aswinis.

8. All those illustrious qualities that are present mostly in Krishna and in the Pandavas, all those qualities were to be seen combined in Abhimanyu.

9. Abhimanyu was equal to Yudhisthira in patience, to Krishna in conduct, to Bhima of terrible deeds in his achievements.

10. He was equal to Dhananjaya in beauty of person, prowess, and scriptural knowledge; and to Nakula and Sahadeva in humility.

Dhritarastra said :—

11. O Suta, I desire to hear in detail how the invincible son of Subhadra, *viz.*, Abhimanyu was slain in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

12. Be patient, O mighty monarch. Bear your unbearable burden of grief. I shall speak of the dreadful carnage of your relations. Now hear me attentively.

13. The circular array, O monarch, was then formed by the preceptor, in which were duly stationed kings, each equal to Indra himself.

14. At the head of the array (entrance) were stationed all the princes of the effulgence of the sun. Then there was a veritable assembly of princes.

15. All of them swore to help one another, all owned standards decked with gold; all wore red raiments and all were decorated with crimson ornaments.

16. All of them possessed crimson flags, all had golden garlands; all were smeared with sandal-paste and other perfumed unguents, and all of them wore floral garlands and fine attires.

17. In a serried file, they rushed against Krishna's nephew, desirous of fighting with him. All of them, firm bowmen, then numbered no less than ten thousand strong in all.

18. Placing at their head your handsome grandson Lakshmana, they proceeded to battle, resolved to share one another's grief, emulating one another in deeds of valor,

19. Striving to outvie one anothers and intent on one another's good. O foremost of kings, Duryodhana was stationed in the very centre of your troops.

20. The king then was surrounded by such mighty warriors as Karna, Dussasana, and Kripa. With a white umbrella held over his head, he appeared beautiful like the king of the celestials.

21. Fanned by the moving yak-tails, he appeared like the sun himself. In the very van of those troops was stationed Drona the generalissimo of the Kuru hosts.

22. There also was stationed the handsome ruler of the Sindhus, immovable like the mount Meru itself. By the side of the ruler of the Sindhus, headed by Aswathaman,

23. Stood, O mighty monarch, your thirty sons, all resembling the celestials themselves. That gamester, the ruler of the Gandharas, Salya and Bhurisravas,

24. These mighty car-warriors shone in the flank of the king of the Sindhus. Then raged a combat between your troops and those of the enemy,—combat, that was fierce in the extreme and horripilating and in which the warriors regarded Death to be their goal.

Thus ends the thirty-fourth chapter, the construction of the circular array, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. The Parthas then led by Bhimasena marched against that invincible array of your soldiers protected by the son of Bharadwaja.

2. Then Satyaki, Chekitana, Prishata's son Dhristadyumna, the powerful Kuntivoja, the mighty car-warrior Drupada,

3. The son of Arjuna, Kshatradharman, the puissant Vrihat-kshattra, the ruler of the Chedis, Dhristaketu, the two sons of Madri, Gototkacha,

4. Yudhamanyu of great prowess, the unvanquished Sikhandin, the irrepressible Uttamonjas, the mighty car-warrior Virata,

5. The wrathful sons of Droupadi, the valiant son of Sisupala, the highly powerful Kekayas, and the Srinjayas by thousands,

6. These and many others followed by their respective clansmen, all accomplished in the use of weapons, and invincible in battle, rushed with impetuosity at the son of Bharadwaja, out of a desire for battling with him.

7. The highly puissant son of Bharadwaja getting the warriors within reach dauntlessly checked them with a mighty downpour of arrows.

8. Like a mighty wave of waters checked by an immovable hill or like the swelling ocean checked by the banks, those warriors of the Pandava army were dashed back by Drona.

9. Afflicted, O king, with the shafts shot from Drona's bow, the Pandavas could not stand in front of Bharadwaja's son.

10. Then we beheld the wonderful strength of Drona's arms, in as much as, the Panchalas aided by the Srinjayas was not able to assail him.

11. Beholding then the infuriate Drona rush towards himself, king Yudhisthira reflected upon the diverse measures for resisting the former.

12. At last regarding Drona to be incapable of being checked by any one else, Yudhisthira placed that unbearable and heavy burden on the son of Subhadra.

13. Then addressing that slayer of hostile heroes, namely, Abhimanyu, who was in no way inferior to the son of Vasudeva and was supperior to Arjuna himself in infiniteness of prowess, king Yudhisthira said these words :—

14. "O son, do you so act, that coming back, Arjuna may not have reason to reproach us. The means for breaking the circular array, is not known to any one of us.

15. O mighty-armed one, either you or Arjuna, or Krishna, or Pradyumna, can penetrate into the circular array. I do not find a fifth man to do it.

16. It behoves you, so, O son, O Abhimanyu, to accord the boon that your sires, your uncles, and all these soldiers beg of you.

17. Quickly taking up your arms, smite down this array of Drona so that returning from the fight with the *Sampaptakas* Dhananaya may not blame us."

Abhimanyu said :—

18. Desiring victory to my sires, I will, without delay, penetrate into the middle of Drona's firm and fierce and excellent array of troops in this battle.

19. My father has taught me the way to penetrate this kind of array. But I do not know how to come out of the array, if per chance some danger overtake me there.

Yudhisthira said :—

20. Pierce, O foremost of warriors, this array, and create an opening for us to penetrate into it. Pursuing the very track you shall create, we will follow you.

21. Seeing you penetrate the hostil ranks, we will follow you, O sire, who are equal to Dhananjaya himself in battle, protecting you from all sides.

Bhima said :—

22. I will follow you, so also will Dhristadyumna and Satyaki and the Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, and the Prabhadrakas.

23. When the array will once be penetrated into by you, we will again and again destroy it, slaying foremost of the enemie's warriors.

Abhimanyu said :—

24. I will break through this invincible array of Drona, like an insect under the influence of anger entering into the flames.

25. I will this day achieve that feat that will redound to the good of both the families (of my father and mother). I will do what will please my sire and my maternal uncle.

26. All creatures will see the enemies' host crushed in large bodies by myself, an unaided child.

27. I will not consider myself to be begotten by Partha, or born of Subhadra, if to-day, encounterring me, anybody escapes with his life.

28. If to-day, on a single car I cannot cut the whole race of the Kshatriyas into eight pieces in battle, I will not regard myself as the begotten son of Arjuna.

Yudhisthira said :—

29. May your might, O son of Subhadra, increase even as you speak, in asmuch as you venture to break through this impenetrable array of Drona,

30. Being protected by these foremost of men, all fierce bowmen possessed of great strength, all resembling the *Sadhyas*, or the *Rudras* or the *Marutas*, all who equal the *Vasus*, the fires, and the *Adityas* in prowess.

Sanjaya said :—

31. Hearing those words of Yudhisthira, Abhimanyu commanded his charioteer saying :—"Quickly urge, O Sumitra, the steeds towards Drona's divisions."

Thus ends the thirty-fifth chapter, the determination of Abhimanyu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. The son of Subhadra, having heard the words of the intelligent king Yudhisthira commanded his charioteer to drive his chariot against the army of Drona.

2. Thus commanded by him with the words—*Proceed, Proceed*—the charioteer, O king, then replied to Abhimanyu saying ;—

3. "Heavy is the burden, O long-lived one, that has to-day been placed on you by the Pandavas. Ascertaining by your judgment as to whether you have the strength to bear it or not, you should engage in the fight.

4. The preceptor Drona, by continued labours, has acquired the excelleut weapons, and he is an adept in the art of warfare. You, on the other hand, have been brought up in all luxury and are unaccustomed to the toils and severities of fight."

5. Thereupon Abhimanyu, with a smile, replied to his charioteer saying :—" O charioteer, who is indeed this Drona? What avails all this vast host of the Kshatriyas?

6. I would engage even with Indra on the back of his elephant Airavata, and attended by the complete host of the immortals. I do not care anything for all this Kshatriyas to-day.

7. This host of the enemy is not competent to fight even with the sixteenth part of myself. Getting, O son of a driver, my uncle, the world-conquering Vishnu,

8. Or my father, for my antagonist in battle, I will not this day be overcome with terror.," Thereafter Abhimanyu setting at naught those words of his charioteer,

9—10. Commanded him saying :—"Quickly drive towards the division of Drona." Then the charioteer with a heart scarcely cheerful, urged on his steeds, three years of age and decked with caparisons of gold.' Then urged on towards the army of Drona by Sumitra, those steeds,

11. Endued with great fleetness and prowess, rushed, O king, against Drona himself. Beholding Abhimanyu thus advance, all the warriors, headed by Drona, of the Kourava host, advanced to meet him who was on the other hand followed by the Pandavas.

12. Then like a young lion falling upon a herd of elephants, the son of Arjuna equal to Arjuna in prowess, owning an excellent standard bearing the device of a *Karanikara* tree, clad in fine coats of mail, fearlessly rushed against Drona, out of a desire for battle.

13. Filled with delight, the warriors of Drona's division began to strike Abhimanyu as he strove to break through their ranks. Then for a moment only there reigned a confusion, that resembled the eddy that is produced there where the Ganges stream flows into the waters of the ocean.

14. Then as the heroes fought on and slew one another, O king, there commenced a pell-mell and awful fight.

15. When that awful conflict raged fiercely, the son of Arjuna breaking through the enemies' array entered it even before the very eyes of Drona himself.

16. Then large bodies of elephant-riders, horse-men, car-warriors and foot-soldiers, all delighted, surrounded that mighty hero who

penetrating into the enemies' ranks, had already began to smite them down.

17. With the sound of various musical instruments, with shouts and slappings of arm-pits and war-cries, with yells, leonine roars, with cries of *Slay, Slay*,

18. With a dreadful and confused din, with exclamation of *Do not go, Stop, Come to me*, with repeated voices saying, *Here am I, Come* &c,

19. With roars of elephants, with the tinkling of ornaments, with roars of laughter, with the clatter of car-wheels and horse-hoofs,—filling the earth with all these sounds, the Kourava warriors assailed the son of Arjuna.

20. That hero endowed with great lightness in discharging weapons, and possessed of the knowledge of the vital parts of the body, swiftly and firmly shooting arrrows capable of penetrating into the very vitals, began to slaughter those advancing warriors of the enemy.

21. Though thus slaughtered by diverse shafts of exceeding sharpness, and rendered quite helpless, yet they, in that battle, fell upon Abhimanyu like flights of insects falling upon fire.

22. Then with their bodies and their severed limbs, Abhimanyu covered the earth like a priest covering the altar with Kusa-grass during a sacrifice.

23—26. Then Arjuna's son quickly lopped off by thousands the arms of your warriors; some of these arms were protected with gloves made of iguana skin, some held bows and shafts; some grasped swords, or bucklers or iron hooks and reins, some held lances and axes; some clutched maces or iron ball or spears. Some had in their grasps scimitars or crows or battle-axes; some held short darts, or shafts or *Kampanas*; some held goads and huge conch-shells, some wielded piked lances and *Kachgrahas*, 'some had mallets or other kinds of missiles; some had nooses, some heavy clubs, and brick-bats. All of these arms again were ornamented with bracelets and bangles and smeared with fragrant perfumes and unguents.

27. Then covered with those effulgent arms all bathed in the crimson fluid, the field, O sire, O mighty monarch, appeared as if strewn over with five-headed serpents torn to pieces by Garuda.

28—30. Then Phalguna's son spread the earth with the severed heads of the enemy—heads graced with beautiful noses and countenances and tresses of hair, and without bloches, and adorned with ear-rings; heads from which blood flowed copiously and in which the nether lips were bit in anger; heads that appeared like lotuses severed from their stems owing to their being decked with beautiful garlands, and tiaras, and turbans, and pearls and gems, and owing to their being possessed of the splendour of the sun or the moon; heads that laved with fragrant perfumes could speak sweet and salutary words, when the vital spark was in them.

31—33. Then, O Bharata, Arjuna's son careered in all directions over the field, having shattered with his arrows, cars, equipt with all the necessaries of war, and looking like the vapoury edifices in the air; having shafts in front and excellent bamboo poles, and looking beautiful with standards mounted on them. They were all deprived of their *Janghas*, axels, perriferries, and *Dascnas*, wheels, standards, and terraces; the implements of war in them were all splintered into pieces; the precious clothes that covered them were all blown away and warriors on those cars, were slain by thousands.

34—35. Then again with arrows of keen points and edges he cut down the enemy's elephants, with their riders, standards hooks, banners, quivers, armours, girths, neck-ropes, caparisons, blankets, bells, trunks; and also the foot-soldiers that guarded those elephants from the back.

36—39. Numerous steeds of the Vanayu' the Lilly, the Kamvoja, and the Valhika breed with tails, ears, and eyes fixed and motionless, endued with great fleetness, well-broken, ridden by accomplished warriors armed with swords and spears, were seen to be deprived of the fine ornaments of their heads as also of their fine tails; they were deeply pierced, and lay covering the field. Their tongues and their eyes were fixed, and their livers and entrails were drawn out; their riders had been slain; their bells torn, and they enhanced the delight of flesh-eating animals. Their armours and other leathern fences were cut open and they lay weltering in the urine and excreta they themselves had discharged. Thus slaughtering your steeds and elephants, Abhimanyu appeared highly beautiful.

40. Achieving, single-handed, these most difficult of feats, like the incomprehensible Vishnu in the days of old, Abhimanyu crushed your army consisting of three kinds of forces,

41. Even like the three-eyed Deity of infinite prowess crushing the Asura host. In that battle, the son of Arjuna having achieved feats incapable of being achieved by the enemy,

42—43. Began to break through your infantry divisions on all sides. Thus then beholding the army mangled with sharp arrows of the single-handed son of Subhadra like the army of the Asuras mangled by Skanda, your sons looked vacantly at all the ten points of the compass.

44. Their mouths became parched up; their eyes rolled; their persons were covered with drops of perspiration. Desponding to conquer their antagonist, they exerted themselves in flying away from the field.

45. Desirous of saving their lives, they called out one another by their appellation and family-names. Forsaking on the field their wounded fathers, sons, brothers, friends and relations, they strove to fly away from the field urging the horses and elephants that carried them to the top of their speed.

Thus end the thirty-sixth chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then beholding his army routed by Subhadra's son of immeasurable energy, king Duryodhana worked up to the highest pitch of fury, himself proceeded against the former.

2. Then seeing the king turn back upon Subhadra's son in battle, Drona addressed the warriors saying "Save the king.

3. The highly puissant Abhimanyu is slaying even before our very eyes, every one he is aiming at. Assail him, and be not afraid; and rescue the king of the Kurus."

4. Thereupon grateful, mighty and friendly warriors, ever attended with victory though inspired with fears, yet surrounded your heroic son in order to rescue him.

5. Drona and Drona's son, Kripa, Karna, Kritavarman, and Suvala's son, Vrihadvala, the ruler of the Madras, Bhuri, Bhurisravas, and Sala,

6. Pourava and Vrishasena, all shooting sharp arrows, covered Subhadra's son with thick downpour of arrows.

7. Then thus confounding the latter, they rescued Duryodhana. But Arjuna's son did not tolerate this snatching away of the monarch from his very mouth.

8. Compelling those mighty car-warriors with their horses and charioteer to turn their faces away from the field of battle, by means of his arrowy downpour, the son of Subhadra sent up a loud war-cry.

9. Hearing that war-cry of his, resembling the roar of a lion desirous of prey, the warriors of your army headed by Drona and inflamed with rage, did not brook it.

10. Completely surrounding Abhimanyu with their host of cars, your warriors O sire, began to shoot at him myriads of arrows of diverse description all falling in thick showers.

11. But your grandson, with his own sharp arrows severed all these shafts even when the latter were coursing through the sky; in return also he pierced your warriors; indeed that feat then appeared wonderful.

12. Thereupon your warriors, excited with wrath in consequence of being wounded with shafts of the touch of fire and desirous of slaying the unretreating son of Subhadra, surrounded him on all sides.

13. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, with his arrows that served the purpose of banks, Arjuna's son held in check the agitated ocean that was then identified with the vast number of your troops.

14. None among those heroes, *viz.*, Abhimanyu on one side and all your warriors on the other, who were then fighting with and slaying one another, turned away from the field of battle.

15. Thus when that awful and terrible combat raged fiercely, Dussaha pierced Abhimanyu with nine arrows.

16. Dussasana pierced him with twelve, Kripa the son of Saradwata with three, Drona with seventeen arrows, all resembling so many snakes of virulent poison.

17. Vivinsati pierced him with seventy, Kritavarman with seven, Vrihadvala with eight and Ashwathaman with seven arrows.

18. Bhurisravas wounded him with three arrows, and the king of the Madras with six swift-coursing shafts. Sakuni pierced him with a couple of shafts and king Duryodhana with three.

19. Abhimanyu, on the other hand, O mighty monarch, pierced each of them with three straight-flying arrows, displaying his prowess and appearing to dance all the while with his bow in hand.

20. Then Abhimanyu, enraged in consequence of your sons seeking to terrify him

displayed his marvellous might that he had acquired through his culture and practices.

21. Then borne by his well-trained steeds possessed of the fleetness of Garuda or of the wind, and perfectly obedient to the behests of him who held their reins, Abhimanyu quickly repulsed the heir of Asmaka.

22. Standing before him, the prosperous and mighty son of Asmaka, pierced him with ten arrows, saying all the while, *stay stay*.

23. Then with ten arrows Abhimanyu smilingly cut down to the earth, his charioteer, horses, standards, arms, bow, and head.

24. When the heroic ruler of the Asmakas had thus been slain by the son of Subhadra, the whole of his army being completely agitated, took to flight.

25. Thereupon Karna, Kripa, Drona, Drona's son, the ruler of the Gandharas, Cala, Salya Bhurisravas, Kratha, Somadatta, Vivingsati,

26. Vrishasena, Susena, Khundadin, Pratardonna, Vrindara, Lalitha, Pravahu, Dirghalochana,

27. And king Duryodhana, all excited with rage, covered him with a shower of arrows. Thus deeply pierced with straight-g ng arrows by those mighty bowmen, Abhimanyu

28. Sped at Karna an arrow capable of penetrating through his armour and body. That swift-flying dart piercing through Karna's armour and body,

29. Entered, O king, the earth, like a snake entering its hole in an ant-hill. Pained to the extreme in consequence of that deep wound, and over-whelmed with a swoon,

30—31. Karna trembled in battle like a hill during an earth-quake. Then with other sharp arrows the valiant Abhimanyu inflamed with rage, slew Sushena, Dirghalochana, and Kundavedhin. Thereafter Karna pierced him in return, with twenty-five long shafts.

32. Aswathaman pierced him with twenty, and Kritavarman with seven arrows. Then that enraged grandson of Sakra, with his body stuck all over with arrows,

33. Looked, as he careered through the forces, like the Destroyer himself with noose in hand. Then he covered Salya who was standing near him with a thick shower of arrows;

34. And then that mighty-armed hero sent up a loud war-cry, that inspired terror into your troops. Pierced with straight arrows capable of penetrating to the vitals shot by Abhimanyu accomplished in all weapons,

35. Salya squatted down on the terrace of his car, O king, and fainted away. Beholding him thus deeply pierced by the illustrious son of Subhadra,

36. All the troops began to fly away, even before the very eyes of the son of Bharadwaja. Beholding that mighty-armed hero Salya, covered with gold-winged shafts, your troops fled like herds of deer frightened by the lion.

37. Then Abhimanyu, extolled by the ancestral manes, the celestials, and *Charanas* and *Siddhas*, and also by various kinds of beings inhabiting the earth, with eulogies about his heroism and bravery in battle, appeared blazing like fire fed with clarified butter.

Thus ends the thirty-seventh chapter the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. What warriors of my army then tried to resist the son of Arjuna in battle when he was thus crushing my troops with his straight-flying arrows?

Sanjaya said :—

2. Hear, O king, of the wonderful acheivements of the prince (Abhimanyu), when he was engaged in breaking through the car-division protected by Bharadwaja's son himself.

3. Seeing Salya the ruler of the Madras worsted in battle by Subhadra's son with his arrows, his younger brother, inflamed with wrath proceeded to battle, showering shafts in all directions.

4—6. Thereupon the light-handed son of Arjuna, with his arrows, cut off his antagonist's head and neck, arms and legs, four steeds, umbrella, standard and charioteer; his triple bamboo pole fixed to the car, his car-terrace, car-wheels, yokes, shafts, quivers, car-bottom, his banner, his implements of war with which the car was furnished and also the two persons engaged in protecting his car-wheels. No one was

then able to discern him (in consequence of the swiftness of his movement). Salya's brother then pierced through his ornaments and attires, fell down dead on the ground,

7. Like a mighty mountain-crest broken by the overwhelming vehemence of a tempest. His followers then seized with panic, fled in all directions.

8. Beholding that feat achieved by Arjuna's son, all creatures were filled with delight and they applauded him, O Bharata, saying, "Well-done" "Well-done,"

9—10. When Salya's brother had thus been killed, many of his soldiers, loudly proclaiming their names, places of residence, and families, rushed against Arjuna's son, being excited with rage and wielding in their arms various kinds of weapons. All those warriors was possessed of great strength, ; some of them rushed on their car, others on steeds, others on elephants and some on foot.

11. With the whizz of their arrows, with the loud clatter of their car-wheels, with war-cries, with roars, whoops and exclamations, with leonine roars and cries,

12. With the twang of their bow-strings, and with many other kinds of sound—seeking to terrify Arjuna's son, they rushed at him saying, "You shall not escape us today with your life, even if it cost us our own lives."

13. Hearing them thus speak, the son of Subhadra smilingly pierced those with shafts who had smitten him first.

14. Holding diverse kinds of weapons, all beautiful and swift-going, to the gaze of the peeple, Arjuna's heroic son battled with them mildly.

15. Then, in no way less than Krishna and Arjuna, Abhimanyu began to display all those weapons he had received from Vasudeva's son and Arjuna.

16. Setting at naught the heavy burden he had drawn upon himself, and dismissing all fears away, Abhimanyu then scattered his arrows (in all directions). No interval could then be noticed between his taking up and shooting the shafts.

17. Only his bow drawn to the fullest stretch could then be seen blazing like the burning disc of the sun in the autumnal sky.

18. Then, O Bharata, there were heard the twangs of his bow and the slapping of his palms, resembling the rumble of rain-clouds surcharged with thunder during the rains.

19. Bashful, unenvious, handsome and devoted to the elders, the son of Subhadra, out of respect for his heroic opponents fought on with arrows and other weapons,

20. Mildly ; but gradually he grew fierce, O king, like the blazing autumnal Sun at the end of the rainy seasons.

21. Then like the lustrous orb shooting his rays, he, excited with wrath, shot hundreds of diverse kinds of arrows, all whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings.

22. Then with horse-shoe-headed arrows, calf-tooth-headed shafts, with *Vipatas*, with long shafts, with crescent-headed arrows and with *Anjalikas*, that illustrious warrior

23. Began to mangle the car-division of your army, even before the eyes of Bharadwaja's son. Thereupon the army afflicted with his shafts turned its face away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the thirty-eighth chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's, prowess in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIX,

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Upon hearing that Subhadra's son, single-handed as he was, held in bay the entire army of my son, my heart, O Sanjaya, is simultaneously filled with shame and delight.

2. O son of Gavalgani, relate to me in detail the fight with prince Abhimanyu, that seems to be much like that between Skanda and the Asuras.

Sanjaya said :—

3. Yes ; I will tell you all about the dreadful carnage, the dreadful battle that was fought between the one and the many.

4. Then mounted upon his car and exerting his best, Abhimanyu began to shower shafts upon your warriors, all subduers of their foes, mounted on cars and exerting to the best of their might.

5—6. Roving like a circle of fire, he then struck his arrows on Drona, Karna, Kripa, Salya, Drona's son, Bhoja, Vrihadvala, Duryodhana, Somadatta's son, the valiant Sakuni, and various other kings and princes and diverse kind of troops.

7. With his excellent weapons slaying his foes, the highly puissant son of Subhadra, endued with fierce energy, was then seen, O Bharata, on all directions.

8. Beholding those feats of Subhadra's son of immeasurable prowess, your troops trembled repeatedly.

9. Thereupon the highly wise and valiant son of Bharadwaja, with his eyes blooming forth in delight, addressing Kripa quickly said.

10. Beholding then Abhimanyu proficient in battle he said these words to Kripa, O Bharata, thereby seeming to pierce the very vitals of your sons.

Drona said :—

11. "Yonder advances the youthful son of Subhadra at the head of the Parthas, imparting delight to all his friends, to king Yudhisthira,

12. To Nakula, to Sahadeva, to Bhimasena the son of Pandu, to his friends, relatives, kinsmen and to all who are passive and neutral spectators.

13. I do not regard any other bowman equal to him in fight. If he wills, he can annihilate this vast host; but why does he not wish it?"

14. Thereupon hearing the words of Drona that betrayed how delighted he was (at Abhimanyu's feat), your son enraged with Abhimanyu, smiled looking at Drona.

15. Thereafter, king Duryodhana addressing Karna, king Valhika, Dussasana, the ruler of the Madras, and many other mighty car-warriors present, said ;—

16. "The preceptor of all venerable Kshatriyas, this one foremost of all those conversant with Brahma, does not, out of affection, wish to slay the son of Arjuna.

17. None can escape him in battle, no, not even the Destroyer himself, if he comes as an antagonist. What then, O friends, shall we say of a mortal! I say this forsooth.

18. He spares the son of Arjuna for he is his pupil. Pupils, their sons and grandsons, are ever dear to the righteous people.

19. Thus protected by Drona Abhimanyu is prizing his valor highly. Indeed he is a fool proud of himself. Crush him without delay."

20. Thus spoken to, O king, they rushed against the son of Subhadra the daughter of the Satwata race, all inspired with wrath and a desire to slay the latter, before the very eyes of Bharadwaja's son.

21. Then that foremost of the Kurus *viz.*, Dussasana, having heard the words of Duryodhana, addressed these words to him in reply :—

22. "I tell you, O mighty monarch, I will slay this one before the very eyes of the sons of Pandu, and at the sight of the Panchalas themselves.

23. To-day, like the Rahu devouring the maker of the day, I will devour the son of Subhadra." Then raising his voice, Dussasana once more spoke to the Kuru kings thus :—

24. "Hearing that the son of Subhadra has been slain by me, the two Krishnas, both braggards, will surely go to the regions of the departed, leaving this world of animate beings.

25. Then it is evident also, that hearing of the death of these latter, the other sons of Pandu, with all their allies and friends, will give up their lives in the course of a single day, out of despair.

26. It seems therefore, that this one enemy of yours being slain, all the rest of them will be destroyed. Wish me well, O king, even I will slay this your enemy.

27. Having thus spoken, O king, your son Dussasana waxing wroth and sending up a loud war cry, rushed at Subhadra's son, covering him at the same time with a shower of arrows.

28. Then, O subduer of your foes, beholding your wrathful son advance furiously towards himself, Abhimanyu wounded him with twenty-six arrows of exceeding sharpness.

29. Then like an elephant with its temples rent, Dussasana infuriate with rage, fought on with Abhimanyu the illustrious son of Subhadra.

30. Then those two heroes well-versed in the art of driving cars, fought on describing beautiful circles, right and left, with their cars.

31. The combatants then set up a loud din, with the sounds of their *Pandavas Mridangas Dundubhis*, *Krackachas*, mighty *Anakas*, *Bheris* and *Jharjharas*, mingled with their war-cries, such as is produced by the great reservoir of saline water.

Thus ends the thirty-ninth chapter, the encounter between Dussasana and Abhimanyu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XL.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya Said :—

1. Then the highly intelligent Abhimanyu with his body mangled with arrow-wounds smilingly addressing his antagonist Dus-

sasana stationed before him, spoke these words.

2. "It is by good luck that to-day I find before me that vain warrior of cruel deeds and lost righteousness who ever brays loudly in his own applause.

3. In as much as in the midst of the assembly of courtiers and at the very hearing of king Dhritarastra, you pierced the very virtuous king Yudhisthira with harsh words,

4. And in as much depending on the unfair game at dice and on the skill of Sakuni therein, you, intoxicated with joy, addressed many wild words to Bhima,

5—7. In consequence of all these acts and in consequence of the wrath of all those illustrious heroes, the present fate has overtaken you. O wicked-minded one, do you now reap the fatal fruits of your robbery of other peoples' possessions, of your wrathful temperaments, of your hatred for peace, of your covetousness, of your ignorance, harmfulness and persecution of others, as also of depriving my sires, all fierce bowmen, of their kingdom, and of your own unrighteousness. This day before the eyes of all these warriors I will chastise you with my arrows.

8. This day I will free myself from the burden of anger I bear against you, as also from the debt I owe to my sires and to the angry Krishna, who ever desire your death.

9. To-day, O descendant of the Kuru race, I will in battle pay off the debt I owe to Bhima; you shall not this day escape me with life, provided you do not abandon the fight."

10. Having thus spoken, that mighty-armed hero, that slayer of hostile heroes, fixed on his bow-string an arrow, endued with the effulgence of Yama, Fire, or the Windgod, and calculated to bring about Dussasana's death.

11. Flying towards Dussasana's breast, that arrow pierced his shoulder-joint up to the very bones, like a snake piercing into an ant hill.

12. Then again he struck Dussasana with twenty-five arrows that resembled fire in their touch, and were shot from his bow drawn back even to his very ears (*i.e.* fully).

13. Thus deeply pierced and pained to the extreme, Dussasana squatted down on the terrace of his chariot and, O mighty monarch, he became uncouscious in a swoon.

14. Thereupon his charioteer quickly carried away from the field the unconscious Dussasana who had been sorely afflicted by Abhimanyu's arrows.

15. The Pandavas, the sons of Droupadi, and Visaka and the Kekayas and the Panchalas, beholding that act of Subhadra's son sent up a loud roar like that of a lion.

16. Then filled with joy, the troops of the Pandavss struck up numerous musical instruments of various description and shape, from all sides.

17. Beholding that feat achieved by Subhadra's son, they were amazed. Then seeing their most implacable and arrogant adversary thus worsted,

18. The five mighty car-warriors, *viz.*, the five sons of Droupadi bearing on their standards as device the images of Yama, Maruta, Indra and the Asuras.

19. As also Satyaki, Chekitana, Dhristadyumna Sikhandin, the Kekaya brothers, Dhristaketu, and the Matsyas, the Panchalas, and the Srinjayas,

20. And the Pandavas, were all enraptured and then headed by Yudhisthira, they rushed to battle desirous of breaking through Drona's division.

21. Then there commenced a fierce battle between the foe and your troops, all unretreating heroes, bent on achieving victory.

22. Thus, O king, when the awful battle raged furiously, Duryodhana addressing Radha's son said these words.

23. "Behold the heroic Dussasana worsted by Abhimanyu—he who had been ere now slaying and scorching the foe like the sun himself.

24. Yonder rushes the infuriate Pandavas, looking like so many mighty lions, with weapons uplifted, to the rescue of Subhadra's son."

25. Thereupon inflamed with wrath Karna ever bent on doing good to your son, covered the invincible Abhimanyu with many sharp arrows.

26. Then as if in contempt, the valiant Karna pierced the followers of Subhadra's son in battle with sharp shafts of excellent make.

27. Thereupon the high-souled Abhimanyu, who was longing to meet Drona himself, quickly pierced, O king, Radha's son with seventy-three shafts all whetted on stone.

28. Then there was no car-warrior save and except Drona himself who could have checked that grandson of the wielder of

the thunderbolt, who had then been afflicting the mighty car-warriors sorely.

29. Thereafter displaying many excellent weapons, Karna, that most honoured of all bowmen, desirous of victory pierced Subhadra's son with hundreds of shafts.

30. Then that puissant pupil of Rama, that foremost of all men learned in the use of weapons, began to afflict Abhimanyu who was incapable of being vanquished by the foe.

31. Though thus afflicted with showers of weapons hurled by Radha's son, yet the son of Subhadra equal to an immortal, did not flinch.

32. Thereafter having cut off the bows of warriors, with broad-headed shafts of depressed knots all whetted on stone, Arjuna's son began to afflict Karna in return.

33. Then with arrows, shot from his bow drawn to a circle, and resembling snakes of virulent poison in touch, Abhimanyu quickly cut off Karna's umbrella, standard, horses and charioteer, smiling all the while.

34. Then Karna sped at him five shafts of straight-knots; but the son of Phalguna dauntlessly received all those arrows.

35. Then that valiant hero in a moment cutting off with a single shaft Karna's bow and standard, felled them to the ground.

36. Seeing Karna in such a plight his younger brother, stretching his bow with great force impetuously rushed at Subhadra's son.

37. At this, the Parthas sent up a loud uproar; their followers beat and blew many musical instruments; and they all applauded the sons of Subhadra.

Thus ends the fortieth chapter, the defeat of Karna and Dussasana, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then that brother of Karna armed with a bow and stretching its string repeatedly, soon placed himself between those two high-souled car-warriors.

2. Then as if smiling he pierced the invincible Abhimanyu together with his umbrella, standard, charioteer and steeds with ten sharp arrows.

3. Then beholding Abhimanyu, who had been achieving superhuman feats after the manner of his father and grandfather, afflicted with those shafts, your warriors became enraptured.

4. Thereupon Abhimanyu smiled and bending his bow shot a winged shaft that lopped off his antogonist's head, and then the latter fell down from his chariot.

5. Then, O monarch, Karna was extremely pained on seeing his brother slain and overthrown like a blossoming *Karnikara* tree thrown down by the wind from the mountain top.

6. Thereafter having compelled Karns to turn back from the field with arrowa furnished with *Kanka* feathers, Subhadra's son quickly assailed other mighty bowmen.

7. Then Abhimanyu possessed of fierce energy and great renown, wrought up with rage, began to break through the various division of cars, elephants, steeds, and infantry.

8. Meanwhile Karna who had been afflicted by Abhimanyu with his myriads of shafts, fled away from the field of battle, being borne by fleet steeds. Your army then began to give way.

9. Then when the sky was covered with the arrows of Abhimanyu, like the flights of locusts or thick showers of rain, O king, nothing could be distinguished.

10. Amongst all your warriors then thus slaughtered by Abhimanyu with his sharp shafts, none stayed on the field, except the ruler of the Sindhus.

11. Thereupon, that foremost of princes *viz.*, Subhadra's son, blowing his conch fell, O foremost of the Bharatas, upon the army of the Bharatas.

12. Then like fire set to work on a heap of dried grass, consuming the hostile ranks, Arjuna's son moved in circles amidst the Kourava host.

13. Breaking through the hostile array, he began to afflict car-warriors, elephant-riders, horse-men and infantry with his great arrows; and thus made the earth impassable with headless trunks.

14. Mangled with the shafts of excellent make, shot from the bow of Subhadra's son, the Kouravas fled in fear of their lives, slaying, as they ran, their own partisans that happened to meet them.

15. Those dreadful shafts of terrible effects and touch, penetrating through car-warriors, elephants and horses, struck on the earth's surface.

16. With weapons in grasp, with finger-preservers, with maces in clutch, and with *Angadas* and decked with golden ornaments, arms were seen to be strewn on the ground.

17. Arrows and bows and swords and corpses and heads with ear-rings and garlands were seen on the ground by hundreds.

18. Strewn over with *Upashkaras*, *Adishthanas*, long poles, and with shattered *Akshasas* and broken wheels and yokes, thousands in number,

19. With arrows, bows, swords, fallen standards; with backless bows and shafts scattered about,

20. With the bodies of slain Kshatriyas, horses and elephants, the field of battle looking fierce soon became impassable.

21. Then as the princes were being slaughtered by Abhimanyu, they created a loud noise enhancing the apprehension of the cowards, by calling one another by their names.

22. That din, O foremost of the Bharatas, filled all the points of the compass with its echo; the son of Subhadra then assailed the Kourava host killing excellent car-warriors, steeds and elephants.

23. Then like fire set to a heap of straw, Arjuna's son began to consume his foes; and he was then seen to stand in the very centre of the Bharata troops.

24. Then surrounded as he was by our troops and covered with dust, we could not obtain sight of him, when he, O Bharata, careered through the cardinal and subsidiary directions.

25. The next moment, O Bharata, we beheld him shining like the mid-day sun, and wrenching the lives out of elephants, steeds and men.

26. We then beheld, O mighty monarch, Abhimanyu afflict his foes. In that battle that grandson of Vasava *viz.*, Abhimanyu equal to Vasava himself in prowess, shone, O mighty monarch, in the very centre of your troops.

Thus ends the forty-first chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When that heroic Abhimanyu, that veritable child brought up in great luxury, proud of the strength of his arms, expert in the art of fighting, of noble blood, ready to sacrifice his life in battle,

2. Penetrated into our ranks, borne by his excellent steeds, three years old, was there any one else of the army of Yudhisthira, who then followed him?

Sanjaya said :

3. Yudhisthira, Bhimasena Sikhandin, Satyaki, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva Dhristadyumna, Virata, Drupada with the Kekayas,

4—5. Dhristaketu, and the Matsyas, all inflamed with rage, rushed to battle. Then Abhimanyu's sires accompanied by his maternal uncles, all accomplished in slaying their opponents, formed in battle-array, rushed, desirous of rescuing him, through the breach he himself had created in the enemies' ranks. Seeing those heroes rush to battle, all your warriors turned their faces away from the field of battle.

6. Thereupon beholding the mighty army of your son give way, your son-in-law endued with fierce energy, proceeded to rally them.

7. Then, O monarch, Jayadratha the royal son of the Sindhu king, checked the Parthas backed by their troops, when they tried to rescue their son (Abhimanyu).

8. That mighty bowmen of great skill in archery, *viz.*, the son of Vridhakshatra then checked, displaying his celestial weapons, the Pandavas, like an elephant playing on the low-lands.

Dhritarastra said :—

9. I consider, O Sanjaya, that a heavy burthen was then placed upon the king of the Sindhus, in as much as he had to withstand the enraged Pandavas desirous of rescuing their son.

10. It appears to me that the Sindhu ruler was endowed with wonderful might and heroism. Tell me of the feats and heroism of that illustrious warrior.

11. What gifts did he make, or what sacrifice did he accomplish, or what austerities did he undergo by virtue of which he was able to resist, single-handed, the enraged sons of Pritha?

Sanjaya said :—

12. On the occasion of the abduction of Droupadi, Jayadratha was humiliated by Bhimasena. Out of a feeling of this humiliation, the king performed rigid austerities for securing desirable boons.

13. Withholding his senses from the objects pleasurable to them, and suffering (patiently) the pangs of hunger and thirst, he tortured his body till his swollen veins appeared to view.

14. Chaunting the eternal hymns of the Vedas, he worshipped the God Sarva (Mahadeva). Thereupon that illustrious God, ever compassionate towards his devotees, became gracious on him.

15. The god Hara revealing himself in a dream to the son of the ruler of the Sindhus, addressed him thus :—"Ask the boon you like; I am pleased with you, O Jayadratha, what do you desire ?"

16. Thus spoken to by Sarva (Mahadeva), king Jayadratha bowing down to him with folded palms and subdued soul, said :—

17. "I desire that I may check in battle on a single car and single-handed, the Pandavas, possessed though they are of extraordinary prowess and energy." This was the boon which he asked from the god.

18. Thus addressed, that God of gods, spoke unto Jayadratha, in the following manner :—" O gentle one, I accord you the boon ; save and except Dhananjaya, the son of Pritha,

19. You shall vanquish in battle the other four sons of Pandu." "So be it" said Jayadratha in answer to what the God of gods had said and then awoke from his sleep.

20. In consequence of having received this boon and through the virtue of the celestial weapon he possessed, he was competent to check the Pandava hosts, single-handed.

21. The twang of his bow-string inspired the hostile warriors with fear, filling at the same time, the hearts of your troops with joy.

22. The Kshatriyas then beholding the king of the Sindhus take upon himself the whole burden of the onset, rushed with deafening war-cries at the divisions of Yudhisthira.

Thus ends the forty-second chapter the fight between Jayadratha and the Pandavas, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)— *Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. You ask me, O mighty monarch, to describe the prowess of the ruler of Sindhus. I shall describe all that in detail. Hear how he fought with the sons of Pandu.

2. Excellent steeds of the Sindhu breed obedient to the behests of the charioteer, and fleet as the wind itself, carried him to the field of battle.

3. He rode a chariot duly furnished with the implements of war, and looking like an aerial castle. His mighty standard decked with the device of an argentine boar, appeared highly resplendent.

4. With white umbrellas, with penons, and with the yak-tails that were used to fan him, with all these emblems of royalty, he appeared beautiful like the moon in the midst of myriad of stars.

5. His iron-made car-fence embossed with pearls, diamonds and gold, appeared effulgent like the welkin bespangled with the luminaries.

6. Stretching his mighty bow and shooting numerous shafts, he filled up the Kourava array there where Arjuna's son had created breaches.

7. He wounded Satyaki with three arrows, Vrikodara with eight, Dhristadyumna with sixty and Virata with ten and

8. Drupada with five sharp arrows and Sikhandin with ten. He pierced the Kekayas with twenty-five, the Droupadeyas with three shafts each.

9. Then piercing Yudhisthira with seventy arrows, he mangled the rest of his army with a mighty downpour of arrows ; and that feat appeared indeed wonderful.

10. Thereupon, O king, the highly puissant son of Dharma (Yudhisthira), laughing the while, cut off, with a sharp and well-tempered arrow the bow the ruler of the Sindhus.

11. But the latter, taking up within the twinkle of an eye another bow, pierced Pritha's son with ten shafts, and the others following him, with three shafts each.

12. Beholding that light-handedness displayed by Jayadratha, Bhima, with three broad-headed shafts, once more cut off and felled to the ground the bow, the standard and the umbrella of the former.

13. Taking up and stringing another bow, that puissant hero (Jayadratha) cut down, O sire, the standard, the bow, and the steeds of Bhima.

14. Thereupon Bhima with his bow burst open, jumped down from his excellent chariot of which the steeds were slain, and leapt upon the car of Satyaki like a lion leaping upon the top of a hill.

15. At this, your troops filled with delight, cried out saying 'Well done, Well done,' and they applauded that feat achieved by the Sindhu king again and again.

16. Then all creatures praised that feat of his which was nothing less than checking the enraged Pandava hosts by means of the force of his weapons.

17. The track that the son of Subhadra had marked out for the Pandavas by the numerous slain warriors and elephants, was then blockaded by the king of the Sindhus.

18. Then the Matsyas, the Panchalas, the Kekayas and the Pandavas, all these heroic warriors exerting their best, tried to follov Abhimanyu, but they could not withstand the ruler of the Sindhus.

19. Every one of your enemies who tried to penetrate through Drona's array was checked by the ruler of the Sindhus in consequence of the boon the latter had obtained from Mahadeva.

Thus ends the forty-third chapter, the fight between Jayadratha and the Pandavas, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLIV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus when the Pandavas intent on securing victory were resisted by the Sindhu ruler, there commenced an awful fight between your warriors and those of the enemy.

2. Penetrating into your ranks, Arjuna's son invincible and of unerring aim, and endued with great energy, began to agitate your troops, like a mighty whale agitating the sea.

3. Then according to their ranks, the foremost warriors of the Kouravas rushed against Subhadra's son, that subduer of foes, who had been agitating his enemies with his arrowy downpour.

4. The clash between these warriors, endued with infinite energy and scattering a shower of arrows on one side and Abhimanyu on the other, became awful.

5. Then impaled by the enemies with crowds of cars, the son of Arjuna slew the driver of Vrisasena and also cut off the latter's bow.

6. Then again that highly powerful hero pierced Vrisasena's horses with straight-flying arrows ; the latter then was carried away from the field of battle by those steeds of the fleetness of the wind.

7. At this opportnnity, the charioteer of Abhimanyu drove his vehicle out of the press of hostile charioteers, and then the troops filled with delight exclaimed aloud saying 'Well done, Well done.'

8. Thereupon approaching Abhimanyu who, excited with rage, had been crushing the foe with his arrows like a lion crushing other animals, Vasatiya fell upon him with great impetuousity.

9. He then covered Abhimanyu with sixty shafts all furnished with golden wings, and also thus addressed him—'You shall not escape me alive in battle, so long as I am alive.'

10. Him cased in iron male, the son of Subhadra pierced on the breast with an arrow capable of flying to a great distance ; and he fell down on the earth deprived of life.

11. Beholding Vasiatya slain, the foremost of the Kshatriyas all excited with rage, surrounded, O king, your grandson, desirous of taking his life out of him.

12. They stretched their bows of different shapes, in many different ways. Thereupon commenced a terrible conflict between Subhadra's son and his adversaries.

13. Then the son of Phalguna inflamed with wrath, cut off their bows and arrows, and the various limbs of their body and their heads adorned with ear-rings and garlands of flowers.

14. Then severed arms were seen on the field with fingers-protectors and grasping swords, lances, axes and bludgeons and adorned with golden ornaments.

15. With garlands of flowers, and ornaments and cloths, with tall standards lopped off, with armours, and bucklers and golden chains, and diadems and umbrellas and *chamaras*,

16. With yokes, and braces, and shafts and axels of cars, with shattered whee ls *Akshas*, and yokes by thousands,

17. With *Arnukarshas*, penons, and fallen charioteers and steeds, with broken cars, with elephants steeds, the earth then became literally covered over,

18. Then the field of battle assumed a dreadful aspect being strewn over with many slain heroic Kshatriya rulers of many countries, who had fought for securing victory.

19. The very form of Abhimanyu could not then be discerned, as he careered through the field of battle moving in all the directions, subsidiary and cardinal.

20. His golden coat of mail and his buckler and his ornaments and his arrows and bow only were seen by us then.

21. Then no one was able to cast his eyes on him (Abhimanyu), when he was slaying hostile warriors with his arrows, staying in their midst like the very sun in the heavens.

Thus ends the forty-fourth chapter, the display of Abhimanyu's prowess, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then engaged in depriving the heroes of their lives, the son of Arjuna resembled the Destroyer of all creatures snatching their lives out of them, at the time of the universal annihilation.

2. Endued with prowess equal to that of Sakra, that grandson of Sakra, namely Abhimanyu of infinite might, agitating your forces, appeared highly beautiful.

3. Then, O foremost of kings, entering into the very heart of the hostile army, that slayer of those best among the Kshatriyas, fell upon Satyasravas like a fierce tiger falling upon a deer.

4. When Satyasravas had thus been pounced upon, the other mighty car-warriors, with haste taking up various kinds of weapons, rushed against Abhimanyu.

5. 'I shall meet him first, I shall meet him first'—boasting in this way, those foremost Kshatriyas then encountered Arjuna's son, out of a desire for slaying him.

6. Then beholding the divisions of those rushing Kshatriyas advance towards him, Abhimanyu met them, even like a whale meeting a shoal of small fishes in the sea.

7. Just as rivers never course back from the ocean they fall in, so no one among them who did not fly, returned back with his life, after having encountered Abhimanyu.

8. Then the army began to reel like a boat on the ocean, overtaken by a mighty tempest and having its crew afflicted with fear through the violence of the wind.

9. Thereafter the mighty Rukshmaratha, a son of the ruler of the Madras, dauntlessly spoke these words, with a view to inspire confidence into the hearts of the panic-struck troops.

10. "O heroes, you need not fear; Abhimanyu is nothing so long as I am here. For certain, I will capture him alive (to-day)."

11. Having thus spoken that highly puissant hero rushed upon Abhimanyu, borne on a resplendent chariot duly furnished with the implements of war.

12. Piercing Abhimunyu on the breast with three shafts, he uttered his war-cry; and then again, he pierced him on the right and the left arms with three sharp shafts each.

13. But the son of Phalguna cutting off his bow, his right and left arms, and his head graced with beautiful eyes and eyebrows, soon felled them on the earth.

14. Beholding Rukshmaratha the illustrious son of Salya, who had promised to capture alive or consume Abhimanyu, slain by this latter,

15. Many princely warriors, O king, accomplished in smiting down, and formidable in battle, all friends of Salya's son (Rukshmaratha), came upon Abhimanyu, with their standards decked with gold, raised high.

16. Then those mighty car-warriors stretching their bows huge like palmyra trees, covered the son of Arjuna on all sides with showers of arrrows.

17. Beholding Subhadra's heroic and invincible son encountered, single-handed as he was, by many brave, youthful, irate princes endued with skill acquired through practice and teaching,

18. And also beholding him covered with a shower of arrows (shot by his adversaries), Duryodhana became highly gratified; and thought Abhimanyu already a visitor of the mansion of Vivaswata's son (Death).

19. Within a wink's time, all those youthful princes, each shooting sharp shafts of various shapes and furnished with golden wings, intercepted the son of Arjuna from the view.

20. Then, O sire, we beheld Abhimanyu's car and driver and his standard, covered with arrows, as if by flights of locusts.

21. Thereupon like an elephant pierced deeply, the son of Arjuna, deeply pierced with those arrows, became inflamed with rage; and he then invoked into existence

the *Gandharva* weapon and its consequent illusions, O Bharata.

22. This weapon was secured by Arjuna from the Gandharvas Tamvuru and others, through his ascetic austerities. Now Abhimanyu confounded his foes with that weapon.

23. He was then seen, O king, sometimes as a single individual, sometimes as a hundred and sometimes as a thousand. He then moved over the field, displaying his weapons, like a circle of fire.

24. Then, O king, confounding the kings hostile to him with the illusions caused by his car, his coat of mail, and his weapons, he mangled, O king, their bodies in hundred pieces.

25. The vital breaths of living creatures were then snatched out of them by his arrows; and, O king, they reached the other world when their bodies fell down on earth

26. The son of Phalguna with sharp broad-headed shafts, cut off their bows, their steeds, their charioteers, their standards and arms with bracelets, and also their graceful heads.

27. Like a grove of mango trees, five years old and on the point of bearing fruit, laid low by the tempest, those hundred princes were slain and felled by the son of Subhadra.

28. Boholding those young and delicate heroes reared up with all possible care and resembling furious snakes of virulent poison, slain by the single-handed son of Subhadra, Duryodhana became filled with fear.

29. Then beholding his car-warriors, his elephants, his steeds and foot-soldiers, smashed, the enraged Duryodhana quickly rushed at Abhimanyu.

30. For a moment only a fierce battle raged between them, which virtually remained unfinished when your son, afflicted with arrows turned away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the forty-fifth chapter, the defeat of Duryodhana, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLVI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)— *Continued.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. What you are saying to me, O Suta, about the fierce and awful battle between one and the many, and the victory of that high-souled one,

2. This story of the prowess of Subhadra's son is wonderful and none the less incredible. But I ~~do not~~ regard it altogether impossible with respect ~~to~~ them whose sole refuge is virtue.

3. After Duryodhana had been repulsed and the hundred pinces slain, what measure was adopted by my warriors against Subhadra's son.

Sanjaya said :—

4. Their mouths were parched up and their eyes began to roll. They perspired and their hair stood erect. Desponding of conquering the enemy, they exerted their best to fly away.

5. Abandoning their slain brothers, fathers, sons, friends, relatives and kinsmen, they fled urging their elephants and steeds on.

6. Beholding then the troops thus broken, Drona and his son, and Vrihadvala, Kripa, Duryodhana, Karna, Kritavarman, and Suvala's son,

7. All these warriors excited with rage rushed against the invincible son of Subhadra. Then those warriors also, O king, were almost beat back by your grandson (Abhimanyu).

8. A single warrior only, *viz.*, Lakshmana, brought up in luxury, versed in the use of arrows and weapons, endued with great energy, and dauntless through pride and youth, rushed against Arjuna's son.

9. Preyed upon by anxiety on account of his son, his father (Duryodhana) turned back; and other mighty car-warriors also followed Duryodhana's example.

10. These warriors all showered arrows on him (Abhimanyu), like clouds showering in torrents rains on mountains; he, in return, though single-handed, routed them like the dry and confused wind scattering masses of clouds.

11—12. Then like one infuriate elephant meeting another in the same state, Krishna's nephew encountered your grandson Lakshmana, invincible, of great personal beauty, standing near his father with his bow ready for use, endued with heroism, brought up in all luxury and resembling the son of the God of wealth.

13. Encountering Lakshmana, that slayer of hostile heroes, that son of Subhadra, was pierced on the breast and the arms with exceedingly sharp shafts.

14. Then that mighty-armed ~~grandson~~ of yours (Abhimanyu), O mighty monarch, excited with rage like a snake struck with a rod, addressing your other grandson (Lakshmana), thus spoke :—

15. "Look well on this earth, for you shall be required soon to go to another world. I will despatch you to the abode of Death even before the very eyes of your on-looking friends".

16. Having thus spoken, that slayer of hostile heroes, that mighty-armed hero, *viz.*, Subhadra's son, took out a broad-headed shaft that resembled a snake that had recently cast its slough off.

17. That shaft sped by the force of his arms, cut off the beautiful head of Lakshmana, graced with ear-rings and a beautiful nose and charming locks and eye-brows.

18. Beholding Lakshmana slain, people began to wail aloud saying 'Oh' and 'Alas.' Thereupon at the death of his dear-loved son, Duryodhana became inflamed with rage.

19. And then that foremost of the Kshatriyas commanded his other Kshatriya warriors saying 'Slay him.' Thereupon Drona, his son, Kripa, Karna, and Vrihadvala, and

20. Kritavarman the son of Hridika, these six warriors surrounded Subhadra's son. But the son of Arjuna piercing them with whetted shafts, and beating them back,

21—23. Angrily and with vehemence, fell upon the mighty division of the ruler of the Sindhus. Thereupon the Kalingas, the Nishadhas, and the puissant son of Kratha, clad in mail, covered his path with their mighty elephant division. The battle then that commenced between Abhimanyu and the other warriors was dreadful and fierce to the extreme.

23. Then the son of Arjuna began to crush that division of elephants, like the wind that blows in all directions destroying masses of clouds in the heaven.

24. Thereafter Kratha covered Arjuna's son with showers of arrows; meanwhile many other car-warriors headed by Drona, turning back to the field of battle,

25. Rushed at Subhadra's son, discharging numerous weapons of celestial make. Beating back all of them with arrows, Arjuna's son afflicted Kratha's son,

26. With innumerable groups of arrows, in all haste and inflamed with a dersire for slaying his antagonist. Then the bow, the arrows, the bracelets, the arms, and the head decked with a diadem, of Kratha's son,

27. His umbrella, standard, charioteer and horses, were all felled by Abhimanyu. When that one (Kratha's son) possessed of a high lineage and character, acquainted with the Srutis and endued with wealth of weapons and fame was thus slain, almost all the remaining heroic warriors turned away from the field of battle.

Thus ends the forty-sixth chapter, the slaughter of Kratha's son, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva

---

CHAPTTR XLVII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When that youthful and invincible son of Subhadra, ever unretreating in battle, penetrating into the ranks of my troops was achieving feats worthy of his own family,

2. And when borne by his three-year-old steeds of great strength and excellent breed, he appeared to sail through the skies, what heroes of my army then strove to resist him ?

Sanjaya said :—

3. Penetrating into the heart of your troops, Abhimanyu, the delighter of the Pandavas, with his sharp arrows compelled all the kings to turn their faces away from the field of battle.

4. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna, the son of Drona, Vrihadvala and Kritavarman the son of Hridika, these six car-warriors surrounded him.

5. Beholding a very heavy burden (of keeping the rest of the Pandavas at bay) placed on the shoulder of the Sindhu king, your troops, O mighty monarch, assailed Yudhisthira.

6. Other mighty warriors stretching their bows full six cubits long, covered the heroic son of Subhadra with a shower of arrows.

7. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Subhadra's son, assailed by means of his arrows, all those mighty car-warriors all well accomplished in all kinds of learning.

8. And he then pierced Drona with fifty arrows and Vrihadavala with twenty; and Kritavarman with eighty and Kripa with sixty.

9. The son of Arjuna then pierced Ashwathaman with ten shafts furnished with wings of gold, charged with great force and shot from the bow drawn back to the very ear.

10. Then in the very midst of the hostile troops, the son of Phagulna pierced Karna in one of his ears with an excellent barbed arrow, carefully tempered and whetted.

11. Then having felled Kripa's steeds and the two supporters of his flanks, Abhimanyu pierced him on his breast with ten shafts.

12. Thereafter the valiant Abhimanyu slew the warlike Vrindaraka the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus, even before the very eyes of your heroic son.

13. Then Drona's son dauntlessly struck Abhimanyu with twenty-five short arrows, when the latter was occupied in slaying the best among his enemies.

14. Thereupon, O Sire, Arjuna's son pierced Aswathaman in return with whetted shafts, before the presence of all the warriors of your army.

15. Then Drona's son having pierced Abhimanyu with sixty fierce and resplendent shafts of exceeding sharpness, could not make the latter tremble; and then the latter remained unmoved like the Mainaka hills.

16. Then that hero of puissant might and fierce energy, pierced the son of Drona who had been afflicting him, with thirty seven arrows, all straight-going and furnished with wings of gold.

17. Thereupon Drona desirous of saving his son, stuck hundred shafts on Abhimanyu; and Aswathaman also desirous of rescuing his father, pierced him with sixty shafts,

18. Karna then pierced Abhimanyu with twenty-two broad-headed shafts, Kritavarman with fourteen, Vrihadvala with fifty and Kripa the son of Saradwata with ten.

19. In return, Abhimanyu pierced each of them with ten shafts. Then the ruler of the Kosalas pierced him on the breast with a barbed dart.

20. Abhimanyu then felled on the ground his horses, his standards, his bow and his charioteer. Thereupon deprived of the use of his car, the king of the Kosalas grasping his sword and shield,

21. Strove to take off the head, graced with ear-rings, of Phalguna's son, from his trunk. Then the latter, pierced the ruler of the Kosalas, by name prince Vrihadvala on the breast, with arrows; and the latter fell down with his breast cleft open. Then ten thousand high-souled kings broke away,

22. Uttering abusive language (against Duryodhana), armed though they were with swords and bows. Thereafter having slain Vrihadvala in battle, Subhadra's son careered through the field, and paralysed the mighty car-warriors of your army with a downpour of arrowy showers.

Thus ends the forty-seventh chapter, the defeat and death of Vrihadvala, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Once more did the son of Arjuna pierce Karna on his car, with barbed arrows; and then for angering the latter, again pierced him with fifty shafts more.

2. Thereupon Radha's son pierced him in return with as many arrows. Covered all over with arrows, O Bharata, he then looked exceedingly beautiful.

3. Excited with wrath, Abhimanyu also caused Karna to be covered over with streams of blood; the heroic Karna also appeared beautiful being mangled with shaft-wounds and bathed in blood.

4. Then both those high-souled warriors, mangled with arrow-wounds and steeped in blood, appeared like two *Kinsukas* covered with blossoms,

5. Then Subhadra's son slew six of Karna's ministers all versed in various modes of warfare, together with their horses, charioteer, car and standards.

6. Then Abhimanyu fearlessly pierced the rest of the mighty car-warriors in return, with ten shafts each; that feat of his seemed exceedingly wonderful.

7. Thereafter having slain the son of the ruler of the Magadhas with six swift-coursing arrows, Abhimanyu felled the youthful Aswaketu together with his horses and charioteer.

8. Next slaying with a sharp, horse-shoe-headed arrow, the Bhoja prince of Martikavata having the device of an elephant on his banner, the son of Arjuna sent up a tremendous war-cry and began to scatter his arrows on all sides.

9. Thereupon the son of Drona pierced his four horses with four arrows, and charioteer with one shaft and then he pierced Arjuna's son with ten arrows.

10. Thereafter Krishna's nephew having pierced Dussasana's son with ten swift-coursing arrows, spoke these words at the top of his voice, with eyes red in rage.

11. "Your father has fled from the battle like a veritable coward. It is fortunate that you know how to fight. But to-day you shall not escape me alive."

12. Having spoken only these words, he hurled at him a *Naracha* burnished by the forger himself.

13. Then leaving alone the son of Drona, Arjuna's son struck Salya with three arrows. Him Salya pierced in return with nine shafts furnished with vulterine feathers,

14. On the breast, like one not at all afraid. That feat appeared to be highly wonderful. The son of Arjuna then cutting off his bow and slaying his two flank-supporters,

15—16. Pierced him with six iron-made shafts; and then Salya ascended another chariot. Then having slain Satrunjaya, Chandraketu, Mahamegha, Suvarchasam, and Suryyavasa, he pierced the son of Suvala. Souvala then piercing him with three arrows, thus addressed Duryodhana:—

17. 'Let all of us united together, crush this one; for, fighting singly, he will slay us all. O king, with the assistance of Drona and Kripa and others, do you think out the means of slaying this one.

18. Thereafter Vikartana's son Karna, addressing Drona said these words:—"Tell us the means of his death, before he slays us all."

19. Thereupon the fierce bow-man Drona replied to them all saying:—"With all your watchfulness, have you been able to detect any weakness in this youthful prince?

20. He is carreeing in all directions; yet has any of you been able to find out any *laches* in the prince? Behold the lightness of hands of this son of Arjuna, this foremost of all men!

21. In the course of his car-motion, only his bow drawn to a complete circle can be seen and not his arrows,so swiftly does he let them off!

22. Indeed this slayer of hostile heroes, this son of Subhadra is affording me great delight, though with his shafts he is afflicting my vital limbs, and confounding my senses.

23. This son of Subhadra careering through the field of battle, delights me greatly, in as much as many mighty car-wariors inflamed with rage cannot detect any the slightest weakness in him.

24. I do not find any very great difference between the wielder of the *Gandiva* bow and this one of great lightness of hands, filling the points of the compass with his mighty shafts."

25. Then once more Karna, afflicted with the arrows of Arjuna's son said to Drona:—"Afflicted sore by Abhimanyu, I am staying here, only because, as a warrior, I should stay here.

26. The fierce and exceedingly dreadful darts, corroding like fire, of this very furious prince, are this day sucking my heart's strength in battle."

27. Then softly and with a smile, the preceptor replied unto Karna saying:—'This Abhimanyu is faithful, his prowess is great and his armour is incapable of being penetrated into.

28. I have taught the father of this hero, the diverse methods of wearing coats of mail; assuredly this subjugator of hostile fortresses, knows all those methods of wearing armours.

29. But exerting yourself carefully, you can, with arrows, cut off his bow, his bow-string, the reins of his steeds and his two supporters of the flanks.

30. O mighty bow-man, O son of Radha, if you are competent, then do all these. Then compelling him to turn his face away from the field, do you strike him from behind.

31. As long as he wields the bow, he is incapable of being defeated even by all the Gods and the Asuras united together. So if you can, deprive him of the use of his car and his bow."

32. Then, Vikartana's son, Karna, hearing those words of the preceptor quickly cut off Abhimanyu's bow with his arrows, when the latter was light-handedly scattering his shafts.

33. Then Kritavarman of the Bhoja race, slew his steeds, and Kripa the son of Gotama despatched his two flank-supporters. The rest covered him with arrowy showers, when he was deprived of the use of his bow.

34. Then these six mighty car-warriors with great activity, when activity was so necessary, ruthlessly covered that young careless hero who was fighting with them single-handedly, with showers of arrows.

35. Then that handsome hero whose car had been rendered useless and whose bow had been cut off, grasping his sword and buckler and remembering his duty, jumped up into the sky.

36 Exhibiting great prowess and great lightness, Arjuna's son roved in the air like the king of the birds, in various motions, known as *Koriska* and others.

37. 'With the sword in his hand he may fall upon me,'—thinking thus those mighty bowmen with their eyes up-turned and very watchful for finding Abhimanyu's weakness, began to pierce him.

38. Then that conqueror of enemies, *viz.*, Drona of mighty energy quickly cut off the jewel-decked hilt of Abhimanyu's sword with a single shaft furnished with a horse-shoe-head.

39. Then Radha's son also cut off his excellent buckler with many sharp arrows. Then deprived of his sword and his shield he came down from the sky upon the ground, with all his limbs intact. Then raising a car-wheel, he furiously rushed against Drona.

40. His person shining with the dust from the car-wheel and himself wielding the car-wheel in his upraised arm, Abhimanyu appeared highly beautiful, and for a while imitating the son of Vasudeva, he became terribly fierce in that battle.

41. With his robes dyed with the blood flowing in profusion (from his wounds), with his brow formidable in consequence of the wrinkles thereon, himself sending up loud war-cries, that highly powerful Abhimanyu appeared superbly beautiful staying in the midst of those foremost of kings.

Thus ends the forty-eighth chapter, the fight of Abhimanyu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XL.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. That delighter of Vishnu's sister (Subhadra), that *Atiratha* Abhimanyu, then furnished with the weapon of Vishnu himself, looked highly beautiful like a second Janarddana on the field of battle.

2. With the ends of his locks blazing in the air, with that best of weapons raised in his hands, his person became difficult of being looked at even by the very gods. The rulers of the earth beholding it,

3. And the wheel in his hands, became seized with anxiety. They then cut it off into many fragments. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, the nephew of Krishna took up a heavy mace.

4. Then the mighty-armed Abhimanyu deprived of his car, his bow, his sword and his car-wheel by the enemy, rushed (with that mace in his hand) upon Ashwathaman.

5. Then, O foremost of kings, Aswathaman, beholding that upraised mace resemble the blazing bolt of heaven, leapt off three steps from the terrace of his car.

6. Slaying with his mace the horses and the two flank-supporters of Aswathaman, the son of Subhadra, with his body covered all over with arrows looked like a porcupine.

7. Then Abhimanyu crushed down on the ground Suvala's son Kalikeya and slew seventy-seven of the latter's followers of the Gandhara race.

8. Next he slew ten car-warriors of the clan of Brahma-vasatiya; and then seven warriors of the Kekayas and then ten huge elephants.

9. Then he pressed down upon the ground the car and horses of Dussasana's son. Thereupon, O sire, Dussasana's invincible son excited with rage and upraising his mace,

10. Rushed against Abhimanyu crying at same time, "Wait" "Wait." Then those two heroes with maces upraised, both desirous of compassing one another's death,

11. Those two cousins, began to strike one another, like the three-eyed (Mahadeva) and the Asura Andhaka fighting in the days of yore. Then striking one another by the ends of their clubs, they both fell down on the ground,

12. Like two uprooted standards raised in honour of Indra. Then that enhancer of the glory of the Kurus namely Dussasana's son rising first,

13. Smote Subhadra's son on the crown of his head as the latter was rising up. Confounded with the great force of that mace-stroke and overpowered by the fatigue of the fight,

14. That slayer of hostile heroes namely Subhadra's son fell down senseless on the ground. Thus, O king, was the one slain by many in battle,

15. One who grinded the whole army of the Kurus, like an elephant crushing lotus-stems. Then that heroic warrior slain by the Kurus, appeared beautiful like a wild elephant slain by the hunter.

16. Then your troops surrounded the fallen hero, who then looked like an extinguished fire that had consumed a whole forest during the summer season ;

17. Or like a tempest with its fury subsided after it has broken down numerous tree-tops ; or like the setting sun that had scorched the Bharata army with its rays ;

18—19. Or like the moon devoured up by the Rahu; or like the ocean with its waters dried up. Then the mighty car-warriors of your army beholding Abhimanyu whose countenance wore the splendour of the full moon, and whose eyes were black like the wings of the raven, lie prostrate on the naked earth, uttered repeated lion-like roars being filled with great delight.

20. Indeed, O king, your warriors were transported with delight, while tears rolled down from the eyes of the warriors of the other host.

21. Then beholding that hero lying prostrate on the ground like the moon dropped from the skies, many creatures and rulers of men, on the skies, uttered woeful cries saying :—

22. "Slain by the six mighty car-warriors of Dhritarastra's host headed by Drona, this single hero is lying on the field of battle. We hold this to be very unfair."

13. When that hero had been slaughtred, the earth appeared highly beautiful like the starry firmament decked with the full-moon herself.

24. The earth was then covered over with arrows furnished with golden wings, and inundated with waves of blood. And overspreaded with the beautiful heads of the heroes, adorned with ear-rings,

25. And precious and variegated head-gears, and streamers and *chamaras*, and splendid blankets, and gem-embossed weapons of good make,

26. And the bright ornaments of cars and horses and men and elephants, and sharp and well-tempered swords looking like snakes freed from their slough,

27. And bows, and shattered arrows, and darts and scimitars and spears and *kampanas*, and various other kinds of weapons, (offensive and defensive), she looked exceedingly beautiful.

28. In many places the field of battle became impassable being choked with dead and dying steeds bespattered with blood all felled by the son of Subhadra, and lying with their riders slain.

29. With iron goads, and elephants prodigious as hills, furnished with shields and weapons, and with standards lying about, crushed with shafts ;

30. With excellent chariots deprived of steeds and charioteers and their warriors, lying scattered on the field, crushed by elephants and looking like agitated takes ;

31. With large bodies of foot soldiers, armed with various weapons and lying slain on the field, the earth assuming an awful aspect struck terror into the hearts of the cowards.

32. Beholding Abhimanyu equal to the sun or the moon in splendour lie dead on the field, your troops obtained great joy whilst the Pandavas were highly distressed.

33. When the young Abhimanyu still in his minority was slain, all the troops of the Pandavas fled even before the very eyes of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira.

34. Then upon the death of Abhimanyu, seeing his troops routed, Ajatasatru Yudhisthira addressed these words to the heroic warriors of his army :—

35. "This heroic son of Subhadra who without turning back from the battle has been slain by the enemy, has ascended to heaven. Stay you all, and do not fear. We shall yet conquer the foe."

36. Possessed of great energy and great effulgence, the virtuous king Yudhisthira that best of all warriors, himself overwhelmed with grief, tried to console them with those words.

37. (He went on) :—Having at first slain many hostile princes resembling snakes of virulent poison, the son of Arjuna has followed in their wake.

38. Having slain ten thousand car-warriors, and that mighty car-warrior namely the ruler of the Kosalas, Abhimanyu, equal to krishna and Arjuna, has indubitably gone to the manson of Sakra (Indra).

39. Having slain car-warriors, steeds, foot-soldiers and elephants by thousand, he was not satiated with what he achieved in battle. We should not bewail this performer of pious deeds ; he surely has attained the regions of righteousness, that men acquire by deeds of piety.

Thus ends the forty-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Abhimanyu in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER L.

(ABIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus having slain one of their best warriors and having been afflicted with their shafts and covered with blood, we returned to our quarters in the evening.

2. Gazed at by the foe and nearly senseless and overpowered with fatigue, we then,

O mighty monarch, slowly left the field of battle.

3. Then approached that wonderful hour, that joining between the day and the night, harbingered by the inauspicious yells of the jackals; and the sun then assuming the pale-red tint of the lotus-filaments, went down below the horizon, having neared the Western hills.

4. Then the sun robbed the radiance of of our excellent swords, lances, scimitars, car-fences, shields and ornaments; and causing the sky and the earth to assume the self-same hue, he then betook to his favourite shape of fire.

5. The earth was then covered over with motionless carcasses of myriads of elephants, all lifeless, resembling the peaks of cloud-clapt hills cleft open by the bolt of Heaven, and with their banners and goads scattered about and their guides dislodged from their backs.

6. The field of battle appeared beautiful with huge chariots splintered into pieces and with their warriors, drivers, ornaments, steeds, standards, streamers crushed, shattered and torn to pieces. Those cars then, O monarch, resembled animate beings deprived of their vital breaths by the enemy with his arrows.

7. Then the earth assumed a dreadful and repulsive aspect, being strewn over with numerous horses and their riders all lying dead, with precious housings and blankets of various kind scattered about, and in consequence of the tongues, teeth, entrails and eyes of those creatures being drawn out of their places.

8. Men adorned with precious armours, ornaments and garments and weapons, deprived of life, lay prostrate on the field with slain horses and elephants and shattered chariots, on the naked earth, totally helpless, although quite deserving of precious blankets and beds.

9. Greatly delighted dogs, jackals, and crows, and numerous other flesh-eating birds, and wolves and hyenas, and ravens and other blood-drinking animals, and various clans of Rakhasas, and large bodies of Pisachas, repairing to the field of battle,

10. Tore open the corpses and drank their fat marrow and blood and then fell upon eating their flesh. They began also to drink the secretions of rotten corpses, while some of the Rakshasas laughed terribly and dragged out dead bodies by thousands.

11—12. An awful river like the *Vaitarani* itself difficult of being tided over, was created there by many best of car-warriors. Its waters were formed by the blood of slain creatures. Chariots formed the rafts on which to cross it; elephants constituted its rocks, and the heads of men formed its pebbles. It was muddy with the flesh of slain elephants, men, and horses. Various kinds of weapons constituted the garlands floating on it. That dreadful current of blood flowed through the middle of the field of battle carrying with it living being to the doleful abodes of Death.

13. Drinking and eating in that stream numerous Pisachas of terrible and repulsive aspect rejoiced. Dogs and jackals and flesh eating birds, all partaking of the same food, and striking terror into the hearts of the living creatures held a great feast (on its banks).

14. Then at the advent of night, looking upon that fierce field of battle that had increased largely the population of Deaths regions, and that was infested with dancing headless trunks of soldiers, they slowly went away from it.

15. Then as they left it, they saw the mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu, who resembled Indra himself, lying on the field of battle, with precious ornaments displaced and falling off, and appearing like a sacrificial fire on the alter no longer fed by oblations of clarified butter.

Thus ends the fiftieth chapter, the description of the field of battle, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

When that hero that leader of a car-division *viz.*, Subhadra's son had been slain in battle, leaving their cars and doffing their coats of mail and throwing aside their bows, all the Pandavas,

2. Sat surrounding king Yudhisthira. They were then brooding upon their grief with their hearts occupied with the thought of the deceased son of Subhadra.

3. Then upon the death of his brother's son, the heroic and mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu, King Yudhisthira began to lament totally unmanned by grief.

Yudhisthira said :—

4. Desirous of doing an act agreeable to me, he (Abhimanyu) penetrated the array of Droma with the least difficulty,

like a lion penetrating into the midst of a herd of kine.

5. Meeting with him in battle, fierce bowmen, endowed with heroism, accomplished in the use of weapons, and incapable of being easily defeated in battle, were compelled to turn back.

6. Our implacable enemy Dussasana having encountered him in battle, was quickly compelled by his shafts to retreat, being nearly deprived of his senses.

7. Having crossed the ocean-like host of Drona's troops difficult of being defeated, that nephew of Krishna was despatched to Death's mansion, upon encountering the son of Dussasana.

8. Oh, now that Abhimanyu is slain, how shall I look upon Kunti's son Arjuna or upon the auspicious Subhadra bereft of her that dear-loved son!

9. What meaningless, disjointed and incoherent words shall we have to say to-day to both Hrishikesha and Dhananjaya!

10. It is myself, desirous of my own good and intent on victory, that have done this injury to Subhadra, Arjuna and Keshava!

11. A covetous man never finds his own short-comings; and it is from folly, that covetousness proceeds. Desirous of collecting the honey, I could not see that such a fall threatened me.

12. He who was a mere boy, and who should have been indulged with good food, conveyance, beds and ornaments, alas, even such a boy was placed by us in the thick of battle!

13. Like a steed of spirited mettle that sacrifices itself rather than obey the reins, how could that boy of tender years, unskilled in the modes of warfare reap good in such a perilous situation?

14. Alas, after him, to-day we also shall lay ourselves down on the field of battle, being consumed by the glances of grief cast by Vibhatsu inflamed with rage.

15. Arjuna is free from covetousness, intelligent, bashful, forbearing, handsome, powerful, endowed with well-developed limbs, respectful to the elders, heroic, amiable, and devoted to truth;

16. The feats of that one of fierce deeds even the gods applaud; that one of puissant energy slew the Nivatakavachas and also the Kalakeyas;

17. By him were the opponents of the great Indra, the dwellers of the golden cities, *viz.* the Poulamas slain with their followers, within the twinkling of an eye;

18. That lord gives assurance of safety to those who seek to be protected from their enemies. Alas, to-day, we have not been competent through fear, to save the son even of that one!

19. Surely a great fear has overtaken the mighty host of the son of Dhritarastra. Filled with rage at the slaughter of his son, the son of Pritha (Arjuna) without doubt extirpate the Kouravas.

20. It is also evident that the mean-minded Duryodhana, having mean counsellors, that destroyer of his own partisans, seeing the destruction of his troops and overtaken by grief, shall give up his life.

21. Beholding this son of Indra's son endowed with unequalled energy and prowess fallen on the field of battle, neither victory, nor kingdom, nor immortality, nor equality of rank with the celestials, does afford me the least joy."

Thus ends the fifty-first chapter, the lamentations of Yudhisthira, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thus when the son of Kunti, king Yudhisthira, was indulging in lamentations, there came to him the mighty sage Krishna Dwaipayana.

2. Then having duly worshipped him, Yudhisthira resumed his seat; and afflicted with grief at the death of his brother's son, he then thus addressed the *Rishi.*

Yudhisthira said:—

3. The son of Subhadra has been slain in battle when fighting with many, by several fierce bowmen of vicious tendencies, who, mighty car-warriors as they were, surrounded him on all sides.

4. That slayer of hostile heroes that son of Subhadra, was a mere child in years and in understanding. And he fought in battle against overwhelming numbers.

5. During the course of the fight I said to him "Open a passage for us." Then he penetrated into the hostile array, and then we could not follow him, prevented by the ruler of the Sindhus.

6. Those who live by fighting should surely desire equal combats. But this battle that the enemy fought with Abhimanyu was an extremely unfair one.

7. It is this that burns me with the fire of grief, and draws tears of sorrow from my eyes. Brooding over this thought I can not regain the tranquility of my mind.

Sanjaya said :—

8. Then the almighty Vyasa addressing Yudhisthira who was thus bewailing and was unmanned by the force of his grief, spoke the following words.

Vyasa said :—

9. O Yudhisthira, O son of superior wisdom, O son who are well-learnt in all the branches of knowledge, O foremost of the Bharatas, people of your stamp are never confounded in seasons of calamity.

10. This hero (Abhimanyu), this foremost of all male beings, has attained paradise after having slain numerous enemies in battle and having achieved many feats not at all boy-like.

11. O Yudhisthira, this law (that created being shall die) can not be violated. O Bharata, Death takes away all,—Gods, Danavas, and Gandharvas, (without exception).

Yudhisthira said :—

12. These rulers of earth, all endued with great might, are now lying on the bare ground of the battle-field being slain and deprived of their senses.

13. Some of them possessed strength equal to that of ten thousand elephants; some, on the other hand, possessed the impetus and force of the very tempest. They have all been slain in battle by beings of their species and are all equal now.

14. I do not see the slayer of these created beings in battle, (save one of their own class). They were possessed of prowess and endued with might and energy.

15. Alas even those who entertained in their heart the hope of conquering one another in battle, are now lying slain deprived of their senses, in spite of all their wisdom.

16. The significance of the word 'Death' has to-day been clearly brought home (to our minds), as almost all these rulers of earth possessed of fierce prowess, lie dead on the field of battle.

17. These heroes having succumbed to their foes, are now lying motionless and shorn of their pride. Many princes inflamed with wrath have fallen upon the fire of their antagonist's anger.

18. On this point a great doubt has taken possesion of me, namely, whence has the word "dead" been derived? Whose offspring is Death? whence does it come, and why does it take away creatures? O you equal to a celestial, O grandsire, speak to me about all this.—

Sanjaya said :—

19. Then that illustrious sage spoke these comforting words to Yudhisthira, the son of Kunti, who had been questioning him in the above manner.

Vyasa said :—

20. On this subject, O monarch, an ancient story is cited as an example,—story that was related to Akampana by Narada.

21. So far as I know, O king, Akampana, while in this world, was also afflicted with the overwhelming and unbearable grief caused by his son's death.

22. I shall now recount to you the excellent story of the origin of Death. Hearing that story you shall be freed from grief and from the bondage of affection.

23. Listen to me, O Sire, as I go on repeating that ancient story. This story is excellent, and enhances the period of life, and kills sorrow and bestows health.

24. It is holy, capable of destroying large numbers of foes, and the most auspicious of all auspicious things. Verily this story is like the study or recital of the Vedas themselves.

25. It should, O king, be every morning listened to by those foremost of the twice-borns, who desire to obtain long-lived sons, sovereignty and their own welfare.

26. In the days of yore during the *Krita-Yuga*, O Sire, there lived a certain king by name Akampana. Once on a time, on the field of battle, amongst his foes, he was on the point of succumbing to his enemies.

27. He had a son by name Hari, who was equal to Narayana himself in might; he was exceedingly handsome, accomplished in the use of weapons, intelligent, powerful and equal to Sakra in battle.

28. Surrounded by countless foes on the field of battle, he shot thousands of shafts at the warriors and elephants that encompassed him.

29. Having achieved many feats difficult of being achieved, that afflicter of foes, O Yudhisthira, was slain amidst his troops by his adversaries.

30. Performing the funeral ceremonies of his son, king Akampana became purified. But bewailing his son, day and night, he could not regain his peace of mind.

31. Then cognisant of his grief caused by the death of his son, there came near him the celestial sage Narada himself.

32. That monarch of illustrious qualities, beholding the sage come, worshipped him duly and then spoke to him these words.

33. And then that ruler of men spoke to the Rishi all that had happened, his defeat by his foes and the slaughter of his son by them.

Akampana said :—

34. My son of great energy and might equal to Indra or Vishnu him-elf in effulgence, has been killed in battle by his numerous enemies, when engaged in fighting vigorously with them.

35. But, O illustrious sage, who is this Death, what is his prowess, might and manliness? O foremost of intelligent beings, I desire to know the real truth about all these questions.

Vyasa said :—

36. Having heard those words of his, the lord Narada, that bestower of boons, related this story that is capable of destroying the great sorrow caused by the death of one's son.

37. Hear, O mighty-armed monarch, this long story, exactly, O ruler of earth, as I myself have heard it.

38. In the beginning of the creation, the Grandsire Brahma created all beings. Then that highly powerful one, seeing that the beings of his creation suffered no decay,

39. Fell to thinking, O king, as to how he should cause their destruction. Meditating long over the subject, he then failed to find out any means of destruction, O ruler of earth.

40. (Then he waxed wroth); and inconsequence of that wrath then, a fire sprang out from the skies. That fire spread in all the quarters of heaven, and it began to consume all the regions of the universe.

41. Thereat heaven, earth and the welkin, all became overspread with tongues of flame. And that Almighty lord then burnt down the universe with its mobile and immobile creatures and objects.

42. Then mobile and immobile, all creatures were annihilated. Verily the puissant Brahma did all this, frightening the worlds with the fierceness of his angers.

43. Thereupon Hara, otherwise called Sthanu, wearing matted locks on his head, that Lord of all the night-rangers, sought shelter from the divine Brahma that foremost of all gods.

44. Thus when Sthanu had fallen (at Brahma's feet) desirous of doing good to the creatures, that highest divinity, the foremost of all ascetics, burning with effulgence said :—

45. What desire of yours shall we fulfil, O you that deserve to have all your wishes gratified! O son, you are born out of our will. We shall accomplish all that is dear unto you. Speak, O Sthanu, what you desire (to have).

Thus ends the fifty-second chapter, the consolation of Yudhisthira's grief, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sthanu said :—

1. O Lord, you did take great pains for creating various creatures. All these different sorts of beings have been created and reared by you.

2. Those very creatures are now being burnt down by the fire of your anger. Seeing their condition, I am filled with compassion; O Lord, O illustrious One, be merciful on them.

Brahma said :—

3. I had no desire for destroying the worlds. I wanted to leave them in peace; I always desired the earth's welfare. But then anger took possession of me.

4. The goddess of earth, over-burdened with the heavy weight of creatures, always solicited me for destroying the beings on her surface, O mighty God.

5. Then though thinking in many ways, I could not find out the means for destroying the infinite creation. At this, anger entered into me.

Rudra said :—

6. Be propitiated, O ruler of the universe, and do not cherish wrath for the destruction of creatures. Do you not any longer destroy the mobile and immobile creatures.

7. Through your grace, O almighty Lord, the universe is divided in three divisions, *viz.*, the Past, the Present and the Future. Let it remain as it is;

8. You have, O lord, blazed up in anger t from anger this fire has proceeded, and tha fire now consumes rocks, trees and rivers ;

9. And all kinds of shrubs and grass. Verily that fire is blasting the mobile and immobile universe.

10. Behold the mobile and immobile universe reduced to ashes. Be propitiated, O almighty God! give not way to wrath. Even this boon do I beg.

11. All created things, O Divine Being' that belong to you, are being consumed; therefore withdraw your energy, let it be quenched in your ownself.

12. Look at the creatures of your own creation, filled with a desire for doing good to them all. Do that by which all these beings endued with life, may continue to ilve.

13. Let not these beings with their prowess of propagation weakened, be exterminated. O Creator of the world, you have employed me to be their protector.

14. O Lord of the universe, let not this mobile and immobile universe be destroyed. You are inclined to show mercy and it is for this reason that I now speak thus.

Narada said :—

15. Hearing these words (of Mahadeva) the Divine Brahma, desirous of accomplishing the good of the created beings, withdrew in his own inner self his anger that had been excited.

16. Quenching that fire, the illustrious benefactor of the universe, the Supreme Lord, declared the duties of Production and Emancipation.

17. When that high-souled god had thus extinguished that fire of his wrath, there came out from the various outlets of his sense-organs, a female figure.

18. She was dark and red and tawny and her tongue, countenance and eyes were red, and she was adorned with two shining ear-rings and various other brilliant ornaments.

19. Coming out of his body, she betook to the southern quarter, and she smilingly cast glances at those two lords of the universe.

20. Then Brahma, that controller of the creation and destruction of the world, called her by the name of Death. And, O ruler of men, he said to her :—" Slay these beings of my creation.

21. You are the offspring of the wrath I harboured for the destruction of the universe. Therefore kill you all these creations including the learned and the idiot,

22. At my own behest. Thus you shall attain your own good." Thus spoken to by him, that lady of lotus-like eyes, called "Death,"

23. Meditated for a long time, and then began to wail aloud helplessly in plaintive voice. Then the grandsire with two hands caught the tears that flowed from her eyes, for the welfare of all creatures, and entreated her in the following words.

Thus ends the fifty-third chapter, the story of the origin of Death in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LIV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA.)

Continued.

Narada said —

1. Then that helpless lady restraining her grief within herself, thus addressed the lord of the people, with folded palms and bending like a creeper with humility.

Death said :—

2. O most eloquent of all speakers, how shall I, created a female by you, do such heartless and mischievous deeds, knowing them at the same time to be so?

3. I fear sin greatly; O illustrious lord, be propitious on me. Sons, friends, brothers, fathers and husbands are always dear to creatures.

4. If they are destroyed by my hands, they that will incur the loss, shall endeavour to avenge themselves on me. It is them that I fear. The drops of tears that will fall from the eyes of grief-stricken and bewailing persons,

5. Fill me with terror. Thus affrighted, O illustrious Lord, I seek thy protection. O foremost of the celestials, O Divine Being, I will not go to Yama's abode.

6. O you that bestow boons, I do propitiate you, by bending my head low, and by folding my hands, O Grandsire of the worlds, I desire the fulfilment of even this wish of mine at your hands.

7. O Lord of the creation, I desire to carry on ascetic austerities through your grace. O great Lord, O divine being, accord me this boon.

8. Permitted by you, I shall go to the excellent hermitage of Dhenuka, and there shall I practice ascetic austerities of the most severe sort, being engaged in worshipping yourself.

9. O Lord of the celestials, I shall not be able to destroy the dear lives of living creatures, when they will weep in grief. Save me from unrighteousness.

Brahma said :—

10. You have been created, O Death, for causing the destruction of creatures; go,

destroy all the creatures; entertain no scruples whatsoever.

11. This must have happened and nothing could have prevented it. Carry out my command; none in the world will find any fault with you.

Narada said :—

12. Thus spoken to, the lady became pleased, and she stood with her face turned towards the illustrious god. And out of desire for doing good to the creatures, she did not set her heart upon the destruction of creature.

13. Then that Divinity, the Lord of the lords of creatures also remained silent for a while; and the grandsire soon became satisfied with his ownself.

14. Then turning his eyes upon the creatures he smiled. Then the creatures lived cheerfully as before, undisturbed by premature death.

15. When that invincible and illustrious divinity had cast his wrath off, that lady also went away from the presence of that intelligent being.

16. Then without having promised the destruction of creatures, she went away, O king; and then Death hastily came to Dhenuka.

17. There she practised a vow excellent and greatly severe. There she stood on one leg for sixteen times ten billions of years,

18. And five times ten billions also, through compassion for living creatures and through desire for doing them good, all the time withholding her senses from their dear objects.

19. Once more, O monarch, she stood there on one leg for twenty one times ten billions of years.

20. Then she roved for ten times ten thousand billions of years with the animals. Then once again repairing to the holy river *Nanda* that was full of cool and translucent water,

21. She passed in those waters eight thousand years. Practising austere penances on the banks of the Nanda, she purged herself of all her sins.

22. Then observant of her vows, she first visited the sacred *Kousiki*; living upon air and water only, she practised penances there.

23. Going then to *Panchaganga* and afterwards to *Vetasa*, that already-purified lady, pulled her own body down by performing various kinds of asceticism.

24. Repairing next to the Ganga and thence to the great Maru, she remained inert like a block of stone, devoting herself in the practice of Pranayama (suspension of breaths).

25. From that place repairing to the crest of the Himavat Mountain, where, in the days of yore, the gods had performed their sacred sacrifices, that excellent and auspicious damsel stood on her tip toe for a billion of years.

26. Thence going to Puskara and Gokarna and Naimisha and Malaya, she pulled her health down by the practice of penances after her own choice.

27. Without worshipping any other god and with firm devotion to the Grandsire, she lived and propitiated him in every way and everywhere.

28. Thereafter the undeteriorating Creator of the universe, thus propitiated, spoke to her with a softened and joyful heart thus :—

29. " O Death, what for are you undergoing all these severe ascetic penances ?" Thereat Death once more addressed the illustrious divinity, the Grandsire, saying :—

30. "O God, I shall not be able to destroy the living creatures. They are all in the enjoyment of health and do not envy one another. O Lord, even this is the boon that I want at your hands, O master of all.

31. I am afraid of sin; and it is for this reason that I am engaged in the practice of ascetic austerities. O blessed Lord! vouchsafe assurances of eternal safety to me overwhelmed with terror.

32. A woman by birth, helpless and sinless, I implore your mercy, be you my refuge." Thereupon that Divinity possessed of the knowledge of the past, the present, and the future thus spoke to her again.

33. "In destroying all these creatures, O Death, you shall reap no sin. My words, O handsome damsel, can never be false.

34. Therefore, O blessed lady, destroy these four kinds of creatures. Eternal virtue shall always be yours.

35. Yama, the Regent of the worlds and the various maladies, shall help you in your work of destruction. Myself and the celestials also will bestow boons on you;

36—37. So that purged of all sins and perfectly purified, you shall attain glory." Having been thus spoken to, O mighty monarch, she, with her palms folded, thus addressed the Lord, saluting him by bending her head low.—"If, O lord, such be

the state of things, and if it cannot do without me,

38. Then I place your behest upon my own head. However hear what I have to say. Let covetousness, anger, animosity malice, dissensions and folly and shamelessness and other stern passions tear to pieces the frames of corporeal beings."

Brahma said :—

39. It shall be as you desire, O Death, Do you begin to destroy the creatures. No sin will hang on you ; I shall not seek to injure you, O blessed damsel.

40. These tears of yours which I hold in my hands, even they will become maladies, starting into existence from the creatures themselves. They will destroy men whose life-time has been exhausted. No sin will hang on you. Do not be frightened.

41—42. Verily sin shall not be yours. You shall be the righteousness of living creatures ; and the presiding deity of that righteousness. Devoted to virtue and observant of your duties, you shall control all creatures. Therefore destroy always the lives of these corporeal creatures. Renouncing both desire and anger, snatch out the lives of all living creatures. In this way you shall secure eternal merit. Sin will destroy those who are vicious in their conduct of life.

43. Carrying out my command, purify yourself. The task of plunging those who are wicked, in their own sins, will be left to you. Therefore renounce desire and anger and begin destroying those creatures possessed of life."

Narada said :—

44. Thereafter that lady, seeing that she was persistently called by the name of Death, became afraid of acting otherwise. And in fear of Brahma's malediction, she said :—'Yea.' Unable to set at naught the behests of Brahma, she began, renouncing wrath and desire, to deprive living creatures of their lives, when their last days came.

45. Death is the lot of all living creatures. Maladies originate out of living creatures. Maladies are the abonormal conditions of living beings, and they are pained by them. Disease and death fall to the share of all creatures. Therefore do you not indulge in fruitless grief.

46. Upon the death of living creatures, their senses go with them ; and achieving their respective functions (in the other world, they come back with their possessors, (when they are born anew). Thus all creatures including the gods going thither, have to act like mortals, O best of all kings.

47. The wind that is tremendous, of dreadful roars and great strength, omnipresent and endowed with energy infinite, even that wind will tear open the bodies of living creatures. It will, in this action, put forth no active energy, nor will it suspend its workings.

48. Even all the gods are qualified with the adjective mortal. Therefore, O foremost of kings, do not bewail your son. Your son having ascended to heaven, is enjoying perpetual happiness, in those delightful regions allotted to the heroes.

49. Renouncing all grief, he has obtained the fellowship of the virtuous. Death has been ordained for all corporeal beings by the Creator himself. So when their days are numbered, they suffer destruction. The death of creatures is brought about by their ownselves.

50. Creatures destroy themselves. Death does not destroy any one, armed though she is with the mortal dart. Therefore the wise, knowing death to be unavoidable being ordained by Brahma, never lament for those that are dead. Now knowing that death is ordained by the highest divinity, renounce, without delay, your sorrow for your son."

Vyasa said :—

51. Having heard these words of grave signification uttered by Narada, king Akampana, addressing his friend Narada said.

52. "O illustrious one, O foremost of the Rishis, I am gratified and my sorrow has left me. Hearing this story from you, I am contented and I salute you."

53. Thus spoken to by that monarch, Narada, that excellent of all the foremost sages, that celestial sage of immeasurable soul, speedily went back to the Nandana forest.

54. The frequent audition as well as the recital of this piece of history is held to be purifying, fame-giving, leading to paradise, life-giving and fraught with all blessings.

55. Having heard this instructive story, renounce your sorrow, O king Yudhisthira, you know the duties of a Kshatriya and the region they attain to after death.

56. The mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu endued with great energy has ascended to heaven, having slain his enemies in battle, before the presence of all bowmen.

57. That mighty car-warrior, that fierce bowman, has been slain, when fighting, with swords, lances, maces and bows.

58. He is the sinless son of the moon and is now dissolved in the lunar essence. Therefore, O son of Pandu, mustering all your courage, yourself accompanied by your brothers, speedily march out for battle inflamed with wrath and without allowing your senses to become stupefied.

Thus ends the fifty-fourth chapter, the colloquy between Death and the Lord of Creation, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Having heard of the origin of Death and her strange deeds, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, once more humbly addressing Vyasa said these words :—

Yudhisthira said :—

2. In many blessed countries there were many many monarchs, of virtuous deeds and of prowess equal to that of Sakra (Indra) himself. O Brahman they were royal sages, sinless, and lovers of truthful speech.

3. Once again, do you address me in words of grave signification, and comfort me with the story of the feats of those royal sages of ancient days.

4. What was the amount of the sacrificial gifts made by them? Who were those royal sages of high soul and virtuous practices that made them? Tell me all this, O almighty *Rishi*!

Vyasa said :—

5. There lived in days gone by, a king known by the name of Srinjaya. He had a son who was named Swaitya; the sages Parvata and Narada were his friends.

6. Once on a time desirous of an interview with him, the *Rishis* entered his palace. Being duly adored by him, they continued to live there happily.

7. One day when Srinjaya was seated with the sages at his ease, his very beautiful daughter of pure smiles came to him.

8. Then saluted by that daughter of his, he greeted her with benedictions after her own desire, when she was standing beside him.

9. Beholding that girl, Parvata smilingly said these words to Srinjaya :—"Whose daughter is this girl of restless glances and auspicious marks?

10. Is she the effulgence of the solar orb or the blazing flame of Fire? Or is she *Sri*, or *Hari*, or *Kirti* or *Dhriti*, or *Pushti*, or *Siddhi* or the splendour of the moon?"

11. Thereupon king Srinjaya replied to the celestial sage who spoke those words, thus :—"O Almighty *Rishis*, this damsel is my daughter and she solicits my blessings."

12. Thereafter Narada addressed the king saying :—"O monarch, if you desire to secure great good, give me this your daughter in marriage."

13. Filled with delight (at the *Rishi's* proposal) Srinjaya said to Narada :—"I shall give her in marriage to you." Thereat the other sage Parvata excited with wrath, said these words to Narada.

14. "You have accepted this girl for your wife, whom before you I had chosen in my heart to be my wife; and because you have done this, you shall not, O Brahmana, go to heaven at your will."

15. Thus spoken to, Narada said to him these words in reply :—"The husband's heart, his speech, the giver's consent, the speeches of both of them, the actual gift made with the sprinkling of water,

16. The *mantras* specified for holding the bride's hands,—these have been said to be the indications by which one becomes known as the husband of a damsel. But these ceremonials are not sufficient, the essential one being the walk for seven paces after the marriage.

17. Without any provocation whatever, you have pronounced a curse on me. Therefore you also shall not go to heaven save in my company."

18—20. Thus having cursed each other those two sages continued to live there. Meanwhile Srinjaya, desirous of obtaining a son, and purifying himself, began to gratify the Vipras to the best of his resources, with drinks, garments and foods. After a while, those Brahmanas devoted to the study of the Vedas, and acquainted with the contents of the scriptures and their various auxuliaries, being gratified with the king, who desired to have a son, came in a body to Narada, and said to him;—"Give this king a son of the sort he desires."

21. Thus spoken to by the regenerate sages, Narada said 'Let it be so'; and then he addressed Srinjaya saying :—'O royal sage, the Brahmanas have been gratified with you and they desire to bestow a son on you.

22. Good betide you. Ask for the boon about the kind of the son you wish to have.' Thus addressed, the king with folded palms, solicited the boon of getting a son endued with all qualities,

23. Famous, possessed of glory, highly energetic and subduer of all foes, whose urine, excreta, secretions and perspiration would be gold."

24. The king then obtained a son in due time who came to be called Suvarnasthivi on earth, and through the virtue of that boon the child began to increase the wealth of his father beyond all limit.

25. King Srinjaya then caused all objects of his desire to be made of gold; and his houses and walls and fortresses and the residencies of the Brahmanas,

26. His beds, conveyances, plates and all kinds of cups, saucers, &c., and the mansion he possessed, and all implements and utensils, domestic and otherwise,

27. Were caused to be made of gold. In the course of time his treasure went on increasing. Then certain robbers hearing of the prince and seeing him to be such,

28. Banded together and endeavoured to do mischief to the king. Some of them said, "We shall seize the son of the king.

29. He is the mine of gold of his father. Let us therefore try to seize him." Thereafter those robbers, led by covetousness, entered the king's palace;

30. And forcibly took away the young prince Suvarnasthivi; seizing him, and carrying him to the woods, those idiots not knowing what to do with him,

31. Out of avarice slew him and cut him to pieces. But they found not any gold inside his frame. When that child was deprived of his life, all the gold consequent on the sages' boon, disappeared.

32. The robbers then, ignorant and idiotic as they were, slew one another; for having slain that wonderful prince, they also met with their destruction.

33. These robbers of wicked deed were plunged to an awful and unimaginable hell. Then beholding his son obtained through a boon slain, that one of great asceticism, *viz.*,

34. King Srinjaya began to lament plaintively being afflicted with terrible grief. Hearing the king afflicted with grief caused by his son's death thus lament,

35. The celestial Rishi Narada revealed himself before the king. And he spoke these words to the bewailing and woe-stricken and senseless

36. King Srinjaya. O Yudhisthira listen now to those words.

Narada said :—

You shall have to die, O Srinjaya, with many of your desires unfulfilled,

37. Although we the reciters of the sacred Veda live under your roof. O Srinjaya, we had to hear of the death of even Avikshita's son Marutta.

38—40. Piqued with Vrihaspati, he had compelled even Samvarta himself to be a office-bearer in one of his great sacrifices. To that royal sage, the illustrious divinity (Mahadeva) had given wealth in the shape of a golden plateau of Himavat. Therewith Marutta had accomplished numerous sacrifices. After the accomplishment of his sacrifices, various tribes of celestials, the creators of the world, accompanied by Indra and headed by Vrihaspati, used to come to him. All the carpets and furnitures of his sacrificial compound were made of gold.

41—43. At his sacrifices the twice-born sects desirous of food all ate as it pleased them—food that was purified and suited to their tastes. At all his sacrifices, milk and curds and clarified butter and honey and other kinds of drinks and edibles, all of the finest sort, and garments and ornaments precious and desirable, used to be given to Brahmanas thoroughly acquainted with the scriptures. The very gods became the distributors of food in Marutta's palace.

44—47. The *Viswadevas* were the courtiers of that royal sage, the son of Avikshita. By him were propitiated the dwellers of heaven with oblations of clarified butter; gratified therewith, the gods, in their turn, increased that sovereign's wealth of corn by profuse showers of rain. He always contributed to the pleasure of the Rishis, the ancestral manes, and the celestials, and thereby made them propitious, as also by practising Brahmacharyya, by the study of the Vedas, by observance of obsequial rites and by offering all kinds of gifts. His beds and carpets and conveyances and his vast treasures of gold difficult to be given away, in reality, all that vast amount of wealth of his, were voluntarily distributed among the Brahmanas. Indra himself wished him well. His subjects were made happy by him.

48. Performing all acts through piety, he finally attained to the eternal regions of bliss acquired by his religious merit. With his children, counsellors wives, descendants, relatives,

49—50. King Marutta, in the days of his youth, ruled his dominions for a thousand years. When even such a monarch,

O Srinjaya, superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues, and who, superior to you, was much more superior to your son, had to suffer death, do not lament for your son, saying 'O Swaitya,' who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial presents.

Thus ends the fifty-fifth chapter, the story of Swaitya, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LVI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we heard also of the death of king Suhotra, who was the foremost of all heroes, invincible and interviewed by the gods themselves.

2. Having obtained his kingdom by virtue, he used to question his Rittijwas, family priests, and Brahmanas about his welfare and then used to live up to their instructions.

3. Knowing virtue to be identified with the protection of his subjects, acts of charity and performance of sacrifices and the subjugation of foes, Suhotra desired the increase of his wealth.

4. He worshipped the gods according to the ordinances of the holy texts, and conquered his foes by means of his arrows. He pleased all creatures with his own excellent acquirements.

5. During his time of rule, the Earth was freed from the depridation of Mlechchas and the forest-thieves, and the Parjannya showered gold throughout the whole year.

6—7. In those days of his the rivers ran liquid gold, and were open to the use of everybody. Parjannya then poured on his kingdom large numbers of golden alligators, crabs and fishes of various classes, and many other objects of desire; the artificial lakes of his dominions were full two miles long.

8. Then king Suhotra beholding thousands of dwarfs, hunch-backs, alligators and sharks and tortoises, all made of gold, was greatly amazed.

9. That royal sage, having performed a sacrifice in Kurujangala, gave away that unlimited quantity of gold to the Brahmanas, even before the accomplishment of that sacrifice.

10. Having celebrated a thousand horse-sacrifices, a hundred *Rajasuya* sacrifices, and, numerous other *Kshatriya* sacrifices, in all of which he gave away vast wealth as sacrificial presents,

11. And also having accomplished numerous daily rites from specific wishes, that king ultimately attained to a very desirable end. O Srinjaya, when even such a king suffered death, who was superior to you in all the four virtues,

12. And so was superior to your son,—you should not lament for your son saying 'O Swaitya' who performed no sacrifice and gave away no sacrificial presents.

Thus ends the fifty-sixth chapter, the story of Suhotra, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LVII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard of the death of the heroic king Pourava, who gave away a thousand times thousand horses that were all white in colour.

2. At the celebration of the horse-sacrifice by him, the number of Brahmanas learned in the Siksha and Aksharas that then presented themselves from different countries, was indeed countless.

3. These Brahmanas, purified by the Vedas, by learning, by the observance of vows, all of benevolent dispositions and of amiable features, received from the monarch gifts of such things as garments, horses, precious beeds, carpets and conveyances.

4. They were always entertained by actors, dancers, ministrels perfectly accomplished and well-acquainted with their respective arts, and engaged in sports and always striving for pleasing the former.

5, At each of his sacrifices, in due time, he used to give away as *Dakshina*, ten thousand elephants of golden effulgence, with their temporal juice trickling down,

6. And also golden chariots decked with standards and flags. He also used to give away as *Dakshina* a thousand times thousand damsels, all adroned with golden ornaments,

7. And chariots, elephants and horses for mounting, and mansions and fields and hundreds of cows, and thousands of high-souled cattle-tenders all decked with chains of gold. People conversant with the history of the past ages sing this song, *viz.*,

9. That in that sacrifice king Pourava gave away as gifts kine with calves, having horns of gold, hoofs of silver and udders of brass, as also numerous male and female slaves, asses, camels, and sheep.

10. He also gave away as presents, diverse kinds of gems, and numerous piles of food and edibles, even before the accomplishment of his sacrifices.

11. That monarch of the Angas, ever devoted to the performance of sacrifice, celebrated many auspicious sacrifices suited to his order, one after another, according to their respective efficacy; and these sacrifices yielded all his objects of desire.

12. O Srinjaya, when even such a king suffered destruction, who was superior to you in all his four cardinal virtues and so who was far superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying, *Oh Swaitya* and should not grieve for his having performed no sacrifices and made no sacrificial presents.

Thus ends the fifty-seventh chapter, the story of king Pourava, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LVIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada Said:—

1. We heard, O Srinjaya, that even Sini, the son of Usinara, had to suffer death, who had put, as it were, a leathern band round the entire earth.

2. He made the earth with her mountain and the islands and seas and forests resound with the clatter of his car-wheels. That subduer of foes, *viz.*, Sini himself, every day used to slay the foremost of his opponents.

3. He celebrated various sacrifices attended with profuse sacrificial presents; that highly puissant and intelligent monarch acquired enormous quantity of wealth.

4. In battle he came to be recognised as the head of all the Kshatriyas. Having brought the entire earth under his control, he performed many Horse-sacrifices,

5. Productive of great merit without any the least obstruction, giving away as sacrificial presents thousands and millions of golden *nikshas*, numerous elephants, steeds, and other kinds of animals, large quantities of grain and countless deer, cows and sheep.

6—9. And Sini also offered as a gift to the Brahmanas this earth consisting of various different kinds of soil. Indeed Usinara's son Sini gave away as presents as many kine as is the number of rain drops showered on the earth, or the number of stars in the firmament or the number of sand grains on the bed of the river Ganga, or the number of stones that compose the mount Meru, or the number of gems or aquatic animals in the ocean. The Lord of creation has not come across or will not come across, in the past, the present or the future, another king competent to bear the burden that king Sini bore on his shoulders. The sacrifices celebrated by king Sini were numerous and attended with all sorts of rites.

10. In his sacrifices, the stakes, the carpets, the horses, the walls and the arches were all made of gold. Edibles and drink suited to the taste and perfectly pure, were used to be supplied in abundance; and the Brahmanas that came there were countless.

11. Viands and edibles of every discription were used to be distributed with agreeable words,(such as 'take, accept'&c.). There milk and curds used to be collected in lakes of large dimensions. In his sacrificial compound, flowed rivers of drink and stood hills of white edibles.

12. "Drink" "bathe" 'eat' and 'do as you like", these were the words that used to be heard there. Pleased with his deeds of piety, Rudra bestowed a boon on him, saying:—

13. "As you give away numerous presents, let your wealth, your devotion, your renown, your meritorious deeds, the love that people cherish for you and the paradise that you shall attain to, let all these of yours, be inexhaustible."

14. Having obtained even such a desirable boon, in due time, Sini had to go to heaven. O Srinjaya, even when such a king had to suffer death who was superior to you in respect of the four virtues,

15. And consequently who was far more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying—O Swaitya—who performed no sacrifice and made no gifts.

Thus ends the fifty-eighth chapter, the story of king Sini, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LIX.

(ABHIMANYU BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Narada said:—

1. O Srinjaya, we heard that even Rama that son of Dasaratha, had to suffer death. His subjects were as much delighted with him as a father is pleased with the sons of his own loins.

2. In that one endowed with immeasurable energy, innumerable virtues resided. At the command of his father that undeteriorating one, for fourteen long years,

3. Lived in the woods with his wife and his younger brother Lakshmana. While in the forest of Janasthana, that foremost of men slew Rakshasas,

4. Fourteen thousand in number, for the protection of the ascetics. When he was living there, the Rakshasa, by name Ravana,

5. Stole away his wife, the princess of Videha, having deceived both himself and his follower Lakshmana. That son of Poulasta invincible by his enemies who had injured him, Rama

6. Slew in battle, being excited with rage, like the three-eyed Mahadeva slaying the demon Andhaka; that one (Ravana) incapable of being slain by the celestials and the Asuras, that thorn in the sides of the Gods and Brahmanas,

7. Namely that descendant of Poulasta, the mighty-armed Rama slew in battle, with all his followers. In consequence of his showing mercy towards his subjects he used to be honoured by the celestials themselves.

8. That one (Rama), served even by the Gods and the sages, filled the earth with his fame. Having acquired immeasurable kingdoms, he used to treat his subjects with kindness.

9. Cherishing his subjects virtuously, that lord without any hindrance, accomplished one hundred of that mighty sacrifice *Aswamedha* together with the sacrifice called *Jaruthya*.

10. He created great joy in Indra by pouring libations of clarified butter on the fire. And, O king, he celebrated many other kinds of sacrifice, all productive of great religious merit.

11. Rama conquered hunger and thirst and he was beyond the influence of maladies that trouble the corporeal creation. He was always attended with all kinds of virtues, and burnt in his own energy.

12. Indeed Rama, the son of Dasaratha surpassed in beauty all other created beings. The *Rishis*, the celestials, and the mortals all together

13. Lived on the face of the earth, when Rama ruled over the kingdom. Then the lives of animate beings never terminated untimely.

14. When Rama ruled his dominions, the vital breaths known as *Prana*, and *Apana*, and *Samana* and others, all duly performed their functions. All splendour appeared to increase and evil portents were never seen.

15. All his subjects then enjoyed length of days; men then were not taken away in the prime of their life. The denizens of heaven, highly satisfied, used to obtain, according to the (ordinances of the) four Vedas,

16. Libations of clarified butter and other offerings of edibles presented by men. His dominions were not infested with gnats and flies, and they were free from snakes and other reptiles,

17. Living creatures died not being drowned and prematurely; fire did not consume anything then. Then there were none, of vicious propensities, and covetous and ignorant.

18. His subjects, belonging to all the four castes, were engaged in the performance of righteous and desirable deeds. The Rakshasas then, used to hinder the adoration of the Pitris in Janasthana.

19. The Lord Rama slaying them, caused the offerings and the adoration to be once more made to the ancestral manes, and the gods. Men then became fathers of thousand sons and their duration of life covered a thousand years.

20. Then seniors in age had never the misfortunes of performing the obsequies of their juniors. Youthful, of a dark blue complexion, of red eyes, possessing the tread of an infuriate elephant,

21—22. Having arms hanging down to the knees and of well-shape, of shoulders resembling those of the lion, and of great might, that delighter of the hearts of beings, namely Rama, ruled his kingdom for eleven thousand years. His subjects were then always occupied in talking about him.

23. While Rama ruled his kingdom, the world became most charming and captivating. At last, taking his subjects belonging to all the four orders with him, Rama ascended to heaven,

24. Having perpetuated his own line in eight separate dynasties of kings. When,

O Srinjaya, even such a king died who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues,

25. Consequently, who was far more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying "O Swaitya" who performed no sacrifce and made no sacrificial presents.

Thus ends the fifty-ninth chapter, the story of Rama, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LX.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard that king Bhagiratha, fell a prey to death, Bhagiratha who caused the banks of Ganga—called Bhagirathi after him—to be covered with flights of golden steps.

2. He gave away to Brahmanas, kings and princes, a thousand times thousand damsels, all adorned with ornaments of gold.

3. All those damsels were mounted on chariots; and to all the chariots were harnessed four steeds; and again every chariot was attended with a hundred elephants all decked with chains of gold.

4. A thousand horses followed each king and after each horse, came a hundred cows and after the cows came sheep and deer, countless in number.

5. Bhagiratha gave away enormous gifts at his sacrifices in consequence of which, large used to be the concourse of people at them. Afflicted with the heavy burden of men, Ganga saying 'protect me', sat down upon his lap.

6. And because in the days of yore Ganga sat on his lap, she, like Urvasi, came to be regarded as his daughter and was named after him. Then having become the kings daughter, she became his son (i. e. she procured, like a son, the salvation of his ancestors).

7. Gandharvas of melodious voice and solar effulgence, greatly pleased, sang this song in the hearing of the anscertral manes, the celestials and the human beings.

8. Thus, O Srinjaya, that Goddess namely the ocean-going Ganga, chose the Lord Bhagiratha that descendant of Ikshaku, that performer of sacrefices with profuse gifts, to be her father.

9. His sacrifices were always honoured by the presence of the celestials with Indra at their head. Removing all obstructions, the Gods used to appropriate their respective shares, and to facilitate those sacrifices in every way.

10. That self-controlled king Bhagiratha highly pleased used to give to the Brahmanas all their objects of desire, and all things that any one of the Brahmanas used to set his heart upon.

11. He had nothing that he would have hesitated to give to the Brahmanas. Every one obtained from him everything he wanted; that king also, through the grace of the Brahmanas, ascended to regions of Brahma.

12. For the self-same object for which the sages living on the rays of the sun, used to dance attendance upon the Sun, for that very object they used to wait upon the Lord Bhagiratha, that ornament of the three worlds.

13. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king had to suffer death, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues and consequently far superior to your son you should not lament for your son saying, —'Oh Swaitya'—who did not perform any sacrifice or make any sacrificial gift.

Thus ends the sixtieth chapter, the story of Bhagiratha, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada Said :—

1—3. We also heard, O Srinjaya, that Dilipa the son of Ilvala had to suffer death. In the celebration of his hundred sacrifices were present countless number of the twice-born ones acquainted with the knowledge of the reality about things, devoted to the performance of sacrifices and blessed with sons and grandsons. That king of the earth, celebrating various sacrifices, offered this earth replete with treasures, to the Brahmanas as a gift. At all the sacrifices of king Dilipa, the roads used to be constructed of gold.

4. Regarding him equal to Dharma himself, the very Gods with Indra at their head, used to come to him. The upper and lower rings in his sacrificial stakes were made of gold.

5. Partaking of his *Raga-Khandavas*, many people at his sacrifices used to lie down, on the high-ways. The following thing seemed exceedingly wonderful and never occurred to any other king, *viz.*,

6—7. That when Dilipa fought on waters, his car-wheels never sank below the surface. Those who saw king Dilipa, that steady bowmen, always truthful and giving away profuse gifts at his sacrifices, succeeded in attaining paradise. In the mansion of Dilipa otherwise called Khattwanga, the following five sorts of sounds were always to be heard, namely,

8. The sound of the recital of the Vedas, the twang of the bow, and the sound produced by utterance of the words, *Drink, Enjoy*, and *Eat*. When even such a king, O Srinjaya, died, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues,

9. And consequently far superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying—'O Swaitya'—who did perform no sacrifice and make no sacrificial presents.

Thus ends the sixty-first chapter, the story of king Dilipa, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard that Yuvanaswa's son, king Mandhata, who vanquished the celestials, the Asuras, and the gods and the worlds, had to undergo death.

2. The twin Aswins, (the celestial physicians) drew him out of his fathers womb. Once on a time when out hunting, king Yuvanaswa became thirsty and his steed became exhausted.

3. Seeing at a distance, a curl of smoke, the monarch (guided by it) reached a sacrificial compound, and he drank the sacrificial butter that lay scattered there. (Thereupon the monarch conceived). Then seeing the king quick with child,

4. The two foremost of celestial physicians, the twin Aswins drew out the child from the kings womb. Then beholding the new-born babe of divine radiance lie on the lap of his father,

5. The gods spoke to one another saying :—'Whom shall this child suck.' Then Vasava said—'Let this child suck, my finger first.'

6. Thereupon from the fingers of Indra nectareous milk flowed out. Because Indra had, out of compassion for the child, said 'Let him suck me,'

7—8. Therefore the celestials designated him as Mandhatri. Then streams of milk and clarified butter flowed into the mouth of Yuvanaswa's son from the finger of the high-souled Indra. He then drank the nectar flowing from Indra's hand and thus went on growing.

9. In twelve days he became twelve cubits in stature and was also endued with great prowess. And he conquered this extensive Earth in the course of a single day.

10. Of rightous soul, endued with great intelligence and heroic and devoted to truth and of controlled passions, Mandhatri conquered, through the force of his bow, Janamenjaya, Sudhanwa, Jaya, Suna, Vrihadratha, Asita and king Nigra. The hill where the sun rises, and the hill where it sets,

12. All the land lying between these two hills, is called the dominion of the king Mandhatri, the son of Yuvanaswa. Having accomplished a hundred horse-sacrifices and a hundred Rajasuya sacrifices also,

13 He gave away to the Brahmanas, O ruler of men, some *Rohita* fish made of gold that were ten Yojanas in length and one Yojana in breadth.

14. Piles of delicate and tasteful foods and edibles, after the Brahmanas had been entertained, were partaken of by other people, and greatly enhanced their joy.

15. Enormous quantities of food, viands edibles and drinks and potion and piles of cooked rice were there and shone beautiful. Many rivers, having lakes of clarified butter, with various kinds of soup for their mud, curds for their froth, and honey for their water, looking charming and flowing in currents of milk and honey, wended round the mountains of solid edibles. Gods, Asuras, men, Jakshas, Gandharvas, snakes, birds,

17. And many Vipras, learned in the Vedas and their auxuliaries, came at his sacrifices. Among the Brahmanas and the sages who came there, there was none who was not learned.

18. King Mandhatri having given away as gift the earth bounded by the ocean and replete with all sorts of wealth, to the Brahmanas, at last set like the sun itself.

19. Then having filled the quarters with his fame,he repaired to the regions of righteous. Even when such a king, O Srinjaya,

died, who was superior to you in all the four cardinal qualities,

20. And consequently much more superior to your son—you should not lament for your son saying—'Oh Swaitya'—who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts.

Thus ends the sixty-second chapter, the story of Mandhatri, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we heard also that Yayati, the son of Nahusa, was carried away by Death. Having celebrated a hundred Rajasuya sacrifices, a hundred Horse-sacrifices,

2. A thousand *Pundarikas,* a hundred *Vajapeya* sacrifices, a thousand *Atiratra* sacrifices, numerous *Chaturmasya* sacrifices,

3—4. Many *Agnistomas* and diverse other kind of sacrifices, all attended with the giving away of profuse *Dakshinas,* he gave unto the Brahmanas all the wealth on the face of Earth, belonging to the non-Brahmana sect, having at first taken an account of them all. He assisted the celestials when they and the Asuras stood ready for fight arraying themselves in battle order.

5. He divided the Earth in four parts and gave her away to four persons. Having celebrated diverse sacrifices, and virtuously begotten excellent progeny on his wives, *viz.,*

6. Devayani, the daughter of Usanas, and Sarmistha, that god-like Yayati roamed in the woods of the celestials,

7. At his own unrestrained pleasure, like a second Vasava (or Indra). Versed in all the Vedas, when he found that he was not satiated with the indulgence of his desires,

8. He repaired to the forest with his wives, having uttered this saying, "Whatever of paddy, wheat, gold, animals and women there are on the face of the Earth

9. Are not sufficient for even one single man. Knowing such to be the fact, one should betake to contentment." Thus having renounced all his desires, and cultivating contentment,

10. The Lord Yayati retired into the woods, having installed his son Puru on the throne. O Srinjaya, when even such a king had to suffer death, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues,

11. And was consequently much more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son—crying—'O Swaitya'—who did not perform any sacrifice or offer any sacrificial presents.

Thus ends the sixty-third chapter, the story of Yayati, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXIV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we heard that Nabhaga's son Amvarisha, who, single-handed, fought a thousand times against thousand kings, was also carried away by Death.

2. He simultaneously attacked his enemies who desired to obtain victory over him, who were accomplished in fighting with weapons and who had assaulted him with fierce yells.

3. Subduing them with his prowess and by the strength of his weapons, he cut off their umbrellas, weapons, standards and chariots, and deprived them of their lives. Thus he relieved himself of all his anxieties.

4. Then desirous of saving their lives, those defeated kings, putting off their coats of mail implored the mercy of that compassionate monarch and sought his protection saying, "We surrender ourselves."

5. Thus having brought them under his control, and having conquered this world, he celebrated a hundred desirable sacrifices, in accordance with the ordinances of the Shastras, O sinless one.

6. At those sacrifices of his, people partook of edibles possessed of all delicate qualities. Therefore most of the Brahmanas were greatly gratified and were most excellently worshipped.

7. Sweetmeats, *Purikas, Pupas, Saskulis* of excellent taste and large size, *Karambhas, Prithumridikos,* and various kinds of well-prepared edibles,

8. Various sorts of Supas, *Maireyas, Pupas, Ragakhandavas,* and diverse king of confectionery, well-dressed, delicate, and savoury,

9. And clarified butter, and honey, and milk and water and tasteful curds, and fruits and esculent roots—these things were there eaten by the regenerate castes.

10. And men who were addicted to drink wines, drank, in proper time, various kinds of intoxicating drinks, for the sake of the pleasures they produced and then sang and played upon their musical instruments.

11. Some perfectly toxicated sang songs, and were greatly delighted; and some reeled on the ground; some applauded the son of Nabhaga in panegyrics, and some danced in thousands.

12. In those sacrifices, Amvarisha gave as gifts the kingdoms of hundreds and thousands of kings to the ten million priests engaged in his sacrifice.

13—15. Having celebrated diverse sacrifices the king gave unto the Brahmanas as sacrificial presents numerous princes and kings whose coronal locks had been purified by the sacred bath, all furnished with golden armours, all having white umbrellas held over their heads, all mounted on golden chariots, vested in superb garments and having large retinues and all bearing their sceptres and possessing their treasuries. 'None amongst the men of olden times did, nor those to come will do,

16. What king Amvarisha, profuse in his sacrificial presents, has done.' Even thus did the mighty sages, gratified with him, applauded him.

17. O Srinjaya, when even such a king who was superior in respect of the four cordinal virtues to you and consequently to your son, had to undergo death, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifices and made no sacrificial gifts, saying, 'O Swaitya.'

Thus ends the sixty-fourth chapter, the story of Amvarisha, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXV.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada Said:—

1. We also heard, O Srinjaya, that king Sasavindu, who was of great personal beauty and of prowess incapable of being repulsed, and who performed numerous and diverse sacrifices, had to undergo death.

2. That one of illustrious soul had a hundred thousand wives; and each of these wives was blessed with a thousand sons.

3. All those princes were endowed with prowess; all of them performed ten millions of sacrifices each. Learned in the sacred scriptures, those royal heroes accomplished many excellent sacrifices.

4. All of them, (on occasions of battle) used to don golden coats of mail; and all were excellent bowmen. All those sons of Sasavindu accomplished the Horse-sacrifice.

5. That foremost of kings, their father gave them away to the Brahmanas as sacrificial pesents, at his own sacrifice. Each of those princes was followed by hundreds upon hundreds of car-warriors and elephants,

6. And beautiful damsels adorned with ornaments of gold. With each damsel were a hundred elephants and with each elephant a hundred chariots.

7. With each car were a hundred horses adorned with chains of gold. And with each horse a thousand cows. With each cow were fifty goats.

8. In that great Horse-sacrifice of his, he gave away unlimited wealth. And in other sacrifices also he gave away equal amount of gold &c.

9. There were piles of edibles, foods and confectionery of the height of two full miles. And when the Horse-sacrifice of the king was over, thirteen such piles remained (unused).

10. Having ruled for many years over his kingdom, where the people were well-fed, satisfied, and free from diseases, and where all kinds of evils were rooted out, king Sasavindu ascended to Heaven.

11. O Srinjaya, when even such a sovereign, who was superior in respect of the four cardinal virtues to you and consequently to your son, had to suffer death you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifices and made no sacrificial gifts,—saying 'O Swaitya'.

Thus ends the sixty-fifth chapter, the story of Sasavindu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXVI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada said:—

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard of the death of king Gaya, the son of Amurtarajas, who for hundred years lived only upon remnants of the libations offered on fire.

2—3. Thereat Agni offered to bestow a boon on him; and thereupon Gaya asked for this boon saying,—"I desire to acquaint myself with the contents of the Vedas, through ascetic penances, observance of Brahmacharyya rites, vows and rules, and also through the grace of my preceptors. I also desire to acquire inexhaustible wealth without trangressing the duties of the order which I belong to, and without any injury to any one else.

4. I desire also the boon, that every day I may give away devoutly my wealth to the Brahmanas. I wish also to beget sons upon females of my own order and not upon others.

5. Let devotion be the ruling feeling of my heart when I shall give away edibles; let also my mind delight in the fountain of righteousness. Let, O Agni, no difficulty overtake me when I engage myself in the performance of pious deeds."

9. "It shall be so"—saying this, the God of Fire, disappeared even there. Then Gaya realising all those boons sought, began to obtain righteous victories over all his enemies.

7. Then king Gaya celebrated for a full hundred years, various kinds of sacrifices with profuse *Dakshinas*, as also many other vows as *Chaturmasya* &c.

8. Every year, in a century, the king gave unto the Brahmanas, with due devotion, hundred thousand kine, ten thousand horses.

9. And for several successive centuries he gave to the Brahmanas hundred thousand *Nikshas* and sixty-thousand kine, at the time of his rising.

10. Under every (auspicious) conjunction of the constellations, he gave away presents specified for those occasions. Verily the monarch performed various sacrifices like another Soma or another Angirash.

11. Making the earth covered with gold and with pebbles constituted by gems, he gave her away as a present to the Brahmanas during the celebration of his great Horse-sacrifice.

12. In the sacrifices of Gaya, the stakes were made of gold; and embossed with jewels, and precious, they delighted the hearts of all.

13. Then Gaya gave to the delighted Brahmanas and other creatures, those stakes and many other precious objects of desire.

14. The various species of creatures inhabiting the oceans, the islands, the rivers male and female, the woods, forests, towns, kingdoms, the paradise and the sky,

15. And diverse other beings were gratified with the wealth and riches distributed at Gaya's sacrifice. They then said:—"There was no sacrifice like that celebrated by Gaya."

16—17. The sacrificial altar of Gaya was thirty *yojanas* long, twenty-six *yojanas* high; and it was covered with gold and strewn over with pearls and gems. He gave away this altar and many garments and ornaments to the Brahmanas.

18. That liberal-handed monarch gave unto the Brahmanas other presents specified in the scriptures. When the sacrifice was completed, their remained twenty-five mountains of edibles and foods, (untouched.)

19. And there also remained many lakes of potions and several streams of juicy drinks flowing charmingly, and many garments and ornaments, perfumes and and many princes (who were intended to be given away as presents)

20. Through that great sacrifice of his, Gaya became well-known in the three worlds; and the eternal Banian tree and the holy *Brahma*-lake, owe their origin to that sacrifice.

21. O Srinjaya, when even such a king, who was far superior in respect of the four cardinal virtues to you and consequently to your son, had to undergo death, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts—saying 'O Swaitya.'

Thus ends the sixty-sixth chapter, the story of Gaya, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXVII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Narada said:—

1. O Srinjaya, we heard also that Saukriti's son Ratindeva, who had two hundred-thousand cooks of high-soul, had to undergo death.

2. These cooks of his, used to distribute raw and cooked food and vast amount of wealth, day and night, to the Brahmanas that repaired to Ratindeva's mansion as guests.

3. He gave away unto the Brahmanas his wealth acquired through fair means. Having studied the Vedas he subdued his foes in fair combats.

4. Many were the animals that out of their own accord came, desirous of ascending to Heaven, to that one of regulated vows, who performed sacrifices in accordance with the ordinances of the Shastras.

5. A veritable river of secretions flowed from the piles of skins deposited in his kitchen,—skins that were taken off the bodies of the animals sacrificed at his Agnihotra sacrifices. And the river thus caused came to be called *Charmanwati.*

6. He always gave away golden *Nikshas* to the Brahmanas saying "I give you *Nikshas*, I give you *Nikshas.*"

7. "To you, to you", saying these words he gave thousands of *Nikshas* away to the Brahmanas. Then again, comforting them, he gave them *Nikshas.*

8. Having given away in the course of a single day, a *Koti* of *Nikshas*, he used to say, "I have this day given away a very small number of coins", thus thinking, he would again give away *Nikshas.* What other person can give away such enormous quantity of wealth?

9. That king used to give away wealth, thinking—"If I do not give wealth into the hands of the Brahmanas, great and everlasting sorrow will surely fall in my share."

10. For a hundred years, twice a month, he gave away unto thousands of Brahmanas a golden bull each followed by a herd of hundred cows and eight hundred pieces of *Nikshas.* All the articles necessary for his *Agnihotra* sacrifice and for his other sacrifices,

12. He gave away to the sages,—including *Karakas*, and jars for water, and plates and dishes, and beds, carpets, conveyances, palaces and dwelling houses,

13. And various sorts of trees, and diverse kinds of edibles and viands. All the utensils and articles of the intelligent Ratindeva were made of gold.

14. Seeing then the super-human prosperity of king Ratindeva, those that were conversant with the history of past ages sang this song :—

15. "We have not seen such vast treasures even in the mansion of Kuvera (the Plutus of Hindu mythology), what to speak of the treasuries of men?

16. People then wonderingly used to say:—"It is evident that the kingdom of Ratindeva, the son of Sankrita, is made of gold. On such nights when guests used to assemble in the mansion of Ratindeva,

17. Twenty-one thousand cows used to be sacrificed (for feeding them). And the cooks of the king, adorned with jewelled ear-rings used to cry out (to the guests) saying:—

18. "Drink as much soup as you can, for there is not so much meat to-day as there was the other day." Whatever of gold Ratindeva possessed, then,

19. Was given away to the Brahmanas in the course of one of his sacrifices. The gods in person used to accept the libations of butter poured on the fire for them,

20. And the ancestral manes used similarly to accept food that was offered to them in proper time. The Brahmanas, the best of their sects, used to obtain from him all the objects of their desire. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king had to undergo Death, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues,

21. And consequently was superior to your son, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts, saying—'O Swaitya, O Swaitya'

Thus ends the sixty-seventh chapter, the story of Ratindeva, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Narada said :—

1. O Srinjaya, we heard that Dushmanta's son Bharata, who, when a child, performed in the woods many feats difficult of being performed by others, had also to suffer death.

2. Possessed of great prowess, he used quickly to deprive the very lions armed with teeth and claws, of all their ferocity, and dragged them and bound them at his own pleasure.

3—4. He used to tame down the very tigers, more ferocious and more ruthless than the lions. Seizing various beasts of prey and even prodigious elephants dyed with red chalk-solution, and bespattered with other liquid minerals, by their teeth and tusks, that highly powerful one used to bring them to his subjection causing their throats to become parched up and compelling them to fly away.

5. Endued with great strength he used to drag down the mightiest of buffaloes. Through his prowess, he tamed hundreds of ferocious lions,

6. And powerful tigers, and horned rhinoceroses and other animals. Binding them by their necks and twisting the ropes (around their necks) to an inch of their lives, he used to release them.

7. For those feats of his, the regenerate sages residing there used to call him Sarvadamana (or the subduer of all). But at last his mother forbade him do so, saying--'Do not torture animals thus.'

8. Possessed of great energy, he celebrated a hundred Horse-sacrifices on the banks of the river Yamuna, three hundred such sacrifices on the banks of the Saraswati and four hundred such on the banks of the Ganges.

9. Having accomplished all those sacrifices he once more performed a thousand great Horse-sacrifices and a hundred such Rajasuya, in which he made profuse gifts to the Brahmanas.

10. He performed also such other sacrifices, as the *Agnisthoma*, the *Atiratra*, the *Vektha*, the *Viswajit* and thousands of *Vajapeyas*.

11.—16. Then the royal son of Sakuntala gratified the Brahmanas with the present of riches; then Bharata of illustrious fame gave ten thousand billions of coins made of the purest gold to Kanwa (who had reared his mother). The gods with Indra at their head, accompannied by the twice-born ones, coming to this sacrifices, set up his sacrificial stake made wholly of gold, and measuring hundred *Vyamas* in width. The royal Bharata of magnanimous soul, that conqueror of his foes, that sovereign ever unsubdued by his enemies gave away unto the Brahmanas, charming steeds, elephants, and chariots, adorned with gold, and embcssed with gems of the first water of all sorts, and camels and goats and sheep and male and female servants, wealth, grain, milch-cows with calves, and villages, houses and fields, and garments of various kinds, countless in number. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king had to suffer death who was superior to you in respect to the four cardinal virtues,

17. And consequently to your son, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts saying,—'O Swaitya'.

Thus ends the sixty-eighth chapter, the story of Bharata, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXIX.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Narada said :—

1. We heard also, O Srinjaya, that Vena's son Prithu, who was installed as the emperor of the world by the mighty sages on the celebration of his Rajasuya-sacrifice, had also to suffer death.

2. Having vanquished all his foes with great efforts, he consolidated his empire, for which he came to be called *Prithu* (or the celebrated). He became a true *Kshatriya*, owing to his protecting his subjects from wounds and injuries.

3. Beholding Vena's son Prithu, his subjects said—'We are delighted' and in consequence of the affection of his subjects which he enjoyed, he came to be called Raja.

4. The Earth yielded corn without being cultivated, and for Vena's son Prithu she fulfilled all his desires. The cows also yielded milk whenever desired, and every lotus-bud was filled with honey.

5. The sacred *Kusa* grass were all made of gold and were delicate to the touch and otherwise delightful. The people used to wear cloths made of this grass and they used to lie down on beds composed of them.

6. Fruits, nectareous, tasteful and delicate, then became their chief edible; and none went without food.

7. In his kingdom men lived free from all diseases, their desires were all crowned with fruition, they entertained no fear. They lived on trees and in caves, as it pleased them.

8. His dominions and his cities were not divided into smaller sections and countries. There his subjects lived delightedly, as it suited their desire or convenience.

9. When king Prithu repaired to the sea, its waves become solidified. The very mountains opened a way for him, and his standard never broke (being obstructed by any thing).

10. Him seated at his ease, the mighty trees of the forest, the gods of the mountains, the celestials, the Asuras, the men and the reptiles, the seven sages, the holy ascetics, the Gandharvas, the Apsaras, and

11. The ancestral manes, approaching said these words :—" You are our Emperor, you protect us from injuries, you are ever our delighter, saviour and father.

12, Give us, O mighty monarch, O Master, the boons we desire to have—boons

through whose virtue we may live in happiness and plenty, for eternal years.

13. Then saying 'yea' to all their prayers, Vena's son Prithu took up his *Ajagava* bow and several dreadful arrows, whose equals existed not; then thinking for a while, he addressed the Earth saying :—

14. "Come, come, O Earth, quickly give these my subjects the milk they desire. Good betide you; from the milk you shall shed, I desire to give my subjects the edibles they wish to have.

The Earth said :—

15. "O Hero, it behoves you to look upon me as your own daughter."

Narada said :—

Saying, "So be it," the self-controlled Prithu, then arranged for (milking the Earth).

16. Then the whole assemblage of creatures began to milk the Earth (successively). The mighty trees of the forest then first approached her, desirous of milking her.

17. There then stood the highly affectionate Earth (as a cow), looking for a calf, a milker and a pot wherein to keep the milk. Then the flowering Sala tree became the calf, and the Plaksha became the milker,

18. Torn buds become the milk and the auspicious fig tree became the milk-pot. (Next the mountains appeared to milk her) The Eastern hill then became the calf, and the mighty Meru-mountain became the milkman.

19. Jewels and precious stones and the Osadhies became the milk and the stones became the milk-jar. Next the celestials became the milkers, and everything capable of imparting energy became the milk.

20. Next the Asuras milked urine from the Earth, in unbaked earthen jars. Deemurdha (the two-headed) then became the milker and Virochana became the calf.

21. Next the men milked her when products of cultivation and crops became the milk; the self-create Muni became the calf and Prithu the milker, on this occasion.

22. Next the snakes milked her, and they received poison for milk in gourds. Dhritarastra became the milker and Takshaka became the calf.

23. The seven sages untiring in work, next milked her and obtained the knowledge of the Supreme Brahma for the milk. Then Vrihaspati became the milker the Vedas became the milk-pot, and the Somarat became the calf.

24. The *Rakshasas* milking her, in a jar of unbaked Earth, obtained the power of disappearing at will. Their milker was Vaisravana, and Vrisadhwaja was their calf.

25. The Apsaras and the Gandharvas milked her of holy fragrance and received it in lotus-petals. Chaitraratha became their calf and the lord Viswaruchi became their milker.

26. The ancestral manes milked her of Swadhas in pots of silver. Vaivaswata became their calf and the Destroyer (Yama) himself became their milker.

27. Thus was the Earth milked by that entire host of creatures, who obtained for milk all objects of their respective desire. The very calves and the pots, with whose help they milked could be seen even today.

28. Then Vena's son, Prithu, possessed of prowess, celebrated various sacrifices, and he gratified the hearts of creatures with objects desired by them.

29. The king caused all objects obtaining of the face of the Earth to be made of gold and on the occasion of his great Horse-sacrifice, he gave them away to the Brahmanas.

30. The king caused sixty-six thousands images of elephants to be made of gold, and he gave them away to the Brahmanas.

31. The entire Earth adorned with jewels and gems, the king caused to be covered over with gold and he then gave her away to the Brahmanas.

32. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king, who was superior to you in respect of the four virtues and consequently much more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts—saying, 'O Swaitya'.

Thus ends the sixty-ninth chapter, the story of Prithu, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXX.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Narada said :—

1. Even the heroic Rama that illustrious ascetic adored by the heroes of the world, that son of Jamadagni, of great renown, died with his desires unsatiated.

2. Making this Earth abound in all kinds of happiness, he caused the primaeval Yuga to set in. He was not perverted, having obtained excellent affluence.

3. When a calf belonging to him was stolen and when his father was slain by the Kshatriyas, he took a vow saying that he would relieve the Earth of her burden of Kshatriyas: Thereafter he slew Kartaviryya who was never before defeated in battle by his foes.

4. Single-handed and with a single bow, he vanquished and despatched to the abode of Death, four and sixty times ten thousand Kshatriyas.

5. In that slaughter were included fourteen thousand Kshatriyas all contemners of the Brahmanas. Then again he slew many Kshatriyas of the Dantakrula country.

6. He slew a thousand Kshatriyas with his bludgeon, a thousand with his sword and a thousand of the Haihayas also by hanging them.

7. Heroes with their chariots, steeds and elephants, lay slain on the field of battle, by the intelligent son of Jamadagni, who had been exasperated by the death of his father.

8. Then Rama slew with his axe ten thousand Kshatriyas. He then could not bear the hot words uttered by his enraged adversaries.

9—11. When the twice-born sects exclaimed saying 'O Rama, the descendant of Bhrigu's race,' then the puissant son of Jamadgni proceeding against the Kashmiras, the Daradas, the Kuntis, the Kshudrakas, the Malavas, the Angas, the Vangas, the Kalingas, the Videhas, the Tamraliptakas, the Rakshovashas, the Vitahotras, the Trigarttas and the Martikavartas the Sivis and other kingly races, thousands in number, inhabiting various countries, slew them all with his arrows of exceeding sharpness.

12—13. Going from country to country, he slew thousands and crores of Kshatriyas creating a deluge of blood and filling many lakes with it, which was as red as Indra Gopakas or the wild fruit known as Vandhujiva,—and also bringing under his sway all the eighteen division of the earth, that descendant of Bhrigu's race,

14. Celebrated a hundred holy sacred sacrifices in which he gave away profuse sacrificial presents. The sacrificial altar, full eighteen *Nalas* high and made entirely of gold and erected duly,

15. And filled with diverse kinds of gems and jewels, and adorned with hundreds of penons, as also this earth abounding in domestic and wild animals,

16. Were accepted by Kasyapa as sacrificial presents offered to him by R..., the son of Jamadagni. Rama also gave him many thousands of huge elephants adorned with golden ornaments.

17. Freeing the earth from the robbers that infested her and making her full of innocent and amiable people, Rama gave her away to Kasyapa at his great Horse-sacrifice.

18. That lord, that hero having relieved the earth, for twenty-one times, of her burdens of the Kshatriya population and having celebrated a hundred sacrifices, gave her away to the Brahmanas.

19. The earth with her seven grand divisions were bestowed by him upon the twice-born son of Maricha (Kasyapa). Then the latter addressed Rama saying:—"Go you out of this Earth, at my command"

20. At the words of Kasyapa, that best of warriors obedient to the Brahmanas' command, caused, by the fall of his arrows, the very ocean to roll back;

21. Then going to the foremost of mountains, namely, the Mahendra mountain, he continued to live there. Even that enhancer of the glory of the Bhrigu race that one endowed with desirable qualities,

22. That son of Jamadagni, of illustrious renown, and great effulgence, had to die. Superior to you in respect to the four virtues and also to your son, even that one did die.

23. Therefore you should not weep for your son, who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts. These foremost and best of men, all superior to you in respect of the four virtues and in respect of many other meritorious qualities, had to suffer death, O Srinjaya.

Thus ends the seventieth chapter, the story of Jamadagni's son, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXI.

(ABHIMANYU-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Vyasa said:—

1. Having heard these holy stories of the sixteen kings, capable of enhancing the duration of the listener's life, king Srinjaya said nothing and remained silent for a while.

2. Then to him thus sitting silent, the almighty sage Narada said:—"O you of [illegible]t effulgence you have heard the stories [illegible]w related by me, and have comprehended their signification,

3. Or are all these lost on you, like a *Sradha* performed by a twice-born one having a female of the Sudra caste for his wife." Thus spoken to, Srinjaya replied to him with folded palms, saying :—

4. "O you rich in the wealth of asceticism, having heard these best and laudable stories of ancient royal sages, all of whom celebrated great sacrifices with profuse presents unto the Brahmanas,

5. All my sorrow have been driven away by wonder, like darkness being dispelled by the radiance of the sun. I have now been purged of all my sins; and I do not feel any pain now. Tell me what shall I do.

Narada said :—

6. It is through good luck that your sorrow has been dispelled. Ask you the boon that your heart craves for; you will get whatever you may seek to have. We never speak falsehood.

Srinjaya said:—

7. I am contented even with this, *viz.*, that you, O holy sage, are pleased with me. That person with whom you are pleased, O you holy one, has nothing inaccessible to him.

Narada said :—

8. I will once again give you back your son, who was to no purpose slain by the robbers, like an animal immolated in a sacrifice. I shall take him out of the terrible hell.

Vyasa said :—

9. Then the son of Srinjaya of wonderful splendour, resembling the son of Kuvera, appeared there, bestowed on his bereaved father, by the qualified sage.

10. Then king Srinjaya once more obtaining the sight of his son became highly delighted. He then gave away numerous merit-giving sacrificial gifts upon their accomplishment of his *yajnas.*

11. The life-mission of Srinjaya's son was not fulfilled. He had performed no sacrifices and had begotten no progeny. Destitute of bravery, he perished miserably, and not in battle. For this reason he could be brought back into life.

12. As regards Abhimanyu, he was courageous and brave. He has fulfilled the mission of his life; for, the brave son of Subhadra having scorched his enemies by thousands, had passed away, falling on the field of battle.

13. Those eternal regions that are attained through the performance of Brahmacharyya vows, through knowledge, and acquaintance with the scriptures, through foremost of sacrifices,—even those regions have been obtained by your son.

14. Men possessed of knowledge always desire to attain to heaven by their performance of deeds of piety. They who live in heaven do not like this world.

15. Therefore it is not easy to find out any desirable thing that might have been unattained by him, that might bring back into this world Arjuna's son slain in battle, and now dwelling in heaven,

16. Your son has ascended to those regions, the eternal goal of Yogins who contemplate with their eyes shut, or by performers of illustrious sacrifices or by people possessed of great ascetic merit.

17. Having attained a new figure after death, that hero is shining like a monarch in his own immortal radiance. Verily Abhimanyu has once more assumed his own body composed of the essence of the moon that is desired by all twice-born ones. Therefore you should not weep for him.

18. Acquainted with these facts, compose yourself and slay your enemies. Muster courage, O you sinless one, it is the living beings who want us to grieve for them and not they who have ascended to heaven.

19. O king, his sins go on increasing, for whom the living mourn. For this reason, the wise, renouncing grief, exert themselves for the benefit of the dead (*i.e.*, their souls.)

20. The living man should think of the joy, the glory and the happiness of the dead. Acquainted with truth, the wise never harbour grief, for grief is nothing more or less than grief.

21. Know this as truth; rise up, gird up your loins; do not lament, you have heard of the origin of the Death, and of her unequalled penances,

22. As also of her equality of conduct towards all creatures. You have heard that prosperity is unsteady; you have also heard as how the dead son of Srinjaya was brought back to life.

23. O foremost of learned monarchs, do not lament. May you enjoy peace, I depart."

Sanjaya said :—

Having thus spoken, the sacred *Rishi* Vyasa disappeared even there.

24. Upon the disappearance of that eloquent speaker, that foremost of all in-

telligent beings, *viz.*, the holy Vyasa whose colour was like that of the sky overspread with clouds, Yudhisthira having obtained consolation,

25. In consequence of what he had heard about the sacrificial merit and prosperity, of those great monarchs of ancient times endued with energy equal to that of the great Indra himself, and all of whom had acquired wealth by virtuous means,

26. Applauded them in his mind, and then became relieved of his sorrows. But once more, with a sorrowful heart he asked himself saying—' What shall I say to Dhananjaya ?'

Thus ends the seventy-first chapter, the conclusion of the story of the sixteen sovereigns, in the Abhimanyu-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXII.

PRATJINA PARVA.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that dreadful day so fraught with the slaughter of creatures had passed away, and when the sun set, the auspicious shade of twilight began to spread itself.

2—3. Then,O foremost of the Bharatas, when the troops of both the hosts had retired to their respective quarters, the ape-bannered Jishnu having slain the Samsaptaka hosts with his celestial weapons, proceeded towards his pavilion mounted on that victorious chariot of his. As he went on, he asked Govinda, in a voice choked with tears.

4. "Why, O Kesava, does my mind misgive and why does my speech falter ? Evil portents reveal themselves to me and my limbs are becoming weak.

5. Thoughts, such as a calamity has befallen me, occupying my heart, does not leave it ; on earth, in all the directions, various dreadful portents affright me.

6. Various kinds of omens are being seen by me and they harbinger the happening of a calamity, May all things fare well with the king, my venerable superior, and with his followers."

The son of Vasudeva said :—

7. It is evident that everything fares well with your brothers and his ministers. Do not give way to evil thoughts ; it is probable, that some trivial calamity has taken place.

Sanjaya said :—

8. Then those two heroes, having adored the evening twilight, proceeded on their car talking of the incidents of that day's battle so destructive of heroes.

9. Thereafter having achieved feats difficult of being achieved, Arjuna and Vasudeva reached the Pandava encampments, joyless and melancholy.

10. Then that slayer of foes, Vibhatsu, beholding the camp in confusion, said to Krishna with a sorrowful heart :—

Arjuna said :—

11. O Jararddana, the auspicious drums are not beat to-day and their sound does not add to the din created by the trumpet-blasts and conch-blares.

12—13. The melodious *Venu* is not played upon accompanied by claps ; auspicious songs, fraught with praises and delightful, are not sung in my troops to-day, by the ministrels and the bards. All warriors also, beholding me, are turning away with their faces cast down.

14. Duly performing the ceremonies one after another, they do not come forward to salute me. O Madhava, is every thing well with all my brothers ?

15. Seeing my own people distressed with sorrow, my mind does not obtain peace. Does everything fare well, O bestower of honour, with the Panchala king or the ruler of the Viratas,

19. Or with all of our warriors, O you of undeteriorating glory ? Alas, to-day Subhadra's son accompanied by his brothers, does not come out, smiling and joyful to receive me returning from battle.

Sanjaya said :—

17. Thus talking to one another, they both entered into their encampments, and they beheld the Pandavas sit cheerless and with hearts distracted (with grief).

18. Then that hero bearing the ape as a device on his banner, seeing his brother and sons (thus depressed), himself became melancholy. Then not finding Subhadra's son he spoke these words :—

Arjuna said :—

19. I see that the colour of your countenances has truned pale. I do not also see Abhimanyu here, nor do you welcome me.

20 I have also heard that Drona to-day arrayed his troops in the circular order. There is also none among you capable of penetrating into that array, save my boy Abhimanyu.

21. But I did not teach him the means of coming out of that array. Is it that you made the boy enter the array of the enemy?

22. Has that fierce bowman, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely, the son of Subhadra, having penetrated into those numberless divisions of the enemy, been slain in battle?

23. Tell me, Oh, how that hero possessed of mighty arms and red eyes, who was born in our race, like a lion on the mountain breast, and who resembled Upendra himself, has been slain in battle?

24. What warriors, urged on by their evil Destiny, ventured to slay that dear-loved son of Subhadra, that favourite of Droupadi and Kesava, who was always fondly loved by my own mother (Kunti)?

25. How has that hero resembling the high-souled Vrishni hero Kesava himself in prowess, genorosity and acquaintance with the Shastras, been slain in battle?

26. If to-day I do not see that hero dearly loved by that daughter of Vrishni race (Subhadra), and fondly brought up by myself, I shall be a guest of Death's abode.

27. Possessed of soft and curling hair-ends, of tender years, of eyes like those of a young gazelle graced with the tread of an infuriate elephant, resembling an offshoot of a Sala tree,

28. Of sweet speeches attended with smiles, modest, ever ready to carry out the behests of his venerables, achieving in tender years, feats worthy of mature age, sweet-spoken, free from animosity,

29. Of mighty energy and prowess, of eyes resembling large lotus-petals, ever merciful towards his followers, self-possessed, never pursuing mean objects and men,

30. Ever grateful, endued with the knowledge of all things, unretreating and accomplished in the use of all kinds of weapons, ever delighting in battle, and ever enhancing the terror of his adversaries,

31. Always intent on bringing about the welfare of his own party, ever desirous of seeing victory secured by his own sires, never striking first in battle, never daunted in fight,

32. Oh! if, I do not see such a son of mine, I shall carry me to the abode of Death. In the tale of car-warriors, always counted with the mighty car-warriors,

33. Possessed of mighty arms, of tender years, one and a half times superior to me in battle, always a favorite of myself, Pradyumna and Kesava,

34. Oh, if I do not see that son of mine, I shall go to the regions of Death. Graced with a beautiful nose and fore-head and eyes and eyebrows, and teeth and lips,

35. Oh, without seeing that countenance of his, I shall enjoy no peace of mind. Delightful like the warbling of a lyre, charming and melodious like the voice of a cuckoo,

36. Oh, without hearing that voice of his what peace can my heart enjoy? His beauty that was unequalled and scarce even among the heaven-dwelling gods,

37. Oh, without beholding that beauty of his, what peace can my heart enjoy? Skilful in congratulating and welcoming others, obedient to the commands of his sires,

38. If I do not see that son of mine, what peace can my heart enjoy? Brought up in all luxury, always heroic and accustomed to lie on precious beds,

39. He lies to-day on the bare earth like one helpless, though he is foremost of all who have others to look after them. He upon whom, when on his bed, the most beautiful women used to attend,

40. Oh! even he, his bodies mutilated with shafts, has inauspicious jackals prowling over the field to attend upon him to-day! He who formerly used to be awakened from his sleep by songsters, ministrels and panegyrists,

41. Oh! even he shall to-day be roused by the fierce yells of the beasts of prey. That auspicious and charming countenance of his, worthy of being shaded by umbrellas,

42. Shall to-day be soiled with the dust rising from the field of battle. Oh! my dear child, I, who was never satiated with looking at you,

43. Alas! unfortunate that I am I have been forcibly bereft of you by Death. Surely the mansion of Death, that goal of persons of pious deeds,

44—45. That delightful palace, has to-day been illumined by your splendour and so has been made highly charming by you. Surely Yama, Varuna, Indra of hundred sacrifices, and Kuvera, receiving yourself as a welcome guest, are making preparations for worshipping you."

Sanjaya said :—

Thus copiously lamenting like a trader whose ship has been broken,

46. And being possessed by great grief Arjuna thus questioned Yudhisthira :—"O delighter of the Kurus, spreading a terrible, slaughter among the enemy's host,

47. Did my son ascend to heaven having fought with many foremost of men in battle? Surely fighting with many foremost of men exerting carefully in battle, he,

48. Single-handed and needing assistance, repeatedly thought of me! Afflicted by Karna and Drona and Kripa and others, with exceedingly sharp shafts,

49. Of various shape and well-polished tips, my son of small strength must have repeatedly thought—'My father will surely rescue me from this difficulty."

50. I think, when thus thinking of me he was felled to ground by those ruthless warriors; or it may be, that being begotten by myself and being the nephew of Madhava,

51. Being born out of Subhadra's womb, he did not utter such exclamations. Surely my heart is made of the hardest adamant,

52. In as much as, it does not burst open for my not seeing that one of mighty arms and red eyes. How could the fierce bowmen (of the Kourava) hosts, ruthless and cruel, have sped their arrows capable of penetrating to the very vitals, at that boy of tender years, that son of mine and the nephew of Madhava? He of generous soul who everyday used to come out to receive me when I

54. Returned after having slain my foes, will he not see me to-day? Alas, he lies to-day prostrate on the field of battle weltering in his blood,

55—56. And enhancing the beauty of the earth with the splendour of his limbs and looking like the sun dropped from the firmament. I am indeed also destined to grieve for Subhadra who hearing that her unretreating son has been slain in battle, shall be struck with sorrow and shall give up her life? Oh! what will Subhadra say to me when she will not behold Abhimanyu (her son)!

57. Alas, what also shall I tell to Droupadi overwhelmed with great grief? Surely my heart is made of the hardest adamant, in as much as it will not be splintered into

58. Thousand fragments when I shall behold my daughter-in-law (Abhimanyu's wife), bewail, afflicted with the burden of her grief. I heard indeed the war-cries of the Dhartarastras, elated with pride.

59. Krishna also heard Yuyutsu admonishing the heroes in the following terms:—"O mighty car-warriors, not being able to defeat Vibhatsu, and slaying this boy of tender years,

60. What, do you rejoice? O most unrighteous ones, now shall you feel the might of the son of Pandu. Having done an injury to Kesava and Arjuna in battle,

61. Why do you roar like lions in delight? Verily your hour for grief has come. The fruits of your sinful acts will soon overtake you all.

62. You have committed a heinous crime, not long will it delay in bearing the ripe fruit for you!' Having spoken to them (the enemy) thus, the highly intelligent son of a Vaisya,

63. Went away, leaving aside his weapons and leaving the Kouravas with wrath and sorrow. Why, O Krishna, did you not tell me all this in the course of fight? I would then have burnt down all those cruel car-warriors of the enemy's host."

64. Thereafter the son of Vasudeva, consoling Pritha's son (Arjuna) who overwhelmed with sorrow on account of his son, was exceedingly thoughtful, whose eyes were overflowing with tears, and who, indeed, was afflicted by the grief generated by the slaughter of his son,

65. Said to him:—"Do you not give way to grief. This indeed is the inevitable fate of all those heroes who never think of retreating,

66. Specially of the Kshatriyas who live by war. Of unretreating heroes fighting in battle, this,

67. O foremost of intelligent beings, has been specified to be the *finale* by those who are conversant with the meanings of our sacred scriptures. Death in battle is the inevitable fate of heroes who do not fly away from the field.

68. Undoubtedly Abhimanyu has gone to the regions of those who perform pious deeds; and, O foremost of the Bharatas, even this is coveted by all heroes, *viz.*,

69. That they may fall in battle facing their enemies. As regards Abhimanyu, he, having slain in battle many heroic and mighty princes,

70—71. Hath reaped that death in battle which is so much desired by the heroes, O foremost of men, do not lament. The ancient sages have specified this to be the enduring merit of the Kshatriyas, *viz.*, their fall in battle. O foremost of the Bharatas, these your brothers are highly distressed,

72. As also these monarchs and these your relatives, beholding you plunged in sorrow; O bestower of honour, do you console them with comforting speech,

13. Everything worthy of being known is known to you. It behoves you not to

indulge in grief." Thus consoled by Krishna of wonderful deeds, the son of Pritha (Arjuna),

74. Said to all his brothers these words in a voice choked with grief:—" O lord of Earth, that mighty-armed one, that one possessed of eyes large like lotus petals,

75. Namely Abhimanyu,—how he fought, I desire to know? You will see that, I will consume the enemy with their elephnats, chariots and steeds.

76. I will consume in battle all those opponents of my son together with all their blood relations. You all are accomplished in the use of weapons and are even now armed with weapons;

77—78. How then could Subhadra's son be slain in battle, even if it were the wielder of the thunder bolt whom he might have encountered? Alas, if I had known that the Pandavas and the Panchalas would be incompetent to protect my son in battle, myself would then have protected him. You were all then on your chariots and were shooting your arrows;

79. How could then Abhimanyu be slain by the enemy spreading havoc in your troops? Alas, you possess no manliness! you have no prowess,

80—81. Inasmuch as even before your very sight Abhimanju was felled in battle. It is better I should blame myself, since knowing you all to be cowards, sneaking and irresolute, I went away. Alas! are your armours, weapons, offensive and defensive, mere decorations of your persons?

82. Are your eloquence mere empty words suited to an assembly only? For, you all failed to protect my son." Having spoken these words, Arjuna sat down, armed as he was with his bow and excellent sword.

83. Then none was able to look at Vibhatsu, who then resembled the enraged Destroyer, repeatedly drawing long and heavy sighs.

84. Then his friends could not speak to Arjuna or look at him who was burning with the grief on account of his son's death and whose countenance was then overflooded with tears.

85. Except the son of Vasudeva or the eldest son of Pandu, none then ventured to speak to Arjuna. These two (Yudhisthira and Krishna) were always agreeable to Arjuna.

86. These two were only competent to address him on all occasions, in as muchas they were held in great veneration and dear love. Then the king addressed the following words to that one possessed of eyes like lotus petals, whose heart was then aching with the sorrow caused by the (untimely) demise of his son, and who was excited to the highest pitch of fury.

Thus ends the seventy-second chapter, the wrath of Arjuna, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—
Continued.

Yudhisthira said :—

1. When, O mighty-armed one, you had gone against the Samsaptaka hosts, the preceptor Drona exerted himself vigourously for capturing me.

2. We then began to resist Drona and his troops arrayed in order on all sides, by dispensing off our troops and car divisions in counter array, and striving hard.

3. Though he was thus resisted by many and though I was well protected, yet he began to smite us with agility, afflicting us with his sharp shafts.

4. My troops then, thus afflicted by Drona, were not even able, in battle, to look at his divisions what to speak of the thought of breaking through them!

5. Then we all, O sire, spoke to Subhadhra's son, who was unequalled in his prowess, saying;—'O lord, do you break through these divisions of the enemy,'

6. That highly puissant hero then thus urged on by ourselves, like a good horse, prepared himself to take that burden upon himself, however unbearable it might have been for him.

7. Then that boy of tender years, endued with energy and possessed of the knowledge of weapons received from you, broke through that array, like Suparna entering into the ocean.

8. Then we followed that hero in battle, that son of a daughter of the Satwata race, desirous of entering the hostile ranks even through the path he then opened for us.

9. Then alas, O sire, the puny ruler of the Sindhus, king Jayadratha resisted us all, through the virtue of a boon received from the god Rudra (Mahadeva).

10. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna, Drona's son, the king of the Kosalas, and Kritavarman—these six car-warriors surrounded the son of Subhadra,

11. Thus surrounded by all those mighty car-warriors in battle, that boy though striking to the best of his abilities, was deprived of the use of his car, by the tremendous odds he was fighting against.

12. Thus when Abhimanyu was deprived of the use of his car by those warriors, Dussasana's son, who himself was involved in great catastrophe, succeeded, as fate would have it, in making Abhimanyu see his end.

13. Having slain thousands of men, steeds, car-warriors and tusked elephants and eight thousands car-warriors and nine hundred elephants,

14. Two thousands princes, and many other unknown heroes, and also having despatched king Vrihadvala to Heaven,

15. That one of highly illustrious soul through Destiny, attained his own end. Thus everything that now burns us with grief, has taken place.

16. That foremost of men has also in this way, ascended to paradise."

Sanjaya said:—

Thus Arjuna hearing the word spoken by the virtuous king Yudhisthira,

17. And saying, *O my son* ! and sighing like a furnace, fell down on the earth in great distress. Then every one present, with melancholy countenances sat surrounding Dhananjaya;

18. And highly distressed they began to gaze vacantly at one another with winkless eyes. Then regaining his consciousness and burning with rage, the son of Vasava,

19. Shivering as if with fever and repeatedly sighing, and squeezing his hands and drawing deep breaths, and with eyes flooded with tears, and rolling his eyes like one mad, said these words:—

Arjuna said:—

20. I tell you this for sooth that, tomorrow I will slay Jayadrath, provided that, afraid of being slain, he does not forsake the sons of Dhritarashtra,

21. Or seek our refuge or that of Krishna the foremost of all male being or that of yourself, O monarch. I will surely slay Jayadratha to-morrow.

22. Tomorrow will I slay Jayadratha who forgetting his friendship for me, has been doing good to the sons of Dhritarastra and who has become instrumental in bringing about the slaughter of my boy.

23. Desirous of protecting him in battle whosoever shall fight with me, I will cover him, O king, with my arrows, be he Drona himself or Kripa.

24. O foremost of men, O best of heroes, if I do not do to-morrow in battle what I promise to do, then let me not ever attain to the regions which the righteous attain after death.

25. Those regions which are allotted to those who ravish their own mothers, to those who slay their fathers, who violate their preceptor's beds and who are malicious;

26. Those regions which are reserved for those who harbour hatred against the righteous, who speak maliciously of others, who appropriate the wealth entrusted with them, and who betray their trusts;

27. Those regions that are for them who abuse others' wives enjoyed by them before, or for them that slay Brahmanas or for them that slaughter the kine,

28. Or for them that drink *Payasas* or eat food prepared from barley or herbs, or articles prepared from milk, sessamum and rice and *Pupas* and other kinds of cakes, or meat, without having first offered them to the gods,—

29—31. Even those regions shall I attain to, if I do not slay Jayadratha. Those regions to which they go who contemn the Brahmanas devoted to the study of the Vedas, or otherwise deserving of veneration, or those that are senior in years, or those that are pious or those that are preceptors,—(even those region shall mine if I do not slay Jayadratha). That end which becomes theirs who touch the Brahmanas and the fire with their feet, that end which becomes theirs, who throw phlegm or excretions on, and discharge urine in water, even that most miserable end shall be mine, if indeed I do not slay Jayadratha tomorrow.

32. That end that overtakes him who bathes naked in water, or him who does not hospitably entertain a guest; that end that overtakes them who accept bribes, speak falsehoods and deceive and cheat men;

33—34. That end that overtakes them who offend against their own souls, or who falsely utter praises, that end that overtakes low wretches who eat sweetmeats before servants, sons and wives and dependents without giving them a share of them,—may that end also overtake me if I do not slay Jayadratha.

35—37. That end which overtakes the cruel-hearted wretch who without maintaining a pious and obedient protege casts him off, or him who without giving a deserving neighbour the offerings in a Sraddha, gives them to one undeserving of them; that

end that overtakes them who accept in marriage *Vrishalis* ; that end which becomes his who indulges in wine, his who contemns those that are worthy of veneration, or his who is ungrateful, or his who speaks evil of his brethren,—that end shall also soon overtake me if I do not slay Jayadratha.

38. The ends of all those wretched persons whom I have not enumerated, as also of those whom I have here mentioned, shall soon overtake me,

39. If, after this night passing away, I do not slay Jayadratha tomorrow. Now listen to another oath of mine.

40. If to-morrow's sun sets before I succeed in slaying this sinful wretch, then even here shall I enter into a blazing fire.

41. Asuras, and the celestials, mortals, winged creatures, reptiles, or anscentral manes, rangers of the night, Brahmanical or celestials sages, the mobile and immobile things and beings, and what other things there may be on the face of the earth,—even all these will not be able to protect that foe of mine.

42. If he enters the nether regions, or ascends to the skies, or repairs to the celestial regions or to the dominion of the Daityas, I will still, with a group of hundred, shafts, cut off the head of Abhimsnyu's enemy, when this night passed away."

Sanjaya said :—

43. Having spoken these words, Arjuna began to twang his bow with both his right and left arms. Rising above the voice of Arjuna, the sound of the twanging bow touched even the very heavens.

44. When Arjuna had thus taken that oath Janarddana blew the conch Panchajannya, and Phalguna also excited with rage blew his conch Devadatta.

45. Then that conch Panchajannya being filled with the breath of the undeteriorating Krishna, emitted a loud sound and that sound then caused the universe, the nether regions, the heavens and the quarters O lord, to tremble, as if the end of a Yuga had come.

46. Then when the high-souled Arjuna had taken that oath, sounds of thousands of musical instruments and fierce war-cries, arose from the encampment of the Pandavas.

Thus ends the seventy-third chapter, the oath of Arjuna, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXIV.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having heard the loud uproar created by the Pandavas desirous of victory, and having ascertained through spies the cause thereof, Jayadratha then rose up.

2. With a heart confounded with grief, and overwhelmed with affliction, and like one sinking in an extensive and deep sea of sorrow,

3. Then that ruler of the Sindhus,having reflected for a long while, proceeded to the assembly of the kings; there, before that assemblage of monarchs, expressing his grief,

4. And afraid of the father of Abhimanyu, and overwhelmed with shame, he spoke these words:—"He, who was begotten upon the wife of Pandu by the lustful Indra,

5. That one of perverse intellect is desirous of despatching me to the abode of Death. Good be tide you all: I shall now go back to my home out of a desire for saving my life.

6. Or, O foremost of the Kshatriyas, do you all protect me with the power of your weapons; O heroes, the son of Pritha (Arjuna) seeks to slay me; do you give me assurances of safety.

7. Drona, Duryodhana. Kripa, Karna, the rulers of the Madras and the Valhikas and Dussasana and others,—these are competent to save even one who is seized by Death himself.

8. Why then should not all these rulers of earth, united togather, be able to protect me, when I am threatened by Phalguna who seeks to slay me?

9. Having heard the rejoicings of the sons of Pandu, I am struck with fear, and O ruler of men, my limbs are loosing strength, like those of one on the verge of death.

10. Without doubt, the wielder of the bow *gandiva* has promised to slay me; therefore it is that, the Pandavas are shouting with delight at a time when they should grieve.

11. Even the Gandharvas, the Asuras the reptiles and the Rakshasas, can not dare baffle a vow of Arjuna, what to speak of the rulers of men?

12. Therefore O foremost of men,do you all accord me year permission (to go home) ; may good betide you ; I sнall go concealed

and the Pandavas will not be able to detect me."

13. Him thus lamenting with a heart confounded with the burden of fear, king Duryodhana ever devoted to his own personal interests, said these words:—

14. "O foremost among men, you should entertain no fear. What person, O best of men, can seek to slay you, when you stand in the midst of the Kshatriya heroes.

15. Myself, Vikartana's son Karna, Chitrasena, Vivinsati, Vurisravas, Sala, Salya, the invincible Vrishasena,

16. Purumitra, Jaya, Voja, Sudakshina the ruler of the Kamvojas, the mighty armed Satyavrata, Vikarna and Durmukha,

17. Dussasana, Suvahu, the ruler of the Kalingas with arms uplipted, Vindu and Anuvinda of Avanti, Drona and the son of Drona, Suvala's son,

18. These and many other rulers of various countries, attended with all their troops, shall exert themselves in protecting you. Let the fever of fear be driven away from yonr mind.

19. You also, O you of unrivalled effulgence, are the foremost of all heroes; why then, O ruler of the Sindhus, do you entertain fear from the Pandavas.

20. These ten and one Akshouhini of my troops shall strive their best for protecting you. Be not afraid, O ruler of the Sindhus. Let fear be driven away from your heart."

Sanjaya said:—

21. Thus comforted by your son Duryodhana, the ruler of the Sindhus, O king accompanied by the former, went that very night, to the camp of Drona.

22. Then saluting Drona by touching his feet, and having bowed down to him, Jayadratha, O ruler of men, sat down with humility and then asked the following question.

23. "Tell me, O illustrious one, the difference between myself and Phalguna, as regards hitting the aim, hitting it from a distance, lightness of hands and the force of strokes.

24. O preceptor, I want to know exactly the difference, as regards proficiency in arms, between myself and Arjuna. Say it to me truly."

Drona said:—

25. As regards teaching you and Arjuna, O sire, have both received an equal share. But through *Yoga*, and hrough the effects of hardship he had undergone, he has become superior to yourself.

26. In battle, you should never entertain any fear from Pritha's son Arjuna, I am surely your protector, O sire, from all dangers.

27. Even the very gods cannot obtain victory over him who is protected with the strength of my arms. I will (to-morrow) form such an array which Partha will never be able to reach the end of.

28. Therefore do you fight, and be not affraid in the least and observe (scrupulously) the duties of your order. O foremost of car-warriors, do you follow the path chalked out by your fathers and grandfathers.

29. Having studied the various branches of knowledge, you have burnt due offerings on the fire, you have also celebrated various sacrifices; death therefore should not be an object of apprehension to you.

30. (On the other hand), if you die you shall attain to that good fortune so difficult of being attained by the vile men, *viz.*, you shall ascend to those excellent regions that are acquired by the strength of our arms.

31. The Kurus, the Pandavas, the Vrishnis and other men, and I and my son;—think all these to be mortal and uncertain.

32. One after another, destroyed by the powerful God of Death, we shall go to the regions of the departed, carrying with us the fruits of our respective actions.

33. Those regions to which the ascetics repair through their observance of ascetic austerities, even those regions the heroic Kshatriyas attain, by the observance of their own duties."

34. Thus then was the ruler of the Sindhus comforted by the son of Bharadwaja. He then dismissed (from his heart) all fears of Partha (Arjuna), and set his heart upon battle.

35. Thereupon, O ruler of men, your warriors were filled with delight, and the war-cries they then shouted out, became mingled with the terrible din of the musical instruments.

Thus euds the seventy-fourth chapter the consolation given to Jayadratha, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXV.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After the son of Pritha (Arjuna) had promised to slay the ruler of the Sindhus, the mighty-armed son of Vasudeva addressed him saying :—

2. "Only with the consent of your brothers (and without taking my advice), you have promised to slay the Sindhu king, saying—'I will slay Jayadratha to-morrow.' This has been an act of rashness.

3. Without taking my advice previously, you have drawn down a heavy burden on your shoulders. Alas! how now shall we escape from being the butt of redicule of all men.

4. I had deputed spies in the encampment of the sons of Dhristarastra. Those spies, returning soon, furnished me with this information, *viz.* :—

5. 'O Lord, when you had vowed the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus, they (the Kouravas) heard the war-cries mingled with din of musical instruments that then arose from our camp.

6. Terrified at that up-roar, the sons of Dhritarastra together with all their relatives and kinsmen, thought—'these shouts are not without due causes' and they then waited (for what would ensue next).

7. Then, O mighty-armed one, a great confused noise was created by the Kouravas and their elephants, steeds, infantry and the rattle of their car-wheels.

8. 'Having been apprised of the slaughter of Abhimanyu, Dhananjaya sorely distressed will surely, in wrath, come out in the night desirous of battle.' Thinking even in the above manner, they stood prepared for battle.

9. Thus when those vow-observing heroes were preparing for the battle, O you of eyes like lotus petals, they heard of the true vow you had taken for the slaughter of the Sindhu king.

10. Thereat the counsellors of Suyodhana all became depressed at heart, and they then resembled weak animals struck with panic. Then king Jayadratha,

11. The ruler of the Shindhus and the Souviras, sorely afflicted with grief, and melancholy, rose up, and with his ministers retired to his tent.

12. Then in that time suitable for consultations, he consulted with them about the best remedial measure (against Arjuna's vow). And then repairing to the assembly of kings he said these words to Suyodhana.

13. "*He is the slayer of my son*, thinking thus, to-morrow will Dhananjaya assault me. In the very midst of his troops, he has vowed to slay me.

14. Neither the Gods, nor the Gandharvas, nor the Asuras, nor the reptiles nor the Rakshasas would venture to baffle that vow of Savyasachin (Arjuna).

15. Do you all therefore protect me in battle. Let not Dhananjaya, placing his feet on your heads, succeeded in hitting his target. Let suitable arrangements be made.

16. On the other hand, O delighter of the Kurus, if you do not uudertake to protect me in battle, permit me, O king, to go back to my home."

17. Thus spoken to, Suyodhana hang down his head and became depressed at heart. And ascertaining Jayadratha to be greatly terrified, he began to meditate (silently).

18. Then the ruler of the Shindhus seeing Duryodhana sorely afflicted, softly spoke these words, intended to conduce to his own welfare and good.

19. "I do not find any bowman among you who is equal to Arjuna in prowess, and who is capable of baffling the weapons of Arjuna in battle, with those of his own.

20. What person would dare stand before Arjuna who is supported by the son of Vasudeva and who wields the Gandiva bow? Even Indra of hundred sacrifices will not venture to do so!

21. It is said that the son of Pritha (Arjuna), on foot, fought with Almighty Maheswara himself in days gone by, on the Himavat mountains.

22. Being commissioned by the lord of the celestials, he slew on a single chariot thousands of Danavas inhabiting the golden city.

23. That son of Kunti is now united with the intelligent son of Vasudeva. And I think that he is now competent to destroy the triune world, with even the immortals therein!

24. So, may it please you, I desire to have either your permission to go home, or to be protected by the high-souled Drona and his son, both endued with heroism."

25. O Arjuna, thus addressed the king himself entreated the preceptor to undertake to protect Jayadratha. All remedial measures have been adopted; and chariots and steeds have been duly arranged.

26. Karna, Bhurisravas, the son of Drona, the invincible Vrishasena, Kripa, and the ruler of the Madras these six warriors will station themselves in the van of their array,

27. Drona has formed an array, half of which figures a car and half a lotus; inside that array there has been formed a minor array of the shape of an wedge, Jayadratha will stand in the middle of the lotus-like array and by the side of the other array.

28. There will the invincible king of the Sindhus stand, being protected by those heroes. In handling the bow and other weapons, in prowess, in might and in their high extraction,

29. These six warriors, O Partha, are surely exceedingly difficult of being borne down. Without first vanquishing these six car-warriors, you cannot hope to reach Jayadratha.

30. Think of the respective prowess of these six warriors. O foremost of men, when united together, they cannot be easily defeated.

31. Let us once again hold consultation with those versed in the use of weapons and with our own ministers and friends, to settle the course of action that should be adopted for our well-being and for the fruition of our aims.

Thus ends the seventy-fifth chapter, the counsel of Krishna, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Arjuna said:—

1. Those six car-warriors of the Dhartarastra host whom you consider to be superior to me in strength, I think their prowess is not even equal to half that of mine.

2. You will see, O slayer of Madhu, the weapons of all these heroes cut off by those of mine, when, desirous of slaying Jayadratha, I shall encounter them.

3. Before the eyes of Drona and before his bewailing followers, I will fell down on earth the head of the ruler of the Sindhus,

4. Even if the Saddhyas, the Rudras, the Vasus together with the twin Aswins, the Marutas with Indra, the Viswadevas, and the mighty gods,

5. The ancestral manes, and the Gandharvas and Suparna and the Oceans, the mountains, the firmament, Heaven, Earth the quarters and their regents,

6. The domestic and the wild animals and all the mobile and immobile beings united together—even if all these become the protector of the Sindu king, O slayer of Madhu,

7. Still you shall behold him to-morrow slain by my arrows in battle. O Krishna, I swear by my troth and touching my weapons,

8. That, O Kesava, at the very first instance, I shall proceed against that Drona, that fierce bowman who had undertaken to protect the sinful Jayadratha.

9. King Suyodhana considers this battle as a game depending on the dice identified with Drona himself. Therefore, penetrating through the divisions of Drona himself, I shall reach the king of the Sindhus.

10. Tomorrow you shall behold the mighty bowmen (of the enemy's host), rent open by me with Narachas of fieree energy, like the crests of the mountains cleft open by the bolt of Heaven.

11. Blood shall flow out copiously from the bodies of men, elephants and steeds, rent open and fallen on the ground, being struch with my whetted shafts.

12. Arrows shot from the bow Gandiva and resembling in speed the speed of mind or the wind itself, shall, by thousands, deprive men, horses, and elephants of their lives and limbs.

13. In to-morrow's battle, men will see those terrible weapons displayed by me which I have secured from Yama, Kuvera, Varuna, Indra, and Rudra.

14. In to-morrow's fight you will see the weapons of those that will come to protect the king of the Sindhus, repulsed by my one Brahma weapon.

15. To-morrow you shall see the earth covered by me with the head of princes cut off their trunks by the force of my arrows, O Kesava.

16. To-morrow will I afford gratification to the flesh-eaters and will scatter my enemies, and delight my friends and completely destroy the ruler of the Sindhus.

17. A greatly sinful wretch, one who had acted not like a kinsman, born in a sinful country, the king of Sindhus slain by me, will, to-morrow, impart sorrow to his followers.

18. To-morrow you shall see the mean ruler of the Sindus, that one brought up in all luxury and of sinful behaviour, pierced by me in battle with my shafts.

19. O Krishna, at day-break, I will achieve such feats, that Suyodhana will never think that there is any other bowman equal to me.

20. This Gandiva bow is of celestial make; I, O foremost of men, am also a warrior; you also, O Hrishikesha, are my driver; what then can not be conquered by me?

21. Through your grace, O almighty one, what is there unacquirable by me in battle? O Hrishikesha, knowing my prowess to be incapable of being baffled, why do you admonish me?

22. As Lakshmi is ever constant in the moon, as water ever remains in the ocean, so, O Janarddana, know my vow to be ever incapable of being frustrated.

23. Do not hate my weapons. Do not hate my firm and tough bow. Do not despise the prowess of my arms and do not also, O Krishna, despise Dhananjaya.

24. I will proceed to battle in such a manner that I will surely win and not lose. When I have taken the oath, count Jayadradratha already among those slain in battle.

25. Truth is ever constant in the Brahmana; humility is ever constant in the pious; prosperity ever attends sacrifice and victory ever attends Narayana.

Sanjaya said :—

26. Having spoken these words to Hrishikesha and having said so to his own self also, Vasava's son (Arjuna) once more addressed the lord Kesava in a sonorous voice, saying :—

27. "O Krishna, you should so arrange that as soon as the night passes away, my chariot may be ready, well-furnished with the impliments of war, inasmuch as the task at hand is very serious."

Thus ends the seventy-sixth chapter, the words of Arjuna, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

(PRATIJNA PARVA.—*Continued.*)

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then throughout the whole of that night, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya, both afflicted with sorrow and grief, and breathing like two serpents, did not enjoy an wink of sheep.

2. The gods together with Indra himself, understanding Partha and Narayana to be excited with rage, became anxious and they began to think—*what will come of it?*

3. Dry and dreadful winds, portending calamities, began to blow. A headless trunk and a bludgeon became manifest in the solar disc.

4. Although the sky was cloudless, thunderbolts fell on the earth, accompanied by dreadful rumbling and flashes of lightning; and the Earth with her mountains, hills and forests, began to quake.

5. O mighty monarch, the oceans, the abode of the numerous acquatic creatures, became agitated; and the ocean-going rivers began to flow in directions opposite to their natural courses.

6. The lower and upper lips of car-warriors, horses, men and elephants began to tremble, indicating, as if, a great festivity for the flesh-eaters and an increase of the population of Death's domain.

7. The animals on the field began to discharge excreta and urine and they began to wail aloud. Beholding all those dreadful portents capable of making the hair stand on end,

8. And having heard of the fierce vow of the mighty Savyasachin, all your troops, O foremost of the Bharatas, became preyed-upon by anxious thought.

9. Then the mighty-armed *Pakasasani* (Arjuna) addressing Krishna said :—"Do you offer consolation to your sister Subhadra and her daughter-in-law.

10. O Madhava, go, assuage the grie of my daughter-in-law and her companions; O lord, console them with your soft words fraught with truth."

11. Thereat the son of Vasudeva with a depressed heart, going to the pavilion of Arjuna, began to comfort his sorrowful sister afflicted with the grief caused by the death of her son.

The son of Vasudeva said :—

12. O daughter of the Vrishni race, do not grieve, with your daughter-in-law, for you son. O timid lady, the self-same end is ordained by the Destroyer for all created beings.

13. This sort of death is worthy of your son, born in an illustrious family, modest, and especially belonging to the Kshatriya order. Do not grieve for him.

14. Indeed it is through good fortune that that mighty car-warrior, modest and equal to his father in prowess, has obtained the goal coveted by the heroes, in consequence of his observance of Kshatriya duties.

15. Vanquishing innumerable foes and despatching them to the abode of Death, he as attained to the posthumous state of the

pious, that is enduring and in which all desires become fruitful.

16. Your son of tender years has attained to that end which the pious desire to have through the performance ascetic austerities, and Brahmacharyya, and through knowledge of the Shastras and wisdom.

17. You are the mother of a hero, the wife of a hero, the daughter of a hero, and a kins-woman of the heroes ; O amiable one do not bewail your son who has attained an excellent mode of existence.

18. That wretched and sinfnl ruler of the Sindhus, that murderer of an infant, shall soon reap the fruit of this arrogance, with his relations and kinsmen.

19, O beautiful lady, when the day dawns, that perpitrator of sinful acts, shall not escape the son of Pritha, even if he seeks shelter in Heaven itself.

20. Tomorrow you shall hear that the head of the Sindhu ruler has been severed from his trunk in battle, to roll on the precincts of the *Samantapanchaka*. Dismiss your grief and do not weep.

21. Keeping in the view duties of the Kshatriya order, that hero has obtained the end of the pious,—end, which we also will meet with, as also many other men who live by their weapons.

22. Of expansive chest and mighty arms, unretreating and slayer of car-warriors,your son, O you of dainty waist, has gone to heaven. Renounce yours fever of grief.

23, Obedient to the behests of his sire and his relations through mother's side, that valiant hero and mighty car-warrior of great prowess, has been slain, after he himself had slain may of his foes.

24. O queen, comfort your daughter-in-law; O daughter of a Kshatriya, do not lament. Dismiss your sorrow, O my beloved sister, as in the morrow you will hear such agreeable news.

25. What the son of Pritha has vowed shall be accomplished, and can not be otherwise. What your husband has set his heart upon, cannot remain undone.

26. Even if the descendants of Manu, and the Pannagas, and Pisachas, and night-rangers, and winged creatures, and Asuras and the celestials come forward to protect in battle the ruler of the Sindhus, yet he, with these, shall cease to exist to-morrow.

Thus ends the seventy-seventh chapter, the consolation of Subhadra,in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having heard these words of Kesava of high-soul, Subhadra afflicted with grief on account of her son, and sorely distressed, began to lament petiously.

2. "Alas ! son of my unfortunate self, why did you go to the battle? Oh son equal in prowess to your father, how could you perish. ?

3. Oh my dear child, how shall I see your face dark like the blue lotus and graced with beautiful teeth and charming eyes, soiled with the dust of battle-field !

4. Surely, heroic and unretreating as you were, you are now being seen by every body. Of graceful head, well-formed neck and arms, of expensive chest, of low belly,

5. Of limbs decked with ornaments, of charming eyes, and covered with wounds of weapons, surely creatures are now looking at you as if at the rising moon !

6. Alas ! you who used to lie down on beds covered with precious coverlets, alas, how could you, ever used to luxuries, now lie down on the bare earth, being pierced with arrows !

7. That hero of mighty arms who used formerly to be atteneded upon by most beautiful damsels, Oh, how can he, prostrate on the field of battle, pass his time to-day in the company of the jackals !

8. He who formerly used to be eulogised by the joyful bards, ministrels, and singers alas, he, to-day, is greeted by the dreadfu flesh-eaters with their fierce yells !

9. O son ! having the Pandavas, the Vrishni heroes, and the Panchalas for your protector, by whom have yon been slain like one helpless ?

10. O my sinless son ! my desire for looking at you is not yet satiated. Unfortunate that I am, I shall surely to-day go to the regions of Death.

11. When again, O my son, shall I see that face of yours, graced with expansive eyes, covered with beautiful looks, and from which sweet words and fragrant perfume used always to come out ?

12. Fie on the strength of Bhima, fie on the bowmanship of Arjuna, fie on the prowess of the Vrishni heroes, and fie on the might of the Panchalas !

13. Fie on the Kaikayas and on the Chedis and the Matsyas and the Srinjayas,

who all, united together, could not protect that hero when he went to battle.

14. To-day do I see the earth vacant and destitute of its beauty, inasmuch as I do not see Abhimanyu, and my eyes are blinded with grief.

15. How shall we see you slain,—you who are the son of the wielder of the Gandiva, the son of Vasudeva's sister, you who are a hero and an *Atiratha* too !

16. Alas, O hero, you were like a hoard of treasure to me, seen and lost in a dream. Alas ! everything human is as transitory as even a bubble of water !

17. How shall I comfort your young wife overwhelmed by the grief caused by your death, and resembling a cow bereft of its calf !

18. Alas, Oh my son, you have passed away prematurely at a time when you were on the point of bearing fruit, although I yearn to have a sight of you !

19. Surely the ways of the Destroyer are mysterious even to the wise, inasmuch as, you, having Kesava himself for your protector, have been slain in battle like one perfectly helpless.

20—21. May you, O son, attain that end which is theirs that perform sacrifices, theirs that are Brahmanas of purified soul, theirs that observe the vow Bhamacharyya, theirs that have bathed in the sacred waters, theirs that are grateful, theirs that are devoted to the performance of benevolent deeds, theirs that serve their preceptors, and theirs that make profuse sacrificial presents !

22. May that end be yours which they attain who fight and never retreat, or who fall in battle after slaying their numerous foes !

23 That blessed end which they attain who give away a thousand cows, or who perform charitable deeds at a sacrifice, or who give away houses and palaces to the liking of the recepients,

24. Or who give away gems and jewels to worthy Brahmanas, or who mete out just punishments, O son, may that blessed end be yours !

25. O son, may you attain to that end which sages of rigid vows attain to, by the performance of Brahmacharyya, or that end which is attained by the women who marry but once their husbands.

26. That eternal end which is obtained by monarchs through their good conduct, or by those persons who, leading one after nother all the four modes of life and through the observance of duties, have purified themselves,

27. That end which they attain who are kind to the poor and the woe-stricken, or who equally divide objects of enjoyments amongst themselves and their dependents, or who are free from the influence of malice, O son, may that end be yours!

28. That end which is theirs, who observe their vows, theirs that are devoted to righteous practices, theirs that serve their elders and preceptors, theirs that never drive away guests from their doors, O son, may that end be yours !

29. O son, may you attain to that end which they attain who preserve the coolness of their temper even in the most difficult circumstances, however much they may be consumed by the fire of sorrow !

30. May you attain to the end of those who always take care of their father and mother, and who never enjoy the company of women other than their own wives !

31. May you attain, O son, to the end of those who hold sexual intercourse with their own wives during their seasons, of those who restrain themselves from enjoying others' wives !

32. May you attain to the end of those, who, free from malice, look upon every one with an eye of peace or who are forgiving, and never enflict distress on others !

33. O son, may you attain to the end of those who ever hold themselves aloof from money, meat, intoxicating drinks, pride and falsehood, or who never cause pain to any body else !

34. O son, may you attain that end which they attain who are modest, learned in all the Shastras, content in knowledge, and hold their passions under check."

35. While the distressed Subhadra, overwhelmed with grief, had been thus lamenting, Panchali accompanied by Virata's daughter, came to her.

36. Then copiously lamenting and bewailing under the weight of their grief, they fell down, O king, on the earth, senseless, and like so many mad creatures.

37. Then the highly-afflicted Krishna who was there ready with water &c., sprinkled water on the face of them and for comforting them said such salutary words that should be said on such occasions.

38. Then he of eyes resembling lotus-petals said these words to his sister, weeping, insensible, trembling and pierced in her very heart.

39. " O Subhadra, bewail not your son ; O Panchali, console the sister of Uttara. Abhimanyu, that foremost of Kṣhatriyas,

has attained to the most excellent (posthumous) state.

40. O you of charming countenance, may all the other people of our race that are yet alive attain to that state which the illustrious Abhimanyu has attained !

41. We, supported by our allies, desire to accomplish that feat in this battle, the like of which, O lady, your son, that mighty car-warrior, achieved single-handed."

42. Thus having consoled his sister and Droupadi and Uttara, that subduer of foes, that mighty-armed one, (*viz.*, Krishna) came back to Partha's side.

43. Then with the permission of his relatives and of the kings and of Arjuna, O monarch, Krishna retired to the inner apartments of the latter's pavilion ; the rest of the kings then retired to their respective quarters.

Thus ends the seventy-eighth chapter, the lamentations of Subhadra, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then that Lord of eyes like lotus-petals, having entered into the matchless mansion of Arjuna, touched water, and on the smooth and auspicious floor,

2. Spread an auspicious bed made of Kusa-grass of the hue of lapises. Thereafter, with garlands of flowers, fried paddy and perfumes and other auspicious articles,

3. He decorated that bed and then kept around it many excellent weapons. Then when Partha also had touched water, obedient and humble servants,

4. Performed the usual nightly ceremony of offering victims to the three-eyed Mahadeva. Thereafter with a delighted heart, Pritha's son, with perfumes and garlands,

5. Adorned Madhava, and then offered him the nightly offering. Then Govinda with a smile thus spoke to Phalguna.

6. "O son of Pritha, lay yourself down for sleep; good betide you. I go in search of your welfare." Then placing at the door well-armed sentinels and door-keepers,

7. The auspicious Krishna followed by Daruka, entered his own tent. Then he laid himself down on his milk-white bed and brooded over the diverse measures (to be adopted on the morrow.)

8. Then that illustrious one of eyes resembling lotus-petals, for Partha's sake, began to reflect on various measures that would drive away the latter's grief and sorrow, and increase his energy and effulgence.

9. Then that one of soul engaged in meditation, that foremost lord of all, *viz.*, Vishnu of wide-spread renown, who always performed what was agreeable to Jishnu, had recourse to Yoga-meditation, for benefitting Arjuna.

10. During that night none enjoyed sleep in the camp of the Pandavas. During that night, O ruler of men, wakefulness possessed every body.

11. "The wielder of the Gandiva bow, the high-souled Arjuna, being afflicted sore with grief on acconnt of the death of his son, has rashly vowed the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus.

12. How indeed shall the mighty-armed son of Vasava, that slayer of hostile heroes, fulfil his vow ?" Even thus did they then think.

13. "The vow which the high-souled son of Pandu has made, is a very difficult one. King Jayadratha is endued with great energy. May Arjuna successfully observe his vow !

14. Indeed Arjuna has made a tremendous resolve, being highly afflicted with the grief on account of his son's death. The brothers (of Duryodhana) are very powerful, and his army is nnmerous.

15. The son of Dhritarastra (Duryodhana) has also employed them all in the protection of him (Jayadratha). May Dhananjaya return safe, having slain the ruler of the Sindhus !

16. Let Arjuna fulfil his vow and vanquish his enemies. If to-morrow he fails to slay the Sindhu king, he will enter the blazing fire.

17. Pritha's son Dhananjaya will never venture to falsify his vow. Oh, what will be the condition of king Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, if Dhananjaya dies !

18. Indeed Pandu's son (Yudhisthira) has grafted all his hopes of victory on Arjuna. If we have acquired any religious merit, if we have ever given away things in charity, if we have burnt offerings on the fire,

19. Then through the fruits of all those acts of ours, let Savyasachin (Arjuna) obtain victory." Thus, when they were talking to one another of the victory of Arjuna on the morrow, O lord,

20. O monarch, that live-long night at last passed away. During that night Janarddana, having awaked,

21. And remembering the vow Pritha's son had made, thus addressed Daruka :—" Afflicted with sorrow for the death of his dear-loved son, Arjuna has vowed,

22. O Daruka, saying *Before tomorrow's sun sets, I will slay Jayadratha.*—Having heard of this vow, Duryodhana will surely hold counsel with his counsellors,

23. As to how Partha might be prevented from slaying Jayadratha in battle. His several *Akshouhinis* will also protect the latter ;

24. As also Drona and his son, both accomplished in the use of all sorts of weapons, will protect him. That matchless hero, the thousand-eyed Indra himself, that humiliator of the pride of Daityas and Danavas,

25. Even he will not venture to slay Jayadratha, if he is protected by Drona in battle. I, therefore, will do that in the morrow by which Kunti's son Arjuna,

26. May slay Jayadratha before the sun goes down below the horizon. My wives, my friends, my kinsmen, my relatives,

27. None among these is so dear to me as is Kunti's son Arjuna. O Daruka, bereft of Arjuna, for o e. a moment, this world

28. I will not be able to look at. And therefore, it shall not be so. Vanquishing them all, with their horses and elephants,

29. I will slay them all with Karna and Duryodhana, for the sake of Arjuna. To-morrow the three worlds will behold my prowess in the dreadful battle,

30. When, O Daruka, I shall put forth my prowess for Arjuna's sake. To-morrow thousands of kings and hundreds of princes,

31. With their steeds, cars and elephants, will, O Daruka, turn hastily away from the battle. To-morrow, O Daruka, you shall see the army of kings crushed with my discus,

32. And overthrown by my enraged self, for the sake of Arjuna. To-morrow the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Pisachas, the reptiles and the Rakshasas,

33. Will all know me to be the true friend of Savyasachin. He that injures him (Arjuna) injures me ; and he that follows him follows me also.

34—35. With the help of your intelligence, do you indentify Arjuna to be the half of my ownself. When the day dawns, O Daruka, equipping my best of chariots according to the rules of military science, you must bring it and follow me carefully. My mace *Koumodaki* of celestial make, my discus and my bow and arrows,

36—41. And many other implements of war—placing all these, O Suta, on my chariot and leaving room thereon for my standard and for the heroic Garuda that adorns my car, and yoking thereto my excellent steeds named Valahaka, Meghapuspa, Saivya, Sugriva, having incased them in caparisons of gold of the effulgence of the solar orb and the fire, and yourself donning your coat of mail, stay on it carefully. Having heard the shrille blast resembling the Rishava note, of my conch Panchajannya, you will quickly come to me. In the course of a single day, O Daruka, I shall drive away the rage and the various woes of my cousin, the son of my paternal aunt. By every means, I shall so exert in battle, so that Vibhatsu in battle,

42. May slay Jayadratha even before the very eyes of the Dhritarastras. All those for whose death Vibhatsu will strive, I tell you truly, will be slain and O charioteer, he will succeed in obtaining victory.

Daruka said :—

43. Victory is sure to him, and whence can defeat come to him, whose charioteer ship you, O foremost men, have accepted.

44. I shall do what you will bid me do. This night will end ushering in a morning, that will bring victory for Vijaya.

Thus ends the seventy-ninth chapter the colloquy between, Krishna and Daruka, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXX.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Dhananjaya the son of Kunti, possessed of inconceivable prowess thinking of how to redeem his vow, recollected the Mantras (obtained from Vyasa) ; and soon was he lost in sleep.

2. Then the highly puissant god having the Garuda as an emblem on his banner, appeared before the ape-bannered Arjuna merged in thought and burning with grief, in his dream.

3. The pious-souled Dhananjaya through the love and veneration he bore for Krishna, never failed under any circumstance, to rise up and advance a few steps for welcoming him.

4. Standing up therefore (in his dream), he welcomed Govinda and offered him a seat. He himself however then did not think of resuming his own seat.

5. Thus seated, Krishna of mighty energy, knowing what resolution Partha had formed, said these words to the son of Kunti, while the latter was standing before him.

6. "O Son of Pritha, let not your heart give way to sorrow. Time is invincible. It is time that compels all creatures to take to the inevitable course.

7. Tell me, O foremost of men, the cause of this your sorrow? O foremost of the learned, sorrow should not be indulged in, inasmuch as it overthrows the ends of life.

8. What should be done should be done (without hesitation). Do your duty with all endeavours, O Dhananjaya, the grief that deprives one of the power of acting, is indeed his greatest enemy.

9. A man giving way to grief delights his enemies and saddens his friends, and himself becomes reduced in (strength). Therefore you should not grieve."

10. Having been thus spoken to by the son of Vasudeva, the invincible and learned Vhibhatsu said these words of (grave) signification to the former:—

11. "I have taken a terrible oath in vowing to slaughter Jayadratha. To-morrow shall I slay, O Kesava that wicked-souled slayer of my son.

12. Surely, O undeteriorating one, in order to frustrate that resolution of mine, the partisans of Dhritarastra will place the ruler of the Sindhus in their furthest rear and have him protected by all their mighty car-warriors.

13. Alas! O Madhava, their invincible army of one and ten *Aoukshahin* strong, consists of the remanants of their soldiers (slain during the last compaign).

14. Surrounded by all these troops, as also by all their mighty car-warriors, how could that wicked-souled ruler of the Sindhus, O Krishna, be seen (by us)?

15. Meseems, O Kesava, I shall not be able to fulfil my vow. And why should one like myself who could not redeem his promises, bear the burden of his life?

16. O hero, despondency stares me at the face,—me whose only consalotion now is in grief. I also tell you this that (during this period of the year) the sun runs his heavenly course swiftly."

17. Then Krishna that foremost of the twice-born ones, having heard of the source of Partha's sorrow, touched water, and sat there with his face turned towards the East.

18. Thereafter that highly puissant one of eyes likes lotus-petals, said these words, for the welfare of Pandu's son who had resolved upon the slaughter of the Sindhu king.

19. "O Son of Pritha, there is a weapon excellent and eternal, known by the name of Pasupata. By means of this weapon the god Maheswara (in days gone by) slew all the Daityas in battle.

20. "If to-day it be within your recollection, then to-morrow you will be able to slay Jayadratha. If it is unknown to you now, then do you worship in your mind the god having the bull for his emblem.

21. Meditating on that god in your mind, do you hold communion with him. You are his devotee, and in this way, through his grace only, can you expect to obtain that valuable treasure (Pasupata woapon)."

22. Thereupon, having heard Krishna's words and having rinced his month with water, Dhananjaya sat down on the ground; and with a singleness of heart, began to adore Siva (in his mind).

23. Thus rapt up in meditation, Arjuna saw himself and Kesava roving in the skies, just when the hour *Brahma* of auspicious indication set in.

24—25. Then it seemed that Parth held by his right arm by the lord Kesava, and endued with the fleetness of the wind, reached the root of the sacred Himavat mountain teeming with gems, abounding in luminous objects and inhabitted by Siddhas and Charanas. He was then accompanied by Kesava.

26. It seemed that he saw, as he went, many wonderful sights and objects; that one of righteous soul then saw on the Northern direction the white mountain.

27. He beheld in the pleasure-garden of Kuvera, the delightful lake adorned with lotuses. He also beheld that most excellent of rivers namely Ganga of copious waters.

28-29. Then he saw the regions about the Mandara mountains, regions that abounded in trees bearing blossoms and fruits; that were covered with pebles and transparent crystals, that were infested with lions and tigers; that abounded in many other animals, that contained many sacred hermitages; that were charming; that there frequented by beautiful birds and that ever rang with the melodious songs of the Kinnaras.

30. The mountain itself was graced with gold and silver peaks blazing with various

herbs and *Oshadhis*; and it was beautiful with numerous Mandara trees decked with blossoms.

31. He then arrived at the black mountains that looked like a heap of collyrium, and after that, at the *Brahmatunga*, at many rivers and at many countries.

32. He then reached the Sutunga and the Satasringa hills and the woods known by the name of *Saryyati*. Then he went to the holy place called the Aswasiras, and also to the one known by the name of Artharvana.

33. Then he arrived at that foremost of hills known as Vrisha-Dansa and also the hill called the great Mandara, both of which were thickly peopled by the Apsaras and beautified by the Kinnaras.

34—35. Then roaming on that hill in the company of Krishna, Pritha's son beheld a plot of earth abounding in soothing springs, teeming with gold and other minerals, burning with the effulgence of the sun or the moon, and possessing a large number towns and cities. He also beheld various seas and numerous rich mines of wealth.

36. Then wandering through the sky the firmament and the earth, he arrived at Vishnupada; there struck with admiration, and like an arrow shot from the bow, he came down with Krishna.

37. Partha then beheld a mountain blazing as if with the effulgence of the planets, the stars, the moon, the sun and the fire.

38. Having reached that hill he beheld that high-souled Divinity having the bull for his emblem on his banner, seated on its peak and lost in contemplation.

39. He saw the god burning in his own energy like a thousand suns; holding the trident; with matted locks on his head; of milk-white complexion; and wearing barks and tiger skins.

40. He saw the highly puissant god having his body rendered beautiful with a thousand eyes; aud in company with Parvati and numerous other beings of great effulgence.

41. The dependents of the god were engaged in singing, in playing upon musical instruments, in dancing, in laughing, in frolicking about and stricking and clapping their palms &c. The place was also made fragrant with perfumes.

42. Arjuna then beheld that protector of all creatures, that undeteriorating wielder of the bow (Pinaka), eulogised with beautiful penegyrics by the sages and the reciters of the Vedas.

43. Beholding the god, the pious-souled son of Vasudeva, together with the son of Pritha, saluted him by touching the earth with his head; and he uttered then the eternal verses from the Vedas.

44—47. Then Krishna adored with his speech, his mind, his intellect and his acts that origin of the worlds; that creator of the universe; that unborn divinity; that lord paramount; that undeteriorating one; that primary source from which the mind has sprung; that receptacle of the space, the wind and the luminary bodies; that creator of the rain; that primordial essence of the earth; that one worthy of the reverence of the celestials, the Danavas, the Yakshas, and the human beings; that one who is the Highest Brahma realised by the Yogins; that protector of those versed in the Vedas; that creator and destroyer of the mobile and immobile creatures; that God whose anger is destruction; that supreme soul; that one who is equal to Sakra or the sun.

48. Then Krishna and Arjuna sought the protection of that Bhava who is uncreate the unmanifest cause, and whom sages learned in the Vedas worship when they desire to obtain the subtle and spiritual existence.

49. Arjuna also worshipped that Diety over and over again, knowing him to be the origin of all creatures and the cause of the Past, the Present and the Future.

50. Then beholding them two, *viz* Nara and Narayana come to him, Sarva with a delightful heart said these words, as if smiling the while:—

51. "All hail, O you two foremost of men! Arise and let the fatigue of your journey be shaken off. Tell me soon what things your minds earn after, O you heroes!

52. What business of yours has brought you here? I will perform it. Ask for the boon that will benefit you? I will grant all your desires."

53. Hearing these words of the god, Vasudeva and Arjuna rose up with their palms folded; and they both endued with great intelligence, and of unblameable character, out of reverence, began to eulogise the high-souled Sarva with beautiful penegyrics.

Krishna and Arjuna said:—

54. Salutation unto Bhava, unto Sarva, and unto Rudra the giver of all boons; unto the lord of all animate beings; unto him who is known as Kaparddin; unto the great Divinity, unto Bhima; unto the three-eyed god who is identical with peace;

55. Unto Isha, and unto him who annihilates all pride engendered by the possession of prosperity. Salutation unto the slayer of Andhaka; unto the father of the Kumara (Kartikeya); unto him of blue neck and of great intelligence;

56. Unto the wielder of the Pinaka bow; unto the Havisya; unto him who is ever attended with truth and prosperity; unto him who is red, who is tawny, who is the hunter in disguise; and who is unvanquished;

57. Unto him who possesses blue locks, who wields the trident, who is omniscient; unto him who is the *Hotri* and the *Pitri*; unto him of three-eyes, who is disease and whose vital seed is fire itself;

58. Unto him who is inconceivable, who is the lord of the goddess Ambika; who receives homage from all creatures; whose emblem is the bull; whose head is shaved and who wears matted locks and who is again a Brahmacharin;

59. Unto him who performs ascetic austerities in the waters, who is devoteto the study of the Vedas, and who is unvanquished. Unto him who is the soul of the universe, its creator, and remains pervading it.

60. Salutation salutation unto him worthy of the homage of all creatures, and the origin of all creatures; unto the Brahmachakra, the Sarva, the Sankara, and Siva.

61. Salutations be unto him who is the lord of speech and the master of the created beings; salutation unto the lord of the universe and of the great people.

62. Salutations unto him of thousand heads who possesses a thousand arms and who is Death himself. Salutations unto him of thousand eyes and legs, whose deeds are countless.

63. Salutations unto him of the complexion of gold, who is clad in a armour of gold; and unto him who is ever gracious upon his devotees. O lord let our desires be fulfilled.

Sanjaya said :—

64. Thus having eulogised the great god, Arjuna and the son of Vasudeva began to propitiate the former for obtaining the weapon (*Pasupata*) from him.

Thus ends the eightieth chapter, Arjuna's dream, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then the son of Pritha with a delightful soul, and joined palms and eyes expanded in amazement, gazed at the god having the bull for his banner-mark, and the receptacle of all energies.

2. He then beheld by the side of the three-eyed god, the offerings he used to make, every night, to the son of Vasudeva.

3. Thereafter that son of Pandu having worshipped in his mind both Sarva and Krishna, said unto the god Sankara—'I desire to have the celestial weapon (Pasupata)!'

4. Then having heard the words of Pritha's son, that disclosed what boon he wanted, the god (Mahadeva) with a smile, thus replied to Vasudeva's son and Arjuna :—

5. "All hail, O you two foremost of men, I have known the desire of your hearts; I shall grant even that desire of yours which has brought you both here.

6. You slayers of foes, there is a heavenly lake of nectar not far from this place; in days gone by, I laid down my celestial bow and arrows there.

7. With that bow and arrow, I slew in battle all the enemies of the gods. From that lake bring, O Krishnas, that excellent bow and arrow of mine.

8. Thereupon saying 'yea' to the words of Siva, the two heroes with all their followers, went to that celestial lake possessed of hundreds of celestial wonders.

9. Then those two sages Nara and Narayana fearlessly went to that holy lake capable of fulfilling all desires, that had been indicated by the god having the bull for his emblem.

10. Thereafter Arjuna and the undeteriorating Krishna having repaired to that lake of the effulgence of the solar disc, saw in its waters a terrible serpent.

11. They also saw there another foremost of snakes possessing a thousand hoods, of the effulgence of fire; it was then vomitting terrible flames.

12. Then Krishna and Partha, having touched water and having folded their palms and saluted the god having the bull of his emblem, approached those snakes.

13. As they approached the snakes, learned as they were in the Vedas, they recited the

hundred slokas in the Veda to the praise of Rudra, saluting all the time with all their heart, Bhava of infinite might.

14. Then through the charm of those adorations offered to Rudra, those two snakes forsook their snake forms and assumed the forms of a bow and arrow capable of slaying the enemy.

15. Then highly delighted, they both took up those effulgent weapons, the bow and the arrow. Then those two high-souled ones, gave that bow and arrow to the illustrious Mahadeva.

16. Thereafter from one of the sides of Siva's body, a Brahmacharin issued forth; his eyes were tawny and he seemed to be the refuge of all asceticism. Having blue throat and red hair, he was possessed of great energy.

17. Then that Brahmacharin taking up that most excelleut bow stood in the proper posture. And placing the arrow on the string, he began to stretch the latter duly.

18. Thereupon, seeing the mode of his grasping the bow, drawing the string, placing his legs, and hearing also the *Mantras* uttered by Bhava, Pandu's son of infinite prowess duly learnt them all,

19. When the mighty and powerful Brahmacharin, shot that arrow even to the lake whence it had beeu brought; he also threw that bow into the self-same lake.

20. Thereupon Arjuna gifted with an accurate memory knowing that Bhavas was pleased with him, and recollecting the boon the latter had accorded to him in the forest, and the sight of his person he had vouchsafed to reveal to him,

21. Desired in his mind that all this might be true, thinking—' May all this be productive of fruit'. Knowing this to be his desire, Bhava pleased with him, gave him the boon.

22. He also granted him the terrible Pasupata weapon and the fulfilment of his vow. Then having obtained the Pasupata weapon of celestial make, once more, from the Lord,

23. The invincible Arjuna, with the down of his body erect, considered his vow already fulfilled. Then with delighted hearts, they (Krishna and Arjuna) saluted the god Maheswara, by bending their heads low!

24. Even at that moment obtaining the permission of Bhava, the two heroes Arjuna and Krishna, transported with delight came back to their own encampment,

25. Indeed their joy was as great as that which filled Indra and Vishnu when those two deities, desirous of slaying Jambha, had secured the permission of Bhava (to do so), the slayer of mighty Asuras.

Thus ends the eighty-first chapter, the obtaining of the Pasupata weapon, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. When Krishna and Daruka were thus talking to one another, O king, the night drew to its close. At day-break, king (Yudhisthira) rose from his bed.

2. The *Panisbanikas*, the *Magadhas*, the *Madhupavkikas* began to read verses in his praise; and Vaitalikas and ministrels began to eulogise that foremost of men (Yudhisthira).

3. The dancers commenced dancing, songsters gifted with melodious voices, began to sing charming songs frought with praises of the Kuru dynasty,

4. *Mridangas*, *Jharjharwas*, *Verses*, *Panavas*, *Anakas' Gomukhas*, *Adhambhras*, *conchs*, and *Dundhuvis* of fierce sounds,

5. These and many other such musica instruments, were, O Bharata, played upon by well-trained and expert performers, all of them being transported with joy.

6. The loud din (thus produced) resembling the rumbling of clouds, reached the very heavens themselves; and it awakened that foremost of all rulers of earth *viz.* king Yudhisthira, from his sleep,

7. Having enjoyed an undisturbed sleep on his precious and excellent bed, king Yudhisthira awoke (in the morning). Then rising up, the king retired to the bath-room, for performing acts that must be performed (Sandhyas &c.)

8. There, a hundred and eight orderlies robed in white garments, all washed and of yothful age, approached the king with many a golden jar filled (with water) to the very brim.

9. Seated at his ease on an auspicious seat and vested in a garment of fine texture, the king bathed in waters fragrant with sandal-wood and sanctified with religious aphorisms.

10. His limbs were shampooed by strong and well-trained servants, with water that had been rendered bitter, with medicinal drugs. He was then washed with holy *Adivasa*-water fragrant with perfumes.

11. Then being furnished with a piece of cloth that was as white as the plumage of the swan and that had been lying loose there, the king encircled his head with it in order to rub off the water therefrom.

12. Thereaffer that mighty-armed one, having smeared his body with the paste of *Hari*-sandal, and decorated his person with garlands and flowers and dressed in stainless garments, sat with his palms folded, facing the east.

13. Then, ever following in the wake of the righteous, the son of Kunti reiterated the prayers that should be done so; and then with becoming meekness, he entered the chamber where the blazing fire was kept (for adoration).

14. Then having worshipped the fire with holy and purified faggots and religious aphorisms, the monarch came out of the fire-chamber.

15. Then entering into a second chamber, that foremost of men king Yudhisthira saw a number of venerable old Brahmanas well-versed in the Vedas and all foremost of their order.

16. They were all self-restrained, and had performed ablutions after the accomplishment of sacrifices, vows, and recital of the Vedes. Worshippers of the sun, they counted a thousand in number with eight thousand followers.

17—18. The mighty armed son of Pandu having caused these Brahmanas to pronounce, in clear voices, benedictions on him, by making presents of honey, clarified butter and delicious fruits of the best sort, gave away to every one them a *Niksha* of gold, a hundred steeds adorned with golden caparisons and precious garments and other presents that were liked by them.

19. Then the son of Pandu, giving unto them milch cow, that yielded milk whenever touched, with calves, and with their horns and hoofs decked with gold and silver respectively, circumambulated them.

20. Auspicious objects capable of increasing good fortune, golden *Nundyavartas*, garlands of flowers, jars of water, blazing fire,

21. Vessels filled to the brim and containing *Askhatas*(sun-dried rice) &c, and the yellow pigment prepared from the urine of the cow and also well-decked and beautiful maidens, and curds, and clarified butter and honey and water,

22. And auspicious birds and other things considered to be holy—seeing and touching these things, the son of Kunti proceeded to the outer apartments.

23—24. There, O mighty armed one, the attendants that were in waiting, brought the monarch an excellent throne (to sit upon)—throne that was wholly made of gold and of auspicious marks and adorned with pearls and lapises; this throne was made by the celestial artificer Viswakarman and was over-spread with a precious carpet which again was covered by a stuff of very fine texture.

25. Then when that high-souled one had seated himsalf on that throne, his orderlies brought him all his precious and glittering ornaments.

26. Then, O mighty monarch, the appearance of the illustrious son of Kunti who was adorned with pearls and various ornaments was such as to excite the jealousy of his foes.

27. Then fanned with yak-tails furnished with handles of gold, and of white effulgence out-vying the charming beams of the moon, the monarch shone like a mass of cloud emitting flashes of lightning.

28. That delighter of the Kurus then, was praised by all creatures; the ministrels gratified him with panegyrics; and the Gandharvas then began to sing at his hearing.

29. Thereafter within a moment the voices of the bards swelled to a tremendous sound; and instantly were there heard the clatter of the car-wheels of car-warriors, and the hoof-sounds of the cavalry.

30. With the tinkling of bells tied round the necks of the elephants, with the blasts of conchs and with the sound of the (measured) foot-fall of the infantry, the Earth began to quake.

31—33. Then one of the attendants guarding the doors, cased in armour, youthful, adorned with ear-rings, and having his sword tied to his waist-band, entered the private chamber of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira; then kneeling down before him and doing obeisance to the worshipful and illustrious monarch with his head, he represented that Hrishikesha was waiting to be ushered in. Thereupon that foremost of men (Yudhisthira) welcomed Madhava with enquiries after his health and welfare;

34. He also ordered his attendants saying:—"Give to this one an excellent seat and offer him a *Argha*." Then when he of the Vrishni race was ushered in, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira caused him to be seated on an excallent seat and worshipped him with proper ceremonies.

Thus ends the eighty-second chapter, the decoration of Yudhisthira, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued*

Sanjaya said:—

1. King Yudhisthira the son of Kunti then welcoming the son of Devaki, that assuager of the grief of men, cheerfully addressed the following words to him:—

2. "Have you, O slayer of Madhu, passed the night in happiness? Are all your sense-organs, O undeteriorating one, as keen as ever?"

3. The son of Vasudeva also put similar questions to Yudhisthira. Then an orderly came there and said that other Kshatriya warriors were waiting to be ushered in.

4. Permitted by the king, the orderly introduced that influx of men, numbering in it, Virata, Bhimasena, Dhristadyumna and Satyaki,

5. And the ruler of the Chedis, Dhristaketu, the mighty car-warrior Drupada, Sikhandin, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, Chekitana with the prince of the Kekayas,

6. As also Yuyutsu of Kuru race, and Uttamaujas of the Panchala tribe, and Yudhamanyu and Suvahu and the five sons of Droupadi.

7. These and many other Kshatriyas approached that best of Kshatriyas of illustrious fame; and they sat down on auspicious seats.

8. The two mighty heroes, Krishna and Yuyudhana, of illustrious souls and great effulgence, both sat on a single seat.

9. Thereafter king Yudhisthira, at the hearing of those assembled Kshatriyas, said these sweet words addressing that slayer of Madhu, who was graced with eyes resembling lotus petals:—

10. "Like celestials depending on the strength of the thousand-eyed (Indra), we relying on you alone, seek victory in battle, and eternal happiness.

11. You, O Krishna, know all about the despoliation of our kingdom, our exile by the enemy, and also all the miseries we had to suffer.

12. O Lord of everything, O you who are merciful to all devoted to you, upon you rest all our happiness, and even our existence, O slayer of Madhu.

13. O descendant of the Vrishni race, so do you manage that, my heart may always rely on you, and Arjuna's oath may remain inviolate.

14. Help us to cross this veritable ocean of grief and wrath. O Madhava, be you our raft to-day, as we desire to cross this ocean (of troubles).

15. A car-warrior desirous of slaying his adversary can not, in battle, do that (to achieve his purpose) which, O Krishna, his driver can do, if this latter strives with due caution.

16. O mighty-armed Janardana, as you save the Vrishnis from all calamities, so also, it behoves you to save us from this impending ruin.

17. O you the bearer of the conch, the discus and the mace, do you save the sons of Pandu sunk in the deep and boatless Kuru ocean, by becoming even a boat to them.

18. Salutations unto you, the Lord of the foremost of celestials, the eternal one, the supreme destroyer, O Vishnu, O Jishnu, O Hari, O Krishna, O Vaikantha, and O foremost of all male beings,

19. Narada had pronounced you to be that best and most ancient of sages, *viz.*, (Narayana), who accord boons, who wields the Sarnga bow and who are the foremost of all. Make, O Madhava, all these words true."

20. Thus spoken to in the midst of the assembly by the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, that most fluent speaker Kesava replied to the former, in a voice sonorous like the rumbling of clouds charged with rain.

Krishna said:—

21. In all the worlds, including the regions of celestials, there is no such wielder of bow who can equal Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

22. Endowed with energy, accomplished in the use of weapons, possessed of great prowess and might, ever brave in battle, and wrathful and agile, he is the foremost of all men.

23. Moreover he is youthful, of shoulders strong like those of the bull, of long-arms and mighty prowess; his gait resembles that of the lion itself. That handsome hero will slay all your enemies.

24. On my part, I shall so act as Kunti's son Arjuna may be able to consume the troops of Dhritarastra's son, even like a raging conflagration.

25. Even this very day, with the help of his arrows, Arjuna will compel that one of sinful acts, that mean-minded slayer of Subhadra's son *viz.*, Jayadratha, to travel on a road from which no traveller ever returns.

26. The vultures, the hawks, the fierce jackals, and other carnivorous animals, will to-day hold a feast on the flesh of that one.

27. O Yudhisthira, even if the Gods with Indra at their head to-day become the protectors of Jayadratha, yet, slain in the thick of the fight, he shall undoubtedly be borne to the capital of Death's domain.

28. The victorious Arjuna shall this day come to you, having slain in battle the ruler of the Sindhus. Dismiss the grief of your heart and free yourself of the fever of anxiety, and O king, be you attended with prosperity!

Thus ends the eighty-third chapter, the words of Krishna, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

(PRATIJNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When they were thus conversing, Dhananjaya appeared there, desirous of seeing that foremost of the Bharatas, *viz.*, king Yudhisthira, and his relatives.

2. When he had entered that auspicious chamber and was standing before the king, having saluted him duly, that foremost of the Pandavas (king Yudhisthira) rose from his seat and out of affection, embraced Arjuna.

3. Having locked Arjuna in his affectionate embrace, and having smelled the crown of his head and pronouncing best benedictions on him, the king smilingly addressed him saying :—

4. "It is evident, O Arjuna, that in today's fight a great victory is sure to court you, inasmuch as your very appearance indicates it, as also the fact that Janardana is gratified with you."

5. Then Jishnu spoke to him of the wonderful incident (he had seen in his dream) in the following terms :—"May good betide you, O monarch! through the mercy of Kesava, I have seen a marvel."

6. Then, for giving very assurance to his partisans, Dhananjaya related everything he had seen in his dream—his meeting with the three-eyed god.

7. Thereupon all the hearers filled with wonder, touched the earth with their heads; and thus having bowed down to the god having the bull for his emblem, they said *Excellent, Excellent.*

8. Then permitted by the son of Dharma, all the friends and partisans of the Pandavas, cheerfully set out for the battle with haste and with hearts swelling with rage.

9. Then having saluted the king, Yuyudhana, Arjuna and Krishna of unfading glory, with cheerful hearts, issued out of the chamber of Yudhisthira.

10. Those two indomitable warriors, the heroes Yuyudhana and Janardana, riding on the same car, proceeded towards the abode of Arjuna.

11. Repairing there, Hrishikesha dressed and equipped the car of that foremost of warriors, like a professional charioteer—car that bore the device of the monkey prince on its standard.

12. Thereupon that best of chariots of rattle resembling the rumble of clouds and of effulgence like that of heated gold, thus equipped (by Kesava), shone like the maker of day in the morning.

13. Thereafter that foremost of men, namely the son of Vasudeva, cased in an armour, told Pritha's son who had completed his morning prayers that his chariot had been made ready.

14. Then that foremost of all men of this world, namely, the diadem-decked Arjuna, clad in a golden coat of mail, and holding his bow and arrows in his grasp, circumbulated his vehicle.

15. Then praised, and blessed with benedictions believed to bestow victory in battle, by Brahmanas old in the performance of austerities, in knowledge and in years, ever engaged in the performance of religious rites and sacrifices, and holding all their passions in subjugation, Arjuna mounted upon his mighty chariot,—

16. That excellent vehicle of his which had been previously purified with victory-giving *mantras,*—like the sun of burning radiance ascending the Eastern mountains.

17. Then that best of car-warriors adorned with golden ornaments, shone, in consequence of those golden ornaments of his, on his chariot, like the sun of burning radiance on the breast of the Meru mountain.

18. After Partha, Yuyudhana and Janardana mounted on that car, like the twin Aswins riding on the best celestial car when they had come to the sacrifice of Swarjyuati.

19. Then Govinda that best of charioteers took up the reins (of Arjuna's steeds), like Matali taking up the reins of Indra's horses, when the latter went to fight in order to slay Vritra.

20. Mounting on that his best of cars, with those two heroes Yuyudhana and Janardana, Pritha's son appeared like the moon dispelling darkness when rising in conjuction with Budha and Sukra.

21. Then that slayer of large bodies of foes (Arjuna), desirous of bringing about the slaughter of the Sindhu ruler, proceeded to battle, like Indra accompanied by Varuna and the sun, proceeding to fight with the Asuras, in the battle caused by the abduction of *Taraka.*

22. The ministreals and musicians then greeted the heroic Arjuna as he proceeded, with the sounds of musical instruments and eulogies, auspicious and well-worded.

23. The voices of the bards and the ministrels pronounced benedictions of victory; and good-day greetings became pleasing to the heroes, being mingled with the din of musical instruments.

24. An auspicious breeze bearing holy fragrance, began to blow from behind Partha and it gladdened him, but sucked up the energies of his adversaries.

25. In that moment, O king, various auspicious signs appeared to view, indicative of the victory of the Pandavas,

26—27. And, O sire, of the reverses of their enemies. Seeing those signs indicative of victory Arjuna, addressing the mighty bow-man Yuyudhana who was sitting at his right, said these words:—"O Yuyoudhana, in to-day's battle, my victory is undoubted,

28. Inasmuch as, O foremost, of Sini's race, these auspicious signs are appearing to us. I shall now penetrate to the spot where the king of the Sindhus remains,

29. Desirous of seeing a display of my prowess and of going to the domain of Yama. Indeed, as the slaughter of the Sindhu ruler is one of my foremost duties,

30. So also the protection of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira is another imparative duty of mine. Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you protect the king this day,

31. So that, protected by you he will be as safe as if he were protected by my own self. Moreover, I do not see any one who can vanquish you in battle.

32. In battle you are equal to Vasudeva himself; even the lord of the celestials can not vanquish you. Placing the burden of the king's protection on you or on the mighty car-warrior Pradyumna,

33. I can, O foremost of men, without anxiety, exert myself in slaying the Sindhu king. O descendant of the Stwata race, you need not entertain any misgiving about myself.

34. It shall be your first duty to protect the king, with all your heart and soul. There where the mighty-armed son of Vasudeva stayeth,

35. Or where I myself stay, certainly no calamity can befall there." Thus spoken to by Pritha's son, Satyaki the slayer of hostile heroes, saying 'yea' to the words of the former, returned to that part of the field where Yudhisthira was.

Thus ends the eighty-fourth chapter, the words of Arjuna, in the Pratijna of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXV.

JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. When the day after the one in which Abhimanyu had been slain, came, what did the Pandavas, afflicted with grief and sorrow, do? What warriors of my host fought with them?

2. Aware, as they were, of the feats achieved by Savyasachin (Arjuna), tell me, how could the Kauravas and my warriors, having perpetrated that sinful act, (Abhimanyu's slaughter) remain undaunted?

3. How could they in battle dare look at that foremost of men as he proceeded like the all-destroying Death, burning with fury, and distressed with the grief occasioned by the slaughter of his son.

4. What did my warriors do, beholding that warrior having the king of the monkeys for the emblem on his standard, that hero afflicted with the grief caused by the death of his son, and shaking his huge bow in battle?

5. What, O Sanjaya, has befallen, unto Duryodhana in this day's battle? A great grief stares us in the face. I do not hear any longer, sounds of joy (from our camp).

6. Those mind-captivating sounds, highly pleasing to the sense of hearing that were before heard from the pavilion of the Sindhu king, those sounds are no longer perceived to-day.

7. In the encampment of my sons, the sounds of numerous ministrels and panegyrists singing eulogies, and of dancers, are no longer heard.

8. Formerly all these sounds used to strike my ears incessantly. Alas, merged as they are in grief, I do not any longer here those sounds from their pavilions.

9. Formerly, O Sanjaya, while sitting in the camp of the truth-loving Somadatta, I used to hear all those charming sounds.

10. How poor in religious merit I am to-day, inasmuch as I perceive the pavilion of my sons to-day to be resounding with sounds of sorrow and lamentations, and to be destitute of all sounds of life and energy.

11. I do not now hear those sounds I used to hear formerly in the camps of Vivingsati, Durmukha, Chitrasena, Vikarna, and other sons of mine,

12. That fierce bowman namely the son of Drona, who is the protector of my sons, upon whom Brahmanas, Kshatriyas and Vaisyas and a large number of pupils used to wait,

13. Who delighted in disputations and conversation and in the stirring music of various instruments and in diverse kinds of songs,

14. Who was worshipped by many persons among the Kurus, the Pandavas, and the Stwatas—O you son of Suta, even in the camp of that son of Drona no sound could be heard as before.

15. Numerous songsters and dancers used to dance attendance upon that mighty bowman *viz* the son of Drona! Now their sounds could no longer be heard in their camp.

16. The loud sound that used to be sent up from the pavilion of Vindu and Anuvindu every evening, alas, that sound could no longer be heard there. In the camp of the Kekayas also,

17. Could no longer be heard the sound that used to be made by the songs and slappings of palms of soldiers engaged in dance and merry-making.

18. Those *Yajaka* Brahmanas accomplished in conducting *Saptatantu* sacrifices, who used to wait upon the son of Somadatta versed in the Vedas, the sound made by those Brahmanas could no longer be heard.

19. The twang of bows, the sound of Vedic recitations, the whistle of shafts, the whizz of swords and the rattle of cars,—these sounds were to be heard incessantly in the pavilion of Drona. But I do not hear them now.

20. The melody of songs that used to be sang in the various parts of the field and that used to be mingled with the sound of musical instruments, alas, that sound could not be heard this day,

21. When Janardana of unfading glory out of the compassion he cherished for every creature, came here with a desire for concluding peace,

22. Then, O Suta, I said unto the wicked Duryodhana :—"With the son of Vasudeva as the mediator, O son, do you conclude peace with the Pandavas.

23. Meseems the time for concluding peace has arrived. O Duryodhana, do not violate my command. If you now disregard the son of Vasudeva who now entreats you for peace

24. And advises you for your welfare, victory will never fall in your lot in battle." Duryodhana however neglected him of the Dasarha race, that foremost of all bowmen,

25—26. Who then addressed him for his welfare, and thus he brought danger on his own head. Then that son of mine, whose intellect was perverted, and who was being drawn into the jaws of death, accepted the counsel of Dussasana and Karna and rejected that which I offered him. I was not in favor of the game at dice, nor was Vidura so.

27. Neither also did the ruler of the Sindhus approve of the game at dice, nor did Bhisma approve of it. So also, Salya Bhurisravas, Purumitra and Jaya did not like it.

28. O Sanjaya, Aswathaman, Kripa and Drona, none of these approved of that game. If my unfortunate son had conducted himself according to the counsel of these persons,

29. He with his friends and relatives would then have passed his days in peace and happiness. Of sweet and charming speech, always speaking what is agreeable to their relatives,

30. Of noble extraction, esteemed by all, gifted with knowledge, the sons of Pandu are sure to reap happiness. The man who depends on rightiousness, is sure to reap happiness always and everywhere.

31. After death, he obtains bliss and grace (of god). Relying on their own prowess for the achievement of their purposes, the Pandavas deserve to enjoy one half of the Earth itself.

32. The sea-girt earth is as much an inheritance to them as it is to the Kurus. Obtaining sovereignty they will ever remain in the path of virtue.

33. I have kinsmen, O son, to whose words the Pandavas will ever pay attention,

as for instance, Salya, Somadatta, the high-souled Bhisma,

34. Drona, Vikarna, Valhika, Kripa, and numerous other high-solued and venerable (in years) members of the Bharta dynasty.

35. O Sire, if these persons speak for you, the Pandavas will act up to their beneficial words. Who among these do you think would speak otherwise?

36—37. Krishna will never abandon rightiousness; the Pandavas are ever submissive to him. Those heroes will not also disregard the rigteous words that I shall speak to them, for the Pandavas are all of righteous soul." Thus plaintively lamenting, I said these and many other words to my son, O Suta.

38. But that fool did not listen to me! Meseems all this is owing to the evil influence of time. There where remain Vrikodara, and Arjuna and the Vrishni hero Satyaki,

39. And Uttamoujas of the Panchala race, and the indomitable Yudhamanyu, and the invincible Dhristadyumna, and the ever-victorious Sikhandin,

40. And the Asmakas, Kekayas, and Kshatradarman of the Somaka clan, the ruler of the chedis and Chekitana, and Vibhu the son of the Kasi king,

41. The sons of Droupadi and Virata and the mighty car-warrior Drupada, and those foremost of men the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, and the slayer of Madhu as the counsellor,

42. What man in this world desirous of living would venture to fight with these? Who else again will face my enemies when they will display their celestial weapons,

43. Save and except Duryodhana, Karna Sakuni the son of Suvala and Dussana as their fourth; I do not indeed see a fifth man.

44. They who have Visaksena (Vishnu), clad in armour and reins in hand, on their chariot, they who have Arjuna for their warrior, they can never suffer defeat.

45. Does Duryodhana now remember all those lamentations of mine? You say that Bhisma and Drona, those two foremost of men, have been killed.

46. I think my foolish sons are now overwhelmed with grief, seeing now the words of the far-sighted Vidura to be true and fruitful.

47. I think my foolish sons are now indulging in lamentations seeing the army sorely distressed by Arjuna and the grand son of Sini, and seeing also the terraces of their cars empty.

48. Surely Dhananjaya is consuming my sroops like fire assisted by the wind, burning down a heap of straw dried by the heat of the sun that rises at the expiration of the winter season.

49. O Sanjaya, expert as you are in story-telling, relate to me everything that happened, after that wrong had been inflicted on Arjuna in the evening.

50. What was the state of your mind, O son, when Abhimanyu was slain? Surely the feats of valour of the weilder of the *Gaudiva* bow,

51. My warriors were unable to bear, guilty, as they were, of injuring Arjuna (by slaying his son). What measures Duryodhana or Karna direct to be adopted?

52—53. What also Dussasana or the son of Suvala thought fit to do, when they were in volved in this predicament. O sire, everything that befell my assembled sons was, O Sanjaya, certainly owing to the misdeeds of my wicked son Duryodhana, who follows in the path of covetousness, whose understanding has been perverted by wrath, whose soul is vitiated,

54. Who longs to have sovereignty who is stupid and whose reason is clouded by anger. O Sanjaya, tell me whether the measure adopted by him was agreeable to policy or against it?

Thus ends the eighty-fifth chapter, the repentance rf Dhritarastra, and the Jayadratha-badha of the Droua Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)
—Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Alas, as I have seen everything with my own eyes, I shall tell you all. Hear me patiently. Great indeed is your fault.

2. O king, these lamentations of yours are as useless as the construction of embankments when the waters have receeded from a flooded field. O foremost of the Bharatas, do not indulge in grief.

3. The decrees of Destiny are wonderful and enevitable. O foremost of the Bharatas, do not give way to grief, for these things are not unique.

4. If in days gone by, you had prevented Kunti's son Yudhisthira or your own sons,

from the tournament at dice, then this calamity would not have overtaken you.

5. If, again, on the eve of the battle, you had prevented the enraged parties from joining in the battle, then this calamity would not have overtaken you.

6. If, again, formerly you had incited the other Kurus to put an end to the existence of the refractory Duryodhana, then this calamity would never have overtaken you.

7. If, indeed, you had done one of these alternatives, then the Pandavas, the Panchalas, the Vrishnis, and the other rulers of Earth have never had the reason for blaming you for your pervert understanding.

8. If, again, doing the duty of a father, you had (by directing Duryodhana on the path of virtue) compelled him to follow in the same path, then this calamity would never have befallen you.

9. You are the wisest man on the face of the Earth. But inspite of your being so, you accepted the counsel of Karna, Duryodhana and Sakuni, abondoning the ways of eternal virtue.

10. Therefore, O king, all these lamentations of yours that I have heard,—you who are absorbed in the enjoyment of worldly objects—appear to me to be like honey-mixed with poison.

11. In days gone by, Krishna did not hold king Yudhisthira the son of Pandu, or Bhisma, or Drona, in so high an estimation as he did hold you, O king.

12. But when he came to know you fallen from the duties of royalty, that time forward, he did not respect you as before.

13. When your sons applied harsh epithcts to the sons of Pritha, you assumed an indifferent attitude. The result of that indifference of yours has now overtaken you—you who long to see your sons installed on the throne.

14. O sinless one, the royalty you inherited from your fore-fathers, is now going to slip off your hands; or on the other hand you will have it, obtaining it from the sons of Pritha (who would certainly snatch it away from your sons after slaying them).

15. The dominions of the Kurus and their fame, had been acquired by Pandu, and the right-behaving sons of Pandu have again added to that fame and those dominions.

16. All those endeavours of theirs became fruitless when indeed their interests clashed with yours, in as much as they were despoiled of their ancestral sovereignty by your very avaricious self.

17. So, O king, the fact of your attributing blame to your sons at the time of the actual warfare, and the fact of your expatiating on their faults, indeed, seem very unbecoming.

18. The monarchs, when engaged in battle, do not pay the least regard to their lives. Those foremost of the Kshatriyas fight (to the best of their abilities, having penetrated into the heart of the array of troops belonging to the sons of Pritha.

19. The army which Krishna and Arjuna and Satyaki and Vrikodara protect, what persons except the Kouravas would hazard a battle with that army ?

20. They whose warrior is Gudakesha (Arjuna), they whose counsellor is Krishna, they whose protectors are Vrikodara and Satyaki,

21. What human wielder of bow would venture to fight them, save and except the Kouravas and those who follow their lead.

22. Everything that can possibly be done by devoted (tributary) kings endued with heroism and observant of the duties of the Kshatriyas, all that is being done for the Kouravas by their partisans.

23. Hear now from me everything that transpired in that dreadful battle between those foremost of men, viz, the Kouravas and the Prndavas.

Thus ends the eighty-sixth chapter the words of Sanjaya, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. After the night had passed away, that foremost of all weilders of weapons, *viz* Drona began to dispose of his divisions in battle array.

2. Then there were heard the diverse words of challenge uttered by shouting heroes, inflamed with rage and desirous of slaying one another.

3. Stretching their bows and drawing back the strings of their bow with their hands and breathing (hot), they began to exclaim, 'where now is that Dhananjaya.'

4. Some began to toss their swords in air,—swords that were naked, non-pliant, well-tempered, of the hue of the sky, possessed of great sharpness and decorated with ornamental hilts.

5. Thousands of heroic warriors longing for battle, were seen to perform various evolutions of swordsmen and bowmen, with dexterity acquired through discipline.

6. Others again whirling in the air their maces tied with belts, decorated with sandal paste, and adorned with gold and diamond, began to enquire after the] son of Pandu (Arjuna).

7. Other warriors, maddened with the pride of their prowess and endued with strong arms, obstructed the sky with their spiked bludgeons that looked like bannered poles raised in honor of Indra.

8. Other brave warriors again decorated with charming floral garlands, and armed with various kinds of weapons, stationed thenselves on different parts of the field, burning with a desire for battle.

9. 'Where is Arjuna? Where is Govinda? Where is the proud Vrikodora? Where are all their followers and friends? Even thus did they then challenge the Pandavas to battle.

10. Then blowing his conch and urging his steeds to full speed, Drona began to move hither and thither with great celerity, arranging his troops in order.

11. When those divisions that ever delighted in fight, were disposed of in order, O mighty monarch, the son of Bharadwaja addressing Jayadratha said these words.

12. "Yourself, the son of Somadatta, the mighty car-warrior Karna, Aswathaman, Salya, Vrishsena, and Kripa,

13. Supported with a hundred thousand horses, sixty thousand chariots, fourteen thousand elephants with rent temples,

14. Twenty-one thousand foot-soldiers cased in armour, take up your stand behind me at a distance of twelve miles.

15. There even the very gods led by Vasava himself will not be able to assault you what to speak of the sons of Pandu? Take heart, O ruler of the Sindhus."

16. Thus spoken to, Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus became comforted. He then set out for the spot indicated by Drona, followed by many Gandhara heroes and surrounded by those great car-warriors,

17. And accompanied by many foot soldiers cased in armours, armed with nooses and prepared to fight to the best of their abilities. Decked with *Chamaras* and adorned with golden caparisons,

18. The horses of Jayadratha, O mighty king, were all very good carriers; seven thousand such steeds and three thousands other steeds of the Shindhu breed, were also with him.

19—20. Your son Durmarsana, desirous of doing battle, was stationed in the van of the rest of the troops being supported by one thousand and five hundred maddened elephants of prodigious size, covered with mail and of dreadful deeds, all mounted by skilful elephant-riders.

21. Your other two sons, Dussasana and Vikarna, stationed themselves amidst the advance divisions of the army, for securing success to the king of the Sindhus.

22. The array that the son of Bharadwaja then formed, partly figuring a *sakata* and partly a *circle*, was full forty-eight miles in length, and its back portion, in width, measured full twenty miles.

23. Drona himself formed this array in which were stationed numerous brave kings and innumerable cars, elephants, horses and foot soldiers.

24. In the back portion of that array was formed another impenetrable array figuring a *lotus*. Within this latter again was constructed another closely formed array, that was designated the *needle*.

25. Thus having formed this mighty array Drona waited for the encounter. In the rear of the *needle* array was placed Kritavarman the fierce bowman.

26. After him were stationed the Kamvoja Princes and also Jalasandha, O sire. Behind them stood Duryodhana and Karna, in that *Sakata*.

27. Next to them were placed hundreds and thousands of unretreating warriors, for protecting the head of that array.

28. Behind their back, was stationed king Jayadratha by the side of the needle array, and surrounded by a mighty division of troops.

29. The son of Bharadwaja, himself stood at the mouth of the *Sakata*. Next to him stood the ruler of the Bhojas, who protected the former.

30. Cased in a white coat of mail, graced with a beautiful turban, of broad chest, and of mighty arms, Drona there stood stretching his bow, like the enraged God of Death.

31. The Kurus then were filled with delight by beholding the chariot of Drona, graced with a banner, having crimson steeds yoked to it, and standard that bore

the device of the sacrificial altar and a black deer.

32. Beholding that array formed by Drona that resembled the ocean agitated (by the tempest), the Sidhas and the charanas were filled with great wonder.

33. The creatures then thought that that array would devour the whole Earth with her mountains, oceans, forests and the various rivers flowin g on its surface.

34. King Duryodhana then beholding that great array figuring a *Sakata*, teeming with chariots, men, steeds, and elephants and roaring fearfully, of wonderful appearance and capable of afflicting the hearts of the enemy, became filled with delight.

Thus ends the eighty-seventh chapter, the arraying of the Kourava troops, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

(JAYADRYTHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thus when the troops had been excellently disposed of in that array, O sire, and when the *Bheris* were sounded and *Mridangas* struck up,

2. When the soldiers uttered loud war-cries, and musical instruments emitted tremendous din, when conchs were blown, and horripilating roars were heard,

3. When the field slowly became overspread with Bharata heroes desirous of battle, and when the hour known as Roudra arrived, Savyasachin (Arjuna) made his appearance on the field of battle.

4. Then, O Bharata, many thousands of ravens and crows flew sportively in front of Arjuna's car.

5. Various animals of fearful yells, and jackals of dreadful appearance, began to how in our right as we proceeded to battle.

6. Thousands of meteors, with harsh sounds and blazing tails, began to drop down; on that dreadful occasion, the whole Eearth began to quake and tremble.

7. Dry winds accompanied by deep sounds and driving pebbles and gravel, began to blow when Kunti's son made his appearance before the commencement of the battle.

8. Then Satarika the son of Nakula and Dhristadyumna the son of Prishata, these two warriors endued with great wisdom began to array in order the numerous divisions of the Pandavas.

9. Supported by a thousand cars, a hundred elephants, three thousand horses, and ten thousand foot-soldiers,

10. And covering a part of the field measuring fifteen hundred bows, your son Durmarshana stationed himself in the very van of the troops, and thus spoke:—

11. "Like the banks resisting the waves of the swelling main, even I myself will this this day hold in check the wielder of the Gandiva bow, that slayer of foes, that hero who is irrepressible in battle.

12. To-day let people see the irate and indomitable Dhananjaya collide with me, even like a mass of stone against another stony mass.

13. Stay, O you car-warriors that long to join in the fray! Single-handed, will I fight with the assembled Pandavas, for enhancing my glory and my fame."

14. Having thus spoken, O mighty monarch, that illustrious one of generous intellect, that fierce bowmen stood, O king, being surrounded by many excellent car-warriors.

15. Then like the enraged Destroyer or like Vasava armed with the thunderbolt, or like the unbearable god of Death wielding his bludgeon and let loose by Time,

16. Or like Siva with trident, and unruffled, or like Varuna armed with the noose, or like the blazing fire appearing at the end of a Yuga for consuming the creation,

17. That slayer of the Nivata Kavachas, inflamed with rage and swelling with his energies, the ever victorious Jaya attached to truth and intent on accomplishing his great vow,

18. Cased in mail, and armed with a sword, graced with a golden diadem, decorated with garlands of white flowers and attired in white garments, his arms decked with charming *Angadas* and ears with resplendent ear-rings,

19. Riding on his own best of chariots, the embodied Nara accompanied by Narayana, shaking his *Gandiva* bow in battle appeared shining and dazzling like the risen sun.

20. Then Dhananjaya endued with great might, O king, stopping his chariot before the van of his troops where the thickest downpour of arrows was expected blew his conch.

21. Thereupon the undaunted Krishna also, O sire, with Pritha's son, blew with force that most excellent conch of his, known as the Panchajannya.

22. Then at that blare of the conchs, O ruler of men, the soldiers of your army had the hair of their body erect, and they trembled and were confounded.

23. At the blare of their conchs, your troops took fright even as creatures become frightened at the rumbling of the thunder.

24. All the beasts discharged urine and excreta. Your whole army with its animals became seized with anxiety.

25. O sire, O monarch, in consequence of the blare of those two conchs, all men were deprived of their strength. And some of our array then were filled with fear, and some lost their consciousness.

26. Then frightening your soldiers, the ape on Arjuna's banner with other creatures thereon, opening its mouth, uttered a terrible roar.

27. Then conchs, horns, cymbals, and Anakas, were sounded and blown for inspiring energy into your troops.

28. The din thus produced, became mixed up with the din produced by various musical instrumeuts, by the shouts of warriors, and by the slappings of their armpits, by the war-cries of the great car-warriors, as they challenged one another.

29. Thus when that tremendous din arose there—din that enhanced the fear of the cowards—the son of Pakasasani became filled with joy; and addressing the descendant of the Dasarha race, he then thus spoke.

Thus euds the eighty-eightieth chapter, the appearance of Arjuna on the field of battle, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drana Parva.

CHAPTER LXXXIX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Arjuna said:—

1. Drive, O Hrishikesha, the horses to the spot where Durmarsana stands. Penetrating through this division of elephants, I shall enter into the heart of the hostile army.

Sanjaya said:—

2. Thus spoken to by Savyasachin, the mighty-armed Kesava drove the steeds to the spot where Durmarsana was standing.

3. Thereupon, there ensued a fearful and terrible encounter between the many and the one,—encounter that was destructive of many cars, elephants, and men.

4. Then, like masses of clouds surcharged with rain drenching the mountain-breast with their contents, Pritha's son covered his enemies with his arrowy down-pour.

5. The warriors of your army then with great lightness of hands, hastily covered Arjuna and Krishna with a net-work of arrows.

6. Then excited to the highest pitch of anger by his enemies, the mighty-armed Partha endued with great prowess, began to rob, with his arrows, the heads of car-warriors, from their trunks.

7. The Earth became overspread with handsome heads graced with ear-rings and head-gears, the lower lips bit by the upper ones, and the faces adorned with eyes inflamed with rage.

8. The countenance of the warriors scattered here and there, looked charming like an assemblage of plucked off lotuses lying crushed and strewn about the field.

9. Armours of gold bespattered with blood and lying thick over the field, appeared like masses of clouds fringed with flashes of lightning.

10. The sound then created by the falling of heads on the earth, resembled that produced by the falling of ripe palm fruit.

11. Some headless trunks were seen standing there, with their bows in grasp. Some again stood, with their drawn swords raised on air (for striking).

12. The (surviving) foremost of warriors, all resenting those feats of Arjuna, the son of Kunti, and desirous of conquering him in battle, did not pay any regard to the fallen heads (of their brother warriors.)

13. The Earth became strewn over with the heads of horses, the trunks of elephants and the heads and arms of heroic warriors.

14. 'This is Arjuna' 'Where is Partha' 'Here is Pritha's son'—O master, even thus were the troops of your army then filled with the thought of Partha.

15. They then began to strike one another and some of them again struck their ownselves. Confounded by Time, they then beheld the world to be full of Partha only.

16. Uttering cries of agony, steeped in blood, deprived of consciousness, suffering excruciating pain, many heroes prostrate on the field of battle, began to summon their friends and relatives, for succour.]

17. Holding *Vindipalas* or lances or darts or swords, or battle-axes, or piked stakes, or scimitars, or bows or *Tomaras*,

18—19. Or shafts or maces, and covered with mail and adorned with *Angadas* and other ornaments, and looking like huge snakes and resembling large bludgeons,—hands cut off with mighty weapons from the trunks, were seen to leap, jump and jerk about with great force, as if in rage.

20. Whoever then ventured to advance in rage against Partha, had a fatal shaft discharged by that hero, stuck deep on his body.

21. Not the slightest flaw was then detected in Pritha's son, as he danced in the terrace of his chariot and stretched his mighty bow.

22. The troops belonging to the party hostile to him, were then amazed by beholding the lightness of hands with which he took out his shafts, placed them on the bow-string and discharged them.

23. Then Phalguna with his arrows penetrated elephants and their drivers, horses and their riders, and car-warriors with their car-drivers.

24. There was none among the hostile troop, whether standing in front of him, or exerting in battle, or moving about or urged on, whom the arrows discharged by Arjuna did not pierce through.

25. Just as the sun rising in the heavens destroys deep darkness (of night), so did Arjuna destroy elephants with his arrows furnished with wings of Kanka-feathers.

26. That part of the field occupied by your troops looked like the Earth at the hour of dessolution, covered with hillocks, in consequence of its being strewn over with fallen and mangled elephants.

27. Just as the sun shining in the meredian is incapable of beings looked at by beings, so then in that battle, Dhananjaya inflamed with rage, was incapable of being looked at by his enemies.

28. Then O scorcher of foes, the troops of your son afflidted with the arrows of Arjuna, deserted their ranks and fled from the field.

29. Like the tempest scattering and tearing a mass of cloud, Arjuna then routed your army; when he was thus afflicting the army, none could turn his eyes towards him.

30—31. Afflicted by Arjuna, your troops viz., the cavalry, the infantry and the car-warriors, fled in all haste from the field of battle, urging their horses to the top of their speed by goad-strokes, by stroke of the horns of their bows, by growls, by encouraging commands, by wh's, by (dagger) cuts on their flanks and also by threatening speeches.

32. Others (riding on elephants) fled urging their huge carriers by pressing their sides with toes or with the stroke of the hooks; others again confounded by Parthas arrows, even fled to the direction of Partha himself. Thus then all your warriors were deprived of sense and their minds also became distracted.

Thus ends the eighty-ninth chapter, the fight of Arjuna in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XC.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)
—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. When the vanguard of my troops were thus slaughtered and routed by the diadem-decked Arjuna, what heroes of my army then proceeded to fight with Dhananjaya?

2. Or did all of them, forgetting their determination, enter into the *Sakata* array and stood behind the fearless Drona resembling a solid wall?

Sanjaya said :—

3—4. When, O sinless one, Arjuna the son of Pakasasani (Indra) had broken and slain with his excellent arrows our own troops, many were the heroes that were slain, or fled with depressed hearts. None indeed was able to look upon him.

5. Then O king your son Dussasana, seeing your troops in that wretched plight became inflamed with rage and advanced towards Arjuna for fighting with the latter.

6. That hero of fierce energy was cased in a coat of mail worked exquisitely with gold, and he wore also a helmet of pure gold.

7. O mighty monarch, Dussasana then surrounded Savyasachin with a mighty division of elephants that seemed to devour the whole earth.

8. With the booming of the bells tied to the necks of elephants, with the blasts of the conchs, with the twang of bows, with war cries with the roars of tusked elephants,

9. The Earth, the points of the compass and the welkin, became completely filled. The hour appeared to be awful and solemn.

10. Beholding those infuriate and huge elephants with extended trunks and urged with hooks make towards himself like so many winged mountains,

11. That foremost of men, Dhananjaya sending up a fierce war-cry, fell to agitate that elephant division of his enemy, with his shafts.

12. Then like a *Makara* entering into the waters of the mighty main lashed into fury by the tempest the diadem-decked Arjuna penetrated into that elephant division.

13. Indeed then Partha that conqueror of hostile fortresses, was seen by every body on every side to resemble the burning sun that rises on the day of dissolution, in contravention of all rules about direction and hour.

14. In consequence of the clatter of horse hoofs, the rattle of car-wheels, the cries of combatants, the twang of bowstrings,

15. The sounds of various musical instruments, the blasts of *Panchajannya* and *Devadatta* (the conchs of Arjuna and Krishna), and the crakling of the bow *Gandiva*,

16. The troops of your army and the elephants therein, lost all activity and became cheerless. They were pierced by Savyasachin with his arrows whose touch resembled that of snakes of virulent venom.

17. The elephants were pierced on every part of their bodies with the arrows of keen points shot by hundreds and thousands from the bow *Gandiva*.

18. Uttering fierce roars when they were being slaughtered by the diadem-decked Arjuna, they began to fall incessantly on the ground like mountains having their wings cut off.

19. Other elephants pierced with long shafts in the jaw or frontal globes, or temples, began to utter yelling cries resembling the screach of the cranes.

20. The diadem-decked Arjuna then cut off with *vallas* of close knots, the heads of hostile warriors that rode on the neck of these elephants.

21. Those heads graced with ear-rings falling incessantly on the Earth, looked like so many lotuses that Pritha's son was culling, for an offering to the Gods.

22. Entangled with the trappings, divested of their armours, lacerared with wounds and smeared with blood, men were then seen hanging from the necks of elephants, as these latter careered over the field.

23. Sometimes two or three warriors penetrated by a single arrow decked with beautiful feathers and heedfully shot from the *Gandiva*, fell down on the Earth.

24. Deeply pierced with *Narachas* and vomitting blood through the mouth, elephants with their riders, began to fall down on the ground like so many mountains covered with trees.

25. With his *vallas* of straight knots Arjuna then began to sever the bowstrings, the standards, the bows, the yokes and the shafts of many car-warriors.

26. Nobody was able then to detect when Arjuna took out his arrows or fix them on the string of his bows or drew the string back or discharged them. But Partha was then seen only to dance on the terrace of his chariot with his bow drawn to a circle.

27. Other elephants again pierced deep with *Narachas* and vomitting blood in consequence, fell down on the ground as soon as they were struck.

28. In that dreadful carnage, O mighty monarch, innumerable headless trunks were seen to stand up on all sides.

29. Numerous arms, holding bows, with fingers cased in leathern gloves, with swords in grasp, adorned with *Angadas* and golden ornaments, were seen scattered about, severed from the trunks.

30. With innumerable *Upasakas*, *Adisthanas*, shafts, crowns, broken car-wheels shattered *Akshas* and yokes,

31. With warriors armed with shields and bows, with garlands of flowers, with ornaments, garments, and fallen standards scattered here and there,

32. With slain elephants and horses and fallen Kshatriyas, the field of battle appeared exceedingly awful.

33. Thus, O mighty monarch, the army of Dussasana with its leader, deeply afflicted and extensively slaughtered by the diadem-decked Arjuna, began to fiy away.

34. Then Dussasana afraid and afflicted with shafts, with his whole division, fell back upon the *Sakata* array and looked upon Drona as his only protector.

Thus ends the ninetieth chapter, the defeat of Dussasana's division, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having slaughtered the division of Dussasana, the mighty-armed Savysachin desirous of getting at the king of the Sindhus, fell upon Drona's division.

2. Approaching Drona who was standing in the mouth of his array, Arjuna, with Krishna's permission, folding his palms thus spoke to Drona.

Arjuna said :—

3. Wish me well, O Brahmana, and bless me saying *Swasti*. Through your grace I desire to penetrate through this impenetrable array.

4. You are to me even as my own father, or the very virtuous king Yudhisthira or as Krishna himself. This I tell you in sooth.

5. O sire, O sinless one, even as Aswathaman deserves to be protected by you, so also, O foremost of the regenerate ones, I deserve to be protected by you.

6. Through your grace, I desire to slay the ruler of the Sindhus in battle, O you foremost of men. O lord, see that my vow may be fulfilled."

Sanjaya said :—

7. Thus spoken to, the preceptors then similingly replied unto Arjuna thus:—"O Vibhatsu you shall not conquer Jayadratha without in the fiist instance conquering my own self."

8. Speaking these words only, Drona, with myriads of sharp arrows, covered Arjuna, his chariot, steeds, standard and charioteer, similing all the while.

9. Thereat Arjuna repulsing the arrowy showers of Drona with those of his own, proceeded against Drona, discharging mightier and more dreadful shafts.

10. Then, O ruler of men, showing due respect to Drona and observing the duties of the Kshatriya order, Arjuna sped at him nine shafts.

11. Then cutting those arrows of Arjuna with those of his own, Drona pierced both Krishna and the son of Pandu with shafts that resembled poison or the blazing tougues of fire.

12. The son of Pandu desired to sever the bow string of Drona with his arrows. Even when the illustrious Phalguna as thus thinking of cutting his bow string,

13. The undaunted Drona endued with prowess, cut off with his arrows the formers string; he also pierced his horses, standards and charioteer.

14. And smilingly did then Drona cover Arjuna himself with many arrows. Meanwhile having strung his mighty bow, Pritha's son,

15. That foremost of all men versed in the use of weapons getting the better of his preceptor, quickly discharged six hundred arrows; that looked as if he had taken out and shot only a single arrow.

16. Once more he shot seven hundred other arrows and again a thousand irresistible arrows and ten thousand other arrows. All these despatched many warriors of Drona's division.

17. Pierced deep by those shafts shot by the mighty and accomplished Parthat versed in all modes of warfare, many men and horses and elephants began to fall down dead.

18. Afflicted with those arrows, car-warriors dropped drown from their excellent chariots, deprived of horses and standards and weapons and life;

19. Like mountain-peaks or masses of clouds, or mansions crushed, driven or dismantled by the thunder, the tempest or the fire, elephants began to fall down (being pierced with the shafts of Arjuna).

20. Thousands of horses began to fall down being struck by the arrows of Arjuna, like so many swans falling upon the Himas vat mountain, being driven down by shower-of rain.

21. Like the sun that rises at the end of a Yuga, sucking up with its rays large expanses of water, the son of Pandu, by his showers of weapons and shafts, slew large bodies of car-warriors, horses elephants and foot soldiers.

22. Then like the clouds covering the sun, the Drona-cloud with its down-pour of arrows, covered the Arjuna-sun whose rays in the form of thick shower of arrows, were burning down the foremost ones among the Kurus, in battle.

23. Then the preceptor pierced Dhananjayaon the breast with a *Naracha* dis-

charged with great force and capable of sucking out the life of every foe.

24. Thereupon the latter trembled in all his limbs like a mountain during an earth quake. But (in a while) regaining his composure, he began to pierce Drona with winged arrows.

25. Then Drona with five arrows afflicted the son of Vasudeva, and he struck Vibhatsu with seventy-three shafts, and his standard with three.

26. Thus, O monarch, the puissant Drona, worsting his disciple within a moment, caused Arjuna to disapper from the view, with his arrowy showers.

27. We then beheld the arrows shot by Bharadwaja's son fall in unbroken lines, and his bow present the wonderful appearance of always being drawn to a circle.

28. Those numerous arrows furnished with wings of Kanka feather and discharged by Drona in that battle, incessantly fell, O monarch, on Dhananjaya and the son of Vasudeva.

29. Then beholding that battle between Drona and the son of Pandu, the highly intelligent son of Vasudeva began to think about the accomplishment of the (more important) task (*viz.*, the slaughter of Jayadratha).

30. Thereafter Vasudeva's son thus spoke addressing Dhananjaya :—"O Partha O Partha, O mighty-armed one, we should not waste time.

31. Let us proceed leaving Drona alone: the more important task must be accomplished." Then the son of Pritha replied to Krishna saying:—"As it lists you, O Kesava."

32. Thereupon leaving the mighty-armed Drona to their right they proceeded onwards; turning his face away, Vibhatsu advanced shooting his shafts.

33. Thereupon Drona addressing Arjuna said:—"Where are you going, O son of Pandu? Is it not the fact that you never turn back without defeating your adversary?"

Arjuna said :—

34. You are my preceptor and not my foe; I am your pupil and like your son. Also there exists not the man in the worlds who can vanquish you in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

35. Having thus spoken, the mighty-armed Vibhatsu, intent on slaying Jayadratha, quickly rushed against the hostile troops.

36. And when he penetrated into your army, the two illustrious Panchala princes, Yudhamanyu and Uttamoujas, followed him, protecting his car-wheel.

37. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Jaya, Kritavarman of tne Satwa race, and the Kamvoja king and Srutavusha—these put themselves on the way of Dhananjaya.

38. Ten thousand car-warriors followed these warriors. The Avisakas, the Surasenas, the Sivis, the Vasatis,

39. The Mavellakas, the Lalithyuas, the the Kaikayas, the Madras, the Narayanas, the Gopalas, and the Kamvoja clans,

40. Who had before been defeated by Karna and who were regarded as heroes,—all these warriors placing the son of Bharadwaja at their head, and disregardful of their lives, rushed against Arjuna,

41. For opposing that wrathful hero burning with sorrow an account of the death of his son',that warrior resembling the all-destroying Death himself, cased in armour, versed in all modes of warfare, prepared to sacrifice his life in the very thick of the fight,

42. That foremost of men, fierce bowman, endued with prowess, who resembled the infurrite leader of an elephant and who seemed to plunge into the ranks of your troops.

43. Then the battle that raged between all those warriors on one side and Arjuna on the other, became exceeding fierce and hair-stirring, inasmuch as each desired to meet the other.

44. Then like medicines checking a raging malady, the Kourava warriors firmly united together began to check that foremost of men proceeding onwards for the slaughter of Jayadratha.

Thus ends the ninety-first chapter, Arjuna's passing through Drona's division, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCII.

(JAYADRATHA BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then that mighty car-warrior *viz* Pritha's son, endued with great might and prowess, was opposed in the front by those warriors and quickly pursued from behind by Drona himself.

2. Then scattering his sharp shafts like the lustrous orb of the day scattering his rays, he afflicted that host of the Kurus like maladies afflicting the body.

3. On that occasion, horses were pierced, cars broken, elephants felled with their riders, umbrellas torn, and chariots deprived of their wheels.

4. Afflicted with arrows, troops began to fly in all directions. Thus raged that terrible encounter between Arjuna on the one hand and the Kurus on the other. Nothing could then be distinguished.

5. Thus when they fought on, piercing one another in battle with straight coursing arrows, Arjuna, O king, made the hostile army tremble before him.

6. Ever firmly devoted to truth, Arjuna of white steeds, desirous of accomplishing his vow rushed furiously against that best of car-warriors *viz* Drona owning crimson steeds.

7. The preceptor Drona then pierced his disciple, that great bowman Arjuna, with twenty-five straight-flying arrows that penetrated to the very vitals of the latter.

8. Thereat that foremost of all wielders of weapons *viz* Vibhatsu quickly rushed against Drona shooting at the sametime arrows capable of checking the career of those shot by the latter.

9. Then Arjuna of generous soul discharging the *Brahma* weapon and with his *Vallas* of close knots, repulsed the *Vallas* so quickly shot at him by Drona.

10. Then we beheld the wonderful skill of the preceptor Drona in the art of fighting, in as much as Arjuna, though youthful in years and exerting his best, could not pierce him in retutn.

11. Then like a mighty mass of clouds pouring down incessant showers of rain, the Drona-cloud covered the Arjuna-mountain with his shower of arrows.

12. Invoking into existence the *Brahma* weapon, the puissant Arjuna, O Sire, received that shower of arrows, cutting of the arrows shot by his adversary with those of his own.

13. Then Drona afflicted him of the white steeds with five and twenty shafts; and with seventy swift-coursing shafts he pierced Vasudeva's son on the arms and on the chest.

14. The highly intelligent son of Pritha then smiling the while, checked the preceptor in battle who incessantly shooting sharp arrows, was looking like a sea having shafts or its waves.

15. Thus afflicted by Drona, those two foremost of car-warriors (Krishna and Arjuna) shunned him who then resembled the irresistibly raging conflagration that appears at the end of every *Yuga*.

16. Then avoiding the aim of the whetted shafts shot from Drona's bow, the diadem-decked son of Kunti fell to slaughter the division of the Vojas.

17. Shunning Drona who stood immovable like the Mainaka mountain, Arjuna then took his stand between Kritavarman and Sudakshina, the ruler of the Kamvojas.

18. Then that foremost of men, the undaunted ruler of the Bhojas quickly pierced the invincible hero, the formost of the descendants of Kuru (Arjuna), with ten arrows winged with *Kanka* feathers.

19. O king, Arjuna pierced him in battle with sharp shafts again with another three arrows he confounded the descendant of the Satwata race (Kritavarman).

20. Thereupon the king of the Bhojas smilingly pierced Pritha's son and Vasudeva of Madhus race, each with a group of twenty-five arrows.

21. Bursting open his bow, Arjuna pierced him with twenty-one arrows resembling tongues of blazing fire, or infuriate snakes of virulent poison.

22. Thereat, O Bharata, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman taking up another bow quickly pierced Arjuna on the chest with five arrows.

23. Then again with another five whetted arrows the pierced Pritha's son deeply. Then Partha also with nine arrows struck him between the breasts.

24. Beholding the son of Kunti engaged with the mighty-warrior Kritavarman, the descendant of the Vrishni race (Krishna) thought that there was no time to waste.

25. Thereafter Krishna addressing Prithas's son said :—" Do not show any mercy to your kinsmen ; setting at naught you relationship with him, do you slay and crush him down."

26. Thereat Arjuna stupefying Kritavarman with his arrows, plunged into the ranks of the Khamvoja division, being borne by fleet steeds.

27. Beholding Arjuna owning white steeds enter into the Kamvoja division, the son of Hridika was inflamed with rage. Then stretching his bow with arrows fixed on the string, he came up on the two Panahala princes.

28. Then with his arrows, Kritavarman opposed the two Panchala princes who were

following in the wake of Arjuna, for protecting the wheels of his car.

29. The ruler of the Bhojas Kritavarman then pierced them both with sharp arrows, striking Yudhamanyu with three and Uttamoujas with four.

30. They both in return pierced him each with ten shafts. Then again Yudhamanyu with three and Uttamoujas with another three arrows,

31. Cut off Kritavarman's bow and standard. Thereat furious with rage and taking up onother bow, the son of Hridika,

32. Deprived both those warriors of the use of their bow and shrouded them in a net-work of arrows. They both in a moment having strung another pair of bows, began to strike the king of the Bhojas.

33. Meanwhile Arjuna had gone into the array of the hostile troops. But his two wheel-protectors held in check by Kritavarman, obtained no admission

34. Into the divisions of the Dhartarastra army though those two foremost of men exerted to the best of their abilities. Meanwhile that one of white steeds began to afflict in that battle the army opposed to him, with great agility.

35. That slayer of foes then did not slay Kritavarman though he had an opportunity for doing so. Then beholding him thus advance, the valourous king Srutayusha,

36. Burning with rage and twanging his great bow, rushed furiously on him. He then pierced Partha with three, and Janarddana with seventy shafts,

37. And again with a sharp razor-headed arrow, he struck the standard of Pritha's son. Then with a group of ninety shafts of depressed knots Arjuna,

38. Inflamed with rage, pierced him like a *Mahuta* piercing a huge elephant with the hook. But, O king, he (Srutayudha), did not tolerate that display of prowers by the son of Pandu.

39. And with a group of seven and seventy *Nacharas* he struck his adversary. Thereat cuttiug of Sutrayusha's bow and shafts Arjuna,

40. Inflamed with rage, struck him on the breast with seven arrows of depressed knots. Thereupon that king overwhelmed with rage and taking up another bow,

41—42. Pierced the son of Vasava on the arms and the breast with nine long arrows. Then O Bharata, that subdrue of foes *viz.* Arjuna afflicted Srutayusha with many thousand, of arrows, smiling all the while; and that mighty car-warrior soon killed the latter's horses and charioteer;

43. And that highly puissant hero also pierced him with seventy *Narachas*. There upon leaving his chariot of which the steeds were slain, king Srutayusha,

44. Endued with great energy rushed against Prithas's son, heaving his huge mace over his head. The heroic king Srutayusha was the son of Varuna,

45. Having for his mother the mighty river of cool waters called *Parnasa*. O king, her mother, for the benefit of her son, had thus spoken to Varuna saying :—

46. " Let this son of mine be unslayable in battle by his enemies on earth." Then Varuna gratified with her, had said— " I accord him the boon that will be highly beneficial to him,

47. I give to your son a celestial weapon by virtue of which he will be unslayable. Men could never obtain immortality on earth.

48. O foremost of rivers, every one who has taken his birth on the face of the earth must inevitably fall a prey to death. This son of yours, however, will ever be invincible by his foes in battle,

49. By virtue of this weapon ; so let the fever corroding your heart be dismissed." Having thus spoken, Varuna gave him a mace with all necessary aphorisms,

50. Obtaining which Srutayusha became invincible in all the worlds. The illustrious lord of waters however again addresed him saying :—

51. This mace, O son, should not be directed against one who is not fighting, in which case it will fall back upon yourself ; on such occasion, coursing in an opposite direction it will kill him who has hurled it.'.

52. But when the time for using it came, Srutayusha did not pay any heed to that injuction of Varuna, and with that mace capable of crushing heroes, he began to strike Janarddana.

53. The highly puissant Krishna received those strokes on his broad and well-developed shoulders ; and that mace could not cause Souri to tremble even as a tempest can not shake a mountain.

54. Like some ill-accomplished feat of conjuration injuring the conjurer the mace turning to Srutayusha, smote that heroic and enraged monarch stationed in his car.

55. And slaying that brave warrior it fell down on the ground. Struyusha being slain,

56. The troops began to utter loud wails of woe, for indeed they had seen that subduer of foes Srutayusha slain by his own weapon.

57. As Srutayusha O ruler of men had hurled the mace at Krishna who was not engaged in the battle, it slew him who had hurled it.

58. So Srutayusha fell on the field even in the manner indicated by the words of Varuna, and he fell down deprived of life before the eyes of all the bowmen present.

59. When falling, that dear-loved son of Parnasa appeared beautiful like a mighty tree of many branches uprooted by the tempest.

60. Then beholding that subduer of foes slain all the troops and their leading warriors began to fly away in all directions.

61. Thereafter the heroic Sudakshina the son of the Kamvoja king rushed against that slayer of foes *viz.*, Phalguna, being borne by fleet steeds.

62. At him, O Bharata, Pritha's son shot seven arrows, which penetrating through that hero, entred the surface of the earth.

63. Pierced deep by those sharp arrows shot from the *Gandiva* bow, he in return pierced Arjuna in battle with ten shafts furnished with the feathers of the Kanka bird.

64. He once more pierced Vesudeva's son with three and Partha with five arrows, then O Sire, Pritha's son bursting open his bow, cut down his stan,'ard ;

65. And the son of Pandu pierced him with a couple of *vallas* of exceeding sharpness. He also having pressed Pritha's son with three such arrows uttered a fierce yell.

66. Thereafter the brave Sudakshina inflamed with rage hurled at the wielder of the *Gandiva* bow, a lance, dreadful, tied with bells and made wholly of iron.

67. Having reached that mighty car-warrior Arjuna, that lance blazing like a mighty meteor and emitting scintillations of fire, penetrated through him and then fell down on the ground.

68. Pierced deep with that lance, Arjuna was overwhelmed with a swoon. Then in an instant, that highly puissant hero recovering soon enough began to lick the corners of his mouth.

69. Then Partha of inconcievable prowess pierced Sudkshina and his steeds standards, bow and charioteer with ten *narachas* furnished with the feathers of the Kanka bird.

70—71. And with innumerable other arrows he rendered the latter's chariot useless and cut it to peices. The son of Pandu then with an arrow of exceeding sharpness pierced on the chest Sudakshina the Kamvoja ruler whose purpose and prowess had both even baffled. Then with his armour shattered, trembling in all his limbs, with his crown and *Angadas* falling off,

72—73. That hero fell with head downwards like a flagstaff loosened from the socket. Like a charming Karnikara tree in the spring growing gracefully on the top of a hill, with beautiful branches, lying on the groved when uprooted by the tempest, the prince of the Kamvojas lay on the bare ground deprived of life, though accustomed to sleep on the most precious bed.

74—75. Adorned with precious ornaments, graceful, possessing eyes of coppery hue, wearing round the head a tiara of gold radiant like the flames of fire, the mighty armed Sudakshina, the prince of the Kamvojas, felled by Partha with his arrows, and lying dead on the ground, appeared beautiful like a charming hill with a flat summit. Then beholding Srutayusha and the prince of the Kamvojas slain in battle, all the soldiers of your son's army began to fly in all directions.

Thus ends the ninety-second chapter, the slaughter of Srutayusha and Sudakshina in the Jayadhatha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When king Sudakshina and the heroic Srutayusha had been slain, your warriors inflamed with wrath, furiously rushed against the son of Pritha.

2. The Abhisahas, the Surasenas, the Sinis, and the Vasatis, O king, then began to pour upon Dhananjaya a veritable shower of arrows.

3. The son of Pandu consumed sixty thousands of these and other warriors, with his arrows; and then the rest greatly frightened, began to fly away like smaller animals flying away from the tiger.

4. But soon turning back, they surrounded Partha on all sides, who was slaying his foes in battle, and trying to obtain victory over them.

5. Then as they made quickly towards himself, Dhananjaya, with arrows shot from his Gandiva bow, began to cut down their heads and arms.

6. The field of battle was thickly strewn over with felled heads; and flights of vultures and crows and ravens formed its cloudy canopy.

7. Beholding their troops thus extirpated by Arjuna, Srutayush and Achyutayush, excited with rage and fury, began to fight vigorously with the former.

8. Those two heroes endued with prowess, pride and strength of arms, and both born in noble families, began to scatter their arrows right and left,

9. With great agility, O mighty monarch, desirous of winning great fame and slaying Arjuna and doing good to your son.

10. Inflamed with rage, they covered Arjuna with a thousand winged shafts of depressed knots, like clouds filling a lake with torrents of rain.

11. Thereafter that foremost of car-warriors Srutayush excited with wrath, struck Dhananjaya with a well-tempered and well-sharpened lance.

12. Thus sorely wounded by his powerful adversary, that subduer of his foes viz., Arjuna was overwhelmed with a swoon, confounding thereby Kesava himself.

13. At this crisis that mighty car-warrior Achyutayush struck the son of Pandu with a trident of exceeding sharpness.

14. Thus he seemed to pour acid upon the wounds of the illustrious son of Pandu; thus deeply pierced, Pritha's son caught hold of his flag-staff for supporting himself.

15. Thereupon, O ruler of men, a loud and deafening roar was uttered by all your troops, for they considered Dhananjaya to be slain.

16. Then seeing Partha losing consciousness, Krishna was very much distressed; and then he began to comfort Dhananjaya with words soothing and agreeable.

17—18. Then those foremost of car-warriors, Srutayush and Achyutayush of true aim, scattering their showers of arrows on all sides in that battle, made Dhananjaya and the son Vasudeva of the Vrishni race and their car, car-wheels, *Kuvaras*, steeds, flag-staff and banner, disappear from the view. All this indeed seemed wonderful.

19. Then, O Bharata, recovering slowly, like one coming back from a visit to the regions of Death, Vibhatsu,

20. Saw his chariot and Kesava shrouded with a net-work of arrows; then beholding his two opponents standing before him like two blazing fires,

21. The mighty car-warrior Partha invoked into existence the terrible Sakra-weapon. From that weapon issued out thousands of arrows.

22. Those arrows then struck those two fierce bowmen Srutayush and Achyutayush; and the arrows shot by these latter, being cut off by those of Partha, began to drop down through the sky.

23. Then Pandu's son checking the force of all arrows directed towards him with that of his own shafts, began to run hither and thither over the field encountering mighty car-warriors.

24. Then those two heroes deprived of their arms and heads, by the arrows of Arjuna, fell down on the earth like mighty trees broken down by the wind.

25. The slaughter of Srutayush and Achyutayush caused a surprise like to what men would feel if the ocean be dried up.

26. Then, having slain fifty car-warriors, the followers of those two princes, Pritha's son plunged into the army of the Bharatas, crushing down numerous elephants and warriors (at each step).

27. Beholding Srutayush slain, O Bharata, the enraged Niyutayush and Dirghayush,

28. The sons of the former two heroes both foremost of men, assaulted the son of Kunti, afflicted with calamity that had befallen their sires, they proceeded, scattering arrows of diverse description.

29. But Arjuna now excited to the highest pitch of fury, with his arrows of depressed knots, sent them instantly to the abode of Death.

30. Then the foremost Kshatriyas of your army were not able to oppose Pritha's son who had been agitating the troops like an elephant agitating a lake over-grown with lotuses.

31. Then thousands of well-trained elephant riders belonging to the divisons of the Angas, excited with rage, O king, surrounded the son of Pandu, with their elephant forces.

32. Commanded by Duryodhana, the Easterners, the Southerners and other kings hearded by the ruler of the Kalingas, surrounded Arjuna with their elephants huge as hills.

33. But with the arrows shot from his Gandiva bow, Arjuna quickly cut off their

heads and arms decked with ornaments, as they were rushing against him.

34. Strewn over with their heads, and arms decked with Angadas, the Earth appeard as if covered with golden stones and numerous snakes.

35. Arms severed by means of arrows and heads lying crushed, appeared like birds shot down from the top trees.

36. Pierced with thousands of shafts and covered with profuse blood, elephants looked like mountains during the rainy season, with red-chalk solution streaming down their sides.

37. Others slain by the whetted arrows of Vibhatsu, lay prostrate on the field of battle. Numerous Mlechas, riding on the backs of elephants, of ugly appearnces,

38. Attired in various kinds of garments and, O king, armed with numerous weapons and weltering in blood, appeared beautiful, as they lay on the ground deprived of life by means of various kinds of shafts.

39. Thousands of elephants with their bodies mangled, and their riders and those who followed them, having been struck with the arrows of Pritha's son, vomitted blood,

40. Or uttered yells of agony, or fell down, or careered wildly in all directions. Nnmerous other elephants greatly frightened, crushed their own ranks.

41—43. Many other elephants armed with weapons and fierce like snakes of virulent poison, also did the same. Numerous furious Yavanas, Paradas, Sakas Valhikas and Mlechas born of the cow (of Vasistha), possessed of fearful eyes, accomplished in smitting, looking like emissaries of Death, all versed in the use of illusive powers of the Asuras, and many other Dravatisaras, Daradas, Pundras, thousands in number, in bands of hundreds and thousands and together forming a force that was innumerable,

44. Began to pour on the son of Pandu their sharp arrows. Those Mlechas also versed in all modes of war, began to shower on Arjuna their countless shafts.

45. Dhananjaya also poured his arrows on them in quick succession; and the arrows discharged from the Gandiva bow appeared like flights of locusts, as they flew through the air.

46—47. Having with his arrows created shade of over the troops like to that of the clouds, Dhananjaya slew, by the dint of his weapons, all the Mlechas having heads completely shaved or partially shaved or covered with matted hair,. filthy in their mode of living, and of malicious countenances. Pierced with hundreds of shafts, those rangers of the mountains,

48—50. Those dwellers of caves, began to fly away from the field of battle out of sheer fear. Ravens *Kankas*, birds and wolves, with great delight, then began to drink the blood of the elephants, horses and their Mlecha riders, as they lay postrate on the field being cut down by the sharp arrows of Pritha's son. Arjuna then caused a river to flow on the field of battle, of which (slain) foot-soldiers, car-warriors, horses and elephants formed the embankments; shower of shafts formed the rafts (wherewith to cross it); hair of (slain) combatants formed the moss and the weed floating on the surface; and blood formed its surging billows; and that river was dreadful and fierce to look at.

51. The fingers cut off from the arms of warriors constituted its smaller fishes; it was as dreadful as the Destroyer himself at the end of a Yuga; the bodies of (slain) elephants chocked its flow, and that river of blood proceeded towards the kingdom of Yama.

52. The Earth was deluged with the blood flowing from the bodies of slain princes, elephants, horses, car-warriors and horsemen, and its uplands and lowlands could not be distinguished, as if Vasava had poured a torrent of rain over it. Six thousand brave warriors,

53—54. And many other Kshatriyas were despatched by that foremost of Kshatriyas to the abode of Death. Thousands of elephants equipped according to rule, being pierced with numerous arrows,

55. Lay prostrate on the field like so many mountains struck down by the thunder bolt. Then Arjuna careered over the field slaying horses, car-warriors and elephants,

56—58. Like an elephant in rut crushing a forest of reeds. Just as fire helped forwarded by the wind, burns down a forest abounding in trees, creepers, brush-woods, dry fuels, and grass, so, that fire viz, the enraged Dhananjaya, the son of Pandu, having arrows for his flames, and helped forward by the Krishna-wind, consumed the forest constituted by your troops. Emptying the terraces of the cars, Arjuna over-spread the Earth with the corpses of men.

59. In that confused encounter Dhananjaya seemed to dance weilding his bow in his hand. Deluging the ground with blood drawn by means of shafts resembling the thunder bolt itself,

60. Dhananjaya, inflamed with wrath, plunged deep into the ranks of the Bharata

troops. When he was thus advancing, Srutayudha the ruler of the Amvastha's then opposed him.

61. Thereupon, O sire, when he was thus exerting himself against Arjuna, the latter with sharp arrows furnished with wings made of *kanka* feathers, speedily cut down his horses.

62. Then with other arrows cutting off his bow, Arjuna began to career over the field. Thereat the ruler of the Amvasthas, with eyes rolling in rage, took up his mace,

63. And assaulted in that battle Pritha's son and also the mighty car-warrior Kesava. Then O Bharata that hero, uplifting and striking with his mace.

64. Checked the progress of Arjuna's car, and with it began to strike Kesava ; beholding Kesava struck with the mace, that slayer of hostile heroes,

65—67. Arjuna, O Bharata, excited to the highest pitch of anger, showered over that foremost of car-warriors viz the ruler of the Amvasthas wielding the mace, numerous shafts furnished with golden wings, like the mass of clouds enshrouding the risen sun. Thereafter with other arrows, Pritha's son splintered into pieces the mace of that illustrious warrior ; indeed this feat appeared to be marvellous. Then beholding that mace of his cut down, and taking up another heavy one,

68—69. The ruler of the Amvasthas began to strike Vasudeva's son and Arjuna, incessantly. Thereat Arjuna with a couple of razor-headed arrows cut off his upraised arms wielding the mace, that resembled the pole of Indra ; and then with another winged shaft he cut off his head. Then that king, O monarch, fell down on the Earth creating a loud noise,

70. Like a standard raised in honor of Indra falling down, when the ropes tying it to the engine (on which it is posted) are cut off. Then plunging deep into the division of cars, and surrounded by hundreds upon hundreds of elephants and steeds, the son of Pritha looked like the sun covered with thick masses of clouds.

Thus ends the ninety-third Chapter, the slaughter of the Amvastha king and others, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCIV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the son of Kunti, out of a desire for slaying the king of the Sindhus, had penetrated into the Bharata army, after having pierced through the invincible division of Drona and the Bhoja king,

2. When also, O king, the heir of the king of the Kambhojas, namely prince Sudakshina, also the powerful Srutayudha, had been slain by Savyasachin,

3. When the divisions of your army had been broken and routed in all directions, your son seeing his troops shattered, speedily proceeded towards Drona.

4. Hastily riding on a single car, he repaired to Drona and addressing him said :—"That foremost of men Arjuna has already passed through this mighty army, having crushed it completely ;

5. Now decide with the help of your understanding, what should be done next, for bringing about the slaughter of Arjuna, taking into consideration this fearful carnage.

6. Do you so arrange that, that foremost of men may not slay Jayadratha. May good betide you. You are our sole protector.

7. Like a raging fire consuming a heap of dry grass and fuel, this Dhananjaya-fire urged on by the wind of his anger, is consuming the grass and fuel formed by my troops.

8. O afflicter of your foes, being informed that the son of Kunti had passed through this division having pierced through it, the warriors entrusted with the protection of Jayadratha, are being preyed upon by anxiety.

9. O you foremost of those conversant with the Brahma, it was a firm conviction with the kings that Dhananjaya would never be able to secape Drona alive.

10. O you of burning splendour, when Pritha's son has succeeded in penetrating through your division before your very eyes, I consider all my troops to be involved in a great catastrophy. Indeed, I think I have no troops.

11. I know you, O illustrious one, to be attached to the interests of the Pandavas ; therefore, O Brahmana, I am losing my sense in the thought what should be done by me next.

12. To the best of my prowess, O Brahmana, I try to behave well with you. I also, exert to the best of my capabilities for satisfying you ; still you do not seem to attach any value to all these.

13. O you of prowess infinite, although we are ever devoted to you, you do not wish us well ; but you are ever satisfied with the Pandavas who are intent on injuring ourselves.

14. Though you live upon our bread, yet you are instrumental in injuring us. I knew not before that, you are but a razor soaked in honey.

15. If you had not given me assurances of vanquishing the Pandavas, I would never have prevented the ruler of the Sindhus from returning to his own dominions.

16. Fool that I am, hoping to obtain protection from you, I gave assurances of safety to the king of the Sindhus ; now I see that I have virtually offered him as a victim to Death.

17. It is possible for a man to escape even when he goes inside the jaws of Death, but there is not the slightest chance of escape for Jayadratha, when he once comes within the reach of Partha in battle.

18. O you owning crimson steeds, do you so manage that the ruler of the Sindhus may yet be saved. Be not angry with me for all these raving of mine afflicted as I am with grief. Oh ! save, save the ruler of the Sindhus !

Drona said :—

19. I do not take your words in ill-part ; you are to me like Ashwathaman himself, I tell you this for sooth. O ruler of men, do you now act up to my advices.

20. Krishna is the best of all drivers of chariots, and his horses are the fleetest and the best of the species. Creating a small breach only, Dhananjaya can pass very quickly through it.

21. Can you not see the innumerable arrows shot by the diadem-decked Arjuna with his Gandiva bow, are falling full two miles behind his car as he is advancing ?

22. Grown up in years, I can not indeed proceed so hastily. Moreover, there ! do you see the whole army of the Parthas assailing our van.

23. Yudhisthira also should be captured by myself, before the eyes of all bowmen. Even this, O mighty armed one, has been the vow undertaken by me amidst all Kshatriya warriors.

24. Abandoned by Dhananjaya, O king he now stands at the head of his divisions. For these reasons I shall not fight ...n Phalguna, leaving the van of our array uncared for.

25. Duly supported, do you go yourself and fight with your unsupported foe who is equal to you in nobility of birth and in the achievement of feats. Be not afraid ! You are the lord of this world.

26. You are a sovereign, a hero, possessed of fame, and skilful in defeating (your opponents). O valorous subjugator of hostile fortresses, hie yourself, therefore to that part of the field where Dhananjaya is.

Duryodhana said :—

27. O preceptor, how is it possible for me to hold in check that Dhananjaya who has passed even yourself, the foremost of all wielders of weapons ?

28. It may be possible for me to conquer in battle Purandara armed with his thunder-bolt, but it is not possible for me to conquer Arjuna that subjugater of hostile towns.

29. He by whom the son of Hridika, the ruler of the Bhojas and yourself equal to a god, have all been vanquished with the showers of his weapons, he by whom Srutayush has been slain,

30. He by whom Sudakshina and king Srutayudha have been slain, as also Srutayush and Achyutayush and myriads of Mlechas also have been slain,

31. How can I encounter that invincible son of Pandu, accomplished in the use of all kinds of weapons and resembling the all-destroying fire itself ;

32. How it is that you to-day think me competent to fight with him ? I am entirely dependent on you and am your slave ; Oh ! save my honor !

Drona said :—

33. O foremost descendant of the Kuru race, you speak all that is true. Really Dhananjaya is incapable of suffering defeat. But I myself will so act by which you will be able to bear him.

34. Let all wielders of bow inhabiting this world, behold to-day the marvellous fact, of the son of Kunti being held in check by you, even before Vasudeva himself.

35. This golden coat of mail of yours, O king, I shall so tie on you that all weapons discharged by human hands will not be able to pierce you in battle.

36. Even if the three worlds, with the Asuras, the celestials, the Yakshas, the Rep-

ties, and the Rakshasas, together with all human beings, fight with you to-day, still you need entertain no fear.

37. Neither Krishna, nor the son of Kunti, nor any other wielder of weapons, will be able to pierce your armour in battle with his arrows.

38. So, cased in this golden armour, do you hastily advance upon the wrathful Arjuna, yourself; he shall not be able to bea you in battle to-day.

Sanjaya said :—

39. Having thus spoken, Drona quickly rinced his mouth with water and then bound that lustrous armour on Duryodhana, having duly reiterated most marvellous incantations.

40. In that dreadful battle, that foremost of persons conversant with the knowledge of the Vedas, was desirous of bestowing victory on your son and of exciting the wonder of the worlds with his excellent learning.

Drona said :—

41. May all the Vedas, the Brahmanas and Brahman himself, and the Reptiles and other beings of superior order bless you, O Bharata !

42. May Yayati, Nahusa, Dhundhumara and Bhagiratha and other royal sages bless you in all acts !

43. May you obtain blessings from creatures having one leg only and creatures having many also ! May you also get blessings from those who have no legs at all !

44. May Swaha, and Swadha and Sachi all bless you always ! O sinless one, may Lakshmi and Arundhati also pronounce benedictions on you !

45. May Asita, Devala, Vishwamitra, Angiras, Vasistha, and Kasyapa, O monarch, bless you !

46. May Dhatri, and Vidhatri, the quarters of heaven and their regents and the six-headed Kartikeya do all that is beneficial to you !

47. May the illustrious Vivaswat bless you to-day ! May the four elephants guarding the cardinal points, the earth, the firmanent, the planets,

48. And he who is underneath this earth, and O king, who ever upholds her, viz., Sesha, that foremost of snakes—may all these do what is beneficial to you !

49. O Son of Gandhari, in days gone by, the Asura named Vritra, exerting his might in battle, had defeated the foremost of celestials in battle.

50. All those dwellers of heaven then with Indra at their head, destitute of their energy and prowess, sought refuge with Brahman being highly afraid of the mighty Asura Vritra.

The celestials said :—

51. "O foremost of the celestials, O best of the gods, be you the protector of the gods now, crushed as they are by the Asura Vritra. Save us from this our great fear."

Drona continued :—

52. Thereupon Brahman addressing Vishnu standing by his side, as also the other foremost of celestials headed by Indra, spoke to them that were are depressed, these words, all perfectly true.

53. "The celestials with Indra at their head, as also the regenerate order are ever deserving of my protection. But the energy of Tashtri from which Vritra has been created is indeed irrepressible.

54. In days gon by, observing ascetic austerities for millions of years, Tashtri created, O Gods, Vritra, having obtained permission therto from Mahadeva.

55. Hence that mighty energy of ours has succeeded in vanquishing you through the grace of that god. Without repairing to the place where Sankara stays, you can not expect to obtain a sight of him.

56. After you have seen that god, you will be able to conquer Vritra. Therefore, his yoursleves to the Mandara mountain; there dwells that origin of ascetic austerities, that destroyer of Daksha's sacrifice,

57. That wielder of the *Pinaka*, that lord of all creatures, that slayer of the Asura that Bhaganetra. Thereuqon all those celestials accompanied by Brahma, proceeded to the Mandara mountain,

58. And there, beheld that heap of energy, who resembled in radiance a million of suns. (Seeing the gods come) Mahadeva said :—'All hail O god ! Speak what am I to do for you !

59. A sight of my self cannot be barren. So let the fruition of your desires proceed from this !" Thus spoken to, all those denizens of heaven replied to him saying :—

60. "All our energy has been robbed by Vritra. Be you the protector of us the dwellers of heaven. O God, look upon our bodies mangled and mutilated with the wounds inflicted by the Asura. We seek protection from you; O God of gods, be you our refuge."

Sarva said :—

61. "O Gods, it is well-known to all of

you, how this Asura, surcharged with strength, dreadful, and incapable of being held in check by persons devoid of ascetic merit, came into being, created by the energy of *Tashtri*.

62. Surely it is my duty to protect the denizens of heaven. O Sakra, take this radiant coat of mail off my body; and O lord of the gods, don it, reiterating these *Mantras*.

Drona continued:—

63. Having thus spoken, that giver of boons, gave that armour and the necessary *Mantras* to Indra. Clad in that coat of mail Indra then assaulted the army of Vritra.

64. Although then in that dreadful battle myriads of weapons of diverse description were hurled at him, yet they could not slacken or pierce through the joints, of that armour.

65. Then the Lord of the celestials slew Vritra in battle and gave afterwards that armour of which the joints were composed of Mantras, unto Angiras.

66. Angiras again gave those *Mantras* to Vrihaspati his son conversant with all *Mantras*. Vrihaspati next imparted them to the intelligent Agnivesya.

67. Agnivesya gave them to me; and now with the help of those *Mantras* I have bound up this armour on you, O foremost of the kings, in order to guard your body from all weapon-wounds.

Sanjaya said:—

68. Having thus spoken, Drona that foremost of all preceptors, once more addressed your son endued with great effulgence, thus:—

69. "O ruler of men, I don this armour on your body joining its parts by means of Brahma-threads. Even thus did Brahman springing from the golden lotus, put it on Vishnu.

70. I don it on you, even in the same manner in which Brahman himself had put this armour of celestial make on Indra, during the battle caused by the abduction of Taraka."

71. Thus having tied that armour on Duryodhana with due *Mantras*, the regenerate Drona despatched the king to the mighty encounter.

72. Then the mighty-armed king, accoutered by the illustrious preceptor, supported by a thousand car-warriors of the Trigartta country, all accomplished in smiting down,

73. As also by a thousand infuriate elephants endued with great might and a hundred thousand horses and numerous other mighty--carwarrior,

74. Advanced against the chariot of Arjuna. He then proceeded accompanied by the sounds of various kinds of musical instruments, even like the son of Virochana (in the days of yore).

75. Thereupon O Bharata, a loud uproar was created by your troops as they beheld the illustrious Kuru king advance like the fathomless deep itself.

Thus ends the ninety-fourth Chapter, the donning of the armour on Duryodhana by Drona, in the Jayadratha-bodha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:

1. When that foremost of men *viz* king Duryodhana had started from behind, following Pritha's son and him of the Vrishni-race, both of whom, O monarch, had penetrated into the Kourava ranks,

2. The Pandavas supported by the Somakas furiously assaulted Drona, creating a loud din. Thereupon a fearful battle commenced between them and Drona's troops.

3. The battle then that commenced between the Kurus and the Pandavas at the van of their array was terrible, awful, and capable of making the hair to stand erect; and it was wonderful to the extreme.

4. O king, that battle that raged when the sun shone on the meridian, was such that we had neither seen nor heard of its like, ever before.

5. The troops of the sons of Pritha commanded by Dhristadyumna, all accomplished in smiting and arranged in proper order, covered the division of Drona with arrowy showers.

6. We also placing that foremost of all wielders of bow namely Drona, at our head, began to pour our showers of arrows on the Parthas headed by the son of Prisata.

7. The vanguards of the two hosts, teeming with cars and appearing charming, then looked like two masses of clounds in the summer sky, rushing towards each other, being driven by opposite winds.

8. Clashing against each other, the two armies put forth their exertions, like the rivers Ganga and Yamuna swelling with water during the rainy season.

9. Having various kinds of weapons for the wind that preceeded them, abounding in elephants, horses and chariots, sur charged with the lightning formed by the flashing of maces wielded by warriors, the fierce and thick mass of cloud constituted by the army of the Kurus,

10. Driven forward by the tempest constituted by Drona, and incessantly pouring its arrowy showers, tried to extinguish the raging fire constituted by the Pandavas.

11. Then that foremost of regenerate heroes, namely Drona,agitated the Pandava hosts like a raging tempest in the summer, agitating the mighty main.

12. They also, putting forth all their endeavours, awaited Drona himself, like a strong current of water striking against an embankment with a view of carry it away.

13. Then like unto a mountain checking the progress of torrents of water, in that battle, Drona held in check the enraged Pandavas, Panchalas and Kekayas.

14. Other kings also endued with great might and heroism began to oppose the Panchalas, having surrounded them on all sides.

15. Thereafter in that battle, that foremost of men, viz., Prisata's son, supported by the Pandavas, repeatedly assailed Drona desirous of breaking through his division.

16. Indeed, as Drona poured his arrowy showers on the son of Prisata, so also, did this latter pour his own on the son of Bharadwaja.

17. Then the Dhristadyumna-cloud having rapiers and swords for the winds that preceeded it, well-furnished with darts, lances and scimitar,having the bowstring for its flashes of lightning, and the twang of the bow for its rumbling,

18. Poured, on all directions, torrents of weapons, for its showers of stones, slaying large bodies of car-warriors, best steeds &c.; he seemed to deluge the earth with currents of blood, created by means of his weapon.

19. Then with his arrows Prisata's son turned Drona away from all those breaches in the ranks of the car-warriors of the Pandavas, through which the latter tried to pass, striking the men there with his arrows.

20. Then O Bharata, the division of Drona, although he exerted to the best of his might, became divided in three parts, having encountered Dhrishtadyumna in battle.

21. One of these divisions retraced their steps towards Kritavarman the ruler of the Bhojas, the other towards Jalasandha, and the other slaughtered by the Pandavas fell back upon Drona himself.

22. Then, as many times did that foremost of car-warriors, Drona rally his troops, so many times did that mighty car-warrior Dhrishtadyumna break and route them.

23. Then like herds of cattle distitute of herdsmen slain by the beasts of prey, the troops of the Kurus divided in three divisions, began to be slaughtered by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas.

24. People then thought that in that terrible battle Death himself devoured up warriors stupefied by the mighty Dhrishtadyumna.

25. Just as the dominions of a wicked monarch are devasted by famine, pestilence and marauders, so were your own troops slaughtered and destroyed by the Pandavas.

26. Our eyes were then dazzled and blinded by the weapons and armours on which the sun's rays were reflected, as also by the dust raised by the troops.

27. Then when his troops had been devided in three bodies and when they were being slaughtered by the Pandavas, Drona inflamed with fury, began to consume the Panchalas with his arrows.

28. Then as Drona, crushed and slew the hostile host with his arrows, his appearance looked like that of the blazing fire that appears at the time of the universal Dissolution.

29. That mighty car-warrior, O king, then in that battle, began to pierce car-warriors, elephants, and steeds and foot-soldiers each with a single arrow only.

30. There was none, O Bharata, in the host of the Pandavas who could bear the arrows in that battle, shot, O lord, from the bow of Drona.

31. Scorched by the rays of the sun and felled by the arrows of Drona, the army of the Pandavas, O Bharata, began to reel about on the field.

32. So also your troops afflicted by the arrows of Parsata, appeared to blaze up at every place, like a dry forest on fire.

33. When the troops were thus being slaughtered by the arrows of Drona and Prisata's son, all warriors, heedless of their lives, fought on putting forth all their best energies.

34. O foremost of the Bharatas, then there was none among your or the enemy's host, who, O mighty monarch, forsook the fight out of fear.

35. His brothers, Vivinsati Chitrasena and the mighty car-warrior Vikarna, opposed Kunti's son Bhimasena in the battle.

36. The two princes from Avanti, viz., Vinda and Anuvinda and the highly puissant Kshemadhurti were the followers of your three sons.

37. That mighty car-warrior, the king of the Valhikas, endued with strength and nobility of birth, assisted by his troops and ministers, began to hold in check the sons of Droupadi.

38. Saivya, the king of the Govasanas supported by a thousand excellent warriors, faced the son of the Kasi king and began to oppose that valourous prince).

39. King Salya the ruler of the Madras began to resist king *Aja'satru* Yudhisthira that son of Kunti, who resembled a blazing fire.

40. The vindictive Dussasana inflamed with rage and inspired with courage and heading his own troops, advanced upon that foremost of car-warriors viz Satyaki.

41. Myself cased in mail, furnished with arms and supported by my troops, numbering four hundred picked bowmen strong, resisted Chekitana himself.

42. Sakuni accompanied by seven hundred Gandhara warriors armed with lances darts and bows, began to oppose the son of Madri.

43. The two princes Vinda and Anuvinda, both fierce bowmen, for the sake of their friend Duryodhana, rushed upon Virata the rulers of the Matsyas, heedless of their lives and holding their weapons over head.

44. Exerting his best, Valhika resisted the invincible and puissant Sikhandin the son of Yajnasena, capable resisting all foes.

45. The prince of Abanti supported by the Souviras and the ruthless Pravadrakas opposed Dhristadyumna the panchala prince whose very appearance reflected wrath.

46. Alayudha quickly rushed upon that valorous Rakshasa Ghototkacha of fierce deeds who was proceeding to battle with fury.

47. The mighty car-warrior Kuntibhoja, supported by large ~~division~~ of troops resisted that wrathful Alamvusha that best of the Rakshasas.

48. Thus in that battle thousands of single combats were fought, O Bharata; and then the ruler of the Sindus was stationed behind all the troops, and he was there protected by Kripa and other such car-warriors and bowmen.

49. O King, then the son of Drona on the right and the son of Suta on the left, these, two great warriors were engaged in protecting the car-wheels of the ruler of the Sindhus.

50. A number of other warriors headed by Somadattas' son, viz., Kripa, Vrishasena, Sala and the invincible Salya were engaged in protecting his rear.

51. Thus many warriors accomplished in the art of fighting and conversant with the rules of policy, having arranged for the saety of the Sindhu king, went on fighting with the Pandavas.

Thus ends the ninety-fifth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Jayadratha badha of the Drona Purva.

CHAPTER XCVI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)
—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hear from me, O king, as I relate to you, the description of the wonderful fight that then took place between the Kurus and the Pandavas,

2. Then the Parthas desirous of breaking through the Kuru array fought vigorously with Bharadwaja's son Drona, having encountered him at the head of his array.

3. Drona also, desirous of wrining great fame, fought on with the Parthas, protecting his array and helped, in the encounter, by his own troops.

4. Then the two Avanti princes Vinda and Anuvinda, those well-wishers of your son, inflamed with rage, pierced Virata with ten sharp arrows,

5. Virata also, O mighty monarch, encountering in battle these two puissant heroes together with their followers, fought on cheerfully.

6. A cruel and sanguinary combat raged between them, like that between a lion and a pair of elephants in rut, in a forest.

7. The highly powerful son of Yajnasena pierced with force, Valhika, with dreadful and sharp arrows capable of penetrating to the very vitals and the bones.

8. Thereupon Valhika also inflamed with rage, deeply struck Yajnasena's son with nine shafts of depressed knot, whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings.

9. Then that battle raged furiously in which arrows, lances and darts were freely used and that inspired terror into the hearts of the cowards and delight into those of the heroes.

10. Then with the arrows discharged by them, the welkin and the quarters became completely shrouded, and nothing could be distinguished.

11. Saivya the ruler of the Govasanas, with his troops, fought with that mighty car-warrior the son of Kasyapa, even as an elephant fights with its rival.

12. Then the king of the Valhikas excited with wrath, fought with the mighty car-warriors, the sons of Droupadi; and then he shone like the soul fighting with five senses.

13. Those five princes, O foremost of embodied beings, fought with him discharging their numerous arrows, like the sense-objects ever fighting with the body.

14. Your son Dussasana struck in that battle Satyaki of the Vrishni race with nine sharp shafts of depressed knots;

15. Thereupon Satyaki of invincible prowess, being thus deeply pierced by that mighty and fierce bowman, was soon partially deprived of his senses.

16. Then regaining his composure, he of the Vrishni race, pierced that mighty car-warrior viz your son, with ten shafts furnished with wings of the *Kanka* feather.

17. Then those heroes piercing each other deeply, and each afflicted with the shafts of the other, shone, O king, like two blossoming *Kinsuka* trees.

18. Afflicted with the arrows of Kuntivoja, Alamvusha inflamed with wrath, appeared beautiful like a *Kinsuka* tree rich with the wealth of its flowers.

19. Then that Rakshasa, having pierced Kuntivoja with numerous swift, coursing arrows, uttered a terrible war-cry, standing in the van of your troops.

20. Then all the troops beheld these heroes each fighting with the other, appear like Sakra and Jamva fighting in the days of yore.

21. The twin sons of Madri, Nakula and Sahadeva, inflamed with rage, O Bhrata mangled Sakuni with their shafts,in as much as the latter was their implacable enemy.

22. O mighty monarch, the carnage that then spread there was dreadful. Kindled by you, fanned into flames by Karna,

23. And kept up by your sons, the fire of wrath of the Pandavas, O king, was then in full blaze in order to consume the whole world.

24. Sakuni was then compelled to turn his face away from the field, by the arrows shot by the sons of Pandu; and unable to fight any longer, he knew not what to do.

25. Seeing him turn away from the field, those two mighty car-warriors, the sons of Madri, again poured on him their arrowy showers, like two clouds drenching a mighty hill with showers of rain.

26. The son of Suvala, struck with numerous arrows of close knots, flew towards the division of Drona, being borne away by fleetest steeds.

27. Then with medium impetuousity that hero, Ghatotkacha rushed upon the Rakshasa Alayudha, in that battle.

28. The battle between them was very wonderful, like that which took place between Rama and Ravana in the days of yore.

29. King Yudhisthira having at first pierced the king of the Madras with five hundred arrows, again pierced him with seven.

30. O king, the battle that was then fought between them, was indeed marvellous, and it resembled that fought between Samvara and the chief of the immortals in the days of yore.

31. Your son Vikarna, Vivinsati and Chitrasena, surrounded by their divisions, fought on with Bhimasena.

Thus ends the ninety-sixth chapter, the fierce fight in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCVII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thus when that horripilating battle was progressing on, the Pandavas rushed

against the Kauravas divided into three bodies.

2. Bhimasena rushed against the mighty armed Jalasandha, and king Yudhisthira supported by his divisions assailed Kritavarman in battle.

3. Appearing beautiful like the sun and scattering showers of arrows, Dhrishtadyumna, O mighty monarch, rushed upon Drona in that battle.

4. Then raged the encounter between all the enraged bowmen of the Kurus and the Pandavas, all eager for encountering each other in fight.

5. During the progress of that dreadful carnage when the warriors were undauntedly fighting with one another in single combats,

6. The mighty Drona fought on with the powerful prince of the Panchalas, and the myriads of shafts that he then discharged filled everybody with great wonder.

7. Like a forest of lotuses lying torn hither and hither, the heads of princes were being scattered all over the field by Drona and the prince of the Panchalas.

8. In every division of heroic warriors, garments, ornaments standards, armours and weapons were seen scattered in all directions.

9. Golden armours bespattered with blood,looked like masses of clouds illumined with flashes of lightning.

10. Other mighty car-warriors stretching their bows full six cubits long,felled with their winged shafts numerous elephants, steeds, and men.

11. In that battle between illustrious combatants, many swords, bucklers, bows, heads and armours of heroes, were seen lying scattered all over the field.

12. In that extremely terrible encounter, O mighty monarch, thousands of headless trunks were seen to rise up from the ground.

13. Vultures and *Kankas* and crows and jackals and numerous other flesh-eating animals, were seen there, O sire,

14. Eating flesh, drinking blood, dragging the hair, and pecking the marrow,

15. And dragging out the bodies and limbs and heads, O king, of slain men, steeds, elephants &c.

16. Accomplished in the use of weapons, skilled in fighting, and firmly resolved to fight, warriors exerted themselves vigourously in the battle, desirous of winning fame only.

17. The soldiers then roamed over the field, performing various evolutionary movements performed by swords-men. With darts, lances, javelins, tridents, *Tomaras* and battle axes,

18. With maces, bludgeons and many other kinds of weapons as also with their bare arms, men who careered in that arena, inflamed with rage, fell to slay one another.

19. Car-warriors became engaged with car-warriors, cavalry soldiers with cavalry-soldiers, elephants with other excellent elephants and infantry with infantry.

20. Many infuriate elephants as if perfectly mad, uttered loud shrieks, and killed one another, after the manner they do so in arenas of sport.

21. O ruler of men, as that battle, in which none paid any regard to any one, raged, Dhrishtadyumna caused his own horses to be entangled with those of Drona.

22. Those pegion-white and crimson steeds, endued with the fleetness of the wind, appeared extremely beautiful, being mingled together in that battle.

23. The horses. O king, then shone like clouds surcharged with lightning. Then Dhrishtadyumna beholding Drona approach him,

24. Grasped his sword and mace, and that hero, O Bharata, left aside his bow. Then that slayer of hostile heroes *viz.*, Prisatas son, desirous of achieving a difficult feat,

25. Leapt over the shafts of Drona's car, and entered into it. He then stood sometimes on the yoke and sometimes on its joints,

26. And sometimes beside the horses. His troops then applauded him highly. When he, armed with the sword, was thus moving quickly on the backs of those crimson steeds,

27. Drona could find no opportunity for striking him; that indeed seemed extremely marvellous. Indeed like the swoop of a hawk on a piece of meat in a forest,

28—29. Looked that sally of Dhristadumnya from his own chariot, upon Drona, for his slaughter. Thereafter with a hundred shafts Drona cut off the shield of Drupada's son, decked with hundred moons, and then with another ten he cut off his sword. Thereafter that mighty warrior slew the latter's steeds with sixty-four shafts.

30—31. Then with a couple of broad-head shafts, he cut off his enemy's standard

and umbrella and his two Parshni charioteers. Then again with great lightness of hands, he sped at Dhrishtadyumna an arrow capable of destroying his life, having at first drawn the bow-string back to the very ears, like Indra hurling the thunder-bolt. But soon Satyaki, with fourteen arrows of great sharpness, cut off that fatal shaft shot by Drona.

32. Thus, O sire, Satyaki rescued Dhrishtadyumna, who had been seized by that foremost of the preceptor, that best of men, like a deer seized by a lion.

33. That foremost descendant of Sini then rescued the prince of the Panchalas from Drona. Beholding Satyaki save the Panchala prince in that battle,

34—35. Drona quickly sped at him twenty-six arrows. Thereupon the grandson of Sini, pierced, with twenty-six arrows of great sharpness, Drona who seemed to swallow up the Srinjayas, on the centre of his breast. Then, upon the Satwata hero Satyaki advancing upon Drona, all the Panchala car-warriors, desirous of victory, extricated Dhrishtadyumna from that encounter.

Thus ends the ninety-seventh chapter, the fierce fight, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drana Parva.

CHAPTER XCVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)
—Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. After that arrow shot by Drona had been severed and Dhristadyumna rescued by Yuyudhana that foremost of the Vrishnis, O Sanjaya,

2. What did the fierce bowman Drona, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, inflamed with wrath, do to the grandson of Sini that foremost of men?

Sanjaya said :—

3—5. Then Drona, like a huge snake having wrath for his poison, the stretched bow for his wide open mouth, sharp *Narachas* for his teeth, whetted arrows for his fangs, with eyes coppery in rage, and breathing like a furnace—that undaunted warrior,—borne by his fleet steeds of crimson hue that appeared to soar high into the heavens or get at the summit of the highest of mountains, advanced against Yuyudhana, scattering right and left his arrows furnished with golden wings.

6—7. Beholding the irresistible Drona-cloud having showers of arrows for its watery downpour, the rattle of chariot-wheels for its rumbling noise, the stretched bow for its volume, numerous *Narachas* for its flashes of lightning, darts and scimitars for its thunder, wrath for the violent wind going before it and steeds for the hurricane driving it forward,

8. Make towards himself, that subjugator of hostile towns, the invincible and heroic grandson of Sini, smilingly addressing his charioteer said :—

9. "Against this heroic Brahmana fallen off from all his duties, who is the refuge of the Dhritarashtras and the despeller of the sorrow and anxiety of their king,

10. Who is also the preceptor of all the princes, and is ever boastful of his prowess, do rush cheerfully and quickly, being borne by steeds urged to the top of their speed ?"

11. Thereupon those best of steeds of argentine hue and of the fleetness of the wind, belonging to that descendant of Madhus race, flew in all haste, towards Drona in that battle.

12. Then those two afflicters of foes Drona and Yuyudhana began to fight with each other, striking each other with many a thousand shafts.

13. Those two foremost of men enshrouded the welkin in a net-work of arrows, and those two heroes filled the ten points of the compass with their arrowy discharges.

14. Like two clouds at the expiration of summer pouring their contents on the Earth, they poured their showers of arrows on each other; the sun did not shine then, nor did the wind blow.

15. In consequence of these showers of arrows filling the firmament, an impenetrable and deep gloom was created there that became unbearable to the other warriors.

16. When the arrows of those two foremost of those accomplished in the use of weapons, viz. Drona and Sini's grandson, had covered the world with that gloom,

17. None could find any interval in the shooting of arrows by those two best of warriors. The sound produced by the clashing of the showers of arrows shot by them,

18. Was heard there to resemble the rumble of the thunderbolt hurled by Indra himself. The appearances of heroic warriors pierced with *Narachas*,

19. Looked, O Bharata, like those of snakes of virulent poison, bit by other snakes.

The sound produced by the palm-strokes and twanging bows of those two accomplished warriors, was heard there

20. To resemble the sound that is produced by the incessant striking of the bolt of heaven on mountain summits. The chariots of both those heroes, O king, and their horses and charioteers,

21. Being pierced with shafts of golden wings, became beautiful to look at. O ruler of men, of effulgent and straight-going *Narachas*,

22. The down-pour was terrible, and it resembled a shower of snakes of virulent poison, that have just cast off their slough. The umbrellas of both those warriors were felled and their standards were also cut down.

23. Both of them were bespattered with blood and both were desirous of obtaining victory. With bodies steeped in blood and looking like two elephants in rut,

24. They began to pierce each other with arrows capable of destroying life. The din of battle caused by war-cries, shouts, roars and the sound of drums and the blare of conchs

25. Ceased, O mighty monarch, for none then uttered anything; the troops became silent and warriors withdrew from the fight.

26. Filled with curiosity, men began to behold that single combat between those two heroes; car-warriors, elephant-drivers, horsemen and foot-soldiers,

27. Surrounding those two foremost of of men, began to witness that combat with fixed oyes. The elephant-division as also the horse division stood still;

28. So also the car-divisions stood still, arranging themselves in battle array. Adorned with diverse kinds of pearls, and corals, decked with jewels and gold,

29. Adorned with standards and ornaments, with armour made of gold, with flags and pennons, with the precious caparisons of elephants, with fine blankets,

30. With effulgent and whetted weapons, with *Chamaras* decked with gold and silver, with warriors on the backs and necks of horses and elephants,

31—32. With garlands round the frontal globes of elephants, and with circlets round their tusks, O Bharata, the Kuru and the Pandava troops then looked like masses of clouds at the close of the summer season, decked with rows of cranes and numerous fireflies underneath them and beautified with rainbows and flashes of lightning. Our troops, as also those belonging to Yudhisthira, beheld

33. That combat between Yuyudhana and the illustrious Drona. Coming there on their sky-ranging cars, the gods headed by Brahma and Soma,

34. And hosts of Sidhas and Charanas, and Vidyadharas and mighty Reptiles, all saw that combat. The backward and forward movements and the modes of fighting, O king,

35. Of those two foremost of heroes, filled all of them with wonder; displaying great lightness of hands, those two mighty heroes,

36. Namely Drona and Satyaki, pierced each other with each other's arrows. Thereafter in that battle he of the Darsarha race cut off the arrows shot by Drona,

37—38. With his strong and winged shafts; as also the bow of that highly effulgent warrior. But in a wink's time, the son of Bharadwaja fixed the string on another bow; but that also Sayaki cut off quickly. But again Drona stood ready with a bow in hand.

39. As often however Drona strung his bow so often did Satyaki cut it off, and this he did for full sixty-three times. Thereupon in that battle, Drona beholding that superhuman feat

40—41. Achieved by Yuyudhana, thought in his mind thus, O king:—'This force of weapon that I see in this foremost of the Satwata race is possible only in Rama, in Kartwaviryya, in Dhananjaya and in Bhisma'. So, Drona praised the prowess of that hero in his mind.

42. Then that foremost of the regenerate ones, that best of all wielders of weapons, namely Drona, as also the celestials with Indra himself at their head, were highly gratified at seeing the lightness of hands displayed by Satyaki, which resembled that of Vasava himself.

43. O ruler of men neither the gods nor the Gandharvas ever before beheld the like of that lightness of hands now displayed by the swiftly-moving Yuyudhana,

44. Although they, the Siddhas and the Charanas, were cognisant of the feats of which Drona was capable. Then taking up another bow, Drona that crusher of Kshatriyas,

45. That foremost of those acquainted with the use of weapons, O Bharata, placed some weapons on its string. But repulsing Drona's weapons with the illusion of his own weapons, Satyaki,

46. Pierced Drona with exceedingly sharp arrows; that indeed appeared marvellous. Beholding that superhuman feat achieved by him in battle—feat which was incapable of beihg achieved by others,

47. And which displayed great tact, those amongst your warriors who were judges of skill, highly praised it. Whatsoever weapn Drona discharged, Satyaki also discharged the same.

48. Beholding this, that scorcher of foes' namely the preceptor fought with Satyaki diffidently. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, that one who had reached the end of all military sciences, being inflamed with wrath,

49. Invoked into existence a celestial weapon for slaughtering Yuyudhana. Beholding that dreadful and fiery dart capable of slaying the foe,

50. And of celestial make, that fierce bowman Satyaki invoked into existence the *Varuna* weapon. Beholding them both using celestial weapons, the troops uttered loud cries of *Alas* and *Oh* ;

51. Then the denizens of the air ceased to range through the sky. When the *Varuna* and *Agneya* weapons were placed on their bow strings,

52. Just at that moment, the lustrous orb of day went below the horizon. Thereupon, king Yudhiathira and Vasudeva and the son of Pandu, (Arjana)

53. And Nakula and Sahadeva, rushed to the rescue of Satyaki. Other warriors headed by Dhristadyumna and accompanied by Virata and his divisions,

54. So also the Matsyas and Salwayas quickly advanced upon Drona. Thousands of princes, on the other hand, headed by Dussasana,

55. Proceeded to help Drona who had been thoroughly encompassed by the foe. Thereat, O king, the fight between your warriors and those of the Pandava, commenced anew.

56. Then the earth became enveloped in a cloud of dust and in a net-work of arrows. Everything being covered, nothing could any longer be distinguished. Thus when the troops were overwhelmed with dust, the battle raged in utter disregard of all rules of combat.

Thus ends the ninety-eighth chapter, the battle between Drona and Satyaki, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XCIX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the sun had turned in its downward course towards the summit of the Western hills, when the earth was scattered over the dust, and when the effulgence of the solar disc had become lessened,

2. And when some of the soldiers were standing aloof, some fighting on, some returning to the charge, and some winning victory, the day gradually began to wane.

3. Thus when the troops inflamed with the hopes of victory were fighting together, Arjuna and Vasudeva proceeded towards the spot where the ruler of the Sindhus were.

4. Vibhatsu the son of Kunti, with his sharp shafts went on creating breaches wide enough for his chariot to pass through ; and through these breaches, the son of Vasudeva guided the chariot.

5. Werever the car of the illustrious son of Pandu proceeded, thither O ruler of men, your troops began to give way.

6. Then he of the Dasaraha race endued with great might, displayed his superior skill in driving the car, in as much as he performed, with the car, numerous kinds of circular motions.

7. Then, arrows having their names engraved on them, well-tempered, of the effulgence of the fire of dessolution, tied round with cat-guts, of polished joints, thick, far-reaching,

8. Made either of stiff bamboom or of iron, capable of taking the life out of the enemies, drank in that battle the life-blood of numerous warriors, together with the birds of prey assembled on the field.

9. The arrows which Arjuna discharged standing on his car, fell two miles ahead, and pierced and mangled the foe, just when that car came up to the spot.

10. Borne by those yoke-bearing steeds endued with the fleetness of Garuda or the wind, Hrishikeshas, advanced with such quickness that caused the whole universe to be filled with amazement.

11. O ruler of men, even the chariot of the sun himself or of Indra or of Rudra, or of Vaisravana, can never proceed so quickly.

12. Indeed, no one else's chariot had before moved with such quickness in battle as Arjuna's charriot then moving with the fleetness of a glance of the mind.

13. Then having taken the charriot to the thick of the fight, that salyer of hostile heroes, Kesava, O Bharata, quickly drove the steeds of it into the ranks of the soldiers.

14. Having penetrated into to the rear of the car-division, these excellent steeds drew the car of Arjuna with great difficulty,

suffering as they did from hunger, thirst and fatigue.

15. They were also mangled with numerous weapons by many foremost of combatants. Then they began to move in various wonderful circular motions,

16. Passing over many slain steeds elephants, and many men and also over broken cars, like a group of locusts.

17. During this opportunity, O king, the two heroic brothers, the princes of Avanti supported by their troops, rushed upon the son of Pandu whose steeds were fatigued and tired.

18. Filled with delight they pierced Arjuna with sixty-four, Janardana with seventy and the horses with a hundred shafts.

19. Then the enraged Arjuna knowing the vital parts of the body, pierced them both, O king, with nine arrows of depressed knots, all capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

20. Thereat inflamed with rage, those two warriors covered Vibhatsu and Kesava with their arrowy downpour, and uttered loud war-cries.

21. Then that hero of white steeds with a pair of broad-headed shafts, quickly cut off in that battle the two wonderful bows of those princes, as also their standards of golden effulgence.

22. Thereupon, O king, taking another two bows and excited to the highest pitch of fury, they began to afflict sorely the son of Pandu, with their arrows.

23. Then again, that son of Pandu Dhananjaya, inflamed with rage, quickly cut off their bows with another pair of arrows.

24. Then with other shafts, furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone, he quickly slew their steeds, charioteers, *Parshni*-drivers, and followers.

25. Thereafter with a razor-headed arrow, he cut the head of the elder of the two brothers, off his trunk; thus slain, the latter fell down on the Earth like a tree broken down by the wind.

26. The highly puissant Anuvinda, beholding Vinda thus slain, left the car of which the steeds were slain; and that mighty hero, taking up a mace,

27. Rushed towards Arjuna's car for avenging the death of his brother. Then that mighty car-warrior, that foremost of all car-warriors armed with his mace, appeared to dance on the field.

28. Inflamed with rage then Anuvinda struck with that mace of his, the slayer of Madhu on the forehead. But he could not make him tremble who remained immovable like the Mainaka mountain.

29. Of him, with six shafts, Arjuna cut off the neck, the two legs, his arms and his head; and thus cut to pieces, he fell down like fragments of rocks.

30. Then, O king, beholding those two heroes slain, their followers inflamed with rage, rushed against Arjuna, discharging arrows by thousands.

31. Quickly despatching them with his arrows, O foremost of the Bharatas, Arjuna, then appeared beautiful like the fire consuming the forest at the expiration of winter.

32. Then Dhananjaya, having passed with difficulty, through their (Vinda and Anuvinda's) divisions, appeared beautiful like the lustrous orb of the day emerging out of a cluster of clouds.

33. At first beholding him the Kurus were struck with panic! But in the next moment they were filled with delight; and then, O foremost of the Bharatas, they rushed upon Pritha's son from all sides.

34. Beholding him fatigued, and knowing the ruler of the Sindhus to be stationed afar, they surrounded Arjuna with a loud roar.

35. Beholding them highly excited, that foremost of men Arjuna smilingly addressed these words to that descendant of the Dasarha race viz., Kesava :—

36. "Our steeds are afflicted with arrow-wounds; they are exhausted; the ruler of the Sindhus is still far off. What in your opinion is the best course to be adopted now?

37. Speak, O Krishna, truly on this point? You are ever the foremost of the wise. The sons of Pandu, having yourself only for their eyes, can hope to vanquish their enemies in battle.

38. Hear what seems to me to be our duty next. Unyoking the steeds, leave them to their ease, and O Madhava, draw out the arrows from their body."

39. Thus spoken to by Pritha's son, Kesava replied to him saying ;—"O Partha, I am also of the same opinion that you have expressed."

Arjuna said :—

40. O Kesava, I shall hold the whole army in check. Do you duly perform whatever should be done now.

Sanjaya said :—

41. Thereupon descending from the

terrace of his car, Dhananjaya, with the Gandiva bow in his grasp, stood on the field of battle like an immovable hill.

42. Beholding Dhananjaya on the ground, and taking this to be a meet opportunity, the Kshatriyas, desirous of obtaining victory and uttering load roars, rnshed upon the former.

43. Then with a mighty host of cars, they surrounded that single-handed hero, stretching their bows and discharging their arrows right and left.

44. Inflamed with rage, they then displayed numerous wonderful weapons; and like the clouds covering the solar disc, they covered Pritha's son with their arrows.

45. Then those Kshatriyas, illustrious car-warriors all, rushed with impetuously upon that foremost of Kshatriyas and that best of men, Arjuna, like infuriate elephant rushing upon a lion.

46. Then we beheld the wonderful might of Partha's arms inasmuch as inflamed with wrath, he held in check, the numerous army of the Kouravas.

47. Resisting with his own weapons those hurled by the foe, that highly puissant hero quickly covered all his adversaries with his myriad shafts.

48, Then, O ruler of men, generated by the clash of those thick showers of arrows, a mighty fire of blazing flames, burnt on that part of the welkin.

49—50. There, in consequence of count less heroes, all inflamed with wrath, and united together for a common cause, seeking to obtain victory in battle, supported by steeds bespattered with blood and breathing heavily, and by maddened and foe-crushing elephants emitting fierce yells, the weather became excessively hot.

51—53. Then with his arrows Pritha's son held in check that uncrossable, wide, fathomless ocean of cars—incapable of being agitated, having arrows for its waves, flags for its whirl-pools, elephants for its sharks foot-soldiers for its countless fishes, the blare of conchs, and the sound of drums for its roar, chariots for its swelling current, turbans of warriors for its tortoises, umbrellas and banners for its foam, and the carcasses of elephants for its sub-marine rocks—which then was appearing like a vast continent.

54. Then as the battle progressed, the mighty armed and dauntless Janardana addressing his dear friend, that foremost of men (Arjuna), thus spoke :—

55. "O Arjuna, there is no water here on the field of battle for the horses to drink from. They want water for drinking, and not for a bath."

56. Thereupon saying "Here is it" Arjuna fearlessly struck the Earth with a weapon and thus created a beautiful lake there from which the steeds could quench their thirsts.

57. That watery expanse abounded in swans and ducks and was beautified with hosts of Chakravakas. Its water was translucent and abounded with full-blown lotuses of the best order.

58. It swarmed with tortoises and fishes, and was fathomless, and frequented by numerous sages. Then, there came the sage Narada to have a look at that lake created there in a moment's time.

59. Then Partha that performer of wonderful works like Krishna himself, created there an arrowy hall having arrows for its beams and rafts, arrows for its pillars, and arrows for its roof.

60. Thereupon Govinda, seeing the illustrious son of Pritha construct that hal there, langhing applauded him saying—"Well-done, well-done."

Thus ends the ninety-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Vinda and Anuvinda, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva

---

CHAPTER C.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.—

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the illustrious son of Kunti had created that water there, and had held in check the troops of the enemies, and when he had constructed that arrowy hall,

2. The highly effulgent son of Vasudeva descending down quickly from the chariot unharnessed the horses lacerated with arrows furnished with wings of the *Kanka* feathers.

3. The *Siddhas*, the *Charanas*, and the troops present there, beholding that sight unseen before, uttered loud exclamations in praise of Arjuna.

4. That all the mighty car-warriors of your army were unable to resist that son of Kunti who then was fighting standing on his legs, was indeed wonderful.

5. Though myriads of chariots and thousands upon thousands of elelephants

and steeds assailed him, yet Partha experienced no fear; but every moment obtained advantages over his enemies.

6. Showers of arrows were poured upon that son of Pandu by the hostile kings; but that slayer of foes, the illustrious son of Vasava felt no pain.

7. Then the highly puissant son of Pritha received those showers of arrows, lances, and maces, like the ocean receiving the numerous rivers flowing into it.

8. With the tremendous force of his arms, Pritha's son began to swallow up, as it were, all the excellent arrows shot at him by hostile kings,

9. Then like the one fault covetousness destroying numerous accomplishments, Pritha's son, single-handed, and on foot, began to resist all the hostile kings riding on their respective cars.

10. During that fight, O mighty king, even the Kurus themselves applauded the prowess displayed by Arjuna and the son of Vasudeva, saying:—

11. "What incident, more wonderful has ever taken place or will ever take place in this world, than this, viz., that Pritha's son and Govinda in course of the fight, have unharnessed their steeds?

12. Those two foremost of men, displaying fierce energy in battle, and confident of their prowess, have filled our hearts with terror."

13—14. Thereafter Hrishikesa of eyes resembling lotus petals, smiling with the greatest assurance, as if he were in the midst of women, led the steeds in the arrowy hall ceated on the field of battle by Arjuna, before the very eyes of all your troops, O king.

15. Then Krishna well-skilled in the art of grooming, removed their fatigue, pain, trembling and lacerations.

16. Drawing the arrows out or their bodies, and shampooing them with his two hands, and walking them duly, he made them drink water.

17. Having then washed them, and made them drink and removing their fatigue and pain, he once more harnessed them to that foremost of chariots, with a joyful heart.

18. Thereafter that foremost of all wielders of weapons, that one endued with fierce energy viz., Souri (Krishna), accompanied by Arjuna, mounted on the car, and once more drove on quickly.

19. Beholding then that car belonging to that foremost of car-warrior, to which were yoked steeds whose thirst had been quenched, the foremost of the Kuru warriors once more became depressed at heart.

20. O king, beathing like snakes whose fangs have been broken,they exclaimed, 'Fie fie on us; Oh, Parth and Krishna, have gone,

21. Riding on a single car and clad in mail, slaughtering our troops with as much as ease as boys playing with a toy, even before the very eyes of all the Kshatriyas.

22. In spite of all our efforts and endeavours, those two scorchers of foes, have gone away, disregarding all other kings and displaying their superior prowess."

23. Beholding them gone away, othes soldiers said:—"O Kurus,prepare yourselver in all haste for slaughtering Krishna and the diadem-decked Arjuna.

24. Yoking the steeds to the car, he os the Dasarha race is proceeding towarde Jayadratha, crushing us in battle before tht very eyes of all our bow-men."

25. Other rulers of earth, seeing tha highly wonderful incident, never seen before, O king, said amongst themselves:—

26. "These troops, the king Dhritarastra himself, the Kshatriyas and the earth herself, are all now involved in a great calamity, through the fault of king Duryodhana.

27. All these are being destroyed; but the king (Duryodhana) heeds it not." Even thus did the Kshatriyas speak there. Others O Bharata, said:—

28. "Let the son of Dhritarastra, of erring sight, and meagre knowledge of measures, now perform those rites that are done for the departed, for, the ruler of the Sindhus may already be taken to be despatched to the abode of Yama."

29. Then as the sun parambulated through the concavity of heaven, that son of Pandu proceeded with increased speed towards the ruler of the Sindhus, being borne by refreshed steeds whose thirst had been quenched.

30. Then your warriors were unable to check that mighty-armed hero, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, *viz.*, Arjuna, who had been proceeding like the enraged Destroyer himself.

31. Then for getting at the ruler of the Sindhus, that son of Pandu, that afflicter of foes, routing your army, began to agitate it like a lion agitating a herd of deer.

32. Plunging into the ranks of your soldiers, he of the Dasarha race, urged the steeds of to the top their speed and blew his conch *Panchjanya* of the hue of clouds.

33. The arrows discharged by the son of Kunti began to fall behind him, so quickly did those steeds, endowed with the fleetness of the wind, bear that chariot of his.

34. Thereafter, inflamed with rage, numerous hostile kings and various other Kshatriyas, surrounded Dhananjaya who was eager for bringing about the slaughter of Jayadratha.

35. When the Kuru-combatants thus rushed upon that foremost of men who had stopped for a moment only, Duryodhona, advancing quickly, followed Partha from behind, in that fierce encounter.

36. Many warriors became greatly depressed, beholding that chariot, of which the banner fluttered in the air, the rattle of which resembled the rumble of clouds, and which was mounted with that fearful standard having the ape for its device.

37. Thus when the orb of the day had been enshrouded in a cloud of dust, and when the warriors had been afflicted sore with arrows, they could not look at the two Krishnas engaged in that battle.

Thus ends the one-hundredth chapter, the surprise of the troops, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding, O king, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya penetrate into their ranks, having already pierced through many divisions, the kings of your army fled in fear.

2. After a while, however, those illustrious warriors, overwhelmed with wrath and shame, and urged on by their prowess, gathered courage, and rushed upon Dhananjaya.

3. But, O king, those who proceeded to fight against the son of Pandu, being filled with wrath and vindictiveness, returned not, even as rivers falling into the sea, never return.

4. Like atheists turning away from the Vedas, many ignoble warriors turned away from the fight, and thus incurred sin and hell.

5. Then those two foremost of men, passing beyond that cluster of cars, appeared like the two effulgent orbs (the sun and the moon) freed from the jaws of Rahu.

6. They then with their fatigue completely dispelled, and passing beyond that network of soldiers, looked like two fishes that had torn away from a strong net.

7. Having passed through that impenetrable array of Drona impassable in consequence of showers of weapons, those two illustrious heroes looked like two suns risen at the period of Dissolution.

8. Penetrating through those showers of weapons and freed from the imminent danger to their lives, those illustrious warriors, themselves obstructing the sky with their weapons,

9. Appeared like two persons escaped from a raging fire, or like two fish from the jaws of a *Makara.* They then agitated the Kuru ocean like two *Makaras* agitating the mighty deep.

10. While Arjuna and Krishna were within Drona's division, your warriors and your sons, had thought that the two heroes would never be able to pass through it.

11. But beholding those two highly effulgent warriors now beyond the division of Drona, they became doubtful about the life of the ruler of the Sindhus.

12. Up till then, they cherished strong hopes of Jayadratha's life, for they had thought, O monarch, that the two Krishnas would never be able to escape from Drona and Hridika's son.

13. Falsifying that hope of theirs, those two scorchers of foes, succeeded in crossing over the uncrossable division of Drona and the Bhojas, O king.

14. Beholding them beyond those divisions and look like two blazing fires, your troops became despondent, and they gave up all hopes for the life of the ruler of the Sindhus.

15. Then those two dauntless heroes, those enhancers of the fears of their foes, namely Krishna and Dhananjaya, thus began to talk among themselves, regarding the slaughter of Jayadratha.

16. "This ruler of the Sindhus has been placed in their midst by six of the foremost car-warriors of Dhritarashtra's army. Still he shall not escape, if we can only have a look of him.

17. Even if Indra himself with all the celestials, were to become his protector in battle, yet we shall slay him."

Sanjaya said :—

Thus did the two Krishna's talk to themselves.

18. Even so, O migty-armed one. did the two Krishna's speak amongst themselves

while looking for the ruler of the Sindhus. (Hearing what they said) your sons set up a loud wail.

19. Those two subduers of foes then appeared like a pair of elephants of great quickness, whose thirst had been slaked and who had been refreshed with drinking water, after they had passed through a desert.

20. Beyond death and above the reach of decay, they then appeared like two tradesmen that have passed over a hilly district infested with tigers, lions and elephants.

21. Indeed then your troops considered the hue of their countenances to be incapable of of being faded; and beholding them freed, they began to wail aloud.

22. Escaping from Drona who resembled a snake of virulent poison or a blazing fire, as also from the other rulers of Earth, Partha and Krishna looked like two burning suns.

23. Those two subduers of foes, escaping from Drona's division which resembled the very ocean, seemed to be filled with delight, like persons that have safely crossed the mighty main.

24. Escaping from those thick downpours of arrows, from those divisions protected by Drona and Hridika's son, Keshava and Arjuna appeared like Indra and Agni of burning radiance.

25. Pierced with the whetted shafts of Bharadwaja's son, and profusely shedding blood, the two Krishnas appeared beautiful, like two mountains adorned with flowering *Karnikara* trees.

26. Having passed through that expansive lake, of which Drona formed the shark, darts the fierce snakes, shafts the *Makaras*, and Kshatriyas the fathomless waters,

27. Having emerged out of that cloud formed by Drona's weapons, of which the thunders were the twang of bows and the sound of palm-strokes, and the lightning the flashing maces and swords—Partha and Krishna appeared like the sun and the moon emerging out of darkness.

28. In consequence of their crossing the regions obstructed with the weapons of Drona, all creatures regarded those fierce and renowned bowmen viz Kesava and Dhananjaya to be like two persons who have forded, with the strength of their arms, the five rivers having the ocean for their sixth when full of waters during the rainy season and abounding in numerous sharks and alligators,

30. From a desire for slaughtering Jayadratha stationed very near to them, looking at him, the two warriors appeared like two tigers waiting to fall upon a *Ruru* deer.

31. The color of their faces was such that your warriors, O mighty monarch, considered Jayadratha already to be one among the slain.

32. O mighty-armed one, with red eyes and staying together, the son of Pandu and Krishna then beholding the ruler of the Sindhus, became filled with delight, and incessantly uttered loud war-cries.

33. The radiance of Souri holding the reins and Partha wielding the bow, O king, was like that of the fire and the sun.

34. Escaping from the division of Drona and beholding the ruler of the Sindhus within reach, they were filled with delight, even as a hawk is filled with delight at the sight of a piece of meat.

35. Beholding the ruler of the Sindhus stay near them, and burning with rage, they pounced down upon him, like a pair of hawks pouncing down upon a piece of meat.

36. Then beholding Hrishikesha and Dhananjaya penetrate through the division of Drona, your highly powerful son, king Duryodhana, having his armour donned by Drona, and knowing how to guide and groom horses, proceeded on a single car against those two warriors, in order to rescue the ruler of the Sindhus.

38. Leaving behind him the two mighty car-warriors Krishna and Partha, your son proceeded ahead and then turned back, O king, facing Kesava of lotus-like eyes.

39. Then when your son had outrun Dhananjaya, numerous musical instruments were joyfully sounded by all your troops.

40. Then beholding Duryodhana stay, facing the two Krishna's, your troops uttered war-cries resembling leonine roars that became mingled with the blare of conchs.

41. Beholdidg your son rush to fight, they also of blazing effulgenee who were engaged in protecting Jayadratha, became filled with joy.

42. Then seeing Duryodhana and his followers outrun Dhananjaya, Krishna, O king, addressing Arjuna, said these words suited to the occasion.

Thus ends the one hundred and first chapter, the arrival of Duryodhana, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CII,

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Vasudeva said :—

1. O Dhananjava, behold, Suyodhana has outrun us. Meseems this to be highly wonderful. There is indeed no car-warrior equal to him.

2. He is capable of shooting his arrows to a great distance; he is a fierce bowman, accomplished in the use of all weapon, and formidable in battle. This son of Dhritarastra is endued with great prowess, and strikes hard, and is versed in all modes of warfare.

3. Reared in all luxury, he is highly esteemed by all the mighty car-warriors. O Partha, he is accomplished and the constant hater of the Pandavas.

4. O sinless one, for these reasons I think that the time has how arrived, when you shall fight with him. Upon him rests, as upon a stake at dice, victory or the reverse.

5. On him vomit the venom of your wrath that you have cherished so long, O Partha. This mighty car-warrior is the root of all wrongs inflicted on the Pandavas.

6. He is now within your arrow-shot. Be mindful of your suecess. Why has king Duryodhona, desirous as he is of enjoying the kingdom come to fight with you?

7. By good fortune it is that he has now come within the reach of your arrows. O Dhananjaya, do you so strive now, that this one may lose his very life in battle.

8. Elated with the pride engendered by his prosperity, he has never experienced pain. O foremost of men, he knows your prowess in battle.

9. O Partha, the three worlds and the celestials, the Asuras and the men, cannot bear you in battle, what to speak of this single-handed Suyodhana?

10. By good luck, has he now come near your chariot; O Partha, slay him, O mighty-armed hero, even as Purandara (Indra) slew Vritra (in days gone by).

11. O sinless one, this Duryodhana ever tried to bring down distress on you. Through deceitful measures, he defeated the very virtuous king Yudhisthira at the game of dice.

12. O bestower of honor, sinless though you all are, this one of sinful understanding had always injured you with many cruel wrongs.

13. Nobly resolving to fight, O you son of Pritha, slay without any hesitation, this perverse wretch who is ever vindictive and cruel, and who is avarice incarnate.

14. O son of Pandu, put forth all your prowess, recollecting the despoliation of your kingdom through deceit, your exile in the woods, and the woes of Krishna.

15. Through good fortune it is, that he now moves within the range of your arrows. By good luck it is that, staying before you, he is striving to thwart you in the fulfilment of your purposes.

16. By good luck it is that he has come to know that he will have to fight with you! By good luck it is that all your desires, though not at present eagerly cherished, will meet with their fruition, O Pritha's son.

17. For these reasons, O Partha, slay you this disgrace to the race of Dhritarastra, even as Indra slew the Asura Jambha in days gone by, in the battle between the celestials and the Asuras.

18. If this one be slain by you, you can penetrate through this array that will be then masterless. Let the *Avabhritha* of these hostilities be performed now; cut the root of these wretches of wicked souls.

Sanjaya said :—

19. Thus spoken to, Pritha's son answered him saying :—"Let it be so. Even this will I do. Unmindful of anything else, drive where Duryodhana stands.

20. Putting forth all my prowess in battle, I will, in this day's battle, cut off the head of this wretch, who had enjoyed our dominions for a long period, without a single thorn in his side.

21. O Kesava, shall I not be successful in avenging the wrongs inflicted on Draupadi by her being dragged by the hair, undeserving as she was of such treatment?"

22. Thus speaking to each other and filled with delight, the two Krishnas urged on their steeds of white hue and best breed, with a view to get at the ruler of the Kurus *via* king Duryodhana.

23. Your son, O foremost of the Bharatas, approaching them entertained no fear, although, O sire, there were reasons enough to fill him with terror.

24. Then all the Kshatriyas present there applauded him, inasmuch as he ventured to rush against Arjuna and Hrishikesa with a view to oppose them.

25. Then beholding the king proceed to

the battle, all your troops, O ruler of men, raised a loud uproar.

26. When that loud and dreadful uproar was set up by your people, your son pressing his foe hard, began to impede his progress.

27. Opposed by that illustrious bowmen *viz.*, your son, the son of Kunti became excited to the highest pitch of fury; also that afflicter of foes, your son, became highly angry upon Dhananjaya.

28. Then beholding Duryodhana and Dhananjaya, both enraged against each other, all the royal warriors of fierce appearance, began to look at them from all sides.

29. Beholding Partha and Vasudeva both filled with wrath, your son desirous of fighting with them, smiling, challenged them to the combat.

30. Thereupon he of the Dasarha race and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu filled with delight, uttered loud shouts, and blew their best of conchs.

31. The Kourava warriors then beholding their appearance reflect joy, became hopeless of the life of your son.

32. Then many among the enemies and the Kurus were filled with grief, as they then considered your son to be like a libation poured into the mouth of fire.

33. Then your warriors beholding Krishna and Pandu's son filled with joy, out of fear, began to exclaim saying "the king is slain, the king is slain."

34. But Duryodhana, hearing that confusion created by his own men, said:—'Let all your apprehensions be dispelled; I will send the two Krishnas to the abode of Death."

35. Having thus spoken to the soldiers, the king desirous of victory, addressing Pritha's son, out of anger, said these words:—

36. 'O son of Pritha, if you are begotten by Pandu, then quickly display against me all weapons the use of which you learned from the celestials, or on this Earth?

37. Exert all your might and prowess and let also Kesava do so, against me. I want to see your manliness.

38. Men speak of many feats achieved by you out of our view. Show all those feats to me that have rendered you worthy of the applause and reverence of others."

Thus ends the one hundred and second chapter, the boastful words of Duryodhana, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Having thus spoken, the king pierced Arjuna with three shafts capable of penetrating to the very vitals; and then with another four arrows of great velocity, he pierced the latter's four steeds.

2. He also pierced the son of Vasudeva with ten arrows between his breasts. Then cutting off the whip of the latter, he felled it on the ground.

3. Thereupon with perfect coolness, Pritha's son quickly sped at him four shafts of variegated wings and whetted on stone; but all these shafts were baffled by Duryodhana's armour.

4. Beholding those shafts repelled, Partha once more struck Duryodhana with another nine and seven arrows of exceeding sharpness; but these also became baffled by Duryodhana's armour.

5. Then seeing those twenty shafts of Arjuna repelled, that slayer of hostile warriors Krishna, addressing Arjuna, said these words:—

6. "O Partha, now I see a sight never before seen by me, which is as wonderful as the moving about of hills. Winged shafts shot by yourself, are becoming abortive!

7. Is everything right with the toughness of the Gandiva, O foremost of the Bharatas? Are your grasp and the prowess of arms, as firm and strong as before?

8. Is not this to be the last time that you shall meet with Duryodhana your foe? Tell me all this; O son of Pritha, for I ask you.

9. Seeing all these shafts of yours falling upon Duryodhana's chariots without producing the least effect, O Partha, I have been filled with great surprise.

10. O son of Pritha what misfortune is this that your arrows, dreadful like the bolt of Heaven and capable of piercing through the body of the enemy, produce no effect today?"

Arjuna said:—

11. I think, O Krishna, that Drona has donned this armour on Duryodhana. This armour, tied as it has been, is invulnerable by my weapons.

12. O Krishna, this armour contains in it the might of the three worlds. Drona

only knows the mode of donning it, and from that foremost of men, I also have learnt it.

13. This armour can not be penetrated by arrows. Even, O Govinda, Maghavat himself can not penetrate it in battle with his thunderbolt.

14. Knowing all this, O Krishna, why do you confound me. That which happened in the three world, that which now happens,

15. And that which will happen in the future, are all known to yourself. Indeed O slayer of Madhu, no one knows this better than yourself.

16. This Duryodhana, O Krishna, accoutered in this armour by Drona, is standing dauntlessly in battle, cased in this coat of mail.

17. But he knows not what is to be done with this armour, O Madhava, but wears this coat of mail even like a woman.

18. Behold, O Janarddana, the prowess of my arms and the strength of my bow, in as much as I will vanquish the Kuru king, protected though he is with this coat of mail.

19. T' lord of the celestials gave this effulgent armour to Angiras; from him Vrihaspati obtained it; and from him again Purandara got it.

20. The lord of the celestials once more presented it to me with *Mantras* to be uttered in donning it. Even if this armour were of celestial make or were forged by Brahma himself, yet it will not protect this wicked-minded wretch from the stroke of my arrows."

Sanjaya said:—

21. Having thus spoken, Arjuna inspired some shafts with *Mantras* and then began to draw them on the bow-string. But while he was thus drawing those arrows placed on the centre of his bow string,

22. The son of Drona cut them off with a weapon capable of baffling all other weapons. Beholding those shafts severed from a distance by that reciter of the Vedas (Aswathaman),

23. The owner of the cream-coloured steeds (Arjuna), filled with surprise, addressing Kesava thus spoke:—'O Janarddana these arrows I can not use twice.

24. Then they will slay me and my own troops." Thereafter king Duryodhana, pierced the two Krishnas, each with nine shafts,

25. Resembling snakes of virulent poison. O king, once more he poured upon Krishna and the son of Pandu in that battle,

26. A mighty shower of arrows; upon this all your troops became filled with joy and they struck up musical instruments and uttered their war-cries.

27. Thereat filled with fury, Pritha's son began to lick the corners of his mouth. He could then find no part of Duryodhana's body that was not covered by that armour.

28. Then with sharp arrows, resembling Death and duly discharged, Arjuna cut to pieces Duryodhona's horses and his two *Parshni*-drivers.

29. Then that highly powerful hero cut off the latter's bow and the leathern gloves quickly. Savyasachin then began to cut his car into fragments.

30. Thereafter Arjuna pierced with two sharp arrows, the two palms of Duryodhana who had been deprived of the use of his car.

31. Then your warriors, beholding Duryodhana that foremost of bowmen, involved in great danger and afflicted with the arrows of Dhananjaya, rushed to his rescue.

32. Then they surrounded Dhananjaya with thousands of duly equipped chariots and elephants and horses and numerous divisions of infantry, all inspired with wrath.

33. Thereupon, neither Govinda nor Arjuna nor their car could be seen; for they were then covered with thick showers of weapons and surrounded with large bodies of troops.

34. Then with the force of his weapons, Arjuna began to slaughter that host of your car-warriors and elephants, by hundreds. With their limbs cut off, they began to fall fast on the field of battle.

35. Slain or in the act of being stain, they succeeded not in reaching that excellent car of Arjuna, which stood immovable full two miles away from the beseiging troops on all sides.

36. Thereafter, the Vrishni hero quickly addressed Arjuna saying:—"Do you tremendously stretch your bow for I will blow this conch of mine."

37. Then stretching his toughest bow Gandiva, Arjuna went on slaughtering his foes, shooting arrowy showers and producing loud din with his palm-strokes.

38. Then the mighty Kesava loudly blew his conch Panchajanya, with his eye lashes covered with dust, and countenance shedding drops of perspiration.

39. In consequence of that twang of the Gandiva and the blast of that conch, all the Kuru-people, strong or weak, fell down on the Earth.

40. The chariot of Arjuna, thus freed from that prees, looked like a cloud driven a head by the wind. Then the protectors of Jayadratha and their followers, beholding Arjuna became filled with rage.

41. Then suddenly seeing Partha before them, those guards of Jayadratha the Sindhu-king, all mighty bowmen, uttered a fierce shout, causing the earth to tremble therewith

42. The fierce whizz of arrows became mingled with the blast of conchs and other loud noises; the illustrious soldiers your army then also uttered their war-cries resembling leonine roars.

43. Hearing that dreadful din raised by your troops, Dhananjya and the son of Vasudeva blew their two best of conchs.

44. Then, O ruler of men, with that loud sound, the earth seemed to be filled, with its mountanis seas, islands, and the subteranean regions.

45. Indeed, O foremost of the Bharatas, that sound filling the ten points of the compass, reverberated through the armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas.

46. Warriors of your host then, beholding Krishna and Dhananjaya, were very much terrified. Soon however those mighty-car-warriors recovered, and put forth their activity and prowess.

47. Then your warriors beholding the two Krishnas cased in mair became excited with rage; and they rushed upon them both. All this looked wonderful.

Thus ends the one hundred and third chapter, the defeat of Duryodhona, in the Jayadratha-badha, of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CIV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Your warriors, as soon as they saw those two foremost heroes of the Vrishni-Andhaka and the Kuru races, quickly advanced against them, each striving to be the first. So also, Vijaya rushed against those foes of his.

2. Mounted on their huge chariots adorned with gold, covered with tiger-skins, producing deep rattle with their car-wheels, and looking like blazing fires, they advanced, illumining the all points of the compass.

3. Armed, O monarch, with bows whose stave's were decked with gold, and which, in consequence of their splendour were incapable of being looked at, and setling up loud war-cries' and being borne by mettled horses,

4. Bhurisravas, Sala, Karna Vrishasena Jayadratha, Kripa, the ruler of the Madras, and that foremost of car-warriors *viz.*, Drona's son,

5. These eight great car-warriors, as if devouring up the skies, illumined the ten quarters, with their excellent chariots covered with tiger-skins and decked with golden moons.

6. Accoutered in coats of mail, inflamed with rage, riding upon those chariots the rattle of whose wheels resembled the rumble of the clouds, they covered Arjuna on every side, with showers of sharp shafts.

7. Steeds of best breed and variegated hue, and endued with great fleetness, bearing those mighty car-warriors, appeared beautiful as they illumined the ten quarters of heaven.

8. Their chariots drawn by excellent horses of great fleetness born in various countries and of diverse species—some bred in hilly tracts, some in river-lands, and some in the Sindhu country,—

9. Many foremost of car-warriors among the Kurus, swiftly rushed towards Dhananjaya's car, desirous, O king, of saving your son.

10. Those foremost of men taking up their huge conchs blew them, and with the blasts they filled the welkin and the earth with her all oceans.

11. Thereupon those two foremost of all the gods, *viz.*, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya also blew their conchs that were regarded as the best of all the conchs on the face of the earth.

12. Kunti's son blew his conch Devadatta and Kesava blew Panchajannya. The tremendous blare of the conch Devedatta, produced by Dhananjaya,

13. Filled the earth, the skies, and the ten points of the compass. So also the blast of the Panchajanna, blown by the son of Vasudeva,

14. Surpassing all other sounds, filled the welkin and the earth. And when the fierce and dreadful sound was still continuing,—

15. Sound that struck the hearts of the

cowards with terror and enhanced the delight of the brave,—and while drums, Jharjhwaras, and cymbals,

16. And *Mridangas*, O mighty monarch, were sounded by thousands, great car-warriors, befriending the Kurus and desirous of Duryodhana's good,

17. All great bow-men, inflamed with anger and unable to bear the loud blasts of Arjuna's and Krishna's conchs,—those kings come from diverse countries and accompanied by their troops—,

18. Blew their huge conchs, desirous of answering with the blasts thus produced, the blasts produced by Kesava and Arjuna.

19. Then your army filled with the blasts of the conchs, had its car-warriors, elephants, and horses filled with anxiety. and O master, all who composed it, seemed to be ill.

20. Then that host filled with the blasts of conchs blown by heroic warriors, seemed to be like the welkin echoing with sounds of thunder and fallen down (through some natural cause),

21. That loud sound, O king, filled all the quarters with its echoes. It frightened the troops as if the end of the *Yuga* had come.

22. Thereafter Duryodhana and the other eight sovereigns, all mighty car-warriors, surrounded Pandu's son for effecting the safety of Jayadratha.

23. Then the son of Drona pierced Vasudeva's son with seventy-three arrows, and he also pierced Arjuna with three broad-headed shafts, and the latter's steeds and standard with five arrows.

24. Then beholding Janarddana pierced, and excited to the highest pitch of fury, Arjuna struck his foe with six hundred arrows.

25. Piercing then Karna with ten and Vrishasena with three arrows, that highly puissant hero, cut off Salya's bow with arrows fixed on the string, near the grasp.

26. Thereupon taking another bow Salya began to pierce Pandu's son. Then Bhurisrava with three arrows furnished with goeden wings and whetted on stone,

27. Karna with thirty-two, Vrishasena with seven, Jayadratha with seventy-three, and Kripa with ten shafts,

28. And the king of the Madras with ten other shafts, pierced Phalguna in that battle. Thereafter with a group of sixty arrows, Drona's son covered Partha.

29. He then pierced Vasudeva with twenty and Partha again with five arrows. Thereupon that foremost of men, that owner of white steed, who had Krishna for his charioteer,

30. Pierced them all in return displaying great lightness of hand. Piercing Karna with twelve and Vrishasena with three shafts,

31. He cut off Salya's bow, once more near the handle. Piercing Somadatta's son with three, and Salya with ten arrows,

32. He pierced Drona's son with eight shafts, well-sharpend and resembling tongues of fire. He struck the son of Gotama with twenty five and the ruler of the Siddhus with a hurdred arrows.

33. Once more he pierced Drona's son with seventy shafts. Bhurisrava then inflamed with rage, cut off the whip that Hari held.

34. And he then pierced Arjuna with a group of seventy-three arrows. Thereat Dhananjaya owning white steeds, and burning with rage, mangled those enemies of his with hundreds of shafts, like a raging tempest tearing away masses of clouds.

Thus ends the one hundred and fourth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Dhritarashtra said:—

1. O Sanjaya, describe to me the numerous standards, decked beautifully, belonging both to the warriors of the Parthas, and to our warriors?

Sanjaya said:—

2. Hear from me of the diverse kinds of standards belonging to those illustrious warriors. Listen to me, as I go on describing their name, their appearance, and their hue.

3. O king on the chariots of those foremost of car-warriors were seen various kinds of standards shining like blazing fire.

4. Made of gold, or adorned with gold or decked with garlands of gold, looking like the golden peak of the mighty Meru mountain,

5. The standards of those warriors were of variegated hue, and of great beauty. Those standards also were adorned with fluttering flags on all sides.

6. Having streamers of varigated hue tied to them all round, those standards appeared highly charming. Those streamers also moved by the wind,

7. Looked like beautiful damsels dancing in the midst of arenas erected for sport. Resembling the rainbow in hue, those streamers, O best of the Bharata race,

8. Belonging to those car-warriors, fluttering in the air, beautified their cars. The standard, having for its device the ape of fierce face and lion-like tail,

9. Of Dhananjaya, seemed to strike terror into the hearts of his foes. That foremost of apes, O king, adorned as he was with banners,

10—11. That device on the standard of the wielder of Gandiva, frightened all your troops, O king. We beheld the standard-top of Drona's son, resembling the tail of the lion and effulgent like the newly-risen sun, O Bharata. Made of gold, fluttering in air, and of the effulgence of the standard of Sakra,

12. The device on the standard of Drona's son floated on high inspiring the foremost of the Kurus with delight. The standard of Adhiratha's son bore the device of an elephants-girth made of gold.

13. In that battle, it appeared O mighty king, to fire the whole firmament. The banners attached to it decked with garlands of flowers and adorned with gold,

14. And moved by the wind, seemed to dance on the top of his chariot. The preceptor of the Pandavas, that Brahman devoted to ascetic observances, *viz* Kripa the son of Gotama, had for his device an excellent bovine bull. O king, the illustrious Kripa with that bovine bull on his standard, looked as effulgent,

16. As the Destroyer of the three-fortresses (Mahadeva) looks with his bull. Vrishasena had for his device a peacock made of gold and decked with gems and and jewels.

17. Beautifying the van of the army it stood on his standard as if on the point of emitting its notes. With that peacock, the car of that illustrious hero appeared as beautiful,

18—19. As the car of Skanda, O king, appears, being decked by his peacock. The ruler of the Madras, we beheld, had on his standard-top, the unequalled and charming device of a plough-share, made of gold and looking like a flame of fire. O sire, that plough-share mounted on his chariot looked beautiful,

20—21. Like the Goddess of corn incarnate, endued with all beauty and producing every seed. The device of a silver boar shone on the standard of the Sindhu king; it was decked with garlands of gold and was of the splendour of the rising sun. With that device on his standard, Jayadratha appeared as beautiful,

22—23. As Pusa in the days of yore, in the battle between the celestials and the Asuras. The standard of Somadatta's son, ever devoted to the performance of sacrifices, was decked with the device of a sacrificial stake. It shone like the sun or the moon. O king, that golden sacrificial stake decorating the banner of Somadatta's son, looked effulgent,

24—25. Like the huge stake erected in that foremost of sacrifiees, called the Rajsuya. Salya's standard bearing the device of a silver-elephant, O king, was adorned on all sides with peacocks made of gold. O foremost of the Bharatas, that standard enhanced the beauty of your troops,

26. Like the prodigious white elephant adorning the host of the ruler of the celestials. On the gold-decked standard of king Duryodhana, was the device of an elephant embossed with gems.

27—29. O king, that standard stood on the chariot of that hero, tinkling with the sound of a hundred bells. Then O monarch, in that battle with that huge standard, that foremost of the Kurus *viz* your son appeared highly beautiful. These nine excellent standards rose high amidst your troops and they lighted up your army, even like the suns that rise at the end of a *Yuga*. The tenth standard there, was the mighty ape belonging to Arjuna;

30—32. With that standard Arjuna looked like a mountain lighted up by fire. Then many mighty car-warriors all afflicters of their foes, quickly took up, for opposing Arjuna, their huge, white, and variegated bows. So also Pritha's son of godly achievements took up his bow capable of slaughtering the foe, namely the Gandiva; and all this was owing to your crooked policy. Through your fault, in that battle, were slain numerous kings,

33. Invited from various countries, with their steeds and elephants and chariots. Then roaring at one another they fall upon one another,

34. Headed as they were by Duryodhana on one side and by that foremost of the Pandavas on the other. Then that son of Kunti having Krishna for his charioteer, inspired his foes with wonder,

35. Inasmuch as he, though single handed, dauntlessly encountered the numer-

ous odds against him; then that mighty armed one appeared beautiful, stretching his bow Gandiva;

36—37. And desirous of defeating those best of men ranged against him, and of slaughtering Jayadratha the ruler of the Siudhus, that foremost of men, that scorcher of his foes, viz Arjuna discharging his arrows by thousands, made all the soldiers of your army invisible. Thereupon those mighty car-warriors, those best of men, also rendered Pritha's son

38. Invisible in that battle, with the shower of their shafts poured from all sides. Thus when that foremost of the Kurus Arjuna had been surrounded by those foremost of men, the uproar that was raised in your army was indeed very great and deafening.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifth chapter, the description of the standards, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CVI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When Arjuna had got the Sindhu king within reach, what, O Sanjaya, did the Panchalas, assailed by Bharadawjas's son, do, encountering the Kurus?

Sanjaya said :—

2. On that afternoon, O mighty monarch, in that hair-stirring battle that then raged between the Panchalas and the Kurus, Drona became, as it were, the stake for which they fought.

3. Filled with delight and a desire for slaying Drona, the Panchalas, O sire, poured showers of arrows and uttered loud war-cries.

4. That battle between the Kurus and the Panchalas, dreadful, confused, and wonderful, was like that which was fought between the Gods and the Asuras in days gone by.

5. Then all the Panchalas accompanied by the Pandavas, reaching Drona's chariot, displayed many mighty weapons, with a view to break through Drona's array.

6. Car-warriors mounted on their cars, causing the earth to shake under them, and pouring their arrowy showers, proceeded towards Drona's car in a medium speed.

7. Then Vrihatkshatra, that mighty car-warrior among the Kekayas, rushed upon Drona discharging whetted arrows, resembling the thunderbolt of the great Indra.

8. Thereupon Kshemadhurti of illustrious renown quickly rushed against Vrihadkshatra, shooting sharp shafts by hundreds and thousands.

9. Then again Dhristaketu that foremost among the Chedis, urged on by his great strength, quickly rushed against Kshemadhurti like the great Indra advancing upon the Asura Samvara.

10. Beholding this latter rush with great impetuousity like the Destroyer with mouth wide open, the mighty bowman, Viradwana proceeded in all haste against him.

11. Then the valarous Drona began to resist king Yudhisthira and his troops, when they were exerting themselves for obtaining victory.

12. O master, your son Vikarna endued with great might, assailed Nakula,—endued with strength and versed in the art of fighting,—who had been proceeding to fight.

13. That crusher of foes namely Durmukha, with many thousand swift-coursing arrows, covered Sahadeva who had been making towards himself.

14. Vyaghradanta held in check Satyaki that foremost of men, and he caused the latter to tremble incessantly with his sharp shafts properly whetted.

15. The son of Somadatta resisted those best of men and foremost of car warriors viz the sons of Draupadi, who filled with rage, had been shooting excellents shafts.

16. That mighty car-warrior the son of Rishyasringa, of dreadful appearance and fierce temper, opposed the enraged Bhimasena rushing upon Drona.

17. Then between that man and that Rakshasa, raged a fight that resembled, O king, the one that took place between Rama and Ravana in days gone by.

18. Then, O Bharata, that best of the Bharatas, viz king Yudhisthira pierced Drona on all his vital limbs with ninety shafts of depressed knots.

19. Thus exasperated by the illustrious son of Kunti, O foremost of the Bharatas, Drona struck him on the chest with twenty-five arrows.

20. Then once more, with twenty shafts, Drona peirced him and his steeds, charioteer and standard, before the very eyes of all the bowmen present.

21. Then that son of Pandu, of virtuous soul, with his own showers of arrows checked those discharged by Drona, displaying great lightness of hands.

22. Then that best of bowman viz Drona excited to the highest pitch of fury, in that fight with the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, cut off the bow of that illustrious warrior.

23. Thus depriving Yudhisthira of the use of his bow, that mighty warrior Drona quickly filled the pores of the latter's body with many thousand shafts.

24. Then beholding the king rendered invinsible by the arrows of Bharadwaja's son, all creatures took him to be slain in battle.

25. Some thought that he had been compelled to turn his face away from the field. Some exclaimed saying :—"That foremost of the king has been slain by the illustrious Brahmana."

26. Thus the very virtuous king Yudhisthira was put in a very dangerous position. Then leaving aside his bow cut off by Bharadwaja's son in that battle, he

27. Took up another effulgent bow of celestial make and endued with greater toughness. Then all those arrows shot by thousands by Drona,

28. That hero cut off in battle. Indeed this looked wonderful. O king, having cut off all those arrows, and with his eyes rendered coppery in rage,

29. He took up a lance capable of penetrating even though the very mountains—lance, of which the stave was of gold, which was terror-inspiring, dreadful and furnished with eight bells.

30. Wielding that lance that mighty warrior became filled with rage and uttered a loud war-cry. And O Bharata, with that war-cry of his, he seemed to frighten all creatures.

31. Beholding that lance raised by the very virtuous king in that battle, all creatures present, pronounced benedictions on Drona.

32. Then that lance hurled by the arms of the king, resembling a snake that has cast off its slough, and illumining the cardinal and subsidiary quaters,

33. Coursed towards Drona's division like a she-snake of fiery mouth. Then O ruler off men, beholding that lance coursing towards himself with great force,

34. Drona that foremost of all warrior versed in the use of weapons, invoked into existence the Brahma weapon. That weapon, having burnt into ashes that terrible-looking lance

35—36. Flew quickly towards the chariot of the illustrious son of Pandu. Thereupon king Yudhisthira endued with great prudence, O sire, baffled that weapon of Drona flying at himself, by invoking the Brahma weapon. Then also piercing Drona with five depressed-knotted,

37. Razor-headed shafts of great sharpness, he cut off his mighty bow. Thereupon Drona, that crusher of foes, leaving aside the severed bow,

38. Hurled, O sire, quickly a mace upon the son of Dharma (Yudhisthira). Then beholding that mace fall quickly upon himself, king Yudhisthira,

39. Took up another mace, and O afflicter of your foes, he also hurled it. Those two maces hurled with force, clashing against one another,

40-41. Emitted fire in consequence of the dash and then fell on the ground. Then highly enraged, O sire, Drona slew the horses of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, with four excellent sharp shafts of keen-points. With another broad-headed shaft he cut off the latter's bow that resembled the rain-bow.

42. He cut down his standard with a single arrow and affiicted Pandu's son with another three. Then quickly jumping down from the chariot whose horses had been slain, Yudhisthira

43. Stood on the field, weaponless and with his arms upraised. O foremost of the Bharatas, beholding him carless, and specially, weaponless,

44. Drona of firm vow and great lightness of hands held in bay all the enemy's soldiers, O lord, by discharging numerous sharp arrows.

45. And like a fierce lion assailing a deer, he then assailed the king. Beholding the king assailed by Drona that slayer of foes,

46. The Pandavas began to exclaim saying, *'Alas Oh', the king is captured, the kihg is seized by the son of Bharadwaja.*

47. Even these were the cries that were then uttered by the Pandava troops, O Bharata. Then ascending with quickness on the chariot of Sahadeva, king Yudhisthira the son of Kunti, fled away from the field of battle, being borne away by fleetest steeds.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixth chapter, the escape of Yudhisthira, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O mighty monarch, Kshemadhurti, with numerous shafts pierced the advancing Vrihatkshatra, that valorous prince of the Kekayas, on the breast.

2. Thereupon king Vrihadkshatra, O monarch, desirous of breaking Drona's array, quickly pierced Kshemadhurti with ninety shafts of depressed knots.

3. Thereat Kshemadhurti excited to the highest pitch of fury, cut off the bow of the illustrious ruler of the Kekayas with a well-tempered and well-sharpened arrow.

4. Then having cut off his bow, he pierced that foremost wielder of the bow quickly in that battle with shafts of depressed knots.

5. After this Vrihadkshatra smilingly taking up another bow deprived the mighty car-warrior Kshemadhurti of the use of his car, steed, and charioteer.

6. Thereafter with a well-sharpened and well-tempered arrow he severed from the trunk of that king his head graced with resplendent ear-rings.

7. That head graced with curling locks and a beautiful diadem, suddenly cut off, fell on the earth and shone like a meteor dropped down from the heavens.

8. Thus having slain his adversary, the mighty car-warrior Vrihadkshatra became filled with delight; and he rushed quickly upon your troops, desirous of doing good to the Parthas.

9. The fierce bowman,, Viradhwanan endued with great prowess, began, O Bharata, to oppose Dhristaketu proceeding against Drona.

10. Those two warriors, having arrows for their teeth and endued with activity, meeting each other began to strike each-other with many thousand shafts.

11. Then these two foremost of men fought on with each other like two elephant leaders in rut, in a deep wood.

12. Then those two heroes endued with great prowess fought with each other out of desire for slaying each other, like two ferocious tigers fighting inside a mountain cave.

13. That awful fight, O ruler of men, indeed became a sight to look at; and Siddhas and Charanas, by thousands witnessed it with eyes expanded in wonder.

14. Then, O Bharata, Viradhwanan excited with rage, smilingly cut off the bow of Dhristaketu in twain with a broad-headed shaft.

15. Thereupon that mighty car-warrioe the ruler of the Chedis, leaving aside thr severed bow took up a huge lance of golden staff and iron head.

16. Then, O Bharata, balancing the lance of fierce energy with both his hands, he hurled it quickly at the car of Viradhanwan.

17. Wounded sore with that lance capable of killing all creatures, the latter with his heart rent open, quickly fell down on the Earth from his car.

18. When that heroic and mighty car-warrior of the Trigarttas had been slain, O master, your army was completely broken and routed by the Pandavas.

19. Durmukha then hurled sixty shafts at Sahadeva, and he uttered a loud war-cry defying in that battle that son of Pandu.

20. Thereupon the son of Madri excited with rage, smilingly pierced the advancing Durmukha, with many sharp arrows, the brother striking the brother.

21. Then beholding the mighty Durmukha fight with fury, Sahadeva struck him, O Bharata, with nine arrows.

22. Then that mighty hero, cutting off with a broad-headed shaft the standard of Durmukha, slew his four steeds with four arrows of great sharpness.

23. Then with another well-tempered and sharpened shaft, he severed the head of his charioteer from his trunk,—head that was graced with effulgent ear-rings.

24. Cutting off with a sharp razor-headed arrow the mighty bow of the Kuru-descendant, Sahadeva pierced him with five arrows.

25. Thereupon the cheerless Durmukha leaving that chariot of which the horses had been slain, ascended, O king, upon the car of Niramitra.

26. Thereat the enraged Sahadeva, that slayer of hostile heroes, in that fierce battle, slew Niramitra with a broad-headed shaft, O prince.

27. Then Niramitra that son of the Trigartta king, fell down from the terrace of his car, afflicting your troops with woe.

28. Slaying him, the mighty-armed Sahadeva shone like Dasaratha's son Rama after he had killed the mighty Rakshasa Khara.

29. O ruler of men, beholding the son of their king, the mighty car-warrior Nira-

mitra slain, the Trigarttas uttered loud cries of *Oh* and *Alas*.

30. O king, Nakula then vanquished in a moment your son Vikarna of expanded eyes; that indeed seemed marvellous, O king.

31. Then in the midst of the troops Vyarghradutta rendered Satyaki, his horses, charioteer and standard, invisible, with numerous shafts of depressed knots.

32. Then the heroic grandson of Sini baffling those arrows like one accomplished in the art of fighting, felled with his arrows Vyaghradatta together with his horses, charioteer and standard.

33. Upon the fall of their prince the Magadhas, striving their best assailed Yuyudhana, O king.

34. Discharging arrows and *Tomaras* by thousands, as also *Vindipalas*, lancesi and mallets and bludgeons,

35—36, Those heroes fought on with the invincible Satwata hero, in battle. Then the indomitable Satyaki, that foremost of men endued with great strength without the slightest difficulty, smiling the while vanquished the Magadhas, and the few that survived, fled in all directions.

37. Beholding this, O master, your troops already afflicted with the shafts of Yuyudhana, broke and fled. Then that best of the descendants of Madhu's race, slaughtering in battle your warriors,

38, And stretching his mighty bow shone beautiful, endued as he was with great renown. Then, O king, the army routed by the illustrious Satwata hero,

39. Refused to return to the fight, frightened as they were by that mighty-armed hero. Thereat Drona, highly enraged, quickly casting his glance on Satyaki, himself rushed upon that hero of wonderful feat, incapable of being defeated.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventh chapter, the fight of Satyaki, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. The illustrious son of Somadatta piercing each of those mighty bow men, the sons of Drupadi with five shafts, again pierced them with seven.

2. Thus deeply afflicted by that fierce warrior, the sons of Draupadi, O king, became confounded and knew not what to do in that fight.

3. Thereafter that crusher of foes, namely Nakula's son Satanika piercing that best of men viz Somadatta's son with two arrows, became filled with joy, and uttered a loud roar.

4. The rest of the brothers, then exerting their best in battle, pierced the irate son of Somadatta, each with ten straight-flying arrows.

5. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, the illnstrious son of Somadatta sped at them five arrows, and with each of those struck each of the brothers on the chest.

6. Thereupon those five brothers pierced by the arrows of that high-souled one, surrounding the hero, wounded him soon with their arrows.

7. Then the son of Arjuna filled with rage despatched the four horses of him to the region of Death with four whetted shafts.

8. The son of Bhimasena cutting of the bow of the illustrious son of Somadatta, uttered a fierce roar and pierced the latter with numerous sharp arrows.

9. The son of Yudhisthira felled his standard having at first cut it off; so also Nakula's son felled his charioteer from its place on the chariot.

10. Sahadeva's, son, then knowing him to be already vanquished by his brothers, cut off, O king, his head with a razor-headed arrow.

11. Then that head fell down on ground beautifying the field of battle—head that was adorned with gold and that equalled in effulgence the newly-risen sun.

12. Beholding the illustrious son of Somadatta slain, and his head roll on the ground, your troops, O king, greatly frightened, began to fly in all directions.

13. Alamvusha filled with rage, fought on with the highly powerful Bhimasena, like the son of Ravana fighting with Lakshamana.

14. Beholding then that man and that Rakshasa engaged in fight with each other, all creatures were filled with delight and wonder simultaneously.

15. Then, O king, with nine shafts of depressed knots, Bhima smilingly pierced, O king, that wrathful son of Rishysringa, that foremrst of Rakshasas.

16. Thereat the Rakshasa, thus pierced, uttering aloud fierce roars in that battle,

rushed, supported by all his followers, upon Bhima.

17. That Rakshasa then piercing Bhima with five arrows of depressed knots, quickly slew thiry car-warriors engaged in supporting Bhima.

18. Once more slaying four hundred warriors, he pierced Bhima with winged shafts. Then thus deeply pierced by that Rakshasa, the highly puissant Bhima,

19. Squatted down on the terrace of his car, being overwhelmed with a swoon. Regaining his senses, the son of Maruta, overwhelmed with rage,

20. Stretched his dreadful and excellent bow capable of bearing a great strain and then he wounded Alamvusha on all parts of his body with sharp shafts.

21. Thus pierced with many shafts that Rakshasa resembling a heap of antimony looked beautiful, O king like a Kinsuka tree decorated with flowers.

22. Thus struck in that battle with arrows shot from Bhima's bow, and recollecting the slaughter of his brother by that illus trious son of Pandu, the Rakshasa

23. Caused his appearance to be dreadful, and addressing Bhimasena spoke these words :—"Stay, O son of Pritha, on the field of battle, and behold to-day the prowess I am endued with.

24. O you of perverted understanding, I had a brother by name Vaka who was the foremost of the Rakshasas, and endued with great prowess. He was slain by you; but that transpired out of my sight.'

25. Having thus spoken to Bhima, he became invisible then and there; and then he covered the former with a thick shower of arrows.

26. Bhima also O king filled the welkin with arrows of depressed knots, when that Rakshasa became invinsible in battle.

27. Thus wounded by Bhima, the Rakshasa soon got inside his chariot; and soon again he entered into the bowels of the earth and soon again becoming little, flew into the sky.

28. He assumed forms countless, and large and small. Sometimes assuming a subtle, sometimes a gross and sometimes a huge form, he began to roar like the clouds.

29. He spoke diverse kinds of words and uttered speeches everywhere. From the welkin then fell thousands of arrowy showers,

30. As also darts, *Kunapas* lances, pikes axes, spears, rockets, spiked maces, short javelins, battle-axes,

31. Rocks, scimitars treacle and swords and thunnerbolts. That dreadful shower of weapons created by that Rakshasa,

32. Slaughtered the soldiers of Pandu's son on the field of battle. In consequence of showers of weapons, many elephants of the Pandava host were killed,

33. As also numerons steeds and foot-soldiers, O king. Slain by the shafts of the Rakshasa, many car-warriors were dislodged from their seats in the car.

34—35. The Rakshasa then caused a river to flow on the field of battle, the waters of which were constituted by blood and eddies by cars; which abounded in alligators constituted by the elephants; which had the umbrellas of car-warriors for its swans and the flesh and marrow of animals for its mire; which was infested with snakes formed by the severed arms of human beings; which was frequented by many Rakshasas and other cannibals; and O king, which carried with its currents numerous Chedis, Panchalas, and Srinjayas.

36. O monarch, seeing him careering dauntlessly on the field of battle, and beholding his prowess, the Pandavas became filled with anxious thought.

37. The soldiers of your army were then filled with delight; the musical instruments were then struck up emitting fierce and deep sound, making the hair to stand erect.

38. Then hearing that mighty uproar of delight caused by your troops, the son of Pandu (Bhima) did hot tolerate it, even like a snake not tolerating the sound of the palm-stroke.

39. Then with his eyes coppery in rage and consuming the foe like fire itself, the son of Maruta invoked the Tshtra weapon like the god Tashtri himself.

40. Thereupon a thousand shafts started into existence form all sides. Great was the carnage that was then created in your troops by those arrows of Bhima.

41. That weapon discharged by Bhimasena in battle, nullifying the mighty illusion of the Rakshasa, began to afflict the Rakshasa himself.

42. Thus that Rakshasa wounded by Bhimasena in all parts of his body, fled towards Drona's division, abandoning his antagonist.

43. Then, O king, when that foremost of the Rakshasas had been worsted by the

illustrious Bhimasena, the Pandavas filled the quarters with the echoes of their war-cries.

44. Then filled with delight, they applauded the mighty son of Maruta as the Marutas themselves applauded Sakra after he had vanquished Pralhada in battle.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighth chapter, the defeat of Alamvusha, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CIX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Alamvush then began to career dauntlessly on another part of the field. And when he was thus carreering, Hidimva's son rushed against and quickly pierced him with whetted shafts.

2. Then like the battle between Sakra and Samvara in the days of yore, the battle between those two foremost of Rakshasas became terrible, as they invoked into existence many illusions.

3. Highly excited, Alamvusha began to strike Ghototkacha. The battle between those two best and foremost of the Rakshasas that then raged,

4—6. O master, resembled that between Rama and Ravana, that took place in days gone. Thereupon Ghotatkacha piercing Alamvusha on the breast with a score of Narachas utterred incessantly lion-like roars; so also, O king, piercing the invincible son of Hidimva repeatedly, Alamvusha became filled with delight, and he roared filling the welkin with his roars. Then those two foremost of the Rakshasas, both endued with might and both excited to the hightest pitch of fury,

7. Fought on with each other, desplaying numerous illusions, and none getting any advantage over the other. Creating hundreds of illusions and therewith confounding each other,

8. Those two Rakshasas, versed in illusive combats, fought on displaying illusions O king; and in that battle whatsoever illusions Ghatotkacha created,

9—11. Alamvusha nullified them with those of his own, O ruler of men. Then beholding that foremost of the Rakshasas, that one versed in the illusive mode of warfare, viz Alamvusha fight in that manner, the Pandavas became greatly enraged. Preyed upon by anxiety and excited with rage, Bhimasena and others, supported by many best car-warriors, assailed him with force. O sire, then they having completely surrounded him with the host of their cars,

12. Covered him from all sides, with their arrows, like men covering an elephant with blazing brands. Checking the force of their weapons with the illusive weapons of his own,

13. Alamvusha freed himself from the press of those cars, like an elephant freeing himself from a forest-conflagration. Then stretching his bow the twang of which resembled the roar of Indra's thunder, he

14. Pierced Maruta's son (Bhima) with twenty-five, Bhimasena's son with five, Yudhisthira with three and Sahadeva with five arrows.

15. Then again, O sire, piercing Nakula with seventy-three, and the sons of Draupadi, each with five arrows, he uttered a loud and dreadful war-cry.

16. Thereupon Bhimasena pierced the Rakshasa with nine arrows; Sahadeva pierced him with five and Yudhisthira with a hundred shafts.

17. Nakula pierced him with four and sixty and the sons of Draupadi each with three shafts seperately. The son of Hidimva then piercing the Rakshasa (Alamvusha), with five hundred arrows,

18. Once more pierced him with seventy arrows; and that highly powerful one sent up a loud roar. In consequence of that roar of his, the earth trembled,

19. With her mountains, forests trees and watery expanses. O king, peirced deeply by those mighty car-warriors, those fierce bowmen from all sides, Aalamvusha,

20. Pierced all of them in return with five shafts each. Then the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha became thoroughly enraged upon the angry Alamvusha.

21. And the former (the son of Hidimva) then pierced the latter with seven shafts. O king that foremost of the Rakshasas, endued with might viz Alamvusha, being pierced deeply by his powerful antagonist,

22. Quickly created numerous arrows, furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone. Those shafts of depressed knots then penetrated into the body of the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha,

23—24. Like angry snakes of great strength entering into a mountain summit. Thereupon, O king, the Pandavas and Ghatotkacha the son of Hidimva, filled with

anxiety, began to sped sharp shafts at Alamvusha from all sides. Wounded sore in battle by the Pandavas desirous of securing victory, Alamvusha,

25. Mortal as he was, knew not what to do. Thereat that foremost combatant, the highly powerful son of Bhimasena,

26. Beholding him in that state, resolved to slay him. Then he rushed with great vehemence upon the car of that foremost of the Rakshasas (Alamvusha),

27. Car that resembled in effulgence the summit of a burning hill, or a broken heap of antimony. Burning with rage, Hidimva's son flew for his own chariot to that of his adversary, and seized the latter.

28. He then took the latter up from his chariot like Garuda taking up a snake. Then dragging him up with his arrows, and whirling him again and again,

29. Ghatotkacha dashad him against the earth like a man dashing a earthen jar full of water agninst a stone. Endued with might and agility, and possessed of prowess,

30. The son of Bhimasena inflamed with rage, began to frighten all your troops. With all his limbs crushed, his bones broken and appearing dreadful,

31. And slain by the heroic Ghatotkacha the Rakshasa Alamvsha looked like a Sala tree broken and uprooted by the wind. Upon the slaughter of that ranger of the night (Alamvusha), the Parthas, filled with delight,

32. Uttered loud roars and waived their garments in the air. Beholding that mightly foremost the Rakshasas slain,

33. And crushed like a mountain, your heroic warriors, O foremost of the Bharatas, uttered exclamations of *Alas* and *Oh*.

34. Filled with curiosity, people then came to see that Rakshasa who was lying on the field like a piece of charcoal (no longer capable of burning).

35. That best of all beings possessed of might viz the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, slaying Alamvusha like Vasava laying Vala, uttered vey loud roars.

36. For having achieved that most difficult feat Ghototkacha was greatly praised by his sires and his other relatives. Indeed having felled his foe Alamvusha even like an *Alamvusha* fruit, he became filled with joy.

37. Then there arose among the pandavas a mighty din produced by the blare of conchs and the whizz of various kinds of weapons. Hearing that din the Kouravas uttered equally loud shouts in reply, filling completely the earth with their resonance.

Thus ends the one hundred and nineth chapter, the slaughter of Alamvusha in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona parva.

CHAPTER CX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA BARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. Tell me in detail, O Sanjaya, how did Yuyudhana oppose in battle the son of Bharadwaja? I feel a great curiosity for knowing what happened then.

Sanjaya said:—

2. Hear, O highly intelligent king, the description of that hair-stirring battle that then took place between Drona on the one hand, and the Pandavas headed by Yuyudhana on the other.

3. Then, O sire, beholding the troops slaugtered by Yuyudhana, Drona himself assailed Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled.

4. Thereupou Satyaki pierced with five and twenty short arrows that mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadwaja, who had been advancing furiously against him.

5. Drona also, fighting heedfully, and putting forth his prowess, quickly pierced Yuyudhana, with five sharp arrows furnished with wings of gold.

6. These arrows piercing through the tough armour of Satyaki, drank the blood of Drona's enemy; and, O king, they then penetrated into the earth like snakes breathing furiously.

7. Then the long-armed Satyaki, like an elephant struck with the hook, became filled with fury; and he then pierced Drona with fifty *Narachas*, all resembling fire itself.

8. Pierced quickly by Yuyudhana in battle, the son of Bhardwaja, pierced Satyaki who had been fighting vigorously, with countless shafts.

9. Then again excited to the highest pitch of fury, that fierce bowman endued with great might, once more began to afflict him of the Satwata race, with arrows of depressed knots.

10. Thus repeatedly wounded by Bharadwaja's son in battle, O ruler of men, Satyaki could not decide as to what he should then do.

11. Then, O king, Yuyudhana's face became cheerless, as he saw Drona discharge numerous sharp arrows in battle.

12. Beholding Satyaki then in that plight, your sons and your troops, O ruler of men, became greatly delighted at heart and they began incessantly to roar like lions.

13. Hearing that dreadful din and seeing that descendant of Madhu's race sorely afflicted, O Bharata, king Yudhisthira addressing his troops spoke to them thus :—

14. "This foremost of the Vrishnis this hero Satyaki of indomitable prowess, is about to be destroyed in battle by the heroic Drona, like the sun by Rahu.

15. Charge and rush to the spot where Satyaki is fighting." Then that ruler of men, addressing the Panchala prince Dhristadyumna said :—

16. "Why do you tarry O son, of Prisata? Assail Drona quickly? Can you not see the great danger to ourselves that has arisen from Drona?

17. This fierce bowman Drona is playing with Yuyudhana in battle, like a boy playing with a bird bound with a string.

18. Let every one of my troops headed by Bhimasena and others and accompanied by yourself, rush to the spot where Yuyudhana's chariot is stationed.

19. Supported by my divisions, I will follow behind you. Do you all rescue Satyaki to-day who is now within the very teeth of death."

20. Having thus spoken, the king, O Bharata, supported by all his troops, charged Drona in that battle, for the sake of rescuing Yuyudhana.

21. May good betide you; the din that then arose there, when the Pandavas and the Srinjayas rushed against the single-handed Drona, was indeed very tremendous.

22. Then, O foremost of men, encountering Drona that son of Bharadwaja, that mighty car-warrior, they began to pour upon him showers of sharp arrows furnished with wings of Kanka-feathers, and the feathers of peacocks.

23. Then Drona received all those heroes similingly, even as a host receives his welcome guests with water, and the offer of seats.

24. Then like the guests becoming gratified with hospitality of their hosts, those heroes were gratified with the shafts sped at them by that bowman *viz.*, the son of Bharadwaja.

25. They could not then behold the son of Bharadwaja, even as men cannot look at the midday sun of thousand rays, O lord.

26. Then that foremost of all wielders of weapons, *viz.*, Drona afflicted all of them with his myriad shafts, even as the sun afflicts the objects of this earth with his myriad rays.

27. Slaughtered (ruthlessly), the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, O mighty monarch, could not find a protector, like elephants sunk in mire.

28. Like the burning rays of the sun scattering in all sides, the mighty arrows of Drona were then seen to scatter on all directions.

29. In that battle were slain twenty-five best Panchala heroes, all reckoned among *Maharathas* and all enjoying the favor of Dhristadyumna.

30. People then beheld the heroic Drona slay in succession the best warriors among the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

31. Slaying a hundred warriors from the Kekaya hosts and routing them conpletely, Drona stood on the field, O king, like the Destroyer with his mouth wide open.

32. Then, O ruler of men, the mighty-armed Drona vanquished hundreds and thousands of the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the Matsyas, and the Kekayas.

33. Pierced by the arrows of Drona, the roar they then uttered, resembled that sent up by the denizen of the woods when the forest is burnt down by a conflagration.

34. Then, O king, all the celestials, the Gandharvas and the ancestral manes said :— 'Behold the Panchalas and the Pandavas, with their troops, fly away from the field of battle!"

35. Thus when Drona was slaying the Somakas in battle, none ventured to assail him and none was able to pierce him.

36. When that fight destructive of best and foremost heroes was thus raging with fury, Pritha's son Yudhisthira, suddenly heard the blast of the conch Panchajannya.

37. That prince of conchs *viz.*, the Panchajannya, flled with the breath of Vasudeva's son, yielded loud blasts. When those heroes engaged in protecting the Sindhu ruler were thus fighting,

38. And when the Dhartarastra warriors were roaring before Vijaya's chariot, the din was so great that the twang of the Gandiva could not be heard.

39. Then the royal son of Pandu (Yudhisthira); overwhelmed with great

anxiety, began to reflect thus :—'Surely everything is not well with Arjuna, as this conch-blast indicates,

40. And as the Kurus are roaring out rapturously every moment." Thus thinking and with a heart filled with anxiety,

41. Ajatasatru, the son of Kunti, addressing him of the Satwata race said these words. Though his voice was choked with the vapour of grief and though he was constantly overwhelmed with swoons, yet the king (Yudhisthira) then did not lose sight of what should be done next ; and addressing that foremost of the Sinis he then spoke thus :—

Yudhisthira said :—

42. O grandson of Sini, the hour for that duty which sages of the past have enjoined to be done towards a friend by a friend in times of need, has now arrived.

43. O foremost of the Sinis, thinking within myself, I cannot find out any one, among all my troops, who is a greater well-wisher of ours than yourself, O Satyaki.

42. He that is always well-affected, he that is always obedient, in my opinion, only he should be entrusted with the commission of a serious duty.

45. Just as Kesavas is ever devoted to the interests of the Pandavas, so also are you, O you of the Vrishni race, who are equal to Kesava himself in prowess.

46. I am now going to place a heavy burden on you ; and it befits you to bear that burden ; it behoves you not to disappoint my hopes.

47. O foremost of men, do you now assist Arjuna involved in great distress, who is your friend, brother, and your preceptor.

48. You are ever true to your vows and are endued with heroism, and the giver of assurances to your friends. In consequence of your feats, your are renowned in the worlds as one devoted to truthful speech.

49. O grandson of Sini, he that casts off this mortal frame in fighting for the cause of friends, becomes equal to him that gives away the earth as a gift to the twice born ones.

50. We have heard of numerous monarchs who attained to heaven having duly given away this earth as a gift to the Brahmanas.

51. O virtuous-souled one, with folded palms, I do beg of you even this, *viz.*, that you attain, O master, the merit of giving away the earth as a gift, or of something better than that (by incurring the risk of beeing killed for the sake of Arjuna, your friend).

52. There is only one person, namely Krishna, that giver of assurances of safety to his friends, who is ever prepared to lay down his life for the sake of his friends. You, O Satyaki, are the second.

53. None but a hero volunteers to render help to another hero fighting courageously from a desire of winning fame. An ordinary man cannot do so.

54. O descendant of Madhu's race, when this is the course to be followed, I do not find any one else save yourself, who can become a help to Arjuna.

55. On one occasion, Arjuna applauding your achievements and repeatedly reciting them afforded me great pleasure.

56. He said—'Satyaki is endued with great lightness of hands; he is versed in all modes of warfare ; he is very agile, prudent, acquainted with the use of all weapons and endowed with bravery. He is never confounded in the course of a fight.

57. That high-souled and mighty car-warrior possesses broad shoulders, broad chest, long arms, large jaws, great strength and unrivalled prowess.

58. He is both my pupil and friend. I am dear to him and he is dear to me. And if Yududhana renders me help, I can then crush the whole Kuru host completely.

59. O foremost of kings, even if Keshava dons the armour for rendering us aid, or if Rama, Anirudna. or the mighty car-warrior Pradyumna,

60. Or Gada, or Sarana or Samva with the Vrishnis does so, O mighty monarch, to assist us in battle,

61. Yet I shall select that foremost of men, that grandson of Sini of unbaffied prowess to assist me, in exclusion of the others, for, there is none equal to him,"

62. This is what Dhananjaya said to me in your absence in the Dawita forest while applauding your virtue's truly in an assembly of the righteous,

68. O descendant of the Vrishni race, it behoves you not to disappoint Dhananjaya and myself and Bhima.

64. When, returning from a sojourn to all the sacred places, I went to Dwaraka, I saw your reverence for Arjuna.

65. When at Upaplava, O grandson of Sini, I did not mark any one else who showed us greater love and affection, than yourself.

66—67. For showing kindness, therefore, to one who is your friend and preceptor, O mighty-armed hero, it behoves you, who are of noble lineage and who cherish reverence for us, to act in a way, O great bowman, worthy of your friendship, prowess, nobility of birth and devotion to truth, O descendant of Madhu's race.

68. Accoutered in armour by Drona himself, Suyodhana has sudnenly gone behind Arjuna. Ere this, the other mighty car-warriors of the Kouravas have pursued Arjuna.

69. We can also hear the defiant roars that the enemy is uttering against Arjuna. Therefore, O honoured hero, O grandson of Sini, it behoves you to hie yourself to Arjuna without delay.

70. Ourselves and Bhimasena supported by our troops, shall hold Drona in check if he tries to pursue you.

71. Behold, O grandson of Sini, the Bharata troops are broken and flying away; and as they fly, hear the loud wails they utter.

72. Like the very ocean in a *Parva* day agitated by a mighty tempest, the army of Dhirtarastra, O sire, is being agitated by Savysachin.

73. The dust raised by the swiftly moving chariots, horses, and foot soldiers, is gradually enveloping the entire army.

74. Behold the mighty Phalguna that destroyer of hostile heroes surrounded by the Sindhu-Souviras armed with lances and javelins and numbering countless heroes among their ranks.

75. Without defeating this army it will not be possible (for Arjuna) to vanquish the ruler of the Sindhus. All these warriors again are prepared to lay down their lives for the sake of the Sindhu king.

76. Behold the invincible army of the Dhritarastras, teeming with lances, arrows, excellent standards, heroes and elephants!

77. Hear the roar of their drums and the full blasts of their conchs, the uproar of war-cries and the rattle of their car-wheels!

78. Hear also the roars of elephants the yells of infantry and the cries of horsemen, as they proceed causing the earth to tremble underneath their tread.

79. In the front of Arjuna is the division of the Sindhus and in his rear is the division of Drona. The foes are so strong in number, O foremost of men, that they can even afflict the lord of the celestials.

80. Sunk in this fathomless ocean of troops, Arjuna may be deprived of his life. And if he be slain in battle, how can I live?

81. Is this great catostrophe, in the shape of Arjuna's death, to overtake me when you are alive? Of blue complexion, youthful in years, of curly locks and exceedingly beautiful, is that son of Pandu.

82. Light-handed in using the weapons, acquainted with various modes of warfare, that mighty armed hero, O sire, has entered into the ranks of the Bharata troops, at the hour of sun-rise; and the hour of sun-set is approacning fast.

83. O you of Vrishni's race, I do not know whether he lives or not. The host of the Kurus is like the mighty ocean itself.

84. O sire, single-handed has the mighty-armed Vibhatsu entered into the Bharata army which can not be encountered even by the celestials themselves in battle.

85. In this day's battle, my heart misgives me. Yonder also is Drona sorely afflicting my troops in battle.

86. You can see, O mighty-armed hero, how this twice-born one is careering in battle. When several tasks present themselves, you know perfectly which of them should be first attended to.

87. O bestower of honor, it behoves you to accomplish first that task which is the most serious, with great activity. Of all these tasks therefore, I do think the task of aiding Arjuna should be accomplished first.

88. The rescue of Arjuna therefore should be at first effected. I do not grieve for him of the Dasarha race, who is the Protector and the Lord of the universe.

89. I tell you truly that that foremost of men, is capable of vanquishing in battle all the three worlds united against him,

90. What to speak of this weak host of the sons Dhritarastra? But, O you of Vrishni's race, Arjuna is sorely pressed by numerous odds in battle.

91. He may lose his life. For this reason it is that I am so cheerless. Therefore do you follow in his track, even as men like you should do

92. For men like Arjuna, being urged on by men like myself. Of all the Vrishni heroes, two are reckoned as *Atirathas* in battle.

93. One among them is the mighty armed Pradyumna and the other is yourself, O Satwata hero, who both are well-known in the world. Equal to Narayana himself in the use of weapons, to Samkarsana in physical strength,

94. You are equal, O foremost of men, to Dhananjaya in bravery. You surpass Bhima and Drona and others versed in all modes of warfare.

95. The wise speak of you, O foremost of all male beings, saying—*There is nothing unachievable by Satyaki.*—O descendant of Madhu's race,

96. Therefore, O mighty hero, do you perform what I say to you, *viz* carry out the wishes of myself and of Arjuna and of all present here.

97. O mighty-armed one, it behoves you not to falsify our expectations. Disregardful of your dear life, do you begin to career like a hero in battle.

98. O grandson of Sini, the descendants of the Dasarha race never care for their lives in the course of fight. Avoidance of fight, indecision or hesitation to fight, and flying away from fight,

99. These practices of the coward and the mean, are never resorted to by the scions of the Dasarha race. O foremost of the Sinis, the illustrious Arjuna is your preceptor, O sire.

100. Vasudeva again is superior both to yourself and to Arjuna of great intelligence. Knowing this, I speak to you these words.

101. Do not disregard my words, for I am superior to all your superiors. Whatever I say to you, know that to be approved of by Vasudeva and by Arjuna.

102. All this I have spoken to you in right earnestness. Proceed where Dhananjaya is, O you of prowess incapable of being baffled, following these words of command uttered by me.

103. Do you, O sire, penetrate into this army of the wicked-minded sons of Dhritarastra. Entering into it and meeting duly with mighty car-warriors in battle, display O you of the Satwata race, the feats that you are capable of achieving and that are worthy of yourself.

Thus ends the one-hundred and tenth chapter, the words of Yudhisthira, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA—) *Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1—2. Then that foremost of the Sinis *viz* Satyaki, hearing those words of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira,—words that were agreeable, salutary, fraught with sweet sounds, opportune, delightful and equitable,—replied, O foremost of the Bharatas, to him, saying:—

3. "O you of unfading glory, I have heard all the words you have spoken for Arjuna's sake—words that are delightful, equitable and conducive to fame.

4. At a time like the present, beholding one devoted to you like me, it behoves you, O mighty monarch, to command me as much as you can command Partha himself.

5. For the sake of Dhananjaya, I am ever prepared to sacrifice my very life. Commanded by you, what is there that I would not do in this great battle.

6. O ruler of men, commanded by you, I am ready to fight even with the three worlds with the Gods, Asuras and mortals therein, what to speak of this weak host of the Kurus?

7. I will, this day, fight with the entire army of Suyodhana and vanquish it in battle, O king. This I tell you for sooth.

8. Safely shall I reach Dhananjaya who is also safe, and after the slaughter of Jayadratha, we both shall come back to you, O king.

9. But, O foremost of men, I think it a duty to remind you of the words which were spoken to me by Vasudeva and the highly intelligent Phalguna.

10. I was repeatedly and strongly solicited by Arjuna in the very midst of all our troops, and at the hearing of Vasudeva's son, in these words.

11. "O you of Madhus race, to-day, with a cool understanding and resolving to fight nobly and resolutely, do you protect the king, till I succeed in slaying Jayadratha.

12. O mighty-armed hero, making over the monarch to you or to the mighty car-warrior Pradyumna only, can I go to slaughter Jayadratha, with an easy heart.

13. You know how formidable Drona is in battle,—Drona who is regarded as the foremost of the Kuru warriors. You also know the vow he made before the eyes of all, O master.

14. The son of Bharadwaja, eagerly longs to capture the very virtuous king Yudhisthira. Drona also is competent enough to afflict Yudhisthira in battle.

15. Now, making over the charge of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, that best of

men to you, I am to-day going to slaughter the ruler of the Sindhus.

16. Slaying Jayadratha in battle, I will return as soon as possible; O descendant of Madhu's race, meanwhile see that Drona may not capture Yudhisthira, by force.

17. O scion of Madhu's race, if that foremost of men Yudhisthira be captured by the son of Bharadwaja, I shall not be able to accomplish the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus, and my grief will be great.

18. If the truthful son of Pandu, that foremost of the Pandavas (Yudhisthira) be captured by Drona, it is evident that we shall have to go the forest in exile once more.

19. If Drona inflamed with rage succeeds in capturing Yudhisthira, it is evident my victory over Jayadratha will be productive of no good.

20, Thereupon, O scion of Madhu's race, O mighty-armed one, do you undertake to protect the king in battle, for my sake, and for the sake of winning victory and fame."

21. Thus do you see, O king, that you have been made over to me as a sacred trust by Savyasachin, afraid as he ever is of the son of Bharadwaja, on your account.

22. I see every day, O mighty-armed one that except Rukmini's son there is no one who can be a match for Drona in battle, O master.

23—24. I also am regarded to be a match for the intelligent son of Bharadwaja. So it is evident, I cannot falsify that reputation which I enjoy, or disregard the behests of my preceptor Arjuna, or leave you, O king, alone. The preceptor Drona, covered with impenetrable armour as he is, and endued with great lightness of hands,

25. Obtaining you in battle, will sport with you as boy with an innocent bird. If that son of Krishna bearing the *Makara* as a device on his banner, were here with his bow,

26. I could have made you over to his protection and he could have protected, you like Arjuna himself. You should look after your own protection. Who shall protect you when I am gone ?

27. Who will advance against Drona for protecting you, when I shall proceed towards Arjuna ? Let no fear, O king, assail your heart to-day on Arjana's account.

28. That mighty-armed one will never succumb under the heaviest of burdens. Those warriors that are ranged against him, *viz.* the Souvirakas, the Sindhus, the Pouravas,

29. The Northerners, the Southerners and all other mighty car-wariors, and O king, they that are headed by Karna, and are regarded to be most excellent warriors,

30. All these warriors, taken together, can not equal the sixteenth part of Arjuna, when he becomes angry. The whole earth rising against him, with her gods, Asuras, and men,

31. And the Rakshasas, the Kinnaras and the reptiles, O king, in fact, with all the mobile and immobile creatures, can not withstand Pritha's son Arjuna in battle.

32. Knowing this, O king, let your apprehension on Dhananjaya's account be discarded, O mighty-monarch. Where the two heroic Krishnas, both fierce bowmen and both of prowess incapable of being baffled are present,

33. There can not happen the slightest impedement to their purpose. Think of the celestial prowess, the accomplishment in the use of weapons, the vast resources, the fierceness, the gratefulness and the kind-heartedness of your brother in battle. When I shall leave this place for proceeding towards Arjuna,

35. Think also of Drona, of the worderful know- ledge of weapons he will display in battle; O king, the preceptor earnestly longs to capture you in battle.

36. And, O Bharata, he endeavours to keep his vow inviolate and true. Would you be able to protect yourself ? Who shall protect you when I am gone ?

37. Who is he, whom I may entrust with your protection and then go towrads Arjuna, O king ? O mighty monarch, without making over the charge of protecting you in this battle, to sombody else,

38. I can not go away, O you of Kuru's race. This I tell you truly; O foremost of persons gifted with intelligence, considering the matter thoroughly from every point of view with the help of your understanding and ascertaining your highest good, do you commaud me, O king.

Yndhisthira said :—

39. O descendant of Madhu's race, O mighty-armed one, it is even so as you say. But inspite of all this, my mind is not very sanguine regarding Arjuna that owner of white horses, O sire.

40. I shall try my best to protect myself. Do you go, commanded by me, to the spot where Dhananjaya has gone.

41. The protection of myself in battle and the necessity of rendering aid to Dhananjaya, weighing these two propositions in the balance of my understanding, I prefer that you should do the latter.

42. Therefore prepare yourself for proceeding to the spot where Dhananjaya has gone. The highly powerful Bhima will look after my protection.

43. The son of Prisata with his uterine brothers, these mighty kings, and the sons of Draupadi, O sire, will certainly, protect me.

44. The five Kekaya brothers, the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, and Virata, Drupada, and the mighty car-warrior Sikhandin,

45. Dhristaketu, the puissant Kuntivoja and O sire, Nakula, Sahadeva, and the Srinjayas,

46. These warriors all, with great care, will surely exert themselves for protecting me. Neither Drona at the head of his troops, nor Kritavarman,

47—48. Will be able to defeat or afflict us. Dhristadyumna also that scorcher of foes, putting forth all his prowess in battle will hold the enraged Drona in check like the banks resisting the mighty main. In battle, where that slayer of foes *viz* the son of Prisata will present him,

49. There Drona will not be able to pierce with force, our troops. For the destruction of Drona, Dhristadyumna has come out of fire,

50. Cased in mail, armed with shafts, swords, bow and decked with many ornaments. Therefore, O grandson of Sini, go with an easy heart, and entertain no anxiety on my account. Dhristadyumna himself will resist the enraged Drona in battle.

Thus ends the one-hundred and eleventh chapter, the words of Yudhisthira, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona parva.

CHAPTER CXII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing those words of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, that foremost of the Sinis, became afraid of the reproach he would incur at Arjuna's hands, if he would leave the king.

2. But seeing the certainty of an imputation of cowardice by the people (if he were to disobey the words of Yudhisthira), he thus thought within himself. "Let not men say that I am afraid of proceeding to the rescue of Arjuna."

3. Thus thinking over the matter in various ways, that foremost of men, the invincible Satyaki, spoke these words to the very virtuous king Yudhisthira.

4. "May good betide you, O king. If you think that these arrangements will be sufficient to ensure your safety, O ruler of men, then I shall go towards Vibhatsu and carry out your command.

5. There is nothing dearer to my soul in the three worlds, than that son of Pandu (Arjuna). This I tell you in all earnestness.

6. O bestower of honor, with your permission, I will follow his track. There is nothing that I shall not do for your sake.

7. O best of men, the commands of my preceptor are ever worthy of my attention. But your words are all the more so.

8. The brothers Krishna and Arjuna are ever engaged in achieving your good ; O best of all kings, know me also to be devoted to your welfare.

9. Holding your behest on my head, I will, O lord, proceed piercing this impenetrable army, for rendering help, O best of men, to that son of Pandu.

10. Here shall, I plunge into the divisions of Drona, excited as I am with rage. I shall then dart through it like a fish through the ocean, O king, to the spot where king Jayadratha

11. Stays, protected by his troops and trembling in fear of the son of Pandu, and depending upon those foremost of car-warriors viz Drona's son, Karna, Kripa and others.

12. This distance, O king, between this place and the spot where Arjuna is exerting himself for the slaughter of Jayadratha, measures full three *Yojanas*.

13. But though Partha is three *Yojanas* away from this place, yet I shall pursue his track with a firm heart, and support him till the slaughter of Jayadratha is accomplished.

14. Unless commanded by his preceptors, what man goes to battle with his enemies? When again commanded, O king, like myself, by his preceptors, what man is there that would not fight?

15. I know the spot, O king, whither I have to go. Teeming as it does with plough-shares, lances, maces darts, bludgeons,

16. Arrows, and other weapons, I shall still agitate this ocean-like host. This ele-

phant division, numbering a thousand elephants strong, that you see,

17. All belonging to the breed known as Anjana, and all possessed of great prowess, and ridden by numerous Mlechchas delighting in battle and skilled in smiting down,

18. These elephants shedding the temporal juice like clouds pouring rain,—they never turn back when goaded on by those on their backs.

19. They can not be defeated unless they are slaughtered, O king. Then again yon car-warriors thousands strong in number, whom you can see,

20. Are of royal extraction and are all recongnised as *Maharathas*. All of them are owners of golden chariots. They are accomplished in the use of weapons, in fighting upon cars and on the backs of elephants, O king !

21. Masters in the art of bowmanship, they are well-skilled in fighting with their fist also. They are skilled in fighting with maces and also in close quarters.

22. They are eqnally active in fighting with the sword and falling upon the foe with sword and buckler. They are courageous, learned and insprired with a desire for outvieing one another.

23. O king, they every day conquer countless warriors. They are under Karna's commmand and devotedly follow Dussasana.

24. Even Vasudeva's son praises these men as mighty car-warriors. Always solicitious of doing good to the Kurus, they are obedient to Karna.

25. Returning, at Karna's command, from their pursuit of Arjuna of white steeds, and so unfatigued and in-exhausted, those brave warriors, accoutered in impenetrable mail, and armed with tough bows,

26. Are made to wait for me at Duryodhana's command. For your good, O foremost descendant of the Kuru race, crushing these warriors in battle,

27. I will follow from behind the track laid open by Savyasachin. Those other elephants, O monarch, full seven hundred in nunber,

28—29. That you can see, all covered with armours, ridden by Kiratas, and adorned with ornaments, were formerly presented by the king of the Kiratas, together with many servants, to Savyasachin; O King these were at first engaged in doing your good.

30. Behold the changes brought about by time, in as much as, they are now ranged to fight against you. The Kiratas indomitable, in battle are their guides.

31. Skilful in guiding elephants and all sprung from fire, they were all unitedly defeated in battle by Savyasachin.

32. Obedient to the commands of Duryodhana, they are now waiting unitedly to receive me. Slaying, O king, these Kiratas indomitable in battle, by means of these shafts,

33. I will follow in the track of Pundu's son intent on the slaughter of the Sindhu king. Those other elephants sprung from the race of the Anjanas,

34. Of tough hide, well-trained, and shedding secretions from their temples and mouth, and covered with armours made entirely of gold,

35. Those elephants are all very useful in battle and equal to Airavat himself. These have come from the northern hills and are mounted by fierce robbers,

36. Possessed of strong limbs, cased in armours, and all excellent fighters. There are, amongst them persons born of the cow, of the ape,

37—38. Or of diverse other creatures, including those born of men; that division of the sinful Mlechchas assembled together, and come from the strongholds of the Himavat hill, appear to be like volumes of smoke from this distance. Obtaining these and numerous other Kshatriyas,

39. As also Kripa, and Somadatta's son and that foremost of car-warriors *viz.* Drona, and the ruler of the Sindhus and Karna, as partisans, Duryodhana disregards the Pandavas.

40. He also thinks himself to be already crowned with success, being impelled by Fate. But to-day, all these warriors, coming within the reach of my *Narachas*,

41. Will not escape alive, O son of Kunti, even if they be gifted with the fleetness of the mind. Always held in honour by king Duryodhana ever-depending on the prowess of others,

42. They shall to-day meet with their destruction, being sorely afflicted by my arrowy showers. O king, those other warrior owning golden standards, whom you can see,

43. They are known as the irresistible Kamvojas. They are brave, learned, and practised in the use of the bow;

44. They are arranged in serried file and are resolved to stand firmly by one

another. These Akshauhini of troops belonging to the sons of Dhritarastra, all inspired with rage,

45. And expectantly looking for me, are awaiting my arrival, being supported by numerous Kuru heroes. They are all cool-headed, O monarch, and long to receive me.

46—47. Them shall I consume, like fire consuming a heap of grass. Let, therefore, O king, those who are versed in equipping chariots, equip my chariot with numerous quivers and all other implements of war, and let these weapons be placed in porper places. Weapons of diverse kinds will have to be used in the terrible fight that will commence, ere long.

48. Let the chariot be stuffed with necessaries, five times more than what the professors of military science direct, in as much as, I shall have to encounter the united Kamvojas resembling fierce snakes of virulent poison.

49. I shall also have to engage with the Kiratas armed with various implements of war, who resemble virulent poison, who are accomplished in striking down,

50. Who have been favoured by the king and who in consequence, ever desire to achieve the good of Duryodhana. I shall also encounter the Sakas who resemble Indra himself in prowess,

51. Who are fierce as fire and difficult of being repressed like a raging conflagration. I shall have also to meet numerous other warriors, all irresistible and resembling Death himself.

52. I shall have to encounter, O king, countless indomitable warriors. For these reasons, let excellent steeds of the best breed and graced with auspicious marks be harnessed to my chariot, after they had drank their fill and been groomed properly.

Sanjaya said :—

53. Then king Yudhisthira directed quivers full of shafts, and various other kinds of weapons, and all other necessaries, to be placed in the chariot of Satyaki.

54. Then people caused the four excellent steeds yoked to his car to drink juicy and intoxicating liquors.

55. Having caused those four steeds to slake their thirsts, and walk and bathe and eat, and having decked them with garlands of gold, men plucked the arrows out of their bodies;

56. Those animals that had been unharnessed for these operations, that were of golden hue, well-trained, endued with great fleetness, cheerful and extremely docile, were gain properly yoked to his chariot.

57—58. On the top of that chariot was mounted a tall standard bearing the device of a lion of golden manes. The standard was decked with bannerets of the hue of white clouds and it was graced with golden circles and pearls and corals. An umbrella with a huge golden staff was also placed upon that car that was groaning under the burden of weapons.

59. When those horses decked with golden caparisons had been yoked to the car, the younger brother of Daruka, who was Satyaki's friend and charioteer,

60. Came and represented to him that the car was ready, even as Matali informs Indra about the equipment of his car. Then Satyaki, having taken a bath and having purified himself and having under gone every auspicious ceremony,

61. Gave away unto the *Snataka* Brahmanas thousands of golden *Nikshasas*. Then blessed with the benedictions the latter pronounced upon him, that foremost of handsome-looking men,

62. That hero worthy of adoration, having drunk *Kailataka* honey, appeared exceedidgly beautiful with reddened eyes rolling in intoxication.

63. Having touched a brazen mirror, and being highly delighted, he became filled with double his ordinary energy and looked like the blazing fire.

64. Taking upon his shoulder his bow and arrows that best of car-warriors, covered in mail and adorned with ornaments, made the twice-born ones perform the rites of propitiation on his behalf.

65. Handsome damsels then adored him by covering him with a shower of fried paddy, perfumes and garlands of flowers. Thereafter that brave warrior with folded palms worshipped Yudhisthira's feet;

66. Whereupon the latter smelt his head. Having undergone all these ceremonies he mounted his chariot. Thereafter those horses, cheerful, plump, of the fleetness of the wind,

67. Invincible in battle, and of the Sindhu breed, were on the point of dragging that excellent chariot of Satyaki. Bhimasena also, similarly, honored by the very virtuous king Yudhisthira,

68. Set out with Satyaki, after having duly saluted the king (Yudhisthira). Beholding these two scorchers of foes cast their glances on your army,

69. All your warriors ranged against them with Drona at their head, stood still

and motionless. Then beholding Bhima accoutered in mail follow him from behind,

70. The heroic Satyaki saluting him said these delightful words. Then Satyaki with his person filled with delight, spoke these very words addressing Bhima :—

71. "O Bhima, do you protect the king, even this is your duty. I will proceed alone penetrating through this host whose hour has come ;

72. At present and in all future periods, it should be your first duty to protect the king. You know my prowess and I all know yours, O Subduer of foes,

73. Therefore, O Bhima, turn back, if you, desire to do my good." Thus spoken to Bhima replied to Satyaki saying : "Go you then and be victorious and successful !

74. O foremost of men, I will protect the king to the best of my prowes." Being thus adddressed he of Madhu's race, replied to Bhimasena saying :

75. "Turn back, turn back, O son of Pritha ; my victory to-day is certain in as much as you, won over by my merits, are now intent to carry out my wishes.

76. These auspicious omens also indicate my victory. When the sinful ruler of the Sindhus will be slain by the high-souled son of Pandu (Arjuna)

77. I shall embrace the illustrious king *viz* Yudhisthira." Having thus spoken to Bhima, the high-famed Satyaki left him.

78. He then cast his eyes on your troops like a tiger looking at herds of deer. O ruler of men, beholding him look at your army,

79. Your soldiers became once more confounded and they began to tremble. Thereafter Satyaki suddenly assailed your troops, desirous of meeting Arjuna, commanded by the virtuous king Yudhisthira to do so.

Thus ends the one-hundred and twelfth chapter, the penetration of Satynki into the Kourava troops, in the Jayadratha-badha, of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, when desirous of battle, Yuyudhana had proceeded against your army, king Yudhisthira the virtuous, supported by his troops,

2. Followed Yuyudhana from behind, with a view to reach the chariot of Drona, Thereafter, the son of the king of the Panchalas, that invincible warrior,

3. And king Vasudeva began to shout loudly amidst the Pandava troops. 'Come, strike, rush upon the foe quickly,

4. So that the invincible Satyaki may proceed easily. Many mighty car-warriors will strive hard for vanquishing him.'

5. Thus speaking, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas impetuously dashed against us. Indeed they then fell upon us exlaiming 'we will conquer those who will, rush against ourselves.'

6. Then a mighty uproar was heard near the car of Yuyudhana. Your son's troops, then covered with the shafts of Satyaki, began to run away from the field of battle.

7. O mighty monarch, your troops were then broken to hundred straggling bodies by that hero of the Satwata race. While that army was thus confused, that mighty car-warrior, the grandson of Sini,

8—9. Crushed down seven fierce bowmen all endued with heroism in the vanguard of our army. He also, O monarch, despatched, with his arrows resembling the tongues of fire, to the abode of death, many heroic rulers of diverse realms. Some times he pierced hundred warriors with a single shaft and sometimes a single warrior with a hundred shafts.

10. Elephant-riders and elephants, horsemen and horses, and car-warriors and their steeds and charioteers, Satyaki slew like Rudra slaying the beasts.

11. None of your troops then ventured to encounter Satyaki who was achieving many feats with extreme lightness and showering torrents of arrows.

12. They were then seized with panic being crushed and mangled by that long-armed hero ; and beholding that proud hero, they then began to run quickly away from the field of battle.

13. Although Satyaki was alone yet, your troop thought him to be multiplied into many. They were then confounded by his energy. Then with shattered chariots and crushed car-niches,

14. With *Anukarshas*, bannerets, golden helmets, broken wheels, torn umbrellas, and fallen standards,

15—16. And O ruler of men, with arms decked with sandal-paste, adorned with *Angadas*, with human thighs, resembling rtunks of elephants or the plump bodies of

of snakes, the earth became literally covered over. With faces resembling the moon and with heads graced with beautiful ear-rings

17. Of warriors possessed of expansive eyes, the earth appeared exceedingly charming. With the mountain-like bodies of huge elephants cut to pieces and fallen on the field,

18—19. The earth appeared beautiful as if strewn over with hillocks. Crushed by that hero of long arms, horses, deprived of life and prostrate on the field of battle, appeared charming with their traces of burnished gold decked with strings of pearls and with their breastplates of excellent make.

20. Then he of the Satwata race penetrated into the ranks of your army slaying troops of diverse kinds and crushing your army completely.

21. Then Satyaki desired to go by the very track by which Dhananjaya had gone But he was there opposed by Drona.

22. Then the war-like Satyaki, inflamed as he was with rage, did not recede getting Drona as an opponent, even as the waters of the ocean does not recede encountering an embankment.

23. Resisting that mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana in battle, Drona pierced him with five sharp arrows all capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

24. Thereupon, O king, Satyaki in that battle, pierced Drona with seven arrows whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings as well as with wings made of the feathers of the Kanka and the peacock.

25. Drona in return, with six arrows, afflicted him and his steeds and charioteer. Then that mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana could not brook that act of Drona.

26. Uttering his war-cry aloud, Satyaki then pierced Drona at first with ten, then with six and again with eight arrrows.

27. Once more Yuyndhana pierced Drona with ten shafts, his charioteer with one, his four steeds with four other arrows.

28—29. O sire in that batte, he pierced Drona's standard with another arrow. Thereupon Drona quickly discharging his swift-flying arrows that resembled flights of locusts, covered Satyaki together with his steeds, charioteer, chariot and standard. So also Yuyudhana with countless swift-coursing shafts,

30. Covered Drona fearlessly; then Drona addressing him said: "Your preceptor has gone before, shunning me in battle as a veritable coward.

31. He avoided me though I was fighting, and proceeded keeping me in his right. You shall not, escape me to-day with life, provided you also do not shun me fighting, like your cowardly preceptor.

Satyaki said:—

32. At the command of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, I am proceeding in the track of Dhananjaya. Good betide you, O Brahman. Let me lose no time.

33. The path which the preceptor follows is that which the pupil should follow. Therefore, I shall quickly follow that which my preceptor has followed.

Sanjaya said:—

34. Having thus spoken, that grandson of Sini, dashed forward avoiding the preceptor; and O king, then addressing his charioteer he said:—

35. "Drona will put forth every effort to check me in battle. So proceed very carefully. Hear also these words of mine of grave import.

36. Yonder is seen the highly resplendent division of the Avantis. Next to them is the mighty host composed of the warriors from the south.

37. Beyond this latter array is the division of the Valhikas, beyond which again stands the division of Karna, firmly resolved to fight.

38. O charioteer, though these divisions are distinct from one another, yet depending on one another, they are supporting one another.

39. Penetrating into these divisions, do you cheerfully urge the steeds on. O charioteer, carry me in a medium speed to the spot

40. Where the Valhikas are seen stationed with weapons uplifted, where stand the numerous Southerners headed by Suta's son Karna;

41. And where stands that division teeming with elephants horses and cars and foot-soldiers recruited from various realms."

42. Having thus spoken, and avoiding the Brahmana, he advanced addressing his charioteer thus, 'Pass through the breach between those two divisions towards the mighty and fierce host of Karna,'

43. Thereupon, inflamed with rage, Drona began to pursue the illustrious Yuyudhana who was proceeding steadily, discharging numerous arrows.

44. Then Satyaki afflicting Karna's mighty host with his sharp arrows, plunged into the infinite host of the Bharatas.

45. When Yuyudhana had thus entered into the ranks of your soldiers and when your soldiers were breaking away, Kritavarman inspired with rage opposed Satyaki.

46. The highly-puissant Satyaki struck him as he was advancing with six arrows; and then with four other shafts, he slew the latter's four steeds.

47. Then again Satyaki pierced Kritavarman on the breast, with sixteen swift-flying arrows of depressed knots.

48. O mighty monarch, thus pierced with numerous arrows of great fierceness by that Satwata hero, Kritavarman did not brook it.

49. Placing a *Vatsadantha*, capable of flying straight and resembling-fire, O king, on the string of his bow, Kritavarman drew it back to his very ears, and with that arrow then pierced Satyaki on the breast.

50. That arrow furnished with beautiful feathery wings, penetrating through the armour and body of Satyaki, entered the earth, being steeped in blood.

51. O monarch, then Kritavarman acquainted with many excellent weapons, cut off by means of his arrows, the bow of Satyaki having arrows fixed on its string.

52. Then again inflamed with rage, he pierced, O king, Satyaki of indomitable prowess on the chest, with ten shafts of great sharpness.

53. Thereat that foremost of all creatures endued with prowess, *viz.* Satyaki, seeing his bow cut asunder, wounded the right arm of Kritavarman with an excellent lance.

54. Then taking up and stretching a bow of toughter make, Yuyudhana swiftly discharged at his enemy hundreds and thousands of shafts;

55. And with that arrowy shower, he then completely covered Kritavarman and his chariot. Thus covering the son of Hridika, O monarch, Satyaki in that battle

56. Cut off with a *Valla* the head of the charioteer of his opponent, from his trunk. Thus slain, the driver of Kritavarman fell down from his niche on the chariot.

57. At this, the steeds of Kritavarman no longer guided by the driver's reins, flew away with great speed, from the field of battle. Thereat, greatly annoyed, the ruler of the Bhojas, himself checked his horses.

58. Then that heroic warrior stood bow in hand, ready once more for fight, seeing which your warriors applauded him highly. Taking respite for a moment only, Kritavarman urged his steeds on.

59. Himself quite undaunted, he struck terror into the hearts of his enemies. By this time however, Satyaki had proceeded leaving him behind; whereupon Kritavarman fell upon Bhimasena.

60. O mighty monarch, Yuyudhana also emerging out of the divisions of the Bhojas, quickly proceeded against the strong host of the Kamvojas.

61. There he was opposed by many heroic car-warriors; in consequence whereof, Satyaki of unbaffled prowess could not move even one step forward.

62. Thereafter uniting his troops, and vesting the ruler of the Bhoja's with their command, Drona with a firm resolve for fighting with Yuyudhana, rushed against him.

63. Then beholding Drona follow Yuyudhana from behind, the foremost warriors among the Kurus filled with delight began to impede his progress.

64. Meanwhile the Panchalas commanded by Bhimasena, encountering that foremost of car-warriors *viz.* Hridika's son, became greatly depressed at heart.

65. O king, then putting forth his energy, the heroic Kritavarman resisted all his foes who though depressed at first were then exerting vigorously.

66. With the shower of his arrows Kritavarman then checked the vehicles of his foes standing before him. The Pandava warriors though thus afflicted by the Bhoja king, yet stood like noble heroes, desirous of encountering the divisions of the Bhojas and of winning great renown in battle.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirteenth chapter, the penetration of the Kourava host by Satyaki, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXIV,

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. Our army is possessed of many excellencies; and it is composed of various kinds of troops; its efficiency is great. O Sanjaya, it is disposed of in order in perfect accordance to the rules of military science and it is strong in numbers.

2. The warriors therein are ever well-treated by us and they are attached to us very much. The army is not newly recruited and its aspect is wonderful. Its efficiency has been tested previously.

3. The warriors belonging to it are neither very old, nor very young; they are neither lean nor very corpulent. They are of active habits, well-built, strong-bodied and free from any disease.

4. They are clad in cuirasses, and well-epuipped with offensive weapons. They are accomplished in the use of various weapons, and are well practised in the exercise of all kinds of weapons.

5. They are experts in mounting upon and descending from vehicles, in moving forward and in falling back, in striking down effectually and in advancing and retreating.

6. They have before been examined in the management of steeds, elephants and cars; and after due examination, they have been employed on pay,

7. And not for the sake of family relationship, nor from favour, nor from kinship. They have not come uncalled for, nor are they unpaid soldiers.

8. They are high-born, respectable, ever-contented, well-fed, and submissive. They have been duly honoured and rewarded by ourselves. They are all endued with fame and intelligence.

9. They again, O sire, are defended by our best warriors, and others of pious practices, all of whom are foremost men and resemble the *Lokapalas* themselves.

10. Numerous kings solicitious of our welfare, who have, out of their own accord, joined us with all their forces and followers, also defend them.

11. Truly our army is like the vast ocean swelling with the waters of various streams flowing into it from all sides. It teems with chariots and steeds, which though devoid of wings are still capable of moving through the air like the winged rangers of the sky.

12. My army abounds in elephants with the temporal juice flowing down their cheeks. Then to what else, but Destiny, can the slaughter of such an army be attributed?

13. (Ocean-like as our army is), numerous warriors constitute its waters; and the various vehicles constitute its dreadful and surging waves. Innumerable maces, swords, darts, shafts and javelins constitute the oars plied on it.

14. Teeming with standards and ornaments, the cambatants form the lotuses on it. The swift-moving steeds and elephants and chargers constitute the tempest that lashes it into fury.

15. Drona forms its fathomless cave, Kritavarman its minghty lake, and Jalasandha its dreadful alligator and Karna, the rising of the moon that makes it swell with pride and energy.

16. O Sanjaya, on a single car that foremost of the Pandavas *viz.* Arjuna has gone piercing through my ocean-like host, and Yuyudhana also has followed him;

17. And O Sanjaya, when Savyasachin has thus penetrated into my host and also that excellent car-warrior Satyaki of the Satwata race has done so, I do not think that any one of my troops will be able to escape with his life.

18. Beholding those two heroes dash with speed through the vanguards of my troops and seeing the ruler of the Sindhus come within range of arrows shot from the Gandiva bow,

19. What course of action did the Kurus, goaded on to destruction by Fate, then adopt? What became of them at that hour when the battle raged with fury?

20. O son, I consider the assembled Kourava host already within the jaws of Death. Their prowess in battle is no longer seen to be what it once was.

21. Krishna and the son of Pandu have both entered into our troops, receiving not even the slightest wound. O Sanjaya, there is none also who can resist them.

22. Many mighty car-warriors and combatants have been admitted into our army after due examination. They all have been gratified by us with due remunerations and agreeable speeches.

23. There is none among my troops who has been mal-treated. Every one receives his pay and ration, according to his abilities.

24. O Sanjaya, there is none who is not a good warrior, none who receives renumeration less than what he deserves, or none who receives no pay.

25. The soldiers are honoured by me to the best of my resources, with gifs, honors, and seats. My sons, relatives, and my kinsmen, O son, all treat them in the same respectful manner as I do.

26. Even such troops, encountering Savayasachin in battle, are being vanquished by him; they are also being crushed by the grand son of Sini; what can it be but Destiny?

27. Those who are protecting and those who are protected, are following the same road, the defender and the defended!

28. Beholding Arjuna stand before the

ruler of the Sindhus in hostile attiude, what measure did my highly foolish son adopt?

29. Beholding also Satyaki dash thorugh his troops like one fearless, what measures also did Duryodhana consider to be suitable to the situation?

30. Beholding those two foremost of car-warriors, both beyond the reach of all weapons, thus penetrate into my host, what resolution did my troops then form?

31. Meseems, beholding Krishna of the Dasarha race and that foremost of the Sinis, both exerting for the sake of Arjuna, my sons are giving way to grief.

32. Beholding him of the Satwata race and Arjuna pass through my divisions, and beholding the Kurus fly in all directions, meseems, my sons are giving way to grief.

33. Meseems, my sons are giving way to grief, beholding the car-warriors routed and hopeless of conquering their foes, and exert themselves in flying away.

34. Meseems my sons are giving way to grief, beholding the terraces of cars made empty by Satwata and Arjuna, and also beholding the warriors slain (by thousands).

35. Meseems my sons are lamenting beholding the steeds, the chariots, the elephants, and thousands of heroic soldiers flying away in haste from the field of battle.

36. Meseems my sons are lamenting, beholding the huge elephants of my army fly away smitten by the arrows of Arjuna, and also beholding them fallen and falling.

37. Meseems my sons are lamenting seeing steeds deprived of riders and warriors deprived of chariots, by Arjnna and Satyaki.

38. Meseems my sons are lamenting seeing large bodies of steeds slain and routed in all directions in battle, by the son of Pritha and the descendant of Madhu's race.

39. Meseems my sons are lamenting, hopeless of their victory, by seeing the divisions of infantry fly with haste in all direction.

40. Meseems my sons are lamenting beholding those two invincible heroes pass in a moment through the division of Drona.

41. O son, I am indeed overwhelmed with a stupor upon hearing that Krishna and Arjuna of unfading glory together with Satyaki of the Satwata race, have entered into my divisions.

42. When that foremost of car-warriors among the Sinis had plunged into my host and when he had passed through the Bhoja divi sion, what, O Sanjaya, did the Kurus do?

43. O Sanjaya, relate to me also, how the battle raged there where Drona began to crush the Pandava host in battle.

44. Drona was a warrior of superior skill; he was endued with strength, accomplished in the use of weapons and indomitable in battle. How was it then possible for the Panchalas to pierce that hero in battle?

45. Solicitious of Dhananjaya's victory, the Panchalas were Drona's implacable foes, so also that mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadwaja was an inveterate enemy of theirs.

46. O Sanjaya, skilful as you are in narration, tell me all that in detail which Arjuna did for bringing about the slaughter of the Sindhu king.

Sanjaya said:—

47. O foremost of the Bharatas, it behoves you not to lament like an ordinary person, when you are overtaken, O hero, by a calamity which owes its origin to your own misconduct.

48. Formerly, many of your well-wishers including the wise Vidura, advised you saying, 'O king do not forsake the sons of Pandu'; but to those advices you paid no heed.

49. He that sets at nought the advices of well-wishing friends, weeps like yourself when a calamity overtakes him.

50. O king, the descendant of the Dasarha race entreated you for the conclusion of peace. But the highly-renowned Krishna then did not obtain that boon at your hands.

51. Knowing your worthlessness, your partiality for your sons, your duplicity in in virtue, your animosity against the sons of Pandu, and

52. Ascertaining your crooked intentions against them, and listening to many of your incoherent and delerious bewailings, O foremost of kings,

53. That puissant lord of all the worlds, that one conversant with the truth of every thing in the worlds, namely, the son of Vasudeva, caused the drums of war to be sounded among the Kurus.

54. This awful destruction has overtaken you through your own faults; O giver of honor, it behoves you not to lay all blames on the shoulders of Duryodhana.

55. As these incidents developed themselves, no good action was performed by you either in the beginning, in the middle, or in the end, O Bharata. The defeat that can be anticipated now, is entirely owing to your fault.

56. Therefore, knowing as you do, the fate of this world, quietly and attentively hear how the battle that resembled that between the gods and the Asuras, took place.

57. When Sini's grandson of invincible prowess had entered into your troops, the troops of the Parthas headed by Bhimasena, fell upon your troops.

58. Then the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman, single-handed, received in that battle, the enraged Pandava troops who had been rushing to the battle with their followers.

59. Just as the banks resist the surging waves of the sea, so did the son of Hridika resist the Pandava troops in battle.

60. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Hridika's son inasmuch as the united divisions of the Parthas were unable to bear him down in battle.

61. Thereupon the mighty-armed Bhima piercing Kritavarman with three swift-coursing arrows, blew his conch-shell, imparting thereby delight unto the Pandava troops.

62. Then Sahadeva pierced Hridika's son with twenty, Yudhisthira the virtuous with five, and Nakula with a hundred shafts.

63. The sons of Draupadi pierced him with three and seventy, Ghatotkacha with seven, and Dhristadyumna pierced Kritavarman with three arrows.

64. Virata, Drupada, and Yajnaseni each pierced him with five shafts, Sikhandin also pierced Hridika's son with five swift flying arrows.

65—66. He then once more smilingly pierced him with twenty shafts. Thereupon, O king, Kritavarman piercing each of these mighty car-warriors separately with five shafts, pierced Bhima with another seven shafts. Then he felled from the latter's car his standard and cut off his bow.

67. Then that mighty car-warrior making haste and burning with rage, pierced Bhima whose bow had been severed, on the breast, with seventy sharp arrows.

68. That hero (Bhima) endued with prowess, thus deeply pierced by the excellent shafts of Hridika's son, began to tremble in the terrace of his car, like a mountain shaking during an earthquake.

69. Beholding Bhima thus involved in a dangerous situation, O king, the Pandava warriors headed by Yudhisthira, began to afflict Kritavarman by shooting numerous arrows.

70. Then impaling Kritavarman within a circle of chariots, the Pandava warriors, O sire, filled with delight, began to wound him with their arrows, out of a desire for rescuing the son of Maruta.

71. Thereafter the highly puissant Bhimasena regaining his senses, grasped, in that battle, a dreadful lance of golden staff and iron head.

72. Then he hurled from his own car that lance at the car of Kritavarman, with great force. That lance hurled by the arm of Bhima and resembling a snake that had recently cast off its slough,

73. Began to burn dreadfully as it coursed towards Kritavarman. Then as that lance, effulgent like the fiire that appears at the end of a *Yuga*, was coursing swiftly towards,

74. The son of Hridika, he cut it in twain with a couple of arrows. That dart decked with golden ornaments, thus severed, fell down on the earth,

75. And, O king, it there began to illumine the points of the compass like a mighty meteor dropping from the heavens. Thereat Bhima beholding his lance baffled, became excited to the highest pitch of fury.

76. Thereafter, taking up another bow of great toughness and emitting loud twang, the enraged Bhimasena in that battle began to resist the son of Hridika.

77. Then, O king, Bhima of awful prowess, pierced Kritavarman, on the centre of his breast, with five arrows. All this is the result of your wicked policy.

78. Then, O sire, the ruler of the Bhojas wounded on all parts of his body, appeared on the field of battle like a red *Asoka* tree covered with blossoms.

79. Thereafter Kritavarman inflamed with rage, smilingly striking Bhimasena with three arrows, began, in return, to pierce the other warriors (with his arrows).

80. That mighty bowman then pierced those car-warriors exerting] their best in battle, each with three shafts. They then also pierced him in return, each with seven shafts.

81. Then that mighty car-warrior of the Satwata race, inflamed with rage, smilingly cut off the bow of Sikhandin with a razor-headed arrow.

82. Thereupon on the severance of his bow, Sikhandin burning with rage and hastening as much as possible, took up a sword and a buckler decked with hundreds of moons.

83. Whirling that mighty sword decked with gold, Sikhandin hurled it at the chariot of Kritavarman.

84. O king, then that mighty sword, cutting off his bow with arrows placed on its string, dropped, O king, on the gronnd like a luminous body falling down from the skies.

85. Meanwhile many mighty car-warriors, making haste began to pierce Kritavarman deeply and quickly with their arrows.

86. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, taking up a fresh bow, and leaving the one cut off, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Hridika's son,

87. Pierced the Pandavas in battle, each with three straight-flying arrows. He then pierced Sikhandin at first with three and then with five arrows.

88. Then the highly renowned Sikhandin also, taking up another bow, covered the son of Hridika with swift-flying arrows furnished with heads resembling the month of tortoises.

89. Then, O king, the son of Hridika, excited with wrath, in that battle, quickly rushed upon that mighty car-warrior that son of Yajnasena,

90. Who had been, O king, the cause of death of the illustrious Bhisma. Then the heroic Kritavarman displaying his prowess fell upon Sikhandin like a tiger falling upon an elephant.

91. Then those to subduers of foes, resembling two elephants guarding the points of the compass and looking like two blazing fires, attacked each other with their showers of arrows.

92. They stretched their two excellent bows, and placed many arrows on their bow-strings. Like two suns shooting numerous rays, they also shot myriad arrows.

93. Those two mighty car-worriors afflicting one another with their sharp-arrows, appeared beautiful like two suns that rise at the end of a *Yuga*.

94. In that battle then, Kritavarman pierced that mighty car-warrior the son of Yajanasena at first with seventy three, and then again with seven arrows.

95. Thus deeply pierced and extremely pained, the latter squatted down on the terrace of his car; and he lost hold of his arrows and bow and was overwhelmed with a swoon.

96. Then your troops, O foremost of men, beholding Sikhandin cheerless in battle, began to applaud Hridika's son, and they waived their garments in the air.

97. Then knowing Sikhandin to be afflicted sore with the arrows of the son of Hridika, his driver, in all haste, carried that mighty car-warrior away from the field of battle.

98. Beholding Sikhandin overthrown on the terrace of his car, the Parthas in that battle quickly surrounded Kritavarman with their chariots.

99. Then the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman filled his enemies with wonder, in asmuch as he alone succeeded in resisting the sons of Pritha and their followers in battle.

100. Conquering the Parthas, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman vanquished the Chedis, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas and the valourous Kekayas.

101. Thus slaughtered by Hridika's son in battle, the Pandavas began to run hither and thither, and they could not then fight steadily.

102. Conquering the son of Pandu *viz.* Bhimasena in battle, Hridika's son then remained on the field, like a blazing fire free from even a single curl of smoke.

103. Those mighty car-warriors routed by the son of Hridika, were compelled to turn their faces leack, afflicted as they were with incessant showers of arrows.

Thus ends the one hundred and fourteenth chapter, the display of the prowess of Kritavarman, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hear, O king, with undivided attention, the reply to the questions you have asked me. When the Pandava troops had been routed by the illustrious son of Hridika,

2. When the Parthas had been shamefully humiliated, and when your troops were filled with delight, it was Satyaki that became the protector of the Pandavas solicitous of protection, for their king was then in the fathomless depth of distress.

3. That hero *viz.* the grandson of Sini, hearing that fierce uproar of your army in that dreadful battle, quickly, O monarch, turned back and advanced against Kritavaman.

4. Then Hridika's son Kritavarman inflamed with wrath, covered the grandson of Sini with clouds of whetted arrows. Thereupon Satyki also became excited with rage.

5. Thereafter the grandson of Sini quickly sped at Kritavarman a whetted *valla* and four other shafts in that battle.

6. These arrows slew the steeds of Kritavarman and his bow was cut off by the *valla*. Thereafter Satyaki pierced his charioteer and the supporter of his rear, with numerous sharp arrows.

7. Thereafter depriving Kritavarman of the use of his chariot, Satyaki of prowess incapble of being baffled, began to afflict his divisions with arrows of depressed knots.

8. Afflicted with the arrows shot by the gandson of Sini, the army then began to break away. Then Satyaki of unbaffled prowess proceeded with great velocity.

9. Hear, O king, what feats were achieved by that hero endued with great prowess, at the cost of your troops. O mighty monarch, passing through the ocean-like host of Drona,

10. And vanquishing Kritavarman in battle, that hero Satyaki filled with joy, addressed his charioteer saying "Proceed slowly without fear."

11. Then beholding that army of yours teeming with car-warriors, horses, elephants, and foot-soldiers, he again addressed his charioteer saying :—

12. 'Yonder is the mighty division of elephants which you see on the left of Drona's host and which appears like a dark mass of clouds, and which is headed by Rukmaratha ;

13. O charioteer, they number many and are irrestible in battle. They have been deputed by Duryodhana to oppose me and are ready to cast off their lives any moment.

14. They are mounted by princely combatants who are all great bowmen, and capable of displaying great prowees in battle. Born in the Trigartta country, they are all illustrious car-warriors owning golden standards.

15. Those brave combatants with their faces turned towards me, are waiting for me desirous of battling with me. O charioteer drive the horses, quickly take me to that spot.

16. Before the very eyes of the son of Bharadwaja, I shall fight with the Trigarttas." Then that charioteer obedient to the behests of that hero of the Satwata race, began to proceed as directed.

17. The excellent steeds obedient to the reins of the charioteer, then bore Satyaki to the battle, on an effulgent chariot decked with standards and looking like the solar disc.

18. The steeds yoked to Satyaki's car resembled the wind in fleetness and were of the effulgence of silver, or the moon or the lotus. Then as Satyaki advanced in battle being borne by excellent steeds of the hue of conch-shells,

19. The brave Kourava warriors surrounded him with their elephant division, shooting sharp arrows of various kinds, all capable of penetrating through every thing.

20. Satyaki of the Satwata race then fought on with that elephant division, discharging many whetted shafts ; and he covered it with his arrows like clouds at the end of summer covering the mountain-breast with torrents of rain.

21. Wounded with arrows resembling in touch the thunderbolt of Indra shot by the heroic grandson of Sini, those elephants began to fly away leaving the field of battle.

22. With their tusks broken, bodies drenched with blood, heads and frontal globes rent open, and ears, faces and trunks cut off, and themselves deprived of their drivers and standards,

23. With their skin lacerated, their bells broken and their mighty standards cut off and blankets thrown off, those elephants, O king, having none to ride them, began to fly away in all directions.

24. They uttered various yells and roars that resembled the rumble of rain clouds. With *Narachas*, with *Vatsadants*, with *Vallas*, with *Anja-likas*,

25. With *Kshurapras* and cressentshaped arrows, they were then ript open by that hero of the Satwata race. Discharging urine and excreta, and shedding blood copiously, they then began to fly away.

26. Some then began to roll about, some limped, some fell down and some became pale and cheerless. Thus that elephant division afflicted by Yuyudhana

27. With his arrows that resembled the sun or the fire, began to fly away in all directions. When that elephant division was being thus slaughtered, the highly powerful Jalasandha,

28. With great force goaded the elephant he rode to words the car of Yuyudhana yoked with steeds of argentine hue. That nero then covered in a golden coat of mail, adorned with golden *Angadas*, and purified,

29. And graced with Kundalas and a diadem, and armed with a sword and anointed with red sandal paste, and wearing round his head an effulgent garland of gold,

30. And bearing on his breast a *Niska* hanging by a lustrous chain round the neck, and stretching his golden bow sitting on the back the elephants,

31. Appeared as beautiful, O mighty, monarch, as a mass of clouds surcharged with lightning. Then that elephant of the Magadha king, that was advancing with fury,

32. Satyaki checked like the continent resisting the surging waves of the sea. Then beholding the career of his elephant checked by the excellent arrows shot by Sini's grandson,

33—34. The highly puissant Jalasandha, O king, became greatly enraged. Then O mighty monarch, excited with rage, Jalason of pierced with tough arrows the grandsandha Sini on his broad breast. Thereafter with a *valla*, well whetted and tempered,

35—36. He cut off the bow of that Vrishni hero (Satyaki). Then O Bharata, the heroic ruler of the Magadhas pierced with five sharp arrows, Satyaki whose bow had been burst open. Then that highly powerful Satyaki being thus pierced with numerous arrows by Jalasandha,

37. Did not tremble in the least; that indeed appeared wonderful. Then that powerlul hero thought fearlessly of the shafts he should use.

38. Then takiug up another bow he said —*wait wait.* Having spoken these two words only, the grandson of Sini pierced Jalasandha on his broad chest,

39-40. With a group of sixty arrows, smiling all the while. Then with a razor-headed arrow of great sharpness, he cut off the mignty bow of Jalasandha and then pierced him with three shafts, thereat Jalasandha casting off that severed bow and the arrows fixed on its string,

41. Quickly hurled a *Tomara* at Satyaki O sire. That *Tomora* piercing through the left arm of the illustrious Madhava in that battle,

42. Entered the earth, like a mighty and dreadful snake breathing fiercely. When his left arm had been thus pierced Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled,

43. Wounded Jalasandha with thirty extremely sharp arrows. Thereupon the mighty Jalasandha grasped a sword,

44. And a shield made of bull's hide and decked with a hundred moons. Then whirling that sword in the air, he let it go towards the grandson of Sini.

45. Cutting off the bow of Sini's grandson, that sword then fell on the ground; and lying on the surface of the earth, it then appeared beautiful like a circle of fire.

46. Then taking up another bow capable of piercing all kinds of things, large as a Sala offshoot, and emitting twang resembling the rumble of Indra's thunder,

47—48. Satyaki inflamed with rage, began to stretch it; and then he pierced Jalasandha with the shafts shot from that bow. Then Satyaki that illustrious descendant of Madhu's race smilingly cut off the two arms of Jalasandha, decked with various ornaments. Then those arms resembling two bludgeons were seen to fall down from the back of the elephant,

49—50. Like a couple of five-hooded snakes dropping down from a mountain. Then with another razor-headed arrow Satyaki lopped off his adversary head graced with beautiful teeth and with a pair of charming ear-rings. The headless and armless trunk of dreadful aspect,

51. Then drenched Jalasandha's elephant with blood. Having slain Jalasandha in battle, he of the Satwata race speedily

52. Brought down the wooden structure from the back of that elephant. O king, steeped in blood, that elephant of Jalasandha,

53. Bore that precious seat hanging down from its back. Afflicted with the shafts of the Satwata hero, the huge animal crushed the ranks of its own party,

54. As it careered wildly uttering fierce yells of agony. Then, O sire, loud lamentations arose in the ranks of your soldiers,

55. At the sight of Jalasandha slain by that foremost of the Vrishnis. Your troops then turning away their faces began to fly away in all directions.

56. But hopeless of obtaining victory over the foe they immediately after resolved to fight to the bitter end. Meanwhile, Drona that foremost of all wielders of bow,

57. Approached the mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana, born by his flect steeds. Many best warriors of the Kuru host, then beholding the grandson of Sini inspired (with pride and fury),

58. Rushed at him in rage, accompanied by Drona himself. Then, O king, there ensued a fight between the Kurus headed by Drona on one side and Yuyudhana on

the other, that resembled the dreadful battle that was fought in days gone by, between the Gods and the Asuras.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifteenth chapter, the slaughter of Jalasandha, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXVI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADH PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O mighty monarch, all those warriors accomplished in smiting down the foe and united together, began to fight with Yuyudhana quickly discharging numerous arrows.

2. Then Drona pierced Satyaki with seven and seventy shafts of great sharpness; Durmursana pierced him with twelve, and Dussaha with ten shafts.

3. Vikarna pierced Satyaki with thirty whetted shafts furnished with wings of Kanka feather, on his left side and on the centre of his chest.

4. O sire, Durmukha then pierced Sini's grandson with ten shafts, Dussasana pierced him with eight and Chitrasena with a couple of arrows.

5. Then with a mighty shower of arrows Duryodhana, O king, afflicted that mighty car-warrior the descendant of Madhu's race. O king, other heroic warriors followed his example.

6. Thus opposed on all sides by your sons, all mighty car-warriors, he of the Vrishni race began to pierce them all in return with distinct groups of straight-going shafts.

7. Satyaki pierced the son of Bharadwaja with three arrows, Dussaha with nine, Vikarna with twenty-five, Chitrasena with seven,

8. Durmarsena with twelve, Vivinsati with eight, Satyavrata with nine, and Vijaya with ten shafts.

9. Then that mighty car-warrior Satyaki, having pierced Rukmangada, stretching his bow puickly assailed your son Duryodhana who also was a mighty car-warrior.

10. Then with his arrows Satyaki deeply pierced the king of all creatures who is regarded as the best car-warrior in all the worlds. Thereupon a battle commenced between them.

11. Then those two mighty car-warriors discharging sharp arrows and placing other arrows on the bow-string, rendered each other invisible in battle.

12. Satyaki then pierced sore by the king of the Kurus, appeared highly beautiful. He shed blood copiously like a sandal tree discharging its sap.

13. Pierced with myriads of shafts by him of the Satwata race, your son appeared beautiful like a golden stake set up at a sacrifice.

14. Thereafter, O king, that descendant of Madhu's race, with a razor-headed shaft, cut off in battle the bow of the Kuru king that best weilder of the bow, smiling all the while.

15. Then he pierced the king whose bow had been severed, with numerous shafts. Thereat mangled with the arrows of his light-handed enemy,

16. In that battle, he could not bear this sign of the success of his enemy. Then taking up another bow of great toughness and golden staff,

17. He pierced Satyaki quickly with a group of hundred arrows. Pierced deeply by that great bowman endued with might, *viz* your son, Satyaki,

18. Under the influence of wrath began to afflict your son severely. Beholding the king thus afflicted, your other sons all mighty car-warriors,

19. Covered Satyaki with a shower of mighty arrows. Thus covered by your sons, all mighty car-warriors,

20. Satyaki piercing each with five arrows, again pierced each with seven shafts. He then quickly pierced Duryodhana with eight swift-coursing arrows.

21. Then smiling he cut off Duryodhana's bow that used to inspire terror into the hearts of the enemy. Then with his arrows, he cut down the latter's standard and the elephant of pearls embossed thereon.

22. Then slaying with four sharp arrows the four horses of Duryodhana, that illustrious warrior felled the charioteer of the latter with a razor-headed arrow.

23. After this, filled with delight he began to cover the king of the Kurus, that mighty car-warrior, with numerous arrows, all capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

24. Thus pierced by the excellent shafts of the grandson of Sini, O king, your son Duryodhana suddenly fled away from the field of battle.

25. He then ascended the car of Chitrasena that great bowman. Then cries of

Alas and *Oh* were uttered by your troops as they beheld the king in that battle,

26. Devoured by Satyaki, like Soma in the skies devoured by Rahu. Then hearing that woeful exclamation, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman,

27. Quickly proceeded to the spot where that mighty-descendant of Madhus's race, was fighting. He came stretching his bow and urging his steeds,

28. And encouraging his charioteer with the words 'Proceed in haste, Proceed in haste'. Beholding him come like the Destroyer himself with mouth wide open,

29. O mighty monarch, Yuyudana addressed his charioteer saying:—"Yonder is the heroic Kritavarman rushing at me on his chariot.

30. Encounter this foremost of all wielder of bow and drive your car before him." Then urging to the top of their speed those horses duly equipped,

31. The charioteer drove the car towards the king of the Bhojas held in high honor by all bowmen. Then highly excited and looking like two blazing fires,

32. Those two foremost of men encountered one another like two tigers endued with great agility. Then Kritavarman wounded the grandson of Sini with twenty-six

33—34. Sharp arrows all well-whetted; and his charioteer with five shafts. With four excellent shafts he pierced the four steeds of the Satwata hero,—steeds whose teeth were graceful and that were of the Sindhu breed. Then stretching his mighty-bow of golden back, that one of golden standards,

35—36. Decked with golden *Andagas* and clad in a golden mail, covered Satyaki with arrows of golden wings. Thereafter the grandson of Sini quickly sped numerous shafts at Kritavarman, as he was longing to have a sight of Dhananjaya. Pierced deeply by his powerful adversary, that scorcher of foes,

37—38. Bagan to tremble like a mountain during an earth-quake. Then Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled quickly pierced his four steeds with sixty-three and his charioteer with seven sharp arrows. Then Satyaki placed on his bow string a shaft furnished with golden wings,

39. That emitted great effulgence and looked like an enraged snake; that arrow that resembled the dart of Death, wounded Kritavarman sorely.

40. Then that fierce arrow, penetrating through the effulgent and gold-decked armour of Kritavarman, fell down on the ground, steepsd completely in blood.

41. Covered all *over* with blood, and afflicted with the arrows of the Satwata hero, Kritavarman, throwing aside his bow and arrow, fell upon his niche on the chariot.

42. That one of infinite prowess, and of teeth resembling those of the lion, that foremost of men, then fell on his knees on the terrace of his car, being afflicted by the arrows of Satyaki.

43. Thereafter Satyaki having successfully checked Kritavarman who resembled the thousand-armed Arjuna or the unagitable ocean itself, quickly advanced onwards.

44—45. Then passing through the division of Kritavarman, bristling with swords, lances and javelins, and teeming with elephants, steeds and cars, and shedding blood copiously, before the very eyes of all the troops that foremost of the descendants of Sini moved forwards like the slayer of Vritra passing through the Asura host.

46. Meanwhile the son of Hridika regaining his composure and grasping another mighty bow, stood on the field of battle checking the mighty Pandava hosts.

Thus ends the one hunded and sixteenth chapter, the defeat of Kritavarman, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXVII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA).

—Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. When the troops on those parts of the field through which Sini's grandson had passed were compelled by him to tremble, the son of Bharadwaja covered him with a mighty shower of arrows.

2. Then a fierce fight commenced between Drona and him of the Satwata race, before the very eyes of all the troops—fight that resembled that between Vali and Vasava fought in the day's of yore.

3. Then Drona pierced Sini's grandson on the forehead with three beautiful shafts wholly made of iron and looking like so many snakes of virulent poison.

4. O mighty monarch, with those straight-going shafts struck on the forehead, Yuyudhana appeared beautiful like a mountain with three peaks.

5. Then Bharadwaja's son, ever on the watch for an opportunity for defeating his

foes, once more sped at Satyaki shafts whose whizz resembled the rumble of Indra's thunder.

6. Then he of the Dasarha race conversant with many excellent weapons, cut off those shafts shot from Drona's bow and coming towards him, each with a couple of arrows equipped with excellent wings.

7. Then, O ruler of men, Drona beholding his light-handedness, smiled, and then pierced that foremost of Sini's descendant with thirty sharp arrows.

8. Then once more he pierced him with fifty and hundred shafts successively, thus surpassing with his own lightness of hands the lightness displayed by Yuyudhana.

9. Just as, O king, mighty snakes excited to fury, plunge off from the ant-hills,so from the car of Drona numerous shafts were seen to fly.

10. Similarly hundreds and thousands of shafts all capable of drinking blood, covered the car of Drona being discharged by Yuyudhana.

11. O sire, we were then not able to detect which of the two, that foremost of the Brahmanas, or he of the Satwata race, excelled the other in lightness of hands; but both of those best of men appeared to be equal.

12. Then excited to the highest pitch of fury, Satyaki struck Drona in battle with mine shafts of depressed knots. He also struck with sharp shafts, the standard,

13. And charioteer of Drona, before his very eyes. Then beholding the lightness of hands displayed by Yuyudhana, the mighty car-warrior Drona,

14. Piercing the charioteer of him of Madhu's race with seventy arrows, and the horses with three arrows each, cut off his standard with a single arrow.

15. Then with another broad-headed shaft equipped with golden wings, he cut off the bow of that illustrious descendant of Madhu's race.

16. Thereat that mighty car-warrior Satyaki highly excited with rage, laid aside his bow, and taking up a mighty mace, hurled it at the son of Bhardwaja.

17. Then Drona with numerous shafts of various appearance, baffled that mace made of iron and covered with silken cloth, as it coursed vehemently towards him.

18. Thereafter Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled taking up another bow, pierced the heroic son of Bharadwaja with numerous shafts whetted on stone.

19. Thus wounding Drona in battle he sent up his war-cry. But Drona that foremost of all wielders of weapons did not brook that war-cry of his.

20. Then taking up a lance of golden staff and iron-head, Drona hurled it vehemently at the car of that descendant of Madhu's race (Satyaki).

21. That lance resembling the Destroyer himself, without reaching the grandson of Sini, penetrated through his chariot and then fell on the ground, looking fierce and emitting a loud noise.

22. Thereafter, O king, Sini's grandson pierced Drona on his right arm with many winged shafts. Thus, O foremost of the Bharatas, Drona was greatly afflicted.

23. In that battle Drona also, O king, with a crescent-shaped arrow cut off the mighty bow of that descendant of Madhava; and he smote the latter's driver with a lance.

24. Satyaki's charioteer was then overwhelmed with a swoon in consequence of his being struck with that dart. For a while, he lay senseless on his niche on the car.

25. Then, O king, Satyaki achieved a super-human feat, in as much as he fought on with Drona and held the reins of his horses like his driver simultaneously.

26. Then, O ruler of men, with a cheerful appearance, the mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana, pierced in that battle that Brahmana with a set of hundred arrows.

27. At him then Drona sped, O Bharata, five shafts and those dreadful shafts penetrating through his armour drank his life-blood.

28. Pierced deeply with those fierce arrows Satayki became excited to the highest pitch of wrath; and then that hero began to shoot numerous arrows at him of the golden car.

29. He then felled Drona's driver by striking him with a single arrow; then with other arrows, he compelled his horses to run away from the field.

30. That resplendent chariot, O king, dragged over all parts of the field, began to describe various circles like the Sun in motion.

31. 'Rush,' 'seize the running steeds of Drona,'—these were the words that were then uttered loudly by the kings and princes of the Kourava host.

32. O king, then all those mighty car-warriors, leaving Satyaki in battle,

proceeded to the spot where Drona was carried away by his horses.

33. Then once more seeing all those heroes routed and afflicted by the scion of the Satwate race, your troops once more began to give way, being overwhelmed with fear.

34. Drona, once more proceeding to the gate of the array of his troops, stationed himself there, borne away, as he was, by those steeds of the fleetness of the wind, that had been afflicted by the shafts of the Vrishni hero.

35. Then that highly puissant Drona, seeing his array shattered by the Pandavas and the Panchalas, did not try to check the grandson of Sini, but began to re-arrange his broken array.

36. Resisting the Pandavas and the Panchalas, the Drona-fire then, burning in rage, stationed himself there, consuming everything like the Sun that rises at the end of a *Yuga*.

Thus ends the one-hundred and seventeenth chapter, the display of Satyaki's prowess, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having defeated in battle Drona and other warriors of your army headed by Hridika's son, that foremost of men, that best scion of the Sini race, addressing smilingly his charioteer, said, O best of the Kurus, these words :—

2. "O charioteer, our opponents have already been consumed by Kesava and Phalguna. In defeating them again, we have only been (secondarily) instrumentral. Slaying them already slain by that foremost of men, *viz* the son of the celestial chief, we have but slain the slain."

3. Saying these words to his driver, that best of the Sinis, that illustrious bowman, that slayer of hostile heroes, that highly puissant warrior, shooting vehemently his arrows in all directions pounced upon the Kourava host like a hawk swooping down upon a piece of meat.

4. The warriors of the Kourava army, although they assailed him from all sides, were unable to resist that best of car-warriors resembling the thousand-rayed sun himself, that foremost of men, who having penetrated through the Kourava array, was advancing, borne by his excellent steeds that were white like the moon or the conch-shell.

5. O Bharata, none amongst your warriors was then able to resist Yuyudhana of prowess incapable of being withstood, of unmitigating energy, of heroism equal to that of the thousand-eyed deity, and looking like the autumnal sun in the firmament.

6. Thereupon that foremost of kings, named Sudarsana, versed in all modes of warfare, clad in golden armour, armed with the bow and the arrows, and inspired with wrath, proceeded against the dashing Satyaki and strove to check his carreer.

7. The encounter that then commenced between them was extremely awful. Both your warriors and the Somakas applauded it highly; and the immortals compared it to the one that took place in days gone by between Vritra and Indra.

8. Sudarsana striving hard sped at that foremost descendant of the Satwata race, hundreds of sharp arrows, but O king, that illustrious scion of the Sini race, cut down all those arrows, before they could even reach him.

9. So also did, Sudarsana, riding on his own chariot of excellent make, severed, by means of his own arrows, in two or three parts, all the arrows sped at him by Satyaki who resembled Indra himself.

10. Then beholding his own arrows repulsed by the force of those shot by Satyaki, Sudarsana of fierce energy in order to burn down his adversary, angrily shot some beautiful shafts equipped with wings of gold.

11. Then he pierced his adversary with three beatiful arrows resembling fire itself, and furnished with golden wings,discharged from the bowstring drawn back to the very ear. These arrows penetrating through Satyakis's armour mangled his body.

12. Once more that prince Sudarsana, fixing on his bowstring another four resplendent shafts, struck therewith the four steeds of Satyaki that were of argentine hue.

13. Thus afflicted by him, Sini's grandson, possessed of great agility and endowed with might equal to that of Indra himself, quichly slew with his own arrows the steeds of Sudarsana and sent up (then) a a loud war-cry.

14—15. Then lopping off with a *Valla* charged with the vehemence of Indra's thunder-bolt, the head of Sudarsana's charioteer, that best of the Sinis, with a razor-headed arrow resembling the fire that

appears at the end of a *Yuga*, cut off from Sudarsana's trunk his head graced with ear-rings, resembling the full moon and decked with an exceedingly charming face, like the wielder of the thunder-bolt, O king, forcibly cutting off in day's gone by, the head of the Asura Vala in battle.

16. Thus having slain that grandson of a prince, that illustrious Scion of the Yadu race became inspired with joy, and shone resplendent, O king, like the chief of the celestials himself.

17. Then that best hero among men *viz* Yuyudhana proceeded along the track by which Arjuna had gone before him, resisting, as he advanced, by means of his myriad shafts, all your warriors, and riding on that excellent chariot of his, O king, to which were yoked those best steeds and filling every body with wonder.

18. Then all the excellent warriors assembled on the field of battle, applauded that wonderful feat achieved by Satyaki, inasmuch as he consumed all opponents that came within the range of his arrows, like a blazing conflagration burning every thing that falls in its way.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighteenth chapter, the slaughter of Sudarsana, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXIX.

JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA,—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereafter that illustrious scion of the Vrishni race, the high-souled and intelligent Satyaki, having slain Sudarsana in battle, addressing his charioteer thus spoke.

2—5. "Having crossed the almost uncrossable ocean of Drona's division abounding with chariots and steeds and elephants—ocean of which the waves are constituted by arrows and darts, fishes by swords and scimitars, and alligators by the maces; which roars with the whizz of arrows, and the clash of diverse weapons; an ocean that is fierce and destructive of life, and resounds with the din created by diverse musical instruments; of which the touch is disagreeable and unbearable to warriors longing to have victory, and of which the banks are infested by flesh-eaters represented by the forces of Jalasandha,—I consider that the remaining of the array yet to be crossed, can be crossed with great ease, like a stream-let of shallow water. Therefore do you dauntlessly drive the steeds forwards.

6. I think I am now within a hand's distance from Savyasachin. Having vanquished in battle, the indomitable Drona together with his followers,

7. As also that best of all warriors namely, the son of Hridika, I think I have already reached Dhananjaya. Though I see these numerous divisions of troops before me, fear does not assail my heart,

8. For, a raging forests conflagration shrinks not at the sight of numerous heaps of dried grass. Behold the ground through which the diadem-decked Arjuna, that best of the Pandavas has passed,

9. Rendered uneven by the slain foot-soldiers, horses, car-warriors and elephants. Yonder the Kourava array is giving way being routed by that high-souled warrior.

10. O charioteer, behold a thick tawny cloud of dust raised by the flying cars, elephants and steeds.

11. I think myself to be very near to that one of white steeds whose charioteer is Krishna, inasmuch as I hear the twang of the bow Gandiva wielded by that one of infinite prowess.

12. From the omens that are revealing themselves to me, I can judge that Arjuna will slay the ruler of the Sindhus before the sun to-day goes below the horizon.

13. Without exhausting their strength, drive the steeds slowly to the spot where the hostile ranks are staying, that is, to the spot where yonder warriors headed by Duryodhana, their hands cased in leathern fences,

14. And yonder Kamvoja's of dreadful deeds, cased in mail and defficult of defeat in battle, and these Yavanas armed with bows and arrows and accomplished in smiting,

15. And yonder Sakas and Kiratas, and Daradas, and Barbaras and Tamraliptakas, and numerous other Mlechchas armed with diverse weapons are staying.

16. To the spot (I repeat) where yonder warriors headed by Duryodhana, their hands defended by leathern gloves,—are standing with their faces turned towards me and inspired with the resolution of encountering me.

17. Consider me, O charioteer as already passed through this dreadful stronghold, having slain in battle all these warriors and cars, elephants, horses and foot-soldiers that are among them.

The Charioteer said :—

18. O scion of the Vrishni race, fear I have none, O you of prowess incapable of being withstood! If you had before you the enraged son of Yamadagni,

19. Or Drona that foremost of car-warriors, or Kripa or the ruler of the Madras himself, even then fear would not enter my heart, O you of mighty arms, as long as I am under the shadow of your protection.

20. O slayer of hostile heroes, numerous Kamvojas covered in coats of mail, of dreadful deeds and difficult of defeat in battle, have already been worsted by you;

21. As also numerous Yavanas armed with bow and arrows and accomplished in smiting, including Sakas, Kiratas, Daradas Barbaras, Tamraliptakas,

22. And many other Mlechchas, armed with various weapons. Never did I feel fear in any battle.

23. O you of great courage, why shall I then experience any fear in this battle, which is like the vestige of a cow's hoof. O long-lived one, by which track shall I carry you to the spot where Dhananjaya is?

24. On whom have you been angry, O you of the Vrishni race? Who are they for whom death is waiting? Who are they that are destined to repair to the mansion of death to-day?

25. Who are they that will fly away from the field of battle beholding you endowed with such prowess, resembling the Destroyer himself as he appears at the end of the yuga, and putting forth that prowess of yours? O you of mighty arms, who are they whom king Vaivaswat, has remembered to-day?

Satyaki said :—

26. I will slay these warriors with sharpened shafts like Vasava slaying the Danavas. Slaying the Kamvojas, I will fulfil my vow. Carry me thither.

27. To-day crushing the foe I shall repair to that son of Pandu who is dearly loved by me. To-day the Kurus with Suyodhana at their head, will behold my prowess in battle,

28—33. When this division of the Mlechchas of shaved heads will be exterminated and the entire Kourava army put to great distress. Hearing the loud lamentation of the Kourava host to-day lacerated and shattered by me in battle, Suyodhana will be filled with great fear. Today I shall show to my preceptor, the high-souled Pandava of white horses, the skill in the use of weapons acquired by me from him. Beholding to-day thousands of foremost warriors slain with my arrows, king Duryodhana will be overwhelmed with grief. The Kouravas will this day behold the bow in my hand to resemble a circle of fire when, light-handed as I am, I will draw back my bow-string for discharging my numerous arrows. Beholding the continuous carnage of his troops bathed in blood and many filled all over with shafts, Suyodhana to-day will be filled with great grief. When I shall slay the best of the Kuru warriors wrathfully,

34—36. Suyodhana will to-day behold the world to contain two Arjunas. Beholding thousands of kings slain by me in battle, king Duryodhana will be overwhelmed with grief in this day's great fight. Slaying thousands of monarchs to-day, I will show love and devotion to those high-souled ones *viz.*, the sons of Pandu. To-day the Kouravas will know the extent of my prowess and energy and my gratefulness to the Pandavas.

Sanjaya continued :—

37. Thus spoken to, the charioteer quickly drove those well-trained steeds resembling the moon in hue and carrying the warrior Satyaki well.

38. Those excellent steeds, possessed of the fleetnes of the wind or the mind, dashed forward seeming to devour the very skies and bore Yuyudhana to the spot where those Yavanas were.

39. Then those Yavanas endued with great lightness of hands obtaining in their midst the unretreating Satyaki, began to cover him with mighty showers of arrows.

40. Then Satyaki who was moving with great celerity, cut off their arrows and weapons with his shafts of deprassed knots. Indeed the arrows discharged by them could not then reach him.

41. The fierce Satyaki then began to lop off the heads and arms of the Yavanas, with sharp arrows equipt with golden wings, or wings made of vulterine feathers, all-flying straight.

42. Those arrows, penetrating through the iron or brass armours of the Yavanas as also their bodies, then fell down on the earth.

43. Thus slaughterd by the heroic Satyaki in that battle, the Mlechchas began to fall by hundreds on the ground deprived of their lives.

44. With his arrows discharged from his bow drawn to the fullest extent, and flying in

a continuous line, that brave warrior began to slay, five, six, seven or eight Yavanas at a time.

45. With the dead bodies of hundreds and thousands of Kamvojas, Sakas, Souviras, Trigartas, and Barbaras, O ruler of men,

46. The earth became impassable; and it was slippery with the flesh and blood that then constituted its mire. The grandson of Sini then caused a great carnage among your troops.

47. The ground was then strewn over with the head-gears of those robbers and the shaved heads that looked like unfledged birds in consequence of their long beards.

48. The field of battle overspread with headless trunks bathed in blood, appeared charming like the firmament overspread with coppery clouds.

49. Slain with the shafts of the horoic Satyaki,—shafts whose touch resembled the thunder-bolt's stroke and whose knots were well-pressed and which were flying in straight lines, the Yavanas covered the field of battle over.

50. The handful remnant of those mail-covered soldiers, defeated, O king, by the Satwata hero, became cheerless; and finding their lives on the point of being snatched away from them, they broke,

51. And fled away, urging their steeds to the top of their speed, with their whips, goads &c out of great fear that then overwhelmed them.

52. Routing in battle the invicible Kamvoja troops, and O Bharata, the troops of the Yavanas and the mighty host of the Sakas,

53. That foremost of men, *viz.*, Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, penetrated into the heart of your troops, vanquishing them and urging his charioteer saying, "Proceed."

54. Beholding that feat achieved in battle by him—feat that nobody before ever performed,—the Charanas and the Gandharvas began to applaud him highly.

55. Then, O ruler of men, beholding him proceeding as the rear-guard of Arjuna, the Charanas were filled with delight. Even your troops then began to applaud him.

Thus ends the one-hundred and nineteenth chapter, the defeat of the Javanas; in the Jayadrath-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXX.

(JAYADRPTHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Having defeated the Yavanas and the Kamvojas that foremost of car-warriors Yuyudhana advanced after Arjuna right through the centre of your troops.

2. Then like a huntsman slaying deer, that foremost of men, *viz.*, Satyaki, graced with beautiful teeth, cased in excellent armour, and owning a beatiful standard, slew the Kourava troops and struck terror into their hearts.

3. Advancing on his chariot, he began to shake his bow with force,—bow the back of which was decked with gold, the toughness of which was great and which was beautified with may golden moons.

4. His arms adorned with golden *Angadas*, his turban decked with gold, his body covered with a golden armour, his standard and bow variegated with gold, that hero appeared resplendent like the crest of the Meru-mountain.

5. Himself emitting great effulgence, and wielding that bow drawn to a circle in his hands, he appeared like another autumnal sun.

6. That foremost of men graced with shoulders, tread, and eyes, resembling those of the moon, appeared in the centre of your army, like a bull in the midst of a cowpen.

7. Him looking like and possessing the graceful tread of, an infuriate elephant and appearing like an elephant leader with open temples, standing in their midst,

8. Your troops desirous of slaying assailed with fury. After Satyaki had passed through Drona's division and the uncrossable ocean-like division of the Bhojas,

9. After he had passed through the son of Jalasandha's troops, as also the host of the Kamvojos, after he had escaped the alligator constituted by Hridika's son, after he had forded through that ocean like host,

10. Many car-warriors of your army inflamed with fury encompassed Satyaki on all sides. Duryodhana, Chitrasena, Dussasana, Vininsati,

11. Sakuni, Dussaha, the youthful Durmarsana, Kratha and many other brave warriors, all well-versed in the use of weapons and difficult of being defeated,

12. Angrily followed Satyaki from behind as he proceeded onwards. Then, O

sire, tremendous was the din that arose among your army,

13. Resembling the roar of the ocean in a Parva-day when it is lashed into fury by the wind. Beholding them all rush towards himself, that foremost of the Sinis,

14. Addressing his charioteer smilingly said :—" Proceed slowly : this army of the sons of Dhritarastra, swelling with fury,

15. And abounding in elephants, horses, chariots and infantry, is rushing at me with vehemence, O charioteer, filling all the quarters with the clatter of its cars,

16. And causing the earth, the conclave dome and oceans to tremble. O Suta, this ocean like host I shall resist in battle,

17. Like the banks resisting the mighty main when it swells in the day of the full moon. Behold O charioteer, my prowess in battle which resembles that of Indra himself.

18. Behold me crush these hostile forces with my own sharp arrows. Behold these foot-soldiers, horses, car-warriors and elephants of the hostile force slain,

19. And mangled, by my sharp shafts whose touch resemble that of fire itself." When Satyaki of immeasurable prowess was thus speaking,

20. You warriors quickly approached him desirous of battling with him, saying, 'Slay' 'Rush,' "Wait" 'Look look' &c.

21. Satyaki then fell to slaughter those heroes even when they were thus speaking, with his sharp arrows. He slew three hundred steeds and four hundred elephants.

22. That battle between Satyaki on the one hand and your warriors on the others, became awful like that between the Gods and tne Asuras fought in the days of yore. The carnage that attended it, was fierce in the extreme,

23. O sire, the grandson of Sini received the assault of your son's divisions resembling thick masses of clouds, with his shafts resembling snakes of virulent poison.

24. That valorous hero then covered over with net-work of arrows, O king, began to slay your troops by hundreds,nothing daunted.

25. O king, I then beheld an extremely wonderful sight there, inasmuch as, O lord, I saw not one shaft of Satyaki fail in striking its aim.

26. That ocean constituted by the troops of Duryodhana, teeming with cars, elephants and steeds, and surging with waves constituted by cars, as soon as it came in contact with the bank formed by Sinis grandson,

27. That host consisting of terrified warriors, elephants, and horses, carnaged on all sides by the arrows of Satyaki, began to turn round repeatedly,

28. And wandered hither and thither like kine afflicted with the chill of winter. Among foot-soldiers, car-warriors, elephants and horse-men and horses,

29. We then beheld none who was not pierced with the arrows of Yuyudhana. Even Phalguna himself, O king, spread not such carnage in your troops,

30. As was done by Satyaki in your ranks. O foremost of men, Sini's grandson then fought, surpassing even Arjuna himself,

31. Completely fearless, and displaying his lightness of hands and skill in the use of weapons. Thereafter king Duryodhana, with three arrows,

32. Pierced the charioteer of that Satwata horo ; and then with another four sharp shafts, he pierced the latter's four steeds. Next piercing Satyaki himself with three arrows, he pierced him with a set of another eight shafts.

33. Then Dussasana pierced that foremost scion of the Sini dynasty with sixteen shafts, Sakuni pierced him with twenty-five and Chitrasena with five arrows.

34. Dussaha then pierced Satyaki on the centre of his chest with fifteen arrows. Then thus struck with those numerous shafts, that foremost hero among the Vrishnis, smiled,

35. And, O mighty monarch, pierced each of his assailers with three shafts. Thus piercing his foes with darts of fierce energy,

36. That grandson of Sini endued with great celerity, began to move about the field of battle, even like a hawk. Cutting off the bow of Suvalas son and severing his gloves,

37. He pierced Duryodhana on the centre of his chest with three arrows; he pierced Chitrasena with hundred and Dussaha with ten arrows.

38. That illustrious grandson of Sini next pierced Dussasana with twenty arrows. Thereafter O ruler of men, your brother-in-law, taking up another bow,

39. Pierced Satyaki first with eight and then with another five arrows. Then O king, Dussasana pierced Satyaki with ten, Dussaha with three, and Durmukha with

welve shafts. O Bharata, then Duryodhana, pierced that scion of Madhu's race with seventy-three arrows,

41. Next he pierced the latter's charioteer with three sharp arrrows. Then all those mighty car-warriors who were fighting unitedly and heedfully,

42—43. Were pierced each with five arrows by Satyaki. Then that foremost of warriors struck the driver of your son with a broad-headed shaft. The latter then fell down on the ground slain. When his charioteer had been laid low, O master, that car-warrior, your son,

44. Was borne away from the field of battle by his steeds of the fleetness of the wind. Thereupon, your other sons and the troops, O king,

45. Looking at the chariot of the king, began to break away by hundreds. Then O Bharata, beholding the divisions routed, Satyaki,

46, Covered them with keen pointed arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone. Thus, O king, crushing all the warriors of your army by thousands,

47. Satyaki flew towards the chariot of Arjuna owning cream-colored steeds. Even your troops then applauded him as they beheld him proceed shooting arrows and protecting himself and his charioteer.

Thus ends the one hundred and twentieth chapter the defeat of Duryodhana, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. What, O Sanjaya, did my shameless sons do, when they beheld the grandson of Sini proceed towards Arjuna, crushing as he advanced my troops?

2. How indeed did those dying wretches set their heart on fight, when Sini's grandson who is equal to Savyasachin himself appeared before them?

3. What indeed, did the Kshatriyas defeated in battle do? How indeed did the illustrious Satyaki penetrate through their ranks?

4. O Sanjaya, tell me also, how could the grandson of Sini proceed to battle when all my sons were alive and fighting?

5. What I have heard from you, O son, appears to be exceedingly wonderful *viz* the battle between the one and the many, the latter counting many mighty car-warrior among them.

6. O Suta, I think Destiny is adverse to the interests of my sons, in as much as they are now being slaughtered by that mighty car-warrior of the Satwata race.

7. Even all my troops united together were not competent enough to withstand the enraged Yuyudhana; not to speak of the sons of Pandu.

8. Like a lion slaying other inferior beasts Satyaki is slaughtering my sons, having first vanquished in battle Drona that warrior accomplished in weapons and versed in all modes of warfare.

9. Countless heroes headed by Kritavarman himself, fighting heedfully, were not able to slay Satyaki in battle; so it is certain that the latter will vanquish my sons single-handed.

10. Even Phalguna himself did not fight in the manner in which the illustrious grandson of Sini has fought.

Sanjaya said:—

11. All this has been brought about by your wicked policy and by the vile deeds of Duryodhana O king. O Bharata, now hear attentively what I am going to say to you.

12. At the command of your son, all those warriors then taking tremendous vows to fight to the last, rallied and resolved upon fighting fierce.

13. Three thousand bowmen, commanded by Duryodhana himself and supported by a numerous body of Sakas, Kamvojas Valhikas, Yavanas, Paradas,

14. Kaligas, Tanganas, Amvartas, Pisachas, Barbaras, and mountaineers, O king, all inspired with rage, and armed with stones,

15. Rushed against Sini's grandson like flights of insects falling upon a blazing fire. Five hundred other warriors united together, O king, then also assailed Satyaki.

16—17. Another large division consisting of a thousand chariots, a hundred mighty car-warriors, a thousand elephants, two thousand horse and innumerable foots soldiers, also assailed the grandson of Sini.

18. Then, O Bharata, Dussasana, urged those troop saying,—'slay him' and encompassed Satyaki there with.

19. Then we beheld the marvellous character of the prowess of Sini's grandson, in as much as single handed as he was he fearlessly fought on with the odds against him.

20. He then continually went on slaying the divisions of car-warriors elephants and horsemen and the robbers.

21—23. Like the autumnal sky bespangled with stars, the field of battle then became covered with car wheels broken and smashed by means of his mighty weapons with innumerable Akshas and beautiful car-shafts crushed to pieces with mangled elephants and broken standards with coats of mail and bucklers scattered all about and O sire, with garlands and ornaments and attires and Anukarshas.

24—28. Many best elephants prodigious or mountainous and of the Anjanors, of the Vamana breed, O Bharata or of the Supratika Mahapadmat or Airavata or other breeds, many excellent tuskers, O king, lay prostrate on the ground, deprived of life. Satyaki then slew, O king, many foremost of steeds of the Vanaya, the mountain, the Kamvoja and the Valhika breeds. The grandson of Sini also slaughtered foot soldiers there, in hundreds and thousands, born in various realms and belonging to various nationalities. Whilst those troops were being thus carnaged, Dussasana addressing the robbers said.—

29. 'Ye heroes, ignorant of the rules of fighting, fight on." Why do you retreat? But seeing them break away in spite of all his commands your son Dussasana

30. Urged on the heroic mountaineers skilled in fighting with stones saying:—"You are all skillul in fighting with the stones. But Satyaki is ignorant of this mode of warfare.

31. Do you slay then this hero who, desirous as he is of battle, is unacquainted with your manner of fighting. The Kouravas also are all ignorant of this mode of battle.

32. Rush upon Satyaki, and fear not for he will not be able to reach you in battle." Thereupon all those mountain kings, all accomplished in fighting with stones,

33. Rushed upon the grandson ol Sini like so many counsellors rushing in the train of a king. Then all those denizens of the mountains, armed with hollicks looking like the heads of the elephants,

34. Stood before Yuyudhana in that battle ready to strike others desirous of compassing the slaughter of the Satwata hero with their missiles.

35. They obstructed all the points of the compass, urged as they were by your son. Then as they rushed desirous of fighting with their stones,

36, Satyaki sped at them sharp arrows fixing them on his bow string. That aweful shower of stones then discharged by the Mountaineers,

37. The foremost scion of the Sini race baffled with his Narachas resembling venomous reptiles. Then with those lustrous fragments of stones looking like a flight of fire flies,

38. Many of our soldiers were slaughtered; and O sire, cries of alas and Oh were heard in all directions. Then with heavy stones uplifted, five hundred heroic warriors,

39. Fell down, O king with their arms severed. Again a thousand warriors and other hundred thousand warriors,

40. Encountering Satyaki fell down with their arms bearing stones lopped off. Then many heroic warriors, accomplished in fighting with stones, began to fall down, with their purposes unsettled.

41. Satyaki then slew them by thousands and that appeared indeed wonderful. Then again many of them, returning to the charge, hurled at Satyaki showers of stones.

42. With swords and lances in their grasp, many Daradar, Tanjanas, Thasus, Lampakas and Pulindas, hurled their weapons at Satyaki.

43. But the latter well accomplished in the use of weapons cut all of them in pieces with his *Narachas*. Then as the stones were being broken in the air by sharp arrows,

44. The sound, that was created, caused many car-warriors, horses, el phants and foot-soldiers to fly away. Pelted in all directions by fragments of stones, men, elephants and horses,

45. Were unable to stand in the field of battle, in as much as they felt as if bit by bees. The survivors, bathed in blood and with their heads and frontal globes shattered,

46. Of the elephant hosts, then began to break away leaning the car of Yuyudhana. Then the noise that your troops created, O sire,

47. Afflicted as they were with the shafts of that descendant of Madhu's race, was tremendous like that of the Ocean in a Parvadayi. Then hearing the cry and that tremendous din, Drona, addressing his charioteer, said:—

48. "O charioteer, this mighty car-warrior, of the Satwata race inflamed with wrath, has shattered the host in many places and is now careering like the Destroyer in the field of battle.

49. O charioteer, drive my car to the spot whence this noise is coming. Surely Yuyudhna has now encountered these heroes that fight with the stones.

50. Yonder the car-warriors are leaving Satyaki being borne away by their flying steeds. Behold some are falling down on the spot with their bodies mangled.

51. Their drivers are not able to restrain their wild horses." The charioteer hearing these words of Bharadwaja's son,

52. Replied unto Drona that foremost of all wielders of weapons saying :—O long-lived one, behold the army of the Kouravas routed in all directions.

53. Behold the warriors rush in all directions deserting their ranks! But in fact you behold those heroic Panchalas and Pandavas,

54. Advance desirous of encountering yourself. O subduer of foes, now behave yourself in the manner one should behave on such occasions.

55. Shall we proceed or stay here? Satyaki has gone far ahead of us." While the charioteer was thus speaking to the son of Bharadwaja, O sire,

56. The grandson of Sini suddenly came to view, engaged in slaughtering a large number of car-warriors. Those soldiers of yours while being thus slaughtered by Yuyudhana in battle,

57. They fled away from Yuyudhana's chariot towards the spot where Drona's division was placed. Those other car-warriors accompanied by Dussasana, all struck with panic, also rushed to the place where Drona's chariot was seen.

Thus ends the one hundred and twentys first chapter the defeat of the mountaineers in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA—)
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding then the chariot of Dussana stationed near him, the son of Bharadwaja addressing him said these words :—

2. O Dussana, why are all these car-warriors, flying away? Is every thing right with the king? Does the king of the Sindhus still live?

3. You are the son of a king, the brother of a king and a mighty car-warrior; why then do you fly away? Constitute yourself the Prince-regent (by making your brother the king)?

4. "You are our slave; you have been won by us as a stake in the game of dice; become you a courtezan; and engage yourself as a bearer of attires to the king, my elder brother.

5. Your husbands do not live; they are like sesamum seeds without the kernel." O Dussasana, it was you who spoke those words to Draupadi. Why then do you now fly away.

6. Having yourself provoked inveterate enmity with the Panchalas and the Pundavas, why do you now fly, out of fear, obtaining Satyaki alone in battle for your opponent?

7. In days gone by, at the game of dice having taken up the dice, you did not divine that they would be changed into dreadful darts resembling snakes of virulent poison.

8. It were you who formerly abused the Pandavas in filthy language; you were the cause of all the woes of Draupadi.

9. Where are now your pride, your haughtiness and brag? Having provoked the Parthas who are like so may snakes of virulent poison, where do you intend to fly?

10. Both this army of the Bharatas, and king Suyodhana are to be pitied, in asmuch as the latter own you who are now flying away as his brave brother.

11. Indeed, O hero, this army, shattered and afflicted with fear as it is, ought to be protected by you, by your own strength of arms.

12. But you now, leaving the fight, are affording delight unto your foes. O slayer of foes, when you, the leader of the host, are flying away,

13. Who, seized with panic as he is, will care to remain, in the field of battle? Encountering that single-handed warrior of the Satwata race,

14. Your heart is inclined to fly away from battle. What then, O Kourava, wil you do when you will see the wielder of th Gandiva in battle, or Bhimasena or the twins, Nakula and Sahadeva. The arrowe of Satyaki, afraid of which you are seeking to fly away, are scarcely equal to those of Arjuna, that resemble the sun or the fire in effulgence? If your heart is intent on flying away,

17. Then let the sovereignty of the earth be given to king Yudhisthira the virtuous when peace will be concluded. Before the shafts of Phalguna looking like snakes divested of their slough,

18. Penetrate into your body, let peace be concluded. Before the illustrious son of Pritha slaying your hundred brothers snatch the earth away by force, conclude peace with the Pandavas. Before king Yudhisthira is excited with wrath,

20. And Krishna also, that giver of joy, conclude peace with the Pandavas. Before the mighty-armed Bhima, piercing through this vast array of yours,

21. Seizes (and slays) your brothers, conclude peace with the Pandavas. Formerly Bhisma told your brother Suyodhana.

22. "The Pandavas are incapable of being vanquished in battle. O Gentle one, make peace with them." Your perverted brother Suyodhana however did not listen to him.

23. Therefore firmly resolved to fight, battle on heedfully with the Pandavas. Proceed quickly on you car, where Satyaki is?

24. Deprived of your help, this host will fly away. For your own sake, fight with Satyaki of indomitable prowess."

25. Thus spoken to by Drona, your son spoke nothing in reply. Feigning as if he has not heard the words of Drona, Dussasana advanced to the spot where Satyaki was.

26. Supported by a mighty division of unretreating Mlelachas, Dussasana fell upon Satyaki and fought on vigorously.

27. Drona also, that best of car-warriors, inflamed with rage, proceeded against the Panchalas and the Pandavas in medium speed.

28. Then Drona, engaging himself in battle, began to crush the Pandava army slaying heroes by hundreds and thousands.

29. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, proclaiming his name in battle, he began to spread havoc among the ranks of the Pandavas, Panchalas and the Matsyas.

30. Thereat the effulgent Viraketu, the Panchala prince, encountered Drona the son of Bharadawaja who had been vanquishing his troops.

31. Piercing Drona with five shafts of depressed knots, he cut down his standard with one and wounded his charioteer with seven shafts.

32. Then O mighty monarch, we beheld a wonderful sight in that battle, in as much Drona striving hard could not approach the Panchala prince.

33. O sire, then beholding Drona held in check, the Panchalas surrounded him O king, on all sides, desirous as they were of securing victory to the very virtuous king Yudhisthira.

34. They then began to pour upon Drona darts resembling fire, thick showers of *Tomaras* and numerous other weapons, O king.

35. Then baffling those thick showers of arrows by means of his own, like the wind scattering away mighty rain-clouds on the sky, Drona appeared exceedingly beautiful.

36. Thereafter that slayer of hostile heroes *viz* Drona aimed at the chariot of Viraketu a dreadful shaft, resembling the sun or fire in splendaur.

37. O king, then that shaft penetrating through that scion of the Panchala dynasty entered the earth, steeped in blood and burning like a flame of fire.

38. Thereupon that delighter of the Panchala race, quickly fell down from his chariot like a *Champaka* falling down from the crest of a mountain, being uprooted by the force of the wind.

39. When that highly puissant and fierce bowmen, that prince of the Panchalas, had been slain, the Panchalas, in all haste, surrounded Drona on all sides.

40. Chitraketu, Sudhanwan, Chitravarman, and O Bharata, also Chitraratha,—all afflicted with greif at the calamity that had befallen their brother,

41. Unitedly and with a desire for fighting, rushed against the son of Bharadwaja, discharging their showers of shafts like so many clouds discharging their contents at the expiration of the summer season.

42. Thus wounded by those princes, all mighty car-warriors, that foremost of the regenarate wrought himself up with anger, for putting an end to their existence.

43. Thereafter Drona hurled at them a net-work of arrows. Those princes, then pierced with those shafts of Drona shot from the bow string drawn back to the very ear,

44. Became embarassed as to what they should do, O foremost of kings. Then when they were thus confounded, Drona with perfect ease,

45. Inflamed as he was with rage, deprived those princes of their chariots, charioteers and steeds. Thereafter that hero of world-wide fame, with his sharp arrows and *vallas*,

46. Felled their heads, like one culling flowers. O king, those radiant heroes then fell down slain from their respective cars,

47. Even as the Daityas and Danavas fell, in the battle between the gods and th

Asuras fought in the days of yore. Slaying them in battle, the valorous son of Bharadwaja,

48. Began to shake his excellent bow whose staff was golden and which was incapable of being approached. Then beholding those Panchala princes all mighty car-warrior, and resembling the Pandavas themselves, slain,

49. Dhristadyumna was filled with rage and tears trickled down from his eyes. Then burning with rage, he rushed at the car of Drona.

50. Thereupon, O king, suddenly cries of *Alas* and *Oh* were heard there, for, then Drona was seen covered with the shafts of the Panchala prince Dhristadyumna.

51. Though covered on all sides by the illustrious son of Prisata, yet Drona flinched not, but fought on smilingly.

52. Then, O mighty monarch, the Panchala prince, overwhelmed with rage, pierced Drona on the breast with ninety shafts of depressed knots.

53. Pierced deeply by that powerful hero, the illustrious son of Bharadwaja, squatted down on the terrace of his chariot and fainted away in a swoon.

54. Then beholding him in that plight, Dhristadyumna, of fierce energy and great might, grasped his sword and left aside his bow.

55. Then that mighty car-warrior, jumping down from his chariot with quickness, O sire, ascended with agility upon the car of the son of Bharadwaja,

56. With his eyes rolling in rage and urged on by a desire for cutting off Drona's head from the trunk. Meanwhile the puissant Drona, recovering from the swoon, took np his bow.

57—58. But beholding Dhristadyumna inflamed with a desire for slaughtering him so near, he began to pierce him with arrows measuring a span only and so fit to be used in close quarter. Those arrows known by the name of *Vaitastika* and fit to be used in close quarters,

59. Were known to Drona only, and by means of them, he succeeded in weakening Dhristadyumna's powers. Then the puissant Dhristadyumna wounded with those arrows,

60. Swifty came down from Drona's chariot. That hero of fierce energy was then greatly robbed of his strength. Thereafter ascending his car, and taking up a mighty bow,

61. The mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna began to pierce Drona in battle; Drona also, O mighty monarch, pierced the son of Prisata with numerous shafts in battle.

62. Then a wonderful fight was fought between Drona and the Panchala prince, like what was fought between Sakra and and Pralhada, both longing to enjoy the sovereignty of the three worlds.

63. Both versed in various modes of warfare, they careered over the field, desplaying various motions with their chariots and mangling one another with their shafts.

64. Then confounding the minds of the other warriors, Drona and Prisata's son began to pour their arrowy showers like rain-clouds pouring their contents in the rainy season.

65. Those two high-souled warriors then covered the conclave dome, the earth, and the quarters with their shafts. The creatures assembled there, then began to applaud that battle that was fought between them.

66. So also, O mighty monarch, the Kshatriyas, and other soldiers praised that battle. "Meeting Dhristadyumna in battle Drona will surely.

67—68. Succumb to him." The Panchalas exclaimed, O king, speaking thus. Then Drona fighting with great agility cut off the head of Dhristadyumna's charioteer, like one felling ripe fruits from a tree. Thereupon O king, the steeds of the illustrious Dhrishtadyumna ran away wildly.

69. When those steeds thus ran away bearing Dhristadyumna away, Drona of great might began to crush the Panchalas and Srinjayas (mercilessly).

70. Then the highly puissant son of Bharadwaja having vanquished the Pandavas and the Panchalas and having reformed his array of troops, stood at its mouth. O master the Pandavas then ventured not to vanquish him in battle.

Thus ends the one-hundred and twenty second chapter, the display of Drona's prowess, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)
—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Meanwhile, O king, Dussasana advanced upon the grandson of Sini, shooting thousands of arrows, like a mighty raincloud pouring its contents.

2. Having pierced Satyaki first with sixty shafts and next with sixteen, he could not make him tremble who was fighting steadily like the immovable Mainaka mountain.

3. Then that foremost of the Bharatas surrounded Satyaki with a mighty division of car-warriors born in various realms; he shot numerous arrows,

4. And filled the ten quarters with the clatter of his car wheels, that resembled the rumble of rain clouds. Beholding that Kourava hero advance upon him Satyaki,

5. Possessed of mighty arms, rushed against him, and covered him with his own shafts. Then those warriors headed by Dussasana being thus covered by those arrowy showers

6. Became seized with panic and began to fly away even before the very eyes of your son. O monarch, when those warriors were thus flying, your son Dussasana,

7. Stood fearlessly before Satyaki afflicting him with his arrows. He then pierced the latter's charioteer with three and his steeds with four arrows;

8. Then piercing Satyaki himself with a set of hundred arrows, he uttered his war-cry. Thereupon O mighty monarch, that descendant of Madhu's race, being worked up with rage

9. Rendered Dussasana's car, charioteer, and standard invisible with his swift flying arrows. He then entirely shrouded the heroic Dussasana with his shafts.

10. That subduer of foes then quickly covered Dussasana with his arrows like a spider entangling a gnat in its web.

11. Beholding Dussasana thus covered by the shafts of Satyaki, king Duryodhana urged the Trigarttas towards the car of Yuyudhana.

12. Then three thousand warriors of the Trigartta clan versed in battling and of cruel deeds, reaching the car of Yuyudhana,

13. Surrounded the latter with the mighty division of their cars. They set their hearts firmly on fighting and took terrible oaths.

14. As they rushed to battle discharging showers of arrows, Yuyudhana crushed five hundred of their foremost warriors that marched in their front.

15. They then began to fall down slain quickly by the arrows of that foremost of Sinis, like trees broken by the force of the wind falling down from the top of the mountain.

16. The field of battle, overspread with mangled elephants, O king, and broken standards, and fallen bodies of horses furnished with golden traces, and wounded and cut by the arrows of Sini's grandson and rolling in their blood, looked beautiful like a plain covered over with *Kinsuka* trees decked with blossoms.

18. Then all those warriors of yours, slain in battle by Yuyudhana, were unable to find out a protector like elephants sunk in deep mire.

19. Thereafter terrified all of them proceeded towards the car of Drona like mighty snakes entering their holes from fear of the king of birds (Garuda).

20. Slaying five hundred warriors with his arrows resembling snakes of virulent poison, the heroic Satyaki proceeded slowly towards the car of Dhananjaya.

21. Then as that foremost of men was proceeding your son Dussasana pierced him quickly with nine shafts of depressed knots.

22. Him the fierce bowmen Satyaki pierced in return with five sharp shafts, all straight flying, and furnished with golden as well as vulterine wings.

23. But O Bharata, Dussasana, smiling a little, pierced Satyaki O king, first with three and then with five shafts.

24. Thereupon the grandson of Sini wounding your son with five swift-coursing arrows cut off the latter's bow and then smiling a little proceeded towards Arjuna.

25. Therat Dussasana, highly enraged and desirous of slaying the Vrishni hero as he was proceeding, hurled at him a lance capable of penetrating through all things.

26. But that dreadful lance hurled by your son, Satyaki cut off, O king, with whetted shafts furnished with wings of the *Kanka bird*.

27. O ruler of men, then your son taking up another bow pierced Satyaki with his arrows and then uttered a loud war-cry.

28. Thereat Satyaki waxing wroth, stupified your son, and struck him on the

centre of his chest with arrows resembling tongues of fire.

29. He then once more pierced Dussasana with eight arrows made completely of iron and of sharp heads. Dussasana in return pierced Satyaki with twenty shafts of eminent parts.

30. He of the Satwata race of eminent parts O mighty monarch, again pierced him on the breast with three arrows of straight knots.

31. Then that mighty car-warrior, highly inflamed with rage, slew Dussasana's steeds with sharp arrows, and his charioteer with numerous shafts of depressed knots.

32. Versed in the use of many excellent weapons Satyaki then cut off Dussasana's bow with a single *valla*, his gloves with five and his chariot and chariot shaft, with a couple of broad-headed arrows.

33. With sharp shafts he cut off his two *Parshni* drivers. Then Dussasana, deprived of his car, with his bow burst open, his charioteer and steeds slain,

34. Was carried away by the commander of the Trigartta divisions on his own chariot. O Bharata, then the grandson of Sini once more assailed him.

35.—36. But he refrained from slaying him remembering the words of Bhimasena. O Bharata, amidst the assembly Bhimasena before swore to slay your sons. Then Satyaki, vanquishing Dussasana, quickly proceeded in the track in which Dhananjaya had proceeded, O king.

Thus ends the one hundred twent-third chapter the defeat of Dussasana, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIV.

(JAYADRATHA BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Was there then, O Sanjaya, no mighty car-warrior in my entire army who could resist or slay Satyaki as he proceeded forward ?

2. Of indomitable prowess and possessed of strength equal to that of Indra himself, single-handed he achieved feats amidst my troops like Indra achieving feats amidst the Danavas.

3. Perhaps the track through which Satyaki passed was empty. Possessed of prowess in the true sense of the term, he alone has crushed numerous hosts, of mine,

4. Tell me O Sanjaya, how the single-handed grandson Sini passed through that host of mine, which was fighting vigorously against him ?

Sanjaya said :—

5. O monarch, the exertion and din that were then made by your troops, O king, teeming with cars, elephants, foot-soldiers, resembled that which occurs at the end of a *Yuga*.

6. O bestower of honor, when your assembled host daily increased in numerical strength before, I thought that another muster like that of your army had never been on earth.

7. The Gods and the Charanas that then came there said—"this muster will be the last of its kind on the earth."

8. O king, the array, which was formed by Drona in view of a slaughter of Jayadratha, was such that its equal had never been formed on the face of the earth.

9. Then the din that was made by the armies as they rushed to battle with one another, was as tremendous as one created by the ocean agitated with the vehemence of a mighty tempest.

10. In those two assembled hosts of the Pandavas and the Kurus, O foremost of men, innumerable rulers of earth, numbering by hundred, and thousand, were enrolled.

11. Horripilating, dreadful and defeaning was the uproar set up by those enraged heroes of resolute deeds, as they proceeded to battle.

12. Then Bhimasena, Dhristadyumna, Nakula, Sahadeva, the virtuous king Yudhisthira, O sire, exclaimed saying :—

13. "Come, strike, rush quickly ; the two heroes, the scion of Madhu's race and the son of Pandu, have entered into the Kuru army.

14. Do you so act, as they may proceed easily towards the chariot of Jayadratha. Speaking thus, they urged their troops on.

15—16. (They again said)—"If those two heroes be slain, then the Kurus will have their objects fulfilled and we shall be defeated. Therefore do you united exert yourselves for agitating this host, like the tempest of tremendous vehemence agitating the ocean. O king, urged on by the Panchala prince and by Bhimasena,

17—18. They fell to slaughter the Kurus thoroughly disregarding their own dear lives. Possessed of great energy, all of them desiring death in battle, at the

edge of weapons, with a view to attain to heaven, showed not the least regard for their lives in fighting for the good of their friends, so also, O monarch, your warriors, desirous of great renown,

19. And setting their hearts resolutely on battle, remained on the field, determined to fight to the bitter end. In that dreadful and horible battle,

20—22. Satyaki having vanquished all the warriors advanded towards Arjuna. The combatants were compelled to turn their eyes away from the coats of mails covering the warriors, as they reflected the rays of the sun directly. O monarch, Duryodhana then penetrated through the mighty host of the illustrious sons of Pandu striving hard in battle. Then the battle that was there fought between him and them was extremely terrible and the carnage horrible.

Dhritarastra said :—

23. When the Pandava host was thus advancing and when he was involved in great danger, I hope, O son of a charioteer, Duryodhana did not turn his back on the field of battle.

24. That battle between the one and the many, that one again being a king by birth, seems to me to be very unfair.

25. Brought up in great luxury, attended with great prosperity and the ruler of the worlds, that single-handed son of mine, I hope, did not turn his face away from the field of battle, encountering odds in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

26. The battle, O king, that was then fought, between your son on the one side, and the numerous Pandavas on the other, was indeed wonderful. Hear me as I relate it.

27. Then the Pandava troops were completely crushed by Duryodhana like a forest of lotuses destroyed by an elephant.

28. Then, O king, beholding the troops shattered by your son, the Panchalas headed by Bhimasena, rushed upon Duryodhana.

29. Thereupon your son pierced Bhimasena, the son of Pandu, with ten shafts and each of the twins Nakula and Sahadeva with three and the virtuous king Yudhisthira with seven.

30. He pierced Virata and Drupada with six, Sikhadin with a hundred, Dhristadyumna with twenty and the sons of Draupadi with three arrows each.

31. He then cut off many other warriors hundreds in number, and elephants and cars in battle with his fierce shafts, like the wrathful god of Death slaying the created beings.

32. Owing to his skill acquired through practies and to the powers of his weapons, he appeared, when striking down his foes, to weild his bow, continuously [illegible] to a circle, whether when aiming or disch[illegible] his shafts.

33. Then men beheld his mighty bow of golden staff, as he slew his foes, to be always drawn to a circle.

34. Thereafter king Yudhisthira cut off with a Pair of Vallas the bow of your son, who had been exerting to the best of his prowess in battle, O foremost of the Kurus.

35. He then pierced the latter with ten excellent shafts all well-directed. But striking against Duryodhana's armour they were shattered into pieces and fell down on the earth.

36. Then the Parthas filled with delight surrounded Yudhisthira, like the celestials and the sages surrounding Sakra on the occasion of the slaughter of Vritra.

37. Thereafter your highly puissant son Duryodhana taking up another bow and addressing king Yudhisthira saying "wait wait" rushed against that son of Pandu.

38. Then beholding your son rush to battle with fury, the Panchalas always intent on securing victory received him with delight.

39. Drona then encountered that division of the Panchalas, from a desire for rescuring the king, like a mountain withstanding masses of rain-charged clouds driven by the tempest.

40. Thereupon, O king, there commenced a awful cambat making the hair stand erect between the Pandavas and your troops, O mighty-armed one.

41. The carnage was terrible like that when Rudra slays in sport all creatures at the end of a *Yuga*. Then arose a loud uproar at the place where Dhananjaya was.

42. That sound surpassed all other sounds and O lord, made the hairs stand erect. Thus, O mighty-armed one, the battle between Arjuna and your warriors went on (with unmitigated fury).

43. Thus progressed the battle between Satyaki and your men, in the centre of your army and there also raged the battle between Drona and his enemies at the head of his array.

44. Thus continued that dreadful destruction of creatures when, O ruler of men, Arjuna, Drona and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki were excited with wrath.

Thus end, the one hundred and twenty-fourth chapter, the fierce fight, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. On the afternoon, O mighty monarch, a terrible battle was fought between Drona and the Somakas,—battle whose din resembled the rumble of the rain cloud *Parjannya* itself.

2. That best of heroes among men, mounted on his chariot to which were yoked red steeds, *viz* Drona then assailed the Pandavas, firmly resolved to fight with them.

3—4. That fierce bowman, endued with great might and energy, that hero ever engaged in doing good to yourself, that one born in an excellent jar, that puissant son of Bharadwaja, slaying, O king, many best of heroes among the enemy, appeared O Bharata, to sport on the field of battle.

5. Him encountered Vrihadkshatra that mighty car-warrior among the Kekayas, the eldest of his five brothers and difficult of being resisted in battle.

6. Discharging sharp arrows incessantly, he afflicted the preceptor sorely, like a mighty cloud afflicting the mountain Gandhamadana by pouring its watery contents on it.

7. At him, O mighty monarch, excited with wrath Drona sped ten and five shafts, all whetted on stone, and furnished with wings of gold.

8. Then Vrihadkshatra cheerfully cut off each of those arrows shot by Drona and looking like] so many enraged snakes of virulent poison, with five shafts of his own.

9. Then seeing his lightness of hands, that foremost of the regenerate ones smiled and once more, sped at him eight shafts of depressed knots.

10. Beholding those shafts shot from Drona's bow coursing swiftly towards himself, Vrihadkshatra baffled them in battle with an equal number of sharp arrows shot by himself.

11. Then your troops, O mighty monarch were filled with surprise, beholding Vrihadkshatra achieve that very difficut feat.

12. Thereupon, O king, applauding Vrihadkshatra, Drona invoked into existence the invincible *Bramha*-weapon of celestial make.

13. Beholding that woapon discharged by Drona in battle, the Kekaya prince, O foremost of kings, cut down that weapon with his own *Brahma* weapon.

14. Then O Bharata, when the *Brahma* weapon had been baffled, Vrihadkshatra pierced the Brahmana with sixty shafts, whetted on stone, and fnrnished with wings of gold.

15. Then that foremost of men Drona directed several *Nacharas* at him; these *Naracharas* penetrating through his armour entered the earth.

16. Like, O best of kings, black snakes freed from their sloughs, entering into their holes in anthills, those arrows penetrating through the Kekaya prince entered the earth.

17. Then, O mighty monarch, deeply pierced with the arrows of Drona, the Kaikaya prince excited to the highest pitch of fury began to roll his charming eyes.

18. He then pierced Drona with seventy shafts whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings; he pierced the latter's charioteer in his vital parts with (fierce) darts.

19. O sire, Drona then pierced with numerous arrows by the Kekaya prince Vrihatkshatra, sped at his car many arrows of extreme sharpness.

20. Then confounding that mighty car-warrior Vrihatkshatra, Drona slew his four steeds with four winged shafts.

21. He then felled the former's charioteer from his niche on the car, with a single arrow. Cutting off his standard and umbrella with another two arrows, he felled them on the ground.

22. Then that foremost among the regenerate ones, with a well directed *Naracha* pierced Vrihatkshatra on his breast, whereupon the latter then fell down, with his heart torn open.

23. When Vrihatkshatra that mighty car-warrior was thus slain, O king the son of Sisupala highly enraged addressing his charioteer said:

24. "O charioteer, proceed to the spot where the cuirassed Drona stands, slaughtering the Kekaya, and Panchala divisions."

25. Hearing those words of that foremost of car-warriors, the charioteer took him to the spot where Drona was, by means of his fleet steeds of Kamvoja breed.

26. Then swelling with his might, that foremost of the Chedis, *viz*. Dhristaketu rushed upon Drona for slaughtering him, like a fly falling upon fire.

27. He then pierced Drona and his steeds, chariot and standard, with sixty shafts.. And once more he struck his adversary with sharp arrows, like a man rousing a sleeping tiger.

28. Then Drona, with a sharp razor-faced arrow winged with feathers of vultures, cut off in the middle, the bow of that mighty warrior striving in battle.

29. Thereupon that son of Sisupala, that mighty car-warrior, taking up another bow pierced Drona with numerous shafts equipped with wings of the feather of the peacock and the Kanka bird.

30. Then Drona slaying with four arrows his four steeds, smilingly severed the head of his charioteer from his trunk.

31. He then pierced Dhristaketu himself with twenty five arrows. The prince of the Chedis then leaping off from his chariot, grasped a mace,

32—33. And hurled it at the son of Bharadwaja like an enraged she-snake. Beholding that heavy mace endued with the strength of adamant and adorned with gold, course towards himself like the last night of a man's existence, the son of Bharadwaja cut it off with many thousands of whetted arrows.

34. Cut off by numerous shafts by the son of Bharadwaja that mace, O sire, fell down, O Kourava, filling the earth with the noise it created.

35. Beholding the mace repulsed, the valiant Dhristaketu hurled at Drona first a lance and then a javelin decked with gold.

36. Drona then cutting off that lance with five shafts, cut off the dart with another five. Then both those missiles cut off, dropped on the ground like two snakes torn to pieces by Garuda.

37. Thereafter the highly puissant son of Bharadwaja shot a shaft for the destruction of Dhristaketn who was striving to slay him.

38. Penetratlng through the breast-plate and the breast of Dhristaketu of infinite energy, that dart entered the earth like a swan diving into a lake overgrown with lotuses.

39. Like a hungry jay catching and devouring a little insect, Drona of great heroism devoured Dhristaketu in that battle.

40. When the Chedi ruler was thus slain, his son versed in the use of excellent weapons became excited with wrath and sought to achieve the task his father left undone.

41. Him also Drona smilingly despatched to the mansion of Death by means of his shafts, like a large and ferocious tiger slaying a young deer in the deep forest.

42. While the Pandava troops were being thus reduced in number, O Bharata, the brave son of Jarasandha rushed against Drona.

43. Then with his arrowy showers he quickly rendered Drona in visible, like the clouds rendering the sun invisible.

44. Beholding that lightness of hands displayed by him, Drona, that crusher of Kshatriyas, began to discharge arrows by hundreds and thousands.

45. Then Drona completely covering that foremost of car-warriors nam-l. Jarasandha's son riding on a golden chariot, quickly slew him, before the very eyes of all the warriors.

46. Whoever then was carried before Drona, he became his destroyer. And like Death at the time of the dissolution, he wrested the lives out of all creatures.

47. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, proclaiming his name in the battle, Drona began to cover the Pandava troops with his thousands of shafts.

48. Shot by Drona, those arrows with his name engraved on them and whetted on stone, began to despatch men, elephants, and horses by hundreds in that battle.

49. Then like mighty Asuras slain by Takra, they were being slaughtered by Drona. The Panchalas then began to tremble like kine afflicted with the chill of winter.

50. When, O foremost of the Bharatas, the Pandava troops were thus being slaughtered by Drona, a loud wail of agony was uttered by them.

51. Scorched with the rays of the sun and wounded with the arrows of Drona, the Panchalas, panic struck as they were, became seized with anxiety.

52. Confounded by the net-work of arrows shot by Bharadwaja's son, the Panchala warriors then thought themselves to be seized by the thighs by alligators.

53. But after a while, O mighty monarch, the Chedis, the Srinjayas the Kasis, and the Kosalas, cheerfully rushed

against the son of Bharadwaja from a desire for battle.

54. The Chedis, the Pandavas, and the Panchalas then addressed one another saying—*Drona is slain, Drona is slain.* Thus speaking they assailed Drona.

55. Then those foremost of men fell upon Drona of great effulgence in that battle, desirous of despatching the latter to the abodes of Death.

56. As those heroes were struggling against him, the son of Bharadwaja with his arrows, despatched them to the regions of Death, specially those foremost among the Chedis.

57. When the best warrior of the Chedis were becoming reduced in number, the Panchalas began to tremble, being afflicted by the shaftsof Drona.

58. Beholding those terrible feats of Drona, O sire they began to exclaim aloud saying, 'O Bharata,' 'Oh Bhimasena,' 'O Dhristadyumna,'

59. They said :—Surely this Brahmana has practised mighty ascetic austerit es, by virtue of which enraged in battle he is consuming these foremost of Kshatriyas.

60. The duty of a Kshatriya is to fight, and that of a Brahmana to practise severe austerities. He has practised austerities and is skilled in the use of weapons and so he burns d wn by his very glances.

61. The foremost of the Kshatriyas entering into the blazing fire of Drona, dreadful and unquenchable, are being burnt down, O Bharat .

62. The highly effulgent Drona putting forth his prowess and his strength, is confounding all creatures and is slaying all our troops.'

63—64. Hearing those words of the Panchalas, Kshatradharma withstood Drona. Then the mighty Kshatradharma filled with rage, cut off with a crescent-shaped arrow Drona's bow with shafts fixed on its string. Thereat excited to the highest pitch of fury that crusher of Kshatriyas viz Drona,

65. Took up another bow, resplendent and capable of bearing great strain. Placing on its string a sharp arrow fatal to the foe,

66. The puissant Preceptor let it go drawing the bow-string back to the very ears. That arrow then killing Kshatradharman fell down on the Earth's surface.

67. With his heart cleft open, he fell down on the ground from his vehicle. Upon the death of Dhrishtadyumna's son, the troops began to tremble (in fear).

68. Thereafter the mighty Chekitana encountered Drona, and piercing the latter with ten arrows, once more wounded him on the breast.

69. He wounded Drona's charioteer with four and his four steeds with another four arrows. The preceptor then pierced the right arm of his adversary with sixteen arrows.

70. He pierced his standard with sixteen and his charioteer with seven shafts. When Chekitana's charioteer was killed, the horses ran wildly dragging the car along with them.

71. Then, O sire, beholding the horseless and the driverless chariot of Chekitana covered with Drona's arrow in battle,

72—73. The Pandavas and the Panchalas were seized with a great panic; then routing completely those assembled host of heroes consisting of Chedis, Panchalas and the Srinjayas, Drona appeared highly beautiful, O sire. With his hoary locks flowing down to the ear, blue in complexion, full eighty-five years of age,

74. The venerable Drona, though burdened with the weight of years then moved on the field like a youth of sixteen. Then O mighty monarch, as Drona careered fearlessly on the field of battle,

75. His adversaries considere' him to be none other than Indra himself armed with the thunder. Then, O king, the intelligent, Drupada thus spoke :—

76. 'Like a hungry tiger slaying inferior animals, Drona is slaying these Kshatriyas. Surely the wicked Duryodhana will obtain very miserable regions after Death.

77. It is through his co etousness that these foremost of the Kshatryas are lying prostrate on the field of battle being slain by hundreds, like so many quartered bovine bulls,

78. Weltering in blood and being the food of the jackals and the dogs." O mighty monarch, thus speaking, that commander of a Aukshauhini, Drupada, placing the Parthas before him, quickly rushed against Drona.

Thus ends the one hundaed and twenty fifth chapter, the desplay of Drona's prowess, in the Jayadratha-badha of th Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXVI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the armies of the Pandavas were thus being agitated on all sides, the Pandavas and the Panchalas, together with the Somakas retreated to a great distance.

2. When, O Bharata, that fierce and horripilating battle was raging furiously, it appeared that the hour of the world's dreadful dissolution had arrived.

3. When Drona was desplaying his prowess in battle, and constantly roaring, and when the Pandus, the Panchalas were being slaughtered and reduced in number,

4. King Yudhisthira the virtuous could not find any protector for himself. And O foremost of kings, he thought—'*how will it end*'.

5. Then longingly looking on all directions with the desire of having a sight of Partha, Yudhisthira was disappointed, and saw neither Arjuna nor Madhava

6. He could not then find that foremost of men having the monkey-chief for the device on his banner ; and could not also hear the twang of the Gandiva bow. He therefore became greatly depressed.

7. Without finding also that foremost of the Vrishnis namely Satyaki, that great car-warrior, king Yudhisthira the virtuous became overwhelmed with anxious thought and his limbs became weak.

8. Then getting no information whatever of those two best of men, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira obtained no peace of mind. The high-souled king then afraid of the reproaches of the world,

9. Began to think of the car of Sini's grandson :—"In the track of Phalguna, I have sent

10. Sini's grandson Satyaki, that one of true prowess, that giver of assurances to his friends. My anxiety that was for one only, is now for two, Satyaki and Arjuna.

11. I should now get information both of Satyaki and of Dhananjaya. Having sent Satyaki in the track of Pandu's son Arjuna,

12. Whom shall I now sent in the track of that Satwata hero. If now I strive to get information of my brother only,

13. Not taking any care for Yuyudhana, the world will blame me and say :—"King Yudhisthira the virtuous enquiring after his brother,

14—15. Neglects Satyaki of the Vrishni race, that hero of infallible prowess. Afraid as I am of the reproaches of men, I shall send Pritha's son Vrikodara in the track of the illustrious scion of Madhu's race. The affection I bear for that slayer of foes viz. Arjuna,

16. Is in no way greater than that I bear for that invincible hero of the Satwata race. That delighter of Sini's race has been entrusted with a commission on my behalf.

17. That mighty-warrior has either for the sake of a friend's words, or for the sake of his honor, has plunged into the Bharata host, like Makara entering into the ocean.

18. Hark the loud noise of the battle that the unretreating heroes are fighting with that intelligent champion of the Vrishni race !

19—20. Surely the odds are too many for him. It is therefore high time that I should think of rescuing him. It appears proper to me that armed with the bow, the son of Pandu *viz* Bhimasena should proceed to the spot where those two mighty car-warriors are. There is scarcely anything on earth that Bhima can not bear.

21. Exerting his best, he can alone withstand all the bowmen of the world. Depending on the prowess of his own arms, he can make head against all enemies.

22. With the help of the strength of arms of that hero of illustrious soul, we have been able to come back from our exile, and have never been defeated in battle.

23. If now Bhimasena goes to their rescue, Satwata and Phalguna will find a competent protector in his self.

24. Surely I should not cherish any anxiety for those two heroes, as both of them are versed in the use of all weapons and are protected by the son of Vasudeva himself.

25. However, it is my duty to make myself altogether unaxious on their account. Therefore should I engage Bhima to follow in the track of the Satwata hero.

26. Having done this, I should thaink my arrangements for the protection of Satyaki complete." Thus resolving in his mind, king Yudhisthira the virtuous,

27. Thus spoke to his charioteer :—Take me to the spot where Bhima is." Hearing the words of the virtuous king Yudhisthira, the charioteer versed in the art of horse-driving,

28. Drove that chariot adorned with gold, near where Bhimas was. Reaching Bhima, the king remembering the exegencies of the hour,

29. Became totally overwhelmed with grief, and entreated Bhima with numerous prayers. Then overwhelmed as he was with grief, the king summoned Bhima, near him.

30—31. Then Yudhisthira the son of Kunti addressing him said:—"O Bhima, I do not see the banner-device of that younger brother of mine, who on a single car vanquished the celestials, the Gandharvas and the Daityas in battle." Thereupon Bhima addressing the virtuous Yudhisthira who was in that pitiable plight said:—

32. "Never before did I see you afflicted with such great grief. In days gone by, you were our only comforter when we were afflicted with extreme distress.

33. Arise, arise, O foremost of kings! Command me what act of yours shall I do? O giver of honors, there is nothing which I can not accomplish.

34-35. O foremost of the Kurus, command me! Let not your heart give way to grief." Then king Yudhisthira, with a cheerless countenance and tearful eyes, said these words to Bhimasena sighing like a snake. 'In as much as I do hear the blast of the conch Pancha[illegible]nya,

36. Filled [illegible]h the breath of the illustrious and hig[illegible]ly courageous son of Vasudeva, I infer that your brother Dhananjaya today is slain on the field of battle.

37. Upon the slaughter of Arjuna, surely Janarddana is fighting. That hero on whose indomitable prowess the Pandavas rely,

38. He to whom we turn for help, like the celestials turning to the thousand-eyed deity at the times of our sorest calamities, surely that hero is now agitating the Bharata hosts in search of the ruler of the Sindhus.

39. O Bhima, we have seen him (Arjuna) gone, but we shall never see him return! Alas for Arjuna of dark-blue complexion, who is youthful in years, possessed of curling locks exceedingly charming, handsome and a mighty car-warrior,

40. Of broad breast, mighty arms, possessed of the tread of an infuriate elephant, of eyes like those of the Chakara, that inspirer of terror into the heart of the foes!

41. Good betide you! O slayer of foes, this indeed is the cause of my grief, O mighty armed one, for the sake of Arjuna and for that of the Satwata hero,

42. My grief is ever increasing, like fire increasing when libation of clarified butter is poured on it. I do not see the device on his banner, and this adds to my grief and anxiety all the more.

43. Upon the slaughter of your brother, surely Krishna conversant with all modes of warfare, is battling with the Kurus. Bring me the intelligence of that foremost of men, and of that mighty car-warrior of the Vrishni race,

44. Who has ere now followed in the track of your brother that mighty car-warrior. I am also overwhelmed with distress on account of this last-mentioned mighty arm-hered.

45. O son of Kunti do you hie yoursel[f] to the spot where Dhananjaya and Satyaki of great energy, have gone! This indeed is your duty.

46. O my most dutiful brother, carry out my behests as I am your elder brother. Think that Satyaki is dearer to you than your brother Arjuna (so try to help Satyaki the more).

47. O son of Pritha, desirous of doing me good, he has gone in search of Dhananjaya in an impassable track dreadful and in capable of being followed upon by warriors of inferior skill.

48. Beholding Krishna and Arjuna and the Satwata hero Satyaki sound and alive, inform me of the fact, O son of Pandu, by uttering your war-cry aloud.

Thus ends the one hundred and twenty sixth chapter, the anxiety of Yudhisthira, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXVII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Bhima said:—

1. Riding on the chariot formerly ridden by Brahma, Ishana, Indra and Varuna, Arjuna and Krishna have proceeded to battle! They can have no fear.

2. However, placing your command on my head, behold, I proceed. Do not give way to grief. Returning, I shall bring you intelligence of those foremost of men.

Sanjaya said:—

3. Having thus spoken, the highly powerful Bhimasena prepared to go having

given over the charge of protecting Yudhisthira to Dhristadyumna and other friends of the Pandavas.

4. The puissant Bhima then addressing Dhristadyumna said these words. "O mighty-armed one, it is all known to you, that Drona the mighty car-warrior."

5. Is ever watchful for capturing the very virtuous king Yudhisthira. O son of Prisata, when I am gone, there should be no other duty of yours,

6. Graver than that which enjoins you to look after the king—a duty which is vitally important to ourselves. King Yudhisthira, the son of Pritha, has commanded me to go. I venture not to contradict him.

7. Now I am proceeding to the spot where the doomed ruler of the Sindhus is. It is my duty to carry out the commands of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira to the very letters.

8. I am proceeding in the track of my brother and that intelligent scion of the Satwata race, namely Satyaki. So to-day, do you protect king Yudhisthira the son of Pritha in battle, exerting to the best of your prowess.

9. This indeed should be your foremost duty in the course of this fight." O mighty monarch, Dhristadyumna then replied to Vrikodara saying :—

10. "I will do, O Pritha's son, what you desire me to do. Go you with your heart at rest. Without slaying Dhrishtadyumna in battle, Drona

11. Will never succeed in humiliating king Yudhisthira the virtuous," Thereafter making the charge of protecting the royal son of Pandu over to Dhristadyumna,

12. And saluting his superiors and elder brother, Bhima proceeded in the track of Phalguna. That son of Kunti was then, O Bharata, embraced by the virtuous king Yudhisthira.

13. The latter then smelt the crown of his head, and pronounced blessings on him. Then circumambulating hosts of Brahmanas gratified and worshipped with presents,

14. And touching the eight kinds of auspicious articles, and drinking Kailataka honey, that hero with his eyes rolling and red in intoxication, felt his strength to be doubled.

15. The Vipras performed propitiatory rites for his benefit. Omens indicative of victory greeted his sight. Beholding these indications he experienced the pleasures of victory in anticipation.

16. Auspicious winds began to blow indicating his success in the coming encounter. Then the mighty-armed Bhimasena covered with armour, graced with beautiful ear-rings,

17. Adorned with *Angadas*, and his hands protected with leathern gloves, mounted on his car. His precious armour made of steel and adorned with gold,

18. Looked beautiful like a mighty cloud fringed with streaks of lightning. Attired beautifully in yellow, red, white and sable garments,

19. And with his neck protected with a neck-protector, he looked beautiful like a mass of cloud bearing the bow of Indra (rainbow). When Bhima was on the point of proceeding to battle against your troops,

90. The fierce blare of the conch Panchajannya, O ruler of men, was once more heard. Hea ing that dreadful blast capable of inspiring terror into the three worlds,

21. The very virtuous king Yudhisthira once more addressing Bhima of mighty arms said :—'Hark the sound of the conch (water-born) blown by the foremost of the Vrishni race,

22. Reverberating through the terrestrial and the aerial regions! Surely Savyasachin having been involved in great danger,

23—24. The wilder of the mace and the discus is battling with the Kurus! Surely numerous inauspicious omens are to-day being seen by the venerable Kunti, and Drupadi and Subhadra and all their friends. Therefore, O Bhima, at the top of your speed, proceed to the spot where Dhananjaya is.

25. O son of Pritha, the cardinal and subsidiary quarter appear to me to be void, in consiquence of my unsatisfied desire to see Dhananjaya and that hero of the Satwata race."

26. Then Vrikodara was repeatedly urged on by his elder brother, with the words "Proceed Proceed." Therefore O king, that highly puissant son of Pandu namely Bhimasena,

27. Covering his fingers with protectors made of leather, took up his bow. Urged on by his elder brother, that brother Bhimasena devoted as he was to the interests of his brothers,

28. Caused drums to be struck up. Then he blew his conch with great force, and uttering his war-cries, began to twang his bow.

29. With that sound, causing the hearts of his enemies to be depressed, he rushed upon the foe, assuming a dreadful aspect.

30. Fleet steeds, obedient to the reins, and of the foremost breed, neighing furiously, bore him. Those steeds of the fleetness of the wind or the mind, were driven by Visoka himself.

31. Drawing and rubbing and stretching with his hands the string of his bow, that son of Pritha began to crush and kill the vanguard of the enemy.

32. Then as that mighty-armed one proceeded onwards, the Panchalas together with the Somakas, all endued with heroism, followed him from behind, like the celestials following Maghavat.

33—35. Then, O mighty monarch, the brothers, Dussala, Chitrasena, Kundavedhi, Vivinsati, Durmukha, Dussaha, Vikarna, Sala, Vindu and Anuvindu, Sumukha, Dirghavahu, Sudarsana, Mandurakas, Suhasta, Susena, Dirghavahu, Abhaya, Raudrakaman, Suvarman, and Durvimochana, approaching Bhimasena, surrounded him from all sides.

36. Those foremost of car-warriors, those heroes and their following troops fighting heedfully and falling upon Bhimasena appeared highly beautiful.

37. Then that mighty car-warrior endued with heroism was surrounded by those warriors. Beholding them, the son of Kunti the highly powerful Bhimasena,

38. Furiously fell upon them like a lion attacking other inferior animals. Then those heroes displaying mighty weapons of celestial make,

39. Covered Bhima with their arrows like the clouds covering the sun. Passing through all those divisions, Bhima then rushed against that of Drona.

40. Then he poured his arrowy shower on the elephant division that was stationed in the front.

41. The son of the wind-god, mangling in no time that division of elephants, with his shafts, caused it to give way in all directions. Like beasts terrified at the roar of a *Sarabha* in the forest,

42. Those elephants began to fly away uttering distressful cries. Transgressing that division, he quickly assailed that of Drona.

43. Him then the preceptor checked like the continent checking the surging waves of the ocean; and then the latter smilingly pierced the former on his forehead with a *Naracha*.

44. Thereupon that son of Pandu appeared beautiful like the sun shooting his rays only in an upward direction. Then the Preceptor considering that, like Phalguna,

45. Bhima would also worship him, addressed the latter saying :—'O Bhimasena, you shall never succeed in penetrating into the host of your enemies,

46. Without, in the first instance defeating myself, O mighty one, who is now your foe. It was with my permission that your younger brother, with Krishna, has penetrated into this array.

47. But you shall never be able (or allowed) to enter into this division of mine." Thereupon the dauntless Bhima, hearing those words of the preceptor,

48-49. And waxing wroth, quickly replied to Drona with his eyes looking like burnished copper :—"O vilest of Brahmanas, it can not be that Arjuna has entered this array with your permission. He is invincible and is competent even to penetrate through the army of Sakra himself. It was only for honoring you that he offered you worship.

50. But, O Drona, I am no linient Arjuna. I am Bhimasena your enemy. We used to regard you as our father, preceptor and friend, and we were like your sons.

51. Thinking thus we used to humble ourselves to you. But as you speak such words to-day, it seems that all that has been changed.

52. If you take yourself to be our enemy, let it be as you think. Myself am Bhima and shall do towards you what should be done towards a foe."

53. Then Bhima whirling his mace that resembled the mace of the Destroyer, let it go, O king, at Drona; but Drona had quickly jumped down from his car.

54. The mace then crushed Drona's chariot with his horses, charioteer and standard; then Bhima grinded numerous warriors, like the tempest crushing mighty trees.

55. But once more your sons surrounded that foremost of car warriors. Meanwhile that foremost of smiters, Drona mounting on another car,

56. Stationed himself at the gate of the array ready to fight with Bhima. O mighty monarch, thereupon the puissant Bhimasena waxing wroth,

57. Covered the car division that was then placed before him, with a downpour of arrows. Then those mighty car-warriors, your sons, thus wounded in battle,

58. Endued as they were with great strength, fought on with Bhima, inspired with the hope of victory. Then Dussasana excited with wrath, hurled a lance at Bhima.

59. Desirous of slaying the son of Pandu, he then threw that lance at the former—lance that was made entirely of steel and that was exceedingly sharp. Then the mighty lance hurled by your son when it was coursing towards Bhima,

60—63. Was cut in twain by the latter and that appeared indeed very wonderful. Then the son of Pandu endued with great prowess, with three sharp arrows, slew the three warriors, Kundavedhin, Susena and Dirghanetra. Then again he slew the heroic Manduraka the bravest of your sons and the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus; then Bhima with another three arrows slew three other of your sons viz Abhaya, Rudrakarman and Durvimochana. Thus slaughtered by the puissant Bhima, your sons ,O mighty monarch,

64. Once more surrounded Bhima that foremost of smiters. Then they poured their arrows on Pandu's son of fearful deeds,

65-69. Like clouds drenching the mountain breast with their contents at the end of summer. Like a mountain receiving a shower of stones, the son of Pandu then received that arrowy shower, and that slayer of foes was none the less worse for it. Then the son of Kunti, as if smiling, despatched with his arrows, Vinda and Anuvinda together with Suvarman, to the abode of Death. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas,he pierced in battle, your heroic son Sudarsana, who fell down, and died on the spot. Then in no time, the son of Pandu, casting his eyes on all directions, began to agitate that car-host with his (fierce) arrows. Then like a herd of deer, terrified at the loud clatter of car-wheels,

70. Your sons, O ruler of men, began to desert their ranks; and afflicted with the fear of Bhima, they fled with all the speed at their command.

71. The son of Kunti pursued that mighty army of your sons from behind and, O king, he began to pierce the Kourava hosts right and left.

72 O mighty monarch, your soldiers then thus slaughtered by Bhima, shunning him began to fly away, urging their excellent steeds to the top of their speed.

73. Vanquishing them in battle, the highly puissant Bhimasena that son of Pandu, sent up a loud war-cry and began to strike his palms against his arms.

74. The mighty Bhima then having caused that great slapping sound and there by striking terror into the host of the enemy and slaying many best warriors and passing through that division, hied towards the division of Drona.

Thus ends the one hundred and twenty-seventh chapter, the entrance of Bhima in the Kourava host and the display of his prowess, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA—)

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. The Preceptor then, desirous of checking the progress of the son of Pandu, who had now crossed the car-host, began to cover him smilingly with his arrows.

2. Then seeming to dirnk in the arrowy showers shot from Drona's bow and confounding your troops by his illusive powers, he began to rush against your sons.

3. Urged on by your sons, many kinge all foremost bowmen, rushing with forcs began to surround Bhima from all sides.

4. Then, O Bharata, surrounded by them, Bhima smiling and roaring like a lion, took up a dreadful mace.

5. He then with force hurled at them that mace capable of destroying the foe, like Indra hurling his thunder against his enemies. Hurled with force and of great strength,

6. That mace began to crush, O king, your troops in battle; and O king, it seemed to fill the earth with its loud noise.

7. Burning greatly, that dreadful mace terrified your sons. Then beholding that mace of great momentum wrapt up in blazing flames course towards themselves,

8. Your troops began to fly away uttering cries. At the unbearable sound of that mace, O sire,

9. Men began to fall down on the spot they stood; and many car-warriors dropped down from their cars. Slaughtered by Bhima armed with a mace in his hands, your troops,

10—11. Began to fly away terrified from the field of battle, like deer attacked by a tiger. The son of Kunti then causing his brave adversaries to fly away, passed

through that division with great force, like Suparna, that king of birds. While Bhima that leader of leaders of car hosts was thus spreading carnage in your troops,

12. O mighty monarch, the son of Bharadwaja, *viz.*, Drona rushed upon Bhima, checking the latter with his showers of arrows.

13—14. Then he uttered a loud war-cry, inspiring there with the Pandavas with terror. Then a dreadful combat commenced between the high-souled Bhima and Drona, that resembled that between the Gods and the Asuras. Then with the sharp shafts shot from the bow of Drona,

15. Numerous heroes were slain by hundreds and by thousands. Then jumping down from his car, and rushing with fury, the son of Pandu,

16. With his eyes closed, on foot, attacked Drona. Then like a bovine bull receiving a shower of rain without any pain whatsoever,

17—18. Bhima that foremost of men received that shower of arrows, proceeding from Drona's car. O sire, although wounded by Drona in battle, that puissant hero, catching hold of the shaft of Drona's car with his hands, over-threw it. Thereupon Drona thus over-thrown with vehemence by Bhima,

19. Mounted on another car, and flew towards the gate of the array, and at that time, his driver urged his steeds to the top of their speed.

20. O foremost of the Kurus that feat achieved by Bhimasena was indeed wonderful. Then the mighty Bhimsena, ascending once more his own chariot,

21. Rushed furiously upon the division of your son ; like a tempest crushing rows of trees, he then began to crush that host of the Kshatriyas.

22. He then proceeded resisting the hostile troops like mountains checking the surging sea ; then coming upon the division of the Bhojas, protected by Hridika's son,

23. O king, Bhimasena crushed it horribly and then passed through it. Terrifying his enemies with the sound of his palm-strokes, O sire,

24. Bhima defeated them all like a tiger defeating a herd of bulls. Then passing through the Bhoja and Kamvoja divisions,

25. And through that of the countless Mlechchas, who were all accomplished in smiting, Bhima obtained sight of Satyaki, the mighty car-warrior engaged in fighting.

26. He then advanced quickly and resolutely, desirous of having a sight of Dhananjaya.

27. Passing through all your divisions then, the son of Pandu obtained a sight of Dhananjaya engaged in battle.

28. Then the highly puissant Bhima, that foremost of men, seeing Arjuna exerting vigourously for bringing about the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus, sent up a loud war-cry,

29—30. Like, O king, the clouds roaring at the rainy seasons. That dreadful roar of the roaring Bhimasena was then heard, O foremost of the Kurus, by Partha and the son of Vasudeva engaged in battle. Those two heroes hearing at the same time the war-cry of the mighty Bhima,

31. Themselves began to shout their war-cries, desirous of having a sight of Bhimasena. Then Pritha's son Arjuna and he of Madhu's race, both uttering their war-cries,

32. Rushed upon your army, O mighty monarch, like two bovine bulls. Hearing the shouts of Bhimasena and those of Phalguna the fierce bowman,

33. The very virtuous king Yudhisthira, O monarch, became greatly delighted. Hearing their shouts the king then was relieved of his burden of anxiety.

34. That sovereign then become hopeful of Dhananjaya's success in the battle. While the furious Bhima was thus roaring,

35. The mighty-armed Yudhisthira that foremost of all virtuous persons, that son of Dharma, reflected smilingly for a while and then thus worded the thought that then filled his heart.

36. "O Bhima, you have indeed sent me information ; you have truly carried out the commands of your superior. O son of Pandu, they cannot have any hope of victory in battle, whose enemy you yourself are.

37. It is indeed fortunate that Savyasachin, that conqueror of Kuvera still lives. It is also fortunate that Satyaki of indomitable prowess is sound and safe.

38. It is fortunate that I hear the roars of the roaring Vasudeva and Dhananjaya. He who having vanquished Sakra in battle, gratified the God of fire,

39. It is fortunate, that that slayer of foes Phalguna still lives. He depending upon whose prowess of arms we live,

40—44. Through good fortune, that Arjuna still lives and is slaughtering his foes. He who vanquished with a single bow the Daityas Nivata Kavacha who were incapable of being defeated even by the

celestials themselves, it is indeed fortunate that that son of Pritha still lives. He, who in the city of the Matsyas defeated the united Kouravas come with the intent of seizing the cows of the Matasya king, it is indeed fortunate that that son of Pritha still lives. He who by the strength of his arms slew the fourteen thousand Kekayas in battle, it is fortunate that that son of Pritha still lives. He who for the sake of rescuing Duryodhana had vanquished with the force of his weapons the mighty king of the Gandharvas, it is fortunate that that son of Pritha still lives. Decked with the diadem, and garlands, endued with prowess, owning white steeds and having Krishna for his charioteer,

45. That Arjuna, ever dear to me, through good fortune still lives. Afflicted as he is sorely with the grief caused by the death of his son, and striving to achieve a most difficult feat,

46. And even now endeavouring to compass the death of Jayadratha, he that hath made a terrible vow, *viz.*, Dhananjaya, will he succeed in slaying the king of the Sindhus in battle ?

47. Shall I behold Arjuna again before the sun set, when he will return having fulfilled his vow through the help of Vasudeva's son ?

48. Will the ruler of the Sindhus ever anxious for achieving the good of king Duryodhana, afford delight unto his foes, being slain by Phalguna.

49. Will king Duryodhana, beholding the ruler of the Sindhus slain by Arjuna, conclude peace with ourselves ?

50. Will the wicked Duryodhana beholding his brothers slain in battle by Bhimasena, conclude peace with us ?

51. Will the wicked Duryodhana beholding many other mighty warriors slain and fallen on the field, repent for his own folly.

52. Will our enimity end with the sacrifice of Bhisma's self alone? Will Suyodhana conclude peace for the safety of the rest of the Kshatriyas ?"

53. When in his heart overflowing with compassion, king Yudhisthira was thus thinking, on the other part of the field a terrible combat raged."

Thus ends the one hundred and twenty-eighth chapter, the joy of Yudhisthira, in the Jayadrath-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXIX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADH PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. What heroes of my army resisted the mighty Bhimasena when he was thus roaring like clouds surcharged with thunder ?

2. O Sanjaya, I do not find that warrior in the three worlds, who can, stand before Bhimasena when he is excited with rage.

3. I do not, O son, find that warrior who can stand before Bhima when in battle with his mace uplifted, he stands like Death incarnate.

4. He that slays elephants with elephants, destroys cars with cars, who will stand before that Bhima not excepting Indra of hundred-sacrifices ?

5. Who amongst those devoted to the interests of Duyodhana, would withstand Bhimasena in battle, excited as he was with wrath and engaged in slaughtering my sons ?

6. What persons, stood before the Bhima-conflagration when it was engaged in consuming the heaps of straw and grass constituted by my sons ?

7. Who were they that surrounded Bhima in battle, beholding him crush my sons one after another, like Death's self-destroying all creatures ?

8. I do not fear Arjuna, or Krishna or Satyaki or him born of the sacrificial fire (Dhristadyumna) so much as I do Bhimasena.

9. O Sanjaya relate to me, what heroes advanced against the blazing Bhima-fire which so greatly consumed by sons ?

Sanjaya said :—

10. When the mighty car-warrior Bhimasena was thus roaring, the mighty Karna rushed at him, himself uttering a loud shout (in response).

11. Unable to bear the roar of Bhima, he began to twang his bow capable of withstanding a great strain. Then the mighty Karna, out of a desire for battle displaying his strength,

12. Checked the career of Bhima ; then beholding the son of Vikartana stand before him with hostile intentions, Vrikodara,

13. Became inflamed with wrath ; and that mighty hero discharged at him numerous shafts whetted on stone. Karna received all those shafts, and sped many in return.

14—15. In that battle between Bhima and Karna, hearing the sound of their palm-strokes, the limbs of on-looking and fighting warriors and horsemen and elephants, began to tremble. Hearing the defeaning roars uttered by Bhimasena on the field of battle,

16. The foremost of the Kshatriyas regarded the welkin and the earth to be filled completely by its echo. Then again at the dreadful cries uttered by the illustrious son of Pandu,

17—18. The bows of all the warriors fell down on the earth. Then, O mighty monarch, seized with panic and dejected, the steeds and elephants, repeatedly discharged urine and excreta. Numerous dreadful omens of evil then appeared to view.

19. During that fierce fight between Karna and Bhimasena, the sky became covered with flights of vultures, and Kankas.

20. Karna then pierced Bhima with twenty arrows, and next swifty pierced the latter's charioteer with five arrows.

21. Then the highly puissant Bhimasena endued with great activity smilingly sped at Karna in that battle a set of sixty-four arrows.

22. Then at him, O mighty monarch, Karna shot four arrows. But before these arrows could reach him, with nine arrows of depressed knots, Bhima,

23. Cut them in numerous parts, displaying at the same time his great lightness of hands. Karna then shrouded him in a net-work of numerous arrows.

24. Thus although shrouded by Karna on all sides, that mighty car-warrior that son of Pandu, cut off the bow of Karna near his grasp.

25. He then pierced him with ten arrows of close knots. Then taking up another bow and stringing it, the son of the charioteer

26. That mighty car-warrior of dreadful deeds, pierced Bhima in battle (with many arrows). Thereat highly enraged, with three arrows of depressed knots, Bhima

27. Struck with force on the breast of the son of the charioteer. With those arrows stuck on the centre of his breast, Karna appeared beautiful like

28 A mighty mountain with its three peaks towering high. Pierced as he was with those excellent arrows, streams of blood began to flow down his person,

29. Like streams of liquified red chalk flowing down the sides of a mountain. Afflicted with that mighty wound inflicted by Bhima, Karna was a little flurried.

30. Then fixing an arrow on his bow, O sire,he pierced Bhima therewith; and then shot arrows by hundreds and thousands.

31. Thus though then quickly covered with arrows by that resolute bowman namely Karna, yet that son of Panda smilingly cut off the bow-string of the former.

32. Then with a broad-headed shaft, Bhima despatched Karna's charioteer to the abode of Death; then that mighty car-warrior deprived the latter's steeds of their lives.

33. Jumping down from the car of which the steeds were slain, O ruler of men, the mighty car-warrior Karna ascended the chariot of Vrisasena.

34. Then the valiant Bhima, having defeated Karna uttered a loud war-cry, that resembled the roar of the rain-cloud Parjannya.

35. Hearing that roar of his, Yudhisthira became filled with delight, as he thought that Karna had been defeated, O Bharata by Bhimasena.

36. Then the Pandava troops simultaneously blew their conchs. Hearing that sound of challenge emitted by the enemy, your own troops shouted aloud.

37. Pritha's son (Arjuna) then twanged his bow, and Krishna blew his water-born conch. But drowning all those sounds, the shout of Bhima rose and

38. Was heard by all your troops, O sire. Then those two combatants, *viz*, Karna and Bhima each struck the other with straight-flying arrows. The son of Radha shot his shafts mildly, but the son of Pandu shot those of his with great vehemence.

Thus ends the one hundred and twenty ninth chapter, the defeat of Karna, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. When his army had been shattered and when Arjuna, Bhimasena and the Satwata hero Satyaki had all gone after the ruler of the Sindhus, your son Duryodhana proceeded towards Drona,

2. On a single car and in all haste and reflecting on the various measures to be adopted. That chariot of your son driven with great celerity,

3. And endued with the fleetness of the wind or thought, dashed towards Drona. Then your son with eyes red in rage addressing Drona said :—

4. Arjuna and Bhimasena and the invincible Satyaki and many other mighty car-warriors, having defeated all our troops,

5—6. Have succeeded in reaching near the ruler of the Sindhus, O slayer of foes. There they are fighting—all these indomitable and mighty car warriors vanquishing all our troops. But O giver of honor, how is it, that you have to-day been trangressed by Bhima and Satyaki?

7. O foremost of the Brahmanas, your defeat by that scion of the Satwata race and by Arjuna is wonderful like the drying up of the ocean itself!

8. People are saying—'How is it that Drona that master of archery has been defeated by Bhimasena

9. Indeed all warriors are thus speaking and it should be disgraceful to you. I see that the destruction of my unfortunate self is inevitable.

10—11. But when, O foremost of men, all the three mighty car-warriors have transgressed you, tell us what you have to say on the business at hand. Let by gones be by-gones. O giver of honor, now think what is to be done at present. Speak quickly what should next be done for the ruler of the Sindhus on the present crisis, and let that also be quickly carried out into action.

Drona said :—

12. O mighty monarch, there are many things to be thought of, but hear what should be done now. Three mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host have penetrated into our army.

13. We have as much cause of apprehension behind those three as we have before them. But to my mind the cause of apprehension is greater there where both Krishna and Dhananjaya are.

14. The Bharata army have simultaneously been attacked both from the van and the rear. At this crisis, I consider our foremost duty is to protect the ruler of the Sindhus.

15. Afraid as he is of the enraged Dhananjaya, he should be regarded as the primary object of our protection, O sire. The two heroes, Vrikodara and Yuyudhana have also proceeded towards the king of the Sindhus.

16. The dire result of the game of dice, planned by the ingenuity of Sakuni, has now overtaken you. There were no actual victory or defeat in the assembly in that game.

17. Now that we are engaged in this battle, we will reap victory or defeat. Those innocent things with which Sakuni played in the assembly of the Kurus,

18. And which he knew to be dice, are in reality not dice, but mighty arrows incapable of being defeated. Those dice have now been changed into shafts capable of mangling your bodies.

19. Now in this field where numerous Kurus have been assembled, know the troops to be the players, the and arrows the dice, O ruler of men.

20. In this game of dice, know the ruler of the Sindhus to be the stake. Indeed Jayadratha is the precious stake for which we are fighting to-day.

21. For these reasons, O mighty monarch, it behoves us all to effect the protection of the Sindhu king at the very cost of our own lives.

22. O sire, there indeed will our victory or defeat be known where those fierce bowmen are exerting themselves in protecting the king of the Sindhus.

23. Therefore do you hie yourself to that spot and endeavour to protect those protectors of the Sindhu king. I shall stay here and despatch others (for helping the Sindhu king).

24. I shall also engage with the Panchalas united with the Pandvas, and the Srinjayas." Then at the command of the preceptor, Duryodhana quickly proceeded to the spot indicated by the former,

25. Attened by his followers, and bent on achieving a fierce feat. Mean-while the two protectors of Arjuna's car-wheels, *viz*, the Panchala princes, Yudhamanyu and Uttamanjas,

26. Were proceeding towards Savyasachin, by the skirts of the Kourava troops. The two princes O monarch, were checked by Kritavarman,

27. When they were trying to find Arjuna who had penetrated into your army desirous of battle. The king of the Kurus, saw them proceeding by the skirts of his army.

28. Then the mighty Duryodhana of the Bharata race quickly began a terrible fight

with those two brothers endued with great activity.

29. Then those two foremost of the Kshatriyas, both classed as *Maharathas* assailed Duryodhana with bows ready for use.

30. Then Yudhamanyu pierced him with thirty arrows furnished with wings of the *Kanka*-feathers; the former then pierced the latter's charioteer with twenty and his four horses with four arrows.

31. Then with a single arrow Duryodhana cut off the standard of Yudhamnya; and then with another arrow your son cut off the latter's bow.

32. With a *Valla* then he felled his adversary's charioteer from his nich in the car, and with four arrows wounded the four steeds.

33. Thereupon Yudhamanyu excited with wrath pierced your son on the breast with thirty arrows in all quickness.

34. Similarly Uttamoujas waxing wroth pierced Duryodhana's charioteer with arrows decked with gold, and despatched him to the abode of Death.

35. Duryodhana also, O foremost of kings, slew the four steeds of the Panchala prince Uttamoujas, and also both this *Parshni*-drivers.

36. Having his horses and his charioteer slain, Uttamoujas ascended the car of his brother Yudhamanyu with great celerity.

37. Ascending the car of his brother, he wounded the horses of Duryodhana with numerous arrows, and the horses then slain fell down dead on the ground.

38. When the steeds had fallen the puissant Yudhamanyu with a excellent shaft cut off Duryodhana's bow and his leathern gloves.

39. Then that foremost of warriors Duryodhana, jumping down from his chariot of which the steeds were slain rushed at the Panchala princes with a mace in his grasp.

40. Beholding that enraged subduer of hostile cities make towards themselves, Yudhamanya and Uttamoujas jumped down from the terrace of their cars.

41. Then that one armed with the mace, with a stroke of his weapon pressed that excellent car decked with gold to the ground together with its horses charioteer and standard.

42. Thus having slain the steeds and and charioteer of his adversaries, your son that afflicter of his foes having his own horses and charioteer slain, ascended the car of the ruler of Madras.

43. Those two foremost of Panchalas, those princes both mighty car-warriors, ascending two other cars, proceeded towards Vibhatsu.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirtieth chapter, the battle between Duryodhana and the Panchala princes, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. When that hair-stirring battle continued to be fought and when all the warriors were filled with anxiety, and were greatly afflicted,

2. O foremost of the Bharatas, Radha's son advanced against Bhima for battle, like one infuriate elephant rushing against a compeer in the same state.

Dhritarastra said:—

3. How raged the battle, near Arjuna's chariot between those two mighty car-warriors, Bhima and Karna, both possessed of great strength?

4. Once before, Karna was vanquished by Bhima in battle: how could he then again assail Bhimsena?

5. How could Bhima proceed against Suta's son, that mighty car-warriors regarded as the foremost of all warriors on earth.

6. Having worsted Bhisma and Drona, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira entertained not so much apprehension from any body else as he did from Karna.

7. Thinking of the mighty car-warrior Karna, he passes many sleepless nights from fear. How then could Bhima proceed against that son of Suta?

8. O Sanjaya, how could indeed Bhima fight with Karna, that best of all warriors, that hero devoted to the Brahmanas, endued with prowess and never flying away from fight.

9. How did those two mighty car-warriors Karna and Vrikodara fight with each other, in that combat that raged in the neighbourhood of Partha's chariot?

10. Knowing his brotherhood towards the Pandavas and possessing a compassionate temparament and remembering the words of Kunti, how could the son of Suta fight with Bhimasena?

11. How did Bhima, that hero, fight with Suta's son Karna, keeping alive the memory of the wrongs inflicted on him by the latter in days gone by?

12. O Suta, my son Duryodhana fondly cherishes the hope that Karna will obtain victory in battle over the united Pandavas.

13. How did that one, on whom my wicked son's hope of victory rested, fight with Bhimasena of fierce deeds.

14. How did Bhima also fight with that son of Suta, O sire, relying on whom my sons provoked hostilities with many mighty car-warriors?

15. How did Bhima fight with that son of a charioteer, remembering the numerous wrongs inflicted on them to have their cause in him?

16. How did Bhima fight with that highly puissant son of Suta, who on a single car had vanquished the three worlds?

17. How did Bhima then fight with that son of Suta who was born with a pair of (natural) ear-rings, and covered in a coat of mail.

18. As you are conversant with these topics, O Sanjaya, tell me truly in detail how the battle between these two heroes, was fought, and who obtained victory.

Sanjaya said:—

19. Abandoning then that foremost of car-warriors namely, the son of Radha, Bhimsena strove to reach the spot where the heroic Krishna and Dhananjaya were.

20. Then as he was proceeding, the son of Radha assailing him began to shower shafts furnished with wings of *Kanka*-feather on him, like clouds showering rain on the mountain.

21. Then the valorous son of Adhiratha, with his beautiful face like a blooming lotus lighted up with a smile, challenged Bhimasena as he was coursing onwards thus:—

Karna said:—

22. O Bhima! your foes never thought of your fighting even in their dreams. Why do you show me your back from a desire for seeing Arjuna?

23. O delighter of the Pandavas! this conduct is not worthy of the son of Knnti. Confronting me do you ,over me with a shower of arrows."

Sanjaya said:—

24. Bhimasena then did not put up with that challenge of Karna tamely. But wheeling his car in a semicircle, he began to fight with the son of Suta.

25. In that combat when that one conversant with all weapons and clad in mail viz Karna was proceeding against him, the illustrious Bhima pierced him with straight-flying arrows.

26. Desirous of reaching the end of all those hostilities, he began to rob Karna's strength, out of a desire for slaying him. Having slain many other Kouravas, the mighty Bhima

27. That vindictive son of Pandu, excited with wrath, that slayer of foes, O sire, began to discharge at Karna many showers of fearful arrows.

28. Then the highly puissant son of Suta, by means of the illusion of his weapon devoured up all those showers of arrows poured by that one of the gait of an infuriate elephant.

29. O mighty monarch, duly favoured by knowledge, then that fierce bowman Karna began to career on the field of battle like a teacher of the military science.

30. The wrathful son of Radha then seemed to insult with his smiles, Bhimasena who was fighting in great anger.

31 But the son of Kunti did not brook that derisive smile of Radha's, son in the midst of many other brave warriors, who were looking at that fight between them.

32. Excited to the highest pitch of rage, the mighty Bhimasena, with several *Vatsadantas*, pierced Karna on the centre of his chest, like a guide goring a mighty elephant with the hook.

33. Once more with twenty one whetted shafts furnished with wings, and duly dis charged, Bhimasena pierced Suta's son of variegated armour.

34. Then the heroic Karna pierced each of the steeds of Bhima with five shafts,—steeds that were decked with golden caparisons, and endued with the fleetness of the wind.

35. O king, thereafter, a net-work of arrows was woven, within the twinkling of an eye, around the car of Bhima by the mighty Karna.

36. O mighty monarch, the son of Pandu with his car, standard and charioteer, was covered all over with the arrows shot from Karna's bow.

37. Then with sixty-four arrows, Karna shattered the tough armour of Bhima to pieces; and waxing wroth he wounded Pritha's son with *Narachas* capable of penetrating through the very vitals.

38. Then the mighty-armed Vrikodara unmindful of all those shafts shot from Karna's bow, began to strike dauntlessly the son of Suta.

39. Bhima then with his body struck with the arrows discharged from Karna's bow,that resembled snakes of virulent poison did indeed feel no pain, O mighty monarch.

40. Then the highly puissant Bhimasena pierced Karna in that battle, with thirty-two *vallas* of great sharpness and energy.

41. Then Karna, indifferently covered Bhima of mighty arms and desirous of the slaughter of the Sindhu king, with a tremendous shower of arrows.

42. In that battle the son of Radha fought mildly with Bhima, but Bhima fought with the former wrathfully remem-bering all thier former hostilities.

43. Bhima excited with wrath, did not bear that insult ; and that slayer of foes quiekly sped a shower of shafts at Karna.

44. Those shafts then discharged by Bhimasena in that battle,fell upon the heroic Karna like so many humming birds.

45. Furnished with golden wings, keen points, and discharged from the bow of Bhimasena, those arrows covered Radha's son like flights of insects covering a blazing fire.

46. Then that foremost of car-warriors viz Karna covered on all sides with those arrows, O king, O Bharata, shot numerous fierce arrows at Bhima.

47. Vrikodara then cut off with many shafts all those arrows of Karna that ornament of battle,—arrows that resembled the bolt of heaven, before they could reach him.

48. But once more, O Bharata, that subduer of foes viz Vikartana's son Karna, covered Bhimasena with a shower of arrows.

49. O Bharata, we then beheld Bhimasena thus pierced all over with arrows, resemble a procupine with its quills erect.

50. Then that hero Vikodara held all those shafts, furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and shot from the bow of Karna, like the sun holding his own myriad rays.

51. His body steeped in blood, Bhima then appeared beautiful like a *Asoka* tree in the spring covered all over with blossoms.

52. But the mighty armed Bhima with his eyes roiling in rage, did not for long, bear that conduct of Karna in battle patiently.

53. Thereafter he pierced Karna in battle with twenty five *Narachas*; pierced therewith Karna appeared beautiful like a white mountain with his sides covered over with snakes of virulent poison.

54. Then once more that one of prowess resembling that of the immortals, pierced that reckless son of a Suta in his vital limbs with two sets of arrows numbering six and eight respectively.

55. Again the valiant Bhimasena with another arrow smilingly cut off the bow of Karna with great quickness.

56. Quickly did he then slay with his arrows Karna's four steeds and charioteer. He then pierced Karna on the breast with *Narachas* of the effulgence of solar rays.

57. Those winged shafts piercing Karna through, fell down on the earth like the rays of the sun penetrating through masses of rain clouds.

58. Wounded with those arrows and with his bow cut open, Karna was afflicted with great pain; although proud of his manliness,he then proceeded to another part of the field.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-first chapter, the defeat of Karna, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drana Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)— *Continued.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Beholding, O Sanjaya, him on whom the hope of victory of my sons rested, compelled to turn his face away from the field of battle, what did king Duryodhna say ?

2. How did the puissant Bhima ever proud of prowess, fight then ? What did then Karna do, beholding Bhima blaze forth like a mighty fire in battle ?

Sanjaya said :—

3. Riding on another duly furnished car, Karna then rushed at Pandu's son, like the ocean lashed into fury by the tempest.

4. Then, O ruler of men, beholding Adhiratha's son excited with rage, your sons considered Bhimasena to be a libation poured on fire.

5. Then dreadfully slapping his palms and producing whizzes with his arrows, the son of Radha began to shower arrows on the car of Bhimasena.

6. Once more, O king, the encounter between the heroic son of Vikartana and the high-souled Bhima, raged furiously.

7. Filled with wrath and desirous of slaying one another, O mighty-armed one, they began to look at each other as if to burn each other down with their glances.

8. Their eyes became fierce and red in rage, and they breathed like two snakes. Those two slayers of enemies, those two heroes, then began to mangle each other with their arrows.

9. They fought on with one another like two furious tigers or two swift-flying hawks or two enraged Sarabhas.

10. Then that subduer of foes, *viz.*, Bhima remembering the hardhips undergone by him at the game of dice, during his exile in the woods, and residence in the city of Virata ;

11. And recollecting the despoliation of the kingdom swelling with prosperity and gems by yours sons, and various other injuries inflicted upon the Pandavas, by yourself and the son of Suta ;

12. And bearing in mind the fact that you had conspired to burn the innocent Kunti with her sons, and remembering the woes of Krishna in the midst of the assembly at the hands of those wretches ;

13. As also the holding of her locks by Dussasana and the abusive speech uttered by Karna, O Bharata,

14. To this effect—"Take you another husband, for, all your husbands are dead ; the sons of Pritha have merged into hell and are like sesamum seed without kernel—"

15. Remembering also those words, O descendant of the Kuru race, that were uttered by the Kouravas in your presence, and the fact that your son had been desirous of enjoying Krishna as a slave,

16. Recollecting also those words, harsh and cruel, uttered by Karna, when the sons of Pandu were about to go to the forest, clad in deer-skins ;

17. And keeping alive in his remmory the brag your vindictive and foolish son, then in prosperity, indulged in holding the woe stricken sons of Pritha in the light of mere straws—

18. Indeed the virtuous-souled Bhima that slayer of opponents recollecting all these hardships and those he had undergone since his childhood, became disregardful of his very life.

19. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, stretching his invincible and gold-decked bow, Bhima rushed at Karna, reckless of his very life.

20. Then with a net-work woven with arrows whetted on stone, lustrous like the rays of the sun spread around the car of Karna, Bhima intercepted the rays of the sun.

21. Thereupon Adhiratha's son, smiling (in contempt) tore away Bhima's net-work of arrows, by means of his own winged shafts whetted on stone.

22. Then the mighty car-warrior of mighty arms and great strength, *viz.*, that son of Adhiratha, pierced with nine whetted and mighty shafts that mighty warrior Bhima.

23. Assailed with those winged shaft, like an elephant assailed with the hook, Vrikodara then dauntlessly rushed against Suta's son.

24. Then as that foremost of the Pandavas was rushing with fury at him, Karna, excited with wrath, rushed at him like an infuriate elephant rushing at another;

25. Then blowing his conch whose blast resembled the sound of a hundred Bheris, he agitated the hostile array that resembled the surging sea.

26. Beholding his army teeming with elephants, horses, cars and infantry then agitated, Bhima approaching Karna began to cover him with arrows.

27. Karna thereupon caused his own horses of the hue of swans to be mingled with those of Bhimasena of the hue of bears, and covered in his turn the son of Pandu, with his shafts.

28. Beholding those steeds of the hue of bears and fleet as the wind, mingled with those of Karna of the hue of swans, cries of *Oh* and *Alas*, rose among the army of your son.

29. Those horses, fleet as the wind, thus mingled together, looked exceedingly beautiful like white and black clouds, O king, mingled together in the firmament.

30. Beholding Karna and Vrikodara burning with rage with their eyes coppery therewith, your mighty car-warriors began to tremble with fear.

31. The field of battle where they fought, soon became dreadful like the abode of Yama ; and O foremost of the Bharatas, it became as repulsive to the sight as the domain of the king of departed spirits.

32. Your warriors, who were then looking upon that battle as upon a sport in an arena, could not find any of them get any advantage over the other.

33. They only then saw the clash and the mingling of the mighty weapons shot by those warriors, as the consequence

brought about by the wicked policy of you and your sons, O ruler of men.

34. Those two heroes of wonderful prowess, those two slayers of their of foes, the 1-covering each other with their arrows covered next the welkin with the net-work of their arrows.

35. Desirous of slaying each other, those two mighty car-warriors shooting sharp arrows at each other became worthy of being looked at like two clouds surchrged with rain.

36. O Lord, those two subduers of foes shooting arrows decked with gold, illumined the welkin like meteors illumining the skies.

37. O king, the arrows, furnished with vulterince wings and discharged by Bhima, appeared beautiful like rows of maddened swans ranging through the welkin.

38. Then beholding Bhima that subduer of foes engaged with the son of Suta, Krishna and Dhananjaya considered a heavy burden to be placed on the former.

39. As Karna and Bhima, desirous of baffling each other shot numerous arrows, many elephants, horses and men, wounded therewith, fell down dead ;

40. And in consequence of those falling and fallen creatures, deprived of life and counting by thousands, great was the carnage that then spread in the ranks of your army.

41. O foremost of the Bharatas, the field became soon covered over with the corpses and carcarsses of slain men, horses, and elephants.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-second chapter, the battle between Bhima and Karna in the Jayadratha, badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Indeed I consider Bhima's prowess to be very wonderful, inasmuch as he fought with Karna of great agility.

2. Indeed that Karna who is competent enough of resisting the celestials together with the *Yakshas*, *Asuras* and men all armed with numerous kinds of weapon,

3. How is it that that Karna could not vanquish in battle that son of Pritha, of great effulgence ? O Sanjaya tell me all you know about it in detail.

4. Tell me how the battle between them raged—battle in which each staked his very life. Meseems each of them was capable of conquering, or each might have suffered defeat, (at the hand of the other).

5. Obtaining Suta's son Karna to help him, my son Duryodhana is confindent of securing victory over the Pandavas with Govinda and the Satwatas.

6. However, hearing of the repeated defeats of Karna by Bhimasena of dreadful deeds, a swoon seems to overtake me.

7. I regard the Kouravas as already slain, in consequence of the evil policy of my son. O Sanjaya, Karna will never be able to vanquish the sons of Pritha, those illustrious bowmen.

8. In all the battles that Karna has fought with the sons of Pandu, the latter have worsted him on the field of battle.

9. The Pandavas are incapable of being vanquished even by the celestials led by Vasava himself. But my pervert son Duryodhana will not take cognisance of this fact.

10. Having robbed Yudhisthira the son of Priths who is like the Lord of wealth, of his wealth, my foolish son sees not the impending fall, like a searcher of honey (on the mountains).

11. Having robbed by means of his deceit, the kingdom of those high-souled ones, my son conversant with deceit, thinks it to be irrecoverably his own ; and so always insults the Pandavas.

12. Those high-souled sons of Pandu, who ever treaded the paths of rectitude, were also insulted by myself who am over-fondly attached to my sons, and am of selfish temperament.

13. The foresighted Yudhisthira that son of Pritha was ever desirous of peace. But my sons turned him out, taking him to be incapable (of launching on war).

14. Bearing in mind all those hardships and all other insults offered to the Pandavas, the mighty-armed Bhima fought with Suta's son.

15. O Sanjaya, relate to me, how Bhima and Karna, those two foremost of warriors fought with each other, desirous of taking each other's life.

Sanjaya said :—

16. Hear, O king, how the battle between Karna and Bhima raged like that between two elephants desirous of slaughtering each other in the forest.

17. O king, the enraged son of Vikartana then pierced with thirty arrows that

chastiser of foes viz Bhimasena who excited with rage, had been putting forth his prowess.

18. O foremost of the Bharatas, Vikartana's son then wounded Bhima with many shafts of keen points, and great impetuousity and decked with gold.

19. But when Karna was engaged in wounding him, Bhima cut off his bow with three sharp shafts, and then with a *Valla* felled his charioteer from his niche on the car.

20, Thereupon Vikartana's son longing to compass the slaughter of Bhimasena, took a lance with a staff variegated with gold and lapises.

21. Taking up that fierce lance that resembled a second dart of Death, and tilting it and aiming it, the powerful son of Radha

22. Hurled it at Bhimasena, charging it with a force capable of taking out Bhima's life. Then like Indra hurling the bolt of heaven, hurling that lance, the son of Radha,

23. That puissant descendant of a charioteer's race, uttered a loud roar ; and then your sons hearing that loud shout uttered by Karna, became filled with delight.

24. But as that lance of the radiance of fire or the sun was coursing through the skies, Bhima cut it off with seven swift-flying arrows.

25. Cutting off that lance resembling a snake just freed from its slough, Bhima, O sire, as if looking out for the opportunity of wrenching the life-breaths out of Suta's son,

26. Wrathfully pierced the latter with many arrows furnished with wings of peacock's feathers or of gold, and whetted on stone, and resembling darts of Death.

27. Karna also then taking up another terrible bow of golden staff, began to stretch it; and then that highly energetic one began to discharge arrows at Bhima.

28. But the son of Pandu cut off those shafts, with nine shafts of depressed knots shot by himself. Having cut off, O foremost of men, those arrows shot by Karna,

29. O mighty monarch, Bhima uttered a loud war-cry. Roaring at each other like two bulls for the sake of consorting with the same cow,

30. Or like two fierce tigers for the sake of the same peace of meat; they strove vigorously to strike each other and each was desirous of finding out the laches of the other.

31. Like two mighty bulls in a herd of cows, at times they looked at each other with eyes flashing rage. At another time, like two prodigious elephants striking each other with the point of their tusks,

32. They assailed each other with their arrows shot from their bow drawn to the fullest stretch. O king, burning each other with their arrowy shower, they put forth their prowess against each other, at the same time looking at each other in great wrath.

33. Sometimes they laughed at each-other, sometimes reproached each other and sometimes blew their conchs ; and in this way they on went fighting.

34. O king, then once more Bhima cut off the bow of Karna near the grasp, and with his arrows despatched the latter's steeds of the hue of conch to the regions of Death.

35. The former then felled the latter's charioteer from his niche on the car. Thereupon Vikartana's son was preyed upon by anxious thoughts.

36. His steeds and his charioteer slain, and himself covered and compounded with a net-work of arrows, he knew what to do.

37. Beholding Karna in that predicament, king Duryodhana trembling in rage, addressing Durjaya thus commanded him :—

38. "Durjaya, hie yourself to the spot yonder where Pandu's son is on the point of devouring up as it were, the son of Radha. Slay that beardless eunuch soon and inspire strength into Karna."

39. Thus spoken to, your son Durjaya bowed assent to the words of your royal son saying 'so be it then ;' and then he rushed at Bhimasena engaged with Karna, covering the former with his arrows.

40. He wounded Bhima with nine, his horses with eight, his charioteer with six, his standard with three, then again himself (Bhima) with seven shafts.

41. Thereat excited with wrath, Bhima despatched Durjaya, his horses and steeds to the abode of Death, piercing them to the vitals with his arrows.

42. Then Karna lamentiog petiously circumambulated your son who decked with ornaments was then writhing like a slain snake on the earth.

43. Then having made that invetrate enmy of his (Karna) carless, Bhimasena smilingly covered him with numerous arrows, and made him look like a *Sataghni* with numerous pikes on it.

44. Although thus mangled with those arrows, that slayer of foes, the Atiratha Karna, did not avoid the enraged Bhima in battle.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-third chapter, the fight between Karna and Bhima, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXIV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Cnotinued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus though deprived of his car and completely vanquished by Bhima, Karna mounting on another car began speedily to pierce the son of Pandu.

1. Then like two huge elephants goring each other with the ends of their tusks, those two heroes began to pierce each other with arrows shot from bows drawn to the fullest stretch.

3. Thereupon Karna covered Bhima with myriads of shafts and then uttered a loud war-cry, and once more pierced the latter on his breast.

4. In return, Bhima pierced him with ten straight-flying arrows and next with twenty arrows of depressed knots.

5. Karna again, O king, piercing Bhima on the centre of his chest with nine arrows, struck his enemy's standard with one sharp arrow.

6. Then with a group of sixty-three arrows Pritha's son, pierced Karna in return like a driver goring his elephant with so many hooks, or a horseman lacerating his animal with so many whips.

7. Thus deeply pierced, O king, by the high-souled son of Pandu, the heroic Karna began to lick the corners of his mouth and his eyes became red in rage.

8. Thereafter, O mighty monarch with a view to bring about the slaughter of Bhima, Karna sped at him an arrow capable of penetrating through all bodies, like Indra hurling the thunder.

9. That shaft of variegated wing shot from the bow of Suta's son, pierced through the son of Pritha, and then penetrating the earth went inside it.

10.—12. Thereupon the mighty-armed Bhima with his eyes red in rage, hurled, without thinking for a moment, at the son of Suta, a heavy six-sided mace adorned with gold, measuring full four cubits in length, and looking like the bolt of heaven. With that mace, that enraged descendant of the Bharata race slew the well-trained and excellent steeds of Adhiratha's son, like Indra slaying the Asuras with his thunderbolt. Then O mighty monarch, with a couple of razor-headed arrows, the mighty-armed Bhima

13. Cut down the standard of Adhiratha's son, and then with other shafts he slew the latter's charioteer. Leaving that car of which the steeds and the charioteer had been slain, and of which the standard had been cut down,

14. O Bharata, Karna with a cheerless heart stood before Bhimasena, stretching his bow. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Radha's son,

15. In as much as that foremost of car-warriors though deprived of his car, was successful in holding his enemy in check. Beholding then that foremost of men, that son of Adhiratha deprived of his car in that battle,

16. King Duryonhana, O monarch, addressing Durmukha said :—"O Durmukha yonder is the son of Radha rendered carless by Bhimasena!

17. Do you supply that mighty car-warrior, that foremost of men with a chariot." Thereupon, O Bharata, hearing the words of Duryodhana, Durmukha

18. Quickly rushed to the rescue of Karna, covering at the same time Bhima with his arrows. Beholding Durmukha approach to rescue the son of Suta in battle,

19. The son of the wind-god became filled with delight, and he began to lick the corners of his mouth. Then, O monarch, holding Karna at bay by means of his keen arrows,

20. The son of Pandu drove his chariot towards Durmukha. Then in the encounter that followed, with nine shafts of depressed knots,

21—23. And keen points, Bhima despatched Durmukha to the abode of Death. Then upon the slaughter of Durmukha, the son of Adiratha mounting in the car of this slain hero, looked beautiful like the effulgent fire, O king. Then beholding Durmukha postrate, with his vital limbs torn off, and weltering in his blood, Karna with his eyes overflowing with tears, refrained from the fight for a while. Circumambulating that slain prince and passing over him,

24—25. The heroic Karna breathed hot and heavily, and was embarassed as to what he should do. At this opportunity, O king, Bhimasena struck Suta's son with

fourteen *Narachas* furnished with vulterine feathers. Those *Narachas* of great impetuousity and furnished with golden wings, pierced through Karna's armour;

26. Those blood-drinking arrows decked with gold, then illumined the ten quaters, and drank the life-blood of Suta's son.

27. Then passing through his body those arrows sank into the earth and looked like so many snakes urged on by Death, O foremost of men,

28. With only half their bodies inserted into their holes. Then the son of Radha, without a moment's reflection, pierced Bhimasena in return with fourteen fierce *Narachas* decked with gold. Those winged shafts piercing the left arm of Bhimasana,

30. Entered the earth, like Krouncha birds entering into a grove of trees. Entering the earth, those *Narachas* looked beautiful,

31. Like the burning rays of the sun while it courses towards the Western mountains. Pierced in both the arms with those *Narachas* capable of cutting to the very quick, Bhima

32—33. Shed blood profusely, like mountains ejecting streams of water. Then Bhima pierced Suta's son in return with three winged shafts endued with the energy of Suparna, and he then pierced the driver of his enemy with seven arrows. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, afflicted with Bhima's might and highly distressed, Karna

34. Of illustrious renown fled from the field of battle, being borne away by his fleet steeds. Then Bhimasena, that *Atiratha* remained the master of the field, with his bow of golden staff stretched, and looking like a burning fire.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-fourth chapter, the flight of Karna, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA,— *Continued.*

Dhristarastra said :—

1. I consider Destiny to be supreme. Fie on the useless exertions of man, inasmuch the son of Adhiratha striving vigourously, was not able to conquer Pandu's son in battle.

2. Karna is capable of conquering the Parthas together with Govinda himself; nowhere in the worlds do I find a warrior who is a match for Karna.

3. I have always heard Duryodhana speak in this strain. Karna is mighty, heroic, a resolute bowman and indefatigable in battle.

4. O Suta, thus did my wretched son Duryodhana speak to me before. "Supported as I am by the heroic Vrisashena, even the celestials themselves will not be able to conquer me in battle,

5. What to speak of the sons of Pandu, whose energy is gone and whose strength has been robbed, O king." (This was said by Duryodhana to me.) So beholding Karna crushed like a poisonless snake,

6—7. And fled from the field of battle, what did then Duryodhana say? Alas, foolishly did Duryodhana send the unsupported Durmukha to battle, ignorant though he was of the mode of fighting, like one throwing an insect upon a blazing fire. Aswathaman, the Madra-king, Kripa and Karna, all united together,

8—10. Are not capable, O Sanjaya, of standing before Bhima. They all know the dreadful prowess, equal to that of ten thousand elephants of Bhima possessed of the energy of Maruta himself. They also know his cruel purposes. Why did then those warriors, cognizant of Bhima's might, anger, and energy, incite the anger of that hero of cruel deeds, that warrior resembling Yama at the end of a *Yuga*? It seems that the mighty-armed Karna, relying on the strength of his own arms,

11. Encountered Bhimasena in battle, totally disregarding him. He that has conquered Karna in battle, like Purandara conquering Asuras,

12. That son of Pandu is incapable of being conquered by any one else. He that has entered into my army having vanquished Drona single-handedly,

13. What person desirous of his life will venture to stand before that Bhima when he will proceed in search of Dhananjaya? O Sanjaya, what person ventures to stand in front of Bhima,

14. For, what Danava will venture to stand before Mahendra with his thunderbolt uplifted? It is possible for a man to come back from a visit to the regions of Death;

15—17. But it is not possible for them to come back alive after an encounter with Bhima. Those who foolishly assail Bhimasena when he is inflamed with rage are like insects rushing on the blazing flames of a fire. Surely thinking what the irate Bhima of fearful deeds had said in the assembly

in the hearing of the Kurus about the slaughter of my sons, and beholding the defeat of Karna,

18—19. Dussasana and his brothers ceased to meet Bhima in battle out of fear. That pervert son of mine, O Sanjaya, who repeatedly said in the assembly these words—Karna and Dussasana and I myself will vanquish the Pandavas in battle—surely beholding Karna vanquished and deprived of his car by Bhima,

20. Is now repenting his rejection of Krishna's offer for peace. Beholding his mail-clad brother's slain in battle by Bhimasena,

21. In consequence of his own fault surely my son is being greatly afflicted. What person willing to live still, will with hostile intentions, advance against Pandu's son

22. Bhima, inflamed with rage, and armed with dreadful weapons, and standing in battle like Death himself? It is possible for a man to escape from Varava fire,

23. But it is not possible for one to fly from the presence of the enraged Bhima. Indeed neither Arjuna, nor the Panchalas, nor Kesava, nor Satyaki,

24. When excited with rage in battle, pays the least regard to his life. Alas, O son of a charioteer, the very lives of my sons are in danger.

Sanjaya said :—

25. O descendant of the Kuru dynasty, why are you now lamenting for the present carnage? Surely you are the root of this destruction of the worlds.

26. Accepting the counsels of your sons, it was you who provoked all these fierce hostilities. Though advised on the contrary, you did not pay any heed to those advices, like a dying man refusing to take proper medicines.

27. O best of men, O king, having drunk the fiercest and most indegestible poison, you should now feel the consequences.

28. The warriors of your army are fighting to the best of their prowess, yet you speak depreciatingly of them. Hear now, as I go on describing how this battle raged.

29. Beholding Karna defeated by Bhimasena, the following five and mighty bowmen, all brothers,

30. Namely, Durmarsena, Dussaha. Durmada, Durdhara and Jaya, all clad in beautiful armours, rushed against the son of Pandu with hostile intentions.

31. Surrounding the mighty-armed Vrikodara on all sides, they began to cover the quarters with their arrows resembling flights of locusts.

32. Then Bhimsena smilingly received those princes of godly presence as they advanced furiously against him.

33. Then beholding your sons before the enraged Bhimasena, Radha's son rushed against the mighty-armed Bhima.

34. Although opposed by your sons, yet Bhima then quickly rushed against Karna shooting sharp arrows, furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone.

35. Thereupon the Kurus surrounding Karna, on all sides, began to shower upon Bhimasena, numerous arrows of depressed knots.

36. Then that fierce bowman Bhima, with twenty-five arrows despatched to the abode of Yama, those foremost of men, with their steeds and charioteers.

37. They then fell down dead from their cars, after their charioteers, like so many mighty trees decked with flowers, overthrown by a hurricane.

38. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Bhimasena, inasmuch as he succeeded in slaying your sons and withstanding Karna with his arrows simultaneously.

39. Opposed on all sides by sharp arrows shot by Bhimasena, that son of Suta, O mighty monarch, began to eye Bhima.

40. Bhimasena also, with his eyes red in anger and stretching his bow, began to look at Karna.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-fifth chapter, the display of Bhima's prowess, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXVI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA).—
Continued

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding your sons fallen on the field, the puissant Karna, overwhelmed with rage, became regardless of his very life.

2. The son of Adhiratha then considered himself to be guilty of the slaughter of

your sons, in as much as they were slain by Bhima under his very eyes.

3. Then Bhimasena waxing wroth and remembering their former enmity, dauntlessly struck Karna with numerous sharp arrows.

4. Thereupon the son of Radha smilingly piercing Bhima with five shafts, once more pierced him with seventy shafts furnished with golden wings whetted on stone.

5. Without taking into consideration those shafts shot by Karna, Vrikodara pierced him with a hundred arrows of depressed knots.

6. Once more, O sire, piercing him on his vital parts with five sharp arrows, Bhima severed the bow of Suta's son with a broad-headed shaft.

7. Thereupon, O Bharata, highly dejected, Karna took up another bow, and covered Bhima with arrows on all directions.

8. Slaying Karna's horses and his charioteer also, Bhima then laughed a tremendous laugh, having thus counterbalanced the feats of the former.

9. Then that foremost of men, cut off the bow of Karna with his arrows; and O mighty monarch, that bow of golden staff, fell down, producing a great sound.

10. Thereupon the mighty car-warrior Karna descended from his chariot, and taking up a mace hurled it at Bhimasena with great fury.

11. Beholding that mace course towards himself with great impetuousity, Vrikodara repulsed it with his arrows before the eyes of all the troops.

12. Then the puissant son of Pandu quickly shot thousands of arrows, desirous of accomplishing the death of Suta's son.

13. Checking those arrows with his own, in that battle, Karna cut down Bhima's armour with numerous arrows.

14. Then he pierced Bhima with twenty five small shafts before the eyes of all; and that seemed highly wonderful.

15. Thereupon, O sire, Bhima excited to the highest pitch of fury, sped at the son of Suta nine shafts of depressed knots.

16. Those sharp arrows penetrating through Karna's armour and piercing his right arm, sank into the earth, like so many fierce snakes entering their holes on ant hills.

17. Covered with the myriad shafts shot from Bhima's bow, Karna once more was compelled to turn away from Bhimasena.

18. Beholding the son of Suta turn away and walk on foot and covered with the arrows shot from the bow of Kunti's son, king Duryodhana thus spoke:—

19. 'Hie yourselves quickly near the car of Pandu's son." Thereupon, O king, yoursons hearing those words of your son,

20. Rushed against Pandu's son in battle shooting numerous sharp arrows. They were Chitra, Upachitra, Chitraksha, Charuchitra, Chitrasana,

21—22. Chitrayudha and Chitravarman, all versed in various modes of warfare. Then the mighty car-warrior Bhimasena slew all your sons with a single arrow, as they were quickly proceeding against him. Slain they fell down on the earth like trees broken by the vehemence of the tempest.

23. Beholding your sons all mighty car-warriors slain, O king, Karna with a tearful countenance, began to think of those words of Khatwa.

24. Then that puissant hero, mounting on anothor duly furnished car, quickly rushed at the son of Pandu.

25. Piercing each other with arrows furnished with golden wings, and whetted on stone, those two heroes appeared beuatiful like two clouds fringed with the rays of the sun.

26. Then Pandu's son, excited with rage, cut off the armour of Suta's son with thirty-six *Vallas* of great sharpness and energy.

27. The son of Suta, O foremost of the Bharatas, that mighty-armed hero, peirced Kunti's son with fifty arrows of depressed knots.

28. Those two combatants then, smeared with red sandal-paste, covered with many wounds caused by each other's shaft and steeped in blood, appeared charming like the sun or the moon in full splendour.

29. Then Karna and Bhima, with their bodies steeped in blood, and armour shattered with arrows appeared beautiful like snakes freed from their sloughs.

30. Assailing each other like two tigers fighting with their teeth, those two foremost of men poured their showers of arrows on each other like two mighty clouds pouring rain.

31. Like two elephants goring each other with their tusks, those two subduers of foes mangling each other with their shafts, appeared highly beautiful.

32. Roaring at each other and covering each other with their arrows, those two foremost of car-warriors seemed to play with each other, causing their chariots to describe various circles.

33. Those two powerful heroes then appeared like two hiefers roaring at each other for consorting with a cow in her season. Those two foremost of men, endued with prowess, then looked like two mighty lions engaged with one another.

34. Looking at each other with eyes red in rage, those two heroes of mighty energy fought on with each other like Indra and Virochana.

35. Then the mighty-armed Bhima stretching his bow with both his hands, appeared beautiful like a mass of clouds charged with lightning flashes.

36, Then, O mighty monarch, the Bhima-cloud, having the twang of the bow for its peal of thunder, and the arrows for showers of rain, began to drench the mountain constituted by Karna.

37. Then that son of Pandu, Bhima of terrible prowess, O Bharata, covered Karna with thousands of arrows shot from his own bow.

38. Then your sons beheld the prowess of Bhimasena, when he covered Karna with arrows decked with beautiful wings made of the feathers of the *Kanka* bird.

39. Thus then Bhima fought on with Karna, affording delight thereby to Arjuna and the illustrious Kesava, and Satyaki and his two protectors of car-wheels.

40. Then your sons, O mighty monarch, became dspressed, seeing the prowess, the strength of arms and the patience of Bhima, who thoroughly knew his self.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-six chapter, the fight between Bhima and Karna in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXVII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then the son of Radha hearing the sound of the twanging of Bhima's bow and of the slappings of his palm, did not brook it, like an infuriate elephant not brooking the roar of its rival.

2. Retiring for a moment only from the presence of Bhimasena, Karna looked at your sons felled by him.

3. O foremost of men, beholding them he became cheerless and filled with sorrow; then breathing like a snake, he once more assailed Bhima.

4. With his eyes coppery in rage and breathing like a fierce snake, Karna then shooting arrows, appeared beautiful like the sun shooting his myriad rays.

5. Vrikodara then, O foremost of the Bharatas, was covered with those shafts shot from Karna's bow, as if with the scattering rays of the blazing sun.

6. Diverse kinds of arrows furnished with wings of peacock-feathers and shot from the bow of Karna, then penetrated into the body of Pritha's son, like so many birds entering their nests on the tree.

7. Arrows of golden wings shot from the bow of Karna appeared everywhere, like rows of swans (flying through the welkin).

8. The arrows of Adhiratha's son were so numerous that they seemed to come out not only from his bow, but also, from his standard, Upaskara, umbrella, and the shafts, yoke, and bottom of his car.

9. Filling the sky, the son of Adhiratha showered arrows decked with gold and furnished with vulturine feathers, that ranged variously through the entire welkin.

10. Then reckless of his very life, Vrikodara got the better of his foe, and then pierced the latter with a shaft as he was rushing like Death incarnate at him.

11. Then beholding the unbearable charge of Karna and the shower of mighty arrows shot by him, Vrikodara flinched not in fear, inasmuch as he was possessed of mighty energy.

12. Then that son of Pandu shot networks of arrows at the son of Adhiratha. He pierced Karna with twenty sharp arrows.

13. As Pritha's son himself had been covered by Suta's son, even in the same manner was the latter now covered by the former with his arrows.

14. Beholding then the prowess of Bhimasena in battle, O Bharata, even your troops applauded him and the Charanas were filled with delight.

15. Then Bhurisravas, Kripa, the son of Drona, the ruler of the Madras, Jayadratha, Uttamoujas, Yudhamanyu, Satyaki, Kesava and Arjuna,

16. These ten best of mighty car-warriors of the Kuru and the Pandava hosts, applauding Bhima with shouts of 'well-done' 'well-done' uttered their war-cries.

17. When that dreadful and hair-stirring sound arose, your son, king Duryodhana, thus spoke,

18. Addressing the kings and princes of his army, and specially his brothers. "May good betide you. Hie yourselves to the rescue of Karna from Vrikodara.

19. Yonder, the shafts shot from Bhima's bow are piercing Karna (to the quick). O mighty bowmen, do you all now exert vigourously for protecting the son of the charioteer."

20. Commanded by Duryodhana, O sire, seven uterine (Kourava) brothers, rushing with fury at Bhimasena surrounded him on all sides.

21. Encountering the son of Kunti, they poured their arrowy torrents on him, like clouds pouring rain on the mountain breast during the rainy reason.

22. Then those seven mighty car-warriors inflamed with rage, began to afflict Bhima, like the seven planets afflicting the Sun at the time of the universal annihilation, O king.

23. Thereupon, drawing his effulgent bow with great force and firm grasp, the son of Kunti,

24. Knowing that his adversaries were nothing but men, fixed seven shafts on his bowstring. And then the mighty Bhima sped those arrows radiant like the solar rays, at them.

25. Bhimasena then keeping alive the memory of the former wrongs inflicted on them, sped those arrows as if for wrenching out the very lives out of your sons.

26. Those shafts furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone shot by Bhimasena, O Bharata, penetrating through the body of the Bharata princes, flew through the sky.

27. Those gold-decked arrows tearing their hearts, looked beautiful, O mighty monarch, like birds of beautiful plumage.

28. Those seven arrows of the effulgence of molten gold, steeped in blood, came out, O king, after having drank the life-blood of your sons.

29. With their armours shattered by those arrows, your sons then fell down from their cars on the earth, like tall trees growing on the slopes of mountains,broken down by elephants.

30. Satrunjaya, Satrusaha. Chitra, Chitrayudha, Dridha, Chitrasena, and Vikarna these seven sons of yours were then slain by Bhima.

31. Of all your sons thus slain, Vrikodara lamented piteously for Vikarna who was very dear to the Pandavas.

32. Bhima then said :—'I vowed saying, *You shall all be slain by me.* O Vikarna, for this vow it is that you have been slain. And thus have I kept my vow inviolate.

33. O hero, you proceeded against me with hostile intentions, bearing in mind the duties of a Kshatriya. You were ever engaged in doing our, specially the king's (Yudhisthira's) good.

34. It is therefore not fit that I should lament for you, O you of great effulgence." O mighty monarch then slaying them before the very eyes of Radha's son,

35—36. That son of Pandu uttered a dreadful war-cry. The shout of that hero, then O Bharata, carried to the very virtuous king Yudhisthira as if the intelligence of his victory. Hearing that loud cry of that fierce bowman Bhimasena,

37—40. The very virtuous king Yudhisthira obtained great delight in battle. Then highly delighted, that son of Pandu, O mighty monarch, received the sound of the war-cry of his brother with the beating of drums and other musical instruments. After Vrikodara had given him that intelligence by the hint agreed upon by both, that foremost of persons.Yudhisthira versed in the use of all weapons, joyfully rushed against Drona in that battle. On the other hand, O monarch, seeing thirty-one of your son's slain in battle, Duryodhana recalled to mind the words of Vidura thus, "those salutary words spoken by Vidura are now being realised.

41—44. Thinking thus, king Duryodhana was unable to do what he should do. All those words that your wicked-minded and foolish son, urged on by Karna, said to that princess of the Panchala race, having brought her in the assembly shall; also all those harsh words which Karna himself addressed in the assembly hall to her before yourself and the sons of Pandu, O monarch, at your and the Kouravas' hearing,—words to this effect,—'O Krishna, the Pandavas are destroyed and they have fallen into eternal hell; so do you choose a second husband'—the result of all these has now overtaken you.

45—46. Then again, O you of Kuru's race, various abusive language like sessamum kernel, without seeds were directed by your enraged sons to those illustrious ones, *viz.*, the sons of Pandu, Bhimasena vomitting forth the fire of wrath held in check for these thirteen years, is now achieving the destruction of your sons.

47. Entreating you repeatedly, Khattwa failed to bend you towards peace. O foremost of the Bharatas, now do you, together

with your son, suffer the consequences (of your folly).

48. That you old, patient and capable of foreseeing the consequences of acts as you are, would not accept the well-meaning words of your friends, is due to the influence of (adverse) fate.

49. O foremost of men, it therefore behoves you not to weep. Yours is the greatest fault in the matter. In my opinion your are the cause of the ruin of your sons.

50. O foremost of kings, Vikarna and the puissant Chetrasena, have been slain; as also numerous other mighty car-warriors and your other sons have fallen.

51. O mighty-armed one, other sons of yours, who became the objects of Bhima's sight, were slain by him in a moment.

52. It was through your fault that I had to see our army consumed in thousands by the shafts discharged by Pandu's son and by Vrisha.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-seventh chapter, the fight between Karna and Bhima, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA—) *Continued.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. I see, O son of a charioteer, that mine has been the greatest fault in this matter; O Sanjaya, the consequences have now overtaken me, grieve though I may!

2. Hitherto I thought that what is gone for good. But, O Sanjaya, what measures is gone should now be adopted.

3. I have now become calm, O Sanjaya; relate to me how this slaughter of heroes is went on—slaughter that owes its origin to my evil policy.

Sanjaya said :—

4. O mighty monarch, then the two powerful heroes Karna and Bhima began to pour showers of arrows, like two rain clouds pouring their contents.

5. Then gold-winged arrows, whetted on stone and engraved with the name of Bhima, reaching Karna, penetrated through him cutting him to the very quick.

6. Similarly Bhima was pierced hundreds and thousands of times by the arrows shot by Karna, that resembled snakes of virulent poison.

7. An agitation like that produced in the ocean, was then produced in your troops by the arrows of them both, falling on all sides.

8. O subduer of foes, shot from Bhima's bow, shafts resembling dreadful snakes, began to slay your troops amidst your own army.

9. With fallen elephants, horses and men, the Earth became covered and looked as if covered with trees broken by the force of the wind.

10. Wounded with the arrows shot from Bhima's bow, your troops then began to fly away from the field saying *what is it?*

11. That host composed of the Sindhus, the Souviras, and the Kouravas, afflicted and wounded with the terrible shafts of Bhima and Karna, was then driven back to a great distance.

12. Then those heroes, with their ranks thinned, and their horses and elephants slain, fled in all directions, leaving Bhima and Karna on the field.

13. 'Indeed for the sake of the Parthas even the gods are robbing us of our senses, inasmuch as those arrows shot both by Bhima and Karna are slaying us.'

14. Speaking such words, your warriors, struck with panic as they were, stood at a distance out of the range of arrows, for witnessing the combat.

15, Then on the field of battle a terrible river started up into existence and began to flow there adding to the joy of heroes and to the fear of the cowards.

16. It was caused by the blood of elephants, horses and men. Covered with the lifeless bodies of men, elephants and horses;

17. With flag-staffs and car-bottoms; with ornaments of cars, elephants and steeds; with shattered chariots, wheels, axels and Kuvaras;

18. With gold-decked bows of fierce twang, and with thousands of arrows and darts furnished with wings of gold,

19. Shot by Bhima and Karna and resembling snakes just freed from their sloughs; with numerous lances, javelins, swords, and battle axes;

20. With maces and clubs and axes all adorned with gold; with standards of various descriptions and darts and piked bludgeons;

21—29. And with beautiful *Sataghnis*, the earth looked, O Bharata very beautiful.

Strewn all over with ear-rings and necklaces of gold and fallen-off bracelets, and rings and precious gems worn on diadems and crowns and turbans and golden ornaments of diverse kinds, and armours and leathern fences, and elephant-girths, and umbrellas dropped from their place, and *chamaras*, and fans ; with the mangled bodies of elephants, steeds and men ; with arrows bathed in blood, and with various other objects lying scattered about loosened from their places, the field of battle appeared beautiful like the sky bespangled with the planets. Beholding their inconceivable, wonderful and super-human feats, the Siddhas, and the Charanas were filled with surprise. The son of Adhiratha engaged with Bhima coursed on the field in the same way as fire helped on by the wind courses through an extended heap of fuel; both of them cut down numerous standards, and chariots and slew countless horses, men and elephants. They fought on like a pair of elephants crushing forests of reeds, when engaged with each other. O ruler of men, then your host looked like a mass of clouds, and the carnage caused by Karna and Bhima in that battle was terrible to the extreme.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-eighth chapter, the fight between Karna and Bhima, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXXXIX.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, Karna piercing Bhima with three arrows, began to shower torrents of arrows of various description.

2. The mighty-armed son of Pandu viz Bhimasena, though thus pierced by the son of Suta, felt no pain, like a mountain having no sensation when cleft open.

3. Then O sire, he pierced Karna on his car with a sharp arrow. Well-tempered and washed with oil,

4. That dart, O mighty monarch, cut down one of the charming golden ear-rings of great lustre belonging to Karna, and it dropped down like a luminary from the sky.

5. Then excited to the highest pitch of anger, Vrikodara with the greatest ease struck Suta's son on the breast with a broad headed arrow.

6. Then once more, O Bharata, the mighty armed Bhima sped at him with great quickness ten *Narachas* resembling snakes just first freed from their sloughs.

7. Shot by him, O sire, those arrows penetrating through the forehead of Suta's son entered it, like so many snakes entering their holes in the ant-hills.

8. With those shafts struck upon his forehead, the son of Suta, looked beautiful, as he did before while his forehead was encircled with a chaplet of blue lotuses.

9. Thus deeply pierced by the son of Pandu endued with great agility, Karna held the *Kuvara* of his car for support and then shut his eyes.

10. But within a moment, that afflicter of foes Karna regaining his senses, found his body steeped in blood and became furious with rage.

11. Inflamed with rage in consequence of his being pierced thus by the firm bowman Bhima, Karna endued with great acitivy, dashed against the car of Bhimasena.

12. Then, O king, the revengeful and enraged and mighty Karna, sped at Bhima a group of hundred arrows furnished with wings of the feathers of the vultures.

13. Thereat Pandu's son, disregarding the display of Karna's prowess, began to shower fierce arrows on him.

14. Then, O afflicter of foes, the enraged Karna, O monarch, struck the irate Bhima on the breast with nine shafts.

15. Then both those tigers among men, resembling a couple of tigers with fierce teeth, showered upon each other, in that battle, their torrents of arrows like two mighty masses of clouds.

16. They tried to terrify one another in that battle, with the sound of their palms and with showers of arrows of diverse descriptions.

17—18. Inflamed with rage, each endeavoured to counteract the feats of the other in battle. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, viz Bhima of mighty arms, O Bharata, cutting off with a razor-headed arrow the bow of Karna, uttered a loud war-cry. Then leaving aside that severed bow, the son of Suta that mighty car-warrior,

19. Took up a tougher and stronger bow. Then beholding the slaughter of the Sindhus and Souviras, and the Kurus,

20. And marking that the Earth was covered over with armours and standards and weapons lying scattered about, and seeing also the dead bodies of elephants,

foot-soldiers and horsemen and car-warriors on all sides,

21. The body of Suta's son blazed up with radiance, in consequence of wrath. Thereupon stretching his terrible bow decked with gold,

22. The son of Radha, O monarch looked at Bhima with eyes flashing rage. Inflamed with rage the son of Suta, while discharging his shafts, looked beautiful,

23—26. Like the autumnal sun of burning rays at mid-day. While engaged in taking up an arrow, placing it on the bow-string, stretching the string and letting it off, no one could notice any interval between those acts of his. While Karna was shooting his arrows right and left, his bow always appeared to be drawn to a circle like a dreadful circle of fire. Arrows of sharp heads, shot from the bow of Karna, and furnished with wings of gold,

27—28. Covered, O monarch, all the quarters, intercepting the very rays of the solar orb. In the skies then were seen numerous groups of shafts, furnished with golden wings and shot from the bow of Karna. The arrows discharged from Karna's bow,

29—30. Then looked beautiful like rowe of cranes ranging through the skies. All the arrows discharged by the son of Adiratha were winged with the feathers of vultures, whetted on stone, adorned with gold, endued with great impetuousity, and furnished with exceedingly keen points. Thrown by the force of his bow-string, those gold-decked rrrows,

31—33. Coursed in continuous lines towards the chariot of Bhima; those gold-decked arrows hurled by Karna, while ranging through the skies in large numbers, looked beatiful like continuous fights of locusts. The shafts shot from the bow of the son of Adhiratha, as they flew through the heavens, appeared like one long arrow poised in the sky. Like a cloud covering the mountain breast with torrents of rain,

34—36. Karna, excited to the highest pitch of fury, poured on Bhima his arrowy showers; then O Bharata, your sons and their soldiers all beheld the mighty energy, prowess and perseverance of Bhima inasmuch as the latter, unmindful of that shower of arrows resembling the furious ocean, dashed with wrath against Karna. O monarch, Bhima then wielded a bow that was formidable and the back of which was adorned with gold.

37. In consequence of his repeated stretching, the bow looked like a circle and it resembled the bow of Indra himself. From it then were shot shafts that filled the entire welkin.

38. Then with his gold-winged arrows of depressed knots, Bhima constructed a festoon in the welkin that looked like a veritable garland of gold.

39. Then the net-work of arrows spread in the skies by Karna, began to be shattered and torn, being struck with the winged arrows of Bhimasena.

40. Shot both by Bhima and Karna, myriads of arrows of the touch of fire-sparks and straight-coursing,

41. And furnished with golden wings, entirely covered the welkin over. The sun then did not shine, nor did the wind blow.

42. The welkin being shrouded in that net-work of arrows, nothing could be then distinguished. Then the son of Suta covering Bhima with arrows of various descriptions,

43. And totally unmindful of the latter's prowess, strove to prevail over him. O sire, those myriads of arrows, discharged by both those warriors,

44. Appeared to clash against one another like two contrary currents of wind. Consequent on that clash of arrowy showers shot by those two foremost of men,

45—46. A fire, O foremost of the Bharatas, was engendered in the welkin. Desirous of slaying Bhima, Karna then, sped at the former numerous arrows, furnished with golden wings and cleansed by the forger himself. Bhima, however, with his own shafts, cut every one of Karna's arrows into three fragments,

47—48. And then obtaining some advantage over the son of Suta, he cried out saying *wait, wait*, then the irate and powerful son of Pandu, like an all-destroying fire once more shot excitedly showers of arrows. Then a loud sound was produced there, in consequence of the leathern gloves of the combatants striking against their bow-strings.

49. Then tremendous became the sound of their slapping palms, dreadful the sound of their war-cries, and fierce the clash of their cars and the twang of their bows.

50. Then O king, desirous of beholding the prowess of Karna and that son of Pandu who were striving to slay each other, the other combatants giving up fighting became spectators.

51. The celestial sages, the Siddhas, and the Gandharvas, applauded them both saying 'Excellent, Excellent'; and hosts of

Vidyadharas then showered flowers on those two heroes.

52. Thereafter, the mighty-armed and wrathful Bhima of resolute prowess, repulsing the weapons of Karna by his own, began to pierce that son of Suta.

53. Karna also, that mighty hero, baffling Bhima's darts, wounded Bhima with nine *Narachas* resembling snakes of virulent venom.

54. With as many winged shafts, Bhima then cut off those *Narachas* sped by Suta's sons when they were coursing through the sky, and said *wait, wait.*

55. Then the mighty-armed Bhima possessed of great valour, shot at Adhiratha's son a shaft looking like the enraged god of Death and resembling a mace second to that wielded by Yama.

56. The son of Radha however, O king, smilingly cut off that dart of Pandu's son as it flew through the sky with three shafts of his own.

57. The son of Pandu then once more shot showers of dreadful arrows; and Karna also dauntlessly received all those weapons of his.

58—59. Inflamed with wrath, Karna, the son of Suta by virtue of the illusion of his weapons, cut off in that combat, with his straight arrows the pair of quivers and the bow-string, and the traces of the steeds of the fighting Bhima. Thereafter slaying his antagonist's steeds, Karna pierced the latter's charioteer with five shafts.

60—61. Theroupon the charioteer running in haste, ascended the car of Yudhamyu. Burning with wrath, Radha's son, whose effulgence then equalled the effulgence of the *Yuga*-fire, cut off the standard of Bhima and felled his banner, smiling the while. Deprived of the use of his bow, Bhima then grasped a fearful lance.

62—64. Inflamed with rage, he balanced it in his hands, and then hurled it vehemently at the chariot of Karna. Adhiratha's son then with ten shafts, cut off that gold-decked dart hurled by Bhima, as it was flying swiftly towards him like a blazing meteor; that lance then fell down, severed into fragments by those sharp arrows of Suta's son Karna, that warrior versed in all modes of warfare, then engaged in the fight for the sake of friends. Then the son of Kunti grasped a buckler adorned with gold,

65—66. And a resplendent sword, desirous of reaping either victory or death. But O Bharata, Karna again smilingly cut off that effulgent buckler of Bhima with numerous dreadful arrows. Bhima then deprived of the use of his car and his shield, became infuriate in wrath.

67. Then with great vehemence he hurled at Karna's chariot that sword; that mighty sword then cutting off the stringed bow of Suta's son,

68—70. Dropped down on the earth like O king, an angry snake from the heavens. Then the son of Adhiratha, inflamed with rage in that battle, smilingly grasped another bow destructive of foes, having a tougher string and stronger than the one that had been cut off. Desirous of slaying the son of Kunti, O king, Karna, then began to discharge by thousands, arrows furnished with golden wings and endued with great impetuosi.y. Wounded with those shafts shot from Karna's bow, the puissant Bhima,

71. Bounded up into the air, thereby filling Karna's mind with great pain. Beholding that conduct of the victory-desiring Bhima, Karna,

72. The son of Radha deceived Bhimasena by hiding himself inside his chariot. Beholding Karna hide himself in the terrace of his car with a frightened heart,

73. Bhima, catching hold of the former's flag-staff, remained on the ground. Then all the Kurus and the Charanas applauded that feat of his, *viz.*,

74. His attempt to snatch away Karna from his car, like Garuda snatching away a serpent (from its hole). Then Bhima, with his bow burst open, and car useless but still observant of his duties,

75. Remained on the field, keeping his car behind him and firmly resolved to continue that battle. In that combat, the son of Radha once more rushed,

76. In rage, against that son of Pandu who stood before him in the attitude of fighting. O mighty monarch, those two highly puissant heroes, looking at their respective feats, and encountering each other,

77. Began to roar at each other like two rain clouds at the end of the summer season The combat between those two foremost of men who were excited to the highest pitch of fury,

78. And who would not brook each other's feat, looked like that between the gods and the Danavas. His stock of weapons exhausted, Kunti's son (Bhima) was assailed by Karna.

79. Then deprived as he was of his weapons, beholding the huge mountain-like elephants slain by Arjuna lying on the field, he entered into their midst for impeding the progress of the car of Karna.

80. Entering into that host of elephants, that was inaccessible to a chariot, the son of Pandu desirous of saving his life, did no longer strike the son of Radha.

81. Then searching eagerly for protection, that subjugator of hostile cities, that son of Pritha, uplifting an elephant slain by the arrows of Arjuna, stayed on the field of battle,

82. Looking like Hanumat holding the (Gandhamadhana) mountain over-grown with *Oshadhis*. But Karna, then cut that elephant, to pieces with his sharp arrows.

83. Then the son of Pandu began to throw at Barna, limbs of slain elephants and horses and car-wheels and every thing he saw lying on the field.

84. The son of Pandu then inflamed with rage, threw at Karna, every-thing that then came within his reach. But all those things hurled at him, Karna cut off with sharp arrows.

85. Bhima also raising his clenched fists endued with the force of thunder and terrible, desired to kill Suta's son. But he then came to recollect the vow of Arjuna (for slaying Karna).

86. Thus the son of Pandu, though competent, did not slay Karna, desirous of keeping inviolate the vow that Arjuna had made.

87. But the son of Suta then repeatedly caused the already afflicted Bhima, to lose his senses by striking him with his sharp arrows.

88. Recollecting the words of Kunti, Karna then did not slay Bhima who was then weaponless but with the handle of his bow he poked and pierced him.

89. Soon as he was struck with the end of Karna's bow, Bhima was inflamed with rage, and breathing like a snake and snatching away Karna's bow, he began to strike him on the head.

90. Struck by Bhimasena, the son of Radha with his eyes red in rage smilingly spoke these words to the former,

91. Over and over again,—"Beardless eunuch, ignorant fool, glutton, without any skill in the use of weapons, do you never again venture to fight (with any one) ? You are but a boy, a laggard in battle !

92. O son of Pandu where there are various kinds of food and drink and edibles, that is really the place fit for you, and not the field of battle, O wicked-souled one !

93. Devouring esculent roots, fruits and flowers, it is proper that you should engage yourself in the observance of vows and rites, in the woods. O Bhima, you know not how to fight !

94. Vast is the difference, O Vrikodara, between fighting and the occupation of a hermit. So, do you repair to the forest O master ; you are not capable of fighting and have an inclination for dwelling in the woods.

95. Urging cooks and servants and orderlies to make haste in making your dinner ready, O Vrikodara, you are capable of striking and reproving them.

96. Becoming a hermit, O Bhima, do you begin eating fruits, O wicked-minded wretch. O son of Kunti, betake to the forest, for you are incapable of fighting.

97. You are fit, O Vrikodara, for eating large quantities of esculent roots and for receiving and welcoming guests. O Vrikodara, I do not consider you fit for wielding weapons."

98. O monarch, he was also reminded by Karna in harsh language, of all the wrongs done to him in his days of childhood.

99. And once more as Bhima greatly weakened stood there, Vrishasena poked him with horn of his bow and smilingly addressed these words to him.

100. "O child, you should fight with others and not with men like myself. Those who fight with men like myself, have to undergo this and many things else.

101. Hie yourself to the spot where the Krishnas are, and they will then protect you in battle. Or, O son of Kunti, return to your home, O child what is the good of fighting ?"

102. Then hearing those very harsh words of Karna, Bhima smilingly spoke these words to him at the presence of every body.

103. "O wicked fool you have been repeatedly defeated by me, how then can you indulge in this vain brag ? The ancients have seen the victory and defeat of the mighty Indra himself !

104. O scion of a mean family, come and wrestle with me. Then even as I have slain the mighty and luxurious Kichaka,

105. I will slay you before the very eyes of all the kings. "But knowing Bhima's intention, that foremost of intelligent beings Karna,

106. Refrained from that fight before the very eyes of the bowmen present. Thus O king, making Bhima carless, Karna reproved him in such harsh language,

107—108. In the presence of that best of the Vrishnis and the son of Pritha. Then O king, the ape-bannered Arjuna, being urged on by Kesava, sped at the son of Suta numerous arrows whetted on stone. Then those gold-decked arrows hurled by the force of Partha's arm,

109. And issuing out of the Gandiva, penetrated into Karna's body like so many cranes entering into the Krouncha mountains. Wounding Karna with those arrows shot from the Gandiva, that entered his body like so many snakes,

110. Dhananjaya, drove away the son of Suta from the vicinity of Bhimasena. Then with his bow burst open by Bhima and pierced sore with the arrows of Dhananjaya,

111. Karna fled away from Bhima being borne hastily on his swit-coursing car. Bhima also, O foremost of men, ascending Satyaki's Vehicle,

112—113. Followed his brother Savyasachin the son of Pandu in battle. Then Dhananjaya with his eyes red in rage, and with great celerity sped at Karna a *Naracha* like the Destroyer urging death forward. Then like Garuda ranging through the welkin in quest of a mighty snake,

114. That *Naracha* shot from the Gandiva, flew through the sky towards Karna in all quickness. Then the son of Drona cut off that *Naracha* as it coursed through the sky, with a winged arrow,

115. Desirous as he was of freeing Karna from his fear of Dhananjaya. Thereupon Arjuna inflamed with rage, pierced Drona's son with sixty-four arrows

116—119. Whetted on stone,and O monarch addressed the latter saying 'Fly not'. But afflicted with the arrows of Dhananjaya, Drona's son quickly entered into the army teeming with infuriated elephants and numerous chariots. Then the puissant son of Kunti drowned the sound of the other twangs of bows decked with goid, with the tremendous twang ot his own bow Gandiva. Then the mighty Dhananjaya pursued Drona's son from behind who was thus flying and who had not then proceeded to a long way, frightening him all the way with his shafts. Tearing open the body of men, elephants and steeds with his *Narachas*

120. Furnished with wings made of the feathers of the peacock and the Kanka, Arjuna began to agitate that army of yours. O foremost of the Bharatas, Partha, the son of Pakasasani (Indra) then began to carnage that host of yours, consisting of horses elephants and men.

Thus ends the one-hundred and thirty-ninth chapter, the fight between Karna and Bhima, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXL.

JAYADRATHA BADHA-PARVA.—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Day by day, O Sanjaya, my blazing fame is dwindling away. Numerous warriors of my side are being slain. I consider all this to be due to the adverse influence of Fate.

2. Inflamed with wrath, Dhananjaya has entered into my host which is protected by Drona's son and Karna and which is therefore incapable of being penetrated into by the very celestials.

3. Dhananjayas's prowess has increased in consequence of his being united with that foremost of the Sinis and those two of burning energy, namely Krishna and Bhima.

4. Like fire burning down a heap of dry grass, grief is corroding my heart since I have heard of Dhananjaya's entrance into my army. I see that all the king's of the earth with the ruler of the Sindhus amongst them, are under the influence of adverse Fate.

5. Having inflicted a terrlble injury to the diamem-cheked Arjuna, how could the ruler of the Sindhu's escape with his life, when he would become the object of Arjuna's sight ?

6. O Sanjaya, I can imagine even now that the king of the Sindhus no longer lives. Therefore, tell me how in reality did that battle rage then.

7. He that had single-handed and unsuported entered into and agitated my army, even as an infuriate elephant enters and crushes a group of lotuses,

8. Tell me of the feats of that Vrishnipero, as he achieved them, strugging to help Dhananjaya in battle. O Sanjaya, you are an expert in narration.

Sanjaya said :—

9. Seeing that foremost of men namely Bhima, proceed, although pierced with the arrows of Vikartana's son in the midst of so many heroes, O monarch, that excellent warrior of the Sini race, followed him on his chariot.

10. Uttering thundering roars like the clouds at the expiration of the summer

season, or burning like the sun at the end of the rainy season, he began to slaughter his foes by means of his tough bow and caused the troops of your son repeatedly to tremble.

11. When that foremost of Madhu's race careered on the field on his chariot drawn by horses of argentine hue and roared fiercely, O Bharata, there was none amongst your troops who could then check him.

12. Then that foremost of kings namely Alamvusha excited with wrath, untreatreating in battle, armed with a bow and covered in a golden coat of mail, advancing against Satyaki checked his carreer in battle.

13. The encounter that thereupon raged between them was unparalleled. Your soldiers and the enemy's troops, giving up the fight became spectators of that battle battle.

14. The foremost of all kings *viz* king Alamvusha, then sped at Satyaki ten shafts; but that foremost of scions of the Sini race, cut off all those shafts, with those of his own, before they could reach him.

15. Thereupon, Alamvasha pierced Satyaki with three sharp arrows furnished with beautiful wings blazing as fire and discharged from the bow drawn back to the very ear. These arrows penetrating through Satyaki's coat of mail mangled his body.

16. Then piercing Satyaki's body with those keenpointed and effulgent arrows, poisened and of the energy of fire or the wind, Alamvusha, with four other shafts, struck the four silver-white steeds of Satyaki with great force.

17. Possessing prowess and activity equal to those of that bearer of the discus (Krishna), the tgrandson of Sini, thus struck by Alamvasha, slew the latter's fours steeds with four keen arrows.

18. Then cutting off the head of Alamvusha's charioteer, he severed with a broad-headed arrow fierce as the *yoga*-fire from the former's trunk his head graced with excellent ear-rings and beatiful as the full moon.

19. Having slain that scion of a race whose descendants are all kings, the illustrious descendant of the Yadu race that hero capable of crushing the hostile army, advanced towards Arjuna, O king, checking in his progress the soldiers of the enemy.

20. O monarch, thus careering amongst his enemies, the Vrishni hero, when following in the track of Arjuna, was seen with his shafts to destroy repeadly the Kuru host, like the raging tempest scattering masses of clouds.

21. Where-ever that foremost of men desired to go, he was borne thither by those best steeds of his that were of Sindhu breed, well-broken, tame, white as milk, or the Kunda flower, or the moon or the snow, and that were decked with housings and traces of gold.

22. Then, O descendant of Ajamidas race, yours sons, united with other soldiers of your army, quickly rushed against Satyaki, making that foremost of warrior's *viz* Dussasana their leader.

23. Those commanders of divisions surrounding the grandson of Sini on all sides, began to wound him *viz* that foremost of the Satwata's; that hero Satyaki resisted them with showers of his atrows.

24. Resisting them all quickly with his shafts of fiery energy, that slayer of hostile heroes, the grandson of Sini uplifting his bow, slew the horses of Dussasana's chariot; then Arjuna and Krishna seeing that foremost of men Satyaki thus fight in battle became highly delighted.

Thus ends the one hundred and fortieth chapter, the slaughter of Alamvusha in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1—2. Then the mighty archers of the Trigartta clan, all owning gold-decked standards, surrounded on all sides the mighty-armed Satyaki—that hero who performed with activity everything that demanded promptness, and who having penetrated into that host fathomless as the ocean, was advancing against Dussasana's chariot, for giving victory to Dhananjaya.

3. Then all those excellent bowmen waxing wroth and surrounding him with hosts of cars on all sides, began to pour their arrowy showers on them.

4. But the unsupported Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, then alone conquered his fifty antagonists, all princes of the Trigartta race looking very beautiful in battle.

5. Then he reached the centre of the Bharata host, echoing with the sound of palm-strokes and abounding in swords,

lances and maces and looking like the unfordable ocean itself.

6. We then behold the wonderful conduct of Sini's grandson, for beholding him now in the Western direction, we immediately after beheld him in the Eastern direction, so great indeed was his lightness of movements.

7. Then as if dancing and resembling, although alone,a hundred car-warriors, that hero careered in the East, West, North and South, and all the subsidiary directions.

8. Beholding that conduct of that one of lion-like prowess and tread, the Trigartta warriors greatly afflicted, fell back upon the division of their clansmen.

9. Thereafter the brave warriors *viz* the Surasenas tried to resist Satyaki wounding him with arrowy showers, like a guide percing his mad elephant with the goad.

10. The illustrious Satyaki fought with them only for a while and then that hero of inconceivable prowess commenced his fight with the Kalingas.

11. Passing through the division of the Kalingas that was incabable being passed through, the mighty-armed Satyaki approached Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

12. Then like an exhausted swimmer reaching land, the heroic Yuyudhana became comforted on obtaining sight of Dhananjaya that foremost of men.

13. Beholding Satyaki come near them, Kesava addressing Arjuna said :—"There comes the grandson of Sini, O son of Pritha, pursuing the track (opened by you).

14. O you of true prowess, Satyaki is your friend and pupil. That foremost of men, holding all the warriors of the hostile host at a pins fee, has vanquished them all.

15. Inflicting dreadful loss upon the Kouravas, Satyaki dear unto you like your own life, is coming towards you, O diadem-decked one!

16. Having worsted with his arrows, Drona and Kritavarman of the Bhoja race, this Satyaki is approaching you, O Phalguna.

17. Having slain numerous warriors at best of their class, the valorous Satyaki ever solicitous of the welfare of Yudhisthira, and accomplished in the use of weapons, is approaching you, O Arjuna.

18. O son of Pandu, the puissant Satya- is coming to you having achieved numerous difficult feats in the midst of the Kourava host.

19. Having encountered on a single car many mighty car-warriors having Drona at their head, the heroic Satyaki is approaching you, O Arjuna.

20. Deputed by the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, O Pratha, this Satyaki is coming to you, having penetrated through the Kourava army, depending upon the might of his arms.

21. Invincible in battle, that Satyaki who has no match for him in the whole Kourava army, is now coming to you, O son of Kunti!

22. Freed from the press of the Kourava troops, like a lion from amidst a herd of kine, Satyaki is now approaching you, after having slain numerous hostile soldiers.

23. O son of Pritha, here comes Satyaki in all quickness, having covered the earth with the heads of thousand's of kings, graced with faces resembling blooming lotuses.

24. Yonder comes Satyaki, having conquered Duryodhana with his brothers, and having slain Jalasandha in battle.

25. Yonder comes Satyaki, having created a river of blood with clots of blood for its mire, and having disregarded the Kouravas like some any straws."

26. Hearing these words of Kesava Kunti's son although filled with delight replied to the former saying :—"O mighty-armed one, I am not pleased to find that Satyaki is coming to me.

27. O Kesava, I do not know the whereabouts of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira. I am doubtful whether he lives or not, being deprived of the help of this Satwata hero.

28. O mighty-armed one, it should have been this one's first duty to protect the king in battle. O Krishna, wherefore has then this one abandoning him has followed in my wake?

29. The king has been left to the mercy of Drona; the ruler of the Sindhus is still unslain, and yonder does Bhurisravas rush against Satyaki in battle.

30. I have still the heavies tburden hanging on me, in the shape of my vow to slay the Sindhu king. It is my duty to inform myself of the where-abouts of the king. It is also my duty to protect Satyaki.

31. It is also my (self-imposed) duty to slay Jayadratha. Yonder is the sun going down (the horizon). As regards the mighty-armed Satyaki he is fatigued and his stock of weapons is also exhausted.

32. His horses are tired, and O Madhava his driver is worn out with fatigue. On the other hand, O Kesava, Bhurisrava is not at all fatigued, and moreover he is well supported.

33. Will Satyaki reap victory in this encounter? Having crossed the ocean itself will Satyaki of prowess incapable of being vanquished,

34—36. Will that foremost of the scion of the Sini race, will that highly energetic one, succumb in crossing the little water contained in the vestige of a cow's hoof? Will Satyaki obtain good fortune having encountered Bhurisravas that foremost of the Kurus, who is high-souled and accomplished in the use of weapons? That he should despatch Satyaki after me, dismissing all his fears from Drona, O Kesava, I think this to be a mistake committed by the very virtuous kingj Yudhisthira. Like a hawk when ranging through the skies, ever trying to pounce upon a piece of meat, Drona is ever endeavouring to effect the capture of the very virtuous king. Will the king fare well?

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-first chapter, Satyaki's seeing of Arjuna, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Beholding that warrior indomitable in battle, that scion of the Sini race rush furiously to battle, O king, Bhurisravas, inflamed with wrath, assailed him.

2. Then, O mighty monarch, that foremost of the Kurus (Bhurisravas) addressing Sini's grandson thus spoke:—"By good luck it is that you have to-day come within the range of my sight;

3. To-day, I shall realise in battle my long-cherished hope; you shall not escape me alive if indeed you do not fly away from the battle.

4. O scion of the Dasarha race, to-day slaying you who ever boast of your prowess, I shall afford delight to Suyodhana, the king of the Kurus.

5. To-day the heroes, Kesava and Arjuna, will both behold you prostrate on the field of battle, consumed with the fire of my barrows.

To-day Dharma's son king Yudhisthira hearing you slain by me, would be covered with shame, for it was he who despatched you on this mission.

7. To-day Pritha's son Dhananjaya will come to know of my prowess when he will see you slain by me and lie weltering in your blood.

8. This encounter with you has long been desired by me, like that desired by Sakra with Vali, in the battle between the Gods and the Asuras in days gone by.

9. To-day, O descendant of the Satwata race, I shall fight a terrible fight with you, whence you shall know my great might and manliness.

10. Slain by me in battle, you shall to-day go to the domains of the Samyamani, like the son ofRavana slain by the younger brother of Rama (Lakshmana.)

11. To-day Krishna, Partha, and the virtuous king Yudhisthira, O Madhava, will abandon fighting, and become despondent, in consequence of your slaughter.

12. O Madhava, to-day, slaying you with my sharp arrows, I shall afford delight to the wives of those who have been slain by you.

13. Just as a small deer coming within the range of a lion's sight cannot escape, so O descendant of Madhu's race, you shall not escape me alive, having come within the range of my sight."

14. Thereupon, O king, Yuyudhana smilingly replied to him saying:—"O illustrious descendant of the Kuru race, I have no fear in fight.

15. I am not to be terrified by empty words. He will slay me in battle who will be competent to deprive me of my weapons.

16. He that will slay me in battle will ever be victorious. What is the use of vain boasts. Achieve in deeds what you say in words.

17. Like the rumble of autumnal clouds, your roars are barren. So hearing your empty roars nothing best my laughter is being excited.

18. O Kourava, let the encounter which you looked so eargrly for, to-day take place; O sire, my heart that longs for the combat with you, can not tolerate any more delay.

19. O wretch, I shall not abstain from the fight to-day without having slain you in battle." Thus those two formost of men, stirring each other with their biting words,

20. And waxing wroth, and desirous of slaying each other in battle began to smite each other. Then those two mighty bowmen both boastful of their prowess and both challenging each other,

21. Appeared like two infuriate elephants encountering each other, with a desire to consort with a she-elephant. Then those two subduers of foes, Bhurisravas and Satyaky began to pour,

22. On each other, dreadful showers of arrows like two mighty-clouds. Covering Sini's grandson with swift-coursing arrows, Somadatts's son,

23. O foremost of the Bharatas, desirous of slaying the former, pierced him with sharp arrows. Having pierced Satyaki then with ten arrows, Somadatta's son,

24—25. Out of a desire for slaying that illustrious scion of the Sini race, sped other sharp shafts at him. Then, O ruler of men, Satyaki with the illusion of his weapons devoured up all those arrows, O lord, when they were ranging through the skies and before they had even reached him (Satyaki). Then those two heroes began to pour upon one another their showers of weapons.

26. Those two heroes, of noble extraction both enhancers of the fame of the Kurus and the Vrisknis respectively, began to fight with each other like two tigers fighting with claws, or two elephants fighting with their tusks.

27. With lances and with darts and javelins they inflicted wounds on each other. They mangled their bodies and shed blood profusely.

28. Then those two heroes checked each other in that battle which was like a gambling match in which their lives were the stakes. Thus those two enhancers of the glory of the Kuru and the Vrishni races (respectively),

29—31. Fought on with each other like two huge elephants, the leaders of two herds. Those two warriors, both desirous of attaining the highest of regions both longing to attain to the region of Brahma, thus roared at each other. Indeed Satyaki and Somadatta's son continued to cover each with their arrowy downpour in the sight of the delighted Dhartarastras. The people then witnessed that encounter between those two foremost of warriors,

32. Who were fighting like two leaders of elephant herds for the sake of consorting with a she-elaphant in her season. Then each slaying the other's steeds and cutting off the other's bow

33. And thus deprived of the use of their cars, encountered each other for sword fighting. Taking up two large and beautiful and variegated shields made of bull's hide,

34. And drawing out their swords out of their scabbards, they appeared beautiful on the field of battle. They moved in various motions and described in their montions, various circles.

35. Those two subduers of foes incessantly then began to strike one another out of rage. With their swords and covered in variegated coats of mail and adorned with *Nikas* and *Angadas*,

36. Those two renowned warriors displayed various kinds of motions. They wheeled about and jumped on high, made side thirsts, leapt forward, whirled on high, ran and dashed forward and advanced upwards.

37. Those two subduers of foes began to smite each other with their swords, and each was on the alert for finding the weakness of other. Both of those two heroes jumped up superbly,

38. And both displayed their training agility and skill. Those foremost of warriors in that battle, made many skilful thirst at each other.

39. Then, O foremost of men, striking each other, they took respite only for a moment before the presence of all the troop.

40. Having, with their respective swords cut off the variegated buckler of each other decked with hundred moons, those foremost of men engaged in a wrestling encounter, O ruler of men.

41. Possessed of expanded chests, long arms, and both versed in wrestling, they fought on with each other with their arms that resembled iron-piked bludgeons.

42. They struck and seized each other with their arms, and each seized the others neck with his arms. The skill that they had acquired by practice, afforded great delight to other warriors who then were turned into mere spectators.

43. Then, O king, as those two foremost of men fought on with each other, the sound that then arose, was like that caused by the striking of thunder against a mountain.

44—46. Like two elephants fighting with each other with the ends of their tusks, or like two bulls with their horns, those two high-souled and foremost warriors of the Kuru and the Satwata races, fought with each other, sometimes twining each other with their arms, sometimes striking each other with their heads, sometimes binding each other with their legs, sometimes slapping their arm-pits, sometimes scraching each other with their nails, sometimes embracing each other tightly, sometimes twining their legs round each others loins, sometimes rolling on the ground, sometimes going forward and sometime falling back,

sometimes challenging each other, sometimes throwing each other down, sometimes rising up and sometimes jumping on high.

47. Then those two puissant combatant's displayed in that encounter all the thirty kinds of manœuvers and acts that are the principal features of these kinds of encounters.

48. When during that encounter, the stock of Satwata's weapons was exhausted, Vasudeva's son addressing Arjuna said :—"Behold this carless hero, *viz.*, Satyaki, this foremost of all weilders of bow, engaged in fight!

49. O son of Pandu, he has followed you having penetrated into the Bharata host. O Bharata, he has fought with many mighty warriors of the Bharata host.

50. Bhurisravas who has made great sacrificial presents, rushing upon that foremost of warriors *viz.*, Satyaki exhausted with fatigue, has now encountered him. This is indeed very unfair."

51. Then the indomitable Bhurisravas inflamed with rage, uplifting his sword struck Satyaki like a mad elephant striking another in the same state.

52. Those two foremost of car-warriors, both riding in their cars, and both rushing with rage fought on with each other, Arjuna and Krishna being their witnesses.

53. Thereupon the mighty-armed Krishna addressing Arjuna said. "Behold the foremost of the Vrishni and Andhaka races, *viz.*, Satyaki succumb to the son of Somadatta.

54. Having achieved many difficult feats he is now laid low on the field in consequence of his great exhaustion. O Arjuna protect the heroic Satyaki, your (renowned) pupil.

55. O foremost of men, O Arjuna, do you soon take that measure by which Satyaki may not succumb to Bhurisravas the performer of numerous sacrifices, O lord."

56. Then Dhananjaya, with a cheerful heart addressing Vasudeva's son said :—" Behold that foremost among the Kurus, and that best hero among the Vrishni's, sport with each other,

57. Like a huge and enfuriate elephant sporting in the woods with a mighty lion." While Pandu's son Dhananjaya was thus speaking,

58. Loud cries of *Oh* and *Alas* arose among the troops, O foremost of the Bharatas, as the mighty-armed (Bhurisravas) striking vigorously had brought Satyaki down on the earth.

59. Then like a lion dragging an elephant, that foremost of the Kuru race, namely Bhurisravas, that destroyer of darkness, looked beautiful in that battle as he dragged that foremost one of the Satwatas.

60. Then drawing his sword out of the scabbard and holding Satyaki by the hair, Bhurisravas struck the former on the breast with his legs.

61. Bhurisravas was then about to sever from Satyaki's trunk his head greaced with earrings. For sometime, that hero of the Satwata race rapidly whirled his head,

62. Together with the arm of Bhurisravas that held it by the hair, like a potters wheel whirling round with the rod.

63. Beholding the Satwata hero thus dragged by Bhurisravas, Vasudeva once more addressing Arjuna said :—

64. 'Behold O mighty-armed one, that foremost hero among the Vrishnis and Andhakas, that disciple of yours who is not inferior to you in bowmanship, succumb to the son of Somadatta.

65. Behold, O son of Pritha, the weak Bhurisravas obtain advantage over the Vrishni hero Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled."

66. The mighty-armed son of Pandu thus spoken to by Vasudeva (Krishna), worshipped Bhurisravas in his minds,

67. (He then said to himself). 'Dragging this foremost of the Satwata race as if in sport, the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus (Bhurisravas) is filling me with delight.

68. Without slaying that foremost of the Vrishni heroes *viz* Satyaki he is only dragging the former like the king of the beasts dragging a mighty elephant in the woods.'

69. Having thus mentally applauded that foremost of the Kouravas, Pritha's son, O king, the mighty Arjuna thus replied to Vasudeva saying :—

70. "O Madhava, my eyes being fixed on the ruler of the Sindhus, I can not see Bhurisravas; but for the sake of that descendant of Yadu's, race, I shall perform a very difficult feat."

71. Having thus spoken and desirous of carrying out the words of Vasudeva, the son of Pandu placed a sharp razor-headed arrow on the bowstring.

72. That arrow shot by the force of Partha's arms and looking like a meteor dropping from the skies, cut off the arm of that one devoted to the performance of sacrifice

—arm that was decked with Angadas and had a sword in its grasp.

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-second chapter, the lopping of Bhurisrava's arm, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then that arm with the sword in grasp and decked with beautiful Angadas, fell down on the earth, thereby inflicting great grief on the living creation.

2. In the act of striking, that arm was lopped off by the diadem-decked Arjuna, who himself remained invisible to Bhurisravas; thus cut off, it fell down vehlmently on the earth, like a five-hooded snake.

3. Then that descendant of the Kuru race, beholding himself incapacitated by Pritha's son, began, out of rage, to reprove the son of Pandu, having abandoned Satyaki.

Bhurisravas said :—

4. Alas, O son of Kunti, you have committed a cruel and heartless deed, in as much as, not being engaged with me, and covertly, you have cut off my arm.

5. Shall you have not to say to king Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma—'Bhurisravas when engaged with another was slain by me in battle ?'

6. Was it for this that you learnt the use of weapons from the illustrious Indra, or Rudra, or Drona or Kripa, O son of Pritha!

7. It is said that you are better acquainted with the rules about the use of weapons than many others. Why then have you lopped off the arm of one who was not fighting with you?

8. The righteous never strike him who is careless, or who is frightened, or who is made carless, or who implores mercy, or who is involved in a calamity.

9. Why then, O son of Pritha, have you perpetrated this vile and difficult deed, that is only worthy of a mean fellow and is practised only by wicked people.

10. O Dhananjaya, respectable people look upon respectable deeds to be very easy of being accomplished. But a disrespectable deed is difficult of being perpetrated by a respectable person.

11. Men quickly imbibe the behaviours of those among whom they live, O Bartha, the truth of this proposition is verified in you.

12. Of royal extraction and specially descendant as you are of the Kuru race, how could you transgress the duties of the Kshatriya race, although you were well-behaved and observant of vows.

13. This vile act that you have to-day perpetrated for the sake of the Vrishni hero, is surely the result of Vasudeva's instigations. And it can not possibly be reconciled to your nature.

14. What man, except he that calls himself a friened of Krishna would inflict such an injury on another who is engaged deeply in fighting with his adversary ?

15. The Vrishnis and the Andhakas are vile Kshatriyas, ever engaged in perpetrating low deeds and are by nature wedded to shameful conduct. Why, O Partha, have you chosen them to be your model ?"

Sanjaya said :—

Being thus spoken to Partha then replied to Bhurisravas saying :—

16. 'Now it is clear that with the decay of the body, the intellect of men also suffer decay, since, O master, you have uselessly directed all these reproaches to me.

17. Knowing myself and Hrishikesha perfectly well, how is it that you reproach us both ? I am conversant perfectly with the rules of fair combat and I am acquainted with the meaning of all moral precepts.

18. So, it is impossible that I should commit a sinful act. Knowing this also, you are reproaching me. The Kshatriyas fight with their foes, being supported by their own men,

19. Such as their brothers, their fathers their sons, and relatives and friends, and kinsmen and companions, and also relying on the strength of their arms.

20. Why then should I not protec, Satyaki my disciple and my dear relativet who is fighting in this battle on our behali reckless of his very life that is so difficult of being laid down ?

21. Why should I not protect Satyakf who is, O king, like my own right arm to me ? In battle, one should not look after his own protection only.

22. O ruler of men, he that is engaged on behalf of another, should surely be protected by that other. When such men are

themselves protected they can look after the protection of the king (on whose behalf they fight).

23. If indeed I had passivsly beheld Satyaki's slaughter in this great encounter, then, at Satyaki's death, sin would have hanged on me for my negligence.

24—28. Why do you wax wroth upon me for my having protected him, who in every way deserves my protection? You are reproaching me, O king, saying, 'When engaged with another, I have yet been incapacitated by you.' In respect to this, I submit that I committed an error in my judgment. Satyaki was shaking his armour against you and was riding on his own car, (drawing his bow-string he was fighting with the foes, in the midst of his enemies abounding in steeds and foot-soldier and teeming with cars and elephants and echoing with the war-cries of combatants. Amongst friends and foes engaged with one another, how could it be possible that the Satwata hero was engaged with one person only? Having encountered many warriors, and vanquished many mighty car-warrior,

29. Satyaki was fatigued and afflicted with weapon-wounds and cheerless in mind; his horses also were exhausted. Having, under these circumstances, defeated the mighty car-warrior Satyaki,

30. And having thus obtained advantage over him, you seek to establish your superiority. You desired to cut off with your sword the head of Satyaki.

31. I could not possibly behold passively Satyaki reduced to that plight. It is proper that you should reproach your own self in as much as you neglected to protect yourself (when trying to injure another). Indeed O hero, how would you yourself have behaved towards one who would be your dependent."

Sanjaya said :—

32. Thus spoken to (by Arjuna), the illustrious and mighty-armed Bhurisravas bearing the device of a scrificial stake on his banner, let Yuyudhana go, and desired to enter upon the performance of Praya-Yoga.

33. Distinguished by many pious deeds, he then spread with his left hand a bed of arrows, and out of a desire for going to the regions of Brahman, he committed his vital breaths to the care of the gods presiding over them.

34. Steadying his eyes on the sun, setting his mind on the purified water and meditating the Mantras contained in the Upanishadas, Bhurisravas betaking himself to yoga, became reticent.

35. Then all the men in the army began to rebuke Krishna and Dhanajaya, and applaud that foremost of men *viz* Bhurisravas.

36. Though thus reproached by the general voice, the two Krishnas uttered not a single word, nor did the stake-bannered Bhurisravas feel any joy in consequence of those encomiums.

37—38. Then Dhananjaya otherwise called Phalguna, that son of Pandu unable to tolerate your sons speaking in that strain as also to put up with their words and the words of Bhurisravas, O Bharata, in sorrow and not at all angry, spoke these words, as if for reminding them all.

39. "All kings know of this my great vow, that no one shall slay any body of our party so long as the latter is within the range of my arrows.

40. Knowing this, O stake-bannerd, one it befits you not to reproach me; without yourself knowing the rules of morality, you should not censure others.

41. That I have lopped off your arm while you, armed to the teeth, were on the point of slaying the unarmed Satyaki, is not at all against the rules of fair combat.

42. But what righteous man is there who will not condemn the slaughter of the body Abhimanyu specially when he was deprived of his weapons, his car and his armour?"

43. Thus addressed by Pritha's son, Bhurisravas touched the ground with his head and offered with his left arm the right one that had been severed.

44. Then the stake-bannered Bhurisravas of great effulgence O king having heard those words of Partha, became silent with his face turned towards the earth.

Arjuna said :—

45. O eldest brother of Sala, the love I bear for you is equal even to that I bear for king Yudhisthira the virtuous, or Bhima that foremost of all mighty persons, or Nakula or Sahadeva.

46. With my permission as also with that of the high-souled Krishna do you go to the regions of the righteous where Sivi the son of Usinara is.

Vasudeva said :—

47. You are ever devoted to the performance of sacrifices and Agnihotras; therefore repair quickly to those holy regions of mine

that constantly burn with effulgence and that are coveted by the foremost of gods with Brahman as their head, and becoming equal to myself be you carried on the back of Garuda.

Sanjaya said :—

48. Liberated from the grasp of Somadatta's son, the grandson of Sini rose, and with a view to cut off the head of that illustrious hero, drew his sword.

49. Satyaki then desired to slay the sinless Bhurisravas, the eldest brother of Saila that giver of profuse presents at sacrifices, who was staying with his senses drawn back from the battle and who had already been slain by Arjuna the son of Pandu ;

50. Who was sitting with his arm lopped off, like an elephant with his trunk cut off. Then all the warriors reproached him loudly for his intention. But destitute of reason,

51. And although forbidden by the high-souled Partha and Krishna and Bhima and the two wheel protectors of Arjuna's car, and Aswathaman and Kripa,

52. And Karna and Vrishasena and the king of the Sindhus, and while the soldiers were still uttering loud shouts of denunciation, Satyaki slew Bhurisravas while engaged in the observanoe of the vow.

53. Indeed with his sword Satyaki lopped off the head of the Kuru warrior who had been deprived of his arm by Partha and who was then engaged in the Praya for liberating his soul from the body.

54. The soldiers then did not praise Satyaki for that act of his, viz the slaughter of the perpetuator of the Kuru race, who had already been slain by Pritha's son.

55—56. Then the Siddhas, the Charanas, and the men present, as also the celestials, seeing the Indra-like Bhurisravas slain in battle when sitting in the observance of the vow Praya, began to praise him, struck with wonder at the feats achieved by him. Your troops also argued the matter saying :

57. 'In this matter no blame should be attributed to the Vrishni hero. What has been ordained must happen. Therefore we should not cherish wrath ; since again wrath is the cause of a man's grief.

58. It was doomed that Bhurisravas would be slain by the heroic Satyaki. We need not judge of its propriety or otherwise. Satyaki has been made the instrument of Bhurisrava's death by the Creator himself.

Satyaki said :—

59. You, sinful Kouravas, vested in outward garments of virtue, you are telling me in words of virtue, that Bhurisravas should not have been slain.

60. Where did this righteousness of yours fly when you ruthlessly slew in battle that child viz Subadra's son when he was deprived to the use of his weapons ;

61. In a certain fit of haughtiness I had vowed that he who would throw me down in battle alive, and strike me in wrath with his knees,

62. Would be slain by me even though that antagonist of mine should adopt the vow of asceticism. Though I was fighting in battle with my arms and eyes in tact,

63. Yet you had taken me as already slain. It is indeed a great foolishness on your part. You foremost of the Kurus, the slaughter of Bhnrisravas achieved by me, is indeed very proper.

64. Partha by lopping off the arm of this one, with sword in grasp, has fulfilled his vow of protecting his own partisans, and has thereby robbed me of my glory.

65. What is ordained must come to pass It is the hand of fate that works. Bhurisravas has been slain in the course of this battle. What sin have I perpetrated ?

66. In days gone by, Valmiki sang this verse on earth viz—"You say, O ape, that women should not be slain !

67. In all times however men should always with resolute care do that which would give pain to thei foes."

Sanjaya said :—

68. After Satyaki had said these words, none amongst the Pandavas and the Kouravas, O king, said anything ; on the other hand they praised Bhurisravas in their mind.

69. Nobody present there countenanced the slaughter of Somadatta's illustrious son, who resembled an hermit of the woods and who had given away thousands of golden coins.

70. The head of that brave hero graced with beautiful blue locks and eyes red like those of pegions looked like the head of a horse cut off in a horse sacrifice and placed on the sacrificial altar.

71. Purified through his prowess and the death by the edge of weapons, and in consequenee of the boon accorded to him, Bhurisravas worthy of every boon went to the regions on high, shuffling off his mortal coil and filling the heavens with his illustrious fame.

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-third chapter, the slaughter of Bhurisravas in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLIV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. Having promised to Yudhisthira to do so, the heroic Satyaki crossed the ocean of my troops, unvavquished even by Drona, Radha's son, Vikarna and Kritavarman.

2. How was it then that Satyaki checked and humiliated by that scion of the Kurus namely Bhurisravas, was brought down on the ground with force.

Sanjaya said :—

3. Hear, O monarch, how the grandson of Sini came to being in days gone by as also how Bhurisravas was descended. O ruler of men, this will explain all your doubts.

4. Atri had Soma for his son, and Soma's son was called Budha. Budha's son was Pururava whose effulgence was like that of the great Indra.

5. Pururava had a son called Ayush ; and Ayush's son was Nahusha. Nahusha had Yayati for his son who was a royal sage equal to a celestial.

6. By his wife Devayani Yayati had Yadu for his eldest son. In the dynasty of Yadu was born a son called by the name of Devamida.

7. Devamida of Yadu's race had Sura for his son, who was highly esteemed in all the three worlds. Sura had for his son that foremost of men namely the illustrious Vasudeva.

8. Foremost of all weilders of bows, Sura was equal to Kartikeya in battle. O king, in his race and equal to him in energy was born Sini, O monarch.

9. At this time, O monarch the *Sayamvara* of the daughter of the illustrious Devaka took place in which numerous Kshatriyas were present.

10. In that Sayamvara, Sini having vanquished the kings, placed the princess Devaki on his car, with a view to marry her to Vasudeva.

11. O foremost of men, O king, then beholding the princess Devaki on the car of Sini of Sura's line, the highly puissant Somadatta could not brook it.

12. Thereupon, O king, a battle was fought between them, that occupied half a day and was beautiful to look at. O foremost of men, a wrestling encounter then took place between those heroes endued with great heroism.

13. Somadatta then was seized upon and felled on the ground by Sini ; and the latter raising his sword and holding the former by the hair, struck him with his legs,

14. In the midst of thousands of kings who were witnessing the combat, from all sides. Then out of mercy ; the latter abandoned the former saying 'go, live.'

15. Reduced to that humiliatory condition, O sire, Somadatta, influeneed by ang r began to offer worship to Mahadeva in order to propitiate him.

16. That foremost of all boon-giving deities namely Mahadeva became pleased with him and requested him to ask for his desired boon. The royal son of Somadatta then asked for this boon :—

17. "I wish to have a son, O master, who will strike down Sini's son in the midst of thousands of kings in battle and who will strike the latter with his leg."

18. Hearing these words of Somadatta O king, the god disappeared then and there saying 'so be it.'

19. Through the virtue of that boon Somadatta afterwards got the liberal-minded and munificient Bhurisravas for his son ; and it was thus that Somadatta's son succeeded in throwing down the descendant of Sini,

20, And in striking him with his legs in in the presence of the whole army. O king now I have related to you what you asked me.

21. Indeed that scion of the Satwata race (Satyaki) can not be worsted in battle by even the foremost of men, The Vrishni heroes are all of sure aim and are acquainted with all modes of warfare.

22. They can defeat the very gods the Danavas and the Gandharvas. They are never confounded ; they fight depending totally on their own energy. They never seek other's help.

23. O lord, there is none in this world equal to the Vrishnis. O foremost of the Bharata's none, has been, are, or will be a match for the Vrishnis in might.

24, They never contemn their kinsmen, and are ever observant of the commands of the elders. Neither the gods nor the Asuras, nor the Gandharvas, nor the Yakshas nor the Rakshasas,

25. Can conquer the Vrishni heroes, what to speak of men! They never cast covetous-glances on the things or possessions of their kinsmen, preceptor or those of the Brahmanas.

26. They never covet also the properties of those that render them help on any time of distress. Devoted to the Brahmanas, and truthful in speech, they never show any pride although they are wealthy.

27. Those who are really strong are regarded as weak by the Vrishnis, and are rescued by them when involved in any danger. Ever devoted to the worship of gods, the Vrishnis are self-controlled munificent and shorn of pride.

28. For this it is that prowess of the Vrishni heroes are never thwarted. It is possible for one to carry on his shoulders the Meru mountain or to swim across the very ocean,

29-30. But it is impossible for him to obtain advantage over the Vrishnis in an encounter with them. O lord, I have now explained to you every thing in respect of which you entertained doubts. After all, O king of the Kurus, O foremost of men, yours is the great fault (that has bred this war).

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-fourth chapter, the praise of Satyaki, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLV.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said:—

1. When under these circumstances the Kurn warrior Bhurisravas had been slain, relate to me, O Sanjaya how the battle progressed.

Sanjaya said:—

2. After Bhurisravas had gone to the regions of the departed, O Bharata, the mighty-armed Arjuna urged Vasudeva saying:—

3. "O Krishna, urge the steeds to the top of their speed, so that they may soon carry me to spot where king Jayadratha is, O sinless one it behoves you, to help me in the fulfilment of my vow!

4—7. O mighty-armed one, the orb of the day, is quickly going towards the Western hills. O foremost of men, I have undertaken to achieve a mighty task. But the ruler of the Sindhus on the other hand is protected by many foremost warriors among the Kurus. O Krishna, do you drive the horses in such a manner that my vow may be fulfilled before sunset and that Jayadratha may be slain."

Sanjaya said:—

Then the mighty-armed Krishna versed in horse-lore, urged those horses of argentine hue towards the car of Jayadratha. Then as Arjuna proceeded shooting swift-flying arrows ever hitting their marks,

8. O mighty monarch, the formemost warriors of yours troops quickly proceeded to meet him. They were Duryodhana, Karna, Vrishasena, the king of the Madras,

9. Aswathaman, Kripa, and the ruler of the Sindhus himself; encountering the Sindhu king who was standing before him, Vibhatsu,

10. Cast his eyes burning with rage on him and seemed to burn the former there with. Thereupon king Duryodhana addressing Radha's son quickly said:—

11. 'Behold Arjuna exert himself for compassing the slaughter of Jayadratha." O king, your royal son Suyodhana spoke these very words to Karna.

12. "O son of Vikartana, the crisis in the battle has arrived. O high-souled warrior, now show your own strength. O Karna, do you so act as Jayadratha may not be slain in battle by Arjuna.

13. O foremost hero among men, very little remains of the day. Thwart the enemy now with the waves of your arrows. O foremost of men, if we can safely reach the expiry of the day, victory will certainly be ours.

14. If the ruler of the Sindhus can be saved till the sun sets, then the son of Kunti, in consequence of his vow being baffled, will fall upon fire.

15. O giver of honor, the brothers and the followers of Arjuna will not be able to live for a moment on the face of the earth, when he passes away from it.

16. When the Pandavas will be destroyed, O Karna, we shall enjoy this earth with its mountains, gardens and forests, without a thorn in our sides.

17. O bestower of honor, confounded by adverse Destiny, and through the perversion of his judgement, Arjuna has made this vow without judging what is practicable and what impracticable.

18. [Surely, O Karna, the diadem-decked son of Pandu had vowed the slaughter of Jayadratha for encompassing his own destruction.

19. O son of Radha, how can Phalguna succeed in slaying the ruler of the Sindhus, before sunset, when yourself indomitable in battle, is still alive?

20. How can Dhananjaya succeed in slaying in battle Jayadratha who is protected by the king of the Madras and the illustrious Kripa himself?

21. How can Vibhatsu, who it appears is urged on by Fate, reach the Sindhu-king, who is protected by Drona's son and myself and Dussasana?

22. Numerous heroic warriors are fighting for the sake of Jayadratha, and the sun is also hanging low. O giver of honors, Partha will not be able to reach the ruler of the Sindhus in battle.

23. Now, O Karna, supported by myself, by other heroic mighty car-warriors, by Drona's son, by the king of the Madras and Kripa himself,

24. Do you fight with Pritha's son in battle, exerting to the best of your capabilities." Having been thus spoken to by your son, O sire, the son of Radha,

25—26. Replied to Duryodhana that fore-most of the Kurus in these words;—My body has been mangled with numerous net-works of arrows in the battle by the heroic Bhimasena of resolute aim and of skilful bowmanship. O bestower of honors, I now stay in battle-field, only because it is my duty to do so.

27. Afflicted with mighty shafts there is not a single limb of mine that is not suffering excruciating pain; still I shall fight to the best of my abilities. My very life is for you.

28. I shall do that by which this foremost of the Pandavas will not succeed in slaying the Sindhu-king. So long as I shall fight discharging sharp arrows,

29. The brave Dhananjaya, who can shoot weapons even with his left hand, will not be able to reach the ruler of the Sindhus. Everything that a man bearing love and devotion to you and always anxious for your welfare, ought to do for you,

30. Shall be done by me, O you of Kuru's race. As regards our victory it is under the disposal of Destiny. I shall exert myself in battle to-day to the best of my abilities, for the sake of the Sindhu king,

31. And also for accomplishing what would conduce to your good, O monarch. But, O king, victory depends upon Destiny. Relying on my prowess, I shall to-day fight with Arjuna,

32—33. For your sake, O foremost of men, but victory is dependent on Destiny. O foremost of the Kurus, let all the troops to-day witness the horripilating and fierce encounter that shall take place between myself and Pritha's son." When Karna, and the king of the Kurus were thus talking to each other on the field,

34—35. Arjuna was engaged in slaughtering your army with his sharp arrows. He then cut off with sharp *Vallas* the arms of unretreating heroes, arms that resembled bludgeons or trunks of elephants. That mighty-armed hero also severed many heads from the trunks of men with his arrows.

36—37. Vibhatsu also cut off the trunks of elephants, the necks of steeds, the axels of cars, and also horses, and men steeped in blood, and armed with lances, in two or three fragments with his *Kshurapras.* And horses and excellent elephants,

38. And standards and umbrellas and bows and *chamaras* and heads began to fall fast on all sides. Then consuming your troops like fire consuming a heap of dry grass,

39—40.—Partha soon made the earth deluged with blood. The mighty and indomitable son of Pritha of prowess incapable of being baffled, spreading a terrible carnage in that host of yours, soon reached the ruler of the Sindhus. Protected by Bhimasena and by Satwata, Vibhatsu,

41—42. O foremost of the Bharatas, appeared effulgent like a blazing fire. Then seeing Arjuna in that condition, all the fierce bowmen of your army, those foremost of men, possessed of the wealth of energy, could not brook him. Thereupon Duryodhana, Karna, Vrishasena, the ruler of the Madras,

43. Aswathaman, Kripa, and the ruler of the Sindhus surrounded the diadem-decked Arjuna on all sides.

44—45. Then all those combatants skilled in fighting, placing the ruler Sindhus at their back and impelled by a desire for slaying Arjuna and Krishna, dauntlessly surrounded Partha, that hero versed in all modes of warfare, who then appared to dance in the terrace of this chariot, emitting fierce sounds, with his bow-string and his palms, and resembling the Destroyer himself with mouth agape.

46. Meanwhile the sun and the heavens had assumed a crimson hue. Desirous of the speedy setting of the sun, the Kourava warriors bending their bows with arms resembling the tapering bodies of serpents,

47—48. Discharged their arrows by hundreds, towards Phalguna,—arrows, that resembled the rays of the sun. Cutting off all those shafts thus sped towards him, into two, three or eight fragments, the diadem-decked Arjuna, indomitable in battle, pierced them all (with his arrows). Then Aswathaman owning the device of a lion's tail in his banner, displaying his might,

49. Began, O monarch, to resist Arjuna. Indeed the son of the daughter of Saradwata, piercing Partha with ten shafts and Krishna with seven,

50—51. Impeded the progress of Arjuna's chariot, with a view to protect the ruler of the Sindhus. Then many foremost one among the Kurus all great car-warriors, surrounded Arjuna on all sides with a large number of chariots; stretching their bows and discharging numerous arrows,

52. They began to exert themselves for protecting the ruler of the Sindhus, at the command of your son. We then beheld the strength of the heroic Partha's arms,

53. The inexhaustibility of his shafts and the strength also of his bow Gandiva. Repulsing with his own weapons, those of Drona's son and of Kripa,

54. He pierced every one of your warriors with nine arrows. Thereupon Drona's son pierced him with twenty-five arrows and Vrishasena pierced him with seven.

55. Duryodhana pierced him with twenty, Karna with three shafts. And all of them roared at him and went on piercing him without remission.

56. Shaking their bows, they encompassed him on all sides and they also made their chariots to be drawn in a compact circle around him.

57. Desirous of the speedy setting of the sun, those mighty fighters of the Kuru host possessed of great agility, began to roar at Arjuna, and shaking their bows,

58—59. Covered him with showers of sharp arrows like clouds pouring rain over the mountain-breast; those brave warriors, having arms like heavy bludgeons, also showed on that occasion, O monarch, on Dhananjaya's body their celestials weapons. Having spread a great carnage in your army, the mighty,

60. And indomitable Dhananjaya, of prowess incapable of beinng baffled, came upon the ruler of the Sindhus. Karna however, O king, with his arrows, resisted him in that battle,

61—62. Before the very eyes, O Bharata of Bhimasena and Satwata. The mighty armed son of Pritha in the very sight of all the troops pierced the son of Suta, in return, with ten arrows, on the field of battle. Then Satwata, O sire, pierced Karna with three arrows.

63. Bhimasena pierced him with three and Partha again with seven arrows. Then Karna that mighty car-warrior pierced each of them with sixty shafts.

64. O king, then a terrible battle raged between Karna on one side and the many on the other; then, O sire, we beheld the wonderful prowess of the son of Suta,

65. In asmuchas single-handed, he succeeded in checking the three mighty warriors in battle; then the mighty armed Phalguna struck Karna on his vital limbs with a group of hundred arrows. Thereupon the puissant son of Suta, steeped all over his body with blood,

67. Pierced the heroic Phalguna in return with fifty arrows. Beholding that lightness of hands displayed by him, Arjuna did not brook him.

68. Then Pritha's son bursting his bow open, pierced him on his chariot with nine arrows of depressed knots, with great speed.

69. Then with great lightness at a time when lightness was necessary, Dhananjaya in order to slay Karna, sped at hin an arrow of the effulgence of the solar rays.

70. As that arrow was coursing with vehemance through the sky, Drona's son with a sharp crescent-shaped arrow cut it off; thus cut down it fell down, on the ground.

71. Then the highly puissant son of Suta taking up another bow, covered Pandu's son with thousands of arrows.

72. Then with his arrows, Pritha's son scattered the unrivalled shower of arrows that proceeded from Karna's bow, like the tempest scattering masses of clouds.

73. Then again Arjuna covered him with arrows, before the eyes of all warriors, displaying great lightness of hands.

74. Karna also that slayer of foes, desirous of counteracting the feats of his antagonist, covered Phalguna with thousands of arrows.

75. Roaring at each other like two bulls, those foremost of men, those two mighty car-warriors, covered the welkin with clouds of straight-going shafts.

76. Each made invisible by the other's arrowy downpour, they went on striking each other; they roared at each other and wounded each other with their sharp arrows respectively saying, *I am Partha*

wait, or I am Karna, wait, O Phalguna. Indeed those two heroes fought with each wonderfully, displaying great skill and agility.

78. The sight they then presented was such that all the other combatants became spectators of the battle. Then praised by the Siddhas and the Charanas and the Pannagas,

79. They fought on with each other desirous of slaying each other. Then Duryodhana addressing your warriors said :—

80. "Heedfully protect the son of Radha. Without slaying Arjuna in battle, he will not abstain. Even these words had Vrisha said to me."

81—82. In the meantime, O king, beholding the prowess of Karna, Arjuna of white horses, with four shafts shot from the bow-string drawn back to the ear, despatched the four horses of Karna to the regions of Death. Then with a *Valla* he felled Karna's charioteer from his niche in the car.

83. Then he covered Karna himself with with a net-work of arrows, even before the very eyes of your son. Thus covered with arrows, the steedless and driverless Karna,

84—85. Confounded with arrowy showers was completely embarassed. Beholding him made carless, Aswathaman, O monarch, caused him to ride on his own chariot, and went on fighting with Arjuna. Then the king of the Madras pierced the son of Kunti with thirty arrows.

86. The son of Saradwata pierced Vasudeva with twenty arrows; he then struck Dhananjaya with twelve arrows,

87. The king of the Sindhus with four. Vrishasena with Karna, separately pierced O mighty monarch, Krishna and Pritha's son.

88. Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti then in return peirced Drona's son with sixty-four and the king of the Madras with a hundred arrows.

89. He pierced the Sindhu ruler with *Vallas* and Vrishasena with three arrows, and then piercing the son of Saradwata, Pritha's son uttered a loud war-cry.

90. Then your troops desirous of baffling the fulfilment of Savayasachin's vow, quickly fell upon him, all inflamed with rage.

91. Then striking terror into the hearts of the Dritarastra's troops, Arjuna invoked into existence the Varuna weapon. Then Karna riding on his precious chariot, pouring showers of arrows, proceeded against the son of Pritha.

92. But, O Bharata, as that fierce stupifying and terrible battle progressed, the diadem-decked Arjuna reaching the Sindhu king did not loose his senses and sped his arrows continuously.

93. Desirous of getting back the kingdom and keeping in mind all the wrongs inflicted by the Kurus on them during twelve years past, the high-souled Savyasachin of immeasurable prowess, shrouded all the points of the compass with shafts shot from the Gandiva.

94. The welkin then seemed to be illumined by blazing meteors; countless crows began to shoot down on the bodies of the troops. Meanwhile the diadem-decked Arjuna continued to slay the foe with his Gandiva of twany string like the wrathful Mahadeva slaying creatures with his Ajagara bow.

95. Then the highly-renowned Arjuna that subduer of hostile troops, scattering away the arrows of the son of Drona by means of those shot from his own bow, slew many foremost warriors of the Kurus, mounted on their excellent steeds and elephants.

96. Then numerous monarchs taking up heavy maces and clubs of iron and swords and darts and many other kinds of strong weapons, and assuming frightful appearances, advanced furiously upon Partha in that battle.

97. Arjuna bending his with the force of his arms, his terrible bow the Gandiva that resembled the bow of Indra, and of which the twang was as loud as roar of clouds at the end of a *Yuga*, went on carnaging your soldiers and adding to the population of Death's domain.

98. Then that brave warrior caused those furious warriors with their cars and elephants and foot soldiers and bowmen supporting them, to be deprived of their arms and lives, and thus considerably added to the population of Yama's kingdom.

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-fifth chapter, the fierce fight between Arjuna and Karna, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLVI.

JAYADRATHA BADHA-PARVA.—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing the twang of Dhananjaya's bow, that ressembled the loud call of Death or the sonorous rumble of the thunder,

2—3. Your troop, O monarch, agitated with fear and greatly confounded, became like the waters of the sea, with the fishes and *Makaras* within them, ruffled into huge waves and lashed to fury by the storm that blows at the end of a *Yuga*. Then the handsome son of Pritha, by name Dhananjaya began to career on the field of battle,

4—7. Displaying mighty weapons and simultaneously showing his presence in all the different directions. O mighty monarch, indeed we could not then discern when the son of Pandu took out his arrows, placed them on the bowstring, drew the string back and let them off, so great was his lightness of hands. Thereafter the mighty-armed one, excited to the highest pitch of fury, invoked into existence the terrible *Indra* weapon, and mighty monarch thereby inspired the Bharatas with terror. Hundreds and thousands of blazing arrows, of fiery heads and inspired with *Mantras* then began to start up into existence. Then with those shafts, shot from a string drawn back to the ear and resembling the rays of the sun or the flame of fire,

8. The sky became incapable of being looked at, as if covered with flashing meteors. Thereupon the darkness that the Kouravas had created with their arrows,

9. And that was incapable of being dispersed by other men even in their imagination, the son of Pandu, traversing the field and displaying his energy, dispelled by means of his arrows inspired by *Mantras* with the energy of celestial weapons,

10—11. Like the sun dispelling at day-break the darkness of night with his light-rays. Then with those blazing arrowy rays of his, the puissant son of Pritha sucked the lives of your warriors, like the summer sun sucking with his scorching rays the waters of tanks and lakes. Then those arrows sped by him conversant in the use of celestial weapons,

12. Covered over the hostile troops, like the rays of the sun covering over the earth. Similarly other arrows of fierce energy shot by Arjuna,

13. Entered into the hearts of heroes, as if they were their intimate friends. Those of your warriors who, boastful of their heroism then ventured to encounter Arjuna,

14. Were destroyed like so many insects falling upon a blazing lamp flame. Thus crushing the lives and fame of his enemies,

15. Pritha's son careered on the field like Death incarnate. Heads decked with diadems, huge arms adorned with *Angadas*,

16. And ears graced with pairs of ear-rings, of his enemies, Pritha's son cut off with his shafts. The arms of elephant-riders, with *Tomaras*; those of horsemen, with *Prasas*;

17. Those of foot-soldiers with shields; those of car-warriors with bows; and those of drivers, with whips and hooks, the son of Pandu then cut off.

18. Dhananjaya then shone resplendent with his arrows of glittering tips that seemed to constitute his rays, like a blazing fire with incessant scintillations and raging flames.

18—21. The hostile kings then inspite of all their endeavours, could not even secure a sight of the handsome Dhananjaya, that foremost of all weilders of weapons, that hero equal to the king of the celestials, that best of men, seen at the same time in all directions on his chariot, shooting his terrible weapons, dancing in the terrace of his car, and producing deafening sounds with his bow-string and palms, and resembling the mid-day sun of burning rays in the heavens.

22. The diadem-decked Arjuna, armed with arrows of glittering tips shone resplendent like a mighty mass of cloud swelling with rain and bearing the rainbow on its bosom.

23. Then when that veritable flood of mighty weapons was created by Jishnu, many foremost warriors sank in that dreadful and uncrossable sea of weapons.

24. Strewn over with mangled faces and bodies and limbs, with lacerated arms, with arms deprived of palms and palms deprived of fingers,

25. With infuriate elephants having trunks and tusks severed and broken respectively, with horses deprived of riders and necks; with shattered chariots,

26. With bodies having entrails drawn out, legs cut off and severed remaining still or moving unconsciously and with hundreds and thousands of corpses and carcasses,

27. The field where Partha fought was seen by us to resemble an area ravaged by Death, and to enhance, O ruler of men, the fears of the cowards.

28. Or it then appeared like the sporting ground of Rudra where he slew creatures in days gone by. Portions of the field covered over with trunks of elephants, severed by *Kshurapras*, appeared as if covered by snakes.

29. Portions again strewn over with the heads of warriors graced with lotus-like countenances, looked as if covered with garlands of flower. With beautiful head-

gears and crowns, with *Keyuras, Angadas* and *Kundalas,*

30. With armours decked with gold, with the caparisons and trappings of elephants and horses, and with hundreds of diadems, —strewn all over with these things,

31. The earth, highly beautified, appeared like a newly married bride. Having the marrow and fat (of slain creatures) for its mire, having blood for its current,

32. Full of limbs and bones and fathomless in depth, having the hair of creatures for its moss and weeds, and heads and arms for stones on its shore ;

33. Decked with variegated standards and banners ; having umbrellas and bows for its huge waves ; stagnant with the huge carcasses of elephants ;

34. Having innumerable cars for rafts to cross it ; infested with the dead bodies of horses ; rendered unfordable with car wheels, yokes, axels and Kuvaras ;

35. Infested with snakes constituted by by lances, darts, axes, and arrows ; having crows, and *Kankas* for its sharks, and jackals for its *Makaras,*

36. And vultures for its fierce aquatic animals ; echoing with the yells of jackals ; infested with daneing ghosts and Pisachas and Pretas, thonsands in number,

37. Carrying away many, corpses of slain warriors, highly dreadful,and fierce and awful, and resembling the Vaitarani itself—

38. Such a river capable of striking terror into the hearts of the cowards, was then caused to flow on the field of battle. Then beholding the prowess of Arjuna, whose appearance then resembled that of the Destroyer,

39. A panic, such as had never occoured before, prevailed among the Kuru ranks. Thereupon the son of Pandu, receiving the weapons of heroes, with those of his own,

40. And achieving wonderful feats, proclaimed h' self to be a warrior of terrible deeds. Then, O king, Arjuna passed leaving all those foremost car-warriors of your army behind.

41. Then all the creatures were unable to look at Pandu's son, who then resembled the sun shining on the meridian.

42. Arrows shooting out of the *Gandiva* bow of that illustrious hero, were then seen by us to resemble rows of cranes ranging through the firmament.

43. Repulsing everywhere the weapons of heroes with those of his own, and displaying his fierce feats, Arjuna then continued to acheive terrible deeds.

44. Then impelled by the desire for killing Jayadratha, O king, Arjuna passed throuh the car-division, compounding your warriors with his *Narachas.*

45. Then the handsome Dhananjaya having Krishna for his charioteer, began quickly to career on the field, shooting his shafts in all directions.

46. Then hundreds and thousands of shafts shot by the heroic Arjuna of illustrious soul, appeared in the sky, flying in all directions and incessantly.

47. We then could not discern when that mighty bowmen, that son of Pandu begotten upon Kunti, took out his shafts, placed them on the bow-string, and let them off.

48. Thereafter, O king, covering all the points of the compass with his arrows, and afflicting all the car-warriors in battle, the son of Kunti dashed towards Jayadratha,

49. And pierced him with four and sixty straight-going shafts. The Kuru warriors then seeing Pandu's son rush upon Jayadratha,

50. Gave up fighting, becoming hopeless of Jayadratha's life. Whoever amongst your troops then rushed to encounter the son of Pandu in that battle,

51—53. Had his body pierced deep with the latter's arrows. Then the mighty car-warrior Arjuna, that foremost of victorious heroes made your ranks headless by means of his arrows resembling the flames of fire. Thus then, O foremost of kings, sorely afflicting your troops consisting of four kinds of forces,the son of Kunti rushed upon Jayadratha. He then pierced Drona's son with five hundred, and Vrishasena with three arrows ;

54. Compassionate as the son of Kunti was, he pierced Kripa with nine arrows. He pierced Salya with sixteen and Karna with thirty two arrows.

55. Then piercing the ruler of the Sindhus with sixty-four arrows, he uttered a roar like that of the lion. Then the ruler of the Sindhus, being pierced with the arrows shot from the bow of the weilder of the Gandiva,

56—57. And excited to the highest pitch of fury, did not to brook it, even like an elephant struck with the goad. Then that one bearing the boar as a device on his standard quickly shot at the car of Phalguna straight-flying arrows furnished with vulturine feathers, rubbed by the smith, and looking like so many enraged snakes, and hurled from a string dawn back to the very ears.

58. He then pierced Govinda with three *Narachas*, Arjuna with six, their horses with eight and their standard with one winged shaft.

59—60. Thereupon Arjuna, repulsing the sharp shafts shot by the ruler of the Sindhus, cut off at the same time, with a couple of arrows, the head of Jayadratha's driver and his well-decked standard. Its stay cut off and itself shattered and struck with arrows, that boars bearing standard of the Sindhu king fell down like a flash of fire. Meanwhile the sun was rapidly going towards the western hills.

62. Janarddana quickly addressing Pandu's son said :—"O son of Pritha, this Jayadratha has been placed in their midst by these heroic and mighty car-warriors.

63. O mighty-armed one, Jayadratha desirous of saving his life, is standing in the rear in their midst. O foremost of men, without vanquishing in battle these six mighty car-warriors,

64. You shall not be able to slay the ruler of the Sindhus, even if you exert yourself to the best of your power, O Arjnna. Now I shall put forth my Yoga prowess for covering over the Sun,

65. In consequence of which the ruler of the Sindhus only shall behold the sun as already set. Filled with delight and sanguine of his life and desirous of seeing your destruction,

66. That wicked creature will no longer conceal himself. Taking advantage of that opportunity you should, O foremost of the Kurus, strike him.

67. You should not then give up the entreprise thinking the sun to have already set." Then Vibhatsu replied to Kesava saying "let it be so."

68. Thereafter that lord of the kings viz Krishna created a veil of darkness for covering the sun, by means of his Yoga prowess.

66. When Krishna had created that veil of darkness, thinking the sun to have set, your troops became delighted, O king, in view of the destruction of Pritha's son Arjuna.

70. Highly delighted, O king, your troops and king Jayadratha could not see the sun though they all stood with their heads thrown back.

71. When the ruler of the Sindhus was beholding the setting sun, once more did Krishna spoke these words to Arjuna.

72. "Behold, O foremost of the Bharatas, the heroic ruler of the Sindhus looking at the sun, freed from the fear he entertained of you.

73. O mighty-armed one this is the opportune moment to slay the wicked-souled wight. Now quickly lop off the head of this fellow and fulfil your vow."

74. Thus spoken to by Kesava the puissant son of Pandu, began to carnage your troops with arrows resembling the rays of the sun or the flame of fire.

75. He pierced Kripa with twenty and Karna with fifty shafts ; he then wounded Salya and Duryodhana each with six shafts.

76. He pierced Vrishasena with eight and the ruler of the Sindhus with sixty shafts. The mighty-armed son of Pandu,

77. Piercing your troops with his arrows, O king, assailed Jayadratha. Then beholding him within measurable distance like a swelling tongue of fire,

78. The protectors of Jayadratha became highly anxious (about his life). Then O mighty monarch, all your warriors desirous of victory,

79—81. Began to pour their arrowy showers on Pakasasani in that battle. Then that delight of the Kurus (Arjuna) was covered over. Thereafter, that foremost of men, Pakasasani began to shoot terrible net-works of arrows with a view to slaughter your troops. Then those warriors of yours mangled by that hero in battle,

82. Were greatly frightened and they abandoned the ruler of the Sindhus. They were so much confused that no two persons were seen to fly together. Then we beheld the wonderfnl prowess of Kunti's son,

83. Inasmuch as that high-souled warrior then achieved feats whose equals had never before been achieved or will be achieved in future. Elephants and elephant-riders, and horses and horsemen,

84. And car-drivers,—these then Arjuna began to slaughter like Rudra slaying the creatures. I could not find in that battle, O king,

85. A single elephant, or horse or men that was not struck with the arrows of Partha. The vision of warriors were blinded with dust and darkness.

86. They were dreadfully confused and could not recognise one another. Your troops urged on by fate, having their vitals torn open by arrows,

87. Began to wander, or limp or fall down. Some became paralysed and some became pale. During that terrible carnage of creatures,

88—89. In that awful and fierce battle from which few escaped alive, the earth became deluged with blood, and the dust that had then arisen disappeared inconsequence of the showers of blood, and the gale that blew over the field of battle ; so great was the shower of blood that car wheel sank in the mire caused thereby up to their naves.

90. Thousands of mad elephants possessed of great energy, O king, of your army, their riders slain and limbs mangled,

91. Began to fly away uttering shrieks of pain, and crushing their own ranks under neath their feat. Riderless steeds, and foot-soldiers also, O monarch,

92—93. Fled away in fright, struck with the arrows of Dhananjaya. Indeed your troop with dishevelled hairs and shattered armours, with blood streaming out of their wounds, fled away from the from the field of battle, forsaking it out of fear. Some again deprived of the power of moving, remained there as if their lower limbs had been seized by alligators.

94. Some hid themselves behind and under the carcarses of slain elephants. Thus causing your troop to fly, O monarch, Dhananjaya

5—97. Began to wound with dreadful shafts the protectors of the Sindhu ruler. The son of Pandu then covered with his arrowy showers Karna, Drona's son, Kripa, Salya, Vrishasena, and Duryodhana. Arjuna was so quick in the the use of weapons that none was able to notice when he took out his arrows, fixed them on the bow-string, and stretched the bow and discharged them. Thus when he was engaged in wounding the foe, his bow was seen incessantly drawn to a circle. Thousands of shafts were seen to issue out from his bow and to scatter in all directions. Then severing off Karna's and Vrishasena's bow,

99—100. Arjuna with a broad-headed arrow felled Salya's charioteer from his niche on the car. Then that foremost of victorious heroes viz Dhananjaya, pierced with many arrows in that battle Kripa and Aswathaman, related to each other as uncle and nephew. Thus sorely afflicting the mighty car-warriors of your army,

101. Pandu's son took up a terrible shaft of the splendour of fire. Appearing like the thunderbolt of Indra and inspired with sacred *Mantras*,

102. That dreadful arrow became capable of bearing any strain. It used always to be worshipped with perfumes and garlands of flowers. Duly charging it with the impetuousity of the thunderbolt, that descendant of Kuru,

103. Namely the mighty-armed Arjuna, placed it on the Gandiva's string. When that shaft of fiery effulgence was fixed on the bow string,

104. Loud shouts were heard, O king, in the welkin. Then Janardana once more quickly addressing Arjuna said :—

105. "O Dhananjaya quickly cut off the head of the wicked-souled ruler of the Sindhus. The sun is on the point of going to the Western hills.

106. Listen however to the words that I am going to speak about the slaughter of Jayadratha. The father of Jayadratha is Vridhakshatra known all over the world.

107—109. It was after a long time that he got Jayadratha that slayer of enemies, for his son ; on the occasion of his son's birth, a disembodied and unseen voice, deep as the rumble of clouds or the beat of the drums,said unto king Vridhakshatra :—'This your son, O master among men, in this world, will become worthy of the two races (the solar and the lunar) in respect of lineage, conduct, self-possession and such other attributes. He will become one of the foremost of Kshatriyas and will always obtain adoration from the heroes.

110. But while struggling in battle, some one foremost among the Kshatriyas, some well-known person in the world, worked up with anger, will cut off his head.'

111. That subduer of foes,viz the old ruler of the Sindhus having heard these words became thoughtful for a while ; filled with affection for his son, he summoned all his kinsmen and told them so.

112. 'That man who will cause the head of my sons to fall on the earth, struggling in battle, will be bearing a great burden.

113. I say that the head of that man will crack into a hundred pieces.' Having spoken these words, and having installed Jayadratha on the throne,

114. Vridhakshatra, retired into the woods, and devoted himself to ascetic austerities. Possessed of great energy, he is still engaged in the observance of the austerest of penances,

115. Outside the precincts of the *Samantapanchaka*, O ape-bonoured one. Therefore, severing Jayadratha's head in this terrible fight, you

116—117. O slayer of foes, should, O Bharata, by your fierce heaven-made weapons capable of achieving great feats, quickly throw that head adorned with ear-ring upon the lap of Vridhakshatra himself, O younger brother of the son of the wind-god. If you cause Jayadratha's head to fall on the earth,

118—20. Then your own head will certainly crack into hundred pieces. By me an of your weapons of celestial make do you accomplish your vow in such a way, that that ruler of earth, viz, the old Sindhu king, may not know that it is done. O Arjuna, indeed their is nothing which you cannot achieve or perform, O son of Vasava." Having heard these words of Krishna, Dhananjaya licking the corners of his mouth,

121—123. Shot the shaft he had taken up for slaughtering Jayadratha,—shaft whose touch resembled that of Indra's thunder, which was inspired with *Mantras*, which was of celestial make, which was capable of bearing any strain and which had ever been worshipped with perfumes and garlands. That swift-coursing arrow shot from the Gandiva bow, snatched away the head of the ruler of the Sindhus like a hawk snatching away a little bird from the top of a tree. Dhananjaya then discharging other arrows carried that head along in the heavens.

124—125. Then that son of Pandu imparting delight to his friends and grief to his foes, carried that head beyond the precincts of the *Samantapanchaka* by means of his continuous groups of arrows. Meanwhile king Vridhakshatra,

126—128. The father of your son-in-law, possessed of great energy, was engaged in performing his evening *Sandhya*. Adorned with sable locks, and graced with ear-rings, that head of Jayadratha was thrown upon his lap as he was uttering his prayers in a sitting posture. O subduer of foes, thus thrown in his lap, that head graced with beautiful ear-rings was not perceived by king Vridhakshatra, so when the intelligent Vridhakshatra, having finished his evening prayers,

129. Was rising up, the head fell down on the earth. And as the head of that king's son fell down on earth,

130. The head of that king also was cracked into thousand pieces, O subduer of foes. Then all creatures were greatly filled with wonder;

131. They then highly applauded Vasudeva and the mighty son of Pritha. Thus O king, when the king of the Sindhus was slain by the diadem-decked Arjuna,

132. The darkness that Vasudevas's son had caused was withdrawn, O foremost of the Bharatas. O ruler of earth, thus your sons and their followers, afterwards came to know that

133. That veil of darkness was only an illusion caused by Vasudeva's son, O foremost of men. Thus, O king, was your son-in-law, the ruler of the Sindhus slain by Arjuna of infinite energy, having caused the slaughter of eight Akshouhini of troops. Then beholding Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus's slain,

135. Tears of sorrow gushed out from the eyes of your sons. Thereafter, O king, when Jayadratha had been slain by Pritha's son, Kesava

136. Blew his conch, as also the mighty Arjuna that afflicter of his foes. Bhimasena also, as if for informing Yudhisthira of that joyful news,

137. Filled the welkin with a mighty war-cry. Hearing that formidable war-cry, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira,

138. Considered the ruler of the Sindhus to be slain by the high-souled Phalguna. Then he imparted delight to his own warriors by means of the sound of his musical instruments.

139. He then rushed furiously against the son of Bharadwaja for slaying him. Then, O king, as the sun was hanging down the horizon,

140. A fierce battle between Drona and the Somakas commenced, capable making the hair to stand erect. Then putting forth all their energies for slaughtering the son of Bharadwaja,

141. The mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas fought on, O king, delighted at the slaughter of the Sindhu king. The Pandavas then obtaining victory and having slain the ruler of the Sindhus,

142. Fought on with Drona litterally intoxicated with their good luck. O king, having slain the ruler of the Sindhus, Arjuna also (cheerfully) fought on with those foremost of your car-warriors.

143. Then the heroic Arjuna decked with a diadem and garlands, having fulfilled his principal vow, began to slaughter your troops, even like the king of the celestials destroying the darkness of night.

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-sixth chapter, the slaughter of Jayadratha, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXLVII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA [PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. The heroic king of Sindhu being killed by that one who could draw the bow with his left hand (*i e* Arjuna), relate to me O Sanjaya, what the warriors on my side did—

Sanjaya said :—

2. O king, seeing the king of Sindhu slain in battle by Partha, Kripa, the son of Saradwat, waxing wrath,

3. Surrounded the son of Pandu by a mighty discharge of arrows. The son of Drona too, seated on his car, rushed against Phalguna the son of Pritha.

4. Those two best and most excellent of car-warriors from two sides, began to shower keen darts, from their cars (upon Arjuna).

5. That mighty-armed one, the best of car-warriors, sore oppressed by those mighty showers of arrows, experienced a great pain.

6. Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti, not liking to slay his preceptor (*i.e.* Kripa) and his (other) preceptor's son (*i.e.* Aswathama) in battle began to act like a preceptor (teaching the science of arms to his pupil),

7. And unwillingly warded off the weapons of the sons of Drona and Saradwat, by means of his own weapons and discharged at them arrows of milder speed.

8. Overcome by the numbers of arrows though discharged mildly by Arjuna, those two (warriors) were greatly afflicted.

9. Then, O monarch, the son of Saradwat, pained by the darts of the son of Kunti, lost all strength and fainted away on the terrace of his car.

10. Seeing his master afflicted with darts and devoid of senses, and taking him for dead his charioteer carried him off (from the field of battle).

11. Then, O great king, Kripa being thus borne away from (the field of battle), Aswathama too fled away in terror from the son of Pandu.

12. (Then), seeing the son of Saradwat faint away and afflicted with arrows, the mighty bowman Partha, (seated) on his car, gave way to doleful cries.

13. And with his face full of tears and in dejected spirit he said these words:— "Anticipating all this, the greatly wise Kshatta (Vidura) said to the king (Dhritarashtra)

14. As soon as the destroyer of his race, the vile Suyodhana was born, 'Make away with this destroyer of your race.

15. (Or), through him a great disaster will befall the best of the Kuru race.' Now the words of that truthful one have proved true.

16. It is on his account, that I behold to-day my preceptor lying on an arrowy bed. Curse on the practices of the Kshatryas and on my strength and manliness!

17. (For) is there any body, who is, like me, hostile to a Brahmana who is his preceptor as well? He is (moreover) the son of a sage, my preceptor and the dear friend of Drona.

18. Such a one lies (insensible) on the terrace of his car smitten with my darts. Although I did not wish it, (still), through me he has been crushed with the arrows.

19. (The sight of his) lying insensible on the terrace of his car greatly afflicts my heart. Though sorely afflicted with his arrows, I should have looked at that one of great splendour (without striking him).

20. Afflicted with various darts he has gone to the way of all creatures. I grieve more over this than on the slaughter of my son.

21. O Krishna, behold what a sad plight he is in, lying senseless on his car! Those most excellent of men, who after acquiring knowledge from their preceptors,

22. Bestow on them what they desire, attain to Godhead. (But) those basest of men who after acquiring knowledge from their preceptors.

23. Destroy them, are doomed to hell. Surely, what I have done to-day will lead me to hell,

24. In as much as I have overpowered my preceptor with showers of arrows. Formerly when teaching me the science of weapons, Kripa said to me,

25. "O scion of Kuru's race, on no account strike thy preceptor." (But, those words of my virtuous and high-souled preceptor,

26. I have disregarded and have struck him with showers of arrows. I bow down to that worshipful son of Goutama, who never flies away (from the field of battle).

27. O scion of Vrishni's race, fie on me who have struck him. While that one who could draw his bow as well with the left

hand (i. e. Arjuna) was thus grieving for him,

28. The son of Radha beholding the king of Sindhu dead rushed against him. (Seeing) the son of Radha make for the car of Arjuna,

29. The two Panchala princes and Satyaki came up to him. Seeing the son of Radha rush (against him), the mighty car-warrior Partha,

30, Said these words to the son of Devaki with a smile :—"(Behold !) the son of Adhiratha is making for the car of Satyaki.

31. Surely, he cannot endure the destruction of Bhurisrava in battle. O Janardana, drive the horses towards the place whither he goes.

32. Have a care that Vrisha can not send the Satwata hero to the path of Somadatta." Thus addressed by that one who could draw his bow as well with the left hand, Keshava, possessed of mighty arms,

33. And great energy, replied (to him) in words suited to the occasion "O Pandava, this mighty armed one (Satyaki) is alone capable of fighting with Karna.

34. (And), much more so, since this most exalted of the Satwattas is joined by the two sons of Drupada. O Partha, you need (therefore, not fight with Karna at present.

35. He has with him the blazing dart, like a terrible meteor, granted to him by Vasava. O destroyer of hostile warriors, he has preserved it (carefully) for (slaying) you and worships it.

36. Let, therefore, Karna march against the scion of Satwatta's race as he wills. I am, O son of Kunti, conscious of the hour when this wicked-souled one will be struck down on the ground from his car (pierced) by keen darts.

Dhritarashtra said :—

37. How, after Bhurisrava and the king of Sindhu being slain, the heroic Karna and the scion of Vrishni's race, came in-contact with each other,

38. And on what cars the carless Satyaki and the two Panchala princes, the protectors of (Arjuna's) car-wheels (respectively) mounted, relate to me, O Sanjaya.

Sanjaya said :—

39. I will relate to you faithfully all that took place in that terrible encounter. Listen calmly to (the consequences of) your own culpable conduct.

40. My Lord, Krishna knew it before hand, in his mind that the heroic Satyaki would be defeated by Yupaketu (*i.e.* Bhurisrava).

41—42. O king, Janardana is conversant with the past and the future alike. Therefore, O king, that highly-powerful one summoned Daruka and ordered him thus :—" Get my car ready to-morrow." Neither the Gods nor the Gandharvas nor the Yakshas, nor the Uragas, nor the Rakshas,

43—44. Nor men can conquer Krishna and Arjuna. Even the celestials with the (*original*) Grandsire (Brahma) at their head and the Siddhas are aware of the matchless strength of those two. Now hear about the battle as it took place. Seeing Satyaki without a car and Karna prepared for the encounter,

45. Madhava loudly blew his conch in the Rishava note. Hearing the loud sound of the conch, Daruka understood the hint,

46—48. And brought to him the car adorned with a lofty golden flag with Keshava's permission. The grandson of Sini ascended that car guided by Daruka and resembling in splendour the sun or the fire. (And) mounting on that car, resembling a celestial chariot yoked unto which were the foremost of horses, *viz.*, Savya, Sugriva, Meghapuspa and Balahaka endued with great fleetness and adorned with golden trappings,

49. (Satyaki) discharging numerous arrows, rushed upon the son of Radha. Then Yudhamanwu and Uttamonja, the protectors of Arjuna's car-wheels,

50. Leaving the car of Dhananjaya, advanced against the son of Radha. (There upon) O monarch, the son of Radha too, began to discharge showers of arrows,

51. And wrathfully rushed against the undeteriorating grandson of Sini in that encounter. Neither among the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Asuras, the Uragas, nor among the Rakshas,

52. Was such a battle seen or heard in heaven or on earth as took place (between Karna and Satyaki.) The entire army consisting of cars, horses, men, and elephants,

53. Beholding their exploits, O monarch lay (as if) entranced. All of them witnessed that superhuman battle

54. Between those two best of men and the dexterity of Daruka as a charioteer. And the forward, backward, sidelong and circular movements (of the car)

55. Caused by the charioteer Daruka

the scion of Kasyapa's race, stationed on the car, struck (everybody) with wonder. The celestials, the Gandharvas and the Danavas stationed in the firmament,

56. Witnessed with rapt attention that encounter between Karna and the grandson of Sini. And for the sake of their friends those two powerful and highly-energetic ones challenged each other in that battle.

57. O mighty monarch, Karna who resembled a god and Yuyudhan Satyaki showered upon each other volleys of arrows.

58. First Karna, unable to endure the destruction of Jalasandha of the Kuru party, overpowered the grandson of Sini with downpours of shafts.

59. And heaving sighs like a mighty serpent smitten with grief and darting wrathful glances upon the grandson of Sini as if to consume him (therewith) in that encounter, Karna,

60. Rushed furiously again and again (towards him.) O chastiser of foes, seeing him greatly enraged, Satyaki smote him,

61—63. With mighty discharges of arrows as an elephant smites (with his tusks) his rival elephant. Those two most valiant of mortals, as agile as tigers, and endued with matchless strength wounded each other in that battle. Then the grandson of Sini by means of shafts made entirely of iron, pierced Karna, the chastiser of his foes, all through his body over and over again and with a broad headed arrow smote his (Karna's) charioteer from his niche in the car.

64. (And he) killed the white steeds with sharpened darts. (Then) that most exalted of the Bharatas, cutting the standard (of Karna) into a hundred pieces,

65. Made him carless in the very presence of your son. Thereupon, O king, O most exalted of the Bharatas, the warriors on your side got dispirited.

66. (Then) Vrisasena, the son of Karna and Salya, the king of Madra, and the son of Drona surrounded the grandson of Sini on all sides.

67. Then such a confusion followed (on the battlefield) that nothing could be seen. The heroic son of charioteer being thus made carless by Satyaki,

68. The whole army set up a wail, O king. And Karna too, O monarch, greatly weakened by Satwatta's darts,

69. Got to the car of Duryodhana, heaving deep sighs, remembering his friendship, O king, with your son from his very childhood,

70—71. And striving to fulfil the promise that he had made on the occasion of the bestowal of the kingdom (of Anga) on him (by Duryodhana). But O lord of the earth, the self-restrained Satyaki did not slay Karna thus made carless (by him) and your valiant son with Duswasana at their head. Desirous of not falsifying the vow made by Bhima and Partha formerly,

72. He (simply) made them carless and destitute of energy, but did not deprive them of their lives. Bhimasena vowed to slay your sons,

73. And at the second game of dice Partha swore to do away with Karna. Though the car-warriors with Karna at their head tried (their utmost) to slay,

74. Satyaki, yet those foremost of car-warriors were unable to kill him. The son of Drona, Kritavarma, and other great car-warriors,

75. And hundreds of the foremost of the Kshatriyas were defeated with only one bow by Satyaki, who was desirous of doing good to Dharmaraja and of attaining heaven.

76. Satyaki, the grinder of his foes, equal in prowess to either Krishna or Arjuna, defeated all your troops with a smile (*i. e.*, very easily).

77. (To achieve such feats) there is no fourth to be seen, besides Krishna, the bowman Partha and that most exalted of men, the grandson of Sini.

Dhritarastra said :—

78—79. Mounting on the invincible car of Vasudeva, guided by Daruka, Satyaki, proud of the prowess of his arms and equal to Vasudeva in battle, made Karna carless. Did Satyaki ascend any other car (after the defeat of Karna) ?

80. I am desirous of listening to all this. You are a skilful narratar. I regard him invincible. O Sanjaya, relate to me this.

Sanjaya said :—

81—83. O king, listen to all this. The high-minded younger brother of Daruka soon brought (for Satyaki) another car duly furnished with all necessaries, having shafts attached to it by golden and iron chains and bands of silk, studded with a thousand stars, graced with a standard having the figure of a lion (painted on it) and to which were yoked horses fleet as the wind adorned with golden trappings, and the rattling of which resembled the roar of the clouds.

84. The grandson of Sini, having

mounted on it, advanced against your forces. And Daruka also, of his own will, went over to Keshava.

85—87. Then, O great monarch, a goodly car was also brought for Karna, drawn by fleet horses of the best breed, having the colour of the milk of the cow or conch and adorned with golden trappings. (The car was also) furnished with golden maces and standards, machines and flags. It had also an expert driver and was furnished with many weapons and accoutrements. Having, O great king, mounted on this car, Karna too rushed upon his enemies. Now I have related to you all that you asked me.

88. Listen again to the (great) destruction (of creatures) brought about by your vile policy. Thirty-one of your sons have been destroyed by Bhimasena.

89. They had Durmukha at their head and they were good warriors. Satwatta and Arjuna also destroyed hundreds of warriors,

90. With Bhima at their head and Bhagadatta too (has been slain). This great destruction of creatures O king, has been brought about by your evil counsels.

Thus ends the 143th chapter, the battle between Karna and Satyaki, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. When the warriors on their side and mine remained thus on the field of) battle, what did Bhima do? Tell me, this O Sanjaya.

Sanjaya said :—

2. When Bhimasena was made carless by Karna, he was tormented with the words poignant as a dart, of the latter. Now under the influence of passion he said these words to Phalguna.

3—4. "O Dhananjaya, in your very presence, Karna has repeatedly said to me—(you are) a eunuch, fool, child, glutton, (you are) unskilled in weapons, do not fight and (you are) unable to endure (the fury of) battle. He, that would tell me so, would be my victim. O Bharata, he (Karna) has said to me these words (and therefore, he must be slain by me.)

5. I have made this vow jointly with you, O mighty armed one. O son of Kunti undoubtedly, as they (these vows) are to you so they are to me.

6. Remember, O best of men, my words and fulfil them (*i.e.*, the vows). O Dhananjaya, act in such a way that they may prove true."

7. Thus addressed by Bhima, Arjuna of matchless prowess, coming up to Karna in that battle, said to him (thus) :

8. "O Karna, O son of a chrioteer, you are of false sight, you praise your own-self, you are of wicked intelligence. Hear what I tell you now.

9. Warriors either meet with victory or defeat in battle. O son of Radha, even these two are uncertain. Even when Vasava himself fights, the case is not otherwise.

10. You were (ere long) made carless and deprived of energy by Yujudhana and were nearly dead. Knowing, however, that I have sworn to slay you he only defeated but spared your life.

11. By freak of fate, you succeeded in making Bhimasena carless. (And) you have committed a sin by abusing Bhima, O son of Radha.

12. Men, that are heroic, virtuous, and most exalted, having defeated an enemy, neither boast of themselves with harsh words, nor indulge in abusive language.

13—14. O son of a charioteer, weak in intellect as you are, you have made use of these words. Again, the (abusive) epithets that you have hurled against the fighting Bhimasena, endued with prowess, heroic, and ever devoted to righteousness, are not true. In the very sight of the whole army of Keshava and myself,

15. You were several times, in battle, deprived of your car by Bhimasena. But the son of Pandu did never utter any harsh words to you.

16. As you have indulged in many harsh words against Vrikodara and as you have jointly with others, killed the son of Subhadra, when I was not present,

17. You will, therefore, very soon feel the consequences of your offence. O wicked minded one, it was for your own destruction that you cut off his bow.

18. It is for this reason, O fool, that I will slay you together with your attendants, forces and beast of burden. Now (while yet there is time) perform what you ought to do, because a great calamity is hanging over you.

19—21. I swear truly by my bow that I will slay, in your very sight, Vrishasena and will destroy all those other kings, who

through cloudness of intellect will oppose me in battle. Fool, unwise and self-conceited that you are, the wicked Duryodhana will give way to lamentations seeing you slain on the field of battle. Arjuna having promised to kill the son of Karna,

22. There arose a great and tumultuous uproar among the car-warriors. And at the time of that dreadful battle,

23. The thousand-rayed (deity) with his rays dimmed entered into the setting hill. Then stationed at the head of the battle, O king, Hrishikesa

24. Embraced Vivatsu, who had fulfilled his promise, and addressed him thus :—"O Jhisnu, it is by good fortune that you have been able to accomplish your great vow.

25. It is by good luck, again that you have slain the wretch Vridhakshatra together with his son. O Bharata, even the general of the celestials, if engaged with the forces of Dhritarastra,

26. In battle, would be quite stupified. O Jishnu, there is no doubt of this. Even on reflection, I do not find any individual in the (three) worlds,

27—28. Capable of encountering these forces, besides you, O most valiant of men. Numerous lords of the earth, endowed with great prowess, and either equal or superior to you, have, at the command of Dhritarastra assembled together. (But) those (warriors), clad in armour, could not withstand your wrathful self in battle.

29. Your strength and prowess, (therefore), resemble those of Rudra or Sakra. No one is capable of displaying so much prowess in battle,

30. As you have singly shown this day. O tormentor of foes, when the wicked-souled Karna together with his followers shall be vanquished (by you) I will thus

31. Congratulate you again on your conquest over and destruction of your enemy." Arjuna then replied to him (thus): "O Madhava, through your favour,

32. I have fulfilled the vow, which even by the celestials can with difficulty be performed. O Keshava, it is no wonder that they, who have you for their lord, will win the victory.

33. Through your favour Yudhisthira will recover the entire earth. O descendant of Vrishnis, (as) all this is due to your power, (so) O lord, this victory is yours.

34. O destroyer of Madhu, you are (ever) concerned in our welfare and we are (always) at your service." Thus spoken to Krishna with a smile, slowly guided the steeds and showed to Partha the greatly cruel field of battle.

Krishna said :—

35. Longing for either victory or great renown, (many) heroic kings, struck dead by your shafts, are lying on earth.

36. Their weapons and ornaments lie scattered (all over the battle-field) ; their horses, elephants and cars are killed and shattered ; and with their armours perforated and cut off they are reduced to a woeful plight.

37. Some (of them) are already dead and some are still alive ; and those lords of men whose life is extinct look alive on account of their great splendour.

38. Look! the earth is entirely filled with their gold-winged shafts, their weapons of various kinds, their beasts of burden and with their arms.

39—40. (Behold! O Bharata, the earth beams with armours, necklaces of gold, heads decked with ear-rings, head-gears and diadems, floral wreaths, gems worn on the crown, Kanthasutras, Angadas, lustrous collars of gold and with various other variegated ornaments ;

41. (And with) Anukarshas and quivers, standards and flags, and Upaskaras and Adhisthanas, shafts and crests of cars,

42. With broken wheels and many variegated cars, yokes and trappings of horses, bows and arrows,

43. With elephants' trappings, *Kudhas*, Parighas and Ankushas, maces and Brindipalas, arrow-cases, spiked maces and Parasvadhas,

44. With Pashas and Tomaras, Kuntas and clubs, Sataghnees and Bhusandees, swords and battle-axes,

45. With Musalas and clubs, maces and Kunapas, whips decked with gold, O the most exalted of the Bharatas,

46. With the bells and many other ornaments of the best of elephants, garlands, various ornaments and costly dresses.

47. (With all these lying scattered all over the field of battle), the earth looks resplendent like the autumnal sky studded with planets and stars. Those lords of Earth who have sacrificed their lives for his sake,

48. Lie slumbering on the earth and embracing her like a beloved wife. These elephants resembling mountain-peaks and huge as Airavat,

49. Are shedding a profusion of blood through the openings caused by weapons,

as mountains discharge through the caves streams of liquid chalk.

50. Behold! struck down on the earth by your arrows, these (elephants) are writhing in agonies. Behold! the steeds also, adorned with golden trappings, are lying on the ground.

51—52. Behold, O Partha, O lord, these cars resembling the city of the Gandharvas, with their lords slain and their standards, banners and Akshas cut to pieces, deprived of their wheels and charioteers, with their yokes cut to pieces, with broken shafts and crests and looking (splendid) like the celestial vehicles.

53. Hundreds and thousands of foot-soldiers, O hero, are lying slain (on the ground) in a pool of blood weilding their bows and sheilds,

54. Clasping the earth with all their limbs, and with their hair smeared with dust. Behold, O mighty-armed one, these warriors with their bodies mangled by your arrows.

55—56. Look also at the Earth—scattered all over with tails, fans, umbrellas, standards, steeds, cars, elephants, various sorts of blankets, riens of steeds, variegated robes and precious Kuthas of cars—as if overspread with embroidered tapestry.

57. Falling down (on the grouud) from elephants adorned with trappings, along with the elephant themselves, many other (warriors) are looking like lions hurled down from mountain-peaks struck down by thunder.

58. Many horse-men and foot-soldiers mangled with the horses (they rode) and bows (they weilded) lie covered with blood.

59. O best of men, behold also the surface of the earth with dead elephants and horses and (broken) cars, muddy with a profusion of blood, fat and rotten flesh, affording delight to night-wanderers, dogs, wolves and Pisachas and dreadful to look at.

60. O lord, that foremost of the celestials, the performer of a hundred sacrifices who slays in great battle the Daytas and the Danavas, and yourself only are capable of achieving such a fame-enhancing and glorious feat.

Sanjaya said:—

61. Krishna, thus showing the field of battle to Kiriti (*i.e.* Arjuna who wore a coronet) blew his conch Panchajanya before the gladdened army (of tha Pandavas).

62. Janardana, the destroyer of foes, having (thus) shown to Kiriti the field of battle, speedily came over to the Pandava Ajatasatru (*i.e.* Yudhisthira who had no enemy) and informed him of the destruction of Jayadratha.

Thus ends the one hundred and forty-eighth chapter, the showing of the field of battle, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXIX.

(JAYADRATH-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. The King of Sindhu being slain by Partha, (Krishna) then approached king Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma and worshipped him with a merry heart.

2. O king of kings, O best of men, by good luck your prosperity increases and your enemy has been slain. It is by good fortune too that your younger brother has fulfilled his promise.

3. Thus addressed by Krishna, king Yudhisthira, the conquerer of enemies' cities, got down from his car with delight, O Bharata.

4. And with his eyes full of tears of joy he embraced Krishna and Arjuna; and wiping his white face of lotus-like lusture,

5. Said to Vasudeva and the Pandava Dhananjaya (thus):—"O mighty car-warriors, it is by good fortune that I behold you both after you have performed your heavy task in battle.

6, As good luck would have it, that vilest wretch among men, the king of Sindhus, has been slain. O Krishna and Arjuna, by good luck you have filled me with supreme bliss.

7. (And) it is by good fortune that our enemies are dtowned in a sea of grief. In the three worlds there is nothing which they can not perform,

8. Who have you, that are the lord of all the worlds, for their protector, O slayer of Madhu. O Govinda, through your favour we will conquer our enemies,

9. As in days of yore, through your grace the chastiser of the Asura) Paka (*i. e.*, Indra) did (conquer) the Danavas. Whether it be the supremacy over the three worlds,

10. Everything is certain in the case of those who are in your good graces, O bestower of honours. Neither do they incur sin nor meet with reverses,

11. With whom, you that are the lord of the celestials, are pleased, O bestower of

honours. O Hrishikesha, it is through your favaur that Sakra, the lord of all the celestials,

12. Endowed with prosperity, obtained sovereignty over the three world in battle. and O lord of the celestials, it is also sandi.ugh favour that the celestials,

13. Have, O Krishna, obtained immortality and are in enjoyment of eternal regions. O destroyer of foes, it is by means of the prowess obtained through your favour,

14. That Sakra having destroyed thousands of Daityas acquired the *kingship* of the celestials. O Hrishikesha, it is by reason of your grace, the universe, with its mobile and immobile creatures,

15. Remaining in its own course is engaged in (religious) meditations and sacrifices. Originally, buried in darkness and one vast sheet of water,

16. As the universe was, it has become manifest through your grace, O mighty-armed one, O best of men. Those who look upon Hrishikesha as the creator of all the worlds, the Supreme Soul and as immutable are never subject to illusion. You are the *Original* Being, you are the Supreme God, you are the God of the gods and you are eternal,

17.* Those that take refuge with you who are the lord of the celestials, are never subject to illusion; without begining or end, divine, the lord of creation and immutable (as you are),

19. They that are your worshippers, O Hrishikesha (always) get rid of difficulties. Supreme and Ancient male being and the most exalted of the exalted as you are,

20. He that attains to your Supreme self enjoys the highest prosperity. The four Vedas sing of you and you are sung in the four Vedas.

21. By taking refuge with you, O high-souled one, I shall enjoy the most excellent prosperity. O Supreme God, O god of the highest gods, O lord of the creation, O lord of men,

22. O most supreme god of all gods, I bow down to you, that are the best of all male beings. You are the Supreme Being, you are the Lord of Lords, O Lord, O Madhava, may you prosper.

23. O Universal Soul, O large-eyed one, you are the origin of all. He that has Dhananjaya for his friend or he who is devoted to the welfare of Dhananjaya,

24. Having attained to the protector of Dhananjaya, enjoys happiness." Those high-souled ones, that is Keshava and the son of Pandu, thus addressed (by Yudhisthira),

25. Cheerfully replied to the king, the lord of Earth (thus):—"That wretch, the king Jaydratha has been consumed by the fire of your anger.

26. O Lord, this vast and proud army of the son of Dhritarastra, struck down and killed, is being (gradually) annihilated, O Bharata.

27. O destroyer of enemies, these Kouravas are killed in consequence of your ire. O hero, having incensed you that are capable of slaying with your eyes, Sujodhana,

28. Whose mind is (ever) bent on evil will have to sacrifice his life in battle together with his friends and followers. Slain before by your ire and difficult of being vanquished by the celestials themselves,

29. Bhishma, the grand-father of the Kurus now lies on an arrowy bed. O destroyer of foes, victory is difficult of achievement on their part.

30. And they are sure to meet with death who are your enemies, O Pandava; kingdom, life, dear ones, sons and several sorts of happiness,

31. O tormentor of foes, are soon lost by them with whom you are angry. I deem the Kouravas as already destroyed with their sons, cattle and friends,

32. Since, O tormentor of foes, you that are always devoted to the duties of king, are incensed at them." Then O mighty monarch, Bhima and the great car-warrior Satyaki,

34. Those two mighty wielders of bow, (with their bodies) mangled by shafts, having paid their adoration to their lord and senior, sat down on the ground surrounded by the Panchalas.

34. Seeing those two cheerful heroes—Bhima and Satyaki (remain) with joined palms before him, the son of Kunti complemented them both, saying:—

35. It is by good fortune, O heroes, that I behold you both freed from that (vast) sea of (Kourava) troops of which (sea) Drona is the invincible alligator and the son of Hridika, the shark. It is by good luck too that you too have defeated all the kings of the earth.

36. (And) as good luck would have it, I behold you victorious in battle. It is by good fortune too that Drona as well as that mighty car-warrior, the son of Hridika have been defeated in battle (by you).

37. Fortunately Karna has been defeated in battle by barbed darts and Kripa

and Salya have been made to run away (from the battle-field) by you, two most valiant of men.

38. It is fortunate that I behold you both—you that are the foremost of car-warriors and skilled in battle, return safe from the encounter.

39. You two heroes are (ever) obedient to my commands and anxious to preserve my honour; it is (thereforo) fortunate that I behold you both cross safe the vast sea of (hostile) army.

40. It is (highly) fortunate that I behold you both (again), you who take pride in battle, and never run away from it and who are (as dear) to me as my (own) life."

41. O king, having spoken thus, the son of Pandu embraced those two most valiant of men Yujudhan and Vrikodara and shed tears from (excess of) joy. Then, O lord of earth, the entire army of the Pandavas became joyous and again gladly directed their minds towards battle.

Thus ends the one-hundred and forty-ninth chapter the joy of Yudhisthira (at his success) in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona-Parva.

CHAPTER CL.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. O monarch, the king of Sindhu being slain, your son Suyodhana, with his eyes full of tears, became (greatly) dejected and despaired of defeating his enemies.

2. (And) with his mind weighed down with sorrow and breathing hot sighs like a snake whose (poison) tooth has been broken that offender, against the whole world, felt excruciating agony (of mind).

3. Seeing that Jishnu, Bhimasena, and Satwatta were making a great and dreadful havoc of his army,

4. He turned thin and pale, and became (greatly) dispirited. And with his eyes filled with tears he began to think that there was no warrior on earth who might be a match for Arjuna.

5. Neither Drona, nor the son of Radha, nor Aswathama nor Kripa is capable of standing before him (Arjuna) when he is angry, O worshipful one.

6. (And Suyadhona, thought within himself). No was able to resist him when having defeated all the great car-warriors on my side, Partha slew the king of Sindhu.

7. The son of Pandu has totally destroyed my vast army. (I think) even Purandara himself in person cannot protect it.

8. Even Karna, depending upon wh[om], I had engaged in this passage at arms in battle, has been defeated in encounter and Jayadratha slain.

9. Relying upon whose prowess I regarded that undeteriorating one (*i. e.*, Krishna) who sued for peace, (something) like a straw, that Karna has been defeated in battle.

10. Thus dejected at heart, O king, O the most exalted of the Bharatas, your son, the offender against the whole world, came to see Drona.

11. He then told (Drona) all about the great slaughter of the Kurus, the victory of the enemies and the great disaster of the followers of Dhritarastra.

12. "O Preceptor," (Duryodhana (continued), "Behold this great carnage of those whose heads have undergone the sacred coronation bath, headed by my heroic grandsire Bhisma.

13. The covetous Shiknandi, having killed him, has got his desire fulfilled and is (now) stationed at the head of his troops together with all the Panchalas.

14. Having destroyed seven Akshauhinis (of our army), another invincible disciple of yours, *viz.*, Savyasachi has killed king Jayadratha.

15. Those allies of ours, desirous of our victory and welfare, have gone to the abode of Yama. How can I repay the debt (of obligation) that I owe to them?

16. Those lords of the earth, who desired for me the sovereignty of the earth, having abandoned all earthly prosperity, are lying on the earth.

17. Coward that I am I have caused this great slaughter of my friends: and (therefore) cannot encourage myself to believe that I shall be able to purify myself by celebrating even a hundred horse-sacrifices.

18. Desirous of securing victory (for me who am covetous and sinful and a rebel against virtue, these (kings) have gone to the abode of the sons of Vivasvata.

19. I have fallen from virtue; an evil-minded and an enemy to my friends as I am why does not the earth yield me a hole (to bury me in)!

20. Among the kings, my grandsire with blood-red eyes (lies on an arrowy bed) what will that invincible hero, who has conquered the next world, say when he will meet me?

21. See that the great bowman Jalasandha has been slain by Satyaki. That hero and mighty car-warrior exerting his utmost for my sake, has (at last) lain down his life.

22. Beholding the king of Kamyoja, Ambulusa and many other friends lose their lives, what is the good of preserving my life?

23. Those unretreating warriors after exerting their utmost to vanquish my enemies and fighting for my sake have (at last) sacrificed their lives.

24. I will to-day repay the debts I owe them by exerting my utmost (in the battle) and will then offer oblation of Jamuna water to them.

25. O the foremost of those that weild weapons, I promise truly and swear by my good acts, my prowess and my sons,

26. That I will either obtain peace of mind by destroying the Panchalas together with the Pandavas or I will depart to the regions where they (*ie.* my) friends have gone by being myself slain in battle.

27. I will go there whither those foremost of men, slain for my sake in battle by the fighting Kiriti, have departed.

28. Seeing they are not well protected our partizans are no longer desirous of supporting us. They deem the sons of Pandu are preferable to us, O mighty armed one.

29. That truth-abiding one (Bhishma) himself ordained his own death in battle. And your respectable self too does not exert your best because Arjuna is your disciple.

30. It is, on this account, that all those who were desirous of our victory have been slain. At present I see that Karna alone is anxious for our success.

31. That man, of dull understanding who without the exercise of proper discretion, takes one for a friend and employs him in actions which can only be performed by real friends, has his object frustrated.

32. Covetous, sinful, crooked-minded and greedy of riches that I am, this affair of mine has been managed in this way by (so-called) best friends.

33. King Jayadratha, that prowerful monarch, the son of Somadatta, the Ameeshahas, the Surasenas, the Curas and the Vysatis have (all) been slain.

34. I will to day go there whither those best of the Bharatas, slain for my sake in battle by the fighting Kiriti, have gone.

35. There is no good of my life without those foremost of men. O preceptor of the sons of Pandu, permit me to do this.

Thus ends the one hundred and fiftieth chapter, the remorse of Duryodhana in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLI.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Dhritarastra said :—

1. What, O Sanjaya, was the state of your mind when the king of Sindhu was slain in battle by Savyasachi and Bhurisrava (by Satyaki)?

2. Relate to me, O Sanjaya, what Drona did say after he had been thus addressed by Duryodhana in the midst of the Kurus.

Sanjaya said :—

3. Seeing the king of Sindhu and Bhurisrava slain, there arose a great tumult among your troops, O Bharata.

4. All of them censured the policy of your son, in virtue of which hundreds of foremost of men were destroyed.

5. Drona too, hearing those words of your son, became sad at heart. Then, O king of kings, reflecting a moment he said very sorrowfully (these words).

Drona said :—

6. O Duryodhana, why are you piercing me with words (keen) as darts? I have told you (repeatedly) that Savyasachi is uncognizable in battle.

7. We have got (sufficient) proofs of what Arjuna is, when protected by Kiriti, Sikhandi slew Bhisma in battle, O Kourava.

8. Seeing that Bhisma, who could not be defeated by the celestials and the Danavas in battle, was slain (by Sikhandi), I understood that the Bharata army was doomed.

9. That person, whom we looked upon as the foremost of all the heroes in the three worlds, being slain, who else there that can inspire us with confidence?

10. The dice with which Sakuni played in the assembly-hall of the Kurus, O affectionate one, are not (real) dice but their arrows destructive of foes.

11. Those arrows, O child, now discharged by Jaya are destroying us; you did not then understand when Vidura told you what those dice) were.

12. You did not then pay heed to those auspicious words, which the magnanimous wise Vidura with tearful eyes said for your good.

13. In consequence of your disregard for those words, O Duryodhana, this dire, terible and impending disaster has overtaken you.

14. That stupid person, who disregarding the wholesome advice of his trusted friends, follows his own inclinations, is very soon reduced to a pitiable plight.

15. (You) had dragged Krishna to the assembly hall in our very presence who was unworthy of such treatment, was born of a noble line and was devoted to every act of righteousness.

16. O son of Gandhari, this (calamity which you are now in) is the bitter fruit of that sinful act on your part. This (punishment) is but insignificant for in the world to come you will be visited with direr calamities.

17. (This disaster is also the outcome of) your deceit by means of which you defeated the Pandavas at the game of dice and exiled them to the forest clad in deer-skin.

18. Is there, in the world, any other Brahmana besides myself that would injure the (Pandavas) who are ever devoted to righteousness and are (as dear) to me as my (own) sons.

19. The wrath that you excited in the Pandavas with the assent of Dhritarastra and associated with Sakuni in the midst of the Kurus,

20. Has been fostered by Dussasana together with Karna and has been repeatedly fanned by you who never paid regard to the words of Khattwa.

21. How was it that you, who stood by the ruler by the Sindhu and tried your utmost to withstand Arjuna, were all defeated and why was he (Jayadratha) slain in your midst?

22. How is it, O Kourava prince, that when you, Karna, Kripa, Salya and Aswathama are (all) alive, the king of Sindhu has been slain?

23. How was it that the king of Sindhu was slain in their midst, since for the purpose of rescuing him all the kings fought with fiery energy.

24. That lord of the earth looked especially to yourself and me for his rescue from Arjuna, O Duryodhana,

25. But he failed to have that rescue from (the clutches of) Arjuna. I too do not find any hope for my own life.

26. I see that I am (fast) sinking into the mire of Dhristadyumna's (cunning) until I can slay the Panchalas together with Sikhandi.

27. Since I myself am tormented with grief, wherefore are you piercing me with words (poignant) as an arrow, you who failed to rescue the king of Sindhu, O Bharata.

28. How can you hope for success, since you do no longer see the golden standard of Bhishma endued with untiring energy and and (ever) firm in truth.

19. Since the ruler of Sindhu and Bhurisrava have been slain from the very midst of the mighty-car-warriors, you can (very well) anticipate what the result will be.

30. O lord of the earth, if, without following the path of the king of Sindhu, the irresistible Kripa be still alive, I praise him highly (for his escape with life).

31—32. When, O Kourava king, I behold that Bhishma, capable of achieving the most difficult exploits and unslayable even by the celestials together with Vasava in battle, was slain in your very sight and in that of your younger brother Dusasana, I thought, O king, that the earth no longer belonged to you.

33. Behold! O king, O Bharata, the troops of the Pandavas and those of the Srinjayas are jointly advancing against me.

34. I will not lay down my armour without destroying all the Panchalas; (and), O son of Dhritarastra, I will perform such acts in battle as will benefit you.

35. O monarch, tell my son Aswathama that he should not let the Somakas off in battle so long as he is alive.

36. (Tell him also). "Observe the instructions that your father has given you. Be firm in charity, self-restraint, truth and straight forwardness.

37. Be diligent in (the exercise of) religion, profit and pleasure without despising religion and profit and always perform those acts in which the exercise of religion is mostly required.

38. You should always propitiate the Brahmanas with presents and worship. Never do anything that will offend them; for, they are flames of fire.

39. O destroyer of foes, afflicted ase am with your wordy darts I will now pene

trate through the enemy's line in order to engage in a furious encounter (for your sake).

40. As for you, O Duryodhana, if you are capable, go and protect your army, for both the Kurus and the Srinjayas, that are furious (with rage) will fight even during the night."

41. Having said thus, Drona, like the sun drawing out the energy of the stars, advanced against the Pandavas and the Srinjayas in order to destroy the energy of the Kshatryas.

Thus ends the hundred and fifty-first chapter, the reply of Drona, in the Jayadratha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLII.

(JAYADRATHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then king Duryodhana, thus addressed by Drona, directed his mind to battle influenced by rage.

2. Your son Duryodhana, then, spoke to Karna. "See that Kiriti, the son of Pandu with the help of Krishna,

3. Penetrated into the array drawn up by the preceptor, which (array) was difficult of being penetrated through even by the celestials themselves. Moreover, in the very presence of yourself and the high-souled Drona engaged in battle,

4. And that of many other foremost warriors the king of Sindhu was killed. Behold, O son of Radha, many kings—excellent warriors on earth,

5. Destroyed by Partha alone like numerous inferior beasts slain by a lion, even when the high-minded Drona and myself were fighting (in order to resist Arjuna).

6. My (once vast) army has been reduced to a handful of men only by the son of Sakra. How, when Drona was trying his utmost (to check him), could the Phalguna

7. Arjuna fulfil his vow by killing the king of Sindhu? O hero, how could the son of Pandu, if Drona had not wished it,

8. Penetrate through that impenetrable array in battle when the latter was trying (to resist him). Indeed Phalguna is exceedingly dear to the high-souled preceptor.

9. It is, on this account, that he allowed him to enter (into the array) without offering any opposition to him. Behold my misery now; that tormentor of foes, Drona, first, promised protection to the king of Sindhu.

10—11. (But) he afterwards allowed Kiriti to enter into the array. If he had before given permission to the king of Sindhu to return home, this dreadful havoc would never have taken place in battle. Jayadratha was for returning home in order to save his life.

12. But relying upon the promise of protection made by Drona, insensate fool that I was, I stopped him. To day my brothers Chitrasena and others, have in the very sight of our wretched selves, been destroyed by Bhimasena.

Karna said :—

13. Do not blame the preceptor. (For) the twice-born one is fighting to the best of his prowess and energy and heedless of his life.

14. If Shetavahana entered (into the array) after having overcome him the preceptor can not be found fault with in the least (for that).

15. (Again, Arjuna) is accomplished, skillful, young, heroic, accomplished in arms and quick in movements. He was armed with celestial weapons, and mounted on the ape-bannered car,

16. The steeds of which were guided by Krishna. And that puissant one was clad in impenetrable armour and wielding his celestial and undecaying bow Gandiva.

17. As Arjuna, proud of the prowess of his arms, sent forth keen darts, it was no wonder that he overcame Drona.

18. (On the other hand), O king, the preceptor is old and incapable of quick movements and O lord of men, (he is) also unable to exercise his arms (for a long time).

19. It was on this account, that Setasva with Krishna as his charioteer was able to overcome him. I can not, therefore, find any fault in Drona.

20. In my opinion the Pandavas are unconquerable in battle by Drona, (however) skilled in weapons (he may be) in as much as Shetavahena, surpassing him, entered (into our array).

21. My belief is that what is ordained by fate undergoes no alteration, when, O Suyodhona, in spite of our fighting to the very best of our power,

22. The king of Sindhu has been killed in battle. It seems that fate is supreme.

Though we have been making vigorous exertions with you on the field of battle,

23. (And though we have been) always trying (to achieve success) by means of prowess and deceit, fate makes all our efforts futile.

24. O king, whatever act, a person who is not favoured by fate, does, it is baffled by fate, in spite of all his exertions to accomplish it.

25. That, which a person having perseverance ought to do, should be performed by him in a fearless spirit, (though of course) success depends upon fate.

26. We beguiled the sons of Pritha by deciet as well as by administration of poison, O Bharata. They were (again) burnt in the lac house and defeated at dice.

27. In pursuance of state policy they were exiled to the forest; though we did all these with the utmost care, they have been frustrated by fate.

28. Hurling defiance at fate, fight with (utmost) care. Between yourself and themselves, fate will espouse the cause of the party that will make the best exertion.

29. (It does not seem) that they (*i. e.* the Pandavas) have done anything good by reason of superior intellect; nor (does it appear) O hero, O perpetuator of Kuru-race, you have done anythig wrong through want of understanding.

30. It is fate that always bears testimony to our acts, whether good or evil. Fate which is (ever) bent on its purpose is wide awake even when everything else sleeps.

31. When the war began your soldiers and warriors were more numerous than those of the sons of Pandu.

32. By their small force numerous warriors on your side have been destroyed. I fear it is the work of Destiny by which exertion has been baffled.

Sanjaya said :—

33. When, O monarch, they were thus conversing about many other (subjects) the army of the Pandavas was seen on the field of battle.

34. Then, O monarch, there ensued a furious encounter, the result of our evil policy, in which the infantry, cars and elephants of your party encountered those of the other.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-second chapter, the commencement of a fresh battle in the Jayadrath-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLIII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA).

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, that impetuous elephant squadron of yours fought everywhere getting the better of the Pandava army.

2. The Panchalas and the Kouravas, determined to go to the next world, that is, the great region of Yama, fought with one another.

3. Heroes encountering (rival) heroes smote one another with arrows, lances and darts and quickly sent one another to the region of Yama.

4. Car-warriors were engaged in terrible battle, causing a dreadful flow of blood against (rival) car-warriors and smote one another.

5. Furious elephants mad with rage, O mighty monarch, advancing against one another, mangled one another with tusks.

6. In that dreadful encounter, horsemen' solicitous of high renown, pierced (rival) horsemen with spears, darts and battle-axes.

7. O mighty-armed one, O tormentor of foes, hundreds of foot-soldiers armed with weapons rushed against one another with vigorous efforts.

8. And, O worshipful sire, (in that terrible encounter) we could only distinguish the Kurus from the Panchalas by the names of their (respective) clans and families which we heard them utter.

9. The warriors moving about fearlessly on the field of battle sent one another to the next world by arrows, darts and battle-axes.

10. The sun having gone down, the arrows, O king, shot by thousands by them, did no longer illuminate the ten points as before.

11. The Pandava army, O Bharata being thus engaged in battle Duryodhana penetrated into them, O king.

12. Afflicted with great sorrow at the destruction of the king of Sindhu, and determined to sacrifice his life, he entered into the enemy's army.

13. Causing the earth to tremble and resound with the rattle of his car, your son rushed against the Pandava army.

14. O Bharata, that dreadful clash between him and them caused a terrible slaughter of all the troops.

15. As the noon-day sun scorches (the world) with his rays, so, it seemed, that

your son scorched (the Pandava army) with flaming darts.

16. In that battle the Pandavas could not even look at their brother (i e Duryodhana), and despairing of conquering their enemy, they tried to flee (from the field).

17. The Panchalas, struck with gold-winged darts of blazing points, shot by your high-souled son armed with a bow, fled away.

18. The Pandava soldiers smitten with sharpened darts fell (dead). Indeed the sons of Pandu could never perform such exploits in battle

19. As were achieved by your royal son, O lord of earth. In that encounter the Pandava army was crushed by your son,

20. As lotuses are torn and crushed by a tusker. As lotuses are shorn of their beauty in consequence of the water (over which they grow) being dried up by the sun and the wind,

21. The Pandava army became so by virtue of the prowess of your son. Seeing, O Bharata, that the Pandava army was being destroyed by your son.

22. The Panchalas led by Bhimasena advanced (against him). He then (pierced) Bhimasena wlth ten, each of the two sons of Madri with three,

23. Virata and Drupada each with six, Shikandi with hundred, Dhristadumna with hundred, the son of Dharma with seven,

24. And the Kalkeyas and the Chedies with numerous keen darts. Piercing Satwatta with five (arrows), each of the sons of Droupadi with three,

25—26. And piercing Ghatotkacha too in battle he roared like a lion. Like the wrathful destroyer slaying the created beings, he cut down hundreds of other warriors and the bodies of horses and elephants in that terrific encounter. When he was thus destroying his enemies, his great bow, plaited at the back with gold,

27. Was severed into three parts with two broad-headed shafts by the eldest Pandava, O worshipful sire. (He then) pierced him (*i.e.* Duryodhana) fully with ten excellent and sharpened darts.

28. All these (arrows) piercing through the vital parts of Duryodhana penetrated into the earth in an unbroken line. Then the assembled warriors encircled Yudhisthira,

29. As the celestials had surrounded Purandara for the purpose of destroying Vritra (in days of yore).

30. Then the highly irresistible king Yudhisthira, O king, shot at your son an arrow in that encounter. Deeply wounded by that dart he became insensible on his excellent car.

31. Then a great and tumultous uproar arose from among the Panchala soldiers. O king of kings, that great noise was this "the king is slain."

32. And, O Bharata, sharp whizes of arrows were also heard there. Then Drona speedily appeared there in that battle.

33. Duryodhana too with (great) joy grasping his bow firmly and shouting to the king (Yudhisthira) 'wait' 'wait' rushed against the Pandavas.

34. The Panchalas too desirous of victory speedily followed the king. In order to save the foremost of the Kurus, Drona received them (*i.e.* their charge)

35. And then destroyed them all like the possessor of rays destroying the clouds driven to and fro by a terrific hurricane. Then there took place, O king, a terrific battle causing great havoc between your and your enemy's assembled troops eager for fight.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-third chapter, the defeat of Duryodhana, in the Ghatatkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLIV.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)
—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said:—

1. When the wrathful preceptor endued with prowess, having addressed my son Duryodhana, who (even) acts in opposition to my commands, thus entered into the Pandava army,

3. How did the Pandavas oppose that mighty bowman, the heroic Drona, who having entered it (i e the hostile army) was moving about (the field of battle) stationed on his car.

3. (And) when the preceptor was engaged in the terrible slaughter of the enemy in that great battle, who did protect the right wheel (of his car) and who the left?

4. Who were the heroes that guarded the rear of that warrior engaged in fight? Who were the enemies that were stationed in front of that car-warrior?

5. It seems to me that they experienced an excessive cold chill ill-suited to the proper season or I think they shivered like cows exposed to frosts.

6. When that unvanquished and mighty wielder of bow and that foremost of the wielders of weapons, dancing on the track of his car, entered among the Panchalas,

7. Consuming all the forces of the Panschalas like an angry comet, how did that foremost of the car-warriors meet with death ?

Sanjaya said :—

8. Having killed the king of Sindhu in the evening Partha saw the king (i e Yudhisthira) and then united with the great bowman Satyaki he advanced against Drona himself.

9. Then Yudhisthira together with the Pandava Bhimasena joined by their separate squadrons soon rushed against Drona himself.

10. Similarly, Nakula endued with intelligence and Sahadeva difficult of being conquered, and Dhristadumna with his army and Tirata together with the Kekayas,

11. And the Matshas and the Salyas with their own divisions advanced against Drona for battle. Protected by the Panchachalas, Drupada,

12. The father of Dhristadumna, O king, marched against Drona. Those mighty wielders of bow viz the (five) sons of Droupadi and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha

13. Followed by their own troops proceeded against the highly resplendent Drona. The Prabhadrakas and the Panchalas, numbering sixty thousand (efficient) smiters,

14. With Shikhandi at their head, marched against Drona. Similarly (numerous) other foremost of men and mighty car-warriors on the side of the Pandavas,

15. O best of men, jointly proceeded against Drona. O best of the Bharatas, those warriors having proceeded for the fight,

16. The night became dark increasing the terror of the cowards. (And) that dismal (night) O king, proved destructive of (numerous) warriors.

17. And it then proved fatal to elephants horses and men. On that pitchy dark night jackals setting up (terrible) yells everywhere,

18—19. And with their gaping mouths all ablaze indicated dreadful terror. Specially greatly terrible owls, screaming from the standards of the Kouravas, foreboded dreadful terror. Then, O king of kings, there arose a tumultuous uproar from among the troops.

20. (Mingling) with the loud beat of drums and sound of cymbals, the grunt of elephants and the neigh of horses

21. And the noise of hoofs (that uproar) spread everywhere. Then there took place an awfully dreadful nocturnal battle,

22. O great king, between Drona (on one hand) and all the Srinjayas (on the other). In consequence of the night being enveloped in darkness and of the dust raised by the soldiers nothing could be descerned. The blood of men, horse and elephant mingled together.

24. Stupified with unconciousness as we were we did not see any dust on the earth. Like the (creaking sounds) of a burning bamboo forest on a mountain during a night,

25. There arose a dreadful clangning noise of the clashing weapons. In consequence of the sounds of Mridangas, Anakas Vallakis and Patahas,

26. And of the thundering shouts, of the combatants and the neigh (of steeds), O lord, everything was in utter confusion. O king, on account of darkness gathering fast, friends could not be distinguished from foes.

27. And at that night every one became as if seized with madness. O king of kings, then the dust on earth (soon) disappeared on account of (the profuse) flow of blood.

28. (Then), on account of the golden armours and the ornaments (worn by the warriors) the gloom was dispersed. Adorned with gems and gold, the Bharata army then,

29. Looked like the firmament studded with stars during the night, O foremost of the Bharatas. (That field of battle) with maces and standards lying scattered all over, resounding with the howls of the the jackals,

30. Grunts of elephants and ringing with the striking of arms and shouts (of the combatants) appeared dreadful. Then there arose a great and tumultuous uproar, causing the hair to stand on end,

31. And filling all the points like the roar of Mahendra's thunder. (And) O great king, at that night the Bharata army illuminated with the Angadas, ear-rings, cuirasses, and with the weapons could be (clearly) seen. There (on the field of battle) elephants and cars decked with gold,

33. Looked like clouds with lightning playing upon them during the night. Swords, darts, maces, scimitars, clubs, lances and axes,

34. Looked like blazing sparks of fire when they fell. Duryodhana was the precursory wind, cars and elephants were the clouds.

35. Sounds of musical intruments were the thundering noise, bow and standards were the lightning flashes; Drona and the Pandavas were the clouds, swords, darts and maces were the thunder.

36. And showers, both very hot and cold, of arrows and of (other) weapons were the gusts of wind—of that dreadful, marvellous and fierce (army) which was fatal to life and from which escape was not at all possible.

37. Desirous of battle, warriors entered fearlessly into that host at that dreadful night resounding with numerous sounds.

38. And when that awfully terrible and fierce nocturnal battle was raging which struck terror into (the minds of) the cowards and increased the joy of the valiant,

39. The Pandavas and the Srinjayas united together rushed furiously against Drona. (But) O king, all those who confronted that high-souled one,

40. Were driven back and some were sent to the abode of Yama. Thousands of elephants, ten thousands of car-warriors,

41. Millions of foot-soldiers and hundreds of millions of horses were pierced with shafts by Drona alone at that night.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-fourth chapter fight by Drona in the Gatotkacha-Badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLV.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Dhritarastra said:—

1. When, unable to bear (the destruction of the king of Sindhu), that one of unrivalled energy and difficult of being vanquished penetrated into the Srinjyas what became (the state of) your mind?

2. Having addressed my disobedient son Duryodhona thus, when that one of immeasurable energy entered (into the Pandava army) what did Partha do?

3. (You say that) on the slaughter of the heroic king of Sindhu as well as of Bhurisrava that unvanquished one (*i. e.* Drona) endued with great energy rushed against the Srinjayas.

4. What did (Partha) think on that invincible scorcher of foes having so entered? What also did Duryodhana think as to the most proper step that he could adopt at that time?

5. Who were they that followed the heroic bestower of boons, the foremost of the twice-born ones? Who, O charioteer, were the warriors that remained behind that fighting hero?

6. Who were they that fought in his van when he was destroying the enemies? I think that afflicted with the darts of the son of Bharadwaja, all the Pandavas (trembled)

7. Like lean cows shivering in cold. Having entered into the Panchalas how that mighty weilder of bow, that grinder of foes and foremost of men came by his end?

8. When, on that night, all the soldiers joined together and (all) the mighty car-warriors, combined, were being separately crushed, (by Drona), who, were the intelligent men among you, that were then present?

9. (You say) that, in the encounter, my soldiers were (either) killed, driven away, or defeated and that my car-warriors were deprived of their cars in the encounter.

10. Crushed and deprived of senses by the Pandavas and buried in blinding darkness (as they were,) what was (the state of) their mind?

11. You say that the Pandavas were full of joy and elated (with success), and that my partizans were cheerless, heartless and struck with terror.

12. How, O charioteer, O Sanjaya, ou that (dark) night could you distinguish the unretreating sons of Pritha and the Kurus?

Sanjaya said:—

13. O king, when that greatly furious nocturnal battle was going on, all the Pandavas together with the Somakas rushed against Drona.

14. But Drona, by means of his swift-going darts, sent the Kekayas and sons of Dhristadumna to the region of the departed spirits.

15. And Drona sent all those mighty car-warriors, those lords of earth who confronted him to the region of Pitris, O king.

16. Then the powerful king Sibi furiously advanced against the heroic son of Bhara-

dwaja, the mighty-car warrior Drona who was engaged in crushing (the enemy).

17. Seeing the great car-warrior of the Pandavas advance, Drona pierced him with ten arrows made wholly of steel.

18. Sibi (too) pierced him (*i.e.* Drona) in return by thirty shafts adorned with the plumes of the *Kanka* (bird) and struck down his charioteer with a smile by a broad-headed shaft.

19. (On the other hand) Drona, having killed the horses as well as the charioteer of that high-souled one, severed his head, adorned with a diadem, from the body.

20. Duryodhana then quickly ordered a charioteer (to guide Drona's car). The reins of the) horses being taken by him, he (*i.e.* Drona) again proceeded against his foes.

21. Accompanied by the Kalinga forces the son of the king of Kalinga, excited with wrath for the destruction of his father by Bhimasena, rushed towards him.

22. Having (first) pierced Bhima with five shafts and then again with seven, he struck Viseka (Bhima's charioteer) with three darts and his (*i.e.* Bhima's) standard with one.

23. Vrikodara, then fired with rage, leaped from (his own) car to that of the heroic prince of Kalinga, who also was (very) angry and killed him with blows from his fists.

24. All the bones of that one (*i.e.* the Kalinga prince) thus boxed to death by the powerful Pandava, suddenly fell down on the ground separated from one another.

25. Karna and all the brothers (of the Kalinga prince) could not bear that act on the part of Bhimasena. They (therefore) struck him with keen darts (as fierce) as poisonous snakes.

26. Bhima, then leaving the car of his enemy (*i.e.* dead Kalinga prince) made for the car of Dhruva and smashed Dhruva who was incessantly striking him, by a blow of his fist.

27. Thus struck by the powerful son of Pandu, he fell down (from his car). The highly powerful Bhimasena, O king, after slaying him,

28. Got up to the car of Jayadratha and repeatedly sent forth leonlne roars. While roaring he hurled him down with his left hand.

29. And he (then) killed him with a slap in the very presence of Karna himself. Karna then shot a golden dart at that Pandava.

30. But the son of Pandu seized that (dart) with a smile. And in that encounter the invincible Vrikodara hurled that very dart at Karna.

31. (Then) Sakuni cut off that dart while it was coming (towards Karna) by a shaft saturated with oil. Having performed such great exploits in battle, that one of marvellous prowess,

32. Returned to his own car and (then) rushed against your troops. When Bhima desirous of staying (your troops), was (thus) advancing furiously like the (grim) Destroyer himself,

33. Your mighty armed-sons, those great car-warriors tried to check his career by enveloping him with mighty showers of arrows.

34. Then Bhima, with a smile, sent the charioteer and the steeds of Durmada in that battle to the abode of Yama with his shafts.

35. Durmada then got to the car of Duskarna. Those two brothers, the tormentors of foes, mounted on the same car,

36. Both rushed against Bhima in the van of the battle, as the lord of the waters (*i. e.* Varuna) (had rushed against) Taraka, the foremost of the Daitayas (in days of yore).

37. Then your sons Durmada and Duskarna ascending the same car pierced Bhima with arrows.

38. Then in the very sight of Karna, and Duryodhana and in that of Kripa, Somadatta, and Balhika, the Pandava,

39. That chastiser of foes, buried the car of the heroic Durmada and that of Duskarna into the earth with the stroke of his foot.

40. Then striking furiously with the blows of his fits those two heroic and powerful sons of yours, Duskarna and Durmada, he crushed them (therewith) and sent forth thudering shouts.

41. Then your troops began to wail aloud and the kings seeing Bhima, said. "He is Rudra himself who assuming the shape of a Bhima is fighting with the troops of Dhritarastra."

42. O Bharata, saying this, all the kings deprived, (as it were) of their senses and urging the animals (on which they rode), fled away (from the field) and no two then (so great was their terror) did run together.

43. The army (of the Kurus) being thus greatly crushed, in that night, the heroic and highly powerful Vrikodara, enduced with full blown lotus-like eyes, being

highly complemented by (many) foremost of kings, paid his regards to king Yudhisthira.

44. Then the twins (*i.e.*, Nakula and Sahadeva), Drupada, Virata and the Keykayas as well as Yudhisthira experienced a great joy and paid high complements to Vrikodara as the celestials paid to Hara after the slaughter of Andhaka by him.

45. Then your sons resembling those of Varuna filled with wrath, and eager for battle led by (their) high-souled preceptor surrounded on all sides Vrikodara by cars foot-soldiers and elephants.

46. Then, O best of kings, on that dreadful night enveloped with darkness thick as clouds, there took place, between those high-souled ones, an awe-inspiring and terrible battle delightful to wolves, crows and vultures.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-fifth chapter, the prowess displayed by Bhima in the Ghatotkacha-Badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLVI.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)
—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Enraged at the slaughter of his son, while he was sitting with the desire of dying without food, Somadatta said these words to Satyki :—

2. Why, O Satwatta, without observing the Kshatriya duties as formerly laid down by the gods, have you taken to the practices of robbers ?

3. How can a wise person, practising the Kshatriya duties, strke in battle one who runs away, or is helpless or has laid aside his weapons or who begs (for his life) ?

4. O Swtatta, it is said that among the Vrishnis there are two principal and mighty car-warriors in battle, namely, the highly energetic Pradyumna and yourself.

5. Why then did you practise such a cruelty and commit such an act, that would lead to your downfall, towards one that had sat in prayer and whose arms had been cut off by Partha ?

6. O wicked one, suffer (now) the consequences of that act of yours in battle. Exerting my strength, O fool, I will to-day cut off your head with arrows ?

7. O Satwata, I swear by my two sons, by what is dear to me, and by my virtuous deeds, if before this night comes to a close I fail to destroy you, you that so much pride on your heroism, together with your sons and younger brothers, unless you are backed up by Jishnu, the son of Pritha, then, O wretch of Vrishnis, may I fall into dreadful hell.

9. The highly powerful Somadatta, excited with wrath, having said thus, blew loudly (his) conch and sent forth roars like a lion.

10. Then the greatly powerful Satyaki endued with eyes (beautiful) as lotus petals and possessed of leonine teeth greatly enraged thus addressed Somadatta.

11. "O descendant of the Kurus, I entertain not the least fear in my heart whether fighting with you or with others.

12. I shall not experience the slightest pain, even if backed up by all your forces, you fight with me, O scion of the Kuru race.

13. Observant of the practices of the Kshatriyas as I am, I can not be terrified with words smelling of battle and insulting to the virtuous.

14. If, O lord of men, you are desirous of fighting with me, strike me with sharpened arrows and I also will strike you (in return).

15. O king, your son, the mighty car-warrior Bhurisrava has been slain. Then the heroic Sala and Vrisasena too have been destroyed.

16. I will to-day destroy you also together with your sons and friends ; you are a descendant of the Kuru race and are endued with great prowess. Now remain carefully in battle.

17. King Yudhisthira is always characterised by charity, self-restraint, purity, absence of cruelty, modesty, intelligence and forgiveness and all (the virtues) that do not perish.

18. You, who have been already slain by the energy of that one whose standard bears the mark of a drum, will be destroyed in battle together with Sakuni and Souvala.

19. I swear to-day by Krishna's feet and all the meritorious acts that I had done before, that I will wrathfully kill you in battle together with your sons, with arrows.

20. If, however, you run away (from the field), you may be freed (from me)." Thus addressing each other, with eyes reddened with rage,

21. Those two foremost of men began to discharge arrows (at each other). Then with a thousand cars and ten thousand horses,

22. Duryodhana stood surrounding Somadatta. Sakuni, too excited with wrath and armed with all the weapons,

23. And surrounded by sons and grand-sons and brothers powerful as Indra him-self (followed Duryodhana's example), Your youthful brother-in-law, O king, en-dued with a body hard as the thunderbolt,

24. And gifted with wisdom and who had with him one hundred thousand steeds of the best breed, completely hemmed in that mighty bowman Somadatta.

25. Supported by those heroes, (Soma-datta) covered Satyaki with arrows. Seeing him covered with straight arrows

26. Dhristadyumna, followed by a large army, proceeded wrathfully (towards him). Like the roar of waters dashed into fury by a terrible hurricane,

27. There arose, O king, a great tumult among the (two) forces striking each other. Somadatta then pierced Satwata with nine arrows.

28. Satyaki too pierced that foremost of Kurus with nine shafts. Deeply wound-ed in battle by that powerful and firm wielder of bow,

29. (Somadatta) leaned against the terrace of his car and (then) swooned away and was deprived of consciousness. See-ing that he was deprived of consciousness, his charioteer, in great hurry,

30. Carried away the heroic and mighty car-warrior Somadatta from (the field of) battle. Beholding him deprived of senses and afflicted with the arrows of Yuyudhana,

31. Drona desirous of slaying the heroic (Yadu rushed (at him). Seeing (*i.e* Drona advance), Yudhisthira (putting himself) at the head (of his troops),

32. With the desire of rescuing the high-souled perpetuator of the Yadu race sur-rounded him on all sides. Then there com-menced a battle between Drona and the Pandavas,

33. Like that (which took place) in days of yore between Vali and the celestials (both) desirous of the conquest of the three worlds. Then covering the Pandava army with arrowy showers,

44. The highly-energetic son of Bhara-dwaja pierced Yudhisthira also. (Drona then struck) Satyaki with ten darts and the son of Prishata (*i.e.* Dhristadyumna) with twenty five darts.

35. (And he pierced) Bhimasena with nine, Nakula with five, Sahadeva with eight and Shikhandi with one hundred arrows.

36. That mighty armed one (then pierced) each of (the five) sons of Draupadi with five arrows, Virata the king of Matsyas with eight, Drupada with ten darts,

37. Yudhamanu with three and Utta-manja with six (arrows) in that battle. (Similarly) piercing many other soldiers (he) rushed against Yudhisthira.

38. (Thus) struck dy Drona, the troops of the son of Pandu with loud wails fled away in terror in ten directions, O king.

39. Seeing that the army was being slaughtered by Drona, Phalguna Partha, enraged a little, advanced speedily against his preceptor.

40. O king, beholding that Drona too was advancing against Vivatsu in that battle, the soldiers of Yudhisthira rallied again.

41. Then again commenced a battle between the sons of Bharadwaja and the Pandavas. Drona, O king, completely surrrounded by your sons,

42. Began to destroy the troops of the Pandavas, as fire (consumes) a heap of cotton. (He then) looked like the radiant sun and was endued with the resplendance of a blazing fire.

43. O king, seeing Drona incessantly discharge fierce arrows like sparks of fire from his bow drawn to a circle, and like the scorching sun,

44. Consume the evenings there was none among the army that could withstand him. Those persons who stood before Drona (in order to resist him)

45. Had their heads cut off by Drona with arrows which (then) entered into the earth. The army of the Pandavas thus slaughtered by that high-souled one,

46. Again ran away in terror (even) in the very sight of Savyasachi. Seeing his lines broken by Drona at (that) night, O Bharata,

47. Jishnu said to Govinda "proceed towards the car of Drona." Then that Dasarha (chief) drove the horses, looking like silver or milk of cows, or like the Kun-da flower, towards the car of Drona. See-ing that Phalguna was proceeding towards Drona, Bhimasena too,

48. Ordered his own charioteer to take him towards Drona's troops. Visaka (the charioteer of Bhima), hearing those words of his (master) guided the steeds

50. Behind Jushnu of unerring aim, O foremost of the Bharatas. Seeing those two brothers resolutely rush towards Drona's division,

51. The Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the Matsyas, the Chedis, the Kouravas, the Koshalas and those mighty car-warriors, the Keykayas followed suit, O great king.

52—53. Then, O king, ensued a dreadful encounter, making the hair stand erect. Vivastsu, then, attacked the right and Vrikodara the left flank of your army with innumerable cars. Seeing those twe foremost of men, viz Bhimasena and Dhananjaya, (proceed towards Drona's troops),

54. Dhrishtadyumna as well as the highly powerful Satyaki rushed (at them). like the roar of waters dashed into fury by a terrible hurricane.

55. There arose a great tumult among the combatants striking each other. Seeing Satyaki in battle and enraged at the slaughter of the son of Somadatta,

56, The son of Drona rushed furiously against Satwatta at the van of battle. (Seeing) him proceed towards the car of the grandson of Sini in battle,

57—58. That gigantic Rakshasa, the son of Bhimasena, possessed of enormous strength, rushed (at him) mounted on a huge and awfully dreadful car made of black iron covered with bear-skin, measuring thirty *nalwas* in height and width, furnished with various machines, and emitting thnndering roars like those of a mighty (mass of) clouds.

59. (And it was) drawn by animals looking like elephants; but they were neither elephants nor horses. With its wings and feet outstretched and with expanded eyes and emitting (terrible) shrieks,

60. A prince of vultures sat on its towering standard. (That car) was adorned with red flags furnished with rows of bones,

61—62. And with eight wheels. (And he) sat down on this car surrounded by one Akshauhini of terrible-looking Rakshasa armed with maces and clubs and carrying rocks and trees in their hands. The kings were (greatly) pained on seeing him (to advance) with upraised bow,

63. Look like the very Destroyer himself, mace in hand, at the time of universal dissolution. (And he) resembled a mountain peak, was frightful to look at, and dreadful.

64. (He) had terrible teeth, and a dread ful face, was possessed of arrow-like ears, high cheek bones, shooting hair, unnatural eyes, flaming mouth and a sunken belly.

65. His aesophagus was deep as a yawning pit and his head was furnished with a coronet. He was dreadful to all creatures and his jaws were as wide as those of the Destroyer himself.

66. Seeing Gatatkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas endued with splendour, and capable of striking terror into foes, advance upraising his great bow,

67. Your son's forces struck with panic became as much agitated as when the waves of Ganga (dashed into fury) by a tempest are agitated into whirlpools.

68. Struck with panic by the leonine roars sent forth by Ghatotkacha, the elephants began to pass urine and the kings were greatly distressed.

69. Hurled by the Rakshas who became more powerful on night-fall, there began to fall from all sides showers of stones on the ground.

70. Showers of iron, wheels, Bhushundeeds, arrows, spears, Sataghnees and axes also began to fall there incessantly.

71. Seeing that furious and terrible battle, the kings, your sons and Karna too, being (greatly) distressed, ran away (from the battle field).

72. There the haughty son, of Drona only proud of his prowess in weapons, stood without fear (and he) soon did away with the illusion created by Ghatotkach.

73. Enraged at the illusion being dispelled (by the son of Drona), Ghatotkacha began to discharge fierce arrows. Those (arrows) penetrated into (the body of) Aswathama.

74. As snakes insensible with rage furiously (enter into) an ant-hill, those arrows penetrating through (the body of) the son of Saradwata became covered with blood,

75. And then speedily entered into the earth like serpents (entering) an ant-hill. The light-handed and powerful Aswathama too, excited with wrath,

76. Furiously pierced Ghatotkacha with ten arrows. Deeply pierced in the vital parts by the son of Drona, Ghatotkacha,

77. Became greatly afflicted and then took up a wheel furnished with one hundred thousand spokes. (This wheel) the edge of which was sharp as that of a razor, and which was as resplendent as the morning sun and was studded with gems and precious stones,

78. Was hurled by the son of Bhimasena at Aswathama with the desire of slaying (him). Cut off into fragments by the son of Drona with arrows as it coursed with great speed (towards him),

79. It fell down on the ground like the purposes of an unlucky person. Seeing his wheel cut down, Ghatotkacha speedily

80. Covered the son of Drona with shafts as Sarbhanu (*i. e.* Rahu) swallows the creator of light (*i.e.* the sun). The resplendent son of Ghatotkacha resembling a mass of antimony,

81. Arrested the advance of the son of Drona as the king of mountains (checks the career of) the wind. (Struck with arrows) by the heroic Anjanaparva, the grandson of Bhimasena,

82. (The son of Drona) looked like the mountain Meru drenched with (copious) showers of rain from the clouds. Aswathama also endued with a prowess equal to that of Rudra or Upendra, becoming highly enraged,

83. Cut off the standard of Anjanaparva with one arrow, his two charioteers with two and his Trivenduka with four (arrows).

84—85. With one (arrow) he cut off his bow and with four his four steeds. Deprived of his car; as he (*i.e.* the son of Ghatotkach) took up a scimitar studded with golden stars, in his hand, and flourished it, (Aswathama) severed it into two parts by a keen dart. Then, O king, the grandson of Hidimva speedily (took up) a mace decked with gold;

86. And whirling it, (he) hurled (that mace at Aswathama). But the son of Drona, striking it (with arrows) felled it (to the ground). Then, leaping up in the air and roaring like black clouds,

87—88. Anjnnaparva began to pour down showers of trees from the firmament. Then the son of Drona began to pierce that one capable of (creating) illusions by means of shafts in the sky as the sun (pierces) the clouds with his rays. Seated on his car again decked with gold, when that one of great strength,

89—90. Looking like a high and beautiful mountain of antimony, descended to the earth, the son of Drona slew the son of Bhima's son, Anjanaparva, clad in armour as Maheswara (killed) the (Asura) Andhaka in days of yore. Seeing his son of enormous strength killed by Aswathama,

91. (Ghatotkacha), the ornaments of whose arms were falling down from rage, came up to the son of Drona who was consuming the Pandava army like a raging forest-fire and fearlessly said to heroic son of Saradwati these words:—

Ghatotkacha said :—

92. O son of Drona, 'wait, wait.' You will not escape alive from me. I will to-day destroy you as the son of Agni (*i.e.* Kartikeya) rived the (mountain) Krouncha.||

Aswathama said :—

93. O son equal in prowess to a celestial, go and fight with others. O son of Hidimva, it is not proper for the father to fight with the son.

94. O son of Hidimva, I am in no way angry with you in my mind. But when a creature is excited with rage, it may (then) kill its own self.

Sanjaya said :—

95. Hearing those words, the son of Bhimasena who was filled with grief for the loss of son and whose eyes became copper-coloured in rage, addressed Aswathama thus :—

96. "What! Am I like a common individual, unable to fight, O son of Drona, that you are terrifying me with words? These words of yours are (highly) improper.

97. I am born of Bhima in the great race of the Kurus and am the son of the Pandavas who never run away from battle.

98. I am the Emperor of the Rakshasas and equal to the ten-necked (Ravana) in prowess. O son of Drona, wait, wait, you will never escape alive from me.

99. I will, to-day, put an end to your desire for fight on the field of battle." Saying thus, that highly powerful Rakshasa, with eyes (red) as copper in wrath,

100. Rushed furiously against the son of Drona as a lion (rushes against) the king of elephants. (Then) Ghatotkacha began to discharge showers of arrows of the measure of the Aksha of a car,

101. At that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Drona, as a cloud (sends down) showers of rain. (But) the son of Drona allayed that down pour of arrows by means of his (own) shafts, before they could reach him.

102. It, then, seemed, that another fight was raging in the firmament between the arrows. In consequence of the sparks emitted forth by the clash of weapons, it seemed

103. That the firmament was studded with glow-worms during the night. Beholding his illusion destroyed by the son of Drona, proud (of his prowess) in battle,

104. Ghatotkacha then disappeared from view again and created (another) illusion (by virtue of this new illusion); he assumed the shape of a towering mountain abounding with peaks and trees,

105. And having a great fountain of water from which spears, lances, swords and

heavy clubs, flowed incessantly. The son of Drona, beholding that mountain looking like a mass of antimony,

106. From which innumerable weapons were being rained down, was not at all afflicted. The son of Drona, then, as if with a smile, invoked into existence the weapon Bajra.

107. By means of that weapon he soon destroyed that prince of mountains. Then he (*ie.*, Ghatotkacha) wearing the shape of a blue cloud adorned with rainbow in the firmament,

108. Covered the son of Drona with furious showers of stones in battle. Thereupon, aiming the Vayavya weapon, that foremost of those skilled in weapons, (*viz.*)

109. The son Drona destroyed that rising blue cloud covering all points completely with numerous arrows, the son of Drona,

110—111. That foremost of two-legged creatures, destroyed one hundred thousand cars. He (then) saw Ghatotkach come again fearlessiy on a car bending his bow and surrounded by a host of Rakshasas, resembling (in shape) lions and tegers, endued with the prowess of infuriated elephants,

112. Riding on elephants, cars and horses and possessed of unnatural, faces, heads and necks. Those followers of the son of Hidimva,

113. Belonged to Pulasta and Yatudhana clans, and like them, were (all) equal to Indra in prowess. (These Rakshasa) heroes weilded several (sorts of) armours,

114. Were dreadful to look at, excited with wrath, and their eyes were rolling in ire. Accompained by those Rakshasas difficult of being vanquished, (Ghatotkacha) appeared on the field of battle.

115. Seeing that your son grew (greatly) dispirited (at the sight of these Rakshasas; the son of Drona thus addressed him. "O Durjodhana, wait. You need not entertain any fear (of the Rakshasas).

116. (Remain here) with your heroic brothers and with the kings equal in prowess to Indra himself. I will destroy your enemies. You will not meet with reverse; I tell you (this) truly. (Now cheer up (your) army."

Duryodhana said :—

117. I do not deem it (*i.e.*, what you say) wonderful, because you have a large mind, and (because), O son of Goutama's daughter, you are devotedly attached to us.

Sanjaya said :—

118. Thus addressing Aswathama, he then said to the son of Suvala :—"(Arjuna) is surrounded by one hundred thousand cars, adorning the (field of) battle.

119. Do you mark against Dhananjaya with one thousand cars, Karna, Vrisasena, Kripa as well as Nila.

120. And the warriors of the North, Kritavarma, the sons of Purumitra, Dusasana, Nikumva, Kundavedi, Purukrama,

121. And Puranjaya, Dridaratha, Pataki, Hemapusyaka, Salya, Aruni, Indrasena, Sanjaya, Vejaya, Jaya,

122. And Kamalaksha, Parakrathi, Jayadharma, Sudarsana—(all) these will follow you together with sixty thousand infantry.

123. Destroy, O uncle, Bhima, the twins (*i.e.*, Nakula and Sahadeva) as well as the Dharmaraj, as the Asuras. My hope of success lies in you.

124. (They) are already deeply wounded, their bodies are mangled with shafts by the son of Drona. O uncle, (now) destroy the sons of Kunti, as the son of Agni (*i.e.*, Kartikeya) slew the Asuras."

125. Thus spoken to by your son, the son of Suvala, desirous of doing your son good, marched quickly, O king, for the purpose of destroying the Pandavas.

126. Then commenced on that night a dreadful encounter between the son of Drona and the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha) like that (which had taken place in days of yore) between Sakra and Prahrada.

127. Then Ghatatkacha, excited with, anger struck the son of the daughter of Goutama on the chest with ten strong arrows (fierce) like the venom or the fire.

128. Deeply wounded by those arrows sent by the son of Bhima, he (*i.e.*, Aswathama), like a tree shaken by the tempest, trembled on the terrace of his car.

129. Again by means of a broad-headed shaft, Ghatotkacha soon cut off that highly lustrous bow wielded by the son of Drona.

130. Then taking up another strong bow capable of sustaining a great strain, the son of Drona poured showers of keen arrows as the clouds (pour down) showers of rain.

131. Then, O Bharata, the son of Saradvati sent gold winged and sky-ranging arrows destructive of foes against that ranger of the sky.

132. That great host of the broad-chested Rakshasas, sore oppressed with his

arrows, ooked like a herd of furious elephants attacked) by a lion.

133. Like the god Agni consuming the creatures at the end of a Yuga, he began to consu..e with his arrows the Rakshasas together with (their) horses, charioteers, cars and elephants.

134. Consuming one Akshouhini of Rakshasa troops with his shafts, he shone like the divine Maheswara in heaven when the latter had burnt down (the chief of) Tripura in days of yore.

135. Having consumed the hostile forces, the son of Drona, the foremost of victors, shone like the resplendent Agni burning all the creatures at the end of a Yuga.

136. Then Ghatotkacha, greatly enraged, ordered that vast army of Rakshasas capable of achieving terrible feats, to slay the son of Drona.

137. In obedience to that order of Ghatotkacha, the Rakshasas, possessed of blazing teeth, large faces, and terrible features, capable of causing dread,

138. Having gaping mouths, long tongues, and eyes burning in ire,—causing the earth to tremble with great leonine roars,

139—142. And wielding several (sorts of) weapons rushed to slay the son of Drona. These Rakshasas, of gigantic strength and with eyes reddened with wrath, began to shower upon the head of the son of Drona hundreds and thousands of awfully terrible darts, Sataghnees, spiked maces, Asanis, lances, axes, scimitars, maces, Bhindipalas, heavy clubs, battle axes, spears, swords, lances, Kunapas, polished Kampanas, Sthulas, Bhushundees, stones, vessels of treacle, sthunas made of black iron, and clubs(all) destructive of foes.

143. Seeing that dreadful shower of weapons was falling upon the head of the son of Drona your warriors were greatly distressed (at heart).

144. (But) Drona's son dauntlessly baffled that dreadful and impending shower of weapons by means of his own shafts, hard as the thunderbolt and sharpened on stones.

145. Then that high-minded son, of Drona, quickly destroyed the Rakshasas with other gold winged shafts inspired with the mantras of celestial weapons.

146. The broad chested Rakshasa army, crushed by his arrows, looked like a herd of furious elephants oppressed by lions.

147. Sore oppressed by the son of Drona those Rakshasas, endued with enormous strength, became mad with rage and angrily rushed against Drona's son in order to slay him.

148. There, O Bharata, the son of Drona displayed such wonderful exploits as are incapable of being achieved by any other being among all the creatures.

149. In as much as single-handed the son of Drona, versed in great weapons, by means of blazing darts,burnt that Rakshasa army in a moment in the very presence of the Rakshasa king.

150. The son of Drona, while (thus burning that Rakshasa host in battle shone like the Samvartaka fire (consuming) all the creatures at the end of a yuga.

151. While engaged in consuming the forces with arrows (fierce) as poisonous snakes, among those thousands of kings on the side of the Pandavas, O Bharata,

152. None else could look at the son of Drona in that encounter except Ghatotkacha, the heroic and highly powerful king of the Rakshasas.

153. O best of the Bharatas, again he (*i. e.*, Ghatotkacha), with eyes rolling in rage, striking his palms, and biting his lip,

154—156. Said angrily to his charioteer "Bear me towards the son of Drona." Ascending that terrible looking (car) furnished with triumphal banners, that destroyer foes again marched against the son of Drona in order to engage in a single combat with him. Sending forth a thundering roar like that of a lion, that terribly-powerful Rakshasa, whirling a highly dreadful Asani of celestial make and furnished with eight bells, hurled it in that encounter at the son of Drona.

157. Placing his bow on the car and jumping down, the son of Drona seized it and hurled it back at him (*i.e.* the Rakshasa, (Seeing that Asani proceed towards him) he leaped down from his car.

158. That dreadful Asani of great lustre having consumed to ashes the car together with the steeds, the driver and the standard, rived the earth and (then) penetrated into it.

159. Seeing the son of Drona achieve that (wonderful) feat all the creatures adored (him) inasmuch as leaping down from his car he seized that (Asani) made by Sankara.

160. Then, O king, riding on the car of Dhritarastra and taking up a dreadful bow like the formidable bow of Indra (himself), the son of Bhimasena,

161. Began again to discharge sharpened arrows at the high-souled son of Drona. Dhristadyumna also, nothing daunted, discharged (arrows) fierce as poisonous snakes,

162. Furnished with gold wings and excellent at the chest of the son of Drona. Thereupon Drona's son hurled at them thousands of Narachas.

163. (But) those two (*i.e.* Dhristadyumna and the Rakshasa) cut off with their own shafts, having the touch of fire, the arrows discharged by Drona's son). (Then an awfully terrible battle took place between those two best of men.

164. And the son of Drona caused (a great) delight to the warriors, O best of the Bharatas. Then followed by one thousand cars, three hundred elephants,

165—166. And six thousand steeds Bhimasena made his appearance at that spot (where the battle was raging.) But the virtuous-souled son of Drona, possessed of excellent prowess, continued to fight with the heroic son of Bhimsena and Dhristadyumna together with his younger brothers; there the son of Drona achieved the most marvellous exploit,

157—168. Incapable of being performed by any one among all the creatures. O Bharata, within the twinkling of an eye, he destroyed by means of arrows one Akshouhini of the Rakshasa army together with horses, drivers, cars and elephants, in the very sight of Bhimasena, the son of Hidimva, the son of Prishatha,

169. The twins, the son of Dharma, Vijaya and Achyuta. Pierced deeply with the stright-coursing shafts,

170. The tuskers fell down on earth like mountains devoid of (their) peaks with the trunks of elephants chopped off (by arrows) that were still moving about here and there.

171. The earth being strewn it looked as beautiful as if strewn around with moving snakes; with golden staves cut (to pieces) and royal umbrellas (lying scattered all over the field of battle) the earth looked like,

172. The firmament studded with (many) suns, moons and planets at the end of a yuga. Tall standards constituted the frogs, drums the large tortoises,

173. Umbrellas the rows of swans, abundance of yok-tails the foams, Kankas and vultures the crocodiles, innumerable weapons the fishes,

174. Huge elephants the stones, numerous elephants and horses the sharks, cars the unstable and great banks, flags the beautiful trees,

175. Arrows the fishes, lances, darts and swords the frightful snakes, marrow and flesh the deep mire, headless bodies, the rafters;

176—177. Profusion of hair (of men and animals) the moss, lamentations of warriors the roar, and blood flowing from the wounds formed the waves of that impetuous river of blood formed by the blood shedding from the bodies of huge elephants, horses and combatants, and inspiring the coward with terror—which the son of Drona caused to flow there.

178. (It looked) frightful with the (dead) bodies of foot soldiers and (it flowed towards) that great ocean, that is, the abode of Yama. Having destroyed the Rakshasa the son of Hidimva with shafts,

179. Waxing wroth again, Drona's son having pierced with numerous shafts those great car-warriors, the sons of Pritha including Vrikodara and the sons of Prishata,

180—181. Killed, O Lord, one of the sons of Drupada, Suratha by name. Then in that encounter he killed the younger brother of Suratha, Satrunjaya by name, and also Balmika, Jayanika and Jaya. Then again, roaring like a lion, the son of Drona, by means of sharpened arrows,

182. Slew Prishadhru and the proud Chandrasena. (Then) with ten (darts) he destroyed ten sons of Kuntibhoja.

183. With another three red-eyed arrow graced with beautiful wings he despatched O king of kings, to the abode of Yama, Strutayush.

184. (He then) sent the powerful Satrunjaya to the abode of Sakra. Aswathama, then, greatly enraged, fixed a terrible and uncrooked (arrow) (on his bowstring).

185. (And) drawing the string up to his very ear, he soon discharged from his bow that excellent and formidable (arrow) looking like Yamadanda at Ghatotkacha.

186. O Lord of earth, that great arrow furnished with beatiful wings, riving the heart of that Rakshasa, penetrated into the earth.

187. Seeing him fallen down and taking him for dead, the great car-warrior Dhristadyumna, placed him upon another car and bore him away from the presence of the son of Drona, O king of kings.

188. Thus the car-warriors ef Yudhisthira were driven back O king. Vanquishing his enemies, the heroic son of Drona uttered thundering shouts, and he was adored by all men and by your sons, O lord.

189. Scattered all over with the fallen bodies of the dead night-rangers struck down and mangled by hundreds of shafts, the earth looked dreadful and became

impassable as if strewn with mountain-peaks.

190. Then the Siddhas, the Gandharvas, the Pishachas, the Nagas, the birds, the Pitris, ravens, the Rakshas, the ghosts, the Apsaras and the celestials all joined in adoring the son of Drona.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-sixth chapter, Aswathama's fight in the Ghatotkacha Badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLVII.

(GHATOTKACHA BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Seeing that the sons of Drupada and those of Kuntibhoja as well as thousands of Rakshasas were destroyed by the son of Drona,

2. Yudhisthira, Bhimasena, Dhristadyumna, the son of Prishata and Yuyudhan (all) united together, re-engaged their attention to battle.

3. Growing angry again at seeing Satyaki in battle, O Bharata, Somadatta covered him with a mighty discharge of arrows.

4. Then the battle that took place between your army and that of the enemy was dreadful and highly marvellous to look at, (in which) both parties were desirous of gaining the victory.

5. Bhima, for the purpose of (helping) Swattata, pierced the Kaurava (Somadatta) with ten (arrows). Somadatta too struck that hero in return with a hundred (darts).

6. (Then) Sattwata, furious with wrath, struck that old one smitten with grief for the slaughter of his son (by Satyaki) and who was, like Yayati, the son of Nahusha, possessed of every noble quality, with ten sharpened arrows having the force of the thunder. After piercing him (with these ten arrows) with great might he (*i.e.* Satyaki) struck him again with seven (more).

8. Bhimasena, also for the purpose of (helping) Satyaki, hurled a new and formidable Parigha at the head of Somadatta.

9. Sattwata too, in anger, discharged at the chest of Somadatta, in that encounter, a keen and excellent dart, furnished with beautiful wings and as (furious) as the fire itself.

10. Both the formidable Parigha and the arrow, having at one and the same time, fallen upon the body of the heroic Somadatta, that mighty car-warrior fell down.

11. His son being deprived of consciousness, Valhika, discharging showers of arrows like the clouds (pouring) torrents of of rain during (the rainy, season,) rushed at him.

12. Then Bhima, for the sake of Satyaki, tormented and pierced, in that encounter, the high sould Valhika with nine arrows.

13. Like Purandara hurling the thunderbolt, the mighty armed son of Pratea (*i.e.*, Valhika), smitten with ire, struck Bhima on the chest with an arrow.

14. Thus struck (by Valhika) Bhima trembled and (then) fell into a swoon. Then that powerful one, recovering his senses, hurled a mace at him.

15. That (mace) hurled by the Pandava (Bhimasena) smashed the head of Valhika. He (then) fell down dead on the earth like a tree struck by lightning.

16—17. That foremost of men, the heroic Valhika being (thus) slain, your ten sons, *viz.*, Nagadatta, Dridaratha, Viravahu, Ayobhuja, Dridha, Suhasta, Viraja, Pramatha and Ugrayayin; (each of whom) resembled the son of Dasharatha (*i.e.*Rama) began to torment Bhima.

18. Filled with ire on beholding them, Bhima, aiming at each of them one after the other, struck each of them in the vital parts with arrows capable of bearing much strain.

19. Pierced (with those arrows) they fell down from their cars deprived of life and energy as trees broken by a furious hurricane (fall down) from the mountain summits.

20. Having destroyed those (ten) sons of your with ten arrows Bhima covered Vrishasena, the beloved son of Karna (with downpours of shafts).

21. Then the renowned brother of Karna, Vrikaratha by name, pierced Bhima with arrows. (But) that hero (*i.e.* Bhima) soon slew him.

22. Then the heroic Bhima, having killed seven car-warriors among your brothers-in-law, with arrows, burried Satachandra into the earth (by main force), O Bharata.

23. Unable to put up with the destruction of that great car-warrior Satachandra, the brothers of Sakuni *viz.*, the heroic Gavaksha, Sarava, Vibhu (and two others),

24. Rushing against Bhimasena, oppressed him with keen darts. Afflicted with those shafts like a mountain with torrents of rain, he

25. Destroyed those five kings endued with great prowess, with five arrows. Those foremost of kings (who were present in that battle) seeing the destruction of those five heroes began to waver.

26. Then Yudhisthira began angrily to crush your forces in the very presence of the Pot-born (Drona) and in that of your sons, O sinless one.

27. (And) in that battle Yudhisthira sent to the region of Death, the Ambhastas, the Malavas, the heroic Trigartas and the Sivis.

28. Chopping off the Abhishahas, the Surasenas, the Valhikas and the Vashatikas, he made the earth muddy with (their) flesh and blood.

29. (And), O king, in a moment he sent to the region of Yama, with a number of darts, the heroic Youdheyas, the Malavas and hosts of the Madrakas in battle.

30. Then a tumultuous uproar (such as) "Slay, seize, capture, pierce and cut to pieces"—arose in the direction of Yudhisthira's car.

31. Seeing Yudhisthira afflict your troops Drona, urged on by your son, surrounded him (i e Yudhisthira) with arrows.

32. Drona also, exceedingly enraged, discharged at that Pandava the weapon presided ove: by Vayu. But he (i e Yudhisthira) destroyed that celestial weapon with (another) weapon.

33. That weapon being baffled by Yudhisthira, the son of Bha adwaja, in great rage, hurled at the son of Pandu the Varuna, the Agneya, the Teshra and the Savitra weapon, with the desire of destroying him. All those weapons that were (either) hurled (or) being hurled by the Pot-born, were dauntlessly baffled by that mighty-armed and righteous one. Desirous of accomplishing his vow the Patborn,

36. Devoted to the welfare of your son, called into existence the weapons presided over by Varuna or Prajapati, in order to slay the son of Dharma, O Bharata.

37. (Then) the lord of the Kurus (i e Yudhisthira) walking like a lion or elephant endued with a broad chest, and large and red eyes and possessed of an energy not less (than that of Drona) called into existence the Mahendra weapon, by means of which he baffled the weapon of Drona.

38. All those weapons of his being baffled, Drona was filled with ire; and desirous of slaying Yudhisthira, he called into existence the weapon presided over by Brahma.

39. Being enveloped in a dismal darkness, we could not, then, diecern anything. And, O lord of the earth, all the creatures experienced a terrible horror.

40. Seeing that the Brahma weapon was uplifted, Yudhisthira, the son of Kunti, baffled that weapon by means of Brahma weapon, O king of kings.

41. Then the principal warriors (of the two armies) praised those two most exalted of men, those two great bowmen, viz Drona and the son of Pritha, who were conversant with all the (arts of) warfare.

42. Leaving the son of Kunti, Drona, then, whose eyes became as red as copper in rage, began to destroy, by means of weapons, the army of Drupada.

43. The Panchalas, (thus) destroyed by Drona fled away in terror in the very presence of Bhimasena and in that of the high-souled Pritha.

44. Then Kiriti and Bhima, rallying their own army, all on a sudden attacked, with a great car-force, your army.

45. Vivatsu attacking the right and Vrikodara the left flank (of your army), discharged at the son of Bharadwaja mighty downpours of shafts.

46. The Kakeyas, the Srinjyas, and the highly energetic Panchalas, O great king, together with the Matsyas and the Sattwata followed suit.

47. Then the Bharata army, butchered by Kiriti, and (overpowered) with sleep and darkness, despersed again.

48. Although, O great king, Drona himself and your son tried to rally them, yet they were not capable of reducing the warriors to order.

Thus ends the one hundred and thirty-seventh chapter, the battle between Drona and Yudhisthira in the Ghatatkacha-badha of the Vana Parra.

CHAPTER CLVIII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. Duryodhana, on beholding the vast army of the Pandavas—inflated with wrath and thinking it to be irresistible thus spoke to Karna,—

2. The time is now come, O you that are dovoted to your friends, for your friends (to seek your assistance). O Karna, save in battle all my soldiers and car warriors,

3. Who are now completely hemmed in by the wrathful Panchalas and the Keykeas and the Matsyas and by the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas who are all listening like (angry) snakes.

4. These Pandavas, filled with ecstacy and desirous of victory and these numerous car-warriors of the Panchalas equal to Sakra in prowess, are (all) roaring.

Karna said :—

5. Even if Purandara himself comes here in person in order to deliver the son of Pritha, I will soon vanquish him and then slay the son of Pandu (i e Arjuna).

6. I swear this truly. Reassure yourself, O Bharata. I will destroy the sons of Pandu together with all the assembled Panchalas.

7. I will secure to you victory as the son of Pavaka (i e Kartikeya) did to Vasava himself. In this battle which is now going on, I will do good offices to you.

8. Among all the sons of Pritha, Phalguna is the most powerful. I will hurl at him the unfailing dart made by Sakra.

9. When the mighty-bowman will be slain, his brothers, O bestower of honours, will either come under your sway or depart to the forest again.

10. O lord of the Kouravas, since I am alive you need not give way to sorrow. I will, in battle, destroy all the Pandavas joined together,

11. The Panchalas, the Keykayas and the assembled Vrishnis. (And) cutting (them) off into pieces with arrows I will give the earth to you.

Sanjaya said :—

12. When Karna was saying all this the mighty-armed Kripa, the son of Saradwata smilingly said these words to the charioteer's son.

13. "Very well, very well, O Karna. If words alone were to lead to success, then O son of Radha, with yourself as his supporter, this most exalted of the Kurus could be considered as sufficiently backed.

14. Frequently in the presence of the Kourava (king) you boast (of your prowess). But neither your prowess nor the result of it has ever been witnessed.

15. You have been, on several occasions, seen to engage in battle with the sons of Pandu. But, charioteer's son, you have, on all those occasions, been defeated by the Pandavas.

16. On the son of Dhritarastra being taken prisoner by the Gandharvas, you yourself were the first to take to your heels although all the troops were fighting (to rescue the Kuru king).

17. Again, in the city of Virata, all the assembled Kouravas as well as you, O Karna, together with your younger brother were (all) defeated by Partha in battle.

18. You are, in battle, incapable of fighting with Phalguna alone. How can you, (therefore) hope to conquer all the Pandavas together with Krishna?

19. O Karna, O charioteer's son, you boast too much (of your prowess). Be engaged in fight. It is the duty of good (*i e* really brave) men to display their prowess without uttering (a single boastful word).

20. By roaring like the rainless autumnal clouds, O charioteer's son, O Karna, you show that you have no worth. But the king does not understand this.

21. Continue, O son Radha, to roar so long as you do not behold Partha; (for) you will cease roaring when you will see Partha near.

22. Continue to roar so long as you are out of the reach of Phalguna's arrows: (for) when you will be pierced with the shafts of Partha, your roars will grow rare.

23. It is by means of (the prowess of) their arms that the Kshyatryas are heroes. The twice-born ones display their heroism by words. It is by means of this bow that Phalguna is a hero. But Karna is a hero by the wishes (he cherishes in his heart).

24. Who can resist Partha that has gratified even Rudra himself?" Thus reviled by the son of Saradwat,

25. Karna, the foremost of smiters, spoke these words to Kripa. Heroes always roar like clouds during the rainy season,

26. And they yeild an early harvest like seeds sown into the soil (at the proper time). I do not find any fault with the warriors on the field of battle,

27. Boasting in several ways of themselves, who bear a (great) burden in war. That person, who resolves in his mind to bear a burden,

28. Is surely helped by fate in carrying out his purposes. If resolving in my mind to bear a (great) burden,

26. That is (if wishing in my mind) to slay in battle the sons of Pandu together with Krishna and Sattwata,—I roar thus, what harm is there in it to you, O Brahmana?

30. Heroes do not roar in vain like the autumnal clouds. The wise, conscious of their own-strength, indulge in roars.

31. I am, too, resolved in my mind to conquer in battle to-day the Pandavas and Krishna joined together, by exerting my best. O son of Goutama, it is on this account, that I indulge in roars.

32. O Brahmana, witness the result of these roars of mine. Having slain in battle the sons of Pandu together with Krishna, Sattwata and (all their) followers I will deliver the (entire) earth with its thorns weeded out, to Duryodhana.

Kripa said :—

33. Your intentions being like the ravings (of a mad man) can not be acceptable to me, inasmuch as you always speak depreciatingly of Krishna, Arjuna and Dharmaraj, the son of Pandu.

34—36. O Karna, victory on the part of that person is certain who has on his side Krishna and the Pandava (Arjuna) both skilled in warfare and incapable of being vanquished in battle by the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the mortals the Uragas, and the birds (even if all these fight) with their armours on). Yudhisthira the son of Dharma is devoted to the Brahmanas, (always) speaks truth, is self-restrained, worships the Pitris and the celestials, is devoted to truth and righteousness, well skilled in weapons, is possesed of intelligence and is grateful.

37. His brothers (also) are powerful, well-skilled in all the weapons, devoted to the ministrations of their elders, wise, renowned and (they) always practice righteousness.

38. His relations and kinsmen too are powerful as Indra himself, are devotedly attached (to him) and are (efficient) smiters. Dhristadyumna, Sikhandi and Janamejaya, the son of Durmuksha,

39. And Chandrasena, Bhadrasena, Kirtivarma, Dhruva, Dhara, Vasuchandra, Damachandra, Singha-Chandra, sutejana,

40. And the sons of Drupada and Drupada himself skilled in great weapons, and the king of Matsya together with his younger brothers are exerting their utmost on their behalf.

41. And Gajaneeka, Srutaneeka, Veerabhadra, Sudarsana, Srutadhwaja, Valaneeka, Jayaneeka, Jarapreya,

42. Ane Vijaya, Labhdhalaksha, Jayaswa, Rathavahana, Chandradaya, Kamaratha, the auspicious brothers of Virata

43. And the twins, the (five) sons of Droupadi, and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha are fighting for their sake. They (therefore) cannot meet with destruction.

44—45. These and innumerable numbers of other (kinsmen and relations) are on the side of the son of Pandu. Indeed, Bhima and Phalguna, by means of the prowess of their weapons, can easily destroy the whole universe together with all the celestials, the Asuras, the human beings, and the Rakshasas, (other) created beings, the serpents and the elephants.

46—47. Yudhisthira, also by means of his angry looks, can consume the (whole). O Karna, how can you hope to vanquish these enemies in battle, for whose sake Souri of unrivalled prowess has armed himself? It is indeed a great impudence on your part, O Charioteer's son, as you always dare confronting Souri in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

48. Thus spoken to (by Kripa), Karna the son of Radha then replied smilingly to the preceptor Kripa, the son of Saradwat.

49. "O Brahmana, the words that you have (just) spoken about the Pandavas are true. Indeed the sons of Pandu are gifted with these and many other noble qualities.

50. The sons of Pritha are unconquerable in battle by the celestials together with Vasava (at their head), by the Yakshas, the Daityas and the Gandharvas (all) united together and by the Pishachas, the Uragas and the Rakshasas.

51. Still I will vanquish the Parthas by means of the dart granted to me by Vasava. This unfailing dart was given to me, O twice-born one, by Sakra.

52. By means of this dart I will slay Savyasachi in battle. When this son of Pandu will be slain, Krishna, as will as his uterine brothers (*i. e.*, Yudhisthira and Bhima),

53. Will not be able to enjoy the earth without Arjuna. At the destruction of all these, this earth together with her seas,

54. Will come under the sway of the lord the Kurus without any trouble (on his part), O son of Goutama. There is no doubt that in this world, a sound policy leads to success in everything.

55. Well aware of this (to be certain) I give forth (these) roars. O Goutama, you are much advanced in years, a Brahmana, and unskilful in battle.

56. It is on account of your affection towards the sons of Pritha that you insult me (thus). If, O twice-born one, you speak such disagreeable words to me, as these again,

57. Then taking up my scimitar I will cut off your tongue, O wretch. O Brahmana, you are desirous of praising the Pandavas, in battle.

58. In order to strike terror into (the hearts of) all the troops and the Kouravas, O evil-mined one, O son of Goutama, hear what I say on this point.

59. Where Durjodhan, Drona, Sakuni, Durmukha, Jaya, Dussasana, Vrishasena, the king Madra, and yourself.

60. And Somadatta, Bhuri, the son of Drona and Vivingsati—all well-skilled in warfare, remain (prepared for battle) with their armours on

61. Can any foe, be he as powerful as Sakra himself, vanquish all these (heroes) in battle? All these warriors that are) heroes, efficient in weapons, endued with strength, desirous of attaining the heaven,

62. Conversant with religion, and well-skilled in battle, would slay the very gods in battle. These will remain on the field of battle for the purpose of destroying the Pandavas.

63. With their armours on, for the Kourava king, solicitous of victory I deem victory even with regard to those endued with great prowess to be dependant on fate.

64. Since the mighty-armed Bhisma lies (on the field) struck by a hundred arrows, (and since) Vikarna, Chitrasena, Valhika, Jayadratha,

65. And Bhurisrava, Jaya, Jalasandha, Sudakshina, Sala, the foremost of car-wariors, the puissant Bhagadatta,

66. These and numerous other heroes difficult of being vanquished by the very gods, and more powerful than the Pandavas themselves—lie slain in battle,

67. To what do you, that are the basest of men, attribute all this except the hand of fate? O twice-born one, as to the enemies, Duryodhana whom you always extol,

68. Hundreds and thousands of warriors on their side also have been destroyed. The troops of both the Kurus and the Pandavas are diminishing.

69. I do not see in it any prowess on the part of the Pandavas. Those whom you, you that are the basest of men, always deem powerful,

70. I will confront in battle putting forth my utmost prowess for the welfare of Duryodhana. As regards success, it is dependant on fate.

Thus ends the hundred and fifty-eigth, chapter, the colloquy between Kripa and Karna, in the Ghatctkacha Badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLIX.

GHATOTKACHA BADHA PARVA.—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing his maternal uncle thus insulted by the charioteer's son, the son of Drona brandishing his scimitar ran furiously towards him.

2. Then, excited with a great rage, the son of Drona, like a lion (rushing at) an infuriate elephant, rushed against Karna, even in the very presence of the Kuru king.

Aswathama said :—

3. O basest of men, in spite of his speaking of the qualities that Aryuna is really endwed with, you, that are of very wicked understanding, have insulted my heroic maternal uncle through (sheer) malice.

4. Without reckoning any of the words of bowmen in battle, puffed up with pride as you are, you are boasting to-day of your manliness.

5. Where was your prowess and where your weapons, when defeating you in battle, the wielder of Gandiva killed Jayadratha in your very presence?

6. O wretch of a charioteer, you are in vain hoping in your mind to conquer him, who formerly fought with the very Mahadeva himself.

7. Since the combined celestials and the Asuras headed by Indra are incapable of defeating that foremost of the wielders of weapons, having Krishna for his ally,

8. How can you, O Suta, backed up by these earthly kings, indulge in hopes of vanquishing in battle, the unconquerable Arjuna, the foremost of all the heroes in the world?

9. Look, O Karna of wicked understanding, O vilest of men, stay here now. I will presently cut off your head from your body.

Sanjaya said :—

10. The highly-energetic king Duryodhana himself, and that best of men,

Kripa, prevented him (*i.e.* Aswathama) who was rushing furiously (at Karna).

Karna said :—

11. Let this basest of Brahmanas, who (thinks that he) is a hero, boasts of his prowess in battle and is of wicked understanding, taste of my prowess. Do leave him, O best of the Kurus.

Aswathama said :—

12. O charioteer's son of wicked understanding, we forgive you of this (fault). Phalguna will destroy this swelling pride of yours.

Duryodhana said :—

13. O Aswathawa, O bestower of honours, be gratified ; do forgive (him). O sinless one, you should not be angry with the charioteer's son.

14. To you and Karna and Kripa and Drona, and the king of Madra and to the son of Suvala, a heavy task is entrusted. O best of the twice-born ones, be gratified.

15. O Brahmana, all the Pandavas, desiring to fight with and shouting to the son of Radha (to give battle) are coming (against him) from all sides.

Sanjaya said :—

16. Thus appeased by the king, the high-minded son of Drona, O great king, who was filled with a furious rage, subdued his anger.

17. Then the large-hearted preceptor, whose mild disposition soon returned (to him) an account of his being (naturally) of a peaceful temper, said these words (to Karna).:—

Kripa said :—

18. O Charioteer's son of very wicked understanding, you are pardoned by us of this (fault). But Phalguna will (soon) destroy your swelling pride.

Sanjaya said :—

19. Then, O king, the Pandavas and the renowned Panchalas, united together and sending forth thundering roars, poured in by thousands.

20—21. The puissant and energetic Karna too taking up his bow and surrounded by the foremost of the Kouravas, like Sakra by the celestials, awaited (their charge) relying on the strength of his own arms. The battle, that then took place between Karna (on one side) and the Pandavas (on the other),

22. Was hot and furious and ruinging with thundering shouts, O great monarch. Then, O king, the Pandavas and the renowned Panchalas,

23. Seeing Karna, possessed of mighty arms, sent forth loud shouts. (And they said) :—"This is Karna ! where is Karna ! O Karna, stay in this great battle !

24. O wicked-souled one, O vilest of men, give us battle. Others, with eyes burning in ire on beholding Karna, said,

25. This arrogant son of charioteer having but a little sense should be killed by all these foremost of kings. He has no need of life.

26. This sinful person is always an inveterate enemy to the sons of Pritha, abides by the advice of Duryodhana and is the root of all these evils.

27—28. Slay him !" Thus saying, mighty Kshatriya car-warriors, at the command of the son of Pandu, rushed to slay the charioteer's son, enveloping (all the points) with a heavy downpour of arrows. Seeing all those highly powerful sons of Pandu (rush towards him),

29. The charioteer's son was neither pained nor struck with terror. Beholding that wonderful army, vast as a sea and looking like Death itself,

30. That puissant, light-handed and highly powerful one, devoted to the good of your sons and never vanquished in battle, by means of showers of arrows,

31. Began to check (the career of) that army on all sides, O most exalted of the Bharatas. Then the Pandavas also, discharging downpours of shafts checked, (him).

32. Shaking hundreds and thousands of bows, they battled with the son of Radha as the Daitayas (fought with) Sakra in days of yore.

33. That downpour, of shafts discharged by the kings on all sides, was destroyed by the puissant Karna with a heavy shower of arrows.

34. Then a marvellous battle, in which each party was desirous of warding off the blows of the other and which resembled the fight between Sakra and the Danavas in the war between the gods and the Asuras, took place between them.

35. There we beheld the wonderful lighthandness of the charioteer's son : for, all the hostile forces, exerting their utmost, could not subdue him in that battle.

36—37. That mighty car-warrior, the son of Radha, checking those downpours of arrows discharged by the (hostile) kings, shot at their yokes, umbrellas, cars and

steeds, dreadful arrows marked with his own name. Then, afflicted by Karna and not knowing what to do, those (hostile) kings,

38—40. Wandered about there (on the field of battle) like cows pained with cold. Innumerable horses, elephants and car-warriors afflicted by Karna were seen to drop dead there. The entire field was strewn on all sides with the fallen heads and arms of the unretreating warriors, O king, with the dead and the dying and the waiting (combatants) lying on all sides,

41. The field of battle looked like the region of the son of Vivasvata, O king. Then, O monarch, beholding the feats of Karna, Duryodhana,

42. Approached Aswathama and then said these words:—"Yonder Karna, with his armour on, is seen (fighting) with all the (hostile) kings.

43. Behold, the (enemy's) army, oppressed with the arrows of Karna, is, like the Asura force afflicted by Kartikeya, running away (in all the directions).

44. Witnessing the defeat of his army by the intelligent Karna, Vivatsu, in order to slay the charioteer's son, is advancing (against him).

45. Adopt such measures that the son of Pandu may not kill that mighty car-warrior, *i.e.*, the charioteer's son in battle in our very sight."

46. (Hearing these words of the king), the son of Drona, and Kripa and Salya and that mighty car-warrior, the son of Hridika, advanced against Partha in order to protect the charioteer's son,

47. Seeing that the son of Kunti was coming against them like Sakra against the Daitaya force. Then, O king of kings, Vivatsu also surrounded by the Panchalas marched against Karna like Purandara (marching against) Vritra.

Dhritarashtra said :—

48. Seeing the wrathful Phalguna looking like Yama, the destroyer of time, what measures, O charioteer, did Karna, the son of Vikartana, adopt?

49. That mighty car-warrior (*i.e.*, Karna) always challenged Partha and hoped that he was powerful enough to vanquish Vivatsu.

50. Thus meeting all on a sudden his inveterate enemy, what measures, O charioteer, did Karna, the son of Vikartana adopt?

Sanjaya said :—

51. Seeing the son of Pandu (advance against) his rival elephant, Karna dauntlessly fell upon Dhananjaya.

52. Partha then enveloped Karna, who was thus furiously advancing against him, with straight-coursing arrows furnished with golden wings.

53. (And) the son of Pandu covered Karna with a dense shower of arrows. Then Karna greatly excited with rage pierced him wtth three darts,

54—56. The mighty car-warrior (Partha) witnessing this nimbleness on his part could not endure it. That scorcher of foes, then, shot thirty arrows sharpened on stone, having flaming points and coursing straight, at the charioteer's son. That puissant and mighty one, then, as if with a smile, pierced him angrily with another long arrow in the end of his left arm. From that hand of his which was (thus) pierced with (great) force, his bow fell down.

57. Taking up that bow within half the time of the twinking of an eye, that highly powerful one, with great nibleness of hand, covered Phalguna with downpours of arrows.

58. The arrowy shower, sent forth by the charioteer's son, was baffied by Dhananjaya with discharges of arrows, as if with a smile, O Bharata.

59. Those two mighty wielders of bow desiring to baffle each other and coming up to catch each other enveloped each other with a) perfect) deluge of arrows.

60. Then a marvellous encounter took place between Karna and the son of Pandu resembling that between two wild elephants for the sake of a she-elephant in the time of her passion.

61. Then that mighty bowman Partha, witnessing the prowess of Karna, speedily cut off that part of his bow at which it is grasped.

62. (And) that scorcher of (his) foes (i.e. Dhananjaya) sent his horses to the abode of Yama with broad headed shafts and severed the head of his charioteer from the body.

63. Then Partha, the son of Pandu pierced that one (i.e. Karna) deprived of his steeds and driver and whose bow was cut off with four arrows.

64. Afflicted with (Arjuna's) darts, that most exalted of men hastily jumped down from his steedless car and got up to the car of Kripa.

65. O best of the Bharatas, witnessing the defeat of the son of Radha, your partizans, (already) mangled by the shafts of Dhananjaya ran away in ten directions.

66. Beholding that they were running away King Duryodhana himself rallied them and spoke these words.

67. "Heroes, do not take to flight! O best of the Kshatriyas, stay! I am myself going against Partha in order to slay him in battle.

68. I will myself destroy Partha together with the Panchalas assembled (under his banners). In the battle that I will to-day fight with the wielder of Gandiva,

69. The sons of Pritha will behold my prowess resembiing that of the destroyer at the end of a Yuga. To day the arrowy showers that I will discharge by thousands,

70. In battle, will be seen by the sons of Pritha to resemble (thick) flights of locusts. To day, when wielding my bow, I will continue to rain down arrows,

71. My soldiers will behold me like a cloud discharging torrents of rain at the end of the summer. To day I will, by means of straight arrows, conquer the sons of Pritha.

72. Brave warriors, stay in battle. Shake off your fear of Phalguni. Encountering my prowess, Phalguni will not be able to stand it,

73. As the ocean, the abode of the Makaras reaching the point between the high and the low tide-marks, is unable to get beyond it." Saying this, the king, surrounded by a mighty army, marched,

74. Furiously with his eyes reddened in wrath, against Phalguni. Seeing that mighty-armed one advance (against Arjuna), the son of Saradwatta (i.e. Kripa),

75. Approaching Aswathama said these words:—"This mighty-armed king, under the influence of rage and insensible with ire

76. Resorting to the practices of the insects, (which heedless of danger rush into fire) is desiring to fight with Arjuna (heedless of his life). Prevent the Kourava king (from doing this) before he sacrifices his life in our very sight by encountering Partha in battle. So long as he does not present himself within the range of Kiriti's shafts,

78—79. The heroic Kourava king can only remain alive in battle. Prevent the king (from taking this rash step) before he is burnt to ashes by the dreadful arrows of Partha looking like snakes that have just cast off their sloughs. It looks very improper, O giver of honours, that when we are here,

80—81. The king will go in person to fight in battle like one having no support. I think it will be (as) greatly difficult for Kourava king to escape with life while fighting with Kiriti in battle, as it is in the case of an elephant (fighting with) a tiger." Thus addressed by his maternal uncle, the son of Drona, who was the foremost of those that could wield weapons,

82. Quickly approaching Duryodhana, said these words:—"O son of Gandhari so long as I am alive, it is not proper for you to fight,

83. Disregarding me who am always devoted to your welfare. O Kourava king, you need at all be anxious for vanquishing Partha. I will myself check Partha. Stay (here), O Sujodhona."

Duryodhana said:—

84. The protector protects the sons of Pandu as if they were his own children. You also never manage in right earnest with my enemies.

85. It is either owing to my ill luck or owing to your desire to do good to the Dharmaraj that your prowess diminishes in battle, though I do not know what is the true cause.

86. Fie on my avaricious self on whose account all the friends, solicitous of my welfare, are, being vanquished (in battle), now experiencing great misery.

87. What person is there, O son of Goutama's daughter, who though capable yet would not destroy my enemies, besides you that are the foremost of those that weild weapons and are equal to Maheswara himself in battle.

88. O Aswathama, be gratified. Destroy my enemies. Neither the celestials nor the Danavas are capable of staying within the range of your weapons.

89. O Drona's son, destroy the Panchalas as well as the Somakas together with all their followers. Protected by you we shall slay the rest.

90. Look, O Brahmana, the Somakas and the renowned Panchalas are ranging furiously amidst my troops like a forest fire.

91. O mighty-armed and most excellent of men, check (the career of) these and also of the Kaikayas, before, they, backed up as they are by Kiriti, destroy (all our forces).

92. Aswathama, O chastiser of foes march (against them) speedily. Earlier or later this task should be accomplished by you, O Brahmana.

93. As, O mighty-armed one, you have sprung into existence in order to slay the Panchalas, you will surely, exerting your

utmost, make the earth devoid of the Panchalas.

94. It will surely come to pass as the worshipful sages who have attained (ascetic) success have said this. Therefore O most valiant of men, destroy the Panchalas together with their followers.

95. Not to speak of the sons of Pritha together with the Panchalas, even the very celestials together with their allies cannot stand within the range of your weapon. I speak this truly.

96. I will tell you truly, O hero, that the Pandavas together with the Somakas, are incapable of fighting with you, even though they put forth their (utmost energy.

97. O mighty-armed one, go, go. Do not waste time. Your forces, afflicted with Partha's shafts, are taking to flight.

98. O mighty-armed one, O bestower of honours, you are (no doubt) capable, by virtue of your own celestial energy, of chastising the sons of Pandavas as well as the Panchalas.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-nineth chapter the address of Duryodhona in the Ghatotkacha-Badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLX.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus addressed by Duryodhana, the son of Drona, invincible in battle, tried to destroy the enemies like Indra the Daytas.

2. (And) that mighty-armed one said these words to your son. O Kourava of mighty-arms, what you have said is indeed true.

3. The sons of Pandu are always dear to me as well as to my father. Similarly, we too also are dear to them. But this is otherwise in battle.

4. O affectionate one, putting forth our (utmost) strength we engage in fight dauntlessly regardless of our very lives. Myself Karna, Salya, Kripa and the son of Hridika *i. e.*, Kritavarma,

5. Can destroy the army of the Pandavas, O most excellent of kings, in the twinkling of an eye. And O best of the Kurus, O mighty armed one, they too can destroy the army of the Kouravas within the twinkling of an eye, if we are not present in battle. We are fighting with the Pandavas putting forth our utmost prowess and they too are battling with us to the best of their might.

7. (Therefore) one energy encountering the other is neutralising (each other). O Bharata. (We are) incapable of putting down the Pandava's army by force,

8. So long as the sons of Pandu are alive. What I tell you is true. The sons of Pandu are fighting for their own sake and they are very competent also.

9. Why will not they, therefore, destroy your troops, O Bharata? O descendant of Kuru, O king, you are most avaricious, deceitful

10. Self-conceited and suspicious of everybody. It is for this reason that you suspect ourselves too. O king, I deem you are a mean, wicked-souled and sinful person.

11. As you are mean and your thoughts are sinful you suspect ourselves and others. (However) for your sake, regardless of my very life I will do my best.

12. O foremost of Kurus, I am now going to fight for your sake. I will engage with your foes and destroy a large number of your enemies.

13. In order to do what is agreeable to you, O chastiser of foes, I will fight with the Panchalas, the Somakas as well as with the Kaikeyas and the Pandavas, in battle.

14. To-day the Chedis, the Panchalas and the Somakas, scorched with my darts, like cows afflicted by a lion, will fly on all sides.

15. Witnessing my prowess to-day, king (Yudhisthira), the son of Dharma, together with the Somakas, will deem the whole world full of Aswathamas.

16. Beholding the destruction of the Panchalas as well as of the Somakas in battle, Yudhisthira, the lord of Dharma, will experience a great pain.

17. O Bharata, I will destroy all those that will confront me in battle. O hero, afflicted with the prowess of my arms no one shall escape.

18. Having thus addressed your son Duryodhana, that one, possessed of mighy-arms (*i.e.*, Aswathama), distressing all bow men, proceeded to battle.

19. (And) that foremost of those that bear life was desirous of doing what was agreeable to your sons. Then the son of Goutama's daughter said thus to the Panchalas together with the Kaikeyas,

20. "All of you, O mighty car-warriors, strike me in the body and displaying your

dexterity in handling weapons engage in battle with calmness."

21. Thus addressed (by Aswathama), all of them, O great monarch, began to discharge showers of weapons upon the son of Drona as clouds pour down showers of rain.

22. Having destroyed those (showers of weapons), the son of Drona, even in the very presence of the sons of Pandu and in that of Dhristadyumna, slew ten (warriors) among them in battle, O lord.

23. Sore oppressed in battle, the Panchalas and the Somakas, abandoning the son of Drona, took to flight in ten directions.

24. Witnessing the flight of those heroes that is, the Panchalas and the Somakas, Dhristadyumna, O great king, rushed against the son of Drona in that battle.

25. Then surrounded by one hundred heroic and unretreating car-warriors riding on cars adorned with gold and the rattle of which resembled the roar of clouds full of rain,

26. That great car-warrior, Dhristadyumna, the son of the king of Panchala, beholding the carnage of his warriors, said these words to the son of Drona.

27. O son of the preceptor, O you that are possessed of wicked understanding, why are you slaughtering the common soldiers? If you are (really) a hero, then fight with me in battle.

28—30. I will (surely) slay you. Now stay (here) and be quiet." The puissant Dhristadyumna, then, struck the son of the preceptor with keen and highly dreadful arrows capable of piercing the vital parts. (And) those thick flights of arrows, moving swiftly, furnished with golden wings, having keen points, and capable of riving all the parts of the body, pierced (through the body of) the son of Drona like maddened black-bees seeking for honey—entering into a flowering tree.

31. The proud and dauntless son of Drona, (thus) deeply pierced (with Dhristadyumna's arrows) became as enraged as a serpent crushed by foot, and (then), arrow in hand, thus said :—

32. O Dhristadyumna, wait a moment quietly before I send "you to the abode of Yama with sharpened darts."

33. Having thus addressed the son of Prishata, the son of Drona, the slayer of hostile heroes, like one endued with great nimbleness of hand, covered him completely with deluges of arrows.

34. Thus covered (with arrows) in that battle by the son of Drona, the son of the Panchala king, invincible in battle, thundered forth these words to the son of Drona.

35. O Brahmana, you are neither aware of my promise nor of my origin. Of wicked understanding as you are, I will slay you after killing Drona.

36. I will not therefore slay you to-day in battle, since Drona is alive. O man of greatly vicious understanding, at the expiration of this night, when the bright dawn will appear,

37. I will (first) slay your father and then send yourself too, in battle, to the abode of the departed spirits. I cherish this (thought) in my mind.

38. Now assuming a quiet attitude show all your hatred towards the sons of Pritha and your devotion towards the Kouravas. You will not escape alive (from me).

39. That twice-born one, who giving up the practices of the Brahmanas, gives himself up to the practices of the Kshaytrias, deserves to be slain by all the Kshaytrias like you, O vilest of men."

40. That foremost of the twice-born ones (*i.e.* Asvathama), thus addressed in harsh words by the son of Prishata, became terribly excited with wrath and said (to Dhristadyumna) "wait, wait."

41. (And) as if to burn the son of Prishata with his eyes, he gazed at him. Heaving sighs like a snake he covered (Dhristadyumna with arrows) in that battle.

42. (Though) that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Prishata, who was surrounded by all the Panchala troops, was (thus) struck with arrows by the son of Drona in that battle,

43. (Yet) that mighty-armed one did not tremble; (but) resorting to his own prowess discharged at Asvathama numerous arrows.

44. Those two (warriors), who resisted each other, baffled the arrowy showers of each other and could not tolerate each other, were engaged in the game of battle in which the wager was life itself.

45—46. Those two mighty weilders of bow poured down showers of arrows on all sides. Beholding the fight between the son of Drona and that of Prishata which was awe-inspiring and dreadful to look at, the Siddhas, the Charanas and the (other) sky-ranging creatures highly extolled them. Filling the firmament and (all) the directions with a downpour of arrows,

47. And creating a great darkness with the shafts, they fought with one another unobserved (by other combatants). As if

dancing in battle, and drawing their bows to circles,

48. And bent on killing each other and filling all the creatures with consternation, those two mighty-armed (heroes) fought admirably and with (great nimbleness and dexterity.

49. (And they) were highly adored by thousands of foremost of warriors in battle. Seeing them engaged in battle like two wild elephants (encountering each other) in the forest,

50. Both the armies experienced a great delight. The sodiers emitted forth roars like lions and blew their conches,

51. And sounded hundreds and thousands of musical instruments. And in that terrific battle enhancing the terror of the coward,

52—53. The encounter (between the sons of Drona and Prishata) seemed to go on equally for a moment only. Then O mighty monarch, the son of Drona, cutting off the bow, the standard, the umbrella, the two Parshni drivers, the charioteer and the four steeds of the high-souled son of Prishata in battle, rushed against him.

54. And that one, of immeasurable soul, began to afflict all those Panchalas in hundreds and thousands with his straight-coursing arrows.

55. Then the army of the Pandavas, beholding that brilliant exploit, resembling that of Vasava, achieved by the son of Drona in battle, became greatly dejected, O the most exalted of the Bharatas.

56. Destroying one hundred mighty car-warriors of the Panchalas with a hundred arrows and slaying three foremost of (their) men with three sharpened arrows

57. In the very presence of Phalguna and of the son of Drupada, the son of Drona slaughtered all those Panchalas who had confronted him.

58. Thus slaughtered in battle, the Panchalas together with the Srinjayas fled from the son of Drona, on their cars with their standards cut down.

59. Having defeated his enemies in battle, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Drona, began to send forth thundering roars like those of the clouds at the end of summer.

60. Having destroyed numerous heroes, Asvathama shone like the fire at the end of a Yuga after having consumed all the creatures.

61. Highly adored by the Kouravas after having vanquished thousands of enemies in battle, the puissant son of Drona shone like the lord of the celestials himself after the destruction of his foes.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixtieth chapter the prowess of Asvathama, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXI.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O great monarch, king Yudhisthira and Bhimasena the son of Pandu hemmed in the son of Drona on all sides.

2. King Duryodhana, then, accompanied by the son Bharadwaj, advanced against the Pandavas in battle. Then commenced a fight,

3. Terrible to look at, highly dreadful and increasing the terror of the cowards. Large numbers of the Ambhastas, the Malavas the Vangas, the Sivis, and the Trigartas,

4—5. Were wrathfully sent by Yudhisthira to the region of Death. Cutting off (into pieces) the Abhisahas, the Surasenas and (other) Kshatrtyas invincible in battle Bhima made the earth muddy with blood. (And) O king the Yaudheyas, the mountaineers, the Madrakas and the Malavas,

6. Were sent by the diadem-decked Shetavahana to the domains of Death. Deeply pierced with straight-coursing arrows,

8. The tuskers dropped (dead) on the ground like mountain peaks, with the chopped off trunks of elephants, still moving to and fro (in convulsions).

8. The earth, being strewn all over, seemed to be full of snakes moving about, with the fallen royal umbrellas decked with gold.

9. The field, being scattered all over looked (beautiful) like the firmament studded with (innumerable) suns, moons and stars at the end of a Yuga. "Slay, strike dauntlessly, pierce and cut to pieces"—

10. These (and similar other) tumultuous uproars arose near the car of Sonasva (*i. e.* Drona). Getting terribly enraged, Drona also, by means of Vayaveya weapon, in that encounter,

11. Began, like a furious hurricane (chasing away) the clouds, to destroy his ene-

mies. (Thus slaughtered by Drona, the Panchalas fled away from terror,

12. In the very presence of Bhimasena and of the high-souled Partha. (Then) that one who wore a coronet (*i. e.* Arjuna and Bhimsena, rallying (their troops) all on a sudden,

13. Attacked the large army (of Drona) with a mighty car force. Vivatsu attacking the right and Vrikodara the left flank (of Drona's army)

14. They rained upon the son of Bharadwaj two mighty downpours of arrows. Then the Srinjayas, and those great car-warriors, the Panchalas,

15. And the Matsyas together with the Somakas followed. In like manner, (many) car-warriors, who wore (efficient) smiters on the side of your son,

16. (Followed) by a vast army, O king, proceeded towards the car of Drona. Then that Bharata army slaughtered by Kiriti (*i. e.* Arjuna who wore a coronet),

17. (Overcome) with sleep and bewildered) by darkness began once more to disperse. In spite of (the endeavours of) Drona and your son himself to prevent (their filght),

18. They were unable to rally the combatants, O mighty monarch. That vast army, slaughtered with arrows by the son of Pandu,

19. Took to flight in all directions when the world was enveloped in darkness. Hundreds of kings, leaving their conveyances, fled away, O great monarch, in terror, on all sides.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-first chapter, the close engagement, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXII

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing Somadatta angrily shake his great bow, Satyaki said to his charioteer "Bear me towards Somadatta.

2. O charioteer, I will not return from battle to-day without killing my enemy —the vilest of the Kurus, the son of Valhika. These my words are true."

3. Thereupon, (his) charioteer drove to the battle those horses of Sindhu breed endowed with great fleetness, having the colour of the conch and capable of bearing all the weapons.

4. Those (steeds), fleet as the mind or the wind, carried Yuyudhana (to the field of battle) as the horses of Indra, O king, had, in days of yore, born him who was preparing to slay the Asuras.

5. Beholding Sattwata quickly proceed against him to battle, Somadatta, O mighty monarch, confronted him undauntedly.

6. Discharging a shower of arrows as the clouds (pour down) torrents of rain, he (*i. e.* Somadatta) covered the grandson of Sini like the clouds (covering the sun).

7. O best of the Bharatas, the dauntless Satyaki also completely covered that most exalted of the Kurus with arrowy showers in that battle.

8. Somadatta also pierced the descendant of Madhu in the chest with sixty arrows. Satyaki too, O king, pierced him with keen darts.

9. Pierced by each other with each other's arrows, they looked like two blossoming Kinsuka trees in the following season.

10. With their bodies covered all over with blood, those two renowned descendants of Kuru and Vrishni eyed at each other as if (desirous of) consuming each other with their glances.

11. Those two dreadful-looking grinder of foes ranging on their cars coursing in circles, looked like two clouds pouring (torrents of) rain.

12. With their bodies pierced, mangled and wounded with shafts, they looked, O king of kings, like two hedge hogs.

13. Pierced with shafts endued with golden wings, those two (heroes), O monarch, looked as (beautiful) two lords of the forest covered with glow-worms during the rainy season.

14. Their bodies looking resplendent with arrows (they were pierced with) those two great car-warriors appeared in that battle, like two furious elephants with their bodies covered all over with (blazing) meteors.

15. Then, O great monarch, in that encounter, the mighty car-warrior Somadatta cut off with a cresent-shaped arrow the great bow of the descendant of Madhu.

16. (He) then pierced him with twenty five darts and at that time when speed was (urgently) necessary, he again speedily pierced him with ten (more) arrows.

17. Thereupon Satyaki, taking up a very strong bow, speedily pierced Somadatta with five arrows.

18. Then again, O king, Satyaki, as if with a smile in that battle, cut down with another broad-headed shaft the golden standard of the son of Valhika.

19. Seeing his standard cut down Somadatta fearlessly pierced the grandson of Sini with twenty-five arrows.

20. Filled with wrath, Satyaki also, in that engagement, cut off with a keen and razor-faced shaft, the bow of the (great) bowman Somadatta.

21. He then, O great king, pierced him (*i. e.* Somadatta), who then looked like a snake with its fangs broken, with one hundred straight-coursing arrows furnished with golden wings.

22. Thereupon the greatly puissant Somadatta,—the great car-warrior, taking up another bow, covered Satyaki with downpours of shafts.

23. Satyaki also, getting greatly excited with wrath, pierced Somadatta in that battle. Somadatta, on his part, afflicted Satyaki with showers of arrows.

24. Bhima also, for the sake of Sattata, struck the son of Valhlka with ten arrows. And the dauntless Somadatta also pierced Bhima with sharpened arrows.

25. Thereupon Satyaki, excited with wrath, discharged at the chest of Somadatta, a new, strong and formidable Parigha furnished with a golden handle.

26. (But the descendant of Kuru), as if with a smile, cut off into two parts, in that engagement, that dreadful-looking Parigha as it was advancing against him.

27. Thus severed into two parts, that great Parigha of iron, fell down (on the ground) like the great peak of a mountain riven by thunder.

28. Then, in that engagement, O king, Satyki cut off the bow of Somadatta with one broad-headed arrow and with another five the leathern case that sheathed his fingers.

29. Then with four darts he speedily sent before the lord of the departed spirit the four excellent horses (of Somadatta).

30. And, O Bharata, that foremost of car-warriors, as if with a smile, cut off, with a broad-headed and straight-coursing arrow, the head of his charioteer from the trunk.

31. He then discharged (at Somadatta himself) a highly dreadful arrow, blazing like the fire, furnished with golden wings, bathed in oil and sharpened on stone.

32. Shot with great force by the grandson of Sini that excellent and formidable shaft, darted like a falcon, at the chest of Somadatta.

33. The great car-warrior Somadatta, deeply pierced by the puissant Satwata, fell down (from his car) and died, O great king.

34. Seeing Somadatta slain there, your soldiers proceeded against Yuyudhana with a large number of cars.

35. The Pandavas also, O mighty monarch, accompanied by all the Prabhadrakas, and by a large army, made a rush upon Drona's division.

36. Then, Yudhisthira, filled with rage, began to crush the troops of the son of Bharadwaja with arrows in the very presence of Bharadwaja's son.

37. Seeing his troops put to rout by Yudhisthira, Drona, with eyes, blood-shot in wrath, furiously rushed against him.

38. Then, (Drona) pierced the son of Pritha with seven sharpened darts. Yudhisthira also, inflamed with rage, pierced him in return with five (arrows).

39. That mighty bowman, being (thus) deeply pierced, for a moment licked the corners of his mouth, and (then) cut off the standard and also the bow of Yudhisthira.

40. Deprived of his bow, that excellent king took up another tough and strong bow, with great speed when speed was highly necessary.

41. Then with a thousand shafts, the son of Pandu pierced Drona together with his horses, charioteer, standard and car and this (feat on the part of Yudhisthira) seemed marvellous.

42. In consequence of the strokes of those darts, Drona, the foremost of the Brahmanas, being (greatly) pained, sank unconciously for a moment on the terrace of his car.

43. Then regaining his consciousness, heaving sighs like a snake, and excited with a terrible wrath, he brought into existence the weapon presided over by Vayu.

44. But the dauntless and puissant son of Pritha, in that fight taking up his bow, checked the career of that weapon with one of his own.

45. And the son of Pandu also cut off the large bow of that Brahmana. Drona, the grinder of the Kshatriyas then, having taken up another bow,

46. The best of the Kurus cut off that also with a keen and broad-headed shaft, Then Vasudeva, addressed Yudhisthira, the son of Kunti, thus :—

47. "O mighty armed Yudhisthira, hear what I tell you. O foremost of the Bharatas, do not fight with Drona,

48. Drona has been all along trying to capture you in battle. I do not think it proper for you to fight with him.

49. He, that has been created for his destruction, will slay him. Leaving your preceptor go (to the spot) where king Suyodhana is (fighting).

50. Kings ought to fight with kings (only); and they should not desire to fight with those that are not kings. O son of Kunti, surrounded by elephants, horses and cars, go to that spot,

51. Where Dhananjaya and that most valiant of men, Bhima, with myself only to help them are fighting with (all) the Kouravas."

52—53. Hearing these words of Vasudeva, the virtuous king Yudhisthira reflected for a moment and then proceeded towards the spot where the battle was raging hot and furious and where, Bhima, the slayer of his foes, taking up his station, was destroying your warriors like the (grim) Destroyer with gaping mouth.

54. Ringing the surface of the earth with the thundering rattle of his car like the roar of the clouds at the end of summer, that king of kings, Yudhisthira,

55. The son of Pandu, took up his station at the flank of Bhima who was destroying the foes. Drona also began, at that night, to destroy his enemies, the Panchalas.

Thus ends the one hundred and fifty-second chapter, the slaughter of Somadatta at the nocturnal fight, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAKTER CLXIII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. That terrible and awe-inspiring battle having taken place when the world was enveloped with darkness and dust, O lord of the earth,

2. The warriors, who remained (on the field of battle) could not distinguish one another. It was by conjecture and uttering their names that those foremost of the Kshatriyas fought with one another.

3. When that terrible destruction of men, horses, elephants and foot-soldiers was going on, those heroes *viz.*, Drona, Karna, Kripa, Bhima, the son of Prishata and Satwata,

4. Began, O best of the Bharatas, to afflict each other and the troops. The soldiers, (thus) terribly slaughtered by those great car-warriors,

5. And surrounded by that dense gloom, took to flight in all directions. And with their minds (greatly) agitated (with terror) they ran away on all sides.

6. And, O great king, while flying away in all directions they were (pursued) and killed. In that engagement thousands of great car-warriors slaughtered one another.

7. (And) in that blinding darkness, (the soldiers) lost their senses. (All this is no doubt due to) the evil counsels of your son. And that (dismal) darkness prevailing all around, all the creatures, nay the very foremost of the combatants themselves, O Bharata, were seized with terror and their senses forsook them, O Bharata in that battle.

Dhritarastra said :—

8. When drowned in that blinding darkness you were agitated by the Pandavas and were deprived of your energy, what became the state of your minds ?

9. When the world was thus enveloped with darkness, how, O Sanjaya, their and my armies were disclosed to view again !

Sanjaya said :—

10. Then all the survivors of the slaughtered army (of the Kurus) were, in obedience to the order of their commanders, again drawn up in battle array.

11. And Drona (took his station) at the van, Salya at the rear and the sons of Drona and Suvala (respectively placed themselves) at the right and left flanks (of that array). And king (Duryodhana) himself, O monarch, was, during that night, engaged in protecting all the troops.

12. (And) consoling all the foot-soldiers and also the lords of the earth, Duryodhana said to them "leaving aside your great weapons, take in hand blazing lamps."

13. In obedience to the command of that foremost of kings they gladly took (burning) lamps, in their hands. Large numbers of celestials, sages, Gandharvas and Rishis and hosts of Vidyadharas, Apsaras,

14. Nagas, Yakshas, Uragas and Kinnaras, stationed in the firmament, cheerfully took up lamps. Lamps, filled with perfumed oil, were seen to fall from (the lands of) the regents of the cardinal points.

15. Specially Narada and Parvata sent down for the sake of the foremost of the

Kurus many such lamps, dispelling the darkness. On that night, the army (of the Kurus) looked brilliant by virtue of the lusture of these) lamps,

16. The precious ornaments (worn by the combatans) and of the blazing celestial weapons that were hurled (by the Kourava army against their enemies). Five lamps were placed on each car and three on each maddened elephant.

17. Upon each horse (was placed) a huge lamp. It was in this way that the Kuru warriors were illuminated. The lamps, being thus placed in due order, very soon lighted up your army.

18. Nay, all the troops thus disclosed to view by the foot-soldiers carrying oilified lamps in their hands, looked as brilliant as the clouds in the firmament during the night with flashes of lightning (playing amidst them).

19. When the army was thus lighted up, Drona, like the fire, scorching everything around, looked resplendent, O king of kings, with his golden armour on, like the mid-day sun of blazing rays.

20. The lusture of the lamps (falling upon the golden ornaments) the bright cuirasses and bow, and the will-tempered weapons, was reflected from them.

21 The rays (of these lamps) falling upon maces entwined with strings, bright Parighas, cars and darts as they whirled along, created innumerable lamps.

22. O king, umbrellas and yak-tails and scimitars and flaming brands and necklaces of gold as they were being whirled looked exceedingly brilliant.

23. And, O king, that army illuminated by the lusture of the weapons, by the splendour of those lamps and by the brilliancy of the ornaments, looked highly resplendent.

24. Well-tempered and beautiful weapons dyed with blood and wielded by the warriors shed a blazing lusture like flashes of lightning in the firmament at the end of the hot season.

25. The faces, of the combâtants who were trembling by the impetuosity of their speed and rushing furiously against their enemies striking them down, shone at that time like great lotuses shaken by the wind.

26. On that dreadful night that army blazed up (by the light of those lamps) looked as terrible as the splendour of the sun during the progress of the conflagration of a great forest teeming with trees.

27. Seeing our army (thus) lighted up, the sons of Pritha urging all their foot-soldiers through their entire army, acted in the same way (as we did).

28. (And they) placed seven lamps on each elephant, ten on each car, two on the back of every horse and many on the flank and rear and the standards.

29. (Innumerable) blazing lamps were placed on the flanks and the rear and the van of and within and all around the entire army. Thus were the two hosts lighted up.

30. Through the entire army, the infantry became mixed up with throngs of elephants, cars and horses. And like them (*i.e.* the foot-soldiers) several other persons, also taking flaming brands in their hands, lighted up the army of the son of Pandu.

31. By virtue of (the lusture of) those lamps that army became fiercely blazed up like a blazing fire made fiercely illuminated by the rays of the sun, the maker of day.

32. The splendour of those two (armies) reaching beyond the earth, the firmament and all the cardinal points began to increase. By that light their army as well as yours became crearly disclosed to view.

33. All the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the gods, the Siddhas, and the Apsaras, awakened by that light which reached the skies, appeared on the scene.

34. The field of battle, thronged with the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the Siddhas, the Apsaras and the spirits of the dead combatants about to enter the celestiels regions, appeared like a second heaven.

35. Crowded with cars, horses and elephants lighted up by these lamps and (teeming with) furious warriors and steeds slain or careering madly, that mighty host, consisting of men, horses and elephants drawn up in battle·array, looked like the arrays of the celestials and the Asuras (in days of yore).

36. That nocturnal battle between the god-like combatants raged furiously like a tempest. The rush of arrows formed its fierce winds, the mighty car-warriors and elephants its clouds, the shafts its showers and the blood (of the combatants and the animals) its torrent of rain.

37. In that encounter that foremost of the Brahmanas, the magnanimous (Drona) endued with the energy of a great fire began to afflict the Pandavas like the noon day sun, (scorching everything) at the end of the rainy season.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixty-third chapter, the lighting up of the troops, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXIV.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. The field of battle, which had been before buried in darkness and dust, being thus lighted up (by the lusture of those lamps), heroic combatants, desirous of slayingone another, encountered one another (in battle).

2. Taking up their lances, swords and (other) weapons and encountering one another, they looked wrathfully at one another in battle, O king.

3. With thousands of lamps shedding their lusture all around, and placed upon golden steeds adorned with gems and fed with fragrant oil,

4. And with the lamps sent down by the celestials and the Gandharvas which were more lustrous and brilliant, the field of battle, O Bharata, looked as beautiful as the firmament studded with planets and stars.

5. The field of battle, lighted up by hundreds of blazing brands, looked resplendent. Indeed, the earth seemed to be on fire like what happens at the time of universal destruction.

6. All the points illuminated by (the light of) those lamps all around, looked (beautiful) like trees teeming with glow-worms on an evening of the rainy season.

7. Then, O monarch, brave warriors engaged with brave warriors. Elephants encountered elephants, horsemen (encountered) horsemen,

8. And car-warriors joyfully engaged with one another, during the dreadfull night at the command of your son.

9. Terrific, (indeed) was the clash of the two armies, (each) consisting of four (kinds of) forces. Then, O great king, Arjuna, vanquishing all the kings (on your son's side), began quickly to destroy the army of the Kouravas.

Dhritarastra said :—

10. What, (O Sanjaya) became the state of your minds when, filled with rage, the invincinble one (*i.e.* Arjuna) entered into my son's army ?

11. What did (my) forces do then when that sorcher of foes penetrated into them ? (And) what course, (best) suited to that occasion, did Duryodhana think to adopt ?

12. What chastisers of foes opposed (the career of) that hero ? Who were they that protected Drona when Shetavahana entered (into our army) ?

13. Who were they that protected the right and the left car-wheels of Drona ? Who were those heroes that protected the rear of that hero when he was engaged in fighting ?

14—15. Indeed, when that invincible, puissant and mighty bowman, endued with the valour of a tiger, penetrated into the midst of the Panchalas, dancing as it were along the track of his car, and destroying his enemies in battle, who were they that came to his front ? How did Drona who consumed large troops of cars of the Panchalas,

16. Like a wrathful meteor, meet with his death ? You always describe my enemies as cool, unvanquished,

17. Cheerful and impetuous in battle. But, O Sanjaya, you do not speak so of my warriors. You speak of them as slain, pale and routed and of my car-warriors as (always) made car-less in the battles ?

Sanjaya said :—

18. Aware of the intentions of Drona as desirous of fighting during that night, Duryodhana, O mighty monarch, addressed his obedient brothers,

19. (Namely) Vikarna, Ctitrasena, Suparsa, Duddharsha and Dirghavahu and all their followers saying :—

20. " O powerful (heroes), all of you carefully protect Drona from the rear. Let the son of Hridika (protect) his right car-wheel and Salya the left.

21. Then your son commanded all the survivors of the heroic Trigarta warriors to place themselves in the van (saying),

22. The preceptor is of benevolent dispositon and the Pandavas are trying their utmost (to slay him). United together you will protect him while he will be engaged in destroying his enemies in battle.

23. Drona is powerful in battle, is endued with nimbleness of hand and is puissant. Not to speak of Pandavas united with the Somakas, he is competent to vanquish even the very gods in battle.

24. United tagether and exerting your very best in (this) dreadful engagement, all of you protect Drona from that invincible and mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna.

25. I do not find any one among the warriors of the Pandavas except Dhristadyumna, that is capable of defeating Drona in battle.

25. I therefore think we should apply our whole heart and soul to the protection of the

son of Bharadwaja. (If) protected (by us) he will gradually destroy the Somakas as well as the Srinjayas.

27. When all the Srinjayas, (placed) in the van of the (Pandava) army will be destroyed, the son of Drona will undoubtedly slay Dhristadyumna in battle.

28. Similarly the great car-warrior Karna will vanquish Arjuna in battle. (And) I will myself destroy Bhimasena and others clad in mail in battle.

29. The remaining Pandavas, destitute of energy, will be easily subjugated by (my) warriors. My success, then, will last for a long time.

30. Therefore protect (carefully) the mighty car-warrior Drona in battle. " Thus addressing (his soldiers), your son Duryodhana, O foremost of the descendants of Bharata,

31. Then commanded his army (to act in obedience to his orders) during that dreadfully dark night. Then, O most exalted of the Bharatas, took place a battle.

32. Between the two armies, both desirous of victory, O king, Arjuna, (then), began to sorely assail the army of the Kouravas and Arjuna, with numerous (sorts of) weapons. (And) in that engagement the son of Drona began to cover the Panchala king and the son of Bharadwaja, the Srinjayas, with straight arrows. (And) O Bharata, as the armies of the Pandavas and the Panchalas (on one side) and that of the Kouravas (on the other),

35. Fell to destroying one another there arose a dreadful uproar. Neither ourselves nor those who preceded us, had (previously) witnessed such a furious and dreadful battle as took place during that night.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixty-fourth chapter the close fight, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXV.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA.—

Continued

Sanjaya said :—

1. When, O lord of the earth, that terrific nocturnal battle, destructive of all the creatures, was raging, Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma,

2. Spoke to the (other) Pandavas and the united Panchalas and Somakas, O monarch, for the destruction of men, cars and elephants.

3. Yudhisthira, the lord of men, addressed his own warriors (thus):—"make a rush upon Drona only in order to slay him."

4. In obedience to the commands of the king, the Panchalas as well as the Somakas O monarch, sending forth thundering roars, rushed against Drona alone.

5. We two, on our part, roaring in return and filled with wrath, rushed against them, in battle, to the full measure of our prowess, enthusiasm and courage.

6. Kritavarman, the son of Hridika, rushed against Yudhisthira as he was advancing against Drona like a mad elephant against its infuriate rival.

7. (Similarly), O king, Bhuri, the crusher (of his foes) in battle who belonged to the Kuru party rushed against the grandson of Cini (as he came forward) scattering showers of arrow on all sides.

8. Again, O king, Karna, the son of Vikartana, checked that mighty car-warrior Shahadeva, the son of Pandu, as he, actuated with the desire of taking Drona, was advancing (against him).

9. Duryodhana himself rushed against Bhimsena, the foremost of car-warriors, in that engagement, who was advancing on his car (against Drona) like the grim Destroyer.

10. Sakuni, the son of Suvala, O king, quickly opposed Nakula, the best of warriors and skilled in every (sort of) battle.

11. Similarly, in that encounter, Kripa, the son of Saradwata, opposed Shikhandi, the foremost of car-warriors, (who was) advancing on his car, O king.

12. In like manner, O great monarch, Dusasana, with utmost exertions, checked Prativindhya, who was resolutely advancing (on his car drawn by) horses, (beautiful) as peacocks.

13. Similarly, O mighty monarch, Asvathama checked the career of the son of Bhimasena, *viz* the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha) skilled in a hundred sorts of illusions.

14. In that engagement Vrishasena resisted the highly puissant Drupada, (who) accompanied by his troops and retainers, (advanced forward) with the desire of slaying Drona.

15. O Bharata, O great monarch, the king of Madra, inflamed with rage, opposed Virata who was advancing quickly for slaying Drona.

16. Similarly, in that encounter, Chitrasena, with showers of arrows, checked the impetuous Sataneeka, the son of Nakula, as as he was advancing for the purpose of taking the life of Drona.

17. O great king, Alamvusha, the lord of the Rakshasas, resisted the rapid career of the mighty car-warrior Arjuna, the foremost of warriors.

18. Then Dhristadyumna, the son of the Panchala king, gladly resisted the mighty bowman Drona (who was) destroying his enemies.

19. Similarly, O king, your car-warriors energetically opposed other great car-warriors of the sons of Pandu, who were advancing (against Drona).

20. Hundreds and thousands of warriors, mounted on elephants, speedily encountering riders on elephants in that great engagement, began to fight with and crush one another.

21. O king, at dead of night, horses, rushing furiously against one another, looked like mountains endued with wings.

22. O mighty monarch, taking up lances, darts and swords in their hands and sending forth loud shouts, horsemen closed with horsemen.

23. There (on the field of battle) large numbers of men destroyed one another in heaps, by means of maces, short clubs and several other weapons.

24. Kritavarma, the son of Hridika, inflamed with rage, resisted Yudhisthtra, the son of Dharma, as the place between the high and the low tide-marks (resists) the ocean.

25. Yudhisthira, also piercing the son of Hridika with five darts and again piercing him with twenty (more), said—"wait, wait."

26. O worshipful sire, Kritavarma too, fired with rage, cut off the bow of the Dharmaraja with a broad-headed dart and then pierced him with five (arrows).

27. Then that mighty car-warrior, that is, the son of Dharma, taking up another bow, struck the son of Hridika on the arms and the chest with ten arrows.

28. Pierced in (that) battle by the son of Dharma, O worshipful sire, the descendant of Madhu (*i.e.* Kritavarma) trembled in ire and (then) afflicted (Yudhisthira) with seven arrows.

29. The son of Pritha (however), cutting off his bow and armlet, shot at him, O king, five keen and broad-headed shafts sharpened on stone.

30. Penetrating through his precious armour ornamented with gold, those fierce shafts entered into the earth like snakes (entering into) ant-hill.

31. Taking up another bow in the twinkling of an eye, he pierced the son of Pandu with six and again with ten arrows.

32. Then that Pandava, of immeasurable soul, placing his mighiy bow on the car, hurled at him (*i.e.* Kritavarman) a dart (fierce) as a snake.

33. Hurled by the son of Pandu that formidable (dart), ornamented with gold, penetrating through the right arm (of Kritavarma) entered into the bottom of the earth.

34. In the meantime, the son of Pritha, taking up his mighty bow, covered the son of Hridika with straight shafts.

35. Then there (on the field of battle) that hero, that foremost car-warrior among the Vrishnis, within half the time of the twinkling of an eye, deprived Yudhisthira of his horse, driver and car.

36. Then the eldest son of Pandu took up a sword and a shield. But the descendant of Madhu cut off those two with sharpened and broad headed shafts in that battle.

37. Thereupon, taking up a formidable lance furnished with a golden handle, (Yudhisthira) hurled it, quickly in that engagement, against the high-souled son of Hridika.

38. (But) the light-handed son of Hridika, as if with a smile, cut off into two parts, that (formidable lance), as it, hurled by the hand of Yudhisthira careered impetuously along.

39. Then, in that encounter, he covered the son of Dharma with hundreds of shafts; (and then), inflamed with ire he cut off the armour of (Yudhisthira) with showers of arrows.

40. Cut off into a hundred fragmentst with the arrows of the son of Hridika, (the armour of Yudhisthira) ornamented with gold, fell down, scattered in that battle, O monarch (from its body) like a cluster of stars (dropping from) the sky.

41. With his coat of mail cut off, deprived of his car and afflicted with the arrows of Kritavarma, Yudhisthira the son of Dharma, quickly withdrew from (the field of) battle,

42. Having defeated Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarma again engaged himself in protecting the car-wheel of Drona.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixty-fifth chapter, the retreat of Yudhisthira, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXVI.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Bhuri also, O monarch, in (that) engagement, checked the grandson of Sini who was rushing along like an elephant (descending) from a gradually sloping ground.

2. Inflamed with wrath, Satyaki, then, pierced him in the heart with five sharpened arrows. (Thus struck) his blood began to flow.

3. Similarly, the descendant of Kuru (*i. e.* Bhurij, in (that) engagement, quickly pierced the grandson of Sini invincible in battle, in the chest, with ten darts.

4. (And), O great king, their eyes blood-shot in rage and drawing their bows powerfully, those two (heroes) began to mangle each other.

5. Inflamed with wrath and looking like Death (itself) or the sun, those two (warriors commenced (to shower upon each other) terrible downpours of shafts, O mighty monarch.

6. The battle, O great king, between those two (heroes), who, covering each other (with arrows) stood (face to face) in (that) encounter, went on equally for a moment only.

7. Then, O mighty monarch, the grandson of Sini, fired with rage, cut off, as it were, with a smile, the bow of that high-souled descendant of Kuru, in (that) engagement.

8. Then he quickly pierced that (warrior) whose bow was cut off, in the chest, with nine sharpened arrows and said (to him) "wait, wait."

9. That scorcher of foes, (thus) deeply pierced by his powerful antagonist, took up another bow and pierced Satwata in return.

10. O lord of the earth, having pierced Satwata with three arrows, he cut off his bow, as it were, with a smile, by means of a very keen and broad-headed shaft.

11. O great king, his bow being (thus) cut off, Satyaki, insensible with wrath, hurled an impetuous dart at the broad chest of that (Kuru hero).

12. His body being riven by that dart, he fell down from his excellent car like the blazing Mars (dropping down) from the firmament.

13. The mighty car-warrior Ashwathama witnessing the slaughter of that hero, rushed impetuously, O descendant of Bharata, against the grandson of Sini.

14. O lord of men, saying "wait, wait" to Satyaki, he (*i. e.* Ashwathama,) covered him with downpours of arrows, like the clouds covering the breast of the (mountain) Meru with (showers of) rain.

15. (Thereupon), the mighty car-warrior Ghatotkacha, sending forth a loud shout, said to him (*i. e.* Asvathama) who was rushing furiously towards the car of the grandson of Sini.

16. "Wait, wait. O son of Drona, you shall not escape alive. I will presently destroy you as the six-faced (Kartikeya) slew the (Asura) Mahisha (in days of yore):

17. I will to-day put an end to your desire for fight on the field of battle." Saying this, the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha),—the slayer of hostile warriors—with his eyes red like copper in wrath,

18. And inflamed with rage, rushed against the son of Drona like a lion (rushing against) a lord of elephants. Ghatotkacha (then), began to shower arrows, measuring the Aksha of a car, upon

19—20. The son of Drona, the foremost of car-warriors as the clouds (pour down) showers of rain. The son of Drona, however, in that engagement, quickly baffled that arrowy down pour by means of shafts resembling poisonous snakes. Then with a hundred keen darts, capable of piercing the vital parts, and coursing rapidly,

21. (He) pierced the subduer of foes, that is Ghatotkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas. The Rakshasa, thus pierced with shafts by him on the field of battle,

22. Looked, O great monarch, like the porcupine with its quills standing erect. Thereupon, the puissant son of Bhimasena, excited with rage,

23—26. Lacerated the son of Drona with fierce shafts emitting loud roar like those of the thunder. (And Ghatotkacha) showered (upon Drona's son) numerous sorts of weapons, some having heads like razors, some of the form of the crescent, some long and pointed, some with faces like the frogs, some resembling the bear's ear, some barbed and some of other species. The son of Drona, (however), without his senses being in the least afflicted, frustrated that formidable down pour of weapons emitting loud roar like those of the thunder and which were being unremittingly hurled (upon him),—by means of (his own) dreadful shafts inspired with mantras peculiar to the celestial weapons, as, O mighty monarch, the wind (chases away) mighty masses of clouds. Then it appeared that another encounter

was going on in the firmament between the arrows (shot by those two rival heroes),

27. Which (encounter) was of terrible aspect and which, O great king, enhanced the joy of the combatants with the sparks scattering all around generated by the clash of weapons hurled by those two (warriors).

28. The firmament looked (as beautiful) as if adorned with glow-worms during the night. Covering all the directions with innumerable arrows, the son of Drona,

29. In order to do good to your sons, shrouded the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha). Then, between the son of Drona and the Rakshasa, again took place a battle,

30—32. During that pitchy-dark night, like that (which had taken place) between Sakra and Prahada (in days of yore). Then, in that engagement, Ghatotkacha, inflamed with wrath, struck the son of Drona in the chest with ten arrows resembling the yuga fire. The son of Drona, endued with great strength, (thus) deeply pierced in that encounter by the Rakshasa, became (greatly) afflicted and trembled like a tree shaken by the wind. Leaning against his flag-staff (for support), he fell into a swoon.

33. Thereupon all your forces, O lord of men, set up a loud wail. (And) all your partizans, O lord of the earth, thought him to be dead.

34. Seeing Asvathama in that state, the Panchalas as well as the Srinjyas, in that encounter, sent forth roars like lions.

35. Regaining his consciousness, that grinder of foes, the mighty car-warrior Asvathama, drawing powerfully his bow with the left hand,

36. Shot quickly from his bow, (the string of which was) stretched up to the very ear, an excellent arrow, formidable as the rod of Yama, which was aimed at Ghatotkacha.

37. Riving the heart of the Rakshasa that excellent and formidable arrow, adorned with graceful wings, pentrated, O king, into the earth.

38. O great monarch, the puissant lord of the Rakshasas, pierced home by the son of Drona, proud of (his feats in) battle, sat down on the terrace of his car.

39. Seeing that the son of Hidimva had lost his consciousness, his charioteer, struck with fear, hastily removed him from the field of battle and from the presence of the son of Drona.

40. Having, in that engagement, thus pierced Ghatototkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas, that great car-warrior, the son of Drona sent forth a highly dreadful roar.

41. O Bharata, adored by your sons and all the warriors, his body shone brilliantly like the noon-day sun.

42. King Duryodhana himself pierced with keen arrows Bhimasena who was fighting his way, through your army, towards the car of the son of Bharadwaja.

43. O Bharata, Bhimasena pierced him in return with nine darts. Duryodhana also pierced him with twenty arrows.

44. Those two (heroes), shrouded with arrows on the field of battle, looked like the sun and the moon covered with masses of clouds in the firmament.

45. Then king Duryodhana pierced Bhima, O foremost of the descendants of Bharata, with five arrows, and said (to him) "wait, wait."

46. But Bhima, cutting off his bow and his standard with sharpened arrows, pierced the lord of the Kouravas with nine straight darts.

47—48. Thereupon, O best of the Bharatas, excited with rage, Duryodhana took up another bow of a better quality and began to afflict Bhimasena (stationed) at the front (rank) of that battle with keen darts, in the very sight of all bowmen. Bhima, (however) destroying those arrows shot from Duryodhana's bow,

49—50. Oppressed him with five and twenty short arrows. Duryodhana also, O worshipful sire, inflamed with ire, cut off his bow with razor-shaped dart and then pierced him in return with ten (darts). Thereupon, the highly-powerful Bhimasena, taking up another bow,

51. Pierced quickly the king with seven sharpened arrows. But he (*i.e.* Duryodhana), displaying great nimbleness of hand, quickly cut off that bow also.

52—53. Similarly, O mighty monarch, he cut off the second, the third, the fourth and the fifth bows taken up by Bhima. And O great king, your son, desirous of success and swelling with pride, cut off another bow as soon as it was taken up by Bhima. His bows being thus again and again cut off (by Duryodhana), he *i. e.* Bhima.

54—55. In that engagement, hurled a formidable dart, made wholly of iron (at the Kourava king).—The king of the Kurus, (however), cut into three fragments that dart, before it could reach him, that dart blazing like a flame of fire, looking (terrible) like the sister of Death herself, and dividing the firmament with its fire like splendour into two parts like the tresses of a woman parting the hair of her head.—

56-58. In the very presence of all the world and before (the very eyes) of Bhima himself. Thereupon, O great king, Bhima, flourishing his heavy and blazing mace, hurled it with great impetuosity at the car of Duryodhana. Then, in that engagement that heavy mace, all on a sudden, crushed the charioteer, the horses and the car (of the king). O lord of kings, your son, then afraid of Bhima, took to flight,

59. Mounted on another car belonging to the high-souled Naduka. Then Bhima, thinking Suyodhana to be dead amid (the darkness of) that night,

60. Roared furiously like a lion challenging the Kouravas. Your partizans and soldiers also thought that the king was slain.

61. And all of them set up a loud wail all around. Hearing the lamentation of all the combatants struck with terror,

62. And hearing also the yells of the high-souled Bhima, O monarch, king Yudhisthira, also, considered Suyodhona to have been slain,

63. And hastened with all speed to the place where Vrikodara, the son of Pritha was. Then, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the Matsyas as well as the Keykeyas,

64. Desirous of slaying Drona, rushed with all their might (against him). There also took place a highly dreadful encounter between Drona and his enemies. And the combatants, (of both sides) buried in pitchy darkness, began to slaughter one another.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixty sixth chapter the retreat of Duryodhana, in the Ghatotkacha Badha of the Drona-Parva.

CHAPTER CLXVII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Karna, the son of Vikartana, O king, checked in battle the great car-warrior Shahadeva who was advancing with the desire of slaying Drona.

2. Shahadeva, also piercing the son of Radha with nine arrows, pierced him again in that encounter with nine straight (shafts).

3. Karna (also) pierced him in return with a hundred straight arrows and then with great light-handedness quickly cut off his stringed bow.

4. Thereupon the puissant son of Madri, taking up another bow, pierced Karna with twenty shafts and this appeared wonderful.

5. (Then) Karna, having destroyed his horses with straight shafts, quickly sent his charioteer, with a broad-headed dart, to the abode of Yama.

6. Made car-less (thus), Shahadeva then took up a scimitar and a shield. But (Karna) cut off those (things) also with a smile.

7. Thereupon the highly-puissant Shahadeva, in that engagement, hurled a heavy and formidable mace, ornamented with gold, at the car of the son of Vikartana.

8. Karna, however, cut off with shafts that mace which, hurled by the Shahadeva, was making for him with great force and caused it to fall on the ground.

9. Seeing that his mace was cut off, Shahadeva, with great haste, hurled a dart at Karna. But that too was cut off with arrows (by Karna).

10. The son of Madri, then, speedily jumping down from his excellent car and burning with indignation, as it were, at the sight of Karna stationed (before him),

11. And taking up a car-wheel, discharged it at the son of Adhiratha. That (wheel), which was careering impetuously (towards him), like the upraised wheel of Death,

12, Was cut off by the charioteer's son with many thousands arrows. The car-wheel being thus cut to pieces, Shahadeva then, O worshipful sire,

13—14. Aiming at Karna, hurled at him the shaft of his car, the harnesses of his steeds, the yokes of cars, the limbs of elephants and horses and also dead human bodies. (But) Karna destroyed all these with shafts. Well aware that he had no weapons (to fight with), the son of Madri, that is,

15. Shahadeva, resisted with arrows (by Karna) withdrew from the battle. The son of Radha, (however), pursuing (and overtaking) him quickly in a moment, O best of the Bharatas,

16. Addressed these very cruel words with a smile, to Shahadeva :—"O hero, do not engage in fight with superior car-warriors.

17. O son of Madri, you ought to fight with your equals (only). Do not mistrust my words." Then touching him with the end of his bow, he said again—

18. "Yonder Arjuna is fighting resolutely with the Kurus, O son of Madri, either

go there or return home, which ever you like."

19. Having addressed him thus, Karna, the foremost of car-warriors, advanced smilingly against the troops of the Panchala king.

20. Remembering the words of Kunti, that mighty car-warrior and slayer of foes in battle, firm in truth, did not, O king, slay the son of Madri though he could do so.

21. With his mind ill at ease, afflicted with darts and smitten with the words of Karna (poignant) as darts, Shahadeva lost all love for life.

22. (And) that great car-warrior in that battle, with great haste mounted the car of Janamejaya, the high-souled Panchala.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixty-seventh chapter the flight of Sahadeva in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXVIII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. The king of Madra, with a down-pours of arrow, covered on all sides Virata, who, accompanied by his division, was proceeding quickly for (the slaughter of) Drona.

2. (And) between those two strong bowmen ensued a battle, O king, like that which had taken place between Vali and Vasava in days of yore.

3. The king of Madra, O great monarch, displaying great alacrity, quickly wounded Virata, the chief of a great force, with straight arrows.

4. King (Virata also) pierced him in return with nine sharpened arrows, again with seventy-three and once more with a hundred.

5. The king of Madra, (also) destroying the four horses of his car, cut down with two shafts, in that engagement, the umbrella and the standard (of Virata).

6. That lord of the earth (*i.e.*, Virata) jumping down from his car, the steeds of which were destroyed, stood, drawing his bow and shooting keen darts.

7. Witnessing the destruction of his brother's steeds, Satanika quickly came up (there), in the very sight of all the troops.

8. That lord of the earth, that is, the king of Madra, having with numerous shafts pierced Satanika who was advancing (against him), sent him to the abode of Yama.

9. The heroic (Satanika) being slain, Virata, the chief of a great force, (abandoning his steed-less car, ascended to that (of his brother).

10. Then, his eyes rolling (in ire) and his strength doubled with indignation, (he) quickly covered the car of the king of Madra with arrows.

11. Therefore the king of Madra, inflamed with wrath, struck Virata, the chief of a large force, furiously in the chest with a hundred straight arrows.

12. The mighty car-warrior Virata thus pierced home by the puissant (Salya) sat down on the terrace of his car and soon fainted away.

13. His charioteer then bore him (*i. e.* Virata) away who was mangled with arrows in battle. Then, O Bharata, during that night, that large army (of Virata) began to take to flight.

14. Slaughtered with hundreds of arrows by Salya, that ornament of battle, witnessing the flight of that army, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya,

15. Came to that spot, O king of kings, where Salya was. Against them both, O king, advanced Alamvusa, the lord of the Rakshasas,

16. Riding on an excellent eight-wheeled car drawn by terrible-looking Pishachas having faces like those of cows.

17. That terrible car was furnished with blood-red banners, adorned with garlands made of black iron, and covered with bear skins.

18. And it was furnished with a tall standard on which sat a fierce vulture of spotted wings, having eyes wide open and shrieking incessantly.

19. That Rakshasa, who, O monarch, looked like a loose heap of antimony, checked the advancing Arjuna as the (mountain Meru (resists) a hurricane,

20. By incessant discharges of arrows, O king, on the head of Arjuna. The battle that commenced between the man (*i. e.* Arjuna) and the Rakshasa was exceedingly hot and furious,

21. Causing delight to all the lookers on there, O Bharata, and filling the vultures and the crows and the ravens and the owls and the Kankas and the jackals with joy.

22. Arjuna, (then), struck Alamvusa with his arrows and with ten keen darts cut down his standard.

23. (And) with three darts he cut off his charioteer, with three more his Trivenu, with one his bow and with four his horses.

24. (The Rakshasa) took up another stringed bow again but (Arjuna) cut it off in two fragments. Then O foremost of the Bharatas, with four sharpened arrows,

25. The son of Pritha pierced the lord of the Rakshasas, who, thus pierced, took to flight in terror. Having defeated him, Arjuna quickly advanced towards Drona,

26. Discharging numerous arrows, O king, at men, elephants and horses. O mighty monarch, slaughtered by that renowned Pandava,

27. The soldiers fell down like trees levelled (on the ground) by a storm. Thus slaughtered by that renowned Pandava all the soldiers (of your son) ran away like a terror-stricken herd of deer.

Thus ends one hundred and sixty-eighth chapter the defeat of Alamvusa, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXIX.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said:—

1. O Bharata, your son Chitrasena withstood Satanika, the son of Nakula, who was consuming your troops with keen arrows.

2. The son of Nakula pierced Chitrasena with five arrows. He (*i.e.*, Chitrasena) also piereed him (*i.e.*, Satanika) in return with ten sharpened arrows.

3. Once again, in that engagement Chitrasena, O mighty monarch, pierced Satanika in the chest with nine keen darts.

4. The son of Nakula, (also), with straight arrows cut off his armour from his body, and this feat seemed marvellous.

5. His armour being cut off, your son O monarch, O lord of kings, looked as beautiful as a snake with its slough cast off in proper time.

6. Then, O great king, the son of Nakula, cut off, with sharpened arrows, the standard and the bow of that one *i.e.*, Chitrasena who was exerting his utmost in that engagement.

7. That mighty car-warrior, deprived of his car and coat of mail and his bow cut off, took up another very strong bow capable of piercing every foe.

8. Then Chitrasena, that great car-warrior among the Bharatas, quickly pierced the son of Nakula, in battle, with straight arrows.

9. The highly powerful Satanika, then inflamed with wrath, destroyed the four horses and also the charioteer of Chitrasena O Bharata.

10. Jumping down from his car, the highly-renowned Chitrasena, possessed of (great) strength, oppressed the son of Nakula with twenty-five arrows.

11. When he (*i. e.* Chitrasena) was achieving this feat, the son of Nakula, in that engagement, cut off, with a cresent-shaped arrow, his shaft furnished with gold.

12. His bow cut off, and deprived of his car, steeds and charioteer, he (*i. e.* Chitrasena) quickly mounted on the car of the high-souled son of Hridika.

13. Then, O great king, Vrishasena, covered that great car-warrior Drupada, who, followed by his army, was advancing against Drona.

14. Yajnasena also, O lord, pierced in that battle, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Karna, in the arm and the chest with six arrows.

15. Thereupon inflamed with wrath, Vrishasena soon struck Yajnasena, stationed on his car, in the centre of his chest with numerous arrows.

16. O great king, those two heroes mangled with shafts and their bodies looking prickly with the darts sticking to them, looked beautiful like a couple of hedgehogs with their quills erect on their bodies, in that encounter.

17. Covered all over with blood flowing from the wounds caused by straight arrows furnished with golden wings and keen points, those two warriors in that great engagement, looked beautiful

18. Like a pair of highly graceful and radiant Kalpa trees or a couple of Kinsuka trees rich with their burden of flowers.

19. Vrishasena then, O king, having pierced Drupada with nine arrows, pierced him again with seventy, and once more with another three shafts.

20. Then, discharging thousands o; arrows in that battle, the son of Karnaf O mighty monarch, looked like cloud pouring torrents of rain.

21. Thereupon, Drupada, excited with wrath, cut off the bow of Vrishasena into fragments by means of a sharpened and well-tempered broad-headed arrow.

22. He (then) taking up another new and strong bow, plaited with gold, and

taking out of his quiver a shinning, well-tempered, strong, keen and broad-headed dart,

23. And adjusting it to the string and aiming at Drupada, and drawing (his bow-string) up to the very ear, discharged it, striking terror into (the hearts of all the Somakas.

24. (That dart) riving his heart penetrated into the earth. The king (Drupada), thus wounded by Vrishasena, with dart, fell into a swoon.

25. Remembering the duty of (all) charioteers, his driver bore him away. O lord of kings, that great car-warrior among the Panchalas being (thus) defeated,

26. All the warriors (on your side), on that frightful night, rushed against the army of Drupada having their coats of mail cut to pieces with arrows (of the enemy).

27. In virtue of the (lusture of the) lamps abandoned (by the combatants), and which were burning all around, the field shone resplendant like the cloud-less firmament studded with planets and stars.

28. Similarly, O great king, (strewn all over) with the fallen Angadas of the combatants, the field looked beautiful like a (mass of) clouds (enlivened) with flashes of lightning during the rainy season.

29, Then, seized with the fear of the son of Karna, (the Panchala troops) ran away in all directions as the Danavas agitated with the fear of Indra (had fled away) in the battle between the gods and the Asuras.

30. Crushed in that battle by him (*i. e.* Vrishasena) the Panchalas together with the Somakas, illuminated by lamps, shone resplendent.

31. Having, O Bharata, defeated them in battle, the son of Karna, looked like the sun of scorching rays when he reaches the meridian.

32. Amongst the thousands of kings belonging to your party and that of your enemy, the puissant Vrishasena alone stood (on the field) like the blazing fire.

33. Having vanquished (innumerable) horses as well as those great car-warriors the Somakas, he (*i. e.* Vrishasena) hastened to the spot where king Yudhisthira was.

34. Your son Dusasana stood against that mighty car-warrior, the advancing Prativindhya, consuming his enemies in battle.

35. O king, the clash between them looked as marvellous as that between Mercury and Venus in the cloudless sky.

36. In (that) battle, Prativindhya, who was achieving frightful feats, was pierced by Dussasana in the fore-head with three arrows.

37. Pierced deeply by that powerful bowman, that is, your son, Prativindhya, O mighty monarch, looked like a mountain furnished with a peak.

38. The great car-warrior Prativindhya (also), in (that) battle, having pierced Dussasana with nine arrows, pierced him again with seven.

39. There, O Bharata, your son performsd a difficult feat in as much as he struck down the steeds of Prativindhya with fierce shafts.

40. (He then), with a broad-headed shaft, O king, struck down the charioteer and the standard and cut off into minute fragments the car of that bowman.

41. (And), inflamed with rage (he) cut off into very small fragments, with straight arrows, the flags, the quivers, the strings and the terraces, O lord, (of Prativindhya,s car,

42. Made car-less, the virtuous-souled (Prativindhya) stood, bow in hand, and fought with your son by discharging many hundreds of shafts.

43. (Your son, then,) with (great) nimbleness of hand cut off his bow with a razor-shaped arrow and then smote that one whose bow was cut off, with ten darts.

44. Witnessing that (sad) plight that their brother was in, his brothers, who were great car-warriors, followed by a large army, rushed furiously to that place.

45. He then mounted the resplendant car of Sutasoma, and O great king, taking up a bow, pierced your son.

46. Thereupon, all your warriors surrounding your son (in order to protect him) and followed by a great force, rushed (against the Pandavas).

47. Then, at that frightful hour of midnight, there commenced an encounter swelling (the population of) Yama's domains between your (army) and theirs.

Thus ends the one hundred and sixty-ninth chapter, the fight by Satanika and others in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXX.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

The son of Suvala (*i, e.* Sakuni), excited with wrath, rushed agrinst Nakula who was slaughtering your troops with (great) impetuousity in battle, and said (to him) "wait, wait."

2. Those two heroes, between whom was excited a bitter enmity, desirous of slaying each other, struck each other with arrows discharged (from their bows) drawn to their fullest stretch.

3. In (that) battle, O king, the son of Suvala displayed as much dexterity in discharging showers of arrows as Nakula (god).

4. With arrows sticking (to their bodies) like prickly thorns, they, O mighty monarch, looked, in (that) engagement, like a couple of porcupines with erect quills.

5. Their coats of mail cut off with shafts having straight points and wings of gold, and themselves covered all over with blood, (those two heroes) looked as beautiful as

6. A fair of beautiful Kalpa trees or a couple of handsome Kinsuka trees laden with flowers, on the field of battle.

7. Then, O great king, both the heroes pierced with shafts (sticking to their bodies) looked beautiful like a couple of Salmali trees (covered) with prickly thorns.

8. O king, looking delightedly at each other with expanded eyes which became red in wrath, they seemed to consume each other (with their fiery glances).

9. Inflamed with wrath, your brother-in-law, pierced, as it were with a smile, the son of Madri in the chest with keen and barbed dart.

10. Beholding his bitter and haughty foe in that (pitiable) plight, Sakuni roared there like the clouds at the end of summer.

12. Then, Nakula, the son of Pandu, recovering his senses, once again rushed against the son of Suvala like Death itself with gaping mouth.

13. He, (then), O best of the Bharatas, wrathfully pierced Sakuni with six (arrows), and again with a hundred long shafts, in the centre of the chest.

14. (He then cut off) his bow with the arrow fixed (on the string) into two fragments, at the point at which it is grasped. (Then), quickly cutting off his standard, (he) caused it to fall from his car to the ground.

15. Nakula, the son of Pandu, (then), having pierced his thigh with a sharpened, will tempered and keen dart,

16. Caused him him to fall down as a hunter (causes) a winged hawk to drop down. O great king, (thus) pierced deeply, he sank down on the terrace of his car,

17. Clasping the flag-staff, like a lustful person (embracing) his lady-love. O sinless one, seeing your brother-in-law lose his senses and drop down

18. His charioteer quickly carried him away on his car from the van of battle. Then sons of Pritha and all those who followed them gave utterance to a loud roar.

19. On the defeat of his foe in battle, Nakula, the scorcher of foes, said to his charioteer "convey me towards Drona's division."

20. Hearing those words of the son of Madri, his charioteer, conveyed him to the spot where, O king, Drona took his stand.

21. Kripa, the son of Saradwata, rushed with great impetuosity and resoluteness, against the highly-powerful Sikhandi who was advancing in order to slay Drona.

22. Sikhandi, the subduer of foes, pierced as it were with a smile the son of Goutama advancing furiously (against him) towards the vicinity of Drona, with nine arrows.

23. The preceptor, devoted to the welfare of your sons, having, O great monarch, pierced him with five shafts, struck him again with twenty (more).

24. (Then), O lord of the earth, the encounter that ensued between them was as as dreadful as that between the (Asura) Samvara and the lord of the immortals in the war between the celestials and the Asuras.

25. Invincible in battle, those two heroic and great car-warriors covered the firmament with arrowy nets like the clouds (covering the sky) at the end of summer.

26. That night which was naturally of a terrible aspect became more dreadful, O best of the Bharatas, to the combatants engaged in battle.

27—28. That awfully-dreadful night, striking terror (into every heart) seemed to be the death-night (of all the combatants). Then, O great monarch, Shikandi cut off the great bow of the son of Goutama with a crescent-shaped (dart) and poured down sharpened arrows (at him). Kripa, then, O monarch, excited with rage, hurled a formidable dart,

29. Furnished with a golden handle, having a keen point and polished by a

black-smith. (But) Shikhandin severed it, as it was making for him, with ten darts.

30. That dart, ornamented with gold, dropped down to the ground. Thereupon, the son of Goutama, that best of speakers, taking up a fresh bow,

31. Covered Shikhandin, O great monarch, with sharpened arrows. (Thus) covered (with shafts) by the high-souled son of Goutama in that battle,

32. Shikhandin, the foremost of car-warriors, sank down exhausted on the terrace of his car. Kripa, the son of Saradwata, seeing himself exhausted in that engagement,

33. Struck him with numerous arrows, O Bharata, (actuated) with the desire of slaying him. Witnessing the defeat of that great car-warrior, the son of Jajnasena in battle,

34. The Panchalas as well as the Somakas surrounded him on all sides (for rescuing him). In like manner, your sons also surrounded that excellent Brahmana,

35. With a vast force. Then, there took place a battle again, O king, between car-warriors engaged in striking one another.

36. And O lord of the earth, O Bharata, there arose a tumultuous uproar, like the roar of the clouds, as the horsemen and elephants rushed against

37. And slaughtered one another. The battle, then, O monarch, became terrific. In consequence of the tread of foot-soldiers rushing along, the earth,

38. O great king, began to tremble like an affrighted lady. Ascending their cars, car-warriors rushed furiously against,

39—40. And, O king, attacked numerous (other car-warriors), as crows (attack) winged insects. In the same manner, elephants, with the juice trickling down their bodies, resolutely attacked great elephants (of the opposite side) with juice trickling down their bodies, O Bharata. Horsemen approaching horsemen and foot-soldiers (approaching) foot soldiers,

41—42. In that battle, angrily encountered one another, without getting the better of one another. Terrific indeed was the sound caused by the rush, retreat and return of the combatants at dead of night. (Innumerable) blazing lamps placed upon cars, elephants and horses,

43. Looked, O great king, like large meteors dropping from the firmament. O foremost of the Bharatas, that night blazed up by those lamps,

44. Looked as (bright as) day, O king, on the field of battle. As the sun dispels dense darkness hanging all over,

45. So that pitchy darkness pervading the field of battle was destroyed by those blazing lamps. The firmament, the earth, the cardinal and the minor points,

46. (Hitherto) buried in darkness and dust, again blazed up with the lustre (of those lamps). The lusture of weapons, armours and gems belonging to the high-souled (combatants)

47. Was cast into shade by the light of those blazing (lamps), when, during that night, the battle was raging hot and furious.

48. No one of the combatants could distinguish the men of his party, O Bharata. (And) O best of the Bharatas, in (that) battle, father killed (his) son,

49. Son (his) father, and kinsmen (killed) kinsmen, friends (slew) friends, and maternal uncles (killed) sisters' sons, through ignorance.

50. (And) O Bharata, warriors killed warriors of the same party and enemies killed their own men. O king, in that awful nocturnal engagement (the combatants) lost all regard for one another.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventieth chapter, the hand to hand nocturnal fight, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXI

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA.—*Continued*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O mighty monarch, when the battle raged hot and furious Dhristadyumna rushed against Drona.

2. Wielding his strong bow and twanging its string often and often, he rushed against Drona's chariot decked with golden trappings.

3. And as Dhristadyumna rushed against Drona, O mighty monarch, the Panchalas together with the Pandavas surrounded him, with a view to put an end to Drona's life.

4. Then beholding that foremost of preceptors Drona, thus hemmed in on all sides, your sons, exerting their best, protected Drona in that battle.

5. Then those two sea of troops encountering each other at the dead of night resem-

bled two dreadful seas agitated by the tempest with all the creatures within them dreadfully terrified.

6. Thereafter, O king, the prince of the Panchalas quickly pierced Drona on the breast with five arrows, and then uttered his war-cry.

7. Thereupon, O Bharata, Drona piercing him with twenty-five shafts, cut off his lustrous bow with another broad-headed shaft.

8. Pierced sore by Drona, Dhristadyumna, O foremost of the Bharatas, threw quickly aside the (severed) bow and bit his lips (in anger).

9. Then, O mighty monarch, excited to the highest pitch of fury, the puissant Dhristadyumna grasped another strong bow, desirous of accomplishing Drona's destruction.

10. That handsome warrior, the slayer of his foes, then drawing back the string of that bow to his ears, let go a dreadful shaft capable of achieving Drona's destruction.

11. In that terrible battle that shaft, shot by his strong arm, flooded the Kuru troops with its lustre like the risen sun.

12. Beholding that dreadful shaft, O king, the Gods, the Danavas and the Gandharvas said these words *viz* "May good betide Drona."

13. Then as that shaft coursed towards the chariot of Drona, O king, Karna like one endued with great lightness of hands, cut it off into twelve fragments.

14. O king, that shaft of Dhristadyumna severed into numerous pieces, quickly fell down on the earth like, O sire, a snake without its poisonous fangs.

15. In that battle, cutting off arrows with his own close-knotted shafts, Karna then began to pierce Dhrishtadyumna with sharp arrows.

16. Drona's son pierced Dhristadyumna with five, Drona himself with five, Salya with nine and Dussasana with three *vallas*.

17. Duryodhana pierced him with twenty and Sakuni with five arrows. Thus all the mighty car-warriors (of your army) quickly pierced the Panchala prince.

18. Dhristadyumna was then pierced by the seven heroes who strove to protect Drona in battle. He also in his turn, pierced each of them with three shafts.

19. O mighty monarch, with the greatest quickness, Dhristadyumna then pierced Drona, Karna, Drona's son and your son, in that terrible battle.

20. Thus pierced by that bowman, your warriors again unitedly pierced Dhristadyumna in that battle, uttering terrible war-cries.

21. Inflamed with fury, O king, Drumasena then pierced Dhristadyumna with an arrow, and then again quickly piercing the latter with sharp shafts he said—"wait wait."

22. Dhristadyumna pierced him in return with three sharp straight-flying arrows, winged with golden feathers, whetted on stone and capable of destroying life.

23. Next with another broad-headed shaft, he lopped off from Drumasena's trunk, his head graced with glimmering ear-rings of gold.

24. That head with its lips bitten, then fell on the field like a ripe palm-fruit thrown down by a raging tempest.

25. Thereafter the heroic Dhristadyumna piercing his opponent warriors with well-sharpened shafts, cut off with broad-headed arrows, the bow of Radha's son versed in various modes of war-fare.

26. But Karna did not brook that severance of his bow even as a fierce lion does not brook the chopping off of its tail.

27. Taking up another bow, with eyes red in rage and breathing fiercely, he poured a shower of arrows on the highly puissant Dhristadyumna.

28. Then beholding Karna wrought up with rage, the other six heroic foremost car-warriors, quickly surrounded the son the Panchala king with a view to slay him in battle.

29. O lord, the troops then considered Dhristadyumna to be already within the jaws of Death, as he was then confronted by the six foremost car-warriors of your army.

30. At this juncture, Satyaki that scion of the Dasarha race, advanced to the rescue of the puissant Dhristadyumna, shooting numerous arrows (in all directions).

31. Beholding that Satwata warrior indomitable in battle advance, Radha's son pierced him in battle, with ten shafts.

32. Him, O mighty monarch, Satyaki pierced in return with ten shafts before the eyes of all the heroes present and said—'Fly not—stay.'

33. O king, that encounter between the powerful Satyaki and the high-souled Karna looked like the encounter between Vali and Vasava.

34. That foremost of the Kshatriyas Satyaki, then pierced the lotus-eyed Karna,

terrifying the Kshatriya warriors with the clatter of his car.

35. On the other hand, O mighty monarch the puissant son of Suta fought on with Satyaki, causing the earth to tremble with the tremendous twang on his bow.

36. Karna then pierced that scion of Sini's race with *Vipatkarnis*, *Narachas*, *Vatsadantas*, *Kshuras* and hundreds of other kinds of arrows.

37. So also Yuyudhana that foremost of the Vrishni warriors, covered Karna with his shower of arrows. The combat was an equal one (in all respects).

38. Placing Karna in front of them, your sons then, O ruler of men, began to pierce Satyaki simultaneously with sharp arrows.

39. Baffling their as well as Karna's weapons with those of his own, O lord, Satyaki quickly pierced Vrishasena on the centre of his chest.

40. Pierced with the shaft of Satyaki, the highly effulgent and puissant Vrishasena fell down on his car, losing hold of his bow.

41. Thereupon Karna taking Vrishasena the mighty car-warrior to be slain, was afflicted with grief on account of his son's death, and began to afflict Satyaki.

42. The mignty car-warrior Yuyudhana then afflicted sore by Karna, forcibly pierced Karna with numerous shafts over and over again.

43. Piercing Karna with ten and Vrishasena with five shafts, the Satwata hero then cut off their bow as well as their gloves.

44. Thereupon they both having strung another pair of bows dreadful to the foe, began simultaneously to pierce Yuyudhana with sharp arrows.

45. When that dreadful destruction of heroes was progressing, O king, the terrible twang of the Gandiva bow was heard, arising above the din of battle.

46. Having heard the sound of the Gandiva and the clatter of (Arjuna's) car, O king Suta's son addressing Duryodhana said these words :—

47. "This is the tremendous twang of the Gandiva bow, emmitted by Arjuna, as he has slain our entire army, many foremost of men and numerous warriors of the Kurus.

48. The clatter of his chariot is also heard, like the rumble of roaring clouds. Evidently the son of Pandu is achieving feats worthy of himself.

49. O mighty monarch, this son of Pritha will completely crush our mighty host. Many troops are already scattered, and none stays on the field.

50. Our host is being shattered like risen masses of clouds by the raging tempest; encountering Savyasachin in battle, it is being split like a bark on a (rough) sea.

51. Hark, O king, the terrible wails of foremost warriors as they fly or fall in battle in consequence of shafts shot from the Gandiva bow.

52. Hark, O foremost of monarchs, the roar of drums near Arjuna's chariot, resembling the rumble of clouds at the dead of night.

53. Hear also, numerous sounds, cries of *woe* and *alas*, and loud war-cries, near the chariot of Arjuna.

54. But here in our middle stays Satyaki the foremost of the Satwatas; if this object of our aim could be smitten down, we might obtain victory over our foes.

55. There the Panchala Prince surrounded on all sides by heroic and foremost of car-warriors, has engaged himself with Drona.

56. If we can slay Satyaki and Prisata's son Dhristadyumna,then,O mighty monarch, undoubtedly victory will be ours.

57. Impaling these two heroic and mighty car-warriors, the descendants of the Vrishni and the Prisata race respectively, like the son of Subhadra, we will, O king strive to slay them.

58. But yonder comes Savyasachin, O Bharata, towards this division of Drona knowing that Satyaki is here encountered by many foremost warriors of the Kurus.

59. Let now a detachment of mighty and foremost car-warriors intercept Pritha's son, so that he may not advance to the rescue of Satyaki now sorrounded by many.

60. Let those mighty heroes be quick in shooting their arrows, so that this scion of Madhu's race may be despatched to the next world."

61. Knowing this to be the opinion o, Karna, your son addressed Suvala's son even as the highly illustrious Indra addressed Vishnu, on the field of battle.

62. "Supported by a host of ten thousand unretreating elephants and also by a detachment of ten thousand car-warriors, do you proceed against Dhananjaya.

63. Dussasana, Durbisaha, Suvahu and Duspradharsana, these supported by numerous bodies of infantry will follow you.

64. O my uncle, slay me those fierce bowmen, the two Krishnas, the very virtuous

king Yudhisthira, and Nakula, and Sahadeva and Pandu's son Bhimasena.

65. My hopes of victory rest on you as those of the gods rest on their lord Indra. O uncle, slay the sons of Kunti, even as Pabaka's son slew the Asuras."

66. Thus addressed and urged on by your son, he (Suvala's son) covered in mail, proceeded against the sons of Pritha, being himself supported by your sons and a large army.

67. In order to please your son he proceeded to battle, desirous of consuming the sons of Pandu. Then commenced a terrible battle between your warriors and the foe.

68—69. When, O king, Suvala's son had gone against the (main) army of the Pandavas, the son of Suta supported by a mighty force, quickly rushed upon the Satwata hero in battle, shooting many hundreds of shafts. Your troops then gathering together encompassed Satyaki.

70. The son of Bharadwaja also advancing against Dhristadyumna's car commenced at that night, O foremost of Bharatas, a most terrible and wonderful battle with the heroic Dhristadyumna and the Panchalas.

Thus ends the one hnndred and seventy-first chapter, the fierce fight, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Coutinued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then all those royal warriors of your army, all indomitable in battle, furiously rushed against Yuyudhana's chariot, unable to brook his feats.

2. Those warriors then surrounded on all sides the Satwata hero, with duly-equipped chariots decked with gold and gems, and with horsemen and elephants.

3. Having thus impaled the Satwata hero, all those mighty warriors filled the directions of the compass with the echo of their war-cries.

4. Then those mighty heroes, desirous of achieving the slaughter of that scion of Madhu's race, began to pour showers of sharp arrows on Satyaki of infallible prowess.

5. Beholding then those horoes make towards himself in fury, that slayer of hostile heroes, that mighty-armed grandson of Sini, received them with a copious discharge of arrows.

6. Then that mighty bowman, the heroic Satyaki of indomitable prowess, began to lop off the heads of his foes with fierce shafts of depressed knots.

7. That scion of Madhu's race then severed with his razor-edged arrows, the trunks of elephants, the necks of horses and the arms of warriors decked with bracelets.

8. The earth then over-strewn with shattered yak-tails and white umbrellas, looked, O king, as beautiful as the star-bespangled firmament.

9. Thus when they were being thus slaughtered by Yuyudhana in battle, O Bharata, a tumultuous uproar was heard there like the yell or bewailing of ghosts.

10. With that terrible uproar the earth was filled and the night appeared to be more hedious and more frightful.

11. Beholding the army routed and afflicted by the arrows of Yuyudhana, and hearing in that nightly darkness that tremendous and horripilating uproar,

12. Your son that foremost of car-worrior, O king, addressing his charioteer thus repeatedly spoke :—"Drive, drive the steeds to the spot whence this tumult is proceeding."

13. Then that resolute bowman that indefatigable warrior, king Duryodhana versed in various modes of warfare and endued with great lightness of hands,rushed upon Yuyudhana.

14. Thereupon that scion of Madhu's race pierced Duryodhana with twelve shafts shot from a full-drawn bow and capable of drinking the blood and mangling the skin.

15. Duryodhana then pierced as before with those arrows of Sini's grandson, angrily pierced the latter with ten shafts in return.

16. Meanwhile the battle that was being fought between the Panchalas and your troops, presented a wonderful and charming aspect.

17. O Bharata, then the grandson of Sini, worked up with rage, pierced your mighty son with a group of eighty shafts on the chest.

18. Thereafter that slayer of foes despatched to the abode of Death the horses of Duryodhana and he also felled quickly the charioteer of the latter.

19. O ruler of men, remaining in that steedless car, your son began to discharge

sharp arrows towards the car of Sini's grandson.

20. Then like one endued with great lightness of hands, Sini's grandson, O king, cut off the group of fifty arrows shot by your son in that battle.

21. The descendant of Madhu's race then cut off the mighty bow of your son near the grasp, with broad-headed arrows shot with great force.

22. Deprived of his car and his bow, that lord, that ruler of all men, quickly ascended the resplendent car of Kritavarman.

23. When Duryodhana had been compelled to turn his face away from the battle, the grandson of Sini in that night began to crush your troops, O ruler of men.

24. O king, meanwhile Sakuni surrounding Arjuna on all sides with countless cars and thousands of elephants,

25. And an equal number of horses, began furiously to assault him. His troops then began to discharge many celestial weapons against Arjuna.

26—28. Those Kshatriyas then urged on by fate fought on with Arjuna. Arjuna however single-handedly checked those thousands of chariots, elephants and horses and finally compelled them to turn back. Then Suvala's son with eyes coppery in rage and excited to the highest pitch of fury, pierced with twenty shafts that slayer of foes namely the puissant Arjuna. Then again he impeded the course of Arjuna's mighty car with a group of hundred arrows.

29. Him, O Bharata, Arjuna pierced in battle with a set of twenty shafts, and the other mighty bowmen of his division with three shafts each.

30. O monarch, baffling the countless shafts shot by his foes, Dhananjaya slew the warriors of your army with excellent shafts charged with the force of the thunder.

31. The earth then covered over with lopped-off arms and thousands of mangled bodies, appeared beatiful as if covered over with charming flowers.

32—33. Strewn over with heads of Kshatriyas—heads that were decked with diadems and graced with hadsome noses and beautiful ear-rings and nether lips bit in anger and wide open eyes, heads that were graced with collars and crowned with gems and which while life was in them spoke salutary words,—the earth looked beautiful as if strewn with hillocks covered with *champaka* flowers.

34. Then Vibhatsu of fierce energy having achieved that dreadful feat once more pierced Sakuni with five arrows of depressed knots.

35. He then angrily pierced Uluka in that battle with his arrows. Thus having pierced Uluka even before the very eyes of Suvala's son, Arjuna

36. Uttered a mighty roar that filled the earth with its echo. Thereafter that son of the foremost of celestials, cut off the bow of Sakuni with his arrows,

37. And despatched the latter's four steeds to the kingdom of Death. Thereupon, O foremost of the Bharatas, jumping down from his chariot, the son of Suvala

38. Quickly ascended the car of Uluka. Then those two mighty car-warriors, sire and son, riding on the same chariot,

39. Began to shower arrows on Pritha's son, like two risen clouds showering rain on the mountain-breast. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, Pandu's son piercing them both with shafts,

40. Began to crush your troops by hundreds and thousands. Just as masses of clouds are torn asunder by a violent storm,

41. So, O ruler of men, your troops were then routed and dispersed by Arjuna. O foremost of the Bharatas, then the troops of your army carnaged during that night,

42. Fled in fear in all directions looking at one another; some left behind their horses, others urged them to the top of their speed.

43. They then fled away in great fright in that darkness of night. O foremost of the Bharatas, defeating your troops in battle,

44. Vasudeva and Dhananjaya began to blow their conchs. Meanwhile Dhristadyumna, O king, piercing Drona with three shafts,

45. Quickly cut off the latter's bowstring with a short arrow ; thereupon Drona that crusher of hostile Kshatriyas, throwing that bow down on the ground,

46. Took up another bow of greater force and toughness ; then Drona piercing Dhistadyumna with seven swift-flying arrows,

47. Pierced the latter's charioteer, O foremost of the Bharatas, with five arrows. Then the mighty car-warrior Dhistadyumna checking Drona by means of his arrows,

48. Began to agitate the Kourava host like Indra agitating the Asura host. O sire when the troops of your son were thus being carnaged,

49. A dreadful river of boodly currents began to flow between the two armies, carrying with it slain men horses, and elephants,

50. Like, O monarch, the river Vaitaranee carrying creatures to the abode of Death. Then the puissant Dhristadyumna completely routing that army of your son,

51. Shone resplendent like Sakra in the midst of the celestial hosts. Thereafter Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin blew their mighty conchs;

52. So did also the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva), and Yuyudhana, and Pandu's son Vrikodara. Having vanquished thousands of energetic kings of your army,

53. The Pandavas ever attended with victory, uttered dreadful war-cries, even before the eyes of your son, and Karna, and the heroic Drona and the son of Drona, O ruler of men.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-second chapter, the pierce fight, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXIII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Beholding his own army carnaged by high-souled warriors, your son, O ruler of men, was excited to the highest pitch of fury.

2. Then quickly approaching Karna and Drona that foremost of victorious heroes, and burning with rage, he eloquent in speech, spoke these words:—

3. "Beholding the ruler of the Sindhus slain in battle by Savyasachin, you two, filled with rage, caused this battle to go on.

4. Though competent to slay the Pandava troops, still you are beholding the slaughter of my troops by them with great indifference.

5—6. If you now abandon me, you should have told me of it in the beginning. *We two shall vanquish the sons of Pandu in battle* even these were the words, you said to me, O you givers of honor. Hearing those words of yours, I then allowed these proceedings. Otherwise I would never have provoked these hostilities with the Parthas—hostilities that are so destructive of heroic combatants.

7. If, O foremost of men, I do not deserve to be forsaken by you, then do you fight according to the measure of your prowess, O you that are possessed of great prowess."

8. Thus pierced with the goad of speech by your son, those two heroes once more engaged in battle like two snakes poked with sticks.

9. Then those two foremost of car-warriors, the best of all human bowmen, rushed against the Parthas headed by the grandson of Sini and others.

10. Similarly the Parthas supported by their own troops, rushed upon those two heroes, who were roaring repeatedly.

11. Then the enraged Drona that best of all wielders of weapons, quickly pierced that foremost of the descendants of Sini with ten sharp arrows.

12. Karna pierced him with ten shafts, your son with seven, Vrishasena with ten and Suvala's son with seven arrows.

13. Those hosts of the Kurus together with those warriors, began to shower arrows on the grandson of Sini. Then beholding Drona slaughter the Pandava hosts,

14. The Somakas from all sides began to pierce him with showers of arrows. Then Drona snatched out of the Kshatriyas their lives, O ruler of men,

15. Like the sun dispelling darkness with his rays. O ruler of men, when the Panchalas were being slaughtered by Drona,

16. A dreadful sound was heard as they challenged one another aloud. Some leaving their sons, some their fathers, some their brothers, and some their uncles,

17. Some their nephews, some their companions and their friends, and some their relatives, fled in all quickness, desirous of saving their own lives.

18. Others, on the other hand, were so confounded that they rushed even towards Drona himself. Indeed many warriors of the Pandava host were then despatched to the other world.

19. Thus afflicted by that high-souled warrior, the Pandava army began to fly in all directions in that night, throwing down their blazing flambeaus,

20. Even before the very sight of Bhimasena, Vijaya and Achyuta, and the twins and the virtuous Yudhisthira and the son of Prisata.

21. Then the troops were shrouded in darkness and nothing could be discerned. Only the flight of the foe could be determined through the light that the torches of the Kouravas shed.

22. And as the army of the Pandavas was routed, the mighty warriors Karna, and Drona, O king, pursued them from behind discharging numerous arrows.

23. When the Panchala ranks were broken down and reduced in number, Janarddana cheerless at heart addressed Phalguna saying :—

24. "Let Parsata and Satyaki supported by the Panchala troops rush against the mighty Drona and Karna, shooting as they proceed numerous arrows.

25. This mighty army of ours has been broken and routed by the showers of the enemies' shafts ; and though checked in their flight, they could not again be sufficiently rallied."

26. Beholding their troops fly away Kesava and Arjuna then addressed them thus :—' Do you not flight from fear ! Discard all your fears, O Pandavas.

27. Supported by all the troops and disposing them of in perfect order, we two with weapons upraised are even now dashing against Drona and Suta's son with a view to fight with them."

28. Then Janardana seeing Vrikodora advance, once more addressed Pandu's son Arjuna in these words as if for cheering him the while.

29. "Yonder does the proud Bhima supported by the Somakas and Pandavas rush furiously against Drona and Karna, those two fierce bow-men.

30. Supported by these and by the mighty car-warriors of the Panchalas, do you proceed to the fight for re-assuring your troops, O delighter of Pandu."

31. Thereafter those two foremost of men, the son of Pandu and the scion of Madhu's race, encountering Drona and Karna, took up their station in the van of their army.

Sainjaya Said :—

32. Thereupon the mighty army of king Yudhisthira once more returned to the spot where Drona and Karna where crushing their enemies.

33. A tremendous clash was then produce on that part of the field, like to that, O monarch, which takes place when two oceans swelling under the influence of the moon dash against each other.

34. Then your soldiers throwing aside the flambeaus, with both their hands fought furiously with the Pandavas, like so many mad people.

35. When the field was thus covered with nocturnal darkness and dust, the combatants fought during that dreadful battle, guided only by the names they uttered (in their challenge.

36. The names of contending kings as they challenged one another were then heard there, O king, like to what takes places during a *Sayamvara*.

37. Sometimes an awful silence reigned over the field ; next moment there was heard a tremendous din caused by enraged contending warriors and by the victorious and the vanquished.

38. Whereever the flambeaus were seen to blaze, thither the combatants rushed, like so many insects rushing upon a flame of light.

39. Thus when the Kouravas and the Pandavas were fighting with one another the dreadful night deepened into deadness, O Bharata.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-third chapter, the fierce fight, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drana Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXIV.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then that slayer of foes *viz.* Karna beholding Prisata's son in battle, pierced the him on the breast with ten arrows capable of penetrating to the vitals.

2. In return Dhristadyumna quickly pierced, in that battle, Karna with five arrows, and challenged him saying 'stay stay.'

3. In that dreadful battle, they both covering each other with their arrowy showers, pierced each other with shafts shot from fully-stretched bows.

4. Thereafter Karna despatched the four steeds and charioteer of Dhristadyumna that foremost of the Panchalas, to the dreary abode of Death.

5. He cut off with sharp arrows the latter's excellent bow, and then with a *valla* felled his charioteer from his niche on the car.

6. The puissant Dhristadyumna deprived of the use of his car, and having his charioteer and his horses slain, quickly jumped down on the ground armed with a terrible mace.

7. Then though mangled with arrows of depressed knots shot by Karna, he still

approached the former's chariot and slew the steeds thereof with the strokes of his mace.

8. Then quickly wheeling back, that slayer of hostile heroes *viz*, Prisata's son, that foremost of all car-warriors, ascended the chariot of Dhananjaya.

9—10. Then though desirous of encountering Karna once more, he was prevented from doing so by the son of Dharma. Then the highly puissant Karna created a loud din by means of his bow, which became mingled with his war-cries. He then blew his conch furiously. Beholding Prisata's son vanquished in battle, those mighty car-warriors,

11. The Panchalas and the Somakas influenced by wrath, grasped their weapons with a view to compass the death of Suta's son.

12. They then rushed against Karna, making death their final goal. Meanwhile Karna's charioteer had yoked fresh steeds to his car—

13. Steeds that were of the hue of conch shells, endued with great fleetnes, of the Sindhu breed and well-broken. Then the son of Radha getting the mighty warriors of the Panchalas within his range,

14. Began to afflict them with his arrowy showers, like masses of clouds afflicting the mountain breast with torrents of rain. Afflicted sore by Karna, the division of the Panchalas,

15—17. Panic-struck, began to break and fly away like a herd of deer attacked by a lion. O ruler of earth, then warriors were seen to fall down on the ground from their steeds, or elephants, or chariots, on all sides. In that fierce battle Karna cut off with razor-headed arrows the arms and heads decked with ear-ring of warriors that were flying away. O ruler of men, he cut off the thighs of other warriors riding on elephants,

18. Or on the backs of steeds, or of those standing on the ground. O sire, many mighty car-warriors in the confusion of their flight perceived not

19. Their own limbs cut off, or the injuries of their animals. The Panchalas and the Srinjayas then slaughtered with dreadful arrows,

20—21. Took even the motion of a straw for Karna. Greatly confounded; the combatants mistook their flying friends for Karna and then fled from them in great fright. Then, O Bharata, as those broken and routed divisions were flying away,

22. Karna pursued them from behind shooting his arrows in all directions. Those warriors as they were madly flying, were carnaged by thousands, in that battle.

23. Afflicted by that illustrious warrior Karna, they could not then stay on the field. O king, the Panchalas then mangled with excellent shafts by Karna,

24. As also by Drona, looked vacantly at the different quarters and then fled away. Thereupon king Yudhisthira, beholding his own army routed,

25. And considering a retreat to be advisable, addressed Arjuna thus;—'Behold the mighty car-warrior Karna standing yonder armed with his bow,

26—29. Like a burning sun shining even during the hedious hour of night. The yells of your own partizans helplessly mangled by the shafts of Karna are being incessantly heard. Karna does shoot his arrows so skilfully that no interval can be noticed between his fixing the arrow on the string and letting it off. He will surely fighting thus, extirpate all our friends. Do that now, O Dhananjaya, for compassing the slaughter of Karna, which according to your judgment should be done, and for which the hour may have come." Being thus spoken to, Arjuna addressing Krishna said :—

30—31. "The royal son Dharma has been frightened to-day at the prowess of Karna. As Karna's division is repeatedly worsting that of our own, do your quickly make some arrangement that will cope with the present dangerous situation. Behold, yonder are our troops flying away. O slayer of Madhu, broken and mangled with the shafts of Drona,

32. And frightened by Karna, they have no stay or support. I see that Karna is careering dauntlessly on the field,

33. Crushing numerous illustrious car-warriors and covering them with his sharp shafts I cannot brook the sight of him careering in the thick of the fight,

34. Under my very nose, O foremost of the Vrishnis, even as a snake cannot bear the tread of human feet. So, do you take me there where the mighty Karna is fighting. O slayer of Madhu, either I will slay him, or he shall slay me.

Vasudeva said :—

35. I see, O son of Kunti, that foremost of men, of super-human prowess, *viz* Karna, careering at the head of battle like the king of the celestials himself.

36. O Dhananjaya, there is none, save yourself and the Rakshasa Ghatot-kacha,

who can encounter him in battle, O foremost of men.

37. O sinless one, I do not think that the hour has come when, O mighty armed one, you should meet the son of Suta in battle.

38. The resplendent *Sakti*, resembling a mighty meteor, obtained by him from vasava is still in his possession, O mighty armed one, kept carefully to be used against yourself by this son of Suta.

39. He preserves that *Sakti*; and therefore he has now assumed a terrible aspect. Ghatotkacha, is ever attached to your interests and is anxious for your welfare.

40. Therefore let the mighty Ghatotkacha charge the son of Radha. That one of prowess resembling that of an immortal, was begotten by Bhima,

41. And he is conversant with numerous celestial, Asuri and Rakshasa-weapons. I am sure, he will conquer Karna in battle."

Sanjaya said :—

42. Thus spoken to the mighty-armed Partha possessed of eyes resembling lotus petals, summoned the Rakshasa. Thereupon the Rakshasa appeared before him,

43. Cased in armour, and armed with bows arrows and a sword, O ruler of men. Then doing obeisance to Krishna and Pandu's son Dhananjaya,

44. He proudly said :—"Here am I, order me." Thereupon the descendant of the Dasarha race Krishna, addressing Hidimva's son of the complexion of clouds, of effulgent countenance and fiery eyes smilingly said these words.

Vasudeva said :—

45. Take my blessings, O Ghatotkacha, hear attentively what I now say to you. The hour for the display of your prowess and of no one else has now arrived.

46. Do you become the raft in this battle to the sinking Pandavas. You possess weapons of various kinds and the potent Rakshasi illusion.

47. Behold, O son of Hidimva, the hosts of the Pandavas afflicted by Karna in battle like a herd of kine belaboured by the keeper.

48. Yonder does the mighty bowman Karna of great intelligence and resolute prowess, burn the foremost of the Kshatriyas of the Pandava host.

49. Scorched with his fiery arrows the Pandava warriors can not stand before that resolute bowman who is shooting numerous arrows.

50. Afflicted at the dead of night with showers of arrows shot by the son of Suta, yonder are the Panchalas flying away like a flock of deer attacked by the lion.

51. Save yourself, O you of dreadfu prowess, no one else is none who can confront Suta's son in battle thus engaged.

52. Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you now perform what will be worthy of yourself, your maternal uncles, your sires and the measure of your energy and might.

53. It is for saving them from difficulties, that men desire to have sons ; O son of Hidimva, do you therefore, rescue your fathers and friends.

54. O Ghototkacha, fathers desire to have sons, for furthering their own interests. And good sons save their fathers here and hereafter.

55. You are generous and your strength in battle is indeed terrible and matchless. While engaged in battle, there is none else equal to you.

56. O afflicter of your foes, do you become the raft for the Pandavas when they are being routed in this hour of night by the shafts of Karna and when they are sinking in the ocean identified with the Dhartarashtra troops.

57. Moreover, at night the Rakshasas become possessed of immeasurable prowess ; the Rakshasas are by nature powerful, indomitable, heroic and energetic in battle.

58. With the help of your illusions do you kill the fierce bowman Karna in this nocturnal fight. The sons of Pritha headed by Dhristadyumna will slay Drona in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

59. Hearing the words of Kesava, Vibhatsu also addressing that Rakshasa, that slayer of foes viz Ghatotkacha said, O foremost of the Kurus, these words.

60. O Ghatotkacha, yourself, the long-armed Satyaki, and the Pandava Bhimasena, these, according to my opinion, are the foremost among all our troops.

61. In this nocturnal fight do you therefore challenge Karna to a duel. The mighty car-warrior Satyaki will become your protect or from behind.

62. Supported by the Satwata hero, do you slay the heroic Karna in battle, even as Indra supported by Skanda slew Taraka in days gone by."

Ghatotkacha said :—

63. I am capable of encountering Karna and Drona, O Bharata, and I am a match for all the other high-souled Kshatriyas accompliished in the use of weapons.

64. This night I shall fight such a fierce battle with the son of Suta, of which men will talk as long as the earth will exist.

65. Following the Rakshasa mode, I shall not spare this time any body, either the brave or the coward, or those that will with folded palms, solicit mercy. I shall slay all.

Sanjaya said :—

66. Having thus spoken, that slayer of hostile heroes namely the mighty-armed son of Hidimva, dashed against Karna, in that fierce fight, frightening your troops.

67. Then that foremost of men that son of Suta smilingly received Ghototkacha of blazing countenance and burning locks, as the latter was furiously falling upon him.

68. Then the battle between those two roaring heroes, *viz.*, Karna and that Rakshasa, commenced resembling O foremost of kings that between Sakra and Pralhada in days gone by.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-fourth chapter, the charge of Ghatotkacha against Karna, in the Ghototkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXV

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then, O monarch, beholding the mighty-armed Ghatotkacha, rush against the car of Suta's son Karna, with a view to slaughter him,

2. Your son Duryodhana addressing Dussasana said these words :—"Beholding Karna's prowess in battle, yonder does the Rakshasa

3. Rush against that mighty car-warrior. Do you check the Rakshasa's progress ; supported by mighty divisions do you go to the spot where the highly powerful

4. Karna .the son of Vikartana is fighting with the Rakshasa. O bestower of honor, putting forth your best energies in battle and supported by the troops do you protect Karna in battle.

5. Let not the dreadful Rakshasa succeed, through our negligence, in slaying Karna." Meanwhile, O monarch, the highly puissant son of Jatasura,

6—7. That best of smiters, approaching Duryodhana said these words :—"O Duryodhana, with your permission, do I intend to slay the Pandava brothers and their followers who are your inveterate enemies, and who are regarded as indomitable in battle. My father was Jatasura that foremost of the Rakshasas, endued with great prowess.

8. In days gone by, through some Rakshasa-slaying charms, the puny sons of Pritha slew him. I now desire to render satisfaction to his departed spirit by worshipping him with the blood of his foes,

9. As also with their flesh. O foremost of kings, it behoves you to accord me your permission." Thereupon king Duryodhana, highly gratified, repeatedly told these words to that one :—

10. "Supported by Drona and Karna, and others, I am competent enough to conquer my enemies. With my leave, do you go and slay the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha,

11. That Rakshasa of fierce feats, born of man, ever devoted to the interests of the Pandavas, and always slaying our elephants, horses and charioteers in battle,

12. Staying himself all the while in the firmament,—go, despatch him to Yama's (dreary) place." Then that huge-bodied son of Jatasura saying 'yea' to his words, challenged Ghatotkacha.

13—14. Thereafter the son of Jatasura covered the son of Bhimasena with various kinds of weapons. But the son of Hidimva, single-handed, crushed Alamvusha, Karna and the unfordable ocean of Kuru soldiers, like a furious tempest agitating the clouds. Thereafter the Rakshasa Alamvusha seeing the potenty of the illusion of Ghatotkacha,

15. Quickly covered him with myriads of shafts. Piercing the son of Bhimasena with numerous arrows, Alamvusha,

16. With his arrows, caused the Pandava armies to be routed. Routed by him the Pandava troops, O Bharata,

17. Began to disperse in that night, like masses of clouds torn away by a furious gale. Similarly your troops mangled with the arrows of Ghototkacha,

18—21. Fled away in that night throwing, O monarch, all their flambeaus down. Thereafter wrought up with rage, Alamvusha struck Bhima's son in that fierce battle, with numerous arrows, like a guide striking an elephant with the goad. Then Ghatotkacha cut off into small fragments the chariot, the driver and the weapons of his opponent and laughed terrible. Then like clouds showering torrents of rain on the Meru

mountain, Ghotolkacha poured showers of shafts on Karna, Alamvusha and all the rest of Kurus. Afflicted by the Rakshasa, the Kuru troops became greatly agitated.

22. The four kinds of forces of which your army consisted, began to press and crush one another. Then the son of Jatasura deprived of his car and driver,

23. Wrathfully struck Ghotolkacha in that battle with his bare fists. Thus struck Ghototcacha trembled

24—25. Like a mountain with its trees, creepers and grass at the ttme of an earth-quake. Then the son of Bhimasena furious with rage, raising his own foe-slaying arm that resembled a bludgeon, dealt a severe blow to Jatasura's son; thus furiously crushing him, the son of Hidimva quickly threw him down,

26. And then seizing him by his two arms began to press him with great force against the earth. Then the son of Jatasura freeing himself from the grasp of Ghotolkacha;

27. Once more rose up quickly and rushed furiously upon the latter. Alamvusha also, throwing down and dragging the Rakshasa

28—29. Ghotolkacha, out of rage began to press him against the earth. Then between those two roaring heroes of huge proportion, namely Ghotolkacha and Alamvusha, a battle raged that was extremely terrible and horripilating. Then those highly proud heroes, each desirous of getting advantage over the other by means of their illusive powers,

30. Fought on with great fury like the puissant Indra and the son of Virochana. Becoming fire and the ocean, again Garuda and Takshaka,

31. And once a cloud and a tempest and again thunder and a mighty mountain and an elephant and a tiger, and Rahu and the sun,

32. They thus exhibited a hundred different kinds of illusions, desirous of compassing each other's destruction. Indeed Alamvusha and Ghotolkacha fought most wonderfully.

33. With bludgeons and maces and lances and mallets and battle axes, and clubs and crests of mountains, they then struck each other.

34. Riding on the back of elephants or horses, or on their chariots, those foremost of Rakshasas both possessed of potent illusive powers, fought with each other in that battle.

35. Thereafter, O king, Ghotolkacha, impelled by a desire for killing Alamvusha and excited to the highest pitch of fury soared aloft and then came down even like a hawk.

36. Then seizing that foremost of the Rakshasas, namely, the huge-bodied Alamvusha, he raised him high and then dashed him against the earth, like Vishnu dashing Maya against the ground.

37—38. Then with a sword of beautiful appearance, Ghotolkacha of infinite prowess cut off, O king, from the trunk of his fierce and mighty foe, his terrible head that was even then uttering dreadful roars, and that looked frightful, O mighty monarch.

39. Then holding that blood-stained head by the hair, Ghotolkacha quickly proceeded towards the chariot of Duryodhana.

40. Then the mighty-armed Rakshasa, approaching the car, smilingly threw that head with contorted aspect and dishevelled hair in that car of the king.

41. Then like clouds during the rainy season, he uttered a tremendous roar; and then O king, addressing Duryodhana he said these words:—

42. "Here is your friend slain whose prowess you have witnessed yourself. You are destined to see the death of Karna and that of your ownself.

43. There is a saying, O king, that no one, desirous of keeping his morality, profit and pleasure unprejudiced should never approach a king a Brahmana and a female with empty hands, (*i.e.*, without presents.)

44. Do you live without any anxiety whatever up to the time I do not slay Karna." Having thus spoken, O foremost of men, he rushed against Karna,

45. Scattering hundreds of sharp arrows and directing them at the head of Karna. Then, O mighty monarch, a battle of terrible aspect and great fierceness commenced between the human hero and the Rakshasa —battle that filled every heart with great admiration.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-fifth chapter, the slaughter of Alamvusha, in the Ghototkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXVI.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Dhritarastra said:—

1. How did that battle between Vikartana's son Karna and the Rakshasa

Ghatotkacha rage at that dead of night when they encountered each other ?

2. What appearance did that terrible Rakshasa then assume ? How looked his car and his steeds and what was the nature of his weapons ?

3. What was the measure of his horses, his standard and his bow ? What kind of armour and head-gear did he then wear ? O Sanjaya, expert as you are in the art of narration, tell me all this as I am asking you about them.

Sanjaya said :—

4. Ghototkacha was of gigantic proportion ; his eyes were crimson ; the hue of his countenance was coppery ; his belly was low and sunk. The hair on his body were erect, his head was green ; his ears were straight like shafts ; and his cheeck bones were high.

5. His mouth was large, exending from ear to ear. His teeth were sharp and four of them were long and pointed. His tongue and his lips were long and of a coppery hue. His brows were long drawn. His nose was thick.

6. His body was of blue complexion, his neck was red. Tall as a mountain he was frightful to look at ; of huge stature huge arms and huge head, he possessed unequalled strength.

7. His limbs were hard and ugly, the hair on his head was tied in a ugly shape upwards. His hips were spacious and his navel was deep. His proportions were gigantic although they were not so strong.

8. His arms were duly adorned, and that one of potent illusive energy wore Angadas and a cuirass on his breast like a circle of fire on the breast of a mountain.

9. A bright and beautiful diadem made of gold adorned his head—diadem of which every part was proportionate and resplendent and which looked like an arch.

10. His ear-rings were effulgent like the morning sun and his garlands were of gold and exceedingly bright. His body was cased in a massive brazen armour of great effulgence.

11. His chariot of gigantic size and of the measure of a *Nalwa* and covered with bear-skin was adorned with a hundred tinkling bells and from its standard fluttered numerous crimson banners.

12. It was well furnished with all sorts of weapons, offensive and defensive, and was decked with a festoon of bannerets. It possessed eight wheels and its clatter resembled the deep rumble of rain-clouds.

13. The horses yoked thereto were stout, mettled, of chequered complexion, fleet, of red eyes and like infuriate elephants.

14. Those indefatigable and spirited steeds bore the dreadful Rakshasa to battle, neighing and throwing back their thick mains repeatedly.

15. A Rakshasa of frightful eyes, and decked with bright ear-rings and possessing a fierce mouth acted as his charioteer, checking the horses by the reins that were as bright as the rays of the sun.

16. Accompanied by that charioteer he came like the sun accompanied by his charioteer Aruna (dawn). Looking like a high mountain enveloped in cloudy masses,

17. A huge standard, touching the very clouds was set upon his chariot. A dreadful vulture of crimson body and flesh-eating was the device on his standard.

18. The Rakshasa then advanced, forcibly stretching his bow of which the twang resembled the rattle of Indra's thunder, and the string was very tough and which measured twelve *Aranis* in length and one in breadth.

19. Filling all the quarters of the heaven with arrows of the measure of the Aksha of a car, the Rakshasa assailed Karna in that night that witnessed the destruction of so many heroes.

20. Proudly seated on his car, as he stretched his bow, the twang that was heard resembled the rumble of the roaring thunder.

21. Frightened at that sound, your troops O Bharata, trembled like the surging billows of the sea.

22. Beholding that one of frightful eyes and dreadful aspect rush towards himself, the son of Radha quickly withstood him in all cheerfulness.

23. Karna then advanced against the smiting Rakshasa smiting him in return from a near point, like an elephant rushing against another or a bull charging another.

24. (Then the dreadful collision, O mighty monarch, that took place between Karna and the Rakshasa, resembled O ruler of men that between Sakra and Samvara (in days gone by).

25. Each then grasping a fearful bow of loud twang began to wound and cover the other with mighty shafts.

26. Then penetrating each other's brazen armours, they pierced each other with shafts of depressed knots, shot from bows drawn to the fullest stretch.

27. Then like two tigers mangling each

other with their claws, or two elephants with their tusks, they mangled each other with their lances and arrows and javelins.

28. Mangling each other's body, aiming their shafts at each other, and burning each other with myriads of shafts, they could not be gazed at.

29. Covered with arrow-wounds all over the body and steeped in torrents of blood, they both looked beautiful like two hills of red chalk with rivulets flowing down their sides.

30. Those two mighty car-warriors, though they were striving hard and each had his limbs torn open with points of shafts, could not make each other flinch or tremble.

31. That nocturnal combat between Karna and the Rakshasa, which both regarded as a game having their lives for the stake, seemed for a long time to be a equal one.

32. As Ghototkacha placed keen shafts on his string and as he let them off, his foes and friends alike became terrified with the twang of his bow.

33. Then, O king, Karna was unable to gain any advantage over Ghototkacha. Thereafter that foremost of all persons versed in the use of weapons, invoked into existence a celestial weapon.

34. Thereupon the king of the Rakshasas beholding a celestial weapon aimed at him, by Karna, brought into use his Rakshasa illusion.

35. Instantly he was encircled by a numerous force of dreadful looking Rakshasas armed with lances and large rocks and stones and clubs.

36. Beholding the Rakshasa come with an uplifted weapon like the Destroyer of beings armed with his fatal bludgeon, all the kings of your host were filled with terror.

37. Frightened at the war-cries uttered by Ghototkacha the elephants discharged urine and men were sorely afflicted.

38. Then a mighty shower of rocks and stones fell on all sides, being poured incessantly by the Rakshasas, who had acquired greater strength, in consequence of the hour being mid-night.

39. Iron wheels, *Bhusundis*, javelins, lances and spears and Sataghnis and battle axes, then began to fall in torrents.

40. Then beholding that battle fierce to the extreme, your sons and your warriors sorely afflicted (with terror) took to their heels.

41. The proud Karna alone, ever boastful of the strength of his weapons, was not terrified and he continued to stay on the field, baffling with his arrows the illusions displayed by Ghatotkacha. Ghatotkacha then discharged dreadful arrows for compassing the death of Suta's son.

42. Then those arrows piercing through Karna and steeped in blood entered the earth like so many infuriate snakes.

43. Thereupon the light-handed and puissant son of Suta excited to the highest pitch of fury, prevailing over Ghototkacha, pierced him with ten shafts.

44. Pierced in his vital parts and extremely pained by the son of Suta, Ghototkacha took up a discus of celestial make having a thousands pokes.

45. Then the son of Bhima, desirous of slaying the son of Adhiratha, hurled at the latter that discus furnished with a razor-sharp edge, of the effulgence of the morning sun and decked with jems and jewels.

46. That discus of great impetus and hurled with great force, was cut off into fragments with the shafts of Karna, and it fell down on the earth baffled in its object, like the hopes and purposes of an unfortunate man.

47. Beholding his discus thus baffled, Ghototkacha was highly enraged and he then covered Karna with his arrows like Rahu covering the sun.

48. But the son of Suta Karna possessed prowess equal to that of Rudra or Upendra or Indra himself, dauntlessly covered Ghatotkacha's chariot with his winged arrows.

49. Thereafter a gold-decked mace was whirled and hurled at Karna by Ghatotkacha. But the former cutting it off with his arrows felled it on the ground.

50. Then soaring into the sky and roaring like destructive clouds, the huge-bodied Rakshasa poured a veritable shower of trees from the skies.

51. Then Karna pierced with his shafts the son of Bhimasena versed in illusion when he was ranging through the skies, like the sun piercing the clouds with his rays.

52. Next cutting his car into fragments and slaying all his horses, Karna covered him with arrows, like a cloud charged with rain.

53. There was not even space of two finger's breadth in the body of Ghototkacha that was not pierced with Karna's shafts. Soon the Rakshasa appeared to be like a porcupine with its quills erect.

54. So completely was he covered with shafts that we could not in that battle, any

onger see either Ghototkacha's person, or his horses, or his car, or standard.

55. Then the Rakshasa versed in illusion destroying by his own weapon the celestial weapon of Karna, began to fight with Suta's son, aided by his own illusive powers.

56. Indeed he fought on with Karna, aided by his illusive powers and exhibiting his great agility. Then showers of shafts began to fall from invisible quarters in the skies.

57. Then Bhimasena's son possessed of potent powers of illusion, O best of the Kurus, assumed, by the help of those powers, a dreadful appearance and began to confound the Kouravas, O Bharata.

58. The puissant Rakshasa then assuming many terrible heads, began to swallow up the celestial weapons of Karna.

59. Soon again, the huge Rakshasas with hundreds of wounds on his body seemed to lie cheerlessly and like one dead, on the field.

60. The foremost of the Kouravas then considering Ghatotkacha to be dead uttered loud joyous shouts. Soon however, he was seen to assume new forms and roving in all direction.

61. Next he was seen to assume a huge form with a hundred heads and hundred stomachs and looked like the *mainaka* mountain.

62. Once again he became small about the measure of the thumb and moved about transversely or soared high like the surging billows of the ocean.

63. Tearing through the earth, he dived again into the waters. Once seen here he was next seen rising on the surface at a different place.

64. Then coming down from the welkin, he was seen standing, covered in mail, on a chariot adorned with gold, having wandered through earth and sky and all the points of the compass aided by his powers of illusion.

65. Then going near the vicinity of Karna's chariot, Ghatotkacha with his earrings moving, dauntlessly addressed the son of Suta, O king, in these words :—

66. " Wait a little, O son of Suta, whither shall you go with your life, avoiding me? To-day I shall remove your itching for fight on the field of battle."

67. Having thus spoken, the Rakshasa of fierce prowess, with his eyes red in rage, soared into the sky and laughed a tremendous laugh.

68. Then Ghatotkacha assailed Karna like a lion attacking an elephant; and he then covered with his showers of arrows of the measure of the *Aksha* of a car,

69. That foremost car-warrior *viz.*, Karna, like a cloud with showers of rain. But Karna repulsed that arrowy shower before it could reach him.

70. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, seeing his illusions nullified by Karna, Ghatotkacha once more put forth another illusion and rendered himself invisible.

71. He then became a huge mountain with numersous peaks, covered with tall trees. From that mountain streams of lances, spears, swords and maces began to issue out incessantly.

72. Beholding that mountain resembling a heap of antimony from which fierce weapons continuously flowed out, Karna was not at all daunted.

73. Then smiling, Karna invoked into existence a celestial weapon. Then that foremost of mountains, cut and thrown off by that weapon of Karna, was completely destroyed.

74. Thereafter the Rakshasa becoming a blue cloud decked with the rain-bow began to cover the son of Suta with a fierce shower of stones.

75. Then that foremost of all persons versed in the use of weapons, *viz.*, Karna, the son of Vikartana, discharging the *Vayavya* weapon destroyed that blue cloud.

76. Then, O king, covering the quarters of the compass with his arrows, Karna baffled the weapons shot by Ghatotkacha.

77. Then the highly puissant son of Bhimasena smiling the while invoked into existence an all-powerful illusion against that mighty car-warrior *viz.*, Karna.

78. Beholding then that foremost of car-warriors *viz.*, Ghatotkacha, dauntlessly approach him surrounded by a large number of Rakshasas,

79. That resembled lions and tigers and infuriate powerful elephants, some mounted on elephants, some on chariots and some on horses,

80. All bearing various kinds of weapons and wearing diverse kinds of armour and ornaments,—indeed beholding Ghatotkacha surrounded by these fearful Rakshasas like Vasava by the Marutas,

81. The mighty bowman Karna began to fight with him fiercely. Then Ghatotkacha piercing Karna with five arrows,

82—84. Uttered a tremendous war-cry, filling all the kings with terror. Once

more with an *Anjalika*, Ghatotkach quickly cut off the bow of Karna held in his hands together with the arrows fitted thereon. Thereupon Karna taking up another mighty bow capable of bearing a greater strain and looking like the bow of Indra itself, began to stretch it forcibly ; thereafter, O king, Karna sped arrows,

85. Furnished with golden wings, capable of slaying foes and ranging through the welkin at those Rakshasas. Afflicted with those shafts that host of broad-chested Rakshasas,

86. Appeared agitated like a host of wild elephants attacked by a lion. Burning with his arrows the Rakshasas and their horses, charioteers and elephant, O lord,

87. The heroic Karna appeared like the god of fire burning down creatures at the end of a *yuga*. Slaying that Rakshasa host, the son of Suta appeared beautiful,

88. Like the god Maheswara after he had destroyed Tripura in the days of yore. Among the thousands of kings belonging to the Pandavas, O sire,

89—91. There was none who could then even look at Karna, O ruler of men, except the powerful Ghotokacha, that foremost of Rakshasas who was possessed of terrible energy and might and who burning with wrath, then looked like the Destroyer himself. Excited as he was with wrath flames of fire seemed to issue out of his eyes, like burning drops of oil from a pair of flambeaus ; then striking his palms against each other and bitting his nether lip,

92. The Rakshasa was seen to ride a car the creation of his own illusion to which were yoked asses looking like elephants and having the heads of *Pisachas*.

93. Then excited with rages he addressed his charioteer saying, " Take me near the son of Suta." Then that foremost of car-warriors riding on that chariot of fearful aspect,

94. Once more proceeded, O ruler of men, to fight a terrible fight with the son of Suta. Then that Rakshasa, once more excited with rage, hurled at Suta's son,

95. An *Asani* of dreadful appearance furnished with eight wheels and manufactured by Rudra himself. Placing his bow on his car, and jumping down on the earth Karna seized that weapon,

96. And hurled it back at Ghototkach. The latter however had jumped down from his car. Meanwhile that highly resplendent weapon burning down the Rakshasa's car with its charioteer, horses and standard,

97. Entered the earth, piercing through her bowels, thereby filling the gods with wonder. Then all creatures applauded Karna,

98. Inasmuch as he succeeded in grasping the Asani of celestial make, having jumped down from his car. Having achieved this feat, Karna again ascended his car.

99—100. Thereafter that afflicter of foes, namely the son of Suta began to shoot his arrows. O giver of honour what Karna then achieved in that battle of fierce aspect was incapable of being acheived by any other creature. Then struck with his *Narachas* like a mountain by showers of rain,

101—102. Ghototkacha of aerial form once more disappeared from the view. Fighting in this way, the huge Rakshasa, the slayer of foes, destroyed the celestial weapons of Karna, by means of his agility and illusive powers. Thus although his weapons were destroyed by the illusive powers of that Rakshasa,

103. Karna dauntlessly fought on with him. Thereupon the highly puissant son of Bhima, O king, being wroked up with with rage.

104—105. Multiplied himself many times thereby inspiring terror in to the hearts of mighty car-warriors. Thereafter from all the points of the compass, lions, tigers, hyenas, fire-tongued snakes and iron-beaked rangers of the sky, began to issue out. Covered with the swiftly-flying arrows shot from Karna's bow,

106. That gigantic Rakshasa looking like the prince of mountains, disappeared then and there. Then numerous Rakshasas *Pisachas*, *Yatudhanas* and

107. Packs of wolves and leopards of frightful aspects, rushed upon Karna for devouring him.

108. These then tried to frighten Karna by their fierce yelsl. With many dreadful weapons ready for use, and steeped in blood,

109. Karna pierced each of those monsters. Then with a celestial weapons baffling that illusion of the Rakshasa,

110. He wounded the former's fierce steeds with arrows of depressed knots. Those steeds thus maimed and deprived of their limbs and with their backs lacerated with Karna's arrows,

111. Fell down on the earth, even before the eyes of that Rakshasa. The son of Hidimva seeing his illusions baffled once more made himself invisible, speaking thus,

to Vikartana's son—"I will presently compass your slaughter."

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-sixth chapter, the combat between Karna and Ghototkacha, in the Ghototkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXVII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the battle between Karna and that Rakshasa had been thus progressing, Alayudha the prince of the Rakshasa, endued with great strength made his appearance on the field of battle.

2. Supported by a large division of troops and surrounded by thousands of Rakshasas of dreadful aspect, he approached Duryodhana.

3. Indeed surrounded by many heroic Rakshasas of diverse appearances, he came there recollecting the ancient quarrel with the Pandavas. His relative, the Brahamana-devouring Vaka had been slain (by Bhima),

4. So also the highly puissant Krimira, and his friend Hidimva. He waited for a long time, keeping alive the memory of his old enmity with the Pandavas.

5. Now informed of this nocturnal battle he came there desirous of compassing the death of Bhima. Then like an infuriate elephant, or an enraged snake,

6—7. That one longing to engage in the fight spoke these words addressing Duryodhana :—'O mighty monarch, you have heard how Bhima slew my relatives the Rakshasas Vaka, Krimira and Hidimva in battle. In days gone by, he ravished our daughter Hidimva,

8—10. Utterly disregarding ourselves and other Rakshasas. What shall I say more ; O king, I have now come of my own accord here to slay him with his followers and cars, and steeds and elephants as also the son of Hidimva with all his counsellors. To-day slaying all the sons of Kunti, headed by the son of Vasudeva, I will eat them up in company with all my followers. Prevent all your troops from battle with the Pandavas ; we will fight with them."

11. Having heard those words of his, king Duryodhana was filled with delight ; and surrounded as he was with his brothers welcoming the Rakshasa, he addressed these words to him.

12. "Placing you and your followers in our front, we shall fight with our enemies. My froops, impelled by the enmity they bear against the Pandavas cannot be restrained."

13. "Then let it be so," replying thus to the king, that foremost of the Rakshasas, accompanied by his man-eating followers, dashed in fury against Bhimasena.

14. His person was effulgent and his chariot burnt with the splendour of the solar disc. Indeed, O foremost of kings, he looked as beautiful as Ghatotkacha himself.

15. His spacious chariot also emitted unequalled clatter and was adorned with numerous arches and covered with bear-skins and measured a *Nalwa.*

16. His steeds were also fleet and prodigious like elephants and they brayed like asses. Living upon flesh and blood and of huge bodies, a full hundred of them were yoked to his car.

17. The clatter of his car also resembled the rumble of mighty clouds. His bow was also tough and strong with a hard string.

18. His arrows also were furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone and they resembled Akshas of cars. That hero also possessed might of arms like that of Ghatotkacha himself.

19. His standard also perched upon by hosts of vultures and ravens looked like the sun or the fire ; in beauty of person he excelled Ghototkacha and his countenance was flushed with rage.

20. He wore resplendent Angadas, and effulgent diadem and garlands. His head-gear and sword and floral garlands were duly tied. He was armed with maces, *Bhusundis*, bludgeons, ploughs and bows and he was covered with a coat of mail tough and impenetrable like the skin o elephants.

21. Then crushing the Pandava divisions with that car of his of the effulgence of the fire, and roving thither and thither he looked beautiful, like a mass of clouds in the welkin fringed with streaks of lighting.

22. Then the foremost royal figters of the Pandava host also, endued with great might and cased in mail and armed with shields fought on delightfully, O king, on all sides (in that battle with Alayudha).

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-seventh chapter, the battle between Alayudha and the Pandavas, in the Ghototkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXVIII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then beholding Alayudha of fierce deeds come to fight on their behalf, all the Kouravas, were exceedingly delighted.

2. So also your sons, headed by Duryodhana himself, were filled with joy like persons, desirous of crossing a sea, getting rafts, when there was no chance of getting it.

3. Having received Alayudha, that foremost prince of the Rakshasas, with a respectful welcome, the kings of your army considered themselves as born anew.

4. Meanwhile as that nocturnal battle raged between Karna and the Rakshasa—battle that, though terrible and superhuman and fierce, was yet delightful to the eye,

5. The Panchalas and other kings became passive spectators of it. At the same time, O king, your troops, though protected all over the field by their commanders,

6. As also Drona and Drona's son and Kripa and others uttered loud wails, saying *All is lost.* Indeed beholding on the field those terrible feats of Hidimva's son,

7. All your fighters were filled with anxiety; and uttering shrieks of distress they almost lost their senses. All your troops then, O king, became hopeless of Karna's life.

8. Then Duryodhana, beholding Karna hard pressed, summoned that foremost of the Rakshasas Alayudha, and addressed him in these words :—

9. "Yonder is Vikartana's son Karna engaged in battle with the son of Hidimva. Behold he is achieving feats worthy of his valour and strength.

10. Behold there lie the royal heroic warriors slain and wounded with various weapons by the son of Bhimasena, like so many trees crushed by a huge tusked elephant.

11. Amongst all my kingly allies, I have allotted this (Rakshasa Ghatotkacha), with your permission as your share in battle. O herde, do you bring him down displaying your prowess.

12. O slayer of foes, allow not this sinful Ghatotkacha to crush Vikartana's son through his illusive powers, before you despatch him."

13. Thus spoken to by the king, that Rakshasa, of fierce prowess, replied to former saying "let it be so"; and then that mighty-armed one rushed against Ghatotkacha.

14. Thereupon, O lord, the son of Bhimasena also, bearing alone Karna for a while, began to afflict his advancing adversary with this shafts.

15. Then the battle, that commenced between those two enraged Rakshasa chiefs, resembled that between two infuriate elephants both desirous of consorting with the same she-elephant in her season in the woods.

16. Meanwhile, left alone by the Rakshasa that foremost of car-warriors *viz.,* Karna, rushed against Bhimasena, on his car of solar effulgence.

17. Then disregarding the rushing Karna, and beholding Ghatotkacha hard pressed by Alayudha, like a bull engaged with a lion,

18. That foremost of all smiters, *viz.,* Bhimasena, rushed against the chariot of Alayudha, riding on his own car of solar effulgence and shooting showers of sharp arrows.

19. Then, O lord, beholding Bhimasena approach, Alayudha, leaving Ghatotkacha alone, rushed against the former.

20. Then, O master, that slayer of Rakshasa Bhima, furiously encountering that foremost of Rakshasas, covered him and his followers with showers of arrows.

21. Similarly, O king, that subduer of foes namely, Alayudha, cutting off Bhima's arrows with *straight going* shafts of his, repeatedly covered the latter with his arrows.

22. On the other hand all these Rakshasas, armed with various weapons and dreadful-looking, assailed Bhimasena from all sides desirous of securing victory to your sons.

23. Then the highly puissant Bhimasena, wounded by those numerous Rakshasas, pierced each of them in return with five sharp arrows.

24. Those Rakshasas, of cruel minds, when thus engaged with Bhima, began to utter loud roars and to run in all the ten directions of the compass.

25. The mighty Rakshas, then beholding the troops belonging to him fly away from fear of Bhima, rushed furiously upon the latter and covered him with arrows.

26—27. In that battle Bhimasena then shot at Alayudha many shafts of keen points. Thereupon Alayudha, in that battle, quckly put off or caught hold of several arrows

shot by Bhimasena. Then Bhima of dradful prowess, beholding that feat of the foremost of the Rakshasas,

28—29. Hurled at him with great force a mace whose fall resembled the fall of thunder. With his own mace then Alayudha struck the burning mace of Bhima, whereupon the latter flew towards Bhima. Then the son of Kunti covered that foremost of the Rakshasas with a perfect shower of arrows.

30. The Rakshasa baffled even those arrows of Bhima with his own sharp arrows. Then all the Rakshasa troops of dreadful aspect,

31. At the command of their leader, slew all the elephants of the Pandava division. The Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the horses and the excellent elephants (of the Pandava host),

32. Then could find no security being afflicted severely by the Rakshasa. Beholding then the progress of that mighty and terrific battle,

33. The foremost of all male beings addressing Dhananjaya said these words. "Behold the mighty-armed Bhima succumb to the prince of the Rakshasas.

34. Do you rush to his rescue, O son of Pandu and do not hesitate. Let Dhristadyumna and Uttamanjas,

35. Accompanied by the mighty car-warriors of Drupada's division, assail Karna. Let Nakula, Sahadava, and the puissant Yuyudhana,

36—37. Exert themselves in slaughtering the other Rakshasas at your command O son of Pandu. O mighty-armed one, do you also hold in check this division headed by Drona, in as much as a great panic has seized our troops now." When Krishna had thus spoken, those foremost of car-warriors, as appointed,

38. Assailed Karna and the inferior Rakshasas. Then with shafts shot from full drawn bows and resembling snakes of virulent poison,

39. The highly puissant prince of the Rakshasas cut off Bhima's bow. Then again that mighty hero, with sharp arrows, slew Bhima's steeds and charioteer,

40. Even, O Bharata, before the very eyes of Bhima himself. Then deprived of his horses and charioteer Bhima, jumping down from his chariot,

41. Hurled a heavy and dreadful mace at the Rakshasa, uttering a fierce roar. Then as that mighty mace o fierce roar was flying towards him,

42. The fearful Rakshasa broke it down with his own mace and then uttered a terrible roar. Then beholding that fearful and awe-inspiring feat achieved by the prince of the Rakshasas,

43. Bhima, filled with joy, grasped another fierce mace. Thereupon a terrible encounter raged between the Rakshasas and men,

44. Causing the earth to tremble repeatedly with the fall of their maces. Then again throwing aside their maces and bearing each other,

45. They began to strike each other with their fists emitting a sound like that of the thunder. With car-wheels, and axle and Akshas, and Adisthanas and Upskaras,

46. Whatever things they could then get, with that they rushed furiously against one another shedding blood profusely and encountering each other.

47. They began to drag each other like two infuriate elephants. Then Hrishikesha, ever devoted to the welfare of the Pandavas, beholding that combat (between Bhima and Alayudha) urged Hidimva's son to the rescue of his father.

Thus ends the one hundred seventy-eighth chapter, the battle fought by Alayudha in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXIX.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then beholding Bhima hard pressed in battle by the Rakshasa Vasudeva's son approaching Ghatotkacha said these words to him.

2. "O mighty armed one, behold Bhima as if devoured by the Rakshasa in battle, before the eyes of all troops and before those of yours, O highly effulgent one.

3. Therefore for a time leaving alone Karna, do you quickly slay Alayudha that foremost of the Rakshasas, Omighty armed one, after which you shall slay Karna."

4. Then hearing the words of that one of Vrishni race, and leaving Karna alone for a while, the highly puissant Ghatotkacha, that brother of Vaka, fought with that prince of the Raksashas.

5. In that night the battle, that raged between the Rakshasa Alayudha and the son of Hidimva, was fierce and confused to the extreme.

6—7. Meanwhile the mighty car-warriors Yuyudhana, Nakula and Sahadeva began to pierce with keen shafts the warriors of Alayudha, *viz.*, those grim looking heroic Rakshasas, who, wielding their bows, were rushing impetuously against them.

8. The diadem-decked Vibhatsu, O monarch, in that battle, discharging arrows on all sides, began to overthrow many foremost of Kshatriyas.

9. Similarly, O king, Karna caused many kings to fly away—including Dhristadyumna, Shikhandin and other mighty car-warriors of the Panchalas.

10. Beholding them thus slaughtered and wounded Bhimasena, of terrible prowess, quickly rushed against Karna shooting sharp arrows.

11. Then those warriors, *viz.*, Nakula, Sahadeva and the mighty car-warrior, Satyaki, also came to the spot where Suta's son was, having slain many Rakshashas.

12—13. These then fought with Karna, and the Panchalas fought with Drona. Meanwhile, Alayudha, excited with rage, began to strike that subduer of enemies, *viz.*, Ghatotkacha on the head with a huge bludgeon. In consequence of that stroke the highly puissant son of Bhima,

14—17. Squatted down, overwhelmed with a partial swoon. Thereafter he hurled at Alayudha a mace, looking like a blazing flame of fire, decked with a hundred bells and adorned with gold. Hurled forcibly by that one of fierce acheivments, that mace crushed into pieces the horses, the driver and the loudly rattling chariots of Alayudha. Then betaking to his illusive prowess the latter then jumped down from his car of which the horses, the wheels Askhasas and standard and Kurara had all been shattered. Then through his illusive powers he showered a copious downpour of blood on the field.

18. Then sky the appeared to be overspread with darts, masses of clouds with flashes of lightning. A thunder storm then made its appearanee accompanied by rumble of clouds and claps of thunder.

19, Loud clappling sounds were also then heard in that combat. Beholding that illusion created by the Rakshasa Alayudha, the cannibal Ghotokacha,

20. Soaring high, destroyed it by his own illusive power. Possessed of potent illusive powers Alayudha then seeing his own illusions nullified by those of his adversary,

21. Began to pour a heavy downpour of stones on Ghatotkacha. That terrible shower of stones, the brave Ghatotkacha baffled by means of a shower of arrows. They then poured on each other diverse weapons,

23. Such as iron bludgeons, lances, maces sharp clubs, mallets, tridents, sabres, spears, long and small, Kampanas,

24. Keen shafts, both long and broad-headed, and arrows and discuses, and battle axes, and Ayagudas, and sharp arrows and weapons with heads like those of kine, *Ulukhalas*,.

25—27. And they then struck each other tearing up many kinds of large branched trees, such as Sami, Pilu, Karira, Champaka, and O Bharata, Juguda, Vadari, blossoming Kovidara, Plaksha, Arimedhas, Palasha, and the Camian, the Peepul, as also with numerous crests of mountains decked with various kinds of metals.

28. The clash, produced by those trees and mountain crests, became as loud as the sound of the roaring thunder. Indeed the battle, that then raged between Alayudha and Bhima's son was, O monarch, fierce in the extreme,

29—30. Like that which took place in the days of yore between the two monkey chiefs Vali and Sugriva. They wounded each other with shafts and various other kinds of weapons as also with keen-edged swords. Then those two mighty Rakshasas, rushing against each other, caught hold of each other by the hair.

31. And those two huge warriors, covered with numerous wounds on their bodies and blood and perspiration trickling down, appeared beautiful like two mighty masses of clouds pouring rain.

32. Then rushing with great violence and whirling the Rakshasa on high and dashing him down] again, Hidimva's son cut off the large head of his adversary.

33. Then holding that head graced with a pair of ear-rings, the puissant Ghatotkacha uttered a terrific roar.

34. Beholding the huge-bodied brother of Vaka, that subduer of foes, slain, the Panchalas and the Pandavas uttered tremendous war-cries.

35. Thereupon on the fall of that Rakshasa the Pandava troops struck up thousands of drums and ten thousand conches.

36. That night then exclusively brought victory to the Pandavas ; echoing with the sound of musical instruments and illumined with torches it then appeared highly beautiful.

37. Then the highly puissant son of Bhima threw that head of Alayudha at the face of Duryodhana who was then rendered insensible.

38. Thereupon Duryodhana, beholding the heroic Alayudha slain, became filled with great anxiety together with all his troops.

39. Alayudha, having come to Duryodhana out of his own accord, recollecting his old enmity, had said to the latter, that he would slay Bhima.

40. The Kuru king had considered the slaughter of Bhima to be certain and had considered the length of the days of his brother also to be measured.

41. Then beholding that Alayudha (on whom all his hopes rested) slain by the son of Bhimasena, Duryodhana considered Bhima's vow (about the slaughter of himself and his brothers) to be already fulfilled.

Thus ends the one hundred and seventy-ninth chapter, the slaughter of Alayudha in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXX.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having slain the Rakshasa Alayudha Ghatotkacha was greatly delighted ; and then standing at the very van of the troops he began to utter diverse kinds of roars.

2. Those loud roars of his, capable of his making an elephant tremble, entering into the car of troops, struck a great panic to their hearts, O mighty monarch.

3. Meanwhile the mighty-armed Karna, beholding the highly puissant son of Bhima engaged with Alayudha, rushed against the Panchalas.

4. He proceeded against Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin, each with ten strong and straight shafts, shot from his bow drawn to its fullest stretch.

5. Thereafter with a group of other arrows, consisting of *Narachas*, &c., the son of Suta caused Yudhamanyu, Uttamanjas and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki to tremble.

6. The bows of all those warriors also, O king, engaged in shooting shafts right and left, were also seen incessantly to be drawn in a circle.

7. In that night the sound of their palms and the twang of their bow-strings and the clatter of their car-wheels were so loud as to resemble the rumble of cloud at the end of summer.

8. Then, O monarch, that battle appeared to be a cloud of which the sound of car-clatter and bow-twang constituted the roar of thunder ; the bows of warriors its flashes and showers of arrows its torrents of rain.

9. O foremost of kings, then Vikartana's son Karna, that crusher of his foes, immovable like a hill and equal to a hill in personal proportions,destroyed that wonderful shower of arrows.

10. Then Vikartana's son, high-souled, ever devoted to the interests of your sons, began to slay his adversaries in that battle, with *Tomaras*, which, in their fall, resembled the thunder-bolt, and also with sharp arrows furnished with variegated wings of gold.

11. Some (of the enemy's host) then had their standards broken and torn ; some had their bodies torn and mangled with sharp arrows. Some were deprived of their charioteers, some of their horses, and some were soon maimed by Vikartana's son.

12. Getting no refuge, the Panchala hosts then fell back upon the division of Yudhisthira. Beholding these troops broken and compelled to turn away, Ghatotkacha then became excited to the highest pitch of fury.

13. Then mounting on his excellent car adorned with gold and gems, he began to roar like a lion. Thereafter approaching Vikartana's son Karna he pierced him with arrows resembling the bolt of Heaven itself.

14. They both then covered the welkin with showers of barbed arrows, *Narachas*, *Sinimukhas*, *Nalikas*, *Dandas*, *Asanis*, *Vatsyadantas*, *Varahakarnas*, and broad-headed and razor-faced arrows, and shafts pointed like horns.

15. The welkin then, shrouded with that arrowy shower, appeared in consequence of these gold-winged shafts of burning effulgence flying straight through it, as if hung with festoons of beautiful flowers.

16. Of unequalled splendour, they both were each other's match and they then wounded each other with excellent weapons. None could then find any superiority of either of those two excellent heroes.

17. The battle, that was thus fought between the sons of Surya and Bhima and in which showers of arrows were discharged, looked highly charming, and presented almost an unequalled aspect like what is

seen in the fierce encounter between Rahu and the sun in the heavens.

Sanjaya said :—

18. When O king, Ghatotkacha, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, found that he could get no advantage over Karna he invoked into existence an exceedingly fierce weapon.

19. Then with that weapon having at first slain Karna's steed, the Rakshasa next destroyed his driver. And then the son of Hidimva quickly rendered himself invisible even then and there.

Dhritarastra said :—

20. When that Rakshasa, after fighting by underhand measures, had thus disappeared, O Sanjaya, describe to me what befell my troops then.

Sanjaya said :—

21. Then beholding the Rakshasa disappear, all the Kurus then exclained aloud saying :—" Appearing next to view, the Rakshasa, fighting by underhand means, will certainly slay Karna."

22. Thereupon Karna, who was endued with extreme lightness in the use of diverse weapons, covered all the points of the compass with his arrowy net-work. Then in consequence of the welkin being darkened by those showers of arrows, no creature could be seen distinguished.

23. So great was the lightness of hand displayed by the son of Suta that nobody could then mark when he touched his quiver with his fingers, when he placed his arrows on the bow-string, and when he aimed and let them off. The whole welkin was then darkened with his shafts.

24. Then a fierce and dreadful illusion was invoked into existence in the welkin by the Rakshasa. We then beheld in the sky what appeared to be a mass of red cloud resembling the terrible flames of a raging fire.

25. O ruler of the Kurus, then from that cloud were seen to issue out flashes of lightning and burning flame-beams. Tremendous roars also issued therefrom, resembling the din of thousands of drums beaten simultaneously.

26. From it also fell many gold-winged shafts, spears, javelins, heavy clubs and such other weapons, as also battle-axes, swords cleansed with oil, and axes of blazing edges, and darts,

27. And spiked bludgeons pouring shinning rays, charming maces made of iron, long lances of keen points, heavy maces adorned with gold and entwined with strings, and Sataghnis all around.

28. Large stones dropped from it and thousands of thunderbolts with loud clap, and hundreds of wheels and razors of the effulgence of fire.

29. Shooting countless arrows Karna then failed to destroy that thick and blazing shower of lances, swords, clubs, mallets, thunderbolts *Asanis* and axes.

30. Then a tremendous uproar was caused there as horses fell struck with arrows, elephants came down being crushed with thunderbolts and car-warriors fell deprived of life by other weapons.

31. Afflicted all around with the fall of dreadful weapons of various kinds discharged by Ghatotkacha the army of Duryodhana, in great distress, were seen to move helplessly on the field of battle.

32. Cries of *Alas* and *Oh* then arose there; and the warriors with their cheerless expression indicated as if they were on the verge of ruin. But those foremost of men, inspired as they were with honorable sentiments,did not then leave the field with faces turned round.

33. Then beholding that immensely terrible and awful shower of weapons invoked into existence by the illusive energy of the Rakshasa and seeing their own troops felled incessantly by it, your sons were seized with a great panic.

34. Jackals having tongues like the leaping flames of fire began to utter fierce howls by hundreds; the Rakshasa also uttered fierce yells. Hearing these disagreeable sounds, O king, your troops were greatly afflicted.

35. Those fierce Rakshasas having fiery tongues, blazing countenances and sharp teeth, and forms huge as mountains, careering through the sky with lances in grasp, appeared like clouds pouring torrents of rain.

36. Wounded and crushed with those dreadful arrows, spears, darts, maces, spiked bludgeons of great lustre, thunder-bolts, trident, *Asanis*, wheels, and *Sataghnis*, the Kaurava troops began to fall down.

37. The Rakshasas then went on pouring upon the warriors of your sons long spears, and treacle and *Sataghnis*, and *Sthunas* made of steel and covered with strings of jute, and all the combatants became confounded.

38. Heroic warriors with weapons broken or falling off from their gasp or deprived of heads, or with maimed limbs, began to fall

down on the field. Then steeds and elephants, and chariots were also crushed to pieces by the shower of stones.

39. Those Yatudhanas of terrible forms created by Ghatotkacha by the help of his illusive powers, pouring that thick shower of mighty weapons, spared neither those that were frightened nor those that begged for mercy.

40. In the ruthless slaughter of Kuru heroes, brought on by Death himself, in that extermination of Kshatriyas the Kourava warriors suddenly broke and fled with speed, exclaiming :—

41. "Fly, O Kouravas, all is lost. The gods with Indra at their head are slaying us for the sake of the Pandavas." At that time there was nobody that could save the sinking Bharata troops.

42. During that terrible uproar and shout and carnage of the Kurus, the divisions loosing their distinguishing marks the parties could not be differentiated from one another.

43. In that dreadful fight in which nobody paid any regard for any one else, every side of the field, when looked at, appeared to be sad, O monarch. Karna alone was then to be seen drowned in that downpour of arrows.

44. Then Karna covered the welkin with his shafts, striking against that celestial illusion of the Rakshasas. The son of Suta, endowed with modesty and achieving the most difficult and praiseworthy feats, was not at all confounded in that battle.

45. O king, then all the Saindhavas, and Valhikas looked in fear at Karna whose senses were not confounded in that fight. And they all applauded him whether they looked at the triumphs of the Rakshasa.

46. Thereafter a *Sataghni*, furnished with wheels, was discharged at Karna by Ghatotkacha, and it despatched at once the four steeds of Karna. These horses then fell down on their knees, deprived of life, teeth, eyes and tongues.

47. Then descending from his horseless chariot and seeing the Kouravas fly away and beholding his own celestial weapons repulsed by the illusion of the Rakshasa, Karna, not at all confounded, turned his mind inwards and then began to reflect as to what he should do next.

48. At that time all the Kouravas, beholding Karna and the terrible illusion of the Rakshasas, cried out saying:—O Karna, slay the Rakshas with your dart. The Kouravas and the Dhartarastras are on the point of being exterminated.

49. What can Bhima or Arjuna do to us? Slay this wicked Rakshasa, who is consuming us all, at this dead of night. They, that will escape alive from this encounter, will fight with the Parthas to-morrow.

50. Therefore slay this dreadful Rakshasa now with that dart given to you by Vasava. O Karna, let not these great warriors, the Kouravas, these royal combatants that resemble Indra himself, be all exterminated in this night-fight.

51. Then Karna, seeing the Raksha alive at the middle of night and the Kuru army filled with fear and hearing also the loud wails of the latter, set his heart upon hurling his dart.

52. Burning with wrath like an infuriate lion, and unable to brook the assaults of the Rakshasa Karna took up that foremost of victory-giving and indomitable darts, desirous of achieving the destruction of Ghatotkacha.

53. That dart, O monarch, which he had kept and worshipped through years for encompassing the slaughter of Pandu's son in battle, that excellent dart that Indra himself had given to Suta's son in exchange for the latter's ear-rings,

54. That burning and dreadful dart entwined with strings and which seemed to long for blood, that terrible missile that looked like very tongue of death or his sister, that resplendent and fearful dart Vikartana's son now hurled at the Rakshasa.

55. Thereupon seeing that excellent and glittering weapon, capable of penetrating through the body of every foe, in the hands of Suta's son, the Rakshasa fled away in fear making his body prodigious like the foot of the Vindhya hills.

56. Then seeing that dart in the grasp of Karna all creatures, in the heavens, began to utter loud wails. Fearful winds began to blow and thunders with tremendous clap began to fall on the earth.

57. Then that dart, destroying the blazing illusion and going through the breast of the Rakshasa, soared aloft and penetrated in the night into a stony constellation in the heavens.

58. Thus having fought with various kinds of weapons with numerous heroic warriors and Rakshasa, Ghototkacha, then uttering various dreadful roars, fell deprived of life with that dart of Indra.

59. This is the most exceedingly wonderful feat that the Rakshasa achieved for the destruction of his foes *viz* that at the time when his heart was penetrated by that dart

he shone resplendent, O monarch, like a mighty-mountain or a mass of clouds.

60. Having assumed that terrible and dreadful figure, Bhimasena's son of frightful deeds fell down. When dying, O monarch, he fell upon a portion of your army and pressed those troops down by the weight of his own body.

61. Then falling down with force, the Rakshasa, with his huge and still increasing body, desirous of benefitting the Pandavas, slew a full Akshouhini of your troop, while he himself gave up his life.

62. Then a tremendous uproar composed of the war cries of combatants, beasts, of conchs and sound of drums and cymbals arose there. The Kouravas, then beholding the Rakshasa slain and his illusion destroyed, uttered loud shouts of joy.

63. Then Karna, applauded by the Kurus, as Sakra had been by the Marutas upon the death of Vritra, ascended behind the car of your son and becoming, the object of every body's sight entered the Kuru host.

Thus ends the one hundred eighty first chapter, the slaughter of Ghatotkacha in the Ghatotkachabadha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXI.

(GHATOTKACHA BADHA PARVA) —*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding Hidimva's son slain and lying like a riven hill all the Pandavas began to shed copious tears of grief.

2. But the son of Vasudeva, overwhelmed with delight, began to utter there loud war-cries thereby causing pain to the Pandavas.

3. Indeed uttering loud shouts he then embraced the son of Pandu. Thus uttering loud roars and drawing the reins of the steeds,

4. He began to dance in joy, like a tree shaken by the tempest. Then embracing Partha once more and clapping his armp-its,

5. That undeteriorating god, endowed with great intelligence, once more uttered roud roars standing on the terrace of his car. Then beholding those signs of joy manifested by Kesava, Dhananjaya,

6. O monarch, with a beast overwhelmed with grief, addressed the former saying :— " O slayer of Madhu, you are showing delight at a time scarcely fit for it,

7. Indeed on an occasion for sorrow generated by the death of Hidimva's son our troops, beholding Ghotokacha slain, are flying away.

8. We also are filled with great grief, at the death of Hidimva's son, O Janarddana. The cause of your delight on such an occasion must indeed be very serious.

9. O foremost of all truth-speaking men, therefore tell me today truly the cause of your joy. O subduer of foes, if it is not a secret, it behoves you to say it to me.

10. O Slayer of Madhu, tell me what has disturbed your patienee to day? O Jannardana, I consider this fickleness of yours to be like the drying up of the ocean or the walking of the Meru mountain.

Vasudeva's son said :—

11. Overwhelming is the delight that has filled me now. Hear it, O Dhananjaya. What I shall tell you will immediately dispel your sorrow and impart joy on your beast.

12. O you of great splendour, his *sakti* having been used against Ghatotkacha, regard Karna as already slain in battle.

13. No person could have confronted Karna, if like, Kartikeya he would have stood in battle armed with that dart.

14. It is through good fortune that his armour had been taken away, that his ear-rings had been taken away from him ; by good luck it is that his infallible dart also had been baffled by Ghatotkacha.

15. Covered in his natural coat of mail and decked with his natural ear-rings, Karna, having his senses under thorough control, could, single-handed, defeat the three worlds with the gods therein.

16. Neither Vasava, nor Kuvera, nor Varuna, the lord of the waters, nor the god of Death, could venture to confront him.

17. If that foremost of men had his natural coat of mail and ear-rings then neither yourself, wielding the Gandiva, nor myself uplifting the discus Sudarsana could have defeated him in battle.

18. For your good, Karna was deprived of his ear-rings by Indra with the aid of illusion. In the same manner that subjugator of hostile troops was deprived of his armour.

19. As Karna had given his effulgent ear-rings and armour cutting them off from his body he is designated as Vikartana.

20. Karna now appears to me to be like an infuriate snake of virulent venom stupi-

fied by the virtue of incantation or like a fire with its flames quenched.

21—22. O mighty-armed one, since the time the illustrious Sakra gave that Sakti to Karna in exchange for the latter's ear-rings and armour—that Sakti, which has slain Ghatotkacha from that time, Vrisha having obtained it, had always regarded you as slain in battle.

23. But though deprived of that dart, I swear to you, O sinless one, that hero could not still be defeated by any one else save yourself.

24. Devoted to the Brahmanas, truthful, of ascetic practices and vow-observing, and merciful on his foes, Karna is called Vrisha.

25. Delighting in battles, possessed of mighty arms, his bow ever ready for use, like a lion in the forest depriving leaders of elephantine herds of their pride,

26. Karna ever humilates the pride of many mighty car-warriors, and resembles the mid-day sun incapable of being looked at.

27. When fighting with all the high-souled and excellent warriors of your army, O foremost of men, Karna, discharging his showers of arrows, looks like the autumnal sun of myriad rays.

28. Just like clouds at the end of summer pouring torrents of rain, Karna, shooting incessantly showers of arrows, resembles a pouring cloud charged with celestial weapons.

29. He is incapable of being vanquished in battle by the very gods shooting showers of arrows in all directions and discharging flesh and blood profusely.

30. Deprived of his armour, and his two ear-rings O son of Pandu, and having given up his Sakti given to him by Sakra Karna tody is nothing more than a mortal.

31. There will happen only one opportunity for his slaughter. When the wheels of his chariot will be sunk in the earth, availing yourself of that opportunity and exerting vigourously you should slay him, acting up to my hint.

32—33. The conqueror of Vala that excellent hero, weilding his thunder, cannot slay the indomitable Karna when he stands armed with weapons. Indeed, O Arjuna, for your welfare, by the help of numerous machinations, I have destroyed, one after another Jarasandha, the high-souled ruler of the Chedis, the mighty armed Ekalavya of the Nishada tribe, other great Rakshasas having Hidimva, Krimira and Vaka for their leaders, as also Alayudha that crusher of hostile troops and Ghatotkacha that guider of enemies and of fearful feats.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty-first chapter, the joy of Krishna, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXII.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Dontinued.

Arjuna said :—

1. How, O Janarddana, and by what measures were those lords of earth Jarasandha and others slain, for our welfare ?

Vasudeva said :—

2. Had not Jarasandha, the ruler of the Chedis and the highly puissant prince of the Nishadas been slain before, they would have become very terrible by this time.

3. Duryodhana would then surely have invited those foremost of car-warriors to embrace his cause, and they, ever hostile to us, must have chosen the Kourava party.

4. They all were brave, fierce bowmen, accomplished in the use of weapons, and firm in battle; and they would have then defended the Dhartarastras like so many immortals.

5. The son of Suta, Jarasandha, the ruler of the Chedis, and the prince of the Nishadas,—these, united with Suyodhana, might have conqured the whole earth.

6. It was through my tactics that they were slain. Hear from me of those tactics. Indeed even the gods, without the employment of tactics, could not have defeated them in battle.

7. Each of them, individually, could have fought with entire army of the celestials, protected by the regents of the worlds themselves, O son of Pritha !

8. Once on a time, afflicted by the son of Rohini, Jarasandha, excited to the highest pitch of fury, hurled at ourselves a mace capable of slaying all creatures.

9. Sparkling like the tongues of fire, that mace flew towards ourselves dividing the welkin like the line that parts the tresses of a woman, and with the impetuousity of the thunder hurled by Sakra.

10. Then beholding that mace course towards us, the son of Rohini, for repulsing that mace, hurled the weapon known as Sthanukarna.

11. Repulsed by the force of Baladeva's weapon, that mace fell on the earth riving her open and causing the mountains thereon to tremble.

12. There was a terrible Rakshasi, by name Jara, possessed of dreadful might. She, O monarch, had put together the different parts of Jarasandha's body, and therefore was the latter so named.

13. From two mothers, the two halves of his body come out separately. And in consequence of those two halves being united by that Rakshasi, he was called Jarasandha.

14. That Rakshashi, that was then within bowels of the death, was slain with her sons and relatives, O son of Pritha, by means of that mace and that weapon Sthanuharna.

15. Deprived of that mace of his Jarasandha was slain in a fierce encounter by Bhimasena even before your very eyes O Dhananjaya!

16. Had the puissant Jarasandha been then armed with his mace then, O foremost of men, even the celestials, with Indra at their head, could not have succeeded in slaying him in battle.

17. For your good also was the mighty son of the Nishadhas, deprived, by a guileful means, of his thumb, by Drona who assumed the position of his preceptor.

18. That prince of the Nishadas of resolute prowess with his finger-protectors tied round them, used to rove in the forest, swelling with his own pride, like a second Rama.

19. Retaining the use of his thumb Akalavya could not have been defeated in battle by the Danavas, the celestials, the Rakshaasas and the serpents, all united together in battle.

20. Of firm grasp, accomplished in the use of weapons, incessantly shooting his weap ons, he could not have been looked at by mere men?

21. For your good, he was slain by me in the van of battle. The powerful ruler of the Chedis was also slain before your very eyes.

22. He also was incapable of being conquered in battle by the celestials and the Asuras. I suffered this birth only for slaughtering him and other such molesters of the gods.

23. With your aid, in order to achieve the world's welfare, O foremost of men, Hidimva and Vaka and Krimira had all been slain by Bhimasena.

24. Also Alayudha, possessed of potent powers of illusion, has been slain by Hidimva's son. All other Rakshasas, brave like Karna and destroyers of the Brahma, sacrifice, have also been slain.

25. Through our tactics Karna used that *Sakti* of his in felling the son of Hidimva. If on the other hand, Karna had not slain this Rakshasa by his Sakti,

26. Then it would have been my (painful) duty to slay Bhimasena's son Ghatotkacha. It was only for pleasing you that I did not slay him before.

27. This Rakshasa was a contumner of the Brahmanas and a destroyer of sacrifices; this wicked-souled one was inimical to the performance of sacrifices and therefore has he been slain thus.

28. O sinless one, through our tactics the *Sakti* given to him by Sakra has been also rendered useless. O son of Pandu, those who destroy righteousness are all slayable by me.

29—30. This vow has been taken for establishing righteousness. Where there are the Vedas, truth, self-control, purity, righteousness, humility, prosperity, wisdom, and forbearance, there I am also to be found. You need not now be at all anxious about the slaughter of Karna.

31. I shall tell you the means through which you shall be able to slay Karna. Vrikodara also will slay Suyodhana in battle.

32. O son of Pandu, I shall also tell you the means by which that one's slaughter will been compassed. But now, the tumult of the hostile cry is increasing every moment.

33. Your own troops also are flying away in all the ten directions of the compass; the Kourava warriors, having reached their aim, are now killing your troops. Yonder indeed does Drona, that foremost of smiters, consume our ranks.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty second chapter, words of Krishna in Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXIII.

GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA —*Continued.*

Dhritarastra said:—

1. If Suta's son had possessed such a Sakti as was sure to slay one hero, why then excepting all others, did he not hurl it at Pritha's son Arjuna,

2. Had Arjuna been slain by that Sakti, then all the Srinjayas and Pandavas also would have be slain. Indeed, if Phalguna could have been slain, then victory certainly would have been ours.

3. "Challenged, I would never turn back" even this was the vow taken by Arjuna. The son of Suta should therefore have summoned Arjuna in battle.

4. Tell me, O Sanjaya, why then Vrisha, summoning Arjuna to a single combat, did not slay the latter by means of the Sakti given him by Indra.

5. Surely my son is a fool and has not good counsellors also to guide him; that wretch is ever outwitted by the foe, how then can he hope to obtain victory over them?

6. That Sakti which was such a powerful weapon, and on which rested his hopes of victory, also even that Sakti had been made futile by Vasudeva's son through Ghatotkacha.

7. As a fruit is snatched away from the hands of a cripple with withered arms by a powerful man, even so has that mortal Sakti, of Karna, been made futile by Krishna, through Ghatotkacha.

8. Just as in a battle between a boar and a dog, the huntsman is the party to forfeit when either is slain, so, I think, O intelligent one, Vasudeva's son is to be party benefitted in that battle between Karna and Hidimva's son.

9. "If Ghatotkacha slays Karna in battle the Pandavas will be greatly benefitted; on the other hand, if Karna slays Ghatotkacha in battle there will be a great gain to the Pandavas because then Karna's Sakti will be useless."

10. Thinking in this way and for doing what was agreeable to the Pandavas that foremost of men Vasudeva, endued with great wisdom, had caused Ghatotkacha to be slain by Karna in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

11—12. Knowing perfectly well what Karna desired to do, the slayer of Madhu, the mighty armed Jannardanna, O monarch, ordered the foremost of the Rakshasas, *viz.*, Ghatotkacha of puissant might to engage in a duel with Karna for rendering, O king, the latter's death-dealing Sakti fruitless. All this, O monarch, is the out-come of your wicked policy.

13. O perpetuator of Kuru's race, we could then have surely been successful had not Krishna protected that mighty car-warrior Partha from Karna.

14. O Dhritarastra, Partha, with his horses, charioteer, and standard, would have been completely destroyed in battle, had he been deprived of the aid of Jannardana, that lord of all yoga prowess.

15. Protected with various means and always defended by Krishna, Partha ever defeats his foes, encountering them.

16. Indeed, it was Krishna that rescued Pritha's son from that death dealing Sakti otherwise that weapon would have quickly consumed the son of Kunti like the bolt of Heaven destroying a tree.

Dhritarastra said :—

17. My son is quarrelsome; his counsellors are so many fools. He is proud of his wisdom. He has thus overlooked the certain means that have given him victory.

18. Why, O Suta, did not Karna of high intelligence that foremost of all weilders of weapons discharge that fatal Sakti at Dhananjoya?

19. Why, O Gavalgani's son, did you too forget this great object, since, endued as you are with great intelligence, you did not remind Karna?

Sanjaya said :—

20. Indeed, every night, O monarch, this used to form the subject of deliberation among Duryodhana, Sakuni, Dussasana and myself.

21. O Karna, leaving alone the rest of the warriors do you slay Dhananjaya. After that we shall lord over the Panchalas and the Pandavas as if they were mere slaves.

22. Or it may be that upon the fall of Pritha's son, he, of Vrishni's race, will appoint another among the Pandavas to act as the leader of them. Therefore let Krishna be slain.

23. Krishna is the root of the Pandavas, Partha is their risen trunk. The other sons of Pritha and the Panchalas are like their branches and leaves respectively.

24. The Pandavas have Krishna for their shelter, Krishna for their strength, and Krishna for their leader. Krishna is their main support like the moon of the constellations.

25. Therefore, O son of Suta, leave alone the leaves, the branches and the trunk of the Pandava tree. Know Krishna to be its root, ever and every where."

26. (Thus indeed did we then speak to Karna). Had he slain the scion of the Dasarha race, that delighter of the Yadavas, and in that case, the whole earth, O

monarch, would certainly have come under your sway.

27. If that illustrious delighter, of the Yadu race and of the Pandavas, had lain prostrate on the field being slain in battle, then, O ruler of men, this earth certainly would have fallen under your sway together with all her mountains, forests and seas.

28. We rose every morning with this resolution regarding that lord of the celestials, *viz.*, Hrishikesha of infinite prowess. But at the time of battle we forgot our resolution.

29. Kesava ever defends Kunti's son Arjuna. He never allowed Arjuna to expose himself before Suta's son in battle,

30. That undeteriorating one even made other foremost of car-warriors confront Karna, thinking how that fatal Sakti of ours might be rendered futile by us, O master.

31. When again the illustrious Krishna protected Pritha's in this manner, why, O king, would not that foremost of kings protect his own self?

32. Upon mature thought, I see that there is no person in the three worlds who is able to defeat that subduer of foes *viz* Janarddana, that hero bearing the discus in hand.

Sanjaya said :—

33. That foremost of car-warriors *viz.* Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, asked the mighty-armed Krishna about the great car-warrior Karna saying :—

34. "O Janarddana, it had been Karna's firm resolve that he would hurl that dart of infinite energy at Phalguna. Why then did he not hurl if at him actually,"

Vasudeva said :—

35. Dussasana, Karna, Sakuni the ruler of the Sindhus with Duryobhana at their head, had frequently held consultation about this subject.

36. They used to say to Karna "Oh Karna, oh mighty bowman, O you of infinite prowess in battle, you should not hurl this Sakti at any one close, O foremost of all vtctorious combatants,

37. Except the mighty car-warrior Partha, that son of Kunti who had conquered the lord of wealth himself. Like Vasava among the Gods, he is the most illustrious among the Pandavas.

38. Upon his slaughter, the rest of the Pandavas and the Srinjayas will be heartless like the god deprived of the fire in his mouth."

39. Karna having agreed, saying let it be so, O foremost of the Sinis, the slaughter of the wielder of the Gandiva bow was ever the ruling thought in Karna's mind.

40. O foremost of warriors, it was I who confounded the son of Radha, in consequence whereof he did not hurl that Sakti at the son of Pandu owning white steeds.

41. O foremost of warriors, as long as I did not succeed in nullifying that means of Arjuna's death, I enjoyed neither sleep nor joy.

42. Beholding that dart therefore rendered fruitless through Ghatotkacha, O foremost of the Sinis, I consider Phalguna to be almost saved from the jaws of Death.

43. Neither my father nor my mother nor youreself, nor my brother, nor even my life, is so worthy of my protection as is Vibhatsu in battle.

44. If there be anything more precious that the sovereignty of the three worlds, even that I do not want to have at the cost of Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

45. Therefore, O Yuyudhana, a great joy has taken possession of my self today, in as much as I look upon Pritha's son as returned from the dead.

46. For this reason also was the Rakshasa despatched by me to meet Karna. No one else could have checked the latter in this nocturnal fight.

Sanjaya said :

47. Then the son of Devaki did thus speak to Satyaki, he who was ever devoted to Dhananjaya's good and to what was agreeable to him.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty-third chapter, the words of Krisna in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXIV.

(GHATOTKACHA-BADHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O sire, this act of Karna, Duryodhana, Sakuni the son of Suvala and especially of yourself, has been very much against the dictates of policy.

2. Indeed when you knew that Sakti was capable of slaying only one person and

that it was incapable of being borne and repulsed even by the gods with Vasava at their head,

3. Why then, O Sanjaya, was it not hurled by Karna at the son of Devaki or at Phalguna while he was engaged with these in battle before.

Sanjaya said :—

4. Every day returning from the field of battle, O ruler of men, we used to hold consultation in the night and speak unto Karna, O foremost of the Kurus, in the following manner. O Karna, tomorrow this Sakti should be hurled at either Karna or Arjuna."

6. When however, the day dawned, O monarch, as fate would have it, Karna as well as all the other warriors forgot all about that resolution.

7. Indeed it is destiny that is supreme to all other forces, inasmuch as Karna did not slay either Partha or Krishna with the dart that he had in his grasp.

8—9. Indeed because his intelligence had been confounded by destiny itself that he did not, stupefied by the illusion of the Gods, hurl that death-dealing dart given him by Vasava, though he held in his hand, at Krishna the son of Devaki it at Partha of prowess equal to that of Indra, for their destruction.

Dhritarastra said :—

10. You are destroyed by Destiny, by your own understanding and by Kesava. The fatal dart of Vasava is lost having brought about the slaughter of Ghatotkacha who was as insignificant as a straw.

11. Karna and my sons as all the other kings, through his greatly impolitic act, have already gone to the abode of wealth.

13. Describe to me how the battle raged between the Kurus and the Pandavas after the fall of Hridimva's son.

12. How did the Panchalas and the Srinjayas, arranged in order and well-skilled in smiting, fight, having rushed upon Drona in battle.

14. How indeed did Pandus and Srinjayas resist the striking Drona when he, proceeding against them, penetrated into their host inflamed with wrath at the slaughter of Bhurisravas and Jayadratha, regardless of his very life and resembling a yawning tiger on the destroyer himself with mouth agape.

16. What also did they do in battle, O sire, *viz*, Drona's son and Karna and Kripa and others headed by Duryodhana that protected the preceptor.

17. Describe to me, O Sanjaya, how my combatants in that battle covered with their arrows Dhananjaya and Vrikodara who were desirous of slaying the son of Bharadwaja.

18. How indeed did those, worked up with anger at the death of the ruler of the Sindhus and those at the death of Ghatotkacha, each side unable to brook their loss, fight during that night.

Sanjaya said :

19. Upon the destruction, that night, O monarch, of the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha by Karna, all your soldiers filled with delight uttered loud shouts.

20. In that dark hour of night they furiously assailed the Pandava troop and began to slaughter them. Seeing all this king Yudisthira became highly depressed.

21. O chastiser of foes, the mighty armed son of Pandu then addressed Bhima and thus spoke: "O you of mighty arms, check the (rushing) host of Dhritarastra's son.

22. Owing to the slaughter of Hidimva's son a great stupefaction is overwhelming me." Having commanded Bhima thus he sat down on the terrace of his car.

23. With tearful countenance and repeated sighs the monarch became highly depressed on seeing Karna's prowess.

24—25. Seeing him so afflicted, Krishna said these words. "O son of Kunti, let not such grief overtake you. This depression is not worthy of yourself, O chief of the Bharatas, as it is of an ordinary person ; arise O monarch and fight and bear this heavy burden of grief.

26. If you are overtaken by depression victory becomes uncertain." Hearing these words of Krishna the very virtuous king Yudhisthira,

27. Wiping his eyes with his hands replied unto Krishna saying :—O you of mighty arms, the excellent path of duty is not unknown to you.

28. The dreadful consequences of Brahmanicide are his that forgets the services he gets at the hands of others. While we were living in the woods the illustrious son of Hidimva,

29. Although then a small boy only, did us many good turns, O Jannarddana. Being informed that Pandu's son Arjuna had gone to acquire weapons,

30. O Krishna, this fierce bowman went to see me in the Kamyaka forest. He there lived with us until Dhananjaya came back.

31. On the occasion of our journey to the Ghandhamadana, we crossed all difficulties with his help. He then carried the fatigued daughter of the Panchalas on his own back.

32. O master, the feats he had achieved in battle, fully prove that he was learned in all modes of warfare. That illustrious warrior did accomplish many difficult tasks for my sake only.

33. O Janarddana, the affection that I naturally bear for Sahadeva, even double that affection did I bear to that foremost of the Rakshasas Ghatotkacha.

34. That mighty armed one was devoted to me; I loved him and he also loved me dearly. For all these reasons, O descendant of the Vrishni race, I am depressed being afflicted with grief caused by his slaughter.

35. Behold, O scion of the Vrishni race, my troops routed by the Kouravas! Behold the two mighty car-warriors, Drona and Karna fight, yonder, to the best of their abilities.

36. Lo! at this dead hour of night, the Pandava army is being crushed like a forest of reeds by two infuriate elephants in rut.

37. O Scion of Madhu" race, the Kouravas are striving hard (for victory) setting at naught the might of Bhima's arm and the vast mastery of weapons of Arjuna.

38. Yonder joyfully roars Drona and Karna and king Suyodhana himself having slain the Rakshasa in battle.

39. How is it, O Janarddana, that Hidimva's son met with death in his encounter with Suta's son, although you and ourselves are still alive?

40. Putting ourselves to shame and under the very eyes of Savyasachin, O Krishna, Karna has slain the puissant son of Bhimasena.

41. O Krishna, when Abhimanyu was slain by the sinful Dhartarastras the mighty car-warrior Savyasachin was not at hand.

42. We also were held in check by the high-souled ruler of the Sindhus; in the perpetration of that deed, Drona and Drona's son became instrumental.

43. Karna was informed of the means of Abhimanyu's death by the preceptor himself. While Abhimanyu was fighting with his sword, it was Drona who cut off that sword in twain.

44. Like one heartless, Kritavarman slew the four steeds and the two drivers of Abhimanyu when the latter was involved in a great predicament.

45—46. Then other bowmen slaughtered and felled the son of Subhadra. For trifling offence only, O Krishna, the ruler of the Sindhus was slain by the wielder of the Gandiva bow. O foremost of Yadus, this act did not afford me much delight. If at all it is just for the Pandavas to slaughter their foes,

47. Then, I think, Drona and Karna should have been slain ere now. O foremost of men, they are the cause of all our miseries.

48. Getting these two for his supporter in battle, Suyodhana has become confident of his success. Indeed it was Drona or the son of Suta, with his followers who deserved to be slain.

49. The mighty armed Dhananjaya slew the king of the Sindhus, who indeed, was the remote cause of the slaughter of Abhimanyu. It is surely my imperative duty to crush the son of Suta.

50. Therefore, O hero, I will fight for compassing the death of Suta's son. The mighty-armed Bhima has already engaged himself with the division of Drona,"

51. Having thus spoken, king Yudhisthira quickly advanced against Karna stretching his mighty bow and blowing his dreadful conch.

52. Then with one thousand cars, three hundred elephants, five thousand horses and the Panchalas and the Pravadrakas,

53. Sikhandin quickly followed the king from behind. Then the drums were beat and conchs blown by the

54. Panchalas and Pandavas who were proceeding in Yudhisthira's van. Thereupon the mighty armed Vasudeva addressing Dhananjaya said :—

55. "Lo! under the influence of anger does king Yudhisthira advance to battle, impelled by a desire for slaughtering Suta's son. It is not proper that you should throughly rely on him in this encounter."

56. Having thus spoken, Hrisikesha urged the steeds to the best of their speed and he then followed behind the king, who had already advanced a long way.

57. At that moment, beholding the very virtuous king Yudhisthira proceed with impetuousity for bringing about the slaughter of Suta's son, Vyasa approached him, and said these words to him who was then burning with the fire of grief and whose reason was clouded by it.

Vyasa said :—

58. Indeed, O king, it is fortunate that Phalguna still lives, although he had several times encountered Karna in battle. It was for compassing the slaughter of Savyasachin, that Karna preserved his Sakti.

59. O foremost of the Bharatas, it is indeed fortunate that till now Jishnu never engaged in any duel with Karna. In that case, each of them, challenging the other, would have discharged their celestial weapons on all sides.

60. Then the weapons of Suta's son would have been destroyed by those of Arjuna. Then sorely distressed the former surely would have discharged the Sakti given him by Vasava at the latter, O Yudhisthira.

61. In that case, O foremost of the Bharatas, a dreadful catastrophe would have overtaken you. O bestower of honor, it is indeed fortunate that the Rakshasa has been slain (with that Sakti) in battle.

62. Death himself has slain the Rakshasa and the fatal Sakti of Vasava was only the instrument. O sire, it is for your good that he has been slain in battle.

63. Do not give way to wrath, O foremost of the Bharatas, and set not your heart on sorrow. O Yudhisthira, this is the *finale* of all animate beings in this world.

64. United with your brother and the other high souled rulers of earth do you, O descendant of the Bharatas, give battle to the Kouravas.

65. On the fifth day, the earth will fall under your sway. O foremost of men, meditate on virtue.

66. With a delightfuf heart do you ever practise harmlessness, ascetic austerities, charity, forbearance and truth, O son of Pandu. Victory ever follows in the wake of righteousness." Having thus spoken to Pandu's son, Vyasa disappeared then and there.

Thus ends the one hundred eighty fourth chapter, the words of Vyasa, in the Ghatotkacha-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXV.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA).

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus spoken to by Vyasa the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, endued with heroism, desisted himself from slaughtering Karna, O foremost of the Bharatas.

2. Upon the slaughter of Ghatotkacha during that night by Suta's son Karna, king Yudhisthira was overwhelmed with grief and wrath.

3. Then beholding your vast host resisted by Bhima himself, he, addressing Dhistadyumna said, 'Hold the pat-born Drona in check.'

4. O afflicter of your foes, it was for the express purpose of slaying Drona, that you sprang out of fire, armed with a bow and arrows and a sword and cased in a coat of mail.

5. Cheerfully assail Drona in battle. You have nothing to be afraid of. Let also Janamejaya, Sikhandin and Durmukha's son and Jasadhara,

6. Wrathfully assail the pot-born Drona from all sides. Nakula and Sahadeva, the son of Draupadi and the Pravadrakas,

7. And Drupada and Virata accompanied by their sons and brothers, and Satyaki and the Kekayas, the Pandavas and Dhananjaya,

8. Let, all these inspired with the desire for achieving the slaughter of Bharadwaja's son, assail him from all sides. So also, let all the other car-warriors, and elephant riders and horsemen,

9. And foot soldiers strive to overthrow that mighty car-warrior Drona in battle." Thus commanded by the illustrious son of Pandu (Yudhisthira),

10. Assailed the pot-born Drona with a view to defeat him. Then as the Pandavas rushed with great impetuousity and force,

11. Drona, that foremost of all weilders of weapons, received them (duly) in battle. Thereupon king Duryodhana with all efforts, assailed the Pandavas excited as he was with rage, and solicitous of protecting Drona's life. Then ensued the battle between the troops of the Kurus and the Pandavas whose animals were exhausted as they challenged one another furiously. Deprived of sleep and fatigued in battle, O mighty monarch,

14. The mighty car-warriors knew not what to do. That night consisting of three Yamas, hedious and dreadful,

15. And destructive of many lives, appeared to them to consist of a thousand Yamas. While they were being thus slain and mangled by one another,

16. And while their eyes were being closed in sleep, mid-night set in. Then every

one became depressed and their spirits became low.

17. Your troops as well as those of the enemy had their supply of weapons exhausted by that time. Passing the time thus the combatants, of both the armies, endued with modesty and energy,

18. And observant of the duties of their order, did not desert their divisions. Others again, oppressed with sleep, left their weapons aside and laid themselves down on the field.

19. Oppressed with sleep, some again laid themselves down on the back of elephants, or ou that of horses or on their chariots, O Bharata, and O foremost of men, they were deprived of all moving powers.

20. Other warriors, that were awake in that battle, despatched these to Yama's abode; others again, deprived of their senses in sleep and dreaming, slew their own comrades as also their opponents, regarding every one as their foes. Indeed they fought on in that fierce battle uttering dreadful exclamations.

22. Many again of our army, thinking that they should continue to fight with the foe, stood, O king, on the field of battle although their eyes were heavy with sleep.

23. Some heroic warriors, during that hour of darkness, though blind with sleep, yet gliding along the field, slew one another in that battle.

24. Many of the enemy, entirely confounded in sleep, were slain without being conscious of the strokes that put an end to their existence.

25. Then, O foremost of men, beholding this plight of the soldiers, Vibhatsu exclaiming to the top of his voice, said these words.

26. "You all are fatigued and oppressed with drowsiness; and your animals also are so. Both the armes are enveloped with darkness and clouds of dust.

27. O soldiers, if you like you may desist from the fight. Close your eyes, here on the field, only for a moment.

28. Then when the moon arises ye Kurus and the Pandavas, having taken rest and shaken off your fatigue, you may again meet one another in battle for securing paradise."

29. Hearing these word of the virtuous Arjuna, the pious warriors of the Kuru army agreed to follow up the former's suggestion, and addressing one another,

30. Loudly said—"O Karna, O king, Duryodhana, desist from fighting. The Pandava host has ceased to strike us."

31. Then, O Bharata, when Arjuna loudly uttered those words the Pandavs and your troop desisted from the fight.

32. Those generous words of the illustrious Arjuna were highly applauded by the Rishis, the celestials and the highly delighted soldiers.

33. Then applauding those noble words of Arjuna, O Bharata, O foremost of men, the fatigued troop laid themselves down only for a moment.

34. Then that army of yours, O Bharata, joyful at the prespect of sleep and rest, sincerely blessed Arjuna saying ;—

35. "In you there are the knowledge of the Vedas and the weapons. In you there are intelligence and might. In you there are virtue, compassion for all creatures, O mighty-armed and sinless one.

36. As we have been comforted by you, we wish you well, O Partha. May you reap prosperity soon and may you get, O brave hero, those objects and that are dear to your heart.

37. Thus, O foremost of men, those mighty car-warriors, while praising Partha, thus were stupified by sleep and soon became silent, O ruler of men.

38. Some laid themselves down on the back of horses, some on the elephants, some on the car-terraces, and some on the bare earth only.

39. Other soldiers, well-armed, and with maces, swords, axes and lances in grasp and covered with coats of mail, laid themselves down separately.

40. Elephants, having trunks resembling the tapering bodies of serpents and adorned with the dust of the field, oppressed with sleep, began to make the earth's surface cool with breaths.

41. The elephants, as they breathed on the ground, appeared beautiful like mountains (scattered over the field of battle) on which mighty serpents hissed.

42. Steeds, in trappings of gold and with manes flowing down their yokes, began to paw and make the ground uneven with their hoops.

43. Thus O foremost of kings, every body slept there with the animal he rode. Steeds and elephants and soldiers, O foremost of the Bharatas,

44. Exhausted with exertion, slept on the field desisting from the battle. That sleeping host, deprived of senses and plunged in sleep, appeared beautiful like a charm-

ing picture painted on canvas by a skilful artist.

45. Then those Kshatriyas all youthful and graced with earings, mangled with one another's shaft-wounds, lying down on the back of elephants slept as if lying on the breasts of beautiful ladies.

46. Then the moon, that delighter of the eye and lord of the lilies of hue white as the cheeks of a youthful damsel, rose beautifying the quarter presided over by Indra himself.

47. Indeed like a lion of the Udaya mountain with beams constituting his manes of glittering yellow, he issued out of his cave in the east, dispelling the palpable darkness of night, resembling a large herd of elephants.

48. That lover of all lilies, bright as the body of Mahadeva's excellent bull, full-arched and radiant as the bow of cupid and delightful and charming as the smile on the lips of bashful bride shone in the sky.

49. Soon that Divine Lord having the hare for his emblem showed himsel reddish, shedding brighter beams around.

50. After this, the moon seemed to spread gradually a bright halo of far-reaching light that resembled the glamour of gold.

51. Then the rays of that lustrous orb, dispelling the gloom of night gradually spread themselves on the earth, the welkin and the directions of the compass.

52. Then within a moment the world was flooded with a stream of light and the palpable envelop of gloom soon fled away.

53. When the world was illumined almost to the light of day, O king, some of the night-rangers began to rove about whilst others desisted from doing so.

54. Then, O king, all the troops were awakened by the beams of the moon like lotuses blown by the rays of the sun.

55. Just as the ocean swells in consequence of the rising of the moon so that ocean of troops swelled at the rising of the moon.

56. Thereupon, O ruler of men, once more the battle between men desirous of getting heaven raged, a battle that was destructive of the world of creatures.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty-fifth chapter the sleep of the soldiers in the Drona-budha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXVI.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA) – *Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then king Duryodhana, under the influence of anger, approched Drona and addressing him said these word for inspiring him with delight and wrath simultaniously.

Duryodhana said :—

2. No quarter should have been granted to our enemies when they were depressed at heart and exhausted with fatigue, and taking rest, especially as they are ever of sure aim.

3. That we showed them mercy was only from a desire for pleasing you. The fatigued Pandavas, however, have now (after taking rest) become stronger.

4. We, on the other hand, are becoming reduced in might and in energy, while the Pandavas, spared by you, are again and again gaining strength.

5. All weapons of celestial workmanship and all Brahma weapons are known perfectly to you.

6. Neither the Pandavas, nor ourselves nor any other bowman of the world are equal to you in battle. This I tell you truly.

7. Conversant with all kinds of weapons O foremost of regenerate ones, you are competent enough to slay with your celestial weapons, the gods, the Asuras, the Gandharvas and all this world.

8. The Pandavas are all afraid of you. Yet you always forgive them, remembering perhaps that they are your disciples, or owing to my unfortunate luck."

Sanjaya said :—

9. Thus repremanded and incited by your son, Drona, O monarch, wrathfully addressed Duryodhana saying :—

10—11. "Although I am advanced in years, yet, O Duryodhana, I am fiighting in battle to the best of my abilities. All these men are versed in the use of weapons; I am however well-versed in them. If from desire of victory, I slay these men, there can be no more impious act for me to do. However, what is in your heart, be it good or bad,

12—13. I shall accomplish, O foremost of the Kurus, at your behest. It will not be otherwise. Putting forth my prowess in battle and slaying all the Panchalas I

will put off my coat of mail, O monarch. I swear this to you for sooth. You think that Kunti's son Arjuna was exhausted in battle.

14—15. O mighty-armed Kourava, listen to what I say regarding his prowess. If Savyasachin's anger is excited, neither the Gandharvas nor the Yakshas, nor the Rakshasas can venture to oppose him. On the occasion of the burning of the Khandava forest, he fought with the chief of the gods himself.

16. With his arrows, the high-souled Arjuna then worsted the pouring Indra. Yakshas and the Nagas and the Daityas and other creatures,

17. Proud of their strength, were then slain by that foremost of men. This also you know. On the occasion of the numbering of cattle, the Gandharvas, headed by Chitrasena and others, were defeated by him.

18. You also were set free from the bondage to the Gandharvas by that resolute bowman. The Nivatakavachas, and other enemies of the gods,

19. Unslayable by the gods themselves in battle, were also vanquished by that hero. Thousands of Danavas dwelling in the golden city,

20. Were defeated by that foremost of men. How is it possible for other men to resist him in battle? You have also seen with your own eyes, O king, how this host of yours, though striving hard, is destroyed by the son of Pandu, O ruler of men!

Sanjaya said :—

21. Thereupon, your son, O king highly enraged, once more thus addressed Drona who had been praising Arjuna then.

22. "Dividing this Bharata army in two, to-day, myself, Dussasana, Karna and my uncle Sakuni will slay Arjuna in battle."

23. Hearing those words of his, the son of Bharadwaja, as if smiling, quickly turned round and said, "Good befall you!"

24. What presumptuous Kshatriya would venture to destroy that foremost of the Kshatriyas *viz.*, the wielder of the Gandiva bow, who never suffers any reduction and who ever burns in his own effulgence?

25. When furnished with weapons, neither the Lord of wealth, nor Indra nor Yama, nor Varuna, nor the Asuras nor the Rakshasas, will be able to defeat him?

26. What you have spoken, O Bharata, is worthy of a fool only. Who ever returns safely to his own home, after having encountered Arjuna in battle?

27. Suspicious of everybody, you are cruel and of sinful purposes. You rebuke even those who are engaged in doing you good.

28. Go yourself to resist the son of Kunti, at your own risk. You are well-born and a Kshatriya too; you are again desirous of battle.

29. Why then do you cause the ruin of all these other un-offending Kshatriyas? You are the root of this hostility, so, do you yourself encounter Arjuna.

30. Here indeed is your sagacious uncle, ever devoted to the performance of the Kshatriya duties. O son of Ghandhari, let this one, addicted to deceitful gambling at dice, meet Arjuna in battle.

31. Expert in the game of dice, crooked, fond of gambling and wily and deceitful —this gamester addicted to deception will surely vanquish the Pandavas in battle!

32. Accompanied by Karna and delightful you used to brag always, out of your foolishness, within Dhristarastra's hearing, with these empty words :—

33. 'O Sire, myself, Karna, and my brother Dussassan, united in battle, shall slay the sons of Pandu!"

34. This brag of yours was heard in every assemblage of the court. Now with their help fulfil your vow and be true to your words.

35. Yonder stand your fierce enemies, the sons of Pandu, prepared to fight to the last. Do now what should be done by a Kshatriya. It is better that you die rather than suffer defeat.

36. You have been charitable and enjoyed edibles to your heart's content. You have acquired wealth to your heart's content, you have accomplished all that one should do. You are debtless. Be not afraid. Encounter the son of Pandu in battle."

37. Having thus spoken Drona desisted from fighting. Then the Bharata troops were divided in twain and the battle commenced.

Thus ends the one hundred eighty-sixth chapter, the division of the troop, in the Drona Badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXVII.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When three fourths of the night had passed away, O ruler of men, once more

the battle, between the delighted Kurus and Pandavas, commenced.

2. Soon after Arjuna (the sun's charioteer) robbing the effulgence of the moon, appeared on the sky, spreading a coppery hue over it.

3. The eastern quarter was soon rendered crimson by the myriad rays of the sun, and the solar disc looked like a circle of gold.

4. Thereupon all the warriors of the Kuru and Pandava hosts, descending from their chariots, steeds, elephants and vehecles borne by men, turned their faces towards the sun, and with folded palms uttered the Sandhya (prayers of the first twilight).

5. The host of the Kauravas having been divided into two parts, Drona, having Duryodhana in front of him, advanced (supported by one of this divisions) against the Somakas, the Panchalas, and the Pandavas.

6. Then beholding the Kuru army divided in twain, the scion of Madhu's race, Krishna addressing Arjuna said :—"Keeping the other division of the enemy to your left, place Drona's division to your right."

7. Obedient to the counsel of Madhava, regarding everything about the Kurus, Dhananjaya wheeled round so as to keep Drona and Karna, those two mighty bowmen, to his right.

8. Then seeing through the purposes of Krishna, that subduer of hostile cities *viz.*, Bhimasena, addressing Arjuna then stationed at the van of the troop, said these words.

Bhimasena said :—

9. Ho, Arjuna, Arjuna, O Vibhatsu, hear these words of mine ! The hour, for the realisation of that object for which Kshatriya ladies bring forth their sons, has now arrived.

10. If at this opportune season you do not exert yourself to attain good, then you shall act meanly like a perfect wretch.

11. With the assistance of might do you, to-day, pay off your debt to Prosperity and Fame ! O foremost of warriors, penetrate into this army and keep this to your right.

Sanjaya said :—

12. Thus urged on by Bhima and Kesava, Savyasachin, disregarding Karna and Drona, began to resist the foe on all sides.

15. Then as that puissant one advanced at the head of battle, leaving the foremost of Kashatriyas, these last, putting forth all their prowess,

14. Could not check him even as men can not check the raging conflagration. Thereupon Duryodhana, Karna and Suvala's son Sakuni,

15. Began to shower thousands of arrows on Kunti's son Arjuna. That foremost of all, versed in excellent weapons, baffling all the weapons hurled by his opponents, poured on them, O foremost of kings, a veritable shower of arrows. Of controlled senses, and endued with great lightness of hand, he repulsed the weapons shot at him by those of his own.

17. Then he pierced each of his foes with ten sharp shafts. The welkin was shrouded in a cloud of dust, and showers of arrows fell thick.

18. Impenetrable darkness set in, and dreadful tumult prevailed on the field of battle. When such was the condition of things, neither the sky nor the earth, nor the points of the compass, were recognised.

19. Confounded with the dust the troops became blind. Neither the foe, O monarch, nor we could distinguish one another.

20—23. For this reason, the royal combatants fought on guided by conjecture and the challenges they uttered. Destitute of chariots, the car-warriors, O monarch, encountering one another, lost all order, and became a confounded mass. Their horses slain and charioteer killed, many, becoming incapacitated, saved their lives and looked highly frightened. Staughtered steeds, with their riders slain, were seen to lie over elephants as if prostrate on mountain tops. Then Drona, moving towards the northern quarter of the field,

24. Stood like fire free from smoke. Then beholding him move away from the field (towards the North),

25. O ruler of men, the Pandava troops began to tremble. Beholding Drona exceedingly handsome, and attended with prosperity and burning in his own effulgence, the soldiers of the enemy were affrighted, depressed and routed, O Bharata.—Challenging the hostile host as he stood, like an infuriate elephant in rut,

27. None ventured to conquer him even as the Danavas could not conquer Vasava. Some were depressed at heart and some intelligent warriors became inspired with rage.

28. Some were filled with wonder and some could not bear him. Some rubbed their hands.

29. Others, overwhelmed with rage, began to bite their lips, with their teeth

Others began to hurl missiles at him and others to rule their arms.

30. Other warriors, of controlled passions and great might, fell upon Drona. Specially the Panchalas, though afflicted with the shafts of Drona,

31. And suffering extreme pain, O king, fought on with Drona. Thereafter Virata and Drupada, both rushed against Drona in battle,

32. Who, invincible as he was in battle, was roving freely on the field. Then O ruler of men, the grandsons of Drupada, in three number,

33. And the Chedis, all fierce bowmen, assailed Drona in battle. Of those three grandsons of Drupada, with sharp arrows,

34. Three in number Drona robbed the vital breaths, whereupon they fell down dead on the ground. Thereafter Drona vanquished in battle, the Chedis the Kaikayas and the Srinjayas.

35. That mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadwaja then also conquered the Matsyas. Thereafter Drupada, worked up with rage, poured a shower of arrows,

36. On Drona, O mighty monarch. Virata also did so in that battle. Then that crusher of foes, *viz.*, Drona, destroying that shower of arrows,

37. Covered the two, Drupada and Virata with his own arrows. Thus covered by Drona and inflamed with wrath at the head of battle,

38. Those two heroes began to afflict Drona wrathfully in that battle. O mighty monarch, therefore, Drona filled with rage and fury,

39. Cut off the bows of them both with a couple of broad headed shafts of great sharpness. Thereupon, filled with rage, Virata hurled ten *tomaras*,

40—41. As also ten shafts at Drona, with a view to encompass his slaughter. Draupada also, equally enraged, hurled at the car of Drona, a dreadful dart made wholly of iron and decked with gold and effulgent like the body of a excellent snake. Then cutting off with a well-sharpened *valla* those *tomaras*,

42. Drona cut off the dart adorned with gold and lapises shot at him with his own arrows. Then that crusher of foes, *viz.*, Drona with a couple of well-tempered *valla*,

43. Despatched both Drupada and Virata to the region of Death. Upon the slaughter of Virata and Drupada and the Kaikayas also,

44. As also the Chedis and the Panchalas and the Matsyas, and upon the slaughter of the three heroic grandsons of Drupada,

45. And beholding these cruel deeds accomplished by Drona, the high-souled Dhristadyumna, filled with rage and grief, swore amidst the car-warriors saying :—

46. "Let that man lose the merits of his *Istha*, *Purth*, Kshatra and Brahmanya, whom Drona shall escape or shall defeat in battle."

47. Thus having sworn in the midst of all bowmen, that slayer of foes, *viz.*, the Panchala prince rushed upon Drona, supported by his own division.

48. The Panchalas attacked Drona from one side whilst the Pandavas attacked him from the other. Then Duryodhana, Karna, Suvala's son Sakuni,

49—50. And his other principal uterine brothers began to protect Drona in battle. Then the Panchalas, though striving hard, could not even look at Drona who was then being thus protected in battle by those high-souled warriors. Therereupon, O sire, Bhimasena became enraged with Dhistadyumna and then addressed that foremost of men in these harsh words.

Bhimasena said :—

51. What man is there who, being regarded as a Kshatriya and who being born in the Dynasty of Drupada, and who being foremost of all men possessing knowledge of weapons, would only thus passively look at his foe, stationed before him ?

52. What person, having seen his father and son slain by his foes and having also sworn such a terrible oath in the assemblage of kings, would thus suffer his foe to stand before him ?

53. Yonder stands Drona like a fire swelling with its own energy ; indeed with bow and arrows constituting fuel he is consuming all the Kshatriyas with his energy.

54. Soon will he completely destroy the Pandava army ; stand here passively as spectators of the feat I am going to perform ; I will myself assail Drona."

Sanjaya said :—

55. Having thus spoken, Vrikodara, worked up with rage, penetrated into Drona's division ; and he then routed your troops with arrows shot from his bow drawn to the fullest stretch.

56. The Panchala prince Dhristadyumna also, pushing into the heart your mighty

troops, approached Drona: whereupon a confused and terrible encounter commenced.

57. We never saw nor heard of such a battle before as, O king, was fought during that hour of sun-rise.

58. O sire, the chariots were then entangled with one another; thousands of of corpses of slain creatures were also seen lying on the field of battle.

59. Some, when going to other parts of the field, were assailed by their foe on the way. Some, in flying away, were wounded on their backs and others on their sides.

60. Thus then that general engagement raged furiously. Soon however the morning sun made its appearance of the sky.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty-seventh chapter, the fierce battle in the Dronabadha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXVIII.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA)—
Continued.

Sanjaya said.—

1. The warriors then, O monarch, clad as they were in coats of mail, worshipped the sun of thousand rays as he made its appearance on the morning sky.

2. Upon the rise of the thousand-rayed sun of the effulgence of heated gold, and upon the illumination of the world, battle raged anew.

3. The same soldiers, that were engaged with one another before sun rise, once more fought with each other, O Bharata, after the sun rise.

4. Horsemen fought with car-warriors and elephants with horsomen and foot-soldiers with elephants, and horsemen with horsemen, and infantry with infantry.

5. Car-warriors with car-warriors elephants with elephants, horsemen with horse men O foremost of the Bharatas. Sometimes, in a body and sometimes individually, the warriors assailed one another in battle.

6. Having fought hard during the previous night many combatants, worn out with toil and weak with hunger and thirst, lost their senses in a swoon.

7—8. The noise, O foremost of the Bharata race, created by the blowing of conchs, the beat of drums, the roar of elephants and the twang of bows streched with force, reached the very heavens, O monarch. The tumult, made also by running foot-soldiers and falling weapons,

9. And neighing steeds and rattling chariots, and shouting and challenging warriors, became tremendous.

10—11. That tremondous din, momentarily increasing, touched the very heavens. The moans, and groans of pain, uttered by falling and fallen foot-soldiers, and car-warriors and elephants, became exceedingly loud and pitiable as they were heard on the field.

12. When the divisions were intermingled and confused, both sides slew each other and also their own men.

13. Swords, hurled by the hands of heroic warriors upon combatants and elephants, in large heaps, were seen on the field, like cloths on the washing ground.

14. The whizz, of lifted and descending swords, wielded by the arms of heroes, resembled that of clothes thrashed for wash.

15. Then that general engagement, in which the warriors encountered one another with swords and scimitars and lances and battle axes, became extremely terrible.

16—17. The brave warriors then caused a river to flow there towads the region of the departed; the blood of elephants and steeds and human beings constituted its currents. Weapons constituted the large number of fish it contained. Its mire was made of blood and flesh. Wails of grief and pain constituted its murmuring sound. Banners and cloths constituted its foam.

18. Afflicted with shafts and arrows, tired with fatigue, worn out with exertion of the previous night and robbed of their strength, elephants, and horses, stood on the field utterly incapable of moving their limbs.

19. Heroes, with pale countenances, and with heads graced with charming ear-rings, and armed with the implements of war, appeared extremely resplendent.

20. On the field infested with carnivarous animals and obstructed with the dead and the dying there was no space for the cars to move.

21. The wheels of cars being thus entangled, the steeds, yoked thereto, with great effort dragged them although they were tired and trembling and afflicted with arrows.

22—23. Those steeds moreover were of good breed and were endued with mettle and strength and resembled elephants in size. Then the Bharata troops, resembling the ocean for its vastness, became affrighted and

terribly agitated, save and except Drona and Arjuna. They both then became the refuge and the protectors of the warriors of their respective sides.

24. Meeting them both their opponents went to the regions of Death. Then the mighty host of the Kurus became greatly agitated.

25. And the Panchalas being intermingled with them, none could be distinguished. During the progress of that terrible carnage of the Kshatriyas on that field of battle, enhancing the fear of the cowards, and resembling a crematorium, neither Karna, nor Drona, nor Arjuna, nor Yudhisthira

27. Nor Bhimasena, nor the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, nor the Panchala prince, nor Satyaki nor Dussasana, nor Drona's son, nor Duryodhana, nor Suvala's son,

28. Nor Kripa nor the ruler of the Madras, nor Kritavarman, nor others, nor my own self, nor the earth, nor the different quarters of heaven,

29. Could be discerned, O king, in consequence of all of them being mingled with troop and covered by clouds of dust. During the progress of that dreadful and fierce battle, when that dust-cloud arose,

30. Every body thought that night had once more set in. Neither the Kouravas, nor the Panchalas, nor the Pandavas could be distinguished,

31—33. Nor the quarters of heaven, nor the welkin, nor the earth, nor the undulations of land. The warriors, impelled by the thought of victory, slew friends and foes indiscriminately, in fact all whom they percieved by their touch. The dust that had arisen was very soon driven away by the winds that began to blow then, and it was quenched by the blood that shed profusely. Elephants, steeds, car-warriors and foot-soldiers,

34—35. Steeped in blood, appeared beautiful like the celestial forest of the Parijata flowers. Thereafter Duryodhana, Karna, Drona and Dussasana engaged in battle with four Pandava warriors. Duryodhana and his brothers encountered the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva).

36. Radha's son encountered Vrikodara, and Arjuna engaged with the son of Bharadwaja. All the soldiers then began to look on those marvellous and terrible encounters from all sides.

37—38. The car-warriors of both sides, beheld that wonderful battle, that superhuman engagement between those furious and excellent car-warriors all versed in the different modes of war, mounted on their respective chariots, that moved in various charming motions. Possessed of great prowess, exerting their best, and each anxious to defeat the other,

39. They then poured on each other showers of shafts, like clouds pouring rain at the end of summer. Those foremost of men, mounted on their cars of solar effulgence,

40. Appeared beautiful like vast masses of clouds in the autumnal sky. Then those warriors, O mighty-monarch, inspired with rage, and thought of rivenge,

41. All proud and mighty bowmen, putting forth their greatest effort, rushed upon one another, like infuriate leaders of the herds of elephants.

42. Indeed, O king, coporeal creatures do not forsake their *corpus*, untill the proper hour comes, inasmuch as, O monarch, all those mighty car-warriors, though fighting hard, were not slain all together.

43. With lopped-off arms and legs, with heads graced with charming ear-rings, with bows and arrows, and lances, and swords and axes and *Pattises*,

44. With *Nalikas*, *Kshàras*, *Narachas*, nails, darts and *Tomaras*, with diverse other kinds of excellent weapons, of various shapes and well-cleansed,

45. With wonderful cuirasses of different shapes, with charming chariots shattered, with slain horses and elephants,

46. With brave combatants slain, with standless and warriorless chariots looking like large cities, with vehicles dragged hither and thither by affrighted steeds having none to restrain them,

47. In speed more than that of the wind, with countless warriors adorned with ornaments, with fans, with coats of mail, with overthrown standards,

48. With umbrellas, with ornaments, garments, and perfumeries, with chains, and diadems, and crowns and headgears' and with tinkling bells,

49. With jewels that had adorned the breast of heroes with *Niskhas* and with jewels that had decorated the crowns of combatants, the field of battle, strewn over, looked resplendent like the star-bespangled firmament.

50. Thereafter an encounter took place between Duryodhana and Nakula when both were filled with feelings of wrath and revenge.

51. Then the son of Madri, delightfully shooting hundreds of shafts, kept your son on his right side. At this, loud sounds of applause arose there.

52. Though placed on the right by his enraged cousin, your son, inflamed with rage, began to resist him from even from that disadvantageous position of his.

53. Your son the king Duryodhana then began to fight wonderfully, O mighty monarch. Then as your son endeavoured to counteract Nakula even from his sight.

54. The latter (Nakula), endued with energy and versed in the diverse courses of a chariot, restrained your son. But your son again, resisting Nakula on all sides and afflicting him, with his arrowy showers,

55. Compelled Nakula to turn back. Your troops then applauded that feat of your son. Then Nakula, keeping alive the memory of the wrongs inflicted on them by your wicked counsel, addressed your son saying 'Wait wait.'

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty-eighth chapter, the battle between Nakula and Duryodhana in the Dronabadha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CLXXXIX.

DRONA-BADHA PARVA.—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Filled with rage, Dussasana then assailed Sahadeva causing the earth to quake with the fierce clash of his chariot.

2. While Dussasana was thus rushing at the son of Madri, that subduer of foes, quickly cut off with a broad-headed shaft, the head, protected with a helmet of the former's charioteer.

3. Owing to the quickness with which the charioteer's head was cut off, neither any one among the troops nor Dussasana himself percieved him to have been decapitated by Sahadeva.

4. The reins being no longer held by any body, the horses ran at their free will. It was only then that Dussasana came to know that his driver had been slain.

5. Himself an expert in managing steeds he restrained his horses; and that foremost of car-warriors then fought on lightly, beautifully and skillfully.

6. Then as he covered dauntlessly on the field that driverless car of his, his friends and foes alike applauded his feat.

7. Sahadeva, however, soon covered Dussasana's steeds with sharp arrows, and these, afflicted with those arrows, began to run away wildly.

8. For holding the reins Dussasana once laid his bow aside, again, for using the bow the took up the reins. (Thus did he then fight).

9. During these opportunities, the son of Madri pierced him with numerous arrows. Then desirous of rescuing your son Karna rushed between those two combatants.

10. Thereupon Vrikodara, with due caution, pierced Karna on the breast and the arms, with three broad-headed shafts shot from a full-drawn bow.

11. Thereupon like a snake struck with a stick Karna wheeled back and covered Bhima by scattering sharp arrows by thousands.

12. Thereupon a tremendous combat commenced between Bhima and the son of Radha. Both the combatants then roared like two bulls and their eyes rolled in fury.

13. Filled with rage, and rushing at one another, they challenged one another furiously. Those two foremost of combatants, in consequence of their being too near each other,

14—15. To use bows and arrows, began to fight with their maces. Then Bhimasena succeeded in crushing Karna's car terraced with his mace; O king, that indeed looked wonderful. Then the puissant son of Radha grasping a mace,

16. Hurled it at Bhima's car. But the latter broke it down with a mace of his own. Thereafter once more Bhima threw with force a heavy mace at the son of Adhiratha.

17. Then Karna struck that mace with numerous shafts furnished with beautiful wings and duly sped and also with other shafts. The mace then was thrown back on Bhima,

18. Being repulsed by the arrows of Karna, like a snake charmed with incantations. At the re-bound of that mace the mighty standard of Bhima,

19. Broke and fell down, and his charioteer, also struck with that mace, became insensible. Thereupon furious in rage, Bhima discharged eight shafts at Karna,

20—22. And his standard and bow and his leathern fence, O Bharata. The mighty Bhimasena, that slayer of hostile heroes, with the greatest heedfulness, cut off with those sharp arrows, O Bharata, the standard, the bow and the leathern fence of Karna's chariot. Thereupon the son of Radha, grasping another tough and gold-decked bow, sped a large number of shafts, and therewith quickly despatched Bhima's

steed of the hue of bear and then his two flank protectors.

23. When his chariot was thus rendered useless, that subduer of foes, *viz.*, Bhima, quickly jumped into the chariot of Nakula like a lion leaping upon a mountain crest.

24. Meanwhile Drona and Arjuna, those two foremost of car-warriors, preceptor and pupil, both accomplished in the use of weapons, O monarch, fought on with each other in battle,

25. Confounding the eyes and minds of men with the celerity with which they used their weapons, and the sureness of their aims and the motions of their chariots.

26. Beholding that battle between the preceptor and pupil, of which no equal was seen before, the other warriors desisted from fighting and began to tremble.

27. Then those two heroes, displaying various motions of cars on the field of battle, tried to leave each other to their right.

28. Then seeing their prowess, the warriors were filled with delight. Thereafter a mighty battle raged between Drona and that son of Pandu,

29. Like that, O mighty monarch, between two hawks in the heavens for a piece of meat. Whatever efforts Drona made for conquering the son of Kunti,

30. Were overcome by Arjuna who also strove vigorously. When Drona failed to obtain any advantage over the son of Pandu,

31. Then that foremost of all knowers of weapon, began to invoke into existence, Aindra, Pasupata, Sashtra, Vayavya, and Varuna weapons.

32. But as soon as those weapons issued out of the bow of Drona, Dhananjaya destroyed them quickly. Then Pandu's son duly destroyed all those weapons with his own weapons.

33. Thereafter Drona covered Pritha's son with excellent and celestial shafts. Whatever weapon then he shot at Partha, desirous of obtaining victory,

34. Arjuna destroyed it by due measures. Upon the destruction even of his celestial weapons,

35-36. By Arjuna, Drona applauded him in his mind. Then that afflictor of foes, *viz* Drona, O Bharata, regarded himself to be superior to all knowers of weapon on earth in consequence of his having Arjuna for his pupil. Thus checked by Pritha's son in the midst of all those high souled warriors,

37. Drona, vigorously striving, cheerfully resisted Arjuna (in his turn) being filled with wonder all the while. Then in the welkin, thousands of celestial and Gandharvas,

38. And sages and hosts of Siddhas, were seen on all sides. Thronged with Apsaras, and Yakshasas and Rakshasas,

39. The welkin once more appeared to be darkened by gathering masses of clouds. An incorporeal voice repeatedly spoke,

40. In praise of Drona and the high-souled son of Pandu. When in consequence of the weapons discharged by Drona and Pirtha's son, all the directions were illumined with their effulgence,

41. The Siddhas and the sages present then said :—"This is neither a human, nor an Asura, nor a Rakshasa, nor a celestial, nor a Gandharva battle ; certainly this is a high *Brahma* battle ; this encounter is exceedingly charming and greatly wonderful. We have never seen nor heard of its like before.

43. At times the preceptor obtained advantages over the son of Pandu and at times the latter again prevailed over the former. None then was able to mark any difference between them.

44. If Rudra, dividing himself in twain, fights with himself, then an example may be obtained that may match it.

45. In the preceptor there is the knowledge of science. The knowledge of sciences and the means to be applied are in the son of Pandu. Heroism exists in Drona whereas both heroism and might exist in the son of Pandu.

46. None of these two combatants could be resisted by the foe in battle. At their will they can destroy the universe with the gods themselves."

47. Seeing those two foremost of men, O mighty monarch, the visible and invisible creatures said these words.

48. Thereafter, Drona of great intelligence, invoked into existence the Brahma weapon thereby afflicting Partha and the invisible creatures.

49. Thereupon the earth, with its mountains, forests and trees, began to tremble. Conflicting winds began to blow, and the oceans were agitated.

50. When that weapon was raised by high-souled Drona for use, the Kuru and the Pandava troops as also all the other creatures were stricken with panic.

51. Thereupon, O foremost of kings, Pirthas' son, with the other Brahma weapons, destroyed that weapon of Drona, and then all things were again pacified.

52. At last when none of them was able to vanquish his opponent in a single combat, a general engagement commenced between the two hosts, creating a terrible confusion on the field.

53. During the progress of that terrible encounter between Drona and Pandu's son, O king, once more nothing could be distinguished.

54. The firmament being covered with networks of arrows, as if with masses of clouds, no ranger of the air was then seen to course through it.

Thus ends the one hundred and eighty-ninth chapter, in the fierce fight in the Drona-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXC.

DRONA-BADHA PARVA,—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that battle, destructive of men, horses and elephants, thus progressed, O mighty monarch, Dussasana fought on with Dhristadyumna.

2. The latter, then mounted on a golden chariot and afflicted with the arrows of Dussasana, became filled with rage, and began to cover the animals of your son with his own arrows.

3. Then, O mighty monarch, covered with the arrows the car of Prisata's son ; soon did the car of Dussasana, its standard and charioteer became invisible.

4. Then, O foremost of kings, Dussasana, being afflicted with the arrows of Panchalas, could not stay before that illustrious warrior.

5. Thus the son of Prisata, having repulsed Dussasana with his arrows, assailed Drona shooting thousands of shafts as he proceeded.

6. Then Hridika's son Kritavarman, with his three uterine brothers, encountered him and tried to resist him.

7. The twins, Nakula and Sahadeva, those two foremost of men, then protected Dhristadyumna from behind as he rushed upon Drona like a blazing fire.

8. Then all those mighty car-warriors, possessed of strength and inspired with wrath, fell to smite one another, keeping death in their view.

9. Of pure souls, and pure behaviours, O king, those warriors, keeping the hope of paradise before their mind's eye, fought on fairly, impelled by a desire for conquering one another.

10. Of stainless extraction and of spotless deeds, and gifted with keen intelligence those rulers of men, keeping paradise in view, fought on fairly with one another.

11. In that battle there was nothing unfair or nothing against the rules of military science. In that battle, neither *Kanies* nor *Nalikas*, nor poisoned arrows nor Vastikas,

12. Nor *Suchikopisas*, nor those made of the bones of bulls and elephants, nor those having two heads, nor those having rusty beards, nor those that were not straightflying, were used by ony body.

13. All then used straight and pure weapon, and attempted to attain both fame and regions of great blessedness by fighting fairly.

14. Between those four warriors of your army and those three of the Pandava side, the battle, that occurred, was highly terrible, but free from all unfairness.

15. Then Dhristadyumna, very quick in the use of weapons, and beholding those brave and mighty car-warriors of your army, resisted by the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva), rushed upon Drona.

16. Resisted by those two foremost of men, those four brave warriors encountered the former like the winds assailing a pair of mountains.

17. Each of the twins,—both mighty car-warriors,—was engaged with a couple of opponents. Meanwhile Dhristadyumna poured showers of arrows on Drona.

18—19. Then seeing the indomitable prince of the Panchalas advance upon Drona, and those warriors of his army engaged with the twins, Duryodhana, O king, rushed to that part of the field, discharging myriads of blood-sucking arrows. Beholding thus Satyaki approach the Kuru king in great speed,

20. Those two foremosts of men, the two scions of the Kuru and Madhu race respectively nearing each other, were filled with the desire for smiting down each other.

21. Recollecting their conduct towards each other in their early days, and reflecting with pleasure on the same, they looked at each other and smiled repeatedly.

22. Then king Duryodhana, blaming his own conduct, addressed his ever dear friend Satyki and said :—

23. Fie on wrath, O friend, and fie on vindictiveness, fie on Kshatriya usage and fie on might and prowess,

24. Inasmuch as you aim weapons at me and I also am directing mine at you, O foremost of the descendants of Sini's race. In the days of childhood, you were dearer to me than my very life and I also was so to you.

25. Alas! all those deeds of boyhood that I recollect of both yourself and mine, become as nothing on the field of battle.

26—27. Alas! impelled by rage and covetousness, we are here to-day for fighting with each other, O scion of the Satwata race." Then O king, Satyaki conversant in the use of great weapons, taking up some sharp arrows smilingly replied to king Duryodhana who was thus speaking to him, "This is no assembly, O prince, nor the house of our preceptor where in days gone by, we sported smiling together."

Duryodhana said :—

28. O foremost of Sini's race, where have those sports of our childhood vanished, and alas, how has this battle come upon us. It appears that the influence of time is irresistible.

29. Urged though we are by a desire for wealth, what use have we of wealth that meeting each other, we now engage in battle, urged by avarice."

Sanjaya said :—

30. Satyaki then replied unto king Duryodhana who had thus spoken :—"That they have to fight even with their preceptors has always been the duty of Kshatriyas.

31. If I am indeed believed of you, O king, slay me without delay. O foremost of the Bharatas, then through your instrumentality I shall be launched upon the regions of the righteous.

32. Bring into play, as soon as possible, all your might and prowess, against myself. This carnage of my friends, I do not wish to behold any longer."

33. Having thus replied to king Duryodhana and said his say, O king, Satyaki dauntlessly and reckless of his life, rushed furiously upon Duryodhana.

34. Beholding him thus advance your son received him. Indeed, O king, your son then poured upon him a veritable shower of arrows.

35. Then ensued a dreadful battle between those two foremost of Kuru's and Madhu's race, that resembled an encounter between a lion and an elephant.

36. Then filled with rage Duryodhana pierced the indomitable Satyaki with numerous keen arrows shot from the bow drawn to its fullest stretch.

37. Satyaki quickly pierced Duryodhana in return with fifty keen shafts in that battle and then with twenty and next with another ten shafts.

38. Then in that battle your son smilingly pierced Satyaki in return with thirty arrows shot from his bow-string drawn back to the ear.

39—40. Discharging then a Kshurapra (razor-headed arrow) he cut off in two, Satyaki's bow with arrows fixed thereon ; Satyaki, thereupon with great lightness of hands, grasped a tougher bow and began to shoot a shower of shafts at your son. As those lines of arrows flew for bringing about Duryodhan's death,

41—42. The latter, O monarch, cut them into pieces, whereupon the troops uttered a loud shout. Then quickly he afflicted Satyaki with seventy three shafts, furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and shot from a bow drawn to its fullest stretch. Then all these arrows and the bow with shafts thereon,

43—44. Satyaki cut off and covered Duryodhana with a fresh shower of arrows. Thus deeply pierced and afflicted with the shafts of that scion of the Dasarha race, Duryodhana, O mighty monarch, took shelter in another car. Then recovering a little your son once more rushed upon Satyaki,

45—46. Shooting myriads of arrows at the chariot of the latter. Similarly Satyaki discharged arrows at Duryodhana's car ; whereupon, O king, the battle became extremely fierced. Then in consequence of those shafts thus discharged and in consequence of their falling on all sides,

47. Loud clashing sounds arose there, resembling that produced by a raging conflagration consuming a large forest. The surface of the earth was then covered with those thousands of shafts shot by both of them.

48. Clouded therewith, the sky became invisible. Then beholding that foremost of car-warriors, namely, him of Madhu's race, prevail over Duryodhana,

49. Karna quickly advanced to rescue your son. But the mighty Bhimasena did not allow him to do so,

50. And he in his turn assailed Karna, quickly shooting numerous arrows. Thereupon Karna smilingly destroyed all those sharp arrows of Bhima,

51. Cut off his bow and arrows, and wounded his driver with numerous shafts. Thereupon Pandu's son Bhimasena, burning with rage, took up a mace,

52. And therewith crushed the bow, the standard, and the charioteer of his opponent in that battle. That mighty hero also shattered one of the wheels of Karna's car.

53. Then staying on his chariot of which one wheel was broken, Karna did not tremble (in fear) but was as firm as the prince of mountains. That chariot of his which had now only one wheel left was drawn by his horses,

54. Like the single-wheeled car of the Sun borne by the seven celestial steeds. Then not tolerating the feats of Bhimasena Karna fought on with the latter,

55. Using different groups of arrows and diverse kinds of other weapons. Bhimasena similarly worked up with rage, fought on with the son of Suta.

56. When then the battle became thus confused and general, king Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, addressing the foremost of heroes of the Panchalas and the Matsyas said :—

57. "They who are like our lives, they that are our heads,they that are possessed of immense strength,—those foremost of men—are now all engaged with the Dhartarastra hosts.

58. Why are you then standing as if stupified and with you, senses confounded ? Hie there where my warriors are valorously fighting.

59. Keeping in view the duties of the Kshatriya order and dismissing your fears, engage in the battle ; for then conquering or slain, you will obtain desirable ends.

60. If you conquer you may celebrate numerous sacrifices, giving away profuse *Dakshina* to the Brahmanas : If on the other hand you are slain, then becoming equal to the gods, you will attain regions of blessedness.

61. Urged on by the king in the above manner, those brave and mighty car-warriors engaged on the field, quickly rushed upon Drona, keeping in view the duties of the Kshatriyas.

62. Then the Panchalas, from one side began to assail Drona with their arrows, whilst those headed by Bhima began to check him on the other side.

63. Three of the mighty and war-like sons of Pandu were crooked-minded. They were the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) and Bhimasena. These then addressing Arjuna loudly said :—

64. "Rush, O Arjuna, upon the Kurus and separate them from Drona. Then the Panchalas will be able to slay him easily when he will be deprived of their protection.

65. Thereuqon Pritha's son, all on a sudden attacked the Kourava troops, while Drona too marched against the Panchala troops headed by Dhristadyumna. O Bharata, in that the fifth day of Drona's command, the brave combatants were slaughtered in quick succession.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninetieth chapter, the fierced fight, in the Drona-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCI.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then Drona effected a fierce carnage in the ranks of the Panchala troops, like the enraged Sakra causing a great slaughter amongst the Danava troops in days gone by.

2. O mighty monarch, the enemies of Drona. all mighty car-warriors and possessed of great strength, though thus slaughtered by his arrows, did not shrink in fear from him.

3. Then those mighty car-warriors, the Panchalas and the Srinjayas, engaged in that battle, O king, rushed upon Drona's self.

4. Slaughtered with arrows and darts, and trying to encompass Drona on all sides, the yells they uttered were terrible and loud.

5. Then beholding the slaughter of the Panchalas by the high-souled Drona, and seeing his weapons enshroud all sides, the Pandavas became frightened.

6. Beholding the profuse destruction of horses and foot-soldiers in the battle, the Pandava troops, O king, became hopeless regarding their victory.

7. 'Is not Drona that warrior well-versed in the use of excellent weapons going to consume us all, like a raging conflagration consuming a heap of straw at the expiration of the winter season ?

8. None can now even look at him in battle. Knowing the rules of fair combat even Arjuna will not now fight with him." (Even thus did they talk with each other).

9. Then beholding the sons of Kunti dismayed and afflicted by the arrows of Drona the intelligent Kesava ever solicitous of the welfare of the Pandavas, addressed Arjuna thus :—

10. "This foremost of all wielders of bows and arrows is incapable of being vanquished in battle by any one, not excepting the gods with Vasava at their head.

11. When he lays aside his weapons in battle, he may be slain even by men. O you sons of Pandu, abandoning virtue, do you therefore now betake yourself to contrivances for securing victory in battle,

12. Before Drona drawn by horses of golden colours succeeds in slaying us all. I think, if Aswathaman be killed, he will desist from fighting.

13. Let some one among ns therefore tell him that Aswathaman has been slain in the battle,—But O king, Kunti's son Dhananjaya did not accept this advice of Krishna.

14—15. Others approved of it. Yudhisthira accepted it with much reluctance. Then the mighty-armed Bhima, O monarch, slew with his mace, a terrible, prodigious and foe-crushing elephant called Aswathaman belonging to Indravarman the ruler of the Malavas.

16. Then Bhimasena approaching Drona with a little bashfulness began to exclaim to the top of his voice "Aswathaman is slain."

17. The elephant known by the name of Aswathaman having been slain, Bhima spoke of Aswathaman's death. Knowing the true fact in his mind, Bhima then spoke what was false.

18. Drona having heard this very disagreeable words of Bhimasena, and he having reflected upon them in his mind, his limbs as if began to dissolve like sand in water.

19. But knowing fully the prowess of his own son, he soon came to regard that news as false and therefore hearing of his slaughter he did not become unmanned.

20. Soon recovering his senses he became comforted, as he recollected that his son was incapable of being assailed by the enemy.

21. Rushing upon the son of Prishata and impelled by a desire to slay that brave warrior who was destined to be his slayer, he covered the former with thousands of sharp arrows furnished with wings of the Kanka feather.

22. Thereupon twenty thousand illustrious car-warriors of the Panchala clan, covered him, thus careering on the field, with numerous shafts from all sides.

23. O ruler of men, covered as he then was with those arrows, we could not see that mighty car-warrior Drona, even as men cannot see the sun covered when it is with clouds during the rainy season.

24—25. Then blowing off all those arrows of the Panchalas, and with a view to effect the death of these heroic Panchala warriors, the mighty car-warrior Drona, the afflicter of hostile troops, invoked into existence a Brahma weapon. At this time he looked resplendent like a blazing fire without a streak of smoke.

26. Once more the highly puissant son of Bharadwaja was filled with rage and he looked equally resplendent when slaughtering all the Somakas.

27. He then cut off, in that great battle, innumerable heads of Panchala warriors as also their mace-like arms wearing golden ornaments.

28. Thus slaughtered by the son of Bharadwaja the royal warriors then began to fall down on the earth, like so many trees up-rooted by the force of the tempest.

29. Miry with the flesh and blood of all the elephants and horses fallen in the battle, O Bharata, the earth appeared to be impassable.

30. Having slain twenty thousand car-warriors of the Panchalas, Drona stood on the battle-field like a blazing fire free from even a single curl of smoke.

31. Thereafter filled with rage, the puissant son of Bharadwaja, lopped off the head of Vasudana from his trunk, by means of a *Valla*.

32. He then slew five hundred Matsyas, six thousand Srinjoyas and then again ten thousand elephants and ten thousand steads.

33. Then beholding Drona stay on the field for the extermination of the Kshatriya race, the following Rishis headed by the God of Fire approached him.

34—35. They were, Viswamitra, Jamadagni, Bharadwaja, Goutama, Vasistha, Kasyapa and Atri, the *Sikatas*, the *Prisnis*, Garga, the Valikhilyas, the Marichipas, the Vrigus, the Angiras, and other mighty sages of subtle forms; these all were desirous of taking Drona to the region of Brahma.

36. All these then addressed Drona, that ornament of battle, in these words:— 'You are fighting wrongly, the hour of your death has come.

37. Cast away your weapons, O Drona, and look at us standing before you. Henceforward it behoves you not to perform cruel acts like these.

38. You are learned in the Vedas and their auxiliaries and devoted to truth and

righteousness: specially you are a Brahman, so these acts do not become you.

39. Lay aside your weapons, shake off the pale of error that hangs over you and betake yourself to the eternal path (of virtue). To-day, the days of your earthly habitation have been numbered.

40. You have to-day consumed with your Brahma weapon many men who are ignorant of the use of weapons. This act which you have done is not at all praiseworthy.

41. O Drona, quickly lay your weapons aside in this battle; do not hesitate: O twice-born one, you should not perpetrate such sinful acts any longer."

42. Having heard these words of the sages, as also the words of Bhimasena, and also beholding Dhristadyumna stand before him in battle, Drona was dejected at heart.

43. Burning with grief and extremely pained, he then enquired of king Yudhisthira the son of Kunti whether his son was really slain or not.

44. Drona knew it for certain, that Pritha's son would never tell a lie, not even for the sake of getting the wealth of the three worlds.

45. For that reason, that foremost of the regenerate ones questioned Yudhisthira in exclusion of every body else. Since the days of the latter's boyhood, Drona had hoped to hear truth from him.

46. Meanwhile, O king, Govinda knowing that Drona, that foremost of all combatants, could sweep away the Pandavas off the face of the earth, was very much dejected and then addressing Yudhisthira he said:—

47. "If influenced by rage Drona fights only for half a day, then I tell you truly, your troops are sure to be destroyed.

48. Save us from Drona; under the circumstances as the present falsehood is better than truth. Speaking falsehood for the sake of saving a life one does not become a sinner.

49. There is no sin, if falsehood is spoken to women, in marriages or to save kine or the Brahmanas.

50. When they both were thus speaking with each other, Bhimasena said:—As soon as, O king, I heard of the means by which the illustrious Drona might be slain,

51—52. Putting forth my prowess in battle, I immediately slew a mighty elephant resembling that of Sakra, belonging to Indravarman, the Chief of the Malavas who were standing in your army. I then went to Drona and told him,—'Aswathaman has been slain, O Brahman; desist from fighting.'

53. Indeed, O foremost of men, the preceptor Drona did not believe in the veracity of my assertion; desirous of victory as you are, accept the counsel of Govinda.

54. O monarch, inform Drona that the son of Caradwat's daughter is dead. Thus spoken by you that foremost of the Brahmanas will cease to fight.

55. O ruler of men, you are well-known in the three worlds for your truthfulness." Having heard these words of Bhima and influenced by the counsel of Krishna,

56. And owing to the inevitability of Fate, O king, Yudhisthira decided to say, what he was called upon to say. Afraid of speaking lies, but anxious to obtain victory, Yudhisthira,

57. Clearly said that Aswathama was dead, adding indistinctly the word *elephant* after the name *Aswathama*. Ere now the chariot of Yudhisthira had remained at a height of four fingers' breadth from the earth's surface;

58. After he had uttered that lie his steeds touched the earth. Hearing these words from the lips of Yudhisthira, Drona that mighty car-warrior,

59. Overwhelmed with grief on account of the supposed death of his son, gave way to despair. Hearing the words of the sages, on the other hand, he regarded himself a great offender against the illustrious Pandavas. Now hearing that his son had been slain he became completely senseless, and filled with anxiety at the sight of Dhristadyumna, O monarch, the chastiser of foes was not able to fight as before.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-first chapter, the utterance of the untruth by Yudhisthira, in the Drona-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCII.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then beholding Drona, exceedingly anxious and depressed at heart in consequence of grief, the son of the Panchala king, *viz.*, Dhristadyumna assailed him.

2. That hero had, for the slaughter of Drona, been obtained by Drupada, that ruler of men, at a great sacrifice, from the God of Fire.

3—5. Impelled by the desire of slaying Drona, he grasped a victory-giving and strong bow, of which the twang resembled the rumble of clouds, of which the string was very tough, and which was irrifragible and of celestial make. He then fixed on the bow-string a formidable arrow resembling a snake of virulent poison, and endued with the effulgence of fire. That arrow resembled a fire of fierce tongues, while inside the circle of his bow appeared like the autumnal sun of great splendour within an effulgent circle.

6. Beholding that resplendent bow bent by the son of Prisata, the soldiers considered that the last hour of the world had come.

7. Seeing then that arrow directed at him, the mighty son of Bharadwaja considered that the last day of his corporal existence had arrived.

8. The preceptor then did not endeavour to baffle that shaft, nor did also the celestial weapons of that high-souled hero appear at his command.

9. His weapons had not been exhausted although he had used them for four days and one night ; on the expiration of the third part of the fifth day, his stock of arrows was exhausted.

10. Beholding then the exhaustion of his shafts and pained with grief on account of his son's death, and in consequence also of the reluctance of the celestial weapons to appear at his command,

11. He desired to lay his weapons aside urged to do so by the words of the sages. Though still charged with great energy, he was unable to fight as before.

12. Then taking up another bow of celestial make, presented to him by Angiras, and several arrows resembling the curses of Brahmanas, he went on fighting with Dhristadyumna.

13. Then he covered Dhristadyumna with a thick shower of arrows, and filled with rage began to mangle his vindictive antagonist.

14. Then with his own arrows Drona cut off those of Dhristadyumna in hundred pieces, and then with sharp arrows he felled the standard, the bow and the charioteer of the latter.

15. Thereupon Dhristadyumna smilingly taking up another bow, pierced Drona in return with a sharp arrow in the centre of his breast.

16. Thus deeply pierced the mighty bowman (Drona) seemed a little flurried in that combat. But once more with a keen-edged *valla* he cut off his opponent's bow.

17. Then indomitable Drona cut off all the weapons, O king, and all the bows of his antagonist, except only his mace and sword.

18. Then, O subduer of foes, filled with rage, he pierced the wrathful Dhristadyumna with nine sharp arrows capable of putting an end to the life of every body,

19. The mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna of immeasurable soul then invoked into existence the Brahma weapon, and thereby caused the horses of his own chariot mix with those of his opponents.

20. Possessed of the fleetness of the wind, those steeds of the crimson and pegion colours, O foremost of the Bharatas, thus mingled together, appeared highly beautiful.

21. Like roaring clouds surcharged with flashes of lightning at the commencement of the rainy season, O mighty monarch, those steeds mingled together appeared highly beautiful.

22. Then that regenerate one of immeasurable soul, destroyed the wheel-joints, the shaft-joints and other car-joints of Dhristadyumna.

23. With his bow cut off, his car rendered useless, his elephants and driver slain and thus involved in a perilous situation that hero began to whirl his mace.

24. Then that truly valiant and mighty car-warrior the enraged Drona, destroyed with his sharp arrows that mace hurled by Dhristadyumna.

25. Beholding that mace of his cut off by Drona by means of his arrows, that foremost of men, that prince of the Panchalas, quickly took up a clean sword and a resplendent shield with its ground decked with hundred moons.

26. Undoubtedly, under these circumstances, the Panchala prince resolved to make an end of that foremost of preceptors, that most illustrious warrior.

27. Then jumping down from the terrace of his chariot and riding on the car-shaft he with his sword and bright shield uplifted, tried to approach the latter seated on his chariot.

28. Then that mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna, out of foolishness, and for achieving a difficult feat, wished to tear open the breast of Bharadwaja's son in battle.

29. Sometimes he stood on the yoke of Drona's car, and sometimes under the haunche's o hifs red steeds. These motions

of his were then greatly praised by all the troops.

30. While he thus stood upon the yoke, or underneath the haunches of those red steeds, Drona saw no opportunity for striking him. That indeed appeared wonderful.

31. Then in that battle the movements of both Drona and the son of Prisata resembled those of a hawk flying through the sky in quest of a piece of meat.

32. Thereafter the puissant Drona inflamed with rage, slew one after another the blue-hued steeds of his adversary, and then destroyed his car, with a powerful shaft.

33. The steeds of Dhristadyumna, thus slain fell down on the ground, whereupon the red steeds of Drona himself were set free from the entanglement in the trappings, O ruler of men.

34. Beholding those horses slain by that foremost of regenerate ones, that son of Prisata, that foremost of all warriors, born in virtue of a sacrifice, that mighty car-warrior, did not tolerate it.

35. Then that foremost of swords-men, deprived of his car, took up his sword, and rushed upon Drona, O king, like Vinata swooping down upon a snake,

36, Solicitous of slaying the son of Bharadwaja, O king, his appearance then resembled that of Hari when, in days of yore, he was going to slay the Daitya king Hiranyakasipu.

37. He then coursed in various tracks. Indeed, O foremost of the descendants of Kuru, Prisata's son careering in that battle, dis layed the well-known twenty-one kinds of evolutions.

38—40. Armed with his sword and his buckler in grasp the son of Prisata, wheeled about, whirled his sword in the air, made side thrusts, rushed forward, ran sideways, jumped up, assailed the sides of his foes, fell backwards, ran into close quarters with his enemy, and pressed them hard. Having practised them well he also exhibited the movements, known as *Bharata*, *Kousika*, and *Satwata*, as he coursed in battle for bringing about Drona's death. Beholding those charming movements of Dhristadyumna, as he coursed, armed with shield and sword in battle,

41—42. All the warriors present as also the celestials, were filled with amazement. The twiceborn Drona then discharging a thousand arrows in the press of the battle, cut off Dhristadyumna's sword and shield covered with hundred moons. The arrows that Drona shot in that fight in close quarters were of the length of a span.

43. Those arrows were only to be used in a fight in close quarters. No one else had arrows of that kind, except Saradwata's son Kripa, Arjuna, Ashwathaman and Karna.

44-45. Pradyumna and Yuyudhana possessed such arrows and also Abhimanyu had them. The preceptor then desirous of making an end of his pupil who was to him like his own son, placed on his bow-string, a strong shaft possessed of great violence. Satyaki however cut off that saft with ten arrows of his own.

46. Before the eyes of your son and of Karna of high-soul, he then thus saved Dhristadyumna who was on the point of falling a victim to Drona.

47—49. Thereafter O Bharata, Kesava and Dhananjaya, both of illustrious soul, beheld Satyaki of prowess incapable of being thwarted, in the track of the Kurus, and thus within the range of the shafts of Drona, Karna and Kripa. Then both of them applauded Satyaki of undiminishing fame saying 'excellent excellent,'—him who was then destroying the celestial weapons of all his foes. Then Kesava and Dhananjaya dashed upon the Kourava warriors.

50. Thereafter Dhananjaya addressing Kesava said:—Behold, O Kesava, that perpetuator of Mhdhu's race, sporting amidst the hostile warriors headed by the preceptor and other foremost car-warriors.

51. Truly valiant Satyaki is thereby affording great delight to me, the twins, king Yudhisthira and Bhima.

52. That Satyaki, the enhancer of the glory of the Vrishnis, well-practised in the use of weapons and free from insolence, is thus careering in the midst of the fight, sporting with mighty car-warriors.

53. The Siddhas and the troops filled with delight, are praising him, saying 'excellent, excellent,' as they find that one of the Satwata race invincible. The warriors of both armies are applauding him, O monarch, in consequence of his feats.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-second chapter, the battle between Drona and Dhristadyumna in the Drona-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCIII.

(DRONA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then beholding those feats of that one of the Satwata race, Duryodhana and

others, filled with rage, quickly encompassed the grandson of Sini on all sides.

2. Kripa and Karna and your sons, O sire, quickly assailing Sini's grandson in the battle, began to pierce him with sharp arrows.

3. Thereupon king Yudhisthira, the two sons of Madri begotten by Pandu, and the mighty Bhimasena rushed to protect him of the Satwata race.

4. Karna and the son of Gotama, that mighty car-warrior, and Duryodhana and others, then covered Sini's grandson with their shafts,

5. Then fighting, O king, (fearlessly) on with those warriors, that scion of Sini's race checked that awful shower of pouring arrows which had been begun so suddenly.

6. In that great battle, with his various celestial weapons, he duly baffled the celestial weapons of his high-souled opponents, that were aimed at him.

7. The field of battle looked dreadful during the progress of that encounter between royal combatants, and it resembled the scene of the field where in days of yore Rudra, filled with rage, had slaughtered all creatures.

8. Human arms, and heads, and bows, and torn umbrellas and chamaras, O Bharata,

9. Were seen in heaps on that field of battle. With broken-wheeled cars, with fallen arms,

10. And with heroic horsemen lying slain, the earth became impassable. O foremost of the Kurus, the warriors lacerated with the falling shafts,

11. Were seen to roll in various movements on the ground in that great battle. During the progress of that terrible battle resembling that between the Gods and the Asuras in days of yore,

12. The very virtuous king Yudhisthira addressing the Kshatriyas said :—"You mighty car-warriors, rush unitedly upon the pot-born Drona.

13. Yonder is the heroic son of Prisata engaged with the son of Bharadwaja; he is trying to the best of his endeavours to encompass the death of Drona.

14. Judging from the appearances of his mighty battle, it may be inferred that filled with rage the son of Prisata will to-day overthrow in battle the son of Bharadwaja.

15. Therefore do you unitedly rush upon the pot-born Drona. Thus commanded by Yudhisthira, the mighty car-warriors of the Srinjayas,

16—17. Inpelled by a desire for slaying the son of Bharadwaja, assailed him. That mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadwaja, then received those advancing hosts in fury, knowing death to be inevitable. When Drona of unfailing aim thus advanced, the earth began to tremble.

18. Fierce winds began to blow filling the troops of the enemy with fear. Mighty meteors began to drop down, seeming to issue out of the solar disc.

19. In their fall they illumined the welkin, and foreboded great danger. O Sire, the weapons of Bharadwaja's son began to blaze forth.

20. Cars emitted loud clatters, and horses began to shed tears. The mighty car-warrior Drona, that son of Bharadwaja, appeared to be devoid of his energy.

21. His eyes and his left arm began to tremble. And beholding Prisata's son before him, he became cheerless.

22. Then desirous of going to the Posthumous regions of the sages that duly recite the Vedas, he decided to cast his life off in a fair fight.

23. Then the four directions of the compass were covered with the troops of Drupada's son. Consuming hosts of Kshatriyas Droan then carcered on the field of battle.

24. Then that crusher of foes having slain twenty thousand Kshatriyas, slew another hundred thousand with whetted shafts of keen points.

25. Then exerting himself with care he remained in the battle-field, and appeared like a blazing fire without even a curl of smoke. For the destruction of the Kshatriyas, he then grasped the Brahma weapons.

26. Then the self-controlled Bhima beholding the prince of the Panchalas carless and weaponless, quickly rushed to the rescue of that high-souled warrior.

27. Then beholding the prince of the Panchalas strike Drona from a near point Bhima, that subduer of foes, took him up on his car and thus spoke to him :—

28. "Except yourself there is none who can fight with the preceptor in such close quarters ; therefore be quick in compassing his slaughter, inasmuch as the burden rests wholly on you."

29. Thus spoken to by Bhima, the mighty-armed Dhristadyumna, quickly took up a strong and new bow of very superior make and capable of bearing a great strain.

30. Worked up with rage and discharging his arrows in that battle at the indomitable Drona, Dhristadyumna covered the preceptor with arrows with a desire to withstand him.

31. Those two ornaments of battle, those two superior warriors, filled with rage, then resisted one another, and invoked into existence many celestial and Brahma weapons.

32. Then, O mighty monareh, Dhristadyumna covered Drona in that battle with many weapons. Destroying all those weapons of Bharadwaja's son, the prince of the Panchalas,

33. That warrior of unfading renown, began to consume the Vasatis, the Sinis, the Valhikas and the Kurus who were then engaged in protecting Drona.

34. O king, discharging numerous shafts on all sides, Dhristadyumna at that time appeared beautiful like the sun of myriad rays.

35. Drona however once more cut off the prince's bow and pierced the vitals of the prince himself with large number of shafts. Thus wounded the prince was greatly pained.

36. Thereupon Bhima of great fury holding the chariot of Drona, distinctly spoke these words to him :—

37. "If vile Brahmanas dissatisfied with the duties of their own order but versed in the use of weapons, did not fight, then the Kshatriya order would not have become reduced in numerical strength.

38. Sparing life has been declared to be the most excellent of all virtues. The Brahmana is the root of that virtue. You are again the foremost of all men conversant with Brahma.

39—40. Like a Chandala, slaying numerous *Mlechchas* and diverse other warriors, who however are all engaged in performing the duties of their order, moved to the deed by folly and ignorance, O Brahmana, and by the desire of benefitting your family and son, indeed for the sake of your only son, —indeed slaying all like one ignorant of his duties and disregarding your own avocation why do you not feel ashamed ?

41. He for whose sake you have taken up arms, and for whom you live, he, deprived of life, to-day lies on the field of battle, unknown to you and behind your back.

42. It behoves you not to doubt the words the very virtuous king Yudhisthira has told you. Thus addressed by Bhima, Drona, laid his bow aside.

43. Then desirous of laying all his weapons aside, Bharadwaja's son of illustrious soul, said aloud :—"O Karna, O Karna, O great bowman, O Kripa, O Duryodhana,

44. Exert your best in the battle : this I tell you repeatedly ; may no injury befall you from the Pandavas ; I am going to lay aside my weapons."

45. Having spoken thus, O mighty monarch, Drona began to cry out the name of Aswathaman at the top of his voice ; and laying aside his weapons, he then sat down on the terrace of his car.

46. Then betaking to yoga, he assuredly gave safety to every creature. Taking advantage of that opportunity, Dhristadyumna collected all his energies.

47. Then placing his dreadful bow with arrows fixed on its string on his car, he jumped down from it armed with a sword and then rushed furiously upon Drona.

48. Then men and other creatures beholding Drona on the point of falling a victim to Dhristadyumna, began to utter loud cries of *Oh* and *Alas*.

49. They bewailed piteously and they cried *alas* and *oh* and said *fie*. Meanwhile Drona, having laid aside his weapons, was peacefully seated on his car.

50. Having spoken as before, Drona, had betaken to yoga. Endued with great splendour, and possessed of ascetic merit, he had set his heart on that ancient and paramount being *viz.*, Vishnu.

51. Slightly bending down his face, and throwing his breast forward, and shutting his eyes and reposing on the quality of goodness, and directing his mind on meditation,

52. And thinking on the monosyllabic *Om* representing Brahma, and recollecting the mighty, paramount, and undestructible god of gods, the effulgent Drona of great ascetic merit,

53. The preceptor of the Kurus and the Pandavas, went to heaven, which is so difficult of being attained even by the virtuous. Indeed when Drona proceeded to heaven, it appeared to us that there were two suns in the sky.

54. The whole welkin was ablaze, and appeared to be one vast sheet of equal light when the sun-like Bharadwaja, of solar splendour, proceeded towards heaven.

55. But within an wink of time however, that light disappeared, and then tumultuous noise of the delighted celestials were heard there.

56. When Drona thus ascended to heaven, Dhristadyumna was standing beside him stupified; only we five amongst mortal creatures beheld,

57. The illustrious Drona, lost in *yoga* and meditation, ascend to the highest regions of blessedness. These five were, myself, Pritha's son Dhananjaya, Aswathaman, the son of Drona,

58—59. Vasudeva of the Vrisni race, and king Yudhisthira the virtuous son of Pandu. All else could not see the halo of glory that surrounded the intelligent son of Bharadwaja as he ascended, rapt up in *yoga*, to the Brahma regions, which are mysterious even to the gods and which is the highest of all celestial regions.

60—61. In fact all human beings were then unaware of the fact that Drona had attained to the highest mode of existence. None of them could then descry the preceptor, that subduer of foes, ascend to the region of Brahma, devoted to *yoga*, in company with the best of sages, his body mangled with arrows, and steeped in blood after he had set aside his weapons.

62. Prisata's son meanwhile, though all creatures cried fie on him, yet casting his eyes on the lifeless Drona's head, began to drag it (by the hair.)

63. Then with his sword he lopped that head off the trunk of his foe who remained silent all the while. Then upon the slaughter of Bharadwaja's son, he was filled with delight.

64. Dhristadyumna began to send up loud war-cries whirling his sword all the while in the air. With his hoary locks flowing down his ears, of a dark complexion that old man of eighty-five years,

65. For your sake used to career on the field of battle, like a boy of sixteen. The mighty-armed Dhananjaya, that son of Kunti, had said (before Drona's head was lopped off :—

66. "O son of Drupada, bring the preceptor alive. Do not slay him. He should not be slain, he should not be slain." Even thus did your troops also,

67. Cry out; especially Arjuna had exclaimed aloud melting with compassion for his preceptor. But unmindful of the cries of Arjuna and those of other rulers of the earth,

68—69. O foremost of men, Dhristadyumna slew Drona in the terrace of his own car. Then that indomitable subduer of foes, his body stained with blood, jumped down from the car on the earth, looking red like the (newly-risen) solar disc. Thus the soldiers beheld Drona slain in the battle.

70. Thereafter, O king, that furied bowman Dhristadyumna, threw that large head of Bharadwaja's son at the front ranks of your troops.

71. Then the troops beholding that head of Bharadwaja's son, felt inclined to fly and O king, without much hesitation they took to their heels.

72. Meanwhile Drona proceeding to the heavens entered the stellar path. I only saw the (true circumstances of the) death of Drona,

73—74. Through the grace of the sage Krishna-Dwaipayana, the son of Satyavati. I then beheld that effulgent one proceeding, after his ascension to the sky, like a blazing flame-beam free from even a curl of smoke, flying through the welkin. Upon the slaughter of Drona, the Kurus, the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, all became depressed,

75. And every body fled in great haste. The army then broke away. Many had been slain and many wounded with keen arrows.

76. Upon the death of Drona, your troops appeared to be senseless. Having suffered a defeat and being inspired with fear about the future,

77. The Kurus lost the benefit of this as well as of the next world. Really they lost all self-control. The rulers of earth then searching for the body of Bharadwaja's son,

78. Could not find it out in consequence of the field being covered over with numerous headless trunks. The Pandavas on the other hand, having obtained victory here and prospects of fame in the future,

79. Began to make loud sounds with their arrows and conches, and they uttered tremendous war-cries. Then Bhimasena and Prisata's son Dhristadyumna,

80. Embraced each other in the midst of the Pandava host which looked upon them both. Then that afflicter of foes Bhima addressing Prisata's son said :—

81. "O son of Prisata, I will again embrace your victorious self, when the sinful sons of Suta and Dhritarastra, will be slain in the battle."

82. Having spoken thus much and filled with joy, Pandu's son Bhima, caused the earth to tremble with the sound of his armstrokes.

83. At that sound your troops, panic stricken, began to fly away; and disregarding the duties of Kshatriyas they exerted themselves in flying away.

84. The Pandavas, having obtained victory were transported with joy, O ruler of men; and great was their happiness at the destruction of their foes in battle.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-third chapter, the slaughter of Drona, in the Drona-badha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCIV.

(NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA).

Sanjaya said :—

1. Upon the slaughter of Drona, O king, the Kurus, afflicted with the weapons of their enemies, their foremost warrior slain and themselves confounded—began to indulge copiously in grief.

2. Beholding their enemies then elated with joy and success, they repeatedly trembled in fear. O ruler of men, they were panic-stricken and depressed and their eyes were filled with tears.

3. They were distracted (with sorrow), their courage gone, and themselves reduced in splendour under the burden of grief. Uttering piteous wails, they then surrounded your son.

4. Covered with dust, trembling (in every limbs), gazing (vacantly) at the ten points of the compass, their eyes flooded with tears, they looked like the Daityas upon the fall of Hiranyaksha in days of yore.

5. Surrounded by those panic-stricken troops of his, who then looked like puny animals, your son could not stay on the field and went away from it.

6. Those warriors of yours, O Bharata, worn out with hunger and thirst, and scorched by the burning rays of the sun were exceedingly dejected.

7—8. Beholding that unthought-of overthrow of Bharadwaja's son, that was like the falling of the sun on the earth, or the drying up of the ocean, or the transplantation of the Meru mountain, or the defeat of Vasava himself, your troops, O king, began to fly away, panic lending speed to their legs.

9. Beholding him of the golden car slain, Sakuni the king of the Ghandharas, with his terrified and affrighted followers fled in all haste.

10. Taking with him his numerous divisions that were flying with all their standards, Suta's son also, out of fear, fled away.

11. The ruler of the Madras *viz* Salya gathering together his divisions abounding in cars, elephants and steeds, and looking vacantly on all sides, fled away, out of fear.

12. Kripa the son of Saradwata also fled,—saying *Alas, Alas,* and taking with him his divisions consisting mostly of elephants and infantry, of which the greater part had been slaughtered.

13. Kritavarman, surrounded by the Voja division and the remnants of the Kalingas, Asratta and Valhikas, fled away borne by his swift steeds.

14. Beholding Drona slain, Uluka, filled with fear and with his infantry divisions, fled away in great speed.

15. Handsome, youthful in years and well-known for his bravery, Dussassana inspired with great fear, fled away being surrounded by his elephant division.

16. Beholding Drona overthrown Brishasena fled in haste, taking away with him ten thousand chariots and three thousand tusked elephants.

17. Your son the mighty car-warrior Duryodhana also, O king, then fled from the field attended by cars, elephants and steeds and surrounded by foot-soldiers.

18. Beholding Drona overthrown, O king, Susarman fled away, taking with him the remnants of the *Samsaptakas*, slain by the diadem-decked Arjuna.

19. Beholding him of the golden car slain, men began to fly on all sides, riding on their elephants and cars and urging on their steeds.

20. Some urging on their sires, others their brothers and others their uncles, and others their sons and other companions, the Kurus fled away in haste.

21. Some exhorting their troops to make haste and others their nephews and other kinsmen, fled away in all directions.

22. Their hair dishevelled and their accoutrements falling off, no two persons were seen to fly together; their courage gone and their splendour destroyed, men then thought that the Kuru army was completely annihilated.

23. Others among your troops fled, O lord, throwing off their coats of mail. O foremost of the Bharatas, then your troops addressing one another loudly said :—

24. "Wait, Wait"; but none of them who thus spoke remained a moment on the field. Abandoning their vehicles and chariots decked with ornaments,

25. Warriors, mounting on the steeds or using their legs, fled in all possible haste.

While the troops, with their splendour lost and filled with fear, were thus flying away,

26. Only Drona's son Aswathaman advanced towards the foe, like a huge alligator swiming against the current. He had recently fought a terrible fight with the hostile division headed by Sikhandin,

27. As also with the Prabhadrakas the Panchalas and the Chedis accompanied by the Kekayas. Having slain numerous indomitable troops of the Pandavas,

28. And with difficulty extricating himself from his perilous situation, that one of the gait of an infuriated elephant, beholding the troops flying away,

29. Approached Duryodhana; and then that son of Drona said these words to the latter:—"Why O Bharata, are the troops flying away, as if in fear?

30. Why, O king, do you not try to rally them when they are thus flying away? O ruler of men, you also are not in your usual mood.

31. In consequence of the slaughter of what foremost of warriors of your army have the troops been reduced to this plight? O foremoct of the Kurus, tell me all truly.

32. O king, even these divisions headed by Karna and others are not staying on the field. In no previons battle was the army thus broken and routed.

33. O Bharata, has any great catastrophe, O mighty monarch, overtaken your army? Thereafter Duryodhana hearing the words of Drona's son,

34. Hesitated to communicate that most terrible and disagreeable intelligence to him. Your son, that foremost of kings, was then sunk deep in the ocean of grief, even like a splintered boat in the sea.

35. At the sight of Drona's son seated on his chariot, the eyes of the king were flooded with tears. Thereafter, O king, your son suffused with shame, said these words to the son of Saradwata:—

36. "May good betide you. Do you first inform Aswathaman of the cause of this flight of our troops. Thereupon O king, Saradwata's son, repeatedly overwhelmed with sorrow, said to Drona's son how Drona had been slain.

Kripa said:—

37. Ourselves, placing that foremost of car-warriors on earth *vis* Drona before us, commenced the battle with the Panchalas only.

38. During the progress of the battle the Kurus and the Somakas became mingled together and then challenging one another they mangled one another's body with their weapons.

39. When the battle thus raged and when the Dhartarashtra troops were being reduced in number, your father, filled with rage, invoked into existence a celestial weapon.

40. Then, O foremost of men, Drona using that *Brahma* weapon, slew his enemies by hundreds and thousands.

41. Impelled forward by Fate the Pandavas, the Kaikayas, the Matsyas and the Panchalas, O foremost of the regenerate ones, approaching the vicinity of Drona's car, were slaughtered (indiscriminately).

42. Then with his *Brahma* weapon Drona despatched a thousand foremost heroes, and two thousand tusked elephants to the abode of Death.

43. With his hoary locks flowring down to his ears, and of a dark complexion and full eighty-five years of age, Drona then careered on the field with the agility of a boy of sixteen.

44. Their troops fatigued and their king slain, the Panchalas although burning with rage, were compelled to turn back.

45. When the enemy's rank was partly broken and when they were compelled to turn their faces away from the field, that conqueror of foes, exhibiting his celestial weapon, looked beautiful like the rising sun.

46. Penetrating into the centre of the Pandava rank, the puissant hero, your father, shooting his ray-like shafts, became incapable of being looked at like the sun shining in the centre of the heaven.

47. Our enemies, then scorched by Drona who then appeared beautiful like the sun, were reduced in their energy, deprived of courage and depressed at heart.

48. Thereupon the slayer of Madhu ever solicitous of the victory of the Pandavas, beholding the troops afflicted by Drona with his shafts spoke these words:—

49. "This leader of the leaders of car-hosts, this foremost of all wielders of bow is incapable of being vanquished in battle even by the slayer of Vritra himself.

50. Therefore disregarding the rules of fair combat do you strive for the sake of giving victory to the Pandavas, in such a manner that he of the golden car may not slay you all.

51. "I think, he will never fight if he hears that Aswathaman has been slain in battle. Let therefore some one tell him

this falsehood that Aswathaman has been slain in battle."

52. These words did not sound agreeable to the ear of Kunti's son Dhananjaya. Others again approved of these words. King Yudhisthira accepted them after much hesitation.

53. Then Bhimasena suffused with blashes of shame said to your father:—"Aswathaman has been slain." But your father believed him not.

54. Your father affectionate to his son then doubting the veracity of Bhima's words, questioned the very virtuous king Yudhisthira, whether you were really slain or not.

55. Afraid of telling lies but interested in securing victory, Yudhisthira, then beholding a mighty elephant by name Aswathaman slain in battle,

56. By Bhima,—an elephant belonging to Indravarman the ruler of the Malavas and that was huge as a hill, approached Drona and loudly spoke these words :—

57. "He for whom you are wielding your weapons and looking on whom you live, that dearly-loved son of yours by name Aswathaman has been slain.

58—59. Slain he lies prostrate on the field like a lion-calf in the woods. Cognisant of the evils of falsehood that king clearly spoke these words to the foremost of Brahmanas, adding indistinctly the word *elephant* after them. Hearing that you have been slain and consequently afflicted with great grief,

60. Withdrawing his celestial weapons he ceased to fight. Beholding him greatly anxious and overpowered with grief,

61. The son of the Panchala king, that perpetrator of vile deeds, assailed him. Beholding that prince who had been destined to be the cause of his death, Drona, conversant with the truths about men and things,

62. Abandoned his celestial weapons and betook to the Praya Joga. Then grasping his hair with his left hand,

63. The son of Prisata lopped off his head disregarding the expostulating cries of the heroes. From all sides they then said :—'He should not be slain, He should not be slain.'

64. Similarly Arjuna also, jumping down from his chariot quickly rushed towards Dhristadyumna, with his arms raised, and repeatedly saying :—

65. "Bring the preceptor alive ; conversant with the rules of fair fig ht, you should not slay aim." Although thus prevented by the Kauravas and Arjuna,

66. Your father, O foremost of men, suffered death at the hands of that most heartless warrior (Dhristadyumna). It is for this reason that the troops afflicted with fear are flying away. Similarly, O sinless one, we are depressed upon the overthrow of your sire.

Sanjaya said :—

67. Then Drona's son, hearing that account of the slaughther of his father in battle, became filled with fury like a snake trampled under feet.

68. Then, O sire, filled with wrath Drona's son appeared to burn on the field, like fire that blazes forth furiously having obtained heaps of fuel to feed it.

69. Squeezing one of his hands with the other and grinding his teeth and breathing like a snake his eyes became coppery (in rage).

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-fourth chapter, the communication of the intelligence of Drona's death to Aswathaman, in the Narayanastramoksha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCV.

(NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA)

—Continued.

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. Hearing of the slaughter of his aged and Brahma-knowing sire by Dhristadyumna in an unfair battle, O Sanjoya, what did Aswathaman say,

2. He who is puissant and in whom human and Varuna and Agneya and Brahma and Aindra and Narayana weapons are always present ?

3. Hearing that the pious preceptor has been slain in battle by unfair means by Dhristadyumna what did that Aswathama say ?

4. The illustrious Drona having mastered the science of bowmanship had imparted its knowledge to that son of his desireous of seeing the latter accomplished in every way.

5. There is only one person in the world whom people can desire to be superior to themselves in accomplishments, and that person is one's own son.

6. This is the mystery about all illustrious preceptors, that they impart the knowledge

of their respective sciences to their sons or to their beloved pupils.

7. O Sanjaya, the heroic son of Saradwata's daughter, being the disciple of his own sire has obtained all that knowledge in every detail, and has become a second Drona.

8. In knowledge of weapons, Aswathaman is like Rama himself; in battle he is like Purandar, in prowess he equals Kartavirya, and in wisdom he matches Vrihaspati.

9. Youthful in years, he resembles a mountain in endurance, and fire in energy. In gravity he is equal to the ocean, and in anger to a snake of virulent poison.

10. He is the first car-warrior in the world and indefatigable and a resolute bowman. He equals the wind in speed; and in the thick of fight he careers like the Destroyer in person.

11. Shooting his arrows in battle he had afflicted the earth herself. Brave and of great prowess, he is never exhausted in battle.

12. Purified by the recital of the Vedas and by the observance of the vows, he has thoroughly mastered the science of bowmanship. He is incapable of being ruffled and resembled in this direction the mighty ocean or the Dasaratha's son Rama himself.

13. Hearing that the righteous preceptor has been slain in battle by unfair means by Dhristadyumna what indeed did Aswathaman say?

14. Aswathaman was destined to become the slayer of Dhristadyumna the son of Yaynasena, even as this latter was ordained to be the slayer of Drona.

15. What, alas, did Aswathaman say, hearing that the Preceptor has been slain by that sinful, cruel and mean Dhristadyumna of little foresight?

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-fifth chapter, the wrath of Aswathaman in the Narayanastra-moksha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCVI.

(NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Hearing that his father has been slain by underhand means by Dhristadyumna of sinful deeds, Drona's son became filled, O foremost of men, with tears as well as with (extreme) rage.

2. Inflamed as he was with rage, his body, O monarch, appeared to burn like that of the Destroyer himself when at the expiration of a *yuga*, he engages himself in slaughtering created beings.

3. Then repeatedly wiping off his eyes shedding copious tears, and breathing in rage, he said these words unto king Duryodhana.

4. I have been apprised of the fact, how my father was slain after he laid his weapons aside; I have also known how a sinful act has been committed by those who boast of hoisting the standard of virtue.

5—6. I have also heard of the vile and ruthless act of the very virtuous king Yudhisthira. Surely either victory or its reverses will fall to the lot of those who engage in fight. Death in battle is ever esteemed. The death overtaking one engaged in fight under fair rules of combat,

7. Should not become a source of grief, as has been observed by the sages. My father, without doubt, has gone to the posthumous regions of the heroes.

8. I should not lament for that foremost of men as he has undergone the most excellent form of death. But when fighting fairly, he was siezed by the hair,

9. Before the eyes of all the troops; this humiliation that he sustained is biting me to the very quick. Whilst I live, my sire was seized by the hair,

10. Why then should sonless men wish to obtain sons (who can help them in no way)? Moved by lust, or wrath or ignorance or hatred or levity,

11. Men perpetrate acts opposed to morality or to humiliate others. This most sinful act has been committed by the son of Prisata,

12. Of wicked soul and ruthless heart, in utter disregard of myself. Dhristadyumna shall behold the dreadful consequences of his act,

13. As also the prevaricating sons of Pandu, who have perpetrated a sinful act. He that caused, by an underhand measure, the preceptor to lay aside his weapon,

14. The blood of that son of Dharma the earth shall drink to-day. I swear by my truth, O foremost of the Kurus, as also by the religious merits acquired by my *Istha* and *Purtha* acts,

15. That I shall not drag on my burdensome existence without slaying the Panchalas to the last man. Having re-

course to all measures, I shall contend against the Panchalas in great battle ;

16. Either by hook or crook or by violent or mild measures I will achieve the slaughter of Dhristadyumna of evil deeds in battle.

17. O ruler of the Kurus, exterminating the Panchalas, I shall regain my peace of mind. O foremost of men, people desire to have children,

18. In order that these latter may free them from great danger here and hereafter. But my sire was reduced to a woeful plight like one helpless,

19. While myself his son and disciple, equal to a mountain (in might) am still alive. Fie on my weapons of celestial make, fie on my arms, fie on my prowess,

20. Inasmuch as getting me for his son, Drona had to suffer the indignity of being seized by the hair. O foremost of the Bharatas, I shall therefore so exert myself that

21. I may be free from the debt I still owe to my sire who has proceeded to Heaven. A noble person never indulges in his own praise ;

22. But incapable of tolerating the slaughter of my sire, I shall to-day utter my own praises :—Let the Pandavas with Janarddana at their head to-day behold my prowess,

23. As I grind all creatures like the Destroyer himself at the hour of Dissolution. Neither the gods, nor the Gandharvas, nor the Asuras, nor the reptiles, nor the Rakshasas,

24. Will be able to-day to conquer me as I shall ride on my car, O foremost of men. There is none in the world superior to me, or Arjuna in the knowledge of weapons.

25. To-day at the heart of the hostile troops, like the sun in the midst of scorching rays, I shall discharge my celestial weapons.

26. In to-day's mighty battle, shafts shot furiously from by bow will crush and mangle the Pandavas, showing their great energy.

27. My troops shall to-day behold the quarters of the compass, shrouded with sharp-winged shafts, as if O king, by showers of rain.

28. Shooting on all sides shafts of dreadful whirr, I shall fell my foes like the mighty tempest uprooting the trees.

29—30. Neither Vibhatsu, nor Janarddana, nor Bhimasena, nor the twins, (Nakula and Sahadeva), nor king Yudhisthira, nor Prisata's son of wicked soul, Sikhandin, nor Satyaki, even know the weapon which I possess, O foremost of the Kurus, with the *mantras* for hurling and withdrawing it.

31. Formerly on one occasion, disguised as a Brahmana, Narayana came to my father; whereupon my father bowing down unto him presented him offerings in due course and form.

32. Accepting those offerings that possesser of the six illustrious qualities (the Bhagas) desired to accord a boon to my sire. Thereupon my father asked the boon of getting that most excellent weapon called *Narayana*.

33. Thereupon that foremost of all gods, that possessor of the six divine qualities said unto him, O king. "No man shall ever be a match for you in battle.

34. But, O Brahmana, this weapon should not be used without sufficient deleberation, for it never returns without despatching the foe at whom it is hurled.

35. O Lord. I know not whom it may not slay. It will even effect the death of him who is unslayable. Therefore it should not be used hastily.

36. When one abandons his car or weapons in battle, or implores for mercy, or surrenders himself,

37. O afflicter of your foes, these are the occasions when this mighty weapon should not be used. He that wants to afflict the unslayable by this weapon, himself becomes afflicted by it.

38. My puissant father then received that weapon. The lord then thus spoke to me also. "You shall destroy many showers of celestial weapons,

39. By means of this weapon and you shall blaze forth in effulgence by its virtue." Having thus spoken that Divine Lord ascended to heaven.

40—41. This is the history how my father obtained the Narayana weapon from the god. With the aid of this weapon, I shall crush the Pandavas, the Panchalas, the Matsyas and the Kaikayas in battle like the husband of Sachi crushing the Asuras. Assuming those particular forms which I shall desire them to assume, my arrows,

42. Will fall upon my foes contending vigorously in battle. Staying in battle I shall shower weapons as it lists men to do.

43. I will rout the foremost of car-warriors with sky-ranging arrows furnished with iron tips. I will certainly hurl battle-

axes, bludgeons and various other kinds of weapons.

44. An afflicter of foes as I am, with the aid of that Narayana weapon, I shall destroy the foes, completely crushing the Pandavas.

45. That disgrace to the Panchala race, that contemner of his friends, the Brahmanas and his preceptor, that odious fellow of vilest conduct, shall not escape me alive to-day."

46. Hearing those words of Drona's son, the army rallied; all foremost of warriors therein blew their mighty conches.

47. Delightedly they began to strike up the *Bheris,* and *Dindimàs* by thousands; the earth then struck with the hoops of horses and wheels of car, rang out loudly.

48. That tremendous din resounded through the welkin, the heavens and the earth. Then hearing that sound that resembled the rumble of rain-clouds, the Pandavas,

49. Those foremost of car-warriors, uniting together began to consult. The son of Drona also, O Bharata, having spoken in the above manner, wahsed his mouth with water and then invoked into existence that celestial weapon known by the name of Narayana.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-sixth chapter, the wrath of Aswathaman, in the Narayanastra-Moksha Parva of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCVII.

(NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that Narayana weapon had been invoked into existence, the wind began to blow from opposite directions, and peals of thunder were heard though the sky was cloudless.

2. The earth quaked and the oceans became agitated. The ocean-going stream began to flow in contrary directions.

3. The crests of mountains, O Bharata, began to split up. Diverse animals then passed keeping the son of Pandu to their right.

4. The veil of darkness spread over the earth. The sun became dimmed in splendour. Diverse kinds of flesh-eating animals began to alight on the field of battle.

5. O Ruler of men, celestials, the Danavas, and the Gandharvas all became filled with fear. Seeing then that tremendous agitation in nature, they began to question one another saying, 'what is the cause of all this?'

6. All the kings became filled with anxiety and inspired with terror, O ruler of men, at the sight of that dreadful weapon of affrighting aspect, belonging to Drona's son.

Dhritarashtra said :—

7. When unable to brook the slaughter of his sire and overwhelmed with grief, Drona's son did rally the troops.

8. Tell me, O Sanjaya, what consultation then the Pandavas held for protecting Dhristadyumna, as they saw the Kurus return to the charge.

Sanjaya said :—

9. At first having seen the Dhartarastras routed and again beholding them return to the attack Yudhisthira addressing Arjuna said :—

Yudhisthira said :—

10. Upon the slaughter of the preceptor Drona by Dhristadyumna like the slaughter of the mighty Asura Vrita by the wielder of thunderbolt,

11. O Dhananjaya, the enemy depressed at heart, gave up all hopes of victory. They fled from the field, intent on saving themselves.

12-13. Some rulers of men fled on chariots borne along irregular courses, with *parshni* drivers slain, deprived of standards, streamers and umbrellas, with their boxes and *Kuvaras* shattered, and all their decorations displaced. Others again, panic-struck, and deprived of reason, goading the steeds of their chariots with their toes, fled in all haste.

14. Others overwhelmed with fear, fled on their cars having their axles, wheels and yokes broken. Others fled, hanging half way from their saddles.

15. Others again displaced from their seats and rivetted with shafts on the necks of elephants, were precipitately borne away by those animals. Others were crushed down by flying elephants, mangled and pierced with arrows.

16. Others with their armours taken off and weapons exhausted fell down on the earth from the back of their animals. Others again were mutilated by car-wheels or crushed by steeds or elephants.

17. Some loudly calling their sires and their sons fled away in fear, without recognising one another and reduced in energy by grief.

18. Some causing their sons, fathers, friends and brothers sit (on their vehicles) and doffing their coats of mail were seen to wash them with water.

19. After the slaughter of Drona, the enemy's host, falling into great distress, fled away in haste. Who hath rallied it now? Tell me if you know it.

20. The sound of neighing steeds and roaring elephants mingled with the clatter of car-wheels is heard aloud.

21. These terrible sounds in the ocean of Kuru army, are swelling every moment and causing my troops to tremble.

22. This tremendous sound that is assailing our ears, causing our hairs to stand erect, meseems, will devour up the three worlds with their lords.

23. I think this to be the tremendous roar of the wielder of the thunder, *viz.*, Vasava, who enraged at the slaughter of Drona is coming to fight on behalf of the Kauravas.

24. O Dhananjoya, hearing this loud and terrible sound our hairs stand erect, and our best car-warriors are becoming filled with anxiety.

25. I ask you who is this mighty car-warrior that rallying this terrible and agitated host like the lord of the celestials themselves, is leading it to the charge.

Arjuna said :—

26. He depending upon whose prowess the Kauravas, having addressed themselves to the accomplishment of fierce deeds, are blowing their conches and facing us with firmness,

27. He about whom you entertain doubts as to who he may be who, having rallied the troops of the sons of Dhritarastra, that had fled from the fall of the weaponless Drona, is now uttering terrible roars,

28. He who is possessed of bashfulness, and mighty arms, who has the gait of an infuriate elephant, who possesses a face like that of a tiger, who achieves fierce feats and gives assurances of safety to the Kurus,

29. He, upon whose birth Drona distributed a thousand kine among Brahmanas of high-worth, he, O king, is Aswathaman who is thus roaring.

30. As soon as he was born that hero neighed like Uchhaisravas and thereby caused the three worlds to tremble.

31. Having heard that sound, an invisible being, O master, ascribed to him the name Aswathaman, (horse-voiced). That brave warrior, O son of Pandu, is roaring to-day.

32. He, who has been slain like one helpless by the son of Prisata, by a cruel and deceitful means, yonder stands the protector of that one.

33. The Panchala prince dragged my poor preceptor by the locks of his hair. Certainly Drona's son will not forgive that act of his, aware as he is of his own manliness and resources.

34. You also, O king, has spoken a lie to the preceptor, being driven to it by the desire for obtaining the kingdom. Conversant with the rules of morality and of pious nature, you have indeed perpetrated a great sin.

35. Like that hanging in Rama on consequence of his slaying Vali, the infamy hanging on you in consequence of the slaughter of Drona will be eternal in the three worlds with their mobile and immobile creations.

36. 'The son of Pandu is accomplished in all virtues; moreover he is my disciple, he will never tell me a lie'. Thinking this Drona believed what you then said.

37. You have spoken an untruth veiled in the garb of truth, to the preceptor, adding the word *elephant* thereto.

38. Thereupon the Puissant Drona, laid his weapons aside and became indifferent to every earthly concern. He was senseless, and as you have seen was overwhelmed with a swoon,

39. It was then that his disciple, transgressing all morality, slew his preceptor, filled with affection for his son and unwilling to fight and possessed by grief.

40. Having slain by a deceitful means your preceptor who had laid his weapons aside, now do you with your counsellors, protect the son of Prisata, if indeed, you are equal to the task.

41. To-day all of us conjointly will not be able to protect the son of Prisata, who has been as it were devoured by the son of Drona, filled with fury on account of his sire's slaughter.

42. He, who ever treated all creatures with exceeding compassion, even he, hearing that his sire was dragged by the hair will to-day consume us in battle.

43. Setting at naught all dictates of morality, the pupil has slaughtered his preceptor, although I exclaimed at the top of my voice, protesting that the preceptor should not be slain.

44. We have already passed away the greater part of our lives; the lease of life left to us is indeed very short; even that short period is blotted by this sinful act (perpetrated in the maturity of our years).

45. Drona, in consequence of the affection he cherished for us, was indeed like our father. By the ordinances of the holy texts, he was also our father. Yet such a preceptor of ours has been slain by ourselves, for the sake of enjoying sovereignty for a short period.

46. Dhritarastra, O manarch, gave the earth to Bhishma and Drona, and what was more, he entrusted them with the lives of his sons.

47. Though thus esteemed and endowed with such an honorarium by the foe, yet the preceptor looked upon us like his own son.

48. The preceptor, incapable of suffering any reduction in strength and energy, was only slain in battle, when he believing in your words laid his weapons aside. While engaged in fight even Indra the performer of hundred sacrifices could not have defeated him.

49. Even such a preceptor, venerable in years and devoted to our welfare, has been i jured by ourselves, who have betaken to mean conduct for securing sovereignty.

50. Alas, alas, what a heinous sin and a ruthless act have we perpetrated, for, tempted by the desire for enjoying the pleasures of sovereignty, we have slain our venerable preceptor.

51. My preceptor had all along been under the impression, that I, Vasova's son, could abandon all, my sires, brothers, sons, wives, and even life itself, for his sake, in consequence of the affection I bear for him.

52. And yet, alas, longing for sovereignty, I have neglected him when he was on the point of being slaughtered. For this act, O king, I have already been condemned to hell, being covered with great ignominy.

53. It is better that I should die than live, inasmuch as I have to-day, out of a desire for obtaining sovereignty, suffered my old preceptor to be slain, who was a Brahmana and a great *muni* and who moreover had laid his weapons aside at the time.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-seventh chapter, the words of Arjuna in the Narayanastramoksha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCVIII.

(NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing the words of Arjuna, O mighty monarch, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host spoke neither agreeable or disagreeable words in reply to Dhananjoya.

2. But the mighty Bhimasena filled with wrath, spoke, O foremost of the Bharatas, these words for reproching Kunti's son Arjuna.

3. 'You are preaching the rules of morality, like a muni living in the woods or like a Brahmana of austere observances who has cut off all connections with this world.

4. Saving others from injuries, defending himself against wounds and injuries, and showing forgiveness to women and the pious, a Kshatriya soon obtains the (rule of the) earth, as also religious merit, fame and prosperity.

5. Yourself endowed with all the desirable qualifications of a Ksharitya, O perpetuater of your race, it looks odd that you should speak like one ignorant of the duties of your order.

6. O son of Kunti, your prowess resembles that of Sakra the lord of Sachi. You never pass beyond the limits of morality even as the ocean never transgresses its banks.

7. What person is there, who will not applaud you,—you who, having forgotten the animosity fanned and kept alive for the last thirteen years, are solicitous for observing the precepts of morality?

8. Surely it is fortunate, O sire, that your heart to-day bends towards virtue. It is also fortunate that your understanding to-day inclines towards showing compassion, O you of undeteriorating fame.

9. Although you are so eager to observe the dictates of righteousness, yet your kingdom was snatched away from you most unrighteously. Your wife Draupadi having been dragged into the open court, was iusulted by your foe.

10. We were exiled, with barks of trees or skins of animals for our cloth and cover. Though undeserving of such a wretched plight, yet we were compelled to wear out thirteen long years in that condition.

11. You, O sinless one, have overlooked all these crying causes that call for revenge. Devoted as you are to perform the duties of Kshatriyas, you have quietly tolerated all these.

12. Keeping alive the memory of all these wrongs inflicted on us, we have come here to-day with you, to avenge them. (But as you are so righteous) I myself will slay all these mean fellows who snatched away our kingdom.

13. You had said before "Addressing ourselves in battle, we shall exert to the utmost of our abilities." But now you are reproaching us.

14. You are now seeking virtue. So you have falsified the words you had said before. Afflicted as we are with fear, you take this opportunity for cutting us to the quick with your harsh words,

15. Like one applying salt on the sores of wounded men, O grinder of your foes. Afflicted with your dagger-like words, my heart is on the point of bursting open.

16. Pious as you are, you do not know the nature of impiety, for you do not offer us applause though we are worthy of it.

17. When Vasudeva himself is here, praise you the son of Drona, who, O Dhananjaya, is not a match for even a sixteenth part of yourself ?

18. Disclosing your own weakness, it is strange that you feel no shame! I can rend this earth open in rage, and split the very mountains,

19. Whirling that heavy and terrible mace of fierce aspect decked with garlands of gold. Like a violent tempest, I can break down trees resembling huge mountains.

20. I can with my arrows rout and crush the assembled host of the celestials led by Indra himself, O Partha, assisted though they be by the Rakshasas, the Asuras, Snakes and human beings.

21. Knowing, O foremost of men, me your brother, to be such, you should not, O you of infinite prowess, entertain any fear from the son of Drona.

22. Or, O Vibhatsu, stay here with all these foremost of men and behold me, alone and armed with the mace, conquer him in fierce battle.

23. Like the Daitya kink Hiranyakasipu addressing the roaring and enraged Hari, the son of the king of the Panchalas addressed Partha thus :—

Dhristadyumna said :—

24. O Vibhatsu, the intelligent sages of yore have prescribed these—*viz*, conducting sacrifices on behalf of others, teaching, charity, celebration of sacrifices and acceptance of gifts,—to be the duties of the Brahmanas.

25. The sixth duty is study. To which of these six was that Drona who has been slain by me devoted ? Wherefore then do you reproach me, O son of Pritha ?

26. Transgressing the duties of his own order, and observing those of the Kshatriyas that perpetrator of wicked deeds used to slaughter us with his celestial weapons.

27. Professing himself to be a Brahmana, he used to injure us deceitfully; he has now been slain by deceitful means; O son of Pritha, what is there wrong in this ?

28. Upon the punishment of Drona, (which he richly deserved), if his son, out of anger, utter such loud roars, what do I lose by them ?

29. There is nothing wonderful in the fact that Drona's son leading the Kauravas in battle, will cause their destruction, being himself unable to protect them.

30. Now you have turned a virtuous person, and are accusing me with the slaughter of my preceptor; but do you not know that it was for this purpose that I was born as son of the Panchala king, having sprung out of fire.

31. How, O Dhananjaya, can you designate him a Brahmana or a Kshatriya, who when engaged in fight used to look upon fair and unfair acts with an equal eye ?

32. He, who furious in rage, used to slay with his Brahma weapons even those who are unacquainted with the use of weapons, O foremost of men, why should he not be slain by us by every means in our power ?

33. One fallen off from the duties of his order, has been said, by the righteous, to be equal to poison. Knowing this, O you who are conversant with the precepts of morality, why do you blame me, O Arjuna ?

34. That ruthless warrior, being assailed by me, has been overthrown and slain by me. O Vibhatsu, why do you not then congratulate myself on whom actually no blame hangs ?

35. O Partha, I have lopped off Drona's dreadful head, resembling the All-destroying Fire, or the burning Sun or the most virulent poison. Why do you not then applaud an act that is worthy of applause ?

36. He who used to slay my kinsmen exclusively in battle, and of no one else, lopping off his head, have I not been freed from a terrible fever (of revenge) that used to burn me without remission.

37. The fact that I have not thrown his head, like that of Jayadratha, into het

dominions of the Nisadhas, is corroding the core of my heart.

38. It has been heard, O Arjuna, that, without slaying one's enemies one incurs sin. The duty of a Kshatriya is to slay or to be slain.

39. O son of Pandu, Drona was my enemy; and therefore it is righteous that I have slain him; and thus you have slain your father's friend, king Bhagadatta.

40. When you slew your aged grandsire, you thought it your duty to do so. But when I have slain my wicked foe, why should it not be regarded as my duty?

41. It behoves you not to speak to me in this way—me who can raise my hand against you in consequence of the relationship I bear to you and who am therefore like a prostrate elephant with ladder against its body, for helping puny creatures to get on its back.

42. I forgive your abusive language, O Arjuna, for the sake of Draupadi and her sons and not for any other cause.

43. It is well-known that the hostility I bore to the preceptor was bequeathed to me by my sire. Every one in the world knows it but you sons of Pandu feign to be ignorant of it.

44. The eldest son of Pandu is not a liar nor am I a sinful wretch, O Arjuna. The wicked Drona used to injure his pupils. He has been slain by me. Now fight, and victory will be yours.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety eighth chapter, the words of Dhristadyumna, in the Narayanastramoksha of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CXCIX.

(NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHANA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. That high-souled person who had duly studied the Vedas and their auxiliaries, he who had mastered the entire science of arms and who possessed modesty,

2. That Drona that son of mighty sage, who had been insulted by the low-minded, cruel and mean Dhristadyumna the slayer of his preceptor,

3. That Drona through whose grace the foremost of men still achieve superhuman feats difficult of being achieved even by the gods and the Asuras,

4. When that Drona suffered such an insult at the hands of that most sinful Dhristadyumna under the very eyes of all the warriors present, was there no Kshatriya who was then inspired with wrath? Fie on the Kshatriya order and fie on wrath itself!

5. Tell me, O Sanjaya, what did the Parthas or the other kings of the earth, all illustrious warriors, say, having heard the words of the Panchala prince?

Sanjaya said :—

6. Hearing those words of the ruthless son of Drupada, O king, all the rulers of the earth remained silent.

7. But Arjuna only casting side glances at Prisata's son, and sighing and shedding copious tears said 'fie, fie.'

8. Yudhisthira and Bhima and the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) and Krishna himself were overwhelmed with shame, O king. Then Satyaki spoke these words :—

9. "Is there nobody that will quickly despatch this sinful, low, and cursed wretch, even when he is thus speaking?"

10. Like the Brahmanas blaming a Chandala, all these Pandavas are reproaching you for your having perpetrated this sinful act.

11. Having perpetrated the most sinful act and condemned by the pious, do you not feel ashamed to open your lips in this august assemblage?

12. O Despicable wretch, why did not your tongue and your cursed head go off into thousand fragments, when you were on the point of slaying your preceptor? Why were you not smitten down by that sinful act?

13. You richly merit the condemnation of the Parthas and all the Vrishnis and the Andhakas inasmuch as parpetrating this sinful act, you are boasting of it in the presence of this august assembly.

14. Having committed the most heinous act of sin, you further reveal your hatred for the preceptor. For this you deserve to be slain; there is no use in sparing your life even for a moment.

15. What other sinful wretch, except yourself, will dare cause the virtuous preceptor's death, holding him by his hoary locks?

16. Having obtained you—the disgrace to their race—for their decendant, seven generations before you and seven after, in your race, have sunk in hell, being deprived of their glory.

17. You have accused Partha that foremost of men with the slaughter of Bhisma. But this latter illustrious personage has himself caused his own destruction.

18. Indeed that vilest of wretches viz. your uterine brother Sikhandin, was the cause of Bhisma's death. Really there is no one more sinful on the face of the earth, than the sons of Panchala king.

19. Your father had begotten Sikhandin for the slaughter of Bhisma. As regards Arjuna he only protected your brother when he caused the death of the high-souled Bhisma.

20. The Panchalas have gone astray from the paths of rectitude, and like despicable wretches they are injuring their friends and their preceptors, only for having obtained yourself and your brother, hated by the pious, among themselves.

21. If you again speak such words before me, I shall knock down your head with a mace resembling the bolt of heaven.

22. Stained as you are with the sin of Brahmanicide, people looking at you the slayer of a Brahmana, have to look at the Sun for purifying themselves.

23. Ill-mannered wretch of a Panchala, villifying my own preceptor in the first instance and then my preceptor's preceptor, why don't you feel ashamed ?

24. 'Wait, Wait.' Bear but this single stroke of my mace. I will bear many strokes of that of yours."

25. Thus reproached by that scion of the Satwata race, Prisata's son inspired with wrath, addressed these harsh words to the enraged Satyaki.

Dhristadyumna said :—

26. O you of Madhu's race, I have heard you speak. But I forgive you; yourself sinful and impious, you desire to throw odium on the righteous?

27. Forgiveness is a praiseworthy virtue, but sinful wretches do not deserve it. A wicked fellow regards him who shows forgiveness as powerless (lit : conquered).

28. Ill-behaved, of low mind and sinful resolutions, you are condemnable from the end of your hair to the tip of your toe. Yet do you desire to censure others ?

29. What act can be more unrighteous than that perpetrated by you when, repeatedly prevented, you slew Bhurisrava, whose arm was lopped off and who had betaken to the *Praya* Yoga ?

30. Arranging his troops in order Drona was fighting with his celestial weapons; he laid aside his weapons and I slew him O crooked one, what is there improper in this ?

31. How can he, O Satyaki, censure such as act, who himself has slain his opponent, desisted from battle,—an opponent that was sitting in Praya Yoga and whose arm was cut off by another.

32. That puissant opponent of yours, careered on the field having thrown you down with the stroke of his feet. Foremost if you were of all male beings why did you not then slay him ?

33. When Partha had already vanquished him, it was only then that by an unfair means you slew the puissant son of Somadatta.

34. In whatever quarter Drona had sought to rout the troops of the Pandavas, in that quarter I proceeded, shooting myriads of shafts.

35. Having yourself perpetrated an act worthy of a *Chandala* only, it is strange that you desire to censure me in such a vile language.

36. You are the perpetrator of vile acts and not I, O vilest of the Vrishni race. You are the hot-bed of sin. Do not again blame this deed of mine.

37. Hold your tongue. It is improper that you shall move after this. I give you this reply from my own lips, you should not address me any longer.

38. If again, out of folly you speak such harsh words to me, I shall despatch you to the abode of Death with my own arrows.

39. One cannot overcome his foes, O fool, solely through fair means. Hear how our opponents also acted unfairly.

40. Pandu's eldest son Yudhisthira was a few years back cheated unfairly (out of his own kingdom) and O Satyaki, Draupadi was also most vilely insulted.

41. The Pandavas with Krishna their wife were also exiled to the woods, and O fool, all their possessions were robbed out of them by unrighteous means.

42. The king of the Madras was again weaned away from our side by an act of unrighteousness by the foe, unfairly also was the tender son of Subhadra slain.

43. Now for the Pandavas, the grandfather of the Kurus, Bhisma was slain by an act of unrighteousness. Bhurisrava was unfairly slain by your very justicel-oving self.

44. Thus, O you of the Satwata race, the heroic Pandavas and the Kurus have both acted sinfully for victory in bat

although they are all conversant with the rules of morality.

45. Thus morality is a mystery, as also immorality is difficult of being ascertained. Fight on with the Kauravas, and do not return to the home of your fathers.

Sanjaya said :—

46. Addressed in such ruthless and harsh words, the handsome Satyaki trembled from head to foot.

47. Hearing those words Satyaki with his eyes coppery in rage, laid his bow aside on the car and breathing like a snake he grasped his mace.

48. Then advancing furiously upon the Panchala prince he said :—"I shall not waste my harsh words on you any longer, but I shall crush you, as you richly deserve to be slaughtered."

49. Beholding the puissant Satyaki rush, from wrath and desire for revenge, at the Panchala prince, like Death against a match of his,

50. The mighty Bhima urged by Vasudeva, quickly jumped down from his chariot and caught hold of him by the arms.

51. The puissant Satyaki, who was then furiously rushing (at Dhristadyumna) advanced a few steps, dragging after him the mighty son of Pandu, who was trying to withhold him.

52. Then Bhima firmly planting his feet, succeeded in stopping that foremost of all beings endowed with strength *viz.*, that illustrious scion or Sini's race.

53. Then, O king, Sahadeva jumping down from his car, addressed Satyaki held in check by the strong arms of Bhima, in these soothing words :—

54. "O feremost of men, we possess not friends dearer to ourselves, than the Andhakas, the Vrishnis and the Panchalas, O descendant of Madhu's race.

55. Similarly the Andhakas and the Vrisnnis, specially Krishna among the latter, cannot have any friends dearer than ourselves.

56. The Panchalas also, O scion of the Vrishni race, will not be able to find friends dearer to themselves than the Vrishnis and the Pandavas, even if they search the whole earth to the very boundaries of the seas.

57. You are a dear friend to this prince and even such is he to you. You are to us even as we are to you.

58. Versed in the rules of duty, restrain your anger having the prince of the Panchalas for its object, remembering the duties that you owe to your friends.

59. Forgive the son of Prisata, let him also forgive you. We will also practise forgiveness. What other virtue can be equal to forgiveness !

60. When, O sire, Sahadeva was thus pacifying the grandson of Sini, the son of the Panchala king thus smilingly spoke :—

61. "Bhima, let the grandson of Sini, so proud of his prowess in battle, he released. Let him encounter me like the wind encountering the mountains.

62. I shall smother his wrath with my sharp arrows, as also his itching for battle ; O son of Kunti, let me deprive him of his life in battle.

63. I am alone competent to achieve the mighty task the sons of Pandu have undertaken, heavy though it may be. Yonder come the Kauravas,

64. Or Phalguna himself will hold all of them in check. Let me cut off this one's head with my arrows.

65. He takes me for Bhurisravas with his arm lopped off. Leave him. Either I will slay him or he shall slay me.

66. Hearing the words of the Panchala prince the mighty Satyaki breathing like a snake, began to swell even within the embrace of Bhima's arms.

67. When those strong-armed and mighty heroes were thus roaring at each other like two bulls, O sire, Vasudeva and the son of Dharma Yudhisthira,

68. With great difficulty restrained those two heroes. Thus restraining those two mighty bowmen, whose eyes were red in rage, the foremost of the Kshatriyas advanced desirous of meeting the foe in battle.

Thus ends the one hundred and ninety-ninth chapter, the rage of Dhristadyumna and Satyaki, in the Narayanastramoksha, of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CC.

(NARAYANASTRAMOKSANA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereafter the son of Drona began to crush his foes like the Destroyer at the end of the *yuga*, slaughtering all creatures.

2—3. Slaying his foes with his broad-headed shafts, he caused a mountain by corpses, whose trees were constituted by

standards, peaks by weapons, stones by slain elephants; which teemed with Kimpurusas formed by slain horses, which was covered with creepers constituted by bows, whose cranes were constituted by flesh-eating animals; and which was full of birds formed by the ghosts.

4. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, once more exclaiming aloud with great force, Aswathaman made your son to hear his vow,

5. "Inasmuch as Kunti's son Yudhisthira, disguised in the garb of righteousness, has spoken to the fighting Preceptor, saying 'lay your weapons aside,'

6. For that reason I shall crush his army even before his very eyes. Shattering the ranks of the hostile army I will slay the sinful son of the Panchala king.

7. I will slay them all in battle if they only face me in battle. This I speak to you for sooth. Let the army be rallied and return to the charge.

8. Hearing those words of Drona's son your son rallied the troops, having dispelled their fear by uttering a loud leonine shout.

9. Thereupon O king, once more a terrible encounter took place between the armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas, resembling the dashing of two oceans at full tide.

10. The Kouravas were rallied and incited with revenge by Drona's son, the Pandavas and Panchalas were also excited to fury by having slain the Preceptor Drona.

11. The violence of the collision was indeed very great,—collision that then took place on the field of battle between those warriors all of whom were filled with joy and rage and inspired with hopes of victory.

12. The collision between the Kurus and the Pandavas was like that between a mountain against a mountain or an ocean against an ocean.

13. Then the Kuru and the Pandava troops filled with delight struck up ten thousand Bheris and blew a thousand conches.

14. Like the deep roar of the ocean when it was churned, a tremendous din was then heard in those troops.

15. Thereafter Dron's son invoked into existence the Narayana weapon and he aimed it at the armies of the Panchalas and the Pandavas.

16. Then thousands of arrows with blazing tips appeared in the welkin looking like snakes of fiery mouth, that continued to agitate the Pandavas.

17. Those arrows, O king, like the rays of the Sun, in that terrible battle, covered all the quarters of heaven, the sky and the Pandava soldiers.

18. Then, O ruler of earth, countless iron balls appeared there like lustrous orbs in the cloudless firmament.

19. *Sataghnis* of four or two wheels, and a large number of maces, and sharp-edged discs, effulgent like the sun also appeared there.

20. Then beholding the firmament densely covered by those weapons, O foremost of the Bharatas, the Pundavas, the Sanjayas and the Panchalas became exceedingly anxious.

21. The weapon showed its exceeding strength in all those places, O ruler of men, where the great car-warriors of the Pandava hosts contended furiously.

22. Slaughtered by the Narayana weapon, as if burnt down by a raging fire, the troops of the Pandavas were greatly distressed in battle.

23. O lord, as fire consumes a heap of dry grass in summer, even so did that weapon begin to consume the army of the Pandavas.

24. The very virtuous king Yudhisthira was filled with fear, as his army became reduced in number and that weapon swelled in its fury.

25. Then beholding the army broken and deprived of its senses, and seeing the indifference of Partha, the very virtuous king Yudhisthira thus skope :—

26. "Fly, O you Dhristadyumna, taking with you all the Panchala divisions; you also, Satyaki, go away with all Vrishnis and the Andhakas.

27. The high-souled son of Vasudeva will look after his own safety. Indeed he is competent to protect all the worlds; what to speak of his own self; it is useless to give him advise.

28. Ye soldiers, I command you to desist from the battle. I with my uterine brothers, am going to enter into a burning fire.

29. In this war so dreadful to the timid, having crossed the ocean represented by Bhima and Drona, I shall now sink in the water contained in the vestige of a calf-foot represen ted by the son of Drona.

30. Let king Duryodhana to-day attain the fruition of his desires for I have slain

the preceptor who used to treat us so mercifully and like a friend.

31. Indeed this preceptor with the help of other cruel warriors, slew and did not spare the son of Subhadra of tender years, who was unacquainted with the modes of warfare.

32. This preceptor with his son remained indifferent, when Krishna, dragged into the open court and about to be made a slave, asked him to speak the truth in answer to her questions.

33. This preceptor gave an impenetrable armour to Duryodhana, when all other warriors were worn out with fatigue, in order that the latter may slay Phalguna and effect the protection of Jayadratha.

34. Indeed this preceptor with his *Brahma* weapon exterminated that whole Panchala division under Satyajit, who had been exerting to bestow victory on me.

35. Indeed this preceptor did not withhold his permission though solicited to do so by our friends, when despoiled of our kingdom we were on the point of being exiled into the woods.

36. Alas, such a well-wishing friend of ours who did us many good turns has been slain by us. For his sake I shall with all my relatives embrace death."

37. When the son of Kunti was thus speaking, the scion of the Dasarha race, Krishna, forbidding the troops with the waive of his hand from flying away, said these words :—

38. "Quickly throw aside your weapons and come down from your vehicles; even this is the means ordained by the high-souled Narayana, for baffling this weapon.

39. All of you quickly alight from the elephants, horses, and chariots in the ground. Thus when you stand in earth laying aside your arms this weapon will not slay you.

40. Wherever you shall contend in battle for checking the force of this weapon, in all those places the Kouravas will become more powerful than yourselves.

41. Those men, on the other hand, who will throw down their weapons and alight from their vehicles, will not be slain by this weapon.

42. Those who will even think of contending against this weapon will be slain by it, even if he takes shelter within the bowels of the earth."

43. Hearing those words of Vasudeva, O Bharata, all the Pandava warriors laid their weapons aside and discarded all thoughts of battle from their mind.

44. But Bhimasena the son of Pandu, beholding the Pandavas about to abandon their weapons had thus spoken, O king, gladdening the hearts of all.

45. None should throw his weapons aside. I shall check the weapon of Drona's son with my swift-flying arrows.

46. Or armed with this heavy mace adorned with gold I shall career on the field of battle like Death himself, quelling the weapons of Drona's son.

47. Just as no luminary is equal to the Sun in effulgence, so there is no man equal to me in prowess and strength.

48. Look at my strong arms like the trunks of the foremost of elephants. They are capable of pulling down the crests of the Himavat mountain.

49. Among men, I am the only person possessed of the strength of ten thousand elephants. Like Sakra among the gods in heaven, I am known to be matchless on earth.

50. To-day you shall behold the strength of my arms and my expanded chest, when I shall exert in resisting the effulgent and burning weapon of Drona's son.

51. If there is none who can venture to contend against the Narayana weapon, let then the Kurus and the Pandavas behold how I shall quell that weapon.

52. O Arjuna, O Arjuna, O Vibhatsu, it befits you not to lay aside your Gandiva-bow; then from yourself the halo of glory will be gone, like that of the moon leaving it."

Arjuna said :—

53. O Bhima, my great vow is that I shall not use the Gandiva-bow against Brahmanas the kine and the *Narayana* weapon, and against these I shall lay it aside.

Sanjaya said :—

54. Thus spoken to, Bhima, that subduer of foes, rushed against Drona's son on a chariot whose clatter resembled the roll of thunder and whose effulgence outvied that of the Sun.

55. Endued with great activity and prowess, the son of Kunti possessed as he was of extreme lightness of hands, succeeded in covering Drona's son with a net-work of arrows, within the twinkling of the eye.

56. Thereupon Drona's son smilingly eyeing the rushing Bhima, challenged him and then covered him with arrows of keen points and inspired with Mantras.

57. Then Pritha's son shrouded with those shafts, of blazing points like the mouths of snakes, capable of penetrating to the very vitals, looked as if covered with sparks of gold.

58. Then O king, the appearance of Bhimasena became like that of a mountain surrounded by the fire-flies at the close of day.

59 That weapon of Drona's son directed against Bhimasena, swelled in fury like a conflagration assisted by the wind.

60. Beholding that weapon of great energy increasing in its fury, the troops of the Pandavas were filled with fear with the exception of Bhima.

61. Thereupon laying aside their celestial weapons on the ground they alighted on all sides from their cars and their horses.

62. Thus when they had thrown their weapons down and when they had alighted from their vehicles and horses, that weapon of immense energy flew towards the head of Bhima.

63. All creatures cried *Oh* and *Alas* and specially the Pandavas did so, at the sight of Bhimasena wrapt in the effulgence of that weapon.

Thus ends the two hundredth chapter, the laying aside of weapons by the Pandava troops in the Narayanastra Mokshana of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CCI.

(NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHANA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding Bhimasena completely shrouded by that weapon, Dhananjaya for quenching the fire produced by it shot the Varuna weapon.

2. The lightness with which Arjuna shot the weapon, and also the fiery energy of the Narayana weapon, rendered it impossible for any body to perceive that Bhima was also protected by the Varuna weapon.

3. His steeds, charioteers and horses covered by the effulgence of the weapon of Drona's son, Bhima then was incapable of being looked at like a blazing fire within another blazing fire.

4. Just as at the close of night, all the luminaries fly towards the western hills, so also the shafts of Drona's son flew towards the car of Bhima.

5. Then thus shrouded with shafts by Drona's son, Bhima, his horses and charioteer, O sire, looked as if wrapt in the flames of a blazing fire.

6. Just as at the hour of the universal annihilation the All-destroying Fire having burnt down the mobile and immobile creation proceeds to enter the mouth of the Creator, so also that weapon proceeded to enter the body of Bhima.

7. Just as the fire penetrating into the Sun or the Sun penetrating into the fire, can not be perceived by any body so alsc that weapon entering into Bhima's body could not be perceived.

8. Beholding then that weapon swelling in fury near Bhima's chariot, and also Drona's son career unopposed on the field of battle,

9. And seeing that all the warriors of the Pandava army had laid their weapons aside, and that all the mighty car-warriors headed by Yudhisthira had turned their faces away from the field,

10. Those two brave heroes of great effulgence viz. Arjuna and Vasudeva, then jumping down from their chariot, ran towards Bhima.

11. Those two puissant persons then plunging into the energy born of the might of Aswathaman's weapon, betook to their power of illusion.

12. The fire of that weapon failed to burn them down in consequence of their having laid aside their weapons, as also in consequence of their great personal prowess and the energy of the Varuna weapon.

13. Then Nara and Narayana began forcibly to take off all weapons from Bhima and to drag him out of the fire of that weapon.

14. Thus dragged the puissant son of Kunti (Bhima) began to roar aloud, whereupon the invinsible weapon of Drona's son also swelled in its fury.

15. Then the son of Vasudeva, addressing him (Bhima) said :—"O delighter of Pandu, what do you mean ? Why don't you desist from fighting though repeatedly forbidden to do so.

16. Had it been possible now to vanquish the Kouravas in battle, then we as well as all these forrmost of men would have fought against them.

17. All your troops have alighted from their chariots, so you also, O son of Kunti, quickly come down from your chariot,"

18. Having thus spoken, Krishna dragged him down on the earth,—him who was

breathing like a snake with eyes coppery with rage.

19. When he was thus dragged down from the car, when he was thus compelled to lay his weapons aside, the Narayana weapon, capable of burning down the foe, became pacified.

Sanjaya said :—

20. When the unbearable energy of that weapon was pacified by this means, all the quarters, subsidiary and cardinal, became clear.

21. Auspicious winds began to blow and animals and birds became quiet. The steeds and elephants as well as the warriors themselves became cheerful, O ruler of men.

22. O Bharata, when that dreadful energy was thus stilled, the intelligent Bhima shone like the Sun at the close of night.

23. Then the remnant of the Pandava troops, beholding the subsidence of the energy of that weapon, again stood ready in order to slay your sons.

24. When the Pandava army was rallied and rearranged and when the Narayana weapon was thus counteracted, your son Duryodhana, O king, addressing Drona's son said these words :—

25. "O Aswathaman, once more discharge that weapon quickly, for the Panchalas, desirous of victory, have again rallied."

26. Thus spoken to by your son, Aswathaman, O sire, depressed and sighing heavily, replied to the king saying :—

27. "That weapon never comes back, neither, O king, can it be used twice. If invoked back it will slay the person invoking it.

28. The son of Vasudeva has counteracted the weapon by what means you have seen. For this, O ruler of men, the extermination of the foe has not been accomplished in battle.

29. The worst in battle is either defeat or death. Death is better than defeat. The enemy compelled to lay aside their weapons are vanquished and more than dead."

Duryodhana said :—

30. O son of my preceptor, O you foremost of those versed in the science of weapons, if this weapon cannot be used twice, then slay those slayers of their preceptor with other mighty weapons.

31. Like the three-eyed Mahadeva of infinite energy, you possess all the celestial weapons; even the enraged Indra cannot escape you alive if you wish it not.

Dhritarastra said :—

32. When Drona had been slain with underhand measures and when that weapon of his son had been baffled, what did Aswathaman, urged on by Duryodhana, do?

33. Beholding the Parthas, rally for the fight and freed from the influence of the *Narayana* weapon and career at the head of their divisions,

Sanjaya said :—

34. Remembering the unfair slaughter of his sire, Drona's son, having the lion's tail as a device on his banner, casting off all fear, and filled with fury rushed upon the son of Prisata.

35. Thus assailing him, that foremost of men, at first pierced his enemy with twenty small arrows and then again with five others, with great force.

36. Thereupon, O king, Dhristadyumna pierced Drona's son looking like a blazing fire, with four and sixty winged arrows.

37. He pierced the latter's charioteer with twenty shafts furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone and the four horses with four very sharp arrows.

38. Repeatedly piercing the son of Drona, and making the earth tremble with his roars, Dhristadyumna appeared to be engaged in taking away the lives of every body on the face of earth in that dreadful battle.

39. O king, the son of Prisata was endued with prowess, and accomplished in weapons and of resolute purposes. He rushed upon the son of Drona making death to be the final goal.

40. Then that foremost of car-warriors, that prince of the Panchalas, of unmeasurable depth of soul, poured a veritable shower of arrows on the head of Drona's son.

41. Thereupon Drona's son covered that enraged hero with innumerable winged shafts, and remembering the slaughter of his sire, pierced him with ten shafts.

42. Cutting down the bow and the standard of the Panchala prince with two well-directed razor-headed arrows, the son of Drona began to afflict the former with numerous other shafts.

43. Drona's son deprived his opponent of his horses, chariot and driver; and he, worked up with rage, covered the latter's followers with myriads of arrows.

44. Thereupon, O ruler of men, the troops of the Panchalas broke and fled away; their appearance reflected fear, and they were greatly distressed and mangled with shaft-cuts.

45. Then beholding the troops turning back and Dhristadyumna greatly afflicted, the grandson of Sini, directed his chariot to be driven in haste towards that of Drona's son.

46. With eight sharp arrows he afflicted Aswathaman; then once more he pierced his revengeful adversary with another twenty shafts of diverse shape.

47. He pierced his opponent's driver and the four horses with four arrows; and then like one endued with great lightness of hand, he cut off his bow and standard with well-armed shafts.

48. He consumed the horses of his antagonist and shattered his car of golden effulgence; then he pierced the latter on the centre of his breast with twenty shafts.

49. Thus afflicted and enshrouded in a net-work of arrows, the puissant Aswathaman, O king, knew not what to do.

50. When the preceptor's son was involved in such a perilous position, your son, that mighty car-warrior, supported by Kripa, Karna, and others, began to cover that scion of the Satwata race with numerous arrows.

51. Then Duryodhana with twenty, Saradwata's son Kripa with three, Kritavarman with ten, Karna with fifty,

52. Dussasana with hundred and Vrishasena with seven sharp arrows pierced Satyaki quickly and from all sides.

53. Thereupon, O king, the puissant Satyaki deprived all those mighty car-warriors of their cars, and compelled them to turn away from the field of battle, within a moment's time.

54. Meanwhile Aswathaman having regained his senses, began, O foremost of the Bharatas, to reflect, distressed with grief and sighing repeatedly.

55. Thereafter that afflicter of foes, namely, Drona's son, riding on another car proceeded to oppose Satyaki, and shot hundreds of arrows.

56. Then beholding that son of Bharadwaja's son once more advance against him in battle, the mighty car-warrior Satyaki once more compelled him to turn away and deprived him of his car.

57. Thereat the Pandavas beholding the prowess of Satyaki, O king, loudly blew their conches, and uttered deafening war-rcies.

58. Then Satyaki of infallible prowess, thus rendering Drona's son carless, slew the three thousand mighty car-warriors engaged in supporting Vrishasena.

59. He also slew ten thousand tusked elephants that accompanied Kripa, as also fifty thousand horses that constituted Sakuni's division.

60. Then once more, O king, the valorous son of Drona, mounting on a fresh car and excited to the highest pitch of fury assailed Satyaki for slaughtering him.

61. But the grandson of Sini that subduer of foes seeing him once more proceed against him, ruthlessly pierced him with numerous sharp arrows.

62. But this time, though thus deeply pierced by Yuyudhana with arrows of diverse descriptions, that mighty bowman, that son of Drona, worked up with rage, addressing his foes, smilingly said these words:—

63. "O grandson of Sini, I know the partiality you bear for that murderer of his preceptor (*viz.* Dhristadyumna), but you shall not succeed in saving him and your ownself when assailed by me.

64. By my truth and by my ascetic austerities, I swear before you, that I shall enjoy no rest without slaying the whole Panchala race.

65. You may unite together the troops of the Pandavas as well as those of the Vrishnis, yet I will exterminate the Somakas inspite of all their endeavours."

66. Having thus spoken, Drona's son hurled at that scion of the Satwata race an excellent arrow of the effulgence of the solar rays, like Hari (Indra) hurling the thunder-bolt against Vritra.

67. That arrow hurled by him, penetrating through the armour and the body of Satyaki, entered the earth like a hissing serpent entering its hole.

68. Then like an elephant afflicted with the goad-stroke, with his armour pierced through and shedding copious blood from the wound, that hero Satyaki left his bow and arrows.

69. And steeped in blood and loosing strength he squatted down on the terrace of his car. His driver then quickly drove him away from the vicinity of Drona's son.

70. Then that afflicter of his forces namely the son of Drona, pierced Dhristadyumna between his brows with another shaft of depressed knots furnished with beautiful wings.

71. The Panchala prince had ere this been much wounded, and now deeply

pierced, he lost all his strength and caught hold of his flag-staff for supporting him.

72. Then fierce heroic warriors of the Pandava army rushed quickly to the rescue of Dhristadyumna, who then resembled an elephant assailed and afflicted by an enraged lion.

73. Those warriors were the diadem decked Arjuna, Bhimasena, Vrihat Kshatra of Puru's race, the youthful prince of the Chedis and Sudarsana the ruler of the Malavas.

74. Then all these brave warriors crying *Oh* and *Alas* and grasping their bows and arrows surrounded Drona's brave son on all sides.

75. Advancing twenty paces, each of these warriors shot with great care, five arrows at the revengeful son of Drona.

76. But Drona's son, almost at the same time cut off those twenty-five arrows shot at him with twenty-five sharp arrows of his own, resembling snakes of virulent poison.

77. Then Drona's son afflicted the scion of the Puru race with seven sharp arrows, the Malava king with three, Partha with one aud Vrikodara with six.

78. Thereupon, O king, all those mighty car-warriors, simultaneously and separately began to pierce the son of Drona with gold-winged arrows whetted on stone.

79. The youthful prince of the Chedis pierced Drona's son with twenty winged shafts, Partha with eight and all the rest with three arrows each.

80. Thereupon the son of Drona pierced Arjuna with six, and Vasudeva's son with ten and Bhima with five, and the youthful Chedi prince with four and the ruler of the Purus and the Malavas with a couple of shafts.

81. Piercing Bhima's charioteer with six and cutting off his bow and standard with two other arrows, and once more piercing Partha with a shower of arrows, the son of Drona uttered a dreadful war-cry.

82. Then as Drona's son shot his well-tempered, well-sharpened arrows, the earth, the welkin, the firmament, the cardinal and subsidiary quarters, all in his front and rear became covered with arrows of dreadful look.

83. Possessed of fierce energy and matching Indra himself in prowess, Aswathaman with three arrows, almost at the same time cut off the two arms, like Indra's poles, and the head of Sudarsana, as the latter was seated on his car.

84. Then piercing Paurava with a lance and cutting off his chariot into smaller fragments, by means of his shafts, Aswathaman severed the two sandal-smeared arms of his opponent; and then with a valla he severed his head from his trunk.

85. Endued with agility, he then pierced with numerous arrows resembling blazing flames of fire in energy, the young and the puissant prince of the Chedis of complexion like that of a blue lotus, and then despatched him to Death's domain, together with his steeds and driver.

86. Then beholding the king of the Malavas, the Pourava prince and the youthful ruler of the Chedis slain under his very eyes by the son of Drona, Pandu's son,

87. Bhimasena of mighty arms became filled with terrible rage; then with hundreds of sharp arrows, looking like enraged snakes,

88. That scorcher of foes covered the son of Drona. Then the highly powerful son of Drona baffling that shower of arrows,

89. Wrathfully pierced Bhima with sharp arrows. Then the mighty armed Bhima, possessed of great might in battle,

90. Cutting off the bow of Drona's son with a razor-headed arrow, pierced him with a winged shaft. Thereupon the high-souled son of Drona, throwing off that severed bow,

91. Took up another and pierced Bhima with winged shafts. Then Drona's son and Bhima, both valorous and possessed of might, in that battle,

92. Showered upon each other their arrowy showers like two clouds discharged with rain. Shafts, equipped with golden wing and bearing the name of Bhima, and whetted on stone,

93—94. Covered Drona,s son like masses of clouds covering the Sun. Similarly Bhima also was quickly covered over with hundreds and thousands of arrows of depressed knots, shot by Drona's son. Covered in battle by Drona's son accomplished in battle,

95—96. O Mighty monarch, Bhima was not at all pained; and that looked indeed wonderful. Then the mighty-armed Bhima discharged ten gold-decked arrows of great keenness resembling the darts of Death himself, at his adversary. Those shafts, O sire, falling upon the shoulder of Drona's son,

97. Quickly pierced her body like snakes entering into an ant-hill. Thus deeply pierced by the illustrious soul of Pandu, Drona's son,

98. Caught for support his flag-staff and shut his two eyes (in pain). But in a moment regaining his consciousness that son of Drona, O king,

99. Became excited to the highest pitch of anger, steeped as he was with profuse blood. Wounded deeply and firmly by the high-souled son of Pandu,

100—101. That mighty armed hero rushed furiously upon the chariot of Bhimasena. Then, O Bharata, he sped a group of hundred arrows, all endued with fierce energy, shot from a string drawn back to the car and resembling snakes of virulent poison. Ever boastful in battle, and in utter disregard of the prowess of his adversary Bhima,

102. That son of Pandu, soon discharged dreadful arrowy showers in Drona's son. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, cutting off with sharp arrows the bow of his foe, Drona's son,

103. Wrathfully struck Pandu's son on the breast with extremely keen darts. Thereat filled with a eager desire for revenge Bhimasena took up another bow,

104. And with fine sharp arrows pierced Drona's son in battle. Like two clouds at the expiration of summer, those two warriors, pouring showers of arrows,

105—106. And looking at each other with eyes coppery in rage soon covered each other. Thus covering each other and both filled with rage they fought on with each other producing sounds with their palms and desirous of counteracting each other's feats. Then stretching his mighty bow decked with gold,

107. Drona's son cast burning glances on Bhima who was shooting arrows at him from his vicinity. Aswathama then appeared like the Sun shining in the meridian in a day of Autumn.

108. So quickly did he then shoot his arrows that people could not mark when he took them out of his quiver, placed them on his bow-string, drew the string back and let them off.

109. Then as he shot those shafts, O mighty monarch, the bow of Drona's son looked like a circle of fire.

110. Arrows shot from his bow then, in hundreds and thousands, were seen to range through the welkin, like flights of locusts.

111. Those arrows discharged from the bow of Drona's son and decked with gold and dreadful, fell incessantly upon Bhima's car.

112. We then beheld the wonderful prowess, energy, might, perseverance and strength of Pandu's son Bhima, O Bharat,

113. Inasmuch as considering that dreadful showers of arrows, thick as a dense mass of gathering clouds falling round him, to be nothing more than a shower of rain at the close of summer,

114. Bhima of terrible prowess, desirous of slaughtering the son of Drona, in return poured his arrowy showers upon his foe, like a cloud in the season of rains.

115. Then the mighty and formidable bow of Bhima, of golden staff stretched continuously in that battle appeared beautiful like another bow of Indra (rainbow).

116. Issuing out of it, hundreds and thousands of shafts covered, in that battle, that ornament of battle namely Drona's son.

117. The arrowy showers discharged by them were so thick that the very wind, O sire, could not find space for blowing through them, O king.

118. Thereafter Drona's son, O king, shot at Bhima, desirous of slaying him, arrows of keen points, washed with oil.

119. Then exhibiting his superiority over his adversary Bhimasena cut each of those shafts into three fragments, before they could reach him. And the latter then said 'Wait, Wait.'

120. Once more the mighty son of Pandu, excited with rage, and desirous of slaying the son of Drona, discharged upon him a formidable shower of arrows.

121. Thereupon, Drona's son, acquainted with the use of the most excellent weapons, soon destroying that arrowy shower by the illusive force of his own weapons, cut off Bhima's bow in that battle.

122-126. Inflamed with fury he then pierced Bhima himself with numerous shafts. Then the highly puissant Bhima, when his bow was cut off, having whirled with impetuosity a lance hurled it at Aswathaman's car. But the son of Drona, displaying his great lightness of hands, cut off by means of his keen-arrows that lance as it flew towards himself, burning like a flame-beam. Meanwhile the formidable Bhima taking up a very strong bow smilingly began to wound the son of Drona with innumerable arrows. Then the son of Drona, O king, pierced the forhead of Bhima's driver with a straight-flying arrow. The latter then thus deeply pierced by the mighty son of Drona,

127—128. Was overwhelmed with a swoon, and the reins of the horses fell off from his hands. Then when the charioteer of Bhima was overwhelmed with a swoon

the horses, O king, no longer restrained, fled away in great speed in the presence of all bowmen. Then seeing Bhima borne away from the field by those steeds,

129. The victorious Aswathaman cheerfully blew his large conch. Beholding Bhimasena carried away from the field, the Panchalas,

130—131. Filled with fear, abandoned the car of Dhristadyumna and fled in all directions. Then Drona's son discharging his arrows with great fury, pursued those routed troops spreading a terrible carnage in their ranks. Thus carnaged by the son of Drona those Kshatriyas fled away in all directions from fear of that illustrious warrior.

Thus ends the two hundred and first chapter, the display of Aswathaman's prowess in the Narayanstramokshana of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CCII.

(NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHANA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said.—

1. Beholding the troops broken and routed Kunti's son Dhananjaya of illustrious soul, rallied them from a desire of slaying the son of Drona.

2. Rallied with effort by Arjuna and Govinda, O king, the troops stayed on the field of battle.

3. Then Vibhatsu, supported by the Somakas, Matsyas, Andhas, and Pouravas returned to the charge.

4. Then the fierce bowman Savyasachin, rushing quickly upon Aswathaman having the lion's tail as the device on his banner, spoke these words to the latter.

5. "All your might, your energy, your knowledge, your manliness, your partiality for the sons of Dhritarashtra, your hostility against us,

6. And all your fiercest prowess do you now display to me. Even that son of Prisata who has slain Drona, your sire, will also humiliate your pride.

7. Encounter now the prince of the Panchalas, who is like the fire at the universal destruction or like the Destroyer of his foes, as also me accompanied by Kesava. To-day in battle I shall humiliate the pride of your haughty self.

Dhritarashtra said :—

8. The son of the preceptor is, O Sanjaya, worthy of honour, and possessed of prowess ; he loves Dhananjaya and enjoys the love of that high-souled warrior.

9. Ere this Vibhatsu had never addressed such words to him ; why then did the son of Kunti address his friend in that harsh language.

Sanjaya said :—

10. Upon the slaughtering of the youthful Chedi prince, of Vrihatkshatra of Puru's race and O king, of Sudarsana the chief of the Malavas, who was accomplished in the use of all weapons and conversant with the rules of military science.

11. Upon the defeat of Dhristadyumna, Satyaki and Bhima, and cut to the quick by those words of king Yudhisthira,

12. And agitated at heart and remembering all his former woes, O lord, Vibhatsu was possessed by an anger engendered by grief, the like of which had never possessed him before.

13. For this reason it was that like a mean fellow, he then addressed Aswathaman, the son of his preceptor, and worthy of his respect in such a vile, cruel, disagreeable and undeserving language.

14. Thus wrathfully addressed, O king, by Partha in that indecent and harsh language, that foremost of all best bowmen,

15. Namely the son of Drona, became extremely angry with Dhananjaya and specially with Krishna. Then that highly puissant hero, staying carefully on his car ruiced his mouth with water,

16. And then invoked into existence this Agneya weapon incapable of being resisted even by the gods. Aiming that weapon at his visible and hidden foes the preceptor's son,

17. That slayer of hostile heros, filled with extreme rage, let go with due Mantras that shaft that looked resplendent like fire without a curl of smoke.

18. Then from the welkin a thick shower of arrows began to fall, and wrapt up in fiery flames those arrows then surrounded Pritha's son on all sides.

19. Meteors dropped down from the concave dome, and the points of the compass did not any longer shine ; and suddeny a dreadful gloom enveloped the army in ts sober folds.

20. The Rakshasas and the Pisachas, joining together began to utter fierced yells; inauspicious winds began to blow and the Sun ceased to shine and give heat.

21. Ravens fiercely croaked on all sides; on the sky clouds emitted roars of thunder and showered torrents of blood.

22. Birds, beasts, kine, sages of illustrious vows and tranquil soul, could not then find any peace.

23. The very elements became perturbed, and the Sun appeared to evolve in an opposite course. The triune world seemed as if afflicted in consequence of being under the influence of a corroding fever.

24. Afflicted with the energy of that weapon, elephants and other creatures of the land fled with precipitation, breathing heavily and desirous of saving themselves from that fierce energy.

25. The watery expouses being heated, the acquatic creatures, scorched with the heat, O Bharata, could not find any ease.

26. Showers of shafts, swift-flying as Garuda or the wind itself, fell from all points of the compass, cardinal and subsidiary from the welkin and out of the earth.

27. Wounded with those arrows of Drona's son, arrows endued with the energy of the thunder, his foes, scorched and consumed began to fall down like trees consumed by fire.

28. Dreadfully schorched mighty elephants fell on the ground uttering terrible roars resembling the rumble of clouds.

29. Other huge elephants scorched with the burning heat fled and careered in fear in the battle-field as if in a forest set on fire.

30. O Sire, divisions of steeds, and hosts of cars were seen there burnt like the tops of trees during a forest conflagration.

31. Thousands and thousands of car divisions then fell on that field; and O Bharata, the illustrious God of fire then consumed that army of the Pandavas,

32. Like the Samvartaka fire consuming all creatures at the end of a Yuga. Beholding the Pandava troops consumed in that terrible battle,

33. Your warriors became filled with joy and they uttered loud and defiant war-cries. Then O Bharata, thousands of drums of various sorts,

34. Were quickly struck up by your troops when victory then appeared sure. The complete host of the Pandavas and Sabyasachin himself, O king,

35—36. Could not be seen in that dreadful battle in consequence of the darkness that then enveloped the world; O king, we neither heard of, nor beheld the like of that weapon that the revengeful son of Drona then invoked into existence. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Arjuna invoked into existence the Brahma weapon,

37. That had been created by lotus-born Brahma for baffling all weapons. Then in a moment only that darkness was dispelled.

38. Cold breeze began to blow, and the points of the compass became clear and bright. We then beheld a wonderful sight, namely, a Askshouhini of the Pandavas laid low.

39. Their forms could not be distinguished, so horribly were they scorched by the energy of Aswathaman's weapon. Then the two heroic bowmen, Kesava and Arjuna, freed from that darkness,

40. Appeared like the two dispellers of darkness, the Sun and the Moon, rising in conjunction. The wielder of the Gandiva and Kesava were not at all wounded or injured.

41. Freed from that fire with their car, their banners and flags, and steeds, and excellent weapons, they then shone resplendent inspiring terrors at the heart of your troops.

42. Then from among the Pandava troops filled with delight, various confused sounds of life mingled with the sounds of drums and the blast of conchs.

43. Both the armies had thought Kesava and Arjuna to be destroyed. Beholding Kesava and Arjuna (freed from that fire of the weapon and that darkness) and seeing them quickly reappear,

44. Both uninjured and cheerful and blowing their excellent conchs, the Pandava troops were filled with delight whilst those of yours were greatly pained.

45. Then Drona's son also beholding those illustrious warriors freed and uninjured, became cheerless and O sire, for a moment only be thought. 'What is this?'

46. Thus reflecting, O king, and overwhelmed with grief and anxious contemplation, and sighing hot and heavily, he became cheerless in mind.

47. Then Drona's son throwing aside his bow, and leaping down with agility from his car, fled from the field of battle—saying :—" O Fie, O fie, every thing is untrue."

48. Then as he was flying, he came across the sinless Vyasa, that compiler of the Vedas, that receptacle of Saraswati, that habitation of the Vadas, who possess the hue of rain clouds.

49. O pepetuator of the Kuru race, then Drona's son beholding him stand before him, saluted and then in a voice choked in grief addressed him thus like one greatly distressed :—

50. O sire, O sire, is this an illusion or a caprice (on the part of the weapon) ? I do not know what this may be ? Why has this weapon been repulsed ? What has been my fault in the method of its invocation ?

51. Or is it something beyond the natural order of things or is it the defeat of the three worlds, inasmuch as the two Krishnas are still alive. Time indeed, is irresistible.

52. Neither Asuras, nor Gandharvas, nor Pisachas, nor Rakshasas, nor Snakes, nor Jakshas, nor insects, nor men,

53. Dare baffle this weapon invoked by me. This weapon however has become pacified having slain only one Akshouhini of troops.

54. I discharged this fierce weapon capable of slaying all things but why and how then did it not slay Kesava and Arjuna both possessed of attributes of the human kind.

55. O you possessor of the six qualities the *Bhagas*, explain to me all this truly as I have questioned you on the matter. O great sage, I want to hear the truth about the subject.

Vyasa said :—

56. What you have asked me from curiosity is a matter of great significance. I shall speak to you everything. Hear me attentively.

57. He that is called Narayana is the most ancient of the ancients ; that creator of the worlds took his birth as the son of Dharma for accomplishing a certain mission.

58. On the Himalaya hills, he performed severe austerities ; possessed of great energy, and resembling the Sun or the fire, he stood there with his arms upraised.

59. Endowed with eyes like lotus petals he reduced his bodily strength, by the observance of austerities for six and sixty housand years living all the while upon air only.

60. Again undergoing severe austerities of another kind for twice that period, he filled the space intervening between heaven and earth with his energy.

61—62. When in virtue of those austerities, O son, he became equal to Brahma ; then obtained a sight of that Master, Origin, and Protector, of the universe, the Lord of all the gods, the paramount Deity, who is highly difficult of being looked at ; who is smaller than the smallest, and larger than the largest ;

63. Who is denominated the Rudra, who is the Lord of all the superior ones, who is called Hara and Sambhu ; who wears matted locks on his head ; who imparts vital energy to all beings, who is the primordial cause of all the mobile and immobile things ;

64. Who is incapable of being resisted and of dreadful aspect, who possesses fierce anger and magnanimous soul, who is the all-destroyer and of generous heart, who bears the celestial bow and a pair of quivers, who is covered in a golden coat of mail and whose energy is infinite,

65. Who wields the Pinaka, who is armed with the thunderbolt, the blazing trident, the battle axe, mace and a large sword. Whose eye-brows are fair, whose locks are matted, who wields the heavy bludgeon, who bears the moon on his forehead, who is clad in tiger-skin, and who is armed with the heavy short club,

66. Who is furnished with beautiful *angadas*, who has got snakes round his neck in the shape of the sacred thread, who is surrounded by various creatures and numerous ghosts of the universe, who is the One, who is the receptacle of ascetic rites, and who is greatly admired by persons of venerable age,

67. Who is water, heaven, sky, earth, sun, moon, wind and fire, and who is the measure of the duration of the universe. Beings of evil mode of life can never obtain a sight of that unborn one, that slayer of all contemners of Brahmanas, that origin of immortality.

68—69. Only Brahmanas of pious mode of life, when purged of their sins and liberated from the influence of griefs obtain a sight of him, in their mind. Through the merits of his severe ascetic austerities Narayana beheld that undeteriorating, that most venerable one, that Being having the universe for his form. Beholding that best receptacle of all kinds of splendour, that divinity with a garland of Akshasas round his neck, Vasudeva with gratified soul became filled with delight, which he tried to express by his words, heart and understanding, and body. Then Nararayana worshipped that divine Lord, that primordial cause of the universe,

70. That giver of boons, that lord of illustrious soul engaged in sporting with the beautiful-limbed Parvati, and surroundd by hosts of ghosts,

71. That unborn one, and paramount ord, that unmanifest one, that essence of all causes and that undeteriorating one; then Narayayana of eyes like lotus petals, having saluted Rudra, that slayer of Andhaka, reverentially began to praise that god of three-eyes.

Narayana said :—

72. O most adorable one, O first of all the gods, the creators (the *Prajapatis*) who are the protectors of the world, and who having entered the earth,—your first creation—had, O lord, protected it before, have ing all sprung from you.

73. The celestials, the Asuras, the Nagas, the Rakshasas, the Pisachas, human beings, birds, the Gandharvas, Yakshas, and all other creatures, with the whole of this universe, we know have all originated from you.

74. All acts done for gratifying Indra, Yama, Varuna, Kuvera, the Pitris, and Tashtri and the Moon, all are done to propitiate you. Form and light, sound and the etherial space, wind and touch, taste and water, scent and earth,

75. Time, Brahma, and the Vedas, and the Brahmanas, and all the mobile and immobile creatures have all sprung from you. Vapours rising up from expanses of water are turned into rain drops and which falling upon the earth, are separated from one another. When the hour of the universal dissolution comes, those separated individual drops once more unite together and make the earth one vast sheet of water.

76. He who is conversant with the nature of things, thus observing the origin and destruction of all things from you, comprehends your unity and oneness. Two birds (Iswara and Jiva), four Aswathas with their branches (the Vedas and the auxiliaries), the seven guardians (the five elements,and the heart and the understanding).

77. And the ten others (the ten senses) that constitute the city, the body) have all been created by you; but you are separate from and independent of them all; the past, the present and the future, beyond the sway of any body, have all originated from you, as also the seven worlds, and this universe.

78. I am your most devoted worshipper, be propitious on me; do not injure me by allowing evil thoughts to pierce into my heart. You are the soul of souls beyond all comprehension; he who recognises you to be the seed of the universe, attain to Brahma.

79. Out of a desire for paying homage o you, I am eulogising you, with a view to ascertain your real nature, O you that are beyond the comprehension of all gods. Worshipped by me, accord me the boons I desire to have, although they may be difficult of being acquired. Do not allow your illusion to shade you from me.

Vyasa said :—

80. Then that god of inconceivable soul, possessed of blue throat, and the wielder of the Pinaka bow, that divinity always eulogised by the sages, accorded boons unto Vasudeva, who deserved then all.

The auspicious Lord said :—

81. O Narayana, through my grace, among human beings, among the celestials, and the Gandharvas, you shall be one whose soul and strength will be immeasurable.

82. The celestials, the Asuras and the mighty serpents, the Pisachas, the Gandharvas, men and Rakshasas, none among these will be able to withstand you (in battle).

83. Neither Suparna, nor any Naga, nor any other creature born in the universe, nor even any of the gods shall be able to vanquish you in battle.

84. By weapons, or thunder-bolt, or fire, or wind, or with any object that is wet or dry, or with any mobile or immobile thing,

85. None will be able to cause you pain, in consequence of my grace. You will be superior in battle even to me, if perchance you ever fight with me."

Vyasa said :—

86. Thus in days gone by were these boons earned by Sourin. Even that god now roves on the face of the Earth (as Vasudeva) confounding the world by his llusion.

87. From the ascetic observances of the great Narayana, a mighty sage, called by the name of Nara was born. This latter is equal to the god Narayan himself. Know that Nara to be Arjuna.

88. These two sages, said to be older than the older gods, take their births in every Yuga for carrying on the easy rule of the universe.

89. You endued in energy and wrath also, O you of generous heart, have sprung from a portion of Rudra, through the merits of all your pious deeds, and as a consequenee of high ascetic austerities,

90. Being embodied, your intelligent self considered the world to be pervaded byt Mahadeva; and then for propitiating tha

god you emaciated your body by the observance of hard vows.

91. Creating a white image of that foremost of male beings, O Bestower of honor, you adored him with homage, offerings and reiterating prayers.

92. Thus adored by you, the god became gratified on you in your previous life; and he then accorded to you, O learned one, excellent boons that you cherished in your heart.

93. Like those of Arjuna and Kesava, your acts, birth, austerities and Yoga have all been seperior; the god Mahadeva was adored by them as well as by you in every Yuga.

94. This, O Kesava, is devoted to Rudra and has sprung from Rudra himself. He ever adores Bhabha, recognising his Phallic from to be the origin of all forms.

95. In him are eternally present *Atma Yoga* and the undeteriorating *Sashtra Yoga*. The celestials, the Sidhas, and the foremost sages all adore him,

96. With a view to obtain that highest object in the world *viz.*, Sthanu or Mahadeva: He is the creator of all. The eternal Krishna ought to be adored in all sacrifices.

97. Knowing the Phallic form of Siva to be the origin of all forms, the lord Kesava adores him. The god having the bull for his emblem entertains great respect for Kesava.

Sanjaya said :—

98. Hearing those words of his, that mighty car-warrior *viz.* the son of Drona, saluted Rudra and conceived a great regard for Kesava.

99. That one of controlled soul bowed also to that mighty sage (Krishna) and had the downs of his body erect. Then looking at his own divisions he withdrew them from the field of battle.

100. Thereupon, O ruler of men, the Pandava and the Kourava troops were both withdrawn, the latter highly defeated in consequence of the overthrow of Drona.

101. Fighting only for five days and spreading carnage among the Pandava troops, O king, that Brahmana Drona, conversant with the contents of all the Vedas, attained to the posthumous region of the Brahmanas.

Thus ends the two hundred and second chapter, the words of Vyasa, in the Narayanastra Mokshana of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CCIII.

(NARAYANSTRA-MOKSHANA PARVA)——*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. When that *Atiratha, viz.* Drona had been slain by the son of Prisata, what, O Sanjaya, did my troops and those of the Pandavas do afterwards?

Sanjaya said :—

2. When that Atiratha Drona had been slain by the son of Prisata, and when the Kourava ranks were broken and routed, Kunti's son Dhananjaya,

3. Beholding a wonderful sight indicative of his victory, questioned, O foremost of the Bharatas, the mighty sage Vyasa who had gone there at his own pleasure.

Arjuna said :—

4. When slaying my foes in battle with myriads of resplendent darts, I saw a male being of the effulgence of fire proceeding before me.

5. Raising his blazing trident wherever he turned, my foes in that direction, O mighty sage, he routed and scorched.

6. People think that I rout my foes whereas they are really routed by him. I only pursue from behind the troops already broken and routed by him.

7. O illustrious possessor of the six qualities the Bhagas, tell me who is that excellent of all male beings, whom I see armed with the trident and who resembles the Sun himself in effulgence.

8. He never touches the earth with his feet nor does he hurl his trident; but in consequence of his energy, thousands of arrows issue out of that trident of his.

Vyasa said :—

9—10. O son of Pritha, you have seen Sankara, that first af all the creators of the world, that lord of all energies, primary male being, he that is the embodiment of heaven, earth and sky, the divine Lord, the saviour of the universe, the paramount master, the bestower of boons, also called Ishana. O, do you seek the refuge of that boon-giving deity, that lord of the universe.

11. He was the Paramount Divinity, of illustrious soul, also called Ishana, the wearer of matted locks and the origin of all auspiciousness. He possesses three eyes, and mighty arms and fierce energy; and his locks are tied as a crown of his head and he is clad in deer-skin.

12. That supreme god, called Hara or Sthanu, is the lord of the universe and the giver of boons. He is the foremost of all beings in the universe and incapable of being vanquished. He is the afforder of joy to the universe, and is its paramount ruler.

13. The origin, the light and the refuge of the universe, he is ever attended with victory. He is the soul and the creator of the universe; and the universe is his form and he is ever-glorious.

14. The Lord of the universe, and its ruler, that great one is the lord of all action. Known by the name of Sambhu he is self-born, he is the lord of all creatures, and the origin of the past, present and future.

15. He is the Yoga and the lord of Yoga. He is called Sarva and is the lord of the lords of the world. He is superior to every thing. He is the most excellent of all things in the universe and the highest of all and is called *Paramesthin*.

16. He is the ordainer of the three worlds and the sole refuge of them all. He is the protector of the universe and incapable of being vanquished, and is beyond the reach of birth, decline and death.

17. The essence of knowledge and incapable of being comprehended by the understanding, and the best of all knowledge, he is unknowable. Out of his grace he gives to his worshippers the boons they desire.

18. That great one has for his companions, celestial beings of various forms, some of whom are dwarfs,some with matted locks, some with bald heads,some with short necks, some with large stomaches,

19. Some with huge bodies, some endued with great might and some with long ears. All of them have, O son of Pritha, distorted faces, mouths and legs, and strange dresses.

20. That great lord Mahadeva, O Partha, is adored by even these kinds of followers. That Siva, O son, possessed of energy, goes in advance of you through kindness only.

21—22. In that dreadful battle, O son of Pritha, capable of causing the hair to stand erect, who else, O Arjuna, except the divine Maheswara, that foremost of all bowmen, could even in his mind, dare defeat that host that was protected by those great smiters and bowmen, *viz.* Aswathaman, Karna and Kripa.

23. Nobody can venture to withstand the fighter, in whose front walks Mahadeva himself. There is no creature in the triune worlds who is a match for him.

24. At the very smell of the enraged Mahadeva, the enemy trembles and drops down senseless in large numbers in battle.

25. For this reason the gods in heaven ever adore and bow down to him. The men of this world as also others that have attained to heaven,

26. If they devoutly worship the boon-giving, auspicious and divine Rudra, the lord of Uma, obtain happiness here and the highst felicity hereafter.

27. O son of Kunti, bow down unto him who is peace incarnate, unto him called Rudra (or the fierce), who is of blue throat, exceedingly subtle, and of great effulgence,

28. Unto him known as *Kapardin*, him that is dreadful, him who possesses twany eyes, him that is boon giving; unto that great ordainer of red locks and righteous conduct, unto him who is ever-engaged in the performance of auspicious acts,

29. Unto him who is an object of desire with all beings; unto him who is of tawny eyes; him that is called *Sthanu*; him that is called *Purusha*; unto him of twany hair; him that is bald and him that is extremely subtle and of great splendour,

30. Unto him that is the giver of light, him that is the embodiment of all holy waters, him that is the god of gods, him that is possessed of great impetuousity; him that is of various forms; him who is called *Sarva* and is vested in pleasant garments,

31. Unto him that possesses an excellent turban, a handsome face and a thousand eyes; him that is the giver of rain, him that has the mountains for his habitation; him that is peace, him that is the protector, him that has the barks of trees for his cloth,

32. Unto him whose arms are adorned with ornaments of gold, him who is furious; him who is the lord of all the different quarters; him who is the master of clouds and of all created beings,

33. Unto him who is the lord of all trees and of kine; him that has his body covered with trees; him who is the general of the celestial armies; him who is the inspirer of all thoughts;

34. Unto him who has the sacrificial laddle in his hands; him who is effulgent, him who wields the bow; him who is Rama himself, him who has numerous semblances; him who is the lord of the universe; him who has the *Munja* grass for his attire;

35. Unto him who has a thousand heads; him who has a thousand eyes; and him who has a thousand arms and a thousand legs.

36. O sun of Kunti, seek the refuge of that Lord of the universe, who bestows boons, who is the lord of Uma, who possesses three-eyes and who is the destroyer of Daksha's sacrifice ;

37. Who is the protector of all created beings ; who is ever-cheerful ; who is the saviour of all ; who is undeteriorating in his glory ; who is called *Kapardin*, and whose gait is like that of the bull ; whose navel is like that of the bull and whose emblem is the bull,

38. Who is proud like the bull, who is the lord of the bull, who is known by the horns of the bull,, and who is the bull of bulls, whose banner-devise is the bull ; who is generous like the bull ; who has eyes like those of the bull ;

39. Whose weapons are all of superior make ; whose arrow is the *Vrisha* (Krishna), and who is righteousness incarnate ; who is called the Great Lord, whose stomach is extended and body prodigious ; whose seat is the leopard's skin,

40. Who is the lord of the worlds, who is the giver of boons, who is bald, who is devoted to the Brahmanas and who loves the Brahmanas, who is armed witn the trident, who is boon-giving ; who wields the sword and the buckles ; and who is the highly auspicious one :

41—42. Who uses the bow Pinaka, who is shorn of his battle-axe and who is the sovereign and the saviour of the universe. I totally consign myself to the care of that divine lord, that giver of protection, that god vested in deer's skin ; sa lutation to that lord of the gods who has Vaisravana for his friend, salutation to him of illustrious vows, to him whose companions are all best bow-men ;

43. To him who himself wields the bow, to that great Divinity with whom the bow is a favourite weapon ; who is himself the arrow hurled by the bow ; who is the bow-string and the bow and the preceptor instructing others in the use of the bow.

44. Salutations to that deity whose weapons are terrible, and who himself is the foremost of all gods ; salutations to him whose semblances are various, and who has got diverse bowmen as his attendants.

45. Salutations unto Sthanu, unto that best of all wielders of bow, salutations even to the destroyer of "Tripura," and the slayer of Bhaga.

46. Salutations unto the lord of the *Vanaspatis* (Trees &c.,) and to the lord of men ; salutations unto the lord of the celestial mothers, and to the lord of the Ganas.

47. Salutations ever to him who is the lord of kine and the master of all sacrifices. Salutations to the lord of waters and of the celestials ;

48. Salutations unto him who is the destroyer of Surya's teeth, who is of three eyes, who is the giver of boons, who is called Hara, who is blue-throated and who is of golden locks.

49. I shall now relate to you, according to my knowledge and as I have heard them related, all the divine deeds of the supremely wise Mahadeva.

50. If Mahadeva is worked up with rage, neither the gods, nor the Asuras, neither the Gandharvas, nor the Rakshasas, even if they conceal themselves in deep caves, can enjoy any peace.

51. In days of yore when Daksha had collected all the necessary objects for the celebration of his sacrifice, Mahadeva excited with rage destroyed them all ; indeed then he became unusually stern.

52. Shooting an arrow with his bow then, he uttered a tremendous roar. The celestials, who always perform acts beneficial to the world, then were filled with anxiety.

53. When the sacrifice was destroyed, and when Maheswara was enraged, the gods were greatly frightened at the sound produced by his twanging bow and his palm-strokes.

54. The gods and the Asuras all succumbed and fell down, and O son of Pritha, the waters were agitated and the earth trembled with everything on it.

55. The mountains split and the quarters of heaven and the Nagas became stupified. Enveloped in a pall of gloom the universe was lost to view.

56—57. The splendour of the luminaries as also of the Sun was destroyed. The *Rishis* filled with fear became agitated, and desirous of their own good and that of all other creatures, performed propitiatory rites. Then Sankara, smilingly rushed upon Pushana,

58. Who was eating the sacrifcial oblations, and then tore out his teeth. The gods then, bowing down to him, fled away trembling.

59. Once more Mahadeva aimed at the gods a shower of burning and sharp arrows resembling tongues of fire mixed with smoke, or clouds with lightning.

60. Beholding that arrowy shower, all the gods, bowing down to Maheswara, assigned to Rudra a substantial share in sacrifices.

61. Afraid, the gods sought his protection, O prince. His anger having subsided the great god re-established the sacrifice.

62. The gods that had fled away returned. Indeed they are afraid of Maheswara even to this day. Formerly the puissant Asuras had three cities in heaven.

63. One was made of gold, another of silver and the third of iron ; each of them was excellent and large. The golden city belonged to Kamalaksha, the silver city to Tarakaksha.

64. The third, made of iron, belonged to Vidyutmalin. Using all his weapons Maghabat failed to capture those cities.

65. Thereupon all the celestials, afflicted as they were, sought the refuge of Rudra. The gods then, with Vasava at their head, said these words to that high-souled one.

66. "The denizens of the three cities, having obtained boons from Brahma, and proud in consequence of those boons, are excessively opressing the worlds.

67. O Lord of the gods, O supreme Divinity, save yourself, there is none capable of slaying the Daityas. Do you slay those injurers of the gods.

68. O Rudra, then creatures immolated in every sacrifice will be yours. Do you therefore, O lord of the universe, over-throw those Asuras."

69. Thus addressed by the gods, and moved by the desire for benefiting them, Mahadeva said 'yea' to their proposals. Then he made the two mountains, viz. Gandhamadan and Vindhya the two bamboo poles of his car,

70. And the earth with all the oceans and the forests his chariot, and the snake Sesa the Aksha of his chariot.

71. The Sun and the Moon then became the wheels of the car of that god of gods, that wielder of the Pinaka bow. The three eyed Divinity then made Elapatra and Puspadanta the pins of his car.

72. The puissant Mahadeva then made the Malaya mountains the yoke and the great Takshaka the chord for fastening the yoke to the poles, and the other creatures about him the bounds of his steeds.

73. The mighty god then made the four Vedas the four steeds of his chariot ; the lord of the three worlds made the auxiliaries of the Vedas the briddle-bits of his steeds.

74. Mahadeva then made *Gayatri* and *Savitri* the reins, the mystic monosyllable *Om* the whip and Brahmana the driver.

75. Then making the Mandar mountains the bow, Vasuki its string, Vishnu its excellent arrows, Fire the arrow-head,

76. And Vayu the two wings of that arrow, Yama the feathers in its tail, lightning the whet-stone, and Meru his standard,

77—78. The god Siva, riding on that wonderful car composed of all the excellent celestial forces, proceeded for the destruction of the tripple city. Indeed Sthanu, that foremost of Smiters, that destroyer of Asuras, that most beautiful-looking warrior of infinite energy, adored by the gods and and Rishis, possessed of the wealth of asceticism, O Partha,

79. Created an excellent and unequalled array called after his own name, and then stood firm for a thousand years.

80. Then when the three cities came together on the firmament, he pierced them with that shaft of his having three knots.

81. The denizens of those cities, the Danavas, then could not look at that arrow composed of the Fire of Dissolution and of Vishnu and Soma.

82. When the tripple city began to burn, the goddess Durga went to see the sight, with a child on her lap having only five clumps of hair on its head.

83. Uma then asked the gods who that child was. The malevolent Indra then tried to strike him with the thunder bolt.

84. Thereupon the all-powerful Lord of all the worlds, possessed of the six excellent qualities the Bhagas, smilingly paralysed the arm of the enraged Indra wielding the thunder-bolt.

85. Then with his arm paralysed, Sakra, surrounded by the celestials, quickly proceeded to the undeteriorating Brahma.

86. Then the gods bowing their heads down to Brahma addressed him, with folded arms, thus :—"O Brahma, what wonderful creature is now lying on the lap of Parvati ?

87. As he appeared to be a mere boy we did not offer salutations to him. But we have been defeated totally by him. It is therefore that we want to ask you about him.

88. With Purandara to head us, we were easily defeated by that boy though he did not at all fight with us." Hearing those words of theirs, that foremost of all conversant with Brahmas *viz.*, Brahma,

89. Reflected for a while and then decided that boy of infinite prowess to be a manifestation of Sambhu himself, that possessor of the six illustrious qualities, the Bhagas. Then the almighty Brahma

addressing Sakra and other foremost of celestials, thus spoke :—

90. "He is the almighty lord Hara, the Master-ruler of the mobile and immobile creation. There is nothing superior to that foremost of gods known by the name of Maheswara.

91. That boy of immeasurable effulgence whom you have seen with the goddess, is Siva himself, assuming the boy-like appearance for gratifying Parvati.

92. Let therefore yourselves with me seek his refuge,—that god who is the ruler of all the worlds and the possessor of the six illustrious qualities, the Bhagas.

93—94. O gods, you could not recognise that lord of the worlds." Thereafter the celestials with the Prajapati approached that boy of the radiance of the rising Sun. Then Brahma beholding the mighty lord and the grandsire knowing him to be the paramount master, began to adore him thus :—

Brahma said :—

95. You are the sacrifice, you are the refuge of this world and you are its sole stay. You are Bhava, you are Mahadeva, you are the abode of all things and you are the most supreme of all things.

96. Yourself pervade the whole universe with its mobile and immobile creatures. O lord of the past and the future, O lord of the Lokas, O master of the universe, be propitious on Sakra afflicted as he is with your wrath.

Vyasa said :—

97. Hearing the words of the lotus-sprung Divinity, Maheswara then became propitiated, and desirous of showering his grace, he then laughed aloud.

98. Then the celestials gratified both Uma and Maheswara with eulogies. Then the arm of the wielder of the thunderbolt once more regained its natural state.

99. Then that illustrious Divinity whose emblem is the bull, and who had destroyed the sacrifice of Daksha, together with his better half, became gracious on the gods.

100. He is Rudra, he is Siva, he is Agni, he is all and the knower of all. He is Indra, he is Vayu, he is the twin Aswins and he is lightning.

101. He is Bhava, he is Parjanya, he is Mahadeva and he is sinless. He is the Moon, he is Ishana, he is the Sun and he is Varuna,

102. He is Time, he is the Destroyer, he is death, he is Yama and day and night; He is a month, a fortnight, as well as the seasons, the twilights and the complete year.

103. He is Dhata and Vidhata, the soul of the universe and the doer of all acts of the universe. Himself formless, he is embodied in the person of all the celestials.

104. He is eulogised by all the gods. He is one and many. He is hundred, he is thousand and he is hundreds of thousands.

105. Brahmanas versed in the Vedas, say that he has two forms,—one is dreadful and the other peaceful—These two again are divided in numerous portions.

106. His terrible forms are Fire, Vishnu and Vashkara (the Sun); and his peaceful forms are, water, the luminaries and the moon.

107. Whatever there is highly mysterious in the Vedas, their auxiliaries, in the Upanishadas, in the Puranas, and in Metaphysics, is identical with the god Maheswara.

108. Such is the Lord Mahadeva, that Divinity without birth and that possessor of the six illustrious qualities the Bhagas. It is beyond my power to enumerate all the qualities or that Lord,

109—110. Even if, O son of Pandu, I were to recount them for a thousand years. On those who are under the malicious influence of evil stars, on those who are stained with every sin,

111. That great protector is pleased and grants them salvation, if indeed they seek refuge in him. He grants and takes away, life, health, prosperity, wealth, and all other kinds of desirable objects. The prosperity seen in Indra and other gods is really his.

112. He is present in both the evils and good that exercise influence over the human kind. He gets by a fiat of his will whatever prosperity he desires. Therefore is he called the Lord Paramount.

113. He is called Maheswara and he is the supreme lord of all superior creatures. In multefarious forms of many kinds, he pervades the universe.

114. What is known as the mouth of that god is the ocean; and it is well-known that assuming the form of the sea-fire it drinks the libations in the shape of water.

115. This Divinity ever dwells in the places of cremation. Men worship this god there where only the braves can go.

116. The effulgent forms of this lord are many and marvellous; those forms are

worshipped in the worlds and are praised and spoken of by men.

117. Many also are the names of truthful import of this Divinity. known in the worlds. Those names are all founded upon his supremacy, omnipotence, and his acts.

118. In the Vedas, the excellent hymn called *Sata Rudriya* has been sung in his praise, he who is the great Lord called the infinite Rudra.

119. That divinity is the Lord of all wishes both human and heavenly. He is the Lord Paramount and the supreme ruler and pervades this extensive universe.

120. The Brahmanas and the sages call him the most ancienf of beings. He is the first-born of all the gods, and fire came out from his mouth.

121. As he always and by every means protects the creatures of the universe, and always finds pleasure in their company, and as he is the lord of them all, he is truly called *Pasupati*.

122. As his Phallic form is ever present in the observance of the Brahmacharyya vow, and as it adds to the glory of the world,—he is called Maheswara.

123. The Rishis, the celestials, the Gandharvas and the Apsaras, worship the Phallic emblem of this god, that ever remains erect.

124. When his Phallic unblem is worshipped Maheswara becomes glad and is pleased and delighted and transported with joy.

125. As in the past, the present, and the future, the god has many forms, both mobile and immobile, he is truly called *Vahurupa*.

126. With one of his eyes blazing forth, he appears to have eyes on all sides of his body; and as in his wrath, he possesees the worlds, he is called Sarva.

127. As his form is like that of smoke he is called Dhurjati; and as the Devas in the world are present in him he is called Viswarupa.

128. As three goddesses *viz.*, the sky, the firmament and the water, ever worship that lord of the worlds, therefore he is truly called *Tryambaka*.

129. As he ever helps in the accomplishment of all acts, and increases the wealth of men and is engaged in doing good to them, therefore he is called Siva.

130. Possessed of thousand or ten thousand eyes, or eyes on all sides of his body, as he ever protects the universe, he is called *Mahadeva*.

131. As he is Great and Ancient and is the fountain of life, and the cause of its continuance, and as his Phallic from is eternal, he is called *Sthanu*.

132. The rays of light that proceeding from the sun and Moon, are seen in the worlds, are said to be the hair of his head, and therefore is he called Vyomakesa.

133. As he destroys Brahma, Indra, Varuna, Kuvera and Yama, after having afflicted them greatly, therefore is he called Hara.

134. Since he is the Past, the Future and the Present, and in fact, everything in the universe and since he is the origin of the past, the future and the present, he is for that reason called Bhava.

135. Whatever of soundness or unsoundness there is in the bodies of men, is said to be his manifestation. He is the *Pana* and *Apana* breaths in embodied creatures.

136. He that ever worships the Phallic emblem of that illustrious god, attains great prosperity even by such worship of his.

137. Below his two thighs the forms are fiery; the other half of his auspicious body is in the moon. So also half his soul is fire and half the moon.

138. His auspicious form surcharged with energy is more blazing than all the forms of the other gods. Amongst men his blazing and dreadful form is called Fire.

139. With his auspicious form he practises the vow Brahmacharya, whereas with the dreadful form he has, he devours everything.

140. As he burns, as he is keen, and fierce and endued with the great prowess, and as he devours flesh, blood and marrow, he is called Rudra.

141. The word *Kapi* is said to mean supreme, and Vrisha to mean righteousness; therefore that god of gods, the possessor of the illustrious qualities the Bhagas, is called *Vrisha Kapi*.

142. Shutting his two eyes, that Potent Lord created a third on his forehead by sheer force; and therefore is he called the Three-eyed.

143. It is this god of gods, the paramount lord, the wielder of the Pinaka bow, O Partha, whom you have seen go before you slaying your enemies.

144. After you had vowed to slay the ruler of the Sindhus, O sinless one, Krishna showed you this god, in your deam, seated on the top of that best of mountains.

145. It is this god, the possessor of the six illustrious qualities, that goes before you in battle. It is he who gave you weapons with which you slew the Danavas.

146. That excellent, praiseworthy, life-giving, holy hymn approved of by the Vedas, in honor of that god, known by the name of Satarudriya has now been explained to you, O Partha.

147-148. This hymn of four parts, capable of accomplishing every object, is holy, destructive of all sins, and capable of driving away all stains and destroying all sorrow and all fears. The man that always hear it succeeds in vanquishing all his enemies, and is held in high veneration in the region of Rudra.

149—150. The person that always attentively reads or hears the recital of this excellent and auspicious piece of history relating to the fight fought by the illustrious deity, and who worships reverentially that generous lord of the universe, obtains all high objects of desire, through the grace of the three-eyed God.

151. Go and fight, O son of Kunti; you are not destined to meet with defeat.—You who have Janardana by your side as your counsellor and protector.

Sanjaya said :—

152. Then the son of Parasara having addressed Arjuna in the above manner returned, O foremost of the Bharatas, O afflictor of foes, to the place from which he came.

Thus ends the two hundred and third chapter, the description of the Sata-Rudriya, in the Narayanastramokshana of the Drona Parva.

CHAPTER CCIV.

(NARAYANASTRAMOKSHANA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. The highly puissant Drona belonging to the Brahmana order, having fought dreadfully for five days, was slain, O king, and repaired to the region of Brahma:

2 Whatever benefit is derived from a perusal of the Vedas, is also reaped by a perusal of this Parva, in which the achievements and feats of many brave Kshatriyas have been described.

3. He that always reads it or hears it read by others is freed from most heinous sins and liberated from the bondages of his atrocious acts.

4. Hear from the Brahmanas may reap the fruits of the accomplishment of a sacrifice; the Kshatriyas may obtain victory in dreadful battle; and the other orders may obtain desirable objects and good sons and grandsons.

Thus ends the two hundred and fourth chapter, the fruit of the perusal of the Drona Parva, in the Narayanastramoksha, of the Drona Parva. Thus ends also the Narayanastramoksha Parva.

FINIS DRONA PARVA.

A PROSE ENGLISH TRANSLATION

OF

THE MAHABHARATA

(TRANSLATED LITERALLY FROM THE ORIGIN AL SANSKRIT TEXT).

KARNA PARVA.

EDITED BY

MANMATHA NATH DUTT, (*Shastri*) **M.A., M R.A.S.,**

RECTOR, KESHUB ACADEMY;

Author of the English Translations of the Ramayana, Vishnupuranam, Srimadbhagavatam, Kamandakiya Nitisara, Bhagavat Gita and many other works.

PUBLISHED BY

RASH MOHUN SIRCAR.

CALCUTTA.

PRINTED BY H. C. DASS, ELYSIUM PRESS,

Kashi Ghose's Lane, Beadon Street.

1901.

KARNA PARVA.

CONTENTS.

THE MAHABHARATA

(IN ENGLISH)

KARNA PARVA.

CHAPTER I.

Having saluted the Supreme Deity (Narayana), and the highest of all the male beings (Nara) and also the Goddess of Learning (Saraswati), let us cry success!

Vaisampayana said :—

1. O king, after Drona had been killed, the monarchs headed by Duryodhana, with greatly anxious hearts, all went to the son of Drona.

2. Thereupon mourning for the death of Drona, they (the kings) being highly oppressed with grief and deprived of energy on account of their gloominess of mind sat around the son of Saradwata.

3. Then having comforted him for a short while by citing reasons arrived at in the Shastras, the rulers of the earth departed to their respective abodes on the advent of the night.

4. O descendant of the Kuru race, the lords of the earth could not enjoy pleasure while resting in their own abodes; and they could not obtain sleep, thinking of that immense massacre.

5. Especially the son of Suta, king Suyodhana, Dusasana and Sakuni could not at all sleep.

6. And they passed together that night in the abode of Duryodhana, whilst they were seriously thinking of the griefs with which the lofty-minded Pandavas were afflicted.

7. Recollecting these, viz., that they (the Pandavas) were greatly oppressed during the game at dice, and also that Krishna (Draupadi) was (forcibly) brought to the assembly (of kings), they greatly regretted, with hearts filled with anxiety.

8. Thus reflecting upon those miseries resulting from the gambling match, (which the Pandavas had become subject to), their night had passed away with great uneasiness, which (night), O king, seemed to be (so long as) a hundred years.

9. Thereupon at the break of day they, being obedient to the injunctions of ordinance, all performed the necessary ceremonies, prescribed by the established usage.

10. Having finished all the necessary ceremonies, and consoled themselves, they, O Bharata, ordered for the array of soldiers and then started for battle,

11—12. After having made Karna their generalissimo with the due performance of the most auspicious rites (by tying a thread round his wrist) and having adored the foremost of the regenerate persons by offerings of vessels of curds, clarified butter, and vessels filled with corn and other auspicious articles, as well as by presents of gold-coins, kine, and gems, valuable cloths, and immense wealth, and also having been praised by the charioteers and panegyrists, born in the country of Magadha, (the Magadha-panegyrists are the mixed tribes born of a Kshatriya mother and a Brahmana father), with hymns about victory.

13. O monarch, the Pandavas on the other hand, having similarly performed the morning ceremonies, came out of their tents; and, O king, they were resolved upon the battle.

14. Thereupon the formidable battle began, which caused the hairs of the body stand erect, between the Kurus and the Pandavas, each party being desirous of vanquishing the other.

15. O monarch, the most formidable battle, between the troops of the Kurus and those of the Pandavas, lasted only for two days during the leadership of Karna.

16. Thereupon Vrisha (Karna), having brought about an immense slaughter of the opponents in battle, was himself slain by Falguna (Arjuna), whilst the sons of Dhritarastra were observing it.

17. Thereafter Sanjaya departed towards the city of Hastinapur, and told all to Dhritarastra, that had taken place at Kurujangala.

Janamejaya said :—

18. Having heard that both Bhishma and the car-warrior Drona of indomitable courage were slain (in the battle), the old king (Dhritarashtra) the son of Amvika, was highly oppressed with sorrow.

19. Having heard of the death of Karna the benefactor of Duryodhana, how could he, O best of the regenerate persons, hold his life, much agrieved as he was ?

20. How could that royal descendant of Kuru hold his life, after having heard of the fall of that hero, on whom he supposed the hope of his sons' victory to rest ?

21. I suppose that men, falling in the most distressful circumstances, find greatest difficulty in yielding up their lives ; for, the king, even after hearing of the death of Karna, could not (possibly) forsake his life.

22—23. As, O twice-born one, having heard of the fall of the old son of Santanu, of Valhika, of Drona, of Somadatta, of Vurisrabas, as well as of other friends, of his sons, and grandsons, the king did not give up his life ; so, I suppose, that to yield up one's life is, O regenerate person, highly difficult.

24. Relate to me all these in their entirety, as they had really taken place. I am not (at all) satisfied with (simply) hearing the mighty achievements of my forefathers.

Thus ends the first chapter, the speech of Janamejaya, of the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER II.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. O great king, when Karna was slain, the son of Gavalgana, greatly mortified in heart, repaired that very night to the city of Nagpur, in the back of horses resembling the wind in swiftness.

2. He then arrived at the city of Hastinapur ; and, with a greatly anxious heart, repaired to the house of Dhritarastra which had now been vacated by all its friends.

3. He then beholding the king deprived of energy in consequence of his gloominess of mind, folded his hands : and, indeed, worshipped the monarch's feet by bowing down his head.

4. Having worshipped the ruler of the earth, Dhritarastra, according to the just rites, and having uttered—Alas ! and woe ! —he then addressed him saying :—

5. O ruler of earth, I am Sanjaya ! Are you not at ease ? After having obtained distress by your own faults, are you not now deprived of all your senses ?

6. The good advices, uttered (given) by Vidura, Drona, son of Ganga, and Keshava, were not received by you. Do you not feel pain to remember them now ?

7. Also do you not feel pain to remember the rejection of the good advices given to you by Rama, Narada, Kanwa, and others in the assembly (of kings) ?

8. Remembering that your friends, Bhishma, Drona, and others, who were ever occupied in contributing to your welfare, were slain by the enemies in battle, do you not feel pain ?

9. Sighing heavy and hot, the king, oppressed with grief, addressed in these words the son of Suta, who with folded hands, was telling him the above :

Dhritarastra said :—

10. O Sanjaya, owing to the deaths of that heroic wielder of celestial weapons, the son of Ganga, and the mighty bowman, Drona, my heart greatly aches.

11. That mighty hero, who was the incarnation of the (eighth) Vasu, killed every day ten thousand car-warriors protected by armour.

12. He (that mighty hero) was killed in the battle by the son of Yajnasena (namely) Shikhandin, who was protected by the Pandavas. At this (occurrence) my heart greatly aches.

13. The son of Vrigu gave to that lofty-minded one (that hero, Bhishma) the knowledge of the best weapons. To him also, during the childhood, the science of the bow was taught by Rama himself.

14. Through whose (Drona's) kindness, the sons of Kunti,—the royal sons,—the mighty car-warriors,—as well as several other rulers of earth, attained the abilities of a *Maharathee* (one simultaneously fighting with ten thousand bowmen) :—

15. Hearing of that mighty bowman, Drona, who was true to his aim, slain by Dhristadyumna in battle, my heart greatly aches.

16. Those two had not a peer in this world in the wielding of the fourfold weapons. Hearing that both Drona and Bhishma were slain in the battle, my mind is greatly pained.

17. In the three worlds there is no person, who is equal to him in the use of weapons. Hearing the death of this hero, Drona, what did my followers do ?

18. The army of the *Samsaptakas* was sent away to the region of Yama by Dhananjaya, the lofty-minded son of Pandu, through the exertion of his terrible prowess.

19. (After the above occurrence and also) after the Narayana weapon of the most intelligent son of Drona had been destroyed, as also after the divisions of my army had fled away (from the battle-field), what did the troops of my side do?

20. I think that, on the death of Drona, my troops, plunged deep into the ocean of grief, ran away (from the field of battle), even as the ship-wrecked mariners float on the ocean.

21.—22. O Sanjaya, when my troops had run away (from the battle field), what had become the color of the faces of Duryodhana, Karna, Kritavarman the ruler of the Bhojas, Shalya the king of the Madras, Ashwathaman the son of Drona, and Kripacharja, as well as of the remaining sons of mine, and several other monarchs.

23. O son of Gavalgana, relate to me all those in detail that had actually happened in battle as to the prowess shown by Pandavas as well as by the troops of my own side.

Sanjaya said :—

24. O Lord of kings, you should not be pained to hear of what had taken place in respect to the Kouravas through thy misconduct. For, the learned sage never feels any anguish at what is brought about by Fate.

25. What is not likely to happen to man (being subject to Fate) may happen to him; or what is likely to take place may, again, happen to a person. Hence at the acquisition or non-acquisition of the purposes the learned sage should not at all grieve.

Dhritarashtra said :—

26. O Sanjaya, no great anguish does find place in me. For, I think that all this is (the unavoidable consequence of) superior destiny. So, do you describe according as you desire.

Thus ends the second chapter, the parley between Sanjaya and Dhritarashtra, of the Karna Parva.

CPAPTER III.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When that mighty bowman Drona, was slain, your sons, the great car-warriors, became pale-faced, gloomy, and senseless.

2. And, O king, all those who were armed with the weapons, stood speechless; and highly oppressed with grief, they neither beheld nor spoke any words to one another.

3. O descendant of the Bharata race, seeing them changed in countenance, on account of their being oppressed with sorrow, your troops, themselves being highly afflicted with grief and anxiety, looked upwards.

4. Beholding the death of Drona in battle, O foremost of kings, the weapons of many of them, indeed besmeared with blood, dropped down from their hands.

5. O great monarch, O descendant of the Bharata race, several of those (weapons), still retained by the troops in the various parts of their bodies, were seen hanging, like the meteors of heaven (pending from above).

6. O great monarch, seeing your force (his own troops) thus eclipsed (by that of the Pandavas), and standing as if lifeless, king Duryodhana addressed them, saying :—

7. "Depending upon the strength of your arms, this war had been entered into and the descendants of Pandu had also been summoned to the battle by me.

8. But you, however, look very cheerless (dispirited) now in the death of Drona. All the warriors engaged in battle are slain in battle.

9. Victory or death falls to the lot of one who is engaged in battle. What wonder then there is in this (the fall of Drona)? So do you fight with your faces in all directions.

10. Do you behold that lofty-minded Karna, the son of Vikartana, that highly powerful and mighty bowman,—that wielder of celestial weapons, who is roving about in the (field of) battle.

11. Through fear, indeed, Dhananjaya,—that coward son of Kunti,—always flies away from him in battle, even as the small deer (does) from a lion.

12. It is by him that Bhimasena of mighty strength, endowed with the force of ten thousand elephants, was brought, through the tactics of warfare that are peculiar to man, into the same circumstance.

13. It is by him that Ghatatkacha, that wielder of celestial weapon, that god, that enchanter, that one who made a tremendous roar, was slain in battle through the most indomitable power.

14. Do you behold to-day in battle the inexhaustible strength of arms of that intellectual one, who is of unsubdued energy, and of fixed purpose.

15. Do you behold to-day the prowess of both the son of Drona and the son of Radha who are high-souled, among the troops of the Pandus and the Panchalas.

16. All of you are, however, capable of slaying in battle the sons of Pandu with their troops even fighting singly. What then, when fighting together? Endowed with immense strength and acquainted with the use of 'weapons, do you behold to-day one another (engaged in battle?.'

Sanjaya said :—

17. O faultless one, having thus addressed, your son (Duryodhana) of mighty prowess, (after having consulted) with his brothers, afterwards made Karna the generallissimo (of the Kuru troops).

18. O king, after having obtained the generalship (of the Kuru army) the mighty car-warrior Karna, invincible in battle, engaged himself in battle, making a tremendous roar like a lion.

19. He caused a great slaughter among the Srinjayas, all the Panchalas, the Kekayas, and the Videhas, in the sight of all.

20. Hundreds of arrows most fearfully issued from his bow, one closely following the wings of another like the lines of bees (flying away from the hive).

21. Having oppressed the Pandavas and the Panchalas, of immense activity, and killed thousands of heroes, he, at last, was slain by Arjuna.

Thus ends the third chapter, the speech of Sanjaya, of the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER IV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. Having heard this (the above intelligence), the great king Dhritarastra, the son of Ambika, experienced, indeed, the farthest limit of grief, and considered Suyodhana slain (in the battle); and highly perturbed, he fell down upon the ground, like an elephant, that had lost all his senses.

2. O the most excellent of the Bharata race, on the fall of the highly agitated and foremost of monarchs upon the ground, there was a tremendous wailing of women, which (the noise) filled the entire earth to all its points.

3. The ladies of the household of Bharata, greatly burnt in grief, and with hearts filled with great anxiety, bewailed most bitterly, plunged as they were in the very deep ocean of sorrow.

4. O best of the Bharata race, advancing towards the king, Gandhari, as well as all other ladies of the royal household, fell down upon the ground, all having lost their senses.

5. Thereupon, O monarch, Sanjaya consoled those ladies, who were highly oppressed with sorrow and deprived of their senses, and who, again, were copiously shedding tears from their eyes.

6. Inspite of their being comforted (by Sanjaya), those ladies shivered every moment like the plantain trees constantly shaken by the wind.

7. Thereupon Vidura, too, began to sprinkle water over the face of that descendant of Kuru, and consoled that powerful monarch, who had eyes of wisdom.

8. O Lord of earth, having gradually attained to consciousness, and understanding the miserable plight of those ladies, the monarch, like a senseless being, remained silent for sometime.

9. Thereupon he, reflecting (upon the matter) for a pretty long time, and sighing heavily and incessantly, condemned his own sons but spoke highly of the Pandavas.

10. Then having condemend his own reason as well as that of Shakuni the son of Suvala, and meditated (upon the matter) for a long while, the king trembled at every moment.

11. The king had, again, restrained his mind, and collected enough of patience. Then he asked his charioteer Sanjaya, the son of Gavalgana, these words :—

Dhritarastra said :—

12. O Sanjaya, whatever words were uttered by you were all heard by me. O charioteer, has not my son Duryodhana gone to the region of Yama?

13. Has my son, who is ever desirous of victory, grown desperate of success? O Sanjaya, do you repeat to me in detail truly what you have said already.

Vaishampayana said :—

14. O Janamejaya, having been thus asked, the Suta addressed the king, saying :—"O king, the son of Vikartana, that mighty car-warrior, was killed in battle along with his sons and brothers, as well as

the other warrior sons of Suta, who were all great bowmen, and who also were ready to give up their lives in battle.

15. Dusasana, too, was slain in an encounter by Bhimasena, that famous son of Pandu, who had drunk his (Dusasana's) blood out of anger.

Thus ends the fourth chapter, the bewailing of Dhritarastra, of the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER V.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. O great king, hearing this intelligence, Dhritarastra, the son of Ambika, with a heart filled with great anxiety on account of sorrow, addressed his charioteer Sanjaya thus :—

2. "O son, on account of the dishonest policy of my son, who has no foresight of the distant future, the son of Vikartana was slain in battle. Hearing this, I find my vital parts all cut asunder.

3. Do you now remove all my doubts, who are most willing to bridge over this ocean of sorrow, by relating to me, who amongst the Kurus and the Pandavas are yet alive and who are already dead.

Sanjaya said :—

4. O monarch, after having killed an innumerable number of the Sanjayas and the Panchalas, Bhishma, the son of Santanu, of mighty strength, and of indomitable courage, was slain after ten days (of the battle).

5. Again, after having killed the whole force of the Panchalas in battle, the mighty bowman Drona of indomitable courage, riding upon a car of gold, was slain afterwards.

6. Having slain the half of the troops, that had survived the slaughter by the high-souled Bhishma and Drona, Karna, the son of Vikartana, was at last killed.

7. O great king, having killed hundreds of Anarta warriors, the royal son Vibingsati of mighty strength was himself slain in battle.

8. Thereupon your heroic son Vikarna, having remembered the duties of a Kshatriya, stood in front of the enemies, without his weapons on, and also without a conveyance.

9. He was slain by Bhimasena, who had (at the time) recollected the most severe and innumerable wrongs inflicted upon him by Duryodhana, and also the most solemn promise of his own.

10. Having performed the most striking exploits in battle, the two royal sons, Vindu and Anuvindu, of the country of Avanti, of mighty prowess, departed to the region of Death.

11—12. That heroic leader, under whose control ten kingdoms remained, the foremost of which was the kingdom of Sindhu ; and, who, again, was under your subjection :—that one Jayadratha, O monarch, of mighty prowess, was slain by Arjuna, after he had subdued eleven Akshauhinis by his sharp arrows.

13. So also the son of Duryodhana, of immense activity and incapable of being vanquished in battle, and resting ever obedient under the command of his father, was killed by the son of Subhadra.

14. So again the heroic son of Dusasana looking most terrible in battle and endowed with the mighty strength of arms, was sent away to the region of Yama by the son of Draupadi, who careered in battle showing forth his prowess.

15—16. The most virtuous king Vagadatta, ever obedient to the duties of a Kshatriya, who was the paramount lord of the Kiratas—dwelling in the low-land countries on the sea-coast, and who, again, was the most esteemed and intimate friend of the king of the celestials, was sent away to the region of Yama by Dhananjaya showing forth his prowess (in battle).

17. O monarch, similarly Vurisrabas, the heroic son of Somadatta, of great renown,—the kinsman of the Kauravas,—was slain in battle by Satyaki.

18. Fearlessly roving about in the field of battle, the Amvastha chief Srutayus, the most exalted of the Kshatriyas, was slain by Savyasachin.

19. O great king, your ever wrathful son Dusasana, who is well acquainted with the science of weapons, and who is incapable of being vanquished in battle, was slain by Bhimasena.

20. O monarch, that Sudakshina, who had under him several thousands of extraordinary warriors fighting on elephants, was slain in battle by Savyasachin.

21. Having slain several hundreds of the enemies, the lord of the Koshalas was himself sent to the abode of Yama by the son of Suvadra showing forth his prowess in battle.

22. Having fought several times with

that great car-warrior Bhimasena, your son Chitrasena was slain by Bhimasena.

23. The heroic younger brother of the king of Madras, inspiring greater terror in the enemies—that handsome wielder of sword and shield,—was slain by the son of Suvadra.

24—25. The highly energetic Vrisasena of steady prowess, and ready in managing the weapon,—that peer of Karna in battle, was sent to the abode of Yama by Dhananjaya, who, remembering the death of his son and also his own solemn vow, showed forth his prowess in battle.

26. That Srutayus, O king of the earth, who always entertained animosity against the Pandavas, was reminded of that animosity, before he was slain by the son of Pritha.

27. O,Sire, O monarch, Rukmaratha the son of Shalya, of mighty prowess,—that brother |(of Shahadeva), being son of the latter's maternal uncle,—was slain by Shahadeva in battle.

28. Both the old king Vagiratha and Vrihatkshatra, the chief of the Kekayas, highly powerful, possessed of prowess and greater energy as they were, were also killed in battle.

29. O monarch, the highly powerful and wise son of Vagadatta was slain by Nakula, who moved about in 'the field of) battle like a hawk.

30. So also your grand father Valhika, endued with great strength and prowess, was slain by Bhimasena with all the Valhikas.

31. Then again, O monarch, the Magadha prince Jayatsena, the most powerful son of Jarasandha, was slain in battle by the lofty-minded son of Subhadra.

32. Your son Durmukha and the other son the great car-warrior Dussaha,—both of them are considered to be the most heroic,—were slain in battle by Bhimasena by means of his mace.

33. Having achieved the extraordinary exploits in battle, Durmarsana, Durvisaha, and the great car-warrior Durjaya departed to the region of Death.

34. Having achieved the extraordinary exploits in battle, both the brothers, Kalinga and Vrishabha, who are inca able of being vanquished in battle, departed to the abode of Death.

35. Your highly energetic minister, the Suta Vrisavarman, was sent to the abode of Death by Bhimasena, who displayed his superior prowess in battle.

36. In the same way, the great king Paurava, possessing the power of the thousand elephants, was slain with all his attendants by Savyasachin, the son of Pandu.

37. O great monarch, the great smiters of foes, the two thousand Vashati troops, as well as all the Surasenas possessed of great prowess, were slain in battle.

38. The Abhishaha troops, the mighty smiters of foes, who are all clad in armour and most fierce in battle, as also the powerful car-warriors, the Shivi soldiers, all were slain with the Kalingas.

39. So also those other heroes, gradually grown up in Gokula, who were most furious in battle, and had never turned their backs in the field, were slain by Savyasachin.

40. Having approached Partha, many thousands of the Sreni warriors, as well as the army of the Samsaptakas, all these departed to the abode of Death.

41. O powerful monarch, your brothers-in-law, the princes Vrishaka and Achala, displaying their mighty prowess in battle for your sake, were slain by Savyasachin.

42. The Shalya king of mighty strength and active habits, who was a great bowman both in name and deeds, was slain in battle by Bhimasena.

43. O powerful monarch, Aghovat and Vrihantha, both exerting themselves in battle and displaying their prowess for the sake of their friends, departed to the region of Death.

44. So also, O ruler of earth, Kshemadhurti, that best of the car-warriors, was slain by Bhimasena in battle by means of his mace.

45. Having wrought an immense slaughter, then the great bowman king Jalasandha of mighty strength was slain in battle by Satyaki.

46. Alayudha the lord of the Rakshasas who had a chariot drawn by arms, was sent to the abode of Yama by Ghatotkacha displaying his prowess in battle.

47—49. The sons of Radha, the descendants of Suta, the mighty car-warriors, who are brothers to one another, the Kaikeyas, the Malabas, the Madrakas, the Dravidas who are most terrible in prowess, the Yodheyas, the Lalityas, the Kshudrikas, even the Usinaras, the Mavelyakas, the Tundikeras, the Sabitriputrakas, the men of the eastern, the northern, the western and the southern countries, all these, O sire, were slain by Savyasachin.

50. A large body of foot-soldiers were slain, so also many millions of horses. And

a large number of car-warriors were killed. Many elephants of large shape and superior kind fell in the battle.

51—52. Furnished with standards and weapons, several heroes decked in ornaments, garments and armour, who were of superior conduct and parentage, and possessed of reseverence, as well as other warriors, who, again, were of immeasurable strength, and desirous of each other's fall, had, in course of great time, all been slain in battle by Partha, who is indefatigable in achievements.

53. These and several other kings were slain with their followers by thousands. O monarch, thus I have answered now what you asked me.

54. Thus this destruction was brought about, while Karna and Arjuna fought against each other; even as Vritra was slain by Mohendra or as Ravana by Rama;

55. Or as Naraka and Mura were slain by Krishna in battle, or as Kartavirjya of mighty strength by Rama of the Vrigu race.

56. That hero (Kartavirjya), who is incapable of being vanquished, had fallen with all his friends and relatives, after having fought a great and terrible battle, renowned in the three worlds.

57. Mahisha was slain by Skanda, as Andhaka by Rudra; even as that hero invincible in battle, was slain by Arjuna in a single engagement of 'two cars'.

58. O king, that great smiter of enemies Karna, who was the hope of victory of all the Dhartarastras, and the cause of these hostilities, (was slain) with all his counsellors and friends.

59. The awful ocean has now been crossed over by the sons of Pandu. O great king, although you were told by all your well-wishing friends all this, yet you could not realise before the nature of this calamity, which has now befallen you, bringing about a great slaughter (of your troops).

60, O monarch, it is by you, who are desirous of doing good to your sons, that mischiefs have been wrought upon them, most covetous of kingdom as they are. The consequence of those mischiefs have now come.

Thus ends the fifth chapter, the speech of Sanjaya, of the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER VI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarasta said :—

1. O son, you have related which of my followers were slain in battle by the Pandavas. But now do you tell me, O Sanjaya, which of the Pandavas were slain by the warriors of my side.

Sanjaya said :—

2. All the descendants of Kunti, exerting themselves with prowess in battle, and possessed of great spirit and strength, was slain by Bhisma in battle with all their kinsmen and counsellors.

3. The Narayanas, the Vallavas, the Ramas, and hundreds of other warriors, attached to the Pandavas in the field, were all slain by Bhishma in battle.

4. Satyajit, who was like Kiritin (Arjuna, decked in diadem) fighting in the field, both in prowess and strength, was slain in battle by Drona, who was of sure aim.

5. All the mighty bowmen among the Pandavas, who were expert in battle, departed to the region of Death, after having fought with Drona.

6. So also, the old king Virata and Drupada, displaying their prowess in battle, were slain by Drona for sake of their ally, with all their sons.

7—9. O Lord, that invincible hero, Abhimanyu, who, as a boy, was like Savyasachin, Keshava, and Valadeva, and who also was greatly skilled in battle, was surrounded by six of the most exalted of the car-warriors, and slain by them, after having made an utter extermination of the enemies, when they (warriors) became incapable of withstanding Arjuna. O powerful monarch, the son of Dussasana, after having dispossessed the son of Subhadra of his car, who was still observing the duties of a Kshatriya, slew him in battle.

10.—11. The handsome slayer of Patachcharas, having been encompassed by a large force, exerted himself with great prowess for the sake of his ally; and along with Armashta, approached heroic Lakshana the son of Duryodhana, in battle; and, also having made an immense slaughter of the enemies, repaired to the abode of Death.

12. Vrihanta, that great bowman, who was well acquainted with the use of weapons, and most invincible in battle, was sent to the region of Yama by Dussasana showing forth his prowess in the field.

13. The two princes, Manimat and Dandadhara, who were incapable of being

vanquished in battle, and also who exerted themselves with prowess, were, for the sake of their friends, slain by Drona.

14. So also, the mighty car-warrior Ansuman, the king of the Bhojas, was despatched to the abode of Death with his soldiers by the son of Varadwaja, displaying his prowess in battle.

15. O descendant of the Bharata race, Chitrasena, dwelling in the sea-coast, was forcibly sent with his son, to the region of Yama by Samudrasena.

16. O powerful monarch, Neela, the dweller of Anupa, and Vyaghradatta, endued with great prowess, both these were sent to the abode of Yama by Ashwathaman.

17. After having wrought an immense carnage, the two heroes, Chitrayudha and Chitrayodhi, were slain in battle by Vikarna, who was well acquainted with the diverse means of stratagems, and displayed immense prowess (in the field).

18. Having been encompassed by the Kaikeya warriors, the king of the Kaikeyas, who was the peer of Vrikodara in battle, was slain by (his brother) Kaikeya showing forth his prowess in this encounter of brother against brother.

19. O great monarch, that great wielder of mace, Janamejaya, the dweller of the hilly country, who was possessed of great energy, was slain by your son Durmukha.

20. O monarch, the two most exalted of persons, the two brothers known by the name of Rochamana (the bright), like two bright planets, were caused by Drona with his shafts, to repair at the same time to heaven.

21. O ruler of earth, several other monarchs, possessed of immense prowess, who were engaged in battle (on the side of the Pandavas), all repaired to the abode of Death, after having achieved the most terrible and difficult deeds.

22. Purujit and Kuntibhoja, the two maternal uncles of Savyasachin, were sent by the shafts of Drona to those regions that are attainable in battle.

23. Having been encompassed by a larrge number of the Kashis, Abhivus, the king of the Kashis, was caused to lay down his body (*i.e.* life) in battle by the son of Vasudana.

24. Having slaughtered hundreds of heroes, Amitaujah, Yudhamanyu, and Uttamanjah endued with prowess, were all slain by our followers.

25. O descendant of the Bharata race, the Panchala princes, Mitravarman and Kshatradharman, those mightest bowmen, were sent to the abode of Yama by Drona.

26. O respectable person, O monarch, the heroic son of Shikhandin, named Kshatradeva, that foremost of warriors, was slain by your grandson, Lakshmana.

27. The two heroes, possessed of mighty strength, Suchitra and Chitravarman, who are related to each other as father and son, roving about in the field of battle, were slain by Drona.

28. O great king, when all his weapons were exhausted, Vardhakshemi obtained in the end the superior kind of peace, even as the ocean at full tide becomes p:aceful after its (superfluous) water has been drained up.

29. O great monarch, having destroyed innumerable enemies in battle, Senavindu, that foremost of the Kurus, was himself slain by Valhika the great Kourava prince.

30. O powerful king, having achieved the most difficult feats, Dhristaketu that greatest car-warrior among the Chedis, departed to the abode of Death.

31. So also, having wrought a carnage of the foes in battle for the sake of his ally, the Pandava army, heroic Satyadhriti, who was possessed of great energy, was sent to the region of Yama.

32. Having slaughtered the enemies in battle, the lord of the earth Suketu, the son of Sishupala, was slain by Drona in the field.

33. Having achieved the tasks most difficult to perform, the sons of Virata, Sankha and Uttara of mighty strengths departed to the abode of Death.

34. So also, Satyadhriti the chief of the Matshyas, and powerful Madirashwa, and Suryodatta of mighty prowess, were slaughtered by the shafts of Drona.

35. O great king, having achieved the most terrible tasks Srenimat, who was engaged in battle, and possessed of mighty prowess, had gone to the abode of Death.

36. So also, O king, having been slain by Bhishma, the Magadha prince, that slayer of heroes on the side of the foes, who displayed his prowess in battle, and was highly acquainted with the use of weapons, is now lying (in the field).

37. Having made a great slaughter in battle, Vasudana was sent to the abode of Yama, by the son of Varadwaja careering in battle with great prowess.

38. These and several other mighty car-warriors among the Pandavas were slain

by Drona displaying their prowess in battle. These are all that you had asked me.

Thus ends the sixth chapter, the speech of Sanjaya, of the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER VII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, when the most exalted of my heroes were slain, I do not see the survival of the rest of the warriors on my side that had escaped the destruction.

2. Having heard that those two mighty bowmen, the foremost of the Kurus, the heroic Bhishma and Drona, were slain for my sake, what necessity can I have for my life ?

3. Also I cannot bear the fall of the son of Radha, who adorned the field of battle (by his presence), and whose strength of arms was equal to the power of ten thousand elephants.

4. After the most heroic warriors on my side were slain in battle, O Suta, the best of speakers, do you relate to me which of my army are still alive unhurt.

5. The names of those, who are slain to-day, had been described by you. But my opinion is that those who are still alive are now perhaps dead.

Sanjaya said :—

6. O monarch, the hero—to whom were given the four kinds of brilliant and mighty weapons of innumerable shapes, as well as various other celestial weapons by Drona the best of the regenerate persons,

7. That great car-warrior, the high-souled son of Drona,—who is most expert in military performances, light-handed, having steng weapons and the strongest fist among the boxers, and capable of shooting surely from a distance,—is still staying in the field most desirous ol fighting for your sake.

8. That mighty car-warrior Kritavarman, that son of Hridika, the dweller of the country of Anarta, the most exalted of the Satwatas, that chief of the Bhojas himself is still staying in the field of battle, desirous of fighting for your sake, as he is well acquainted with the use of weapons.

9—10. Having forsaken the sons of his own sister, the Pandavas, with the desire of making good his words, that son of Artayana, —who never trembles in battle, who is the head of all the warriors and the first of those on your side, who is possessed of immense activity, and who has promised before Ajatasatru that he would destroy the energy of the son of Suta in battle, who is incapable of being vanquished, who is Shakra's peer in prowess,—that hero Shalya is still staying in the field desirous of fighting for your sake.

11. Attended by an excellent force consisting of the Ajaneyas, the Saindhavas, the High-landers, the dewellers of the river-basins, the Kambhojas, the Vanayus and the Valhikas, the king of the Gandharas, is still staying in the field desirous of fighting for your sake.

12. O monarch, Gautama, the son of Shardwata, of great strength, and variously skilled in the use of innumerable weapons, is staying in the field desirous of fighting, upholding an extraordinary bow capable of bearing a pretty great strain.

13. Riding in the front part of his car, yoked to beautiful horses and furnished with standards, the son of the king of Kekayas, that mighty bowman, that foremost of men, is standing on the field with the desire of fighting for your sake.

14. O lord of men, riding on a car resembling the Sun or the fire in splendour, similarly your son, Purumitra, that best hero amongst the Kurus, is careering on the field, even as the Sun, shining brightly, wanders on the cloudless firmament.

15. Riding on a car adorned with gold, Duryodhana of mighty prowess, in the midst of a force consisting of the elephants, is staying on the field with all his heroic soldiers, ready for battling.

16. Putting on an armour decked in gold, that foremost of persons, possessing the splendour of a lotus, shone in the midst of kings, like the fire sending out little smoke, or like the Sun rising after he has emerged from the clouds.

17. Similarly, your sons, Sushena furnished with the sword and shield and the warlike Satyasena are still waiting on the field of battle with joy, and desirous of battling for your sake.

18. The modest princes of the Bharata race, namely Chitrayudha, Srutavarman, Jaya, Shala, Satyavrata and Dusshala, who are all endued with mighty strength, are still staying in the field with the desire of battling.

19. The lord of the Kitavyas, that prince, that smiter of foes, who considers himself most heroic, and who is careering in the field accompanied by both infantry and cavalry, as well as by the elephant force and cars, is still in the field with the desire of fighting for your sake.

20. Those foremost of persons, those mighty smiters of enemies, considering themselves highly proud, the heroic Srutayus, Srutayudha, Chitrangada, and Chitravarman, all of whom are of sure aim, are similarly staying in the field with the desire of battling.

21. Satyasandha, the lofty-minded son of Karna, is still on the field, desirous of battling. So also, O lord of men, two other sons of Karna, who are acquainted with the use of excellent weapons, and are light-handed, are both staying on the field with the desire of battling for your sake, being accompanied by a large army incapable of being vanquished by a force of little prowess.

22. O monarch, being surrounded by these and several other chiefs, who are all best of warriors, and are endued with immeasurable prowess, the Kuru king is staying in the field, in the midst of an elephant force, with the object of winning victory; even as Indra (stands in the midst of the celestials).

Dhritarastra said :—

23. All have been related to me in detail' *viz.* who having escaped from the enemies are alive. From this I clearly understand which side will win the victory; this may really be arrived at from facts.

Vaishampayana said :—

24—25. While Dhritarastra, the son of Ambica, was thus addressing, and also having heard that the most exalted of the heroic warriors on his side were slain and only a small portion of the whole army was alive, he was plunged deep in sorrow, and his heart, too, was greatly agitated by grief. Thereafter, he (the king) became almost senseless, and addressed (after having recovered his senses a little) Sanjaya, saying: —'Do you stop for a moment.'

Dhritarastra said :—

26. O son, having heard of this exceedingly evil intelligence, my mind becomes greatly perplexed. My mind (brain) as well as the different limbs are growing paralysed, which I am not able to uphold.

27. Having uttered these words, Dhritarashtra, the son of Ambica, that lord of earth, had wholly lost his senses and fell down (upon the ground).

Thus ends the seventh chapter, the speech of Sanjaya, in the Karna Parva.

—

CHAPTER VIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. O foremost of regenerate persons, being consoled a little, what did the lord of kings say, when he heard of the death of Karna, as well as the fall of his sons?

2. He (the monarch) attained exceedingly great uneasiness (in the mind) arising from the fault of his sons. Relate to me, as I ask you, what did he say at that time.

Vaishampayana said :—

3. Having heard of the death of Karna, which, being extraordinary, was incredible, which stupified the senses of all creatures, which was most dreadful, and which was like the downfall of the mountain of Meru,

4. And which (the fall of Karna) was as impossible as the dullness of the intellect of highly energetic Vargava, and which, again, was like the defeat of Indra of formidable deeds at the hands of the enemies,

5. And which (the fall of Karna), also, was like the falling of the highly blazing Sun upon the earth from the heaven, and which was as incomprehensible as the drying up of the ocean, whose waters are never exhausted,

6. And which (the fall of Karna), again, was as extraordinary as the total destruction of the earth, the firmament, the different points of the horizon and the waters, and also as the fruitlessness of both virtuous and vicious acts,

7. And then having meditated most skillfully in the mind upon the slaying of Karna in battle in the similar manner, and also having deeply thought upon this, *viz.*, that his army was no more,

8. And also having argued that the other creatures would be of the similar fate, Dhritarashtra, the lord of men, was burnt by the fire of grief, and looked like a burning serpent.

9. With paralysed limbs, sighing long, looking helpless, uttering —*woe* and *alas* and highly oppressed with sorrow, the great king Dhritarashtra, the son of Ambika, began to weep most bitterly.

Dhritarashtra said :—

10. O Sanjaya, the warlike son of Adhiratha was possessed of the strength of a lion or an elephant; and his neck was like that of a bull; and his eyes, speed and voice were also like those of a bull.

11. That young man of limbs as strong as the thunderbolt never desisted from battle even with so great an enemy as Indra himself, even as a bull never desists from battle with another bull.

12. At the sound of whose bowstring and at the roaring of whose arrowy showers, the men and horses (the infantry and the cavalry), the cars and elephants could not stand in the field of battle.

13. Having taken refuge under the mighty arms of that imperishable slayer of innumerable foes, Duryodhana made enemies of the sons of Pandu, those great car-warriors.

14. How could Karna, that foremost of car-warriors, that powerful hero, that one of mighty prowess, was slain in battle by force by the son of Pritha?

15. Placing confidence upon the strength of his own arms, he (Karna) always indeed did care neither for Achchuta, nor for Dhananjaya, nor for the whole of the Vrishni race nor for the other enemies.

16. 'In the field of battle, alone I shall hurl down at once both the wielder of sharanga and the wielder of Gandiva bow,—who are unconquerable and are united together,—from their celestial cars.'

17. This (the above saying) he always uttered to Duryodhana, who was bad, darkened by avarice, foolish and desirous of kingdom, and also who was highly afflicted.

18. That hero (Karna) had subdued the unusually powerful and invincible enemies namely the Gandharas, the Madrakas, the Matshyas, the Trigartas, the Tanganas the Shashas,

19. And the Panchalas, the Vidahas, the Kulindas, the Kashi-koshalas, the Suhmas, the Angas, the Bangas, the Nishadhas, the Pundras, the Kichakas,

20. And the Vatsyas, the Kalingas, the Taralas, the Ashmakas, and the Rishikas. In the days of yore, he subjugated these (above-mentioned) heroes in battle, and made them pay tribute (to us),

21. By means of his sharpened and keen arrows, that were adorned with the Kanka feathers for the sake of Duryodhana's aggrandisement. That one (Karna) was still waiting in the field for winning victory (for Duryodhana).

22. How was that protector of armies (on my side), that one well-versed in the use of weapons, *viz.* Karna was slain in battle by the foes, the heroic sons of Pandu, who were possessed of immense strength?

23. Indra is the foremost of the celestials even as Karna is the best amongst men. In this world we have not heard of a third one, who was the most exalted like them.

24. Uchchaisravas is the best of all horses, Vaisravana is the best of the Yakshas; and Indra is the foremost of the celestials; so also Karna is the best of all smiters.

25. Having been unsubdued by the heroic and mightiest monarchs of immense prowess, he then subjugated the entire earth for the aggrandisement of Duryodhana.

26. Having obtained his (Karna's) alliance, by means of conciliating terms, by paying honours and wealth to him, and also by speaking gloriously of him, the king of Magadha had opposed all the Kshatriyas of the world excepting the Kauravas and the Jadavas.

27. Having heard of the slaughter of that Karna by Savyasachin in a single combat I am plunged deep in the ocean of grief, even as a ship-wrecked one (is plunged) in the vast sea.

28. Having heard of the fall of that best of men, that foremost of car-warriors, in a single combat, I am plunged in the ocean of grief, even as a person without a boat (is plunged) in the sea.

29. O Sanjaya, when having been afflicted with such a grief as this, I do not die, I suppose that my heart is harder than the thunderbolt, and most impenetrable.

30. O Suta, having heard of this utter defeat of kinsmen, relatives and friends, what other person in this world except myself would not give up his life?

31. I desire (to swallow) poison, (to be burnt in) fire, and the fall from the summit of a mountain; for I am indeed unable, O Sanjaya, to bear the grief and pain.

Thus ends the eighth chapter, the speech of Dhritarashtra, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER IX.

(KARNA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. The sages consider you to be equal to Yayati, the son of Nahusha, in beauty, in lineage, in celebrity, in austerity and in the knowledge about the Shastras.

2. O monarch, you are equal to a great sage in learning; and you are highly successful in respect of all actions. So be you concentred in self, and let not your heart be plunged in sorrow.

Dhritarashtra said :—

3. I consider Destiny to be superior, and human effort to be fruitless; for the reason that Karna, who was like a Sal tree, was slain in battle.

4. Having slain the entire force of Yudhisthira as well as the car-warriors of the Panchala race, and having afflicted, by the showers of arrows, the men in the different directions of the horizon,

5. And also having rendered the Parthas senseless in battle, even as Indra with the thunderbolt in his hand, stupifying the Asuras, how has that great car-warrior (Karna) been slain in battle, who now lies dead (in the field) like a large tree uprooted by the wind.

6. I do not find the end of my sorrow like that of the overflowed ocean. My anxieties are growing more acute; and the desire for death has been growing in me,

7. Having heard of the intelligence of the slaughter of Karna and the victory of Falguna. To me, O Sanjaya, the death of Karna, seems to be incredible.

8. Really, my heart is pretty well hard and seems to be made up of the essence of the thunder-bolt, because it does not split up into thousand pieces on my hearing of the death of Karna.

9. Indeed, my life was ordained before (my birth) to be pretty long by Destiny; since, when having heard of the slaugter of Karna, I am still alive, although I am highly afflicted with grief. O Sanjaya, let there be shame to this my life, who am deprived of friends.

10. O Sanjaya, I have been reduced to-day to this hateful condition. Foolish as I am and subject to universal pity, I shall (hereafter) have to lead a miserable life.

11. O Suta, having at first been highly esteemed by all people, how shall I, being vanquished by the enemies, be able to hold my life?

12. O Sanjaya, on the death of Bhishma, Drona, and the lofty-minded Karna, I have attained to the greatest sorrow and calamity.

13. When the son of Suta was slain in battle, I do not see the end (*viz.* that any one on my side will escape the slaughter); since he, indeed, O Sanjaya, was the best means of crossing over (this ocean of hostilities) to my sons.

14. While that hero was showering forth innumerable arrows, he was slain in battle. Without that foremost of persons what necessity have I for my life?

15. Having been highly afflicted with the showers of arrows, the son of Adhiratha, indeed, fell down from his car, like the summit of a mountain, split up by the fall of the thunder-bolt.

16. Surely having adorned the earth, he, besmeared with blood, sleeps in the ground, like an elephant killed by an infuriate lord of elephants.

17. That Karna who had been the strength of all the Dhartarashtras and who had been the object of terror to the Pandavas, and who, again, had been the type of the best of all bowmen, was slain by Arjuna.

18. That heroic and mighty bowman, conferred fearlessness on my sons; and that warlike one, being in battle, lies on the ground like a mountain pierced by the lord of the celestials.

19. The realisation of the end of Duryodhana is even like the walking of the lame, and like the fulfilment of the desires of the poor, and also like straying out of the water drops from the mouth of the thirsty.

20. Actions considered in one way turn out differently. Alas, Destiny is really powerful, and Time is insuperable?

21. O Suta, how was my son Dussasona slain, while that one of low spirit, that wretched one of little prowess, was flying away from the battle?

22. O son, O Suta, has he not acted in a cowardly manner? Was not that hero slain, even as the other Kshatriyas were slain?

23. The stupid Duryodhana did not accept the constant advice of Yudhisthira *viz., do not fight*, which was like the wholesome drug.

24. Being asked for water by Bhishma, lying on his arrowy bed, Partha of great fame pierced the surface of the earth.

25. Having seen the torrent of water (flowing from the surface of the earth caused by the son of Pandu, that mighty-armed hero addressed him saying :—' O son, do you conclude peace with the Pandavas.'

26. Stop all hostilities, and then there will be peace. Let your war be concluded with my death. Do you enjoy sovereignty over the earth in brotherly feelings with the sons of Pandu.

27. Having disregarded the advice of that one of long foresight, my son is surely repenting, that advice of his is now realised into its effect.

28. O Sanjaya, I, who am deprived of counsellor and sons, have, too, obtained great misery consequent upon the game at dice, like a bird shorn of its wings.

29. O Sanjaya, even as the playful boys having cought a bird and torn off its wings most cheerfully let it go,

30. And whose (the bird's) flight does not become possible in consequence of the loss of its wings; so I have become (motionless) like the bird deprived of its wings.

31. Now I am weak, destitute of all resources, and deprived of all kinsmen, and left by my friends,'and also I am poor, and possessed by my foes: To what point of the horizon shall I depart?

32. Who subdued all the Kamvojasd an the Amvashtas along with the Kakeyas, and the Gandharas, and the Videhas; and having defeated them in battle for the fulfilment of his wishes,

33. That lord subdued the entire earth for the aggrandisement of Duryodhana. But he himself was subdued by the heroic Pandavas of immense capacity and mighty arms.

34. When that mighty bowman Karna was slain in battle by the holder of Kiriti (Arjuna), what other heroes were still waiting in the field. Tell me this, O Sanjaya,

35. Was he not alone and forlorn, while slain by the Pandavas in battle? O son, it was told by you beforehand how the heroes my side were slain.

36. Shikhandin slew in battle, by means of the best of his darts, that great wielder of all weapons, Bhishma, who did not care for repelling the foes.

37. So also, O Sanjaya, by Dhristadyumna, the son of Drupada, lifting up his sword, was slain that mighty bowman Drona, practising severe asceticism, who, being already pierced by innumerable weapons had put aside all his weapons in battle.

38. I have, indeed, heard of this, viz., that these two, Bhishma and Drona, were slain at a disadvantage and especially by means of a stratagem.

39. Surely even the wielder of the thunderbolt (Indra) himself can not slay in battle by just means both Bhishma and Drona, while contending in battle. Indeed, that I tell you truly.

40. While Karna was engaged in throwing down his innumerable celestial weapons in battle, how could Death touch that hero who was like Indra himself?

41. Purandara awarded to that hero, in exchange for his ear-rings, that celestial dust that had the splendour of lightning, and also that was decked in gold and capable of destroying the foes.

42. Whose that heroe's) celestial arrow, known by the name of Snake-mouthed, that was decked in gold and besmeared with soft sandal and also that was capable of slaying the enemies, was always laid up in the quiver.

43. Having disregarded fhe heroic great car-warriors with Bhishma and Drona at their head, that hero, O mighty monarch, learnt the use of the *Brahma* weapon from the son of Jamadagni.

44. Having seen the great warriors, with Drona at their head, deeply pierced by the arrows, and turning away from the battle, that mighty-armed one had severed the bow of the son of Subhadra by means of his sharp arrows.

45. Having deprived, all on a sudden, Bhimasena of his car, who was of never-failing energy and had the speed of wind and the strength of ten thousand elephants, that (mighty-armed) one afterwards laughed at him.

46. Having subdued Sahadeva by means of his sharp and straight arrows, and also having deprived him of his car, he did not slay him out of kindness and feelings of virtue.

47. He had slain, by means of his arrow given to him by Shakra, Ghatotkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas, who had made a thousand illusions, and who was most desirous of victory.

48. How could that hero be slain in battle, with whom even Dhananjaya was afraid to engage in a single combat for several days.

49. When his car was not broken, nor his bow was cut off, nor his weapons were exhausted, how could he (Karna), therefore, be slain by the enemies?

50. Who, indeed, was able to subdue Karna in battle, that foremost of persons, possessed of the speed of a tiger, while that mighty bowman was shaking his bow, and shooting forth his terrible arrows, and exausting his celestial weapons in battle.

51. Surely his bow-string was torn; his car was engulfed in the earth; and his weapons were all spent, because you tell me that he was slain. Indeed, I do not find any other cause of his slaughter.

52. 'I will not have my feet washed, so long as I do not slay Falguna.' This was

highly the terrible vow of the high-souled one.

53. Being afraid of him, the foremost of persons Yudhisthira, the royal impersonation of justice, could not enjoy sleep, while exiled in the forest, for a period of thirteen years.

54. Relying upon the prowess of that high-souled hero of great energy, my son forcibly dragged the wife of the Pandavas to the assembly-hall.

55. There in the midst of that assembly, that one (Karna) called the Princess of Panchala, in the very sight of the Pandavas and also in the presence of all the Kuru's, the *wife of slaves*.

56, 'O Krishna (Panchalee), all your husbands are no more; and if they really exist, they are more like the sessame seeds without the kernal. So do you, O beautiful lady, choose another husband.'

57. That person of the Suta race had made, in anger, Krishna listen to these harsh expressions in the midst of the assembly. How was he slain by the enemies?

58, That hero, having disregarded the severe touch of the shots from the *Gandiva* bow, addressed Krishna, saying,—'Doubtless you have no husbands;' and he also cast his glance upon the sons of Pritha.

59. Again, O Sanjaya, placing confidence upon the strength of his own arms, that hero had no fear even for a moment, aroused by the sons of Pritha, accompanied as they were by their sons and Janardana himself.

60. I do not consider that his slaughter can ever be brought about by all the celestials, rushing against him, headed by Vashava himself. Again, O son, how can it be by the Pandavas?

61. While that son of Atiratha had touched the bow-string and put on his *fences*, surely there was no person, who could be bold enough to stand up in his front.

62. Indeed, the earth might be deprived of the splendour of the Moon and the rays of the Sun; but the slaughter of the lord of men who did never turn away from the field could not be possible in battle.

63. Having been assisted by that hero as well as by his brother Dussasana, that my evil-souled and wicked-minded son had resolved upon to reject the proposals of Vasudeva himself.

64. I consider that my son, having witnessed the fall of Karna of bull-like shoulders, and also having seen the slaughter of Dussasana, is surely lamenting.

65. Having seen that the son of Vikartana was slain by Savyasachin in a single combat, and that the Pandavas were victorious, what, indeed, did Duryodhana say?

66. Having seen that both Durmarsana and Vrishasena were slain in battle, and also having witnessed that his army being slaughtered by the mighty car-warriors, was dispersed,

67. And, again, having seen that the kings (in his side), most unwilling to fight, were turning away from the field of battle and having beheld the great car-warriors already fled, I think my son is now surely lamenting.

68. What did that undaunted, proud, and evil-souled Duryodhana of uncontrolled passions say, after beholding his army grown pretty well dispirited?'

69. Although having been forbidden by the friends, yet himself having created this fierce hostility, what did Duryodhana say, after beholding the slaughter of innumerable soldiers in battle?

70. Having seen that his brother was slain in battle, and his blood was drunk by Bhimasena, what did Duryodhana say?

71. He (my son) said in the midst of the assembly-hall with the king of the Gandharas that Karna would slay Arjuna in battle. But now having seen that hero slain, what did he (Duryodhana) say?

72. O son, when Karna was slain, what did Sakuni, the son of Suvala, having at first played at dice with a cheerful heart and deceived the son of Pandu, say?

73. Beholding the son of Vikartana (slain in battle), what did that son of Hridika, Kritavarman, that mighty bowman, that great car-warrior amongst the Satwattas, say?

74. Most willing to acquire a knowledge in archery, the Brahmanas, the Kshatriyas and the Vaisyas received instructions of that highly intellectual son of Drona.

75. O Sanjaya, what did that youthful, that handsome-looking, that highly famous Ashwathaman, endued with beauty, say, when he saw Karna slain in battle?

76. What did that son of Sharadwatta, Kripa of the Gotama race, that mighty car-warrior, that teacher of archery, say when he saw Karna slain in battle?

77—79. On beholding the slaughter of Karna, what did the king of Madras, that

ghty bowman, that ornament of assemblies, Shalya of the Shauvira tribe, that foremost of charioteers engaged in driving away the car (of Karna), that leading chief of the Madra warriors, who was possessed of mighty strength, say? And again, O Sanjaya, what did the other warriors, who with difficulty could be vanquished, as well as all the kings of the earth, who had come with the desire of figting, say, when they beheld the slaughter of the son of Vikartana?

80. When that hero, that foremost of the car-warriors, that best among men, Drona was slain (in battle), who, O Sanjaya, had been the leaders of the several divisions of the army in succession?

81. O Sanjaya, do you relate to me, how Shalya, the king of the Madras, that best among all the car-warriors, was engaged as the charioteer of the son of Vikartana?

82. While the son of Suta was fighting, who were the persons guarding his right wheel, and those who protected his left, and again, who were they that guarded his back.

83. What heroes did not forsake Karna, and what mean-minded men flew away from him? While you had been present in the field, how could that mighty car-warrior be slain in battle?

84. How could the heroic and great car-warriors oppose the Pandavas, who were pouring forth showers of arrows like the clouds pouring forth drops of water.

85. O Sanjaya, do you relate to me, how then could that celestial Snake-mouthed arrow, that best one of its kind, become of no avail?

86. When the best of the leaders were slain, I do not see, O Sanjaya, that even some of the soldiers on my side, who had already lost their courage, will survive (the terrible slaughter).

87. Indeed, those two heroes, the great bowmen, were ready to give up their lives for my sake. Hearing of their (Bhishma and Drona) death, what use have I of my life?

88. Again and again, I cannot bear that Karna should be slain by the Pandavas; for whose strength of arms is equal to that of ten thousand elephants.

89. O Sanjaya, relate to me in detail what had happened in the battle that raged between the mighty heroes among men, namely, the Kauravas, and their enemies, when Drona was slain.

90. Relate to me also how the sons of Kunti conducted the battle with Karna, and do you tell me, again, how that slayer of enemies became quiet (was slain) in battle.

Thus ends the ninth chapter, the repentance of Dhritarashtra, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER X.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O Descendant of the Bharata race, when, in that day, that mighty bowman Drona was slain in battle, and when again, the objects of that mighty car-warrior were unfulfiled;

2. And when, O great king, the army of the Kauraves, that was like the vast ocean, had fled away, the son of Pritha, having arranged his own troops properly waited in the field with all his brothers.

3. O foremost of the Bharata race, your son having seen him staying in the field, and also having witnessed his own army flying away from the battle, forbade them run away in the most encouraging terms.

4. Then with the confidence in the strength of his own arms, having arranged his own army in a regular position, and O descendant of the Bharata race, having fought for a while with the Pandavas,

5. Who had attained their objects, and who were the most cheerful enemies, and who, again, were engaged for pretty long time in battle, he, on the approach of the evening, caused the army of the enemies to withdraw.

6. Thereupon having drawn the troops and entered into their own encampment, the sons of Kuru held a consultation among themselves for their own welfare.

7. They had seated themselves in the most excellent seats, and valuable couches furnished with beautiful coverlets, even as the celestials take their seats on the most pleasant bows.

8. Thereupon king Duryodhana addressed these mighty bowmen in the most agreeable and pleasant terms, and spoke them in a way most suited to the time.

Duryodhana said :—

9. O monarchs, all of you are the best of the intellectual persons; do you at once give your individual opinions as to what is necessary or what is unnecessary under the present circumstances.

Sanjaya said :—

10. When these words had been uttered by the lord of men, then the foremost of princes, who had seated themselves on the throne, and were most willing to fight, began to make various gestures (expressive of their heroism)

11. Having understood the gestures of those, who were ready to sacrifice their lives in the battle, and having beheld the face of the king, that had the splendour of the newly rising Sun,

12. The highly intellectual son of Acharya, who was versed in speech, spoke these words: 'Zeal, perseverence, as also skillfulness and diplomacy,—these have been declared by the learned men to be the principal expedients of accomplishing ends, —which, again, are wholly dependent upon Destiny.'

13. Those foremost of men, the mighty car-warriors, on our side, who had been like the celestials, and who were acquainted with the principles of government, and who were most persevering, skilful, and devoted, were all slain in battle.

14. In spite of all these, there should be no disappointment as regards victory. For, Destiny could be made favourable, if we can take recourse to the honest principles comprehensive of all the expedients.

15. O descendant of the Bharata race, we shall, therefore, install Karna, that best of men, endowed with all the good qualities, as the commander of the army.

16. Having made Karna the commander of our force, we shall be in a position to destroy all the enemies. Because this hero, who is possessed of immense strength, and who is acquainted with the use of weapons, and who cannot easily be vanquished, and who is like Death himself, and who is irresistible, is capable of subduing the enemies in battle.

17. O king, having heard these (words) from the son of the preceptor, then your son had entertained great hopes in respect to Karna.

18. When both Bhishma and Drona have been slain, Karna will surely then defeat the Pandavas. O descendant of the Bharata race, having cherished this hope in his heart, and also having comforted himself,

19. Thereupon king Duryodhana was exceedingly gratified to hear his words, that were fraught with delight and reverence, that were also beneficial to himself and true, and most pleasant.

20. Then having secured the steadiness of his mind, and relied upon the strength of his own arms, the most powerful king Duryodhana spoke these words to the son of Radha :—

21. 'O Karna, I know your strength, as well as great intimacy that you entertain for myself. In spite of all that, O mighty-armed one, I will tell you some words that are beneficial to yourself.

22. O hero, you are the greatest sage, and you are always my highest protection as well. Now, having heard my words, do whatever you desire, or whatever you like most.

23. My two great generalissimos, Bhishma and Drona, those car-warriors of the first class, have been already slain in battle. You are more powerful than either of them. Now should you be installed as the commander of my army.

24. Indeed, those two mighty bowmen were very old; and they were favourably disposed towards Dhananjaya. In despite thereof, O son of Radha, those two heroes were selected by me as the generalissimo of my army at your word.

25. Beholding their connexion of grandfather with themselves, the sons of Pandu, O father, were saved in that formidable battle by Bhishma for ten consecutive days.

26. When you had laid aside your arms, Bhishma of mighty prowess was slain in battle by Falguna, who had placed Shikhandin in his front.

27. When that great bowman had fallen, and lain down on the bed of arrrows, it was then, O foremost of men, that Drona was appointed as the commander (of the army) at your request.

28. My opinion is, that by that hero, too, the sons of Pritha were saved (from the hand of Death) in consideration that the latter were the pupils of the former. But even that old man, again, was speedily slain (in battle) by Dhristadyumna.

29. Reflecting for a while, I do not see any other person, like yourself, of more immeasurable prowess than those two best of warriors, who are already slain in battle.

30. At present you are able to obtain victory for ourselves. There is no doubt about it. In accordance therewith you have rendered good to us both before and after, as well as in the middle.

31. You should, like the commander of the force, bear all the burden in battle. So, should you be installed as the general by yourself.

32. Therefore, do you maintain this force of Dhritarashtra, even as lord Skanda of eternal energy, the leader of the

celestials, maintain the celestial force. Do you slay all the foes, even as Mahendra slays the Danavas.

33. When the most powerful car-warriors, the Pandavas, will see you waiting in the field of battle, they will surely fly away with all the Panchalas, even as the Danavas fly away, beholding Vishnu. Consequently, O foremost of men, do you command this mighty force.

34. When you will stay in the field, all those Pandavas of wicked soul with their allies, the Panchalas, and the Srinjayas, all will run away from the field.

35. So, do you exterminate all the enemies, even as the risen Sun, burning by his own energy, destroys the awful darkness.

Sanjaya said :—

36. That after the slaughter of both Bhishma and Drona, Karna would surely subdue the Pandavas,—this hope, O king, of your son was found to be very great.

37. Having entertained in the mind that strong hope, he then addressed Karna saying thus: "O son of Suta, the son of Pritha would never fight, staying before you (in the field)."

Karna said :—

38. O son of Gandhari, this was already told by me before you, namely that I would subdue all the Pandavas with their sons, and with Janardana, too.

39. I will be your generalissimo, there is no doubt about it. O powerful monarch, have peace. And do you think the Pandavas were already conquered.

Sanjaya said :—

40. O great monarch, on his being thus addressed, king Duryodhana stood up with all other monarchs, like Indra of one hundred sacrifices with the celestials, in order to pay respect to Karna, as the commander of his force, even as the gods do to lord Skanda.

41. Thereupon, O monarch, all the kings, at the head of whom was Duryodhana, who were most desirous of victory, installed Karna (in the general-ship of army), according to the rites ordained by Providence.

42. By the offerings of gold and earthen vessels filled with water, sanctified with the holy expressions (the *Mantras*) and of the tusks of elephants, and the horns of rhinoceroses and well-constituted bulls,

43. And also by the offerings of other vessels overlaid with jewls and gems, and of fragrant herbs. He (Karna) at that time seated himself at ease on a seat made of *Udumvara* wood, and covered over with a piece of silken cloth.

44. The Barhmanas, the Kshatriyas, the Vyaishyas, as well as the Sudras of high social position began to praise that lofty-minded one, who was installed, with the offerings of articles collected according to the rites enjoined by the Shastras, in that highest position.

45. Thereupon, being thus installed, O lord of monarchs, the son of Radha, that slayer of the most war-like enemies, worshipped the foremost of the regenerate persons by the offerings of gold, kine and other wealth ; and thereby caused them to say benedictions to him.

46. O foremost of men, the bards and the twice-born persons uttered these words to him:—"Do you subdue the sons of Pritha, with Govinda and with their principal attendants in that fermidable battle.

47. O son of Radha, do you slay the sons of Pritha, along with the Panchalas, that we may win victory, even as risen Sun always destroys the thick gloom by his terrible rays.

48. The faithless sons of Pandu with Keshava, can not indeed bear with the sight of the arrows shot by you, even as it is most intolerable to look at the burning rays of the Sun.

49. Having put on all the weapons, the sons of Pritha, along with the Panchalas, will not be able to stay before you in the field, even as the Danavas are not able to stand before Indra (in battle).

50. Having been thus installed in the generalship, the son of Radha of unparalleled radiance surpassed all in beauty and splendour like a second Sun.

51. Having installed the son of Radha in the leadership (of the army), thereupon, your son, insisted upon by Death as it were, considered himself most successful.

52. O monarch, Karna, the subduer of enemies, having obtained this leadership, ordered for arranging the troops in battle-array towards the rising of the Sun.

53. O descendant of the Bharata race, Karna, having been surrounded by your sons in the battle, looked resplendent, even as the lord Skanda, encompassed by all the celestials, looked radiant in the battle, wherein the Asura Taraka, like an evil, was sought to be defeated.

Thus ends the tenth chapter, the installation of Karna, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1—2. Having attained the generalship of the army, and been addressed by the king himself in sweet and brotherly terms, and thereupon having ordered the troops to be arranged in battle-array towards the rise of the Sun, relate to me, O Sanjaya, what did the highly intellectual son of Vikartana, Karna, do at that time.

Sanjaya said :—

3. O foremost of the Bharata race, your sons, having understood the object of Karna, ordered for the arrangement of the troops, followed by a joyful music of various instruments.

4. Towards the close of the night, O lord of earth, a loud noise arose from amongst your soldiers, saying '*array*—and—*array*.'

5—6. Thereupon, O lord of the world, there was a terrible uproar of the best of elephants and cars overlaid with beautiful coverlets, whilst they were being equipped, and of the infantry crying out in joy, of the horses, whilst being harnessed and of the warriors, whilst moving to and fro, shouting to one another in mirth. The uproar was so very great that it reached the very heavens.

7—9. Thereupon the son of Suta appeared on the field of battle, mounted upon a car furnished with innumerable flags and white standards, drawn by horses as white as cranes, ornamented with a flag bearing the design of an *elephant's rope*, filled with one hundred quivers, and, again, furnished with mace and wooden fence, supplied with the *Shataghnis*, rows of bells, shafts, lances and spears, loaded with several excellent bows, and having had the splendour of the resplendent Sun, and himself wielding a babow bound with gold in the ck.

10. O monarch, (Karna then began) to blow his conch adorned with a net-work of gold, and also to shake his terrible bow studded with gold.

11. Having seen Karna, that mighty bowman, that foremost of car-warriors, who was seated on his car, and also was like the risen Sun destroying the thick darkness, and who also was inapproachable.

12. None of the Kauravas, O sire, O foremost of persons, considered the fall of either Bhishma, or Drona, or other warriors to be a loss at the time.

13. Thereupon, O e, Karna, having ordered the warriors to make haste by the sound of his conch, led the vast army of the Kauravas.

14. Then Karna, that powerful bowman, that smiter of enemies, having arranged the troops in the from of a *Makara*, started against the Pandavas with the object of winning victory (over them).

15. O king, Karna placed himself in the tip of the beak of that *Makara*; and the heroic Shakuni and the great car-warrior Uluka were stationed in both the eyes.

16. The son of Drona was stationed in the head; and all the uterine brothers were in the neck. King Duryodhana was stationed in the middle, surrounded by a large force.

17. O lord of kings, Kritavarman was placed in the left foot, who was attended by the *Narayana-army*, namely the *Gopalas*, most difficult to be vanquished in battle.

18. O king, the son of Gotama, possessed of the unbaffled prowess, was stationed in right foot, encompassed by the most powerful bowmen, the Trigartas, and the troops from the south.

19. There Shalya was placed in left hind-foot accompanied by a vast army recruited from the country of the Madras.

20. O great king, Sushena of certain resolution was stationed in the right hind-foot, encompassed by a force of one thousand cars and three hundred elephats.

21. Thereupon the two royal brothers, Chitra and Chitrasena, of immese prowess having been accompanied by a vast army, stood in the tail (of the *Makara*).

22. O lord of kings, when Karna, that best of persons had started for battle, the king of righteousness (Yudhisthira) beheld Dhananjaya, and addressed him saying :—

23. "O heroic son of Pritha, behold how the army of Dhritarashtra was arranged in battle-array by Karna, and encompassed by the most heroic car-warriors.

24. Indeed, the best of the heroes amongst the vast army of Dhritarashtra were all slain before. O mighty armed one, only the feeble ones are alive, who are in my opinion as worthless as the straw. But in the whole force one mighty bowman, namely, the son of Suta, is shining brilliantly.

25. That foremost of car-warriors is incapable of being defeated by the three worlds, both mobile and immobile, along with the Gods, Asuras, the Gandharvas, the Kinnaras, and the Nagas.

26. O mighty-armed Phalguna, having slain him to-day, you will surely win victory

and the great thorn, pierced in my heart for twelve years, will now also be rooted out. Understanding this, O mighty armed one, do yon arrange the troops in battle-array according to your desire.

27. Having heard the word of his brother, the Pandava (the third brother), conveyed by white horses, arranged his army in the form of the *half moon* against the face of the enemies' force.

28. Thereupon Bhimasena was stationed in the left side of that (*half-moon*); and the mighty bowman, Dhristadyumna, was placed in the right.

29. In the middle (of that *half-moon* arrangement) both the monarch and the Pandava Dhananjaya were stationed. But Nakula and Shahadeva were placed in the rear of the king of righteousness (Yudhisthira.)

30. The two Panchala chiefs, Yudhamanyu and Uttamanjas, who were the guards of the wheels of the car (of Arjuna), did not forsake him in battle, as they were supported, by the diadem-decked one (Arjuna.)

31. O descendant of the Bharata race, the rest of the heroic princes, who were all clad in armour, were stationed in the different positions of the array allotted to them according to their respective zeal and earnestness.

32. O descendant of the Bharata race, the Pandavas, as well as the mighty bowmen in your side, having arranged their troops in the array of battle in the above manner, directed their mind towards the battle.

33. Having witnessed your army arranged in battle by the son of Suta, the son of Dhritarashtra (Duryodhana), with all his kinsmen, considered the Pandavas to be slain.

34. O lord of men, in the similar way, Yudhisthira, having observed the troops in the side of the Pandavas arranged in battle-array, considered the army of Dhritarashtra to be surely slain along with Karna himself.

35. Thereupon conches, kettle-drums, tabours, and drums of large size, and cymbals and other instruments, such as *Dindimas* and *Jharjharas* were begun to be blown and struck on every side.

36. O monarch, there was a loud sound of musical instruments amongst the soldiers on both the sides. There were terrible lion-roars of the heroes, who were most desirous of victory.

37. O lord of men, there arose the sound of snorting of the horses and the grunting of elephants. And also there was the terrible noise of the car-wheels.

38. O descendant of the Bharata race, beholding that mighty bowman, Karna, stationed at the front of the battle-array, none in the field amongst the Kourava troops considered the death of Drona to be a loss.

39. O mighty monarch, in both the armies there were men filled with cheerfulness, who were all desirous of battle. O king, they waited in the field with the object of slaying one another without delay.

40. O foremost of kings, there in the field) these two namely, Karna and the son of Pandu, who beholding each other were filled with firm resolution rushed to and fro in the midst of their armies.

41. The two armies came face to face, meeting each other, as if dancing (in great cheer). The heroes on both the sides, who were most desirous of battle, came forth accompanied by their respective divisions.

42. O mighty monarch, thus commenced the battle of men, elephants, horses, and cars, who were all engaged in slaying one another.

Thus ends the eleventh chapter, commencement of the battle, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereupon the two vast armies, composed of horses, men, and elephants, that were filled with cheer, and also that had the brilliancy of the celestial and Asura hosts, came face to face, and struck each other down.

2. Then the men, the cars, the horses, the elephants, as well as the infantry, all possessed of formidable strength, continued to strike most fiercely, thereby destroying the bodies and the sins as well.

3. The lion-like men, began to scatter over the earth, the heads of lion-like men, which were equal in splendour to the full-moon and the sun, and also which had resembled the lotuses in fragrance.

4. They, again, began to sever the heads of the figting warriors by means of the crescent-shaped, broad-faced and razor-headed arrows, swords, axes, battle-axes, and other weapons.

5. The arms of men, possessed of long and stout arms, severed by men, possessed of long and stout arms, looked resplendent upon the ground, decorated as they were with both weapons and bracelets.

6. The earth shone most brightly with the halo of their (the warriors') red fingers and palms, even as it shines with the fierce and five-headed snakes upon itself slain by Garuda.

7. Smitten by the enemies, the heroic warriors fell down from the elephants, the cars, and horses, even as the dwellers of heaven fall down from the celestial baloons, when their virtues are entirely spent.

8. While other heroic warriors, having been smitten by heroes of greater prowess with heavy maces, spiked clubs, and maces, fell in the battle by hundreds.

9. In that formidable battle, the cars were smitten by cars, the infuriate elephants were crushed by infuriate elephants, and the horsemen were struck down by horsemen.

10. The men smitten by the cars, and the cars destroyed by elephants, and the horsemen slain by the foot-soldiers, and the infantry slain by the cavalry, are lying dead in the field.

11. And again, the cars, the horses, and the infantry smitten by the elephants; and the cars, steeds and elephants slain by the infantry; and the cars, the infantry and the elephant-force destroyed by the horses; and also the men and elephants struck down by the cars, are lying dead in the battle.

12. A terrible slaughter of car-warriors, horsemen, the elephant-force, and men was wrought by men, steeds, elephants and cars, with the help of their hands and feet, weapons and cars.

13. While the army was being thus smitten and slain by the horses, the sons of Pritha with Vrikodara at their head proceeded against us.

14. So also Dhrishtadyumna, Shikhandin, the sons of Draupadi, the Provadrakas, and Shatyaki and Chekitana accompanied by the Dravida warriors (proceeded against us);

15. And also the Pandyas, and the Cholas along with the Keralas (advanced against us), surrounded by a formidable array of soldiers, who were all possessed of strong chests, long arms, huge statures, and very large eyes;

16. And who, again, were adorned with various ornaments, and were of red teeth, and were endowed with the strength of mad elephants, and were clothed in dresses of various colours, and also were besmeared with scented powders;

17. And, O monarch, as they were possessed of swords and nooses in their hands, and endued with the power of withstanding the infuriate elephants, and as they were equally determined to die, they (the warriors) did not forsake one another (in the field).

18. The infantry, belonging to the Andhra race, commanded by Satyaki, were all possessed of quivers and bows in the hand, of long hairs, and were very sweet in speech, and endowed with fierce forms and mighty prowess.

19. Thereupon the other heroic leaders, namely the Chedis, the Panchalas, the Kaikeyas, the Karushas, the Koshalas, the Kanchyas, and the Magadhas advanced most rapidly.

20. Their car-warriors, cavalry, and elephant-force, that all belonged to the superior class, as well as the terrible-looking infantry, were highly gratified to hear the harmonious sound of several instruments, and began to dance and laugh.

21. In the midst of that vast army stood Vrikodara, encompassed by the foremost elephant-force, and advanced against your troops, each riding on the neck of an elephant.

22. That terrible-looking elephant, the best of his kind, shone with all the equipments befitting him, even as the mountain-abode on the top of the Udaya (mountain) looks resplendent with the rising Sun over it.

23. His best armour, made of iron and bedecked with the most precious gems, shone like the autumnal firmament besprinkled with innumerable stars.

24. He (that Bhima), who had a lance in the hand stretched out, and who was crowned with a handsome diadem, and who was adorned with innumerable ornaments, and who, again, had the brilliancy of the autumnal sun when at the meridian, began to burn the enemies by energy.

25. Seeing that elephant from a distance, Kshemadhurti, riding on an elephant and very much gratified in the heart, invited that one, who was much more cheerful than he, to battle, and rushed against him (Bhima).

26. Then there followed an encounter between the two elephants of formidable appearances according as they desired, which (the elephants) were like the two gigantic mountains with trees at their tops.

27. Those two heroic warriors, whose elephants had thus been engaged in the encounter, forcibly pierced each other with their lances, that were resplendent like the rays of the sun, and they roared most loudly.

28. Having receded back, they (the two heroes) roved about in circles dismounting from their elephants; and, also having taken up their bows, really struck each other.

29. They cheered the hearts of the people by their roaring sounds, and the slaps of their arm-pits, as well as by the whistling sound of their arrows on all sides; and then they shouted aloud like lions.

30. Again mounting upon their elephants, that had their trunks raised up in the air, and that were adorned with banners floating on the wind, both the heroes, perfectly accomplished and possessed of immense strength, went on combatting.

31. Thereupon both of them, having cut off each other's bow, roared and poured forth showers of arrows and lances upon each other, even as the two masses of clouds during the rainy season drop down rains.

32. Then having roared aloud Kshemadhurti pierced Bhima in the chest with great force by means of his lance, as well as by six other (lances).

33. That Bhimasena, whose form looked bright with rage, shone with those lances adhering to his body like the resplendent Sun with the masses of clouds about him.

34. Thereupon Bhima thurst at his enemy most carefully the lance, made of iron, that had the splendour of the colour of the solar rays and had a speed, direct and straight.

35. Thereupon having stretched out his bow, the lord of the Kulatas severed the lance by means of ten arrows, and pierced the son of Pandu (Bhima) by sixty other shafts.

36. Then having taken up his bow having the twang like the roar of clouds, Bhima the son of Pandu, oppressed his enemy's elephant by arrows, and uttered terrible shouts.

37. That elephant, being thus oppressed by the arrows of Bhimasena, did not stay in the field of battle, although repeatedly restrained, even as the cloud dispersed by the wind (runs away from their positions).

38. The most formidable and royal elephant of Bhima rapidly followed that elephant of (Kshemadhurti), even as the wind-blown cloud pursues the cloud dispersed by the tempest.

39. Kshemadhurti of immense energy having checked his own elephant, pierced with his arrows the elephant of Bhimasena pursuing his own.

40. Thereupon, he (Kshemadhurti), having cut off his enemy's bow by means of an arrow well-shot, razor-like, and straight, highly oppressed that elephant belonging to his foe.

41. Then highly wrathful Kshemadhurti struck Bhima in the battle, and killed the elephant by piercing all his vital parts with his arrows. O descendant of the Bharata race, thus the great prince of elephant, belonging to Bhimasena, fell down.

42. Before the fall of his elephant, Bhimasena dismounted from him, and stood on the earth. Then he, too, struck down the elephant of his enemy by means of his mace.

43. Then Vrikodara killed Kshemadhurti with his mace, who then had descended from his crushed elephant, and had advanced against him with uplifted weapons.

44. Having been thus killed, he, with a sword in the hand, fell down dead by the side of his elephant, even as a lion killed by thunder falls dead by the side of a hill broken down by thunder.

45. O foremost of the Bharata race, having seen the most famous lord of the Kulatas killed, your troops, highly distressed, ran away from the field.

Thus ends the twelfth chapter, the slaying of Kshemadhurti, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then the mighty bowman, the heroic Karna, killed the troops of the Pandavas in battle with the straight arrows.

2. O king, the mighty car-warriors, namely the Pandavas, had most wrathfully smitten the soldiers of your son in the same way in the very presence of Karna.

3. So also Karna, O monarch, began to smite the army belonging to the Pandavas in the field of battle with the arrows, that were bright like the rays of the sun, and excellently polished by the black-smith.

4. O descendant of the Bharata race, there (in the field of battle) the elephants) highly afflicted by Karna with his straight arrows, roared most loudly, became weakened and senseless, and ran away towards the ten points of the horizon.

5. O father, while that immense force was being killed by the son of Suta, Nakula proceeded against that mighty car-warrior, the son of Suta with great rapidity.

6. Then Bhimasena checked the progress of Drona's son, who was achieving the most arduous tasks, and Satyaki, that of the two Kaikeya princes, Vindu and Anuvindu.

7. The lord of the earth, Chitrasena, rushed towards Srutakarman, who was advancing against him ; so also Prativindhya towards Chitra, who carried a standard of diverse colours and a beautiful bow.

8. Duryodhana, too, proceeded against the king Yudhisthira the son of Dhrama, while Dhananjaya rushed against the wrathful Samsaptakas.

9. While that whole host of the foremost heroes was being thus slain, Dhrishtadyumna rushed against Kripa ; and that undecayable Shikhandin proceeded against Kritavarman.

10. O mighty monarch, so again, Shrutakirti closed with Shalya ; and that son of Madri, Shahadeva of immense prowess, closed with your son, Dussashana.

11. In that great battle, the two Kaikeya princes covered Satyaki with a shower of arrows. Satyaki on the other hand covered the two Kaikeya princes (with a shower of brilliant arrows, O descendant of the Bharata race).

12. Those two heroic brothers deeply pierced this warrior (Satyaki) in the chest, even as two elephants strike another hostile elephant with their tusks in a dense forest.

13. O monarch, these two heroic brothers whose vital parts were deeply struck with the arrows, pierced Satyaki, who always performed appropriate deeds with their shafts.

14. O powerful monarch, Satyaki on the other hand, having smiled and shrouded all the points of the horizon with a shower of arrows, closed with the two brothers, O descendant of the Bharata race.

15. Thereupon those two brothers, whose progress was checked by the shower of arrows of Shini's grandson, indeed, covered the car of Shini's grandson with lots of shafts.

16. Having severed the most beautiful bows of those two brothers, then the highly celebrated Shaurin restrained the progress of them both in the battle with a shower of sharp arrows.

17. Then having grasped two other beautiful bows, and most effective shafts, they two, too, shrounded Satyaki (with the arrows) and roved about in the field with immense activity and expertness.

18. Those mighty arrows, shot by the two brothers, adorned with the feathers of the Kanka and the peacock, and ornamented with gold, fell down (upon the foes), after having illumined all the points of the horizon.

19. O monarch, there was a gloom in that formidable battle owing to the shower of arrows shot by both the parties. Then those great car-warriors severed each other's bows.

20. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, wrathful Satwata, most invincible in the field, having taken up another bow and stretched its string properly, severed the head of Anuvinda with an arrow, sharp like the razor, in the battle.

21. O monarch, that mighty head, adorned with ear-rings, fell like the head of Shamvara, slain in that dreadful battle (of old). This, having fallen upon the earth most rapidly, greatly aggrieved all the Kaikeyas.

22. Having seen that hero slain, his brother, that mighty car-warrior (Vinda), after having stretched out the string of another bow, restrained the course of Shini's grandson.

23. Having pierced Satyaki with sixty shafts, all sharpened on stone and adorned with the feathers of gold, he roared most loudly and said,—*wait—wait*.

24. The mighty car-warrior of the Kaikeya troops then pierced Satyaki in his arms and chest most rapidly with several thousands of arrows.

25. O king, Satyaki, of true prowess, being thus wounded with the arrows in all his limbs, shone in the field of battle like a Kinshuka with flowers.

26. In the battle, Satyaki, having been pierced by the lofty-minded Kaikeya, smilingly pierced back the Kaikeya chief with twenty-five shafts.

27. Thereupon those two best of car-warriors, having broken down each other's beautiful bows, and also slain each other's drivers and horses, with the greatest speed in that great encounter, descended from their cars, and advanced, one against the other, in order to fight with their swords in that dreadful battle.

28. Both of them, having taken up shields, as if adorned with hundred moons, and grasped the best of swords, and possessed as they were with the handsome arms, looked resplendent in that great field of battle like the most powerful ones, Jamva and Shakra, in the battle between the celestials and the Asuras.

29 Thereupon both the warriors roved about in that dreadful field of battle in circles, and speedily approached each other, engaged in combatting, in the battle. Thus the two, again, made the best of their efforts in slaying each other.

30. Then Satwata severed the shield of the Kaikeya chief into two pieces. So also this Pandava severed the shield of Satyaki into two pieces.

31. The Kaikeya chief, indeed, having thus broken into pieces the shield, that was decked with hundreds of stars, roved in circles in the field, sometimes advancing and sometimes receding back.

32. Thereupon the grandson of Shini who was possessed with the greatest activity severed him (his head) who having grasped the best of swords, careered in that broad field of battle, by a side-stroke.

33. O monarch, the Kaikeya prince, that mighty bowman, who was adorned with the shield, being thus cut off into pieces in that dreadful battle, fell down like a hill broken down by a thunderbolt.

34. That war-like grandson of Shini, that best of car-warriors, that scorcher of enemies, after having slain him (the Kaikeya chief) in battle, immediately ascended the car of Yudhamanyu.

35. Thereupon, again, having ascended another car, that was furnished with its due equipments, Satyaki began to destroy the immense army of the Kaikeyas with his arrows.

36. That vast force of the Kaikeyas, being slaughtered in battle, left that enemy in the field and ran away in the ten different directions of the horizon.

Thus ends the thirteenth chapter, the slaying of Vinda and Anuvinda, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XIV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thereupon, O monarch, the wrathful Shrutakarman had slain down Chitrasena, the lord of the earth, in the battle, by means of fifty different arrows.

2. O king, Avishara, indeed, after having struck down that Shrutakarman with nine straight shafts, pierced his driver with five other arrows.

3. Wrathful Shrutakarman, on the other hand, had struck down that Chitrasena, who was then standing at the head of his force, with a keen arrow in the most vital part of his body.

4. O great king, that hero, having been deeply pierced by the arrow by that lofty-minded warrior, attained the condition of senselessness, and entered into the abode of great grief.

5. During this interval, the highly famous Shrutakirtin closed this ruler of the earth (his insensible foe) with ninety different shafts.

6. Thereupon Chitrasena, that mighty bowman, having attained consciousness again, struck down his enemy's bow by a brood-headed shaft, and also pierced him with seven arrows.

7. Then he (Shrutakarman) took up another bow, that was capable of casting away fierce arrows, and was adorned with gold, made Chitrasena, by piercing him with the torrents of shafts, wear a varied appearance.

8. That youthful prince, wearing an wonderful appearance with the shafts, and putting on handsome garlands, shone in the field of battle, like an youth, excellently decked with ornaments, in the midst of an assembly.

9. O monarch, he, indeed, then pierced Shrutakarman in the chest with a keen shaft immediately; and afterwards uttered to him—'*wait* and *wait.*'

10. There Shrutakarman, on the other hand, being thus pierced by the arrow in the field of battle, began to shed blood, even as a mountain lets the liquid red chalk flow down.

11. Thereupon that heroic one, whose limbs were washed in blood, and who, again was stained with blood, shone in the field of battle like a *Kinshuka* covered over with flowers.

12. At that time, O monarch, Shrutakarman, having been attacked by his antagonist (Chitrasena), became very wrathful and severed his bow, that was capable of resisting the enemies, into two pieces.

13. Then, again, O monarch, he (Shrutakarman) covered, with three hundred

arrows, him, whose bow was already severed into two pieces, and pierced him in the field with excellent winged shafts.

14. Thereupon he had severed the head of that high-sould one, that was adorned with an (iron) protection, with another brood-headed, pointed and sharp-headed arrow.

15. That head of Chitrasena, which looked most respledent, fell down upon the earth, even as the moon, out of her own will, falls upon the ground, being loosened from heaven.

16. O Sire, the troops of Chitrasena, having seen their king slain, marched with great rapidity against Avishara.

17. Thereupon that mighty bowman, who became very wrathful, rushed against those troops, shooting arrows upon them; even as, during the period of universal dissolution the king of the nether world (Yama), filled with wrath, rushes against all creatures.

18. Those warriors, having been slain by that bowman, your grandson, in the field of battle, most speedily ran away in all directions; even, as the elephants, burnt by the forest-conflagration, (run away from the forest).

19. Having seen them flying away (from the battle) hopeless of conquering the enemies, Srutakarman, pursuing and shooting keen arrows upon them, looked most brilliant.

20. Thereupon Prativindhya pierced Chitra with five rapid-going shafts, and pierced the driver of his car with three others. Then he broke down his standard by a single arrow.

21. Then he, (Chitra) pierced him by throwing at his arms and chest nine broad-headed shafts, that were adorned with the wings of gold, and sharp points, and ornamented with the feathers of the *Kanka* and peacock.

22. O descendant of the Bharata race, Prativindhya, having severed his (enemy's) bow with keen arrows, slaughtered him with five well-sharpened shafts.

23. Thereupon, O great king, he (Chitra) threw at your grandson the shaft, called *Shakti*, which was decked with golden bells and which, again, was most irresistible and dreadful, and which also, was like the flame of fire.

24. Prativindhya, as if laughing, severed into three pieces that shaft, in the field of battle, falling upon him, which was like a great flashing meteor suddenly falling from the sky.

25. That shaft which was cut off into three pieces by the keen arrows of Prativindhya, fell down like the thunderbolt, during the period of expiration of the Yuga, thus inspiring great fear in all creatures.

26. Having seen that arrow, called Shakti, severed into pieces, Chitra took up his powerful mace, that was adorned with a net-work of gold, and threw it against Prativindhya.

27. That mace had smitten his (antagonist's) heroes, and the driver of his car in that great battle, and then, having smitten his car, fell impetuously upon the ground.

28. O descendant of the Bharata race, he (Prativindhya), in the mean time, having descended from his car, threw at Chitra the arrow, called Shakti, that was furnished with golden bells, and decked with several ornaments.

29. The high-minded king Chitra caught hold of it (that shaft), whilst it was falling upon him; and thereafter, O descendant of Bharata race, he threw it back at Prativindhya.

30. That highly resplendent shaft, having pierced heroic Prativindhya in the field of battle and also having penetrated through his right arm, fell down upon the ground; and, as it fell, it illuminated that whole region (the battle-field) by its splendour, even as the lightning, falling upon the earth, illumines the entire place, where it falls.

31. Thereupon, O monarch, the most wrathful Prativindhya, most desirous of slaying Chitra, hurled at him a lance, adorned with gold.

32. That lance, having pierced through his armour and chest, immediately fell down upon the earth; even as the gigantic serpent enters into its hole.

33. Then that king, naving been smitten by the lance, fell upon the earth, stretching out his two long and massive arms, that resembled two iron clubs in splendour.

34. Having seen Chitra slain (in the battle), the troops on your side, who are all ornaments of battle, rushed from all sides with great impetuousity against Prativindhya.

35. Shooting several kinds of arms and the shaft called Shataghni, that was ornamented with the rows of bells, (those troops) covered him all ever, even as the clouds cover the Sun.

36. That mighty-armed one (Prativindhya), having struck those warriors with a net-work of arrows in the field of battle, overthrew your force, even as Indra, who carried the thunderbolt in the hand, overthrew the Asura host.

37. Thus slain in the battle by the Pandavas, the troops on your side, O monarch, suddenly broke in all directions, even as the clouds, scattered by the wind, run away in all sides.

38. Amongst your whole force, that was immensely slain, and (the rest) running away from the field, the son of Drona alone proceeded with great impetuousity against that highly powerful Bhimasena.

39. Then there suddenly followed a dreadful conflict between these two parties; even as there took place an encounter between Vritra and Vashava (Indra) in the battle between the celestials and the Asuras.

Thus ends the fourteenth chapter, the slaying of Chitra, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XV.

(KARNA PARVA.—*Continued*,)

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereupon, O king, the son of Drona who was possessed of great alacrity, and who showed easiness in the management of weapons, pierced Bhimasena with an arrow.

2. In the same way, he (the son of Drona), who was well acquainted with the different vital parts of the body, and who, again, was very smart in the management of his arms, after having seen all the vital parts of his body, had struck him with ninety sharp-headed shafts.

3. O monarch, Bhimasena, having been closed with a shower of keen arrows by the son of Drona, shone in the field of battle like the sun with all his rays.

4. Thereupon the Pandava, after having covered the son of Drona with one thousand arrows, well-aimed, sent forth a leonine roar.

5. Then, O monarch, the son of Drona, having checked the course of his (antagonist's) shafts by his own arrows in the field of battle, smilingly struck the son of Pandu in the forehead with a dart.

6. Thereafter, O king, the son of Pandu carried the shaft, that was struck in his forehead; even as the proud rhinoceros in the forest bears his horn.

7. Then Bhima of immense prowess smilingly pierced the son of Drona, who attempted very hard in the battle, in the forehead with three shafts.

8. Then this twice-born person looked most resplendent with the arrows struck in his forehead; even as the best of mountains, being washed (with water) during the rainy season, looks resplendent with its three peaks.

9. Thus the son of Drona afflicted the son of Pandu with hundreds of arrows, but he could not shake him; even as the wind can not shake the mountain.

10. In the same way, the son of Pandu, highly gratified, could not shake the son of Drona, in the field of battle, with hundreds of his sharp-headed arrows; even as the torrents of rain can not shake the mountain.

11. Those two mighty car-warriors, the two heroic warriors of terrible prowess, having covered each other with their dreadful shafts, looked very handsome, sitting upon their cars.

12. Both (the heroes) looked resplendent like two suns, and were destructive of men on each other's side. Moreover both of them burnt each other by their own excellent arrows, that resembled their own rays.

13. Thereupon, in that dreadful battle, those two heroic warriors made their best attempts in counteracting each other's deeds; and with the torrents of shafts they most fearlessly made efforts in challenging each other.

14. Those two foremost of persons, those invincible and fierce heroes, whose teeth were constituted by the shafts and whose mouths were formed by the bows, roved about in the field of battle like two terrible tigers.

15. Both of them became invisible on account of the torrents of shafts in all sides; even as both the sun and the moon in the firmament become invisible, when they are covered over by the net-work of clouds.

16. Then the two smiters of foes appeared for a very short while, and shone forth like Mars and Mercury, when they become wholly released from the cover of clouds.

17. Then at that moment, in that dreadful battle, the son of Drona made Vrikodara in the field occupy his right position.

18. And he showered forth hundreds of terrible shafts, even as the masses of clouds

drop down torrents of rain upon a mountain. This, indeed, namely the indication of his antagonist's victory Bhimasena could not like to tolerate.

19. Thereupon, O monarch, the son of Pandu baffled his enemy's efforts from the position on his (antagonist's) right side; and they advanced or withdrew according to the divisions of their circular situations.

20. Thus there ensued a fierce battle between those two foremost of warriors, who roved about (in the field of battle) in several ways and circles.

21. Both of them struck each other with the arrows shot from their bows stretched to their perfect length; and also they made the best efforts in slaying each other in the battle. Again, each of them wished to make the other car-less in the field.

22. Thereupon the son of Drona, that mighty car-warrior, imparted strength to the most powerful weapons, which, indeed the son of Pandu frustrated by the weapons of his own, in the battle.

23. Then, O mighty king, there ensued a very dreadful battle of weapons; even as there had taken place a very terrible battle of the planets, during the time of destruction of creatures of the universe.

24. O descendant of the Bharata race, those arrows, shot by both of them, struck one another; and thus illumined all the points of the horizon, as well as the troops on your side, from all directions.

25. O king, the firmament looked very fearful as it was wholly covered by the showers of arrows, even as it appears during the destruction of the creatures of the universe, when it is entirely shrouded by the fall of the meteors.

26. O descendant of the Bharata race, there (in the field of battle) was produced a great fire by the counteraction of shafts from both the parties, which, *viz.*, the fire was attended with sparks and blazing flames. It continued to burn both the hosts.

27. O powerful monarch, the Siddhas, who hovered about there in the battle, uttered these words :—'O Lord, this battle is the foremost of all the battles fought (in the days of yore).

28. 'All the battles (of old) will not be worth the sixteenth part of this (battle). Hardly, again, there will be a battle like this.

29. 'O! these two personages, viz,, this Brahmana and this Kshatriya are possessed of knowledge. O! both of them are endowed with heroism; and also they are of terrible prowess.

30. 'O! Bhima is of fierce strength. O! what a great skill is possessed by the other. O! what an essence of the energy of both. O! how great is their skill.

31. 'Both these persons are, indeed, waiting in the field of battle like two all-destroying Yamas at the end of time. As if both of them are born like two Rudras, or like two light-giving suns.

32. 'Both these foremost of persons of dreadful forms are standing in the battle like two Yamas.' These words of the Siddhas were, indeed, heard there every moment. Moreover there was generated a great leonine roar amongst the celestials who assembled there (in the field of battle).

33. Having witnessed the extraordinary and inconceivable achievements of those two in the field of battle, the assemblage of the Siddhas and the Charanas were greatly astonished.

34. Then the celestials, the Siddhas and the high-class sages (the Rishis) praised them both, and uttered these words: 'Excellent, O powerful-armed son of Drona! Most remarkable, O Bhima!

35—36. In the field of battle, O monarch, those two heroic warriors committed injuries to each other. They also looked upon each other; and they had their lips quivering with wrath. Out of wrath, again, they grinded their teeth, and in the same way their lips as well.

37. Those two mighty car-warriors shrouded each other with the torrents of shafts. In the field of battle, they were like two masses of clouds, dropping down showers of arrows, and sending forth lightning, that was formed by their weapons.

38. Those two warriors having penetrated each other's standards, and also having pierced each other's drivers of cars, and, again, having pierced each other's horses, pierced each other in that dreadful battle.

39. Thereupon, O powerful monarch, those two wrathful warriors, most desirous of slaying each other, after having taken up two arrows hurled at each other those shafts without any hesitation, in that dreadful encounter.

40. O mighty monarch, these two arrows that shone most brilliantly, and that had the force of thunder, and also that were most inapproachable, came and struck them both who stood at the head of their respective hosts.

41. The two highly-energetic warriors, deeply struck with those two arrows by their respective forces, then fell down at the back of their cars.

42. Thereupon, O king, his driver having been conscious of the insensible condition of the son of Drona, carried him away from the field of battle in the presence of all his (the son of Drona) soldiers.

43. In the same way, O monarch, the son of Pandu, that scorcher of enemies, who had fainted every moment, was carried away from the field of battle, in his car, by his driver.

Thus ends the fifteenth chapter, the encounter between Ashwathaman and Bhima, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XVI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. Do yon relate to me how the battle of Arjuna waged with the Samsaptakas, and that of other lords of the earth with the Pandavas.

2. Moreover describe to me, O Sanjaya, how that battle of Arjuna took place with Ashwathaman; and also that of other supporters of the earth with the sons of Pritha.

Sanjaya said :—

3. O monarch, do you hear me, who am describing to you how that battle, which was destructive of the bodies, sins, and lives of persons, waged between the heroes (on our side) and the enemies.

4. The son of Pritha, that slayer of enemies, having entered into the army of the Samsaptakas, that was like the great ocean, afflicted it most highly; even as the dreadful tempest agitates the vast ocean.

5. Dhananjaya, after having severed the heads of the heroic warriors by broad-headed and sharp-edged arrows, that (*viz.*, the heads) had faces, as resplendent as the full moon, and also very handsome eyes, eyebrows, and teeth, immediately scattered the earth over with these heads, as if with lotuses severed from their stalks.

6. Arjuna cut off the arms of his antagonists with keen arrows, that were like the razors, which, *viz.*, the arms were excellently round, long, and muscular, and also were rubbed over with soft sandal and other perfumes, and, again, were furnished with weapons, and fingers protected with leathern cases, and resembled the five-headed snakes, in that dreadful battle.

7. The son of Pandu, again and again, cut off with his broad-faced arrows the horses and horsemen, the drivers of cars and standards, bows and arrows, as well as arms, that were ornamented with valuable jewels.

8. O monarch, in that battle Arjuna, sent away innumerable car-warriors, elephants, horses and cavalry to the abode of Death, by striking them with several thousands of arrows.

9. The foremost of heroes, who became very wrathful, and who roared most loudly and who, again, like bulls, were highly excited as if for a cow in season, proceeded most rapidly against him (Ajuna) with great uproars.

10. Then those warriors began to strike him (Arjuna) with their shafts who at that time continued to slay his (Arjuna's) antagonist, even as the bulls strike another of their kind with the horns. Thus the battle, which caused the hairs to stand on points, waged between him (Arjuna) and them (other warriors); even as there had taken place a battle of the Daityas with the wielder of the thunder-bolt (Indra) at the conquest of the three worlds.

11. That Arjuna, after having restrained the weapons of his antagonists, coming from all sides, by the weapons of his own, and also having pierced the foes with a large number of shafts most rapidly, had taken away their lives.

12—14. That impersonation of victory (Jaya), that enhancer of the fears of his antagonists, after having broken into minute pieces, like the tempest breaking the vast masses of clouds into fragments, the cars, which had their poles, wheels and axes already shattered (by him), and which had their warriors, horses and drivers slain, and which also had their weapons and quivers dislodged, and which had their standards smitten down, and which had their traces and reins of horses broken into pieces, and which had their wooden fences already shattered into pieces (by him), and which had their arrows (deposited in them) struck down, and moreover after having astonished every body, worked out deeds, like those of a thousand mighty car-warriors, fighting together, that were worth seeing.

15. The assemblage of the Siddhas and the divine Rishis, as well as the Charanas, began to praise them highly. The celestial kettle-drums also begun to be sounded;

and showers of flowers continued to fall upon the heads of both Keshava and Arjuna. Meanwhile a voice, as if incorporated, uttered these words :—

16. 'Those two heroes, Keshava and Arjuna, are always said to be possessed of the splendour of the moon, the light of the fire, the strength of the wind, and the brilliancy of the sun.

17. 'Those two are as invincible as Brahman and Ishana. They are seated on the same car. They are the best of all creatures. They are most heroic. And the both are equal to Nara and Narayana.'

18. Thus hearing and beholding this wonderful event, O descendant of the Bharata race, Ashwathaman, firmly resolved upon, rushed towards the two Krishnas, viz., Arjuna and Keshava, in that battle.

19. Having invited to battle the son of Pandu, who was pouring forth showers of arrows, that had the power of slaying the antagonists, with his arm holding an arrow within its reach, the son of Drona smilingly addressed him, saying :—

20. 'O hero, if you consider me to be your worthy guest, who am arrived here, then allow me, with your entire soul, the hospitality of battle to-day.'

21. Having been thus invited by the son of the Preceptor out of desire for battle, Arjuna considered himself to be highly respected, and spoke to Janardana the words :—

22. 'The army of the Samsaptakas should be slaughtered by me ; but, again, the son of Drona is inviting me to battle. O Madhava, do you order me really what should be performed first. If you consider it proper, that the work of hospitality should be given (done) first after rising.

23. Having been thus addressed (by Arjuna), Krishna carried, to the near presence of the son of Drona, the son of Pritha, who was invited to battle according to the prescribed maxims of triumphant challenge; even as the God of wind carries Indra to the sacrificial place.

24. Keshava, after having invited (to battle) him, who had his whole heart directed upon one thing, addressed the son of Drona, saying : 'O Ashwathaman, having been still (in the field), do you begin to strike without hesitation, as also do you bear (patiently).'

25. This, indeed, is the fit occasion for those, who support their lives with the food of their masters, to repay obligation to their supporters. The struggle between the Brahmanas is most insignificant ; but the war between two Kshatriyas is a grand and decisive one, resulting either in victory or defeat.

26. You, who are most willing to receive, out of foolishness, those celestial rites of hospitality at the hands of the son of Pritha, after having becalmed yourself this day, continue to fight with the son of Pandu.

27. Having been thus addressed by Vasudeva, the best of the twice-born persons said—So be it. He also pierced Keshava with sixty arrows, and penetrated Arjuna with three other shafts.

28. Having been highly wrathful, Arjuna broke asunder his (antagonist's) bow with three powerful arrows. The son of Drona, on the other hand, took up another bow, more dreadful than the first.

29. Having stretched his bow within so short a time as the twinkling of the eye, he (the son of Drona) pierced both Arjuna and Keshava—Vashudeva with three hundred shafts, and the son of Pandu with one thousand arrows.

30. Thereupon, the son of Drona, after having rendered Arjuna wholly stupid with the greatest care in the field of battle, shot thousands and tens of thousands and millions of shafts.

31—32. Innumerable shafts continued to be poured forth from the quiver, the bow, the bow-string, the fingers, the arms, the two hands, the breast, the face, the nose, the two eyes, the two ears, the head, the different limbs and pores of the body, the car and its standards, of that professor of Brahmana, O sire.

33. The son of Drona, after having pierced Madhava and the son of Pandu with a heavy shower of shafts, became highly gratified, and sent forth a great uproar like the loud roar of a vast congregated mass of clouds.

34. Having heard this great uproar of him (the son of Drona), the son of Pandu, addressed that Eternal One, saying : O Madhava, observe this great oppression of the son of the preceptor towards me.

35. This warrior considers us to be slaughtered, who have entered into the house of thick arrows (*i.e.*, the arrowy shower). But we will surely frostrate his aim by means of our learning and energy.

36. The most excellent of the Bharata race, after having severed every one of the shafts of Ashwathaman into three pieces, destroyed the power of those arrows even as the sun does away with the mist.

37. Thereupon the son of Pandu pierced with dreadful arrows the army of the

Samsaptakas, with their horses, drivers, cars and elephants, and with their standards, infantry and car-warriors repeatedly.

38. Then these persons, who having posted there in any way they liked, witnessed the battle, considered themselves to be wholly covered over with the showers of arrows, as if closing themselves by themselves.

39. Those arrows of innumerable forms furnished with the wings, having been shot from the Gandiva bow, had slaughtered the elephants, horses and men, either stationed there or at the distance of two miles, in that (dreadful) battle.

40. The trunks of the elephants, that had been pouring forth their juice (as the mark of their excitement), having been thus cut off by the broad-headed arrows, began to fall down; even as the pretty-well gigantic trees, having been hewn down by axes in the forest, fall down upon the earth.

41. After a short while, the elephants that resembled hill, along with those riding upon them, tumbled down upon the ground even as the large mountains broken down by the thunder-bolt fall upon the ground.

42—43. Having severed into minute fragments the cars that appeared like the dissolving columns of vapour in the evening sky, and also that were well-furnished with all its equipments, and that were yoked to well-trained horses, and, again, that were occupied by the warriors, invincible in battle, by powerful arrows, (he the son of Pandu) began to pour forth shower of shafts upon the enemies. Moreover Dhananjaya slew both the horsemen and the infantry, well-adorned with the ornaments.

44. Dhananjaya, like the sun appearing at the end of the yuga, had soaked away the vast deep of the Samsaptaka army, that was most difficult to be dried up, by means of his sharp-headed arrows, that constituted his rays.

45. Then again he (Dhananjaya) without hesitation perfectly penetrated the son of Drona, who was like a huge mountain with straight arrows, that had great force and also that were as resplendent as the sun; even as the wielder of the thunder-bolt pierces a mountain (by thunder).

46. The most wrathful son of the Preceptor, desiring to fight, proceeded against him (Arjuna) with a view to pierce him along with his horses and drivers with swift arrows. The son of Pritha, on the other hand, sundered those arrows shot at him.

47. Thereupon he (the son of Pandu), having been highly wrathful, continued to shower forth quivers upon quivers of arrows upon the person of Ashwathaman; even as one serves a guest with things upon things in his house.

48. Then the son of Pandu, after having forsaken the army of the Samsaptakas ran towards the son of Drona; even as the doner, after having abandoned the unworthy guests, rushes towards the worthy one with his gifts.

Thus ends the sixteenth chapter, the encounter between Ashwathaman and Arjuna, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XVII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereupon the battle waged between them (Arjuna and Ashwathaman) who were like the planets Sakra and Angirasha in splendour; even as there had taken place a battle between Sakra and Angirasha in the firmament for entering the constellation.

2. Those two warriors, who inspired the people of the world with fears, afflicted each other with resplendent arrows, that were like their rays, and resembled two planets, that had gone away from their proper paths.

3. Thereupon Arjuna deeply penetrated him (Ashwathaman) in the midst of his eye-brows with a sharp arrow. Therewith the son of Drona blazed forth like the sun with his upward rays.

4. Thus the two Krishnas (Arjuna and Keshava) having been greatly afflicted by Ashwathaman with hundreds of keen arrows, stood (in the field), blazing forth, covered ever as they were by their own rays, like the two suns appearing at the end of the *yuga*.

5. Thereupon when Vasudeva became invisible, Arjuna shot a weapon with sharp edges on all sides. He then slew the son of Drona with a large number of arrows, that were either like the thunder-bolt, or like the rod of Death.

6. That one of immense strength, always performing the most difficult deeds, pierced both Keshava and Arjuna in the most vital part of their bodies with arrows, that were endued with fierce impetuosity.

Even death, being struck by them, feels great pain.

7. After having restrained the arrows shot by the son of Drona, Arjuna shrouded him over with twice as many shafts, furnished with the wings. He then, having closed over that best hero, the unique of his class, along with his horses, the driver of his car and his standards, began to smite down the army of the Samsaptakas.

8—9. Then the son of Pritha cut off with his will-shot arrows the bows, the shafts, the quivers, the bow-strings, the hands, the arms, the weapons grasped in their hands, the umbrellas, the standards, swift horses, the shafts deposited in the cars, the clothes, the floral wreaths, the ornaments, the coats of mail, the shields, the heads, all of them most handsome and endearing, of the enemies, who stood in the field determined never to turn their backs towards their foes.

10. The excellently ornamented cars, horses and elephants, that were ridden over by heroes among men, who were capable of fighting with the greatest care, were smitten down with hundreds of arrows shot by the son of Pritha. Along with these the foremost of heroes among men fell down.

11. The heads of persons, furnished with faces resembling the lotus, the sun, and the full moon in beauty, and adorned with diadems, crowns of highest splendour, and, again, slain by the broad-headed, the crescent-shaped, and razor-like arrows, fell down upon the earth without cessation.

12. Thereupon the heroes, belonging to the races, called the Kalingas, the Bangas, the Angas and the Nishadhas, most desirous of slaying him, riding upon elephants as splendid as the elephant of the great enemy of the Daityas, proceeded most rapidly against the son of Pandu, who had checked the pride of the foes of the celestials.

13. The son of Pritha severed into fragments, the armour, the vital parts, the trunks, the riders, the standards and flags of those elephants, which then fell down upon the earth, even as the summits of mountains drop down on the ground, when smitten by the thunder.

14. When that elephant force was entirely destroyed, the diadem-decked one (Arjuna) closed the son of his preceptor with arrows, having the color of the newly-risen sun; even as the wind wholly covers the risen sun with the net-work of vast masses of clouds.

15. Then having restrained the shafts of Arjuna with the arrows of his own, the son of Drona after closing both Arjuna and Vasudeva with innumerable shafts, roared most loudly; even as the vast mass of clouds, appearing in the firmament at the end of the summer season, after covering both the sun and the moon, makes a loud uproar.

16. Arjuna having been highly oppressed with those weapons, and having dispelled the darkness (caused with the arrowy showers of Ashwathaman), suddenly darkened all with the torrents of arrows, and again, and again pierced him (Ashwathaman) and all those, belonging to your army, with arrows furnished with the excellent wings.

17. Savyasachin could not be seen while taking up the arrows, or aiming them, or shooting them. But only this could be seen that the elephants, the horses, the foot-soldiers, and the cars (i. e. the car-warriors), with their bodies cut off, were slain (with the arrows of Arjuna).

18. Then the son of Drona, after having immediately aimed ten foremost of arrows, shot them, as if one with great activity. Of these ten shafts, excellently shot, five pierced Arjuna, and the remaining five deeply penetrated that Eternal One (Keshava).

19. All the people considered these two foremost of persons, resembling Kuvera and Indra, who being struck with those arrows, were drenched in blood (i. e. blood having flowed down their limbs), and who were highly afflicted by that one, who had completed his education (in the science of arms), slain in the field of battle.

20. Thereupon the king of the Dashaha race, said to Arjuna these words: 'Why do you make this mistake? Do you slay this heroic chief. This will, indeed, be committing a great fault, if this person be neglected, who will hereafter be the cause of great uneasiness, even as the disease, if neglected, becomes the cause of great woe. Unerring Arjuna, having said to the Eternal One—*So be it*, cut into minute fragments the son of Drona with the greatest care.

21 Then, again Arjuna having been filled with wrath with good care, pierced the son of Drona in the two arms, that were the best of their kind and also that were besmeared with the soft sandal, and also of the chest, the head, and the extraordinary thighs, with arrows furnished with heads like the ears of goats, excellently shot from his Gandiva bow. Moreover the son of Pandu, having severed the traces of his

antagonist's horses, pierced the horses themselves, and also carried away his foe to a great distance from the field of battle.

22. The son of Drona, who was thus carried away from the field, on those horses, as swift as the wind, became deeply afflicted with the arrows of the son of Pritha. Then that intelligent one (Ashwathaman) having meditated for a while, liked not to return back with a view to fight with the son of Pritha.

23. The most exalted one of the Angirasha's race, who was possessed of immense activity, and who became destitute of all aspirations, and who had all his arrows and weapons exhausted, after knowing that victory was ever with the chief of the Vrishni race and Dhananjaya, entered into the army of Karna.

24. Then, indeed, O sire, the son of Drona, after having checked his horses and consoled himself entered the army of Karna, that was teemed with cars, horses and men.

25. When Ashwathaman, who was their bitterest enemy, had been carried away by the horses from the field of battle, even as the disease is driven away from the body by incantations, medicines, and efficacious means,

26. Both Keshava and Arjuna, riding upon cars, with flags waved by the wind and whose rattle was like the lond roar of the clouds, advanced towards the front of the army of the Samsaptakas.

Thus ends the seventeenth chapter, the defeat of Ashwathaman, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XVIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then there had arisen a great uproar, towards the nothern part of the Pandava army, amongst the cars, the elephants, the horses, and the infantry, as they were being slaughtered by Dandadhara.

2. Having turned the course of his car, but not having restrained his horses, that were as swift as either the Garuda (the chief of the birds) or the wind, Keshava addressed Arjuna, saying the following : —

3. "The king of the Magadhas of unequalled prowess, who was accompanied by his elephant crushing (his enemies), was not at all inferior to Vagadatta, either in learning or energy.

4. Having slaughtered him (the chief of the Magadhas) at first, do you slay, again, the army of the Samsaptakas." Having uttered these words, Keshava carried the son of Pritha to the front of Dandadhara.

5. That foremost one of the Magadha race, who, like the calamitous planet Ketu amongst all the Planets, was unbearable in managing the elephant-hook, destroyed the army on the side of the antagonist; even as the most dreadful comet destroys the entire earth.

6. Having ridden on his elephant, that was furnished with all its equipments, and that was like the Danava with the face and form of an elephant, and also that roared like the vast mass of congregated clouds, and that had the power of crushing the antagonists, Dandadhara slaughtered thousands of cars, horses, and elephants, as well as warriors.

7. That elephant, also, having trumpled upon the cars, crushed down upon the earth innumerable men, along with their horses and drivers, by his feet. That best of elephants, that resembled the wheel of Time, crushed with his two feet a large number of several other elephants, and also had slain them with his trunk.

8. Having slaughtered the men, who were adorned with the coats of mail made of iron, along with their horses and infantry, he (the chief of the Magadhas) crushed down upon the ground these people by the best and the mightiest of the elephants; even as one crushes the reeds with a sort of crackling sound.

9. Thereupon Arjuna, having ridden upon the most handsome car, fell upon that foremost of elephants, that stood in the midst of the army, which echoed with the twang of bow-strings, the sound of palms (of hands), and the noise of car-wheels, and also was filled with the beat and blare of a large number of cymbals and drums, and conches, and which, again, was filled with the thousands of cars, horses and elephants.

10. Then, again, Dandadhara pierced Arjuna with twelve best arrows, and Janardana with sixteen others. Then he pierced the horses, each with three ; and he roared most loudly and laughed over and over again.

11. Thereupon the son of Pritha cut off the bow, with its string and arrow, of him (his antagonist), as well as his standard by means of his broad-headed shafts. Then,

again, he cut off his drivers, along with the infantry protecting his animal. Thereupon, also, the lord of Giribraja became highly enraged,

12. Most desirous of highly afflicting both Arjuna and Janardana with his elephant (possessing tusks), that had his temples split up (out of great excitement), and that resembled a thick mass of clouds, and also that was like the wind in speed, Dandadhara had smitten Dhananjaya with his innumerable lances.

13. Thereupon the son of Pandu cut off, as if at the same time, the two arms, that resembled the trunks of elephants, and the head, that was furnished with a face like the full moon, of him, (his antagonist) with his broad-headed arrows, the latter with three, like the razor. He, again, poured forth hundreds of shafts upon his enemy's elephant.

14. Having been struck with the arrows of the son of Pritha, and covered over with several ornaments, that elephant, that had an armour made of gold, looked most resplendent (in the battle) ;even as the mountain, that had its trees and herbs burnt by the forest fire, looks most handsome during the night.

15. That elephant that was highly afflicted with pain, and that roared like a mass of clouds and also that became greatly weakened, fell down (upon the ground), uttering a loud uproar, wandering, roving about and running away (from the battle) with tottering steps, along with his driver; even as the mountain, being shattered by the thunderbolt, falls (upon the earth).

16. On the fall of his brother in the field of battle, Drona, after having ridden on his elephant that was white like a mass of snow and that was ornamented with gold, and, again, that resembled a summit of the Himalayas, proceeded with a view to slay the younger brother of Indra, and Dhananjaya.

17. That one (Danda), after having smitten Janardana with three sharp lances resembling the rays of the sun in splendour, as well as Arjuna with five other whetted ones, shouted most loudly. Thereupon the son of Pandu, making a loud roar, severed the two arms of him (his antagonist).

18. Those two arms, that were deeply cut by two razor-like shafts and that had two lances in their grasp, and that had been adorned with the *Angadas* and also that had been smeared with soft sandal and again, having fallen from the back of the elephant at the same instant of time shone brightly even as two gigantic snakes after having dropped down from the summit of the mountain, shine (on the earth).

19. So also the head of Danda, after having been severed by diadem-decked Arjuna with a crescent-shaped weapon, fell down from the back of the elephant upon the ground ; and it shone brightly, as it was smeared with his own blood, after having dropped down, even as the sun, after having fallen from the Asta (setting) mountain towards the western point of the horizon,looks very bright.

20. Thereupon the son of Pritha pierced that elephant, that was like a mass of white cloud, with the foremost of arrows, resembling the rays of the sun. On this he fell down (upon the earth) roaring most loudly ; even as the summit of a mountain falls on earth broken down by thunder.

21. Thereafter several other foremost of elephants, resembling the above-mentioned ones, that were most desirous of gaining victory, were slain by Savyasachin, even as the two elephants (belonging to Dandadhara) had been slaughtered smiten already. Afterwards the vast army on the side of the enemies dispersed.

22. The elephant, the cars, the horses, and men, that had thronged together, having been struck by one another, fell down on the field of battle. So also the soldiers, extolling one another highly, were deeply struck by one another and slain : and with tottering steps they fell down upon the ground.

23. After a short while, the heroic warriors, after having surrounded Arjuna, even like the celestials encompasing Purandara, addressed him, saying: 'O hero, that enemy, of whom we were greatly afraid like the creatures being afraid of death itself, has now been slain by you.'

24. O smiter of enemies, had you not protected those people from terror, who had greatly been oppressed by the most powerful foes, then there would have been immense gratification amongst the antagonists, even as there had been a great merriment amongst us on the slaughter of the enemies.

25. Having heard these words and others repeated by his friends, Arjuna with cheerful mind advanced once more against the army of the Samsaptakas after having worshipped the people ascending to their positions.

Thus ends the eighteenth chapter, the slaughter of Dandadhara, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XIX.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Having careered round, Jishnu slaughtered again an innumerable number of the Samsaptakas; even as the Planet Mercury destroys a large number of people by travelling in an exceedingly curved line.

2 O monarch, O descendant of the Bharata race, the men, horses, cars and elephants, having been struck by the arrows of the son of Pritha, wavered, roved about, lost their color, fell down and died.

3—4. The son of Pandu severed in the field of battle, with his broad-headed, razor-like and crescent-shaped arrows, as well as with those equipt with the teeth of calves, the best of horses yoked to the cars, drivers, standards, bows and arrows, hands and the weapons held in the hands, the arms and heads of heroic warriors on the side of the enemies, who were fighting against him.

5. The mighty heroes fell upon Arjuna by hundreds and thousands, even as the mighty bulls fight with another bull in order to gain a cow during season.

6. The battle that took place between him and them made the hairs to stand on points. This battle resembled the great war between the Daityas and the wielder of the thunder-bolt at the time of the conquest of the three worlds.

7. Thereupon the son of Ugrayudha pierced him (the son of Pritha) with three arrows that were like the Dandashuka snakes. He (the son of Pritha) on the other hand, severed his head from his body.

8. Then they (the heroic warriors), highly enraged, shrouded Arjuna from all sides with innumerable weapons; even as the masses of clouds being urged by the winds cover the Himavat at the expiration of the summer.

9. Arjuna, after having restrained the weapons of his antagonists coming from all sides with the weapons of his own, slaughtered a large number of his foes with well-shot arrows.

10—11. Afterwards Arjuna made innumerable cars severed of their Trivenus; and slaughtered the horses, the drivers and the Parshnis (drivers of another class) of them; and, again, displaced their weapons and quivers; and also destroyed their wheels and standards; and cut off their chords, traces and axes; and moreover despoiled their bottoms and yokes; and at last displaced their equipments from their proper places with a large number of his shafts.

12. Those cars, lying there (on the field of battle) in innumerable numbers, having been broken into pieces and injured (by Arjuna), looked like the mansions of the rich men, smitten down either by the fire, or wind, or the rains.

13. The elephants, having their vital parts penetrated with the arrows that were like the thunderbolt in speed, fell down like the mansions on the summits of a mountain shattered by the blasts of lightning.

14. Having been afflicted by Arjuna, large number of horses, that had their tongues and entrails driven out, and that were greatly weakened, and that were smeared with blood, and also that had held an awful appearance, fell down upon the ground along with their riders.

15. O sire, having been pierced by Savyasachin with the keen arrows, the men, horses and elephants wandered about, with tottering steps, fell down, roared most loudly and died.

16. The son of Pritha had slaughtered his antagonists with innumerable arrows, that were sharpened on stones, and also that were as deadly as the thunderbolt or the poison; even as Mahendra slays the Danavas.

17. Many heroes, who had put on valuable coats of armour, and who were adorned with various kinds of ornaments, and who had diverse forms, and who, again, were equipt with innumerable weapons of the best kinds, are lying, with their cars and standards, on the field of battle, having been slaughtered by the son of Pritha.

18. The warriors, who were vanquished, of noble deeds and of high parentage and learning departed to paradise on account of their noble deeds, whereas their bodies only lay upon the earth.

19. Thereupon several kings of many countries, who were accompanied by their attendants, and who, again, were highly enraged, belonging to your army, proceeded most rapidly against Arjuna, that foremost of car-warriors.

20. Conveyed by their cars, horses and elephants, several warriors and foot-soldiers who were all very desirous of slaying (Arjuna), advanced most rapidly against their antagonist (Arjuna), letting off innumerable weapons of great speed.

21. Thereupon Arjuna, who was like the winds, had done away with the showers of weapons, that resembled the showers of rains, and that were let off by the warriors

resembling the masses of clouds, by means of sharp arrows, shot with great readiness.

22. Then the people saw him (Arjuna) crossing that bridgeless ocean, which was constitued by the horses, infantry, elephants, and cars, and whose waves were formed by the most powerful weapons of the foes, by means of a bridge composed of his offensive and defensive weapons.

23. Then Vasudeva said :—"O son of Pritha, O sinless one, why do you play thus? Having crushed down this army of the Samsaptakas, then make haste to slay Karna."

24. Having uttered—*so be it*,—to Krishna, Arjuna then forcibly struck down the rest of the army of the Samsaptakas; and slaughtered them, even as Indra had slaughtered the Daityas.

25. It could not be seen by the people with even the greatest attention, when Arjuna had taken up, or aimed the arrows, or shot the shafts with rapidity in the field of battle.

26. O descendant of the Bharata race, Govinda considered this event to be most wonderful. Those arrows (shot by Arjuna) looking white like swans and possessed of great impetuosity, entered into the hostile army, even as the swans enter into a lake.

27. Thereupon Govinda, after having observed the field of battle during the course of the slaugter of men, addressed Savyasachin, saying :—

28. "O son of Pritha, this formidable and great destruction of the kings of the Bharata race, as well as of the rulers of entire earth has taken place on account of the (foolish) actions of Duryodhana.

29. O descendant of the Bharata race, behold these bows, having their backs decked in gold, of the mighty bowmen, so also the girdles and quivers, that were displaced from their bodies.

30. (Again, behold), the straight shafts adorned with the golden wings, as well as the long arrows, washed with oil, even like the snakes coming out of their sloughs.

31. O descendant of the Bharata race, (behold also) the lances of diverse kinds, that are adorned with gold and scattered on all sides, as well as the coats of mail, having golden backs and loosened from the bodies of the warriors.

32. (Behold) the spears adorned with gold, and the Sakti-arrows also decorated with gold, as well as the huge maces bound with the threads of gold and chords of hemp.

33. (Behold) the swords ornamented with the workmanship of gold, the axes decorated with gold, as also the battle-axes equipt with the handles made of bright gold.

34. (Again behold) the spiked maces, the short arrows, the Bhushandis, the Kanayas, the Kuntas, made of iron, scattered about, and the huge Mushalas.

35. The mighty warriors most desirous of victory and possessed of immense activity, after having taken up weapons of diverse kinds, although dead, still looked as if they were living.

36. Behold those thousands of warriors, who had their limbs crushed by the maces, and who had their heads severed by the Mushalas, and again, who were highly pressed by the elephants, horses and cars.

37—38. O destroyer of foes, the fields of battle were scattered over with the dead bodies of the elephants, horses and men, that had been torn into fragments with the shafts, the arrows called Sakti, swords and lances, and scimitars, axes, spears, and the Nakharas and clubs; and also those bodies were smeared with the torrents of blood.

39. O descendant of the Bharata race, the earth shines most brilliantly with the arms scattered over her, that are smeared with the soft sandal and that are ornamented with the Angadas, and also that are marked with the auspicious signs, and that are furnished with the leathern protections, and that are adorned with the Keyuras.

40. (Again, the earth looks most resplendent), strewn over with the hands furnished with the well-protected fingers, severed from their arms and adorned with innumerable ornaments, and also with the thighs severed from their bodies and resembling the trunks of elephants, and, again, with the heads of the most skilful and active warriors, that are adorned with the turbans set with, the most valuable gems, and furnished with the handsome ear-rings.

41. Now do you behold the most handsome cars, equipt with the golden bells and broken into numberless fragments, so also the large number of horses, that are smeared with blood; and again the bottoms of cars and long quivers; as well as several kinds of flags and standards.

42. (Again do you behold) the large conches of the warriors; the yak-tails that are perfectly white; and the elephants whose tongues have come out (of the mouths), and that are lying on the field, resembling the hills.

43. (Also behold) the variegated triumphal banners, and the elephants, warriors, slain in the battle, the beautiful coverlets of elephants; and the innumerable blankets with excellent (needle) workmanship.

44. (Moreover behold) the blankets, that are most handsome, variegated and torn into fragments, and as well as the bells, broken into minute particles by the falling elephants and loosened from their bodies.

45. (Also behold) the hooks, that are furnished with handles, decked with precious stones called *Vaidurya* and lying on the ground; and the most handsome yokes of horses, as well as the armours for their breast, that are decked with diamonds; and the valuable pieces of cloth, that are adorned with gold and tied to the summit of the standards carried by horsemen.

46. (Behold) the coverlets of horses upon their backs lying upon the ground, that are most beautiful, and that are set with the precious jewels and that are adorned with gold and made of the skins of Ranku (a kind of deer).

47. (Behold) the headgears of the lords of men, and the beautiful garlands made of gold, and the umbrellas fallen from their proper places, and also the white yak-tails and fans.

48. (Behold) the earth scattered over with the faces, that resemble either the moon or the stars in splendour, and that are furnished with handsome ear-rings, and that are ornamented with well-cut beards, and that are as brilliant as the full moon.

49. As the lake is adorned with the assemblage of white and pink lilies and lotuses, so the earth strewn ever with those faces resembling the lilies and lotuses in splendour is decked with them.

50. Behold this (the earth), that resembles the clear moon in splendour, and that is variegated with the myriads of stars, and also that looks like the autumnal firmament sprinkled over with the millions of stars.

51. O Arjuna, the deeds that had been wrought by you to-day in this dreadful battle are proper for you, or for the lord of the celestials in heaven.

52. While Krishna was thus showing that field of battle to the diadem-decked Arjuna, and going to their camp, he heard a loud roar in the army of Duryodhana.

53. (In the army of Duryodhana were heard) the blare of conches and the beat of drums and cymbals, and the rattle of car-wheels, the neigh of horses, the roar of elephants and the dreadful class of innumerable weapons.

54. Having entered that army with horses swift as the wind, and also having seen your force crushed down by the chief of the Pandyas, Krishna became highly astonished.

55. That foremost of heroes, who was skilled in the management of arrows and weapons in battle, slaughtered large throngs of enemies with different kinds of shafts, even as Yama (Death) destroys the creatures, deprived of their lives.

56. That foremost of smiters, after having penetrated the bodies of the elephants, horses and soldiers, with keen arrows, had struck down the foes, who were deprived of both their bodies and lives.

57. Then the chief of the Pandyas after having cut off the innumerable offensive weapons shot by the most dreadful of his enemies with his own arrows had slaughtered those enemies, even as Shakra had slain the Asuras (in the battle of old).

Thus ends the nineteenth chapter, the general encounter, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XX.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. The name of that foremost of heroes celebrated all over the world, was related by you already; but O Sanjaya, his achievments in battle were not related by you.

2. Describe to me in detail the prowess, learning, spirit, energy, the amount of strength, and pride of that best of heroic warriors.

Sanjaya said :—

3. You regard Bhishma, Drona, Kripa, the son of Drona, Karna, Arjuna, and Janardana to be well versed in the knowledge of weapons, and also to be the foremost of all bowmen, and, again, the best of car-warriors.

4. But he (the chief of the Pandyas) indeed surpasses all those mighty car-warriors in prowess. And he also does not consider any one of the kings to be equal to himself.

5. He (Pandya) does not admit that he is equal to either Karna or Bhishma; nor does he wish that he is inferior to Vasudeva or Arjuna.

6. That foremost of kings, Pandya, who was the most superior to all that are versed in the management of all weapons, slaughtered the army of Karna, even as highly insulted Death destroys all the creatures.

7. That army (of Karna), which teemed with innumerable cars and horses, as also with the most expert of foot-soldiers, having been smitten down by Pandya,circled round ike the wheel of the potter.

8. Pandya had, with his excellently-shot arrows, continued to scatter about that force, slaughtering its horses, drivers, standards, and cars, as also displacing its weapons and striking down its elephants, even as the wind disperses the masses of clouds.

9. He (Pandya) had slaughtered the elephants along with their riders and foot-soldiers guarding them, and had split asunder the banners, weapons and standards (with which they were equipt) of that army; even as the breaker of mountains splits asunder the mountains with the thunderbolt.

10—11. He had smitten down the horses as well as the horsemen, who were armed with the arrows called Sakti, the lances and quivers. And then had destroyed the lives of the Pulindas, the Khasas, the Valhikas, the Nishadhas, the Andhakas, the Tanganas, the Southerners, and the Bhojas, who were all possessed of heroism and very hardly and obstinate in the field of battle, after having deprived them of their weapons and coats of armour, by means of innumerable arrows.

12. Having seen that Pandya in the field was slaughtering the army consisting of the four principal elements by means of his shafts, then the son of Drona, undaunted with fear, advanced against that fearless warrior.

13. Having fearlessly addressed this hero (Pandya) in sweet words, who was then supposed to dance (on his car, in the field of battle), and also having called him to battle with a smiling face, that foremost of smiters (the son of Drona) uttered these words:—

14. "O monarch, O thou, who art possessed of eyes like the petals of a lotus, O thou of high parentage, O thou who art versed in all the sciences, O thou who dost resemble the mightest smiter of the thunderbolt, (Indra), O thou whose strength and prowess are most noted,

15. Having caught the long bow-string in your grasp and stretched the bow by your two massive arms, and also having pulled it by your hands, you look most handsome like a mass of congregated clouds.

16. You have continued pouring down showers of arrows, possessed of great impetuosity. I do not find any other hero than myself who can stand against you in the field of battle.

17. Being alone, you smite down innumerable cars, elephants, foot-soldiers, and horses; even as the fearless lion of undaunted prowess kills a large number of deer in the forest.

18. Having made both the firmament and the earth resound with the great rattle of your car-wheels, you look most resplendent, O monarch, like the congregated mass of clouds, that destroys all the crops appearing at the end of the rains and making loud roars.

19. Having taken out your sharp arrows from the quiver, that are like the snakes of virulent poison, do you fight with me alone; even as Andhaka (Asura) fought with the three-eyed deity (Shiva) (in the days of yore).

20. Having been thus addressed by the son of Drona and uttering these words—*So be it*, and also *strike*,—Malayadhwaja was greatly assailed, and he (Pandya) himself in return pierced the son of Drona with a barbed arrow.

21. Thereupon the son of Drona, that foremost of preceptors, had smilingly struck down Pandya with numerous arrows, that penetrate even the vitals, and also that are possessed of great impetuosity, and, again, that resemble the flames of fire in splendour.

22. Thereafter Ashwathaman, too, shot (at his enemy) several other broad-headed arrows, that are furnished with sharp points and that are capable of penetrating the very vitals, and also that are possessed of *ten different motions*.

23. Then Pandya severed those arrows (of his antagonist) by means of his nine keen shafts; and by means of four other arrows he afflicted the horses (four in number), that had immediately been deprived of their lives.

24. Thereupon, having struck down those arrows of the son of Drona, that had the splendour of the sun, with his own keen shafts, Pandya cut off the stretched bow-string (of his antagonist).

25. Then having stringed his bow, that was without the string, and also having behold that his car was immediately yoked to the foremost of horses by his men, that son of Drona, that smiter of enemies,

26. That twice-born person then sent away thousands of arrows (upon his antagonist); and he thereby filled the entire firmament and the different points of the horizon with his shafts.

27. Having been conscious of the fact that all those arrows of the high-souled

son of Drona shot by himself, were, indeed, inexhaustible, that foremost of persons. Pandya, then cut them all into fragments.

28. Then, again the antagonist of the son of Drona, after having severed those arrows shot (by his foe)most carefully, had slain in the battle the two protectors of his (enemy's) car-wheels, by means of his own keen shafts.

29. Thereupon having observed the lightness of hand of his antagonist, the son of Drona had stringed his bow into a circle, and shot innumerable arrows, even as the mass of clouds pours down the torrents of rain.

30. O sire, the son of Drona shot, within the eighth part of a day, as many weapons as could be conveyed in eight carts drawn by eight bullocks.

31. Almost all those people, whoever behold him (Ashwathaman), who then looked like the highly enraged Death himself, or who resembled the very destroyer of Death himself, had wholly lost their senses.

32. The son of the preceptor poured forth showers of arrows upon that hostile army, even as the mass of congregated clouds, at the expiration of the summer, drops down showers of rain upon the earth, containing mountains and trees upon her.

33. Then Pandya, who was like the wind, after having checked,with his weapon, called the *Vayavya*, that intolerable shower of shafts poured down by the son of Drona, who was like the mass of clouds, roared most loudly with great gratification.

34. The son of Drona, after having cut off the standard, that was smeared with soft sandal and paste of *Agura*, and also that resembled the Malaya mountain,—of that person, who uttered most loud roars, slaughtered four horses (belonging to him—Pandya).

35. After having slaughtered his (Pandya's) charioteer with a single arrow, and also having severed his bow, that twanged like a vast mass of clouds, with a crescent-shaped arrow, had broken down his car into smallest fragments.

36. Having restrained the weapons (shot by his antagonist) by the weapons of his own, and also having struck down all these weapons, the son of Drona, most desirous of encountering (with his foe), did not slaughter him even on receiving his antagonist (within his reach).

37. Within a very short time Karna proceeded most rapidly against the elephant-force belonging to the Pandavas, as also then rushed against their vast army.

38. O descendant of the Bharata race, he then deprived the car-warriors of their cars, and, with numerous straight arrows, cut off the elephants, horses, and warriors in large numbers.

39. Thereupon that mighty bowman, the son of Drona, did not slaughter Pandya, who was the great smiter of his enemies, and who, again, was the foremost of car-warriors, after having made him carless, for he had the desire of battling with him for some time.

40. After having roared against another hostile elephant, that foremost of elephants, that was riderless, and that was furnished with all his equipments, and that was possessed of great activity, and that followed the echves (of other hostile elephants), and, again,that was endowed with great strength, and that was struck with the aorows of the son of Drona, and also that had great impetuosity, advanced most rapidly against him (Pandya).

41. That lord of the Malaya mountains, that prince (Pandya) well versed in fighting upon the back of the elephant, ascended, with great activity, that foremost of elephants, resembling the summit of a mountain and also proceeding towards him ; even as a lion, roaring most loudly, ascends the peak of a mountain.

42. Being highly enraged, and most careful in the matter of hurling weapons with great impetuosity, that lord of the prince of mountains, roaring most loudly and afflicting the elephant, had hurled immediately a lance, that had the splendour of the rays of the sun, towards the son of the preceptor.

43. Having shouted with joy, uttering repeatedly—*You are slain, you are slain*,—he (Pandya) broke into pieces the diadem of the son of Drona, that was ornamented with the best sorts of jewels and furnished with the superior kinds of diamonds, and again, equipt with first-class gold and excellent cloth and garlands of pearls.

44. That diadem, that was as resplendent as either the sun, or the moon, or the planets, or the fire, fell down on account of the severe stroke, and was broken into minute fragments ; even as the summit of a mountain, smitten by the thunder of Indra, falls upon the face of the earth, sending forth a very great noise.

45. Thereupon he (the son of Drona), became fiery with great wrath, even as the king of the snakes, being trodden down by the foot, blazes forth with anger. He then took up fourteen shafts, that resembled the rod of Death himself, and also that were capable of afflicting the enemies.

46. He then cut off the (four) feet and trunk of that elephant (belonging to his antagonist) with five arrows, as well as the arms and head of the king with three other shafts; and thereafter he slaughtered the mighty car-warriors, who accompanied king Pandya to the field, and who, again, were highly resplendent.

47. Those two arms of the king, that were pretty long and round, and that were smeared with excellent sandal paste, and also that were ornamented with gold, pearls, gems and diamonds, rolled on, falling upon the earth, like two snakes slain by Garuda.

48. The head, again, that was furnished with a face resembling the full moon, and with eyes, large and red like copper, on account of wrath, and that had a prominent nose, and also that was adorned with the ear-rings, blazed upon the earth, even as the moon shines betw en two constillations.

49. That elephant, indeed, was divided into six pieces with five foremost of arrows, and the king was cut into four porsions with three others. These ten parts thus divided by the skilful warrior were like the clarified butter portioned out into ten parts offered up to ten diffierent deities.

50. That king Pandya, after having severed into fragments innumerable horses, men and eleph ints, and also h ving offered them to the Rakshashas as their food, was himself quieted (by the son of Drona with blazing shafts), even as the cremation fire, after having received the libation of dead body, and also having appeased the dead fore-fathers, is itself extinguished by the constant flow of waters.

51. The king, your son, after having advanced towards him, most joyfully worshipped, with enough of reverence, the son of tne precepter, who had finished all learning, and who, again, had completed all his tasks, while (the king) was himself surrounded by all his brothers; even as the lord of the celestials most cheerfully worshipped Vishnu after the subjugation of Vali (an Asura).

Thus ends the twentieth chapter, the fall of Pandya, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, on the slaughter of Pandya and also while that foremost of warriors, Karna, destroyed the hostile force, what did Arjuna do in the field of battle?

2. That son of Pandu, who had finished the study of all sciences, and who also was possessed of immense strength, and who was attentive to fixed duties, and who was a hero, was made by the lofty-minded Sankara most invincible amongst all creatures.

3. My greatest and highly tormenting terrors are from that slayer of antagonists, Dhananjaya. O Sanjaya, do you relate to me in detail what the son of Pritha had done there on that occasion.

Sanjaya said :—

4. On the death of Pandya, Krishna, with great activity, uttered these most beneficial words to Arjuna: 'I do not find out the king. The other Pandavas have fl d away (from the field of battle).'

5. The vast hostile force was repeatedly broken by the son of Pritha, who retreated (from the field). The Srinjayas were slaughtered by Karna in carrying out the purposes of Ashwathaman.

6. Then also a dreadful slaughter of the horses, cars and elephants was made (by that warrior). Thus the hero, Vasudeva, related all these to the diadem-decked one (Arjuna).

7. Hearing of the great and immense fear of his brother (Yudhishtira), as also witnessing it, the Pandava readily addressed him thus: 'O Hrishikesha, urge the horses.'

8. Thereupon, Hrishikesha went (to the battle), ascending on an irresistible car. Then there raged a dreadful battle.

9. Then once more both the Kurus and the Pandavas fearlessly came face to face (for an encounter). The sons of Pritha were headed by Bhimasena: and we were headed by the son of Suta.

10. Thereupon, O best of monarchs, again the dreadful battle took place between Karna and Pandavas, which aggrandised the kingdom of Yama.

11—12. Having taken up the bows, the arrows, the spiked maces, and the swords, lances, and the battle-axes and also the short clubs, the Vushandis, the Shakti-darts, the rapiers and the axes, as well as the iron maces, the spears, the white Kuntas, the short arrows, and the hooks, the warriors most rapidly fell upon one another with the desire of killing them.

13. Having filled the firmament, the ten different points of the horizon as well as the other subsidiary points, and the upper atmosphere with the noise of arrows, the bowstring, and the sound of palms, and, again, having made the entire earth echo with the noise of the clattering car-wheels,

the warriors proceeded against their antagonists.

14. Being gratified with that tremendous noise, the hero, who were most willing to cross over and reach the shore of that dreadful ocean of hostility, began to fight with numerous other horses.

15. There was a great noise of the bowstrings, bows and lances, and the loud roar of elephants; as also there were terrible shouts of the foot soldiers and men falling (upon the earth).

16. There, having heard the numerous kinds of arrow sounds, and the terrible uproar of the heroic warriors, the combatants were deeply struck with terror, fell down and became very pale.

17. The warlike son of Adhiratha crushed, with innumerable arrows, large numbers of these enemies, who uttered loud roars, and poured forth showers of weapons.

18. Then Karna led to the abode of Death twenty car-warrios against the Panchala heroes, along with their horses, drivers, and standards, by means of his innumerable arrows.

19. Then, again, the best of the warriors of the vast Pandava force, who were all very powerful, and who also were very smart in the management of weapons, after having careered round, surrounded Karna from all sides in the field of battle:

20. Thereupon Karna crushed the army belonging to the foes by means of showers of shafts; even as the leader of the elephants, plunging into a lake, crushes down the lotuses and swans, adorning the lake itself.

21. The son of Radha, after having entered the hostile force, and also having shaken his best of bonds had struck off their heads with his keen arrows, and caused them to fall upon the earth.

22. Being broken into pieces, the shields and coats of mail, belonging to the warriors, fell upon the earth; and none of them could bear the touch of a second arrow (to be shot by Karna).

23. He (Karna) struck the fences of the antagonists, that could be perceivable only by the bowstrings, by means of shafts shot from his bow, that were capable of crushing the coats of mail, the bodies and the lives (of the combatants); even as one strikes the horses with the whip.

24. Then Karna, with great speed, crushed down the Pandus, the Panchalas, and the Srinjayas, who came within the reach of his arrows; even as the lion slays the whole lot of deer.

25. Thereupon, O sire, the king of the Panchalas, the sons of Draupadi, the twin brothers and Yuyudhana, who all gathered together, advanced against Karna.

26. Whilst the Kurus, the Panchalas and the Pandus were fighting with one another, the combatants, offering up their lives slaughtered one another in the field of battle.

27—28. O sire, the mighty warriors, who were all protected with armours and coats of mail, and who also were ornamented with the head-gears, uplifting their maces, short clubs and spiked maces, that resembled the very uplifted rod of Death himself, uttered loud roars, challenged, jumped, marched most rapidly and dreadfully against their antagonists.

29. Thereupon they (the combatants), being highly afflicted by one another, and also being deprived of their brains, eyes and weapons, struck one another and fell down in the field of battle, when blood gushed out of their limbs.

30. Some of the warriors, who were covered over with innumerable weapons, lay (in the field of battle); and they were supposed to be alive with faces, that were as handsome as the pomegranates, and also that were adorned with numerous teeth, and smeared with blood.

31—32. With the battle-axes, short maces, swords, the arrows called *Sakti*, the *Vindipalas*, and hooks, spears and lances, others, again, who were highly enraged, either crushed, cut off, pierced, hurled down lopped off or slaughtered one another in that vast ocean of battle.

33. Being slain by one another, they (the combatants) fell down dead and covered over with blood; even as the sandal trees, being felled, fall down shedding red and excellent juice.

34. Cars, being destroyed by cars, and elephants, smitten down by elephants and men, slaughtered by men, and horses struck down by horses, fell (upon the earth) in thousands.

35. The standards, heads, umbrellas, trunks of elephants and arms of men, being severed by the razor-like, broad headed, and cresent-shaped arrows, fell down upon the earth.

36. They (the combatants) had smitten down in that battle, the men, elephants, and horses yoked to the cars. Many heroes, were slaughtered by horsemen: and the elephants had their trunks cut off.

37. The elephants and cars being smitten down by the foot-soldiers, their standards

along with their banners fell down like the cloven mountains.

38. On all sides, some (of the warriors) were slaughtered, and some were in course of being slaughtered, and others, again, fell down. Then the horsemen after having encountered most actively with the foot-soldiers, were killed (by the foot-soldiers.)

39. The throngs of foot-soldiers, being slain by the horsemen, were lying on the field of battle, resembling the crushed lotuses and faded floral wreaths.

40. The faces and limbs of the slain rested on the field. And, O king, the most beautiful forms of the elephants, horses and men, that resembled the dirty cloths, presented an exceedingly gloomy site.

Thus ends the twenty-first chafter, the general encounter, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having been persuaded by your son, many elephant-warriors, riding upon their elephants, and desiring to bring about his destruction, became highly enraged and marched against Dhristadyumna.

2. Many foremost of elephant-warriors belonging to the tribes called the Easterners, the Southerners, the Angas, the Bangas, the Pundras, the Magadhas, and the Tama-liptakas,

3. And, O descendant of the Bharata race, also belonging to the Mekalas, the Koshalas, the Madras, t e Dasharnas, and the Nishadhas, who were all very skilful in fighting on the back of elephants, and who again, were accompanied by the Kalingas,

4. Began to pour forth showers of arrows, lances and broad-headed shafts, like the masses of clouds, and also they all drenched the whole force of the Panchalas (with them) in that battle.

5. He (Dhristadyumna) then dropped down showers of arrows, and broad-headed shafts upon those elephants, that crushed down the enemies, and also that were urged forward by their being deeply struck in the sides with heels, toes and hooks.

6. O descendant of the Bharata race, he (the Panchala chief) pierced every one of these elephants, that resembled mountains with ten, six or eight keen arrows.

7. Both the Pandus and the Panchalas, uttering loud roars and being furnished with the sharp weapons, advanced towards him (the Panchala chief) who was then closed with by those elephants even as the sun is covered over with the masses of clouds.

8. Then they (the above warriors) continued to shower (their weapons) upon those elephants, and having been excited by the sound of bowstrings and palms, as well as by the beatings (caused by the heroes), began to dance the dance worthy of the heroic warriors.

9. Afterwards Nakula, Shahadeva, the sons of Draupadi, the Provadrakas, Satyaki, Shikhandin, and the most powerful Chekitana,—these heroes drenched (these elephants) from all sides (with their weapons); even as the clouds drench the mountains with the torrents of water.

10. Being driven by the Mlechchas, these elephants, highly enraged, had cast down the men, the horses, and cars, with their trunks, and crushed them with their feet.

11. Then they (the elephants) pierced them with the points of their tusks, and having thrown them down shattered them. Others, again, being lifted up with their tusks, fell down upon the ground exciting great horror (in the spectators.)

12. Thereupon Satyaki, after having pierced the elephant of the Vanga prince, that was standing before him, in the very vitals with a long arrow possessed of great impetuosity, hurled him down upon the ground.)

13. Again, Satyaki had struck the chest of him (the rider of that elephant), whose body was not yet touched, and who also fell down from his elephant, with a long shaft. Thus struck, he (the rider) fell upon the ground.

14. Shahadeva, on the other hand, had struck the elephant of falling Pundra, that was moving like a mountain, with three long arrows, which were most excellently directed.

15. Then Shahadeva, after having deprived that elephant of his banners, driver, armour, standard and life, again advanced against the ruler of the Angas.

16. But Nakula, having forbidden Shahadeva (from advancement), himself crushed the chief of the Angas with three long shafts resembling the very rods of Death in appearance, as well as his elephant with hundred others.

17. The ruler of the Angas, on the other hand, had directed eight hundred

lances, that were as respledent as the rays of the sun, towards Nakula, who, again, shattered each of them into three pieces.

18. So again, the son of Pandu severed the head (of his antagonist) with a crescent-shaped arrow. That Mlechchha, being thus cut off, fell down with his elephant.

19. Thereupon, when the prince of the Angas, who was well versed in the knowledge of managing elephants, was thus slain, the highly enraged elephant-warriors of the Anga race, rushed against Nakula, riding upon their elephants,

20. That were adorned with waving banners, and also that were furnished with excellent mouths, and that were decked with the housings made of gold, and that were as resplendent as the blazing mountains; for, the warriors were most desirous of crushing him and all possessed of immense activity.

21. The Mekalas, the Utkalas, the Kalingas, the Nishadhas, the Tamraliptakas, who were all very willing to slaughter him, continued to pour forth showers of arrows and lances (upon Nakula).

22. Then the highly enrgaed Pandus, Panchalas, and Somakas proceeded most rapidly to rescue Nakula, who was closed with by those warriors, even as the sun is covered over with the masses of clouds.

23. Thereupon, the battle raged between the car-warriors,—who were shooting showers of shafts, and hurling down thousands of lances, (at the antagonists).—and the heroes fighting from the back of elephants.

24. The frontal globes and several other vitals, the tusks and the equipments of the elephants, that were deeply pierced with long shafts, were all shattered.

25. Thereupon Shahadeva had most rapidly slaughtered eight of the gigantic elephants with sixty-four arrows, possessed of great impetuosity. On that, they all fell down along with their riders.

26. Nakula also, who was the darling of his family, after having lifted up the foremost of his bow with great care, had slaughtered innumerable elephants with straight shafts.

27. Thereupon the chief of the Panchalas, the grandson of Shini, the sons of Draupadi, the Provodrakas and Shikhandin, poured forth showers of arrows upon those huge elephants.

28. Having been killed with the torrents of shafts by such clouds as the Pandu warriors, those hills of elephants belonging to the foes, fell down; even as the mountains are struck down by the falling of thunders.

29. Having thus slaughtered your elephants, those foremost of car-warriors, belonging to the side of the Pandus, looked at the army (on your side), that was running away from the field like a river, flowing down a shore other than where it took its rise.

30. Those warriors, belonging to the side of the son of Pandu, after having first agitated that army and again having afflicted, proceeded most rapidly against Karna.

Thus ends the twenty-second chapter, the encounter between several heroes, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O great monarch, Dushasana rushed against Shahadeva, that is, brother against brother, who was highly enraged and blasted your army.

2. In the field of battle, the mighty car-warriors, seeing those two thus engaged in a fierce encounter, began to utter shouts resembling the roars of lions, and to wave their cloths.

3. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race, the most powerful son of Pandu was deeply struck in the chest with three shafts by the bowman, your son, who was highly enraged.

4. Then, O monarch, Shahadeva, after having first pierced your son, again struck him with seventy shafts, as well as his charioteer with three others.

5. Thereupon, O king, Dushasana, after having severed his bow in that dreadful battle, struck Shahadeva with seventy-three arrows both in the arms and the chest.

6. Then the highly enraged Shahadeva, after having taken up his sword and turned it round, had hurled it immediately towards the ear of your son in that fierce encounter.

7. Thus having severed his (Dushasana's) bow along with its string and arrow, then that fearful sword fell down upon the earth, even as a snake falls down from heaven upon the ground.

8. Thereupon Shahadeva, possessed of immense prowess, having taken up another bow, hurled at Dushasana a shaft, capable of bringing about death.

9. Then the son of Kuru had severed into two fragments, with his keen-edged sword, that shaft, which was as resplendent as the very rod of Death himself, directed towards him.

10. Then having turned round that sharp-edged sword in the field of battle, the most powerful one took up another bow most rapidly, and grasped an arrow.

11. On the other hand, Shahadeva, as if laughing, had suddenly thrown down that sword with keen arrows, that was directed towards him.

12. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race,your son most rapidly directed sixty-four arrows against the car of Shahadeva, in that dreadful battle.

13. Then Shahadeva, O monarch, cut off every one of these innumerable arrows, that were falling with speed (upon him) with five shafts of his own in that battle.

14. Having thus restrained those powerful arrows, shot by your son, he (Shahadeva) sent away innumerable shafts against him (his antagonist) in that dreadful battle.

15. Your son, too, having severed every one of these arrows with three shafts of his own, sent out a great uproar; and thereby caused the whole earth echo with it.

16. Thereupon, O monarch, Dushasana, having pierced the son of Pandu in that battle, had struck the charioteer of the Madraya chief with nine shafts.

17. O mighty monarch, the most powerful Shahadeva, being highly enraged at this, fixed an arrow on his bow, that was as deadly as Death himself. Then having stretched his bow with great force, he shot that arrow at your son.

18. O monarch, that shaft, after having successively pierced with great force through his body and his strong armour, itself entered into the earth, even as the snakes enter into the ant-hill. Thereupon, O king, your son, that mighty car-warrior, became senseless.

19. Having seen him thus senseless and himself being deeply struck with sharp arrows, his charioteer with great rapidity carried away the car.

20. Having defeated that Kuru warrior in battle, the son of Pandu looked at the army of Duryodhana and crushed it on all sides.

21. O descendant of the Bharata race, O monarch, that force belonging to the Kurus was crushed by the son of Pandu, even as a swarm of ants is crushed to death by a man with great rage.

Thus ends the twenty-third chapter, the encounter between Shahadeva and Dushasana, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXIV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. O monarch, Karna the son of Vikartana, indeed, restrained with great rage Nakula, who was destroying and dispersing the army (belonging to the Kurus) in that battle.

2. Thereupon, Nakula smilingly uttered these words to Karna:—'I am, after a long while and through the kindness of the celestials, seen by you.

3. O wretched one, such as I am, you have become the object of my sight in this battle. Indeed, you are the root of all these evils, as well as of this hostility and warfare.

4. Through your faults the Kuru warriors, after having fought against one another had become thinned. Having slaughtered you to-day in the battle, I will consider myself as having performed my duties; and also I will be free from the fever (of my heart).'

5. Being thus addressed, the son of Suta replied to Nakula in expressions worthy of the son of a king, and of a bowman specially.

6. 'O brave warrior, strike me; we will behold your manliness. O hero, first having achieved some deeds in the battle, then it behoves you to speak.

7. O sire, without speaking anything (highly of themselves) in the battle, the warriors fight to the best of their might. Hence, do you fight with me to the best of your power. I will surely destroy your vanity.

8. Having addressed him thus, the son of Suta struck the son of Pandu most rapidly, and pierced him in the battle with seventy-three arrows.

9. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race, Nakula, indeed, having been thus pierced by the son of Suta, pierced the Suta's son in return with eight shafts, that were as deadly as the snakes possessing virulent poison.

10. Then Karna, that most powerful bowman, after having severed his (enemy's) bow with numerous shafts, winged with gold and sharpened on stone, crushed the son of Pandu with thirty other arrows.

11. Those arrows, after having pierced through his armour, drank his blood in the battle; even as the snakes of virulent poison, after having penetrated the earth, drink the water.

12. Then he (Nakula), taking up another bow, that was most formidable and adorned with gold on the back, penetrated Karna with twenty shafts, and pierced his charioteer with three others.

13. Thereupon, O mighty king, the highly enraged Nakula, that slayer of heroic foes, severed the bow of Karna with sharp razor-like arrows.

14. Thereupon that brave warrior (the son of Pandu) smilingly struck this one (Karna), the mightiest of all car-warriors, (Karna) whose bow was severed with three hundred shafts.

15. O sire, seeing Karna thus crushed by the son of Pandu, all the car-warriors, along with the celestials, obtained the highest condition of astonishment.

16. Then Karna the son of Vikartana, grasping another bow, had shot upon Nakula five shafts in the shoulder-joint.

17. Thus the son of Madri blazed with those arrows sticking to that place (in his body); even as the sun, shedding lustre on the earth, looks resplendent with his own rays.

18. Thereupon Nakula, indeed, after having penetrated Karna with seven impetuous arrows, once more severed one of the horns of his bow, O sire.

19. Thereupon in the field of battle he (Karna), taking up another bow, that was possessed of greater strength, closed the different points of the compass, on every side of Nakula, with his arrows.

20. That mighty car-warrior (Nakula), being thus suddenly closed with the arrows, shot from Karna's bow, rapidly struck down these shafts with the arrows of his own.

21. Then that net-work of arrows, spread over the sky, looked like the firmament, covered over with innumerable fireflies, that roved about it.

22. Then, O ruler of earth, the welkin, covered over as it was with the hundreds of arrows shot by both of them, looked even as it was covered over with the swarms of locusts.

23. Those arrows, that were adorned with gold, having issued forth in continuous lines, looked most handsome like the cranes flying in continuous lines (through the sky).

24. When the firmament was thus closed with the net-work of arrows, and the sun was covered over with them, none of the rovers of the sky descended upon the earth.

25. While all the directions were thus closed with the shots of innumerable arrows from all sides, those two lofty-minded heroes blazed forth like two risen suns appearing at the time of universal dissolution.

26. O foremost of monarchs, having been highly oppressed with the pain, and greatly crushed, and slaughtered by these arrows shot from the bow of Karna, all the Somakas died.

27. In the same way, O king, the army on your side, thus slain by the arrows of Nakula, dispersed on all sides; even as the masses of clouds are dispersed by the wind.

28. The two armies, being thus slaughtered by both the (above) warriors with divine arrows, possessed of great impetuosity, fled beyond the reach of falling shafts, and stood even as they were spectators (of the battle.)

29. Thus when both the armies were dispered by the arrows of Karna, and the son of Pandu, these two high-minded warriors pierced each other with showers of shafts.

30. Most willing to kill each other, both the warriors showed their celestial weapons in the battle-field, and closed each other all on a sudden (with showers of arrows.)

31. The arrows that were furnished with the Kanka, the peacock feathers and garments, shot by Nakula, after having closed the son of Suta, appeared to stay on the sky.

32. In the same way, the arrows that were shot by the son of Suta in that fierce battle, after having closed the son of Pandu appeared to stay on the sky.

33. O monarch, both the warriors, having entered the chambers composed of arrows, could not be seen by any persons; even as both the sun and the moon, covered over with the masses of clouds, cannot be seen by any persons.

34. Thereupon Karna, who was highly enraged, after having assumed a very terrible look in the field of battle, shrouded the son of Pandu with showers of shafts shot from all sides.

35. O powerful monarch, the son of Pandu, who was wholly shrouded by the son of Suta (with arrowy showers), did not feel any uneasiness; even as the sun (the

giver of light), covered by the clouds, feels no pain.

36. Thereupon, O sire, the son of Adhiratha, after smiling for a time, shot forth hundreds and thousands of shafts in the field of battle.

37. There (upon the field of battle) all appeared to be one continuous shade by the shafts of that lofty-minded one (Karna) even as there formed a shade of clouds by the foremost of falling arrows.

38. Then, O powerful monarch, Karna after having severed the bow of that high-souled one (Nâkula), smilingly caused the fall of his charioteer from the car-nichi.

39. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race,, he (Karna) sent away the four horses of him (Nakula) to the abode of Death most rapidly by means of four sharp-edged arrows,

40. Then also he with innumerable arrows, cut off into minute fragments his (antagonist's) celestial car, his standard, the protector of his car-wheels, his mace and sword, and his shield, that was furnished with hundreds of moons, as well as his all other equipments of war, O sire.

41. O ruler of earth, losing his horse, and being deprived of his car and shield, he (Nakula) immediately alighted from his car, and, taking up his spiked club, stood (in the field of battle).

42. O monarch, the son of Suta had struck down that dreadful mace, uplifted by him, with the keenest arrows, capable of bearing the greatest strain.

43. On seeing him (his antagonist) without any weapons, Karna afflicted him with numerous straight arrows; but he did not oppress him too severely.

44. O monarch, Nakula of agitated senses, who was struck by that most powerful warrior, well versed in the science of arms in the battle, fled away all on a sudden.

45. O descendant of the Bharata race, the sons of Radha, indeed laughing, again and again, and pursuing him (Nakula), placed the bow, that was furnished with string, around his neck.

46. Thereupon, O king, that strong bow placed round his neck, blazed forth like the moon in the firmament, when she is surrounded by a halo of light, or like the mass of black clouds adorned by the bow of Indra.

47. Then Karna addressed him thus: 'whatever you speak is of no avail. Being delighted, do you utter those words once more, as you are struck over and over again.

48. O son of Pandu, do you not fight with the mightiest of Kurus; O son, fight with those, that are your equals. O son of Pandu, do not be ashamed of it.

49. O son of Madri, go home, where are Krishna and Falguna.' O most powerful monarch, he then, having addressed him thus, dismissed him at that time.

50. Thereupon that hero (Karna), who was well-versed in the code of morality, and did not slaughter him (Nakula), who was almost within the reach of Death himself. Then, O monarch, resembling the words of Kunti, he (Karna) let him go,

51. O king, the son of Pandu, being thus abandoned by that bowman, the son of Suta, and feeling shame for it, went towards the car of Yudhisthira.

52. He then, being afflicted by the son of Suta, ascended the car (of his brother); and, being oppressed with grief, sighed heavily like a snake confined within a vessel.

53. Then Karna, after having defeated him (Nakula), rushed most rapidly against the Panchalas, riding upon a car, that was furnished with innumerable standards, and having the colour of the moon.

54. On seeing the commander of the (Kaurava) army rushing against the car-warriors of the Panchala force, there arose a dreadful uproar against the Pandavas, O ruler of earth.

55. O most powerful monarch, that lord the son of Suta, circling round the field of battle, like a wheel,perpetuated an immense slaughter there at the time when the sun attained the meridian.

56—58. O sire, we saw numerous car-warriors of the Panchala army, who were carried away (from the field of battle) upon cars, some of which had their wheels broken down, and some of which had their banners and standards torn into pieces, and some also had their horses and drivers slaughtered (in the battle), and some, again, were without their wheels. Innumerable elephants, also, wandered and run about in the different directions of the field of battle, some of which had their bodies wholly burnt by the forest-fire, like the elephants in the dense forest; and others, again, amongst the elephants, had their frontal globes severed, and the bodies besmeared with blood, and the trunks cut off into fragments.

59. Moreover, O sire, some other elephants, being slaughtered by that high-

souled one (Karna) fell down with their armours cut off, or their tails curtailed, like the masses of clouds dispersed by the wind.

60. Again, other elephants, that were terrified by the shots of arrows and lances of the son of Radha, rushed with their faces towards him (the son of Radha); even as the insects rush towards the blazing fire.

61. Other mighty elephants were looked to strike against one another. They also shed blood from their limbs, even as the mountains let flow streams of water from their summits.

62—64. There in the field of battle, we saw numerous best heroes roving about in all directions—the heroes that were deprived of their breast-plates, and several kinds of ornaments, made of silver, brass, and gold, and also that were divested of their trappings, bridle-bits yak-tails, and saddle-cloths, and, again, that had their quivers, falling off (from their bodies), and whose brave riders, who formed the beauty of battle were all slain.

65—66. O descendant of the Bharata race, we saw numerous horsemen, furnished with armours and coronets, who, being penetrated by the swords, scimitars, lances and clubs, were either slain, or in course of being slaughtered, or were trembling with terror, and who, again, O descendant of the Bharata race were deprived of their various limbs, on all sides of the field of battle, O descendant of the Bharata race.

67. We behold the cars, that were adorned with gold and to which were yoked the heroes of greatest speed, dragged in the different directions of the field with great rapidity; while their riders were all slaughtered.

68. O descendant of the Bharata race, some of these cars had their axes and poles shattered into fragments; and some others had their wheels broken; and others, again had their banners and standards torn into pieces; and several others were deprived of their arrows.

69. O ruler of earth, there in the field of battle we saw numerous car-warriors rushing in all directions, who were all deprived of their cars, and who also were afflicted by the arrows of the son of Suta, and some of whom, again, were divested of their weapons; and innumerable other car-warriors were seen slaughtered there still with their weapons on.

70. We saw numerous elephants running in all directions of the field of battle, that were adorned with innumerable stars, and that were furnished with the most handsome bells, and also that were ornamented with banners variegated with various colours.

71. Moreover, we behold on all sides of the field of battle, numerous heads, arms, chests, and other parts of the body, that were severed by the arrows shot from the bow of Karna.

72. The most dreadful and distressing calamity had fallen upon all the warriors while they were fighting with the keen arrows, and cut off with the shafts of Karna.

73. The Srinjayas were slaughtered by the son of Suta in the field of battle, and they rushed towards the force of Karna, even as the insects rush towards the fire.

74. All the Kshatriyas (the warriors) abandoned that mighty car-warrior who was slaughtering the forces (belonging to the Pandavas) on all sides of the battle, even as they abandon the blazing fire, that appears at the universal dissolution.

75. That hero of immense prowess (Karna) pursued these powerful car-warriors belonging to the Panchala divisions, shooting dreadful arrows at them from behind, while they (these car-warriors), as they survived the slaughter, were broken, and running away from the field, and deprived of their armours and standards.

76. The son of Suta, who was endowed with great strength, afflicted them with his arrows; even as the remover of darkness (the sun), having reached the meridian, afflicts all the creatures with his rays.

Thus ends the twenty-fourth chapter, the prowess of Karna, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then Uluka rushed most rapidly against Yuyutsu, who was routing the vast force belonging to your son; and uttered to him these words—'do you wait, do you wait.'

2. Thereupon, O monarch, Yuyutsu afflicted Uluka with a sharp-edged arrow (supplied with wings), even as a huge mountain is struck with the thunderbolt.

3. Thus Uluka, too, being highly enraged and cutting off the bow of your son with a razor like shaft, struck him with a barbed arrow in the field of battle.

4. Yuyutsu, whose eyes became red with anger, after having thrown aside that severed bow, grasped another, the most dreadful one, possessed of greater impetuosity.

5. Thereupon, O foremost of the Bharata race, he (Yuyutsu) penetrated Uluka with sixty arrows; and then struck down his driver with three; and he once more pierced him (Uluka).

6. Uluka, too, who became highly wrathful, after having pierced him (Yuyutsu) with twenty arrows, decked with gold, struck down his standard, that was made of gold, in the field of battle.

7. O monarch, that huge and magnificent standard, that one made of gold, being torn off and shattered into fragments, dropped down in front of Yuyutsu.

8. Seeing his standard thus cut off, Yuyutsu, who became senseless with rage, struck Uluka with five arrows in the chest.

9. O descendant of the Bharata race, O sire, Uluka then severed the head of his foe, with a broad-headed arrow, dipped in oil, in the field of battle.

10. Then he (Uluka) slaughtered his four horses, and pierced himself (Yuyutsu) with five shafts. He (Yuyutsu), being thus fierced by that powerful one (Uluka) went into another car.

11. O monarch, Uluka, after having defeated him (his antagonist) in the battle, hastened towards the Panchalas and the Srinjayas, and slew them with the keen arrows.

12. O mighty monarch, your son, Srutakarman, deprived, without any fear, Shatanika of his horses, charioteer, and car within half the time taken up by the twinkling of an eye.

13. O sire, that mighty car-warrior, Shatanika, waiting in a car, that was deprived of its horses, and becoming very wrathful, had thrown a mace upon your son.

14. O descendant of the Bharata race, that mace, after having reduced the car and the horses along with the riders themselves into dusts (belonging to your son), fell down upon the earth most rapidly, and penetrated through it.

15. Then those two brave warriors, who were divested of their cars, and who also had contributed to the increase of the glory of the Kurus, really fled away from the battle, looking each other in the face.

16. Thereupon your son, who became highly terrified, ascended the car of Vivingsa. Shatanika, too, with rapidity, mounted upon the car of Prativindhya.

17. Shakuni, who became very angry, after having pierced Shutasoma with excellently sharpened arrows, could not cause him to tremble (with fear); even as a torrent of rain can not shake a mountain.

18. O descendant of the Bharata race, Shutasoma, too, after having seen the bitterest enemy of his father, closed him with several thousands of arrows.

19. Shakuni, too, on the other hand, who was of light arms, and who was acquainted with all sorts of warfare, and who, again, was most desirous of winning victory, severed all those shafts with other winged arrows of his own.

20. Then he (Shakuni), who was greatly enraged, after having restrained these arrows with the keen arrows of his own in the field of battle, struck down Shutasoma with three other shafts.

21. Thereupon, O great king, your brother-in-law cut off his (antagonist's) horses, standard, and charioteer into minute pieces by numerous arrows. At this, the people sent forth a loud roar.

22. O sire, after taking up another excellent bow, that great bowman who was now steedless and carless, and whose standard also was cut off, waited upon the earth on descending from his car.

23. He (Shutasoma) then directed the shafts, that were furnished with the golden wings, and also that were whetted on stone; and afterwards severed the car of your brother-in-law (with those shafts) in the field of battle.

24. That mighty car-warrior, the son of Suvala did not at all feel pain to behold the flights of arrows, that were like the throngs of locusts, approaching towards his car. Rather that highly glorious one really restrained those arrows with numerous arrows of his own.

25. There (in the field of battle) the warriors, as well as the Siddhas resting in the firmament, became highly gratified to witness that extraordinary and incredible deed of Sutasoma. For he (Sutasoma) was fighting on foot with Shakuni, who rested upon his car.

26. O king, he (Shakuni) severed the bow, as well as all the quivers of him (Sutasoma) by means of his broad-headed arrows, that were excellently whetted, and also that were endued with great impetuosity, and again, that were very straight.

27. Then he (Shutasoma), who was thus deprived of his car and bow, raised a

loud roar, after raising his sword that bad the splendour of a blue, lotus-color, and also that had a handle made of ivory.

28. That sword of highly intellectua Shutasoma, whirled round by him, he (Shakuni) considered to be as resplendent as the clear sky, like the very rod of Death himself.

29. O powerful monarch, that holder of sword, who was endued with great lore and prowess, suddenly roved about creating fourteen different kinds of circles (Manœuvres) on all sides (of the battle).

30. He then exhibited in the field of battle the different kinds of dexterities of motion, namely, wheeling and whirling at a certain height, and making side-thrusts, rushing forward and jumping on high, and moving about rapidly and advancing upwards and forwards,

31. Thereupon the son of Suvala, who was possessed of immense prowess, shot innumerable arrows at him (his antagonist), who, again, immediately severed them by means of his sword, that were directed against him.

32. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, the son of Suvala, who became very angry at this, once more shot numerous arrows at Shutasoma, that resmbled snakes of virulent poison.

33. That warrior (Shutasoma), who resembled Garuda in strength, after having exnibited the lightness of his arms in the battle, severed those arrows by his sword with the assistance of both his learning and strength.

34. O monarch, he (Shakuni) severed the sword,—that was most excellent,—of his foe, who then was careering in circles in the field, by means of his sharp razor-headed arrows.

35. That strong sword, being thus cut off, dropped down upon the ground all on a sudden. But, O desendant of the Bharata race, the other half of the sword still rested in the hand of that Shutasoma.

36. Knowing that his sword was thus severed, then that powerful car-warrior, Shutasoma, after having retreated six steps back, struck his antagonist with that half (he still held in his hand).

37. That half (of the sword), after having severed the bow, that was ornamented with gold and gems, along with the string, of that high souled one (Shakuni), immediately dropped down upon the ground.

38. Thereupon Shutasoma proceeded to that strong car of Shrutakirti.

39. The son of Suvala, too. after having grasped another bow, that was most dreadful and invincible, rushed against the army of the Pandavas, slaughtering innumerable enemies on the way.

40. On the very sight of the son of Suvala, who was wandering about in the field of battle most fearlessly, there had taken place, O ruler of earth, great roar amongst the Pandava host.

41. Then it was seen that those divisions of the army, that were very proud, furnished with the weapons, and very vast, were routed by that high-souled son of Suvala.

42. O king, the son of Suvala continued to slaughter the soldiers of the Pandava force; even as the king, of the celestials crushed the army of the Daityas.

Thus ends the twenty-fifth chapter, the encounter between Shutasoma and the son of Suvala, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXVI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O king, Kripa restrained proud Dhristadyumna in the field of battle; even as a Sharava resists a proud lion in the forest, while fighting.

2. O descendant of tte Bharata race, the son of Prishata, being thus resisted by the most powerful son of Gotama, was not able to move a step further there (in the battle).

3, Witnessing the car of Gautama staying by the side of that of Dhrishtadyumna, all the creatures were greatly terrified, and considered that destruction was to be attained by him (Dhrishtadyumna).

4—5. There all the car-warriors and horsemen, who became very inattentive (or gloomy), adderssed thus : 'This best of persons, the son of Sharadwata, who was possessed of immense prowess, and who also was acquainted with the use of celestial weapons, and who was, again, very high-minded, is sorely filled with anger at the fall of Drona. Will there be escape of Dhrishtadyumna from the hands of Goutama ?

6. Will this entire army be freed from that extreme fear ? Will not this twice-born person slay us all, who have assembled here ?

7. Gautama, who exactly appears even like the most dreadful Destroyer himself,—will he not obtain to-day the appellation of the son of Varadwaja?

8. The preceptor (Gautama), who is light-handed (in the use of weapons), and who is always victorious in battle, and who is furnished with various kinds of weapons, and who is possessed of immense prowess, is now filled with rage.' The son of Prishata, too, appears to-day to have withdrawn from the great battle.'

9. O great king, this and several other speeches were heard to have delivered by the men on your side, as well as by the antagonists; while those two (warriors) assembled there to fight against each other.

10. Thereupon, O monarch, Kripa, the son of Sharadwata, sighing heavily with rage, struck the son of Prishata, who had lost all his efforts, in all his vital parts.

11. Having been thus struck in the battle by the high-sould Gautama, he (Dhrishtadyumna) could not make out what should he do, encompassed as he was by great insensibility.

12. Thereupon his charioteer uttered these words to him:' O son of Prishata, it is well with you, perhaps. Such a great calamity was never witnessed by me in the battle, overtaking you?

13. Those shafts, that were capable of piercing through the very vital parts and that were shot by the foremost of the twice-born persons, aiming at all the vital parts, had not struck you through the favour of the celestials.

14. I will have the car immediately turned back like the current of a river from the great ocean. I consider that the twice-born person is incapable of being slain, by whom your prowess was done away with.

15. Thereupon, O monarch, Dhrishtadyumna slowly said these words:' O sire, my mind is being stupified; and there is perspiration in my limbs.

16. I feel a sensation of trembling in my body; and also the hairs are standing erect upon it. After abandoning the twice-born person in the battle, proceed slowly where Arjuna stays.

17. After having come to the presence of either Arjuna or Bhimasena in the field, O charioteer, I will surely attain prosperity to-day. This is my certain belief.

18. Thereupon, O powerful king, the charioteer, after having driven the horses, advanced to the place, where that powerful bowman, Bhimasena, was battling with your soldiers.

19. O sire, Gautama, after witnessing that the car of Dhrishtadyumna was withdrawing from the field, then followed it, shooting hundreds of arrows at it.

20. That chastiser of foes blew his conch over and over again; and then he routed the son of Prishata, even as Indra routed Namuchi (a Danava, in the battle of old).

21. The son of Hridika, smiling over and over again, resisted Shikhandin, who was the cause of death of Bhishma, and most invincible in the field of battle.

22. Shikhandin, however, coming against the mightiest car-warrior of the Hridika race, struck him with five sharp and broad-headed arrows at the shoulder-joint.

23. O king, the mighty car-warrior, Kritavarman, indeed, being highly enraged, penetrated through his antagonist with sixty winged arrows, and then, smiling for a time, severed his bow with one individual shaft.

24. Taking up another bow, the most powerful son of Drupada, being greatly enraged, replied to the son of Hridika saying,—*Wait, Wait.*

25. O lord of kings, then he (Shikandin) shot at his antagonist ninety arrows, that were furnished with the wings of gold, and possessed of great force. But these arrows were shot back from his (Kritavarman's) armour.

26. Beholding those arrows thus sent back and scattered over the ground, he (Shikhandin) severed his dreadful bow with a sharp, razor-headed shaft.

27. Then having been filled with rage, he struck this one (the son of Hridika), who, with his severed bow, resembled a bull with his broken horns, with eighty different arrows both in the chest and arms.

28. Kritavarman, too, who became very angry, and who also was greatly wounded by those arrows, vomited blood from his various limbs, even as a water-vessel sends forth water through its mouth.

29. O king, Kritavarman, being thus smeared with blood, blazed forth like a red-chalk mountain streaked (by the streams of liquified red-chalk) by a shower.

30. Then the lord (Kritavarman), taking up another bow that was furnished with its string and an arrow, afflicted Shikhandin with the foremost of shafts in the shoulder.

31. Shikhandin, indeed, shone most brightly with these shafts, sticking on his shoulders; even as a large tree looks very pretty with its numerous branches and twigs.

32. Both the warriors, who were smeared with blood, after having penetrated each other deeply, looked like two bulls, that wounded each other with their horns.

33. Those two most powerful car-warriors, who made efforts in slaying each other, whirled round upon their cars, thereby creating thousands of circle, there (in the battle).

34. O great king, Kritavarman pierced the son of Prishata in the battle with seventy sharp arrows, that were furnished with golden wings, and also that were whetted on stone.

35. Thereupon the prince of the Bhojas, that foremost of chastisers of foes, shot with great activity at his antagonist a dreadfu arrow, that was capable of bringing about the destruction of life, in the field of battle.

36. O monarch, he, being thus wounded by that arrow, immediately fall into the condition of insensibility; and he, being so choked with stupefaction, suddenly supported himself by holding his flag-staff.

37. Thus his charioteer immediately carried away from the field of battle that foremost of car-warriors, who was highly afflicted by the arrows of the son of Hridika, and was sighing repeatedly.

38. Thereupon, O lord, when the warlike son of Drupada was defeated, the whole army of the Pandavas, being slain on all sides, retreated from the field of battle.

Thus ends the twenty-sixth chapter, the retreat of Shikhandin, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXVII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O great king, Arjuna, riding upon a white horse, slaughtered the force on your side, even as the wind, coming before a heap of cotton, disperses it away.

2. The Trigartas, the Shivis along with the Kaurava force, the Shalyas, the army of the Samsaptakas, and the force called the *Narayana*, all proceeded against him (Arjuna).

3. Then Satyasena, Chandradeva, Mitradeva, Shrutanjaya, Sausruti, Chitrasena, and Mitravarman, O descendant of the Bharata race,

4. And the prince of the Trigatas, who was attended on all sides in the battle by his brothers and sons, that were all very powerful bowmen, and that were acquainted with the management of various kinds of weapons,

5. All these scattered and shot innumerable arrows at Arjuna in the battle, even as the masses of clouds suddenly pour forth showers of rain, that approach towards the vast ocean.

6. Those hundreds of thousands of warriors all met with destruction at their approaching towards Arjuna, even as the snakes are all destroyed by Garuda.

7. Then, O mighty monarch, those warriors, who were being thus slaughtered in the battle, did not abandon the son of Pandu, even as the insects, being burnt by the blazing fire, do not leave it.

8. In the battle, Satyasena penetrated the son of Pandu with three arrows; and Mitradeva pierced him with sixty-three; while, indeed, Chandradeva pierced him with seven arrows.

9. Again, Mitravarman (pierced) him (Arjuna) with seventy-three shafts; Sausruti, with seven; and Satrunjaya, with twenty; and Shusharma, with nine arrows.

10. He (Arjuna) being thus penetrated, in the battle by numerous heroes, pierced in return those kings—piercing Susruti with seven arrows, and Satyasena, with three,

11. And Satrunjaya, with twenty arrows, and also Chandradeva, with eight, and Mitradeva, with one hundred, and Srutasena, with three,

12. And, again, piercing Mitravarman with nine and also Shusharman with eight. Then having slaughtered king Satrunjaya there (in the battle) with arrows, that were sharpened on stone, he (Arjuna) severed the head of Susruti, that was ornamented with a head-gear, from his body.

13. He then with great activity sent Chandradeva to the abode of Death by shooting innumerable arrows at him. So also, O mighty monarch, he restrained every one of the other car-warriors, who were engaged in the contest, by means of five arrows shot at each.

14. Then Satyasena, indeed, being greatly enraged, directed his large lance, aiming

at Krishna, in the battle; and sent forth a loud roar like that of a lion.

15. Then that lance, that was made of iron, with a golden rod, after having penetrated through the left arm of that lofty-minded Madhava, went into the earth.

16. O lord of earth, the whip and reins of Madhava, who was pierced with lance in that dreadful battle, dropped down from his hands.

17. Seeing Vasudeva thus pierced, Dhananjaya, the son of Pritha, collected all his fierce wrath; and addrssed Krishna, saying :—

18. "O mighty armed lord, drive the steeds towards Satyasena that I may send this one to the abode of Death by means of sharp arrows.

19. Then that highly famous one (Krishna) immediately taking up the whip as well as the reins, led those steeds (*i.e.* the car) towards the car of Satyasena.

20. Beholding the lord of the universe thus pierced, that powerful car-warrior Dhananjaya, the son of Pritha, restrained the course of Satyasena by means of keen shafts.

21. Thereupon, he (Dhananjaya) severed the huge head, that was ornamented with ear-rings, of that monarch, who stood at the head of the army, from his body by means of whetted broad-headed arrows.

22. O sire, having thus severed his (Satyasena's) head, he then hurled down (slain) Chitravarman with numerous keen arrows, as well as his charioteer with a calf-toothed sharp shaft.

23. Thereupon that powerful one, being filled with wrath, again caused the destruction of hundreds and thousands of the force of the Samsaptakas by means of hundreds of arrows.

24. Then, again, O monarch, that powerful car-warrior severed the head of the high-souled Mitrasena with a razor-headed arrow, that was furnished with the wings of silver. Afterwards he, being greatly enraged, struck Shusharman on his shoulder-joint.

25. Thereupon the entire army of the Samsaptakas, that became very wrathful, having surrounded Dhananjaya on all sides, crushed him with a shower of weapons and thereby caused the ten points of the horizon echo with their roars.

26. Having been thus oppressed by those weapons, that mighty car-warrior, Jishnu, who was possessed of prowess equal to that of Sakra (Indra) himself, and who also had a soul immeasurable, took up his weapon, called *Aindra*. Thereupon, O ruler of earth, thousands of arrows continuously issued forth therefrom.

27. O sire, of broken standards and bows, of cars along with their banners, of quivers and yokes,

28. Also of axles and wheels, of traces along with the chords, of bottoms of cars, of wooden fences about the cars, and innumerable shafts in the field of battle,

29. And of falling horses, and of spears along with the swords, of maces and spiked clubs, of Sakti-arrows, lances and axes,

30. And of Shataghnis furnished with wheels, as well as of the arms along with the thighs, of wreaths and *Angadas*, of Keyuras, O sire,

31. And, O descendant of Bharata race, of garlands and cuirasses, of armours, of umbrellas and fans, of heads adorned with coronets,—of these a tremendous roar, O ruler of earth, was heard in all the directions of the field of battle.

32. Upon the field of battle, the heads (of severed warriors), that were ornamented with ear-rings, and furnished with the eyes as resplendent as the full moon, were seen, even as the net-work of stars is seen in the firmament.

33. The bodies of the slaughtered warriors, that were furnished with the most handsome floral wreaths, and covered with the excellent garments, and also that were ointed with the soft sandal, lay resplendent upon the ground.

34—35. Then the dreadful field of battle resembled the clouded firmament filled with various vapoury forms, and the earth being scattered over with the slaughtered princes and the Kshatriyas, possessed of great strength, as well as with the fallen elephants and horses, became as impassable in the battle as the ground strewn over with numerous hills.

36. There was no way in the field of battle, that the car-wheels of that high-souled son of Pandu could proceed, whilst he was slaughtering his antagonists, and greatly smiting the elephants and horses by means of his broad-headed arrows.

37. O sire, the car-wheels of that one, who was careering in the battle, stopped, as if with terror, while they were moving in that bloody mire.

38. His horses, however, that were possessed of the speed of either the mind or of the wind, had with great labour drawn these wheels, that were lagging behind.

39. O descendant of the Bharata race, that army, which was thus slain by the son of Pandu, that great bowman, almost

wholly ran away (from the field of battle); and in fact, none remained (to fight with the foe).

40. Then Jishnu, the son of Pritha, having defeated that immense force of the Samsaptakas in the field of battle, blazed forth like the burning fire without any smoke.

Thus ends the twenty-seventh chapter, the victory gained by Arjuna, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. O great monarch, the king Duryodhana himself received, without any fear, Yudhishthira, who was then shooting innumerable shafts (at his antagonists).

2. Then Yudhishthira, the righteous, after having quickly penetrated your son, that mighty car-warrior, who was all on a sudden proceeding against him, addresed him, saying—*wait, wait.*

3. Then he (Duryodhana), indeed, who became highly enraged, penetrated him (Yudhishthira) in return with nine whetted arrows, and, again, afflicted his charioteer most dreadfully by means of his broad-headed shafts.

4. Thereupon king Yudhishthira shot at Duryodhana thirteen keen arrows, that were furnished with the wings made of gold, sharpened on a stone.

5. Then that powerful car-warrior, having slaughtered his (Duryodhana's) four horses with four arrows, with the fifth severed the head of his charioteer from his body.

6. Thereafter he smote down the king's standard with the sixth arrow, and his bow with the seventh, upon the ground.

7. The most righteous king crushed most severely the Kuru monarch with five other arrows. At this, your son, descending from his car, that had its horses all slain, became subject to the greatest danger, and stayed upon the field.

8. After beholding him thus fallen into imminent danger, Karna, the son of Drona, Kripa and other heroes all on a sudden proceeded towards him with the desire of saving that ruler of men.

9. Thereupon, O monarch, all other sons of Pandu, collected round Yudhishthira, and rushed forth at that battle; whereupon a great encounter took place.

10. Thereupon in that dreadful battle thousands of trumpets were beaten; and after this, O mighty lord of earth, a mixed noise, consisting of numerous voices, arose there (in the battle).

11. In that part of the battle, where the Panchalas encountered the Kaurava divisions, the men came against the foremost of elephants.

12. The car-warriors encountered the car-warriors, and horsemen with horsemen. Thus, O great monarch, several kinds of unthought encounters took place between heroes armed with the best of weapons, which were most beautiful to look at upon the field.

13. Those heroic warriors, who were possessed of great force, and who also were willing to kill one another, continued to battle most excellently, and with great lightness of hands and skill.

14. Indeed, those heroes, strictly observed the vow of warriors, and slaughtered each other in the battle; but they not at all fought from each other's back.

15. But that battle looked only for a while most excellent. Thereupon, O monarch, the encounter look a very mad turn, in which all became regardless of one another.

16. Then the car-warrior, rushing against the elephant, pierced him with sharp arrows and led him towards the abode of Death by means of his straight shafts.

17. Thereafter the elephants coming before the horses, hurled a large number of them in the battle and deeply pierced them in the different directions of the field.

18. Then numerous horsemen, after having encompassed the best of horses created a very sweet noise with their palms, and then fell down upon them.

19. The horsemen, again, slaughtered those horses, that were running away from the field, as well as the mighty elephants, that also were roving in the battle, both from behind them and from the sides.

20. O monarch, the most furious elephants, after having caused large numbers of horses to run away from the field, slaughtered some of them with their tusks, and crushed down others most severely.

21. Thereupon some of the elephants pierced numerous horses along with their riders with great wrath; while others, again, that were possessed of extraordinary strength, seized them and dragged them down upon the ground with great force.

22. The elephants, struck from all sides in the different vital parts by the foot-

soldiers, uttered very dreadful cries of pain, and ran away towards the ten points of the compass.

23. Many of the foot-soldiers, who were all on a sudden running away in that dreadful battle, leaving behind their ornaments, were immediately hemmed in upon the field.

24. Then, indeed, the most powerful elephant-warriors, having considered the indications of victory, caused their elephants to take up those handsome ornaments, and penetrate the fallen warriors with their tusks.

25. Then also the foot-soldiers, that were possessed of immense force and endued with extraordinary strength, after having encircled those riders of elephants, who were engaged in the massacre there (in the battle), slaughtered them.

26. In that dreadful battle, others were hurled up into the atmosphere by the elephants with their trunks; and while falling down they were deeply pierced by those well-trained beasts with the points of their tusks.

27. Other foot-soldiers were deprived of their lives with the tusks of the elephants, that had suddenly seized them. And some, again, O great monarch, who had been thrown into the midst of other soldiers, were cut off into pieces by those huge elephants, after they had rolled them over and over again upon the ground.

28. And others also, that were tossed in the air like the fans, were slaughtered in the battle. O ruler of earth, those (of the foot-soldiers), who stood in front of other elephants, had their bodies deeply penetrated (by the elephants) on all sides of the field of battle.

29. Many other elephants were very severely struck in their cheeks, the frontal globes, and the parts between their tusks with spears, lances and shafts, called *Shakti*.

30. Moreover some other elephants, that were fearfully wounded by the most formidable warriors, posted on their sides, as well as by the car-warriors and horsemen, being cut off by them, fell down upon the ground.

31. There in that dreadful battle, numerous horsemen had all on a sudden struck down with great violence upon the field the foot-soldiers, that had their arrows on, by means of their lances.

32. So also, O ruler of earth, O sire, the mighty elephants, having advanced before some of the car-warriors, that had their armours on, and slso having seized them well dragged them down most suddenly on all sides of that dreadful field of battle, that presented a very awful aspect.

33. Many mightiest elephants, that were slaughtered with the shafts, fell down upon the ground even as the summits of a mountain drop down upon the surface of the earth, when broken down by thunder.

34. In that battle, the warriors, battling with their combatants, struck them with their fists; and, having dragged each other with their hairs, hurled down and cut off each other.

35. Some other combatants, having stretched their arms, hurled down their antagonists upon the ground, placed their feet upon their breasts and with great pleasure severed their heads.

36. Some one of the combatants, O great king, smote down with his feet the dead antagonist; while some other, O monarch, severed the head of a falling enemy by means of his scimitar; and while some other combatant, again, directed his weapon at the body of another, who was still living.

37. Thus, O descendant of the Bharata race, the most dreadful encounters between heroes took place there,—some striking one another with their fists; and some also fiercely seizing one another with their hairs; and some, again, wrestling with one another with their arms most fearfully.

38. Under various circumstances, some one of the combatants deprived the lives of many in the battle, who were engaged with others, and were quite unconscious of the slaughterer, by means of several sorts of weapons.

39. In that general encounter, while the warriors were engaged in the battle, and continued to be mangled, hundreds and thousands of headless bodies (of the fallen warriors) stood upon the field.

40. Diverse kinds of weapons and armours, that were drenched in blood, blazed forth like pieces of cloth, that are dyed with deep red.

41. Thus this most dreadful and extraordinary battle, that was characterised by a confused din of diverse kinds of weapons, filled the entire universe with a noise even as the furious Ganges fills the earth with the roar of her currents.

42. O monarch, the combatants, being highly oppressed with the shafts, could not make out their friends from the antagonists and the assembled princes, who were all very desirous of victory, continued to battle, considering (the fact) that they should fight.

43. O great monarch, the warriors began to slaughter both the friends and foes, who nad assembled in that dreadful battle; and the warriors, belonging to both the forces, were rendered restless by the heroes, who engaged them.

44—45. Within a very short time, the earth, that was covered with a mire consisting of flesh and blood, and also by which the currents of blood flowed continuously, became, O lord of earth, impassable with the shattered cars, and with the fallen elephants, and the horses lying thereabout, and also with men slaughtered (in the battle), O great monarch.

46. So Karna slaughtered the Panchala warriors, and Dhananjaya slew the Kuru troops along with all their elephant forces.

47. Thus the great destruction had taken place of all the forces of both the Kurus and Pandavas. Both the parties were most desirous of gaining fame, when the sun had passed the other side of the meridian.

Thus ends the twenty-eighth chapter, the general encounter of several heroes, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXIX.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, I have heard from you of great and intolerable griefs of fierce character as well as of the destruction of my sons.

2. O Suta (charioteer), from what you describe to me, and also from how the battle was faught, my certain conclusion is that the Kauravas are not alive.

3. In that fierce battle, Duryodhana was deprived of his car. How did the son of Dharma fight: and how also did that prince (Duryodhana)?

4. How did take place the battle, that made the hairs to stand on points, in the afternoon? O Sanjaya, relate to me all these in detail; for you are an expert in this.

Sanjaya said :—

5—6. While the soldiers on both sides were thus engaged in fighting in their respective divisions your son, king Duryodhana, O lord of earth, ascending upon another car, and being filled with great wrath, like a snake possessing virulent poison, addressed his charioteer, saying,—*Do you proceed, do you proceed, quickly.* After he, O descendant of the Bharata race, had beheld Yudhishthira, the king of righteousness, he said :

7. "O charioteer, most speedily do you lead me to that place, where the royal son of Pandu, having been clad in armour, looks most resplendent with the umbrella held over his head."

8. Then the charioteer, being thus urged by the king, led the foremost of cars belonging to the king, to the presence of king Yudhisthira in the battle.

9. Thereupon Yudhishthira, being filled with wrath, and resembling an infuriate elephant, urged his charioteer, asking him to proceed to the place, where Suyodhana took his stand.

10. Those two heroic warriors, who were brothers to each other, and who were the best of car-warriors, and who were possessed of immense prowess, and who also were invincible in battle, coming in contact with each other, engaged themselves in an encounter. More-over these two mighty bowmen began to strike each other with numerous shafts in that battle.

11. Thereupon, O sire, the king Duryodhana severed the bow of that righteous one (Yudhishthira) by means of a broad-headed arrow, sharpened on a stone, in the battle.

12. Yudhishthira, who became highly enraged, did not, indeed, care that insult.

13. Then the son of Dharma, whose eyes became red with wrath, throwing aside his severed bow, and grasping another bow, stood at the head of his army and cut off the standard and bow of Duryodhana.

14. Then, having taken up another bow, he (Duryodhana) pierced the son of Pandu in return.

15. Those two heroic warriors, who like two lions filled with great rage, were highly enraged, and who also were most desirous of defeating each other in the battle, poured forth showers of arrows upon each other.

16. In that battle, those two most powerful car-warriors smote down each other like two roaring bulls: and also they wandered over the field, expecting to catch each other on their weak points.

17. Thereupon the two heroes, who were wounded by the arrows shot from bows stretched to their fullest length, looked most handsome, O great monarch, resembling two flowering *Kingshukas.*

18. Then, O monarch, those two rulers of men uttered roars of a lion in order to terrify each other; as also they made sounds with their palms, and with their bows; and, again, sent forth the loudest sound with their conches in that dreadful battle.

19. O great king, those two oppressed each other very greatly.

20. Thereupon king Yudhishthira, who became very angry, struck your son on the chest with arrows, that were very irresitible, having had the impetuosity of thunder.

21. Your son, that ruler of earth, most quickly pierced him (Yudhishthira) in return with five keen arrows, that were equipt with the wings of gold, and sharpened on a stone.

22. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race, the king Duryodhana shot an arrow, called *Sakti*, that was capable of slaughtering all creatures, and was sharp-edged, and also that looked like a large, resplendent brand.

23. Then the king of righteousness (Yudhishthira) severed into three fragments that arrow, which coursed towards him suddenly by means of numerous sharp shafts; and, again, he, all on a sudden, pierced the prince himself (Duryodhana) with five others.

24. Thereupon that arrow, which was furnished with a golden staff, and that was capable of producing a lould whizz, dropped down (upon the ground); and its falling, like a great brand attended with the blazing flames, looked most resplendent.

25. O ruler of earth, your son, beholding that Shakti-arrow thus severed into pieces, struck Yudhishthira with nine whetted and sharp-pointed arrows.

26. That scorcher of antagonists, being thus deeply penetrated by the most powerful enemy, quickly equipped himself and took up an arrow, aiming at Duryodhana.

27. O mighty monarch, thereupon that hero, possessed of immense strength and great prowess, being greatly wrathful, put that arrow upon his bow-string and directed it (at his antagonist).

28. Indeed, that arrow, approaching towards your son, that powerful car-warrior stupified that prince and then went down the earth.

29. Thereupon Duryodhana, who was filled with wrath, most quickly raising his mace, afflicted the king of righteousness (Yudhishthira) with the desire of piercing him through, in order to put an end to all hostilities (between the Kurus and the Pandavas).

30. Beholding him thus raising his mace like Death himself armed with his rod, the king of righteousness (Yudhishthira) shot that mighty *Shakti-arrow* at your son, that blazed forth most brilliantly, and was endued with great impetuosity, and also that resembled a large and resplendent brand.

31. Then he(the Kuru prince), who stayed on his car, having been pierced on the chest by that arrow, first piercing his vitals, and also having been greatly pained at heart, fell down and became senseless.

32. Thereupon Bhima, recollecting his own vow, uttered these words: 'O prince, (Yudhishthira), this one is not to be slaughtered by you.' Being thus addressed Yudhishthira abstained (from slaying him).

33. Thereupon Kritavarman, most quickly approaching towards your son, got near that prince, who was then drowned in the great ocean of calamity.

34. Then Bhima, too, grasping his mace, that was equipt with gold and flaxen chords, proceeded with great violence against Kritavarman in that dreadful battle.

35. O great king, thus took place the battle between the forces on your side and their antagonists, in that afternoon while the parties were most desirous of victory in the battle.

Thus ends the twenty-ninth chapter, the general encounter, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXX.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thereupon the troops on your side who were most invincible in battle, having placed Karna in the front part (of the army), and returning back, engaged in a battle that looked like the war between the celestials and the Asuras.

2. Then the multitudes of elephant-warriors, the car-warriors, the foot-soldiers and the horsemen, who were roused by the sound of conches, as well as by the roars of elephants, men, cars, and horses, and filled with great rage, stood on the face of the antagonists, and continued to slaughter them.

3. In that fierce battle, numerous elephants, cars, and horses, as well as men

were slaughtered by the foremost of horses with their sharp battle axes, scimitars, axes, and several sorts of shafts, as also with their conveyances.

4. The earth looked most resplendent with the severed heads of persons scattered over her, that resembled either the lotus, or the sun, or the moon in splendour, and also that were furnished with the white teeth, excellent faces, eyes and noses, and that were crowned with the handsome diadems, and ornamented with beautiful ear-rings upon their ears.

5. Thus thousands of elephants, and men, and horses were slaughtered by means of hundreds of spiked maces, short bludgeons, arrows, called Shakti, and lances, as also by the hooks, Bhushandis, and clubs which caused the torrents of a river of blood flow down.

6. Then that entire body of slain car-warriors, men, horses and elephants, that were all slaughtered by the antagonists, and thus were most terrific to look at, lying (upon the field) with their gaping wounds, seemed to be like the kingdom of the prince of the Dead at the time of the utter destruction of all creatures.

7. Thereupon, O god among men, your troops, and your sons, those foremost of the Kuru race, who are like the sons of the celestials, having placed at the front of the battle the heroes of immeasurable prowess, all rushed against that descendant of the Shini race (Satyaki).

8. Then that force, which was filled with men, the best of horses, cars, and innumerable elephants, and that sent forth an uproar resembling the roar of a vast ocean of salt, and also that looked like the army of the Asuras or of the celestials, and, again, that was most terrifying to look at, looked most resplendent with extraordinary beauty.

9. Thereupon the son of Ravi (Sun), who was like the chief of the celestials (Indra) in prowess, struck that best of the Shini race, who also resembled the younger brother of the Tridashas (celestials), by means of arrows, that had the splendour of the rays of the sun, in the field of battle.

10. Thereafter that foremost one of the Shini race, with great activity, wholly covered, in the field of battle, that chief among men, along with his car, horses and charioteer, with numerous arrows, that were as fierce as the virulent poison of the snake, in that dreadful field of battle.

11. Then the most expert car-warriors, who are your friends, being attended by their elephants, cars, horses and the foot-soldiers, with immense activity, rushed against Vasusena, that foremost of car-warriors, who was then highly oppressed with the shafts, shot by that chief of the Shini race.

12. That army, which was like a vast ocean, and dispersed in all directions, was wholly made to run away from the battle by the Pandava heroes, headed by the sons of Drupada, with extraordinary quickness. On this occasion, a great slaughter of men, cars, horses, and elephants took place.

13. Thereupon those two best of all persons, Arjuna and Keshava, who were resolved upon slaughtering all their antagonists, after having finished the worship of lord Bhava, according to the ordained rites, and also having performed their daily prayer ceremonies, with great rapidity proceeded against your force.

14. Then their antagonists, namely the Kuru warriors, highly gratified at heart, looked upon that car, that had its rattle resembling the uproar of the masses of clouds, and also whose banners and standards were being by the air, and to which again, beautiful white horses were yoked and, moreover, that was proceeding towards them like the very Death himself.

15. Thereupon Arjuna, after having stretched his bow, called Gandiva, as if dancing upon the car, spread showers of arrows all over the firmament, and the different points of the horizon, as well as all the subsidiary points of the compass.

16. After this, he (the son of Pandu, Arjuna) smote down numerous cars, that resembled the celestial baloons, and that were furnished with all their equipments, and also that were adorned with the weapons and standards, along with the charioteers themselves, by means of diverse kinds of arrows even as the great tempest disperses the congregated masses of clouds.

17. He then led, to the abode of Death by means of his numerous arrows, large numbers of elephants, along with their riders, that were equipt with the most beautiful flags, weapons, and standards, as also numerous horsemen and horses, and many foot-soldiers.

18. Thereupon Duryodhana, unattended by any body else, rushed against that most powerful car-warrior, who was like the very Death himself, and who was filled with great wrath, and who, again, was most invincible in battle, smiting him with his numerous straight arrows.

19. Arjuna, on the other hand, after having destroyed his (antagonist's) bow,

charioteer, horses, and the standard by means of seven sharp shafts, severed his (foe's) umbrella by means of another winged arrow.

20. Then he (Arjuna), finding an opening in his antagonist, shot the foremost of his arrows, that was powerful enough to take away the very life itself (of the person struck with it), at Duryodhana. This the son of Drona severed into seven fragments.

21. Thereupon the son of Pandu, having first cut off the bow of the son of Drona and slaughtered his horses, that were the best of their species, by means of his arrows, again, shattered that formidable bow belonging to Kripa.

22. Then he (the son of Pandu), having severed into pieces the bow, owned by the son of Hridika, cut off his standard, and slaughtered his horses. Again, he, cutting off the bow of Dushasana, rushed against the son of Radha.

23. Thereupon Karna, having abandoned Satyaki and penetrated Arjuna with three sharp shafts most actively, pierced Krishna with twenty other arrows; and, again, penetrated the son of Pritha often and often.

24. Karna, resembling Indra himself, when he is greatly filled with wrath, felt no fatigue while he was shooting large numbers of arrows in the field of battle, slaughtering the antagonists.

25. Thereupon Satyaki, having advanced to him, pierced Karna with ninety-nine sharp-headed and dreadful arrows and, again, struck him with one hundred others.

26. Afterwards all the best heroes among the Parthas continued to oppress Karna greatly. Thus Yudhamanyu, Shikhandin, the sons of Draupadi, as well as all the Provadrakas,

27. And also Uttamanjas and Yuyutsu along with the twin brothers, and the several divisions of the Chedis, the Karushas, the Matsyas, and the Kakeyas,

28. And Chekitana, who was possessed of immense prowess, and the king of righteousness (Yudhishthira), observing the most excellent vows,—all these heroes, perfectly aggrandised them by their cars, horses and elephants, as well as by their foot-soldiers, possessing fierce strength.

29. They all, having surrounded Karna on all sides, poured forth showers of numerous kinds of arrows upon him; and they, then having addressed him in a very harsh language, all determined to bring about the fall of Karna.

30. Then Karna, having severed into several fragments that shower of weapons by means of his sharp-headed arrows, cast away his foes with the help of his prowess in the use of weapons even as the wind uproots the tree that stands in its way.

31. Karna, who was highly enraged, was found to slaughter large numbers of car-warriors, elephants along with their riders, horses with men riding upon them, as well as throngs of foot-soldiers.

32. Then the entire army of the Pandavas, being thus slain by the prowess of those weapons belonging to Karna, and being deprived of weapons, and also having had their limbs torn and shattered, almost fled away from the field of battle.

33. Thereupon Arjuna, smiling for a time and smiting down in return the weapons of Karna by means of the weapons of his own, shrouded the different points of the horizon, the entire firmament, and the earth with the showers of arrows.

34. Some of the arrows, shot by Arjuna, dropped down upon the earth like the maces; and some, like the spiked clubs; and others fell like the Shataghnis; whereas several other shafts fell down upon the ground like the most dreadful thunderbolts.

35. That force, belonging to the Kauravas, that consisted of numerous foot-soldiers, horses, cars and elephants, and that were being slaughtered with the above weapons, that seemed to shut up the eyes, roved about (in the field of battle) ceaselessly, and roared most loudly.

36. Thereupon the battle became most dreadful, as numerous horses, men, and elephants were continually slaughtered. Then, again, a large number of them, highly afflicted with the arrows, and struck with terror, fled away from the field of battle.

37. Thus whilst the battle raged most fearfully amongst your troops, who were most enthusiastic with the desire of victory, the Sun, approaching the setting mountain, entered into it.

38. O great monarch, we could not behold anything in the field, either favourable or unfavourable, owing to the thick darkness, and especially on account of the dust.

39. O descendant of the Bharata race, then the most powerful bowman (belonging to the Kuru army), being afraid of a battle that would take place in the night, made retreat from the field of battle, accompanied by all their combatants.

40. Thereupon, O monarch, at the fall of night when the Kaurava divisions had all fled away (from the field), the sons of Pritha, highly gratified to attain the victory, retired to their own camps.

41. And they (the Pandava troops) continued to mock at the antagonists by raising various sorts of sounds with all their musical instruments, and also by sending forth leonine-roars and uproars; and moreover, they praised both Achyuta and Arjuna.

42. Thus when that force of the Kauravas was routed by those heroic warriors, all the troops, as well as the lords of men, began to utter benedictions upon the Pandavas.

43. Thereupon, when the hostile army had made their retreat from the field, the Pandava warriors as well as the lords of men, became highly gratified and having retired to their camps, passed the night most cheerfully.

44. Thereafter large numbers of Rakshashas and Pisachas, as well as numerous other beasts, came to that dreadful field of battle, that looked like the sporting ground of Rudra himself.

Thus ends the thirtieth chapter, the battle on the first day, in the Karna Parva.

CHATER XXXI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. It is told that Arjuna slaughtered all belonging to your side, according as he wished. Really even if the very Destroyer himself had come to battle, he could not escape Arjuna, when he took up arms against him.

2. Thereupon the son of Pritha, unassisted by anybody, ravished Vadra. And again, he, being solitary, gratified Agni. Then he, having subjugated this entire earth, compelled all the monarchs to pay him tribute.

3. Moreover he, being unassisted, slaughtered the whole force of the Nivatakavachas. And also having taken up his celestial bow, and without any help from other hands, he (Arjuna) battled against the God, Mahadeva, who stayed before him in the guise of a hunter.

4. Again, single-handed, he protected the entire race of the Bharatas; and similarly single-handed he gratified Vava. Also all the monarchs of the earth were defeated by him alone, who was possessed of fierce strength.

5. They, that is the Kuru warriors, are not to be blamed; rather they should be praised for the reason of their having fought with such a great warrior. Then, O Suta, what did Duryodhana do afterwards? O Sanjaya, do you relate to me all these in detail.

Sanjaya said :—

6—7. The Kourava warriors, who now resembled the serpents deprived of their fangs and poison, and trodden over by the feet, and some of whom were struck and wounded, and some, again, were deprived of their armours, weapons and proper conveyances, and some of whom were thrown down, and who all, again, uttered very plaintive voices, and who were scorched by the fire of grief, and who merely made a parade of their knowledge in arms, and who were all defeated by the antagnists, and who now repaired to their encampment, had been counseling with one another.

8. Thereupon Karna, who was filled with wrath, and who sighed heavily like a serpent, and who squeezed his hands and who looked at your son, addressed them saying :—

9. 'The thing is that Arjuna is always very persevering, skilful, and intelligent. And, again, when the first time (for any thing to be done) comes, the Eternal One (Vasudeva) awakes him to his duties.

10. To-day we were all deceived by him (Arjuna) by the shower of weapons poured forth all on a sudden. But to-morrow, O ruler of earth, I will baffle all his attempts.'

11. Having been thus addressed (by Karna), and saying—*so be it*, he (Duryodhana) commanded all the best of monarchs to dissolve. All these kings, being thus ordered, repaired to their respective abodes.

12. Having passed that night most happily, they (those monarchs), with ample gratification, proceeded out for battle (the following morning).

13. They then saw a very invincible array of army, that was constituted by the King of Justice (Yudhisthira), who was the greatest of the whole Kuru race, with the greatest care, and quite in accordance with the advices of both Vrihaspati and Ushanas.

14. Thereupon Duryodhana, that smiter of enemies, called to his memory, Karna, who baffled the attempts of his antagonists, and

who was the foremost of all heroic warriors, and who was the slayer of his foes, and who had the neck like that of a bull.

15. The king's (Duryodhana's) mind was now constantly directed towards Karna, who-resembled Purandara in battle, and who was like the Murutas in prowess, and who also was equal to Kartavirya in prowess.

16. As also the hearts of all the troops turned towards Karna, who was the son of the charioteer, and who, again was a great bowman, even as the heart of a person always turns towards his friends, whilst he falls in some great danger.

Dhritarashtra said :—

17. Thus when the minds of all you were turned towards Karna the son of Vikartana, did the warriors on my side look at the son of Radha, even as persons, oppressed with cold, look at the sun?

18. O Sanjaya, how did Karna, the son of Vikartana, fight there (in the field of battle), when my troops had first reretreated, and again engaged themselves in the battle.

19. And how also did the sons of Pandu fight in the field with the son of Suta? Indeed, Karna that mighty-armed warrior, would have slaughtered all the sons of Pritha along with the whole lot of the Srinjayas, although he was alone.

20. In the field of battle, the strength of the arms of Karna was similar to the prowess of both Shakra and Vishnu; and the weapons, as well as the prowess of that lofty-minded warrior were very fierce.

21. Hoping to be under the protection of Karna, king Duryodhana was most eager for the battle. Then what did that very powerful car-warrior do after seeing Duryodhana very highly oppressd by the son of Pandu, and also after witnessing all the sons of Pandu to display their prowess in arms?

22. Relying upon Karna, the foolish prince Duryodhana, again, aspired to defeat the sons, of Pritha along with their sons, as well as Keshava in the field of battle.

23. Alas, this is a matter of great grief that in the field of battle Karna, possessed of immense strength, could not defeat the sons of Pandu! It is certain that Destiny holds the foremost position in all affairs.

24. Alas, the most dreadful result of gaming at dice has now been visible! Alas, O Sanjaya, I now hear of the greatest sorrows, that had been brought about by foolish Duryodhana, and also that resemble a large number of deadly arrows!

25. O Sire, the son of Suvala was considered to be possessed of great policy; as also Karna was always extremely attached to the prince (Duryodhana).

26. O Sanjaya, when such is the matter with the battle which is most dreadful I have often heard that my sons were being constantly defeated, and slaughtered.

27. There exists no one who can restrain the Pandavas in the battle; and they enter into my whole force, even as one penetrates into the midst of a throng of women. It is sure that Destiny is the most supreme.

Sanjaya said :—

28. O monarch, do you now reflect upon your past actions, that were most righteous (the game at dice and others of the kind).

29. Man afterwards reflects upon all actions that had past away. But that however, one should not do. For, one is destroyed by that sort of reflection.

30. That act of yours has been far from bringing out the desired end. Although you are possessed of knowledge, yet you did not consider before hand the propriety and impropriety of your actions.

31. O monarch, it was several times told to you, that you should not fight with the, Pandavas. But, O ruler of earth, that advice you did not accept out of foolishness.

32. The most horrible deeds of sin had been perpetrated by you in respect to the Pandāvas. And only for those acts of yours that this terrible destruction of kings takes place now.

33. O foremost of the Bharata race all has now passed away, do not grieve for them. O you of everlasting fame, do you now hear of all that had taken place, namely the details of that awful slaughter.

34. Thus when the night dawned, Karna went to the king. And having approached him that hero of very powerful arms then addressed Duryodhana.

Karna said :—

35. To-day, O monarch, I will go forth for battle with the famous son of Pandu. Either I shall slay that hero, or he will slay me.

36. O descendant of the Bharata race, O monarch, on account of the innumerable acts of both myself as well as of the son o

Pritha, that this encounter between me and Arjuna had taken place; else this would not have occurred.

37. O ruler of earth, do you listen to my speech, uttered in accordance with my wisdom. O descendant of the Bharata race, if I can not slay the son of Pritha in battle, I will not return from the field.

38. For the reason of this army on over side having had the best of its warriors all slaughtered, that I will myself stand in the field: the son of Pritha will proceed against me, who am deprived of the Sakti-arrow given to me by Shakra (Indra).

39. O lord of men, then be you conscious of what proves beneficial to you. The strength of my celestial weapons is similar to the strength of Arjuna's weapons.

40. As regards the baffling of attempts of the most powerful antagonists, and as to the lightness of arms, and the range of arrows shot, and in respect to skillfulness, as also in the management of weapons, Suvyasachin is never my peer.

41. Again, O descendant of the Bharata race, either in physical strength, or in heroism, or knowledge (in the management of arms), or in prowess or in hitting the mark Savyasachin is never my peer.

42. My bow, that was known by the name of Vijaya, was the most supreme of all weapons. It was made by Vishwakarman with the object of performing what was agreeable to Indra.

43. O monarch, Shatakratu (Indra), indeed, subdued all the Daityas by means of that bow. And, again, at the twang of that bow, the whole body of the Daityas supposed the ten points of the compass to be empty.

44. And formerly Shakra (Indra) gave away to the son of Bhrigu that excellently equipt and best of the celestial bows, which was highly respected by all; and afterwards the son of Bhrigu gave it to me.

45. I will battle with that foremost one amongst the victorious warriors, the mighty-armed Arjuna, in the field; even as Indra fought with all the Daityas, who had assembled against him.

46. That fierce bow, given away by Rama, is in every way superior to the Gandiva bow; with that bow the entire earth was conquered twenty-one times (by Bhargava).

47. The son of Vrigu speaks of the celestial deeds of that formidable bow. As Rama has given it to me I will surely fight with the son of Pandu with that bow.

48. To-day, O Duryodhana, I will gratify your heart, along with that of your friends by slaughtering in the field of battle the heroic Arjuna that foremost one amongst the victorious warriors.

49. O lord of earth, the whole kingdom of earth, along with the oceans, the mountains, the forests and the islands, with all her heroes slaughtered, will be your own; and over which you will be established with your sons and grandsons.

50. There exists nothing that I cannot perform to-day, especially for gratifying you; even as success (ascetic) does surely exist in respect to a person, who is passionately attached to virtue, and who also has controlled his soul.

51. There is no one, who, coming in contact with me, is able to bear me in the battle; even as the tree, coming in contact with the fire, is able to bear it. Indeed this must be told by me that in what respect I am inferior to Phalguna (Arjuna).

52. The string of his bow is celestial; as also he (Ajruna) has got two inexhaustible quivers. His charioteer is Govinda. But I have got nothing like all these.

53. His *Gandiva* bow is celestial, and one of the best; as also it is indestructible in battle, whereas my bow, called Vijaya, is also divine, and formidable, as it is also the foremost of its kind.

54. Thus O monarch, as regards the bow I am superior to the son of Pritha. But in what respect the son of Pandu (Arjuna), that heroic one, is superior to me, do you now listen to.

55. That one, born in the Dasharha race, is the holder of the reins (of his horses), who is revered by all people; as also his car, that is ornamented with gold, is celestial, and the gift of Agni (the god of fire).

56. That hero is impenetrable in all his parts. His horses are possessed of the speed of the mind. His standard is also celestial, and most resplendent, bearing an *Ape*, exciting the greatest wonder.

57. Moreover Krishna, who is the creator of the universe, most carefully guards that car. I am destitute of all these equipments, yet I wish to fight with the son of Pandu.

58. Indeed, this Shalya, who is the ornament of all assemblies, resembles Shauri. Should he perform the duties of my charioteer, the victory will surely be yours.

59. Let Shalya, therefore, who is irresistible by the antagonists, act as my charioteer. And let the carts also convey

my long shafts, as well as the arrows furnished with the feathers of vultures.

60. Let, O lord of kings, the best of horses be yoked to my excellent cars; and let them, O foremost of the Bharata race, follow me without exhaustion.

61. Thus I will be superior to the son of Pritha in respect to these (the above mentioned) qualities. And thus, again, Shalya is superior to Krishna; and I am superior to Arjuna.

62. Even as that one, of the Dasharha race, who is the slayer of the hostile heroes, is thoroughly versed in the knowledge about horses, so Shalya, that most powerful car-warrior, is also acquainted with the science of horses.

63. In respect of the strength of arms there exist none who is equal to the prince of Madras.

64. Even as there exists not a single bowman, who is my peer in respect to the management of arms, so there is no one, who resembles Shalya as to the knowledge of horses.

65. Thus my car, which is attended with all these surroundings, will, indeed, be superior to that of the son of Pritha. Even the very celestials, accompanied by Vasava, will not be capable of proceeding against it (my car).

66. Thus having performed all these, when I take my stand upon the car, I should surely be superior to Arjuna in respect of these (the above mentioned) qualities; and also I should, O foremost of the Kuru race, subdue Phalguna.

O mighty king, O searcher of enemies, I desire that all this should be done by you. Also this my desire should be fulfilled by you; and the time in doing it should not pass away for nothing.

68. Having performed all this, there will be enough help to me on all desirable points. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race, you will witness whatever I will achieve in the field of battle.

69. By all means I will subdue all the assembled Pandavas in the field of battle. Even the very celestials and the Asuras will not be able to proceed against me in the field. O monarch, what should I say of the sons of Pandu, who are of human origin, and who will not be capable of withstanding me in the battle?

Sanjaya said :—

70. Thereupon your son, having been thus addressed by Karna, who was the ornament of battle, and also having adorde the son of Radha, told him these words with a highly gratified heart.

Duryodhana said :—

71. I will perform all this, that you, O Karna, desire. Numerous cars, furnished with the excellent quivers, and yoked to the foremost of horses, will follow you in the field of battle.

72. And let the long shafts, and the arrows furnished with the wings of vultures, be conveyed to you in innumerable carts; and, O Karna, all of us, namely the princes, will follow you into the field.

Sanjaya said :—

73. O mighty monarch, your son, who is possessed of immense prowess, after having thus addressed, and also having advanced before the prince of Madras, spoke these words to that chief, O monarch.

Thus ends the thirty-first chapter, the parley between Karna and Duryodhana, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O great king, your son, approaching the prince of Madras, that very powerful car-warrior, with enough of humility, spoke these words to him out of affection.

2. O you of truthful vows, O greatly fortunate one, O you who increase the sorrows of the antagonists, O lord of the Madras, O hero in battle, O you who instill terror in the hostile forces,

3. O best of speakers, you have heard what Karna had said, namely that this hero (Karna) chooses you amongst all the foremost of princes.

4. When such you are, O you of invincible prowess, O prince of the Madras, I solicit you to-day with enough of humility and bowing down my head in order to bring about the destruction of my enemies.

5. In consequence thereof, O best of car-warriors, it is necessary that you should serve me, out of affection, as my charioteer in order to bring about the death of the son of Pritha, as also to render me a real good.

6. Having had you for his charioteer, the son of Radha will surely vanquish my antagonists.

7. Indeed, O greatly fortunate one, there exists no one, who can restrain the horses belonging to Karna, excepting yourself, who are cruel to Vasudeva in battle. So do you protect Karna by all means, even as Brahma protects Maheshwara.

8. Even as that descendant of the Vrishni race protects the son of Pandu by all means in all his difficulties, so, O chief of the Madras, do you support to-day the son of Radha.

9. Bhishma, Drona, Kripa, Karna, yourself, and the most energetic king of the Bhojas as well as Shakuni, the son of Suvala, the son of Drona, and myself too, all had formed our army.

10. O ruler of earth, thus nine divisions had been made of the army, but no such division or allotted share does yet exist of either Bhishma or lofty-minded Drona.

11. By those two (Bhisma and Drona), who had gone beyond their respective divisions, all my enemies were slain.

12. Those two foremost of persons, who were very old, were slaughtered by stratagem in the field. O sinless one, they repaired to heaven from here, after having performed the most arduous tasks; as also other foremost of men, having been slain by the enemies in battle, departed to paradise.

13. So again numerous other heroes, all belonging to our army, after having achieved the most difficult attempts to the best of their powers, and also having abondoned their lives in the battle, at last departed to heaven.

14. O lord of men, this our army, the large part of which has been slain, have already been massacred by the sons of Pritha, who were at first very few in number. What should be done now?

15. The sons of Kunti are all possessed of immense strength; they are lofty-minded; and also they are endued with undaunted course. O lord of earth, now act up in such a way that they may not slaughter the rest of my army.

16. O lord, this my force has lost the most heroic warriors, who were all slain by the sons of Pandu in the field of battle.

17. Inded, Karna alone, that mighty-armed hero, is dear to us, and attached to our good; as also, O foremost of persons you are, who are the mightiest car-warrior throughout the entire world.

18. O Shalya, Karna desires to engage in battle to-day with Arjuna. But O chie of the people of Madras, I entertain very great hopes in that dreadful battle.

19. There does none exist in the whole world, who can act as the best holder of the reins of Karna's horses; even as Krishna makes the foremost holder of reins of Partha's horses in the field of battle, so, O monarch, should you be the holder of reins of the car belonging to Karna.

20. O sire, having been attended by him (Krishna), and also well guarded in battle, whatever deeds that the son of Pritha performs, will all be consequently done before your eyes.

21. Formerly Arjuna, indeed, never slaughtered his enemies in battle; but now, as he is always attended by Krishna, he shows forth such a prowess.

22. And now, O lord of the Madras, it is witnessed that day after day the son of Pritha causes the vast army of Dhritarashtra to retreat, because he is ever attended by Krishna in the field of battle.

23. O most resplendent one, the rest of the share given to Karna as well as to yourself still remains. Being accompanied by Karna, do you at once proceed to the field of battle.

24. Even as the Sun, being attended by the Aruna, disposses the darkness, so you, being united with Karna, slaughter the son of Pritha in this dreadful battle.

25. Let the greatest car-warriors, belonging to the hostile force, run away from the field, after seeing in the battle both Karna and Shalya, who are like two risen suns, and who also are possessed of the splendour of the rising sun.

26. As, O sire, the thick gloom is destroyed at the very view of both the Sun and Aruna, even so let all the descendants of Kunti along with the Panchalas and the Srinjayas be destroyed (at the sight of Karna and Shalya in the battle).

27. Karna is superior to all the car-warriors, as also you are the foremest of all the charioteers; and there exists no one in the whole world, who is your peer in the field of battle.

28. Even as that descendant of the Vrishni race protects the son of Pandu in all his vicissitudes, so do you guard Karna the son of Vikartana, in the battle.

29. O ruler of earth, when you are his charioteer, this hero (Karna) will surely be invincible even in the war with all the celestials, headed by Shakra (Indra); and what again, need be said with all the Pandavas. O, do not doubt my sayings!

Sanjaya said:—

30. Having heard the words of Duryodhana, Shalya, who became highly enraged and who was stretching his bow to its extent, and who, again, was waving his two arms often and often,

31. And who, moreover, was rolling his two expansive eyes reddened with great rage, and who himself was endued with the mighty arms, and who also was greatly proud of the possession of his high-birth, properties, vast learning and physical capability,—Shalya uttered these words.

Shalya said :—

32. O son of Gandhari, you are offending me; and also surely you are suspecting my conduct, when you ask me without hesitation by saying,—*Do you act as my charioteer.*

33. You praise Karna by considering that he is superior to ourselves. But I never reckon the son of Radha to be equal to myself in the field of battle.

34. O ruler of earth, let a much greater share be permitted to me in the battle. Having slaughtered him in the field, who has come to contend with me, I will repair to the place wherefrom I came.

35. O descendant of the Kuru race, if it be desirable, I will fight alone. Do you witness to-day my energy in the field of battle, whilst I will engage in scorching the enemies.

36. O descendant of the Kuru race, no person, who is like ourselves, ever engages himself in the execution of my duties, after having reflected in the heart such an insult. Do not doubt me (my prowess). In the battle, you should not at all attach such a great insult to me.

37. See these two my mascular arms, that can smite down like thunder; as also do you behold my bow that is variegated with the excellent colors, as well as my shafts that are like snakes possessing virulent poison.

38. See again, my car, to which are yoked the most beautiful horses endued with the swiftness of the wind. And O son of Gandhari, see my mace, that is ornamented with gold and threads of hemp.

39. O lord of earth, when I am angry I can split up the very earth; and I can break asunder the mountains; as also I can soak up even all the oceans by means of my own energy.

40. Why do you, O king, being conscious of the fact that I am thus capable of striking down the enemies, employ me to the office of the charioteer in the field of battle to the son of Adhiratha, who is born of such low parentage.

41. O lord of kings, you should not appoint me to this menial service. Having been indeed, thus superior to him, I cannot dare obey the commands of that sinful person.

42. That person, who makes one, who is a guest out of love, and who is most supreme, and who, again, is already very obedient, submissive to a very sinful man, surely becomes subject to that sort of crime which is similar to one of confusing the superior with the inferior.

43. This is a truth that Brahma created the twice-born persons from his mouth; and the Kshatriyas (or the people of the warrior class) from his arms; and also he created the Vaisyas (or the merchant class) from his thighs; and the Sudras (or the people of the servile class) from his feet.

44. Thereupon, O descendant of the Bharata race, the particular classes of persons, that is these born of (superior father marrying an inferior mother, or of a inferior father marrying a superior mother), have all originated from these four classes by means of their union with one another.

45. It has often been told that the Kshatriyas are the protectors of the rest of the classes, as also they are the possessors and givers of wealth. The Brahmana, or the regenerate persons, are characterised as presiding at sacrifices, teaching, and also by the acceptance of pure gifts. and again, the Brahmans, that is, the twice-born persons, were established upon the earth inorder that they would shower forth blessings upon all the people.

46. According to the *Dharma-shastras* the occupations of the Vaisyas are agriculture, the rearing of cattle, and gift; whereas the Sndras are ordained to be the servants of the Brahmanas, Kshatriyas, and Vaisyas.

47. Then, again, the charioteers, indeed are servants to the Kshatriyas; but never the Kshatriyas, O sinless one, are serverntss to the charioteer class. Do you, therefore, listen to these my words.

48. I am that person, who have his head (or hairs) washed off with sanctity, and I am born of a high family of royal sage, and I am a mighty car-warrior, and I am person of great note; as, again, I am worshipped and praised by the eulogists.

49. O slayer of the hostile force, when I am such a person as described, I can not

dare act as the charioteer of the son of Suta in the field.

50. Thus having obtained this insult I will never battle in the field, O son of Gandhari, to-day. I ask your permission, as I am really willing to return home.

Sanjaya said :—

51. Having thus addressed, that foremost of persons, Shalya, who was the ornament of assemblies, and who also became highly enraged, immediately went away from the midst of the kings, after having stood up.

52. Then your son, having received him (Shalya) with great affection and high respect, addressed him in a friendly manner these sweet expressions, pregnant with very grave ideas.

53. O Shalya, this what you utter is doubtlessly true. In this, I have some object in sight. Be you, therefore, O lord of men, acquainted with this.

54. O lord of earth, Karna is in no way higher than what you are ; nor that I doubt your conduct. It is sure also that the royal chief of the Madras will not achieve what should be unreal.

55. Indeed, your ancesters, who were the best of persons, always told the truth : and hence it is my opinion that yourself is said to be the descendant of the truthful persons.

56. O you who confer honors, you are like a barbed shaft to your enemies upon this earth. In consequence thereof you are called by the name of Shalya on the surface of the world.

57. O you who award ample gifts (to the regenerate persons), O you who are acquainted with virtue, you now achieve for my sake what was told by you before, saying that you would achieve.

58. Really neither the son of Radha, nor I am more powerful than you. Hence I solicit you to be the driver of these horses of the best species (yoked to the car of Karna) in this dreadful battle.

59. O sire, even as Karna is reckoned to be superior to Dhananjaya regarding innumerable qualities, so this whole world is of opinion that you are superior to even Vasudeva.

60. O foremost of persons, Karna is, indeed, far superior to the son of Pritha respecting the management of weapons ; and you, too, are superior to Krishna both in the horse-lore and physical power.

61. As that high-souled Vasudeva is thoroughly versed in the knowledge about horses, even so you, O royal chief of the Madras, is twice acquainted with that knowledge. There is no doubt about it.

Shalya said :—

62. O son of Gandhari. O descendant of the Karu race, as you tell me that amongst all these troops there is none more accomplished than the son of Devaki, even so I am highly gratified with you.

63. Thus I will act as the charioteer of that greatly famous son of Radha, while he will engage in battle with that foremost of the sons of Pandu, even as you, O hero, desire me.

64. But O hero, this should really be my provision towards the son of Vikartana that I will send forth in his presence such utterances as I will desire.

Sanjaya said :—

65. O king, O descendant of Bharata, O best of the Bharata race, your son, accompanied by Karna, replied to the son of the king of the Madras, saying—*so be it.*

Thus ends the thirty-second chapter, Shalya's acceptance of the charioteership of Karna in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Duryodhana said :—

1. Do you, again, O chief of the Madras, O lord, hear all that I will relate to you, namely what had taken place in the days of old in the great war between the celestials and the Asuras.

2. O foremost of the royal sages, do you now listen to what the great sage Markandeya had related to me as well as to my father which I will, again describe to you in detail. No doubt should be made by you in this.

3. O monarch, there had taken place a dreadful battle, that had its root in Taraka, between the celestials and the Asuras, each of which parties was most desirous of defeating the other. Then it has been heard by us that the Daityas were subdued by the celestials.

4. O monarch, when the Daityas were thus defeated by the celestials, the three sons of Taraka, named Taraksha, Krimmulakshu, and Vidyunmalin,

5. Who had placed themselves under severe devotion, and who, also, had sub-

mitted themselves to the strictest rules, liberated their bodies by means of that austere devotion, O scorcher of enemies.

6. My grandsire, who was ever the giver of boons, became highly gratified with them on account of their devotion, self-restraint, observance of strict rules, and also of divine contemplation and offered them numerous boons.

7. O monarch, they, having united with one another, asked of the great grandsire of all the worlds that boon, namely that they would not attain death from all creatures always.

8. Threreupon the lord, the God, that divine master of all the worlds, addressed to them, saying: "O Asuras, there exists no such thing, namely the freedom from death at the hands of all creatures; and, therefore do you refain from such a solicitation. Indeed you ask another boon, that you like most.'

9. Thereafter, O monarch, those Asuras after having brooded over the matter conjointly for a long while, and settled amongst themselves, and also having bowed down to that Lord of all the worlds, addressed him with these words: 'O God, O grandsire, do you give us this boon.'

10. "In this world having kept your grace always in the front we will, living in three different cities, wonder over this entire earth.

11. Then after one thousand years we will again unite together; and, O faultless one, these three cities, belonging to ourselves, will also attain the similar condition once more.

12. Whenever, O lord, any one of the celestials will penetrate with a single arrow those cities united into one then that most excellent of celestials will become the cause of our death."

13. Then that god, having replied to them, saying—*So be it*, ascended to heaven.

14. Thereupon they (the three Asuras), being highly gratified for having obtained the boons, and also having settled everything amongst themselves, called Maya, who was a mighty Asura and who was the celestial architect, and who was also without decay or death, and highly respected by the whole lot of the Daityas and the Danavas with a view to have those three cities constructed.

15. Thereupon Maya, who was of superior intelligence, constructed the three cities with the help of his own asceticism,—the one of the three was made of gold, the second of silver, and the third of black iron.

16. The city that was constructed of gold rested in the heaven; and that one of silver was placed in the farmament; and whereas the third, that was made of black iron, was established upon the earth. But, O lord of earth, they all were made to rest upon a wheel.

17. Each one of them (the three cities) were measured to be one hundred *Yojanas* long and one hundred *Yojanas* broad; and contained numerous buildings and houses, as also lofty walls and perches.

18. Although the foremost of the buildings in them were very closely situated to one another yet the high roads were very spacious and far off from one another. They also were very excellently furnished with the diverse kinds of palaces, and beautiful perches.

19. O monarch, separate kings lived in those cities.

20. The one of gold that was most beautiful had been in the possession of the high-souled Tarakaksha; and the other made of silver had been in the possession of Kamalaksha; and the third of black iron belonged to Vidyunmalin.

21. And those three Daitya monarchs immediately attacked the three worlds with the aid of their prowess and continued to reside; they said also these words,—*who is that one called Prajapati (or the creator).*

22. Thereupon millions and millions of persons from all directions proceeded against those best of the Danavas who had no hordes to come against them.

23. The greatly hanghty and flesh-eating Danavas, who were in the days of yore vanquished by the celestials, now having dwelt in those three well fortified cities, became highly desirous of obtaining immense prosperity.

24. Now Maya had became the supporter of them all, who have thus united together. Indeed, all of them having been under his protection (Maya's) lived there with perfect fearlessness.

25. Thenceforth whoever amongst those dwelling in those cities entertained whatever wish in his heart it was then Maya who fulfilled their desires by the aid of his illusory energy.

26. The heroic and the most powerful son of Tarakaksha, who was known by the the name of Hari, practised the most severe devotion, in consequence of which the Grandsire became highly satisfied with him.

27. Thus when the God was satisfied with him, he (Hari) asked him the following boon: 'Let there be a lake in our city, in which the persons, greatly struck by the weapons, having been dipped, will revive with resembled vigor.

28. O lord, after having obtained the boon, that warlike son of Tarakaksha, named Hari, created a lake in that city, which possessed the power of reviving the dead.

29. Indeed, the Daityas, in whatever form and whatever guise they were slaughtered, after having been dipped into that lake, had come back to their life in the same form and guise.

30. Thus after having regained their dead, they (the Daityas), who attained to their ascetic success by means of great devotion, and who also enhanced the terrors of all the celestials, now began to oppress all the different worlds.

31. O monarch, there had never been the slightest diminution of their number in the field of battle.

32. Thereupon they, who had been involved both by covetuousness and insensibility, and who also were deprived of their sense, now began to destroy the cities and the towns, that were settled upon the whole universe.

33. Having routed all the celestials, along with their attendants, at all times and in all places, those Danavas, who had been rendered haughty by the attainment of the boons, wandered, according to their option,

34. All over the celestial forests and different other regions that had been very dear to the celestials themselves, and the s cred asylums belonging to the sages, as also the most excellent abodes of men. Moreover these Danavas, who behaved most cruelly, had damaged the honor of all.

35. While thus all the worlds were very greatly oppressed (by the Danavas), th n Shakra (Indra), who had been encompassed by all the Maruts, fought against those cities by hurling his thunder (upon them) from all sides.

36. When, O foremost of monarchs, Purandara became incapable to pierce cities, which had been made impenetrable by that creator, and which also had received the boons.

37. Then, O subduer of enemies, the terror-struck lord of the gods, abandoning these cities, and celestials, went to the Grandsire with a view to relate to him the great insults wrought out by the Asuras.

38. They then, having described the whole history, and also having bowed down to him with their heads, asked the lord grand sire the fitting means of their destruction.

39. Having listened to all that, the lord god addressed all the celestials, saying this. 'That injurious fellow, who offends you, does surely offend me too.'

40. Indeed the Asuras are all very wicked-souled: and also they are dead against the celestials. And when they commit oppressions against you; they thus afflict me always.

41. I am, indeed, equally disposed towards all the creatures. There is no doubt about it. My fixed vow is that the unrighteous ones should ever be slaughtered.

42. Those three fortresses can only be penetrated by means of a single shaft; but in no other way can they be pierced. There exists no other person except Stana, who is able to pierce them with a single arrow.

43. Then you, O Adityas, select that heroic warrior Stana, also called Ishana, as well as Jishnu, who ean hardly bo afflicted in the battle. He will surely slaughter these Asuras.

44. Hearing this speech of his, all the celestials, under the leadership of Shakra, placing Brahman at their front, went to seek shelter of that god, who had a bull for his symbol.

45. Being accompanied by these Rishis (sages), who practised severe devotion, and who also uttered the eternal words of the Vedas, all these rightious gods repaired to Bhava with their whole soul directed towards him.

46. Then, O monarch, they began to satisfy him with the high speeches (as found in the Vedas), who is the giver of fearlessness in all fears, and who is the soul of all, and who himself is high-souled, and by whom, again, the entire universe is pervaded through with his eternal soul.

47. That one, who knows how to meditate upon the Soul by means of special devotional performances, and who also knows the capability of the soul, that is, the difference between *soul* and *matter*, as also whose soul is ever under his control.

48. That one, named Ishana, that mass of fiery energy, that lord of Uma, that one having had no equal in the world, that cause of all causes, that faultless one, they (the celestials) saw.

49. Then there lords conceived innumerable forms in him, although he was but one. Thereafter they all, after having

found out all these numerous forms as each of them had respectively conceived in their minds, became highly astonished.

50. All the celestials, as well as all the regenerate sages, after having seen that embodiment of all creatures, that unborn person, who was the most supreme of the entire universe, touched the earth with their heads.

51. Then having received them by uttering the worlds *you are welcome*, and also having raised their heads, Lord Shankara smilingly addressed them, saying—do you tell me the purpose of your coming here.

52. Thereupon having been commanded by the three-eyed deity, the celestials, who became highly gratified, uttered these words to him: O lord, let our repeated sulutations be to you.

53. Let our salutations be to you, who are the lord of all the celestials; let our salutations be to you, who are mighty bowman, and to you, who are subject to great rage, and also to you, who are the destroyer of the sacrifices of the creater; and to you, again, who are worshipped by all the lords of the creatures.

54. Let our salutations be to you, who are ever present; and to you, who are worthy to be prayed; and to you, who are continuously praised; and to you, who, are the death himself; and to you, who are possessed of red splendour; and to you, who are dreadful; and to you, who are endued with blue throat; and to you, who are furnished with the symbol of a trident.

55. And to you, who are never to be prostrated; and to you, who are furnished with the eyes of a yazelle; and to you, who battle with the best weapons; and to you, who are worthy of all praises; and to you, who are pure; and to you, who are the very death himself; and to you also, who are the destroyer of all.

56. And to you, who can with difficulty be resisted; and to you who are Shakra himself; and to you, who are also Brahman; and to you who behave like a Brahmachari; and to you who are Ishana; and to you, who are immeasurable; and to you, who are the leader of all; and to you, who are dressed with rags.

57. And to you, who practise eternal vows; and to you, who are tawny-colored; and to you, who carry on severe vows; and to you, who are dressed with the skins of animal; and to you, who are the father of Kumara; and to you, who are furnished with the three eyes; and to you, who are armed with the best of weapons.

58. And to you, who destroy the afflictions of those who have sought your protection; and to you, who bring about the death of those who are enemies to the regenerate persons; and to you, who are the lord of the forest trees. Let our salutations be to you, who are the lord of all persons; and let our eternal salutations be to you, who are the lord of all kine; and to you who are the lord of all sacrifices.

59. Let our salutations be to you, who are the leader of the troops; and to you, who are furnished with three eyes; and to you, who are possessed of fierce energy; O god, let our salutations be to you with our whole heart, speech and acts. Be you kind to us, who seek your shelter.

60. Thereupon the lord, who became highly gratified, having received them with the words you are welcome,—addressed them, saying let your fears be all gone; tell me what am I to do for you all.

Thus ends the thirty-third chapter, the history of the three cities of the Danavas, in the Karna Pava.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continuod*

Duryodhana said :—

1. When fearlessness was given to the whole class of the Pitris, the celestials, and the Rishis by that high-souled one (Brahman), he (Brahaman), after having adored Shankara properly uttered these words beneficial to the people of the entire universe.

2. O lord of all, through your grace I have been established in this high situation, namely the creatorship of all creatures. Holdinng this, a very great boon was given by me to the Danavas.

3. O Lord of the past and the future, there exists no one, excepting yourself, who is fit to slaughter these who have gone beyond paying proper respects. Indeed, you are the only person, who can slay these antagonists.

4. O God, when you are such, do you, therefore, achieve good to the celestials who have fallen into imminent danger, and, who also solicit your grace. O lord of the celestials, O wielder of the trident, slaughter these Danavas.

5. O you, who give honor to all, through your kindness let the entire univeres attain bliss. Indeed, you are worthy to be taken protection of. O lord of the universe, we all seek your protection.

Stana said :—

6. My opinion is that all your enemies should be slain. Being unassited, I can not dare slaughter them; for really the antagonists of the celestials are all very powerful.

7. Having been united together, all of you, therefore, destroy these enemies in the field of battle with one-half of the strength possessed by me. For union is, indeed, an immense strength.

The celestials said :—

8. I have observed energy and prowess of them (the Danavas). From this I am of opinion that the amount of energy and strengh possessed by them, is twice the energy and prowess possessed by us.

The auspicious god said :—

9. These sinful persons, who have insulted you, all should be slaughtered. Do you kill all these antagonists with one-half of my energy and prowess.

The celestials. said :—

10. O Maheshwara, we are not capable of bearing half of your energy. Do you slaughter the antagonists with one-half of the entire strength, possessed by all of us.

The auspicious god said :—

11. If you have not really got the power of bearing my whole force, then I, endued with only one half of your united energy, slay them all.

Duryodhana said :

12. Thereupon, O foremost of monarchs, the chief of the celestials was thus addressed by the gods, saying—*so be it*; and he in this way became superior to all, after having added to his own one-half of the entire energy possessed by them (the celestials) all.

13. That god had really become much more powerful than all others in strength. Thereupon Shankara came to be celebrated under the title of Mahadeva from that time forward.

14. At this Mahadeva, who was armed with the bow and arrow, uttered these words; 'O celestials, mounted upon the car, I shall slaughter those enemies of yours in the field of battle.'

15. Do you all now behold my car, the bow and arrow, as also how I cast down to-day these antagonists upon the surface of the earth.

The celestials said :—

16. O Lord of the celestials, having taken up all forms of the three worlds, we will construct a car for you, that will be endued with immense energy.

17. Thereupon the foremost of the celestials began to construct that car, which was conceived to be a very gigantic cue and also that was, with great intelligence designed by Vishwakarman himself (the celestial artificer).

18. Then they prepared arrows for him, that were identical with Vishnu, Shoma and Hutasha. Agni became the staff of his arrow; and Shoma became its head. And, O ruler of earth, then again Vishnu constituted the point of that best of arrows.

19. Then they made his car to be the same as the goddess earth, that is adorned with garlands of magnificent towns and cities, and that is furnished with the mountains, forests and islands, and that contain-ed creatures, and also that is ornamented with innumerable ups and downs.

20. The Mandara mountain was made the axle of that car; and the great river (the Ganges) constituted its Jangha; and the different directions and the subsidiary points constituded its several ornaments.

21. The constellations constituted its shafts; and the *Krita yuga* constituted its yoke; and Vasuki, (the foremost of all snakes, constituted the Kuvara of that car.

22. Then the best of the celestials made the Apaskora and Adhistana of that car to be the same as the Himavat and the Vindhya mountains; and also made the Udaya and Asta mountains to be the wheels of that car.

23. The ocean, that was excellent abode of the Danavas, was made to be the other axle of the car; as also the body of the seven Rishis became the protectors of the wheels of that car.

24. The Ganga, the Saraswati, and the Sindhu, as well as the firmanent constituted the Dhara of that car; and the water (on the surface of the earth), as also all the other rivers became the Uparkaga of the car (the chains binding its several limbs).

25. The whole day and night, and several other divisions of time, namely the Kalas and Kushtas, as also the different seasons of the year constituted the Anakarsha of that car; and, again the most resplendent planets and stars constituted its Varatha (the wooden fences).

26. Virtue, profit, and desire, united together constituted its Trivena. And there the herbs, containing innumerable flowers and fruits, formed its rows of bells.

27. The Sun and the Moon, having been made equal, were constituted to be the two other wheels of that foremost and most excellent car. The day and the night were made to be the two auspicious wings on the right and left in that car.

28. The ten princes of elephants, headed by one, named Dhritarashtra, that were all very powerful, constituted the shafts of that car. The sky was made to be its yoke; and the clouds, known by the names of Somvartakas and Valuhakas, were made its leathern strings. And, again, the twilight hours, the Dhriti the Mèdha, the Sthiti, and the Shannati,

29. And the firmament, coverd over with the planets, constellations and stars, were made its variegated leathern covers. And the Lords of the worlds, that is, the lords of the celestials, the waters, the dead, and the riches, formed its horses.

30. Then also Kuluprishta, Nahusha, Tarkatuka and Dhananjaya, as also several other snakes became the chords for binding the manes of those horses.

31. The cardinal points and the subsidiary directions constituted the reins of those horses yoked to that car. The Vasatkara (the chief Vedic sound) formed the goad; and Gayatri formed the chord attacked to the goad.

32. The traces of the horses yoked to the car were made with the four auspicious days, namely the days of the full moon and new moon with portion of the previous days of the full moon and new moon by themselves. And the Pitris were made the hooks and pins.

33. The chords of that car were constituted by Action, Truth, Devotion and Profit. The mind was the situation upon which the car rested; and speech formed its tracks.

34. The beautiful flags of diverse colors undulated in the air; and both the lightening and the Indra's bow (the Rainbow) enlightened that resplendent car.

35. That entire year, which was formerly fixed in the sacrifice of that high-minded Ishana, now constituted the bow of the car; whereas Shavitri formed the high sounding bow-string.

36. A celestial coat of mail was constructed, that was adorned with the most valuable gems, and that was impenetrable, and that was most resplendent, and also that had arisen from the wheel of time.

37. That handsome mountain of gold, called the Meru, formed the flag staff; and the chords, that were ornamented with the lightning, became the banners of that car.

38. That car, being thus furnished with all its equipments, looked most resplendent like the blazing fire in the midst of the priests attending a sacrifice. The celestials also, after having looked at that excellently equipt car, became greatly astonished.

39. O Sire, the celestials, after having seen that the energies of the entire universe were united together in one place, informed that high-souled one (Brahman) that the car was ready.

40. O great monarch, O foremost of persons, when that best of cars was thus prepared by all the celestials with a view to crush down their antagonists (the Danavas).

41. Shankara then placed his celestial weapons upon the car; and, also having made the entire farmament to be his flag-staff, he placed his bull (the symbol of the Deity) upon it.

42. Then the rod of Brahman, the rod of Death, and the rod of Rudra, as also Fever formed the guards on the sides of that car, that were pointed towards all directions of the horizon.

43. The protectors of the car-wheels of that high-souled personage were the Athurvan and Angiras; and Rigveda, Shamaveda, and Purana stood at the front of that car.

44. All histories and the Yajurveda became the guards of the back of the car; and all divine speeches and the different branches of knowledge placed themselves on all sides of the car.

45. O king, the hymns and others, as also the principal Vedic sounds, namely, Vashatkara, stood round the car. And O monarch, the syallable *Om*, having placed at the front of it, became greatly handsome.

46. Then having made the year, looking exceedingly beautiful with the six seasons, to be his bow, he prepared the string with his own shadow, that was indestructible in the field of battle.

47. Indeed, that illustrious Rudra is the same as Death himself. The year was his bow; and accordingly the death-night, which was but the shade of Rudra himself, was constituted to be the indestructible string at that bow.

48. Vishnu, Agni (the god of fire), and Shoma formed the shaft of that bow. The entire universe is nothing but Agni and Shoma. The universe is also said to consist of Vishnu.

49. The soul of that illustrious and highly energetic Vava is identical with Vishnu. They (the Asuras), therefore, could

not bear the touch o the bow-string of Hara (Vava).

50. Then the fiercely wrathful Lord cast his fire of anger upon that arrow, which anger was most irresistible, and also which had sprung from the very wrath of both Vrigu and Angiras, and which, again, was most intolerable

51. That dreadful God, dressed in skins, who was blue, red, and of smoke color, and who also resembled ten thousand suns in splendour, and who again was shrouded over with the flames of energy, and blazed forth most brightly.

52. Then that subduer of those, who can with difficulty be subdued, that victor, that slayer of the antagonists of Brahman, that universal protector, that slayer of persons, with whom rest both righteousness, and unrighteousness that One named Hara,

53. Then having been surrounded by innumerable beings, who were all very powerful to crush the enemies, and who were possessed of fierce prowess and dreadful appearances, and who, again, were fleet as the mind, and who, at last, were endued with the different (fourteen) physical faculties, illustrious Sthanu blazed forth with great splendour.

54. Then having taken refuge under the different phases of his body, this entire universe, both mobile and immobile, standing beside him, blazed forth and presented a very extraordinary appearance, O monarch,

55. Seeing that car furnished with all its equipments, he, coated himself with the armour, and armed with the bow, took up that celestial arrow sprung from the deities, Shoma, Vishnu, and Agni.

56. Thereupon, O monarch, O king, all the celestials ordered Wind, that foremost of the gods, to carry to that highly powerful Deity his pure and fragrant breeze.

57. Then having taken hold of the car, Mahadeva mounted upon it, thus trrifying even the very celestials; and therefrom he caused the whole earth to tremble with dread.

58. The great Ŕishis, the Gandharvas, the whole body of the celestials, as well as the different tribes of the Apsąras praised that Lord of the gods, when he was desirous to ascend the car.

59. Then the Lord was highly praised by the Brahmanical sages; and he was worshiped by the eulogists; as also he was pleased with the dance of numerous Apsaras, who were all very well-acquainted with the art of dancing.

60. Thereupon that beautiful boon-giver, who was excellently armed with the sword, arrow and bow, smilingly addressed the celestials saying—"Who will become my charioteer"?

61. The celestials replied him, saying—"O Lord of the gods, he will be your charioteer, whomever you will be pleased to appoint. There is no doubt about it."

62. Then the God, again, replied them (the celestials), saying, "Having meditated upon the matter yourselves without the least hesitation, do you appoint him as my charioteer, who will prove himself superior to myself."

63. Thereupon the celestials, after having listened to these speeches uttered by that high-souled God, and also having repaired to the Grandsire, propitiated him and said to him these words.

64. O "God, what instruction, imparted by you as regards the destruction of the antagonists of the celestials, was thoroughly acted up to by all of us. That Deity having the bovine bull for his symbol, was gratified with us.

65. Also a car had been constructed by us, that was furnished with the most beautiful and diverse kinds of weapons. But we do not know who will make the best charioteer in this foremost of cars.

66. In consequence thereof, do you appoint some such best of the celestials as the charioteer. O illustrious one, it is necessary for you to make good of that word said to us.

67. O illustrious one, you have said to us before to this effect that you would do us some good. Now it is necessary for you to fulfil that promise.

68. That most invincible and foremost of cars was constructed by us with the best parts of all the celestials in such a way that it was capable of routing our enemies; and that Deity, having Pinaka in his hand, was made the warrior to fight upon it. This One, having terrified the Danavas, is now ready for battle.

69. So also, the four Vedas have become the four horses, the best of their species, of that high-souled Deity; and the Earth, along with the numerous mountains, has become his car. The equipments of that car were the constellations. The warrior (who will fight from that car) is Hara. But who will be the charioteer, is still unfound.

70. For that car a charioteer is to be sought, who will prove himself a specialist amongst all these (celestials). O Lord,

this car is constructed to such an importance, as also Hara is the warrior who will fight from it. O Grandsire, armours, along with the weapons and the bow, have already been obtained.

71. Save yourself, there exists no other charioteer, whom we can find out. O illustrious one, you are, indeed, attended with all accomplishments; and you are superior to all the celestials.

72. Having immediately mounted upon that car, do you guide the horses of the best species with the object of bringing about the victory of the celestials, and the destruction of their antagonists."

73. It has been heard by us that after bowing down with their heads to the Grand Sire, who is the lord of the three worlds, all the celestials began to appease him in order to appoint him as the charioteer (of that car).

The grand sire said :—

74. O dwellers of heaven, there is nothing like untruth in this speech uttered by you. While, indeed, Kapardin will engage in battle, I will surely hold the reins of his horses.

75. Thereupon that illustrious personage, that God, that creator of all creatures, the Grandsire was appointed to the charioteership of high-souled Ishana by the celestials.

76. Thus while he was immediately ascending that car, which was revered by all persons, those horses, that were as fleet as the wind, bowed down upon the ground with their heads.

77. Having mounted upon that car, the illustrious Grandsire, that God who blazed forth with the splendour of his own, then indeed took up the reins of the horses, as well as the goad.

78. Thereupon that illustrious God, after having lifted those horses, that resembled the wind in swiftness, they addressed the foremost of the celestials Sthanu saying "Do you ascend."

79. After this, Sthanu, after having taken up that shaft, which was born of Vishnu, Shoma and Agni, and then also having caused by his bow the numerous enemies to tremble, mounted upon that car.

80, The great Rishis, the Gandharvas, the whole of the celestials, as also large numbers of the Apsaras, uttered prayers to that Lord of the gods, who had already mounted upon that car.

81. That handsome personage, that giver of boons, that holder of the sword, arrow and bow, rested upon that car, and looked most resplendent with his own energy, shedding lustre upon the three worlds.

82. Thereupon the God once more addressed all the celestials, headed by Indra himself, saying—"Grief should never be felt by you considering that I shall not slaughter the Asuras.

83. Now do you understand that the Asuras have already been slaughtered by this arrow." Thereupon those gods considered it to be true; and uttered those words 'That they (Asuras) have been all slaughtered."

84. Then, indeed, those celestials, considering that the speech what the illustrious Lord had uttered could not be untrue, attained to the highest gratification.

85. Thereupon, O monarch, that lord of the celestials, riding upon that mighty car, which had no equal, proceeded on, having been encompassed by the whole lot of the celestials.

86. Then that highly famous God was worshipped by all his companions, as well as by others, who were dancing in his front, and who lived on meat, and who were invincible in battle and who also were running on all sides of that God, and who again shouted with joy at one another.

87. Thus the great Rishis, who were highly fortunate, and who were endued with ascetic merit and best qualities, as well as all the celestials, blessed in every way Mahadeva with success.

88. O foremost of persons, when that boon-giving Lord, who destroys the terrors of all creatures of the entire universe, was thus proceeding onwards; the whole universe, as also all the celestials became highly satisfied.

89. There the great Rishis began to praise that Lord of the celestials with numerous kinds of hymns; as also they were repeatedly increasing His energy and stood up there, O monarch.

91. While the Lord was proceeding; millions and millions of the Gandharvas began to play innumerable kinds of musical instruments.

91. Thereupon when the boon-giving Lord, after mounting upon the car, was advancing towards the Asuras, the Lord of the universe smilingly addressed him saying—"Most excellent! Most excellent!!

92. O Lord, do you advance to the spot where the Daityas are waiting. Being highly enlivened, do you urge the heroes.

Do you observe the strength of my arms to-day, while I will slaughter the antagonists in the field of battle."

93. Thereupon, O monarch, the Lord urged those horses, that were possessed of the fleetness of wind or mind, towards that triple city, which was excellently protected by both the Daityas and the Danavas.

94. Accompanied by those horses, that were highly revered by all the three worlds, and also that seemed to drink the skies by their speed, the Lord, endued with great lustre, started immediately with a view to secure victory for the denizens of heaven.

95. When Bhava, riding upon that car, proceeded towards that triple city, his bull (symbol of Bhava) uttered a very excellent and loud roar, filling thereby the different directions with the noise.

96. Having heard that dreadful and loud roar of his (Lord's) bull, there the descendants of Taraka, who were all the enemies of the celestials, attained to their destruction (died).

97. Then others also took their stations there in his front with the object of battle. Upon this Sthanu, O mighty monarch, that wielder of the trident, became senseless with rage.

98. All the creatures were filled with terror; and the three worlds began to tremble. And while he was aiming that shaft, numerous dreadful omens appeared there.

99. On account of the pressure of Shoma Agni, and Vishnu in that shaft and that caused by both Brahman and Rudra, as also of the great weight of that formidable bow, that car began to sink.

100. Thereupon Narayana came out of the pointed head of that arrow; and then having taken up the form of a bull, lifted up that huge car.

101. While, indeed, that car was going down, and the enemies were uttering loud roars, then the illustrious lord, who was possessed of immense prowess, made a very tremendous roar out of rage.

102. O giver of honors, while that illustrious lord Rudra was thus standing at the head of his bull, and on the back of his horses, then he beheld the city belonging to the Danavas.

103. O foremost of men, while Rudra was thus standing upon his bull and horses, then he severed the tents of his horses, and separated into two parts the hoofs of his bull.

104. May you be blessed; From that time forward the hoofs of all animals belonging to the bevine species came to be cloven (into two parts). O monarch, from that time also the teats of horses, that were highly oppressed by that most powerful Rudra, performing miraculous deeds, ceased to appear.

105. Then having filled his bow with the string, and also having aimed that arrow, and again having united his Pashupata weapon with that shaft, Hara reflected for a while that triple city.

106. O most powerful monarch, while Rudra was thus standing, grasping his bow, then by that time, those three cities became united together.

107. Thus when the three cities had come to be of similar character after having lost their individual features, there had taken place loud shouts of joy amongst the high-souled celestials.

108. Thereupon all the celestials, the Siddhas, and the high-class Rishis uttered the word, *success*, whilst thus praying Maheshwara.

109. Thereafter that triple city appeared just at the front of that slayer of the Asuras, that diety of dreadful and indescribable form, that god who was endued with energy that he bore with great difficulty.

110. Then that illustrious lord of the three worlds, after having stretched that celestial bow, shot that arrow, which was made of the essence of the three worlds, at that triple city.

111. O highly fortunate one, when that best of arrows was shot at the triple city, there had arisen loud wails of griefs as those three cities were trembling down upon the earth. Then having burnt those Assuras, he cast them down in the western ocean.

112. Thus three cities were burnt, and the Danavas were all destroyed by wrathful Maheshwara, who had wrought it having the desire for benefitting the three worlds.

113. That fire, springing from his own wrath, was soon quenched by the god, saying stop, stop. Then three-eyed deity addressed the fire, saying—O, do you reduce to ashes three worlds :—

114. Thereupon all the celestials, the entire universe, and the great Rishis, who had now attained to their natural conditions, began to gratify Sthanu, who is endued with unequalled prowess, with the most excellent speeches.

115. When their desires were all fulfilled by such great efforts; all the celestials,

headed by the creater, having been permitted by that illustrions lord, went to their respective abodes, they came from.

116. Thus the illustrious god, that creator of the universe, that superior lord of the gods and the Assuras Maheshwara achieved good for all the worlds.

117. Even as the illustrious Brahman, the creator of the universe, the Grandsire, that supreme Being, that celestial one, acted as the charioteer of Rudra.

118. So do you hold immediately the reins of the horses, belonging to that high-souled son of Radha, like the Grandsire holding the reins of horses belonging to Rudra.

119. Chiefly you are, indeed, superior to Krishna, and to Karna, as well as to Phalguna. O foremost of monarch, there is no doubt about this.

120. In the field of battle, this one does really resemble Rudra; and in policy you resemble Brahman. In consequence of this you two, united together, are capable of vanquishing our enemies, who are like those Assuras.

121. O Shalya, even this should immediately be performed, by following which this Karna to-day, having crushed the son of Kunti, who possesses white horses, and has Krishna for his charioteer, should slaughter him.

122. The fate of Karna, our kingdom, and we ourselves, as well as our victory in the field, rest entirely upon you. Do you, therefore, hold the reins of the foremost of horses belonging to this warrior.

123. Do you listen to another story, which I will once more relate to you. This (story) a virtuous regenerate person told in the presence of my father.

124. O Shalya, having listened to that beatiful story, which is full of causes and consequences of actions, and also having settlled all, do this immediately. There should be made no doubt about this.

125. There was one, named Jamadagni, born in the race of Vrigu, and pratctising severe asceticism. He had a son, celebrated by the name of Rama, and who also was endued with energy and excellent qualities.

129. Having practised the most severe asceticism, that cheerful souled personage, who always observed strict vows, and who also had his soul under control, began to gratify Bhava in order to obtain weapon.

127. Mahadeva became highly gratified with him for his devotional performances and coolness of mind, and Shankara, becoming conscious of the object in his mind, showed himself to him.

Mahadeva said :—

128. O Rama, are you happy? I am exceedingly satisfied with you; and what you desire is known to me. Do you make your soul sanctified. You will obtain all your desire.

129. I will give you all these weapons, when you will become pure. For, O son of Vrigu, these weapons burn that person, who is incompetent and incapable.

130. The son of Jamadagni, having been thus addressed by the lord of the celestials, that wielder of the trident, replied to that lord, who was endued with a lofty soul, after bowing down his head to him.

131. When I worshiped you always, then you, the lord of the celestials, know it very well that I am competent to wield those weapons. So it is necessary for you to give me these weapons.

Duryodhana said :—

132. Thereupon he, by means of severe penances, by subduing his souls and by the observance of vows, as also by means of performing worship, offerings and sacrifices, followed by the performance of Homa, attended with the utterance of the Mantras, began to worship Bhava through many long years.

133. Then Mahadeva, who became highly gratified with that lofty minded descendant of Vrigu's race, enumerated the innumerable virtues of him just in the presence of his divine wife.

134. This Rama is always very devotional towards me, and is of firm vows. The lord, therefore, being thus satisfied with him, enumerated his several virtues in the presence of all the celestials and the Pitris, O slayer of enemies.

135. During this time, all the Daityas had really become very powerful. By them who were darkened with pride and senselessness, all the dwellers of heaven were greatly oppressed.

136. Thereupon all the celestials, having united together, were determined upon to slaughter them; and also made attempts to bring about the destruction of these antagonists. But they, however, were incapable of vanquishing them.

137. Thereupon that god Shankara, after haviug promised all the celestials the destruction of their enemies, and also having called Rama, that descendent of

Vrigu's race before him, addressed him in the following language.

Rudra said :—

138. O descendant of Vrigu race, do you slaughter all the antagonists of the celestials, who have assembled here, out of desire for benefiting all the worlds, as also for the satisfaction of myself. Being thus addressed, he (Vargava) replied to that boon-giving and three-eyed Lord.

Rama said :—

136. O Lord of the celestials, what might have I got, who am quite unfit for the management of all weapons, that I may slaughter all the Danavas, who are very well-acquainted with the use of weapons, as also who are most invincible in the field of battle.

Maheshwara said :—

140 Being commanded by me, do you start at once. You will slaughter these enemies. Having thus subdued all these enemies, you will surely gain innumerable excellent virtues.

141. Hearing these words, and also accepting them in all ways, Rama performed all the propitiatory ceremonies; as also he advanced against the Danavas.

142. Then he addressed those enemies of the celestials, who were possessed of insensibility, pride and enormous strength, saying—"[most invincible in battle as you are, O Daityyas, do you give me battle.

143. I had been sent by the lord ot the celestials to subdue the mighty Asuras." Having been thus addressed by that descendent of Vrigu's race, all the Daityas began to fight with him (Vargava).

144. Then that descendant of Vrigu's race, that delighter of the race of Vrigu, after having slaughtered those Daityas in the field of battle by means of strokes, that were like the touches of the thunder belonging to Indra,

145. Was greatly wounded in the body by the Danavas. But thereafter that son of Jamadagni, that foremost of regenerate persons, being immediately touched by Sthanu, became wholly freed from these wounds.

146. Thereupon the illustrious lord, being gratified by that deed of his, gave to that high-souled descendant of Vrigu's race various kinds of boons.

147. He was then addressed by that lord of the celestials, that wielder of the trident, who became highly gratified with him in the following way.

148. The wounds, caused upon your body by the falling of innumerable weapons testify to the superhuman act performed by you. O delighter of Vrigu's race, do you, therefore, accept these numerous celestial weapons from me, according to your desire.

Duryodhana said :—

149. Thereupon, having obtained all the diverse kinds of weapons and boons desired in his heart, Rama performed the ceremony of bowing down his head to Shiva.

150. Thus having recieved the command from the lord of the celestials, that great devotee went away. This is the old story, which then the Rishi narrated (to my father).

151. O foremost of persons, the son of Vrigu handed over all that knowledge of archery to the high-souled Karna, being gratified in his inner heart.

152. O ruler of earth, if Karna had the slightest fault, in that case the descendant of Vrigu's race would not have given him these celestial weapons.

153. I do not think that Karna was ever born in the family of a charioteer. Rather I think that he is the son of a god, or he is come of the race of the Kshatriyas.

154. My opinion is that he was abandoned (in his infancy), lest his race be ascertained. O Shalya, this one, namely Karna, is, indeed, by no means born of the family of a charioteer.

155. This mighty car-warrior resembling the very Sun, is furnished with the (natural) ear-rings, armour, and long arms; could is be possible that the she deer had given birth to a tiger;

156. Indeed, his two arms are very massive; and they are like the trunk of the prince of elephants. Do you behold his broad chest, which is powerful enough to resist all sorts of enemies.

157. O monarch, this Karna, the son of Vikartana, can never be an ordinary individual. O lord of kings, this high-souled disciple of Rama is really a very powerful warrior.

Thus ends the thirty-fourth chapter, the history of destruction of the triple city belonging to the Asuras in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.)*

Duryodhana said :—

1. Thus that illustrious god, Brahman, that Grandsire of all the worlds, acted as the charioteer on that occasion ; while Rudra acted as the car-warrior.

2. That hero, who is superior to the warrior on the car, should be made to act as the charioteer. You do, therefore, hold the reins of the horses in the field of battle, O foremost of persons.

3. Even as, on that occasion, the Grandsire was elected by all the celestials with great care, so you, who are superior to Karna, are selected with great care by us.

4. As he (Gradsire), O great monarch, was chosen as one superior to the lord (Shankara) by all the celestials, even so do you immediately restrain the horses of Rudra.

Shalya said :—

5. O best of persons, this celestial and most extraordinary history regarding those two foremost of immortals, narrated several times, was heard by me also.

6. O descendant of the Bharata race, I have also heard how the great Grandsire acted as the charioteer of Bhava, and how the Asuras were all slaughtered with a single arrow.

7. All this, namely how the Grandsire, that illustrious one, acted as the charioteer on that occasion, had fully been known to Krishna beforehand. Again, Krishna knows very well in all their details what had already taken place, and what will take place hereafter.

8. O descendant of the Bharata race, knowing the import of all this, Krishna took up the charioteership of the son of Pritha, even as the Self-create One took up the charioteer-ship of Rudra.

9. If it be possible that the son of charioteer (Karna) should ever slay the son of Kunti, beholding the son of Pritha slaughtered, Keshava himself will surely engage in battle. And that holder of the conch, the discus, and the mace will destroy your whole race.

10. There exists no king in our whole army, who will be able to stand in the front of that high-souled descendant of Vrishni's race, when he will be filled with wrath.

Sanjaya said :—

11. Your son, who was a chastiser of enemies, and who was endued with mighty arms, and who also had a very cheerful heart, now replied to the king of the Madras, who was speaking in such a tone.

12. In the field of battle, O mighty-armed warrior, you do not under-mine the value of Karna, the son of Vikartana, who is most supreme of all that are versed in the management of arms, and who, again, has crossed the great ocean of all *Shastras.*

13. Hearing the most tremendous and very high twang of his bow-string and the sound of his palms, even the troops of the Pandavas run away in different directions.

14. O mighty-armed heroe, you have witnessed it with your own eyes, and Ghatotkacha, who dreamed innumerable dreams, was slain by (Karna) in that night with several other illusions before him.

15. Having been encompassed with very great terrors during all these days, Vibhatsu could never stay in the ranks facing against him (Karna).

16. Then, O monarch, the very powerful Bhimasena, who was hemmed in on all sides by the horns of the bow (belonging to Karna), was addressed in these terms namely *Fool* and *Glutton.*

17. So also, O sire, the two war-like sons of Madri, having been first vanquished by him in that dreadful battle, were not slain by him in the field having some motive in view.

18. By him (Karna) also that most heroic warrior of the Vrishni race, that chief of the Satwata clan, Satyaki, who was a mighty warrior, was vanquished in the battle; as also he was deprived of his car.

19. And several other heroes, namely all the Srinjayas, who were headed by Dhrishtadyumna, were often and often vanquished in the field by him, who felt the greatest ease in the battle.

20. How will it be possible then that the Pandavas will defeat that great car-warrior in the field of battle, who, when enraged, can slaughter even Purandara, that wielder of the thunder bolt, in battle.

21. O heroic warrior, you are wel versed in diverse kinds of weapons, andl you have crossed over the ocean of all branches of knowledge. And there exists none else in this world, who is equal to you in the strength of arms.

22. O monarch, you are made up of shafts; and you are invincible in respect to your antagonists in prowess. O slayer of enemies, you are, therefore, called Shalya (shaft).

23. All the warriors of the Shatwata race are not able to stand, encountering the strength of your arms. O monarch, is the highly powerful Krishna superior to you in the strength of your arms?

24. Even as, indeed, the whole force (belonging to the Pandavas) is supported by Krishna upon the fall of Phalguna, so should this vast army (of the Kurus) be supported by you upon the death of Karna.

25. O sire, for what reason should Vasudeva restrain your forces in the field of battle; and for what reason also you will not slaughter the hostile army.

26. Now, O sire, for your sake I wish to go in the way in this field of battle, that had already been trodden by my heroic brothers (slain), as well as by all the rulers of the earth.

Shalya said :—

27. O son of Gandhari, O bestower of honors, when you describe me in the presence of your troops to be superior to the son of Devaki I am highly satisfied with you.

28. O hero, even as you desire, so now I accept the charioteer-ship of that highly illustrious son of Radha, while he will engage in fight with that foremost one of the sons of Pandu.

29. But O warlike one, I must have a condition in respect to the son of Vikartana, namely that I may be allowed to utter any words, I like, in his presence.

Sanjaya said :—

30. Then, O monarch, O sire, your son, attended by Karna, addressed the king of the Madras, in the presence of all the Kshatriyas, saying—*So be it.*

31. Having been thus assured by Shalya's accepting the office of charioteer-ship (of Karna), Duryodhana, being highly gratified, embraced Karna.

32. Morever your son, being greatly praised (by the bands around him), addressed Karna, saying—do you slaughter all the sons of Pritha in the field of battle, even as Mahendra (Indra) slaughtered all the Danavas in the battle of old.

33. When the driver-ship of his horses was accepted by Shalya, Karna became highly gratified, and once more addressed Duryodhana, saying.

34. Indeed, this king of the Madras does not say this in a cheerful spirit. Therefore, O monarch, do you request him once more (for the charioteership) in sweeter words.

35. Thereupon king Duryodhana, who was very learned, and versed in all objects, and who also was possessed of great strength, once more addressed that ruler of earth, Shalya, the chief of the Madras, in a voice as deep as the rumbling of the clouds, filling the whole region with the echo of his voice.

36. O Shalya, Karna thinks that he should fight with Arjuna to-day. So you, O foremost of men, restrain his horses in the field of battle.

37. Karna is most willing to slaughter Phalguna (Arjuna), after having slain all the other heroes inferior to him. In consequence of this, O monarch, I repeatedly entreat you to hold the reins of his horses.

38. Even as Krishna, that foremost one amogst all the charioteers, is the adviser of the son of Pritha, so you would support the son of Radha in all ways.

Sanjaya said :—

39. Thereupon shalya, that king of the Madras, being highly gratified, after having embraced your son, Duryodhana, that slayer of enemies, addressed him, saying.

Shalya said :—

40. O monarch, O son of Gandhari, O handsome-looking one, if you so desire, I will perform all that you consider to be dear to you.

41. O foremost of the Bharata race, for whatever acts I am competent, there I will engage myself with the whole of my heart; and I will bear the burden of all your acts.

42. Whatever, either agreeable or disagreeable, I will order to Karna, who are willing to do you good, for all that you, as well as Karna, should excuse me in every way.

Karna said :—

43. Even as Brahma is to Ishana, or as Keshava is to the son of Pritha, so you, O king of the Madras, should ever be engaged in rendering us good.

Shalya said :—

44. The most respectable personages believe in these four different ways, which are enumerated thus: self-blame, or self-praise, and speaking ill or well of others.

45. O wise one, whatever I will speak with a view to draw out your confidence, all that is full of self-praise. Be what it may, do you listen to it properly.

46. O illustrious one, I am, like Matali, competent to act as the charioteer of Indra.

And careful as I am, I am also versed in the management of horses, as, again, I am acquainted with all sorts of knowledge and learning, conscious of the means of avoiding all future dangers.

47. Then, O sinless one, I will drive your horses, whilst you will be engaged in battle with the son of Pritha in the field. O son of a charioteer, be you free from all anxieties and troubles.

Thus ends the thirty-fifth chapter, Shalya's accepting the charioteership of Karna, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Duryodhana said :—

1. O Karna, this king of Madra, superior even to Krishna, will act as your driver, like Matali, the driver of the king of gods.

2. As Matali manages his car drawn by the horse of Hari so will Salya manage today your car and horses.

3. With you as the warrior on that car and the king of Madra as the charioteer it will,, forsooth, defeat the Parthas in battle.

anjaya said :—

4. Thereupon again in the morning Duryodhana addressed the active king of Madra in the battle field saying :—

5. O king of Madra, manage in battle the excellent horses of Karna. Protected by you Karna will defeat Arjuna. Thus addressed he expressed his consent and got upon the chariot, O Bharata.

6. When Salya went there, Karna, in good spirits, addressed his driver saying, O charioteer, quickly equip' this car for me.

7. Having duly equipped that victorious car the best of its kind, which resembled the city of Gandarvas Salya presented it to Karna, saying "May good betide you and may you come off victorious !"

8—9. Duly worshipping that car which had formerly been sanctified by a priest conversant with Brahma,going round it and worshipping the sun, Karna, the foremost of car-warriors, addressed the king of Madra, standing near him, saying "get upon the chariot."

10. Then like a lion ascending a hill the highly energetic Salya got upon the strong built car of Karna,

11. Beholding Salya stationed there Karna got upon his most excellent car like the sun riding on a mass of clouds charged with lightning.

12. Seated on the same car those two horses, effulgent like the sun and fire, shone there like the sun and fire sitting together on a cloud in the sky.

13. Eulogised those two highly effulgent heroes shone like Indra and Agni (fire-god) adored with hymns in a sacrifice by *Ritwikâs* and *Sadasyas.*

14. Salya holding the reins of the horses Karna stood on that car stretching his dreadful bow like the sun enveloped with a circular light.

15. Stationed on that best of cars Karna, the foremost of men, with the rays of his shafts, looked like the sun on the mount Mandara.

16. Duryodhana invited to battle that mighty armed son of Radha of incomparable energy stationed on the car saying,

17. O hero, O car-warrior, do you perform in the presence of all bond men an action, hard of accomplishment which had not been performed even by Bhishma and Drona.

18. I had always thought that those two mighty car-warriors Bhishma and Drona would kill, without any doubt, Bhima and Arjuna.

19. Like the second wielder of thunderbolt do you accomplish that heroic feat in the great battle which had not been performed by them.

20. Either attack the pious Yudhisthira or kill Arjuna and Bhima, O son of Radha, and the twin sons of Madri.

21. Many blessings and victory attend you. Start for battle, O foremost of men, consume the army of the Pandavas.

22. Ten thousands of trumpets and ten thousand drums were simultaneously struck and produced a sound resembling the muttering of clouds in the sky.

23. Accepting his words that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Radha stationed on the car, said to Salya, an expert in fighting.

24. Drive the horses on, O great heroe so that I may kill Arjuna, Bhima, the twins and Yudhishthira.

25. O Salya, Arjuna will witness to day the strength of my arms when I will discharge hundreds and thousands of *Kanka* feathere arrows.

26. I will shoot to-day, O Salya, powerful arrows for destroying the Pandavas and securing victory for Duryodhana.

Salya said :—

27. O son of a charioteer, why do you make light of the sons of Pandu who are all very powerful, great bow men and experts in the use of other weapons.

28. They never retreat from battle, fortunate, unconquerable and are of great prowess. They are capable of striking fear even into the heart of Indra himself.

29. O son of Radha, when you will hear the twang of his Gandiva bow in battle like the peal of the thunder itself you will not give vent to such words.

30—31. When you will see Yudhishthira and the twins making a canopy with their sharpened shafts like that of clouds in the sky and other irrepresible kings all light-handed, shooting arrows reducing the number of their enemies you will not speak such words.

32. Disregarding the words spoken by the king of Madra Karna said to him who was greatly active "go on"

Thus ends the thirty-sixth chapter, the conversation between Karna and Salya in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Beholding the great bowmen Karna stationed for battle all the Kurus began to utter loud cries of joy from all sides.

2. Thereupon with the beatings of cymbals and drums, the sound of all sorts of weapons and the war-cries of the greatly active heroes all your soldiers proceeded to the battle-field, making death the final point of stoppage.

3. When Karna went all the soldiers, were filled with joy. The earth, O king, trembled and created a loud noise.

4. All the great planets including the sun seemed moving about. And the meteors were seen blazing up all the quarters.

5. Cloudless thunders fell and fierce winds blew.

6. A large number of animals and birds kept to the right of your army and emitted noise foreboding a dreadful calamity.

7. After the departure of Karna his horses trembled down on earth. And a dreadful shower of bones fell from the sky.

8. O king, their weapons were as if burning and the flags were trembling. And the horses shed tears.

9. Those and other dreadful portends appeared there presaging the destruction of the Kauravas. Stupified by Destiny they paid no attention to them.

10. Seeing the departure of the chariot teer's son all the kings cried out victory. The Kouravas then thought that the Pandavas had been defeated.

11. The king Vikartana, the subduer of hostile heroes and the foremost of car-warriors, stood on the car, thinking of the death of Bhishma and Drona. He shone there like the sun or fire.

12. Thinking of the powerful feats of Arjuna, elated with self conceit and pride, worked up with anger and breathing hot and hard, said to Salya.

13. When I am with my bow I do not fear even the angry Mahendra with thunderbolt in his hand. Beholding Bhishma and other leading heroes lying on the battle field I do not feel the least anxiety.

14. Seeing the immaculate Bhishma and Drona equal to Indra and Vishnu, the grinders of the best of cars, elephants and horses and who are not to be killed by any, slain by the enemy I do not feel any fear in battle today.

15. Well-versed in the use of powerful weapons and himself the foremost of Brahmanas why did not the preceptor kill in battle all the enemies who killed the most powerful of our heroe with their drivers, elephants and chariots.?

16. Listen to me, O Karna, I tell you the truth, thinking of this Drona in battle that there is none amongst you excepting myself who can withstand the advancing Arjuna the heroes who resembled the most dreadful Regent of Death.

17. In Drona were skill, practice, strength, patience, the greatest of weapons and policy. While that high-souled one has come by death I think all others, shorn of strength, on the point of death.

18. Even on reflection I do not find any thing permanent in this world on account of the eternal connection of acts. When the preceptor himself is no more who can expect that he will surely live till even today's sun-rise.

19. While preceptor has been slain in battle by the enemies, weapons, strength, prowess, actions and wise policy cannot forsooth conduce to the happiness of a man,

20. In energy Drona equalled the sun or fire; in prowess he was like Vishnu or Indra, in policy he was like Vrihashpati or Ushanas; invincible though he was even weapons could not protect him.

21. Our women and children are weeping and bewailing, the manliness of the sons of Dretarashtra has been defeated. I know therefore, O Salya, that it is I who am to fight; proceed therefore against the array of our enemies.

22. Save me who can withstand the army in the midst of which is the truthful Pandava king Bhimasena, Arjuna, Vasudeva, Satyaki, Srinjaya and the twins.

23. Therefore, O king of Madra, move on quickly in this battle towards the Panchalas, Pandavas and Srinjayas. Encountering them either I will kill them or will myself go to the abode of death by the road followed by Drona.

24. Do not think, O Salya, that I will not enter into the heart of their army. I cannot tolerate such dissensions amongst the kith and kin. I will even follow Drona, renouncing my life.

25. A wise man or an ignorant person, none can escape death, when the lease of his life expires. Therefore, O learned one. I shall proceed against Partha. I cannot transgress my destiny.

26. O king, the son of Chitravirya's son always does me good. For the accomplishment of his object I will give up this dear life which it is so very difficult to renounce.

27. Rama conferred upon me this best of cars covered with tiger-skins, with axle producing no sound, equipped with a golden seat, having a *trivenu* made of silver and drawn by best of horses.

28. Behold, O Salya, these beautiful bows, these flags, these maces, these dreadful arrows, this shining sword, this powerful weapon, this white conch of dreadful and loud blare.

29. Mounted upon this chariot with banners, its wheels producing a sound like that of a thunderbolt drawn by white horses and adorned with beautiful quivers I shall, with all my might, destroy that best of car-warriors, Arjuna.

30. Even if death himself, the destroyer of all, protects vigilantly the son of Pandu, in battle I will either kill him or go myself to the abode of death following Bhishma.

31. If Yama, Varuna, Kuvera, and Vasava with all their followers come here and unitedly protect the son of Pandu in battle, I will even then defeat him with them all. What is the use of speaking more?

Sanjaya said :—

32. Hearing those words of Karna who was delighted at the prospect of the battle, the powerful king of Madras laughed at him and said the following to check him.

33. Do not brag thus, do not brag thus, O Karna; you are so much transported with joy that you are speaking what you should not do. Who is that Dhananjaya, the best of men, and who again are you the vilest of men?

34. Who else save him the foremost of men (Arjuna) could carry away by force the younger sister of Keshava, having made a confusion in the capital of Yadus that was protected by the younger brother of Indra and that resembled the celestial region protected by the king of gods.

35. Who else save, Arjuna, powerful like the king of gods, could on the occasion of a quarrel brought about by the slaughter of an animal, summon Bhaba, the lord of lords, the creator of the worlds, to battle?

26. To honor the god of fire Jaya, (Arjuna) vanquished the Asuras, gods, great snakes, men, birds, Pishacas, Yakshas and Rakshasas with his arrow and gave him the food he wanted.

37. Do you remember, O Karna, the occasion when killing the large unmber of enemies with this arrows effulgent like the sun Arjuna liberated the son of Dhritarashtra himself among the Kurus?

38. Do you remember the occasion when you yourself were the first to take to your heels and the Pandavas, having defeated the Gandharvas headed by Chitraratha, liberated the quarrelsome sons of Dhritarashtra?

39. When Virata's kine were siezed by them, the Kauravas, overwhelming in number both as regards men and animals and having the preceptor, the preceptor's son and Bhishma amongst them, were defeated by that foremost of men. Why did you not defeat Arjuna then?

40. Another battle has presented itself to-day for your destruction. If you do not fly from the battle in fear of your enemies you will be killed, O charioteer's son, as soon as you will go to the battle.

Sanjaya said :—

41. When the king of Madra was thus, in all sincerity, addressing these harsh words to him and singing the glories of his enemy, that slayer of foes, the commander of the Kuru army, excited with anger, said.

Karna said :—

42. Let it be so. Why do you praise Arjuna so much. A battle will soon take place between him and me. If he defeats me in battle then thine praises will be considered as well said.

Sanjaya said :—

43—44. The king of Madra said 'let it be so,' and gave no reply, when Karna desirous of fighting, said to Salya 'go'. Then that car-warrior, having white horses and Salya as his driver, dashed against his enemies killing a number of enemies in battle like the sun destroying darkness.

45. Then in that car covered with tiger-skins and white horses yoked to it, Karna went on cheerfully. And seeing the armies of the Pandavas he immediately enquired after Arjuna.

Thus ends the thirty-seventh chapter, the conversation between Karna and Salya on the eve of the battle in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After Karna, gladdening your army, had started for battle he addressed to every Pandava soldier he met with these harsh words.

2. I shall give him whatever riches he will want who will point out to me to-day the high-souled (Arjuna) of white horses.

3. I shall further more confer upon him, if he is not satisfied, a cart-load of jewels who will tell me where Dhananjaya is.

4. If the person who will point out Arjuna be not contented with it, I shall give him a hundred kine with an equal number of brass vessels for milching them.

5. I will confer one hundred prosperous villages upon the man who will find out Arjuna for me. I will also give him who will point out Arjuna a number of damsels having long tresses and black eyes and a car drawn by white mules.

6. If the person, who will point out Arjuna, be not contented with it I shall give him another best of cars made of gold and drawn by six bulls as large as elephants.

7. I shall furthermore confer upon him one hundred well-adorned females wearing golden necklaces, fair and accomplished in singing and dancing.

8—9. If the person, who will point out Arjuna, be not contented with it I shall give him a hundred elephants, a hundred villages, a hundred cars, ten thousand horses of most superior breed, fat, docile, gifted with other qualities, capable of dragging cars and well-trained.

10. I shall also give the person who will point out Arjuna four hundred kine, each with golden horns and her calf.

11—12. If the person, who will find out Arjuna for me, be not satisfied with it I shall give him a more valuable present, namely five hundred horses—with gold-trappings and jewelled ornaments. I shall also give him eighteen other tame horses.

13. I shall give him, who will point out Arjuna to me, a golden car adorned with various ornaments and drawn by best Kamvoja horses.

14. I shall give him who will find out Keshava and Arjuna all the riches that will be left by them after slaying these two.

15. Having expressed himself thus in the battle Karna blew his excellent conch sea-born and making sweet blare.

16. Hearing the words of the charioteer's son, which seemed proper to him, the great king Duryodhana, with all his followers, became filled with delight.

17—18. Then there arose in the midst of the army, O king, O foremost of men, the beat of cymbals and drums, leonine roars of the elephants and the sounds of the various musical instruments as well as war-cries of the heroes filled with joy.

19. When the Kuru army was thus filled with joy the king of Madra said in derision the following words to the subduer of foes, the son of Radha, the powerful car-warrior who was thus bragging and about to plunge himself into that ocean of battle.

Thus ends the thirty-eighth chapter, Karna offering to give rewards, in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Salya said :—

1. O son of a charioteer, give away to any man a golden car with six bulls as large as the elephants you will see Dhananjaya to-day.

2. Foolishly you are giving away your wealth as if you are Vaisravana, the king

of riches. Without any trouble, O son of Radha, you will see Dhananjaya to-day.

3. You are giving away your riches as if they are nothing like a highly ignorant man. You do not out of ignorance percieve the demerit attached to gifts made to unworthy persons.

4. You may perform many *Yajnas* with the immense wealth that you are thus distributing. Therefore, O charioteer's son, do you perform *Yajnas*.

5. But vain is the desire that you cherish out of folly, for destroying Krishna and Arjuna. We have never heard of a couple of lions overthrown by a fox.

6. You seek what you should never do. You have no such friends as will prevent you from immediately falling into fire.

7. You are unable to distinguish between what you should do and should not. Forsooth, the lease of your life has run out. What man, desirous of living, would give vent to such incoherent words unworthy of being listened to.

8. This your attempt is like that of a person, who, having tied round his neck a heavy stone, wishes to cross the ocean with his two arms or like that of a man who wishes to leap down from the summit of a mountain.

9. If you wish to secure your well-being, fight with Dhananjaya from the division of your own army well protected and aided by your warriors.

10. I tell yau this for the well-being of Duryodhana and not out of any ill will for you. If you wish to preserve your life obey my words.

Karna said :—

11. Depending on the strength of my own arms I wish to meet Arjuna in battle. You are an enemy with the look of a friend and wish to frighten me.

12. No one will be able to make me change this resolution, not even Indra taking up his thunderbolt, what to speak of an insignificant mortal ?

Sanjaya said :—

13. After Karna had had his say, Salya the king of Madra, with a view to provoke him greatly, said in reply.

14. When keen edged and *Kanka* feathered arrows, shot off his bow by the powerful Phalguna with all his energy, will come upon you, you will repent for your encounter with that heroe.

15. When Partha, otherwise called Savyasachin, taking up his celestial bow, will scorch the Kuru army and assail you greatly with his keen edged arrows then O charioteer's son, you will repent for your folly.

16. Like a child, on mother,s lap seeking to catch hold of the sun, you, out of your folly, wish to defeat the effulgent Arjuna stationed on his car.

17. By desiring to fight, O Karna, to-day with Arjuna of illustrious feats, you have addressed yourself to rule your body against the keen edges of a trident.

18. O charioteer's son, your challange of Arjuna is like that of an over active little deer against a huge angry lion.

19. O charioteer's son, do not challenge that highly energetic prince like a fox, gratified with meat, challenging a lion. Do not be slain by encountering Arjuna.

20. O Karna, your challenge of Dhananjaya, the son of Pritha, is like that of a hare challenging a powerful elephant with tusks large as plough-shares and with temporal juice trickling out of its mouth and temples.

21. By wishing to fight with Partha you are, out of folly, striking with a piece of wood the black cobra of deadly venom furiously excited within its hole.

22. You are a fool to yell at Arjuna, the best of men, disregarding him like a jackal yelling at an excited lion.

23. As a snake, for its own destruction, encounters the best of birds Garuda, highly active and of beautiful feathers, so do you O Karna, challange Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

24. You wish to cross, without a raft at the rise of the moon, the ocean, the receptacle of all waters with dreadful huge waves and teeming with acquatic animals.

25. O Karna, your challenge of Dhananjaya is like that of a calf against a fearful bull of sharpened horns and with a neck thick as a drum.

26. Your roaring at Arjuna, the deity of clouds among men, is like that of a frog at a dreadful huge cloud discharging copious showers of rain.

27. Like a dog barking from within his master's house at a forest-ranging tiger you bark at Dhananjaya, the foremost of men.

28. While living in the forest in the midst of hares a jackal, O Karna, considers himself a lion till he actually sees the latter.

29. So do you, O son of Radha, consider yourself a lion for you do not see that subduer of foes, that foremast of men, Dhananjaya.

30. You consider yourself a lion for you have not seen Krishna and Arjuna stationed on the same car like the sun and moon.

31. As long as you do not hear the twang of Gandiva in battle, so long you are able to do what you please.

32. Beholding the ten quarters filled with the sound of his car and the twang of his bow, and him roaring like a tiger you will become a jackal.

33. You are always a jackal and Dhananjaya always a lion. On account of your envy and hatred for heroes, you appear like a jackal.

34. As a mouse and a cat are to each other in strength, or a fox and a lion or a hare and an elephant, as falsehood and truth, ambrosia and poison so you and Partha are known to all by your respective *deeds*.

Thus ends the thirty-ninth chapter Salya reviling Karna in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XL.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Thus reviled by Salya of incomparable energy the son of Radha understanding the meaning of the word Salya by his words said to him in great anger.

Karna said:—

2. O Salya, the meritorious only appreciate the merits of those who possess them, and not one who has none. You are destitute of all merits. How can you understand what is merit and what is demerit.

3. O Salya, I know the powerful weapons of Arjuna, his anger, energy, bow, arrows and as well as the prowess of that high-souled one.

4. O Salya, you do not know, so well as I do, the greatness of Krishna, the foremost of kings.

5. Knowing my own strength as well as that of Pandava I have challenged him in battle, O Salya. I shall not fall into fire like an insect.

6. I have this arrow, O Salya, keen edged, blood-drinking, occupying alone one quiver, furnished with wings, well-steeped in oil and well-adorned.

7. It lies in sandal dust and is being adored by me from a long time. Having the shape and nature of a serpent it is poisonous and dreadful and capable of killing a great many men, horses and elephants.

8. Highly dreadful in form it can go through coats of mail and bones. When worked up with anger I can perforate with it even the huge Meru mountain.

9. I will not discharge this arrow at any other person excepting Arjuna or Krishna, the son of Devaki. Listen, I tell you the truth.

10. Worked up with anger, I shall with that arrow, O Salya, fight with Vasudeva and Dhananjaya. That will be a deed becoming me.

11. Of all the heroes of the Vrishni race in Krishna only prosperity exists eternally. Of all the sons of Pandu, Partha is the one who comes off invariably victorious.

12. Those two foremost of men, seated on the same car, will encounter me single in battle. you will, O Salya, witness to-day the nobility of my birth.

13. You will see that (with one shaft) I will kill those two cousins, one of whom is the son of the aunt and the other the son of the maternal uncle—those two invincible warriors. They will look like two pearls strung together in the same string.

14. The Gandiva of Arjuna, the discus of Krishna and their two banners having the emblems of a monkey and Garuda strike terror into the timid. But they are sources of delight to me.

15. You are a fool, a bad character and do not know the mode of a true war-fare. Possessed by fear you are giving vent to these ravings.

16. Or you are praising them for some thing which is not known to me. Having killed those two first I shall kill you to-day with all your relatives.

17. Born in a sinful country you are wicked, mean and a wretch of a Kshatrya. Being a friend why do you frighten me with (the praises of) those two Krishnas?

18. Either they will kill me today or I will kill them both. I know my strength well and I do not fear the two Krishnas.

19. I will kill single handed a thousand Vasudevas and hundreds of Phalgunas. Hold your tongue, O you born in a sinful country.

20—21. Hear from me, O Salya, the sayings that have already passed into pro-

verbs, that men young and old and women, persons while sporting utter as if they are their studies about the wicked Madrakas. The Brahmanas also recounted them formerly in the courts of kings. Hearing them, O fool, you may forgive or give a reply.

22. Madraka is always a hater of friends. He who hates us is a Madraka. There is no good feeling in a Madrka who is the vilest of men and gives vent to mean words.

23. The Madraka is always wicked, untruthful and crooked. We have heard that the Madrakas are wicked till the hour of their death.

24.—25. Amongst them the father, the son, the mother, the mother-in-law, the father-in-law, the maternal uncle, the son-in-law, the daughter-in-law, the brother, the grandson, other relations and guests, slaves, male and female mingle together. Thus women freely mix with men, known and unknown.

26. Dishonest as they are they live upon fried and powdered corn and fish in their homes and laugh and cry being drunk; they also eat beef.

27. They sing unconnected songs and move about lustfully. They indulge in free speeches amongst themselves. How can virtue find a room among them?

28. No one should make friends with a Madraka or enter into hostilities with him. There is no feeling of friendship in him. The Madraka is always impure,

29. Friendship is lost on a Madraka as purity in Ghandarakas and as oblation offered in a sacrifice where the king is both the sacrificer and the priest.

30. As a Brahmana performing the initiation ceremony of a Sudra meets with deterioration, as one who hates a Brahmana, meets with deterioration so a person, forming alliance with a Madraka, is deteriorated.

31. As there is no friendship in a Madraka, so is your poison is powerless, O Scorpion; with this Mantra of Atharvan I have duly performed the ceremony of peace.

32. It is seen that with these words the wise treat a person bitten by a scorpion and affected by its poison.

33. Thinking of this, O learned one, either hold your tongue or hear something more that I will say.

34. (The Madraka) women, influenced by liquor, throw off their robes and dance; they do not observe control in intercourse and do whatever they like.

35—36. Being the son of one of those women, how can you, O Madraka, dictate duties unto a man? Being the son of one of those women who live and answer calls of nature like camels and asses, sinful and shameless as they are, how can you wish to dictate the duties of men?

37. When a Madraka woman is requested to give a little bit of vinegar she scratches her hips and reluctant to give it gives vent to harsh words.

38. "Let no one ask of me vinegar which is so dear to me. I would give him my son, I would give him my husband but I would not part with my vinegar.

39. The Madraka maidens, I am informed, are generally shameless, have profuse hairs, are gluttonous and impure.

40. These and such like many other things of their evil acts beginning with the tip of their hair to that of their nails I can recount.

41. The Madrakas and Sindhu Souviras are born in a sinful country, are *Melechas* and innocent of duties. How can they know them?

42. We have heard that this is the prime duty of the Kshatriyas that when slain in battle he would lie down on earth being spoken highly of by the pious.

43. This is my first resolution, desirous of heaven after my death as I am that I will lay down my life in this clash of arms.

44. I am the dear friend of the intelligent son of Dhritarashtra. For him are my vital airs and the wealth that I possess.

45. As for you, born as you are in a sinful country it is clear that you have been bribed by the Pandavas as because you behave towards us in every thing like an enemy.

46. As a pious man is not to be easily pursuaded by atheists so I am not to be dissuaded from this battle by hundreds of persons like you.

47. Like a deer perspiring, you may either bewail or pant; observant of the duties of a Kshatriya I am incapable of being frightened by you.

48. I remember the end, described to me formerly by my preceptor Rama, which befell those foremost of men who laid down their lives and did not return from the field of battle.

49. I am bent upon rescuing the Kouravas and killig my enemies; know that I am determined upon imitating the excellent conduct of Pururavas.

50. I do not, O king of Madraka, see a man in the three worlds who can shake this resolution of mine.

51. Do not speak more. Knowing this Why do you rove in such a way from fear? O wretch of a Madraka, I shall not kill you now and offer your dead body to the carnivorous animals.

52. Out of regard for a friend, O Salya, for the sake of Dhritarashtra's son and for avoiding blame—for these three reasons, you will live.

53. O king of Madras, if you speak again in this strain I will crush down your head with my mace, as hard as the thunder.

54. O you born in a sinful country, people will either see or hear to-day that either the two Krishnas have slain Karna or Karna has killed the two Krishnas."

55. Saying this the son of Radha, O king, once more addresesd the king of Madras, saying "go on! go on."

Thus ends the fortieth chapter, the discourse of Karna and Salya in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Hearing the words of the great car-warrior Karna who took delight in battle Salya again said to him, citing an example.

2. I am born in a family the members of which performed sacrifices, never fled away from the field of battle and who were kings whose heads were sprinkled with the water of coronation. I am also devoted to virtue.

3. O Vrisha, you appear like an intoxicated man. For all that, out of friendship I will try to cure you of your mistakes.

4. Hear, O Karna, this allegory of a crow that I will relate. Hearing this, you may do whatever you like, O you shorn of intelligence and the wretch of your family.

5. O Karna, I do not remember a single sin in me for which you desire to kill me innocent as I am.

6. I must tell you what is good for you and what is bad. I know both, and besides I am the driver of your car and wish good to the king Duryodhana.

7—9. (I know) what land is even and what is uneven—the strength and weakness of the car-warrior (on my chariot) the fatigue and perspiration of the horses along with the car-warrior; (I have) a knowledge of the weapons, of the cries of birds and animals, of what would be heavy for the horses and what would be exceedingly heavy for them, of the taking out of the arrows, of the wounds, of the weapons counteracting each other, of the diverse modes of fighting and of all kinds of omens and indications. I know all this who am so familar with this car. I therefore describe to you this incident once more.

10. There lived on the other side of the sea a Vaishya who rolled in wealth and corn. He performed *Yajnas*, made liberal gifts, was quiet, observant of the duties of his own order and pure in habits and mind.

11. He had a number of sons of whom he was fond and kind to all creatures. He lived without any fear in the kingdom of a pious king.

12. There was a crow who lived upon the leavings of the food of the well-behaved children of the Vaishya.

13. His children always gave the crow meat, curds, milk, pudding, honey and butter.

14. Thus fed with the leavings of the food by those sons of the Vaishya the crow became arrogant and began to think light of all birds who were equal to him or even superior.

15. It so happened that once on a time several cheerful swans, quick-coursing, capable of going every where at will, equal to Garuda in flight and speed, came to that side of the ocean.

16. Seeing those swans the Vaishya boys said to the crow:—"O ranger of the sky, you are superior to all winged creatures."

17. Thus imposed upon by the little-witted children, the bird, out of folly and arrogance, took their words as true.

18. Proud of the leavings on which he fed the crow, approaching the swans who were capable of traversing a great distance, desired to enquire who amongst them was the leader.

19. That foolish crow challenged him whom he considered as the leader amongst those swans capable of going to a great distance, saying "Let us compete in fight."

20. Hearing the words of the arrogant crow, the swans, that had come there, the foremost of birds gifted with great strength, began to laugh.

21. The swans, who were capable of coursing everywhere at will then, addressed the crow saying,

22. "We are swans and live in the Manasa lake. We range over the whole earth and amongst the winged creatures we are always spoken high of for the length of the distances we traverse.

23. A crow as you are, how do you, O fool, challenge a mighty swan coursing every where at will and traversing over a great distance. Tell us, O crow, how you will fly with us."

24. Finding fault repeatedly with the words of the swans, the vain crow, on account of the foolishness of its species, at last gave this answer.

The crow said :—

25. Forsooth shall I fly displaying a hundred and one dlfferent kinds of motion. I shall show them traversing every hundred *Yojanas* with each separate and beautiful motion.

26—29. Rising up, swooping down, whirling around, going straight, proceding gently, coursing aslant up and down, going still, wheeling around, going back, sowing high, darting forward, sowing higher up with greater velocity more, moving on gently—and going on in various ways. These various motions I shall display before you. You will see my strength.

30. With one of these diverse kinds of motions I shall immediately soar into the sky. Tell me, O swans, by which of these motion shall I course through the sky.

31. Settling your course you shall have to fly with me. Adopting all these motions you shall have to course with me through the sky having no support."

32. Having been thus addressed by the crow, O son of Radha, one of the swanss said to him laughing. Hear from me (what he said).

The Swan said :—

33—34. Forsooth O crow, you will course in hundred and and different ways. I shall however fly in one kind of motion which all other birds know; for I do not know any other, O crow. As for yourself, O you of red eyes, you may fly in any kind of way you like.

35. Thereupon all the crows that had assembled there laughed saying "How will the swan with one kind of flight beat down a hundred flights?

36. The powerful and the quick-coursing crow will beat down the swan with one flight.

37. Then those two, the swan and the crow, rose into the sky challenging each other—the swan coursing in one motion and the crow in a hundred different ways.

38. The swan flew and the crow flew, making each other to wonder and speaking highly of their respective feats.

39. Seeing the various kinds of motions at every moment the crows that were there were filled with delight and began to caw loudly.

40. The swans also laughed aloud making many unpleasant remarks. They began to rise up and alight repeatedly.

41. They came down and rose up from the tops of the trees and the surface of the earth; they began to emit cries bespeaking their respective victories.

42. With one kind of gentle motion the swan began to roar up. For a moment, O Marisha, the crow seemed to have defeated him.

43. Thereat disregarding the swans the crows said :—"That swan amongst us who has soared high up is evidently defeated."

44. Hearing this the swan with great velocity began to move westwards towards the ocean abounding in Makaras.

45. Then the crow became afraid who was almost besides himself at not seeing any island or trees whereon to perch when tired. (He then thought) "where shall I alight on this vast ocean when tired?"

46. Irrepressible is the deep the abode of numberless creatures. Inhabited by hundreds of monsters it is greater than the sky.

47. O you wretch, none can exceed the ocean in depth. O Karna, the men know that the waters of the ocean are equally boundless like the sky. What is crow to it considering its extent?

48. Doing a great distance in a moment the swan looked back at the crow and could not leave him behind.

49. Having beaten down the crow the swan looked at him and waited thinking 'Let the crow come up.'

50. Thereupon greatly exhausted the crow came up to the swan.

51. Thereupon beholding him about to sink and with a view to rescue him the swan, remembering the good offices of the pious, said to him

52. "While speaking about flight you again and again mentioned about a goodly number of them. You should not mention this your flight which is a mystery to us.

53. What is the name of this flight, O crow, which you have followed now? You

repeatedly touch the waters with your wings and beak.

54. Which amongst those many kinds of flight, O crow, that you are now following? Come quickly, O crow, I am waiting for you.

Salya said :—

55. O wicked one, greatly tired and touching the water with his wings and beak and seen by the swan the crow said to him.

56. Not beholding the limit of the ocean, fatigued and broken down with the exertion of fight the crow said to the swan.

57. "We are crows, we move about here and there crying *caw, caw*. O swan, I lay my life at your hands and seek refuge with you. Take me to the bank of the ocean."

58. Greatly tired and touching the ocean with his wings and beak the crow all on a sudden fell down.

59. Beholding him thus fallen into the ocean with a sorry heart the swan addressed the crow who was on the verge of death saying :—

60. "O crow, how did you praise yourself. Remember, you said that you would course through the sky in a hundred different ways.

61. You, who would fly in a hundred different ways, are superior to me; why are you then tired and fallen on the ocean?"

62. Overcome with weakness, the crow, casting his looks up at the swan and trying to please him said.

63. "Rendered arrogant by feeding upon the leavings of others' food I thought myself as equal to Garuda and did not care for crows and other birds.

64. I now seek refure with you and place my life at your disposal. Oh, take me to the shore of some island.

65. If I, O swan, O lord, return safely to my country I will never disregard any body'; Oh, save me from this calamity."

66—67. Without a word the swan took him up with his foot and placed him slowly on his back, who said so, was melancholy, weeping, deprived of his sense, was sinking in the ocean, was crying *caw*! *caw*, was drenched with water, hedeous to look at and trembling in fear.

68. Having placed speedily the crow who was beside himself on his back he came to the island from which they had started challenging each other.

69. Putting that ranger of the sky down (on the land) and comforting him the swan repaired quickly to his wished- for region with the mind.

70. Thus the crow, fed fat with the leavings, was defeated by the swan. Then casting off the pride of strength and prowess the crow, O Karna, led a peaceful and quiet life.

71. As that crow, fed upon the refuses of the food of the Vaishya children, did not care his equals and superiors, so do you, O Karna, fed by Dhritarashtra's sons, with the leavings of their food, disregard your equals and superiors.

72. Why did you not kill Partha at Virata's city when you were protected by Drona and his son Kripa, Bhishma and other Kouravas?

73. What became of your prowess there when defeated by Kiriti you all fled away like a pack of jackals?

74. Seeing your brother killed by Savya Sachin in the very presence of the Kuru heroes it was you who fled away first.

75. When you were assailed by the Gandharvas in the Dvaita forest it was you who, leaving behind the Kurus, did run away from the forest.

76. Having defeated in battle the Gandharvas led by Chitrasena with a great slaughter it was Arjuna, O Karna, who rescued Duryodhana with his wife.

77. Rama himself, O Karna, before the assembly of the Kuru heroes spoke of the prowess of Arjuna and Kesava.

78. You have always heard Drona and Bhishma speaking before all the kings of the two Krishnas as being unslayable.

79. I have told you only a bit about this that Dhananjaya is superior to you as a Brahmana is to all creatures.

80. You will soon see stationed on that best of cars the son of Vasudeva and the son of Kunti and Pandu.

81. As the crow intelligently sought the protection of the swan so do you seek the shelter of the Vrishni heroe (Krishina) and of Pandu's son Dhananjaya.

82. When you will see in battle the highly powerful Vasudeva and Dhananjaya stationed in the same car, you will not utter such words, O Karna.

83. When Partha with hundreds of shafts break down your pride you will then see the difference between yourself and Dhananjaya.

84. Those two best of men are well-known among the gods, Asuras and men; you are a fire-fly, do not foolishly disregard those two bright luminaries.

85. Like the sun and the moon Kesava and Arjuna are famous for their effulgence; you are but a fire-fly among men.

86. O learned one, O son of a charioteer, do not make light of Arjuna and Achuyta; those two high-souled ones are best of men. Do not make such vaunts.

Thus ends the forty-first chapter, the story of the swan and crow in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Listening to those unpleasant words and not being convinced the high-souled car-warrior, the king of Madra, said to Salya "I know well what Vasudeva and Arjuna are.

2. Even now I know well the skill of Shouri in the management of cars and the power and great weapons of Arjuna, the son of Pandu. But you have no practical knowledge of them, O Salya.

3. I shall fearlessly fight with those two Krishnas, the foremost of the weilders of weapons. The curse of Rama, the foremost of Brahmanas, pains me greatly.

4. I lived formerly with Rama in the disguise of a Brahmana with a view to obtain the celestial weapons from him. At that time, O Salya, the king of gods, wishing to do a good office by Phalguna, put in an impediment by approaching my thigh and piercing it in the form of a dreadful worm.

5. When my preceptor slept placing his head on my thigh that worm began to bore it through; on account of this boring of my thigh a pool of thick blood gushed out of my body.

6. For fear of my preceptor I did not move my limb. The Brahmana, on waking, saw it. Beholding my patience he said "you are never a Brahmana. Tell me truly who you are."

7. O Salya, I then gave him the true information about myself and said that I was a *Suta*. Hearing this the great ascetic, worked up with anger, imprecated a curse on me, saying.

8. "On account of the deception O charioteer, by which you have got this weapon it will never come to your mind at the time of necessity when the hour of your death will arrive. Brahma can never live in one who is not a Brahman.

9. I have forgotten that great weapon in this fierce and dreadful encounter.

10. O Salya, that descendant of Bharatas who is highly dreadful, the destroyer of all the grinders of foes and powerful, will, me-thinks, grind many Kshatriya heroes.

11. Know however, O Salya, I will kill in battle to-day that terrible bowman and the foremost of warriors, the son of Pandu, Dhananjaya, who is highly energetic and ascetic—a heroe whose promises are always carried out.

12. I have at least that weapon with me with which I will be able to kill a goodly number of enemies. I will kill in battle, that grinder of weapons, that powerful heroe, the master of weapons, that dreadful bowman of incomparable energy, that ruthless and dreadful heroe who can resist his enemies—(I mean) Dhananjaya.

13. The limitless deep, the king of waters dashes on impetuously for overwhelming numberless creatures. The continent however holds and restrains him.

14. I will to-day, in this world, withstand in fight the son of Kunti the foremost of archers while he will ceaselessly discharge his winged arrows capable of killing heroes and penetrating into every limb and none of which becomes futile.

15. Like the bank of an ocean restraining it I will withstand Partha that strongest of the strong the great heroe owning many weapons, resembling the ocean itself and having many dreadful and far-reaching arrows like unto the waves of the ocean while he will be engaged in assailing the kings.

16. Witness my highly dreadful encounter with him to-day in battle, who, methinks, has not equal amongst men, using bows and who vanquished the gods and demons in battle.

17. The Pandava is exceedingly haughty. Desirous of fighting he will approach me with superhuman and powerful weapons. Counteracting his weapons with mine in battle I will fell Partha with my excellent arrows.

18. He burns down his enemies like the sun of fiery rays and shines in his fame. As the clouds gather round the dispeller of darkness, so I shall cover Dhananjaya with my shafts.

19. As the clouds with showers extinguish the powerful fire burning with smoking flames and as if consuming the whole world, so I will, with showers of my arrows, put down the son of Kunti.

20. With my darts I will put down the

son of Kunti in battle who is like a dreadful and fierce snake of sharpened fang, who burns in effulgence and anger and consumes those who work him evil.

21. As the Himalya holds the powerful, crushing and all-striking wind-god so I will, without perturbation, withstand the angry and vindictive Dhananjaya.

22. I will withstand in battle Dhananjaya the foremost of all the archers in the world who knows well all the car-tracks, who is always in the van, competent and heroic in battle.

23. To-day, I will encounter in battle the man, who, in my view, is non-pariel amongst the archers and who conquered the entire earth.

24. What man, save me, who wishes to keep his life, will fight with Savyaachin who defeated all creatures, including even the celestials in the country called Khandava.

25. He is proud, holds his weapons firmly, is light-handed, knows the use of celestial weapons, has white horses and is capable of smiting all. To-day shall I with sharpened shafts sever the head of such a great warrior from his body.

26. O Salya, keeping either death or victory before me, I will fight with Dhananjaya to-day. There is none else but me who can fight on a single car with that Pandava resembling Death himself.

27. I will myself with pleasure speak of the prowess of Pandava in battle before the assembly of the Kshatriyas. Why do you, a fool as you are, speak of the prowess of Phalguna to me ?

28. The forgiving always forgive a mean and a cruel person who performs unpleasant deeds. I can slay a hundred like you, but I forgive you for my forgiving nature and the necessity of the time.

29. You are the perpetrator of evil deeds. You have, like a fool, for the sake of the Pandavas, remonstrated with me and spoken many unpleasant things. You have said these to me who am innocent. Cursed you are, an injurer of friends for friendship is seven paced.

30. The present moment, that has arrived, is really dreadful for Duryodhona has come to battle. I always wish to see his ends accomplished. But you are acting in such a way that it appears you have no friendship for the Kuru king.

31. He is a friend who gladdens his friend, pleases him, protects him, honors him, and shares in his joy. I have got all these qualities; the king himself knows it.

32. Whereas he who destroys, remonsstrates with, sharpens his weapons, makes us to sigh and cheerless and wrongs us in many ways is our enemy. All these marks are to be seen in you, and you display them all against us.

33. For the sake of Duryodhana, for the sake of doing what is agreeable to you, for the sake of fame, for the sake of myself, and the God, I will vigorously fight with Partha and Vasudeva. Behold to-day my feats.

34. Behold to-day all my excellent weapons, *Brahma*, celestial and human, I will kill to-day that highly powerful heroe like an infuriate elephant slaying another such.

35. For my victory I will hurl to-day that highly powerful Brahma weapon at Partha with my mind alone. Arjuna will never be able to escape that weapon if only the wheels of my car do not sink in the earth in battle to-day.

36—37. Know this, O Salya, that I will not even fear Yama armed with his rod or Varuna armed with his noose, or Kuvera armed with his mace, or Vasava armed with his thunder-bolt or any other enemy who may come forward to kill me.

38. Therefore I have no fear from Partha or Janarddana. There shall take place an encounter between me and them both in the battle.

39—40. O king, while wandering about to set arrows on my Vijaya bow I myself unconsciously killed with an arrow the calf of a Brahmana's *Homa* cow as I began discharging dreadful shafts while it was roaming in the dense forest. The Brahmana then addressed me, saying :—

41. Since you have carelessly killed the offspring of my *Homa* cow, the wheel of your car will sink into the earth and at the time of war your heart will be possessed by fear.

42—43. I always stand in great fear of these words of the Brahmana. The kings of the Lunar dynasty, the lords of people's happiness and misery, offered him a thousand kine and six hundred bovine bulls. Still with such a gift O Salya, O king of Madras, the Brahmana was not gratied.

44. I then offered him seven hundred elephants of huge tusks and many hundreds of male and female slaves. And still that best of Brahmanas was not satisfied.

45. Offering him then full fourteen thousand black kine each with a white calf I could not obtain the grace of that best of Brahmanas.

46. Then I offered him a beautiful palace abounding in all objects of desire, in fact, whatever riches I had but still he refused to accept the gift.

47. He then said to me who had offered him and thus implored his forgiveness." What I have said, O Suta, will surely take place. It can never be otherwise.

48. False words will destroy creatures and the sin will come upon me. Therefore for preserving virtue I dare not speak an untruth.

49. You shall not destroy the means of a Brahmana's livelihood. There is none on earth who can falsify my words. Accept my words and this will be an atonement for your sin.

50. Although chastised by you still for your friendship I have spoken out all this to you. I know you who are chastising me thus. Be silent and hear what I will speak now.

Thus ends the forty-second chapter of the conversation between Karna and Salya in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Once more, O great king, thus silencing the king of Madras, the son of Radha, the chastiser of foes, said to him.

2. As a rejoinder to what you have said to me, O Salya, by way of examples I tell you that I am not to be frightened by you in battle with your words.

3. If all the gods with Vasava come to fight with me I will not fear them what to speak of my fear from Partha and Kesava.

4. I am not to be frightened by mere words. O Salya, he, whom you will be able to frighten in battle, is some other person.

5. You have addressed many unpleasant words to me. Therein lies the strength of a mean person, O you of wicked soul; you can speak of my merits and so you say many unpleasant words.

6. Karna is not born for fear in battle, O Madraka. I am rather born to display my valour and achieve glory for my own self.

7. Out of friendship for you, out of my affection and on account of your being an ally—for these three reasons, you still live, O Salya,

8. A great work is now to be done for the king Dhritarashtra. This work depends on me, O Salya, and therefore you live for a moment.

9. I made this agreement with you formerly that I would forgive you for all your unpleasant words. This agreement I will observe and for this you still live.

10. Without a thousand Salyas I will vanquish my enemies. The injurer of a friend is sinful. It is for this you live for the present.

Thus ends the forty-third chapter the conversation between Karna and Salya in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLIV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Salya said :—

1. These are but your ravings, O Karna that you give vent to with regard to your enemies. But I can without a thousand Karnas defeat my foe in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

2. To the king of Madras, who was speaking such harsh words Karna, of unpleasant looks, spoke words again twice as harsh.

Karna said :—

3. O king of Madras, listen attentively to what I heard recited in the presence of Dhritarashtra.

4. In Dhritarashtra's house the Brahmanas used to describe many pleasant regions and the lives of many ancient kings.

5. One aged and leading Brahmana among them, while recounting the ancient historian, said thus blaming the Valhikas and Madrakas.

6—7. One should always avoid the impure and impious Valhikas who live away from Himavat and Ganga, Saraswati, Yamuna and Kurukshetra and the Sindhu with its five tributaries.

8. I remember from my youth that a slaughter ground for kine and the cellars for wine mark out the gates of the palaces of Valhika kings.

9. For some secret work I had to live with them. On account of this living I know them very well.

10. There is a town of the name of Shakala, a river by the name of Apaga and a clan of the Valhikas known as Jarttikas. Their conduct is very reprehensible.

11. They drink the liquor Ganda and ea fried barley with it. They also eat beef with garlics. They also take flour with meat and boiled rice that is bought of others. They are shorn of all good practices.

12—13. Their women all drink and are nude, and laugh and dance, outside the walls of the houses in cities, with garlands and unguents, singing under the influence of liquor various obscene songs like the bray of the ass or the bleat of lambs. They freely mix and intercourse with all. Inebrite they address one another with endearing terms.

14. The fallen Valhika women, unobservant of restrictions even on sacred days, dance and exclaim "Alas! our husband, our lord is dead!"

15. One of those wicked Valhikas who lived amongst them and for some time in Kurujangala burst out with cheerless heart saying—

16. "Surely that big and fair (Valhika maiden) dressed in her blankets is thinking of me her Valhika lover, who am living in Kurujangala at the time of her going to bed.

17—18. Crossing the Sutlej, the charming Iravati and coming to my own country when shall I look at those beautiful women with thick frontal bones, with shining circles of red ar enic on their foreheads, with tinges of red, black collyrium on their eyes and their beautiful forms dressed in blankets and skins and themselves uttering shrill cries?

19. When shall I be happy in the company of those inebriate women amid the sound of drums and kettle-drums and conches sweet as the brays of asses and cries of camels and mules?

20. When shall I be in the midst of those women who live on cakes of flour and and meat and balls of barley and skimmed milk in the forests having pleasant paths of *Shami*, *Pilu* and Karira?

21. When shall I, surrounded by my countrymen, muster strong on the high roads, fall upon the passers by, carry away heir robes and attires and beat them repeatedly?

22. What man is there who will live willingly even for a moment in the midst of Valhikas who are so fallen, wicked and of fraudulent conduct?

23. Thus did the Brahmanas describe the vile Valhikas, a sixth of whose merit and demerit, you possess, O Salya.

24. Having said this the pious Brahmana said some thing about the wicked Valhikas. Hear what I say.

25. In the large and populous city of Sakala a Rakshasa woman used to sing on every fourteenth day of the dark half of the month in accompaniment with a drum.

26. When shall I next sing the songs of the Valhikas in this town of Sakala having fed me full with beef and drunk the Gada liquor.

27—28. Decked with ornaments when shall I with these huge women and maidens feed upon a large number of sheep, a quantity of pork and beef and the meat of fowls, asses and camels. In vain do they live who do not eat the sheep.

29. Thus O Salya, the young and old inhabitants of Sakala, sing and cry under the influence of liquor. How can there be virtue among such people?

30. You should know this. I will now recount to you again what another Brahmana said to us in the Kuru court.

31—32. There where the forests of Pilus stand and the five rivers Shatadru, Vipasha Iravati, Chandrabhaga and Vitasta and which have the Sindhu for their sixth flow there in those regions is situated the Province called the Arattas distant from Himavat. This Province is shorn of virtue and religion. No one should go there.

33—34. The celestials, the ancestral manes and the Brahmanas never accept gifts from fallen persons, from those that are begotten by Sudras upon women of other castes and from Valhikas who never perform Yajnas and are greatly irreligious. This the learned Brahmana also said in the Kuru Court.

35. The Valhikas, who have no feelings of revulsion, take their food in deep wooden vessels, earthen plates in vessels that have been licked by dogs and those that have been stained with pounded barley and other corn.

36. They drink the milk of sheep, camels and asses and eat curds and other preparations of those various kinds of milk.

37. There is a number of bastards among those fallen people. There is no food or no milk that they do not take. The ignorant Aratta Valhikas should always be avoided.

38. You should always know this, O Salya. I will now speak to you what another Brahmana said in the Kuru court.

39. How can a man attain to the celestial region having drunk milk in the town called Yugandhara and lived in the place called Achyutastala and bathed in the spot called Bhutilaya.

40. No respectable man should live even for two days where the five rivers flow just after issuing from the mountains and where live Aratta Valhikas.

41. There are two Pishachas in the river Vipasha named Vahi and Hika. The Vahikas are the offsping of those two Pishchas. They are not creatures created by God. Being of such a low brith how can they know the duties laid down in the Scriptures. ?

42. The Karashkaras, the Mahishkas, the Kalingas, the Keralas, the Karotakas, the Virakas and other people who have no religion should always be avoided by men.

43. A Rakshasa woman of huge hips, thus spoke to a Brahman, who once went to that country for bathing in a .sacred water and passed a single night there.

44. This' Province passes under the name of Arattas. And the people who live there are called Valhikas. The Brahmanas of the lowest order also live there from a very ancient time.

45. They are ignorant of the Vedas and void of knowledge. They do not perform Yajnas nor can help others in them. They are all fallen and many of them have been begotten by Sudras upon other caste girls; the gods never accept gifts from them.

46. The Prasthalas, the Madras, the Gandharvas, the Arattas, Khasas, the Vasatis, the Sindhus and the Samviras also follow these reprehensible practices.

Thus ends the forty-fourth chapter, the conversation betweon Karna and Salya in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Karna said:—

1. You should know all this, O Salya, I shall again speak. Hear attentively what I say.

2. Once on a time a Brahmana came to our house as a guest. He was highly pleased with our conduct and said to us:—

3. I lived for a long time alone on a summit of the Himalaya mountain, since then I have seen various countries following various religions.

4. But I have never seen a country where all the people are irreligious. All the races I have met with recognise as religion what has been declared by persons conversant with the Vedas.

5. Wandering through various countries following diverse religions, I came at last O king, among the Vahikas. There I heard,

6. That one at first becomes a Brahmana and then becomes a Kshatriya. A Vahika after that will become a Vaishya, then a Sudra and then a barber.

7. Having become a barber he will again become a Brahmana. Attaining again to the position of a Brahmana he will again become a slave.

8. One member of a family becomes a Brahmana. All others falling off from virtue act as they please. The Gowharas, the Madrakas and the little-witted Vahikas are such.

9. Having wandered over the entire earth I heard of these sinful practices and irregularities amongst the Vahikas.

10. You should know this, O Salya; I will speak to you again these words blaming the Vahikas which another person said to me.

11. In the days of yore a chaste woman of the country of Aratta was abducted by robbers; they violated her, on which she imprecated a curse on them saying—

12. As you have sinfully ravished a girl who has no husband all the women of your families will become unchaste.

13. You villains, you will never escape the consequences of this great iniquity. It is for this, O Salya, that the sisters' sons of the Arattas become their heirs and not their own sons.

14—15. Kauravas with the Panchalas, the Shalyas, the Matsyas, the Naimishas, the Koshalas, the Kashapaunctras, the Kalingas, the Maghadas, and the Chedis, who are all blessed, are conversant with the eternal religion. Even the wicked of every country know what religion is; the Vahikas are however divested of piety.

16. The Matsyas, the Kurus, the Panchalas, the Naimishas and all other respectable races know the eternal truths of religion. This cannot be said of the Madrakas and the wily people that live in the land of the five rivers.

17. Knowing all these, O Salya, O king, you should hold your tongue like one of base words in all matters connected with religion and virtue. You are the guardian and the king of this race and therefore pertake of the tenth part of their virtue and sin.

18. Or perhaps you pertake of the sixth portion of their sins only for you never protect them. A king who protects his

people is only entitled to the sixth portion of their virtue. You are not a sharer of their virtue.

19. In the days of yore when the eternal religion was held in reverence in all countries, the grand-father, marking the conduct of those living in the land of five rivers, denounced them.

20. When even in the golden age the Brahman had consumed those fallen men of evil deeds who were begotten by Sudra on others' wives who can put them to shame?

21. Thus did the grand-father condemn the practices of the land of five rivers. When all the people observed the duties of their respective orders he had to find fault with those people.

22. You should know all this, O Salya, I will speak again to you. A Rakshasa by the name of Kamalashapada, while bathing in a tank said,

23. Begging is a Kshatriya's dirt, the non-observance of vows is that of Brahmana. The Vahikas are the dirt of the earth and the Madra women are the dirt of the whole female sex.

24. While goining down the stream a king rescued the Rakshasa. Asked by the former the latter gave this answer. I will recite it to you, listen.

25. The *Mlechas* are the dirt of the humanity, the oil-men are the dirt of Mlechas; eunuchs are the dirt of oilmen. And they who appoint Kshatriyas as priests in their *yagnas* are the dirt of eunuchs.

26. The sin of those persons who appoint Kshatriyas as their priests as well as that of the Madrakas will visit you if you do not abandon me.

27. This was declared by the Rakshasa as the Mantra that should be used as a remedy for curing a person possessed by a Rakshasa or one killed by poison.

28. The Panchalas observe the duties laid down in the Vedas; the Kauravas observe truth; the Matsyas Surasena perform *Yajnas*; the people of the east follow the conduct of the Sudras. Those of the south are fallen; the Vahikas are thieves, the Saurashtras are bastards.

29. They are defiled by ingratitude, theft, drunkenness, adultery with the wives of their preceptors, harshness of speech, slaughter of kine, absence from house during night for bad purposes, the using of other people's ornaments. What sin is there that they cannot commit? Fie on Arathas and the people of the land of the five rivers.

30. The Panchalas, the Kauravas, the Naimishas, the Matsyas all these are conversant] with religion. Even the old people of the North, the Angas and Magadhas follow the practice of the pious.

31. Many gods, led by Agni, reside in the East. The ancestral manes live in the South presided our by Yama the just.

32. The West is ruled over by the powerful Varuna, who is superior to all the gods there. The North is guarded by the Divine along with the Brahmanas.

33. The Rakshasas and Pichashas protect Himavat, the best of mountains. The Guhykas protect, O great king, the mount Gandhamadana. Forsooth does Vishnu otherwise called Janarddana protect all creatures.

34. The Magadhas are conversant with hints, the Koshalas can understand what they see. The Kurus and Panchalas can understand half-expressed words. The Salyas cannot understand till the whole thing is expressed.

35. The mountaneers like Sivis are very dull. The Yavanas are omniscient, O king and the Suras are particularly so.

36. The Mlechchas are steeped in their own fanciful creations—other inferior people cannot understand any thing. Vahikas never accept good counsels and Madrakas are none amongst them. You are such, O Salya, you should not give me any reply.

37. Madras are called the dirt of all nations on earth so the Madra woman is called the dirt of the entire female sex.

38. There is none more wretched than he whose duty consists in drinking wine, violating the bed of his preceptor, destroying the embryo by miscarriage and robbing other people of their riches. Oh fie on the Arthas and the people of the land of five rivers.

39. Knowing this, be silent. Do not try to contradict me. Do not make me kill Keshava and Arjuna after having killed you first.

Salya said :—

40. To forsake the distressed and sell children with wives are the practices of Angas whose king you are, O Karna.

41. Remembering your faults that were recited by Bhishma before the assembled car-warriors and mighty car-warriors drive away your anger and be not angry.

42. In every country, O Karna, there are Brahmanas, the Kshatriyas, the Vaishyas, the Sudras and the chaste women observant of good vows.

43. In every country, men jest with men and wound each other, and there are lustful men.

44. There is in every country and every moment men who are experts in speaking of the faults of others. There is none who knows his own faults and knowing them becomes ashamed.

45. In every country there are kings observant of their own religions and engaged in repressing the wicked. And in every country there are virtuous men.

46. There is no country, O Karna, where every one is sinful. There are men in many countries who excel even the gods by their good conduct.

Sanjaya said :—

47. Thereupon the king Duryodhana stopped Karna and Salya, addressing the son of Radha as a friend and requesting Salya with joined hands.

48. Karna was pacified, O Sire, and did not speak anything more. Salya, then advanced against his enemies.

49. Thereupon smilingly Karna once more excited Salya saying "go on."

Thus ends the forty-fifth chapter, the end of wordy war-fare between Karna and Salya in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLVI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereupon beholding that unrivalled arrangement of the army of Partha protected by Dhristadyumna who was capable of resisting all hostile armies Karna,

2. Proceeded sending up leonine shouts and making his chariot produce a loud rattle. He made the earth tremble with the loud din of musical instruments.

3. That chastiser of foes, irrepressible in battle, seemed to tremble in anger. Then arranging his own army in counter array, that heroe of great energy, O best of Bharatas,

4. Made a great havoc of the Pandava army like Indra killing the Asura army. Then wounding Yudhishthira with many arrows he placed the son of Pandu to his right.

Dhritarashtra said :—

5. How did, O Sanjaya, the son of Radha arrange his army against the Pandavas led by Dhristadyumna and protected by Bhimasena—all those great bowmen invincible even to the very gods.

6. Who stood, O Sanjaya, at the one wing and at the other of my army? Dividing themselves duly how were they stationed?

7. How did also the sons of Pandu arrange their army against mine? And how did that great and dreadful battle begin?

8. Where was Vibhatsu when Karna proceeded against Yudhishthira? Who could successfully assail Yudhishthira before Arjuna?

9. Who else except the son of Radha, who wishes to keep his life, would fight with Arjuna who had defeated single-handed formerly all creatures at Khandava?

Sanjaya said :—

10. Hear now of the arrangement of the army and how Arjuna came and how the battle was fought by both sides encircling their respective kings.

11. O king, Saradwata's son Kripa, the highly active Magadhas and Kritavarma of the Satwata race stood at the right wing.

12—13. Standing at the right of these and accompanied by many dauntless Gandhara horse-men armed with bright lances and many invincible mountaneers numerous as the swarms of locusts and grim-visaged as the Pishachas, Shakuni and the powerful car-warrior Uluka protected the Kuru army.

14. Thirty-four thousand cars of the Samsaptakas, never to come back from the battle-field mad after fight, encircling your son and desirous of killing Krishna and Arjuna, protected the left side.

15. The Kamvojas, the Sakas, the Yavanas, with their cars, horses, and infantry stood on this left challenging Arjuna and the powerful Kesava.

16. In the centre, stood Karna at the head of the army, clad in armour and a beautiful coat of mail and adorned with bracelets and garlands, for protecting it.

17. Protected by his greatly angry sons, that heroe, the foremost of the wielders of weapons, shone at the head of his army drawing his bow.

18—19. The mighty-armed Dussasana, endued with the effulgence of the moon and fire, beautiful to look at and with twany eyes, encircled by his soldiers, stood at the back of the army on a huge elephant and proceeded therefrom. Then followed him, O emperor, the king Duryodhana himself protected by his own brothers, clad in beautiful mails and riding on beautiful horses.

20. Protected by the highly energetic Madrakas and Kekayas the king shone there like the performer of hundred sacrifices surrounded by the celestials.

21. Ashwathama and other leading car-warriors, and many infuriate elephants sheding temporal juice, resembling a mass of clouds and driven by brave Mlechchas followed that car force.

22. With Vaijayanti flags, shining weapons and riders they appeared like hills filled with trees.

23. The rear of that elephant army was protected by thousands of horses with swords and *Patticas* never to return back from battle.

24. Brilliantly adorned with cavalry, car-warriors and elephants that best of armies looked exceedingly picturesque like that of the gods or of the demons.

25. That army arranged after the plan of Vrihaspati by its expert commander appeared to dance and strike terror into the hearts of the enemies.

26. Like the continual clouds of the rainy season, the infantry, cavalry, car-warriors and elephants, desirous of battle, began to issue from all the wings.

27. Beholding Karna at the head of the army Yudhisthira addressed the following words to Dhananjaya, that slayer of foes, the one heroe in the battle.

28. Behold, O Arjuna, the great army arranged by Karna. The enemy's army shines with all its wings.

29. In the face of such a huge army you should take such precautions as we may not be defeated.

30. Thus accosted by the king, Arjuna replied with joined hands "Every thing will be done as you say. Nothing will be otherwise."

31. I will bring about the destruction of the enemy, O Bharata. By killing the head of this army, I will encompass their destruction.

Yudhisthira said :—

32—33. Having this in view you yourself proceed against the son of Radha ; let Bhimasena proceed against Sujodhana; Nakula against Vrihsena, Sahadeva against the son of Suvala, Sasanika against Dussasana the best of Sinis; Salyaki against the son of Hridika, and Pandya against the son of Drona. I myself will fight with Kripa.

34. Let the sons of Draupadi, with Shikandin proceed against the remaining sons of Dhritarastra. Let the other heroes proceed against the rest of our enemies.

Sanjaya said :—

35. Thus addressed by the pious Yudhisthira, Dhananjaya said 'so be it,' and ordered his army. He then himself proceeded to the head.

36—37. Keshava and Arjuna preceeded to battle on that prime car, for which the leader of the universe Agni who derives his effulgence from Brahman became the horses and which in the days of yore had successively carried Brahma, Siva, Indra and Varuna one after another.

38. Beholding that wonderful car advance Salya once more addressed the following words to that highly energetic warrior the son of Adhiratha.

39. There comes the car drawn by white horses and having Krishna as its driver, the car which even all the soldiers cannot resist as the fruit follows the work. There comes the son of Kunti slaying all his foes along the way, he of whom you were enquiring.

40. Undoubtedly they are the great Vasudeva and Arjuna as a tremendous uproar deep as the muttering of clouds is being heard.

41. A cloud of dust is overspreading the welkin like a canopy. The whole earth, O Arjuna, is shaking cut deep by the wheels of Arjuna's cars.

42. Violent winds are raging on both the sides of the army. The carnivorous animals are yelling aloud and the animals are emitting dreadful cries.

43. Behold, O Arjuna, the dreadful and evil Ketu of vapoury form, capable of making hairs erect. It has appeared covering the sun.

44. Behold various sorts of animals in large numbers and many powerful wolves and tigers are looking at the sun.

45. Behold those terrible Kankas and vultures in thousands sitting with faces towards one another as if holding a conversation.

46. O Karna, the coloured chowries attached to your huge car are waving roughly and your pennon is also trembling.

47. See, your beautiful and large horses endued with great speed resembling the beautiful Garuda in the sky, are also trembling.

48. It is evident from these evil omens O Karna, that hundreds and thousands of

kings, deprived of their lives, will sleep the eternal sleep in the field of battle.

49. There is being heard the hair-stirring and loud sound of the conch. The sound of drums and cymbals, O son of Radha, is being also heard on all sides.

50. The whizz of the various sorts of shafts and the noise of chariots, horses and men is also being heard. Listen, O Karna, to the twang of the bows of the various warriors.

51. Many flags of diverse colours and embroidered with gold, made by skiful artizens, are shining on Arjuna's car shaken by the wind.

52. See, O Karna, also the banners of Arjuna, adorned with rows of bells and golden moons and stars, like lightning on the clouds.

53. Those banners, producing a sound, are being shaken by the wind; the high-souled Panchalas with their cars decked with flags look like the gods on their cars.

54. Behold the heroic Vibhatsu, the son of Kunti, invincible in battle and having a flag with the emblem of a monkey, is coming forward to assail his enemies.

55. On the top of Partha's banner a dreadful monkey is being seen capable of increasing the anger of the enemies.

56. These are the discus, club, Sranga bow and the conch of the intelligent Krishna. The Kaustava jewel appears beautiful (on the breast of) Krishna.

57. The highly energetic Vasudeva with club and Sranga bow in his hands is driving the yellow horses endued with the speed of the wind.

58. This is the twang of the bow Gandiva drawn by Savyasachin. These sharpened arrows discharged off his hands will kill the enemies.

59. The earth is strewn with the heads of the kings who never come back from the battle-field, having expansive coppery eyes and faces like the full moon.

60. There are falling, the arms, resembling the spiked maces, with weapons and smeared with scents, of warriors taking delight in fight and contending with uplifted weapons.

61. Horses with eyes, tongues and entrails drawn out, with their riders are falling, fallen and lie dead on earth.

62. Wounded, mangled and pierced by Partha, lifeless elephants, huge as mountain tops, are falling down like hills.

63. The cars, resembling the cities of the Gandharvas, with the kings slain are falling down like the celestial cars, on the wane of the piety of the inhabitants of heaven.

64. Behold, the army has been greatly assailed by Kiritin as various animals are by a lion.

65. Coming forward the heroic Pandavas are killing the kings, a good many elephants, horses, car-warriors and foot soldiers of your army engaged in battle.

66. Partha is not visible like the sun covered with clouds. The top of his car is being seen and the twang of his bow is being heard.

67. You will see him to-day, O Karna, about whom you are enquiring—that heroe, with white horses and Krishna as his driver engaged in killing the enemies in battle.

68. You will see today, O Karna, stationd on the same car in battle those two foremost of men with coppery eyes—the subduers of enemies—Krishna and Arjuna.

69. O son of Radha, you will be our king if you can slay him to-day who has Krishna for his driver and Gandiva for his bow.

70. Challenged by Samsaptakas Partha proceeds against them; the powerful warrior is making a great havoc of his enemies in battle.

71. Thereupon Karna in anger said to the king of Madras who had spoken thus. "See Partha is being assailed on all sides by the Samsaptakas.

72. Like the sun covered by cloud Parth is no longer visible. Plunged into the deep of warriors O Salya, Partha is sure to die."

Salya said :—

73. Who is there who can slay the god of water with water and fire with fuel? Who is there who can get hold of the wind or drink off the ocean?

74. Methinks, to assail Partha is just like this. Even the very gods and demons united together with Indra at their head cannot discomfit Arjuna in battle.

75. Better satisfy yourself and make your mind comfortable by saying this. Partha is not to be conquered in battle. Better fulfill some other object you may have in view.

76. He who will lift up the earth on his two arms, or consume all creatures with his wrath or hurl down the gods from heaven, may defeat Arjuna in battle.

77. Behold Bhima, the other heroic son of Kunti who is never worn out with fatigue,

shining in his native lustre, mighty armed and is like the second Meru.

78. With his anger always burning, bent on wrecking revenge the highly energetic Bhima stands there with a view to acquire victory, remembering all his wrongs.

79. There stands the impartial king Yudhisthira, the foremost of the pious and the conqueror of enemies' cities. The enemies can never resist him in battle.

80. There stand the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, the two Ashwinis, the two foremost of men, invincible in battle.

81. There stand the five Vrishni heroes like five mountains desirous of fighting all equal to Arjuna in battle.

82. There stand the proud, beautiful heroic and highly energetic sons of Draupadi headed by Dhristadyumna.

83. There advances against us Satyaki, the foremost of the Satwatas, irresistible like Indra, with a view to fight like Death himself in anger.

84. While these two best of men were thus speaking to each other the two armies encountered in battle like the streams of Ganga and Yamuna.

Thus ends the forty-sixth chapter, the beginning of battle in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLVII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. While armies thus encountered each other, did Partha, O Sanjaya, assail the Samsaptakas and Karna the Pandavas.

2. Skilled in narration as you are, recount at length the incidents of the battle to me. I am never satiated with listening to the accounts of the prowess of heroes.

Sanjaya said :—

3. Disregarding the huge hostile array arranged in that way Arjuna arrayed his force in proper form on account of the evil policy of your son.

4. The huge army of the Pandavas, abounding in infantry, cavalry, elephants and cars and led by Dhristadyumna, looked magnificient.

5. With his horses white as the pigeons and endued with the effulgence of the sun or the moon the son of Prishata, with bow in hand, shone like Death himself in body.

6. The sons of Draupadi desirous of fighting stood by the side of the son of Prishata. They had celestial coats of mail and weapons and were powerful like tigers. They followed him like stars following the moon.

7. Beholding the Samsaptakas in battle array, Arjuna, worked up with anger, rushed against them, drawing his Gandiva bow.

8. With a view to kill Arjuna the Samsaptakas bent upon acquiring victory, advanced against him, making death their end.

9. Those brave warriors with men, horses, infuriate elephants and cars began quickly to assail Arjuna.

10. Furious was their encounter with Kiritin. It resembled that between Arjuna and Nivata Kavachas, as we have heard.

11—12. Thousands and thousands of cars, horses, flags, elephants, foot-soldiers engaged in fighting, arrows, bows, swords, discus, battle-axes, uplifted arms holding weapons and heads of enemies were cut by Partha.

13. Considering his car drowned into that whirlpool of warriors resembling the bed of the nether region the Samsaptakas sent up loud war-cries.

14. Slaying all his enemies in front Partha killed those that stood at a distance, then those that were on his right and back like Rudra himself killing in anger the entire animate creation.

15. And exceedingly dreadful was the encounter of your army with the Panchalas, Chedis and Srinjayas.

16—17. Kripa, Kritavarma, Sakuni, the son of Suvala, with cheerful soldiers, all greatly worked up with anger and capable of striking the car-warriors fought with Koshalas, the Kachis, Matsyas, Karushas, Kekayas and Surasenas all of whom were highly terrible in battle.

18. That great battle, destructive of life, body and sins, brought on fame, virtue and heaven for all the Kshatriya, Vaishyas and Sudra heroes that engaged in it.

19—20. O best of Bharatas, meanwhile, the king Duryodhana, with all his brothers and Kuru heroes and many powerful Madraka car-warriors, protected Karna while he fought with the Pandavas, the Panchalas, the Chedis and Satwaki.

21. Destroying that huge army with his sharpend arrows and assailing many leading car-warriors Karna afflicted Yudhishthira.

22. Sundering the armour, weapon and bodies of thousands of his enemies, killing them by thousands and sending them to

heaven to earn fame Karna gave great delight to his friends.

23. Thus, O father, the battle, putting an end to men, horses, and cars, between the Kurus and Srinjayas resembled that between the gods and demons in the days of yore.

Thus ends the forty-seventh chapter, in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

(KARNA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. Tell me, O Sanjaya, how Karna, having caused a great carnage and entered into the midst of the Pandavas assailed the king Yudhisthira.

2. What leading warriors amongst the Pandavas resisted Karna? Whom did Karna crush before he could assail Yudhishthira?

Sanjaya said :—

3. Seeing the followers of the Pandavas led by Dhristadyumna stationd for battle, Karna, the subduer of foes, rushed furiously against the Panchalas.

4. The Panchalas, desirous of victory, advanced against that high-souled one who came quickly as the swans go to the ocean.

5. Then there arose from both the armies the sound of a thousand conches capable striking terror into hearts as well as that of bugles.

6. Then there arose the dreadful sound of various other musical instruments, the noise of the elephants, horses and cars and leonine shouts of the heroes.

7. The entire earth with her mountains, trees and oceans, the sky enshrouded with clouds driven by the wind and the whole firmament with the sun and the moon, seemed to tremble.

8. So dreadful appeared the noise to all creatures and they became all agitated. The weak amongst them fell dead.

9. Then worked with great anger and invoking speedily his weapons Karna began to assail the Pandava host like Indra grinding the army of the demons.

10. Entering into the midst of the Pandava army and discharging his arrows Karna killed seventy seven leading warriors among the Prabhadrakas.

11. Then the twenty five sharp arrows furnished with beautiful wings of that best of car-warriors killed twenty five Panchalas.

12. With many gold feathered Narachas capable of piercing others' bodies the heroe killed hundreds and thousands of the Chedis.

13. While he was performing those superhuman feats in battle a large number of Panchala cars surrounded him quickly on all sides, O king.

14. O Bharata, then setting five dreadful arrows Karna, the son of Vikartana, killed five Panchalas.

15. He killed in battle the Panchalas—Bhanudeva, Chitrasena, Senabindha, Tapana and Soorasena.

16. The heroic Panchalas being thus killed with arrows there arose lamentations *Alas!* and *Oh* of the Panchalas in that great battle.

17. Then ten car-warriors amongst Panchalas surrounded Karna whom all he quickly killed with arrows.

18. Then the two protectors of Karna's car-wheels, his two invincible sons, Sushena and Satyasena began to fight reckless of their lives.

19. The powerful car-warrior Vrishasena, the eldest son of Karna, himself protected his father's rear.

20—21. Thereupon, Dhristadyumna, Satyaki, the five sons of Draupadi, Vrikodara, Janmejaya, Shikhandin and many leading warriors among Probhadrakas, and many amongst the Chedis, the Kekayas and the Panchalas, the twins, the Matsyas, all clad in mail rushed upon Karna to kill him.

22. Showering upon him various kinds of weapons and arrows they began to assail him like the clouds striking the mountain breast during the rainy season.

23. To rescue their father, the sons of Karna all of whom were sinless and many heroes of your army resisted them.

24. Cutting off with a broad headed bow, that of Bhimasena, Sushena pierced him on the breast with seven Narachas and made a loud war-cry.

25. Thereupon taking up another strong bow and setting it right in haste the highly powerful Vrikodara cut off Sushena's bow.

26. Worked up with anger and as if dancing on his car he quickly bored through Sushena with ten arrows and pierced Karna himself with seventy sharp arrows within the twinkling of an eye.

27. Then with ten other arrows Bhima struck down Bhanusena, another son of Karna, with horses, drivers, arms and flags before the eyes of his friends.

28. Sundered by a razor-headed shaft the beautiful head of the youth with a moon-like countenance appeared like a lotus plucked from its stalk.

29. Having killed Karna's son Bhima began to assail your army once more; sundering the bows of Kripa and Hridika's son he began to assail those two heroes.

30. Striking Dussasana with ten iron arrows and Sakuni with six he deprived both Uluka and Patatri of their cars.

31. Then saying to Sushena "*you are killed*" Bhima took up another arrow. Karna cut it off and pierced Bhima himself with three arrows.

32. Bhima then took up another powerful arrow and discharged it at Sushena. Karna cut off that too.

33. With a view to save his son and kill the ruthless Bhima Karna struck the former with seventy-three dreadful arrows.

34. Then taking up an excellent bow capable of bearing a great strain Sushena struck Nakula on the arms and the chest with five arrows.

35. Striking his antagonist with twenty strong arrows capable of bearing a strain Nakula too sent up a loud wa-cry and struck terror unto Karna.

36. Then striking Nakula with ten arrows, the powerful car-warrior Sushena, quickly cut off his bow with a razor headed arrow.

37. Then Nakula, beside himself with anger, took up another bow and withstood Sushena with nine arrows.

38. Then, O king, covering all the quarters with arrows that subduer of hostile heroes killed Sushena's driver, striking Sushena himself with three arrows and then sundered into pieces his highly strong bow with three *Bhallas*.

39. Then beside himself with anger Sushena took up another bow and pierced Nakula with sixty arrows and Sahadeva with seven.

40. Then there took place a dreadful encounter between those heroes striking one another like that between the gods and demons.

41. Having killed Vrishasena's driver with three arrows Satyaki sundered his bow with a *Bhalla* and killed his horses with seven arrows.

42. Then crushing down his standard with another arrow he struck Vrishasena himself on the breast with three arrows. Thus struck Vrishasena became senseless on his car but stood up again within the twinkling of an eye.

43. Deprived of his driver, horses, chariot and flags by Yuyudhana, Vrishasena, armed with sword and shield, then rushed against him with a view to kill him.

44. As his antagonist advanced against him Satyaki struck at his sword and shield ten arrows with heads like a boar's ear.

45. Seeing Vrishasena deprived of his car and weapons Dussasana placing him on his own car then speedily put him on another.

46—49. Then riding on another car the powerful car-warrior Vrishasena pierced the five sons of Draupadi with seventy and Yuyudhana with five, Bhimasena with sixty four, Sahadeva with five, Nakula with thirty, Satanika with seven, Shikhandin with ten, and king Yudhishthira with a hundred arrows. O monarch, the great bowman, the son of Karna, continually assailed with arrows those and many leading heroes all having victory in view. The invincible Vrishasena protected the rear of Karna in battle.

50. Having deprived Dussashana of his driver, horses and car, with ninety nine iron arrows the grandson of Sini struck him then on his forehead with nine arrows.

51. Then riding on another car properly equipped once more he began to fight with the Pandavas from within the division of Karna.

52. Then Dhristadyumna pierced Karna with ten arrows, the sons of Draupadi pierced him with seventy three arrows and Yuyudhana with seven.

53. Bhimasena pierced him with sixty four arrows and Sahadeva with seven. Nakula pierced him with thirty arrows and Satanika with seven. The heroic Shikhandin pierced him with ten and king Yudhishthira with a hundred.

54. Worked up with the desire of victory those and other foremost of men began to assail that great man, Suta's son, in that terrible battle.

55. Moving about in his car the heroic son of the charioteer, the subduer of foes, pierced each of them with ten arrows.

56. There, O monarch, we witnessed the wonderful strength in the handling of weapons and the light-handedness of the high-souled Karna.

57. People could not mark when he took up his arrows, when he aimed them and when he discharged them. They only saw his enemies slain by his anger.

58. The sky, the earth and the firmament were filled with his sharpened arrows.

The firmament looked brillant as if covered with clouds smitten with the rays of the sun.

59. The highly powerful son of Radha, with bow in his hand, as if dancing, pierced each of his antagonists with thrice as many shafts as each of them had struck him with.

60. Once more striking each of them and his horses, drivers, car and flag with ten arrows he sent up a loud war-cry. His antagonist then gave him a way.

61. Having crushed those powerful bowmen with showers of arrows, the son of Radha, the subduer of foes, entered unopposed into the thick of the army led by the Pandava king.

62. Having broken down thirty chariots of the Chedis who never return from the battle-field the son of Radha pierced Yudhisthira with many sharp arrows.

63. With a view to rescue the king from the son of Radha many Pandava warriors, with Shikhandin and Satyaki surrounded him.

64. So did the powerful and brave bowmen of your army firmly guard the irresistible Karna in that battle.

65. O king, then there arose the sound of various musicial instruments and the leonine roars of brave heroes rent the sky.

66. The Kurus and Pandavas once more undauntedly met with each other, the former led by Karna and the latter by Yudhisthira.

Thus ends the forty-eighth chapter, the fight between Karna and Yudhisthira in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER XLIX.

(KARNA PARVA—*Continued.*)

Sanjaya said :—

1. Riving through that army Karna encountered the pious king surrounded by thousands of cars, elephants, horses and foot-soldiers.

2. Sundering with hundreds of dreadful shafts the thousands of arms discharged at him by his enemies Karna fearlessly went through the army.

3. The charioteer's son sundered the heads, the arms, and the thighs of his enemies who, deprived of life, fell down on earth. Others, finding their division dispersed, took to their heels.

4. The Dravida, the Andhaka, and the Nishada infantry, excited by Satyaki once more rushed upon Karna with a view to kill him in that battle.

5. Shorn of their arms and head-dresses and killed by Karna with his arrows they fell down all at once on earth like a forest of Sala trees cut down.

6. Deprived of life and filling the heaven and earth with their fame, hundreds, thousands and ten thousands of warriors fell down with their bodies on earth.

7. The Pandus and Panchalas obstructed Karna, the son of Vikartana who proceeded in anger to battle like the destroyer himself even as people seek to obstruct a disease with incantations and drugs.

8. Grinding all those combatants Karna once more rushed upon Yudhisthira like an irresistible disease unchecked by incantations, drugs and rites.

9. Then obstructed by Pandus, Panchalas and Kekayas who were all desirous of rescuing the king he could not overcome them as Death cannot those conversant with Brahman.

10. Thereupon beholding Karna, the slayer of hostile heroes, obstructed at a distance, Yudhisthira, with eyes reddened with anger, said.

11. O Karna, O son of a charioteer, O you of vain seeing, hear my words. You always challenge in fight Phalguna of quick speed.

12. Abiding by the counsel of the son of Dhritarashtra you always obstruct us. You bring all your strength, energy and hatred to bear upon the Pandus.

13. Do you display to-day all your great manliness. I will to-day give battle, and destroy your desire for fight.

14. Having said this to Karna, the monarch, the son of Pandu, pierced him with ten arrows, made of iron and furnished with golden wings.

15. Then that Suta's son, the subduer of foes and a great bowman, pierced him in return as if smiling, O Bharata, with ten arrows furnished with heads like the calf's tooth.

16. Thus placed by Suta's son in contempt the mighty-armed heroe was worked up with anger like fire with oblation.

17. Then stretching his huge bow made of gold he set sharp arrows capable of breaking down the mountains.

18. With a view to kill the Suta's son he drew his bow to its fullest stretch and discharged that fatal shaft as the rod of the destroyer himself.

19. Discharged with great velocity and making a sound like that of a thunderbolt the arrow suddenly pierced the great car-warrior Karna on his left side.

20. Greatly assailed by the violence of that spike the powerful Karna, with weak-ed limbs, swooned away on his car his bow dropping from his hand.

21. Seeing Karna in that state the huge army of Dhritarashtra's son exclaimed Oh! and alas! and the faces of all the warriors became pale.

22. O monarch, witnessing the power of their king the Pandava army sent up leonine roars and cries of joy.

23. Regaining his sense in no time the dreadful son of Radha made up his mind to kill Yudhishthira.

24. Drawing his dreadful bow made of gold, Vijaya, the vailant son of Suta, began to resist Pandu's son with his sharp arrows.

25. Then with two razors he killed in that battle Chandradeva and Dandadhara, the two Panchala princes who guarded the wheels of the high-souled (Pandu king).

26. Each of those heroes stood by Yud-hishthira shining like the constellation Punarvasu by the side of the moon.

72. Yudhishthira again struck Karna with thirty arrows. He pierced Sushena and Satyasena each with three arrows.

28. He also struck every one of Karna's body guards with three straight arrows.

29. Then laughing and shaking his bow the son of Adhiratha wounded the king's body with a Bhalla, then pierced him with sixty arows and then sent up a loud war-cry.

30. Then to rescue the king many lead-ing Pandava warriors fell upon Karna in great anger and began to assail him with their arrows.

31—33. Satwaki, Chekitana, Yuyutshu, Shikhandin, the sons of Draupadi, the Prabhadrakas, the twins, Bhimasena, Shishupala, the Karushas, the Matsyas, the Vhuras, the Kaikayas the Kashis and the Koshalas, all those valiant and highly active warriors assailed Vashusena. The Panchala prince Janamejaya then struck Karna with many arrows.

34—35. Encircling Karna with a view to kill him they all rushed upon him with vari-ous arrows, such as boar-eared, Narachas, Nalika, Nishta, Calf-toothed, Vipata, razor shaped, with diverse other weapons, chariots horses, elephants.

36. Thus assailed on all sides by the leading Pandava warriors Karna invoked the assistance of the Brahma weapon and filled all the quarters with his arrows.

37. Like burning fire having arrows for its scorching flame Karna fought on con-suming that forest of Pandava troops.

38. Aiming some powerful weapons and laughing the noble Karna, the great bow-man, sundered the bow of that best of men, Yudhishthira.

39. Thereupon aiming ninety straight arrows within the twinkling of an eye Karna cut off, with those sharp arrows, the armour of his antagonist.

40. Made of gold and set with jewels that armour looked beautiful as if it fell down like the cloud driven by the wind and smitten by the rays of the sun.

41. The armour, adorned with jewels fallen off the body of that foremost of men, appeared like the sky in the night bespang-led with stars.

42. Having his armour sundered with those arrows the son of Pritha covered with blood, hurled in anger at the son of Adhi-ratha a dart made of iron.

43. He too cut of that (dart) shining in the sky with seven arrows; sundered with shafts by that great bowman it reached the earth.

44. Then striking Karna with four lances on his two arms, forehead and chest Yudhishthira again and again sent up loud shouts.

45. Then blood gushed out from Karna wounds. Then filled with anger breath-ing like a snake he cut off his enemy's standard and struck Pandava with three Bhallas. He also cut off his two quivers and car into pieces.

46. Riding on the car drawn by horses white as teeth and having black hairs which used to bear Partha the king fled away from the battle-field.

47. Unable to stand before Karna thus did the son of Pritha, with his charioteer Parshin slain, cheerlessly fly away.

48. Pursuing him and holding him with his hand, the son of Radha, O king, said, smiling and censuring the son of Pandu,

49. "In what family are you born? You are to observe the duties of a Kshatriya. Why do you leave the battle-field in haste, to save your life?

50. Methinks, you do not know the duties of a Kshatriya. Endued with Brahma force, you are better fitted for the study of the Vedas and sacrificial rites.

51. Do not, O son of Kunti, fight again. Do not approach heroes and use harsh

words towards them and do not go to great battles."

52. Having said this and left off the son of Pritha the highly powerful Karna began to slay Pandava like the holder of thunderbolt, the army of Asuras.

53. Then the king Yudhishthira, O king, took to his heels quickly in great shame.

54. Seeing the king take to his heels, the Chedis, the Pandavas, the Panchalas and the powerful car-warrior Satyaki, the heroic sons of Draupadi and the twin sons of Madri followed him of eternal glory.

55. Thereupon beholding the retreat of the army of Yudhishthira the heroes pursued them in great delight.

56. Then there arose the leonine shout of the sons of Dhritarashtra accompanied by the sound of bugles, conch, Mridangas and the twang of bows.

57. Getting upon quickly the car of Srutakirti, Yudhishthira began to witness the prowess of Karna.

58. Then beholding his own army slain the pious king Yudhishthira said to his own warriors "Kill them; why do you sit idle?"

59. Thereupon obtaining the command of the king all the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas headed by Bhimasena rushed upon your sons.

60. O Bharata, then there arose a great tumult of the warriors, chariots, elephants, horses, infantry and weapons.

61. "Rise, strike, face the foe" uttering those words the warriors killed one another in that great battle.

62. On account of the showers of arrows discharged by them a shadow as that of clouds seemed to spread over the field abounding in best of men killing those weaker than they.

63. Deprived of their standards, flags, umbrellas, horses, drivers, weapons, arms, and other limbs, the kings, weakened, fell down on earth.

64. Resembling mountain summits, the best of elephants with their drivers slain, fell down like mountains clapped by thunderbolt.

65. With their armours, and other equipments torn and shattered thousands of horses and warriors fell down.

66. There fell in battle thousands of foot soldiers with their limbs wounded by weapons and deprived by hostile combatants of their elephants, horses and cars.

67. The earth was covered all over with heads of heroes, dreadful in battle, with expansive coppery eyes and with faces resembling the lotus or the moon.

68. People heard on the earth as well as in the sky noise proceeding from the singing and music of the band of Apsaras going in celestial cars.

69. Having placed on their cars thousands of heroes slain in battle the Apsaras went on.

70. Beholding that wonderful spectacle the heroes, desirous of attaining to heaven, quickly and delightedly killed one another.

71. In that battle the car-warriors fought wondrously with car-warriors, the infantry with infantry, the elephants with elephants and horses with horses.

72. When the battle, destructive of elephants, horses and men, thus raged on the field was enshrouded with dust raised by the troops; the enemies then killed enemies and friends killed friends.

73. Then there took place a skirmish destructive of life and sins—the warriors dragging one another by their locks, biting one another with their teeth, tearing one another with their nails and striking one another with their clenched fists and fighting with one another with bare arms.

74. As that battle, destructive of elephants, horses and men, raged on fiercely a river of blood flew from the bodies of men, horses and elephants.

75. That stream carried away many bodies of men, horses and elephants that fell there.

76. In that huge army abounding in men, horses and elephants, the river, formed by the blood of men, horses and elephants, became miry with flesh and that highly terrible river, striking terror into the timid, carried away the bodies of men, horses and elephants.

77. Some, desirous of victory, crossed it. Some plunged into its depths and some rose above its surface.

78. Their limbs, weapons and robes became all besmeared with blood. O foremost of Bharatas, some bathed in it, some drank its liquid.

79. We saw the cars, horses, men, elephants, armours, ornaments, robes, coats of mail, earth, sky and heaven all well-nigh besmeared with blood.

80. With the smell, the touch, the taste the exceedingly redness of the blood and its gushing sound almost all the warriors became very cheerless.

81. The Pandava heroes headed by

Bhimasena and Satyaki once more fell impetuously upon the army aleady beaten.

82. Beholding the irrepressible force of their attack, the army of your sons, O king, turned their back.

83—84. With armours and coats of mail, displaced, weapons and bows loosened frcm their hands, your army, abounding in cars, horses, elephants and men, fled away in all directions, being agitated by the enemy as a herd of elephants in the forest is afflicted by lions.

Thus ends the forty-ninth chapter, the combat fight in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER L.

(KARNA PARV)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. Beholding the Pandava troops rush upon your army, O monarch, Duryodhana checked his soldiers on all sides, O best of Bharatas. Although your son O king, cried at the top of his voice still his flying troops refused to stop.

3. Then one and the other wing of the army, and Shakuni, the son of Suvala and the Kauravas well-armed fell upon Bhima in battle.

4. Beholding the army of Dhritarashtra, with all the kings flying Karna said to the king of Madras. "Proceed towards the car of Bhima."

5. Thus accosted by Karna, the king of Madras urged those best of horses of the color of swans to where Vrikodara was.

6. Thus urged by Salya, the ornament of battle those horses, approaching the chariot of Bhimasena, mingled in battle.

7. Seeing Karna approach Bhima too was filled with anger and made up his mind to kill him.

8. He then said to the heroic Satyaki and Dhristadyumna, the son of Prishata :— "You two protect the pious king Yudhisthira. With great difficulty he escaped a perilous situation in my presence.

9. Before my very eyes the wicked son of Radha cut off the king's armour and robes for the gratification of Duryodhana.

10. I shall go to-day to the end of that misery, O son of Prishata. I shall either slay to-day in battle Karna or he will kill me with a dreadful encounter. I tell yon the truth.

11. To-day I make over the king to you as a sacred trust; do you all, shaking off lethargy, address yourselves to protect him.

12. Having said these words and made all the quarters resound with a loud and leonine shout the mighty-armed Bhima proceeded towards Adhiratha's son.

13. Beholding Bhima, who takes delight in battle, advance quickly, the king of Madras said to the charioteer's son.

Salya said :—

14. Behold, O Karna, the large-armed son of Pandu, worked up with anger. Forsooth he wishes to discharge at you his anger, accumulated for a long time.

15. O Karna, this form of his, I had never seen before even on the destruction of Abhimanyu and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha.

16. He bears such a form, burning like the fire of dissolution, as it appears that he, when angered, is capable of resisting the three worlds.

Sanjaya said :—

17. O king, while the son of Radha thus said to the king of Madras, Vrikodara, burning with anger, approached Karna.

18. Beholding Bhima, who takes delight in battle thus approach the son of Radha, as if smiling, said to Salya.

19. "O king of Madras, what you have said to me to-day regarding Bhimasena is all true; there is no doubt about it.

20. This Vrikodara is heroic, brave and wrathful. He does not care for any while protecting his body and is superior to all in vital strength.

21. While living secretly in the city of Virata, he depending merely on the strength of his own arms, slew secretly, to satisfy Draupadi, Kichaka with all his relations.

22. He to-day stands at the head of the battle, clad in mail and is beside himself with anger. He is ready to engage in battle with the destroyer armed with uplifted mace.

23. I have cherished this desire all through my life that either I shall kill Arjuna or Arjuna will kill me.

24—25. That desire of mine may be fulfilled to-day on account of my encounter with Bhima. If I kill Bhima or overpower him Partha may come against me. That will be good for me. Decide without any delay what you think proper for the moment.

26—27. Hearing these words of the highly energetic son of Radha Salya re-

plied :—" O heroe, proceed against the highly powerful Bhimasena. Having overpowered him you may then obtain Phalguna.

28. Your determination, your long-cherished desire, O Karna, will be accomplished to-day. I tell you the truth.

29. Thus accosted Karna once more said to Salya. "Either I will kill Arjuna in battle or he will kill me. Givng your heart to battle, proceed where Vrikodara is."

30. Then, O king, Salya quickly went on his car where that great bowman Bhima, was engaged in belabouring your army.

31. Then there arose, O king, the sound of trumpets and drums when Karna and Bhima met.

32. Worked up with anger the powerful Bhimasena began to rout your army, whom it is so difficult to vanquish, with his sharp and polished arrows.

33. O monarch, that encounter between Bhima and Karna in battle became dreadful and the noise thereof was tremendous.

34. Beholding Bhima approach towards him, Karna, otherwise called Vaikartana or Vrisha, filled with anger, struck him on the chest with an arrow.

35. Once more the highly energetic Karna covered him with a shower of arrows. Thus struck by the charioteer's son Bhima two enshrouded him with Narachas.

36. With nine sharp and bent arrows he struck Karna who again cut off his bow in twain with winged arrows.

37. Sundering his bow he once more struck him on the chest with a highly keen arrow capable of cutting off all kinds of arms.

38. Then, O king, taking up another bow, Bhima, who knew where the vital parts are, pierced the son of the charioteer to the very vitals with sharpened arrows.

39. Then Karna struck him with twenty-five arrows like a hunter striking a proud and infuriate elephant in the forest with a number of blazing brands.

40—41. Thereupon with his limbs mangled by arrows, beside himself with anger and his eyes reddened with pride and ire the son of Pandu set on his bow a highly impetuous and excellent arrow capable of bearing a heavy strain and riving the mountains.

42. Stretching with great force his bow to his cars the Maruti (Bhima), filled with anger and desirous of slaying Karna discharged it.

43. Discharged by the powerful Bhima, that arrow, making a sound like that of a thunderbolt, struck Karna in that battle like the thunderbolt itself clapping a mountain.

44. O descendant of Kuru, thus struck by Bhimsena, the Commander Suta's son sat down senseless on the terrace of his car.

45. Beholding the Suta's son insensible the king of Madras carried him away on his car from the battle-field.

46. After Karna's defeat Bhima began to belabour the huge army of Dhartarashtra like Indra routing the Danavas.

Thus ends the fiftieth chapter the defeat of Karna in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER LI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhristarashtra said :—

1. Highly difficult was this feat performed by Bhima, O Sanjaya, by which the mighty-armed Karna was caused to lie down on his car.

2. "There is Karna who alone will kill the Pandava along with Srinjayas"—This my son Duryodhana oftentimes said to me.

3. Beholding the son of Radha vanquished by Bhimsena in battle what did my son Duryodhana do afterwards ?

Sanjaya said :—

Seeing Karana's retreat in that great battle, your son, O king, said to his own brothers.

5. "May good betide you ! Go quickly and rescue the son of Radha who is plunged into the fathomless calamity consequent upon the fear of Bhimasena."

6. Thus commanded by the king those princes, worked up with anger and desirous of killing Bhimasena, proceeded towards him like a swarm of insects,towards a blazing fire.

7—8. They were Srutarvan, Durddhara Kratha, Vivitsu, Vikata, Soma, Nishangin, Kavachin, Pashin, Nawa, Upanedaka Duspradharsha, Savahu, Vatavega, Suvarchas, Dhanurgraha, Durmada, Jalasandha, Shala and Saha.

9. Encircled by large car-force, those highly energetic and powerful princes approached Bhimasena and surrounded him on all sides.

10—11. They discharged at him from all sides showers of arrows of various sorts.

Thus assailed by them, O king, the highly powerful Bhima soon killed fifty leading car-warriors and five hundred from amongst your sons who fell upon him.

12. Worked up with anger, Bhima, O king, with a Bhalla, cut off the head of Vivitsu, adorned with ear-rings and a crown and a face resembling the full-moon. Thus cut off the prince fell down on earth.

13. Beholding their heroic brother slain your other sons, from all sides, rushed upon the terribly powerful Bhima.

14. With two Bhallas Bhima killed two other sons of yours in that great battle.

15. Then Vikata and Saha, looking like two celestial youths, fell down on earth like a couple of trees uprooted by a tempest.

16. Then in a moment Bhima despatched Kratha to the abode of Yama with a long keen arrow. Deprived of life that prince fell down on earth.

17. O king, when those your heroic sons, great bowmen, were being thus killed people began to send loud cries of lamentations.

18. When your army was once more agitated Bhima sent Nanda and Upananda in that great battle to the abode of the Regent of death.

19. Beholding Bhimasena in battle behave like the Destroyer himself at the end of Yuga your sons, worked up greatly with fear, took to their heels.

20. Seeing those sons of yours thus slain Karna once more urged on his swan-like horses to where that son of Pandu was.

21. The horses, driven by the king of Madras, approached quickly the car of Bhimasena and entered into battle.

22. The encounter, O king, that once more took place between Karna and Bhima, was highly dreadful and fierce and accompanid by a loud noise.

23. Seeing, O king, those two powerful car-warriors near each other I became curious to observe the course of fight.

24. Then boasting of his power in battle, O king, Bhima covered Karna with Naracha in the presence of your sons.

25. Then Karna, a master of best weapons, worked up with anger, struck Karna with nine Bhallas purely made of iron.

26. Thus struck by Karna the highly powerful and mighty-armed Bhima struck his antagonist in return with seven arrows shot off his bow-string drawn to his ear.

27. Then sighing like a serpent of deadly venom, O king, Karna covered the son of Pandu with a thick shower of arrows.

28. Then covering the mighty car-warrior Karna with a shower of arrows in return before the very eyes of the Kauravas Bhima sent up a loud war-cry.

29. Then worked up with anger Karna grasped his bow very strongly and struck Bhima with ten Kanka-feathered arrows whetted on stone. With another sharp Bhalla he cut off Bhima's bow.

30. Then taking up a dreadful Parigha adorned with gold resembling the rod of death the mighty-armed Bhima, with a view to kill Karna, hurled it at him making a great roar.

31. Then the serpentine arrow Karna sundered into pieces Parigha that was about to fall making a sound like that of a thunderbolt.

32. Then taking up a bow with grim grasp Bhima, the grinder of enemies, covered Karna with arrows.

33. Then there took place a dreadful encounter between Karna and Bhima desirous of discomfitting each other every moment like that between Hari and Indra.

34. Thereupon O king, drawing firmly to his ear the bow Karna struck Bhima with three arrows.

35. Then pierced by Karna the great bowman, the foremost of the strong, took up a dreadful arrow capable of piercing Karna's body.

36. Piercing his coat of mail and body O king, that arrow entered into the earth like a snake entering into a noble-hill.

37. Then with that heavy stroke Karna trembled on his car, as if bewildered like a mountain at the time of earth-quake.

38. Thereupon O great king, filled with anger and revenge Karna discharged twenty-five Narachas at Bhima.

39. With one arrow he then cut off Bhima's standard, and with another Bhalla he despatched Bhima's driver to the abode of Yama.

40. Then quickly cutting off his bow with another winged arrow Karna deprived Bhima of dreadful feats of his car.

41. O best of Bharatas, deprived of his car the mighty-armed Bhima, who resembled the Wind-God, took up a mace and jumped down from his excellent car.

42. Jumping down furiously from his car Bhima began to kill your troops, O king, like the wind destroying the autumnal clouds.

43. Suddenly the son of Pandu, the consumer of enemies worked up with anger, dispersed seven hundred elephants with

tusks as large as plough-shares and all skilled in smiting hostile soldiers.

44. The powerful heroe, conversant with vital parts, killed all those elephants striking them on their temples, frontal globes eyes and in parts above the gums.

45. Then filled with fear those animals ran away. But again urged on by their drivers they surrounded Bhimasena like the clouds covering the sun.

46 Like Indra, striking down mountains with his thunderbolt Bhima, with his mace, struck down those seven hundred elephants with their riders, weapons and standards.

47. Then the son of Kunti, the subduer of foes, struck down fifty two highly powerful elephants belonging to the son of Suvala.

48. Then scorching your army the Pandava killed, in battle, a hundred of cars, and hundreds of powerful foot soldiers.

49. Scorched by the sun and the high-souled Bhima your army began to shrink like a piece of leather spread over a fire.

50. O foremost of Bharatas, filled with anxiety consequent upon the fear of Bhima, your troops avoided him and fled away in all directions.

51. Then five hundred car-warriors, clad in excellent coats of mail, fell upou Bhima with loud shouts discharging a shower of arrows on all sides.

52. Like Vishnu killing the demons Bhima, with his mace, destroyed those valiant warriors with their drivers, cars, banners, standards and weapons.

53. Then three thousand cavalry led by Sakuni, held in esteem by all brave men and armed with darts, swords and lances, dashed on the great Bhima.

54. Advancing impetuously towards them and coursing in various ways that slayer of foes killed them with his mace.

55. While they were thus being assailed by Bhima loud sounds arose among them like those from among a herd of elephants struck with a large piece of rock.

56. Having killed those three thousand excellent horses of Suvala's son in that way he rode upon another car and worked up with anger proceeded against the son of Radha.

57. Karna too, O king, covered with arrows in battle Dharma's son, the subduer of foes and struck down his charioteer.

58. Beholding him thus fly away quickly in battle the mighty car-warrior Karna pursued him shooting staight Kanka feathered arrows.

59. Covering the earth and sky with arrows, the son of the wind-God (Bhima) covered him with a shower of arrows while he pursued the king.

60. Then quickly returning, the son of Radha, the subduer of enemies, covered Bhima on all sides with sharpened arrows.

61. Then placing himself on the side of Bhima's car, O Bharata, the highly energetic Satyaki began to afflict Karna who was in front of Bhima.

62—63. Though greatly assailed by Satyaki Karna still approached Bhima; approaching each other, those two best of archers, the two highly energetic heroes, appeared highly resplendant as they discharged arrows at each other.

64. Spread by them, O king, in the sky those arrows, shining as the backs of crane, looked exceedingly fierce and terrible.

65. On account of those thousands of arrows, O king, neither the rays of the sun nor the cardinal quarters could be seen either by ourselves or by the enemy.

66. The fierceness of the sun's rays burning at midday was removed by those thick showers of arrows discharged by Karna and the son of Pandu.

67. Beholding the son of Suvala, Kritavarma, Drona's son, Adhiratha's son and Kripa fight with the Pandavas the Karuvas rallied and came back to the battle.

68. O king, the army, dashing impetuously against the enemies, caused a tumult resembling the terrible noise made by many oceans swollen with rains.

69. Furiously engaged in fight the two armies became filled with delight as the warriors saw and seized one another.

70. When the sun was at its meridian they engaged in fight the like of which was never seen or heard of before.

71. One powerful division, meeting with another such, rushed upon it with impetuousity like a huge collection of water rushing towards the ocean.

72. The din, caused by the two armies as they roared at each other, was loud and deep like that which is heard when several oceans mingle with one another.

73. That the two furious armies, approaching one another, formed one mass like two furious rivers that run into each other.

74. Then a dreadful encounter took place between the Kurus and Pandavas who were actuated by the desire of gaining glory.

75. O descendant of Bharata, as those warriors called one another by name a regular confusion of voices was heard.

76. In that battle, his antagonist was made to hear by a heroe whatever matter of ridicule he had of his father, mother, conduct or character.

77. Beholding those heroes reviling one another in battle, O king, I thought that the lease of their life had run out.

78. Beholding the bodies of those highly energetic and wrathful heroes my mind was possessed by great fear, and I thought, "what will become of them ?"

79. Then, O king, the mighty car-warriors, Pandavas and Kauravas, began to pierce one another with sharpened arrows.

Thus ends the fifty first chapter, the confused fight in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER LII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Desirous of slaying one another and cherishing hatered, the Kshatriyas, O monarch, killed one another in battle.

2. Cars, horses, men and elephants, O monarch, in large numbers, encountered one another on all sides.

3. We saw the falling maces, Parighas, Kunapas, lances, arrows and rockets discharged at one another in that terrible encounter.

4. Dreadful showers of arrows shot through like locusts.

5. Elephants struck elephants, horses routed horses and the car-warriors fought with car-warriors.

6. There fought foot-soldiers with foot-soldiers, and the infantry with the cars and elephants and horsemen and elephants with the three other kinds of forces. They began to crush, O monarch, and grind one another.

7. On account of those combatants striking one another and shouting at the top of their voices, the battle-field became aweful, resembling the slaughter ground of creatures.

8. Covered with blood, the earth looked like a vast plain in the season of rains covered with red coccinella.

9. The earth assumed, as it were, the form of a youthful maiden of great beauty clad in white robes dyed with deep red, Variegated with flesh and blood the earth appeared as if decked with gold.

10—11. Large numbers of heads, cut off from trunks, and arms and thighs, and ear-rings and other ornaments stripped off the bodies of the warriors, collars, cuirasses, bodies of brave bowmen, coats of mail and banners, lay scattered on the earth.

12. O king, the elephants approaching other elephants tore one another with their tusks. Struck with the tusks of assailing elephants they looked beautiful.

13. Bathed in blood those huge creatures looked resplendent like moving hills covered with metals and streams of liquid chalk.

14. Many of them seized the lances hurled by horsemen whilst others broke and twisted them.

15. Many huge elephants, with their armours cut off with arrows, looked like mountains divested of clouds at the approach of the winter.

16. Many leading elephants, struck with gold-winged arrows, looked beautiful, like mountains whose summits are lighted with torches.

17. Struck by their antagonists some of those creatures, huge as hills, fell down in battle like winged mountains.

18. Others, afflicted with arrows and much pained by the wound, fell down on the earth in that dreadful encounter with their frontal globes or the parts between their tusks.

19. Others roared like lions. And many emitting terrible sounds ran hither and thither, and many, O king, uttered cries of pain.

20. Horses, adorned with golden trappings, killed by arrows, fell down or became weak or ran in all directions.

21. Others, wounded with arrows or dragged, fell down on the earth making diverse kinds of motion in agony.

22—23. Men also slain fell down on the earth uttering many cries. Many beholding their relatives, fathers, grand-fathers,—while others, seeing their retreating enemies called one another by their own and their family names.

24. Cut off by enemies, the arms of many warriors adorned with golden ornaments, fell down on the earth and writhed in agony.

25. Thousands of such arms fell down on the earth and sprang up, and many seemed to dart forward like five-headed snakes.

26. O king, those arms, resembling the bodies of serpents, pasted with gold and

besmeared with blood, appeared like little mountains.

27. When such a dreadful battle raged on all sides, people not knowing themselves killed one another.

28. When everything was covered with dust raised by the weapons, they, O king, could not recognise who were their own, and who were their enemies.

29. Then there took place a dreadful encounter and there flew a river of blood striking terror unto all.

30. It was filled with heads forming the rocks. The hairs of the warriors formed the floating weeds and mosses. Bones formed the fishes; and bows, arrows and maces formed the rafts by which to cross them.

31. Flesh and blood formed their mire. Thus dreadful and terrible rivers, with currents swelled by blood, were formed there.

32. They struck terror unto the timid and increased the joy of the brave. Those awful rivers led to the abode of Yama. And many plunged into those rivers striking terror unto the Kshatriyas and died.

33. O best of men, on account of many carnivorous animals emitting yells on all sides the battle field became terrible, like the territory of the Regent of the Dead.

34. And innumberable, headless trunks rose on all sides. And many terrible creatures eating flesh and drinking blood and fat began to dance around.

35. And gratified with fat, marrow and flesh crows, vultures and cranes were seen to move about in delight.

36. The heroes, however, O king, shaking off fear and observing the warrior's vow, fearlessly did their duty.

37. On that field where innumerable arrows anddarts passed through the air and where various carnivorous animals in large numbers and the brave warriors armed moved about displaying their powers.

38—39. They called out one another by their own and family names. And many taking the names of their fathers and families began to assail one another with darts, lances and battle axes.

40. In that onset the Kuru army became divested of its strength and unable to stand any longer like a ship foundered on the bosom of the ocean.

Thus ends the fifty-second chapter, the thick fight in the Karna Parva.

CHAPTER LIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. While that war, destructive of the Kshatriyas, raged on, the dreadful twang of the Gandiva bow was heard, O Sire.

2. O king, there the son of Pandu brought about the destruction of the Samsaptakas, the Kosalas and the army of Narayana.

3. The Samsaptakas too, desirous of acquiring victory, and worked up with rage, made a downpour of their arrows from all sides on the head of Partha.

4. That shower of arrows, O king, the powerful Arjuna soon checked and plunging into battle destroyed many leading car-warriors.

5. Having assailed the car-warriors with Kanka-feathered and sharp arrows, Partha approached the mighty car-warrior, Susharma.

6. That foremost of car-warriors made a downpour of arrows, and the Samsaptakas too covered Partha with their shafts.

7. Thereupon, Susharma having pierced Partha with ten quick-coursing arrows struck Janarddana on his right arm with three arrows. Then with another Bhalla he struck down his standard.

8. That huge monkey, created by Vishwakarma, O king, being terrified emitted a tremendous roar.

9. Hearing the roar of the monkey, your army was agitated. And possessed by terrible fear they became inactive.

10. Becoming inactive, O king, that army looked like the garden of Chitraratha filled with various flowers.

11. Then regaining their consciousness, O foremost of Kurus, your soldiers made a downpour of arrows on Arjuna like clouds on a mountain.

12. They, then, all surrounded the huge car of Pandava. And then assailing him with sharpened arrows they, desirous of killing him, began to emit terrific cries.

13. Then assailing with great vehemence his horses, the wheels of his car, as well as his car, O sire, they began to send up leonine roars.

14. Some among them seized the long arms of Kesava and others seized Arjuna who was on his car.

15. Then shaking his arms on the field of battle Keshava struck down all of them

like an elephant assailing other leading elephants.

16. Surrounded by those mighty car-warriors, and, beholding his car assailed and thus Keshava attacked, Partha, boiling with rage, overthrew a large number of car-warriors and foot-soldiers.

17. He then covering all those warriors, who were near him, with arrows, worthy of a close thus contest addressed, Keshava :—

18. "Behold, O Krishna, O you of long arms, those numberless Samsaptakas, bent upon a dreadful feat, are killed by thousands.

19. O foremost of Yadus, there is none on earth, save myself who is capable of bearing such a close attack on his car."

20. Having said this Vibhatsu blew his Devadatta conch and Krishna his Panchajanya filling the earth and sky with the blare.

21. Hearing that sound the army of the Samsaptakas began to tremble and were filled with fear.

22. O monarch, then repeatedly invoking the Naga weapon, Paridava, the slayers of hostile heroes, tied down their legs.

23. When they were thus bound down by the high-souled son of Pandu, O king, they became inactive like horses and dogs.

24. Then the son of Pandu began to slay all those inactive warriors as Indra killed the Asuras in the days of yore in his encounter with Taraka.

25. They, thus being slaughtered in battle, began to leave the best of cars and throw off all their weapons.

26. Having their legs bound down they could make no effort, O king. Then Partha slew them all with his straight arrows.

27. All those warriors, against whom Partha discharged his weapon of tying legs, were encircled by serpents in battle.

28. Then beholding his army thus bound down, O king, the mighty car-warrior Susharma speedily invoked his Sauparna weapon.

29. Then numerous vultures began to come down and devour snakes. Then, O king, beholding those birds the serpents began to fly away.

30. Freed from that foot-trapping weapon the Samsaptakas, O monarch, looked like the sun giving rays unto all creatures when freed from clouds.

31. Thus freed, the warriors once more discharged their arrows and weapons at Arjuna's car. And all of them pierced Partha with numerous weapons.

32. Cutting off with his own arrows the brightly weapons showered on him, Vasava's son, the slayer of hostile heroes, began to kill those warriors.

33. Thereupon Susharma, O king, struck Arjuna to his very vitals with arrows and three weapons.

34. Deeply wounded and feeling great pain Arjuna sunk down on the terrace of his car. Then all the soldiers cried aloud *Partha is killed.*

35. Then there arose the blare of conch, the profuse sound of bugles, and many other musical instruments. and the leonine roars of the warriors.

36. Then regaining his consciousness the highly energetic Arjuna of white steeds and with Krishna for his charioteer, quickly discharged the Aindra weapon.

37. Thereupon, thousands of arrows were seen on all sides which killed the kings and elephants. Thousands of horses and cars were also destroyed by those weapons.

38. The army being thus slaughtered they were possessed by terrible fear.

39. O descendant of Bharata, there was no man amongst the Samsaptakas and Gopalas who could withstand Arjuna.

40. There in the very presence of all the heroes Arjuna began to destroy your army. Beholding that slaughter all of them were petrified and could not display their prowess.

41. Having killed ten thousand warriors in that battle the son of Pandu shone like the blazing fire without smoke.

42. He then killed fourteen thousand warriors, Ayuta cars and three thousand elephants.

43. Then the Samsaptakas surrounded Dhananjaya determined upon either gaining victory or meeting with death.

44. Then there took place a dreadful encounter between your army, O king, and the heroic, diadem-decked son of Pandu.

Thus ends the fifty third chapter in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER LIV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. Beholding the Kuru army afflicted with the fear of Pandu's son and sinking

like a boat foundered in the ocean, Kritavarma, Kripa, Drona's son, Suta's son, Ulaka, Suvala's son Shakuni and the king himself with his brother, came to their rescue.

3. Then there took place an encounter for the time being capable of striking terror unto the timid and increasing the delight of the heroes.

4. The downpour of arrows made by Kripa in the battle covered the Srinyajas like a swarm of locusts.

5. Thereupon Shikhandin, worked up with anger, speedily approached the son of Gotama and discharged a shower of arrows upon that best of men.

6. And checking that downpour of arrows Kripa, conversant with the use of mighty weapons, and filled with anger, struck in that encounter Shikhandin with ten arrows.

7. Then Shikhandin, worked up with anger, pierced Kripa with seven straight Kanka-feathered arrows.

8. Then the Brahmana Kripa, a mighty car-warrior, piercing heavily with sharp arrows, deprived Shikhandin of his horses, charioteer and car.

9. Then jumping down from the car, the heroes of which were slain, the mighty car-warrior speedily took up his sword and armour and approached the Brahmana.

10. Then he covered him suddenly who was approaching with straight arrows. This was indeed wonderful.

11. We then, O king, beheld a wonderful spectacle like the flying of rocks. And Shikhandin remained inactive in that battle.

12. Beholding Shikhandin covered with arrows by Kripa, O foremost of kings, the mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna speedily approached him.

13. Thereupon the mighty car-warrior Kritavarma vehemently resisted Dhristadyumna who was advancing towards the son of Saradwata.

14. Drona's son then resisted Yudhishthira who was advancing with his own son and arms against the son of Saradwata.

15. Your son then impeded with a downpour of arrows the approach of the two car-warriors Nakula and Sahadeva.

16. Karna, the son of Vikartana, O descendant of Bharata, then resisted in battle Bhimasena, Karushas, Kaikeyas and Srinjayas.

17. Then in the battle, O Sire, Kripa quickly hurled arrows at Shikhandin as to burn him down.

18. Whirling his sword repeatedly (Shikhandin) then with his sword cut off all those gold-decked arrows that were discharged at him.

19. The son of Gotama then quickly cut off with his arrows the shield of Prishata's son that was adorned with a hundred moons. At this his people made a loud uproar.

20. Deprived of his shield, O monarch, and brought under the influence of Kripa, he, with his sword, advanced like a sick man advancing towards death.

21. O king, Chitraketu's son Suketu quickly proceeded towards the highly powerful (Sikhandin) who was thus distressed and assailed by the son of Saradwata.

22. Having covered in battle the Brahmana with sharp arrows, that one of immeasureable energy, advanced towards the the car of Gotama's son.

23. Beholding that Brahmana, observant of vows thus engaged in battle, Shikhandin, O king, quickly proceeded there.

24. O king, having pierced the son of Gotama with nine arrows Suketu once more pierced him with seventy and again with three.

25. He then cut off his bow and arrows; then with another he pierced greatly his driver to the very vitals.

26. Thereupon worked up with anger Gotama took up a fresh and strong bow and cut off Suketu to the very vital part with thirty arrows.

27. All his limbs were weakened and he shook on that best of cars as a tree trembles greatly during an earthquake.

28. Then with a razor-sharpened arrow he sundered from body his head still trembling with shining ear-rings, crown and head-protector.

29. His head fell down on the earth like a piece of meat stolen away by a hawk, afterwards his body, O Eternal one, fell down on the earth.

30. O Emperor, when he was slain, all his followers, leaving behind the son of Gotama in the battle-field fled, away in ten directions.

31. Encircling the highly powerful Dhristadyumna in the battle-field Kritavarma said to him :—"Wait! wait!"

32. Then there took place a terrible and wonderful encounter between the Vrishnis and Parshatas like that of two angry hawks, O king, for a piece of meat.

33. Worked up with anger, Dristadyumna, in that battle, assailed Hridika's son violently and struck him on the chest with nine arrows.

34. Thus Assailed by a Parohata in battle Kritavarma covered him, his chariot and horses with arrows.

35. O king, thus covered along with his car Dhristadyumna became invisible like the sun enshrouded by clouds surcharged with water.

36. Withstanding him with gold feathered arrows, O king, Dhristadyumna appeared in battle with wounds.

37. Obtaining Kritavarma, Parshata, the commander of the forces, worked up with anger, made a terrible downpour of arrows.

58. In that battle Hridika's son with many thousand arrows, all on a sudden, dispelled that highly dreadful shower of arrows that was about to fall on him.

39. Beholding in that battle that fearful downpour of arrows thus dispelled by him Prishata's son, approching Kritavarma, withstood him.

40. With a sharpened spike he despatched his charioteer to the abode of Death. Slain he fell down from the chariot.

41. Having vanquished his highly powerful enemy, the mighty Dhristadyumna speedily withstood the Kauravas in battle with arrows.

42. Thereupon emitting leonine roars your warriors ran towards Dhristhdymuna, and again an encounter took place.

Thus ends fifty-fourth chapter entitled the battle of Samsaptakas in Karna Parva.

CHAPTER LV.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

2—2. Beholding Yudhishthira protected by Sini's son as well as by the war-like sons of Draupadi, the son of Drona, as if delighted, proceeded against him, scattering gold-feathered arrows, showing various ways of his light-handedness.

3. Thereupon he filled the sky with arrows of the vigour of celestial weapons. That one, conversant with the use of weapons, withstood Yudhisthira in battle.

4. When the sky was covered with the arrows of Drona's son nothing could be perceived. The space before the warriors was filled with arrows.

5. The sky being covered with a net-work of golden arrows it appeared as if a canopy had been spread there.

6. O king, the sky being covered with a net-work of shining arrows a shadow appeared there like that of clouds.

7. When the sky was thus converted into one sheet of arrows it was a wonderful sight to look at. No creature could range in the sky at that time.

8. Satyaki, although trying his very best, the pious son of Pandu and other warriors, could not display their prowess.

9. Beholding the light-handness of Drona's son, all the mighty car-warriors there, O king, were filled with wonder. All the kings could not look at him, as if shedding lustre of the sun.

10—11. Thereupon, when their soldiers were being thus slaughtered, the mighty car-warriors, the sons of Droupadi, Satyaki, the pious king Yudhishthira, and the Panchalas, all united, giving up the dreadful fear of death, rushed towards the son of Drona.

11. Piercing the son of Drona with twenty seven arrows he again pierced him with seven gold-plated winged arrows.

12. Yudhishthira struck him with seventy three arrows and Prativinda with seven. Shrutakarma cut him with three arrows and Shrutakirti with five.

13. Sutasoma struck him with nine arrows and Satanika with seven. And many other warrior struck him from all sides with a number of shafts.

14. Thereupon worked up with rage, O king, he, sighing like a deadly serpent, struck Satyaki with twenty five sharpened arrows.

15. And he struck Srutakirti with nine arrows and Sutasoma with five; and Prativinda with three arrows and Srutakarma with eight.

16. And he struck Raja Yudhishthira, the son of Dharma, with five arrows and Satanika with nine. And then he struck other warriors with two shafts each, and cut into pieces the bow of Srutakirti with very sharp pointed arrows.

17. After this he took up another fresh bow and at once struck Drona's son with three arrows and began to shower on him numerous sharp-pointed arrows.

18. Then, O monarch, O great sire of the Bharata race, the son of Drona covered the Pandava army with showers of arrows.

19. Just after this the highly spirited son of Drona, casting a smiling look upon

Yudhisthira, simultaneously cut off his bow and struck him with three arrows.

20. Upon that, O king, the son of Dharma took up a very big bow and darted, one after another, seventy shafts, piercing the arms and breast of the son of Drona.

21. Then Satwaki, filled with anger, roared aloud and broke down in that very battle the bow of that terrible afflicter, Drona's son, with the seme-circular and sharp arrow of his own.

22. When his bow was thus cut off that hero of heroes, Drona's son, with a dart quickly struck the driver of Satwaki's car down and unseated him from his chariot.

23. Then, O Bharata, the mighty son of Drona, taking up another bow, covered the son of Sini with quite a shower of arrows.

24. When thus, O Bharata, the driver was killed Satwaki's horses were seen to run riot in the battle-field.

25. Then the Pandava army, commanded by Raja Yudhishthira, rushed furiously towards Drona's son, the foremost of all the wielders of weapons, and began to shower sharp shafts upon him.

26. Seeing them thus coming upon him as so many incarnations of anger the great terror of foes, Drona's son, received them all in the terrible battle with a spiteful smile.

27. Then the great car-warrior, Drona's son, burnt down, as it were, the Pandava troops in the battle with the flames of his arrows, just as the forest fire burns the dry hays and straws.

28. O foremost of Bharata's race, the Pandava army, thus provoked by the son of Drona, became exceedingly agitated as the water of a river is troubled by a whale.

29. O Maharaj, seeing the bravery of Drona's son made the people think, as if the Pandava army already were killed.

30. Then the great car-warrior Yudhisthira being enranged and filled with revengeful spirit thus addressed the son of Drona in a challenging one :—

31. O mightiest of men, neither have you any feeling nor do you cherish any sense of gratitude when to-day you are ready even to slay me.

32. To study and to practise asceticism and charities are the duties of a Brahman, and the Kshatriyas only are authorised to use the bow. So it seems that you are a Brahmin in name only.

33. However, O you of mighty arms, I am determined upon killing the Kourava army in the battle just before your eyes. Do your best. I call you a scum of the Brahman race.

34. Thus addressed, O monarch, the son of Drona smiled bashfully, and pondering over what was proper and meet could not give any reply.

35. Getting thus terribly annoyed the son of Drona kept quiet for a while and then began to shower arrows upon the Pandavas like unto the Destroyer himself when bent upon destroying the entire creation.

36. Thus covered, as it were, by the arrows of the son of Drona Pritha's son fled away from the field leaving his large army.

37. After Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, had thus fled from the field, O king, the high-minded son of Drona also left the spot.

38. Yudhisthira then, O king, thus avoiding the son of Drona in the great battle, marched against your army being determined to wage a ruthless slaughter.

Thus ends the fifty-fifth chapter of the Karna Parva called the retreating of Yudhisthira from the battle-field.

CHAPTER LVI.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After this Vaikartana, himself resisting Bhimasena aided by the king of Panchala, Chedi and Kaikeya, showered numberless arrows upon him.

2. Karna killed in the battle many strong car-warriors of the Chedis, Karushas and Srinjayas in the very presence of Bhimasena.

3. Then Bhimsena leaving Karna, the most powerful car-warrior, rushed towards the Kourava force like a blazing forest fire.

4. The Suta's son too began to slay by thousands the mighty bowmen of the Panchalas, the Kaikeas and the Srinyajas.

5. Indeed, the mighty car-warriors Karna, Partha and Vrikodera began to annihilate the Panchalas, Samasaptakas and Kauravas respectively.

6. For your bad policy, O king, all these Kshatriyas, burnt down, as it were, by those three heroes resembling three burning flames, got exterminated.

7. Thereupon, O foremost of the Bharatas, Duryodhana, being enraged, pierced Nakula and the four holes of his car with nine arrows.

Then again, O lord of men, your highly energetic son cut down the golden standard of Shahadeva with a razor.

9. Nakula then, O king, being greatly enraged, struck your son with seventy three arrows and Sahadeva with five. Filled with anger he struck,

10. Then, both of those great warriors of the Bharata race and the foremost of bowmen, on the breast with five arrows each.

11. Then he cut off the bows of both of those two warriors with two of his broad-pointed arrows, and suddenly, O king he pierced both of them with seventy three arrows.

12. Each of them, taking up two beautiful bows resembling those of Indra's, looked very graceful like two celestial youths in the battle-field.

13. Then, O king, those two brothers, greatly active in battle, began to throw terrible shafts in ceaseless torrents upon their cousins like two great masses of thick clouds pouring their contents on the hills.

14. Thereupon, O king, your son, the great car-warrior, being greatly enraged resisted those twin sons of Pandu, the great bowmen, with numberless arrows.

15. The bow of your son, O Bharata, was repeatedly drawn to a circle and the arrows were ceaselessly issued from it towards all directions.

16. Covered with Duryodhana's arrows those sons of Pandu ceased to shine brightly as the sun and the moon lose their splendour when enveloped with a mass of dark clouds.

17. Indeed, O king, those gold-winged arrows, sharpened on stone, covered all the sides like the rays of the sun.

18. When the firmament was thus covered and the whole sky looked like a sheet of arrows the twin brothers appeared like the destroyer himself.

19. But, on the other hand, beholding the valour of your son all the car-warriors took the twin sons of Madri to be at the point of death.

20. Then, O king, the mighty car-warrior Parshata, the commander of the Pandava army, went towards the direction of Suyodhana (Duryodhana).

21. Violating the regimental order of those two great car-warriors, the two brave sons of Madri, Dhristadyumna began to oppose your son with his arrows.

22. Then that highly energetic hero, your son, the foremost of men, full of revengeful spirit and smiling scoffingly, struck the prince of the Panchalas with twenty-five arrows.

23. Again the most energetic son of yours, actuated by the eager desire of taking revenge, struck the Panchala prince once with sixty arrows and again with five, and roared aloud.

24. Then the king, O sire, cut off, in the fight, with his razor-shaped arrow his enemy's bow and the leathern fence with the arrows fixed thereon.

25. Throwing away that broken bow, that oppressor of foes, the prince of Panchala, quickly took up a new and more elastic one.

26. Then that great bowman, Dhristadyumna, with blood-shot eyes, shone on his car like a burning flame.

27. Then, O chief of Bharatas, the heroe Dhristadyumna, bent upon killing him, discharged fifteen sharp shafts, called Narachas, which looked like hissing serpents.

28. These shafts, set with the feathers of Kanka's (peacocks') and sharpened on stone, were discharged with such a force that cutting through the gold bedecked armour of the king, they ran through his body and entered into the earth.

29. Being deeply wounded, O king, your son looked exceedingly grand like a *Kinsuka* tree full of flowers in the spring.

30. His armour being thus cut through and himself being fatigued with the wounds, and his feelings being awfully excited he cut off Dhristadyumna's bow with a broad pointed arrow.

31. Then, O lord of the earth, the king penetrated ten arrows into the forehead of his assailant whose bow had already been cut off by him.

32. These shafts, polished by the blacksmith, looked on the face of Dhristadyumna like so many black bees on a full blown lily desirous of sucking the sweet honey.

33. Throwing that broken bow aside Dhristadyumna quickly took up another bow, and with it sixteen broad-pointed arrows.

34. Then with five of these arrows he slew Duryodhana's four horses and his Suta charioteer, and with another he cut off his gilded bow.

35. And with remaining ten shafts the

son of Prishata cut off the royal umbrella, the spear, the sword, the mace, the car with Upashkara and the flag of your son.

36. Alas, all the chiefs saw the beautiful standard of the Kuru king, adorned with golden Angada and bearing the likeness of an elephant set with jewels, cut off by Dhristadyumna.

37. Then, O foremost of the Bharata's race, Duryodhana, thus deprived of all his weapons in the battle, was protected by his brothers.

38. In the very sight of Dhristadyumna. Dandadhara, taking the king upon his own car, quickly carried him away from the field.

39. In the meantime, the greatly powerful Karna, having killed Satyaki, proceeded straight on towards the slayer of Drona for the rescue of the Kuru king.

40. And the son of Sini speedily pursued him striking him with arrows as an elephant pursues his rival piercing him with his tusks on the rear.

41. Thus, O king, the battle raged furiously amongst these sturdy heroes of both the armies and the spot, lying between Karna and the son of Prishta, grew simply terrifying.

42. Not a single combatant, of either party, turned his face from the field. Karna then rushed towards the Panchala with great speed.

43. Then, O best of men, countless men, horses and elephants of both parties fell just when the sun ascended the meridian.

44. The Panchalas, O king, desirous of victory, rushed towards Karna as birds flock towards their nest.

45—46. And the energetic son of Adhiratha began to oppose the Panchalas from the front with his sharp arrows marking specially their leaders, Baghraketu, Susarma, Chitra, Ugrayudha, Gaya, Sukla, Rochaman and the unconquerable Sinhasena.

47. All those heroes, quickly driving their cars towards Karna—the glory of the battle field, encompassed him and began to shower their sharp shafts upon that infuriated hero, the foremost of men.

48. But all those eight heroes who had proceeded to combat that brave heroe, the son of Radha, were sorely afflicted by him each with eight piercing arrows.

49. Thereupon, O king, the powerful son of charioteer killed thousands of other heroes—all skillful in the manuver of war.

50—51. Worked up with anger Karna struck in battle, Jishnu, Jishnukarman, Devapi, Chitra, Chitrayudha, Hari, Singhaketu, Rochamana, the great car-warrior Salabha, and many other Chedi heroes.

52. When the son of Adhiratha was engaged in striking those heroes his body, besmeared with blood and swelled with pride and animation, looked like the gigantic form of Rudra himself.

53. Then, O Bharata, the elephants, afflicted by Karna's arrows, bolted with fear and caused great commotion in the battle-field.

54. Others, oppressed by Karna's arrows, cried aloud in diverse voice and fell down as do the mountain peaks when struck down with thunder.

55. The earth, along the track of Karna's car, was fully strewn with broken cars, and carcasses of elephants, horses and men.

56. Verily none of the warriors of your army, nay not even Bhishma or Drona, did ever achieve such an exploit, as was achieved by Karna in the battle.

57. Suta's son, O most valiant of men, indeed made a havoc amongst the elephants and horses, and destroyed the cars and men in countless numbers.

58. Like a lion roaming fearlessly among a herd of deer Karna too moved about fearlessly amongst the Panchalas.

59. As a lion drives away a herd of timid deer in all directions, so Karna dispelled the crowd of Panchala's cars to all directions.

60. And as a stag can never escape from the black jaws of a lion so even those heroes, who happened to approach Karna, could not return with their lives.

61. As men are sure to be burnt down if they approach a blazing fire so even the Srinjayas, O Bharata, were burnt by the flame of Karna when they approached it.

62. Many proud and well-approved heroes of the Chedis and Panchalas were killed by Karna.

63. Beholding the valour of Karna, O king, I was under the impression that not even a single soul of the Panchalas would escape from the son of Adhiratha in that battle.

64. Indeed the Suta's son repeatedly routed the Panchalas in the battle.

65. Beholding the Panchalas thus slain by Karna in that terrible battle Dharma-Raja Yudhisthira wrathfully rushed towards him.

66. Dhristadyumna, the sons of Droupadi and hundreds of other heroes, O Sire,

speedily encompassed the son of Radha, the slayer of foes.

67. And many other warriors of immeasurable strength as Sikhandin, Sahadeva, Nakula, his sons, the descendant of Sini and a good many of the Pravadrakas advancing along with Dhristadyumna in their respective cars looked very grand when they all began to strike Karna with their shafts and many other weapons of different descriptions.

68. But the son of Adhiratha, though single-handed, fell ferociously upon all those Panchalas, Chedis, and Pandavas in the encounter just as Garuda falls upon a number of snakes.

69. The battle, O monarch, that was fought between Karna and those warriors, became as fierce as the great battle that, in the days of yore, occurred between the gods and Asuras.

70. Like unto the rising sun dispelling darkness the single-handed Karna unhesitatingly encountered the united force of all those great warriors ceaselessly showering sharp shafts upon him.

71. While Karna was thus engaged with the Pandavas, Bhimasena, extremely exercised with anger, began to wound the Kurus with his shafts each of which was as sure as the very rod of Yama.

72. That great bowman, struggling alone with all those Valhikas, Kaikayas, Matshas, Basatas, Madras and the Saindhavas, looked exceedingly grand.

73. The earth itself began to tremble with the violence of the fall of the huge elephants struck fatally with the awful arrows of Bhimasena in the vital parts of their bodies with their riders shot dead.

74. Many horses also, with their riders slain, and many of the infantries lay down dead pierced with arrows and vomitting blood and bleeding profusely.

75. Thousands of car-warriors, deprived of their arms, lay senseless through the fear of Bhima and many lay dead, their bodies mangled with wounds.

76. Dead bodies of elephants and their drivers, horses and riders, cars and car-warriors and foot soldiers shot dead by Bhimasena, literally covered the battle-field.

77. The army of Duryodhana, O king, melancholy, maimed and grieved through fear of Bhimasena, stood in utter confusion.

78. That poor confounded host stood motionless in the field as, O king, the deep ocean remains quiet in a fair season.

79. Your army, in that great battle, became poorly and thoroughly inert.

80. And the confounded host of men, O king, stood motionless as deep ocean remains calm and quiet in a fair weather season.

81. The army of your son, however powerful and energetic it might have been, lost all its glory and pride at that time.

82. That army, O foremost of the Bharata, when fighting with one another, looked as if bathed in blood and went on killing one another.

83. Suta's son, filled with anger, routed the Pandava army while the enraged Bhimasena routed the Kurus. And both the heroes thus engaged looked exceedingly beautiful.

84—85. In that extremely fierce and awe-inspiring battle, Arjuna, that foremost of victorious heroes, having killed a arge number of Samasaptakas in the very heart of their array, addressed Vasudeva thus:—This array of these fighting warriors, O Janardana, has been broken through.

86—87. These great warriors of the Samasaptakas, unable to withstand my arrows, are running away with their men as a herd of deer at the roar of a lion and even the vast force of the Srinjayas appears to give way in this great battle.

88. There in the midst of Yudhisthira's division, the banner, of the highly intelligent Karna, bearing the device of an elephant is seen to move about with great activity.

89. No other warrior of our army is capable of conquering Karna.

90. You are well aware of Karna's energy and prowess.

91. Pray, proceed there where Karna is crushing down our force.

92. Leaving all others proceed against that mighty car-warrior, the son of Suta, O Krishna, this is my suggestion; but please do what you think proper.

93. Hearing these words of his, Govind smiled and addressing Arjuna said, "O son of Pandu, go on killing the Kouravas indiscriminately."

94. Then those swan white horses, driven by Krishna, penetrated into your strong array bearing both Krishna and himself and the son of Pandu.

95. And your host gave way on all sides as those two white animals bedecked with golden trappings entered into its midst led by Kesava.

96. That ape-bannered car hoisting its flags in the sky and roaring like thunder-

cloud forced its way into your array like a celestial car passing through the welkin.

97. When, cutting through the vast army, Kesava and Arjuna entered the arena with their eyes blood red with anger, they looked exceedingly splendid and resplendent.

98. Taking great delight in battle and accepting the challenge of the Kurus when those two heroes came to the field they looked like the twin gods Ashvinis invoked with proper rites in a sacrifice by the priests.

99. Those two enraged heroes of tigerish fierceness grew extremely violent in their movements like two elephants excited at the claps of hunters in a deep forest.

100. Penetrating into the midst of those cars and horses drawn in array Phalguna moved about like the destroyer himself armed with his fatal noose.

101. Beholding him displaying such courage within his own army, O Bharata, your son tried once more to stir up the Samasaptakas against him.

102—103. Thereupon with thousand cars, three hundred elephants, fourteen thousand horse, and two hundred thousand valiant foot-soldiers, all well practised in aiming and highly skilful in all the ways of war and well armed with bows, the leaders of the Samasaptakas rushed towards the son of Kunti and covered the Pandavas, O king, with showers of shafts from all sides.

104. Covered with arrows Partha, that repressor of foes, in fight, looked exceedingly fearful like the destroyer himself with the noose in his hand, but he grew still more fierce and worth looking at when he began to kill the Samasaptakas.

105. Thereupon the sky became enveloped with the arrows mounted with gold and possessed of the lustre of the lightning that were being constantly discharged by Kiriti (Arjuna).

106. Indeed those arrows, that were ceaselessly being dischared by Arjuna, falling on all sides looked, O lord, as if so many snakes were lying all around.

107. The immeasurably energetic son of Pandu sent out his straight and sharp-pointed shafts towards all directions.

108. Hearing the terrible sound of Partha's palms people thought that all the oceans, the whole earth, all the ten directions, the etherial vault were going to burst out.

109. Having killed ten thousand of the chiefs, that great car-warrior the son of Kunti proceeded rapidly to the further end of the Samasaptakas' array.

110. Approaching the wing which was being defended by Kambovoja he began to harrass the troops by his powerful arrows as Vasava had harrassed the Danavas.

111. With his broad-headed arrows he began to chop off quickly the heads, thighs and arms with weapon in the grasp of his rivals who were desirous of killing him.

112. Deprived of all the limbs and weapons they began to fall down on earth like large trees of many big boughs hurled down by a hurricane.

113. When he was thus killing the elephants, horses, and car-warriors, &c.,

* * * *

114. Arjuna then cut off the two arms of his assailant with a pair of crescent-shaped arrows and then with razor-headed arrow he knocked down his head containing a face as beautiful as the full moon.

115. His life extinguished, the body bathed in blood fell down from his car like the summit of Manashila mountain clapped down by a thunder-bolt.

116. When this most beautiful and handsome-looking young man, the younger brother of Sudakshina and chief of the Kambojas whose beautiful and lovely eyes could be compared with the lotus-petals, lay down dead on the ground it appeared as if the summit of the golden Sumeru was tumbled down on earth.

117. And the battle, that was fought after this, was exceedingly terrible and awe-inspiring, and the fate of each of the fighting combatants changed repeatedly.

118. All the heroes of the Kambojas, Yavanas and the Sakas were killed by one arrow each: and their bleeding bodies, O king, gave the battle-field the look of a vast expanse of red.

189. The car-warriors were deprived of their steed, and drivers, elephants and horses lost their riders; many riders and drivers lost their horses and elephants; and thus fighting with one another, O king, a great loss of lives took place.

120. When the wing and further wing of the Samasaptakas had been thus eradicated by Savyasachin (Arjuna) the son of Drona rapidly proceeded against him.

121. Furnished with many terrible arrows and violently shaking his formidable bow Drona's son appeared in the battle-field as the sun appears in the horizon with his fierce rays.

122. Full of rage and revengeful spirit that mighty warrior, with his mouth wide

open and blood-red eyes, looked formidable like Death himself with his terrible mace before a dying person.

123. Then he began to shower sharp shafts on the armies of the Pandavas and rout them.

124. Again, O king, as soon as he saw the Dasarha on the car he began to discharge his terrible shafts much more quickly.

125. And their dangerous arrows discharged by Drona's son, O king, falling on Krishna and Dhananjaya, entirely enshrouded both of them on their car.

126. And thus the violent Ashwathama, with hundreds of keen arrows, put both Madhava and Pandu's son into utter confusion.

127. Beholding those two guardians of the world, thus covered with arrows, the creation sent forth piteous cries of woe.

128. There hordes of Siddhas and Charanas poured in from every direction all solicitous of common weal for the day.

129. Never before, O monarch, did I witness such prodigies of valor like those displayed by Drouni when shrouding Krishna and Arjuna in the field.

130. Often and often did I hear in that battle, O king, the din of Drouni's volleys, thundering roars of lion to the consternation of the enemy.

131. Flinging his shots right and left as he moved round the field, the string of his bow shone like flashes of lightning sparkling amidst the cloudy heavens.

132. Inspite of the dexterity and inflexibility of his hand, the son of Pandu, beholding the son of Drona, at the time, was greatly bewildered.

133. And he (Arjuna) bethought himself of being deprived of his own prowess by that august personage (Aswathama), whose bearing in the field, O king, presented a dazzling sight for human eyes.

134. In that deadly conflict between Drouni and the Pandava, O king of kings, Krishna, seeing the powerful son of Drona get the better of the son of Kunti, became highly infuriated.

135. With inflamed eyes and swelling breath, frequently he cast his eyes towards Aswathama and Phalguna, devouring them, as it were, with the fury of his fire.

136. The indignant Krishna then addressing Partha in an endearing tone and said :

137. O Partha, what a strange part of, see, you play in the field? O son of Bharata, Drona's son overcoming you today in battle!

138. Have you the same strength of your arms as you had before? Do you still hold your Gandiva in hand? Are you seated in the war-chariot?

139. Has any thing gone wrong with your arms? Has your fist sustained any injury, or how is it that I see you overwhelmed by Drouni in the field.

140. O glory of Bharata's race, esteeming your assailant as the son of your preceptor stop not, O Partha, this is not the time for forbearance.

141. Hearing those words Arjuna just on the nick of time seizing fourteen *Vallas* (arrows, with crescent-shaped heads) darted them off, piercing right through his weapons, chariot, standard and umbrella, and dismantling Aswathama of his equipments, bows, darts and all.

142. He (Arjuna), then assailing him (Aswathama) with calf-toothed arrows, inflicted terrible wounds on his shoulder-joints fainting from which he sustained himself with his flag-staff.

143. Seeing him thus stunned with the assaults of his enemy his charioteer, O monarch, for rescuing him from (the army of) Dhananjaya, bore him away from the field.

144. In the meanwhile, that scorcher of enemy, Vijay, before the very eyes of your valiant son, slaughtered your army by hundreds and thousands.

145. Thus, O monarch, owing to your evil counsels such a ruthless slaughter with cruel onslaught of your champions was brought about as these knights presented arms to your foe.

146. Arjuna then in the twinkle of an eye beset the Samsaptakas, while Vrikodara attacked the Kurus, Karna, and the Panchalas.

147. O monarch, as the war raged furiously, destroying the lives of valiant soldiers, and presenting a vast scene of carnage, there arose in the field innumerable headless trunks, still retaining vitality.

148. O the chief of the Bharata race,, king Yudhisthira, sorely distressed with his wounds, and writhing in agony, stayed in the time two miles off from the scene of action.

CHAPTER LVII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thereupon, O Bharata chief, approaching Karna Duryodhana said to the Madra king as well as to other chiefs (present there).

2. The gate of heaven has of itself opened its door to us. Happy are those Kshatriyas who obtain such a battle.

3. If the heroic Kshatriyas fight with their pairs in battle great benefit occurs to them, O son of Radha.

4. Either having slain the Pandavas let them acquire the prosperous kingdom, or being slain by the enemies let them repair to the region of heroes.

5. Hearing those words of Duryodhana the Kshatriya chiefs shouted aloud and played on their musical instruments.

6. Thereupon when Duryodhana's army were fiilled with joy, the son of Drona gladdening all your soldiers said :—

7. Before the entire army and before you all, my father, when he had laid aside his arms, was killed by Dhristadyumna.

8. By that wrath and for the sake of my friend, I tell you, O king, what I promise :—

9. Without slaying Dhristadyumna, I will not lay aside my arms. If this my promise proves futile, I will not go to heaven.

10. Forsooth, I will grind him who will come against me, be he Arjuna, Bhimasena or any body else.

11. Thus addressed the entire Bharata army rushed against the sons of Kunti. The Pandavas also (came forward).

12. O Bharata king, the encounter of the leading car-warriors was highly wonderful. An ouslaught of men like that at the end of a cycle took place before the Kurus and Srinjayas.

13. When that encounter took place many created beings along with the gods and nymphs came there to see the leading heroes.

14. Delightedly the Apsaras showered, on those leading warriors, observant of the duties of their own order, celestial garlands, perfumeries and various jewels.

15. The wind carried that sweet fragrance to all the leading warriors. Enjoying that odor carried by the wind they struck each other down on the ground.

CHAPTER LVIII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjajaya said :—

1. Thus a great encounter took place amongst all those warriors. Then Arjuna, Bhimasena and Karna were worked up with anger.

2. Having vanquished the son of Drona and other leading car-warriors Arjuna said to Vasudeva :—

3. See, O Krishna, the Pandava army is flying away. Karna is making a havoc on our great car-warriors.

4. O Krishna, I do not see Dharma's son Yudhisthira ; nor is his standard visible.

5. O Janarddana, the third portion of the day still remains. None amongst the sons of Dhritarashtra comes to fight with me. If you wish to do me a good turn proceed where Yudhisthira is engaged.

6. If I see Dharma's son and his younger brother well, I will fight again with the enemies.

7. Thereupon at the request of Vibhatsu Hari speedily moved the course of his car where king Yudhisthira and the valiant Srinjayas were fighting to death.

8. Thereupon, seeing in the battle-field such a slaughter of valiant heroes Govinda said to Savyasachin :—

9. See, O Partha, this great on slaught of the Kshatriyas for the sake of Duryodhana.

10. Look at the gold-backed bows of the archers and their costly quivers.

11. Saying this to Arjuna Vasudeva hurried on towards Yudhisthira. For, seeing the great king in battle, Arjuna too urged on Govinda to proceed.

12. Then did the invincible son of Vasudeva describe every thing unto the diademdecked Arjuna.

13. Then there began, O king, a dreadful encounter. The two armies, encountering each other, sent up loud war-cries.

14. Thus on account of your evil advice that terrible onslaught of your soldiers and enemies took place.

CHAPTER LIX.

(KARNABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then again the Kurus and Srinjayas undauntedly encountered one another. The sons of Pritha were headed by Yudhisthira

and our army was headed by the charioteer's son.

2. Then took place a dreadful and hair-stirring battle between Karna and the sons of Pandu which increased the territory of Yama.

3—4. After that dreadful battle, producing pools of blood, had taken place and when only a few of the brave Samsaptakas remained alive, Dristadyumna, with all the kings and the mighty car-warrior Pandavas, rushed towards Karna.

5. As a mountain holds water so Karna alone received in battle those warriors filled with joy and longing for victory.

6. Encountering Karna those great car-warriors were scattered (by him) as a collection of water is dispersed on all sides while dashing against a huge mountain.

7. O great king, then took place a hair-stirring encounter between them. With arrows Dhristadyumna struck the son of Radha exclaiming "Wait! Wait!"

8—9. Boiling with rage the great car-warrior Karna shook the best of his bows, *Vijaya*. Then cutting off his bow and arrows like unto deadly serpents he struck Dhristadyumna with nine shafts. Cutting through the golden armour of that high-souled heroe they were covered with blood and looked like so many lady birds.

10. Then throwing off his broken bow the great car-warrior Dhristadyumna took up a fresh one and shafts resembling venomous snakes and struck Karna with seventy arrows.

11. Likewise Karna too covered Prishata's son, the scorcher of his enemies with arrows resembling deadly serpents.

12. The great bowman, the enemy of Drona, struck (Karna) with sharpened arrows.

13. Karna discharged at him in anger a golden arrow like the very rod of Death.

14. O king, the descendant of Sini, like an expert, sundered into seven pieces that dreadful arrow which was about to fall on him.

15. Seeing that arrow broken with his shafts, Karna, O king, covered Satyaki completely with a downpour of arrows.

16. He pierced him with seven arrows. The grand-son of Sini, in return, struck him with golden-feathered arrows.

17. Then there took place an encounter wonderful and terrible striking terror to ears and eyes.

18. Hairs on the body of all creatures present there stood erect on beholding in that battle the wonderful feats of Karna and of the grand-son of Sini.

19. In the meantime the highly powerful son of Drona approached Parshata, the subduer of his enemies and the destroyer of their prowess.

20. Drouni, the victor of hostile cities, said to him, in anger, "Wait, wait! O slayer of Brahmanas, you will not escape me to-day with your life.

21. Saying this he covered the great heroe, Parshata, with dreadful, sharpened and powerful arrows although that car-warrior tried his level best to thwart them.

22—23. As Drona, while he was alive, became dispirited on seeing the son of Prishata and took him for his death, so the son of Prishata, on seeing Drona's son in battle, regarded him as his death.

24. Seeing Dhristadyumna stand firm before him the heroic son of Drona, sighing in anger, rushed towards Parshata.

29. Seeing each other they were both worked up with great anger.

26. Then, O king, the powerful son of Drona quickly said to Dhristadyumna who stood before him.

27. O wretch of a Panchala, I will despatch you to-day to the abode of Death.

28—29. Verily you committed a great sin by killing Drona before. You will meet with an evil turn in extenuation of that iniquity if you stand in battle without being protected by Partha or if you do not beat a retreat. O fool, I tell you the truth.

30. Thus addressed the powerful Dhristadyumna replied :—

31. What, I said to your father, while trying his best in battle, will serve as a reply to your words.

32. If Drona, who was a Brahmana in name, could have been killed by me, why should I not, by my power, kill you to-day in battle.

33. Having said this, O king, the revengeful commander (of Pandava's army) Parshata struck Drona's son with sharpened arrows.

34. Thereupon, worked up with anger Drona's son, O king, covered all sides of Dhristadyumna with arrows.

35. Covered with thousands of shafts neither the sky, nor the quarters, nor the warriors around could be seen.

36. Before the very eyes of the charioteer's son, O king, Parshata covered Drona's son, the ornament of the battle-field, with arrows.

37. But the son of Radha alone, O king, visible on every side, withstood the Panchalas, Pandavas. the sons of Draupadi, Yudhamanyu, and the great car-warrior Satyaki.

38. Dhristadyumna, again in battle, cut off the dreadful bow of Drona's son and his arrows resembling venomous serpents.

39. He, again, O king, in a moment struck with arrows Parshata's bow, Sakti, club, standard, horses, charioteer, and car.

40. Having his bow, and car broken, and horses and charioteer slain, he took up a huge sword shining like a hundred moon.

41. O king, the great car-warrior, the heroic son of Drona, displaying light handedness and holding firm his weapon, quickly cut off in battle with *Bhallas*, that weapon of his, before he could come down from the car. It was indeed wonderful.

42. O foremost of Bharatas, that great car-warrior, although striving hard, could not kill Dhristadyumna, who had his bow and car broken and horses slain and was wounded with various arrows.

43. O king, when the son of Drona could not kill him with arrows, that heroe, laying aside his bow, quickly followed Parshata.

44. The motion of that high-souled one as he rushed on resembled that of Garuda, swooping down for catching a snake.

45. In the interval Madhava said to Arjuna:—" See, O Partha, how Drona's son is proceeding quickly towards Parshata's car. Forsooth, he will kill the prince.

46. O you of large arms, O subduer of enemies, rescue Prishata's son who is near the mouth of Drona's son as if he is within the jaws of death."

47. Having said this, O king, the powerful son of Vasudeva drove the horses where Drona's son was staying.

48. Urged on by Keshava those horses, effulgent like the moon, ran towards the car of Drona's son as if devouring the very sky.

49. Seeing those two mighty heroes approach him, Ashwathama set forth his exertions for killing Dhristadyumna soon.

50. O king, seeing Dhristadyumna dragged by his enemy, the powerful son of Pritha discharged many arrows at the son of Drona.

51. Those golden shafts, shot off his Gandiva, approached the son of Drona and wounded him deep like serpents entering into an ant hill.

52. Thus struck with dreadful shafts the powerful son of Drona left off the highly energetic Panchala Prince.

53. Thus wounded by Dhananjaya with arrows the heroe got on his chariot. And taking up his bow he began to strike Partha with innumerable arrows.

54. In the interval, O king, the heroic Sahadeva carried away on his own chariot Parshata the scorcher of his enemies.

55. Arjuna in return struck Drona's son with winged arrows. Worked up with anger Drona's son struck him on the arms and the chest.

56. Filled with anger Partha discharged in that battle at Drona's son a Naracha like unto the very rod of Death. That highly effulgent arrow fell on Bramhana's shoulder.

57. O king, he was stupified in the battle with the force of that arrow. He sat down exhausted on the car.

58. Then, O king, Karna took up his bow, Vijaya. And filled with anger he again and again cast his looks on Arjuna desiring for a duel with him.

59. Seeing Drona's son senseless his charioteer quickly took him away on his car from the battle-field.

60. Seeing Prishata's son released and Drona's son wounded, the Panchalas, O king, jubilant over the victory, sent up loud war-cries.

61. Thousands of musical instruments of sweet tune were struck. Seeing those wonderful feats the heroes sent up leonine shouts.

62. Having performed that wonderful feat, Arjuna said to Krishna, "Drive me towards the Samsaptaka, this is what I greatly wish for."

63. Hearing those words of Arjuna Krishna drove his car adorned with many banners and fleet like the wind or the mind.

CHAPTER LX.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. In the meantime pointing out the righteous king Yudhisthira to Partha, the son of Kunti, Krishna said :—

2. Behold, O son of Pandu, your brother Yudhisthira pursued by the highly powerful sons of Dhritarastra, all great bowmen, desirous of killing him.

3. The powerful Panchalas, whom it is difficult to vanquish, are running after the great Yudhisthira for rescuing him.

4—5. Accoutred in a coat of mail and accompanied by a large army Duryodhana, the king of the whole world, is purusing the Pandava king, with a view to kill him, O foremost of men, assisted by his brothers, all expert in fighting whose very touch is like the deadly venom of serpents.

6. Your army, riding on elephants, horses and cars and proceeding on foot are going to kill Yudhishthira like poor men for possessing a costly gem.

7. See, obstructed by Satwata and Bhima, they have become motionless like unto the Daityas desirous of pilfering ambrosia stupified by Sakra and Agni.

8. On account of their numerical vastness (the Kuru) car-warriors are proceeding quickly towards Yudhisthira like unto a collection of water running towards the ocean during the rainy season.

9. Blowing their conch-shell and shaking their bows those powerful bow-men are sending up leonine shouts.

10. I regard Kunti's son Yudhisthira who has been brought under the influence of Duryodhana as within the mouth of Death or like an oblation of ghee in fire.

11. Duryodhana's army is properly armed. Coming within the range of their arrows even Sakra cannot escape.

12. Who in battle can bear the force of arrows shot by Duryodhana, who, when worked up with anger, resembles Death himself.

13. The force of Duryodhana's arrows, or of Drona's son's, or Kripa's, or Karna's, can shatter even the very mountains.

14. The powerful light-handed and successful king Yudhisthira, expert in fighting and the scorcher of his enemies, was compelled by Karna to retreat from the battle-field.

15. Accompanied by the highly powerful and heroic sons of Dhritarashtra the son of Radha is capable of afflicting the Pandava chief in battle.

16. While the self-controlled Partha was fighting with them, other great car-warriors brought about his discomfiture.

17. O foremost of Bharatas, the king is greatly emaciated with fasts. He is gifted with the force of a Brahmana, but he is not endued with Kshatriya prowess.

18. Afflicted by Karna the king Yudhisthira, the son Pandu, has been greatly imperiled.

19—20. Methinks, O Partha, the king, Yudhisthira has fallen, since the wrathful Bhimasena, the slayer of his enemies, is calmy bearing the leonine shouts repeatedly sent up by Dhritarashtra's sons desirous of achieving victory and blowing their conch-shells.

21. Indeed, O foremost of men, Pandu's son Yudhisthira is slain. See Karna is exciting the great car-warrior of Dhritarashtra's army.

22. The powerful car-warriors are covering the son of Pritha with a down-pour of various weapons such as *Indrajala, Sthunakarna* and *Pasupata.*

23—24. Forsooth, O Arjuna, the king is greatly wounded and weakened, since the Panchalas, the weilders of all sorts of weapons, accompanied with Pandavas, are following him hurriedly at a time when it is necessary to display speed like unto men rushing to rescue a man sinking under earth.

25—27. The king's standard is not to be seen. Most likely it has been struck down by Karna with his arrows. Before the very eyes of the twin brothers, Satyaki, Shikhandin, Dhristadyumna, Satanika, Panchalas and Chedis, Karna is killing the Pandava army like an elephant spoilating lotuses.

28. The car-warriors of your army, O son of Pandu, are flying away. See, O Partha, how they are taking to their heels.

29. Struck by Karna in battle, O Arjuna the elephants are flying away in ten directions yelling cries of pain.

30. Pursued in battle by Karna, the grinder of his enemies the collection of cars is dispersed on all sides.

31. O foremost of those leading standards, see the standard bearing the emblem of an elephant of charioteer's son is moving about all over (the field).

32. There the son of Radha runs after Bhimasena scattering hundreds of arrows and killing your soldiers.

33. There the powerful Panchala car-warriors are being dispersed (by him) like the Daityas slain by Sakra in the great battle.

34. Having defeated the Panchalas, Pandavas and Srinjays, Karna is casting his eyes on all sides, methinks, for finding you out.

35. See Partha, how beautiful he looks while drawing his best of bows as did shine Shakra in the midst of the celestials after having defeated his enemies.

36. Witnessing Karna's power there the Kauravas are shouting and striking terror to the Pandavas and Srinjayas.

37. Having thus terrified the Pandavas in the great battle with all his force, the son of Radha, O giver of honor, addressing his army said :—

38. "May you fare well, O Kauravas. Do you move on with such a force that no Srinjaya can escape from the battle-field with his life.

39. Do so in a body. We will follow you." Saying this he followed them shooting his arrow.

40. See Partha, Karna is shining in the battle-field with a white umbrella like the Udaya (rising mountain) beautified with the moon.

41—42. With this umbrella of a hundred ribs resembling the full-moon held over his head he is casting his looks around for you. Forsooth, he will come here quickly.

43. See, O you of large arms, he is drawing a huge bow shooting, in the great battle, arrows resembling deadly serpents.

44. Seeing your banner bearing the emblem of a monkey the son of Radha is turning to this direction for seeking an encounter with you, O Partha and bringing on his own destruction like an insect approaching a burning flame.

45. This wrathful heroe is engaged in the well-being of Dhritarastra's son ; that one of wicked understanding always seeks to injure you.

46. Seeing Karna alone Dhritarastra's son is turning with his car force to protect him.

47. That wicked man with all his followers should be killed by you with all care if you wish to secure fame, kingdom and happiness.

48. Endued with energy and strength both of you should fight in battle like a god and demon.

49. Seeing you greatly worked up with anger and Karna too Duryodhana, although angered, will not be able to do any thing.

50—51. O foremost of Bharatas, knowing yourself self-controlled and Karna as cherishing animosity against the pious Yudhisthira, O son of Kunti, make use of this good opportunity. Making up your mind for battle encounter all the car-warriors.

52—54. O foremost of car-warriors, five hundred most excellent, powerful and energetic car-warriors, five thousand elephants, twice that number of horses, and six thousand foot-soldiers, protecting one another are coming against you in a body. Of your own accord show yourself to the great bowman, the charioteer's son. Advance with great force, O foremost of Bharatas.

55. Worked up with anger there Karna advances against the Panchalas. I see his standard approaching the car of Dhristadyumna. Forsooth, he will root out the Panchalas.

56. O Bharata chief, I will communicate to you a good intelligence, the virtuous king Yudhisthira is still alive.

57. The mighty-armed Bhima has returned and is leading the army. He is surrounded by the Srinjayas and Satyaka.

58. There in battle the Kuru soldiers are being killed in battle with sharp arrows by Bhimasena and the high-souled Panchalas.

59. Wounded with Bhima's arrows Duryodhana's army, retreating and bathed in blood, are quickly flying away.

60. Covered with blood the Bharata is looking poorly like the earth divested of crops.

61. Behold, O son of Kunti, Bhimasena, the commander of your army, worked up with anger like a serpent, is assailing the (Kuru) troops.

62. Look, O Arjuna, at the yellow, crimson, black and white banners painted with stars, moons and suns and innumerable umbrellas scattered all over the field.

64. Standards, made of gold, silver and other metals, are lying about, and there lie scattered slain horses.

64. Car-warriors, deprived of their life, are dropping down from cars, killed by the unretreating Panchalas with variegated arrows.

65. There the quick-coursing Panchalas, O Dhananjaya, are rushing against the elephants, horses and cars belonging the Dhritarastra's party, divested of their riders.

66. O foremost of men, O slayer of enemies, your warriors, giving up the love of their lives and invincible in battle, are, aided by Bhimasena's power, grinding the enemy's army.

67. There the Panchalas are sending up loud war-cries and blowing their conchs as they are advancing against their enemies and grinding them with their arrows,

68. Look at their greatness. Through their power the Panchalas are killing Dhritarastra's soldiers as the angry lions kill the tigers.

69. (Themselves although) without any arms they are carrying away the arms of the enemies (from their hands) and with them they are killing foes and making war-cries.

70. They are striking down the heads and arms of their enemies. Their car-warriors, elephant-warriors, and cavalry are all heroic and praise-worthy.

71. Like quick-coursing swans leaving Manasa lake and running into the Ganges the Panchalas are rushing against the Kuru army and are assailing every part of the huge force of Duryodhana.

72. Like bulls withstanding bulls, Kripa, Karna and other warriors with all their energy are resisting the Panchalas.

73. The heroes, headed by Dhristadyumna, are killing thousands of their enemies, the great car-warriors of Duryodhana's force, already sunk in the ocean of Bhima's weapon.

74. Beholding Panchalas overpowered by their energies Marut's son is covering the hostile force with arrows and with roars of lions.

75. The major portion of the huge army of Duryodhana is stricken with fear. The cars and horses assailed with Bhima's fear have been scattered all over.

76. See, these elephants, struck by Bhima with his Narachas, are dropping down like the summits of mountains clapped by Indra's thunder-bolt.

77. There the huge elephants, wounded by Bhima with his arrows, are flying away crushing their own army.

78. Do you not recognise the leonine shouts of Bhima, O Arjuna, who, worked up with the desire of achieving victory, is roaring.

79. There worked up with anger the Prince of Nishadas is advancing on his best of cars, like Death himself armed with his rod against the son of Pandu for killing him with his Tomara.

80—82. His two arms with Tomaras are cut off by Bhima with ten sharpened Narachas effulgent like fire or the sun. Killing him he is proceeding against other elephants resembling a mass of dark blue clouds and driven by riders. They are striking Vrikodara with Saktis and Tomaras. Slaying those elephants seven at a time with sharp arrows Partha's elder brother is striking down their victorious standards. The other elephants were killed each with ten Narachas.

83. The war-cries of Dhritarastra's soldiers are no longer audible since (Bhima), like Purandara himself, is engaged in battle.

84. Three Akshouhini of Dhritarastra's soldiers have been arranged and they all have been thwarted by angry Bhima, the foremost of men.

Sanjaya said :—

85. Beholding that arduous task accomplished by Bhima Arjuna, with his sharp arrows, killed the remaining enemies.

CHAPTER LXI.

(KARNABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1—2. When Bhimasena and Pandu's son Yudhisthira were fighting, when my soldiers were being killed by the Pandavas and Srinjayas, when my army was routed and dispirited tell me, O Sanjaya, what did the Kauravas do.

Sanjaya said :—

3. Seeing the mighty-armed Bhima the valiant Karna, with eyes, reddened in anger, rushed towards him.

4. Beholding your soldiers routed by Bhima the powerful Karna rallied them again with great exertion.

5. Having collected your son's force the large-armed Karna advanced against the heroic Pandavas invincible in battle.

6. Drawing their bows and discharging arrows the great car-warriors of the Pandavas advanced against the son of Radha.

7—8. Worked up with anger and desiring for victory Bhimasena, the grand-son of Sini, Shikandi Janamejaya, the powerful Dhristadyumna, all the Prabhadrakas and the Panchalas advanced furiously from all directions against your army.

9. In the same way the powerful car-warriors of your host speedily advanced against the Pandava army desirous of killing them.

10. The two hosts, abounding in cars, elephants, the cavalry and infantry, looked exceedingly wonderful.

11. Shikhandi rushed against Karna, and Dhristadyumna, accompanied by a great force, proceeded against your son Dushasana.

12. Nakula ran against Vrishasena and Yudhisthira advanced against Chitrasena ; Sahadeva proceeded against Uluka in that battle.

13. Satyaki proceeded against Shakuni and the sons of Draupadi against other Kouravas. And the great car-warrior Drona's son proceeded against Arjuna in that battle.

14. Goutama encountered in battle the great bowman Yudhamanyu. And the powerful Kritavarma rushed against Uttamoujasa.

15. The large-armed Bhimasena alone withstood all your sons with their armies.

16. Thereupon Shikhandi, the slayer of Bhishma, with winged arrows, obstructed Karna ranging fearlessly (in the battle-field).

17. Thus obstructed and with his lips trembling in anger Karna struck Shikhandi on the fore-head with three arrows.

18. Carrying three arrows Shikhandi shone there like a silver mountain with three elevated summits.

19. Sorely wounded by Karna in that battle that great bowman struck him in return with ninety sharp arrows.

20. Having slain his horses and driver with three arrows the great car-warrior Karna struck down his standard with a razor-shaped arrow.

21. Then jumping down from his horseless car that great car-warrior, the aggrandiser of his enemies, discharged a dart in anger at Karna.

22. Cutting it off in battle with three arrows Karna struck Shikhandi with nine sharp arrows.

23. Avoiding arrows shot off Karna's bow Shikhandi, greatly wounded, quickly retreated from the field.

24. O king, then Karna fell on the Pandava army as the violent wind disperses a pack of cotton.

25. Wounded by your son Dhristadyumna struck, in return, Dushasana on the breast with three arrows.

26. Then Dushasana struck the left arm of his enemy with a sharp gold feathered, winged arrow.

27. Thus wounded and filled with terrible rage Dhristadyumna shot arrows at Dushasana.

28. O king, with three arrows your son cut off the shaft discharged by Dhristadyumna which was about to fall with great force.

29. Then approaching Dhristadyumna he struck him on the breast and two arms with seventeen other gold winged arrows.

30. Then worked up with anger Prishata's son cut off his bow with a sharp razor shaped arrow at which all his people shouted out.

31. Your son, however, taking up another bow, smilingly covered Dhristadyumna with wounds of arrows.

32. Beholding the prowess of your high-souled son all the warriors in the field, Siddhas and Apsaras were filled surprise.

33. We saw the highly powerful Dhrista dyumna obstructed by Dushasana like a huge elephant checked by a lion.

34. Then desirous of rescuing their generalissim. O elder brother of Pandu, the Panchala car-warriors, elephants and horses surrounded your son.

35. O slayer of enemies, then ensued a dreadful and destructive encounter between your people and your enemey's host.

36. Standing by his father's side Vrishasena struck Nakula with five iron arrows and again wounded him with three others.

37. The heroic Nakula however smiling struck Vrishasena on the breast with a sharp Naracha.

38. Thus wounded greatly by his powerful enemy that grinder of his enemies struck his adversary with twenty five arrows.

39. Those two foremost of men covered each other with thousands of arrows at which their respective battalions broke.

40. Seeing Duryodhana's soldiers quickly flying away Karna, O king, prevented them with force.

41. After Karna's departure Nakula proceeded against the Kauravas. Avoiding Nakula in battle Karna's son quickly went to Karna, who was guarding the passage of his chariot.

42. Angry Uluka was restrained by Sahadeva in battle.

43. Having killed his four horses the powerful Sahadeva despatched his charioteer to the abode of Yama.

44. Then leaping down from his car O king, Uluka, the joy of his sire, soon advanced against the host of Trigarttas.

45. Having pierced Sakuni with twenty sharp arrows Satyaki, as if smiling, struck down the standard of Suvala's son with his dart.

46. O king, the powerful son of Suvala too, worked up with anger, cutting off his coat of mail, again sundered his golden standard.

47. Then Satyaki pierced him in return with sharpened arrows and then quickly despatched to the abode of Yama his charioteer and horses with three arrows.

48. Then O king, jumping down all on a sudden from his own car Sakuni quickly got on Uluka's car. Then that heroe, expert in fighting, soon took away Sini's grand-son.

49. Then O king, Satyaki, with great force, advanced against your army at which they were all routed.

50. Covered with arrows shot by Sini's grand-son your soldiers, O king, fled away in all directions and dropped down dead.

51. Your son obstructed Bhimasena in battle. Bhima however, in a moment, deprived him of his horses, charioteer, car and standard.

52. His men, O king, were highly pleased and the king soon fled away from Bhimasena's view.

53. Then the entire Kuru army rushed towards Bhimasena. And desirous of killing Bhima they set up a terrible shout.

54—55. Having struck Kripa Yudhamanyu soon cut off his bow. But Kripa, the foremost of the wielders of arms, taking up another bow struck down on earth Yudhamanyu's standard, charioteer and umbrella. Then the great car-warrior Yudhamanyu fled away on his car.

56. Uttamouja soon covered Hridika's son Bhima of dreadful prowess like showers covering a mountain.

57. Then O slayer of enemies, that battle became highly dreadful the like of which had never been seen by me before, O king.

58. Then Kritavarma, in that battle, O king, all on a sudden struck Uttamouja on the breast at which the latter sank down on his car.

59. His charioteer however carried away that foremost of car-warriors. Then the Kuru army surrounded Bhimasena from all sides.

60. With a huge elephant force Dushasana and Suvala's son surrounded Pandu's son and began to assail him with small arrows.

61. Thereupon making the angry Duryodhana retreat from the battle-field with a hundred arrows Bhima quickly advanced against the elephant force.

62. Beholding that elephant force advance against him all on a sudden Vrikodara, worked up greatly with anger, invited celestial weapons. He then struck elephants with elephants as Indra assailed the Asuras.

63. Killing the elephants in battle Vrikodara covered the sky with arrows as a swarm of insects cover a flame.

64. As the wind scatters a collection of clouds so Bhima dispersed and killed those elephants collected there in thousands.

65. Covered with net-works of gold and gems the elephants looked greatly beautiful like clouds charged with lightning.

66. Assailed by Bhima, O king, the elephants fled away on all sides. Some, cut to their hearts, fell down on earth.

67. With elephants adorned with gold fallen there the earth appeared as if strewn with shattered mountains.

68. With fallen elephant warriors, shining and adorned with jewels the earth shone beautiful as if covered with planets dropped for the wane of virtue.

69. With their temples, frontal globes and trunks maimed the elephants, struck by Bhimasena's arrows, fled away in hundreds in that battle.

70. With their limbs wounded with arrows, stricken with fear and vomitting blood, some,huge like mountains, fled away like mountains adorned with metals.

71. There they saw the two arms of Bhimasena, holding bows, pasted with sandal and Aguru and resembling two huge serpents.

72. Hearing the twang of his bow resembling the sound of a thunder-bolt the elephants passed urine and excreta and fled away.

73. That feat, of the intelligent Bhimasena who fought single-handed, resembled that of Rudra while destroying all creatures.

CHAPTER LXII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Then on that best of cars drawn by white horses and driven by Narayana himself the beautiful Arjuna arrived there.

2. As the wind agitates a great ocean so Vijaya overpowered your army, O foremost of kings, abounding in horse-men.

3. While (Arjuna) the rider of white horses was a little careless your son Duryodhana, worked up with anger, and surrounded by his soldiers, came there all on sudden and encompassed the revengeful Yudhisthira.

4. He then struck Yudhisthira with seventy-three razor-shaped arrows. At that Kunti's son Yudhisthira was greatly worked up with anger.

5. He quickly struck your son with thirty darts. Then the Kuru soldiers rushed against Yudhisthira for seizing him.

6. Then apprised of the evil intention of the enemies the great car-warriors came there in a body for rescuing Kunti's son Yudhishthira.

7. Encircled by an Akshouhini of soldiers Nakula, Sahadeva, Dhristadyumna and Parshata advanced towards Yudhishthira.

8. Grinding the great car-warriors of your army Bhimasena too went where Yudhisthira was surrounded by his enemies.

9. Making a downpour of arrows, O king, Vikartana's son Karna obstructed alone all those great bowmen.

10. Although making a downpour of arrows, discharging Tomaras, and exerting their very best they could not look at the son of Radha.

11. With a huge downpour of arrows the son of Radha who had mastered all sorts of weapons withstood all those great bow men.

12. Taking up speedily his bow the noble-minded Sahadeva soon approached Duryodhana and struck him with twenty arrows.

13. Struck by Sahadeva Duryodhana, huge like a mountain, covered with blood, appeared like a maimed elephant.

14. Seeing your son sorely wounded with many powerful shafts Karna, the best of car-warriors, wroth proceeded there.

15. Beholding Duryodhana in that condition and quickly getting ready his weapon he soon struck the sons of Yudhisthira and Prishata.

16. Assailed with arrows by the great son of the charioteer Yudhisthira's soldiers all on a sudden fled away.

17. Various sorts of arrows fell there touching one another. Those, shot off the bow of Karna, touched the wings of others with their blades.

18. The arrows coming in contact with one another a conflagration was caused in the sky.

19. With arrows capable of piercing the bodies of the enemies and advancing quickly Karna covered the ten quarters as if with a swarm of locusts.

20. Beautiful bows shone in the arms of Karna of the color of crimson sandal and adorned with gold and jewels.

21. Then all the quarters were shrouded with arrows. And Karna greatly assailed the righteous king Yudhishthira.

22. Then worked up with anger Kunti's son king Yudhishthira struck Karna with fifty sharpened arrows.

23. Darkened with arrows that army looked exceedingly dreadful. And your soldiers, O king, sent up piteous wails of pain,

24. Whilst they were being slain by Dharma's son with various sharp Kanka-feathered arrows whetted on stone, Bhallas, Saktis and clubs.

25. Wherever the virtuous king extended his looks all the soldiers of your party were shattered.

26. Then Karna, greatly worked up with anger, struck Yudhisthira with winged and calf-tooth shaped arrows.

27. Revengeful, wrathful and having his lips trembling in anger the highly energetic Karna struck Yudhishthira with arrows. Yudhishthira too struck him with gold feathered and sharpened arrows.

28. Karna, as if smiling, struck the Pandava king on the breast with three winged darts.

29. Thus greatly assailed by him the pious king Yudhishthira sat down on his car and ordered his charioteer to go.

30. Then all the soldiers of your army with their king sent up a loud war-cry saying "seize him." And then they rushed towards the king.

31. Then seventeen hundred Kekaya warriors with Panchalas obstructed the soldiers of Duryodhana.

32. When that dreadful and destructive battle raged on the highly powerful Duryodhana and Bhima fought with each other.

CHAPTER LXIII.

(KARNA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Karna, with a net-work of arrows, struck the mighty car-warrior, the great bowman of the Kekaya race who all stood before him.

2. Five hundred heroes who withstood him in battle were killed by Karna.

3. Thereupon seeing the son of Radha irrepressible in battle all those warriors, assailed by Karna's shafts, approached Bhimasena.

4—5. Dispersing that car-force with his arrows Karna, in a charriot, pursued the heroic Yudhishthira, who, then wounded with arrows, and almost unconscious, was slowly proceeding towards encampment between the twins.

6. Approaching the king, the car-warrior's son, with a desire to do good to Duryodhana, struck him with three highly powerful sharpened arrows.

7. The king then struck Radha's son on the breast with an arrow, his charioteer with three and his horses with four.

8. The two sons of Madri protected the sides of Yudhisthira and then they ran towards Karna so that he might not kill the king.

9. Then the highly careful Nakula and Sahadeva severally covered Karna with a downpour of arrows.

10. Then the highly powerful son of the charioteer struck those high-souled and victorious heroes with sharpened darts.

11. Then in the battle Radha's son killed Yudhishthira's most excellent horses white as the teeth, quick-coursing like the mind and having black tails.

12. Then as if smiling the charioteer's son, a great bowman himself, struck down with another *Bhallya* the crown of the son of Kunti.

13. Having killed then Nakula's horses the powerful (Karna) sundered the bow and arrows of the intelligent son of Madri.

14. Then those two sons of Pandu, the two brothers (Yudhisthira and Nakula) greatly wounded, got upon Sahadeva's car after their horses and car had been destroyed.

15. Seeing them deprived of their cars, their maternal uncle, the king of Madra, and slayer of inimical heroes, out of compassion said to Karna.

16. "You are to fight to-day with Pandu's son Phalguna. Why do you, irate, then fight with the pious king Yudhishthira?"

17. With your weapons exhausted, the coat of mail mutilated, arrows reduced and without quiver, with your horses and charioteer worn out with fatigue and yourself wounded with shafts by the enemies, when you will encounter Partha, O son of Radha, you will be a butt of ridicule."

18. Although accosted thus by the king of Madra in the battle-field, still Karna, worked up with anger, pursued Yudhishthira.

19. Having wounded then greatly with sharpened arrows the two sons begotten on Madri by Pandu, Karna smiling made (the king) turn his face with arrows in battle.

20. Thereupon, Salya, smiling again said to Karna, who was on the car, worked up with anger and bent upon killing Yudhishthira.

21. "O son of Radha, leaving aside Partha, for whom you are always honored by the son of Dhritarastra, what will you reap by killing Yudhisthira?

22. Here is the great blare of the conchs blown by the two Krishnas. And here is being heard the twang of his bow like the muttering of clouds in the rainy season.

23. Behold O Karna, having slain all our car-warriors in battle with a net work of arrows, Arjuna is devouring our entire army.

24. The rear of the heroe is being protected Yudhamanyu and Uttamajasa. And Satyaki is protecting his wheel on the north.

25. Dhristadyumaa is guarding his wheel in the south and Bhimasena is fighting with the king Duryodhana.

26. Look to it to-day, O Karna, so that Bhima may not kill the king in our very presence and he may escape him.

27. Behold he has been overpowered by Bhimasena, a beauty of the battle field. It will be a great wonder if you can release him.

28. Go there and rescue the king for he has been overtaken by a great danger. What will you gain by killing the two sons of Madra and the king Yudhisthira?

29—32. Hearing the words of the king Salya and seeing Duryodhana overpowered by Bhima in that great battle, Karna, worked up with the words of Salya and anxious to save the king, left the king Yudhishithira who has no enemies and the two sons of Madri and hurried on for rescuing your son. After Karna's departure, Yudhisthira, begotten by Pandu on Kunti, left the battle-field, born by the quick-coursing horses of Sahadeva.

33—35. Guarded by the twins the king quickly returned to his camp in shame. His body was covered with wounds of arrows. He got down from the car and sat on his best seat. The arrows were then taken out of his person and the king, filled with sorrow, said to his twin brothers

the two great car-warriors, the powerful sons of Madri. "Go speedily to Bhima's detachment."

CHAPTER LXIV.

(KARNABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya siad:—

1. Thereupon surrounded by a mighty car-force Drona's son appeared, all on a sudden O king, where Pritha's son was.

2. Like a bank containing ocean Pritha's heroic son, assisted by Shouri, all on a sudden, encountered him.

3. Thereupon filled with anger, O monarch, the highly powerful son of Drona covered Arjuna and Krishna with arrows.

4. Beholding those two Krishnas covered with arrows the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava and Kuru armies, filled with great wonder, looked at them.

5. Thereupon as if smiling Arjuna created a celestial weapon which, O descendant of Bharata, the Brahmana baffled in battle.

6. Whatever weapon that the Pandava discharged in battle for killing the son of Drona, the great bowman made useless.

7. Then, O king, a great encounter of weapons took place in that great battle when we saw the son of Drona like Death himself with widening mouth.

8. Having filled all the quarters and directions with straight arrows he sundered Krishna's right arm with three arrows.

9. Thereupon killing all the horses of the high-souled one Arjuna created, in the battle-field, a dreadful stream of blood, carring away all to the other region.

10. There all beheld cars and warriors belonging to the detachment of Drona's son destroyed by arrows shot off Partha's bow. There then flowed a river dreadful and running on to the other world.

11. In that agitating and dreadful encounter between Drona's son and Partha the warriors rushed towards one another without any consideration whatsoever.

12. O king, the horses and charioteers of cars were killed, the cavalry were destroyed and the riders of elephants were slain. Thus a dreadful slaughter of animals was carried on by Partha in that battle.

13. Then the car-warriors fell down slain by arrows shot off Partha's bow. And the horses, with their trappings destroyed ran about hither and thither.

14—15. Witnessing these feats of Partha, beautifying the battle-field the powerful son of Drona speedily encountered that foremost of the victorious, quivered his dreadful, gold bedecked bow and struck him on all sides with innumerable sharpended arrows.

16. O monarch, Drouni again ruthlessly wounded Arjuna on the breast with a winged arrow.

17. O son of Bharata, being greatly wounded in battle by that son of Drona he, with force, took up his Gandiva bow. Then the highly intelligent heroe covered Drona's son with a downpour of arrows and cut off his bowstring.

18. Having his bow thus snapped Drona's son took up a sword, like unto a thunder bolt and hurled it at Arjuna.

19. O King, as if smiling, Arjuna all on a sudden cut off that gold-gilded sword that was about to fall on him.

20. Sundered by Partha's arrows it fell down on earth like a mountain shattered by (Indra's) thunder-bolt.

21. Thereupon irate, the mighty car-warrior son of Drona covered fully Vibhatsu with weapons granted him by Indra.

22. Beholding those weapons of Indra about to fall on him Partha took up his Gandiva and speedily baffled them with an arrow created for him by Vasava.

23—24. Then cutting off that net-work of Indra's weapon Partha soon covered the car of Drona's son. Assailed by Arjuna's arrows Drouni, encountering the former and cutting through the downpour of Pandava's arrows, called to his aid a powerful weapon, and all on a sudden wounded Krishna with a hundred arrows, and Arjuna with three hundred small arrows.

25. Thereupon with a hundred arrows Arjuna pierced the son of his preceptor to the very vitals. He then covered his horses and charioteer with a number of arrows in the very presence of the warriors.

26. Then wounding Drouni on his vital parts, Pandava, the slayer of inimical heroes, struck down his driver from his car with a dart.

27. Then himself taking up the reins of horses Drona's son covered Krishna with arrows. He saw a wonderful power in him then.

28. He simultaneously drove his horses and fought with Phalguna. He was spoken

highly of by all the warriors in battle, O King.

29. Then smiling a little, Vibhatsu also named Jaya spedily cut off the rein of Drouni's horses in battle with a razor-like shaft.

30. Assailed with weapons the horses ran away on all sides. There then took place a great havoc of your soldiers.

31. Having thus accomplished victory the Pandavas, desirous of achieving (further) success, pursued your soldiers, on all sides, making a discharge of arrows.

32—33. Thereupon in the very presence of your sons, O king, conversant with diverse modes of warfare, of Suvala's son Shakuni and Karna your great army was again and again routed by the Pandava warriors desirous of victory.

34. Although prevented, O king, by your sons that great army assailed on all sides did not stop in the battle-field.

35. The warriors taking to their heels on all sides in numbers a great confusion took place in the vast terror-stricken army of your son.

36. Karna then exclaimed "Wait wait" But your army, slain by many great warriors, did not wait in the battle-field.

37. Beholding the army of Duryodhana, thus routed on all sides, the Pandavas, filled with the desire of victory, sent up oud war-cries.

38—39. Duryodhana then lovingly said to Karna:—"See, O Karna, how our army, greatly assailed by the Pandava,is flying on all sides, although you are present here. O repressor of foes, do what you think proper now.

40. Routed by the Pandavas, thousands of our soldiers are calling after you only.

41. Hearing those weighty words of Duryodhana, Karna, as if smiling, said to the Madra king.

42. "Behold, O king, the strength of my arms and weapons. I will kill to-day in battle all the Panchalas and Pandavas. Drive my car, O best of men, and every thing will be as I have said."

43—44. Having said this, O monarch, the charioteer's son, highly powerful as he was, took up his old victorious bow *Vijaya* the best of its kind, and rubbing again and and again its string set it on the bow. Thereupon having assured his army and commanded them to wait in the battle-field, the powerful and highly energetic Karna set *Bhargava* weapons to his bow-string.

45. There came out in a stream, O king, millions of sharp arrows in that mighty encounter.

46. Covered fully with those shining and dreadful *Kanka* and peacock-feathered arrows the Pandava soldiers could see nothing in the battle-field.

47. Assailed by the powerful Bhrgava weapon in that battle, O king, Panchalas set up loud lamentations.

48—49. And O king, thousands of elephants, horses, cars and men falling on all sides, the earth began to shake. The great army of the Pandavas quivered from one end to the other.

50. In the meantime while killing his enemies, that foremost of men, the great warrior Karna, even destroying his foes, shone like smokeless fire.

51—52. Massacred then by Karna the Panchalas and Chedis lost their consciousness in the battle-field like elephants when a forest fire rages on. The leading warriors sent up war-cries roaring like tigers. Like animals at the hour of universal dissolution the soldiers, terror-stricken, and running wildly about in the battle-field, set up loud cries of lamentations.

53. Seeing them thus slaughtered by the charioteer's son, all creatures, beasts and birds, were terrorised.

54. As the spirits call upon the Regent of Death to save them, so the Srinjayas, massacred by Karna, repeatedly prayed to Arjuna and Vasudeva's son to save them.

55. Beholding there the discharge of the dreadful Bhargava weapon and hearing the cries of his men slaughtered by Karna, with arrows Kunti's son Dhananjaya said to Krishna.

56. "Behold, O mighty-armed Krishna, the power of Bhargava weapon. No one can withstand it in battle.

57. Behold again in this great encounter O Krishna, the great son of a charioteer, resembling Death himself in power and performing a dreadful feat.

58. Repeatedly urging on his horses he is looking at me. I will not be able to tear me away from Karna in battle.

59. If a man survives he either meets with success or deafeat in battle. To one dead, O Hrishikesh,death itself is a victory.

60. Thus addressed by Partha, Krishna, the subduer of his enemies,said to Dhananjaya, the foremost of the wise, the following suitable to the occasion.

61. The royal son of Kunti has been greatly wounded by Karna. Seeing him first you will afterwards kill Karna.

62. Then Janarddana proceeded to see Yudhisthira, thinking, O king, that Karna, in the meantime, would be worn out with fatigue in battle.

63. Himself too being desirous of seeing the king thus wounded with arrows, Dhananjaya, at the bidding of Keshava, left the battle, and went on his car.

CHAPTER LXV.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having vanquished Drona's son and performed a highly difficult and heroic task, Dhananjaya, ever irrepressible to his enemies, with a bow ready in his hands, eyed his own army.

2. Cheering up the warriors that were still fighting at the heads of their respective detachments and speaking highly of their former successes Arjuna enjoined his car-warriors to be at their posts.

3. Not finding his brother Yudhisthira, a descendant of Ajamida, Arjuna quickly approached Bhima and enquired of the king's whereabouts, saying "Where is the king ?"

Bhima said :—

4. Wounded wirh Karna's arrows the pious king Yudhisthira has gone away from here. I doubt if he still survives.

Arjuna said :—

5. For this very reason proceed you quickly from here and bring the news of the king, that foremost of Kurus. Forsooth, greatly wounded with Karna's arrows the king has gone to his camp.

6. Although struck greatly with sharpened arrows by Drona's son the king still waited in the battle-field, desirous of victory, until Drona was slain.

7. The high-minded chief of Pandus, undoubtedly met with peril in battle through Karna. Go quickly, Bhima, and learn of his condition. I will wait here and oppose the enemy.

Bhima said :—

8. O illustrious and leading descendant of Bharata, better go yourself and enquire after the king. If I go, O Arjuna, the leading warriors will explain that I am frightened in battle.

Sanjaya said :—

9. Then Arjuna said to Bhimasena :—"The Samsaptakas are before my army. Without killing these my enemies I cannot leave the post."

10. Bhima replied then to Arjuna :—"O foremost of Kurus, with the aid of my own power, I will encounter the Samsaptakas in battle, you better go yourself, O Dhananjaya.

11. Thereupon hearing those brave words of his brother Bhimasena, in the midst of the enemies, and desirous of going to see Yudhisthira, he said to the Vrishni heroe (Krishna) :—

12. "Leave this ooean-like army, O Hrishikesha and drive the horses. I wish to see, O Keshava, the king who has no enemies."

13. While he was about to drive the horses, the foremost of Dasharhas said to Bhima :—"It is nothing wonder for you, O Bhima. Kill the enemies of Partha."

14. Thereupon Hrishikesha drove quickly where Yudhisthira was. Quickly was he borne there, O king, by the horses resembling Garuda himself.

15. He had left there Bhimasena, the slayer of his enemies, with instructions to fight the enemies, O king.

16. Then driving in their car those two heroes approached the king who was lying alone on his bed. They got down from the car and saluted the ieet of the righteous Yudhisthira.

17. Seeing that foremost of men safe and sound the two Krishnas were filled with delight as the two Ashwins are on seeing Indra.

18. As Vivaswan congratulated the two Ashwinis, as Vrihaspati congratulated Indra and Vishnu after they had killed the powerful Asura Jambha so the king congratulated them both.

19. Thinking that Karna had been killed the virtuous king was delighted and he then addressed them thus, with his accents suppressed with joy.

CHAPTER LXVI.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Yudhisthira said :—

1. Welcome to you, Devaki's son and Dhananjaya, highly agreeable to me is the pleasure of you too, O Arjuna, O Achyuta.

2. Though yourselves are not wounded by your enemies, you two, who are his enemies, have killed the mighty Karna,

3. Who was like a deadly serpent in battle, an adept in all weapons, the leader of all the sons of Dhritarashtra, nay the very warder of their armour and coats of mail;

4. Who was protected by the great archers Vrishasena and Sushena; highly energetic, powerful and taught by Rama (himself) the use of arms;

5. Who was the head of all the world, and most celebrated car-warrior; who was the saviour of Dhritarashtra's sons and who led the van of the army;

6. Who was the destroyer of others' armies and the oppressor of the enemies, and was bent upon doing Duryodhana a good turn and afflicting us;

7. Who was irrepressible even unto the gods headed by Vasava in a great battle, and was like unto fire and wind in energy and strength;

8. Who was unfathomable like the nether region and an increaser of the joy of friends, he was like Death incarnate to his enemies. By good luck, having slain that Karna in the great battle you come here like the immortals after vanquishing the demons.

9. O Achyuta, O Arjuna, a great encounter took place to-day between myself setting forth my best energies and that hero who appeared like Death incarnate bent upon destroying all creatures.

10—11. By him my standard was cut down, my two *Parshni* drivers were killed and I was made horseless and carless in the very presence of Yuyudhana, Dhristadyumna, the twins, the heroic Shikhandin the son of Drupada, and all the Panchalas.

12. O you of mighty arms, having vanquished them all and many others of his enemies the highly powerful Karna, defeated me in that great battle although I tried my very best to withstand him.

13. Forsooth pursuing me on all the sides and defeating all my allies in that battle that foremost of warriors addressed to me many harsh words.

14. It is through Bhima's power that I do still survive, O Dhananjaya; what more need I say? The humiliation is indeed too much for me.

15. O Dhananjaya, through fear of him, I have not slept in the night nor have I enjoyed comfort in the day for these thirteen years.

16—17. O Dhananjaya, I am burning with hatred against him. Conscious of my days being numbered I avoided Karna, like the bird *Vaddrinasa*. I approached him as if bent on my own destruction. Awake or asleep I spent my days only in thinking how I would accomplish Karna's death.

18. Even while awake, O Arjuna, I see his illusion (of Karna) and it seems to me as if the whole universe is filled with Karna.

19. Wherever I go, O Dhananjaya, in fear of Karna, everywhere I see his image before me.

20. O Partha, with my horses and cars I was vanquished by Karna, who never retreats from the battle-field. He simply let me go with my life.

21. Of what use is life and kingdom to me, since Karna, the beauty of the battle-field, has defied and ridiculed me.

22. I had never undergone such humiliation in battle even from Bhishma, Kripa, or Drona, as I have to-day at the hands of the son of Suta the mighty charioteer.

23. Therefore it is that I ask you to-day, O son of Kunti, about your welfare. Relate to me in detail how you slew Karna to-day.

24. He was in battle like Sakra himself and in prowess like Yama and like Rama in arms. How has he been killed then?

25. He was a mighty charioteer and well-known for being an adept in all the forms of warfare: he was the foremost of archers and the leader of all.

26. O prince, he was respected by Dhritarashtra himself as well as by his sons for you alone. How has then the son of Radha been killed by you to-day?

27. O Arjuna, O foremost of men, in all the battles Karna was regarded by Dhritarashtra's sons as your death.

28. How have you then, O most powerful of men, killed him in battle? Describe to me, O son of Kunti, how Karna has been slain by you.

29. How did you cut off his head, O most mighty one, as a tiger pieces off the head of a *Ruru* deer, while he was fighting, even in the presence of all his allies?

30—31. Does the wicked Karna lie to-day on the naked earth killed with your keen *Kanka*-feathered arrows—Karna, the son of Suta, who used to search all the quarters for you and who had promised to give a car with six elephantine bulls to him who would point you out? Indeed by killing him in battle you have performed a work highly congenial to me.

32. How did you encounter and kill in battle that well-honored hero, that proud and haughty son of Suta who used to search you everywhere in the battle-field.

33. Have you, O brother, really slain in battle the vicious scoundrel who was ever ready to challenge you and to give away to others a superb golden chariot along with bulls, steeds and elephants provided they could give him some clue of you?

34. Have you, indeed, slain that favourite of Suyodhana who, being elated with the pride of chivalry, ever used to indulge in self-glorification amidst the assembly of the Kurus?

35. Does the scoundrel lie low on the battle-field to-day being mangled all over the body with long-ranging blood-besmeared shafts hurled by you from your bow. Could you break in twain the arms of Dhritarastra's sons?

36. Could you baffle the foolish braggings he used to make amidst the assembly of kings simply to soothe Duryodhana, saying,—I will kill Phalguna?

37. Have you, O son of Indra, slain in to-day's battle the dull-headed Karna, the son Suta, who had taken an oath not to wash his feet till Partha breathed?

38—39. That designing Karna who amidst the assembly of the Kuru chiefs had said to Krishna 'why don't you, O Krishna, desert the powerless, imbecile and degraded Pandavas'—that Karna who had vowed solemnly that he would not return from the field till he slew (both) Krishna and Partha—tell me does that vicious Karna lie to-day on the field with mangled limbs?

40. You do full well remember how hotly the battle raged when the Srinjayas and the Kaurava's faced each other—the encounter in which I was brought to such a sad plight. Did you come face to face with Karna and shoot him down?

41. Have you to-day, O Sabyasachin, severed that ear-ring-bedecked splendid head of Karna off from his body with your fiery shafts discharged from the Gandiva.

42. O valiant one, afflicted with Karna's shafts to-day how I thought of you (that you would slay him)! Have you put that thought of mine to action by slaying Karna?

43. Being under the ægis of Karna the proud Suyodhana cared us not a jot. Have you by your might removed that ægis?

44. Did you encounter him in the field and settle with that wretched wight, the son of Suta, who had even before the assembly of the Kauravas likened us to sesame seeds devoid of kernel;

45. That unrighteous son of Suta who had, grinning all the while, ordered Duswashanta to drag out Jagyasena's daughter won by Subala's son (as a stake) at dice;

46. That dull-headed Karna who had upbraided the foremost warriors on Earth—our grand-sire Bhisma—upon being described as an indifferent car-warrior in the course of the tale of *Rathas* and *Atirathas*?

47. Assure me, O Phalguna, that you have met with and slain that Karna in battle, and thereby quench the flame of vindictiveness blazing within my heart being fanned by the wind of mortification.

48. Tell me, therefore, how you slew the son of Suta. O hero, I have so long been expecting you even as the divine Bishnu had awaited the arrival of Indra to bring him the news of Vritra's death.

CHAPTER LXVII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Hearing those words of the pious king, who was all anger, the great warrior Jishnu of indomitable energy said to the irrepressible and powerful Yudhisthira:

2. "O king, while fighting with the Samsaptakas to-day, Drona's son, the leader of the Kuru army, all of a sudden came upon me discharging arrows that were like deadly serpents.

3. Seeing my car rattling like a cloud, all the soldiers stood encircling it. Killing them all, who were full five hundred in number, I proceeded, O mightiest of kings, against Drona's son.

4. Encountering me, O king, the hero rushed resolutely against me like a leader of elephants rushing upon a lion and intended to rescue the warriors who were being slain by me.

5. Later on in the battle, the invincible preceptor's son, the foremost of Kuru warriors, afflicted me and Janardana with arrows poignant like poison and fire.

6. While he fought with me, eight carts each drawn by eight bullocks conveyed his hundreds of arrows. Like a wind dissipating clouds I baffled the arrows he showered upon me.

7. Like a dark cloud discharging its watery contents in downpours he, drawing his bow-string to his very ears, showered

upon me with skill and force thousands of other arrows.

8. So quickly did he move about in the battle-field that we could not discern from which side did he shoot his arrows, right or left, nor could we ascertain when he took up the arrows and when he discharged them.

9. In fact, always we saw the bow of Drona's son drawn to a circle. At last he struck me with five sharp arrows and Vasudeva with another five.

10. In a moment, however, I struck him with thirty thunder-bolt-like arrows. Greatly wounded with the shafts discharged by me he ere long looked like a porcupine.

11. All his limbs were covered with blood. Beholding his soldiers, the best of warriors, bathed in blood and overpowered by me, the son of Suta soon entered into the detachment of car-warriors.

12. Beholding the soldiers terror-striken and over-powered by me in battle and seeing the elephants and horses flying away, Karna at once marched against me with fifty car-warriors. Killing them, however, and avoiding Karna I have come here presently to see you.

13. Seeing Karna, the Panchalas are all filled with fright even like the kine on seeing a lion. Like men entering into the gaping jaws of Death the Prabhadrakas, O king, have confronted Karna.

14. Karna has already killed seventeen hundred of these car-warriors. The son of Suta did not lose heart till he came to our view.

15. You were first engaged with Ashwathama and awfully wounded by him. Afterwards Karna saw you. I thought, O you of wonderful deeds, that coming away from the wanton Karna you were enjoying rest.

16. O son of Pandu, I saw Karna's wonderful weapon being carried in front of the army. Methinks there is none amongst the Srinjayas who will be able to withstand the mighty car-warrior Karna.

17. O king, let Srini's grandson, Satyaki and Dhristadyumna guard my two wings. Let the heroic princes Yudhamanyu and Uttamaujas protect my rear.

18—19. O illustrious and most mighty king, as Sakra encountered Vitra, I shall to-day fight with Suta's son, that heroic and invincible car-warrior, if he can be found in this battle. Come and see us fight with each other in battle for victory.

20. Like persons facing a powerful bull the Prabhadrakas are charging upon Karna. Six thousands of kings are giving their lives for heaven.

21. If however, O king, displaying all my strength I do not kill Karna with his allies in battle, I shall be doomed, O lion among kings, to the curse which falls to the lot of one who promises a thing and does not redeem it.

22. I seek thy blessing, O king. Do say that 'victory will be mine.' There the sons of Dhritarashtra are about to devour Bhima. I will slay Karna and his men and all our enemies."

CHAPTER LXVIII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing that Karna of great prowess was still alive and being angry with Phalguna, Yudhisthira, the Pritha's son of incomparable energy, who had been wounded by Karna with arrows, said to Dhananjaya :

2. "Your army, my brother, must have been disgraced to-day and fled away, stricken with fear. And you have come here forsaking Bhima because you have not been able to kill Karna.

3. Shame it is, O Partha, that you did enter into Kunti's womb. It did not become you to leave behind Bhima in the battle-field because you could not slay Karna.

4. You said to me, O Partha, in the Daita forest that you would kill Karna with no one on your car. Why have you then, afraid of Karna, come here avoiding him and leaving behind Bhima.

5. If you had said in the Daita forest 'O king, I won't be able to kill Karna, we would have in time, O Partha, made some befitting arrangements.

6. Having promised to kill him, O hero, you have not kept your promise. Having launched us in the midst of our enemies why have you shattered us into pieces by wrecking us on a rock ?

7. O Arjuna, we showered many a blessing on you because we expected much good of you. But all our hopes, O prince, are frustrated, like that of a man expecting fruits from a tree and getting flowers instead.

8. Like a hook hidden in a fish, like poison mixed up with food, you did for nothing point out to our covetuous selves this destruction in the shape of kingdom.

9. For these thirteen years, O Dhananjaya, we have been hoping and expecting much of you even like the seeds sown on earth in expectation of rains from gods in season.

10—11. O you of wicked sense, an invisible voice from the sky said to Pritha, on the seventh day from your birth: 'This son born to you will be powerful like Vasava. He will vanquish all his powerful enemies. Gifted with a superior energy he will defeat at Khandava all the gods assisted by other creatures. He will conquer the Madras, the Kalingas, and the Kaikeyas. He will kill the Kurus in the midst of numbers of kings.

12. There will be no archer superior to him and none will be able to discomfit him. This boy, being the master of his own senses and adept in all the branches of knowledge, will subjugate all the living beings at his will.

13—14. O Kunti, this magnanimous son of yours will be handsome like the Soma, swift like the Wind, patient like Sumeru, forbearing like the Earth, effulgent like Sun, wealthy like Kuvera, valiant and powerful like Vishnu. This son of yours, even like Aditi's son Vishnu, the slayer of foes, has taken his being in order to bring victory to his kins and deal destruction to the enemies. This boy of indomitable valour will be far-famed and the founder of a dynasty.'

15. Even that celestial voice resounding in the skies reached the ears of the Maharsis living on the peaks of the Satasringa mountains. But now that voice comes to be untrue. It seems, therefore, that the gods too speak falsehood.

16. The praises which the saintly beings used to lavish upon you, never made me expect Suyodhana's success nor ever did I think that you will be paralised with the fear of Karna.

17. You ride upon a car especially made by the celestial artizan (Viswakarma) himself, the axles of which move smoothly and without any noise. You have the standard of an ape, you hold a sword bedecked with gold and tied with silk, and your bow *Gandiva* is as lengthy as the palm tree, even you have Kesava for your charioteer. Why then, O Partha, have you come back from the field of battle, for fear of Karna?

18. If you, O wretch, had even made over your bow to Kesava and contented yourself by being his charioteer, he would have slain that fearful Karna, as the lords of the Maruts (Sakra) slew with thunder the *Asura* known by the name of Vritra.

19. If you are unable to resist the fearful Karna in his march on the field to-day, then do make over this your *Gandiva* to any other king who is your superior in the use of weapons.

20. The world will not then see us bereft of family and children, deprived of our happiness and kingdom, and sunk, O son of Pandu, into the fathomless abyss of the hell of torment.

21. It would have been better had you come out in the fifth month as an abortion, or better still, if you would not have taken your being in the womb of Kunti, than, O vile wretch, being born of a royal line, to show your back in the battle-field.

22. Fie to your *Gandiva!* Fie to the strength of your arms, fie to your numberless arrows, fie to your standard bearing the ensign of an ape on it and fie to your car presented to you by the god of fire!"

CHAPTER LXIX.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing the words of Yudhistira, Kownteya—the owner of white steeds—in a tempestuous mood took hold of his sword to slay that mightiest of the Bharata's race.

2. Kesava, the cogniser of human hearts, seeing his rage, enquired;—"Why, O Partha, do you lay your hands on your sword?

3. Here, O Dhananjaya, I see no adversary to try the strength of your steel. Clever Bhimasena has already assailed the Dhartarastras.

4. O Kownteya, you have returned from the field, to see king Yudhistira and you have seen that he is keeping up well.

5. This is the time of rejoicing, as you have seen that best of kings whose prowess is like that of a tiger. Why should you then betray yourself thus?

6. O son of Kunti, I do not find any one here whom you can slay. What makes you then to yearn for fight, or have you lost the balance of your mind?

7. Why do you seize your mighty sword so suddenly, I enquire this of you. O Kownteya, whence is this desire of your heart, or why do you fly to sword in such a sullen mood and with such a vigour?"

8. Thus addressed by Krishna, Arjuna, looking towards Yudhistira and whizzing like an angry snake, replied:—

9. "He who tells me 'Give your *Gandiva* to another,' I would cut his head off; such is my secret vow.

10. Now that this king of immeasurable prowess has told me those words in your presence, O Govinda, I won't forgive him.

11. I will, therefore, put to the sword this pious king. I will redeem my vow by slaying this best of men.

12. For this alone I have taken up the sword, O delighter of the Yadus; by slaying Yudhisthira I will thus adhere to truth.

13. I shall thereby be free from grief and fever. O Janardana, what do you wish me to do under the present circumstances.

14. Sire, you are well acquainted with all the past and the future of this universe. I shall, therefore, do as you tell me."

Sanjaya said :—

15. Saying, "Fie, fie unto you, Partha," Govinda again continued :

16. "Now I understand, O Partha, that you have never attended upon the old, since you, O mightiest of men, have been overcome with anger at a time quite out of season.

17. O Dhananjaya, those who are versed in the niceties of religion would never act in the way as you are doing to-day, O pious son Pandu, on not being acquainted with them.

18. O Partha, he who does an act improper and heinous is the vilest of men.

19. You know not the words of wisdom the learned men preach, after the rules of morality, to the pupils waiting up on them.

20. Persons ignorant of them become benumbed and befooled in discriminating between what ought to be done and what ought not, even as you, O Partha, have been non-plussed.

21. It is not easy to learn what ought to be done and what ought not. Of course everything can be learnt with the help of the scriptures. You are, however, a stranger to them.

22. Believing yourself to be conversant with morality, you are observing it in a way which but indicates your ignorance of it. You believe yourself to be virtuous but you know not, O Partha, that it is a sin to slay living beings.

23. Methinks, keeping from doing any injury to any animal is a cardinal virtue. Even an untruth might be told but never an animal ought be slain.

24. O best of men, how could you then like an ordinary man wish to slay your eldest brother the king, who is well versed in morality.

25—26. O Bharata, the slaying of a man who is not engaged in a fight, or is unwilling to fight, or takes to flight, or seeks your shelter, or joins his hands, or gives himself up to you, or is insane, be he even a foe, is never upheld by the righteous. And your superior is even all this.

27. You had formerly taken the vow through childishness. And now through folly you are inclined to do an unrighteous act.

28. Why, O Partha, do you rush upon thy superior, intending to slay him, without determining [before-hand] the exceedingly fine course of virtue which is, certainly, not easily intelligible.

29—30. O son of Pandu, this mystery of virtue I will now explain to you as it was explained by Bhisma, by the pious Yudhisthira, by Vidura or the so-called Kshatri, and by Kunti of great renown. I will tell it you in all its detail; listen to it, O Dhananjaya.

31. One who tells the truth is a pious person. Nothing is there higher than truth. It is, therefore, very difficult to understand the details of truth as observed in action.

32. Truth becomes unutterable and untruth utterable, where untruth would pose as truth and truth as untruth.

33. In a question of danger to life and in marriage untruth may be uttered. Where one's entire fortunes are at stake untruth becomes utterable.

34. At a marriage, or in the enjoymen of lust, or when one's life is at stake, or when one's entire fortunes are about to be lost, or in the cause of a Brahmin untruth may be uttered. It is said that there is no sin in uttering these five sorts of falsehood.

35. On these occasions untruth becomes truth and truth untruth.

36. He who is bent upon always practising truth alone is a fool and takes truth to be as it is. Indeed it is not a very easy thing to become righteous. He who can distinguish between the niceties of truth and untruth can alone become conversant with morality.

37. What wonder is there then that a wise man by doing something awfully cruel may even acquire virtue, as Valaka did by killing a blind beast.

38. What wonder then that an ignorant and inexperienced person, intending to

practise virtue, would commit grave vice like Koushika on the river-bank."

Arjuna said :—

39. Tell me of it, O holy one, in a way that I may learn it,—these stories about Valaka and Koushika on the river-bank.

Basudeva said :—

40. There was once a hunter, O Bharata, Valaka by name. He used to kill animals, not willfully but, in order to support his children and wife.

41. Devoted to his tribal pursuits, always speaking the truth and devoid of malice, he used to maintain his aged mother and father and other dependants.

42. Once on a day, though diligently searching for an animal, he could find none. At last he found a beast of prey, drinking water, which had lost its eyes but the loss was supplied by its keen sense of smell.

43. Though he had not before seen a like of it, yet he killed it then and there. No sooner the blind beast had been killed, that there fell from the skies a shower of flowers.

44. A celestial car, filled with the songs and music of Apsaras, came down from heaven to fetch that hunter of animals.

45. That beast having, successfully performed all the austerities of asceticism with a view to kill all the animals, had received that boon but was made blind instead by the Self-born.

46. Therefore Valaka, having killed the beast that was bent upon killing all the animals, went to heaven. Morality is, therefore, very difficult to be understood.

47. There was an ascetic Brahmin named Kaushika not much read in the Scriptures. He used to reside at a confluence of rivers, not far away from a village.

48. He had taken the vow that 'he would ever speak the truth.' Therefore, O Dhananjaya, he become famous as a truthful man.

49. At a time certain persons, being afraid of robbers, entered the woods. Even there the robbers, filled with anger, doggedly haunted after them.

50. They then approaching Kaushika the truthful, said, 'O holy one, which way have a number of men passed a little while ago? Asked in the name of truth tell us if you have seen them.'

51. Being thus asked Kaushika told them the truth,—that they had entered the wood thickly covered with trees, creepers and shrubs.

52. O Partha, thus did Kaushika inform them. And the report goes that on this those wanton men got hold of those persons and put them to death.

53. For the grave sin of uttering that truth, which should not have been uttered, Kaushika, unversed in the subtleties of religion, fell into a fearful hell :

54. As a foolish man, ill-read in the Scriptures, unacquainted with the details of morality, is fit to fall into an awful hell for not asking aged men to set his doubts at rest.

55. Your definition of morality must be then something like that. Some people attempt at attaining that high and difficult knowledge by the exercise of reasoning.

56. Many persons maintain, on the other hand, that morality can be learned from the Scriptures alone. I do not find fault with the latter, but then everything is not provided for there.

57. The moral precepts have been made for the well-being of the creatures.

58. All that is free from any motive of injury to any being is surely morality. For, indeed, the moral precepts have been made to free the creatures from all injuries.

59. Dharma (morality) is so-called because it protects all. Indeed, morality saves all creatures. Surely then that is morality which is capable of keeping off a creature from all injuries.

60. Those who try to stick to them logically, have scarcely a mind to acquire morality. If you can get rid of them without a word do on no account have any intercourse with them.

61. If he must be spoken to or if he takes offence on not being talked with, in that case better speak a falsehood ; verily that untruth is truth.

62. He who, having taken a vow on some set purpose, cannot redeem the same by acts, attains not the rewards of that vow.

63. When one's life is endangered, at marriage, at the risk of destruction of one's kith and kin or in the course of business, all that is uttered will not be regarded as falsehood.

64. To those who are well-versed in the real secrets of morality, there appear no immorality in all this.

65. There even, where one cuts off his connections with robbers after having taken an oath, it is better to swear falsely, for surely that falsehood would be truth. On

no account should one's wealth be given to the robbers, if that could be helped.

66. Wealth when given to the sinful afflicts even the donor. Therefore, an untruth spoken in the cause of morality does not amount to a falsehood.

67. I have now duly pointed out to you the distinctive features of morality. Having heard all these tell me, O Partha, if Yudhisthira deserves to be killed."

Arjuna said :—

68. "O Krishna! You have spoken as a man of great wisdom should say, as a man of great intelligence need say. Your words are even such as would do good to us.

69. You are like both a mother and a father to us. You, O Krishna, are our sanctuary; that is why your words are beneficial to us.

70. Nothing is there in the three worlds that is unknown to you. Therefore, you know the sublime morality with all its niceties.

71. I admit that the righteous Yudhisthira, son of Pandu, is unslayable. In this connection kindly tell me something in my favour. Hear me tell you of something else that lies in my heart.

72—73. You know, O Keshava, the best scion of the Dasharha race, that my vow is that whoever among men tells me 'make over, O Partha, thy Gandiva to him who is superior to you in point of chivalry or in wielding armours' I will, with all my might, slay him. So Bhima also has taken a vow to slay the man who addreses him as 'one without the hirsute indications of manhood!' Just now the king has repeatedly told me in your presence " make over your bow."

74. O Keshava, if I slay him, surely then the thought of having slain the king will immerse me in sin and make me loose my valour and mental faculties, and thus cut short my days in this world.

75. Therefore, O Krishna, the best of all the righteous men, do give me such counsels as would uphold my well-known vow and leave both myself and the eldest son of Pandu alive."

76. Basudeva said, "O valiant one, the King Yudhistira feels weary and aggrieved on being afflicted with arrows shot at him by Karna during the campaign; the more so as he was harassed with shaft-shots by the son of Suta even when he was retiring from the field.

77. Heavy at heart as he was at all this, he used such angry and improper expressions to you. Moreover, he addressed you in that tenor thinking that if he could provoke you, you would forthwith slay Karna in battle.

78. O Partha, the king believes that this immoral Karna is unbearable to everyone else on earth but you. It was this that enraged him so highly as to use such cruel words even in your face.

79. King Yudhistira, the righteous, is of opinion that to-day's battle is a play at dice in which the life of the ever-deviceful and ever-overbearing Karna has been laid as an wager. If he is slain, the Kauravas would necessarily meet with defeat.

80. Therefore, O Arjuna, the son of Dharma deserves not death at your hands. At the same time your vow also must be kept good. Under the circumstances listen to the means that will make him apparently dead without the real loss of life.

81. A man of honour lives in this material world so long as he receives the homage due to him, but when he is woefully dishonored, he is spoken of as one more dead than alive.

82. O Partha, this king has ever been honored by you, Bhima, and the twins and by all the wise and chivalrous men of this world. You just offer some insult to that king.

83. O Bharata, a superior on being addressed as '*thou*' dies [at heart]. Therefore, you do address the much-respected Yudhistira as 'thou.'

84. O the best of Kurus, O son of Kunti, do behave thus towards Yudhistira the righteous, and insult that honorable man by this censurable behaviour.

85. This is a Sruti given out by the Rishis Atharva and Angira, the best of all the Srutis; people who wish well should always follow this without any scruple.

86. To address a venerable superior as '*thou*,' is to kill him without actually depriving him of his life. Therefore do you, who are versed in morality, address Yudhistira the righteous, in the manner I have indicated.

87. On your acting thus the righteous Yudhistira will verily feel that you have offered him a death-blow. Later on you will worship his feet and speak to him in befitting terms and thus pacify him.

88. O Partha, your intelligent brother Yudhistira would never feel in the least angry with you. On being thus freed from impiety and fratricide you may cheerfully proceed against and slay Karna, the son of Suta."

CHAPTER LXX.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Being thus spoken to by Janardana, Pritha's son Arjuna highly approved of the friendly counsels and then addressing Yudhistira, the righteous, in a sullen tone, spoke such harsh words as he had never before done.

2—4. Arjuna said, "O king, thou shouldst upbraid me no more. Thou who art at a distance of about two miles from the battle-field, shouldst not upbraid me for nothing. He who having, in fair fight, defeated the enemies and slain those chivalrous lords of Earth and their best and leading car-warriors, elephants, cavalry and innumerable combatants, has been fighting with the foremost of heroes; he, who having routed in fight more than a thousand elephants and ten thousand soldiers of the Kamboja-mountaineers has been yelling as a lion roars after having killed many a deer; that Bhima may upbraid me.

5. The wonderful feats the hero Brikodara has been achieving on jumping down from his chariot with mace in hand, and the innumerable horses, cars and elephants he has been destroying, are such, the like of which thou canst never achieve.

6. That hero, with the valour of Indra, has been, with the best of swords, splitting down riders with horses and elephants, and has been consuming the enemies with arrows and the broken limbs of cars, and spreading death all around with his feet and hands.

7. Indeed, Bhimsena, mighty like Yama and Kuvera, readily slays the hostile army. That Bhimsena may revile me and not thou who art ever being protected by friends.

8. He, who has been diving single-handed deep into the surge of Durjodhana's soldiers, carrying by storm the foremost elephants, steeds, infantry and charioteers; that Bhimsena, the slayer of foes, may reprove me.

9. He, who has been slaying, in numbers the ever-furious elephants of the hostile Anga, Banga, Kalinga, Nisada and Magadha, that look like masses of blue clouds; that Bhimsena, the chastiser of enemies, may find fault with me.

10. In the battle that valiant Brikodara being seated on a superbly-decked chariot has been holding in readiness handful of arrows and oppurtunely hurling them down in showers, like the clouds pouring torrents of rain.

11. I have seen that in to-day's battle Bhimasena has cut asunder with his arrows, the heads, bodies and proboscis of eight hundred elephants and thereby killed them; therefore, that Brikodara, the slayer of foes, may use harsh words towards me.

12. O Bharata, the learned men say that the strength of the foremost of Brahmanas lies in words and the main strength of the Kshatriyas is in their arms; but thine strength lies in thine words, moreover thou art wanton. As for me, it is not unknown to thee what stuff I am made of.

13. I am ever bent upon pandering to thy inclinations with my wives, sons, life and soul; still that thou hast been torturing me with thine pointed words, I am convinced that we cannot expect happiness at thy hands.

14. O Bharata, dost thou be trifling with me no longer, lying all the while on Draupadi's bed. It is for thee that I have been slaying many a mighty car-warrior. Perhaps that has been making thee fearless and wanton still. Indeed, I could never feel any happiness from thee.

15. O God among men, the magnanimous Bhisma, true to his vows and only with a view to please thee, had himself pointed out that the valiant and high-souled Shikhandin, the son of Drupada, would be the cause of his death; and whele I had been shielding that Shikhandin in the battle-field he was slain by the latter.

16. I do not approve of thine being restored to sovereignty, because thou art addicted to the vice of gambling. Having thyself committed a sin, to which the low alone are addicted, thou art now trying to get off from thy foes through our aid.

17. Thou hast heard of the immorality and the numerous evils of playing at dice, dilated upon by Sahadeva. Yet thou couldst not forego those evils practised by the wicked alone. It is but for this that we are steeped in distress.

18. Since thou wert engrossed in gambling, we could derive no happiness from thee. O Pandava, having caused all these mischiefs thyself, thou art now heaping al, these reproaches on me.

19. Lo, the hostile troops, slain by us are lying prostrate on earth with mangled limbs and are uttering the deepest groans. Indeed, it was thou who didst those wrongs, for which the Kauravas have lost their lives.

20. The mighty warriors of the Kurus and ourselves have performed wonderful feats of valour in the battle-field. The hostile troops from the North, the West, the East and the South have been slain to a man.

21. O ruler of mankind, it was you who had played at dice, and it was for you alone that our kingdom was lost and we have fallen on evil days. Therefore, O king, do not provoke us too much by casting cruel aspersions on us."

Sañjaya said :—

22. The calm, virtuous and conscientious, Sabyasachin (Arjuna) having addressed to Yudhistira such harsh and exceedingly cruel words, and having thus slightly sinned became cheerless.

23. Then that son of Indra became repentant and sighing heavily unsheathed his sword. Seeing this, Krishna said "What is this? Why do you draw your sword lustrous like the blue skies?

24. If you have anything to ask, be out with it. I will tell you how to gain your desired ends." Being thus spoken to by Keshava, the foremost of men, the remorse-stricken Dhananjaya replied:

25. "I do mean to destroy my body that has thus sinned." Hearing this from Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti, Krishna the adorable of the righteous, said unto him:

26. "O slayer of foes, O Kiritin (Arjuna), why have you become so much crest-fallen on addressing the king as 'thou.' You intend to kill yourself, but no honest man would approve of it.

27. O hero among men, what your state would have been had you, under a false religious zeal, slain your eldest brother to-day?

28. O Partha, religion is very subtle and awfully unintelligible, the more so to the ignorant. Hear me tell you of it. Suicide is tantamount to fratricide, and in either case condemnation to the same hell would have been inevitable.

29. Therefore, O Partha, now recount to him your merits and valorous deeds and you shall thereby slay yourself."

30. Dhananjaya, the son of Sakra (Indra) hailed these words, saying, "Be it so." Then lowering his bow, he said unto Yudhistira, the adored of the virtuous, "Hear me, O King:

31. "O ruler of men, excepting only the wielder of *Pinaka*, the foremost of the Gods, there is no skilled archer like me. On receiving the sanction of that illustrious deity, whose forehead is bedecked with the cresent moon, I can surely destroy in a moment this whole universe with all its organic and inorganic creation.

32. O King, it was I who had defeated all the nations and the chiefs of all the principalities in the world and brought them under your subjection. It was through my influence that your *Rajasuya* sacrifice had been brought to a happy close by gifts of *Dakshina* and by a meeting of the celestials.

33. In my palms there are the signs of sharp swords and stringed bows and arrows, and in my soles are the marks of cars and ensigns. That is why a man like me can never be defeated in battle.

34. I have slain the enemies from the North, routed the foes from the West, driven off the hostile squadron from the East, and extirminated the foes from the South. Indeed I have slain over half the hostile armies; there is left only a small portion of the most unflinching foes.

35. O king, the army of Bharata, with the blazing effulgence of the celestial host, being slain by me, are lying flat on the field. With weapons, I slay those alone that are skilled in the use of weapons, that is why I do not make a wholesale massacre of the entire hostile army.

36. O Krishna, let us hasten to slay the son of Suta, riding upon my awe-inspiring and victorious chariot. Let this king be free from all anxieties and troubles. I am sure to slay Karna in battle with my arrows.

37. To-day either dame Suta will be bereft of her son by me, or Kunti will be bereft of me by Karna. Verily do I tell you that I won't unlock my mail-cloak to-day without slaying Karna in battle with my arrows."

Sanjaya said :—

38. Having again thus addressed Yudhistira, the foremost of the righteous, the diadem-decked Arjuna readily laid aside his weapons and bow and thursted his sword into the scabbard.

39. Having thus appeased Yudhistira he hung down his head in shame and with joined hands thus addressed him: "O king, I bow unto you, be pleased with me; you will understand in due course the gist of all that I have told you."

40. The valiant Arjuna, having thus appeased Yudhistira, capable of bearing all enemies, and, having stood there awhile, said again, "It shall not be deferred, it must be done ere long. There is Karna coming towards me. I must proceed against him.

41. "I am going to extricate Bhimasena from the battle by all means and slay the son of Suta. My life is devoted to perform what pleases you. I am telling you the truth, know it for certain."

42. The diadem-decked Arjuna of blazing effulgence having said this and worshipped Yudhistira by his feet, rose to proceed to the battle.

43. After having heard these harsh words of Phalguna (Arjuna), Yudhisthira, the foremost of the righteous, with a heavy heart rose from the bed [on which he had been reclining] and said unto him,

44. "O Arjuna, the wicked deed that I have done has brought upon you this terrible calamity; do you, therefore, chop off to-day the head of this exterminator of the race, the worst of the family.

45. "A wretch, sinner, dull-headed, idle, coward, insulter of the aged, and wanton that I am, what is the good of your thus behaving towards me, after having addressed such rude words?

46. A sinner that I am, I would repair to the woods this very day: relieved of my company may you live in happiness. The magnanimous Bhimsena is worthy of the throne. An impotent that I am, what is the use of my having the sovereignty?

47. I cannot any longer bear the harsh words you spoke being excited with anger. Therefore, let Bhimsena be the king. It is not worth my while to live after being thus insulted."

48. Having expressed himself thus, the king Yudhistira leaving that bed stood up suddenly and then expressed his intention of proceeding to the woods. Upon this Vasudeva bowing down, said unto him,

49. "O king! you know already the vow of the veracious wielder of the *Gandiva*, in respect of his *Gandiva*.

50. Whoever in this world tells him, 'Give thy *Gandiva* to another,' would be slain by him. And even these words you addressed him just now.

51. "O lord of the Earth! that is why Partha simply to keep up that solemn vow, under my instructions, addressed you with those insulting words. Because it is said, that insults to superiors are tantamount to death.

52. "Therefore, O long armed king! forgive us of the unmannerly behaviour of us both, Arjuna and myself.

53. O king! we both of us surrender ourselves to you. I beseech you, by all means vouchsafe us your pardon.

54. To-day the earth shall soak the blood of that reprobate son of Radha; solemnly I swear before you that you may count upon Suta's son as slain to-day, and know it for certain that whomever you like, he loses his life to-day."

55. Upon this Yudhistira, the foremost of the righteous, hastened to raise the prostrate Hrisikesha with due honor.

56. Then, folding his hands together, he said unto him these opportune words: "It is just as you said, O Gobinda! Let this transgression be in respect of me; there is no harm in that.

57. O Madhaba, O Achyuta! I am obliged, to and saved by you; you have rescued us to-day from a grave calamity.

58. Both of us were steeped in ignorance to-day. It is only through your help that we have been rescued from an ocean of distress.

59. O Achyuta! It is through having obtained your intelligence at our raft that this day we have safely passed over an ocean of grief and remorse. In fact, it is through you that we have been blessed with our relatives and allies."

CHAPTER LXXI.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Having addressed Yudhisthira in such an unbecoming manner, and thus being guilty of an unrighteous conduct, Dhananjaya, the son of Prithi, became disconsolate beyond measure.

2—4. Basudeva [then] in a caustic tone addressing the son of Pandu said, "How, O Partha, would you have fared, had you mindful of [your] truthfulness, slain the son of Dharma with the keen edge of your steel. By simply 'thou theeing' the king you are affected so much: what, would you have done, O Partha, had you actually fulfilled your promise. The law of polity are indeed too subtle for comprehension, especially to those of weak intellect.

5. For moral scruples you would surely have taken out the life of your eldest, and would have thus committed a heineous sin and fallen into eternal perdition.

6. I adjure you, therefore, to assuage the sorrows of the pious king, the adored of the devout and the head of the Kurus.

7. Let us pacify king Yudhisthira with due obeisance, and when he is reconciled let both of us march against the chariot of the son of Suta, and fight him out.

8. O bestower of honors, secure the blessings of the son of Dharma, by shooting down Karna with the keen points of your arrows.

9. O mighty-armed one, in my opinion this is the best course you could follow at present. By acting thus you will gain your ends."

10. After this, O monarch, Arjuna became quite ashamed of himself; bending his head down he touched Yudhisthira's feet,

11. And repeatedly said unto that chief of the Bharatas, "O king, be appeased; forgive me for the impropriety of my language towards you; they were given expression to [as the only course left me] for maintaining truthfulness and avoiding sin."

12—13. O giant of the Bharata race, seeing Dhananjaya, the slayer of foes, thus fall at his feet with tears in his eyes, Yudhisthira, the lord of creation, the emblem of religion, rose up from his reclining position and with gushing eyes affectionately embraced him.

14. Having thus indulged themselves for some time and assuaged their grief the two brothers of bright effulgence became reconciled to each other, and were once again cheerful.

15. Later on the son of Pandu, again giving Jaya a hug and taking the fragrance of his head, became supremely happy, and praising his conduct, said:

16. "O mighty-wielder of bows, in spite of all my exertions in the battle-field, Karna with his shafts has, in the midst of the whole assembly, shattered my armours pinions, forces, arrows, bows and steeds.

17. O Phalguna, thinking of this, and witnessing his conduct in the battle, I have been sorely aggrieved. Life has no longer any charm for me.

18. If you do not overcome that indomitable hero in to-day's battle, then surely I will give up my life:—what would be the use of bearing the burden of this body and carrying it on the earth any longer?

19. O mighty scion of the Bharata race, upon hearing Yudhisthira thus express himself, Vijaya replied:

20—21. "O foremost of kings, O lord of the earth, solemnly do I swear unto you that by your grace, by Bhima, and the twins that this day either I shall slay Karna, or myself kiss the earth being slain by him. I take this vow upon this weapon."

22. Having delivered himself thus to the king he addressed the following words to Madhaba: "Verily, O Krishna, I will slay Karna in to-day's battle. May you be blessed! for it is only through your tactics that the wretch could be slain."

23. O foremost of kings, upon Partha's uttering these words Keshava said unto him: "O mighty Bharata, you are well worthy of slaying Karna.

24. Indeed, O best of men, O foremost of car-warriors, it has ever been uppermost in my thoughts as to how you would succeed in slaying him."

25. Then the ever-intelligent Madhaba once more turned towards the son of Dharma, and said; "O Yudhisthira it is meet that you would console Bibhatsu,

26. And order him to slay the wretched Karna to-day. O son of Pandu, it is upon hearing that you were being afflicted with the arrows of Karna that we came to ascertain the plight you were in.

27. O king, it was very fortunate that you were not slain or captured. O holy one, do now console your Bibhatsu and bless him that he may attain victory."

28. Yudhisthira said,—"Come O Partha, O Bibhatsu, come and embrace me; O son of Pandu, you have addressed me in words befitting the position and for my good, and I have forgiven you for their expressions.

29. O Dhananjaya you have my orders to go and slay Karna. Do not, O Partha, take offence with me for the vile expression I have made use of against you."

Sanjaya continued:—

30. O king, thereupon Dhananjaya bent his head low, and with his hands took hold of the feet of his eldest brother.

31. The king then raising him clasped him to his bosom, and smelling his head once more addressed him thus:

32. "O Dhananjaya of mighty arms, I feel highly honored by you; do you attain once more the greatness and victory you ever deserve."

Arjuna said:—

33. "Getting hold of that sinful son of Radha, who vaunts of his prowess, I shall in to-day's battle slay him along with his allies.

34. Karna, who had afflicted you with his arrows shot from a full-drawn bow, would reap the dire effects of his act, this day.

35. O ruler of the earth, I assure you that I will slay Karna to-day in dreadful battle, and come back to bring unto you the happy tidings walking all the while in your steps.

36. O lord of the universe, I swear unto you by your feet that I shall not return

from the terrible battle to-day without having slain Karna."

Sanjaya said :—

37. As the diadem-decked Arjuna was speaking in this strain, Yudhisthira cheerfully addressed to him these graver words :

38. "Do you ever attain unfading fame, eternal life, ready consummation of hopes, perpetual victory, ceaseless energy and continual success over your enemies ! May the gods grant you prosperity ! May you realise all that I wish of you ! At present go at once to the battle and kill Karna for self-elevation even as Purandara killed Vritra.

CHAPTER LXXII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. On having satisfied Yudhisthira, Partha, bent upon slaying the son of Suta, cheerfully said unto Govinda :

2. "Let my chariot be again got ready, and let the best of steeds be harnessed thereto, and let all sorts of arms be placed in that superb vehicle.

3. The horses, thoroughly trained by expert horsemen, have already refreshed themselves by rolling on the ground. Let them be forthwith brought out, and equipped in the trappings of the car. O Govinda, make headway, to take away the life of Suta's son.

4. O sovereign, on being thus addressed by the magnanimous Phalguna, Krishna said to Daruka, "Do all that has been said by Arjuna, the foremost of archers and the best scion of Bharata's race."

5. O best of kings, Daruka on being thus ordered by Krishna, equipped the chariot, covered with tiger-skins and ever awe-inspiring to the enemies. He then informed the magnanimous son of Pandu, that the chariot was ready.

6. Seeing the chariot equipped by the high-souled Daruka, Arjuna took leave of Yudhisthira, and with the Brahmanas' blessings and performance of their many propitiatory rites, then proceeded to ascend his superb chariot.

7. On Yudhisthira, the righteous one and of great wisdom, having bestowed his benedictions Arjuna marched against Karna's chariot.

8. O Bharata, seeing that great archer start off for the field all the living beings believed Karna as already slain by the magnanimous Pandava.

9. O king, the whole universe turned calm for the time being. O lord of men, blue jays (the king-fishers), wood-peckers, herons, began to hover round the son of Pandu.

10. O king, a flight of birds, of beauty and good omen, called *Pung*, began to cackle merrily as if to urge Arjuna to hasten to the battle.

11. While O monarch, the protentous *Kankas*, vultures, cranes, hawks and ravens flew before him in anticipation of food.

12. Besides these other auspicious auguries presaged the extinction of the hostile host, and the doom of Karna.

13. While on his way to the field Partha began to perspire copiously and became deeply thoughtful as to how he would gain his end.

14. Then finding Partha proceeding in such a thoughtful mood Vasudeva's son, the slayer of Madhu, said these words to the wielder of *Gandiva* :

15. "O Wielder of *Gandiva*, there is no man in this world, who could defeat those you have defeated with your bow in the battle-field.

16. I have seen many a hero, valiant like Sakra, who have gone off to the highest regions having encountered you in the battle.

17—18. O gifted one, who, that is not equal to you, could in battle withstand Drona and Bhima and Bhagadatta and Binda and Anubinda of Abanti, and Sudakshina, the chief of the Kambojas, and Srutayudha of mighty prowess, and Achyutayudha as well.

19. O Arjuna, you have heavenly weapons and dexterity of hand and energy ; you are always clear-handed in the battle-field, well-versed in the science of war, unfailing in your aim, and your ready-wit in emergencies and your martial manœvres are admirable.

20. O Partha, you can vanquish the gods and Gandharvas together with the organic and inorganic creation, there is no mortal warrior on earth who can be your rival in battle.

21. There cannot be found any skilled archer like you, either among the invincible Kshatriyas or the gods.

22. Brahma, the creator of all beings, has himself made that powerful bow *Gandiva*, O Partha, which you fight with. And that is why no one can outsrip you in battle.

23. However, O son of Pandu, I shall tell you words that would conduce to your well-being. O strong-armed one, do not think lightly of Karna, who is a glory of the field.

24. Karna is valiant, proud, an adept in the use of weapons, an expert charioteer, skilled in the tactics of war, a veteran warrior, and an able diplomatist.

25. O son of Pandu, to you I need not say much; hear me tell you of him in brief. I regard that mighty car-warrior Karna as being equal, if not superior, to you in prowess. Therefore, exert utmost caution in slaying him in the great battle.

26. He is valarous like Agni, swift like the speed of the wind, furious like the Destroyer, strong and powerful like the lion.

27. He is eight *ratnis* (*i.e.*, about 168 inches) in height, and of long arms. His chest is expanded and strong, and he is almost invincible. He is, moreover, chivalrous and an eminent hero, and of graceful figure.

28. He possesses all the necessary attributes of an warrior, and is a dispeller of of the fears of his friends, always hostile to the Pandavas and ever bent upon doing good turns to the sons of Dhritarashtra.

29. Methinks that the son of Radha cannot be slain by any one, not even by the gods with Vasava himself at their head, excepting by you alone. Therefore, do you slay the son of Suta to-day.

30. No one made of flesh and blood, not all the warriors, nor even the gods would succeed in defeating that mighty car-warrior in fight, even if they combine together to do so.

31. He is wicked, vicious and wanton, and ever bears evil designs against the Pandavas. He has no self-interest in this quarrel with the Pandavas. Do you attain success to-day by slaying Karna in battle.

32. Do you to-day cut short the days of that son of Suta, the adored of the car-warriors, who claims to be beyond the pale of death. That son of Suta in his arrogance ever disdains the Pandavas.

33. O Dhananjaya, the sinful Suyodhana poses himself as a hero only counting upon Karna's valour. Do you to-day strike at the root of all evils by slaying down that son of Suta.

34. O Dhananjaya, do slay that mighty Karna, who has the sword for his tongue, the bow for his mouth, the arrows for his teeth, and who is moreover arrogant and energetic.

35. I am fully aware of your chivalry and strength. Do, O hero, slay that Karna in battle even as a lion kills an elephant.

36. Do in to-day's battle kill that Vaikartana Karna, counting upon whose prowess the sons of Dhritarashtra overlook your manly virtues,"

CHAPTER LXXIII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O Bharata, then again did Keshava of magnanimous heart address the following words to Arjuna, who was proceeding resolutely to slay Karna,

2. To-day, O Bharata, is the seventeenth day of this horrible carnage of men, elephants and horses.

3. O sovereign, at first your own troops and those of the hostile party were a legion, but being engaged in fight there have been left but a small remnant.

4. Though the Kauravas had, at the outset, numerous steeds and elephants, yet they have been routed on the field as they had to face yourself as their foe.

5. These potentates, and these united forces of the Srinjayas, and these Pandavas have been successful in holding their ground, only because they have such an unflinching leader in you.

6. O destroyer of foes, being under your protection, the Panchala, Pandava, Matsya, Karusa and Chedi hosts have been sweeping away the hostile army.

7. O Sire, who else could have vanquished the combined army of the Kauravas, had not the valiant Pandavas been fighting under your ægis?

8. What need I speak of defeating the Kauravas? Single-handed you can vanquish in battle the Asuras, celestials and human beings of the three worlds put together.

9. O mighty one, who else, excepting yourself, could have conquered Bhagadatta in fight, even were he powerful like Basava himself.

10. O holy Partha, no mortal could even gaze upon this vast army, being as they were, under your protection.

11. O Partha, Dhristyadyumna and Shikhandi had succeeded in slaying Drona and Bhisma, only because you protected them in battle.

12. Or, O Partha, who else could have conquered in battle those most eminent warriors of the Bharata race,—Drona and Bhishma, endued with the prowess of a Sakra.

13—15. O most powerful one, who else but you could defeat those formidable leaders of *Aksouhinis*, those unflinching and invincible heroes, Bhisma—son of Shantanu, Drona, Vaikartana, Kripa, and Drona's son and King Duryodhana himself, all united together and adepts in wielding arms.

16. Numerous detachments of [hostile] soldiers have been extirpated; their cars, horses and elephants have been cut down [by you], as also numbers of indignant and impetuous Kshatriyas hailing from various provinces.

17—18. O Bharata [lo] the forces of the Gobasas, the Dasamiyas, Basatis, the Easterners, the Batadhanas and the sensitive Bhojas, and of other Bramhanas and Kshatriyas, with their best horses and elephants, have all been slain confronting you and Bhima [in battle].

16—21. The Tusharas, the Yabanas, the Khashas, the Darbabhisaras, the Paradas, the Shakas, the Ramathas, the Tanganas, the Andhraks, the Pulindas, all of fierce temperament and awful deeds, and the Kiratas of formidable prowess, and the Mlechhas, the Mountain tribes, and the people inhabiting the Sea coasts, all of whom are very powerful, unflinching in battle, and wielders of maces, have gathered round the standard of the Kurus and been fighting hard for Suyodhana. And none else but you, O scorcher of foes, could defeat them in battle.

22. If you had not come to the rescue who else could advance against the mighty troops of the Dhartarastras arrayed in battle order?

23. O puissant one, the hostile troops shrouded with dust looked-like a surging sea, and the infuriated Pandavas, forcing their way amongst them, threw them overboard.

24. The mighty Jayatsena, the king of the Magadhas, was slain in battle by Abhimanyu these seven days past.

25. The ten thousand powerful elephants, forming the king's retinue, were then struck down by Bhimasena with his mace.

26. Later on hundreds of other elephants and charioteers fell through Bhima's powerful hands.

27. Therefore, O Partha, in the course of this terrible battle the Kauravas, along with their steeds, cars and elephants, have fallen victims to Death no sooner they encountered Bhimasena and your self.

28. O Partha, the van of the Kaurava host on being slain by the Pandavas, Bhisma shot forth showers of deadly arrows.

29. Skilled in the use of celestial weapons he covered the Chedis, the Kashis, the Panchalas, the Karushas, the Matsyas and the Kaikayas, with his arrows and slew them to a man.

30. The atmosphere became thick with gold-feathered, straight-shot deadly arrows, that were discharged from his bow.

31. Discharging flights of shafts at a time he struck down thousands of charioteers. He killed in all a hundred thousand powerful men and elephants.

32. The shafts he shot during the battle did not take any of the nine wrong courses, but flying direct through the tenth [and the approved] course destroyed many steeds, cars and elephants.

33. Massacring the [Pandava] troops for ten days together, Bhisma rendered the terraces of many a car empty and slew numberless elephants and steeds.

34. Assuming the form, of Rudra or that of Upendra in battle, he afflicted the Pandava detachments and played a havoc with them.

35. The wicked Suyodhana, bereft of a cause was about to be drowned in the sea of misfortune, and with the view of rescuing him Bhisma slaughtered the rulers of the Chedis, the Panchalas and the Kaikayas, and caused a great carnage amongst the Pandava army teeming with cars, steeds and elephants.

36. As he careered in battle, resplendent like the Sun himself, neither the innumerable infantry of the Srinjayas, all well-armed, nor the other rulers of the earth were even able to look at him.

37. Yet the Pandava troops with all their resources made a giant effort against the victorious Bhisma who was thus careering in the battle.

38. Indeed he had achieved an unrivalled heroism in the field, having routed the Pandavas and the Sanjayas all single-handed in battle.

39. Being under your powerful protection Sikhandin encountered him, and with his straight shafts slew that foremost of men.

40. O mighty one, as the *Asura* Vritra courted his death obtaining Vasaba for his foe, so having obtained you [as his foe] there lies on a bed of arrows that grandsire [wrapt in eternal sleep].

41. The violent Drona having arranged his troops in an impenetrable array has slain the army of the enemies and many a mighty charioteer for five days together.

42. That valiant charioteer having protected Jayadratha in battle committed a havoc amongst the hostile army during the nocturnal fight, like the fierce Destroyer himself.

43. Having with his arrows killed numerous warriors that valiant and chivalrous son of Bharadwaja, at last attained the highest end on encountering Dhristadyumna.

44. If you had not held at bay Suta's son and other charioteers in the battle that day, then Drona would never have been slain.

45. O Dhananjaya, you kept engaged the entire Dhartarashtra forces, and thus it was that the son of Prishata could slay Drona.

46. O Partha, who else among the Kshatriyas but you, could have achieved such feats [of martial strength], as you did when overthrowing Jayadratha?

47. Having thwarted the vast host and slain numerous valiant kings you, with the strength of your weapons, have slain the ruler of the Sindhus.

48. O Partha, to the mortals the slaughter of the ruler of the Sindhus seem to be exceedingly strange, but to you it is no wonder, as you are an eminent charioteer.

49. O Bharata, methinks, it would not appear impossible even if all the Kshatriyas were to be exterminated in the course of a day, with you for their adversary in the field.

50. O Partha, now that Bhisma and Drona are slain, the fierce Dhartarashtra force may well be regarded to have lost all their heroes.

51. With their chief and foremost warriors slain, with their horses, chariots and elephants struck down, the Bharata army look like the welkin bereft of the Sun, the Moon and the Stars.

52. O Partha, as the Asura hosts were routed by the prowess of Sakra in days of yore, so yonder host of terrible prowess have been vanquished by you.

53. Besides the slain there are now left only five mighty charioteers, Ashwathwama, Kritabarma, Karna, Shalya—the ruler of Madra, and Kripa.

54. O mightiest of men, by killing those five eminent charioteers to-day may you get rid of all foes, and bestow this earth with all its islands, cities and seas to King Yudhistira.

55. Let that Pritha's son of illimitable valour and fortune obtain to-day the entire Earth with the mountains and forests and waters [on it], the firmament [above it], and the nether regions [below it].

56. As Vishnu, in days of yore, made a gift of the three worlds to Sakra after overthrowing the *Daityas* and the *Danavas*, so may you bestow the Earth on the king after slaying the Kauravas.

57. On their enemies being slain, let the Panchalas rejoice to-day as did the celestials on the occasion of Vishnu's exterminating the Danavas.

58. If out of respect for that illustrious personage, your preceptor Drona, you feel sympathy for Ashwathwama, if again out of reverence due to a preceptor, you are kindly disposed towards Kripa,

59. If out of high regard for your maternal relatives, you do not despatch Kritavarman to-day to the regions of Pluto in encountering him,

60. If, O lotus-eyed one, encountering thy mother's brother, Shalya, the King of Madras, out of mere compassion, you do not deign to strike him down,

61. Do thou, O mighty one, with your sharp shafts hasten to slay that wretched Karna to-day who, at heart, cherishes utmost hatred for the sons of Pandu.

62. It is your noblest duty; nor is there any impropriety in it; we all assent to it, and there is no guilt in that.

63. O sinless one, in that attempt to burn your mother with all her children during the night, and the behaviour that Suyodhana bore towards you during the play at dice, that wretched Karna lay at the bottom of all.

64. Suyodhana has ever a firm conviction that it is Karna alone who will help him out [of this scrape]. That is why he has been filled with rage and tries also to afflict me.

65. O giver of honours, it is the firm belief of the royal Dhartarastras that Karna will, to a certainty, slay all the Parthas in battle.

66. O son of Kunti, it is through having secured the aid of Karna that Dhritarastra's son has ventured to fight with you, though he is full well aware of your prowess.

67. Karna also often says that, "I will conquer the assembled Parthas and

Vasudeva, that valiant charioteer of Dasharha's race.

68. O Bharata, that wicked Karna thus always roars in the court (of the Kurus) with a view to cheer up that depraved son of Dhritarastra. Do you, therefore, slay him to-day.

69. It is the profane and malignant Karna who is mainly responsible for all the evils that have been done to you by Dhritarastra's son.

70. I have seen the valiant son of Subhadra, of lustrous eyes, fall at the hands of six heartless charioteers belonging to the Dhartarastra force.

71. Harassing mighty heroes like Drona, Drona's son and Kripa, and others, he divested elephants of their riders and mighty charioteers of their cars.

72. Abhimanyu of mighty neck, the pride and the glory of both the Kurus and the Vrisnis, made also the steeds bereft of their riders, and the infantry, their arms and life.

73. Overthrowing the hostile files, and harassing many powerful charioteers, he has packed off numbers of men and steeds and elephants to the gates of Pluto.

74—75. O friend, by truth I swear unto you that I am burning at the thought that while Subhadra's son was thus advancing, striking down with his arrows the hostile force, even then, O lord Partha, the malevolent Karna, unable to withstand him in a face to face fight, had been engaged in acts of hostility to that heroic Abhimanya.

76. Mangled with the arrows of Subhadra's son, rendered senseless and bathed in blood, Karna became highly enraged and drew heavy breaths, till at last covered with shafts he thought of turning away from the field.

77. Heartily wished to beat a retreat, but finding no means of egress of doing so, exhausted and stupefied with the wounds received, he had to roam about in the field, giving up all the while his hopes of life.

78. At last hearing the opportune, though wanton, words of Drona in battle, Karna cut off Abhimanyu's bow.

79. On his bow being thus cut asunder in that battle, five mighty charioteers of blunt conscience slew him with showers of arrows.

80. On the hero being thus slain all were touched at heart. Only that wicked-hearted Karna and Suyodhana laughed.

81. [Verily you remember] the vile epithets that Karna so cruelly flung towards Krishna in the [Kuru] court before both the Kurus the Pandavas.

82. "O Krishna, the Pandavas have been slain and are gone to eternal damnation; do you, therefore, O one of sweet voice and heavy posteriors, take to yourself another lord.

83. Betake now to the service of Dhritarastra as a maid, for, O lotus-eyed one, your husbands are no more (in the land of the living.)

84. O Krishna, this day forth the Pandavas will no longer have any control over you. O Princess of Panchala, you are now the wife of men that are servants, and, O beautiful one, yourself, a maid.

85. Duryodhana alone is regarded as the ruler of this earth, to-day all the other lords are engaged in helping him towards the good government of his state.

86. Lo, O amiable one, how all the Pandavas have equally fallen, under the prowess of Dhitarastra's son, and have now been staring at each other.

87. Verily these [men] are like sesame seeds without kernel, and have fallen into purgatory, and they will have to serve ere long that foremost of Kaurava Kings."

88. O Bharata, these vile words were uttered by that sinful, debased, mischievous and unprincipled Karna at that time, in your hearing.

89. Let your gold-plated and sharpened shafts, capable of dealing death to the living, to-day assuage the sorrows caused by those words of effrontery.

90. Let your shafts retaliate all the other mischiefs done to you by that wicked one, by slaying him.

91. Let that wicked Karna feel the pangs of those deadly shafts sped from the *Gandiva*, and remember the words of Bhisma and Drona.

92. Let the gold-feathered iron shafts, capable of dealing death to the enemies, and emitting rays of lightning, sped by you go straight into the vital organs and drink his blood.

93. Let the sharp and winged arrow of irresistible force shot by your arms touch Karna to the core, and despatch him off to the den of Pluto.

94. Let the lords of this hemisphere, seeing Karna fall to-day from off his chariot, covered with your shafts, despondent and heart-broken, indulge themselves in grief.

95. Let his relations with distress witness to-day the [sad] spectacle of Karna's falling prostrate and lying down on the

bosom of the Earth, weltered in blood and bereft of arms.

96. Let the huge standard of Adhiratha's son, bearing the ensign of the elephant's rope, totter. to its fall from the shots of crescent-shaped arrows.

97. Let Shalya,—alarmed with the scene of his golden chariot thus scattered to the winds, and his charioteer and steeds taken off with numberless darts of your arrows, —deserting his empty car, beat a hasty retreat [from the field].

98. And then let the enemy Suyodhana, witnessing to-day Adhiratha's son thus fall a victim to your arms, despair of his life and his soveriegnty.

99. There, O Partha, Karna with prowess like Indra, or even like Sankara himself, is causing a massacre of your men with his shafts.

100. Look up yonder, O foremost of the line of Bharata, [and see how] the Panchalas are dropping off from the sharp points of Karna's arrows in their anxiety to rescue the Pandavas.

101—102. Know it for certain that the Panchalas, the sons of Draupadi, Dhristadyumna, Shikhandin, and the sons of Dhristadyumna, and Satanika,—the son of Nakul,—and Nakul [himself], Sahadeva, Durmukha, Janamejaya, and Sudhurman, and Satyaki, are held in subjection by Karna.

103. [From off the scene of action] the howling groans, O subduer of foes, of those allies of yours,—the Panchalas—reach our ears, as they are assailed, in that dreadful engagement, with the weapons of Karna.

104. The Panchalas are not the persons to get frightened, much less to shew their back in the thick of the fray. In sanguinary battle these mighty wielders of bow do not at all care to stake their life.

105. The Panchalas did not shew their back even encountering that [redoubtable Bhishma, who, alone and unaided, hemmed in the Pandava forces with a thick cloud of shafts.

106—107. [Nor is this all]. They, who, without remiss, gave battle to that invincible Drona,—the preceptor of all bowmen, the flaming lustre of weapons, the glory of the field, the unapproachable foeman,—these Panchalas are not the men to turn away from the field through fear of Adhiratha's son.

108. Like the flaming fire consuming myriads of insects that irrepressible Karna with his shafts devoured these swift-armed Panchalas as they approached him in battle array.

109. Rallying round the banner of their allies as these valiant Panchalas, reckless of their life, marched against him the son of Radha took off their hordes by legions.

110. O Bharata, it now behoves you to steer these sturdy bowmen,—the valiant Panchala forces,—who are fast sinking in the ocean of Karna without a bark.

111. The weapon which Karna obtained from that foremost sage Rama,—the son of Bhrigu, is blazing forth its appalling form.

112. The awful form of that weapon, spreading terror and consternation all round, and encompassing the vast array of troops, is glistening with its own bright.

113. Those arrows flung from the bow-strings of Karna, afflicting your hosts in battle, are hovering round like swarms of bees.

114. Afflicted in battle with the shots of Karna, that is irresistible by persons of weak nerve, O Bharata, the Panchalas, are flying in all directions.

115. Yonder, O Partha, foaming and frothing with rage yet unsatiated, fights Bhima with the Srinjaya forces around him, and is getting afflicted with the sharp arrows of Karna.

116. O Bharata, if you remain indifferent towards Karna, he will cause a sad havoc of the Pandava, the Srinjaya, and the Panchala forces, like the seizure of the ills, that flesh is heir to, makes the body succumb.

117. Amongst the vast array of the forces of Yudhisthira, I find not another general, save and beyond yourself, who is capable of returning from the field scatheless, after having encountered son of Radha in battle.

118. O foremost of men, buckle on your armour, therefore, to pop off Karna with the keen shafts of your arrows, and, thus redeeming your pledge, redound your glory.

119. Most assuredly I tell you, O warrior of warriors, you, and you alone, are capable of worsting Karna in battle, and defeating the whole bands of Kaurava army.

120. And accomplishing this proud feat, O Partha, and achieving victory over the master car-warrior, Karna, may you, the best of men, gain your ends, and be successful and happy!"

CHAPTER LXXIV.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Hearing, O Bharata, these [reassuring] words of Keshava, Vibhatsu, instantly shaking off his sorrowful countenance, took heart again.

2. And grating his bowstring and stretching it at length, he took hold of his *Gandiva* with a view to make away with Karna, and addressing Keshava, thus expressed himself:—

3. "Since you,—O Govinda, who, [fathoming the mysteries of fate] see through events, past and future,—since you are so kindly disposed towards me, under your [able] generalship, I may well be certain of gaining the day.

4. O Krishna, with you at my elbow, bidding defiance to all the three worlds, marshalled in array, I can well launch them [one and all,] into eternity, what speak you of Karna then.

5. O Janardana, I witness how the Panchala hordes are beating their retreats [from the field], and I also see how Karna with his lofty bearing domineering in the battle.

6. The sight of the *Bhargava* weapon, let loose by Karna, and floating on the air like the great thunder of Sakra, meets also my view.

7. But in to-day's battle I will give no quarter to Karna, and all the world will proclaim the fact till as long as it will last.

8. To-day, O Krishna, pointed arrows flung from *Gandiva* and sped by my arms, will send Karna to his last account.

9. And King Dhritarashtra, to-day will hurl malediction on his evil genius under the inspiration of which he placed the diadem on the brow of Duryodhana, who was least deserving of sovereignty.

10. O large-armed one, to-day King Dhritarashtra will be deprived of his sovereignty and happiness, wealth and dominion, capital and sons.

11. Most assuredly do I tell you, O Krishna, that Karna's doom being [thus] sealed to-day, Duryodhana, goaded to desperation] will lose all hope of both his life and sovereignty.

12. As in days of yore, in the contest between the *Devas* and the *Asuras*, Indra rent in twain the body of the demon Vritra, so beholding the body of Karna, all cut into pieces with the arrows inflicted through my hands, let Duryodhana to-day recall to mind the proposal you made, O Lordly Being, when suing for peace.

13. Let the son of Suval realize to-day O Krishna, that my arrows happen to be my dice, my *Gandiva* is my gaming board, and my chariot, my chequered cloth.

14. O Govinda, striking to-day the death knell of Karna with keen shafts, I will remove the long lost sleep of the son of Kunti.

15. On my hastening the departure of Suta's son to the other world will raise the drooping spirit of the royal descendant of Kunti, and he, taking life easily, will enjoy eternal happiness.

16. O Keshava, I will fling to-day such an irresistible arrow, unique of its kind, that will surely make Karna shuffle off his mortal coil.

17. And such was the vow of that wretch of human beings about taking my life, that "until I put an end to the existence of Phalguna, I will not have my feet washed."

18. Giving a lie to the words of honor of that vile creature, O Madhusudan, I will, hitting him straight with my arrows, throw off his body from his car.

19. The Earth to-day will drink the blood of that son of Suta, who, in battle, defies all mortals of this sphere.

20. In addressing Krishna, that Karna, the son of Suta, vaunting of his own superiority, with the approbation of Dhritarashtra, had indulged himself [in the expression], "O Krishna, you are now without a husband."

21. My sharpened arrows will falsify to-day that vile expression of his, and like the foaming snake, surcharged with active poison, will feast on his blood.

22. My cloth-yard shafts, dazzling with the splendour of lightning, let loose by my capacious arms and from off the strings of *Gandiva*, will lead Karna to his eterna goal.

23. The contumely which the son of Radha gave expression to, in addressing the Princess of Panchala in the open court, vilifying the Pandavas, will to-day make him repent of his misdemeanour.

24. After the fall of the son of Suta the vicious-souled Karna, also called Vaikartan, those words that were at one time sesame seeds without grain, will turn out to-day to be the reverse.

25. While addressing the sons of Dhritarashtra Karna let fall from his lips these words,—full of sound and fury,—"I will save you of the sons of Pandu," to-day my keen shafts will belie even those imperious words of his.

26. In the presence of all the assembled archers, to-day, I will take the life out of that Karna, who dared to have said, "I will put all the Pandavas to death with their sons."

27. O Madhusudana, to-day, I will cause the slaughter of that Karna, the son of Radha, confident of whose prowess the haughty son of Dhritarashtra, full of wicked design and evil passion, slighted us all along.

28. And as a deer, afraid of the lion, turns its tail, so, O Krishna, let all the Dhartarashtras, to-day, with the fall of Karna, beat a hasty retreat.

29. Let king Duryodhana also indulge himself in grief, to-day, as Karna falls a victim to my arms in company with all his sons and relations.

30. Seeing Karna meeting his death to-day through my arrows, O Krishna, let the savage son of Dhritarashtra acknowledge me to be the peerless archer in the field.

31. I will make King Dhritarashtra, with all his descendants, counsellors, and followers, shelterless to-day.

32. O Keshava, to-day, vultures and other birds of prey will roam about the body of Karna, cut into pieces with the shafts of my arrows.

33. O Madhusudana, to-day I will in the presence of all the archers, marshalled in array, dissever the head of Karna of Radha's womb.

34. With sharp-pointed *Vipathas* and other razor-edged arrows, to-day, I will pierce through the body of that wicked soul, Karna.

35. The mighty king Yudhisthira will shake off to-day his great suffering due to his long cherished mental anguish.

36. O Krishna, I will cheer up king Yudhisthira, the son of Dharma, by slaying to-day the son of Radha with all his tribe.

37. O Krishna, with shafts blazing like fire, or resembling venomous serpents, to-day, I will devour all the sunken hosts of Karna.

38. O Govinda, with shafts adorned with the feathers of vultures, I will deluge the earth, to-day, with the scattered bodies of potentates, all armoured with shields of gold.

39. O Madhusudana, with sharp-pointed arrows, I will, to-day, striking down all the enemies of Abhimunya dissever their heads, and disjoint their body.

40. O Keshava, to-day, either I will, making the earth devoid of Dhartarashtras, make a gift of her unto my brothers, or you shall have to traverse this ground shorn of Arjuna.

41. O Krishna, I will acquit myself, to-day, of the obligations I owe to all the bowmen, to my avenging spirit, to the Kurus, to my shafts, and to *Gandiva*.

42. And like Maghavat causing the slaughter of Samvara, I will, O Krishna, killing Karna, to-day in battle, shake off the heavy affliction I have been cherishing these thirteen long years.

43. With the fall of Karna in battle, to-day, let the mighty car-warriors of the line of Somakas, all anxious for the interests of their allies, rest assured of the issue of this, their engagement.

44. And, O Madhava, I cannot conceive even of the great joy which the descendants of Sini will experience to-day, when Karna will be no more, and after I have won the battle.

45. Slaying Karna in battle, and his mighty car-warrior son, I will clear the hearts of Bhima and the Twins, as also of Satyaki.

46. Taking away the life of Karna, to-day in great battle, O Madhava, I will free myself of the very many obligations I am under the Panchalas, as also under Dhristadyumna and Shikhandin.

47. Let them all witness to-day the scene of the furious Dhananjaya, encountering all the Kaurava forces in the field, give a death-blow unto the son of Suta.

48. Let me, once again, indulge myself in the luxury of singing my own praise in your presence.

49. In all this wide world I have no rival in archery. And who is there to match me in prowess? Then again what soul is there that can equal me in mercy? White in fire and fury I yield to none.

50. With the bow in my hand, and with the strength of my capacious arms, I can outvie the *Asuras*, the celestials, and all the other creatures grouped together, know it for certain, that my prowess surpasses to that of the most powerful.

51. And like a spark of fire in a heap of dried grass at the end of winter, I, too, alone, am well capable of setting fire to all the Kurus, and the Valhikas, as also their followers with my flashing arrows flung from *Gandiva*.

52. My palms bear the marks of these arrows, and this superb and out-stretched bow with its string trimmed with arrow; the soles of my feet also bear the marks of a car and a standard; and so when a person [with all these marks on] goes to battle, he, least of all, can be triumphed over."

53. Saying this much to Achyuta that hero of heroes, and destroyer of enemies, rushed to battle with a view to rescue Bhima and dissever Karna.

CHAPTER LXXV.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhitarashtra said:—

1. When Dhananjaya, the infinite dread of my valiant chieftains, rejoined the Pandava and Srinjaya forces, O Sire, how fared the battle?

Sanjaya said:—

2. All the assembled troops marshalled in array, sounding their bugles and blowing this horns, like thick volumes of clouds at the end of summer, roared thunders.

3—4. That grim visaged war, which followed the sanguinary contest of the Kshatriyas, all up in arms, for the extermination of their race, and in which blood streamed forth in rushing currents,—like the untimely falling off of a shower of evil,—became the cause of destruction of all living beings. Huge elephants forming the cluster of clouds of that shower, with weapons its down-pour; pealing instruments, sounds of chariot-wheels, clapping of hands constituting its thunder-bolts, and weapons, trimmed with gold, making its lightning; and swords and arrows, and cloth-yard shafts, and other weapons of great velocity, becoming its drops.

5. Many car-warriors,—assembled together, assailing an opponent despatched him off to the King of Terrors; while a supreme car-warrior, fighting the good fight with a single adversary, hastened his departure to the other world; or another, assailing many in close contest, launched them all into eternity.

6. Then again some car-warrior in exchanging shots with his enemy made him die a violent death, together with steeds and charioteer, while another warrior riding on his elephant put to death many car-warriors and horsemen.

7. Partha thus inflicting the enemy with a heavy downpour of shafts rent them asunder with all their cavalry, infantry, and elephant soldiers, as also the rides and riders of their war-chariots.

8. Kripacharya met Sikhandin in the field, while Satyaki encountered Duryodhana; and Srutasravas challenged Drona's son, while Yudhamauna took Chitrasena for his assialant.

9. And, like a hungry lion hotly pursuing a stout bull, Uttamaunja, the great car-warrior of the Srinjayas, pounced upon Susena, the son of Karna; while Sahadeva launched out against Sakuni, the King of the Gandharas.

10. Young Satanika, the son of Nakula, rushing headlong afflicted young Vrishasena with a showering torrent of his shafts, and [he, too,] the heroic son of Karna returned the charges of the son of the princess of Panchala in no stinted measure.

11. Madri's son Nakula, the skilful adept of war tactics, and the wonderful warrior of unique fame, assailed Kritavarman, while Ynanasena's son the King of the Panchalas rushed against general Karna with all his hosts.

12. O Bharata, Dushasana, with the swelling hosts of the Samsaptakas and all the troops comprising the Bharata force, rode full tilt against Bhima, the infictor of woes in battle to all wielders of arms, and the foremost of all warriors.

13. There the powerful Uttamaujas, putting forth all his might, struck down the son of Karna, and his dissevered head fell down on the ground with a terrible shriek, which made the Earth and the sky resound its roar.

14. Overwhelmed with grief at the [ghastly] sight of the severed head of Susena thus rolling on the ground Karna remained stupefied [for a while], but, his avenging spirit soon taking the better of him, he, soon, with sharp-pointed arrows cut to pieces the steeds, chariot, and the standard of his son's adversary.

15. Uttamaujas, in the interval, striking home, with his keen shafts and the sharp edge of his steel, the steed and the side-guards of Kripa, quickly leapt into the chariot of Shikhandin.

16. Shikhandin, observing from his own chariot, [the sad predicament of] Kripa thus deprived of his conveyance, did not like to pursue him with his shafts; the son of Drona, in the meanwhile, covering the car of Kripa with that of his own, like a bull fallen in a ditch, rescued him.

17. Here, the son of the Wind-god, Bhima, covered with armor of gold, afflicting with his keen shafts, like the burning mid-day Sun of summer, scorched the whole body of troops of your sons.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. IN the thick of that awe-inspiring fray, Bhima, fighting single-handed, against tremendous odds, addressed his charioteer and said, "drive towards the center of the Dhartarashtrâ force."

2—3. "Spur your horses, O charioteer, and I will hasten the departure of all these Dhartarashtras to the region occupied by the King of Death." The charioteer, being thus desired by Bhimasena, drove, at a furious speed, towards the spot against the whole hosts of your sons, and from whence Bhima wished to fight them out. And, then, from all sides, a large retinue of Kaurava force, consisting of elephant and car-warriors, and cavalry and infantry, hemmed him in.

4. And they all poured down their arrows on that best of chariots occupied by Bhima from every direction, whereupon the high-souled Bhima, with his own gold-feathered shafts, scattered to the winds, all those weapons hurled against him by his enemies.

5—10. And those gold-winged arrows of his enemies, thus broken into tatters of two or three fragments by the shafts of Bhima, fell upon the ground. Then, O King, there arose one long loud cry of woe from amidst the throng of those valiant chiefs of the Kshatriya race, as they, with their mounts of elephants and steeds, and their chariots and body infantry, got afflicted with the arrows thurst hard by Bhima, like thunders rolling in mountains. Those pride of the Kshatriya race, being thus assailed by Bhima, and his powerful shafts smiting them hip and thigh, flew at him (Bhima) from every side of the plain, like the new-fledged family of the feathered tribes thickening around a tree. And as your troops fell back upon him, Bhima, of infinite prowess and strength, repulsed them with the full display of all his might, like the mighty King of Terrors, dealing destruction, at the end of time, with his mace, unto the creation. And your hosts, in that battle, could not repel the fearful impetuosity of Bhima, himself the personation of fire and fury, like the great Destroyer himself rushing, at the end of the cycle, with wide-open mouth for the extermination of all living beings. O Bharata, the whole troops, comprising the Bharata force, thus ruthlessly torn asunder in battle, by the noble-minded Bhima, dispersed from the field in a state of panic, like a strong gust of wind scattering thick clouds in a tempest. Then the powerful Bhimsena, endowed with great-sagacity, addressing his charioteer once more, said unto him in full glee.

11. "Just know, O Suta, whether do all those chariots, which are advancing towards us, belong to our party, or to that of the enemy.

12. As I, with this battle raging, can make no distinction between the two, see that I do not beseige my own hosts with my shafts.

13. I am greatly mortified, O Vishoka, to see around me these leaders of war in hostile array, and also with the sight of their cars and the tops of their standards. The King lies wounded, and the diadem-decked Arjuna is not yet come to take the field. All these, O Suta, are preying heavily on me.

14. O charioteer, that the pious King Yudhistira should have gone away from the field, leading me alone in the midst of the enemy, is in itself heart-rending. Then again I am quite in the dark as to his fate. Nor do I know whether Vibhatsu is still alive or not. All these add to my grief.

15. And, though dejected and disspirited, I will play the hell with all these troops inspite of their strength. And thus making the vast army in hostile array pay the penalty in the wager of battle, let me rejoice with you to-day.

16. O Suta, examine closely all the quivers of my arrows, and see the numbers still left, and then let me know decidedly the quantity and variety of each."

17. Being thus addressed, Vishoka replied,

"O hero, you have full sixty thousand arrows still left, while your shafts, both razor-shaped and broad-pointed, number ten thousand each. O hero, you have still two thousand cloth-yard shafts, while the *Pradaras*, O Partha, number three thousand. To speak candidly, O son of Pandu, the quantity that is still left is quite unmanageable even by half-a-dozen bullocks, if placed on carts.

18. O skilful one, throw off your weapons in no measured number, for your maces, swords, and scimitars, as also your lances, darts and spears, and other weapons of the arms, number thousands upon thousands. So be of good cheer, and pray do not be misapprehensive of your weapons running short."

Bhima said :—

19. "Mark, O Suta, in this day's fearful engagement the plains will present the aspect of the dismal regions of Death, when

the field will be shrouded with thick sets of my irresistible arrows, furiously let loose from off my bow,—tearing into pieces the entire body of the trainbands of my enemy, and making the Sun, as it were, disappear from view.

20. To-day, O Suta, it will be known to all the Kshatriyas, even unto the last generation, that either Bhimasena has given himself up in battle, or, singly, he has got the better of all the Kurus.

21. To-day, either let the Kauravas fall in battle, or, let all the world sound my death knell. Alone, encountering them all, I will either overmatch them, or, let them, all combined, put an extinguisher upon Bhimsena.

22. May the guardian angels, who further the course of all righteous action, shower down their blessing on me; and let Arjuna, the victor of enemies, come here speedily [to my relief], like the invoked Sakra appearing in the sacrificial ground.

23. Look there, and see the disbanded Bharata force! Why are all these chiefs taking to their flight. Surely it seems to me inevitable that Savyasachin, that best of human beings, has been shrouding that force with a heavy downpour of his arrows.

24. Look there, O Vishoka, [and see how] the mounted soldiers riding on their steeds or elephants, and standard-bearers, and foot-soldiers are beating their retreat. Look, also, at these war-chariots, [and see how] they with their warriors on, are getting scattered by the darts, shafts and arrows, O Suta.

25. Charged with the gold-winged and peacock-feathered arrows of Dhananjaya, and bursting like the bolts from the blue, those Kaurava forces, falling fast in numbers, as often swell the ranks of their file.

26. Those steeds yoked on war-chariots, and elephants, trampling down the vast array of foot-soldiers are fleeting away. In sooth, the whole host of the Kauravas, seized with consternation, are beating a hasty retreat, as do the terrified elephants in the midst of a flaming forest. The elephants are roaring furiously in the field, and their savage cries, O Vishoka, make, one and all, utter cries of woe and alas!"

Vishoka said :—

27. "Can't you, O Bhima, hear the awful sound of the *Gandiva*? [Or,] have these ears of yours lost their sensibility from the effects of the thunder produced by Partha, while outstretching it with fire and fury?

28. All your wishes, O son of Pandu, have been gratified, yonder is seen the standard of Ape [of Arjuna] wafting aloft. Look there, the bowstring [of *Gandiva*] is emitting incessantly rays of light, like the flashes of lightning from amidst the blue regions of etherial space.

29. That Ape wafting aloft from the standard of Dhananjaya, is seen to strike terror, all along the line of the enemy, [and to speak freely] even I myself am stricken with awe at that [august] sight.

30. There, the resplendent beauty of Dhananjaya's diadem is shedding its effulgence brightly, and the bright luster of the gem studded on it, sparkling with the radiancy of the Sun, is looking much more resplendent.

31. Alongside him, behold, there, his conch *Devadatta* of thundering blare, and resembling a white sheet of cloud. Behold there, Janardana, reins in hand, making his way into the center of the hostile divisions.

32. Behold, there, O hero, by the side of Janardana his discus, radiant like the Sun, nave like thunder, and sharp like razor,—that discus which enhances the fame of Keshava, and which is always worshipped by the Yadus.

33. There, large trunks of huge elephants, resembling the lofty yew trees, dissevered by Kiritin are falling fast. There, also, huge elephants and their riders, pierced with shafts all through, are falling down like mountains riven with thunder.

34. Behold, there, O son of Kunti, the *Panchajanja* [conch] of Krishna,—resplendent like the moon,—the *Kaustabha*, [pearl] dazzling on his breats, and his garland of victory.

35. There cannot be any mistake in the fact that Partha,—the glory of car-warriors—the best and foremost of them, carried by those precious steeds of his,—the best of their kind,—and in color as white as the white clouds of the sky: with Krishna as their driver,—is rushing in the field, routing the enemy all through.

36. Behold there, your younger, resembling in energy the deity of the celestials, is piercing with his shafts those cars, steeds, and bands of foot-soldiers, and they are falling down as if a forest overthrown by the tempest caused by the wings of Garuda.

37. Behold, Kiritin, with his powerful shafts, to outstrip in battle four hundred car-warriors with their steeds, and drivers, and seven hundred elephants, as also numberless infantry and cavalry.

38. Shedding his effulgence like the constellation of *Chitra*, the all-powerful Arjuna, after having massacred the Kuru forces, is speeding towards you. All your wishes have been gratified :—your enemies, thrown overboard. May your prowess and the span of your life continue to increase for ever and ever."

Bhima said :—

39. "For this welcome news, O charioteer, with unfeigned pleasure I grant you fourteen choice villages; and, O Vishoka, as you bring me the tidings of Arjuna, I also present you a hundred female slaves, and twenty chariots.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing the loud rattles of chariots, and the lion like roars [of warriors] in the field, Arjuna, addressing Govinda, said, "Clap spurs to the chargers."

2. Hearing these words of Arjuna, Govinda replied him [thus] :—" Off I go towards the spot where Bhima has taken his post."

3. Then, like the king of the celestials, proceeding in great wrath, and with thunder in his arms, to strike down Jambha (the *Asura*), Jaya [Arjuna] rushed [in the field], to obtain victory, borne by horses white as snow or conchs, and with housings laid with gold, pearls and gems.

4. Many warriors, [of the other side], representing lions in prowess all boiling with rage, and followed by a large retinue of elephant, horse and foot soldiers, faced him, and making the Earth resound, and rending the skies with the whizz of their arrows, the rattling sound of the wheels of their war-chariots, and the noise of the tread of their horses' hoofs.

5. Then, there ensued, O sire, a mortal conflict between them [the train-bands of the Kaurava forces] and Partha,—a conflict carrying death and destruction in its train to body, life and sin alike,—like the great battle between the *Asuras* and Vishnu, the greatest of all great conquerors, for the [sovereignty of the] three worlds.

6. Alone and unaided, the diadem-decked and garland-necked Arjuna, rent asunder all the powerful weapons flung [against him] by them [his adversaries], and struck off their heads and arms in many and varied forms, with his razor-edged and crescent shaped shafts, as also with his broad-pointed arrows.

7. Umbrellas, banners, horses, chariots, elephants, and foot soldiers, shattered and mutilated, fell down on the Earth, like a forest uprooted by a violent wind.

8. Mighty elephants caparisoned with gold-laid trappings, and equipped with banners of triumphs, and adorned with riders [on their back], wore a majestic look, and shed a luster all round, as they were encompassed with gold-winged shafts, like blazing mountains.

9. With excellent shafts piercing elephants, horses, and war chariots, and resembling thunder of Vasava, Dhananjaya winged his way to strike down Karna, like Indra, in days of yore, proceeding to rend in twain (the *Asura*) Vala.

10. Then that mightiest of men, the terror of enemies, rushed headlong into the midst of your vast array as does the *Makar* while plunging into the deep sea.

11. Seeing Pandu's son so advance, O king, your warriors, with a long line of cars, and a retinue of elephant, horse and foot soldiers, pressed upon him.

12. And, while rushing against Partha, they raised a tumultous cry like the roarings of the surging waves in a tempest.

13. Those great warriors, powerful like tigers, reckless of their life, rushed in battle to face that mighty man, careering like a tiger.

14. With a heavy down-pour of arrows they advanced towards him, but Arjuna dispersed them like vapours before the gushing wind.

15. Those mighty warriors—all good shots and of unfailing aim—in a body, and with a long line of war-chariots following them, advanced against Arjuna and began to pierce him with their sharp weapons.

16. Arjuna, then, [rendering asunder] with his arrows, chariots, elephants, and horses by thousands, despatched [them] off to the region of Pluto.

17. Thus afflicted in action with shots flung from Arjuna's bow, those mighty car-warriors, terrified and panic-stricken, began gradually to melt away.

18. Among those great car-warriors four hundred valiantly kept the field; and Arjuna, with his keen shafts, sent them, one and all, to their last account.

19. [And those that held the rear,] afflicted, in that battle, with keen shafts

and sharp arrows of all kinds, dispersed themselves in all directions—far away from Arjuna.

20. The shouting noise made at the van by the retreating army was as furious as as the grumbling roars of the breakers of the surging seas when dashing against rocks.

21. Thus, with his arrows, dispersing the panic-stricken army, O sire, Arjuna, the son of Pritha, advanced against the column commanded by the son of Suta.

22. The great noise made by Arjuna while advancing towards his enemies, was like that of Gadura, in days of yore, while swooping down upon snakes.

23. The mighty Bhimasena, anxious as he was to have a look of Partha, became highly gratified with that sound.

24. Hearing that Partha is come, the redoubtable Bhimasena, O king, began to afflict your troops, fearless of his own life.

24. Bhima,—the son of the Wind-god, and himself possessing the prowess and impetuousity of the wind,—that valiant Bhima began to career in that battle like that of the wind itself.

26. Your army, O king, being thus hard pressed by him, O ruler of the universe, began to roll and tumble like a shattered vessel in the high seas.

27. Bhima then, with his deadly weapons, and with great dexterity of hands, waging a ruthless slaughter amongst that body of troops, despatched them to the region of Pluto.

28. Your warriors, O Bharata, seeing the wonderful exploits of Bhima in that battle, careering like the King of Terrors at the end of time, became greatly agitated.

29—30. King Duryodhana, seeing his best soldiers, O Bharata, thus worsted by Bhimasena, [gave vent to the following expression, addressing his whole hosts, generals and other great warriors, O best of the Bharata race, "All of you in a body engage Bhima in action and fell him down, [inasmuch as on him hinges the fate of the Pandavas,] and, when he [Bhimasena] is felled, well may I count upon the Pandu forces as if already slain.

31. Following the behest of your son, all the vassal chiefs, [hitting] from all sides, covered Bhima with a thick shower of arrows.

32. Hosts of elephants, O monarch, and men, eager for victory, as also war-chariots and horses, O King of Kings, thickened around Vrikodara,

33. That chief of the Bharat race, endued with heroic qualities, being thus hemmed in by those brave bands of heroes, looked resplendent like the radiant Moon shedding its effulgence amidst myriads of glowing stars.

34. O, Monarch, that foremost of men, was looking, during that fight, so beautiful, like the Full Moon in the midst of his corona.

35. All those Kings with eyes flamed with wrath, and bent upon slaying Vrikodara, began to shower down their weapons upon him.

36. As the fish frees itself from the net, so did Bhima cutting their shafts straight free himself from the pressure of the battle.

37—38. O Bharata slaying ten thousand elephants that faced him, one hundred thousand and two hundred men, hundred car-warriors and five thousand horse Bhima actually made a river of blood to flow there.

39. In that carnage blood flowed like water, and the war-cars forming its eddies, elephants, its alligators, horses and men, its sharks and fishes, and the hair of animals, its herbs and moss, were all floating on it.

40. Arms severed from bodies floated like snakes, and precious stones were abundant in the bloody current;—thighs and marrows formed its gavials and mud, and human heads, its mountain.

41. Iron bound bludgeous and maces were also floating there like snakes; and bows and arrows formed its rafts by means of which persons tried to cross that fearful and bloody stream, banners and umbrellas drifted on it like swans, and costly head-dresses its foam.

42. The dust rising from the earth were like the waves of the stream, and jewelled necklaces were looking like so many lotuses: the brave could alone cross that stream while the faint hearted sunk within to navigate it.

43. That gushing current, with bands of sturdy soldiers forming its alligators and crocodiles, streamed its course towards the realm of Death. [And] and that man with tiger-like ferocity made its course flew on.

44. [And] as the Vaitarine is unnavigable by persons of filth and inquity, even so was that awful stream of blood to men wanting in valour and intrepidity, making their heart quail with shudder.

45. [And] there that son of Pandu, the best of car-warriors, rushed in, slaying hundred thousands of enemy.

46. Duryodhana seeing Bhimsena thus career in battle, O king, said unto Sakuni the following words :—

47. "Overpower in battle, O uncle, the all-powerful Bhimsena. The victory over the vast array of the Pandava forces hinges on his final overthrow."

48. Being thus desired, O king, the powerful son of Suvala, the peer of great warriors marshalled in array, marched on—his brothers surrounding him.

49. That hero, affronting the fiercely powerful Bhima in that battle, checked his intrepidity, as if a continent resisting the tides of an ocean.

50. And despite the resistance of the keen shafts, [which the powerful son of Suvala hurled against him,] Bhima approached him [in formidable array.]

51. Whereupon Sakuni, O king of kings, flung a number of cloth-yard shafts, bedecked with wings of gold and sharpened on stone, and assailed Bhima at the seat of his heart.

52. Those fearful shafts, feathered with the plumes of *Kankas* and peacocks, O monarch, piercing the coat of mail of the high-souled son of Pandu, sunk deep into his vital parts.

53. Being thus smitten in battle, O Bharata, Bhima, then flung, all of a sudden, a shaft laid with gold upon the son of Suvala.

54. And the powerful Sakuni, the inflictor of woes on his enemies, and, O king, skilful in the manipulation of hands, rent that fearful weapon in seven fragments as it was coursing its way towards him.

55. His weapon thus falling adrift on the ground, O king, Bhima, inflamed with rage, without any strain rent in twain with a broad-pointed arrow the bow of the son of Suvala.

56. Whereupon the mighty son of Suvala, throwing away that bow, rendered useless, with the greatest alacrity seized a new one, as also sixteen broad-edged shafts.

57—58. And the son of Suvala, O king, hit the chariot-driver with two, and Bhima with seven; struck off the banner with one, and the umbrella with two; and pierced, O lord of the universe, the four chargers with the remaining four of those broad-headed shafts.

59. Enraged at this, O king, the powerful Bhima, in that battle, threw down a weapon made of iron, and the staff of which was decked with gold.

60. That weapon, resembling in activity the tongue of a snake, being thus cast from the arms of Bhima came speedily down upon the chariot of the noble son of Suvala.

61. [And] he (the son of Suvala) seized that weapon, adorned with gold, and, O lord of the universe, hurled it back against Bhimsena with a fierce countenance.

62. That weapon, piercing through the left arm of the noble son of Pandu, fell down like flashes of lightning coursing on the ground.

63. Then the Dhartarastras began to rent the air from all sides with their loud outcries, but, O king, Bhima could not brook the lion-like roars of the enemy,—all of great intrepidity.

64. That extraordinarily powerful man (Bhima) taking hold of another bow fitted with string, almost in no time, O best of kings, covered the mighty son of Suvala and his forces, who were fighting valiantly without caring the least for their lives, with showers of arrows.

65. That mighty man (Bhimasena) with utmost intrepidity stricking off his (Sakuni's) four horses, and then sending his charioteer to his eternal rest, O ruler of the universe, rent asunder his adversary's banner with a broad-edged arrow.

66, Speedily bounding out of that steedless chariot, Sakuni, the best of men, with eyes flaming with wrath and stretched bow, took his stand on the ground,—breathing all the while heavy breaths; and then, O king, he covered Bhima with mumberless arrows from all sides.

67. Then the mighty Bhima rending asunder Sakuni's arrows with great wrath hit him with a host of sharp arrows.

68. Being thus afflicted by his powerful assailant, that destroyer of enemies, O king, dropped down on the Earth almost dead.

69. Seeing him (Sakuni) in such a woeful plight, your son, O supreme ruler of the universe, putting him in his own chariot carried him off from the scene of action before the very face of Bhimasena.

70. Seeing that foremost of men, Sakuni, thus knocked down and borne away on Duryodhana's chariot, the Imperial hosts began to beat a hasty retreat from the field and flew in all directions from the very fear of Bhimasena.

71. When the son of Suvala was thus discomfitted and defeated, O monarch, by that excellent archer (Bhimasena) your son Duryodhana, left the field in a state of trepidation, and, out of his concern for the life of his uncle Sakuni, urged his fiery chargers to a furious speed.

72. Seeing the king thus flee away from the battle, all his troops, O foremost of the line of Bharata, who were each engaged in fierce struggle with a hand-to-hand fight, began to disperse themselves in all directions.

73. Observing the whole hosts of the Dhartarastra force thus dispersing themselves in every direction, Bhima, with great impetuousity rushed against them, and attacked them with innumerable arrows.

74. Thus afflicted by Bhima, O monarch, the retreating bands of Dhritarastra's army [all in a body moved towards Karna's flank,] and coming thither and with them [General Karna] in their center, they once more held their ground.

75. As the ship-wrecked mariners become comforted in reaching an island, so your distressed army stood cheerfully on finding that mighty Karna.

76. O foremost of the Bharata race, O mightiest of men, O lord of the universe, they then proceeded having death for their ultimate end.

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarastra said :—

1. O Sanjaya, what did Duryodhana and Suvala's son say on finding our troops shattered in battle by Bhimasena ?

2. Or, what did that mighty conqueror —Karna, or Kripa, or Kritavarman, or Drona's son or Dushasana, or the other leaders of my army, say in that battle ?

3. The powers of Pandus' son seem to me to be most extraordinary that he could fight single-handed against all the warriors of my army.

4. O Sanjaya, did the son of Radha, that scorcher of foes, keep his vow, and did he discharge himself accordingly towards the [hostile] troops ? [In fact,] he was the bestower of prosperity, the saviour, the refuge, and the hope of the Kurus.

5. How did Karna, the son of Adhiratha and Radha, behave in that battle, on finding our troops worsted and beaten by Kunti's son of illimitable prowess ?

6. And also what did my unconquerable sons and the other kings and mighty charioteers of our army do ? Tell me of all these, O Sanjaya, because you are a skilled narrator.

Sanjaya said :—

7. O king, the valiant son of Suta began to strike down the Somaka troops, in that afternoon, even on the very face of Bhimasena.

8. The mighty Bhima also began to smite down the Dhartarastra troops. Upon this Karna ordered [his driver] Shalya to make straight way for the Panchalas.

9. Karna, on observing that his army was being routed by the highly intelligent Bhimasena, asked his driver once more to drive on direct to the Panchalas.

10. On being thus spoken to, Shalya, the avenger of enemies and the king of Madras, urged those white horses, that could run fast like thought, in the direction of the Chedis, the Panchalas, and the Karushas.

11. On penetrating into that vast array, Shalya, the avenger of foes, took Karna to the very spot that that foremost of warriors wished to be in.

12. O lord of the universe, the very sight of that chariot, dismal like the cloud, and enveloped in tiger-skins, struck terror into the hearts of the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

13. Then the clatter of that chariot became audible in that fierce battle like the crash of a thunder or like the sound of a mountain splitting into pieces.

14. Then Karna, drawing the bow-strings close to his ears, shot numberless sharp shafts, which destroyed the Pandava forces by hundreds and thousands.

15. While the invincible Karna was performing these heroic feats numbers of valiant archers and mighty charioteers of the Pandavas came forth and surrounded him on all sides.

16. In sooth, Shikhandin, Bhima, Dhritadyumna, Nakula and Sahadeva, as also the (five) sons of Draupadi pressed hard upon the son of Radha, and began to shower down their weapons upon him,—all kindled with the desire of hastening his departure to the other world.

17. In that battle that foremost of men, the valiant Satyaki struck Karna with a score of sharp arrows hitting him on the shoulder-joint.

18. In that engagement Shikhandin afflicted him with five and twenty arrows, as did also Dhristadyumna with seven, the sons of Draupadi with four and sixty, Sahadeva with seven, and Nakula with a hundred.

19. The redoubtable Bhimasena, boiling with rage, assailed the son of Radha, in that battle, with ninety straight shafts, and hit him [also] in the shoulder-joint.

20. Then, the son of Adhirath, endued

with great strength, with an indignant smile, stretched out his superb bow and began to pour down heavy showers of keen-edged arrows to the discomfiture of his enemies.

21—22. And the son of Radha assailed them in return, each with five arrows, and rending in twain, O best of the line of Bharata, the bow and standard of Satyaki, sped nine arrows against him, hitting him in the center of his chest, and then, with great violence, struck Bhimasena with thirty shafts.

23. That scorcher of foes, O sire, next struck off Sahadeva's standard with a flat-faced arrow, and then pierced his charioteer with three others.

24. He, O foremost of the Bharata race, almost in no time, deprived the (five) sons of Draupadi of their chariots, and it seemed truly wonderful.

25. In fact, the straight dead shots of the mighty Karna, made those brave warriors retreat from the field ; and he caused a havoc amongst the Panchalas and the powerful car-warriors of the Chedis.

26. The Chedis and Matsyas, O ruler of the universe, being thus worsted in that encounter, all pressed forward and made a supreme effort to fell down Karna, and poured down a heavy shower of arrows upon him.

27—28. In that battle, the mighty son of Suta, alone and unaided, fought single-handed with his own prowess, and kept all the great Pandava archers at bay, despite their utmost endeavour. O descendant of King Bharata, I am an eye-witness of this extraordinary and wonderful feat, and the gods themselves, the *Siddhas* and *Charans* were all highly pleased to see the lightness of the hands of the noble Karna.

29. And, O lordly being, all the great warriors of the Dhartarastra force paid him their homage and worshipped him as the best of all bowmen.

30. And then, O monarch, as in summer the blazing conflagration burns heaps of hay into ashes, so did Karna consume his enemies' forces, as it were, with the fire of his weapons.

31. Thus beaten by that foremost of car-warriors, Karna, the Pandava troops began to flee in all directions—afraid to face him in battle.

32. Afflicted with the sharp shots coming out of Karna's bow in that battle the Panchalas sent forth bitter cries of woe.

33. Bewildered at that tumultuous uproar, the vast army, comprising the Pandava force and belonging to the hostile party,—regarded him as the hero of the field in that great battle.

34. The son of Radha, that scorcher of his enemies, displayed once again such wonderful prowess that the Pandavas, all combined, dared not even to look at him.

35. And like a stream dividing itself when checked by a mountain, so did the Pandava forces break themselves opposed by Karna.

36. In that battle, the mighty and strong-armed Karna, O king, burning the vast army of the Pandavas, stood out in relief like a blazing fire without smoke.

37. That strong-armed man with great lightness of hands, O monarch, began to strike off with his shafts, the arms and heads, as also the ears adorned with rings of many of his sturdy enemy.

38. He went on, O king, cutting off horses, elephants, shafts, swords with hilts of ivory, fans and cars, and wheels, axles and yokes, as also many other things in a mess, like a hero.

39—40. Heaps of carcasses of elephants, and horses, slain by Karna, O Bharata, were lying on all sides, and the earth became slippery with their blood, while their dead bodies blocked the way and made it impassable.

41. The earth became so covered over with dead bodies of horses, foot soldiers, elephants and with broken cars that it became impossible to distinguish the even land from the uneven.

42. The (atmosphere) became dark as pitch with the shower of arrows shot by Karna, and nobody could know each other, or foes from friends.

43. O monarch, the great car-warriors of the Pandavas, were covered with the gold-decked darts coming out of Karna's bow.

44. O king, the son of Radha repeatedly broke the ranks of the powerful car-warriors of the Pandavas, though they tried their utmost to worst him in that fight.

45—46. As in a wild the herds of deer are scared away before an angry lion or other animals seeing an wolf, so, in that battle, the foremost car-warriors of the Panchalas and other great warriors of the Pandavas were driven before Karna.

47. As the Pandava troops turned their backs in battle the powerful Dhartarashtras followed them uttering loud shouts.

48. O king of kings, Duryodhana being very glad ordered in great glee his war bands to discourse music throughout the whole range of his army.

49. The great Panchal warriors, the best of men, all determined to die in that battle, returned bravely to the field.

50. O king, those brave warriors were repeatedly broken down in that fight by the son of Radha, the smiter of his enemies, and powerful like a bull.

51. O Bharata, Twenty Panchala car-warriors, and more than a hundred of the Chedis were sent to the other world by Karna's arrows.

52. O descendant of Bharata, he (Karna) pulled down men from their seats in the cars' and from the backs of horses and elephants' and also scared away the infantry.

53. That brave warrior, the son of Suta, the smiter of his foes, like Pluto at the time of destruction looked brilliant as the sun in the meridian, and nobody could set his eyes upon him.

54. O great monarch, after destroying hosts of elephants, horses, infantry, and car-warriors, that powerful archer, the destroyer of his enemies, stood upon his chariot.

55. The great car-warrior Karna after killing the Somakas stood like the mighty Pluto after destroying the elephants.

56. The Panchals also showed very great courage, for they never left the head of the battle-field, even when thus distressed by Karna.

57. And the king (Duryodhana), killed the Pandava forces by hundreds and thousands as did also Dushasana, Kripa, the son of Sharadwata, Ashwathama, Kritavarman, and Shukuni of great strength.

58. The two sons of Karna too,—aye those two brothers of unconquerable strength, O king of kings, boiling with rage, waged a ruthless slaughter among the Pandava hosts in many different places.

59. And the battle [that ensued then] was deadly in the extreme, and the slaughter [which followed] was really very great.

60. Then the Pandava warriors Dhristadyumna and Shikhandhin, the (five sons of Draupadi, fretting and foaming with rage, caused a terrible havoc among your troops.

61. And thus the losses which attended the Pandava forces in their several divisions, were equ. l to those of your own, when the all-powerful Bhima joined them (the Pandavas) in the field.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—5. Arjuna in that great battle, after destroying the four divisions (of the army belonging to the enemy) and taking a glance of the enraged son of Suta, made a river of blood to flow there, a river that was filled with flesh, bones, and marrow; elephants and horses formed the bed of that river; and human heads, like rocks and stones strewn on all sides, seemed to resound with the cries of crows and ravens; umbrellas floated like swans; and bodies of brave soldiers like so many trees drifted away by the current; necklaces were like lotuses in the stream; and head-dresses its foam, broken pieces of skulls floated about, and bows and arrows were like fishes in it; armours and shields formed its eddies; chariots, with which it teemed, were like its rafts; and braver-hearted men could alone cross that bloody stream, while the faint-hearted sunk within to navigate it.

6. Vibhatsu, the foremost of men, and smiter of hostile warriors after making this bloody stream to flow, spoke the following words to Vasudeva.

Arjuna said :—

7. "O Krishna, I see the banner of Suta' our troops, with Bhimasena at their head' are fighting with that mighty car-warrior, O Janardana, the Panchalas becoming afraid of Karna are melting away.

8. Behold, King Duryodhana, alongside Karna is looking exceedingly beautiful, with the white umbrella over his head, in his efforts to rout the Panchalas.

9. Karna is protecting Kripacharya, Kritavarman and Aswathama, while those great warriors are protecting the King Duryodhana in their turn; and unless we resist them they will cause a massacre among the Somakas.

10. O Krishna, Shalya, a thorough master in the art of driving, is looking surpassingly beautiful, as he drives the chariot of Suta's son, seated on his high seat of the car.

11. It would be well to go over there, so lead my big chariot in that direction, I am not going to return without killing Karna in that fight.

12. O Janardan, the whole hosts of the Pandavas and the Srinjayas will all be destroyed before our very face, unless this son of Radha be killed."

13. Thus asked Keshava led the chariot through your army towards the great archer

Karna, with a view to bring about a dual fight between him and Savyasachin.

14. As urged by the son of Pandu the very driving of the car by the strong-armed Vasudeva gave assurance to the Pandava troops and cheered them up.

15. In that fight the rattling noise of the wheels of the car of Pandu's son, sounded, O sire, like the rumbling of Vasava's thunder.

16. The son of Pandu of unfathomable nobleness, and the very personification of power, thus went on destroying your army as he proceeded onward with the loud rattling noise of his car.

17. Looking at the standard, the white steeds, and the black driver, (Krishna) of the noble Arjuna, Shalya, the king of Madra, addressing Karna, said :—

18. " You were enquiring about Arjuna; there comes he in that chariot, drawn by white steeds and driven by the black charioteer (Krishna),—destroying his enemies as he makes his way forward.

19. There stands the son of Kunti with the outstretched *Gandiva* in his hand; save us by killing him.

20. O Karna, he is willing to try his strength with you in battle, and being restless is slaying many of our picked warriors. Advance, O son of Radha, onward to meet that descendant of Bharata race.

21. Slaughtered in large numbers, the Dhartarashtra troops have become afraid of, and are giving way before, him.

22. I believe, hastily he is coming towards you avoiding other warriors,—his body is swelling with wrath.

23. You have worsted Vrikodara, and so Partha is burning with anger to meet you in battle, and would not wait to fight out any other warrior save and beyond yourself.

24—26. You have badly hurt the virtuous King Yudhistira, and deprived him of his chariot, you have placed Shikhandin, Satyaki, the sons of Draupadi, Yudamamanyu, Uttamaujas and his brother Nakula and Sahadeva in woeful plights; Partha, the smiter of his enemies, in a sullen mood and blood-shot eyes, is advancing, in hot haste and with impetuosity, to wreak his vengenance on you.

27. Eluding the grasp of other warriors he is hastily advancing towards us, so Karna, be you on the alert, as there is none else to resist him in battle.

28. As a continent resists the fury of the surging sea, so you are the only archer in all the world who can resist Dhananjaya's rage.

29. He is advancing all alone, there is none to guard him in the front or in the rear, and well may you now count upon success following you.

30. You are the only man who can cope with the Krishnas in battle, so make your march, O son of Radha; you alone are capable of it.

31. You stand in the same footing with Bhishma, Drona, Drauni and Kripa; in prowess, so put a stop to the advance of Savyasachin in this great battle.

32. Dhananjaya is looking like a snake protruding his quivering tongue, or like a bull bellowing loudly in rage, or indeed, like a tiger of a forest; O Karna, put an end to him.

33. Not at all caring for the safety of others those chiefs, the principal warriors of Dhartarastra army, are melting away, being afraid to face Arjuna.

34. O mighty warrior, O Suta's son, you are the only man in this field who can bring relief and assurance into the hearts of flying chiefs.

35. As in a tempest the drowning sailor look forward anxiously for an island for their protection, so the whole Kaurava army is looking up to you, O foremost of men, as their saviour.

36—37. O son of Radha, you have worsted in battle the unconquerable Vaidehas, Amvasthas, Kamvojas, Nagnajits and the Gandharas, now with the same energy, and putting forth your best exertion and prowess, O mighty armed one, like a man, do you proceed onward and attack the son of Pandu, as also against Vasudeva, the descendant of Vrishni, and who is always adored by the crowned Arjuna."

Karna said :—

38. " O strong-armed Shalya, you are no longer afraid of Dhananjaya and seem to be in good humour, and as such you are agreeable to me.

39. You will witness to-day the tuition I have received in the tactics and stragems of war also the strength of my arms, truly you can well count upon the extermination of this vast Pandava troops by me alone, as well upon the destruction of those two foremost of men,—the two Krishnas.

40—41. I am determined not to return from the battle-field without putting an end to those two mighty warriors, or I would be done to death by them.—There are chances in warfare, and victory is always uncertain, however, whether I kill them or

they kill me, I will stand true to my purpose."

Salya said :—

42. "O Karna, this (Arjuna) the best of warriors even when alone, is considered to be unconquerable by all the warriors, and now when he is protected by Krishna it is really a venture to try to face and defeat him."

Karna said :—

43. "Yes, it is told that he (Arjuna), is the foremost of all the car-warriors that was ever born in this earth, now witness my prowess, for I will fight this Partha out who is so mighty.

44. Perhaps this son of the Kuru king (Arjuna), who is being borne by white steeds will send me this day to my last account, but there will be an end of all these with my fall.

45. This prince is possessed of strong powerful arms that are never exhausted, and do neither sweat nor shake, and are marked with cicatrices, he is light-handed and well-skilled in the use of weapons, and, in truth, the son of Pandu is the foremost of all warriors.

46. At a time he can take a number of shafts and can shoot them like one, and quickly placing on the bow-string he can even send them to the distance of two miles, always hitting his mark; and who is there to match him in all the world.

47. That energetic and great warrior Savyasachin, the son of Pandu, with Krishna to back him, after satisfying the deity Agini in Khandava, received as a presen his bow *Gandiva*, and the noble Krishna, his discus.

48. That strong-armed man with never-failing prowess, on the same occasion received from the god of fire his formidable car with those white steeds yoked on them and which rolls on with great rattle, as also his two fine celestial and inexhaustible quivers, and many other celestial weapons.

49. He, after destroying numberless Daityas and the Kalakeyas in the dominion of Indra, received the Dev-Datta conch; there is no mightier man than he in all the world.

50. High-spirited as he is, after satisfying Mahadeva in battle he received the most terrible weapon Pashuput,—powerful enough to annihilate the three worlds.

51. When he—that first among men—exterminated all the Kalakhanja Asuras, he received from the different regents of the world many weapons of unfathomable power with which he slew them.

52. Then in the chief city of King Virata he, all alone on a single chariot, discomfited all of us, and forcibly took away the wealth of kine and the garments of all the great warriors before their very face.

53. O Shalya, I must be the most courageous man in all the world to challenge in battle that foremost of men of the royal race, that hero who possesses such might and qualities, and more so, as he is seconded by him of the Vrishni's race (Krishna).

54—55. Besides that, the noble and unrivalled Vasudeva,—who is always victorious, who is the Narayana himself, who is the Vishnu decked with conch, discus and mace, and whose qualities cannot well be sung by all the worlds even in numberless years,—is protecting him (Arjuna). Beholding the two Krishnas in one chariot, I am at once led by misgivings and courage.

56. Partha is the best of all archers, and Narayan with his discus is invincible, even it may be possible for one to shake off the mountain Himalaya from its place, but never can this son of Pandu and Vasudeva be shaken.

57. Who but myself, O Shalya, would dare face this Phalguna and Vasudeva in battle, for both of them are athletic, firm-handed, skilful in war, and mighty car-warriors.

58. O king of Madras, to-day my earnest desire is to fight out this son of Pandu, and that will be achieved soon, and that most beautiful and extraordinary fight, the like of which has never been seen before, will occur very shortly. To-day they will either put an end to my life or I will send them to their last account."

59—60. Speaking the aforesaid words to Shalya, Karna, the smiter of his enemies, in that battle gave utterance to loud roars resembling those of the clouds, and advanced towards your son (Duryodhana), the first of the Kurus, who respectfully saluted him, and spoke the following words to him, and to the strong-armed Kripa, and to Bhoja Chief Kritavarman, to preceptor Drona's son and his younger brother, and to the king of Gandhar and his son, and to all elephant-riders, horsemen and infantry :—

61. "O kings, do youplease push on towards Krishna and Arjuna and shut them up from all sides, when they feel tired and exhausted from fighting with you I shall be able to despatch them off quite easily."

62. "Let it be so," said they, and accordingly those mighty warriors, determined to put an end to Arjuna's life all rushed to-

wards Dhananjaya and attacked him with numberless shafts.

63. As the rivers and streams course mightily onward, but loose their forces and melt in the bosom of the unfathomable deep, so all those warriors were received by the great Arjuna.

64. Such was the lightness of Arjuna's hands that it was impossible for his enemies to mark how he was putting his shafts on the string and how he was shooting them out, only horses, men and elephants went down all the time in heaps, struck dead with Arjuna's shots.

65. As persons with sore eyes cannot look up towards the sun so Jaya (Arjuna) whose arrows were brilliant like the rays of the all-burning sun at the end of Yuga, and whose bow *Gandiva* formed his circular disk, could not be looked at by the Kauravas.

66. Smiling and stretching his bow *Gandiva* to the fullest extent he sent out numberless arrows from it, destroying all the powerful weapons sent against him by the great car-warriors, and hitting them at the same time.

67. O lord of the universe, Arjuna, thwarting the weapons of his enemies sped numberless arrows which destroyed many of your army like the powerful sun during the months of *Jaistha* and *Asharh* drawing up great quantities of water (from the earth).

68. As the clouds pour down heavy showers upon mountain, so did your son, Kripa, the king of the Bhojas, and that powerful son of Drona rushed on and began to pour down arrows upon him like rains.

69. Thus attacked, the son of Pandu very quickly cut off, all the weapons sent against him by all those skilful and mighty car-warriors, and struck three arrows at the breast of each of them.

70. As the sun, in the months of *Jaistha* and *Ashara*, shines brilliantly in the midst of his corona, so Arjuna, scorching his enemies, shone out in great relief, the full drawn *Gandiva* forming his corona, and his shafts forming his rays.

71. Drona's son (Aswathama) coming forward shot ten choicest arrows against Dhananjaya, three against Krishna, four against the four horses, and many other good arrows against the great ape in charge of his standard.

72. In spite of these, Dhananjaya made Drona's son carless by cutting off the outstreched bow of his foe with three shafts, killing his driver with a razor like shaft, and making away with his banner with three, and his four horses with four other shafts.

73. He (Aswathama), being greatly angry, took up a splendid bow ornamented with gold, diamonds and other precious stones, which looked like the body of the snake Takshaka or a great mountainous snake.

74. He then throwing down other weapons on the earth and putting string to the bow from an adjacent place began to distress and strike those two best of men, who were unconquerable, with various arrows.

75. Your son Duryodhana, Kripa and the Bhoj King, and other great warriors, who were leading the field, attacked that mightiest of the Pandavas shooting showers of shafts against him, and he looked like the sun (who drives away darkness) surrounded by clouds on all sides.

76. As in days of yore Indra with his thunder destroyed the horses and car of Valiraj (Asura), so Partha, powerful as the thousand-armed (Kartavirya) with various shafts distressed Kripa's driver and his horses, and cut off his bow and arrows as also his banner on his chariot.

77. As Kiritin had distressed Ganga's son Bhisma before, so Kripa was now distressed in that great fight with innumberable shots after striking off his standard and weapons.

78. Then the banner and bow of your brave and roaring son was struck off by the mighty Partha, who next cut off the standard and steeds of Kritavarman.

79. As a mighty river washes away an embankment, so the ranks of your great army was broken to hundred different portions by him (Partha), who destroyed in no time many elephants, steeds, cars, drivers and weapons of his enemies' army.

80—81. Then Keshava, leaving the distressed enemies on the right side, drove the chariot onward, and Dhananjaya when going quickly like Satamanyu (Indra) at the time of killing Vritra was followed by other great warriors with lofty banners and excellent chariots all desirous of gaining a name in battle.

82. Then the great car-warriors Shikhandin, Satyaki, and the twin brothers, with fearful roars advanced towards Dhananjaya and obstructed the hostile troops, striking them with sharp shafts.

83. Like the Devas (celestials) and the Asuras in the old days, the Kuru warriors and the Srinjayas, coming wrathfully in contact with each other, went on killing one another with powerful and straight shafts.

84—85. Then all anxious to gain victory or to go to heaven by dying in the battle-field, the elephant riders, car-warriors and horsemen with leonine-roars struck each other with well-armed blows. In fact, those brave and picked warriors sent out such hosts of shots against one another that the light of the sun became almost indistinct, and the very atmosphere was filled with darkness.

CHAPTER LXXX.

(KARNABADHA PARVA),—*Contd.*

Sanjaya aaid :—

1—2. O monarch, Dhananjaya, seeing, Bhima almost sinking under the pressure of the attack of many of great Kaurava warriors, left aside the son of Suta and his division, O Bharata, and went to the rescue of his brother, and sent many warriors of the hostile army to Pluto's region.

3. His showers of shafts fell dividedly, some covered the skies, while others killed your army.

4. O king, Dhananjaya, filling the sky (which is the place for birds to play) with his arrows, seemed at that time the very destroyer of Kurus.

5. He with his long flat-pointed shafts and various other brilliant weapons, and keen like razor, began to cut off bodies and heads of enemies.

6. Warriors dead and dying, trunks without heads, lopped off portions of human bodies deprived of armour, covered the battle-field.

7—8. O monarch, heaps of unshapely and mangled bodies of elephants and horses, cut off by Dhananjaya with hisweapons in different ways, and broken cars made the field look ghastly and awful, and the way uneven and impassable, resembling the great river Vaitarini.

9. It was also strewn with cars, some without horses, and some with horses yoked on them, and some with drivers and some without drivers, as also with broken axles, wheels and arrows.

10—11. Four hundred fearful and highly trained elephants ridden by wrathful warriors enveloped in golden coloured armors and decked with golden ornaments, urged by the pressure of the heels and toes of their guides,—who were also powerful, filled with rage, and cruel,—came forward, and was struck down by the chosen weapons of Kiritin or the diadem-decked Arjuna, and fell down resembling great mountain tops inhabited by living beings when loosened.

13. Dhananjaya covered the earth by killing many great and choice elephants by his shafts.

13. Heaps of carcasses of elephants with greasy matter oozing out of them looked like clouds, and as the sun stands out in relief dispersing the clouds, so Dhananjaya's car passed through these masses of dead elephants.

14. Phalguna made a great havoc, and the path was covered with dead horses, men, elephants, and with many broken chariots, as also with dead bodies of warriors divested of their coats of mail, instruments of war and other weapons, and the place was also strewn over with various srots of weapons loosened from the clutches that held them.

15. The awful sound made by his outstretched *Gandiva* was like the clash of thunder amidst the gloomy clouds.

16. As in a hurricane a great vessel is wrecked to pieces by the tossing of the sea, so your army was broken, and it suffered badly from Dhananjaya's shots.

17. Lots of deadly, burning and meteor-like shots, coming like thunderbolts out of the *Gandiva*, began to burn down your troops.

18. As on a night, a blazing forest of bamboos burns on a great mountain, so your great army looked ablaze under fire from (Arjuna's) shots.

19. Your troops, being thus hard pressed, burnt and distressed, and killed by Kiritin's (Arjuna's) arrows began to fly in all directions.

20. As in a great forest, herds of deer being afraid fly wildly in all directions when it catches fire, verily such became the fate of the Kauravas when they were burnt to death by Savyasachin.

21. Leaving the strong-armed Bhimasena, the distressed Kaurava troops retreated from the field.

2. Thus breaking down the Kuru army the unconquerable Vibhatsu then approached Bhimasena and rested there for a while.

23. Phalguna then receiving Bhima's caress and consulting him for a while, informed him that the arrows with which Yudhisthira was afflicted have been drawn out of his body, and that he is keeping well.

24. O Bharata, then taking Bhima's permission, Dhananjaya again advanced towards his enemies, making the earth and sky ring back with the rattling noise of his car-wheels.

25. Then your ten sons, who were born after Dushasana, all good warriors and brave hearted, surrounded Dhananjaya.

26. O Bharata, they with drawn bows distressed Arjuna with firey arrows even as do the hunters an elephant and seemed to dance in the battle-field (with excitement).

27. And the destroyer of (Asura) Madhu, quite confident that Kiritin will soon send them to the region of Pluto, urged on the car, brought them all to the right side.

28. Then seeing that Arjuna with his car was getting from them, they made a rush towards him.

29. Then Partha soon struck off their banners, bows and horses and they fell down on the earth; then with some crescent-shaped arrows and with ten other shafts cut off their heads.

30. Those heads with lips and eyes red with rage looked fair like a collection of lotuses.

31. The destroyer of his enemies (Arjuna) thus sending ten gold mailed Kauravas to the other world with ten broad-headed, gold-winged and swift arrows proceeded onward.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

(KARNABADHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. As the great ape-bannered Arjuna was advancing with swift horses, he was attacked by ninety brave car-warriors of the Kauravas.

2. Taking sacred oaths those mighty warriors surrounded that foremost of men Arjuna.

3. But those swift horses of Arjuna decked with gold and strings of pearls were directed by Krishna towards Karna's car.

4. As the destroyer of his enemies, Dhananjaya was advancing towards Karna's car, he was followed by the ninety Samsaptaka car warriors who were pouring down arrows upon him.

5. Then Arjuna, with sharp arrows, cut off their bows, banners and sent them all with their drivers to the other world.

6. As Siddhas (pure souls) are obliged to have a fall from heaven with their cars, when their virtues wear off, so those warriors were all knocked down by Kiriti's various weapons.

7. Then many Kauravas with their horses, elephants and cars boldly faced that foremost man of Kuru and Bharata races viz., Phalgooni.

8. Then many spirited men of your sons' great army with numbers of horses and mighty and select elephants in front obstructed Dhananjaya's further progress.

9. Then that descendant of the line of Kuru race was surrounded by many great archers of the Kaurava army who were throwing lances, swords, cutlasses, darts and maces and other weapons upon him and covered him.

10. The son of Pandu with his own weapons baffled those hosts of arrows which covered the skies even as the sun shines out in its own splendour dispelling the darkness by the power of his rays.

11. Then the son of Pandu was attacked on the side by thirteen hundred Mlecha troops on furious and unruly elephants.

12. Partha on his chariot was distressed, by Nalikas, lances, darts spears, Kampanas, barbed arrows and other sorts thrown at him by them.

13. Phalgooni cut off with his broad-edged and crescent-shaped sharp arrows all those hosts of excellent weapons, although some of them were thrown by elephants with their tusks.

14. As the mountain is broken to pieces by thunder, so those elephants with their riders, and their standards were knocked down by various choice shafts (from Arjuna).

15. Those mighty elephants adorned with golden necklaces, being distressed by gold-winged arrows, fell down dead.

16. The twang of the Gandiva was prominent amid the loud shouts and distressful noises of hosts of men, elephants and horses.

17—18. O King, elephants and rider-less horses being hurt began to fly hither and thither, and numberless cars without horses and rideres could be seen there changing their forms like smoke when rising into the sky resembling the city of Gandharvas.

19. O monarch, many of your cavalry when flying on all directions were struck down lifeless by Partha's arrows.

20. At that time Arjuna displayed the marvellous strength of his arms by destroying in battle, alone and unaided, car-warriors horsemen and elephants.

21—22. O foremost of the Bharata race, Bhimsena, seeing that Kiritin was thus surrounded by the three different kinds of troops, O king, left the few remnant of

your car warriors and quickly came up to Arjuna's car.

23. Seeing Bhimsena advance towards his brother those distressed men that were left unslain took to their heels.

24. Bhima of inexhaustible prowess, with mace in his hand, slaughtered in that great battle the remnant of the mighty Kaurava cavalry that were left after the havoc made by Arjuna.

25—26. O sire, Bhima by his fearful mace "which was deadly as the black night of death, which was capable of pulling down walls, gates of cities and houses, and whose food was, men, elephants and horses, slaughtered innumerable riders and horses.

27. The son of Pandu knocked down horses and men with black armour on, by his mace; they all came crumbling down with great noise.

28. Covered with blood, with heads, bones and legs broken, they biting the earth *i.e.*, (eating dust) became food for animals of prey.

29. That mace, appeared with drinking blood, also eating flesh, bones and marrow and became terrible to look at like the black night of death.

30—31. Bhima slaughtered ten thousand horse and numberless infantry and was running to and fro in wrath, with mace in hand; and your troops, O Bharata, seeing him thought that the Pluto himself has come among them, armed with his death-dealing wand.

32. The wrathful son of Pandu, who looked like an unruly elephant, himself forced his way with the elephant division (of his enemies) as a *Makara* takes his sweeping dive in the sea.

33. Thus entering the army Bhima by the help of his mighty mace sent them all to the region of Pluto in no time.

34—35. We could see the furious elephants cased in mail, with riders and banners, tumbling down on all sides like so many winged mountains and the powerful Bhimsena thus exterminating the elephant division went back to his car and joined Arjuna's rear.

36. O king, your very army, about to fly, being thus slain and surrounded on all sides; with weapons, lost all energy, and being greatly confounded, was at their wit's end as to what to do.

37. Arjuna, seeing that host in that humble plight and so confounded, began to shower death-dealing shafts upon them.

38. Elephants, horses, cars and men being thus covered by arrows shot by the holder of *Gandiva* they looked like the handsome *Kadamva* flower with the filaments of it.

39. O monarch, thus hurt by Arjuna's arrows which were putting an end to elephants, car-warriors and horses, the Kaurava troops gave vent to loud lamentations.

40. Your troops, panic-stricken, kept close to each other and were turning round from this side to that side like a wheel on fire.

41. The great fighting still went on between the Kurus and (Arjuna) and all the elephants, horses, cavalry and car-warriors were wounded *i. e.*, (no body came out scatheless).

42. Resembling a forest of blooming *Asoka* the troops, streaming with blood, with their armours broken, looked red as if they were ablaze with fire.

43. Seeing Savyasachin (Arjuna) display so much prowess, all the Kauravas despaired of Karna's life.

44. The Kauravas, beaten by Partha, the weilder of the *Gandiva*, not being able to bear the brunt of the battle, gave up fighting.

45. Distressed to death by (Arjuna's) shafts they all, leaving Karna, began to disperse themselves on all directions abusing the son of Suta all the time.

46. The Pandava warriors, with Bhimsena at their head, were all very happy to see Partha follow the flying columns shooting many hundreds of arrows.

47. As persons, drowning in the deep sea, find shelter in an island, so your sons, O king, went towards Karna's car for their safety.

48. O monarch, the Kauravas, all afraid of the holder of the *Gandiva*, like snakes whose stock of venom has exhausted, looked up to Karna for their safety.

49—50. O great king, your sons, being afraid of the noble son of Pandu, sought protection of the great warrior Karna, like the creature of the earth, responsible for their actions, take shelter of virtue from fear of death.

51. Karna who was not at all afraid, seeing them all bleeding and distressed by shafts (of Arjuna) re-assured them and said, "Do not fear, come to me."

52. And Karna, beholding that all the troops have been broken by the prowess of Partha, stretched out his bow for the purpose of killing his enemy.

53. Having seen that the Kauravas have all fled from the battle-field, Karna, the best of warriors, drew a deep sigh, and thinking awhile determined to slay Partha.

54. Then Vrisha—the son of Adirath, drawing his great bow, again rushed towards the Panchalas before the very face of Savyasachin.

55. As the clouds pour down heavy showers upon a mountain, so Karna was almost immediately met by hosts of arrows from many rulers of the earth whose eyes were blood-red with wrath.

56—57. O ye of noble mind and best of living beings, when Karna—the son of Suta and protector of his friends, thus desirous to serve his friends, sent thousands of shafts which killed many of the Panchalas, cries, loud from woe, rose among them.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. O monarch, after the Kurus had been routed (by Arjuna) on whose car were attached white horses, Karna—the son of Suta, like the high wind dispersing the clouds, went on slaughtering the Panchalas.

2. With *Anjalika* weapons he brought down the driver of Janamejaya from the car and broke down the bows of Satanikas Sutasoma covered them with broad-headed arrows.

3. Then he, striking Dhristadyumna with six arrows, almost instantly knocked down his and Satyaki's horses, and then in quick succession killed Vishoka—the Kaikeya prince.

4. Then the Kaikeya General Ugrakarman, seeing the Kaikaya prince thus killed, rushed on towards Karna and moving forward his bow repeatedly began to distress Karna's son Prasena with many powerful shafts.

5. Then Karna, with three crescent-like shafts, severed his head and arms from the body and like a *Shala* tree cut down by an axe he (Ugrakarman) fell down lifeless from his car.

6. Then Prasena, as if dancing with excitment, assailed the steedless grandson of Shini (Satyaki) with many straight arrows, but was in return killed by the grandson of Shini.

7. Karna, filled with vengeance at the death of his son, and wishing to slay that foremost of Shinis addressed him, "consider yourself a dead man" and struck him with a deadly arrow.

8—9. But Shikandi severed that arrow with three shafts, and with three others distressed Karna ; then the wrathful son of Suta with two razor-like shafts struck off the bows, arrows and banners of Shikhandi and with six other powerful arrows hit Shikhandi himself and killed Dhristadumnya's son ; and the noble son of Adhiratha also struck Sutasoma with a very sharp arrow.

10. O most powerful of monarchs, in that terrible fight loud lamentations were heard as the son of Dhristadumnya fell down and Krishna, hearing that, addressed Partha and said, "Partha go and kill Karna for he is destroying the whole Panchala race."

11. Then in order to save the Panchalas from the fear of that great car-warrior, Karna, he (Arjuna) advanced on his car towards the chariot of the son of Adhiratha with a smile in his lips.

12. Then rubbing his palm on the bow-string with a very loud twang he stretched out the Gandiva and suddenly made the Earth look dark by covering the sun with showers of arrows and also killed hosts of men, horses and elephants, and destroyed many banners.

13. At that fearful moment, when Kiritin (the diadem-decked Arjuna) greatly excited, with the *Gandiva* in his hands, bent almost to a circle, assailed his enemies the loud twang of his bow resounded through the skies, and the birds being afraid took refuge in caves and mountains.

14. The redoubtable Bhimasena followed Arjuna on his car guarding the rear, and both the princes fighting their way on their respective cars advanced fast towards Karna.

15. In the meantime the son of Suta had been fighting terribly : he repeatedly thrashed the Somakas and killed large numbers of elephants, horses and car-warriors ; in fact he covered the atmosphere with his shafts.

16. Then Uttamaujas, Janamejaya, the wrathful Yudhamanyu, Shikhandin and Prishatha's son Dhristadumnya all in a body fiercely attacked Karna with many weapons and with loud roars.

17. As the objects of senses cannot extract the purity out of a holy man, so those five best Panchala warriors, though they tried their utmost, could not shake Vaikartana (Karna) from off his car.

18. Karna, with his arrows very soon rending asunder their bows, arrows, drivers

and banners and striking each of them with five arrows, gave vent to a loud shout that resembled the roar of a lion.

19. When Karna was thus distressing his enemies with his bow and arrows in hand the whole world, with its mountains and trees, seemed to spilt into pieces by the loud twang of his bow, and people became afraid.

20. The son of Adhiratha, with his large bow like that of Shakra fully drawn, went on throwing his arrows; indeed in that fight he looked brilliant like the sun with his firing rays in the midst of his corona.

21. Suta's son then struck Shikhandin with twelve keen shafts, Uttamaujas with six and Yudhamanyu, Janmenjaya and Dhristadyumna with three each.

22. O respected king, as the objects of senses are conquered by a holy man of abstinence, so those five great warriors, overpowered by Suta's son in that dreadful fight, became confounded and inactive to the great delight of their enemy—

23. As ship-wrecked merchants are saved from drowning in a deep sea by means of other ships, so did the sons of Draupadi, with the help of their cars, save their maternal uncles from sinking under the pressure of Karna's weapons who resembled the sea.

24. Then the most powerful of the Shinis (Satyaki) cut off all the sharp arrows of Karna and struck him with many sharp arrows purely made of iron and your eldest son, Duryodhana, with eight.

25. Then Kripa, the Bhoja king, your son and Karna himself assaulted Satyaki in return with many sharp arrows, but that best of Yadu's race fought with those four great warriors as did the king of Daityas with the regents of the four quarters.

26. As in autumn the Sun shines brilliantly in the sky, so with his outstretched bow, which was sounding loudly and sending forth arrows unrestrainedly, Satyaki became hard to face.

27. As the Maruts helped Shakra (Indra) when he distressed his enemies, so the great Panchala car-warriors—the distressers of their enemies—all clothed in coats of mail, collected together, getting back upon their cars and protected that greatest man of the line of Shini.

28. Many elephants, horses and men were then killed in that fight that took place between your enemies and your troops, and it raged as hot and fierce as was the great battle which ensued between the Gods and the Asuras, in days of yore.

29. All the infantry, car-warriors, elephants and steeds distressed with various weapons, and struck by each other they began to move about sending forth dolorous cries of woe; some tumbled while others dropped down dead as they moved.

30. At that time your son Dushasana, the younger brother of the king, boldly going up to Bhimsena, shot hosts of shafts against him, and Vrikodara like a lion taking his leap upon a big *Ruru* (deer) swiftly made a rush towards him.

31. As in days of yore Shakra and Shamvara fight with each other, so did those two brave warriors, both panting for revenge, fight with each other making their very lives the wager of the fight.

32. As two lustful elephants fight for a she-elephant with fatty secretions streaming down their bodies, so did they strike each other with powerful and piercing shafts.

33. Then Vrikodara with two razor-like shafts struck off the banner and the bow and the arrows of your son, and with another winged arrow he hurt him on the forehead and with a fourth, he severed the head of his charioteer.

34. Prince Dushasana, taking up another bow, hit Bhima with twelve arrows and taking hold of the reins of his horses rained upon Bhima hosts of shafts.

35. Then Dushasana sent against Bhima an arrow worked with gold, diamond and other valuable gems, and brilliant as the sun's rays, deadly and powerful as Indra's thunder.

36. Vrikodara being struck by that weapon with outstreched arms fell down on his car like one dead and powerless, but again regaining his senses he began to roar like a lion.

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

KARNA-BADHA PARVA.—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. In that fight Prince Dushasana fought with great prowess and performed difficult feats; with a single arrow he severed Bhimasena's bow and struck his driver with six others.

2. That noble and energetic warrior after performing these brave acts, first distressed Bhima with nine shafts, and almost immediately again covered him with numberless powerful shafts.

3. The light-handed Bhimasena, being enraged at this, threw a fearful dart at your

son, but your noble son drawing his bow to its full length with ten shafts severed that awful dart as it was coming straight to him like a burning brand.

4. All the warriors seeing him do this bold feat adored him and became very glad; your son again struck Bhima with another arrow which cut him deeply.

5—6. Bhima then became very angry and kindling with wrath told your son, "you have wounded me very soon; O brave warrior, you have also distressed me now, bear the weight of my mace." Now catching hold of his formidable mace for killing Dushasana he said "O Scoundrel, in this fight I will drink your heart's blood."

7. Hearing these words your son threw a death-like dart at Bhima with all his might and Bhima fomenting in rage giving turns to his fearful mace struck his enemy with it.

8. Crushing Dushasana's dart, that mace came down straight on your son and hit him on the head; in that fearful fight when thus struck the prince, with his mace, resembled an unruly elephant from whose body fatty sweat was flowing down.

9. Struck down by that weapon Dushasana fell at a distance of ten bows from his car and when he reached the ground he was shaking all over from the shock of that weapon.

10. O monarch, all his ornaments, garlands and dresses were destroyed and torn, his horses slain, his car broken to pieces, and he himself knocked down and greatly distressed under the pressure of that blow.

11. Then in that great fight the energetic Bhima gradually remembered all the sufferings they (the Pandavas) have undergone at the hands of your eldest son.

12. O monarch, the mighty Bhima of extraordinary prowess, seeing Dushasana, also remembered how he had insulted Devi Draupadi, by catching hold of her tresses and forcibly taking off her cloth, specially at a time when she should not have been touched by any male.

13. The noble-minded Bhima also, remembering the various oppressions suffered by her on different other occasions when her lords (husbands) were obliged to turn their faces and keep quiet, actually flamed in fury like fire when helped with clarified butter.

14. Addressing the great warriors, Karna, Suyodhana, Drona's son Kripa and Kritavarman, said he, "I will this day put an end to the life of this miscreant Dushasana, defend him if you can."

15. Speaking these words the energetic and mighty Bhimasena all on a sudden sprang forward with the intention of slaying Dushasana.

16. As the furious lion pounces upon an elephant, so the exemplary hero Vrikodara, showing such prowess, in that battle attacked Dushasana before the very face of Karna and Suyodhana.

17. He reached the earth leaping down from his car, eagerly looked at his fallen enemy (Dushasana) for some time and pressing his throat with his foot, took up his keen sword and therewith tearing open his chest, drank his warm blood.

18—19. O king, that strong-minded man in order to redeem his promise, threw down your son, and with the sword struck off his head and went on drinking his blood by sips with the greatest relish and looking at him spoke these words wrathfully.

20—21. "The taste of my enemies' blood is sweeter than my mother's milk or honey or butter or sweet wine or curd or the pure water or skimmed milk,and to me it is much more tasteful than all the other nectarine drinks of the world."

22. The highly wrathful Bhimasena, the very picture of fierceness, seeing that Dushasana no longer lives, with a smile said, "You are now rescued from my clutches, since you are dead; what more can I do you."

23. O monarch, he, who then saw Bhimasena who was glad at heart by drinking the blood of his enemy and was placing the battle-field giving vent to those words, actually fell down to the earth out of sheer fear.

24. Others who were not thus struck down were also so affected with fear that they lost hold of their weapons, and some with half closed eyes looked fearfully towards Bhimsena uttering meaningless ejaculations.

25. Those men, who were at that time near Bhima and who saw him thus drink Dushasana's blood being overpowered with fear, fled on all directions saying to each other that he is no human being.

26. He became so horrible to look at when drinking the blood that your troops with Chitrasena becoming afraid took to their heels saying that he is surely a *Rakshasa*. (Monster).

27. Then the Prince Yudhamanyu gallantly pursuing the retreating Chitrasena struck him with seven sharp arrows successively.

28. As a snake, when trodden upon, turns back with protruding tongue to give out its venom so did Chitrasena, wheeling round, struck the Panchala prince with three arrows also hitting the driver with other six.

29. Then that choicest of warriors Yudhamanyu, drawing his bow to the full extent, sent an arrow, from it, with beautiful wings and of very keen edge, and that struck off his head.

30. Karna of unparalleled energy, seeing his brother Chitrasena dead, showed great prowess and began to disperse the Pandava troops but Nakula thereupon faced him.

31. Bhimsena, then after thus killing the vengeful Dushasana and holding a full draught of his blood in his hands in the presence of those great and mighty warriors, loudly spoke the following words.

32—33. "O you most miserable wretch, now I am drinking your heart's blood" do you again joyfully defy us and say, "Beast, Beast" and also said, "O you who were very glad and danced at our misery and called us beasts, we now fling back the words to your very teeth.

34—37. You (Dushasana) were the root of all the mischief and sufferings we had to undergo; it is through the evil counsels of Duryodhana, Shakuni and the son of Radha we had to sleep at the house called the Pramankoti, and our food was poisoned; we had to suffer from bites of black snakes, we were going to be burnt down to ashes in the house of lac, we were robbed of our kingdom through gambling, and Draupadi was insulted and her beautiful hairs seized mercilessly; we were exiled in wilderness, we suffered both at home and at battle from strokes of weapons when living in Virata's residence.

38. We have never been happy but have undergone all these sufferings from the evil intentions of Dhritarashtra and his son."

39. Thus speaking, O monarch, Vrikodara, after gaining victory, addressed both Keshava and Arjuna.

40. And the short-tempered Bhimasena, who was all bleeding and was very red in the face and highly wrathful, spoke these words—" You witness, O ye brave warriors, that in battle I have this day redeemed my pledge regarding Dushasana.

41. I will very soon redeem my other promise by crushing the head of that other brute the miscreant Duryodhana with my foot, as a sacrifice in this warfare, before all the Kauravas, and then I will know peace."

42. And the mighty Bhimasena uttering these joyfully with blood streaming through his body, began to shout loudly as thousand-eyed (Indra) after killing the (Asura) Vritra.

CHAPTER LXXXIV.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

O monarch, after the death of Dushasana your ten sons, all great car-warriors, who never showed their backs in field, greatly energetic and revengeful, covered Bhima with their arrows.

2—3. They were Nisangen, Kavachin, Pashin, Dundadhara, Dhanurograha, Alulupa, Saha, Shanda, Vatavega and Subuchasas; and being greatly sorry on account of the death of their brother, they faced the strong armed Bhimasena and struck him with arrows.

4. Being hemmed in on all sides by the arrows of those mighty car warriors, Bhima, with fiery and blood-red eyes, looked brilliant as Pluto himself.

5. O Bharata, Vrikodara, of the line of Pritha, then with ten gold-winged and flat edged shafts, sent those ten princes of the line of Bharata, whose wrists were adorned with gold bracelets, very quickly to the region of Pluto.

6. After those ten brave warriors have fallen, your troops being afraid of the Pandavas began to give way even in the presence of Karna himself.

7. O monarch, as human beings are afraid of death, so Karna seeing Bhima of great power became afraid of him.

8. Then Shalya, the ornament of the battle-field, knowing from the very look of Karna what was passing in his mind, addressed that scorcher of his enemies with words befitting.

9. "O son of Radha, do not be depressed; it is not fit for you; all the chiefs are dispersing themselves afraid of Bhimasena.

10. Duryodhana is confounded owing to the woeful fate of his brother and specially as his blood has been quaffed by the brave-hearted Bhima.

11. Kripa with others and the surviving brothers of the king, with painful hearts their rage depressed with sorrow, are all seated round Duryodhana and taking care of him.

12. Those brave warriors, the Pandavas who never miss their aim, are coming forward to meet you in fight.

13. O foremost of men, for these reasons and remembering the duties of the Kshatriyas you should put forth all your energies and march against Dhananjaya.

14. O you strong-armed warrior, the whole responsibility of this war has been put on you by the son of Dhritarashtra; exert yourself and bear that burden to the best of your ability.

15. There is great glory in victory, and even in defeat Heaven is certain.

16. O son of Radha, your son Vrisasena, beholding that you are at your wit's end, is advancing towards the Pandavas with great wrath."

17. Thus addressed by Shalya of unfathomable prowess, Karna reflecting came to the conclusion that there is no other alternative but to fight the battle out.

18. Then Vrisasena, all wrathful, with his car advanced against that son of Pandu *viz.*, Vrikodara who was destroying your army and with his mace was looking like Pluto himself with his death-dealing sceptre.

19. As (in days of yore) the victorious Magavat joyfully ran to meet the (*Asura*) Jambha, so did Nakula, the bravest of warriors, with great anger rushed towards their enemy, Karna's son.

20. Then the mighty Nakula, with a razor-like arrow, rent asunder the gem-bedecked banner of his foe, and with another flat-faced shaft broke the gold-belted bow of Karna's son.

21. Karna's son, master of many powerful weapons, showing how he felt for the woeful fate of Dushasana promptly took up another bow and distressed the son of Pandu with many powerful and celestial weapons.

22. The noble Nakula, very much enraged, struck his enemy with shots fiery as the burning wand, whereupon the skilful warrior, Karna's son, began to pour down celestial weapons upon Nakula.

23. The son of Karna, out of rage from the hits of his enemy as also from the brilliancy and might of his own weapons, looked like the fire ablaze when helped with clarified butter.

24. O monarch, Karna's son with his fine shots, indeed killed the white and good looking chargers of Nakula, who were of the Vanayu breed and were adorned with fittings of gold.

25. Nakula then got down from his horseless chariot, and taking up a shield that was studded with golden moons and a sky colored sword jumping now and then looked like a sprightly bird.

26. In the ceremony of horse-sacrifice as it is the duty of the killer to cut down many animals, so Nakula, with that sword in hand bounding in the air, struck down many brave men, horses and elephants.

27. Nakula, wishing to attain victory, single-handed in no time knocked down two thousand well disciplined, and well-paid warriors, collected from different countries who were of sure aim, who were always glad to fight and whose bodies were besmeared with fine sandal paste.

28. Then Karna's son all of a sudden, rushed against the advancing Nakula and distressed him with hosts of sharp shafts from all sides in order to put an end to him.

29. Nakula distressed with arrows (from Vrishasena), in return, also struck his enemy, and Vrishasena being thus struck by Nakula became very angry but the noble Nakula being protected by his brother Bhimasena at that time in that hard fight performed prodigies of valor.

30. Then the son of Karna angry at heart, with eighteen arrows, struck the brave Nakula with whom fighting was like play and who was destroying single-handed the bravest warriors, chargers and elephants.

31. O monarch, being greatly distressed by Vrishasena in that encounter, Pandu's son Nakula, the best of men and of great energy then rushed on for the purpose of killing Karna's son.

32. Vrishasena began raining hosts of sharp arrows upon the mighty Nakula as he advanced straight like a hawk pouncing npon a lump of meat with its wings spread.

33. After thwarting the hosts of arrowy of his foe, Nakula went on making mans beautiful evolutions in the air, but Karna's son, O monarch, in that fierce encounter, with his powerful shafts cut off his shield studded with a thousand stars.

34—35. Then as Nakula was careering with his drawn sword, of good steel, well polished and very sharp and strong enough to bear great weight and to lop off bodies of all sorts of enemies, and deadly as snake Vrisasena in a short time cut off that sword with six razor-like shafts and also hurt his enemy in the centre of the chest with arrows well tempered and keen edged.

36. Having thus performed deeds according to the usage of the ancients, which would have been difficult for others to do, the noble-minded Nakula, endued with great activity, advanced, O monarch, towards the car of Bhimasena, distressed with those shafts.

37. The son of Madri, becoming horseless and being thus distressed by Karna's son, in the presence of Dhananjaya bounded upon the car of Bhimasena resembling a lion leaping on the summit of a mountain.

38. Then that noble-minded and brave warrior Vrisasena, excited with rage, began to rain hosts of arrows upon those two powerful car-warriors seated on the same car with the purpose of distressing those two sons of Pandu at the same time.

39. After the car of the son of Pandu had been broken and his sword quickly cut off, the son of the Wind-god (Bhimasena) told Phalguna (Arjuna) "see how Nakula is being distressed by the son of Karna; he has even the audacity to attack us, do you proceed against him."

40. The fierce warrior Dhananjaya, whose head was adorned with diadem, on hearing these words, riding up to Vrikodara's car, drove straight on his great ape-bannered car and with Keshava as its driver towards Brisasena.

CHAPTER LXXXV.

KARNA-BADH PARVA.—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. Then those eleven mighty scorchers of enemies, namely the five brave sons of Drupada, the grandson of Shini (Satyaki), and the five sons of Draupadi, learning that Nakula had been made carless and greatly distressed, and wounded with the shafts and other weapons of the son of Karna, his sword and bow broken, advanced on their rattling cars with standards floating in the air and pulled by jumping horses driven by skilful drivers. Those well-armed heroes with shafts deadly as snakes went on killing your elephants, chariots and men.

3. Then your leading car-warriors, *viz.*, Hridaka's son, Kripa, Drona's son, Shakuni's son, Vrika, Krathadeva, and Abridha immediately advanced against them with their bows on cars, the wheels of which were rattling loudly like the roars of elephants or the boom of the clouds.

4. O monarch, the Kaurava warriors thus attacking those eleven best of car-warriors and choicest of men, checked their course with most powerful shafts, the Kulindas mounted on elephants of great Sini and looking like mountain cliffs and resembling in color newly gathered clouds, rushed against the Kaurava warriors.

5. Those unruly and proud elephants of the Himlayan breed, adorned with networks of gold and mounted by skilful warriors, eager to show their prowess in battle, looked beautiful like the clouds in the sky with lightning flashing upon them.

6. Then the Prince of the Kulindas with ten arrows made entirely of steel, bravely attacked Kripa but being struck in return by arrows of Sharadwat's son the prince with his elephant fell down on the earth.

7. The younger brother of that prince attacked Kripa's car with spears made of steel and shining like the rays of the sun, and began to shout loudly, and while so careering his head was severed by the king of Gandhara.

8. Those powerful car-warriors of our army being glad at the fall of the Kulindas blew their sea conchs and with bows in hand attacked their enemies.

9. The battle which followed between the Kurus on one side and the Pandus and the Srinjayas on the other with shafts cutlasses, darts, swords and maces and battle axes became awful aud hard, and many steeds, men and elephants were killed.

CHAPTER LXXXVI.

KARNA-BADHA PARVA.—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Vasudeva the foremost of men beholding the great bodied Karna whom the gods could not advancing with roars like the swelling ocean said to Arjuna with a smile.

2. There comes the chariot (of Karna) with grey steeds and Calya its driver, with the intention of meeting you in battle so wait with calmness.

3—4. O son of Pandu, look how beautifully the car of Karna is adorned; the son of Radha is on it and it has four beautiful grey horses and it is also decked with various sorts of banners and net work of bells and how it is being borne as if in the skies by their pale horses.

5. Look the high souled Karna's banner is like clouds and resembles the bow of Akhandal (Indra) which divides the sky

6. See how Karna sends hosts of arrows like clouds pouring down rain as he is advancing to fulfil the intention of Dhritarastra's son.

7. The king of Madra (Calya) is seated on the front of the car and guiding the horses of the powerful Radha's son.

8—9. Hear, O son of Pandu, the noise of their tumtums and the shrill note of their conchs and lion-like roars that are coming from all directions. Karna, of unfathomable prowess, has drawn his bow and its loud twang can be heard above all other sounds.

10. As in a forest a wrathful lion scares away herd of deers so the mighty Panchala warriors are melting (before Karna).

11. O son of Kunti, you are the only person who would venture to bear the brunt of his weapons, so you should take all possible measures to kill him,

12. I know well that you are capable to conquer in battle all the three worlds together with its mobile and immobile creations and the gods and Gandharvas.

13. Nothing need be told about fighting; men cannot look towards the great god the three eyed and terrible Sarva, also called the Kaparddin.

14. You have satisfied in battle that god of gods the Siva, deity Sthanu, the creator of the happiness of all creatures.

15. O Partha, as Indra slew Namuchi so you will, O, you of powerful arms, by the kindness of the great god who is armed with trident, kill Karna and be victorious; and may it farewell with you.

16. Arjuna said, O Krishna, you are the destroyer of Madhu and master of all creation; and as you are kind to me my victory in this battle is sure.

17. O Hrishikesa, a mighty warrior, urge on the horses and advance with my car. Phagoon will kill Karna.

18. O Govinda, today either I will slay Karna and hack him to pieces with my weapans or he will see me killed by his arrows.

19. You will soon witness the fight that will bewilder the three worlds and it will be spoken of till the world ends.

20. Thus speaking to Krishna of inexhaustible energy, Partha advanced towards Karna like one elephant against another.

21. Partha of great prowess again told Krishna who was the scorcher of foes "O Hrishikesa, time flies, so spur on the steeds;" and thus requested Kecava lashed the horses which were swift as the mind.

21—22. Partha of great prowess again told Krishna, the scorcher of his foes "O Hrishikesha, time flies spur on the horses;" and being thus addressed by the noble son of Pandu Kecava who wishes him victory lashed the steeds which were swift as the mind and very quickly brought the car of Pandu's son before Karna's chariot.

CHAPTER LXXXVII.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. Seeing his son Brisasena thus killed the energetic Karna shed tears with grief and wrath, his eyes red as copper and advanced to meet his enemy having defied Dhananjaya in fight.

3. Then those two cars covered with tiger skins and shinning with lustre looked like two suns facing each other.

4. Those scorchers of their enemies, the mighty warriors, with white steeds attached to their cars, looked like the sun and moon of the skies in brilliancy.

5. When those two warriors, like Indra and the Vali (son of Birochan) prepared for fight as if to conquer the three worlds, all the creatures were struck with wonder.

6—7. All the rulers of earth were filled with admiration as those two warriors faced each other with their car wheels rattling their bows twanging and their arrows flying, with whizz, Partha with his ape banner flying and Karna with his banner marked with an elephant and roaring like a lion.

8. O Bharata, all the kings began to give vent to lion-like roars (with excitement) seeing those two car warriors engaged with each other and praised them greatly.

9. Thousands of fighters, seeing them thus engaged in duel fight, began to sound their arm-pits with the palm of their hands and shook their garments (in excitement.

10. The Kauravas struck up their martial music and sounded their conchs to excite and please Karna.

11. The Pandavas also for rousing Dhananjaya caused all the sides to resound with the sound of their drums and conchs.

12. In that contest between Karna and Arjuna fearful noise arose on account of the shouts and lion-like roars of warriors and for the striking of their palms over their arm-pits.

13. All the persons gazed eagerly on those two best of car wrriors and most

powerful of men as they faced each other adorned with arrows and darts.

14. Both of them were cased in armours and had swords hanging in their belts: they had grey steeds yoked to their cars and both of them had beautiful conchs; both of them were mighty car warriors, one had Calya for his driver, the other had Krishna.

15. Both had long arms and necks powerful like that of the lion; their eyes looked red with rage and they were decked with golden garlands; their bo vs seemed to send forth lightning flashes and they were possessed of choicest of weapons.

16. They were being fanned with chowries and white umbrellas were held over their heads; and they were masters of best arrows and lookod most beautiful.

17. Both of them were like furious bulls; and they were both broad chested-and had short necks like lion and were exceedingly strong.

18. O monarch, summoning each other to combat they precipitated upon one another like two powerful bulls in a cowshed with the intention of slaying one another.

19. As they fought they resembled two furious elephants, or angry mountains, or the little snakes of deadly poison or Yama the destroyer of the creation.

20. Roused against each other like Indra and Vritra (asura) they resembled the sun and the moon in brilliancy and looked like two planets approaching each other in order to bring the world to its end.

27. They were both handsome as the gods and were of godlike prowess having sprung from heavenly fathers.

22. O king, your army were filled with delight seeing those two brave warriors of tiger-like ferocity engaged in battle.

23. Beholding those foremost of men Karna and Dhananjaya engaged in combat, it could not be said as to who would be victorious in the end.

24. They were both skilful in war and possessed of select weapons, and they made the skies ring back with the noise of sounding their arm-pits.

25. Both of them were famous for their courage and strength and they were skilful like the (Asura) and the king of gods in war.

26. Both resembled Kartavirya or Dacaratha's son (Rama) in battle and looked like the god Vishnu himself in prowess or Bhava himself.

27. In that fight, O monarch, both of them had white horses and select chariots and the best of drivers.

28. Those two warriors looked beautiful and brilliant on their cars and they were admired by all the Siddhas and Charanas that were present.

29. O best of Bharata race, the Dhartarastras, without losing time, surrounded the noble Karna, who was the best of warriors.

30. So Dhristadyumna, with all the Pandavas surrounded the noble Partha matchless in war.

31. Your troops, O monarch, began to fight for Karna and the Pandavas in favor of Partha.

32. The troops of both the sides were eager witnessess of that great Yama of battle and defeat and victory of either party depended on them (Karna and Arjuna).

33. To decide the fate of the war they began that duel fight and our men and the Pandavas stood in front of the field to see that fight.

34. O king, in that battle those two brave warriors well skilled in warfare, determined to kill each other.

35. O master, they looked like two fearful comets when they engaged in that deadly fight.

36. O most powerful of the Bharata race, the inhabitants of the skies differed in opinion and angry disputes were going on amongst them as to whether Karna or Arjuna would be victorious and also the whole world was uncertain as to the issue of that fight.

37. The gods, Danavas, the Gandharvas, the Pichachas, the Nagas, the Rakshashas differed in their opinions.

38. The heavens with all the stars sided Karna and the earth backed Partha as mother wishes her son well.

39. O foremost of men, all the mountains, rivers, seas, with trees, herbs and plants were for crowned Arjuna.

40. O smiter of enemies, the Asuras, the Yatudhanas, the Guhyakas and ravens and other birds who roam the skies also favoured Arjuna.

41—42. All the valuable jewels, the four Vedas, the Mahabharata, the Upavedas, the Upanishads with all their mysterious contents, the Vasuki and Chitrasena, the Takskka and Upatakskaka, the mountains and all the descendants of Kadru and their children with all the poisonous great snakes and Nagas were on Arjuna's side.

43. Aryavarta with his children, the descendants of Shuravi and Vaikati and the Bhojins all favoured Arjuna and the smaller snakes sided Karna.

44. The wolves and deer of the wild and other animals and birds of good omen all sided Partha.

45. The Vasus, the Maruts, the Siddhvas,the Rudras, the Vicwadevas, the Acwins, the Agni, the Soma and Indra, the Pavana and the ten sides were in favor of Dhananjaya but the Aditya sided Karna.

46. O monarch, the Vaicyas, the Cudras, the Sutas and other half caste people were in favor of Radha's son.

47. The Pitris and the heavenly bodies with all their followers and staff, Yama and Vaicravam and Varuna were for Arjuna. The Brahmanas, Kshatriyas, the gifts (Dakshinas), the sacred sacrifices were in favor of Arjuna.

48. The Pretas, the Pichaches, animals and birds of prey, the Rakshasas, the sea monsters, the dogs and jackals were on Karna's side.

49. The different sets of Rajarshis were for the son of Pandu. O Monarch, all the Gandharvas with Tomvuru as their head were in Arjuna's favor.

50—51. The different tribes of Gandharvas and Apsaras and the descendants of Pradha and Mauni and many sages riding on wolves, deers, elephants, horses and cars and others on foot or riding on the clouds and the wind came to see that combat betwen Karna and Arjuna.

52—53. O monarth, the Gods, Danavas Yakshas, Nagas, the birds, the learned Rishis well versed in the Vedas, the Pitris who live upon Swadha, the Sciences and and asceticism and herbs of heavenly qualities all came and with great noise took their position in the sky.

54. Brahma together with Bhava (Mahadeva) with all the Bramharishis and Monsters of creation driving in excellent cars also came to that place.

55. As those two noble warriors engaged in fight Cakra (Indra) himself wished that Arjuna might conquer Karna and Surya wished that Karna might conquer Arjuna.

56. One said my son Karna will gain victory and the other said my son Arjuna will be victorious.

57. Thus they of lion like-prowess disputed for each other taking different sides.

58. Seeing those two noble warriors face each other in fight the Asuras took one side and the gods the other.

59. The gods, the Rishis and all the creations of the three worlds began to shake with fear seeing that fight.

60 All the Gods favoured Partha and the Asuras Karna and all the creations felt an interest either for the Pandava warrior or the Kuru warrior.

61. Seeing (Brahma) the master of creation who had no father (self born) all the Gods requested him to make the issue of that fight between those two foremost of men to be equal.

62. The whole creation will be destroyed if Karna and Arjuna continued this fight O self born one; only speak the word that these two will be equally successful.

63. Hearing this Maghavat respectfully nodding to the God of Gods the *Grand Sire* the August one of all sensible creatures said

64. O sacred one, thou hast said before that the two Krishnas are sure to gain victory, be then pleased and let that be the case now.

65. Hearing this Brahma and Icana said to the king of the celestials the noble Vijaya (Arjuna) will surely gain victory.

66. O Cakra, Savyasachin has pleased the eater of sacrifices (Agni) in Khandava forest and also helped him when he came to Heavan.

67. Karna takes part with the Danavas and he deserves to be defeated so the intentions of the Gods will be fulfilled.

68. O King of Heaven, one should always be careful about his business and as the noble minded Phalgoon is truthful and virtuous undoubtedly he must always be the conquerer.

69. O thou with hundred eyes, why will not he be victorious, who both pleased the noble and sacred God who has the bull marked on his banner

70. Partha has the master of the world Vishnu himself as his driver besides he is a hero, is very powerful and is virtuous at the same time.

71. He is of active body, master of the science of weapons and has all qualities; and he should conquer because the Gods wish it to be so.

72. By his great prowess Partha can overrule destiny itself whether it be in his favor or not; when he means he can destroy all creatures.

73. When those two Krishnas are roused, they care not for anything and those

two foremost of men are creators of real and unreal matters.

74. They are the ancient and good Rishis Nara and Narayana; they have no fear and they are smiters of all enimies and can not be ruled by any one; they rule over all.

75. Either in Heaven or earth there is none to equal them; they are above all the Heavenly Rishis and Charanas of the three worlds.

76. All the Gods and creatures come after them; they are properly speaking the main stay of the whole world.

77—78. Let Karna, the son of Vikartan, who is foremost of men and who is a brave warrior, attain the best region and let him be like the Vasus or Maruts; let him be adored in heaven with Bhima and Drona, but let the two Krishnas be victorious.

79. When those two greatest of Gods (Brahma and Icana) said so the God with thousand eyes respectfully bowed to their words and himself said to other creatures.

80. You hear what the two Gods say for the good of the whole world and it must surely be so and not otherwise; so rest assured.

81. O my lord king, hearing Indra say these words all creatures admired and praised that deity.

82. The inhabitants of heaven then sounded their horns and showered many sorts of sweet scented flowers.

83. And actually all the Gods, Danavas and Gandharvas waited anxiously to see that unrivalled duel between those two men of leonine prowess.

84. O monarch, both the cars, ridden by Karna and Arjuna, had grey steeds attached to them and their wheels rattled loudly as they careered with beautiful banners on their tops.

85. Many brave warriors came near Vasudeva and Arjuna and also near Calya and Karna and sounded their conchs.

86. Then began that fight which struck terror into the hearts of cowards and like Sakra and Samvara the warriors rushed fiercely against each other.

87. Like the planets Rahu and Ketu appearing in the sky at the time of the destruction of the whole world the banners of those two heroes looked very brilliant and beautiful.

88. The elephant's rope on Karna's standard which was very strong and decked with jewels and precious stones resembled a poisonous snake and the bow of Indra in beauty (as it fluttered).

89. The great ape of Partha, opening its fearful and broad jaws, struck terror in to the hearts of all and became difficult to look at like the sun.

90—91. The ape, on the banner of Gandiva, being willing to fight all on a sudden, left his place, lept upon Karna's banner like Gadura swooping down upon a snake and began to tear the elephant rope standard ficercely with its nails, and teeth.

92. The elephant's rope, which was strong as iron and adorned with strings of small bells, which resembled the fatal noose (of Yama), becoming wrathful pressed against the ape.

93. Thus in that terrible duel between those two great warriors and which was the result of their match game in dice, their banners first fought with each other and the horses of the one neighed at the horses of the other.

94. Keshava, whose eyes were like lotuses, looked towards Calya with piercing glances who returned them in the like manner.

95. By his stern looks Vasudeva conquered Salya and Dhananjaya the son of Kunti conquered Karna.

96—97. Then Suta's son with a smile asked Salya "O friend, tell me the truth what would you do if I am killed to day by Partha"; and Salya answered "if thou art killed I myself will put an and to both Krishna and Dhananjaya".

98. The king of Madras again said "O Karna, if you are to day killed by this grey-horsed Arjuna I alone on a single car will put both Madhava and Phalgoona to death."

99. Arjuna also asked Govinda the same question and Krishna spoke to Partha these words having deep meaning.

100. O Dhananjaya, the sun may come down and be displaced, the earth itself may be crushed with a thousand pieces, the fire may become cold but Karna will never kill thee.

101. But if it so happens you must know that revolution of the world is near and as for myself I will send both Salya and Karna to the Pluto's den with my army.

102. Arjuna, who was ape-bannered, hearing these words smiled and told Krishna whose prowess was inexhaustible.

103—104. O Janarddana, Calya and Karna both together is no match to me and today O Krishna, you will see how I des-

troy Karna with Calya, his banners, car, horses, his umbrella, his armour, his bows and arrows all together with my shafts in the battle.

105. As the elephant, with his tusks, rends into pieces a tree in a forest so I will this day crush him with armour, his car, horses, arrows and other weapons into atoms.

106. O Madhava, the day of widowhood for the wives of Radha's son is very near and surely they must have dreamt of the coming evil last night.

107—108. Surely you will today see Karna's wives will become widows. I cannot check my rage when I think of evils done to us by this (thoughtless) fool when Krishna was taken forcibly before the assembly and he used abusive language to us and laughed.

109.—As the furious elephant destroys a tree with all its blossoms and flowers in anger so O Govinda, I will knock him down today.

110. Today after Karna is no more, O Slayer of Madhu, you will hear those pleasant words,—*i.e.*—By good fortune, O you of Vrishin's race, you have conquered.

111. Today you shall be able to console the mother of Abhimanyu with a free conscience by pay back the debt of the enemies in their own coin and also joyfully soothe your maternal aunt Kunti.

112. O Madhava, today you shall be able to comfort Krishna, on whose face drops of tears are always trickling down and to speak pleasant sweet words to King Yudhisthira the just.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. It was really a wonderful sight to see the skies covered with Gods, Nagas, Asuras, Yakshas, and numbers of Gandharvas, Rakshashas, Apsaras, Royal and regenerate Rishis and birds of most beautiful plumage.

2. All the human beings looked and admired the scene in the sky which was filled with the echoes of songs, music, laughter, sacred hymns, dance and many other sorts of beautiful sounds.

3. Then the warriors on both the Kaurava and Pandava sides went on slaying each other's enemies making the world and the ten sides ring with their martial music, notes of their conchs, loud shouts and noise of their warfare.

4. The field of battle became brilliantly red with blood and abounded with men, horses, elephants, cars and weapons and became difficult for the throwing of swords, maces, darts and other weapons and was filled with dead bodies and looked like the fight that in the old days took place between the Gods and the Asuras.

5. When Dhananjaya and Adhiratha's son had begun to defeat the warriors with their arrows, they, with keen shafts, almost covered all the sides.

6. Darkness fell over the atmosphere, with the shafts shot at in that battle, and the warriors on either side could not see anything. And being afraid they took shelter of either of the car warriors (Karna or Arjuna) like streaks of light going towards the sun or the moon.

7. The two brave warriors thwarted one another's weapons, like the East and West winds struggling with each other and looked brilliant like the sun or the moon after dispelling darkness.

8. They assuring their troops with the words "dont give way" were surrounded by their troops and their inimical forces like Vasava and Samvara by the Gods and the Asuras.

9. O Bharata, those two foremost of men were welcomed by the beating of drums and other instruments and uttered loud shouts and looked resplendant as the sun and the moon when surrounded by deep roaring clouds.

10. Both of them were armed with fearful bows drawn to the fullest extent like circles which looked like coronas, shot thousands of shafts which were like rays.

11. In war they could not be borne and looked like two powerful suns risen for destroying the universe at the end of Yuga. Both unconquerable, both destroyers of enemies and they were bent upon killing one other and showing great skil in war.

12. Those two fighters namely Karna and the son of Pandu bravely assailed each other in that awful fight like Indra and Asura Jamba; and invoking the help of most powerful weapons those two redoubtable bowmen shot fearful arrows against each other.

13. O Monarch, the two foremost of men however shot hosts of elephants, horses and, men and also struck one another; and like the smaller animals when attacked by a lion the Kurus and Pandus together with their horses, elephants and car warriors fled

on all directions being assailed by those two best of men.

14. Then the five great car warriors *viz.*, Duryodhana, the King of Bhojas, Suvala's son Kripa and the son of Sarad vata attacked Dhananjaya and Keshava with deadly arrows.

15—17. Dhananjaya with arrows cut off at once elephants, horses, the bows and quivers, the cars with their drivers of those fighters and struck every one of them with good arrows and Suta's son with twelve shafts. Then one hundred chariots, one hundred elephants and Caka, Sukhara and Yavana Cavalry together with some best of Kamvoja warriors precipitated themselves upon Arjuna inorder to slay him but he (Arjuna) very soon not only cut off with rozor-headed shafts all those weapons of his enemies but also their heads, their elephants, cars and horses. Dhananjaya knocked down his enemies in battle.

18. Then the good Gods sounded their heavenly drums in praise of Arjuna.

19. Then heaps of sweet scented flowers fell upon Arjuna. O Monarch, the Gods, men and all the creatures were struck with wonder at seeing this.

20. Only your son and Suta's son, who were sorry in their minds, felt neither any joy nor admired the deed. Then Drona's son taking Duryodhana by the hands entreatingly said to him.

21. O Duryodhana, be pacified; you need not prolong this quarrel; make peace with Pandavas; war is detestable. The preceptor (Drona) who was like Bramha and was master of most powerful weapons he and other foremost of men with Bhisma have been killed in this war.

22. I and my maternal uncle can not be killed; and if I request Dhananjaya he will object to fighting and Janarddan also is averse to this quarrel. Reign as a joint monarch with the sons of Pandu over this kingdom far long.

23. Yudhisthira always seeks the welfare of all creatures. Vrikodara and the twins (Nakul and Sahadeva) are always under Yudhisthira's order; and if you make peace it would appear that you make it only for the welfare of all parties.

24. All the kings then will return to their respective homes and the troops will no longer fight with each other; if you do not hear my advice you will have to repent hearafter when you will be crushed by your enemies.

25. It will be hard for the slayer of Vala (Indra) or Yama or Prachetas or the famous king of Yakshas to perform the heroic feats that have been done by crown-headed Arjuna single handed. You yourself and the whole world have seen that.

26. Dhananjaya is possessed of immense qualities and will never disobey my words. He will be your ally *i.e.*, respect you. O, Monarch, for the good of the world, be pacified.

27. I am your sincere friend and you always respect me, and it is for that reason that I am speaking these words to you; and if you make up your mind for peace, I shall dissuade Karna.

28. The sages have said there are four kinds of friends, namely, those who are born friends, those that are made friends by good behavior, those that are made so by wealth and those that are made friends by power and you have all these advantages and connections with the Pandavas.

29. O you most powerful, the Pandavas are your friends by nature and make them your permanent friends by making peace. O king of kings, you both agree and make peace.

30. Duryodhana thought for a while when those words were spoken to him by his friends, and with sorrowful heart heaving a deep sigh, said "O friend, you have said your say, now hear what I have got to speak to that.

31—32. As the might of the storm is checked by the mountain of Meru so Arjuna wont be able to cope with Karna in battle, and the sons of Pritha cannot possibly have any confidence in me for the many acts of wilful enemity I have done to them.

33. O you glorious man, O preceptor's son, it is not meet for you to disuade Karna from fighting, for Phalgoona is greatly tired to-day and Karna will kill him in no time.

34. Saying these words humbly again and again to Drona's son, your son commanded his army, saying, "Armed with shafts proceed against the enemies and kill them; why are you standing inactive?"

CHAPTE LXXXIX.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the blare of conchs and sound of bugles became very high in the battle-field, those two, Suta's son Vaikartana and Arjuna mounted on white horses, closed

each other, O king, on account of the vile policy of your son.

2. Those two dreadful heroes Dhananjaya and Adhiratha's son encountered each other like two Himalayan elephants with full-grown tusks, madly fighting for a she-elephant.

3. Those two warriors, with bows twanging loudly and sending forth hosts of shafts and the palms of their hands also producing great sounds when shooting them and their car-wheels making rattling, encountered each other like the collision of two heavy masses of clouds or two mountains.

4. Those two great warriors fell upon and struck one another with many powerful weapons resembling two mountains of towering height having many trees, herbs and creepers upon them and inhabited by various animals, rushing against each other.

5. The fight between those two great warriors became so terrible that it resembled the war between the king of heaven and the son of Virvahana in the days of old—it was impossible for other persons to bear up in such a fight and a river of blood flowed there, ghastly to look at; the limbs of both the warriors were badly cut in many places as also their drivers and horses.

6. Those two cars, fitted with broad banners, when nearing each other, looked like two large lakes full of fishes and tortoises, and many kinds of lotuses floating on its waters which was gently moved by the wind and resounding with the sweet voices of diverse kinds of birds.

7. Both of them, mighty as the God Indra, assailed one another with weapons powerful as Indra's thunder and fought also like Indra himself and (Asura) Vritra.

8. Both the armies abounding in cars, horses, elephants, foot adorned with fine mail, vestments and weapons as also those that were in the skies (the gods) were all struck with terror in seeing that extraordinary fight between Karna and Arjuna.

9. When Arjuna precipitated himsesf upon the son of Adhiratha like one furious elephant rushing against another with the intention of killing him, others out of excitement and joy uttered lion-like roars and raised their cloths shaking them fingers.

10. The Somakas called loudly to Partha, "Go haste and slay Karna and by that put an end to the hope of Dhritarastra's son for the empire."

11. In the same way many of our warriors went to Karna and said: "Kill Arjuna with your sharp arrows and let the sons of Pritha go again to the wilderness for good."

12. Then Karna struck Arjuua with the powerful arrows and Arjuna also shot sharp arrows with great force against Karna's chest in return.

13. Thinking to take advantage of each other's weak points with buoyant spirits they repeatedly attacked each other with great fierceness and hacked and wounded one another with may good winged arrows, in that terrible fight.

14. The fierce warrior Arjuna then rubbed his bow-string with his arm and sent hosts of cloth yard shafts and arrows called Nalikas *i.e.*, shafts headed with boar's ears and razors and Angalikas *i.e*, half moon-shaped arrows.

15. As at night-fall the birds for the purpose of resting during the night enter a tree, so O Monarch, Partha's arrows after entering Karna's car with bent heads spread on all sides.

16. But O King, all those arrows and the successive ones, shot by Arjuna, that scorcher of enemies, with angry look and contracted brow, were all destroyed by Karna by his own shafts.

17. The son of Indra (Arjuna) then sent against Karna such a brilliant and fiery weapon that it lighted up the whole world, the skies, the ten sides and also his own body and covered the very course of the sun with its brilliancy and was capable of killing all enemies.

18. The dresses of warriors caught fire and they fled making great noise like that which is heard when a bamboo forest catches fire.

19. The Suta's son, the brave Karna, seeing now that fiery weapon was burning everything, shot the Varuna weapon and extinguished the fire.

20. Huge masses of clouds instantly covered the sides with darkness; they resembled big mountains and poured heavy showers upon the earth.

21. The earth and the skies were covered by the clouds and that awful conflagration was extinguished in no time.

22. All the sides being covered by those clouds became very dark and nothing could be seen, but Arjuna with the vairy weapons dispersed those clouds.

23. Then the invisible Dhananjay, inspiring the Gandiva, its string and the shafts with mantras, invoked a favorite

weapon of the king of Heaven and powerful like his thunder.

24. Then many sharp arrows namely the Anjalikas, *i.e.*, razor-headed shafts and crescent like and Nalikas and cloth-yard arrows and those adonred with the boar's ears all very powerful and sharp, came out in numbers from the Gandiva with force.

25—26. Those powerful and sharp arrows, adorned with feathers like vulture quickly piercing the body, car, horses, earth and wheels, of Karna, entered into the earth even as the snakes enter when afraid of Garuda; and thus being struck on all sides and bathed in blood Karna in anger rolled his eyes.

27. Then bending the strong stringed bow, the twang of which resembled the deep roar of the sea, he invoked the Bhargava weapon and cut off all the shots coming out of the mouth of the Indra weapon (shot by Arjuna).

28. He thus cut off the weapons of his enemy, many of the cars, elephants and foot soldiers of the Pandava army by virtue of the Bhargava weapon, himself not being able to bear the prowess of Arjuna in that battle.

29. That best of men, Suta's son of great energy, smiling at the two Krishnas, struck the chief men among the Panchals with aimed arrows.

30. O Monarch, the Panchals and the Somakas being thus attacked by Karna, fired up with anger and conjointly began to strike Suta's son with arrows from all sides.

31. Then Suta's son cut off with his own arrows the shots of the Panchals and distressed the cars, elephants and horses of the Panchals.

32. Like powerful elephants when killed by a mighty and angry lion, they fell down dead on the earth with loud noise being struck by those shafts of Karna.

33. Having thus slain the choicest warriors of the Panchals, those strong and brave and proud warriors, Karna, O King, when shooting his shafts resembled a mass of clouds when pouring down showers.

34. Then, O Head of the Kuru race, your warriors, thinking that Karna had gained the day and brought the two Krishnas under subjection, began to clap and gave vent to lion-like roars.

35. They saw the power of the great hero Karna, overpower the enemies and his weapon to baffle all those of Dhananjaya in that fight.

36. The son of Wind God, the wrathful Bhimsena, with eyes kindling with rage, pressed his own hands and drawing heavy breaths, and greatly excited addressed Arjuna, of never-failing aim.

37. How is it that this most irreligious scoundrel could slay so many good Panchal warriors before your very face.

38. The very gods and Kalakeyas were not able to vanquish you before this; why, you fought with Sthanu himself hand to hand. O diadem-adorned Arjuna, how is it that Suta's son has been able to pierce your with ten long arrows that are used by car warriors.

39—40. I wonder how Suta's son has been able to penetrate the arrows shot by you, O, Savyasachin; remember the distasteful, sharp and cutting jokes, this bold and wretched Suta's son uttered towards us and called us sessame seeds not having anything within them and think over the sorrows of Krishna and soon put an end to the life of this scoundrel in to-days's battle, for you should not be any more careless about killing this Karna.

41. Do you remember how you have conquered all creatures and have satisfied the hunger of Agni in the Khandava and with that patience *i.e.*, (resembling yourself) kill Suta's son. I will also knock him down with my mace.

42. Then Vasudeva seeing that Partha's shafts were being frustrated by Karna, addressed him (Arjuna).

43. How is this O Kiritin, that your weapons are being baffled by Karna. O brave warrior, why are you looking like one confounded. Dont you see the Kauravas, behind Karna, are all uttering loud shouts of joy—beholding your weapons made useless by those of Karna.

44. This day kill Karna with the same energy that you have shown yuga after yuga in killing persons possessed of dark weapons and fierce Rakshasas and the boon-proud Asuras in battle.

45. Concentrating all your might cut off the head of your enemy with this Sudarshana of razor-like keen edge which I am giving to you, like Cakra who cut off the head of Namuchi, his enemy with thunder.

46. You have even satisfied the great god Mahadeva (in battle) when he was disguised as a hunter; recovering the same patience, O hero, kill this son of Suta and his followers.

47. By that you will restore to the king Yudhisthira the sea-belted earth with its towns, villages and wealth and remove all

his enemies from the face of the Earth and by that you will gain great fame.

48. Thus roused by Bhima and Janardan Partha, of great prowess, internally remembered himself and for what he had come to the world and addressed Keshava and said.

49. Now I will invoke a powerful and terrible weapon for the benefit of the world and slaughter of Suta's son; let me have your permission as also of Brahma's and Bhava's as well of all persons who have acquired the *Brahmajnana*.

50. Addressing these words to Keshava Savyasachin, of unfathomable soul, bowing to Brahma, then brought forth into action that unbearable and choice weapon called, *Brahma* which could only be used after great concentration of the mind.

51. But thwarting that weapon Karna looked handsome like the raining clouds and went on sending showers of shafts.

52—53. In that fight seeing that weapon of Kiritin waisted by Karna the powerful and wrathful Bhimasena, firing up with anger, thus addressed Arjuna of never failing aim:—"O Savyasachin, you are master of the noble Brahma weapon, the great means of destroying enemies.

54. Do thou, O Savyasachin, shoot the same sort of weapon again and again." And thus being asked by his brother, Savyasachin shot another like the one he used before and by that the energetic Partha covered all the cardinal and subsidiary points of ten compass.

55. The arrows, coming out of the Gandiva, resembled terrible snakes or the un's rays and the foremost of the Bharata ace also shot hundreds and hundreds of hem adorned with gold wings.

56—57. They were brilliant as the yuga fire or the sun's rays and in no time covered Karna's car whence also came forth hundreds of long darts, battle-axes and cloth yard shafts of fearful shape and killed many warriors of the opposite party by cutting off their heads.

58. One fell to the ground out of fear seeing another fall; the third's arm, powerful and large as an elephan trunk, was cut down with the sword still held in clasp.

59—60. The left arm, of a fourth with the shield grasped being severed by razor-headed shaft, fell to the ground, and thus Partha, who was adorned with crown and garlands, killed and wounded all the best warriors of Duryodhana's army by his awful and dreadful arrows; Vaikartana (Karna) also sped in return thousands of arrows in that fight.

61. Those arrows came down upon the son of Pandu with hissing noise like a downpour of rain from the clouds. Then Karna of great prowess having struck Bhimsena, Janardana and Arjuna of crowned head, with three shafts which gave vent to loud and fearful roars.

62. Then the diadem-adorned (Arjuna) beholding Bhimsena and Janarddana thus struck and himself being also pierced lost all patience and again shot eighteen shafts.

63. Piercing Susena with one, Calya with four and Karna with three, he with the other ten slew Sovapati (a Kanrada prince) who was cased in a golden armour.

64. That prince fell down dead from the front of his car, bereft of his head, arms, his steeds and banner like a Sala tree hewed down with the axe.

65. Again striking Karna with three, eight, twelve, four and ten shafts he put four hundred armed elephants and eight hundred car-warriars to death.

66. He also killed one thousand horses with their riders and eight thousand powerful infantry with his fleet arrows. So covered Karna, his car, horses, driver and standard that they all became invisible.

67. Then the Kauravas being thus distressed by Dhananjay began to call loudly the son of Adhiratha from all sides and said:—"Do you display your weapons and slay this son of Pandu or he will with his shafts put on end to the whole Kuru army."

68. Thus requested, Karna began to try his utmost and sent hosts of blood thirsty arrows that were capable of piercing the very core of the heart and thereby killed many of the Pandavas and Panchals.

69. In this way those two choicest of of archers, the two most powerful warriors who could face and bear against all enemies, and who were masters of all sorts of weapons, fearful to look at, went on striking each other and others that were fighting against them with their mighty weapons.

70. After the broken blades have been drawn out of his body and his wounds healed by mantras and herbs prescribed by best surgeons who were friendly to him King Yudhisthira, cased in armour of gold, came to the spot to see the fight between Karna and Arjuna.

71. Like the brilliant full moon coming out of Rahu's grasp all the creatures were

greatly delighted to see the virtuous king Yudhisthira in the battle field.

72. All the gods in heaven and persons of the earth, checking the animals they were riding upon, waited calmly to see the issue of the fight between those two great heroes, Karna and Partha, who were the choicest of warriors and sorchers of enemies.

73. O monarch, both Dhananjaya and Adhiratha's son went on striking each other with well-aimed shafts which made a great whizing noise; and also the sounds made by the bows, bowstrings and the palms of the hands of those two brave warriors rose very loud.

74. At last tha string of the bow of the son of Pandu being drawn with great might suddenly snaped with a great noise; in the meantime the son of Suta struck Partha with hundred small arrows adorned with feathers.

75. Then with sixty sharp arrows that were like snakes set at liberty from sloughs and were slippery as if they were dipped in oil, he pierced Vasudeva; on this the Somaka troops rushed towards that place.

76. As in the sky the sun is covered by the clouds, so they, coming forward, shrouded Karna with their shafts but the son of Suta, well versed in the use of weapons, worsted the approaching warriors and covered them by his own shafts.

77. O Monarch! Suta's son thus killed all their horses, cars and elephants and distressed many of their best warriors by his own shafts,

78. As a whole pack of powerful dogs is destroyed by an angry lion of great prowess so those warriors fell down dead on earth with loud noise, their bodies pierced by the arrows of the mighty Karna.

79. During this cessation of fight between Karna and Dhananjaya, many of the strong and great Panchal warriors became deprived of their lives by the well directed shafts of Karna; and others began to fly.

80. Then your troops, believing that Karna has brought Krishna and Arjuna under subjection, thought the great victory to theirs and loudly clapped their hands and gave vent to roars like that of a lion.

81. Then Partha, though badly mangled by many arrows, became filled with rage and bending his bowstring soon cut off the shafts of the son of Adhiratha and again attached the Kauravas in the battle.

82. Then the diadem-adorned Arjuna, pressing his bowstring with the palm of his hand, covered the world with darkness by innumerable shafts and also struck Karna, Salya and other Kaurava warriors with them.

83. By those arrows of great swiftness the sky became so dark that even the birds could not take their flights; and gentle and sweet-scented wind began to blow, as if sent by the Heavenly father.

84. Then, smiling, Partha shot with great force ten shafts against Calya's armour and struck Karna first with twelve and then with another seven arrows.

85. Karna, being thus mangled by winged shafts of great impetuosity from Partha's bow, his limbs pierced and blood streaming down his body, resembled the bloody Rudra sporting in the midst of a crematorium at the time of destruction.

86. Then the son of Adhiratha struck Dhananjaya, who was looking like the king of Heaven (Indra) with three arrows and shot five other burning shafts like snakes for the purpose of killing Krishna.

87. Those well-directed and mighty shafts, winged with gold, after piercing the armour of that noblest of human beings, entered the earth and having bathed (in the waters of Bhogavati) again returned towards Karna.

88. Dhananjaya then with ten well-aimed and flat edged shats, cut each of them into three pieces and thus those five great snakes (friends of the Acwasena the son of Taksha) fell to the earth.

89. Then seeing the body of Krishna pained by those snakes in the forms of shafts from Karna's hands, Arjuna, who was adorned with crown and garland, burnt with anger like fire kindled with very grass.

90. He, then drawing the string to his ears, shot many burning and deadly arrows thereby striking Karna in all his vital points, but Karna of great patience, though, he felt very painful, kept his face summoning all his courage.

91. O monarch, Dhananjaya, becoming angry, by his arrows covered all the sides of Karna's car; even the rays of the sun became invisible and the sky looked hazy as in a frosty day.

92—93. O monarch, Savyasachin, the greatest of warriors, and foremest of the Kuru race, in that fight soon destroyed two thousand great Kuru warriors who were protecting the wings and car wheels of Karna and formed his van and rear guards, with all elephants, cars, and horses; they were the *selec. portion* of Duryodhana's

car warriors and were fighting bravely under his orders.

94. Then the remnants of the Kaurava army with your son fled on all directions leaving Karna and even the wounded father and son fled leaving each other in the field.

95. But the great warrior Karna, O King, seeing himself abandoned on all sides and left alone, was not at all afraid but pushed on against Arjuna with a brave heart, and with energy.

CHAPTER XC.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. The broken Kaurava army, when melting away out of fear as wrathful Arjuna began his shots but halted and looked back from a distance at Arjuna's blazing weapon which resembled lightning and was coursing on all sides with increasing energy.

2. Then Karna swallowed up (destroyed) that weapon when it was flying on the sky and which Arjuna had sped with great force for the purpose of putting an end to his enemy in that fearful contest with a downpour of his own fearful arrows.

3. Drawing his loud-twanging bow the string of which was very strong, Karna, by gold winged arrows, destroyed Arjuna's weapon of increasing energy which was killing the Kurus and shot many other shafts.

4. He then, with that mighty weapon he had received from Rama, which was vested with the Atharvan rite, worsted that firy weapon of Arjuna and also struck Partha with many other sharp arrows.

5. O king, then the fight between Arjuna and the son of Adhiratha assumed a fearful aspect and like two elephants attacking each other with their tusks, they went on hitting each other with shafts.

6. Then Partha and Karna shot such incessant showers of arrows that all the sides became dark and even Sun could not be seen; the whole sky was spread over with them and there was no loop hole to be seen.

7. The Kauravas and Somakas only saw a broad net-work of arrows and nothing could be seen through the great darkness caused by them.

8. O monarch, those two best of men well versed in the use of weapons, when continually aiming and shooting hosts of arrows showed may beautiful feats and strategems.

9. In that fight between them sometimes the Suta's son excelled over his foe and sometimes the crown-adorned Partha excelled over his antagonist in might, weapons and light-handedness.

10. The other warriors were struck with wonder in seeing that fearful combat between those great warriors who were always trying to take advantage of each other's failings (weak points).

11. The creatures of heaven, O monarch, praised Karna and Arjuna, and being satisfied called out loudly "Bravo Karna, Bravo Arjuna."

12. At that time when this awful fight was raging and the earth was oppressed by the heavy pressure of car-wheels and tread of elephants and horses, the snake Acwasena, who was Arjuna's enemy, was residing in the subterranean region.

13. O king, that brave snake, who escaped when the Khandava was burnt and who entered the subterranean region, now remembering the death of his mother and the hostile feelings he cherished towards Arjuna, came up with great force to the sky being capable of flying into the sky to see the fight between Karna and Arjuna.

14. And believing, O Monarch, this to be the just time for avenging himself upon the wicked (in his opinion) Partha he assumed the shape of an arrow and entered quickly into Karna's quiver.

15. Karna and Partha now covered the whole sky with showers of arrows; not even a little space was left and it looked like a brilliant and thick net-work of shafts.

16. All the Kauravas and Somakas were filled with fear seeing that great net-work of arrows; and nothing could be seen through the darkness made by that net, on account of the dropping of arrows.

17. Beholding those two heroes the foremost of men and greatest of archers tired in war,

18. The handsome Apsaras in Heaven fanned them with new and fine fans and sprinkled sweet scented sandal water upon them; and Cakra and Surya with their own hands cleansed the faces of those two brave warriors.

19. Then when he found that he could not excel Partha in fight but was rather badly pained and wounded instead, Karna thought of the snake weapon that was only left in his quiver.

20. He put on the string that fearful, burning, snake-mouthed, sharp, well-polished and death-dealing weapon which he had long kept concealed for the purpose of killing Partha.

21. Karna, drawing his bow-string to the full stretch, put on it, and aimed at Partha that fiery and mighty shaft that was lying in a quiver of gold filled with sandal dust and which was always worshipped.

22. The arrow belonged to the Airavata race and the sky and all the ten sides became lighted; and fearful meteors and lightning strokes fell as he aimed that arrow for the purpose of striking Phalgoona's head.

24. The son of Suta was not aware that the snake (Acwasena) had entered his arrow by means of yoga, but as he aimed that arrow, Cakra and other Regents of the sides gave vent to lamentations.

24. The noble ruler of Madras, seeing Vaikartana aim that shaft, spoke to Karna and said, "O Karna, think well before you shoot this arrow; it will not reach Arjuna's neck."

25. The energetic son of Suta, with wrathful look, told the king of Madras, "O Shalya, Karna never takes his aim twice; with warriors like us it must always be fair play in fight."

26. O Monarch, speaking the words, 'Thou art killed, O Phalgoona," he, desirous of victory, with care let go that arrow which for many years he had cherished with regard.

27. That fiery arrow, of awful sound and shinning like the sun, shot off from Karna's bow, lighted up and divided the sky as a woman divides her crown when combing her hairs.

28. Madhava, the slayer of Kansa, seeing that fiery weapon rise in the sky, with his foot quickly pressed down that beautiful car one cubit deep in the earth.

29. The horses, white as silvery moon beams, adorned with gold trappings, with bent knees fell flat to the ground.

30. That mighty and best of men bringing his strength into action put down the car and the horses with bent knees stretched themselves to the earth and the car sunk into it.

31. The heavenly creatures greatly praised Vasudeva; they gave vent to lion-like shouts and dropped flowery showers upon Krishna when the slayer of Madhu thus pressed the car into the earth by his might.

32—34. By dint of that arrow, on account of its snaky nature and energy and wrath with which it was discharged the charioteer's son struck down from Arjuna's head the beautiful diadem known all over the earth, heaven and the watery region. The powerful Brahma had made this head-dress for the king of gods himself, with gold and pearls, endued with the effulgence of the sun, moon or planets. It was given by Indra himself to Partha when the latter killed his enemies.

35. It was so strong that even Rudra, the king of waters, Cakra and Kuvera could not smash it by their respective weapons, Pinaka, noose, thunder or other mighty shafts; the very gods could not bear it but it was now taken away by that snaky weapon.

36. That fearful false wicked, but energetic snake, of awful shape, attacked that beautiful crown adorned with stones and diamonds and took it away from Arjuna's head.

37. O Monarch, the snake, by its own prowess, snatched from Partha's head that beautiful ornament of good shape set with precious stones and diamonds, very brilliant to look at and crushed it to pieces as the thunder breaks down mountain tops adorned with fine trees and flowers.

38. As the sun, in setting, goes down from the Asta Hills with all the lustre so that handsome, brilliant, adorned diadem of Partha came down to the earth smashed to pieces and burning with that snake's poison.

39. As the head of a mountain decorrated beautifully with high trees, birds and flowers is smashed by thunder so that snake, by his might, tore asunder that gemmed crown from Arjuna's head.

40. O Bharata, as during a storm a great noise is heard through out the Earth, sky, Heaven and the waters, so was the sound heard throughout the world at that time and all the people, though they tried to remain steady, became greatly afraid and stumbled.

41. The dark young man, Dhananjaya, bereft of his crown, looked beautiful like a mountain without top and being not at all afraid stood his ground after binding his hairs with a white cloth.

42. Crushing down his crown that precious arrow, effulgent like the sun or fire, shot by Karna, the great serpent, who was rendered by Arjuna his enemy, went away.

43. Having burnt the effulgent and variegated crown shinning on Arjuna's

(head) the arrow wanted to enter again into its quiver; but accosted by Karna it said,

44. "O Karna, you discharged me without seeing me and hence I could not cut off his head. Shoot me again immediately in battle after seeing me and I shall slay your enemies as well as mine."

45. Thus addressed in the battle-field Suta's son said "who are you of such a terrific form?" The Naga said "Know me as one whom Partha has made his enemy by killing my mother.

46. Even if the weilder of thunder-bolt (Indra) protects him, he will go to the kingdom of the Pitris. Do not disregard me. Do what I say and I will kill your enemy. Shoot me soon."

Karna said:—

47. "Karna does not wish victory today in battle depending on another's strength. I shall not discharge, O Naga, a shaft twice even if I am to kill a hundred Arjunas."

48. Addressing again that Naga in the battle-field that best of Sun's sons said "By the help of my other weapons and by dint of my energy and wrath I shall kill Parth. Go you away at ease."

49. Thus aadressed by Karna in the battle-field and unable to bear his words in anger that fierce Naga King, proceeded himself for the destruction of Partha, assuming the form of an arrow.

50. Thereupon Krishna said to Partha in the battle-field "kill the great snake whom you have made an enemy." Thus spoken to by the slayer of Madhu, the holder of Gandiva bow, ever holding a dreadful bow to his enemies, said "who is this Naga who, of his own accord, comes against me as if into the mouth of Garuda.

51. Krishna said:—While armed with a bow you were gratifying the fire-god in Khandava forest—this snake, having his body covered by his mother's, was in the sky. You killed his mother taking her for a single snake.

52. Remembering that hostility, O Partha, he has come to-day for slaying you. O grinder of enemies, see he is coming like a burning fire-brand dropped from the sky.

Sanjaya said:—

53. Thereupon covering the snake with six sharpened arrows Jishnu cut him off while he was moving in the sky. His body cut off he dropped down on earth.

54. After that serpent had been cut off by Kiritin, the Purusothama himself, O King, of huge arms, raised that car from the earth with his own hands.

55. In that very moment, Karna, looking askance on Dananjaya, struck that foremost of men with ten arrows whetted on stone and adorned with peacock feathers.

56-57. Then Dhananjaya struck Karna with twelve keen and boar-eared arrows and a powerful Naracha like a virulent snake shot off his full-drawn bow. Those arrows went though Karna's armour, as if drinking his blood and killing him, and entered into the earth with their wings soaked with blood.

58—59. Then Brisha, angered at the stroke of arrow like a scotched snake, discharged most powerful and quick-coursing shafts like a serpent vomitting poison, He struck Janarddana with twelve and Arjuna with nine arrows. And striking the latter again with a dreadful arrow Karna laughed.

60. Pandu's son could bear his joy Then that one, of Indra's power, acquainted with all the vitals parts, cut him to the quick with a hundred winged arrows as did Indra wound Bala with great force.

61. Then Arjuna shot ninety arrows each resembling Yama's rod at Karna. Wounded greatly Karna trembled like a mountain clapped by a thunder-bolt.

62. Karna's head dress, set with costly. gems, his most excellent other ornaments and ear rings were struk down on earth by Arjuna's winged arrows.

63. Pandu's son cut off in no time into pieces the costly and shinning armour of Karna that had been prepared with great care by clever artists working for a long time.

64. Then he again, in anger, struck Karna with four sharp and strong arrows who was devested of his armour. He trembled, thereat, like a person suffering from bile, wind, phlegm and fever.

65. Arjuna again cut Karna to the quick with many excellent and keen arrows shot off his circling bow with force, care and skill.

66. Thus wounded by Partha with many keen and powerful arrows Karna looked like a red chalk mountain with streams of red water pouring down.

67. Then with straight-going, strong, gold-feathered steel arrows resembling the rod of death, Arjuna struck Karna on the breast like Agni's son striking the mount Krouncha.

68. Then throwing off his bow that resembled Indra's bow and quiver Karna

stood inactive and stupified, suffering great pain and losing his grasp.

69. The honorable Arjuna, always following the duties of a heroe, did not like to kill him in that plight. Then Indra's younger brother respectfully said "why do you make a mistake, O Pandu's son ?

70. The wise never spare their enemies even for a moment, however weak they may be. A learned man always acquires merit and glory by destroying his distressed enemies.

71. Lose no time in discomfitting your enemy Karna immediately who is the foremost of heroes. When all right he will again proceed against you. Kill him therefore like Indra destroying the Asura Namuchi."

72. In pursuance of Krishna's order and worshipping him the Kuru heroe Arjuna again struck Karna with many powerful arrows like Indra striking the Asura Shamvara.

73. Then Kiritin, O descendant of Bharata, covered Karna, his car and horses with calf-toothed arrows and the ten quarters with gold winged ones.

74. Wounded with those calf-toothed arrows the broad-chested son of Adiratha shone like a blossoming Asoka, Palasa or Salmali tree or a mountain laden with sandal trees.

75. His body covered with numberless arrows Karna shone like the mountain-chief covered with trees or adorned with blossoming Karnikaras.

76. Discharging numberless arrows Karna, having shafts for his rays, looked like the crimson-coloured sun coursing towards the setting hill.

77. Meeting in the sky the shining and snake-like arrows discharged by Karna, those keen ones, shot by Arjuna, destroyed them.

78. Recovering equanimity of mind and discharging arrows like angry serpents, Karna struck Arjuna with ten and Krishna with six all resembling angry snakes.

79. Then in that great battle Dhananjaya wished to discharge a dreadful, great steel arrow, like a serpent or fire in force and sending forth a sound like that of Indra's thunderbolt.

80. Then on the arrival of the hour of Karna's death Kala invisibly appeared on his car and reminding him of the Brahmana's curse said "The earth is devouring the wheel of your car."

81. Really, O King, when the hour of Karna's death approached he forgot the great Brahma weapon which Bhargava had given him. And the Earth was about to devour the left wheel of his car.

82. Having gone deep into the earth and been clogged there like a holy tree with flowers standing on a high land, Karna's car, on account of the great Brahmana's imprecation, reeled.

83. When his car began to reel, when the great weapon given by Rama did not shine, when his serpent-faced shaft was broken by Partha, Karna was filled with sadness.

84. Unable to bear those misfortunes he shook his arms and vilified virtue saying "The virtuous always say that virtue protects the virtuous.

85. We, however, always practice virtue to the best of our knowledge and power. But virtue, instead of protecting us, is now destroying us who are its votaries."

87. While he gave vent to these words he was greatly assailed by Arjuna's shafts. His horses and charioteer were dislodged. He was cut to the quick and became careless about his doings. He again and again spoke ill of virtue in the battle-field.

88. He struck Krishna's arm with three dreadful arrows, and Arjuna with seven. Arjuna then discharged seventeen dreadful, straight-coursing and forcible arrows effulgent like fire and resembling Indra's thunder-bolt in impetuosity.

89. Those powerful and dreadful arrows went through Karna's body and dropped on the surface of the earth. Trembling thereat Karna showed his activity to the very best of his power.

90. Controlling himself with great exertion he brought the Brahma weapon into requisition beholding which Arjuna invoked the weapon given him by Indra with becoming mantras.

91. Then inspiring his Gandiva, its strings and arrows with mantras that repressor of enemies discharged arrows like Indra pouring down torrents of rain.

92. Coming out of Arjuna's car those powerful and terrefic arrows appeared near Karna's. That great car-warrior baffled those arrows which appeared before him.

93. Seeing the arrows thus baffled, Krishna said to Arjuna :—" Discharge more powerful weapons, O Partha ; Karna makes these your arrows powerless."

94. Then duly invoking it with mantras Arjuna set the Brahma weapon on his string. Then covering all the directions with arrows he struck Karna with many.

95. Then with a number of whetted arrows of great power Karna sundered the string of Arjuna's bow for five times.

96. Similarly his string was cut off by Vrishna for the sixth, seventh, eighth, ninth, tenth and eleventh times. Although capable of discharging hundreds of arrow Karna knew that Arjuna had a century of strings.

97. Then setting another string to his bow and shooting innumerable shafts, Arjuna covered Karna with arrows resembly fiery-mouthed serpents.

98. So quickly did Arjuna replace his strings that Karna could not perceive when one was broken and another replaced. The feat was highly wonderful to him.

99. Radha's son, however, nullified all the arrows of Savyasachin. With his power he got better of Arjuna for the time being.

100. Seeing Arjuna thus assailed with Karna's arrows Krishna said to him "Go nearer to Karna and strike him with more powerful weapons."

101. Worked up with anger Arjuna invoked the aid of another celestial weapon with mantras which was effulgent like fire, dreadful like venom and hard like adamant.

102. Then uniting it with Raudra weapon he was about to hurl it at his enemy when the earth swallowed up one of the wheels of Karna's car.

103. Then getting down in no time from his car he caught the sunken wheel with two hands and set forth a mighty exertion to extricate it.

104. Drawn up forcibly by Karna, the Earth, that had swallowed up his wheel, rose up with her seven insular continents, mountains, rivers and forests to a height of four cubits.

105. Seeing his wheel thus sunk, Karna wept in anger. And seeing Arjuna before him, he, worked up with anger, said.

106. "O Partha, wait for a moment till I extricate my wheel.

107. Seeing my wheel thus accidently sunken you should give up your idea which is cherished by a coward only.

108—109. Brave and pious heroes never shoot their arrows at persons with dishevelld hairs, at those who fly away from the battle-field, at a Brahmana, at him who claspes his hands, at him who surrenders, at him who prays for quarter, at one who throws off his weapon, at one whose arrows are all gone, or at one whose weapon has fallen off or been broken.

110—111. You are the bravest and pious of all in the world. You know all the rules at warfare. Pray, excuse me for a moment till I get out my wheel from the earth, O Dhananjaya. You are stationed on your car and I am standing helplessly weak on the earth. You should not kill me now.

112. Neither Krishna, nor you fear me the least. You are a Kshatrya and the scion of an illustrious family. Remembering the dictates of virtue, excuse me for a moment, O son of Pandu."

CHAPTER XCI.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then Krishna, who was on the car said to Karna:—"Fortunate it is, O son o Radha, that you remember virtue. It is always seen that men, when they are in distress, speak ill of the Providence and not of their own evil deeds.

2. You, Duryodhana, Dushasana and Suvala's son Shakuni, brought Draupadi, clad in one piece of cloth, before the court. Then O Karna, this virtue of yours, did not display itself.

3. When Shakuni, a clever hand at dice, defeated Kunti's son Yudhisthira who was innocent of the game where was this virtue of yours?

4. When at your advice the Kuru king attempted to kill Bhima through snakes and poisoned food where was this virtue of yours?

5. When the period of exile and the thirteenth year (of concealment) was over and you did not return the Pandavas their kingdom where was this virtue of yours?

6. When you set fire to the wax-house at Varanavata for burning the sleeping Pandavas to death where was this virtue of yours?

7. When you laughed at Draupadi while she, spare dressed and in her season, stood before the court at Dushasana's will where was this virtue of yours?

9. When you spoke to the Princess Draupadi, of dignified elephantine gait, "O Draupadi, the Pandavas are lost into eternal hell, choose another husband" and looked on the scene with glee where was this virtue of yours?

10. When thirsting for the kingdom and relying on the king of Gandharas you invited the Pandavas to a game at dice where was this virtue of yours?

11. When encircling the boy Abhimanyu in battle a number of powerful car-warriors killed him where was the virtue of yours?

12. If this your virtue, the aid of which you now solicit, was no where on all those occasions what is the use of drying up your tongue by uttering that word? You now wish to practise virtue, O Suta, but you shall not escape with your life.

13. Like Nala who was vanquished by Pushkara at a game of dice, but who regained his kingdom by dint of his power, the Pandavas, who are free from cupidity, will regain their kingdom by the force of their arms and help of their friends.

14. Having killed their powerful enemies they with the Somakas will regain their kingdom. The sons of Dhritarashtra will be killed by those best of men who are always sheilded by virtues.

15. Thus accosted by Krishna, O descendant of Bharata, Karna hung down his head in shame and made no reply.

16. With lips trembling in anger, he, of great energy and prowess, took up his bow and began to fight with Arjuna.

17. Then Vasudeva's son said to Phalguna, that best of men;——"Strike Karna down with a celestial weapon."

18. Thus accosted by the deity Arjuna was worked up with anger. And recollecting all the incidents Dhananjaya was possessed by a terrific rage.

19. Then, O king, as if scintillations of fire began to come out from the pores of the angry Partha's body. The scene was exceedingly wondrous.

20. Seeing it Karna invoked the Brahma weapon, shot arrows on Dhananjaya and tried once more to get rid of his car.

21. Partha, also, by his Brahma weapon made a down pour of arrows upon Karna. Counteracting the arrows of his enemy with those of his own Pandu's son continued to strike him.

22. Then aiming at Karna Kunti's son discharged another favourite weapon of his powerful as the fire.

23. Karna, however, put out that fire with Varuna (watery) weapon. Suta's son covered all the directions with clouds created by his arrow and it appeared like a rainy day.

24. Then before the very presence of Karna, the powerful son of Pandu scattered those clouds with his *Vayavya* weapon.

25. Then for killing the son of Pandu, the charioteer's son took up another dreadful arrow shining like the fire.

26. When that arrow was set on the bow-string, O king, the earth shook with her mountains, watery expanses, and forests.

27. Violent winds blew scattering pebles. All the directions were covered with dust and cries of lamentation arose amongst the celestials in the sky.

28. Seeing that arrow aimed by Karna, the Pandavas were worked with depression and sorrow.

29. The keen arrow, effulgent like Shakra's thunder-bolt shot off Karna's hands, fell upon Dhananjaya's breast and went into it like a serpent penetrating an ant-hill.

30. Thus wounded that chastiser of enemies, the high-souled Vibhatsu began to reel. His grasp became loosened and his bow Gandiva dropped off his hands. He shook there like the king of mountain in an earth-quake.

31. During this opportunity the great car-warrior Vrisha leaped down from his chariot to extricate the wheel that had been sunk underneath the earth. Holding it with his two hands he tried his best to get it out. But unfortunately for his bad luck he failed through he was possessed of great strength.

32. In the interval regaining his consciousness the diadem-decked and the high-sould Arjuna took his arrow *Anjalika* which was fatal as the rod of Death. Thereupon Krishna said to Partha;—"Cut off with this arrow the head of your enemy before he gets upon his car."

33. Praising highly those words of Lord Krishna and while the wheel of his enemy was still under the earth the great car-warrior Arjuna took up a highly effulgent, razor-headed arrow and struck down Karna's standard bearing the emblem of an elephant and shining like the spotless sun.

34. That standard bearing the elephant was decorated with gold, pearls, gems and diamonds and was made with great skill by the best of artizans. It was highly beautiful and made of pure gold.

35. That standard always used to inpire your soldiers with courage and fill your enemies with fear. Its form was highly praiseworthy. Known all over the world it was effulgent like the suu.

36. With that kneen, gold-winged razor, headed arrow effulgent like fire, fed with libations of clarified butter the diadem-decked Arjuna cut off that standard of Adhiratha's son, the great car-warrior.

37. With that standard fell the glory, pride, hope of success, and every thing dear unto the hearts of the Kurus. And cries of lamentations arose in your army.

38. Seeing that standard struck down by the light-handed Kuru heroe your soldiers gave up all hopes of Karna's success.

39. Then wishing to kill Karna quickly Arjuna took out from his quiver an Anjalika arrow that was effulgent like Indra's thunder-bolt, Agni's rod or the thousand-rayed sun.

40. Capable of cutting to the quick, covered with flesh and blood, effulgent like the sun or fire, made of precious ingredients, straight-coursing, impetuous, destructive of men, horses and elephants it was three cubits and six feet in length.

41. Powerful as the thousand-eyed Indra's thunder-bolt, irresistible as the night rangers, the trident or the discus it was highly terrible and capable of destroying all creatures.

42. Partha cheerfully took up that arrow which could not be withstood even by the celestials. This great weapon, capable of discomfitting the celestials and Asuras, was always adored by the sons of Pandu.

43. Seeing that arrow taken up by Partha in battle, the entire universe trembled with its mobile and immobile creations. Beholding that arrow about to be discharged the Rishis cried aloud "Peace be to the universe."

44. The holder of the Gandiva then set that peerless arrow on his bow united with another highly powerful weapon. Then drawing his Gandiva bow he said,

45. "If I have ever practised penances, if I have ever respected my elders and listened to the counsels of well-wishers let this arrow be powerful enough to destroy the body and heart of my enemy.

46. Let this sharp arrow, adored by me, slay my enemy Karna." Saying this Dhananjaya discharged the arrow for destroying Karna.

47. It was a terrific arrow, efficacious as a rite of the Atharvan of Angiras, effulgent and incapable of being borne by Death himself in battle. Desirous of slaying Karna Partha again cheerfully said "May this arrow bring on my victory. May it, effulgent like the fire or sun, shot by me, despatch Karna to the abode of Death."

48. Saying this, Arjuna, adorned with crown and garlands, ever inimical towards Karna and desirous of killing him, struck his enemy with that best of arrows, effulgent like the sun or moon and capable of giving victory.

49. Discharged by that mighty heroe that arrow, effulgent like the sun, emblazoned all the quarters. With that arrow Arjuna struck off his enemy's head like Indra striking the head of Vritra with his thunder.

50. With that powerful *Anjalika* weapon inspired with *mantras* Indra's son cut off the head of Vaikartana in the afternoon.

51. Thus sundered with Anjalika arrow Karna's trunk dropped down on earth.

52. The head also of the commander of the Kuru army, effulgent like the risen sun and the meridian sun of the autumn, dropped down on earth like the crimson sun falling down from the setting hill.

53. Cut off with Arjuna's arrows and shorn of life the tall and shining body of Karna, with blood gushing out of every wound, looked like the summit of a red chalk mount clapped by a thunder-bolt with red streams running down after a shower.

54. Then a light came out of Karna's body, passed though the sky and entered into the sun.* This wonderful spectacle was witnessed by all the on-lookers after Karna's fall.

55. The head of the illustrious Karna reluctantly left the body, highly beautiful and brought up in luxury like a person unwillingly leaving a big house filled with riches.

56. Then seeing Karna slain by Phalguna the Pandavas blew their conchs. Likewise Krishna and Dhananjaya, overflowing with joy, blew their conchs.

57. Seeing Karna slain and lying on the battle-field the Somakas were filled the joy and sent up loud shouts with other soldiers. With great joy they struck their trumphets and shook their arms and garments.

58. Then, O king, approaching Partha, all the warriors began to praise him; other powerful heroes danced embracing each other; and others sending loud shouts said "By good luck Karna has lain prostrate on earth wounded with arrows."

59. Karna's head, separated off the body, looked like a mountain top loosened by a storm or like fire put out after the completion of a sacrifice, or the sun after it has risen the setting hill.

60. After having scorched his enemy's army the Karna-like sun, having arrows

for its rays, was caused to be set by Arjuna time.

61. As while moving towards the setting hill the sun withdraws all its rays so (Arjuna's) arrow passed out taking Karna's vital breaths.

62. In the afternoon cut off with Anjalika in battle the head of the charioteer's son dropped down on earth.

63. Before the very presence of the Kaurava troops that weapon speedily took away Karna's head and body.

64. Beholding the brave Karna prostrated on earth wounded with shafts and bathed in blood the king of Madras left the battle field on the car deprived of the standard.

65. After Karna's fall the Kuru soldiers, wounded with arrows and filled with fear, took to their heels looking again and again on the lofty and shining standard of Arjuna.

66. The beautiful head, having a countenance like a loutus of a thousand petals, of Karna, whose exploits like those of the thousand eyed Indra, dropped down on earth like the thousand-rayed sun in the end of day.

CHAPTER XCII.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Seeing the soldiers assailed with shafts in that encounter between Karna and Arjuna, Salya, worked up with anger, pursued on that car shorn of its equipments.

2. Seeing his army deprived of Karna and his cars, horses and elephants destroyed Duryodhana, with tears trickling down his eyes, sighed again and again in agony.

3. For seeing the brave Karna, wounded with shafts and bathed in blood lying prostrate on earth like the sun dropped from the sky the warriors came there and stood encircling the fallen heroe.

4. Amongst them, belonging to your army as well as to the enemy's some showed signs of joy, some of fear, some of sorrow, some of wonder and some of grief.

5. Hearing that the mighty Karna had been slain by Dhananjaya and his armour, ornaments, robes and weapons had been displaced, your soldiers fled away in fight like a herd of kine, overcome with fear at losing their bull.

6. Then shaking the sky with terrible shouts Bhima began to strike his arm-pits, jump and dance striking terror to the sons of Dhristarastra.

7. The Somakas and Srinjayas also loudly blew their conchs. Seeing the charioteer's son killed all the Kshatryas embraced one another in delight.

8. After a dreadful fight Karna was killed by Arjuna as an elephant is slain by a lion. The best of men Arjuna thus did wreck his vengeance.

9. Approaching Duryodhana speedily on that car devested of standard the king of Madras, with an aggrieved heart, said sorrowfully.

10. "The elephants, horses and the flowers of your army have been killed. On account of those great car-warriors, horses and elephants, huge as mountains being destroyed your army looks like kingdom of Death.

11. Never before, O descendant of Bharata, such a battle had been fought as that between Karna and Arjuna. Karna assailed the two Krishnas and your other enemies.

12. Destiny however is in favour of Partha; she is protecting the Pandavas, and destroying us. Many heroes, who were resolved upon encompassing your end, have been per force killed by the enemy.

13—14. Many heroes resembling Kuvera, Yama, Vasava or Varuna in energy, courage and strength, who were accomplished, unslayable and bent upon securing your object, have been killed by the Pandavas. Do not grieve, O descendant of Bharata. It is destiny. Every object is not always crowned with success."

15. Hearing the words of the king of Madras and remembering his own misdeeds, Duryodhana, deprived of senses, sighed again and again.

CHAPTER XCIII.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. How did Kuru and Srinjaya army look, when on that dreadful day, it was assailed and consumed with arrows in that encounter between Karna and Arjuna and while it was flying from the action.

Sanjaya said :—

2. Listen, attentively, O king, to the onslaught of men, horses and elephants in that dreadful battle.

3. When after Karna's fall Partha sent up leonine war-cries your sons were possessed by a mighty fear.

4. After Karna's fall no warrior of your side had a heart of rallying your troops or displaying his prowess.

5. On their main stay being destroyed by Arjuna they were like merchants, whose vessels had been wrecked on the deep main, desirous of crossing it.

6. After the destruction of the charioteer's son, the Kauravas, terrified and wounded with arrows, having no lord and seeking refuge, looked like a herd of elephants pursued by lions.

7. Discomfitted by Savyaschin on that evening they took to their heels like bulls with broken horns or serpents with wounded fangs.

8. Having the best of their heroes killed, their soldiers all routed, and themselves wounded with sharp arrows your sons, on the fall of Karna, fled away in fear.

9. Deprived of their coats of mail and weapons, unconscious of the right direction and bewildered they crushed one another in their flight and cast fearful looks upon one another.

10. The Kauravas, pale with fear, thought "Vibhatsa is following me, Vrikodara is pursing me" and fell down as they fled.

11. Thus fled away in fear all the great car-warriors some on cars, some on horses, some on elephants and some on foot.

12. In their fearful fight cars were shattered by elephants, the cavarly were crushed by car-warriors, and the infantry were trampled down by horses.

13. After the fall of Karna your warriors behaved like men, having no protector in a forest abounding in beasts of prey and robbers.

14. They behaved like elephants without riders and men without arms. Stricken with fear they thought that the entire universe was filled with Partha.

15. Seeing them thus take to their heels in fear of Bhimasena, and his soldiers leave the battle field by thousands, Duryodhana, bewailing, said to his driver.

16. "Partha will not be able to go beyond me standing bow in hand. Drive my horses slowly behind all the troops.

17. If I fight in the rear of my army forsooth the son of Kunti will not be able to approach me as the ocean is unable to go beyond its banks.

18. Killing Arjuna, Govinda, the haughty Vrikodara and my other enemies I will repay the debt I owe to Karna."

19. Hearing the words of the Kuru Chief becoming a heroe and an honorable man the driver slowly drove his horses adorned with golden trappings.

20. Then deprived of cars, cavalry and elephants, twenty-five thousand warriors of your army addressed themselves for fighting on foot.

21. Then worked up with anger Bhimasena and Prisata's son Dhristadyumna encircled them with four kinds of forces and began to strike them with their arrows.

22. Your warriors also fought with Bhimasena and Prisata's son. Some of them challenged both the heroes by calling them by name.

23. Thereat Bhima was worked up with anger. Coming down from his car with a mace in his hand he fought with those warriors standing for battle.

24. Following the rules of a fair fight, Kunti's son Vrikodara alighted from his car, and depending upon the strength of his own arms he began to fight with them on foot.

25. Taking up his heavy golden mace he made a havoc on them like Death himself armed with his bludgeon.

26. Then worked up with anger and heedless of their lives the Kuru soldiers rushed upon Bhima like insects falling upon a burning fire.

27. The maddened warriors, whom it was difficult to vanquish in battle, perished in no time like creatures on seeing Death himself.

28. Armed with his mace the powerful Bhima moved about like a hawk and killed those twenty five thousand warriors.

29. Having killed that heroic army Bhima, of great strength, whom it was difficult to defeat in battle, stood there with Dhristadyumna before him.

30. The energetic Dhananjaya proceeded against the remaining car warriors of the Kuru army.

31. Nakula, Sahadeva and Satyaki with great pleasure proceeded against Sakuni and killed the soldiers of Suvala's son.

32. Having killed with sharp arrows his cavalry and elephents they attacked

Sakuni himself upon which a great encounter took place.

33. In the meantime proceeding against your car-warriors Dhananjaya twanged his bow Gandiva known all over the three worlds.

34. Seeing his car drawn by white horses and driven by Krishna himself and Arjuna standing on it your soldiers fled away in fear.

35. Twenty-five thousand foot soldiers, deprived of cars, were killed there with arrows (by Bhima and Dhristadyumna).

36—37. Having killed them that best of men, the foremost of car-warriors, the heroic son of Panchala king Dhristadyumna again appeared in view with Bhima before him. That great bowman, the destroyer of his enemies, looked there exceedingly beautiful.

38. Seeing Dhristadyumna's car, drawn by horses white as pigeons and bearing a standard made of a *Kavidara* tree the Kuru soldiers fled away in dismay.

39. Having pursued the light-handed king of Gandharvas the illustrious twins and Satyaki again appeared (amongst the Pandavas.)

40. Having killed your 'huge army Chikitan, Shikhandin and the five sons of Draupadi blew their conchs.

41. Although they saw] your soldiers flying away from the battle-field those heroes pursued them like bulls pursuing other angry bulls.

42. Still seeing a portion of your army standing for battle Savyasachin was filled with anger.

43. Drawing his bow Gandiva known all over the three worlds the highly energetic Dhananjaya rushed against your car-warriors.

44. All on a sudden he covered your soldiers with arrows. The dust covered the directions and nothing was descernible.

45. When the earth was thus covered with dust and all the quarters were enshrouded with darkness your soldiers, O king, fled away on all sides in dismay.

46. When his army was thus routed your son, the Kuru king, rushed against his enemies who were proceeding against him.

47. Duryodhana then challenged all the Pandavas in battle as did the Asura Bali the celestials in the days of yore.

48. Thereat all the' Pandava warriors rushed in a body upon Duryodhana, hurled various weapons and chastised him again and again.

49. Worked up with anger, however, Duryodhana killed his enemies, in hundreds and thousands with keen arrows.

50. Wonderful was the prowess your son exhibited on that occsion for alone and with none to help him he fought with all the Pandavas in a body.

51. Duryodhana then saw that all his soldiers were assailed with wounds and about to flee but they had not gone very far from the scene of action.

52. Rallying his soldiers, and cheering them up your son, who was bent upon keeping his honor, said.

53. There is no spot on earth or on mountain, I see, where if you go the Pandavas will not kill you. What is the use of your flying away ?

54. The Pandava army is very small now. The two Krishnas have been assailed with wounds. If we all stand for battle we will surely win victory.

55. If we however fly away disconcerted the sinsul Pandavas will pursue us and kill us all. It is better therefore that we should die in battle.

56. Happy is the death in the battle-field. Follow your Kshatriya duties and fight. The dead know no misery. They however enjoy eternal bliss hereafter.

57. Listen therefore, O Kshatriyas who have assembled here. While death does not spare a heroe or a coward what foolish Kshatriya is there who would not fight ?

58. Will you place yourselves under the power of our enemy Bhima? It is not proper that you should neglect the duties followed by your fathers and grand-fathers.

59. There is no sin greater to a Kshatrya than flight from the battle-field. There is no more blessed road to heaven than battle ; killed in battle therefore, O Kshatriyas, enjoy heaven in no time.

60. Though your son gave vent to those words the Kuru soldiers greatly wounded fled away on all sides caring not for his speech.

CHAPTER XCIV.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA.)—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing your son busy about rallying your soldiers the king of Madras, beside himself with grief, said.

Shalya said:—

2—3. Look at this dreadful scene of action, O heroe, covered with numberless killed men, horses and elephants. Some places are covered with carcasses of huge mountain-like elephants, maimed and their vital parts wounded with shafts. The armours, weapons, shields and swords of the lifeless warriors are lying on all sides. They resemble huge mountains clapped with thunder, with trees, rocks and herbs dropping down from them on all sides.

4. The bells, hooks, lances and standards with which these huge animals, were equipped have been scattered on the ground. The bodies, which were adorned with golden trappings, are now covered with blood. Some places are covered with the carcasses of killed horses, mangled with arrows, breathing hard in agony and vomitting blood.

5. Some of them are crying in agony, some of them are biting the earth with rolling eyes, and some are neighing piteously. A part of the battle-field is covered with elephant warriors and horsemen thrown off their animals and car-warriors forcibly knocked down from their cars.

6. Some of them are already and others are on the point of death. Covered with the dead bodies of men, horses and elephants their trunks and limbs and broken cars, the Earth looks awful like the great *Vaitarini*.

7. The Earth looks awful covered with elephants with shattered tusks, vomitting blood, crying piteously in anguish in the battle-fund, deprived of their armourless drivers and the infantry that protected them, with their quivers, banners and standards broken down and having their bodies that were adorned with nets of gold, wounded deep with the arrows of the enemy.

8. Covered with the dead bodies of elephant warriors, horsemen and car-warriors of great repute and of foot soldiers killed while combating with one another, divested of armours, ornaments and weapons the Earth looked like the sky covered with clouds.

9. Strewn with the heads and bodies of thousands of heroes wounded with arrows, all deprived of consciousness but some drawing vitality slowing, the Earth appeared to have been covered with extinguished fires.

10. Covered with the dead bodies of Kuru and Srinjaya warriors wounded with arrows and killed by Karna and Arjuna the Earth appeared as if covered with shining planets dropped from the sky or looked like the sky bespangled with stars in the night.

11. Cutting through the bodies of elephants, horses and men and putting out their vitality the arrows discharged by Karna and Arjuna entered into the earth like serpents entering into their holes with bent heads.

12. The entire field was blackened with carcasses, corpses, broken cars and arrows shot by Partha and Karna.

13—14. Well equipt cars were crushed by their arrows along with the warriors, weapons and standards. Their wheels, joints, axles, yokes, *Trivenus*, *Upaskaras*, Amikarsanas, the seats of the drivers and the fixtures of quivers were all broken into pieces. Covered with all these the Earth looked like the sky covered with autumnal clouds.

15. Riderless cars were dragged by quick-coursing horses. Men, elephants, and horses fled away in no time. And the army was thus completely routed.

16. The battle-field was strewn with maces, battle-axes, lances, clubs, mallets, unsheathed swords and maces covered with cloth of gold.

17—20. It was covered with gold decked bows, gold-winged arrows, bright and unsheathed swords of good metal, lances, scimitars shining like gold, umbrellas, fans, conchs, armours, painted with beautiful flowers of gold, trappings of elephants, standards, car-fences, crowns, necklaces, yalk tails, garlands of corals and pearls, chaplets, ornaments for the wrist and upper arms, golden collars for the neck, various precious diamonds, jems and pearls, beautiful moon-like heads and bodies brought up in luxury.

21. Leaving behind their mortal coils, luxurious pleasures and dresses, acquiring glory by proving faithful to the duties of their caste they have gone with glory to the region of bliss.

22. "Retreat Duryodhana. Let your troops retire. O king, run on to your camp. The sun is going down. Remember O king, that you are the root of all this."

23. Addressing these words to Duryodhana, Salya, with an aggrieved heart, stopped. Duryodhana too, greatly moved and beside himself with sorrow, with tears running down his eyes, wept for the charioteer's son crying "O Karna, O Karna!"

24. Consoling Duryodhana again and again all the kings headed by Drona's son

returned to their camp looking repeatedly on Arjuna's standard that was resplendant with his glory.

25—26. Beholding the earth that was saturated with blood coming out of the bodies of men, elephants and horses as if she were a courtezan clad in sable garments and golden ornaments, the Kouravas, who were bent upon going to the other world and who could not be recognized on account of their faces being covered with blood, could not stand there in that critical moment.

27. Worked up with sorrow on account of Karna's destruction they all bewailed crying "Alas Karna! Alas!" Then seeing the sun assume crimson colour they all returned to their camps.

28. Although killed and wounded with gold-winged arrows, whetted on stone and adorned with blood-dyed feathers, shot off the Gandiva, the heroic Karna lying on earth looked like the sun of bright rays.

29. Having touched with his rays Karna's body bathed in blood, and assumed a crimson appearance on account of grief the great sun, ever kind to his votaries, proceeded to the other ocean for bathing.

30. Thinking thus the host of gods and Rishis left the scene of action for their respective habitations. Other creatures also wended their way, as they liked, either for the celestial region or for the earth.

31. Having witnessed that wondrous encounter between Karna and Arjuna which struck terror unto all living creatures the leading Kuru heroes stricken with wonder and speaking highly (of the feat) proceeded (to their quarters.)

32. Although his coat of mail had been shattered with arrows, although he had been killed in that dreadful fight the beauty of his countenance did not forsake Radha's son even when dead.

33. Every one saw that the body of the heroe resembled burning gold. It appeared to have been instinct with life and looked effulgent like the sun or fire.

34. Seeing the charioteer's son lying dead on the field of battle all the warriors were stricken with fear like other animals at the sight of a lion.

35. Although dead that best of men seemed ready to issue commands. Nothing was changed in that great heroe dead.

36. Wearing a beautiful apparel and possessing a charming neck Karna's face looked resplendent like the full moon.

37. Bedecked with various ornaments, and golden *Angadas*, Vaikartana, albeit slain, lay on earth like a huge tree embellished with branches and twigs.

38. There lay that best of men like a mass of pure gold or blazing fire extinguished with the water of Arjuna's arrows.

39. As a blazing fire is quenched by water so Karna fire was extinguished by the Partha-like cloud in that battle.

40. Having made a downpour of arrows and burnt the ten cardinal points that best of men with his sons was destroyed by Partha. He left the world but took away with him his fame which he had won on earth by fair fight.

41—42. Having scorched the Pandavas with the fire of his weapons, having made a down-pour of arrows and consumed the hostile armies and heated the world like the thousand rayed sun Vaikartana left the world with his sons and followers.

43. Thus perished the heroe who was an all-giving tree unto the bird-like suitors. Begged by them he always said "I give" and never "I have not."

44. The virtuous always knew him to be pious. Such was Vrisha who died in a single combat. His wealth was always given to the Brahmanas. There was nothing not even his life which he could not make over to the Brahmanas.

45. He was a darling of men, generous and a great car-warrior. Such a high-minded man met with death.

46. Thus repaired to the celestial region the heroe depending upon whom your son made enemies taking with him the hope of success and joy of the Kouravas.

47. The rivers were calm when Karna fell. The sun set with pale colour. Burning like fire or the sun, Soma's son Mercury moved askance through the sky.

48. The sky was cut into two pieces. The earth roared loudly. All the points of compass, covered with smoke, were as if set on fire. The oceans were agitated and roared terribly.

49. There shook the mountains with their forests and all the creatures were pained. Assailing the constellation Rohini the planet Jupiter looked like the moon or the sun.

50. At Karna's death all the minor points of compass were ablaze. The sky was enshrouded with darkness. The Earth shook. Burning meteors dropped. The Rakshasas and other night rangers were filled with joy.

51. When with his razor-shaped arrows Arjuna cut off Karna's head having a

moon-like countenance all the denizens of heaven, sky and earth sent forth cries of *Oh* and *Alas* !

52. Having killed his enemy Karna, adored of the celestials, men and Gandharvas Arjuna shone in his energy like the thousand-eyed deity after the destruction of Vritra.

53—55. Then mounting their chariot the rattle of which was like the muttering of clouds, whose bright colour was like the mid-day sun of autumn, which was decorated with flags and standards, which was white in colour like the snow, the moon, the conch or crystal, whose horses were like those of Indra, those two foremost of men Krishna and Arjuna, who were energetic like great Indra himself who were embellished with gold, pearls, gems, diamonds and corals and who were effulgent like fire or the sun, moved on the battle-field with great force like Vishnu and Indra seated on the same car.

56—57. Divesting per force the enemy of his splendour by the twang of the Gandiva bow and the striking of palms, and destroying the Kurus with arrows the ape-bannered Arjuna and Garuda-bannered Krishna, gifted with measureless prowess, those two best of men joyfully took up, with their hands, their snow white conchs sending forth loud peals, adorned with gold and blew them simultaneously striking terror unto the hearts of their enemies.

58. The sounds of Panchajanya and Devadatta filled the earth, the sky and heaven.

59. At the blare of Madhava's conch as well as that of Arjuna's all the Kauravas, O king, were stricken with fear.

60. Resounding the woods, mountains, rivers and cardinal points with the blare of their conchs and filling up your soldiers with terror those two foremost of men gladdened Yudhisthira.

61. No sooner the Kauravas heard the the blare of the conchs than they speedily left the battle-field leaving behind them the king of Madras and the Bharata chief Duryodhana.

62. Then all the creatures in a body congratulated Dhananjaya who was shining in the battle-field and Janarddana, those two foremost of men who were like two risen suns.

63. Pierced with Karna's arrows those two repressors of foes shone like the bright moon of many rays and the sun after dispelling darkness.

64. Then leaving off those arrows those two great heroes of incomparable prowess, encircled by their well-wishers and friends, returned to their camp like the Lords Indra and Vishnu.

65. After Karna had been killed in that dreadful encounter, the celestials, Gandharvas, men, Charanas, Rishis, Yakshas and Nagas respectfully offered adorations to Krishna and Arjuna and wished them success.

66. Having received all their friends with due honor and been praised by them for their heroic deeds those heroes enjoyed in the company of their friends like the king of gods and Vishnu after the destruction of Bali.

CHAPTER XCV.

(KARNABADHA PARVA)—*contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. On Karna being slain, all the Kauravas, stricken with fear, fled away in all directions looking vacantly.

2. Hearing that the heroic Karna had been killed by his enemy your soldiers, overcome with fear, fled away on all sides.

3. Then the Kuru leaders anxiously desired to rally your troops and your son also tried to cheek their flight.

4. Encircled by the remaining portion of the Narayana troops Kritavarma speedily proceeded to his camp.

5. Seeing Adhiratha's son killed Shakuni surrounded by a thousand Ghandarvas, quickly returned to his camp.

6. Encircled by a large elephant force resembling a mass of clouds Saradwata's son Kripa quickly went towards his camp.

7. Sighing heavily at the success of the Pandavas, the brave Ashwathama quickly went to his camp.

8. Encircled by the remaining portion of the Samsaptakas which was still a large army, Susarma, looking at the terror-stricken soldiers, went away.

9. Deprived of every thing, and his heart heavily laden with sorrow and afflicted by painful thoughts king Duryodhana went away.

10. Having his standard broken and looking on all sides, Salya, the best of car-warriors, returned to his camp.

11. Assailed with fear and shame and beside themselves with grief the remaining car warriors of the Bharata army, still a large number, fled away.

12. Seeing Karna slain all the Kuru soldiers, trembling and with their voice suppressed with tears, fled away precepituously in fear.

13. The great car-warriors of the Kuru army fled away in fear some praising Karna and others Arjuna.

14. Amongst the many thousand warriors of your army there was not a single individual who had any desire for fighting.

15. Upon the destruction of Karna, O king, the Kurus gave up all hopes of their lives, kingdom, wives and riches.

16. Worked up with sorrow your son decided to give them rest for the night.

17. Obeying his orders, O king, the great car-warriors, bending low their heads, left the battle-field depressed and with pale countenances.

CHAPTER XCVI.

(KARNA-BADHA PARVA)—*contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After the destruction of Karna and the flight of the Kuru soldiers Krishna, embracing Partha in delight, said,

2. Vritra was killed by the holder of thunder-bolt and Karna has been killed by you. They will simultaneously talk of the destruction of Vritra and Karna.

3. Vritra was killed by Indra with thunder and Karna has been killed by you with bow and keen arrows.

4. Proceed, O Kunti's son, and describe to the righteous king Yudhisthira your power capable of earning fame for you and which is known in the worlds.

5. Having given an account of the death of Karna, for which you had been trying for many years, to the virtuous king Yudhisthira, you will be freed from your debt to him.

6. While you were fighting with Karna Dharma's son came here for witnessing the battle.

7. Wounded deep with arrows he could not stay in the battle-field and that best of men returned to his tent.

8. Partha acquiesed in the request of the Yadu chief who then cheerfully turned his car.

9. Having thus accosted Arjuna Krishna addressed the soldiers, saying :—" Blessings unto you all. Stand, confronting the enemies carefully."

10. He then said to Dhristadyumna, Yudhamanyu, the twin sons of Madri, Vrikodara and Yuyudhana.

11. " Stand you all here carefully, O kings, till we come back having communicated to the king the destruction of Karna by Arjuna."

12. Having been thus permitted by those warriors he started for the camp of the King. Govind, then, with Partha, saw Yudhisthira.

13. Seeing them cheerful and with great wounds on their persons Yudhishthira thought that the son of Radha was dead and speedily got up from his seat.

14. Having got up from his seat that repressor of his enemies, the king of mighty arms, again and again locked Arjuna and Krishna in his loving embraces. Then he asked Krishna about particulars (of Karna's death).

15. Then the sweet-speeched son of Vasudeva, the scion of the Yadu race, described Karna's death exactly in every detail.

16. Joining his hands and addressing Yudhisthira, whose enemies had been killed, Krishna *alias* Achyuta, smilingly said.

17—18. " By good fortune, the holder of the Gandiva bow, Pandu's son Vrikodara, yourself and the two sons of Madri are all safe from this heroe-destroying and hair-stirring battle. Do what should next be done, O son of Pandu. The powerful son of the charioteer *alias* Vaikartana has been killed.

19. By good luck, O king of kings, you have achieved victory, and by good fortune, you have gained over others, O son of Pandu.

20. The Earth is drinking to day the blood of the charioteer's son, the wretch of a man who had laughed at Draupadi won at the game of dice.

21. Wounded all over with arrows, your enemy, O foremost of Kurus, is lying prostrate on the naked Earth. Look at that best of men mangled with arrows.

22. O Heroe, rule now vigilantly the earth shorn of your enemies and enjoy with us all pleasures of life."

23. Hearing the words of the great Keshava Yudhisthira cheerfully adored him in return and repeatedly said " Good luck ! Good luck !"

24. " It is no wonder, O mighty-armed son of Devaki, that having yourself for his charioteer Partha should perform those super-human feats."

25. Then taking hold of Keshava's irght arm bedecked with *Angadâs* and addressing him and Arjuna the righteous son of Pritha said.

26. "Narada told me that you two are the two foremost of divine Rishis Nara and Narayana ever engaged in maintaining virtue.

27. The highly intelligent and blessed Krishna Dwaipayana Vyasa has also recounted to me several times this divine history.

28. By your help, O Krishna, this son of Pandu, Dhananjaya, has defeated his enemies, without ever retreating from the battle-field.

29. Since you have condescended to drive Partha's chariot we are sure to win victory and not defeat."

30—31. Having said this the impartial king Yudhisthira, that foremost of men, got upon his chariot. It was adorned with gold and drawn by horses having black and ivory white tails and quick-coursing like mind. And talking pleasantly with Krishna and Arjuna he started, surrounded by his troops for seeing the battle-field teeming with many incidents.

32. While talking with those two heroes Madhava and Phalguna the king saw Karna, the foremost of men, lying on the battle-field.

33. The king saw Karna pierced all over with shafts like a *Kadamva* flower with straight filaments shooting up all over.

34. He saw Karna lighted up by a thousand of golden lamps filled with scented oil.

35—36. Having seen Karna and his son killed and wounded with arrows shot off the Gandiva Yudhisthira looked again and again at them before he could believe his eyes. He then praised Krishna and Arjuna saying,

37. "Having got you, highly wise as you are, as my lord and protector, I am O Govinda, the king of earth with my brothers.

38—42. Hearing of the destruction of the haughty son of Radha the wicked son of Dhritarastra will give up all hopes of his life and kingdom. By your favour, O foremost of men, we have achieved our object. By good luck, you have won victory, O Govinda. By good luck, the enemy has been killed and by good luck the holder of the Gandiva bow has been crowned with success. Thirteen years we have spent in misery and vigilance. By thy favour we will now sleep peacefully in night."

In this way the king praised Janarddana and Arjuna.

43. Seeing Karna and his son slain with arrows Yudhisthira considered himself as if born anew.

44. Overflowing with joy all the car-warriors of the Pandava army approached Yudhisthira and delighted him.

45—46. After the death of the charioteer's son, Nakula, Sahadeva, Bhima, the great Vrishni car-warrior Satyaki, Dhristadyumna, Shikhandi, Panchalas, Srinjayas and other Pandava warriors adored the son of Kunti.

47-49. First speaking highly of Pandu's son Yudhisthira, those heroes, who always took delight in battle, disirous of victory and of sureness of aim, eulogised the two Krishnas. These great car-warriors delightedly returned to their camps. Thus took place the dreadful, hair-stirring onslaught on account of your vile policy. Why do you grieve for it now.

50. Hearing that evil news the Kuru king Dhritarastra fell down all on a sudden on the ground from his seat.

51. The far-seing queen Ghandhari too fell down. And she bewailed for the destruction of Karna in battle.

52. Vidura and Sanjaya then raised up the king and consoled him. The Kuru ladies also raised up Gandhari.

54. Thinking destiny to be all powerful the Royal Rishi lost his senses under the weight of grief.

55. His heart pining with sorrow and anxiety the king did not swoon away again. And consoled by them he sat silent indulging in melancholy reveries.

56. He who reads the account of this great encounter between Karna and Partha, like unto a great sacrifice, and he who hears it read, both reap the fruits of a great sacrifice duly performed.

57. The learned hold that the eternae Vishnu, Agni, Vayu, Soma and Surya is sacrifice. He who will therefore here recitl these Parvans will attain to every blissful regions.

58. Those who devoutly read his holy and best of Sanhitas, rejoice acquiring riches, corns and glory.

59. Every one should therefore hear it reverentially. He who does it enjoys happiness and Vishnu, Brahma and Siva are propitiated with him.

60. By reading it a Brahmana reaps the fruit of the Vedic studies, a Kshatrya obtains victory and strength in battle, a

Vaishya immense riches and Sudra health and immunity from ailments.

61. The illustrious Vishnu has been glorified in this Parvan: therefore by reading or hearing it recited a man becomes happy and acquires all desired-for objects. These words of the great Rishi Vyasa can never be false.

62. The merit acquired by listening to the recitation of this Parvan is tentamount to what is obtained by giving away good kine with calves incessantly for a year.

[END OF KARNA PARVA.]

———:o:———

A PROSE ENGLISH TRANSLATION
OF

THE MAHABHARATA.

(TRANSLATED LITERALLY FROM THE ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT.)

SHALYA PARVA.

EDITED BY

MANMATHA NATH DUTT, (*Shastri*) M.A., M.R.A.S.
RECTOR, KESHUB ACADEMY;

Author of the English Translations of the Ramayana, Vishnu Puranam, Srimadbhagavatam, Kamandakiya Nitisara, Bhagavat Gita, and many other works.

PUBLISHED BY
RASH MOHUN SIRCAR.
40 Nayan Chand Dutt's Street, Calcutta.

CALCUTT:

PRINTED BY H. C. DASS, ELYSIUM PRESS,
40 Nayan Chand Dutt's Street.

1902.

SHALYA PARVA.

CONTENTS.

[*Synopsis of the entire book.*]

THE MAHABHARATA.

(IN ENGLISH.)

SHALYA PARVA.

CHAPTER I.

Having saluted the Narayana and Nara the foremost of male beings, as also the goddess of learning Saraswati let us cry success.

Janamejaya said :—

1. On Karna being thus killed by Savyasachin what did the small remnant of the Kuru army do?

2. Seeing the (Pandava) army elated with energy how did the king Suyodhana act towards them befitting the occasion?

3. Describe it, O foremost of the twice-born. I wish to hear it. I am never satiated with hearing of the great feats of my forefathers.

Vaishampayana said :—

4. After the destruction of Karna, O king, Dhristarastra's son Suyodhana was immersed in a sea of grief and beheld despair on all sides.

5. Exclaiming repeatedly "oh! Karna! oh! Karna!" he with difficulty reached his camp with the remaining kings on his side.

6. Although consoled by those chiefs with cogent arguments sanctioned by scriptures he could not enjoy peace of mind thinking of the death of the charioteer's son.

7. Considering Destiny and Luck as all-powerful and determined upon fighting the king issued out again for battle.

8. Having appointed duly Shalya as the commander-in-chief, that foremost of kings, O king, went out for battle with the remaining chiefs.

9. Thereupon, O foremost of Bharatas, a terrible encounter took place between Kurus and Pandavas like that between the celestials and Asuras.

10. Then, O king, having made a great onslaught in battle, Shalya, having lost a large number of his force, was killed by Yudhisthira at mid-day.

11. Thereupon having his allies slain king Duryodhana fled from the battle-field and entered into a dreadful lake in fear of his enemies.

12. Then on that afternoon causing the lake to be encircled by mighty warriors Bhimasena invited him for battle and killed him.

13. After his destruction in that great battle three çar-warriors, who were still alive, worked up with great anger, killed the Panchalas in night.

14. Having left the camp next morning Sanjaya went to the Kuru capital depressed and laden with grief.

15. Having entered the city, and raising up his arms in sorrow and trembling the charioteer entered the Palace of the King.

16. Overwhelmed with grief, O foremost of men, he cried aloud, saying "Alas! O king, ruin has overtaken us all by the death of the great king.

17. Alas! Time is powerful! Difficult are his ways, since all our men, powerful like Indra, have been killed by the Pandavas.

18. Beholding Sanjaya return in that painful state all the people anxiously lamented.

19. Hearing of Duryodhana's death, the entire city, O foremost of men, including even children bewailed from all sides.

20. Pressed down with sorrow and bewildered men and women were seen running about like mad people.

21. Entering the Royal Palace Sanjaya saw that great and highly wise king.

22—26. Beholding the innocent king, the illustrious scion of the Bharata race seated encircled by his daughters-in-law, Gandhari, Vidura and other well-wishing relatives and friends and engaged in thinking of the same subject Sanjaya, with an aggrieved heart and suppressed accents said :—" I am Sanjaya, O great king. I bow to you, O foremost of the Bharatas. The Madra-king Shalya has been killed, as also Suvala's son Shakuni, and Uluka, the heroic son of Shakuni. The Samsaptakas, the Kambhojas, the Shakas, the Mlechas, the Mountaineers and the Yavanas have all been killed.

27. The Easterners, the Southerners, the Northerners and the Westerners, O king, have all been killed.

28. All the kings and princes have been killed. The king Duryodhana too has been killed by Pandu's son (Bhima) as he had promised.

29. With his thighs broken he is lying prostrate on earth bathed in blood. Dhristadyumna and the invincible Shikhandi have also been slain.

30. Uttamouja, Yudhamanyu, Prabhadrakas, and those foremost of men the Panchalas and Chedis have all been killed.

31. Your sons as also the five sons of Draupadi have been killed. The valiant and powerful son of Karna, Vrishasena, has also been killed.

32. All the men collected have been destroyed as also the elephants. All the car-warriors and horses have been slain n battle.

33—34. Very few are surviving on your side, O king. On account of the conflict between the Kurus and Pandavas the Earth contains only women now. Amongst the Pandavas seven are alive and amongst your people only three.

35. They are the five Pandava brothers, and Vasudeva, and Satyaki, and Kripa, and Kritavarman, and Drona's son, that foremost of victorious heroes.

86. These three car-warriors, are all that survive, O best of kings, of all the Akshauhinis collected on your side, O uler of men !

These are only living O monarch, the rest have died. Making Duryodhana and his hostility towards the Paudavas the cause, the whole world, it seems, has been destroyed, O foremost of Bharata's race, by Time!"

38. Hearing these cruel words, Dhritarashtra, that ruler of men, fell down, senseless, O monarch, on the Earth.

39. As soon as the king fell down, the illustrious Vidura also, O king, afflicted with sorrow for the king's distress, fell down on Earth.

40. Gandhari also, O best of kings, and all the Kuru ladies, suddenly fell down on the ground, hearing those cruel words.

41. All those royal persons remained lying on the ground, deprived of their consciousness and crying in delirium, like figures painted on a large piece of canvas.

42. Then king Dhritarashtra, that lord of Earth, afflicted with the misery of the death of his sons, slowly and with difficulty regained his life-breaths.

43—47. Having recovered his consciousness, the king, with trembling limbs and aggrieved heart, looked of all sides, and said these words to Kshattri Vidura :—"O learned Kshatri, O you of great wisdom, O foremost of Bharata's race, you are now my refuge! I am lordless and all my sons are dead"—Having said so, he once more dropped down unconscious. Beholding him fallen, all his relatives, that were present there, sprinkled cold water over him and fanned him. Comforted after a long while, that king stricken with sorrow on account of the death of his sons, remained silent, sighing heavily, like a snake put into a pot.

48. Sanjaya also wept aloud, beholding the king so aggrieved. All the ladies too with the famous Gandhari, did the same.

49—51. After a long while, O best of men, Dhritarashtra, having repeatedly swooned, said to Vidura.—" Let all the ladies retire, even the illustrious Gandhari, and all these friends! My mind is greatly unsettled!"—Thus addressed, Vidura, repeatedly trembling, slowly sent away the ladies, O foremast of Bharata's race.

52. All those ladies retired, O chief of the Bharatas, as also all those friends, seeing the king deeply afflicted.

53. Then Sanjaya cheerlessly looked at the king, O scorcher of foes, who, having recovered his senses, was weeping in great misery.

CHAPTER II.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Vashiampayana said :—

1. After the ladies had been sent away, Dhritarashtra, the son of Ambika, sunk into grief greater than that which had afflicted him before, began, O monarch, to bewail.

2. Exhaling smoky breaths, and repeatedly shaking his arms, and reflecting a little, O monarch, he said these words.

Dhritarashtra said:—

3. 'Alas, O *Suta,* painful is the news that I hear from you viz., that the Pandavas are all safe and have suffered no loss in battle!

4. Forsooth, my hard heart is made of the essence of thunder, since it breaks not upon hearing of the fall of my sons!

5. Thinking of their ages, O Sanjaya, and of their sports in childhood, and learning today that all of them have died, my heart seems to break into pieces!

6. Although owing to my blindness I never saw their forms, still I cherished a great love for them on account of the affection one feels for his children.

7. Hearing that they had passed out of childhood and entered the period of youth and then of early manhood, I became highly glad, O sinless one.

8. Hearing today that they have been killed and divested of prosperity and energy, I do not enjoy peace of mind, being overwhelmed with grief on account of the calamity that has befallen them.

9. Come, come, O king of kings, to me that am without a lord now! Deprived of you, O mighty-armed one, what will be my condition?

10. Why, O sire, leaving all the assembled kings do you lie on the nacked ground, deprived of life, like an ordinary and wretched king?

11. Having been, O monarch, the refuge of kinsmen and friends, where do you go now, O hero, leaving me that am blind and old?

12. Where now, O king, is that pity of yours, that love, and that respectfulness? Invincible you were in battle, how, alas, have you been killed by the Parthas?

13—14. Who will now, after I will get up from bed at the proper hour, repeatedly address me in such loving and respectful words as,—*O father, O father—O great king,—O Lord of the world!*—and affectionately clasping my neck with tearful eyes, will ask for my orders, saying,—Command me, O you of Kuru's race!—address me, O son, in that sweet language once more!

15. O dear child, I heard even these words from your lips, viz.,—This wide Earth is equally ours with Pritha's son!

16—21. Bhagadatta and Kripa and Shalya and the two princes of Avanti and Jayadratha and Bhurishravas and Cala and Somadatta and Valhika and Ashwatthaman and the chief of the Bhojas and the mighty princes of Magadha and Vrihadvala and the ruler of the Kacis and Shakuni, the son of Suvala and many thousands of *Mlecchas* and Shakas and Yavanas, and Sudakhina the ruler of the Kamvojas and the king of the Trigartas and the grandsire Bhishma and Bharadwaja's son and Gotama's son and Shrutayush and Ayutayush and Shatayush of great power, and Jalasandha and Rishyashringa's son and the Rakshasa Alayudha, and the mighty-armed Alamvusha and the great car-warrior Suvahu,—these and many other kings, O best of monarchs, have taken up arms on my behalf and are ready to throw away their very lives in great battle!

22—23. Stationed on the field amidst these, and encircled by my brothers, I will fight against all the Parthas and the Panchalas and the Chedis, O foremost of kings, and the sons of Draupadi and Satyaki and Kunti-Bhoja and the Rakshasa Ghatotkach.

24. Even one amongst these, O king, worked up with anger, is able to resist in battle the Pandavas rushing towards him!

25. What need I say then of all these heroes, every one of whom has wrongs to avenge on the Pandavas, when united together? All these, O monarch, will fight with the followers of the Pandavas and will kill them in battle.

26. Karna alone, with myself, will kill the Pandavas. All the heroic kings will then live under my control.

27.—28. Their leader, the mighty Vasudeva, will not, he has told me, take up arms for them, O king.—In this way, O Suta, did Duryodhana often use to speak to me. Hearing what he said, I believed that the Pandavas would be killed in battle.

29. While, my sons, stationed in the midst of those heroes, and fighting vigorously in battle, have all been slain, what can it be but Destiny?

30 When that lord of the world, viz., the valiant Bhishma, having encountered Shikhandin, died like a lion, killed by a jackal, what can it be but Destiny?

31. When the Brahmana Drona, the master of all offensive and defensive, weapons, has been killed by the Pandavas in battle, what can it be but Destiny?

32. When Bhurishravas has been slain in battle, as also Somadatta and king Valhika, what can it be else Destiny?

33. When Bhagadatta, an expert in fighting from the back of elephants, has been killed, and when Jayadratha has been slain, what can it be but Fate?

34. When Sudakshina has been slain, and Jalasandha of Puru's race, as also Shrutayush and Ayutayush, what can it be but Destiny?

35. The mighty Pandya, that foremost of all holders of weapons, has been slain in battle by the Pandavas. What can it be but Destiny?

36—37. When Vrihadvala has been slain and the powerful king of the Magadhas, and the brave Ugrayudha, that model of all bowmen, when the two princes of Avanti viz., Vinda and Aunvinda have been slain, and the king also of the Trigartas, as also the numerous Samsaptakas, what can it be but Destiny?

38. When king Alamvusha, and the Rakshasa Alayudha, and Rishyashringa's son, have been slain, what can it be but Destiny?

39. When the Narayanas have been slain, as also the Gopalas, ever invincible in battle, and many thousands of Mlecchas, what can it be but Destiny.

40. When Shakuni the son of Suvala, and the powerful Uluka, called the gamester's son, at the head of his forces, have been slain, what can it be but Destiny?

41—42. When numerous great heroes, well-read in all sorts of offensive and defensive weapons, and gifted with prowess equal to that of Indra himself, have been slain, O Suta, when Kshatriyas coming from different kingdoms, O Sanjaya, have all been slain in battle, what can it be but Destiny?

43. My mighty sons and grandsons have been slain, as also my friends and brethren. What can it be but Destiny?

44. Truly man takes his birth, subject to Destiny. A fortunate man always meets with good.

45. I am bereft of good fortune, and, therefore, am deprived of my children, O Sanjaya. Old as I am, how shall I now submit to the sway of enemies?

46. I do not think anything else but exile into the woods is good for me, O lord. Shorn of relatives and kinsmen as I am, I will go into the woods.

47. Nothing else save an exile into the woods can be better for me who am fallen into this plight and who am shorn of my sons, O Sanjaya.

48—49. When Duryodhana has been slain, when Dusshasana and Vivingsha and the mighty Vikarna have been slain, how shall I be able to bear the shouts of that Bhimasena who has alone killed a hundred sons of mine in battle?

50. He will frequently speak of the slaughter of Duryodhana in my ears. Burning with grief and sorrow, I shall not be able to withstand his cruel words!' "

Vaishampayana said:—

51. Even thus that king, burning with grief and deprived of relatives and kinsmen, repeatedly swooned, overwhelmed with grief consequent on the death of his sons.

52. Having wept for a long time, Dhritarashtra, the son of Amvika, sighed heavily thinking of his defeat.

53. Overwhelmed with sorrow, and burning with grief, that best of Bharata's race once more enquired of his charioteer Sanjaya, the son of Gavalgana, the details of the battle.

Dhritarashtra said:—

54. After Bhishma and Drona had been slain and the Suta's son also overthrown, whom did my warriors make their general?

55. The Pandavas are slaying quickly every one whom my warriors make their general in battle.

56. Bhishma was slain at the van of battle by the diadem-decked Arjuna in your presence. Even thus was Drona slain before you all.

57. Even thus was the Suta's son, the valiant Karna, slain by Arjuna in the presence of all the kings.

58. Long before, the high-souled Vidura ura had told me that through the fault of Duryodhana, the people of the Earth would be rooted out.

59. There are some fools that do not see things even though they cast their eyes on them. Those words of Vidura have proved true in my case.

60 What the pious Vidura, conversant with the attributes of everything, then said, has proved true, for the words he uttered were nothing but the truth.

61 Afflicted by fate, I did not then act according to those words. The fruits of that evil course have now appeared. Describe them to me, O son of Gavalgana, once more.

62 Who became the head of our army after Karna's fall? Who was that car-warrior who proceeded against Arjuna and Vasudeva?

63 Who were they that protected the right wheel of the ruler of the Madras in

battle? Who protected the left wheel of that hero when he went to battle? Who also protected his rear?

64 How, when all of you were together, could the mighty king of the Madras, as also my son, be slain, O Sanjaya, by the Pandavas?

65 Describe particularly the great destruction of the Bharatas. Tell me how my son Duryodhana fell in battle!

66 Tell me how all the Panchalas with their followers, and Dhrishtadyumna and Shikhandhin and the five sons of Draupadi, were killed.

67 Tell me how the (five) Pandavas and the two Satwatas (viz., Krishna and Satyaki), and Kripa and Kritavarman and Drona's son, have escaped with life.

68 I desire to hear everything about the battle and its nature. You are a skillful narrator. O Sanjaya, tell me every thing!'

CHAPTER III.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Hear, O king, attentively how that great onslaught of the Kurus and the Pandavas took place when they encountered each other.

2—3. After the Suta's son had been killed by the illustrious son of Pandu, and after the troops had been repeatedly collected and had repeatedly been routed and after a terrible onsaught had taken place, O foremost of men in battle after Karna's death, Partha began to utter leonine shouts. At that time your sons were possessed by great fear.

4. Indeed, after Karna's death, there was no warrior in your army who could rally the troops or show his prowess.

5. They then looked like ship-wrecked merchants on the vast sea without a raft to save themselves. When their protector was slain by the diadem-decked Arjuna, they were like persons on the vast sea desirous of reaching safely some shore.

6. Indeed, O king, after the slaughter of the Suta's son, your troops, panic-stricken and mangled with arrows, were like helpless men like a herd of deer attacked by a lion.

7. Defeated by Savyasachin, they retired in the evening, like bulls with broken horns or snakes shorn of their fangs.

8. Their foremost of heroes slain, themselves thrown into confusion and cut with keen arrows, your sons, O king, upon the slaughter of the Suta's son, fled away in fear.

9. Deprived of weapons and coats of mail, all of them were bewildered and knew not where to fly. Looking on all sides, many of them began to kill one another.

10—11. Many fell down or became pale, thinking,—*It is me whom Vibhatsu is persuing!—It is me whom Vrikodara is persuing!*—Some riding on quick horses, some on fleet cars, and some on fleet elephants, many great car-warriors fled away from fear, leaving behind the foot-soldiers.

12. Cars were broken by elephants, horsemen were crushed by great car-warriors, and the foot were smashed and slain by bodies of horse, as they fled away from the field of action.

13. After the fall of the Suta's son, your troops became like straggling travellers in a forest abounding with robbers and beasts of prey.

14. Some elephants whose riders had been killed, and others whose trunks had been cut off, stricken with fear, saw the entire universe full of Partha.

15—16. Beholding his troops flying away in fear of Bhimsena, Duryodhana, then, with cries of Oh and Alas, addressed his driver, saying,—"If I stand at the rear of the army, armed with my bow, Partha then will never be able to go beyond me. Drive quickly the horses, therefore.

17. When I will display my courage in battle Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti, will not dare go beyond me like the ocean never venturing to transgress its banks.

18–19. To-day, killing Arjuna with Govinda, and the proud Vrikodara, and the rest of my enemies, I will free myself from the debt I owe to Karna."—Hearing these words of the Kuru king worthy of an honorable man, his driver slowly urged those horses adorned with trappings of gold.

20. At that time many brave warriors, deprived of elephants and horses and cars, and five and twenty thousand foot, proceeded slowly for battle.

21. Then Bhimasena, worked up with wrath, and Dhrishtadyumna the son of Prishata, encircling those soldiers with the help of four kinds of forces destroyed them with arrows.

22. All of them fought vigorously with Bhima and Prishata's son. Many amongst them challenged the two Pandava heroes mentioning their names.

23. Surrounded by them in battle, Bhima became angry with them. Quickly getting down from his car, he began to fight, with his mace.

24. Depending on the might of his own arms, Vrikodara, the son of Kunti, who was on hls car, observing the rules of fair fight, did not fight with those foes who were struck down on earth.

25. Armed with his heavy mace made entirely of iron and adorned with gold and resembling the Destroyer himself at the end of the Yuga, Bhima slew them all like Yama destroying creatures with his club.

26. These foot-soldiers, worked up with great anger, heving lost their friends and kinsmen, were prepared to cast away their lives, and rushed in that battle towards Bhima like insects towards a blazing fire.

27. Indeed those warriors, stricken with fear and invincible in battle, approaching Bhimasena, suddenly died like living creatures at the look of the Destroyer.

28. Armed with sword and mace, Bhima moved on like a hawk and killed your twenty-five thousand warriors.

29. Having killed that brave division, the powerful Bhima, of invincible prowess, once more stood, with Dhrishtadyumna before him.

30. In the meantime the highly energetic Dhananjaya proceeded towards the car-division of the Kurus. The twin sons of Madri and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki, all strong, cheerfully rushed against Shakuni for slaying him.

31. Having slain with keen arrows the numerous cavalry of Shakuni, those Pandava heroes quickly proceeded against Shakuni himself, whereupon a fierce encounter took place.

32. Then Dhananjaya, O king, penetrated into the midst of the car-detachment of the Kauravas, expanding his bow Gandiva known over the three worlds.

33. Beholding that car having white horses yoked to it and Krishna for its driver coming towards them, with Arjuna as the warrior on it, your troops fled away in fear.

34. Deprived of cars and horses and struck with arrows from every side, five and twenty thousand foot-soldiers proceeded towards Partha and surrounded him.

35. Then that mighty car-warriors amongst the Panchalas, viz., Dhrishta dyumna with Bhimasena at the head quickly killed them and gained vicory.

36. The son of the Panchala king, viz., the celebrated Dhrishtadyumna, was a great bowman possessed of great beauty aed a repressor of foes.

37. Seeing Dhrishtadyumna to whose car were yoked steeds white as pigeons and whose standard was made of lofty Kovidara, your troops fled away in fear.

38. The celebrated sons of Madri, with Satyaki among them, followed by the Gandhara king who was quick in the use of weapons, soon appeared before us.

39. Chekitana and Shikhandin and the five sons of Draupadi, having killed a large number of your troops, blew their conchs.

40. Seeing all your troops flying away from the field, those Pandava heroes pursued and killed them like bulls pursuing defeated bulls.

41. Then the mighty Savaysachin the son of Pandu, beholding the remaining portion of your army still fighting was filled with anger, O king.

42. Suddenly, O monarch, he covered the remnant of your army with arrows. The dust, however, that was then raised, covered the sky, for which we could not see anything.

43. Darkness also spread over the place and the field of battle was covered with arrows. Your troops, O monarch, then fled away in fear on all sides.

44. When his army was thus broken, the Kuru king, O monarch, rushed against both friends and foes.

45. Then Duryodhana challenged all the Pandavas to battle, O chief of Bharata's race, like the Asura Vail in days of yore challenging all the celestials.

46. The Pandavas then, collected in a body and filled with rage, chastising him repeatedly and discharging various weapons, proceeded against Duryodhana.

47—50. The latter, however, fearlessly struck his foes with arrows. The prowess of your sons was exceedingly wonderful, since all the Pandavas together were unable to overcome him. At this time Duryodhana saw his troops, exceedingly mangled with shafts, and about to fly away. Rallying them then, O monarch, your son, resolved on battle and desirous of gladdening them, addressed those warriors, saying,—"I do not see a place on plain or mountain whither if you fly, the Pandavas will not kill you! What use then in flight?

51. The Pandava army has now been reduced to a small number. The two Krishnas have been greatly wounded. If all of us make a stand here, we are sure to gain victory.

52. If, however, you fly away, the Pandavas, pursuing you, will slay you all. Death in battle, therefore, conduces to our good.

53. Death in the field of battle while fighting according to Kshatriya custom, is welcome. Such death begets no grief. By meeting with such a death, a person enjoys eternal happinesa in the other world.

54. Let all the Kshatriyas assembled hear me. It were] better that they should submit to the angry Bhimasena than that they [should neglect the duties practised by them from the days of their fore-fathers.

55. There is no act more sinful for a Kshatriva than to fly away from the battle-field. Ye Kauravas, there is no greater path to heaven than the duty of battle.

56—57. The warrior acquires in a day the blissful regions of the other world that take many long years for others to acquire."—Obeying those words of the king, Kshatriya car-warriors once more rushed against the Pandavas, unable to put up with their discomfiture and firmly resolved to display their prowess.

58. Then began a battle once more that was highly terrific, between your troops and the enemy, that resembled the one between the gods and demons.

59. Your son Duryodhana then, O monarch, with all his troops, rushed against the Pandavas with Yudhishthira at the head.

CHAPTER IV.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1—7. 'Beholding the boxes of cars as also the cars of great warriors, and the elephants and foot-soldiers, O king, killed in battle,—seeing the field of battle appear dreadful like the sporting ground of Rudra,—seeing the ignominous death obtained by hundreds and thousands of kings,—seeing also the prowess of Partha after the retreat of your son with a sorrowful heart and when your troops, filled with anxiety and fallen into great distress, O Bharata, were deliberating about their next course, hearing also the loud lamentations of the Kaurava warriors that were being smitten, and marking the displaced and disordered tokens of great kings, the energetic, old, eloquent and compassionate Kuru leader Kripa, approched king Duryodhana, and angrily said to him:—"O Duryodhana, listen, O Bharata, to these words. Having heard them, O monarch, act according to them, O sinless one, if you like.

8. There is no path, O monarch, that is better than the duty of battle. Taking recourse to that path, Kshatriyas, O best of the Kshatriyas, fight.

9. He who follows Kshatriya practices, fights with son, father, brother, sister's son, and maternal uncle, and relatives, and kinsmen.

10. If he is killed in battle, there is great merit in it. Similarly, there is great sin if he flies from the field. It is for this that the life of a Kshatriya is exceedingly hard.

11—12. I will say a few wholesome words to you about this. After the fall of Bhishma and Drona and the mighty car-warrior Karna, after the slaughter of Jayadratha and your brothers, O sinless one, and your son Lakshmana, what is there now for us to do?

13. They, upon whom we had laid all burdens and had been enjoying the kingdom, have all repaired to regions of blessedness attainable by persons conversant with the knowledge of Brahma, casting off their bodies.

14. As regards ourselves, deprived of those great car-warriors of numerous accomplishments, we shall have to pass our time in sorrow, having caused many kings to die.

15. When all those heroes were alive even then Vibhatsu could not be defeated. Having Krishna, for his eyes, that mighty-armed hero is incapable of being defeated by the very gods!

16. The vast Kaurava army, approaching his monkey-emblem standard that is high as Indra's pole set up in the spring and that is effulgent as Indra's bow, has always shaken in fear.

17. At the leonine shouts of Bhimasena and the blare of Panchajanya, and the twang of Gandiva, our hearts will be paralyzed.

18. Moving like flashes of lightning, and closing our eyes Arjuna's Gandiva is seen to resemble a circle of fire.

19. Adorned with pure gold, that bow, as it is shaken, looks like lightnings moving about on all directions.

20. Quick-coursing and white horses endued with the splendour of the Moon or the Kuca grass, that run as if devouring the skies, are yoked to his car.

21. Urged on by Krishna, like masses of clouds driven by the wind, and decked

with golden trappings, they bear Arjuna to battle.

22. That foremost of warriors, Arjuna, burnt that great force of yours like a rising fire consuming dry grass in the forest in the winter.

23. Possessed of the splendour of Indra himself, while penetrating into our army we have seen Dhananjaya look like an elephant with four tusks.

24. While agitating your army and terrorizing the kings we have seen Dhananjaya resemble an elephant agitating a lake full of lotuses.

25. While terrifying all the warriors with the twang of his bow, we have again seen the son of Pandu resemble a lion striking terror to smaller animals.

26. Those two foremost of bowmen in all the worlds, viz., the two Krishnas clad in mail, are looking highly beautiful.

27. Today is the seventeenth day of this dreadful battle, O Bharata, of those that are being killed in the midst of this fight.

28. The diverse detachments of your army are routed and dispersed like autumnal clouds scattered by the wind.

29. Savyasachin, O monarch, made your army tremble and reel like a boat exposed to danger by a storm on the bosom of the ocean.

30. Where was the Suta's son, where was I, where were you, where was Hridika's son, where your brother Duscasana accompanied by his brothers, when Jayadratha was slain?

31—32. Upon beholding Jayadratha and finding him within the range of his arrows, Arjuna, displaying his prowess upon all your kinsmen and brothers and allies and maternal uncles, and placing his feet upon their heads, killed king Jayadratha before us all. What then is there for us to do now?

33. Who is there among your troops now that would defeat the son of Pandu?

34. That high-souled warrior is a master of many sorts of celestial weapons. The twang, of Gandiva, deprives us of our energies.

35. This army of yours that is now without a leader is like a night without the Moon or like a river that is dried up with all the trees on its banks broken by elephants.

36. The mighty-armed Arjuna of white horses will, at his pleasure, move about amidst your army having no commander, like a blazing fire amid a heap of grass.

37. The vigour of those two, viz. Satyaki and Bhimasena, would rend all the mountains or dry up all the oceans!

38. The words that Bhima spoke in the midst of the assembly have all been nearly fulfilled by him, O monarch. That which remains unaccomplished will again be accomplished by him.

39. While Karna was fighting with the unconquerable army of the Pandavas, it was vigorously protected by the wielder of Gandiva.

40. You have done many misdeeds without any cause, by the righteous Pandavs. The fruits of those acts have now come.

41. For accomplishing your own object you had, with great care, mustered together a large force. That huge force as also yourself, O best of Bharatas, have fallen into great danger.

42. Preserve your own self now, for self is the stay of everything. If the support is broken, O sire, everything attached thereto is scattered on every side.

43. He that is being weakened should seek peace by conciliation. He that is prosperous should make war. This is the policy taught by Vrihaspati.

44. We are now inferior to the sons of Pandu as regards the strength of our army. Therefore, O lord, I think peace with the Pandavas is conducive to our good.

45. He that does not know what is for his good or knowing disregards what is for his good, is soon deprived of his kingdom and never obtains any good.

46. If by submission to king Yudhishthira we may still have the kingdom even that would be for our good, and not O king, to suffer through folly defeat at the hands of the Pandavas.

47. Yudhishthira is merciful. At the request of Vichitraviryya's son and of Govinda, he will allow you to be the king.

48. Whatever Hrishikesha will say to the victorious king Yudhishthira and Arjuna and Bhimsena, all of them will, forsooth, obey.

49. Krishna will not, I think, be able to disobey the words of Dhritarashtra of Kuru's race, nor will the son of Pandu be able to disregard those of Krishna.

50—51. The end of hostilities with the sons of Pritha is what I consider to be for your good. I do not say this to you from any mean motives nor for saving my life. I say, O king, that whieh I think beneficial. You will recollect these words when on the

verge of death if you neglect them now.— Old Kripa, the son of Saradwata, weepingly said these words. Breathing hard breaths, he was beside himself with sorrow.

CHAPTER V.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Thus addressed by the famous son of Gotama, the king Duryodhana, breathing hard, remained silent, O king.

2. Having thought for a little while, the great son of Dhritarashtra, that scorcher of foes, then said these words to Sharadwat's son Kripa :—

3. "You have said to me whatever a friend should say. You have also, whilst fighting, done everything for me, without caring for your very life.

4. People have seen you enter into the midst of the Pandava army and fight with the mighty and energetic car-warriors of the Pandavas.

5. What a friend should say has been said by you. Your words, however, do not please me like medicine that pleases not the person who is on the verge of death.

6. These beneficial and excellent words, pregnant with reason, which you, O mighty-armed one, have said, do not seem acceptable to me, O foremost of Brahmanas.

7. Deprived by us of his kingdom on a former occasion, why will the son of Pandu trust us? That great king was once defeated by us at dice. Why will we again believe my words?

8. So also, Krishna, ever engaged in the good of the Parthas, when he came to us as an emissary, was cheated by us. Our act was exceedingly unfair. Why then, will Hrishikesha trust my words?

9. The princess Krishna, while standing in the midst of the assembly, wept piteously. Krishna will never forget that act of ours, nor, the deprivation of Yudhishthira by us of his kingdom.

10. Formerly it was heard by us that the two Krishnas are of the same mind and are firmly attached to each other. Today, O lord, we have seen it with our eyes.

11. Having heard of the death of his sister's son, Keshava passes his nights in sorrow. We have offended him highly. Why will he forgive us then?

12. Arjuna also, in consequence of Abhimanyu's death, has become very miserable. Even if requested, why will he try for my good?

13. The second son of Pandu, Bhimasena, is highly powerful. He has taken a terrible vow. He will break but not bend.

14. The heroic twins, cherishing hostility against us, when clad in mail and armed with their swords, resemble a pair of Yamas.

15. Dhrishtadyumna and Shikhandin have taken up their swords against me. Why will those two, O best of Brahmanas, try for my good?

16. Clad in one piece of cloth and in her season, the princess Krishna was treated cruelly by Dushasana in the midst of the assembly and before all.

17. Those scorchers of foes, the Pandavas, who still remember the naked Draupadi greatly distressed, can never be dissuaded from battle.

18. Then again, Krishna, the daughter of Drupada, is, with great difficulty, practising the austerest of penances for my destruction and the success of her husbands, and sleeps every day on the bare ground, intending to do so till the end of the hostilities is got at.

19. Casting off honor and pride, the sister of Vasudeva, Subhadra, is always serving Draupadi like a waiting-woman.

20. Everything, therefore, is on fire. That fire can never be extinguished. Peace with them is impossible on account of the death of Abhimanyu.

21. Having reigned as the sovereign of this Earth bounded by the ocean, how shall I be able to enjoy, by the favor of the Pandavas, a kingdom in peace?

22. Having spread rays like the sun upon the heads of all the kings, how shall I walk behind Yudhishthira as a slave?

23. Having enjoyed all luxuries and shown great mercy, how shall I lead a miserable life now with wretched men as my companions?

24. I do not disapprove those mild and wholesome words you have spoken. I, however, do not think that this is the time for peace.

25. A righteous fight is, O scorcher of foes, is regarded by me to be a good policy. This is not the time for acting like a eunuch. On the other hand, this is the time for fighting.

26. I have celebrated many sacrifices.

I have given away presents to Brahmanas. I have achieved all my wishes. I have listened to the recitation of the Vedas. I have saved the heads of my foes.

27. My servants have all been well cared for by me. I have relieved people in distress. I dare not, O foremost of men, speak such humble words to the Pandavas.

28. I have conquered foreign kingdoms. I have properly governed my own kingdom. I have enjoyed various luxuries. I have pursued religion, profit and desire. I have paid off my debt to the departed manes and to Kshatriya duty.

29. Indeed, there is no happiness on this earth. What becomes of kingdom, and what of good name? Fame is all that one should acquire here. That fame can be acquired by battle, and by no other means.

30. The death a Kshatriya meets with at home is blameable. Death on one's bed at home is highly sinful.

31. The man, who casts off his body in the forest or in battle after having performed sacrifices, attains great glory.

32. He is no man who dies miserably crying in agony, afflicted by disease and decay in the midst of crying kinsmen.

33. Abandoning various objects of enjoyment, I shall now, by a righteous battle, repair to the regions of Shakra, obtaining the companionship of those that have attained to the highest end.

34. For sooth, that is the habitation of pious heroes, who never retreat from battle, who are intelligent and devoted to truth, and who celebrate sacrifices.

35. The various divisions of Apsaras, forsooth, look with joy at such heroes when engaged in battle. Forsooth, the Pitris behold them adored in the assembly of the gods and rejoicing in heaven, in the company of Apsaras.

36—37. We will now ascend the path that is trod by the celestials and by heroes who never retreat from battle, the path followed by our venerable grandfather, by the highly intelligent preceptor, by Jayadratha, by Karna, and by Dushasana.

38. Many brave kings, who tried their best for me in this battle, have been killed. Wounded with shafts and their limbs bathed in blood, they lie now on the nacked Earth.

39. Courageous and masters of weapons, those kings, who had performed sacrifices according to the scriptures, having given their lives in the discharge of their duties, have now become the inhabitants of Indra's region.

40. They have gone there. That road will once more become difficult on account of a number of heroes that will hurry along it for reaching that happy region.

41. Recollect with gratitude the deeds of those heroes that have died for me. I desire to satisfy my debt, instead of thinking of the kingdom.

42. If, having caused my friends and brothers and grandsires to be killed, I save my own life, people will undoubtedly blame me.

43. It will be useless for me to enjoy the kingdom, destitute of kinsmen and friends and well-wishers, and submitting to the son of Pandu.

44. I, who was the master of the universe, will now acquire heaven by fair fight. It will not be otherwise.

45. Thus addressed by Duryodhana, all the Kshatriyas praised that speech and cheered the king, saying,—Well, Well!

46. Without at all grieving for their defeat, and firmly bent upon displaying their prowess, all of them, prepared for fight, became enthusiastic.

47. Having given their horses to the syces, the Kauravas, delighting at the prospect of battle, lived (for the night) at a spot little less than two Yojanas in distance from the field.

48. Having reached the Saraswati of red waters on the sacred and beautiful table-land at the foot of the Himalaya, they bathed in that water and satisfied their thirst with it. Excited by your son, they halted there.

49. Once more rallying themselves, all the Kshatriyas, O king, urged by destiny waited there.

CHAPTER VI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. On that table-land at the foot of the Himavat, those heroes, O king, joyous at the prospect of battle and assembled together, passed the night.

2—3. Indeed, Shalya and Chitrasena and the powerful car warrior Shakuni and Ashwatthaman and Kripa and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, and the energetic Sushena and Arishtasena and Dhritasena and Jayatsena and all those kings passed the night there.

4. After the heroic Karna had been killed in battle, your sons, filled with fear by the Pandavas desirous of victory, did not obtain peace anywhere else than on the Himavat.

5. All of them then, O king, who were bent on fighting, duly worshipped the king and said to him, in the presence of Shalya, these words.

6. It becomes you to fight with the enemy, after having made some body the commander, protected by whom in battle we will defeat the enemies.

7. Then Duryodhana, without descending from his car, went to that foremost of car-warriors, that hero conversant with all the rules of battle, Ashwatthaman, who resembled the Destroyer himself in battle.

8—12. Having beautiful limbs, well-covered head, a neck adorned with three lines like those in a conch-shell, sweet speech, eyes resembling the petals of a full-blown lotus, and tiger-like face, the dignity of Meru, resembling the bull of Mahadeva in neck, eyes, tread, and voice, having huge, massive and well-joined arms, having broad and well-formed chest, e al unto Garuda in speed and might, e ulgent like the Sun, intelligent like Ushanas himself, beautiful like the Moon, h ing a body that seemed to be made of a number of golden lotuses, well-made joints, well-formed thighs and waist, and hips, beautiful feet, beautiful fingers, and beautiful nails, he seemed to have been made by Brahma with great care after remembering one after another all the beautiful and good attributes of creation.

13. Gifted with auspicious marks and clever in every act, he was an ocean of learning. Speedily vanquishing his enemies, he was incapable of being forcibly defeated by foes.

14. He knew, in full, the science of war consisting of four padas and ten Angas. He knew also the four Vedas with all their branches, and the Akhyanas as the fifth.

15. Possessed of great ascetic merit, Drona, himself not born of woman, having worshipped the three-eyed deity with care and penances, begat him upon a wife not born of woman.

16. Approaching him of incomparable deeds, he who is unrivalled in beauty on earth, he who has mastered all branches of learning, that ocean of qualities, the faultless Acwatthaman, your son said to him these words :—"O preceptor's son, you are today our highest refuge? Tell us, therefore, who should be the commander of my army now, placing whom at our head, all of us, united together, may defeat the Pandavas?"

19. [Thus addressed] the son of Drona replied,—"Let Shalya become the commander of our army. In birth, in prowess, in energy, in fame, in beauty, and in every other accomplishment, he is superior.

20. Out of gratitude, he has joined us, having abandoned the sons of his own sister. Having a large army of his own, that mighty-armed one is like the second celestial generalissimo.

21. Making that king the commander of our army, O best of kings, we will be able to gain victory, like the celestials after making the invincible Skanda their commander."

22. On Drona's son saying these words all the kings stood, surrounding Shalya, and cried victory to him. Determined for fighting, they felt great joy.

23. Then Duryodhana, coming down from his car, folded his hands and addressing Shalya, equal to Drona and Bhishma in battle, who was on his car, said these words.

24. "O you attached to friends, that time has arrived when intelligent men examine persons in the guise of friends as to whether they are true friends or not.

25. Brave as you are do you become our commander-in-chief. When you will go to battle, the Pandavas, with their friends, will lose heart, and the Panchalas will be depressed."

26. Shalya answered,—"I will, O king of the Kurus, do what you desire me to do. My life, my kingdom, my wealth and every thing else are at your disposal."

Duryodhana said :—

27. I wish you to accept the general-ship of my army. O maternal uncle, O foremost of warriors, protect us, even as Skanda protected the celestials in battle.

28. O foremost of kings, install yourself in the command as Pavaka's son Kartikeya was placed in the command of the celestial army. O hero, kill our foes in battle like Indra the Danavas.

CHAPTER VII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Hearing those words of the Kuru king, the brave king (Shalya), O king, said these words to him :—

2. "O mighty-armed Duryodhana, listen to me, O foremost of orators. You consider the two Krishnas, when on their car, as the foremost of car-warriors. They are not, however, jointly equal to me in the strength of arms.

3. What shall I say of the Pandavas? When enraged, I can fight, at the van of battle, with the whole world consisting of the celestials, Asuras and men.

4. I will defeat the assembled Parthas and the Somakas in battle. Forsooth, I will become the leader of your army.

5. I will form such an array that our enemies will not be able to discomfit it. Truly do I say this to you, O Duryodhana."

6. Thus addressed (by Shalya), king Duryodhana joyfully poured sanctified water, O best of the Bharatas, on the king of the Madras, in the midst of his soldiers, according to the rites ordained in the scriptures, O king.

7. After Shalya had been appointed the commander, leonine shouts arose among your soldiers and various musical instruments also, O Bharata, were struck.

8—9. The Kaurava warriors and the powerful car-warriors among the Madrakas became very cheerful. And all of them praised the royal Shalya, that ornament of battle, saying,—"Victory to you, O king! May you live long. Kill all the foes! Having obtained the strength of your arms, let the sons of Dhritarashtra, gifted with great strength, rule the wide Earth without an enemy.

10. You are capable of vanquishing in battle the three worlds consisting of the gods, the Asuras, what to speak of the Somakas and the Shrinjayas."

11. Thus eulogised the powerful king of the Madrakas was filled with great joy that is unattainable by uncultured persons.

Shalya said:—

12. To-day, O king, I will either kill all the Panchalas with the Pandavas in battle or killed by them go to heaven.

13—15. Let the world behold me to-day moving about fearlessly in the field; let all the sons of Pandu, and Vasudeva and Satyaki, and the sons of Draupadi and Dhristadyumna, Shikhandin, and all the Prabhadrakas, witness my prowess, the great power of my bow, my quickness, the energy of my weapons, and the strength of my arms in battle.

16. Let the Parthas, and all the Siddhas with the Charanas, witness to-day the strength of my arms and the precious weapons I possess.

17. Witnessing my prowess to-day let the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas, desirous of counteracting it, adopt various measures.

18. To-day I will disperse the troops of the Pandavas on all sides. Excelling Drona and Bhishma and the Suta's son, O lord, in battle, I will move about the field, O Kourava, for doing what pleases you.

Sanjaya said:—

19. 'After Shalya had been appointed to the command, O giver of honors, no one among your soldiers, O foremost of Bharata's race, any longer felt sorrow for Karna.

20. Indeed your soldiers were filled with delight. They considered the Parthas as already slain and brought under the control of the king of Madras.

21. Delighted your soldiers, O best of Bharata's race, slept that night happily and became very cheerful.

22. Hearing the war-cries of your army king Yudhisthira, addressing the Vrishni heroe, said these words, before all the Kshatriyas.

23. "The ruler of the Madras, Shalya, that great bowman who is highly respected by all the warriors, has, O Madhava, been appointed the commander of his forces by Dhritarashtra's son.

24. Knowing this, do, O Madhava, that which is beneficial. You are our leader and protector. Do what should next be done."

25. Then Vasudeva, O monarch, said to that king:—"I know Artayani, O Bharata, as truly illustrious, powerful and energetic.

26. He is accomplished, conversant with all the modes of warfare, and possesses great lightness of hand.

27. I think that the ruler of Madras is in battle equal to Bhishma or Drona or Karna or perhaps superior to them.

28. I cannot think of a warrior who may match Shalya while engaged in fight.

29. In battle, he is superior in power to Shikhandin and Arjuna and Bhima and Satyaki and Dhrishtadyumna, O Bharata.

30. The king of the Madras, O king, gifted with the prowess of a lion or an elephant, will move about fearlessly in battle, like the Destroyer himself enraged amongst creatures at the time of the universal dissolution.

31. I do not find a match for him in battle except you, O best of men, who are possessed of prowess equal to that of a tiger.

32. Except you there is no other person either in heaven or in the whole of this world, who, O best of Kurus, would be able to kill the king of the Madras while worked up with anger in battle.

33. Daily in fight, he agitates your troops. For this, kill Shalya in battle, like Maghavan slaying Shamvara.

34. Honored by Dhritarashtra's son, that hero is invincible in battle. When the king of the Madras will be killed in battle, you will surely win victory. Upon his slaughter, Dhritarashtra's huge army will be slain.

35. Hearing, O king, these words of mine now, proceed, O Partha, against that great car-warrior, the king of the Madras.

36. Kill that heroe, O you of great arms, like Vasava slaying the Asura Namuchi. There is no need of showing any compassion here, thinking that he is your maternal uncle. Observing the duties of a Kshatriya, slay the king of the Madras.

37. Having crossed the fathomless ocean represented by Bhishma and Drona and Karna, do not sink, with your followers, in a pit dug by a cow's hoop represented by Shalya.

38. Display in battle the whole of your ascetic power and Kshatriya energy. Slay that car-warrior."

39. Having said these words, Keshava, that slayer of hostile heroes, went to his tent in the evening adored by the Pandavas.

40. After Keshava had departed the righteous king Yudhisthira, sending away all his brothers and the Somakas, happily slept that night, like an elephant from whose body the darts have been plucked out.

41. All those great bowmen, *viz.*, the Panchalas and the Pandavas, delighted at the fall of Karna, slept that night happily.

42. With their anxiety gone the army of the Pandavas, abounding with great bowmen and mighty car-warriors, having reached the shore as it were, became very happy that night on account of the victory, O sire, it had won by the destruction of Karna.

CHAPTER VIII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After the termination of the night king Duryodhana addressed all your soldiers, saying,—Arm, ye mighty car-warriors!

2. Hearing the orders of the king, the warriors began to put on their armours. Some began to yoke horses to their cars quickly, others ran about hither and thither.

3. The elephants were also got ready. The infantry began to arm themselves. Thousands of attendants began to spread carpets on the cars.

4. The sound of musical instruments, O king, arose there, for exciting the war-like spirit of the soldiers.

5. Then all the troops, stationed in their proper posts, were seen, O Bharata, to stand, clad in mail and determined to die.

6. Having made the king of the Madras their leader, the great car-warriors, of the Kauravas, made detachments of their soldiers.

7—8. Then all warriors, with Kripa and Kritavarman and Drona's son and Shalya, Suvala's son and the other kings that were yet alive, met your son, and settled, that none of them would individually fight with the Pandavas.

9. And they said,—"He who will fight alone with the Pandavas, or he that will leave a comrade engaged in fight, will be visited by the five grave and all the minor sins."—And they said,—"All of us, unitedly will fight with the enemy."

10. Having made this contract those great car-warriors placed the king of the Madras at their head and speedily ran against their foes.

11. Similarly, all the Pandavas, having arranged their soldiers in that great battle, proceeded against the Kauravas, O king, fighting with them.

12. Soon, O chief of the Bharatas, that army, whose noise resembled that of the agitated ocean, and which seemed wondrous for its cars and elephants, shone like the deep with heaving billows.

Dhritarashtra said :—

13. I have heard the fall of Drona, of Bhishma, and the son of Radha. Tell me now of the fall of Shalya and of my son.

14. How, O Sanjaya, was Shalya killed by the righteous king Yudhisthira? And

how was my son Duryodhana slain by the powerful Bhimasena ?

Sanjaya said :—

15. Hear, O king, patiently of the destruction of human beings, elephants and horses as I describe the battle.

16. O king, your sons became very sanguine that, after Drona and Bhishma and the Suta's son had been killed, Shalya would kill all the sons of Pritha in battle.

17. Cherishing that hope in his heart and being comforted, O Bharata, your son Duryodhana, relying in battle upon that great car-carrior, the ruler of the Madras, thought himself as having a protector.

18. When after Karna's fall the Pandavas roared a great fear, O king, possessed the hearts of your sons.

19—20. Assuring him the valiant king of the Madras, having formed, O king, a grand array, proceeded against the Parthas in battle. And the brave king of the Madras proceeded, shaking his beautiful and strong bow capable of shooting arrows with great force.

21. And that mighty car-warrior drove an excellent car having horses of the Sindhu breed yoked to it. Riding upon his car, his driver made the car resplendent.

22. Protected by that car, that hero, that brave destroyer of foes, stood, O king dissipating the fears of your sons.

23. The king of the Madras, clad in mail, proceeded at the head of the army accompanied by the brave Madrakas and the invincible sons of Karna.

24. On the left stood Kritavarman, surrounded by the Trigartas. On the right was (Kripa) with the Sakas and the Yavanas.

25. In the rear was Ashwathaman surrounded by the Kamvojas. In the centre was Duryodhana, protected by the best of Kuru warriors.

26. Surrounded by a large army of cavalry and other troops, Suvala's son, Sakuni, as also the great car-warrior Uluka, proceeded with others.

27. The great bowmen amongst the Pandavas, those chastisers of foes, dividing themselves, O king, into three divisions, rushed against your troops.

28. Dhrishtadyumna and Shikhandin and the great car-warrior Satyaki proceeded quickly against the army of Shalya.

29. Then king Yudhisthira, accompanied by his soldiers, rushed against Shalya alone, with a view to kill him, O best of Bharata's race.

30. Arjuna, the slayer of foes, rushed against that great bowman, Kritavarman, and the Samsaptakas.

31. Bhimasena and the great car-warriors among the Somakas rushed, O monarch, against Kripa, desirous of killing their enemies in battle.

32. The two sons of Madri, accompanied by their soldiers, proceeded against Sakuni and the great car-warrior Uluka at the head of their forces.

33. Similarly, thousands of warriors, of your army, armed with various weapons and filled with anger, proceeded against the Pandavas in that battle.

Dhritarashtra said :—

34—35. After the fall of the great bowmen Bhishma and Drona and the great car-warrior Karna, and after both the Kurus and the Pandavas had been lessened in numbers, and when the powerful Parthas became once more angry in battle, what, O Sanjaya, was the strength of each of the armies.

Sanjaya said :—

36. Hear, O king, how we and the enemy both stood for battle on that occasion, and what was then the relative strength of the two armies.

37—38. Eleven thousand cars, O best of Bharata's race, ten thousand and seven hundred elephants, and two hundred horse, and three millions of foot, formed our army.

39—40. Six thousand cars, six thousand elephants, ten thousand horse, and one million of foot, O Bharata, were the remnant of the Pandava force in that battle. These, O best of Bharata's race, met each other for battle.

41. Having divided our armies in this way, O king, we, worked up with wrath and filled with the desire of victory, rushed against the Pandavas, under the command of the king of the Madras.

42. Similarly, the brave Pandavas, those foremost of men, desirous of killing their enemies, encountered one another early in the morning, O king.

44. Then took place a dreadful encounter between your soldiers and the enemy, the warriors being all engaged in striking and slaughtering one another.

CHAPTER IX.

(SHALYA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Then took place the battle between the Kurus and the Srinjayas, O king, that was as fierce and awful as that between the celestials and the Asuras.

2. Men and cars and elephants, and elephant-warriors and horsemen by thousands and horses, all very powerful, encountered one another.

3. The loud noise of the rushing of dreadful elephants was then heard there, resembling the roars of the clouds in the sky in the rains.

4. Some car-warriors, struck by elephants, were deprived of their cars. Dispersed by those infuriate animals, other brave heroes ran away.

5. Well-trained car-warriors, O Bharata, with their arrows, killed a number of cavalry and infantry that urged and protected the elephants.

6. Well-trained horsemen, O king, surrounding great car-warriors, moved about in the field, striking and slaying the latter with spears and darts and swords.

7—8. Some bowmen, surrounding great car-warriors, killed them. Encompassing elephants and great warriors of their own class, other great car-warriors killed some mighty one amongst them that fought in the field moving about on all sides.

9. Similarly, O king, elephants, encircling individual car-warriors worked up with rage and shooting arrows, killed them.

10. Elephant-warrior rushing against elephant-warrior, and car-warrior against car-warrior, in that battle, killed each other with darts and lances and Narachas, O Bharata.

11. Cars and elephants and horses, crushing foot-soldiers in the midst of battle, made a confusion all over.

12. Adorned with yak-tails, horses rushed on all sides, looking like the swans found on the plains at the foot of Himavat. In their speed they seemed as if ready to devour the very earth.

13. The field, O king, marked with the hoofs of horses, looked beautiful like a beautiful woman bearing the marks of (her lover's) nails on her person.

14—15. With the sound caused by the trampling of horses, the wheels of cars, the shouts of foot-soldiers, the grunts of elephants, the beating of drums and other musical instruments, and the blare of conchs, the earth began to resound as if with deafening peals of thunder.

16. On account of twanging bows and flashing swords and the glittering armour of the worriors everything was so confused there that nothing could be distinctly seen.

17. Numerous arms, chopped off from human bodies, and looking like the tusks of elephants, jumped up and moved furiously about.

18. The sound, made, O monarch, by heads falling on the field of battle, resembled that made by the falling fruits of palmyra trees.

19. Covered with those lifeless heads with upturned eyes, that were exceedingly mangled the field of battle, O king, looked resplendent as if covered with full-blown lotuses.

21. With the fallen arms of the warriors smeared with sandal and adorned with rich Keyuras, the Earth looked resplendent as if strewn with the rich poles set up in Indra's honor.

22. The battle-field was covered with the thighs of kings, cut off in that battle and looking like the trunk of elephants.

23. Covered with hundreds of headless trunks and strewn with umbrellas and yak-yails, that vast army looked beautiful like a blossoming forest.

24. Then, on the field of battle, O monarch, warriors moved about fearlessly, their limbs bathed in blood and, therefore, looking like flowering Kinsukas.

25. Elephants also, wounded with arrows and lances, dropped down here and there like broken clouds dropped from the sky.

26. O king, killed by great warriors, elephant-divisions were dispersed in all directions like clouds scattered by the wind.

27. Those elephants, resembling clouds dropped on the earth like mountains clapped by a thunder, O lord, at the time of the universal dissolution.

28. Horses with their drivers lay in masses on the ground like so many mountains.

29. A river was formed on the field o. battle, flowing towards the other world. Blood formed its waters, and cars its eddies, Standards were its trees, and bones its pebbles.

30. The arms were its alligators, bows its current, elephants its large rocks, and its smaller ones. Fat and marrow constituted its mire, umbrellas its swans, and maces its rafts.

31. Abounding with armour and head-gears, banners formed its beautiful trees. Wheels formed its swarms of Chakravakas and it was covered with Trivenus and Dandas.

32. Filling the brave with joy and increasing the fears of the timid, that fierce river flowed the shores of which were filled with Kurus and Srinjayas.

33. Those brave warriors, with arms resembling bludgeons, by the aid of their cars and animals, acting as rafts and boats, crossed that dreadful river which flowed towards the region of the dead.

34. During the course of that battle, O king, in which no consideration was showed by any body for any one, and which with awful destruction of the four fold forces, resembled the battle between the celestials and the Asuras in the days of yore.

35. Some warriors, O scorcher of foes, loudly called upon their kinsmen and friends. Some, called upon by crying kinsmen, returned stricken with fear.

36. During the course of that fierce and dreadful battle, Arjuna and Bhimasena stupified their foes.

37. Your army, O king thus destroyed, swooned away on the field, like a woman under the influence of liquor.

38. Having stupified that army, Bhimasena and Dhananjaya blew their conchs and sent forth leonine roars.

39. On hearing that loud sound Dhristadyumna and Shikhandin, placing king Yudhisthira at their head, rushed against the king of the Madras.

40. Highly wonderful and terrible, O monarch, was the manner in which those heroes, in a body and separately, fought with Shalya.

41. The two energetic sons of Madri, masters of weapons, and invincible in battle, proceeded quickly against your army worked up with the desire of victory.

42. Then your army, O best of Bharata's race, wounded greatly with arrows by the Pandavas eager for victory, took to their heels in the battle.

43. Thus struck and dispersed by strong bowmen, O king, that army fled away on all sides in the presence of your sons.

44. Exclamations of *Oh* and *Alas*, O Bharata, arose from among your warriors while some illustrious Kshatriyas among the dispersed combatants, desirous of victory, cried out, saying,—*stop, stop*.

45. Despite it, your troops routed by the Pandavas, fled away leaving behind on the field, their dear sons and brothers and maternal uncles and sisters, and relatives by marriage and other kinsmen.

46. Driving their horses and elephants to a great speed, thousands of warriors fled away O foremost of Bharata's race, anxious to secure their personal safety only.

CHAPTER X.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Beholding the army thus scattered the brave king of the Madras addressed his driver, saying,—"Quickly urge these horses fleet as thought.

2. There stands king Yudhisthira, the son of Pandu, shining with the umbrella held over his head.

3. Reach me there quickly O driver, and witness my power. The Parthas are unable to stand before me in battle."

4. Thus addressed the driver, of the Madra king, proceeded where stood the righteous king Yudhisthira of sure aim.

5. Shalya suddenly attacked the mighty army of the Pandavas. Alone he withstood it like the continent withstanding the surging deep.

6. The huge army of the Pandavas, coming against Shalya, O sire, stood still in that battle, like the rushing deep upon being obstructed by a mountain.

7. Beholding the king of the Madras standing for battle on the field, the Kouravas returned, making death their goal.

8. After they had come back, O king, and separately taken up their positions in a well-formed array, an awful encounter took place in which blood flowed freely like water. The invincible Nakula encountered Chitrasena.

9—10. These two heroes, both excellent bowmen, approaching, covered each other with downpours of arrows in that battle, like two pouring clouds risen in the sky on the south and the north. I could mark no difference between the son of Pandu and his antagonist.

11. Both of them were masters of weapons, both very powerful and both were experienced car-warriors. Each determined upon killing the other, they carefully looked for each other's weak point.

12. Then, O king, with a broad-headed arrow, well-tempered and sharp Chitrasena cut off Nakula's bow at the handle.

13. Fearlessly then the son of Karna struck the bowless Nakula at the forehead with three gold-winged arrows whetted on stone.

14. With a few more sharp arrows he killed Nakula's horses. Next he struck down both the standard and the driver of his antagonist, each with three arows.

15. With those three arrows shot off the arms of his foe and striking his forehead, Nakula, O king, looked beautiful like a mountain of three summits.

16. Deprived of his bow and his car, the brave Nakula, taking up a sword, jumped down from his car like a lion from a mountain summit.

17. As, however, he rushed on foot, his antagonist discharged a shower of arrows upon him. The highly active Nakula received that downpour of arrows on his shield.

18. Getting at the car of Chitrasena, the mighty-armed hero, the untiring son of Pandu, conversant with all modes of warfare, appeared before the troops.

19. The son of Pandu then cut off from Chitrasena's trunk his diadem-decked head, adorned with ear-rings, and bedecked with a beautiful nose and a pair of large eyes. At this, Chitrasena, effulgent like the Sun, dropped down on the terrace of his car.

20. Beholding Chitrasena killed all the great car-warriors shouted there like lions and lauded him.

21. Meanwhile, beholding their brother slain, the two sons of Karna, viz,, Sushena and Satyasena, both of whom were great car-warriors, made a downpour of sharp arrows.

22. Those foremost of car-warriors rushed quickly against the son of Pandu like a pair of tigers, O king, in the deep forest rushing against an elephant for slaying him.

23. Both of them covered the great car-warrior Nakula with keen arrows. When they discharged arrows, they looked like two masses of clouds pouring rain in torrents.

24. Though wounded with arrows all over his body the valiant and heroic son of Pandu cheerfully took up another bow after getting upon another car, and stood in battle like the angry Destroyer himself.

25. Then those two brothers, O king, with their straight arrows, cut off Nakula's car into pieces.

26. Then Nakula, laughing, struck the four horses of Satyasena with four whetted and keen arrows in that encounter.

27. Shooting a long gold-winged shaft the son of Pandu then cut off, O king, the bow of Satyasena.

28. At this the latter, mounting on another car and taking up another bow, as also his brother Sushena, rushed against the son of Pandu.

29. The brave son of Madri fearlessly struck each of them, O monarch, with a couple of arrows.

30. Then worked up with wrath, the mighty car-warrior Sushena, cut off, in that battle, the formidable bow of Pandu's son with a razor-shaped arrow.

31. Then Nakula, beside himself with rage, took up another bow and struck Sushena with five arrows and his standard with one.

32. Without losing a moment, he then cut off the bow and the leathern fence of Satyasena also, at which all the troops there sent up a loud shout.

33. Satyasena, taking up another foe-slaying and powerful bow, covered the son of Pandu with arrows on all sides.

34. Baffling those arrows Nakula, that slayer of hostile heroes, struck each of his antagonists with a couple of arrows.

35. Each of the latter separately struck the son of Pandu in return with many straight coursing arrows. Afterwards they struck Nakula's driver also with many keen arrows.

36. The brave and light-handed Satyasena then cut off without his brother's help the shafts of Nakula's car and his bow with a couple of arrows.

37. The great car warrior Nakula, however, standing on his car, took up a golden mounted and keen dart steeped in oil and exceedingly bright.

38. It resembled, O king, a she-snake of dreadful poison, frequently darting out her tongue. Raising that weapon he hurled it at Satyasena in that battle.

39. That dart, O king, cut the heart of Satyasena in that battle into a hundred pieces and he fell down dead upon the Earth from his car.

40. Beholding his brother killed Sushen, beside himself with rage, suddenly made Nakula carless in that battle. Without losing a moment, he poured arrows over the son of Pandu fighting on foot.

41. Seeing Nakula carlees, the mighty car-warrior Sutasoma, the son of Draupadi

rushed, there for rescuing his father in battle.

42. Riding then the car of Sutasoma, Nakula, that hero of Bharata's race, looked beautiful like a lion upon a mountain. Then taking up another bow, he fought with Sushena.

43. Those two great car-warriors, approaching each other, and discharging arrows, tried to kill each other.

44. Then Sushena, filled with rage, struck the son of Pandu with three arrows and Sutasoma with twenty in the arms and the chest.

45. At this the impetuous Nakula, O king, that slayer of hostile heroes, covered all the points of the compass with shafts.

46. Then taking up a sharp and powerful arrow having a semi-circular head, Nakula shot it with great force at Karna's son in that battle.

47. With that arrow, O best of kings, the son of Pandu cut off from Sushena's trunk his head before all the troops. That feat was highly wonderful.

48. Thus killed by the illustrious Nakula Karna's son dropped down like a tall tree on the bank of a river thrown down by the current of the river.

49. Seeing the destruction of Karna's son and the power of Nakula, your army, O best of Bharatas, fled away in fear.

50. Their Genernal however, the brave and valiant king of the Madars, that represser of foes, then protected, O king, those troops in battle.

51. Rallying his army, O king, Shalya stood fearlessly in battle sending forth leonine shouts and twanging his bow fiercely.

52. Then your soldiers O king, protected in battle by that firm bowman, cheerfully rushed against the enemy once more from all sides.

53. Those great warriors, encircling that great bowman, the king of the Madras, stood, O king, desirous of fighting on every side.

54—55. Then Satyaki, and Bhimasena, and those two Pandavas, the twin sons of Madri, placing that modest chastiser of foes, Yudhishthira, at their head, and surrounding him on all sides in that battle, sent up leonine roars. And those heroes also caused a loud sound of the arrows and frequently sent up war-cries.

56. Smilingly, all your warriors, enraged, quickly encompassed the king of the Madras and stood there for battle.

57. Then took place on encounter filling the coward with fear, between your soldiers and the enemy, both of whom were bent upon meeting with death.

58. The battle between fearless combatants resembled, O king, that between the gods and the Asuras in days of yore and increased the population of Yama's kingdom.

59. Then the ape-emblemed son of Pandu, O king, having killed the Samsaptakas in battle, rushed against the Kauravas.

60. Smiling, all the Pandavas, headed by Dhrishtadyumna, proceeded against the same detachment discharging keen arrows.

61. Overpowered by the Pandavas, the Kaurva army were stupified. Indeed, those divisions then could not distinguish the cardinal and the minor points of the compass.

62. Covered with keen arrows shot by the Pandavas, the Kaurva army, deprived of its foremost warriors, were routed on all sides. Indeed, O Kauravya, your army were killed by the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas.

63. Similarly, the Pandava army, O king, were killed in hundreds and thousands in that battle by your sons on every side with their arrows.

64. While the two armies, in their excitement, were thus killing each other, they became much agitated like two streams in the rains.

65. During the onset of that dreadful fight, O king, a great fear possessed your warriors as also those of the Pandavas.

CHAPTER XI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1—6. When the troops, killed by one another, were thus agitated, when many of the heroes took to their heels and the elephants sent up loud roars, when the infantry in that dreadful battle began to shout and cry aloud, when the horse, O king, ran in various directions, when the slaughter became dreadful, when a terrible onslaught of creatures took place, when various weapons clashed with one another, when car and elephants were mixed up, when heroes were delighted and cowards became afraid,—when warriors encountered

one another in order to kill them,—on that awful occasion of carnage, that increased the denizens of Yama's kingdom, the Pandavas killed your troops with keen arrows, and similarly your troops slew those of the Pandavas.

7—8. During that awe-inspiring battle, during the progress of the battle faught about the hour of sun-rise, the Pandava heroes, of good aim, protected by the high-souled Yudhishthira, fought with your forces, making death itself their goal.

9. The Kuru army, O Kuru chief, encountering the proud and powerful Pandavas skilled in striking and of sure aim, became weakened and agitated like a herd of she-deer frightened at a forest fire.

10. Seeing that army weakened and helpless like a cow sunk in mire, Shalya, desirous of rescuing it, proceeded against the Pandava army.

11. Enraged the king of the Madras, taking up an excellent bow, rushed for battle against the Pandavas.

12. The Pandavas also, O king, in that battle, filled with the desire of victory, proceeded against the king of the Madras and struck him with keen arrows.

13. The powerful king of the Madras struck that army with showers of keen arrows before the very eyes of the righteous king.

14. The Earth, with her mountains, shook, making a loud noise.

15. Meteors, keen pointed and bright like lances, dropped on Earth from the sky piercing the air.

16. Large numbers of deer and buffaloes and birds, O king, passed by the left of your army O king.

17. The planets Venus and Mars, in conjunction with Mercury, appeared at the back of the Pandavas and at the front of all the Kauravas.

18. Blazing flames came out from the points of weapons, dazzling the eyes of the warriors. Crows and owls sat upon the heads of the combatants and on the tops of their standards.

19. Then a fierce encounter took place between the Kauravas and the Pandavas assembled together in large bodies.

20. Then O king, the Kauravas, collecting all their detachments, rushed against the Pandavas.

21. Shalya, who never knew depression, then poured showers of arrows on Yudhishthira the son of Kunti, like the thousand-eyed Indra pouring rain in torrents.

22—23. He struck Bhimasena, the five sons of Draupadi, the two sons of Madri by Pandu, Dhrishtadyumna, the grand-son of Shini, Shikhandin each with ten gold-winged arrows whetted on stone.

24. Indeed, he began to discharge his arrows like Indra pouring rain at the close of the summer season.

25. Then the Prabhadrakas, O king, and the Somakas, were killed by thousands by Shalya's arrows.

26. The arrows of Shalya, as swarms of bees or flights of locusts, were seen to fall, like thunder bolts from the clouds.

27. Elephants and horses and foot-soldiers and car-warriors, assailed with Shalya's arrows, fell down or strayed away bewailing loudly.

28. Beside himself with rage the ruler of the Madras covered his foes in that battle like the Destroyer at the end of the cycle.

29. The Pandava army, thus killed by Shalya, ran towards Yudhishthira the son of Kunti.

30. Light-handed Shalya, having in that battle struck them with whetted arrows, began to assail Yudhishthira with a down-pour of arrows.

31. Beholding Shalya rushing towards him with horse and foot, king Yudhishthira, worked up with wrath, checked him with sharp arrows, even as an infuriate elephant is checked with iron-hooks.

32. Then Shalya shot a dreadful arrow at Yudhishthira that resembled a snake of dreadful venom. Piercing through the high-souled son of Kunti, that arrow quickly dropped down the Earth.

33. Then Vrikodara, enraged, pierced Shalya with seven arrows, and Sahadeva pierced him with five, and Nakula with ten.

34. The five sons of Draupadi poured upon that heroic and impetuous Artayani, showers of arrows like clouds pouring rain upon a mountain.

35. Beholding Shalya struck by the Parthas on every side, both Kritavarman and Kripa proceeded in anger there.

36. The greatly energetic Uluka, Shakuni, the son of Suvala, and the great car-warrior Ashwathaman smiling and all your sons protected Shalya every way in that battle.

37. Piercing Bhimasena with three arrows Kritavarman, discharging a mass of arrows, checked that warrior who was as if the personification of wrath.

38. Excited with anger, Kripa struck Dhrishtadyumna with numberless arrows. Shakuni rushed against the sons of Draupadi, and Ashwathaman against the twins.

39. That foremost of warriors, the energetic Duryodhana, rushed in that battle, against Keshava and Arjuna, and struck them both with many arrows.

40. Thus hundreds of dreadful encounters, O king, took place between your army and the enemy, on the various parts of the field.

41. The chief of the Bhojas then killed the brown horses of Bhimasena's car in that encounter. The son of Pandu, deprived of his horses, alighting from his car, began to fight with his mace, like the Destroyer himself with his uplifted bludgeon.

42. The king of the Madras then killed the horses of Sahadeva before his eyes, and then Sahadeva killed Shalya's son with his sword.

43. The preceptor Gautama again fought with Dhristadyumna, both trying their level best.

44. The preceptor's son Ashwathama, not excited with anger and as if smiling in that battle, struck each of the five heroic sons of Draupadi with ten arrows.

45—46. Again the horses of Bhimasena were killed in that battle. He then quickly got down from his car, took up his mace like the Destroyer his rod in anger and crushed the horses of Kritavarman's car. Jumping down from his charriot Kritavarman fled away.

47. Shalya also, excited with anger, O king, killed many Somakas and Pandavas, and once more assailed Yudhisthira with many sharp arrows.

48. Then biting his lips and beside himself with rage, the valiant Bhima took up his mace in that battle and aimed it at Shalya for killing him.

49. It resembled the very rod of Yama, in the death-night, and was destructive of the lives of elephants and horses and human beings.

50. It was coated with a cloth of gold, looked like a burning metor, furnished with a sling, was fierce as a she-snake, hard as thunder, and made entirely of iron.

51. It was smeared with sandal-paste and other unguents like a desirable lady, pasted with marrow and fat and blood and resembled the very tongue of Yama.

52. It produced sounds on account of the bells attached to it, like unto the thunder of Indra. It resembled in shape a dreadful serpent that had just cast off its slough, soaked with the temporal juice of elephants.

53. It inspired the enemies with terror and the friends with joy. It was celebrated in the world and capable of riving mountain summits.

54. With this mace, the powerful son of Kunti had, in Kailasa, challenged the enraged Lord of Alaka, the friend of Maheshwara.

55. With this weapon Bhima, though resisted by many, had in anger killed a large number of proud Guhyakas endued with powers of illusion on the mount Gandhamadana for the sake of procuring Mandara flowers for Draupadi.

56. Taking up that mace which was set with diamonds and other gems, eight-sided and celebrated as Indra's thunder,—the mighty-armed son of Pandu now rushed against Shalya.

57. With that mace of dreadful sound Bhima, skilled in battle, crushed the four quick-coursing horses of Shalya.

58. Then the heroic Shalya, worked up with wrath, in that battle, hurled a lance at the broad chest of Bhima and sent forth a loud war-cry. That lance, cutting through the coat of mail of Pandu's son, entered into his person.

59. However taking out the weapon fearless Vrikodara struck therewith the driver of Shalya on the chest.

60. Cut to the quick, the driver, vomiting blood, fell down with a trembling heart. At this the king of the Madras got down from his car and looked at Bhima in depression.

61. Beholding his own attempt thus thwarted, Shalya was struck with wonder. Of quiescent soul, the king of the Madras took up his mace and began to eye his enemy.

62. Beholding that terrible feat of his in battle, the Parthas joyfully worshipped Bhima of untiring energy.

CHAPTER XII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. 'Seeing his charioteer fallen, Shalya, O king, quickly took up his mace made entirely of iron and stood firm as a hill.

2—3. Bhima, however, armed with his mighty mace, rushed impetuously towards Shalya who shone like the blazing Yuga

fire or the Destroyer armed with the noose ro the Kailasa mountain with its summit or Vasava with his thunder, or Mahadeva with his trident, or an infuriate elephant in the forest.

4. At that time there arose the sound of thousands of conchs and trumpets and loud leonine roars increasing the joy of horses.

5. The warriors of both armies, looking at those two foremost of heroes from every side, lauded them both, saying—well done! well done.

6. Except the ruler of the Madras or Rama, that delighter of the Yadus, there is none else that can venture to stand the impetuousity of Bhima in battle.

7. Similarly except Bhima there is no other warrior that can venture to stand the force of the mace of the illustrious king of the Madras in battle.

8. Those two warriors Vrikodara and the king of the Madras, roaring like bulls, moved about in circles, frequently leaping up in the air.

9. In that encounter between those two best of men, no difference was perceptible between them either in their movement or in the manner of their holding the mace.

10. The mace of Shalya, coated with a shining cloth of gold that looked like a sheet of fire, made the on-lookers afraid.

11. The mace of the great Bhima, as he moved about in circles, looked like lighting in the midst of the clouds.

12. Struck by the king of Madras with his mace, the mace of Bhima, O king, sent forth scintillations of fire in the sky which was as if on fire.

13. Similarly struck by Bhima with his mace, the mace of Shalya produced a shower of burning coals.

14. Like two huge elephants striking each other with their tusks, or two huge bulls striking each other with their horns, those two heroes began to strike each other with their maces, like a pair of heroes striking each other with iron clubs.

15. On being struck with each other's mace, they soon became bathed in blood and looked more beautiful like two blossoming *Kinshukas*.

16. Struck by the king of the Madras on both his left and right, the mighty-armed Bhimasena stood firm like a mountain.

17. Similarly, though struck again and again with Bhima's mace, Shalya, O king, moved not like a mountain struck by an elephant with his tusks.

18. The sound caused by the strokes of the maces of those two best of men was heard on all sides like peals of thunder.

19. Having stopped for a moment those two energetic warriors once more, with uplifted maces, closed each other.

20. Again an encounter took place between those two warriors of superhuman power, each having advanced towards the other by eight steps, and each striking the other with his uplifted iron club.

21. Then desiring to reach each other, they once more moved about in circles. Both the expert warriors began to display their superiority of skill.

22. Uplifting their terrible weapons, they again struck each other like mountains striking each other with their summits at the time of an earthquake.

23. Struck heavily with each other's mace, both of them dropped down simultaneously like a couple of poles set up for Indra's worship.

24. Threat the brave warriors of both armies, cried *Oh* and *Alas.* Cut to the quick, both of them had become exceedingly agitated.

25. Then the powerful Kripa, taking up Shalya, that king of the Madras, on his own car, quickly took him away from the battle field.

26. Bhimasena, rising up, however, within the twinkling of an eye, and still reeling as if drunk, challenged, with an uplifted mace, the king of the Madras.

27. Then your warriors, armed with various weapons, fought with the Pandavas, causing the blowing and beating of various musical instruments.

28. Raising up arms, taking weapons and making a loud noise, O king, your warriors, led by Duryodhana, rushed against the army of the Pandavas.

29. Beholding the Kauravas the sons of Pandu, sending up leonine shouts, rushed against those warriors led by Duryodhana.

30. Then your son, O foremost of Bharatas, aiming at Chekitana amongst them, cut him deeply with a lance in the chest.

31. Thus struck by your son, Chekitand dropped in a faint down on his car, bathea in blood.

32. Seeing Chekitana slain, the great car-warriors among the Pandavas continually showered arrows (upon the Kauravas).

33. Indeed, the Pandavas, filled with the desire of victory, O king, moved about on all sides amongst your soldiers.

34. Kripa, and Kritavarman, and the powerful son of Suvala, placing the king of the Madras before them, fought with king Yudhishthira.

35. Duryodhana, O king, fought with heroic and powerful Dhrishtadyumna, the slayer of Bharadwaja's son.

36. Three thousand cars, O king, despatched by your son and headed by Drona's son, fought with Vijaya.

37. All those warriors, O king, were bent upon winning victory even at the sacrifice of their lives. Indeed, O king, your warriors entered into the midst of the Pandava army like swans into a large lake.

38. A fierce encounter then took place between the Kurus and the Pandavas, the combatants being worked up with the desire of killing one another and deriving great pleasure from giving and receiving blows.

39. During the progress, O king, of that battle in which great heroes were killed a terrible dust was raised by the wind.

40. From only the names we heard (of the Pandava warriors) that were uttered during that battle and from those (of the Kuru warriors) that were uttered by the Pandavas, we knew the heroes that fought with one another fearlessly.

41. That dust, however, O foremost of men, was soon dispelled by the blood that was shed, and all the points of the horizon became once more clear.

42. Indeed, during that terrible and and awful battle, no one, among either your warriors or those of the foe, took to his heels.

43. Desirous of going to the regions of Brahman and longing for victory by fair fight, the warriors displayed their prowess, worked up with the hope of heaven.

44. For paying off the debt they owed to their masters on account of the maintenance received, or bent upon achieving the objects of their friends and allies, the warriors, desirous of going to heaven, fought with one another.

45. Discharging various weapons, great car-warriors roared at and struck one another.

46. Slay, seize, strike, cut off,—these were the words that were heard in that battle, uttered by your people and those of the enemy.

47. Then Shalya, O king, desirous of killing him, struck king Yudhishthira, a mighty car-warrior, with many sharp arrows.

48. Acquainted with the vital parts of the body, the son of Pritha, however, O king, struck the king of the Madras with fourteen cloth-yard shafts, aiming at the latter's vital parts.

49. Resisting the son of Pandu with his arrows the illustrious Shalya, filled with ire and desirous of killing his antagonist, struck him in that battle with innumerable Kanka-feathered arrows.

50. Again, O king, he struck Yudhishthira with a straight shaft in the very presence of all the troops.

51. King Yudhishthira, possessed of great renown and filled with rage, cut the ruler of the Madras with many keen Kanka and peacock feathered arrows.

52. That mighty car-warrior then pierced Chandrasena with seventy arrows, and Shalya's driver with nine, and Drumasena with sixty four.

53. When the two protectors of his car-wheels were (thus) killed by the great son of Pandu, Shalya, O king, slew twenty five warriors among the Chedis.

54. And he struck Satyaki with twenty five keen arrows, and Bhimasena with seven, and the two sons of Madri with a hundred, in the battle.

55. While Shalya was thus fighting in that battle, that best of kings, the son of Pritha, shot at him many arrows that resembled snakes of virulent poison.

56. With a broad-headed arrow, Yudhishththira, the son of Kunti, then cut off from his car the standard of his antagonist as the latter stood before him.

57. We saw the standard of Shalya, which was thus cut off by the son of Pandu in that great battle, drop down like a mountain summit.

58. Seeing his standard fallen and observing the son of Pandu standing before him, the king of the Madras, worked up with rage, shot a number of shafts.

59. That foremost of Kshatriyas, viz., Shalya of great energy poured over the Kshatriyas in that battle dense showers of arrows like Indra pouring torrents of rain.

60. Piercing Satyaki and Bhimasena and the twin sons of Madri by Pandu, each with five arrows, he assailed Yudhishthira greatly.

61. We then, O king, beheld a net of arrows spread before the chest of Pandu's son like a mass of risen clouds.

62. The great car-warrior Shalya, in that battle, filled with rage, covered Yudhishthira with straight shafts.

63. At this, king Yudhishthira, afflicted with those arrows, felt himself deprived of his prowess, even as the Asura Jambha had become before the killer of Vritra.

CHAPTER XIII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. 'When king Yudhisthira was thus assailed by the king of the Madras, Satyaki and Bhimasena and the two sons of Madri by Pandu, encircling Shalya with their cars, began to assail him in that battle.

2. Beholding the helpless Shalya thus assailed by those great car-warriors loud sounds of applause were heard, and the Siddhas became filled with delight. The ascetics, assembled together, declared it wonderful.

3 Then Bhimasena in that battle, having cut Shalya who had become irresistible with one arrow, next struck him with seven.

4. Satyaki, desirous of rescuing the son of Dharma, struck Shalya with a hundred arrows and uttered a loud leonine roar.

5. Nakula struck him with five arrows, and Sahadeva with seven; the latter then once more struck him with as many.

6—7. The heroic king of the Madras, struggling carefully in that battle, thus afflicted by those great car-warriors, drew a formidable and strong bow capable of imparting great force to the shafts shot from it, and pierced Satyaki, with twenty-five arrows and Bhima with seventy-three and Nakula with seven.

8. Then cutting off with a broad-headed arrow the bow, with shaft fixed on the string, of Sahadeva, he struck Sahadeva himself in that battle, with seventy-arrows.

9. Sahadeva then, stringing another bow, pierced his maternal uncle with five arrows that resembled snakes of virulent poison or burning fire.

10. Worked up with great ire, he then struck his antagonist's driver with a straight shaft in that battle and then Shalya himself once more with three.

11. Then Bhimasena pierced the king of the Madras with seventy arrows, and Satyaki pierced him with nine, and king Yudhishthira with sixty.

12. Thus pierced, O king, by those mighty car-warriors, blood began to flow from Shalya's body, like red streams running down the breast of a mountain of red chalk.

13. Shalya, however, quickly struck in return each of those great bowmen with five arrows, O king. Exceedingly wonderful was this feat.

14. With another broad-headed arrow, that great car-warrior then, O sire, cut off the stringed bow, of Dharma's son in that battle.

15. Taking up another bow, that great car-warrior, *viz.*, the son of Dharma, covered Shalya, his horses, and driver, and standard, and car, with many arrows.

16. Thus covered in that battle by the son of Dharma with his arrows Shalya struck the former with ten keen arrows.

17. Then Satyaki, enraged upon beholding the son of Dharma thus assailed with arrows, obstructed the heroic king of the Madras with clouds of arrows.

18. At this, Shalya cut off with a razor-faced arrow the terrible bow of Satyaki, and cut each of the other Pandava warriors with three arrows.

19. Enraged, O king, the highly powerful Satyaki then discharged at Shalya a golden lance set with many jewels and gems.

20. Bhimasena shot at him a cloth-yard shaft that looked like a blazing snake; Nakula discharged at him a dart, Sahadeva an excellent mace, and the son of Dharma a Sataghni, all actuated by the desire of killing him.

21. The king of the Madras, however, speedily counteracted in that battle all those weapons, shot off the arms of those five warriors at him, as these proceeded towards his car.

22. With a number of broad-headed arrows Shalya cut off the lance shot by Satyaki. Endued with valour and great lightness of hand, he cut off into two pieces the gold decked arrow shot at him by Bhima.

23. He then resisted with arrows the terrible gold-handled dart, that Nakula shot at him and the mace also that Sahadeva had hurled.

24. With a couple of other arrows, O Bharata, he cut off the Satagni shot at him by the king, in the very presence of the sons of Pandu, and uttered a loud leonine roar. The grandson of Sini, however, could not bear the defeat of his weapon in that battle.

25. Beside himself with rage Satyaki took up another bow, and cut the king of the Madras with two arrows and his driver with three.

26. At this, Shalya, O king, worked up with rage, deeply struck all of them with ten arrows, like persons piercing mighty elephants with sharp pointed lances.

27. Thus thwarted in that battle by the king of the Madras, O Bharata, those slayers of foes could not stand in front of Shalya.

28. Witnessing the prowess of Shalya, king Duryodhana considered the Pandavas, the Panchalas, and the Srinjayas as already killed.

29. Then, O king, the mighty-armed Bhimasena, determined to kill him, encountered the king of the Madras.

30. Nakula and Sahadeva and the powerful Satyaki, encompassing Shalya, shot their arrows at him from all sides.

31. Though surrounded by those four great bowmen and powerful car-warriors of the Pandavas, the valiant king of the Madras still fought with them.

32. Then, O king, the son of Dharma, in that dreadful encounter, quickly cut off with a razor-headed arrow one of the guards of Shalya's car-wheels.

33. When that brave and mighty car-warrior, the protector of Shalya's car-wheel, was thus killed, Shalya enshrouded the Pandava warriors with showers of arrows.

34—35. Beholding his troops covered with arrows, O king, king Yudhishthira began to think,—"Verily, how shall those weighty words of Madhava become true. I hope, the king the Madras, worked up with ire, will not destroy my army in battle.

36. Then the Pandavas, O elder brother of Pandu, with cars and elephants and horses approached the king of the Madras and began to assail him from all sides.

37. Like the wind scattering masses of clouds, the king of the Madras, in that battle, dispersed the shower of arrows and various other weapons.

38. We then saw the downpour of gold-winged arrows shot by Shalya, passing through welkin like as warm of locusts.

39. Indeed, those arrows, discharged by the king of the Madras from the rear of the battle, were seen to fall like a flght of birds.

40. With the golden shafts shot off the bow of the Madra king, the sky, O king, was so covered that there was not an inch of empty space.

41. Then a thick darkness was caused by the arrows shot by the powerful king of the Madras in that dreadful battle.

42. And when they saw the vast host of the Pandavas agitated by that hero, the gods and the Gandharvas were stricken with great wonder.

43. Assailing vigorously all the Pandava heroes with his arrows from every side, O sire, Shalya covered king Yudhisthira and roared repeatedly like a lion.

44. Thus covered by Shalya in that battle the great car-warriors of the Pandavas could not proceed against that great hero for fighting with him.

45. Those amongst them that were led by Bhimasena and king Yudhisthira did not fly away from the brave Shalya the ornament of battle.

CHAPTER XIV.

(SHALYA PARVA) –*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. In the meantime Arjuna, in that battle, struck with many arrows by the son of Drona as also by the latter's followers the heroic and mighty car-warriors among the Trigartas, pierced Drona's son in return with three arrows and each of the others with two. Again, the mighty armed Dhananjaya covered his enemies with showers of arrows.

3. Though struck with keen shafts and though they looked like porcupines on account of those arrows sticking to their body still your soldiers, O foremast of Bharatas did not fly from Partha in that battle.

4. Led by Drona's son they surrounded that great car-warrior and fought with him discharging many arrows.

5. The gold-decked arrows, O king, shot by them, quickly filled Arjuna's car.

6. Beholding those two great bowmen, those two foremost of all warriors, *viz.*, the two Krishnas, covered with arrows, those invincible (Kaurava) warriors filled with joy.

7. The Kuvera, the wheels, the shaft, the terraces, the yoke, and the Anukarsha of Arjuna's car, were covered with arrows.

8. Never before, O king, had been either seen or heard the like of what your warriors then did unto Partha.

9. That car shone with those keen arrows of beautiful wings like a celestial car, blazing with hundreds of torches dropped on the earth.

10. Then Arjuna, O king, covered his enemies with showers of straight arrows like a cloud pouring torrents of rain on a mountain.

11. Struck in that battle with arrows with Partha's name engraven on them those heroes regarded the battle field as full of Parthas.

12. Then the Partha-fire, having arrows for its wonderful flames and the loud twang of Gandiva for the wind that increased it, began to consume the fuel of your soldiers.

13—16. Then were seen along the tracks of Partha's car, O Bharata, number of broken wheels, yokes, quivers, banners, standards, with the cars themselves that bore them, of arrows, and Anukarshas, Trivenus, axles, traces and goads, heads of warriors decked with ear-rings and head-gears, arms, thighs in thousands, of umbrellas along with fans, and of diadems and crowns.

17—18. Along the track of the angry Partha's car, the ground, covered with muddy blood, became impassable, O chief of the Bharatas, like the sporting ground of Rudra. The spectacle filled the coward with fear and the brave with joy.

19. Having destroyed two thousand cars with their fences, that scorcher of foes, Partha, appeared like a smokeless fire with blazing flames.

20. As the illustrious Agni blazes forth for destroying the mobile and the immobile creation so, O king, the mighty car-warrior Partha looked.

21. Beholding the prowess of Pandu's son in that battle, the son of Drona, on his car adorned with many banners, tried to check him.

22. Those two foremost of men both having white horses yoked to their cars quickly encountered each other, each desirous of killing the other.

23. The arrows discharged by both became exceedingly terrible and were as thick, O best of Bharatas, as the torrents of rain poured by two masses of clouds at the close of summer.

24. Each challenging the other, those two warriors struck each other with straight arrows in that battle, like a couple of bulls tearing each other with their horns.

25. The battle between them, O king, was equally fought for a long while. The din of weapons was horrible.

26. The son of Drona then, O Bharata, struck Arjuna with a dozen of powerful goldwinged arrows and Vasudeva with ten.

27. Having shown for a short while some respect for the preceptor's son in that great battle, Vibhatsu then, smiling, drew his bow Gandiva with force.

28. Immediately the great car-warrior Savyasachin deprived his antagonist of his horses, driver and car and without the least exertion struck him with three arrows.

29. Staying on that horseless car Drona's son, smiling, discharged, at the son of Pandu a heavy mallet that looked like a dreadful mace with iron spikes.

30. Seeing that weapon, which was covered with cloth of gold, come towards him, the heroic Partha, that killer of foes, cut it off into seven pieces.

31. Seeing his mallet cut off, Drona's son, in grest anger, took up a terrible mace adorned with iron spikes and looking like a mountain crest. Accomplished in warfare, the son of Drona discharged it at Partha.

32. Seeing that mace come towards him like the Destroyer himself in anger, Pandu's son Arjuna quickly cut it off with five excellent arrows.

33. Cut off with Partha's shaft in that great battle, that weapon dropped down on earth, riving the hearts, as it were, O Bharata, of the inimical kings.

34. The son of Pandu then struck Drona's son with three other arrows. Though deeply cut by the mighty Partha, the highly powerful Drona's son, depending upon his own manliness, displayed no sign of fear or agitation.

35. That great car-warrior, the son of Drona then, O king, covered Suratha with showers of arrows before the eyes of all the Kshatriyas.

36. At this, Suratha, the great car-warrior among the Panchalas, in that battle, riding upon his car whose rattle was as deep as the muttering of the clouds, proceeded against the son of Drona.

37. Drawing his best of bows capable of standing a great strain, the Panchala hero covered Ashwatthaman with arrows resembling flames of fire or snakes of virulent poision.

38. Seeing the great car-warrior Suratha proceed towards him in anger the son of Drona was filled with rage like a scorched snake.

39. Contracting his eye brow into three lines, and licking the corners of his mouth with his tongue, he looked at Suratha in anger and then touched his bowstring and shot a keen clothyard shaft resembling the dreadful rod of Death.

40. Endued with great force, that shaft struck the heart of Suratha and coming out entered the Earth riving her through like the thunder-bolt of Indra hurled from the sky.

41. Struck with that arrow Suratha fell down on the Earth like a mountain crest given with thunder.

42. After the fall of that hero, the valiant son of Drona, that foremost of car-warriors, speedily got upon the car of his slain enemy.

43. Then, O king, that warrior, invincible in battle, the son of Drona, well equipt with armour and weapons, and helped by the Samsaptakas, fought with Arjuna.

44. At noon, that battle between one and the many, increasing the denizens of Yama's abode, became exceedingly fierce.

45. The sight was wonderful. Arjuna, alone and unsupported, fought with all his foes simultaneously.

46. The encounter was highly terrific that took place between Arjuna and his enemies, resembling that between Indra, in days of yore, and the vast army of the Asuras.

CHAPTER XV.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. 'Duryodhana, O king, and Dhrishtadyumna, the son of Prishata, fought a dreadful fight with enough arrows and darts.

2. Both of them, O king shot arrows like showers of rain poured by the clouds in the rainy season.

3. Having struck with five arrows the slayer of Drona, viz., Prishata's son the Kuru king again struck him with seven arrows.

4. The powerful and steady Dhrishtadyumna, in that battle, assailed Duryodhana with seventy arrows.

5. Seeing the king thus assailed, O foremost of Bharatas, his brothers, accompanied by a large force, surrounded the son of Prishata.

6. Surrounded by those great warriors on every side, the Panchala hero, O king, moved in the battle-field, displaying his quickness in the use of weapons.

7. Helped by the Prabhadrakas, Shikhandin fought with the two Kuru bowmen, Kritavarman and the great car-warrior Kripa.

8. Then, O king, that battle became fierce and awful because the warriors were all bent upon sacrificing their lives.

9. Discharging arrows on all sides Shalya assailed the Pandavas with Satyaki and Vrikodara amongst them.

10. O king, with patience and great strength, the king of the Madras at the same time fought with the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, each of whom was powerful like the Destroyer himself.

11. The great car-warriors among the Pandavas who were wounded in that great battle with the arrows of Shalya, could not find a protector.

12. Seeing the just king Yuddishthira greatly assailed the heroic Nakula, the son of Madri, rushed with force against his maternal uncle.

13—14. Covering Shalya in that battle Nakula, that slayer of hostile heroes, smiling struck him in the breast with ten other arrows, made entirely of iron, polished by the smith, equipt with wings of gold, whetted on stone, and discharged from his bow with great force.

15. Assailed by his illustrious nephew, Shalya struck him in return with many sraight arrows.

16. Then king Yudhishtira, Bhimasena, Satyaki, and Sahadeva the son of Madri, all rushed against the king of the Madras.

17. That vanquisher of foes, the commander of the Kuru army, received in that battle all those heroes that rushed towards him vehemently filling the cardinal and the subsidary points of the compass with the rattle of their cars and causing the Earth to tremble.

18. Striking Yudhisthira with three arrows and Bhima with seven, Shalya pierced Satyaki with a hundred arrows in that battle and Sahadeva with three.

19. Then the king of the Madras, O sire, cut off, with a razor-headed arrow, the bow with arrow fixed on it of the great Nakula.

20. Taking up another bow, Madri's son quickly covered the king of the Madras with winged arrows.

21. Then Yudhishthira and Sahadeva, each struck the king of the Madras with ten arrows on the breast.

22. Rushing at the ruler of the Madras Bhimasena and Satyaki both struck him

with Kanka-feathered arrows, the former with sixty, and the latter with nine.

23. Enraged at this, the ruler of the Madras struck Satyaki with nine arrows and again with seventy straight arrows.

24. Then, O king, he cut off at the handle the bow, with arrow fixed on it, of Satyaki and then killed the four horses of the latter.

25. Having made Satyaki carless, that great car-warrior, the king of the Madras, struck him with a hundred arrows from all sides.

26. He next struck the two angry sons of Madri, and Bhimasena the son of Pandu and Yudhishthira, O Kuru chief, with ten arrows each.

27. The prowess of the king of the Madras was highly wonderful, since the Parthas, even in a body, could not approach him in that battle.

28. Riding then upon another car, the mighty and powerful Satyaki, seeing the Pandavas assailed and yeilding to the king of the Madras, rushed quickly against him.

29. Shalya rushed, on his car, against the car of Satyaki, like one infuriate elephant against another.

30. The encounter between Satyaki and the heroic king of the Madras, became fierce and wonderful to look at like that which had taken place in the days of yore between the Asura Shamvara and Indra.

31. Seeing the king of the Madras stay before him in that battle, Satyaki struck him with ten arrows.

32. Deeply struck by that great warrior, the king of the Madras struck Satyaki in return with sharp arrows adorned with beautiful feathers.

33. Beholding the king of the Madras struck by Satyaki those great bowmen the Parthas, quickly rushed towards him with a view to kill him.

34—35. The encounter, between those struggling heroes marked by a great flow of blood, was highly dreadful like that which takes place between a number of roaring lions fighting for a piece of meat.

36. With the thick downpour of arrows shot by them, the Earth was entirely covered and the sky was converted into one mass of arrows.

37. Indeed, with the arrows shot by those illustrious warriors a shadow, like that of the clouds, was caused there.

38. Then, O king, with those shining and gold winged arrows shot by warriors, that resembled snakes that had just cast off their sloughs, the points of the horrizon were as if ablaze.

39. Shalya, that slayer of foes, performed a wonderful deed because that hero, alone, unaided, fought with many arrows in that battle.

40. The Earth was covered with the dreadful Kanka and peacock feathered arrows that fell from the hands of the king of the Madras.

41. Then, O king, we beheld the car of Shalya moving about in that dreadful battle like the car of Shakra in days of yore on the occasion of the destruction of the Asuras.

CHAPTER XVI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. 'Then, O king, your soldiers, led by Shalya, once more rushed against the Parthas in that battle with great impetuosity.

2. Although assailed still those troops, who were fierce in battle, rushing against the Parthas, very soon agitated them on account of the superiority in numbers.

3. Struck by the Kurus, the Pandava troops, in the very presence of the two Krishnas, could not stand in the field though checked by Bhimasena.

4. Worked up with anger Dhananjaya covered Kripa and his followers, as also Kritavarman, with showers of arrows.

5. Sahadeva checked Shakuni and his detachment. Nakula looked at the king of the Madras from his flanks.

6. The (five) sons of Draupadi opposed numerous kings (of the Kuru army). The Panchala prince Shikhandin checked the son of Drona.

7. Armed with his mace, Bhimasena opposed the king. Kunti's son Yudhishthira resisted Shalya at the head of his army.

8. Again an encounter took place between those pairs as they stood, among your warriors and those of the enemy, none of whom had ever retreated from fight.

9. Shalya performed a wonderful feat because alone he fought with the whole Pandava army.

10. Shalya, then, as he stood near Yudhishthira in that battle, looked like the planet Saturn near the Moon.

11. Afflicting the king with arrows that resembled venomous serpents Shalya proceeded against Bhima, covering him with showers of arrows.

12. Beholding the lightness of hand and mastery over weapons displayed by Shalya, both the armies spoke highly of him.

13. Assailed by Shalya, the Pandavas, exceedingly wounded, fled away, from the battle, disregarding orders of Yudhisthira to stop them.

14. While soldiers were thus being killed by the king of the Madras, Pandu's son king Yudhisthira was worked up with rage.

15. Relying upon his strength that powerful car-warrior began to assail the king of the Madras being determined upon either gaining victory or meeting with death.

16—17. Summoning all his brothers and also Krishna he said to them—" Bhishma and Drona and Karna, and other kings who fought for the Kauravas, have all died in battle. You all have shown valour and courage in the tasks alloted to you.

18. Only one portion about the great car-warrior Shalya remains. I desire to defeat that king of the Madras to-day in battle. I will now tell you my wishes about the accomplishment of that work.

19—20. These two heroes, *viz.*, the two sons of Madravati will protect my wheels. They are heroes whom even Vasava himself cannot defeat. Observing the duties of a Kshatriya these two, that deserve every honor and are firm in their vows, will fight with their maternal uncle.

21. Either Shalya will kill me in battle or I will kill him. Blessed be ye. Listen to these true words, O foremost of heroes n the world.

22. Observing Kshatriya duties I will fight with my maternal uncle, determined to either win victory or be slain.

23. Let them that furnish cars quickly supply my car according to the rules of science, with all kinds of weapons and implements more than what Shalya possesses.

24. The grandson of Shini will protect my right wheel, and Dhristadyumna my left. Let Pritha's son Dhananjaya guard my rear to-day.

25. And let Bhima, the foremost of warriors, fight in my front. I shall thus be superior to Shalya in the great battle that will soon take place."

26. Thus accosted by the king, all his well-wishers did what they were asked to do.

27. Then the Pandava troops were again filled up with joy, especially the Panchalas, the Somakas, and the Matsyas.

28. Having made that vow, the king proceeded against the king of the Madras. The Panchalas then blew and beat numberless conchs and drums and sent up eonine roars.

29. Endued with great activity and worked up with ire they rushed, with loud shouts of joy, against the king of the Madras, that foremost of the Kurus.

30. And they made the earth resound with the noise of the elephant's bells and the loud sound of conchs and trumpets.

31. Then your son and the brave king of the Madras, like the rising and setting hills, received those assailants.

32. Bragging Shalya poured a shower of arrows on that chastiser of foes, king Yudhisthira like Indra pouring rain.

33. Also, having taken up his beautiful bow, the great king of the Kurus displayed various lessons received by him from Drona.

34. And beautifully, quickly, and with great skill, he made successive downpours of arrows. As he moved about in battle, none could mark anything in him.

35. The powerful Shalya and Yudhisthira wounded each other, like a couple of tigers fighting for a piece of meat.

36. Bhima fought with your son, the delighter in battle. Dhristadyumna, Satyaki and the two sons of Madri by Pandu received Shakuni and the other Kuru heroes around.

37. On account of your vile policy, O king, there again occurred a dreadful battle between your people and those of the foe, all of whom were actuated with the desire of victory.

38. Aiming at the gold-decked standard of Bhima, Duryodhana then, with a straight arrow, cut it off in that battle.

39. The beautiful standard of Bhimasena, adorned with many bells, dropped down, O giver of honors.

40. Again the king, with a sharp razor-faced arrow, cut off the beautiful bow of Bhima resembling the trunk of an elephant.

41. Gifted with great energy Bhima, who had been deprived of his bow, then displaying his prowess, struck on the chest of your son with a dart. Thereat your son sat down on the terrace of his car.

42. When Duryodhana fainted Vrikodara, with a razor-faced arrow, cut off the head of his driver from his trunk.

43. Deprived of their driver the horses, of Duryodhana's car, ran wildly on all sides, O Bharata, dragging the car after them, at which the Kurus bewailed loudly.

44. Then the great car-warrior Ashwathaman, and Kripa, and Kritavarman, followed that car, with a view to save your son.

45. Thereat the troops were exeedingly agitated. The followers of Duryodhana were terrified. At that time the wielder of Gandiva, drawing his bow, began to kill them with his arrows.

46. Then filled with rage, Yudhisthira rushed against the king of the Madras, himself driving his horses white as ivory and fleet as mind.

47. We then saw some thing wonderful in Yudhishthira, the son of Kunti, for though very mild by nature he then became highly terrific.

48. With eyes opened wide and body trembling in anger the son of Kunti killed hostile warriors in hundreds and thousands with sharp arrows.

49. Many soldiers were overthrown by him, O king, like mountain summits broken with thunder.

50. Striking down cars with steeds and drivers and standards and throwing down many car-warriors, Yudhisthira, without any help, began to sport there like a powerful wind dissipating masses of clouds.

51. Filled with anger, he killed horses with riders and horses without riders and the infantry by thousands in that battle, like Rudra destroying living creatures at the time of the universal dissolution.

52. Having made the field empty by discharging his arrows on all sides, Yudhisthira proceeded against the king of the Madras and said,—Wait, Wait.

53. Beholding the feats of that hero of terrible deeds, all your warriors were filled with fear. Shalya, however, rushed against him.

54. Both of them, in anger, blew their respective conchs. Returning and challenging each other, each then met the other.

55. Then Shalya enshrouded Yudhisthira with showers of arrows. Likewise the son of Kunti covered the king of the Madras with showers of arrows.

56. Then those two heroes, Shalya and Yudhisthira, wounded in that battle with each other's arrows and bathed in blood, looked,

57. Like a blossoming Salmali and a Kinsuka. Resplendent and invincible in battle, those two illustrious warriors sent up loud war-cries.

58—59. Beholding them both, the soldiers could not decide which of them would win. Whether the son of Pritha would enjoy the Earth, having killed the king of the Madras, or, Shalya, having slain the son of Pandu, would bestow the Earth on Duryodhana, could not be decided, O Bharata, by the warriors present there. King Yudhisthira, in the course of that battle, placed his enemy to his right.

60. Then Shalya shot a century of best arrows at Yudhisthira. With another sharp arrow, he cut off the latter's bow.

61. Taking up another bow, Yudhishthira struck Shalya with three hundred arrows and cut off the latter's bow with a razor-faced arrow.

62. The son of Pandu then killed the four horses of his antagonist with some straight arrows. With two other very sharp arrows he then cut off the two Parshni drivers of Shalya.

63. Then with another shining, well-tempered, and sharp arrow, he cut off the standard of Shalya who stood before him. Then, O chastiser of foes, the army of Duryodhana were scattered.

64. The son of Drona, at this time, speedily proceeded towards the king of the Madras who had been reduced to that strait, and quickly taking him up on his own car, fled away.

65. After the two had gone for a moment, they heard Yudhisthira cry aloud. Stopping, the ruler of the Madras he then got upon another well equipt car.

66. That best of cars had a rattle deep as the muttering of the clouds. Well furnished with weapons and instruments and all kinds of utensils, that vehicle made the hairs of foes stand erect.

CHAPTER XVII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Taking up another very strong bow the king of the Madras struck Yudhisthira and roared like a lion.

2. Then that best of Kshatriyas, of great energy, poured upon all the Kshatriyas showers of arrows even like Indra pouring rain in torrents.

3. Piercing Satyaki with ten arrows and Bhima with three and Sahadeva with as many, he assailed Yudhisthira greatly.

4. And he assailed all the other great bowmen with their horses and cars and elephants with many arrows like hunters assailing elephants with burning rods.

5. That foremost of car-warriors destroyed elephants and elephant-riders, horses and horse-men, and cars and car-warriors.

6. And he cut off the arms of combatants holding weapons and the standards of cars, and filled the earth with (slain) warriors like the sacrificial altar with blades of Kuca grass.

7. Then the Pandus, the Panchalas, and the Somakas, encompassed angrily that hero who was thus killing their soldiers like all-destroying Death.

8. Bhimasena, and the grandson of Shini and those two foremost of men, the two sons of Madri surrounded that hero while he was fighting with the highly powerful (Pandava) king. And all of them challenged him to battle.

9. Then those heroes, O king, having obtained the king of the Madras, that best of warriors in battle, opposed that first of men in that encounter and began to strike him with powerful winged arrows.

10. Potected by Bhimasena, and the two sons of Madri, and Krishna the royal son of Dharma struck the king of the Madras on the chest with powerful winged arrows.

11. Then beholding the king of the Madras greatly wounded with arrows in that battle, the car-warriors and other combatants of your army, clad in mail and armed with weapons, surrounded him on all sides at Duryodhan's behest.

12. The king of the Madras at this time quickly struck Yudhisthira with seven arrows in that battle. The great son of Rritha, O king, in return, struck his foe with nine arrows in that dreadful battle.

13. Those two great car-warriors, *viz.*, Shalya and Yudhisthira, began to cover each other with arrows bathed in oil and shot off bows drawn to their ears.

14. Those two best of kings, both gifted with great strength, both incapable of being defeated by foes and both foremost of car-warriors looking at each other's loop-holes, quickly and deeply struck each other's shafts.

15. The loud noise of their bows, bow-strings, and palms, resembled that of Indra's thunder as those great car-warriors showered upon each other innumerable arrows.

16. They moved about in the field of battle like two young tigers in the deep forest fighting for a piece of meat. Elated with the pride of prowess, they wounded each other like a couple of infuriate elephants of powerful tusks.

17. Displaying his vigor, then the illustrious king of the Madras struck the heroic Yudhishthira of terrible might in the chest with an arrow effulgent like the fire or the sun.

18. Deeply struck, O king, that best of Kurus, the illustrious Yudhishthira, then struck the king of the Madras with a well aimed arrow and was filled with joy.

19. Regaining his consiousness within a moment that foremost of kings viz., Shalya, powerful like Indra with eyes reddened in wrath, quickly struck the son of Pritha with a hundred arrows.

20. At this the illustrious son of Dharma, filled with rage, quickly struck Shalya's chest and then, without losing a moment, struck his golden mail with six arrows.

21. Filled with joy, the king of the Madras then, drawing his bow and having discharged many arrows, at last cut off, with a pair of razor-faced shafts, the bow of his royal foe.

22. The illustrious Yudhishthira then, taking a new and more powerful bow in that battle, struck Shalya with many keen pointed arrows from all sides like Indra striking the Asura Namuchi.

23. Cutting off the golden coats of mail of both Bhima and king Yudhishthira with nine arrows, the illustrious Shalya then struck the arms of both of them.

24. With another razor-faced arrow effulgent like the fire or the sun, he then cut off the bow of Yudhishthira. At this time Kripa, with six arrows, killed the king's driver who fell down in front of the car.

25. The king of the Madras then killed with four arrows the four horses of Yudhisthira. Having slain the horses of the king, the great Shalya then began to kill the soldiers of the royal son of Dharma.

26. When the (Pandava) king had been reduced to that plight, the great Bhimasena, quickly cutting off the bow of the Madra king with an arrow of great force, struck the king himself with a couple of arrows.

27. With another arrow he cut off the head of Shalya's driver from his trunk the middle of which was encased in mail. Beside himself with anger, Bhimasena next killed without a moment's delay, the four horses of his enemy.

28. That foremost of all bowmen, viz., Bhima, then covered with a hundred arrows that hero who, gifted with great energy, was moving about alone in the field. Sahadeva, the son of Madri, did the same. Beholding Shalya stupefied with those arrows, Bhima cut off his armour with other arrows.

29. His armour having been cut off by Bhimasena, the great king of the Madras, taking up a sword and a shield adorned with a thousand stars, leaped down from his car and rushed towards the son of Kunti. Cutting off the shaft of Nakula's car, the powerful Shalya rushed towards Yudhisthira.

30. Beholding him rushing with great force towards the king even like the Destroyer himself rushing in anger, Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin and the (five) sons of Draupadi and the grandson of Sini suddenly advanced towards him.

31. Then the illustrious Bhima cut off with ten arrows the matchless shield of that hero. With another broad-headed arrow he cut off the sword also of that warrior. Filled with joy at this, he cried aloud in the midst of the army.

32. Beholding that feat of Bhima, all the foremost car-warriors among the Pandavas were filled with joy. Laughing aloud, they uttered terrible roars and blew their moon-white conchs.

33. At that terrible noise the army, protected by your warriors, were depressed, covered with sweat, bathed in blood, exceedingly melancholy, and dispirited.

34. Assailed by those foremost of Pandava warriors headed by Bhimasena, the king of the Madras proceeded towards Yudhisthira, like a lion going to catch a deer.

35. Deprived of his car and horses, king Yudhisthira, looked like a blazing fire for the anger with which he was then excited. Beholding the king of the Madras before him, he rushed towards that foe with great force.

36. Recollecting the words of Govinda, he quickly set his heart on the destruction of Shalya. Indeed, king Yudhishthira, staying on his steedless and driverless car, waited to take up a dart.

37. Beholding that feat of Shalya and thinking that the person who had been alloted to him as his share was not yet killed the son of Pandu firmly made up his mind to do what Indra's yonger brother had advised him to do.

38. King Yudhishthira took up a dart whose handle was made of gold and set with gems and which was bright like gold. Rolling his wide open eyes, he looked at the king of the Madras, his heart filled with anger.

39. Thus looked at, O god among men, by that king of pure and sinless soul the king of the Madras was not reduced to ashes. This was indeed wonderful, O monarch.

40. The chief of the Kurus then hurled with great force at the king of the Madras that blazing dart of beautiful and fierce handle set with gems and corals.

41. All the Kauravas beheld that blazing dart sending forth scintillations of fire as it passed through the sky after having been dischargd with great force, like a large meteor dropping from the sky at the end of the cycle.

42. King Yudhishthira, in that battle, carefully discharged that dart which resembled the Death-night armed with the dreadful noose or the dreadful mother of Yama himself, and which like the Brahmana's curse, was of sure effect.

43. Carefully the sons of Pandu had always worshipped that weapon with scents, garland, seats and the best food and drinks. That weapon seemed to burn like the Samvartaka fire and was as dreadful as a rite performed according to the Atharvan of Angirasa.

44. Made by Tashtri the celestial architect for the use of Shiva it destroyed the vital airs and the bodies of all foes. It could destroy by its force the earth, the sky and all the reservoirs of water and animals of every description.

45. Adorned with bells, flags, gems, diamonds, lapis lazuli and equipt with a golden handle, the celestial Architect himself had made it with great care after having practised many vows. This fatal weapon was destructive of all haters of Brahma.

46. Having inspired it with many mantras, and impregnated it with terrible velocity by the exercise of great power and care, king Yudhishthira hurled it by the best path for the destruction of the king of the Madras.

47. Saying in a loud voice the words,—"you are killed, O wretch"—the king hurled it, even as Rudra had, in days of yore, shot his arrow for the destruction of the Asura Andhaka, extending his strong arm adorned with a beautiful hand, and dancing in anger.

48. Shalya cried aloud and tried to catch that excellent dart of great energy hurled by Yudhishthira with all his strength

even as a fire leaps forth for catching the clarified butter poured over it.

49. Cutting through his very vitals and his fair and broad chest, that dart entered the Earth as easily as it would water without the slightest obstruction and carrying away the world-wide reputation of Shalya.

50. Covered with the blood that came out of his nostrils, eyes, ears and mouth, and that which flowed from his wound, he looked like the huge Krauncha mountain when it was pierced by Skanda.

51. His armour having been cut off by Yudhishthira the illustrious Shalya, strong as Indra's elephant, stretching his arms, dropped down on the Earth, like a mountain summit clapped by a thunder-bolt.

52. Stretching his arms, the king of the Madras fell down on the Earth, with his face directed towards king Yudhishthira like Indra's pole dropped down on the ground.

53. Like a dear wife advancing to receive her dear husband about to fall on her breast, the Earth as if, out of affection, rose a little for receiving that best of men as he fell down with wounded limbs covered with blood.

54. Having enjoyed long the Earth like a dear wife, the powerful Shalya, now to sleep on the Earth's breast, embraced her.

55. Slain by Dharma's son in a fair fight, Shalya shone like fire lying extinguished on the sacrificial altar.

56. Though deprived of his weapons and standard, and though his heart had been cut and slain still his body was not shorn of beauty.

57. Taking up his bow resplendant like Indra's bow then Yudhishthira began to destroy his foes in that battle like Garuda killing snakes. With the greatest speed he began to cut off the bodies of his enemies with the keen arrows.

58. Your troops were entirely covered with the showers of arrows that the son of Pritha then shot. Possessed with fear and with eyes shut, they began to strike one another. With their bodies bathed in blood they were deprived of their offensive and defensive arms and divested of their vital-breaths.

59. Upon the fall of Shalya, the youthful younger brother of the king of the Madras who was equal to his brother in every accomplishment, and who was a great car-warrior, proceeded against Yudhishthira.

60. Invincible in battle and desirous of satisfying the last dues of his brother, that foremost of men struck speedily the Pandava with many arrows.

61. King Yudhishthira immediately struck him with six arrows. He then cut off the bow and the standard of his antagonist with two razor-faced arrows.

62. Then with a blazing and keen arrow of great power and broad head, he cut off the head of his foe who stood before him.

63. That head adorned with ear-rings was seen to fall down from the car like a denizen of heaven falling down on the exhaustion of his virtues.

64. Beholding his headless trunk, bathed in blood, fallen down from his car, the Kaurava troops were dispersed.

65. Indeed, upon the destruction of the younger brother of the Madras clad in beautiful armour, the Kurus bewailed and fled away quickly.

66. Beholding Shalya's younger brother killed your troops, hopeless of their lives, were pursued by the fear of the Pandavas and fled, coated with dust.

67. Then Shini's grandson Satyaki, O foremost of Bharatas, shooting his arrows, proceeded against the frightened Kauvaras in the course of their flight.

68. Then Hridika's son, O king, quickly and fearlessly opposed that invincible warrior, that irresistible and powerful bowman, as he proceeded against them.

69. Those two illustrious and invincible Vrishni heroes, Hridika's son and Satyaki, encountered each other like two enraged lions.

70. Both effulgent like the sun, they covered each other with burning arrows resplendent like the rays of the sun.

71. The arrows of those two Vrishni chiefs, shot off their bows, appeared like swiftly-coursing insects in the sky.

72. Piercing Satyaki with ten arrows and his horses with three, the son of Hridika cut off his bow with a straight arrow.

73. Casting off his bow which was thus cut off, that heroe, quickly took up another that was stronger than the first.

74. Having taken up that best of bows, that first of bowmen struck the son of Hridika with ten arrows on the chest.

75. Then cutting off his car and the shaft of that car with many well-aimed arrows, Satyaki quickly killed the horses of his antagonist and his two Parshni drivers.

76. O Lord, Sharadwat, seeing Hridika's son made carless, the valiant Kripa

then, the son Sharadwat of speedily carried him away, on his car.

77. The king of the Madras being slain and upon Kritavarma having been made carless, the entire army of Duryodhana fled away from the battle field.

78. At this time the army was covered with a cloud of dust. We could not percive anything. The major portion, however, of your army were killed. They, who remained alive, took to their heels from the battle-field.

79. Soon it was seen that the cloud of dust was suppressed, O foremost of men, on account of the streams of blood that flowed on all sides.

80. Then seeing his army routed Duryodhana, alone, resisted all the Parthas advancing furiously.

81. Beholding the Pandavas on their cars as also Dhrishtadyumna the son of Prishata and the invincible Satyaki, the Kuru king struck them with sharp arrows.

82. The enemy' (at that time) could not approach him, like mortals fearing to approach the Death standing before them. Meanwhile the son of Hridika, riding upon another car, advanced there.

83. The great car-warrior Yudhishthira then quickly killed the four horses of Kritavarman with four arrows, and struck the son of Gotama with six broad-headed powerful arrows.

84. Then Ashwatthaman, taking upon his car, the son of Hridika who had been deprived of his horses by the (Pandava) king, took him away from Yudhishthira's presence.

85. The son of Sharadwata struck Yudhishthira in return with eight arrows, and his horses also with eight keen arrows.

86. Thus, O king, the battle raged on all sides on account of the evil policy of yourself and your son, O Bharata.

87. After the destruction of that foremost of bow men on the field of battle by that foremost of Kuru's race, the Parthas, beholding Shalya slain, in a body filled with great joy, blew their conchs.

88. And all of them praised Yudhishthira in that battle, even as the celestials, in days of yore, had praised Indra after the destruction of Vritra. And they beat and blew various kinds of musical instruments, making the Earth resound on all sides.

CHAPTER XVIII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After the destruction of Shalya, O king, the followers of the Madra king, numbering seventeen hundred brave car-warriors, proceeded for battle with great force.

2. Duryodhana, riding upon a huge mountain-like elephant, with an umbrella held over his head, and fanned with white chowries, forbade the Madraka warriors, saying,—"Do not proceed, Do not proceed!"

3. Though repeatedly forbidden by Duryodhana, those heroes, desirous of killing Yudhishthira, entered into the Pandava army.

4. Those brave warriors, O king, loyal to Duryodhana, twanging their bows loudly fought with the Pandavas.

5—6. In the meantime hearing that Shalya had been killed and that Yudhishthira had been assailed by the mighty car-warriors of the Madrakas devoted to the well-being of the Madraka king, the great car-warrior Partha came there, stretching his bow Gandiva, and filling the Earth with the rattle of his car.

7—8. Then Arjuna, Bhima, and the two sons of Madri by Pandu, and that foremost of men, Satyaki, and the (five) sons of Draupadi, and Dhrishtadyumna, and Sikhandin, and the Panchalas and the Somakas, desirous of rescuing Yudhishthira, encircled him on all sides.

9. Having taken their positions round the king, the Pandavas, those foremost of men, began to agitate the enemy's army like Makaras agitating the ocean. Indeed, they made your army tremble like a mighty tempest shaking the trees.

10. Like the great river Ganges agitated by a hostile wind, the Pandava army, O king, once more were exceedingly agitatated.

11. Making that powerful army tremble, the illustrious and mighty car-warriors (viz., the Madrakas), all shouted loudly, saying, —"Where is that king Yudhishthira?"

12. Why are not his valiant brothers, *viz.*, the Pandavas, to be seen here? What has become of the highly energetic as also of the great car-warrior Sikhandin? Where are Dhrishtadyumna and the grandson of Sini and those great car-warriors, *viz.*, the (five sons of Draupadi)!

13. Thereat those great car-warriors, *viz.*, the sons of Draupadi, began to kill the followers of the Madra king who were uttering those words and fighting vigorously.

14. In that battle, some, amongst your troops, were crushed by car-wheels and some slain by huge standards.

15. Beholding, however, the heroic Pandavas, the brave warriors of your army, O Bharata, though forbidden by your son, still proceeded against them.

16. Speaking mildly Duryodhana tried to prevent those warriors from fighting with the foe. No great car-warrior, however, amongst them carried out his order.

17—18. Then Sakuni, the eloquent son of the Gandhara king, O king, said to Duryodhana these words :—How is this that we are standing here, while the Madraka army is being killed before our eyes? When you, O Bharata, art here, it does not look well!

19. The contract was that all of us should fight in a body. Why then, O king, do you suffer our foes to kill thus our soldiers?|

Duryodhana said :—

20. Though prevented by me before, they did not carry out my order. These men, in a body, have entered into the Pandava army.

Sakuni said :—

21. When worked up with rage in battle, brave warriors do not obey the behests of their leaders. You should not be angry with those men. This is not the time to act indifferently.

22. We shall, therefore, all of us, in a body with our cars and horses and elephants, proceed, for rescuing those great bowmen, *viz.*, the followers of the Madra king.

23. O king, we shall protect one another very carefully. Accepting Shakuni's view all the Kauravas then proceeded where the Madras were.

24. Also encircled by a large force Duryodhana proceeded against the foe, uttering leonine shouts and causing the Earth to resound with that noise.

25. Slay, cut, seize, strike, cut off—these were the words that were heard then, O king, among those tropps.

26. Meanwhile beholding in that battle the followers of the Madra king assailing them unitedly the Pandavas proceeded against them, arraying themselves in the Madhyama form.

27. Fighting hand to hand, O king, for a short time, those heroic warriors, *viz.*, the followers of the Madra king, were killed.

28. Then, whilst we were proceeding, the active Pandavas, in a body, completed the slaughter of the Madrakas, and filled with delight, sent up joyous shouts.

29. Then headless forms were seen all around. Large meteors fell down from the solar disc. The earth was covered with cars and broken yokes and axles and slain car-warriors and lifeless horses.

31. Horses, quick-coursing like the wind, and still attached to yokes of cars, were seen to drag car-warriors, O king, hither and thither on the field of battle.

32. Some horses were seen to drag cars with broken wheels, while some ran on all sides, carrying the broken cars.

33. Here and there also were seen horses hampered by their traces. Car-warriors dropped down like denizens of heaven on the exhaustion of their virtue.

34. When the brave followers of the Madra king were killed the great car-warriors of the Parthas, beholding a body of horse advancing towards them, rushed quickly towards it with a view to win victory.

35. Shooting their arrows and making various other kinds of noise mingled with the blare of their conchs, those warriors of sure aim, shook bows, and uttered leonine shouts.

36. Seeing then that large force of the Madra king killed as also their heroic king the entire army of Duryodhana once more fled away from the field.

37. Struck, O king, by those firm bowmen of the Pandavas, the Kuru army, filled with fear, fled away on all sides.

CHAPTER XIX.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. 'Upon the destruction of that great king and great car-warrior, that invincible hero, (viz., Shalya) in battle, your troops and sons almost all fled away from the field.

2. Indeed, upon the slaughter of that hero by the illustrious Yudhishthira your troops were like ship-wrecked merchants on the deep main without a raft to cross it.

3. After the destruction of the Madra king, O monarch, your troops, filled with fear and wounded with arrows, were like men having none to help them and desirous of a protector or a herd of deer assailed by a lion.

4. Like bulls deprived of their horns or elephants with tusks broken, your troops, defeated by Yudhisthira having no enemies, fled away at mid-day.

5. After the fall of Shalya, O king, none amongst your troops had the mind of either rallying the army or displaying his prowess.

6. O king we expressed that grief, which had been ours upon the fall of Bhishma, of Drona, and of the Suta's son, O Bharata.

7. Giving up hopes of success upon the fall of the great car-warrior Shalya, the Kuru army, with its heroes slain and exceedingly confused, were killed with keen arrows. Upon the destruction of the Madra king, O monarch, your warriors all fled away in fear.

8. Some on horse-back, some on elephants, some on cars, great car-warriors, and foot-soldiers, all fled away in fear.

9. Two thousand elephants, looking like hills, and capable of smiting, fled away, after Shalya's fall, goaded with hooks and toes.

10. Indeed O chief of the Bharatas, your soldiers fled on all sides. Struck with arrows, they were seen to run, breathing hard.

11. Beholding them defeated the Pandavas, filled with the desire of victory, pursued them.

12. The sound of arrows and the loud leonine roars and the blare of conchs, of heroic warriors were heard there.

13. Beholding the Kauravas agitated with fear and flying away, the Panchalas and the Pandavas addressed one another, saying,

14. To day the truthful king Yudhishthira, has defeated his enemies. Today Duryodhana has been divested of his splendour and royal prosperity.

15. Today, hearing of his son's death, Dhritarashtra, that king of men, will lose consciousness, lie down on the Earth, and feel the keenest pain.

16. Let him know today that the son of Kunti is the most powerful of all bowmen. Today that sinful and wicked-hearted king will blame his own self.

17. Let him recollect today the time and wholesome words of Vidura. Let him from this day wait upon the Parthas as their slave. Let that king today feel the grief that had been experienced by the sons of Pandu.

18. Let that king know today the greatness of Krishna. Let him hear today the terrible twang of Arjuna's bow in battle, as also the force of all his weapons, and the strength of his arms in fight.

19. Today he will know the dreadful power of the great Bhima when Duryodhana will be slain in battle like the Asura Vali by Indra.

20. Except Bhima there is none else in this world that can achieve that which Bhima accomplished by killing Dushasana.

21. Hearing of the death of the ruler of the Madras who was incapable of defeat by the very celestials, that king will know the prowess of Yudhisthira.

22. After the destruction of the heroic son of Suvala and of all the Gandharas he will know the strength, in battle of the two sons of Madri by Pandu.

23—24. Why will they not be victorious who have Dhananjaya for their warrior, as also Satyaki, and Bhimasena, and Dhrishtadyumna the son of Prishata, and the five sons of Draupadi, and the two sons of Madri, and the great bowman Shikhandin, and king Yudhishthira.

25. Why will they be not victorious who have for their protector Krishna, called Janarddana, the Protector of the universe? Why will they not be victorious who are righteous?

26—27. Who else than Yudhishthira the son of Pritha, who has Hrishikesha, the refuge of justice and glory for his protector, is competent to defeat in battle Bhishma, Drona and Karna and the king of the Madras and the other kings by hundreds and thousands.

28. Saying these words and filled with joy, the Srinjayas pursued your soldiers in that battle who had been exceedingly wounded with arrows.

29. Then Dhananjaya proceeded against the car-division of the foe. The two sons of Madri and the great car-warrior Satyaki proceeded against Shakuni.

30—31. Beholding them all flying quickly in fear of Bhimasena, Duryodhana, as if smiling, addressed his driver, saying,—Partha, who is there with his bow, is going before me. Take my horses to the back of the army.

32. Like the ocean that cannot go beyond its continents, Kunti's son Dhananjaya will never dare go before me if I stand in the rear.

33. Look, O driver, at this vast army that is pursued by the Pandavas! Behold this cloud of dust that has arisen on all sides on account of the motion of the troops.

34. Hear those various leonine roars that are so awful and loud. Therefore, O driver, move slowly and wait in the rear.

35—36. If I stay in battle and fight the Pandavas, my army, O driver, will rally and fight again vigorously.—Hearing these words of your son becoming a hero and a man of honor, the driver slowly drove his horses adorned with gold trappings.

37. One and twenty thousand foot-soldiers, deprived of elephants and horses and car-warriors, and who were ready to lose their lives, still stood for battle.

38. Born in different countries and coming from different towns, those warriors maintained their ground, desirous of gaining great fame.

39. The clash of those rushing warriors elated with joy was loud and exceedingly terrible.

40. Then Bhimasena, O king, and Dhrishtadyumna, the son of Prishata, opposed them with four-fold forces.

41. Other foot-soldiers, all actuated with the desire of victory, proceeded against Bhima, uttering loud cries and slapping their armpits, by the desire of going to heaven.

42. Filled with rage and invincible in battle those heroes, belonging to your party, approached Bhimasena, and cried aloud. They then spoke not to one another. Encircling Bhima in that battle, they began to strike him from all sides.

43. Encircled by that huge body of infantry and struck by them in that battle Bhima did not stir from where he stood and remained motionless like the Mainaka mountain.

44. His antagonists meanwhile, filled with rage, O monarch, tried to assail that great car-warrior of the Pandavas and opposed other combatants (that tried to rescue him).

45. Encountered by those warriors, Bhima became furious. And quickly getting down from his car, he proceeded on foot against them.

46. Taking up his massive mace adorned with gold, he began to kill your soldiers like the destroyer himself armed with his club.

47. The mighty Bhima, with his mace, crushed those twenty one thousand foot-soldiers who were deprived of cars and horses and elephants.

48. Having killed that strong army Bhima, of great prowess, showed himself with Dhrishtadyumna in his front.

49. The foot-soldiers, of your party thus slain, lay down on the ground, bathed in blood, like Karnikaras with their flowers struck down by a storm.

50. Adorned with garlands made of various kinds of flowers, and with diverse kinds of ear-rings, those combatants of various races, who had come from various kingdoms, lay down on the field, lifeless.

51. Covered with banners and standards, that large army of foot-soldiers looked fierce and terrible and lay prostrate on the field.

52. The great car-warriors, with their followers, that fought under Yudhishthira, all pursued your illustrious son Duryodhana.

53. Beholding your troops turn away from the battle, those great bowmen proceeded against Duryodhana, but they could not overcome him even as the ocean cannot go beyond its continents.

54. The prowess of your son was highly wonderful, since all the Parthas, in a body, could not transgress his single self.

55—56. Addressing his own army which had not fled far but which, wounded with arrows, were bent upon flying, Then Duryodhana said these words:—"I do not see a place on plain or mountain, where if you fly, the Pandavas will not pursue and kill you. What is the use then of flight?

57. The army of the Pandavas had been reduced in numbers. The two Krishnas are greatly wounded. If all of us make a stand, we will surely acquire victory.

58. If you fly away, in confusion, the sinful Pandavas will pursue you and kill you. If on the other hand we make a bold stand, it will do us good.

59. Listen, all ye Kshatriyas that are here. When Death always kills heroes and cowards alike what man is there so foolish that, calling himself a Kshatriya, will not fight.

60. It will be to our interest if we stay before the angry Bhimasena. Death in battle, while fighting in pursuance of the Kshatriya practices, leads to happiness.

61--62. Gaining victory, one obtains happiness here. If killed, one reaps great fruits in the other world. Ye Kauravas, there is no better path to heaven than that of battle. Killed in battle, you will in no time obtain all those regions of blessedness." Hearing those words of his, and applauding them highly, the Kuru kings once more rushed against the Pandavas for fighting with them.

63. Seeing them advancing quickly the Parthas, arrayed in order of battle, skilled in smiting, worked up with rage, and filled with the desire of victory, proceeded against them.

64. Stretching his bow Gandiva celebrated over the three worlds, the brave Dhananjaya proceeded on his car against the foe.

65. The two sons of Madri and Satyaki rushed against Shakuni, and the other Pandava heroes smilingly proceeded against your army.

CHAPTER XX.

(SHALYA PARVA) –*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. 'After the (Kuru) army had been gathered Shalya, the king of the Mlechhas, filled with rage, rushed against the large army of the Pandavas, riding on a gigantic elephant, with temporal juice trickling, looking like a hill, elated with pride, resembling Airavata himself, and capable of crushing large numbers of foes.

3. Shalya's animal was of a good breed, was always adored by Dhritarashtra's sons, and was properly equipped and properly trained for battle, O king, by persons well conversant with the science of elephant training. Riding on that elephant, that foremost of kings looked like the morning sun at the close of summer.

4. Riding that best of elephants, O king, he went against the Pandavas and began to strike them on all sides with keen and dreadful arrows resembling Indra's thunder in force.

5. While he discharged his arrows in that battle and killed the hostile warriors neither the Kauravas nor the Pandavas could mark any defect in him, even as the Daityas, O king, could not notice any in Vasava, the wielder of the thunder, in the days of yore while he killed them.

6. The Pandavas, the Somakas, and the Srinjayas, saw one elephant look like a thousand elephants moving around them as the enemies of the gods had in days of yore seen the elephant of Indra in battle.

7. Agitated by that animal, the hostile army looked life-less. Unable to stand in battle, they then fled away in great fear, crushing one another.

8. Then the huge army of the Pandavas, routed by king Shalya, suddenly fled on all sides unable to stand the vigor of that elephant.

9. Seeing the Pandava army routed and flying away quickly all your leading warriors worshipped king Shalya and blew their moon-white conchs.

10. Hearing the war-cries of the Kauravas uttered in joy and the blare of their conchs, the commander of the Pandava and the Srinjaya forces, viz., the Panchala prince Dhrishtadyumna could not, from wrath, bear it.

11. The illustrious Dhrishtadyumna then quickly proceeded for defeating that elephant, as the Asura Jambha had proceded aginst Airavata, the carrier of Indra, while he fought with Indra.

12. Beholding the king of the Pandavas proceed against him, Shalya, that foremost of kings, quickly urged his elephant, O king, for the destruction of Drupada's son.

13. Seeing the animal approaching the latter struck it with three best arrows, polished, keen, blazing, powerful and resembling fire itself in effulgence and force.

14. Then that illustrious hero struck the animal on the trunk with five other whetted and best arrows. Struck therewith, that prince of elephants, turning away from the battle, ran quickly away.

15. Suddenly checking that foremost of elephants which had been greatly wounded and compelled to retreat Shalya, however, caused it to turn back, and with hooks and keen lances urged it forward against the car of the Panchala king, pointing it out to the infuriate animal.

16. Beholding the animal rushing forcibly at him, the heroic Dhrishtadyumna, taking up a mace, quickly leaped down on the Earth from his car, his limbs benumbed with fear.

17. That huge elephant, meanwhile, suddenly crushing that gold-decked car with its horses and driver, raised it up in the air with his trunk and then dashed it down on the Earth.

18. Beholding the driver of Panchala king thus crushed by that best of elephants, Bhima and Shikandin and the grandson of

Shini rushed with great force against that animal.

19. With their arrows they quickly restrained that animal. Thus restrained by them in battle, the elephant began to tremble.

20. Meanwhile king Shalya began to discharge arrows like the Sun shedding his rays on all sides. Struck with those arrows, the (Pandava) car-warriors began to fly away.

21. Beholding that feat of Shalya, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas and the Matsyas. O king, bewailed aloud in that battle. All those foremost of men however, surrounded the animal entirely.

22. Then, taking up his mace resembling the crest of a mountain, the brave Panchalas appeared there. Fearlessly, O king, that hero, that striker of foes, rushed quickly against the elephant.

23. The active 'prince of the Panchala, approaching, began to strike with his mace that animal which was huge as a hill and which shed temporal juice like a mass of pouring clouds.

24. Its trunk cut open, the animal cried aloud; and vomiting enough blood, the animal, huge as a hill, suddenly dropped down as a mountain falling down during an earthquake.

25. While that best of elephants was falling down, and while your son's army were bewailing at the spectacle, that best of warriors among the Shinis cut off the head of king Shalya with a sharp and broad-headed arrow.

26. His head having been sundered by the Satwata hero, Shalya dropped down on the Earth along with his best of elephants, like a mountain summit suddenly clapped by the thunder-bolt discharged by the best of the celestials.

CHAPTER XXI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. After the heroic Shalya, that flower of the court, had been killed your army were dispersed like a huge tree broken by the force of the storm.

2. Seeing the army routed, the great car-warrior, Kritavarma, opposed the hostile force in that battle.

3. Seeing the Satwata hero, O king, standing in battle like a hill though struck with arrows (by the foe), the Kuru heroes, who had fled away, rallied and came back.

4. Then, O king, an encounter took place between the Pandavas and the Kurus who were determined upon meeting with death.

5. Wonderful was that fierce encounter which took place between the Satwata hero and his foes, since alone he opposed the invincible army of the Pandavas.

6. Seeing this most difficult feat friends, filled with delight, set up leonine shouts that seemed to reach the very heavens.

7. At those sounds the Panchalas, O foremost of Bharata's race, were filled with fear. Then Satyaki, the grandson of Shini, came there.

8. Approaching the powerful king Kshemakirti, Satyaki killed him with seven keen arrows.

9. Then the intelligent son of Hridika, rushed quickly against the best of Shinis, that mighty-armed warrior, as the latter came discharging his whetted shafts.

10. Those two bowmen, those two foremost of car-warriors roared like lions and met each other, both being armed with best of weapons.

11. The Pandavas, the Panchalas, and the other warriors, witnessed that terrible encounter between the two heroes.

12. Those two Vrishni and Andhaka heroes, like two elephants filled with delight, struck each other with long arrows and arrows with calf-toothed heads.

13. Moving about in various ways the son of Hridika and that foremost of Shini's race soon covered each other with showers of arrows.

14. The arrows discharged forcibly from the bows of the two Vrishni heroes were seen by us in the sky to resemble flights of quick-coursing insects.

15. Approaching the powerful Satyaki of true prowess, the son of Hridika struck the four horses of the former with four keen arrows.

16. Enraged at this like an elephant struck with a lance, the long-armed Satyaki struck Kritavarman with eight best arrows.

17. Then Kritavarman struck Satyaki with three arrows whetted on stone and shot off his bow drawn to its fullest stretch and then cut of his bow with another arrow.

18. Casting off his broken bow, that Shini heroe quickly took up another with an arrow set on it.

19—20. Having taken up that best of bows and stringed it, that foremost of all bowmen, that warrior of great energy, intelligence and strength, unable to bear the cutting of his bow by Kritavarman, quickly and furiously rushed against the latter.

21. With ten keen arrows that Shini chief then struck the driver, the horses, and the standard of Kritavarman.

22—23. At this, O king, the great bowman and car-warrior Kritavarman, beholding his gold-decked car made driverless and horseless, was filled with rage. Taking up a pointed lance, he discharged it with all might at that best of Shini's race, desirous of killing him.

24. Striking that lance with many keen arrows, Satyaki sundered it off into pieces and caused it to fall down. Stupifying Kritavarman of Madhu's race with another broad-headed arrow he then struck Kritavarman on the chest.

25. Deprived of his horses and driver in that battle by Yuyudhana, skilled in weapons, Kritavarman came down on the Earth.

26. The heroic Kritavarman, having been deprived of his car by Satyaki in that single combat, all the (Kaurava) soldiers were possessed by a great fear.

27. A mighty fear overtook your sons, when Kritavarman was thus made steedless and driverless and carless.

28. Beholding that chastiser of foes made steedless and driverless, Kripa, O king, rushed at that best of Shini's race, desirous of killing him.

29. Taking Kritavarman upon his car before all the bowmen, the mighty-armed Kripa took him away from the battle-field.

30. After Kritavarman had been made carless and the grandson of Shini had grown powerful on the field, the entire army of Duryodhana took to their heels.

31. The enemy, however, did not see it for the Kuru army was then covered with a cloud of dust. All your warriors fled, O king, except king Duryodhana.

32. Beholding his own army thus routed he quickly rushed and assailed the victorious enemy, alone opposing them all.

33—34. Filled with rage, that invincible warrior assailed with keen arrows all the Pandus, and Dhrishtadyumna the son of Prishata, and Shikhandin, and the sons of Draupadi, and the large numbers of the Panchalas, and the Kaikeyas, and the Somakas.

35. With strong determination your powerful son stood in battle, even as a blazing and mighty fire on the sacrificial platform purified with mantras, king Duryodhana moved in the field, in that battle.

36. His enemies could not approach him then, like creatures unable to approach the Death. Then the son of Hridika came there, on another car.

CHAPTER XI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Filled with the courage of despair, that best of car-warriors, O king viz, your son, looked resplendent on his car in that battle like Rudra himself.

2. With the thousands of arrows shot by him, the Earth was completely covered. He drenched his enemies with showers of arrows like the clouds pouring rain on mountain breasts.

3. There was then not a man amongst the Pandavas in that great battle, or a horse, or an elephant, or a car, who or which was not struck with Duryodhana's arrows.

4. O king, amongst the warriors every one, O Bharata, was struck by your son with his arrows.

5. The Pandava army was then covered with the arrows of that great warrior even as a army is covered with the dust it raises while marching for battle.

6. The Earth then, O king, was as if converted into one sheet of arrows by your son Duryodhana, that bowman endued with great lightness of hand.

7. Amongst those thousands of warriors on the field, of your side or that of the enemy, it appeared as if Duryodhana was then the only man.

8. The prowess displayed by your son was highly wonderful, since the Parthas, even in a body, could not approach him who was single.

9. He struck Yudhishthira, O best of Bharata's race, with a hundred arrows, and Bhimasena with seventy, and Sahadeva with seven.

10. And he struck Nakula with sixty four, and Dhrishtadyumna with five, and the sons of Draupadi with seven, and

Satyaki with three arrows. With a broad-headed arrow, he then, O king, cut off the bow of Sahadeva.

11. Casting off that broken bow, the heroic son of Madri, took up another formidable bow, and rushing against the king, viz., Duryodhana struck him with ten arrows in that battle.

12. The great and brave bowman Nakula then struck the king with nine terrible sarrows and uttered a loud war-cry.

13. Satyaki struck the king with a single straight shaft; the sons of Draupadi struck him with seventy three and king Yudhishthira struck him with five. And Bhimasena assailed the king with eighty arrows.

14. Though struck thus from all sides with numerous arrows by those illustrious warriors, Duryodhana still, O king, did not waver, in the presence of all the soldiers assembled there.

15. The quickness, the skill, and the prowess of that illustrious warrior excelled those of every man.

16. Meanwhile the Dhartarashtras, O king, who had not fled far away, beholding the king, rallied and returned there, clad in mail.

17. The noise made by them when they returned was exceedingly awful, like the roar of the surging deep during the rainy season.

18. Approaching their invinciible king in that battle, those great bowmen rushed against the Pandavas for fight.

19. The son of Drona opposed in that battle the angry Bhimasena.

20. With the arrows, O king, that were shot in that battle, all the points of the horizon were completely covered, so that the brave warriors could not distinguish the cardinal from the subsidiary points of the compass.

21. As regards Ashwatthaman and Bhimasena, O Bharata, both of them performed wonderful feats. Both of them were invincible in battle. The arms of both contained marks of bow-string for having repeatedly drawn the same. Opposing each other, they fought on, frightening the entire universe.

22. The heroic Shakuni struck Yudhishthira in that battle. Having killed the four horses of the king the powerful son of Suvala uttered a loud roar, making all the soldiers tremble with fear.

23. Meanwhile the valiant Sahadeva carried away the heroic but defeated king on his car from that battle.

24. Then riding on another car, returned king Yudhishthira and having pierced Shakuni at first with nine arrows, once more struck him with five. And that best of all bowmen then sent up a loud roar.

25. That battle presented a wonderful spectacle. It filled the spectators with delight and was praised by the Siddhas and the Charanas.

26. Heroic Uluka rushed against the mighty bowman Nakula, in that battle, discharging showers of arrows from all sides.

27. The heroic Nakula, however, in that battle opposed the son of Shakuni with a dense shower of arrows from every side.

28. Both those heroes were born in high family and both were great car-warriors. They were seen to fight with each other, each enraged with the other.

29. Similarly Kritavarman, O king, fighting with the grandson of Shini, that scorcher of foes, shone like Shakra fighting with the Asura Vala.

30. Having cut off Dhrishtadyumna's bow in that battle, Duryodhana struck his bowless antagonist with keen arrows.

31. Then, in that battle, having taken up a formidable bow, Dhrishtadyumna fought with the king before all the bowmen.

32. The encounter between those two heroes was exceedingly dreadful, O best of Bharata's race, like that between two wild and infuriate elephants with temporal juice trickling down.

33. Worked up with rage in that battle, the heroic Gautama struck the mighty sons of Draupadi with many straight arrows.

34. The encounter that took place between him and those five resembled that which takes place between a man and his five senses. It was awful and fierce and no party showed any coesideration for the other.

35. The five sons of Draupadi assailed Kripa like the senses afflicting a foolish man. He, on the other hand, fighting with them, opposed them vigorously.

36. That battle between him and them was indeed wonderful because it resembled the struggles, O king, between men and their senses.

37. Men fought with men, elephants with elephants, horses with horses, and care warriors with car-warriors. Once mor-,

O king, that encounter became general and dreadful.

38. Here an encounter was beautiful, there another was dreadful, and there another was exceedingly fierce. O lord, many dreadful encounters took place in course of that battle.

39. Belonging to both armies and encountering one another, those chastisers of foes struck and killed one another in that dreadful battle.

40. A thick cloud of dust was raised by the cars and the animals. Thick dust was also raised by the running of the horses, a dust that was carried from one place to another by the wind.

41. A dust, thick as an evening cloud, was caused in the sky by the wheels of cars and the breaths of the elephants.

42. On that dust being raised and the sun himself {hidden therewith, the Earth became shrouded, and the heroic and great car-warriors were not visible.

43. That dust disappeared and everything became clear when the Earth, O best of the Bharatas, was covered with the blood of heroes.

44—45. When that dense and awful cloud of dust was put down there were seen many single encounters, O Bharata, that the heroes fought at the noon each according to his strength and his rank. They were all exceedingly fierce. The sheen of the weapons in those encounters, O king, appeared full in view.

46. Loud noise, of the falling shafts in that battle, resembled that of a vast forest of bamboos while burning on every side.

CHAPTER XXIII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. During the progress of that terrible and awful battle, the army of your son were routed by the Pandavas.

2. Rallying their great car-warriors, however, with vigorous exertions, your sons continued to fight with the Pandava army.

3—4. The Kuru warriors, seeking your son's welfare, suddenly came back. Upon their return, the battle once more became fearful, between your warriors and those of the foe, resembling that between the gods and the Asuras in the days of yore. Neither amongst the enemies nor amongst your people was there a single warrior who fled away from the field.

5. The warriors fought, knowing one another by the names they uttered. A great onslaught took place there.

6—7. Filled with great anger and desirous of defeating the Dhartarashtras and their king in that battle, king Yudhishthira struck the son of Sharadwata with three gold winged arrows whetted on stone and next killed with four others the four horses of Kritavarman.

8. Then Ashwatthaman carried away the celebrated son of Hridika. Sharadwat's son struck Yudhishthira in return with eight arrows.

9. Then king Duryodhana sent seven hundred cars to the place where king Yudhishthira was fighting.

10. Those cars, driven by excellent warriors and quick-coursing like the wind or thought, rushed in that battle against the car of Kunti's son.

11. Encircling Yudhishthira on all sides they made him invisible with their arrows like clouds hiding the sun from the view.

12. Then the Pondava heroes, led by Shikhandin, beholding king Yudhishthira assailed in that way by the Kauravas, were filled with rage and unable to put up with it.

13. Desirous of rescuing Yudhishthira, the son of Kunti, they came there on their cars possessed of great speed and adorned with rows of bells.

14. Then took place an awful battle, in which blood flowed as water, between the Pandavas and the Kurus, that increased the denizens of Yama's region.

15. Killing those seven hundred hostile car-warriors of the Kuru army, the Pandavas and the Panchalas once more resisted (the whole Kuru army).

16. There took place a fierce encounter between your son and the Pandavas. We had never before seen or heard of its like.

17—18. During the onset of that battle in which no consideration was shown by any party for another, and while the warriors of your army and those of the foe were being killed quickly, the combatants were all shouting and blowing their conchs. The bowmen were roaring and uttering loud noises of diverse kinds.

19. The very vitals of the combatants were being struck, during that fight and the troops, O sire, desirous of victory, were rushing with speed.

20. Everything on earth was undergoing a woeful destruction, during that battle when numberless ladies of birth and beauty were being made widows.

21. During the progress of that fierce encounter in which the warriors fought without any consideration for friends and foes, evil omens appeared, presaging the destruction of everything.

22. The earth, with her mountains and forests, shook making a loud noise. Meteors, like burning brands equipt with handles, dropped from the sky, O king, on every side of the earth as if from the solar disc.

23. There blew a hurricane on all sides, carrying away hard pebbles along its lower course. The elephants shed profuse tears and trembled greatly.

24. Disregarding all those fierce and awful omens, the Kshatriyas, consulting with one another, cheerfully stood on the field of Kurukshetra, desirous of going to heaven.

25—26. Then Shakuni, the son of the Gandhara king, said,—"Fight you all in front! I, however, will kill the Pandavas from behind!"—Then the active Madraka warriors, amongst those on our side that were advancing, were filled with joy and uttered various cries. Others also did the same.

27. The invincible and sure-armed Pandavas, once more coming against us, shook their bows and enshrouded us with showers of arrows.

28. The army of the Madrakas then were killed by the foe. Beholding this, the troops of Duryodhana once more fled from the battle.

29—30. The mighty king of the Gandharas, however, once more said these words:—"Stop, ye sinful wretches, fight with the foe. What use is there of flight." At that time, O foremost of Bharata's race, the king of the Gandharas had full ten thousand horsemen capable of fighting with bright lances.

31. During the onset of that great carnage, Shakuni, aided by the force, displayed his valor and assailed the Pandava army at the rear, killing it with his keen arrows.

32. The huge force of the Pandus then, O king, were dispersed even as a mass of clouds on all sides by a powerful wind.

33—34. Then beholding his own army routed, Yudhishthira coolly urged the mighty Sahadeva, saying,—"Yonder the son of Suvala, afflicting our rear, stands clad in mail. He kills our forces. Behold that wicked man, O son of Pandu.

35. Helped by the sons of Draupadi proceed towards him and kill Shakuni, the son of Suvala. Supported by the Panchalas, O sinless one, I will meanwhile kill the car-force of the enemy.

36—38. Let all the elephants and all the horse and three thousand foot go with you. Helped by these, slay Shakuni." At this seven hundred elephants ridden by bowmen, and five thousand horse, and the valiant Sahadeva, and three thousand foot-soldiers, and the son of Draupadi, all proceeded against invincible Shakuni.

39. However, O king, overpowering the Pandavas and longing for victory, Suvala's son, of great valour, began to slay their forces from the back.

40. The horsemen, beside themselves with rage, of the Pandavas penetrated the division of Suvala's son, overpowering the latter's car-warriors.

41. Those heroic horsemen, staying in the midst of their own elephants, enshrouded the large host of Suvala's son with showers of arrows.

42. On account of your evil counsels, O king, a dreadful battle took place in which maces and lances were used and in which heroes only took part.

43. The twang of bows was no longer heard there, for all the car-warriors stood there as spectators. At that time no difference could be seen between the opposing parties.

44. Both the Kurus and the Pandavas, O foremost of Bharatas, saw the darts, shot off heroic arms, pass like meteors through the sky.

45. The entire sky, O king, covered with falling and bright swords, appeared highly beautiful.

46. The view presented, O best of the Bharatas, by the lances hurled all around, was like that of swarms of locusts in the sky.

47. Horses, with limbs covered with blood on account of wounds inflicted by horsemen themselves struck with arrows, dropped down on all sides in hundreds and thousands.

48. They all remained huddled together. Many of them were wounded and many vomitted blood. A thick darkness set in there when the troops were covered with a cloud of dust.

49. When that darkness covered everything, O king, we saw those brave heroes, horses and men move away from that spot.

50. Others dropped down on the earth vomiting blood profusely. Many warriors, entangled with one another by their locks, could not move.

51. Many powerful heroes dragged one another from the backs of their horses, and encountering one another thus, killed one another like wrestlers. Many, deprived of life, were carried away by the horses they rode.

52. Many men, elated with the pride of courage and inspired with the desire of victory, dropped down on the earth.

53. The earth was covered with hundreds and thousands of bleeding warriors, deprived of limbs, and divested of hairs.

54—55. The surface of the earth being covered with elephant-riders and horsemen and killed horses and warriors with blood-stained armours and those armed with weapons and those who had tried to kill one another with various kinds of terrible weapons, all lying in a mass in that life-destroying battle, no warrior could proceed far on his horse.

56. Having fought for a little while, Shakuni, the son of Suvala, O king, went away from that spot with the remnant of his cavalry, six thousand in number. Similarly the Pandava force, covered with blood, and its animals worn out, moved away from there with its remnant consisting of six thouasnd horse.

57—59. Horsemen, covered with blood of the Pandava army then, determined upon fighting and prepared to sacrifice their lives, said,—"It is no longer possible to fight here on cars; how much more difficult it is then to fight here on elephants. Let cars proceed against cars, and elephants against elephants.

60. Having retreated Shakuni is now staying within his own detachment. The royal son of Suvala will not again come to fight."

61. Then the sons of Draupadi and those infuriate elephants went where the Panchala prince Dhrishtadyumna, that great car-warrior, was.

62. Sahadeva also, when that cloud of dust set in, went alone where king Yudhishthira was.

63. After all those had departed Shakuni the son of Suvala, worked up with wrath, once more attacked Dhrishtadyumna's division and began to strike it.

64. Again a dreadful encounter took place, in which the combatants did not care for their lives, between your soldiers and those of the foe, all of whom were desirous of killing one another.

65. In that encounter of heroes, the combatants first looked at one another steadfastly, and then rushed, O king, and attacked one another in hundreds and thousands.

66. In that onslaught, heads, cut off with swords, dropped down with a noise like that of falling palmyra fruits.

67. Loud noise also arose making the very hairs stand erect, of bodies falling down on the ground, divested of armours and wounded with weapons and of falling weapons also, O king, and of arms and thighs cut off from the trunk.

68. Assailing brothers and sons and even fathers with keen weapons, the combatants fought like birds, for a piece of meat.

69. Worked up with rage, thousand of warriors attacked one another in that battle.

70. Hundreds and thousands of combatants, pressed down by slain horsemen while falling down from their horses, fell down on the field.

71—72. There arose loud noise of neighing horses of great fleetness, and of shouting men clad in mail, and of the falling darts and swords, O king, of combatants desirous of cutting one another to the very quick on account, O monarch, of your evil policy.

73. At that time, your soldiers, exhausted and worked up with rage, their animals fatigued, themselves thirsty, wounded with sharp weapons, began to turn away from the battle.

74. Maddened with the smell of blood, many became so insensible that they killed friends and foes alike, in fact, every one they could lay hold on.

75. O king, actuated with the desire of victory, large numbers of Kshatriyas were struck down with arrows, and lay prostrate on the earth.

76. Wolves, vultures and jackals began to yell hideously in joy. In the very presence of your son your army suffered a great loss.

77. The earth, O king, was covered with the bodies of men and horses, and over-flown with rivers of blood that struck terror to the timid.

78. Struck and wounded repeatedly with swords and battle-axes and lances, your warriors, as also the Pandavas, O Bharata, ceased to approach one another.

79. Striking one another accordtng to their might, and fighting to the last combatants dropped down, bleeding.

80. Headless forms were seen, catching the hair of their heads and holding swords stained in blood.

81—82. When many headless forms, O king, had thus risen up, when the smell of blood had made the warriors almost senseless, and the loud noise had somewhat subsided, Suvala's son again approached the large army of the Pandavas, with the small remnant of his cavalry.

82. Thereat actuated with the desire of victory and endued with great activity, Pandavas rushed towards Shakuni, with foot-soldiers and elephants and cavalry all with uplifted weapons.

84. Desirous of terminating the hostilities, the Pandavas, forming a wall, encircled Shakuni on all sides, and began to strike him with various kinds of weapons.

85. Beholding your soldiers assailed from every side, the Kauravas, with horse, foot, elephants, and cars, rushed towards the Pandavas.

86. Some brave foot-soldiers, destitute of weapons, attacked their foes in that battle, with feet and fists, and struck them down.

87. Car-warriors dropped down from cars, and elephant-men from elephants, like virtuous persons falling down from their celestial vehicles upon the wane of their virtue.

88. Thus the warriors fought with one another in that great battle, and killed fathers and brothers and friends and sons.

89. Thus took place that battle, O best of the Bharatas, in which no consideration was shown by any body for any one, and in which lances, swords and arrows dropped down fast on every side and presented a terrific spectacle.

CHAPTER XXIV.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. 'When the loud noise of battle had somewhat subsided and the Pandavas had killed large numbers of their foes Suvala's son once more came with the remnant of his cavalry, seven hundred in number.

2. Speedily approaching his own soldiers and urging them to fight, he again and again said.—" Ye chastisers of enemies, fight merrily."

3—6. And he asked the Kshatriyas assembled there, saying,—" Where is the king that great car-warrior!"—Hearing those words of Shakuni, O foremost of Bharatas, they replied saying,—" There stands the great car-warrior, viz, the Kuru king,—there the large umbrella, effulgent like the full moon, is seen,—there where those car-warriors, clad in mail, are staying—there where that loud noise, deep as the muttering of clouds, is being heard. Go quickly thither, O king, and you will see the Kuru king."—Thus spoken to by those brave warriors Suvala's son Shakuni, O king, proceeded where your son was waiting, surrounded on all sides by unretreating heroes.

7—9. Beholding Duryodhana stationed in the midst of the car-force, Shakuni, cheering up your car-warriors, O king, said these words to Duryodhana, in a manner which showed that he considered all his purposes to have been already accomplished. "Slay, O king, the car-warriors of the Pandavas. All their horse have been defeated by me. Yudhishthira is incapable of being defeated in battle unless one is prepared to sacrifice his life.

10. When that car-army, protected by the son of Pandu, will have been destroyed, we shall then kill all those elephants and foot-soldiers and others."

11. Hearing those words your warriors, actuated with the desire of victory, cheerfully proceeded against the Pandava army.

12. With quivers on their backs and bows in their hands, all of them shook their bows and sent up leonine war-cries.

13. Again O king, the fierce twang of bows and the slapping of palms and the sound of arrows shot forcibly was heard.

14—15. Beholding those Kuru heroes approach the Pandava army with uplifted bows, Kunti's son, Dhananjaya, said to the son of Devaki :—" Drive the horses fearlessly and enter this deep of troops. With my keen arrows I shall to-day terminate these hostilities.

16. Today is the eighteenth day, O Janarddana, of this great battle.

17. The numberless army of those great heroes has been almost destroyed. Mark the course of Destiny.

18. The army of Dhritarashtra's son, O Madhava, which was vast as the deep, has O Achyuta, become, after meeting ourselves, even like a pit caused by a cow's hoof.

19. If peace had been made after Bhishma's fall, O Madhava, everything would have fared well. The foolish and wicked-

minded Duryodhana, however, did not make peace.

20. The words, that were given vent to by Bhishma, O Madhava, were beneficial and should have been accepted. Suyodhana however, who had lost his understanding, did not follow them.

21. After Bhishma had been struck down on the earth, I do not know why the battle was fought on.

22. I regard the sons of Dhritarashtra as foolish and of weak understanding by every means since they continued the battle even after the fall of Shantanu's son.

23. After that when Drona, that foremost of Brahmanas, as fell, as also the son of Radha, and Vikartana, the battle did not stop.

24. Even, when a residue only of the Kaurava army remained after the fall of that best of men, viz., Karna, with his sons the battle did not stop.

25. After the fall of even the heroic Shrutayush, of also Jalasandha of Puru's race, and of king Shrutayudha, the slaughter did not still cease.

26. After the death of Bhurishravas, of Shalya, O Janarddana, and of the Avanti heroes, the slaughter did not still stop.

27. After the fall of Jayadratha, of the Rakshasa Alayudha, of Valhika, and of Somadatta the killing battle did not still stop.

28. After the fall of the heroic Bhagadatta, of the Kamvoja chief Sudakshina, and of Dusshasana, the all-destroying battle did not still stop.

29. Seeing the many heroic and powerful kings, each master of extensive territories killed in battle, the all-destroying battle, O Krishna, did not still stop.

30. Beholding even a full Akshauhini of troops slain by Bhimasena in battle, the all-destroying battle did not still stop on account of either the folly or the covetousness of the sons of Dhritarashtra.

31. What king, born in a noble family especially as one like that of Kuru, except the foolish Duryodhana, would thus create useless hostilities.

32. Who is there reasonable and wise and capable of distinguishing between good and evil, that would thus make a war, knowing his foes to be superior to him in merit, strength, and bravery.

33. How could he listen to the advice of another, when, indeed, he could not make up his mind to make peace with the Pandavas following your advice.

34. What medicine can be agreeable to that man today who disobeyed Bhisma, the son of Shantanu, and Drona, and Vidura, while they urged him to make peace.

35. How can he accept good advice who out of folly, O Janarddana, insolently disobeyed his own old father as also his own good mother who spoke wholesome words to him.

36. It is evident, O Janarddana, that Duryodhana is born for rooting out his family. His conduct and his policy, at least, speak the same, O lord. He will not give us our kingdom yet. This is my opinion, O Achyuta.

37. The great Vidura, O sire, told me many a time that as long as Duryodhana would live he would never give us our share of the kingdom.

38. Vidura also told me,—"As long as Dhritarashtra will live, O giver of honors that sinful man will act sinfully towards you.

39. You will never succeed in defeating Duryodhana without battle." Thus, O Madhava, did the far-seeing Vidura often speak to me.

40. All the acts of that wicked man, I now find, to be exactly as the great Vidura had said.

41. That wicked man, who having listened to the beneficial and proper words of Jamadagni's son, disobeyed them, should certainly be regarded as standing in the face of destruction.

42. Many saints and ascetics said, as soon as Duryodhana was born, that the entire Kshatriya race would be exterminated for that wretch.

43. Those words of the sages, O Janarddana, have now borne fruits, because the Kshatriyas are undergoing almost entire extermination on account of Duryodhana's mis-deeds. I shall, O Madhava, kill all the warriors today.

44. After all the Kshatriyas will have been killed and the (Kaurava) camp made empty, Duryodhana will then wish for a battle with us for his own destruction.

45—46. That will terminate these hostilities. Exercising my reason, O Madhava, and reflecting in my own mind, O Vrishni heroe, thinking of Vidura's words, and taking into account the acts of the wicked Duryodhana himself, I have arrived at this conclusion. Enter into Kuru division, O hero, for I shall kill the wicked Duryodhana and his army today with my keen arrows.

47. Slaying this weak army in the very presence of Dhritarashtra's son, I shall today do what is for Yudhishthira's good."

48. Thus addressed by Arjuna, the Dasharha heroe, with reins in hand, fearlessly penetrated that vast hostile army for battle.

49. It was a terrible forest of bows. Darts were its prickles. Maces and bludgeons were its paths. Cars and elephants were its huge trees.

50. Cavalry and infantry were its creepers. And the illustrious Keshava, as he entered that forest on that car adorned with many banners and pennons, shone exceedingly resplendent.

51. Those white horses, O king, bearing Arjuna in battle, were seen moving about on all sides urged by the Dasharha heroe.

52. Then that scorcher of foes, viz., Savyasachin, proceeded on his car, discharging hundreds of keen arrows like a cloud pouring showers of rain. Loud noise was produced by those straight arrows as also by those combatants that were covered with them in that battle by Savyasachin. Showers of arrows, piercing through the armour of the warriors, dropped down on the Earth.

53—54. Shot off the Gandiva, arrows, whose touch resembled that of Indra's thunder, striking men and elephants and horses, O king, fell in that battle with a noise like that of winged insects.

55. Everything was covered with those shafts shot from Gandiva. In that battle, the points of the horizon could not be distinguished.

56. The entire earth was as if covered with gold-winged arrows, steeped in oil, polished by the hands of the smith, and with Partha's name engraven on it.

57. Struck with those keen arrows, and burnt therewith by Partha even as a herd of elephants is burnt with burning brands, the Kauravas were dispirited and weakened.

58. Armed with bow and arrows, Partha, resembling the burning sun, consumed the hostile heroes in that battle like a blazing fire consuming a heap of dry grass.

59—60. As increasing and blazing fire of great energy, thrown on the outskirt of a forest by its inhabitants, quickly consumes those woods abounding with trees and heaps of dry creepers, even so that active and energetic hero, endued with prowess of weapons, and having arrows for his flames, quickly consumed all the troops of your son from anger.

61. His powerful gold-winged arrows, discharged with care, could not be baffled by any armour. He had not to discharge a second arrow at a man, horse or a huge elephant.

62. Like Indra, the wielder of thunderbolt, striking down the Daityas, Arjuna, alone entering that division of great car-warriors, destroyed it with arrows of various forms.

CHAPTER XXV.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjava said :—

1. With his Gandiva, Dhananjaya baffled the purpose of those unretreating heroes struggling in battle and striking their enemies.

2. The arrows, shot by Arjuna, irresistible and endued with great force and whose touch was like that of the thunder, resembled torrents of rain poured by a cloud.

3. That army, O chief of the Bharatas' thus struck by Kiritin, fled away before the very eyes of your son.

4. Some deserted their father and brothers, and others their comrades. Some car-warriors lost their animals. Others lost their drivers. Some had their poles or yokes or wheels broken, O king.

5. The arrows of some were exhausted. Some were assailed with arrows. Some, though unwounded, fled in a body, stricken with fear.

6. Some tried to rescue their sons, having lost all their kinsmen and animals. Some loudly called their father, some their comrades and followers.

7. Some fled, leaving behind their kinsmen, O foremost of men, and brothers and other relatives.

8. Many great car-warriors, struck with Partha's arrows and deeply wounded therewith, breathed hard, deprived of their senses.

9. Others, taking them up on their own cars, and soothing them for some time, and resting them and satisfying their thirst by offering them drink, once more proceeded to battle.

10. Leaving behind the wounded, some, incapable of being easily defeated in battle, once more advanced in battle desirous of carrying out the commands of your son.

6. Some tried to rescue their sons, having lost all their kinsmen and animals. Some loudly called their father, some their comrades and followers.

7. Some fled, leaving behind their kinsmen, O foremost of men, and brothers and other relatives.

8. Many great car-warriors, struck with Partha's arrows and deeply wounded therewith, breathed hard, deprived of their senses.

9. Others, taking them up on their own cars, and soothing them for some time, and resting them and satisfying their thirst by offering them drink, once more proceeded to battle.

10. Leaving behind the wounded, some, incapable of being easily defeated in battle, once more advanced to battle, desirous of carrying out the commands of your son.

11—12. Some, having satisfied their thirst or rested their animals, and some, wearing (fresh) armours, O chief of the Bharatas, and some, having comforted their brothers and sons and father, and placed them in camp, once more came to battle.

13. Some, arranging their cars in order, O king, of superiors and inferiors, proceeded against the Pandavas once more for battle.

14. On their cars adorned with rows of bells, those heroes shone like Daityas and Danavas desirous of conquering the three worlds.

15. Some, advancing quickly on their cars decked with gold, fought with Dhrishtadyumna amid the Pandava army.

16. The Panchala prince Dhrishtadyumna, and the great car-warrior Shikhandin, and Shatanika the son of Nakula, fought with the car-division of the enemy.

17. Worked up with rage and supported by a large army, the Panchala prince rushed against your infuriated soldiers from desire of killing them.

18. Then your son, O king, discharged many arrows, O Bharata, at the Panchala prince thus rushing at him.

19. Then, O king, Dhrishtadyumna was quickly cut with many arrows in his arms and chest by your son fighting with his bow.

20. Deeply cut therewith like an elephant with pointed lances, that great bowman then killed with his arrows the four horses of Duryodhana. With another broad-headed arrow he sundered, from his trunk, the head of his enemy's driver.

21. Then that grinder of foes, viz., king Duryodhana, having thus lost his car, rode on horseback and retreated to a little distance.

22. Beholding his own army thus enfeebled, your son, the mighty Duryodhana, O king, proceeded where Suvala's son was.

23. When the Kaurava cars were broken, the thousand huge elephants encompassed those car-warriors, viz., the five Pandavas.

24. Encompassed by that elephant, O Bharata, the five brothers looked beautiful, O foremost of men, like the planets surrounded by the clouds.

25. Then the mighty-armed Arjuna, O king, of sure aim, having Krishna for his driver, and white horses, advanced on his car.

26. Surrounded by mountain-like elephants he began to destroy those animals with his keen and polished arrows.

27. Each killed with a single arrow, we saw those huge elephants fallen or falling down, wounded by Savyasachin.

28. The powerful Bhimasena, himself like an infuriate elephant, seeing those elephants, took up his formidable mace and rushed at them, quickly jumping down from his car, like the Destroyer armed with his club.

29. Seeing that great car-warrior of the Pandavas with uplifted mace, your soldiers were possessed by fear and passed urine and excreta. The whole army were agitated upon seeing Bhimasena armed with mace.

30. We then saw those elephants, huge as hills, running hither and thither, with their frontal globes cut open by Bhima with his mace and all their limbs covered with blood.

31. Struck with Bhima's mace, those elephants, running off from him, dropped down crying like mountains with their wings cut off.

32. Beholding those numberless elephants, with their frontal globes cut open, running hither and thither or falling down your soldiers were possessed by fear.

33. Then Yudhishthira also, worked up with anger and the two sons of Madri, began to kill those elephant-warriors with arrows having wings like those of vultures.

34. Dhrishtadyumna, after the defeat of the Kuru king in battle, and after the flight of the latter from that spot on horse-back, saw that the Pandavas had all been encircled by the Kaurava elephants.

35. Beholding this, O king, Dhrishtadyumna, the son of the Panchala king, pro-

ceeded towards those elephants to them.

36. *In* the meantime not seeing Duryodhana in the midst of the car-force, Ashwatthaman and Kripa, and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, asked all the Kshatriyas, saying,—"Where has Duryodhana gone."

37. Not seeing the king in the midst of that onslaught all those great car-warriors took him for dead and therefore with sorrowful faces, they enquired after him.

38. Some told them that after the destruction of his driver, he has gone to Suvala's son.

39. Others, who had been greatly wounded said,—"What necessity is there with Duryodhana. See, if he is yet alive. Do you all fight in a body, what will the king do to you."

40. Other Kshatriyas, who were greatly wounded and who had lost many of their relatives, and who were still being struck with the arrows of the enemy, said these words indistinctly.

41. "Let us kill these forces by whom we are encircled. See the Pandavas are coming here after having killed the elephants.

42—43. Hearing these words, the powerful Ashwatthaman, cutting through that irresistible force of the Panchala king, went with Kripa and Kritavarman, where Suvala's son was. *Infact leaving* the car-force, those heroes, those firm bowmen, went to find out Duryodhana.

44. After their departure, the Pandavas, headed by Dhrishtadyumna, advanced, O king, and began to kill their enemies.

45. Beholding those brave, heroic and powerful car-warriors rushing joyously towards them, your soldiers, whose faces grew pale, became despondent of their lives.

46—47. Beholding those soldiers of ours almost deprived of weapons and surrounded by the enemy, I myself, O king, having only two kinds of forces, and caring for life, joined the five leaders of our army, and fought with the forces of the Panchala prince, and placed our men where Sharadwata's son was.

48. We had been cut with the arrows of Arjuna and still a fierce encounter took place between us and the army of Dhrishtadyumna. At last, defeated by the latter, all of us retreated from that battle.

49. I then beheld the great car-warrior Satyaki rushing against us. With four hundred cars that hero pursued me in battle.

50. Having escaped with difficulty from Dhrishtadyumna whose horses had been exhausted, I fell among the soldiers of Madhava even as a sinner falleth into hell. There a fierce and terrible encounter took place for a short time.

51. The mighty-armed Satyaki, having cut off my armour, thought of taking me alive. He caught me while I lay down on the ground insensible

52. Then within a short time that elephant force was killed by Bhimasena with his mace and Arjuna with his arrows.

53. On account of those mighty elephants, huge as hills, falling down on every side with wounded limbs, the Pandava warriors found their way entirely blocked up.

54. Then the powerful Bhimasena, O king, dragging away those huge elephants, made a way for the Pandavas.

55. Meanwhile not seeing that chastiser of foes Duryodhana amid the car-division, Ashwatthaman and Kripa and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, tried to find out your royal son.

56. Leaving the prince of the Panchalas they proceeded where Suvala's son was, anxious to see the king during that terrible onslaught.

CHAPTER XXVI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1—3. 'On that elephant division being destroyed, O Bharata, by the son of Pandu and while your army was being thus killed by Bhimasena in battle beholding the latter, that chastiser of foes,—moving about like the all-killing Destroyer himself in rage armed with his club, your remaining sons, O king, united together at that time, when your son Duryodhana could not be seen, rushed against Bhimasena.

4—5. They were Durmarshana, Shrutanta, Jaitra, Bhurivala, Ravi, Jayatsena Sujata, and that slayer of foes, *viz.*, Durvishaha, and he called Durvimochana, and Dushpradharsha, and the mighty-armed Shrutarvan. All of them were experts in battle.

6. These sons of thine, in a body, rushed against Bhimasena and encircled him.

7. Then Bhima, O monarch, once more getting on his own car, began to shoot keen arrows at the vital limbs of your sons.

8. Those sons of yours, covered with arrows by Bhimasena in that dreadful encounter, began to drag that warrior like men dragging an elephant from the crossing point.

9. Worked up with anger, Bhimsena, quickly cut off the head of Durmarshana with a razor-headed arrow, and threw it on the Earth.

10. With another broad-headed arrow capable of cutting through every armour, Bhima next killed the great car-warrior, viz., your son Shrutanta.

11. Then striking Jayatsena easily with a cloth-yard shaft, that chastiser of foes, viz., the son of Pandu, struck down that scion of Kuru's race from his car. The prince, O king, dropped down and immediately died.

12. Thereat your son Shrutarvan, worked up with rage, struck Bhima with a hundred straight arrows winged with feathers of vultures.

13. Then Bhima, worked up with rage, struck Jaitra and Ravi and Bhurivala, with three arrows resembling poison or fire.

14. Those great car-warriors, thus struck, dropped down from their cars like Kinshukas blossoming in the spring.

15. Then that scorcher of foes, with another broad-headed and keen arrow, struck Durvimochana and killed him.

16. Thus struck, that best of car-warriors fell down on the ground from his car, like a tree growing on the summit of a mountain uprooted by the storm.

17. The son of Pandu next struck your other two sons leading their forces, viz., Dushpradharsha and Sujata, each with a couple of arrows in that battle. Those two best of car-warriors, struck with those arrows, fell down.

18. Beholding another son of yours viz., Durvishaha, and rushing at him, Bhima struck him with a broad-headed arrow in that battle. That prince dropped down from his car before all the bowmen.

19—20. Beholding so many of his brothers killed by Bhima alone in that battle, Shrutarvan, worked up with rage, rushed at Bhima, stretching his dreadful bow decked with gold and discharging a large number of arrows resembling poison or fire.

21. Cutting off the bow of Pandu's son in that dreadful encounter, the Kuru prince struck the bowless Bhima with twenty arrows.

22. Then Bhimasena, that great car-warrior, taking up another bow, covered your son with arrows and said to him "Wait, wait."

23. The encounter between the two was beautiful and dreadful, like that which took place in days of yore between Vasava and the Asura Jambha, O lord.

24. With the sharp arrows, resembling the dreadful rod of Yama, shot by those two warriors, the earth, the sky, and all the points of the horizon were covered.

25. Then excited with rage, Shrutarvan took up his bow and struck Bhimasena in that battle, O king, with many arrows on his arms and chest.

26. Deeply cut, O king by your son armed with the bow, Bhima grew exceedingly agitated like the ocean at the full or the new moon.

27. Excited with ire Bhima then, O sire, killed with his arrows the driver and the four horses of your son.

28. Beholding him careless and displaying the lightness of his hand the great son of Pandu covered him with winged arrows.

29. The carless Shrutarvan then, O king, took up a sword and shield. As the prince, however, moved about with his sword and shining shield effulgent like a hundred moons, the son of Pandu cut off his head with a razor-headed arrow and dropped it on the earth.

30. The trunk of that great warrior, whose head was cut off by that razor-headed arrow, fell down from his car filling the earth with a loud noise.

31. Upon the death of that hero, your soldiers, though terror-stricken, rushed in that battle against Bhimasena for fighting with him.

32. The brave Bhimasena, clad in mail, received those warriors rushing quickly at him who were not killed amongst that ocean of troops. Approaching him, those warriors, encircled that hero on all sides.

33. Thus surrounded by those warriors, Bhima began to assail them all with sharp arrows like the thousand-eyed deity assailing the Asuras.

34. Having destroyed five hundred great cars with their fences, he again killed seven hundred elephants in that battle.

35. Slaying next ten thousand infantry with his strong shafts, as also eight hundred horses, the son of Pandu shone there.

36. Indeed, having killed your sons in that battle, Bhimasena, the son of Kunti, regarded his object accomplished, O lord, and birth fruitful.

37. Your soldiers, at that time, O Bharata, dared not even look at that warrior who was fighting in that fashion and killing your men in that way.

38. Scattering all the Kurus and killing their followers, Bhima then slapped his armpits, terrifying the huge elephants with the noise.

39. Then your army, O king, which had lost a very large number of men, and consisted of a very few soldiers, became highly depressed. O king.

CHAPTER XXVII.

(SHALYA PARVA) –*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. 'Duryodhana, O king, and your son Sudarsha, the only two of your children who were not killed, were at that time in the midst of the Kauravas cavalry.

2—3. Seeing Duryodhana in the midst of the cavalry, Krishna said to Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti :—"A large number of our enemies, relations that had received our protection, have been killed. There that best of Shini's race is returning, having taken Sanjaya captive.

4. Both Nakula and Sahadeva, O Bharata, are worn out having fought with the wretched Dhartarashtras and their followers.

5. Those three, viz., Kripa and Kritavarman and the great car-warrior Ashwatthaman, have left Duryodhana's side and taken up their positions elsewhere.

6. Having killed Duryodhana's soldiers, the beautiful Panchala prince is waiting there in the midst of the Prabhadrakas.

7. There, O Partha, Duryodhana is in the midst of his cavalry, with the umbrella held over his head and looking all around.

8. Having re-arranged the remnant of his army, he waits in the midst of his forces. Killing this one with your keen arrows you may achieve all your objects.

9. As long as these troops do not fly away seeing you in their midst and witnessing also the destruction of their elephant force, do you, O chastiser of foes, try to kill Duryodhana.

10. Let somebody go to the Panchala prince and ask him to come here. The Kaurava troops are all exhausted. O sire, the sinful Duryodhana will never succeed in escaping.

11. Having killed a large number of your soldiers in battle the son of Dhritarashtra looks highly delighted as if he believes that the Pandavas have been defeated.

12—13. Seeing his own soldiers assailed and killed by the Pandavas, the Kuru king will certainly come to battle for his own destruction."—Thus addressed by Krishna, Phalguna said to him :—"almost all the sons of Dhritarashtra, O giver of honors, have been killed by Bhima. Only these two still survive; they, however, O Krishna, shall also be killed today.

14. Bhishma has been killed, Drona has been killed, Karna has been killed, Shalya, the king of the Madras, has been killed, and Jayadratha also, O Krishna, has been killed.

15. Only five hundred cavalry constitute the army of Shakuni the son of Suvala. Only two hundred still remain, of cars, O Janarddana. Of elephants the only remnant is a hundred and of foot only three thousand.

16. There remain also Ashwatthaman and Kripa and the king of the Trigartas and Uluka and Shakuni and Kritavarman of the Satwata race.

17. These, O Madhava, are the remnant of Duryodhana's army. Truly no body will escape from death.

18. Although such a great slaughter has taken place, Duryodhana is still alive. Today king Yudhishthira, however, will be shorn of all his foes. None of my enemies will escape me, today.

19. Even if they be superhuman beings, O Krishna! I shall yet kill all those warriors today if only they do not fly away from the battle-field.

20. Worked up with wrath in today's battle, I shall, by killing the prince of Gandhara with my keen arrows, remove that sleeplessness which the king has suffered from for a long time.

21. I shall regain all those valuable properties which Suvala's wicked son won from us at the gambling match.

22. Hearing of the destruction of their husbands and sons at the hands of the Pandavas in battle, all the ladies of Hastinapur will cry.

23. Today, O Krishna, our task will be finished. Today Duryodhana shall be divorced from his prosperity and life.

24. You may take the foolish son of Dhritarashtra as dead, O Vrishni heroe, if, O Krishna, he does not today fly away from the battle.

25. Those horses cannot bear the twang of my bow and the slaps of my palms. Proceed there, O Kristna, for I will kill them.

26. Thus accosted by Pandu's son of great mental strength, the Dasharha heroe urged his horses, O king, towards Duryodhana's detachment.

27. Beholding that force, three great car-warriors prepared themselves for striking it, for Bhimasena and Arjuna and Sahadeva, O sire, in a body, proceeded against it with loud leonine roars in order to kill Duryodhana.

28. Beholding those three warriors rushing quickly together with unlifted bows, Suvala's son proceeded against the Pandavas.

29. Your son Sudarshana rushed against Bnimasena. Susharman and Shakuni met with Kiritin. Your son Duryodhana on horse-back proceeded against Sahadeva.

30. Then your son, O king, with great speed and care, forcibly struck Sahadev's head with a lance.

31. Thus struck by your son, Sahadeva sat down on his car, all his limbs being covered with blood and himself breathing like a snake.

32. Regaining his consciousness then, O king, Sahadeva, in anger, covered Duryodhana with keen shafts.

33. Kunti's son Dhananjaya, otherwise called Partha, displaying his prowess, sundered the heads of many brave warriors on horse back.

34. Indeed, Partha, with many arrows, destroyed that (cavalry). Having killed all the horses, he then proceeded against the cars of the Trigartas.

35. Thereat the great car warriors of the Trigartas, in a body, covered Arjuna and Vasudeva with showers of arrows.

36. Assailing Satyakarman with a razor-headed arrow, the illustrious son of Pandu, sundered his antagonist's car-shafts.

37. With another razor-headed arrow, O lord, whetted on stone, that illustrious hero, smiling cut off his antagonist's head crown adorned with a golden ,

38. He next attacked Satyeshu before all the warriors, like a hungry lion, O king, in the forest, attacking a deer.

39. Having killed him, Partha struck Susharman with three arrows and then killed all those car-warriors bedecked with golden ornaments.

40. He then proceeded with great force against Susharman the king of Prasthhala, displaying his anger cherished for many long years.

41. Covering him first, O foremost of Bharata's race, with a hundred arrows Arjuna then killed all the horses of that bowman.

42. Fixing then a strong arrow that resembled the rod of Yama, Partha, smiling, quickly shot it at Susharman, aiming it at him.

43. Shot by that bowman chaffing with wrath, that arrow, reaching Susharman, passed through his heart in that battle.

44. O king, Susharman fell down dead on the earth, gladdening all the Pandavas and distressing all your warriors.

45. Having killed Susharman in that battle, Partha then, with his arrow, killed the five and thirty sons of that king, all of whom were great car-warriors.

46. Killing next all the followers of Susharman with his keen arrows, the great car-warrior Arjuna proceeded against the remnant of the Bharata army.

47. In that battle, filled with rage, O king, Bhima covered Sudarshana with his arrows.

48. Filled with rage, the son of Pandu, smiling, cut off his antagonist's head with a sharp razor-headed arrow. The prince fell down dead on the earth.

49. Upon the fall of that (Kuru) hero, his followers encircled Bhima in that battle, making a downpour of whetted arrows.

50. With keen arrows Vrikodara, however, whose touch resembled that of Indra's thunder, enshrouded the army around him. Within a very short time, Bhima killed them all, O foremost of Bharata's race.

51. Whilst they were being thus slain, many powerful Kaurava warriors, O Bharata, approached Bhima and began to fight with him.

52. The son of Pandu, O king, enshrouded all of them with his arrows. In the same way your warriors, O king, covered the great car-warriors of the Pandavas with arrows from all sides.

53. All the warriors then, of both sides thus fighting with one another, became exceedingly agitated.

54. Struck by one another, the warriors of both armies, O king, began to drop down, lamenting for their (deceased) relatives.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. During the course of that battle which was so destructive of men and horses and elephants, Suvala's son Shakuni, O king, proceeded against Sahadeva.

2. The valiant Sahadeva, as Shakuni rushed quickly towards him, discharged showers of quick-coursing arrows at that warrior like a swarm of insects. At that time Uluka also met Bhima and struck him with ten arrows.

3. O king, having struck Bhima with three arrows, Shakuni, meanwhile, covered Sahadeva with ninety.

4. Indeed, O king, encountering one another in that battle, those heroes, struck one another with many Kanka and peacock feathered keen arrows winged with gold, whetted on stone, and shot off the bow-string drawn to their ears.

5. Those showers of arrows discharged from their bows and arms, O monarch, covered all the points of the horizon like a thick downpour of rain poured foom the clouds.

6. Then Bhima, worked up with rage, and the brave Sahadeva, both very powerful, moved about in that battle making a great onslaught.

7. That army, O Bharata, was shrouded with hundreds of arrows by those two warriors, and the sky, on many parts of the field, was shrouded with darkness.

8. The horses: struck with arrows, dragging after them as they ran a large number of killed warriors the passage in the battle-field was entirely blocked up.

9. Covered with horses slain with their riders, with broken shields and lances, and with swords and darts and spears all around the earth appeared to have been strewn with flowers.

10. The warriors, O king, meeting one another, moved about in battle, exercised with wrath and killing one another.

11. Soon the field was covered with heads, beautiful as the filaments of the lotus, bedecked with ear-rings and having faces set with eyes upturned in wrath and lips bit in rage.

12—13. Covered also, O king, with the arms of warriors resembling the trunks of huge elephants, that were bedecked with Angada and coated in leathern fences, and that still held swords and lances and battle-axes, and with headless bodies standing on their feet and bleeding and dancing on the field, and abounding with various carnivorous animals, the earth, O king, appeared exceedingly terrific.

14. After the Bharata army had been reduced to a small number, the Pandavas, filled with delight in that dreadful battle, began to slay the Kauravas.

15. Meanwhile the heroic and brave son of Suvala forcibly struck Sahadeva in the head with a lance.

16. Greatly exercised, O king, for that blow, Sahadeva sat down on the terrace of his car.

17. Beholding Sahadeva in that condition the valiant Bhima, worked up with rage, O Bharata, obstructed the entire Kuru army.

18. With his cloth-yard shafts he struck hundreds and thousands of hostile warriors, and having struck them so, that chastiser of foes sent up a leonine roar.

19. Terrified at that roar, all the followers of Shakuni, with their horses and elephants immediately fled away in fear.

20. Seeing them routed, king Duryodhana said to them :—"Stop, ye immoral Kshatriyas ! fight ! What is the use of flight ?

21—22. That hero, who unretreatingly sacrifices his life in battle, achieves fame here and enjoyes blissful regions hereafter !" —Thus exhorted by the king, the followers of Suvala's son once more proceeded against the Pandavas, determined upon meeting with death.

23. O monarch, the noise made by those rushing warriors was terrible and resembled that of the agitated ocean. Thereat the field of battle was agitated all around.

24. Beholding those followers of Suvala's son thus proceeding to battle, the victorious Pandavas, O monarch, rushed against them.

25. Relieved a little, the invincible Sahadeva, O monarch, struck Shakuni with ten arrows and his horses with three. He, without the slighest exertion, then cut off the bow of Suvala's son with a number of other arrows.

26. Invincible in battle, Shakuni, however, took up another bow and struck Nakula with sixty arrows and then Bhimasena with seven.

27. Uluka also, O king, desirous of rescuing his father in that battle, struck Bhima with seven arrows and Sahadeva with seventy.

28. Bhimasena, in that battle, struck Uluka with many keen arrows and Shakuni

with four and sixty, and each of the other warriors who fought around them, with three arrows.

29. Struck by Bhimasena with arrows steeped in oil, the Kauravas, exercised with rage in that battle, covered Sahadeva with showers of arrows like clouds accompained with lightnings pouring rain on a mountain breast.

30. The heroic and brave Sahadeva then, O king, cut off, with a broad-headed arrow, the head of Uluka as the latter proceeded against him.

31. Killed by Sahadeva, Uluka, cheering the Pandavas in that battle, dropped down on the earth from his car, covered with blood.

32. Seeing his son slain, Shakuni, O Bharata, with voice suppressed in tears and sighing heavily, recollected the words of Vidura.

33. Having thought for a moment with tearful eyes, Shakuni, breathing heavily, approached Sahadeva and struck him with three arrows.

34. Counteracting those arrows shot by Suvala's son with another downpour the brave Sahadeva, O king, sundered his antagonist's bow in that battle.

35. Seeing his bow sundered, O king, Shakuni, the son of Suvala, took up a formidable scimitar and discharged it at Sahadeva.

36. The latter, however, O king, easily cut off in twain that terrible scimitar of Suvala's son as it went towards him in that skirmish.

37. Beholding his sword cut in two parts Shakuni took up a dreadful mace and discharged it at Sahadeva. That mace also dropped down on the earth unsuccessful.

38. After this, Suvala's son, worked up with rage threw at the son of Pandu a dreadful dart resembling an imminent death-night.

39. With great facility Sahadeva, in that battle, cut off, with his golden arrows, that dart into three pieces as it went swiftly towards him.

40. Cut off into pieces that golden dart fell down on the earth like a burning thunder-bolt from the sky sending forth many flashes.

41. Seeing that dart unsuccessful and Suvala's son possessed by fear, all your soldiers fled away. Suvala's son also joined them.

42. The Pandavas then, eager for victory, sent up loud war-cries. As regards the Dhartarashtra, almost all of them fled away from the field.

43. Seeing them so dispirited the brave son of Madri, with many thousand arrows, opposed them in that battle.

44. Then Sahadeva attacked Suvala's son as the latter, who was still sanguine of success, was flying away guarded by the picked cavalry of the Gandharas.

46. Recollecting, O king, that Shakuni, who had to be slain by him, was still alive, Sahadeva, on his car adorned with gold, pursued that warrior.

45. Stringing his formidable bow and drawing it vehemently Sahadeva, in rage, pursued the son of Suvala and struck him with many arrows winged with vulturine feathers and whetted on stone, like a person striking a powerful elephant with pointed lances.

47—48. The energetic Sahadeva, having assailed his foe thus, addressed him, recollecting (his past misdeeds), in these words:—"Observing the duties of a Kshatriya, fight with me and show yourself to be a man! You, O fool, rejoiced greatly in the midst of the assembly, while gambling with dice. Receive now, O wicked man, the fruit of the act.

49. All those wicked men, that had ridiculed us then, have died. Only that vile wretch of his *family viz., Duryodhana* still and you his maternal uncle survive.

50—51. Today I shall kill you cutting off your head with a razor-headed arrow like a person plucking a fruit from a tree with a stick." Saying these words, O king, powerful Sahadeva, that foremost of men, filled with anger, rushed against Shakuni.

52. Approaching his enemy, the invincible Sahadeva, that best of warriors, forcibly drawing his bow and as if consuming his enemy with anger,

53. Struck Shakuni with ten arrows and his horses with four. Then cutting off his umbrella and standard and bow, he roared like a lion.

54. His standard and bow and umbrella being thus cut off by Sahadeva, Suvala's son was struck with many arrows in all his vital parts.

55. Again, O king, the brave Sahadeva discharged at Shakuni an irresistible shower of arrows.

56. Filled with anger the son of Suvala, then single-handed, rushed impetuously against Sahadeva in that encounter, desirous of killing the latter with a lance adorned with gold.

57. However with three broad-headed arrows, the son of Madri cut off at the same time without losing a moment that uplifted lance as also the two plump arms of his enemy and then sent up a loud war-cry.

58. The heroic and active Sahadeva then, with a broad-headed arrow made of hard iron, adorned with wings of gold, capable of cutting every armour, and shot with great force and care, cut off from his trunk his enemy's head.

59. Deprived of his head by the son of Pandu with that gold-decked and sharp arrow, effulgent like the Sun, Suvalas son dropped down on the earth in that battle.

60. Indeed, the son of Pandu, worked up with rage, struck off that head which was the root of the evil policy of the Kurus, with that powerful arrow winged with gold and whetted on stone.

61. Beholding Shakuni lying headless on the ground and all his limbs bathed in blood your warriors, inert with fear, fled away on all sides with weapons in their hands.

62. At that time your sons, with cars, elephants, horse, and foot, entirely routed, heard the twang of Gandiva and fled away with dried faces, possessed by fear and senseless.

63. Having thrown down Shakuni from his car, the Pandavas, were filled with joy. Rejoicing with Keshava amongst them, they blew their conchs in that battle, cheering up their troops.

64. All of them, gladly worshipped Sahadeva, and said,—"By good luck, O hero, the wicked Shakuni, that one of evil policy, has, with his son, been killed by you."

CHAPTER XXIX.

(HRADA-PRAVESHA PARVA).

Sanjaya said :—

1. After this, the followers of Suvala's son, O king, were worked up with rage. Prepared to sacrifice their lives in that dreadful encounter, they began to oppose the Pandavas.

2. Resolved to help Sahadeva in his victory, the energetic Arjuna and Bhimasena, resembling an infuriated venomous serpent, received those warriors.

3. With his Gandiva, Dhananjaya baffled the object of those warriors who, armed with darts and swords and lances, desired to kill Sahadeva.

4. Vibhatsu, with his broad-headed arrows, cut off the horses, the heads, and the arms, with weapons in grasp, of those rushing warriors.

5. The powerful horses of those great heroes, struck by Savyasachin, dropped down on the earth, dead.

6—8. Beholding that onslaught of his own soldiers, O lord, King Duryodhana was filled with rage. Collecting the residue of his cars which was still many hundreds in number, as also his elephants and horse and foot, O scorcher of foes, your son said to those warriors:—"Meeting all the Pandavas with their friends and allies, in this battle, and the Panchala prince also with his own army, and killing them speedily turn back from the field."

9. Respectfully obeying that mandate, those invincible warriors proceeded once more against the Parthas in that battle.

10. The Pandavas, however, enshrouded with their arrows resembling venomous snakes, all the remnant of the Kaurava army, that thus rushed quickly against them in that dreadful battle.

11. That army, O Bharata' chief, as it came to battle, was in no time killed by those great warriors, for it had no protector.

12. The horses running hither and thither that were all covered with the dust raised by the army, the cardinal and the subsidiary points of the horizon could not be discerned.

13. Coming out of the Pandava army, O Bharata, many warriors killed your soldiers in a moment in that battle.

14. Eleven Akshauhinis, O Bharata, of troops had been collected for your son. All those, O lord, were killed by the Pandus and the Srinjayas.

15. Amongst those thousands and thousands of great kings belonging to your party, only Duryodhana now, O king, exceedingly mangled, survives.

16—18. Looking on all sides and seeing the earth [vacant, himself deprived all his troops while the Pandavas were joyously roaring aloud for the fulfillment of all their objects, Duryodhana, O king, unable to bear the sound of arrows discharged by those great heroes, became stupified. Deprived of troops and animals, he made up his mind to fly from the field.

Dhritarashtra said :—

19. When my soldiers were killed and our camp made entirely empty, what was

the strength, O Suta, of the remnant the Pandavas army? I desire to know this. Therefore, tell me O Sanjaya, for you are a skillful narrator.

20. Tell me also, O Sanjaya, that which was done by my son, the wicked Duryodhana, that king of the earth, the sole survivor of so many men, when he saw his army entirely destroyed.

Sanjaya continued :—

21—22. "Two thousand cars, seven hundred elephants, five thousand horse, and ten thousand foot-soldiers was the remnant, O king, of the mighty army of the Pandavas. Looking after this army Dhrishtadyumna waited in that battle.

23. Meanwhile, O chief of the Bharatas, king Duryodhana, that best of car-warriors, did not find a single warrior on his side.

24. Seeing his enemies roaring aloud and the destruction of his own army, that lord of earth Duryodhana, without a comrade, left off his slain horse and fled from the field with face turned eastwards.

25. That lord of eleven *Akshauhinis*, viz., the energetic Duryodhana, taking up his mace, fled on foot towards a lake.

26—28. Before he had proceeded far on foot, the king remembered the words of the intelligent and virtuous Vidura.—"Forsooth, this had been foreseen by the wise Vidura viz., this great destruction of Kshatriyas and of ourselves in battle." Reflecting on this, the king, with heart burning in grief at having seen the extermination of his army, desired to go into the depths of that lake.

29. The Pandavas, O king, with Dhrishtadyumna at their head, worked up with anger, rushed against the residue of your army.

30. With his Gandiva, Dhananjaya baffled the object of the Kaurava troops, who, armed with darts and swords and lances, were crying aloud.

31. Having, with his sharp arrows, killed those troops with their allies and relatives, Arjuna, as he stood on his car having white horses yoked to it, shone highly beautiful.

32. Upon the death of Suvala's son along with horse, cars, and elephants, your army looked like a large forest devasted by a storm.

33—34. In Duryodhana's army then, O monarch, which had many hundred thousands of warriors, not one single car-warrior was alive, save the heroic son of Drona, and Kritavarman, and Kripa the son of Gotama, and the lord of earth, viz., your son.

35. Seeing me, Dhrishtadyumna, laughingly addressed Satyaki, saying,—What is the use of seizing this man. We will gain nothing by keeping him alive

36. Hearing these words of Dhrishtadyumna, the grandson of Shini, that great car-warrior, raising up his sharp sword, was ready to kill me.

37. Just at the neck of time the wise Vyasa, coming there, said,—Let Sanjaya be sent away alive. On no account he should be killed.

38. Hearing these words of Vyasa, the grandson of Shini joined his hands, and then setting me free, said to me,—Peace to you, O Sanjaya, you may go away.

39. Permitted by him, myself then putting off my armour and surrendering my weapons, started in the evening for the city, my limbs covered with blood.

40. After I had come about two miles O king I beheld Duryodhana, standing alone, mace in hand, and greatly wounded.

41. His eyes were full of tears and, therefore, he could not see me. I stood depressed before him. He saw me but could not recognise me.

42. Beholding him standing alone on the field, I also, laden with grief could not speak a single word for some time.

43. Then I discribed to him everything about my own capture and my release by the favour of Vyasa.

44. Having reflected for a moment, and regained his consciousness he enquired of me after his brothers and his soldiers.

45. I had seen every thing with my eyes and therefore, told him everything viz., that his brothers had all been killed and that his entire army destroyed.

46. I told the king that we had at that time only three car-warriors left alive, for Vedavyasa told me so when I set out (from the Pandava camp).

47—48. Sighing heavily and looking repeatedly at me, your son touched me with his hand and said,—"Save you, O Sanjaya, no one else is alive, amongst those engaged in this battle. See there is no one on my side, while the Pandavas have their allies living.

49. Say, O Sanjaya, to the blind king Dhritarashtra, that his son Duryodhana has entered into a lake.

50. Shorn of friends, deprived of sons and brothers, and seeing his kingdom

taken by the Pandavas, who is there like me that would desire to live.

51. Say all this to the king and tell him further that I have escaped with life from that dreadful battle, and that, alive, though exceedingly mangled, I shall live within the lake."

52. Saying this to me, O king, the king, entered that lake. By his power of illusion king Duryodhana charmed the waters of the lake, making room for him.

53. After he had entered that lake, myself, without anybody on my side, saw those three car-warriors coming together there with their tired animals.

54. They were Kripa, the son of Sharadwat, and the heroic Ashwatthaman, that best of car-warriors, and Kritavarman of Bhoja's race. Wounded with arrows, all of them came together there.

55. Seeing me, they all urged their horses to greater speed and coming up to me, said,—By good luck, O Sanjaya, you are still alive.

56. All of them then enquired after your son, saying,—"Is our king Duryodhana still alive, O Sanjaya?"

57. I then told them that the king was physically well. I also related to them everything that Duryodhana had said to me. I also pointed out to them the lake where the king had entered.

58—59. O king, having heard those words, then Ashwatthaman looked at that extensive lake and began to wail in grief, saying, "Alas, Alas, the king knew not that we are still alive! With him amongst us, we are still quite competent to fight with our enemies."

60. Having wept there for a long time, those great car-warriors fled away seeing the sons of Pandu.

61. Those three car-warriors, the remnant of our army, took me up on the well-adorned car of Kripa and then set out for the Kuru camp.

62. The sun had set a little before. Learning that all your sons had been killed the troops, forming the outposts of the camp, wept aloud.

63. Then, O king, the old men, that had been engaged to look after the ladies of the royal household, set out for the city, taking the princesses after them.

64. The attendants and ladies wept aloud when they heard of the destruction of the whole army.

65. O king, crying ceaselessly, the women caused the earth to resound with their voices like a warm of she-ospreys.

66. They tore their bodies with their nails and struck their heads with their hands, and loosened their braids, crying all the while aloud.

67. Filling the sky with exclamations of grief, and beating their breasts, they cried aloud and wept, O king.

68. Then the friends of Duryodhana, deeply afflicted and their voice suppressed by their tears, started for the city, taking the royal ladies with them.

69. The camp-guards quickly fled towards the city, taking with them many white beds covered with rich sheets.

70. Others, placing their wives on cars drawn by mules, set out for the city.

71. Those ladies, O king, who were not before seen even by the sun, were now, as they started for the city, exposed to the view of the common people.

72. Those women, O head of the Bharatas, who were very delicate, now proceeded quickly towards the city, having lost their dear ones and kinsmen.

73. The very cowherds and shepherds and common men, stricken with panic for the fear of Bhimasena, fled towards the city.

74. They were also filled with a great fear of the Parthas. Looking at one another, all of them fled towards the city.

75. During that general flight accompanied with fear, Yuyutsu, beside himself with grief, thought upon what he should do under the present circumstances.

76. Duryodhana has been defeated in battle by the powerful Pandavas. He had eleven Akshauhinis of soldiers under him. All his brothers have been killed.

77. All the Kauravas, led by Bhishma and Drona, have died. By good luck, only I have been saved.

78. All those that were in the Kuru camp have fled. Alas, dispirited and helpless they are flying on all sides.

79. Such a spectacle had never been witnessed before. Assailed with sorrow, with eyes anxious in fear, they are flying away on all directions like a herd of deer looking at one another.

80. Amongst the counsellors of Duryodhana those, that are yet alive, have fled towards the city, taking with them the royal ladies.

81. I think, O lord, that the time has appeared when I also should enter the city with them, after taking the permission of

Yudhishthira and Vasudeva. For this purpose that powerful prince appeared before both those heroes.

82. King Yudhishthira, who is always kind, became highly pleased with him. The powerful Pandava embraced that child of a Vaishya mother and sent him away affectionately.

83. Getting upon his own car, he urged on his horses. He then looked after the departure of the ladies of the royal seraglio for the city.

84. The sun was setting. With those ladies, Yuyutsu entered the city of Hastinapur, with tearful eyes and with voice suppressed in grief.

85. He then saw the highly wise Vidura sitting with tearful eyes. He had come away from Dhritarashtra, his heart possessed by great sorrow.

86. Saluting Vidura, he stood before him. Truthful Vidura said to him,—"By good luck, O son, you have survived the Kurus.

87—88. Why, however have you come without king Duryodhana, in your company? Tell me in detail the cause thereof.—" Yuyutsu then said." After the destruction of Shakuni, O sire, with all his relations and friends, king Duryodhana, leaving behind his horse, fled away in fear towards the east.

89. After the king's flight, all the Kuru people, worked up with fear, fled towards the city.

90. Then the guards of the ladies, placing the wives of the king, as also those of his brothers, on vehicles, fled away in fear.

91. With the permission of king Yudhishthira and Keshava, I started for Hastinapura, for protecting the people thus flying away.

92. Hearing those words of the son of Dhritarashtra's Vaishya wife the great Vidura, conversant with practices and feelings for the hour, praised the eloquent Yuyutsu.

93. And he said,—"You have acted properly, thinking what has come about of this destruction of all the Bharatas. You have also, from pity, maintained the honor of your family.

94. By good luck we see you alive in this terrible battle in which heroes have been killed like creatures beholding the blazing sun.

95. O son, you are now the only support of the blind king shorn of foresight, afflicted with calamity, struck by Destiny, and who though repeatedly dissuaded, could not abstain from following his evil policy.

96. Take rest here for this day. To-morrow you may go to Yudhishthira."—Having said these words, Vidura, with tearful eyes,

97. Took leave of Yuyutsu and entered the palace of the king which was filled with the lamentations of woe-stricken citizens.

98. The cheerless palace was shorn of beauty, comfort and happiness. It was all empty and disorderly. Already filled with grief, Vidura's sorrow increased at that spectacle.

99. Dutiful Vidura, with a sorrowful heart, entered the palace, sighing heavily.

100. As regards Yuyutsu, he passed that night in his own house. Possessed by misery, he could find no delight at the panegyrics with which he was wellcomed. He passed the time, thinking of the terrible onslaught of the Bharatas.

CHAPTER XXX.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1—2. 'After all the Kaurava soldiers had been killed by the sons of Pandu on the field of battle, what did those survivors of my party *viz.*, Kritavarman and Kripa and the brave son of Drona do? What also did the wicked king Duryodhana then do?'

Sanjaya said :—

3. 'After the flight of the ladies of those great Kshatriyas, and after the Kaurava camp had become entirely empty, the three car-warriors were stricken with anxiety.

4. Hearing the shouts of the victorious sons of Pandu, and beholding the camp empty in the evening, those three warriors of our side, desirous of rescuing the king and unable to stand on the field, proceeded towards the lake.

5. The virtuous Yudhishthira, with his brothers in that battle, felt great joy and wandered over the field for killing Duryodhana.

6. Filled with anger the Pandavas, desirous of victory, searched for your son. Though however, they searched carefully for him, they could not discover the Kuru king.

7. With a mace in hand, he had fled quickly from the field of battle and entered into that lake, having by his power of illusion converted the water into a solid substance.

8. When at last the animals of the Pandavas were very much tired, the latter proceeded to their camp and took rest there along with their soldiers.

9. After the Parthas had gone to their camp, Kripa and Drona's son and Kritavarman of the Satwata race slowly went towards that lake.

10—11. Approaching the lake within which was the king, they addressed that invincible king of men asleep within the water, saying,—" Arise, O king, and fight with Yudhishthira. Either obtaining victory enjoy the Earth, or killed proceed to heaven.

12. The force of the Pandavas also, O Duryodhana, have all been killed by you. The survivors have been greatly wounded.

13. They will not be able, O king, to withstand you specially when you will be protected by us. Arise therefore, O Bharata.

Duryodhana said :—

14. By good luck, I see you, O foremost of men, come back alive from this destructive battle between the Pandavas and the Kauravas.

15. After we have taken rest for a while and removed our fatigue, we shall meet the enemy and defeat him. You also are tired and I myself am greatly wounded. The army of the Pandavas is increasing in strength. And therefore I do not like to fight now.

16. It is no wonder, O heroes, that you are extolling me thus for your hearts are noble. Your devotion to me is also great. This, however, is not the proper time for displaying power.

17. Taking rest for this one night, I shall in the morning join you and fight with the enemy. There is no doubt about it.

Sanjaya continued :—

18. Thus addressed, the son of Drona replied to the king, who was invincible in battle, saying,—" Rise up, O king, may you fare well. We shall yet defeat the enemy.

19. I swear by all my holy acts, by all the gifts I have made, by truth itself, and by my meditations, O king, that I shall to-day kill the Somakas.

20. Indeed I shall not enjoy the pleasure of performing sacrifices, a pleasure which is enjoyed by all pious men, if this night passes away without my killing the Pandavas in battle.

21—22. Without killing all the Panchalas, I will not, O lord, loosen my armour, I tell you this truly. Believe me, O king." While they were thus conversing, a number of hunters arrived there. Worn out with the weight of meat they carried, they came there not deliberately but for satisfying their thirst.

23. Those hunters, O king, used, every day, to procure basket fuls of meat for Bhimsena, O king.

24. As they sat concealed on the banks of that lake, those men heard every word of that conversation that took place between Duryodhana and those warriors.

25. Finding the Kuru king reluctant to fight, those great bowmen, themselves desirous of fighting, began to urge him greatly to accept their advice.

26—27. Seeing those car-warriors of the Kaurava army, and knowing that the king, reluctant to fight, was living within the waters and hearing that conversation between those heroes and their chief living within the depth of the lake, O king, they clearly understood that it was Duryodhana who was staying within the lake and was firm in his resolutiou.

28. Sometime before, the son of Pandu, while searching for the king, had met those men and asked them the whereabouts of Duryodhana.

29—30. Recollecting the words that the son of Pandu had said those hunters, O king, wnisphered to one another,—"We will point out Duryodhana (unto the Pandavas). The son of Pandu will then give us riches. It is clear that the famous king Duryodhana is here.

31. Let us then go all of us where king Yudhishthira is, for telling him that the vindictive Duryodhana is living hidden within the waters of this lake.

32. Let us also, all of us, inform that great bowman, the intelligent Bhimasena, that the son of Dhritarashtra has hidden himself within the waters of this lake.

33—34. Pleased with us, he will give us immense riches. Why should we exhaust ourselves day after day, with procuring meat?" Having said these words, those hunters, filled with joy and longing for wealth, took up their baskets of meat and went towards the Pandava camp.

35. The Pandavas, of pure aim and expert in fighting, O monarch, not seeing in battle Duryodhana who was then concealed, were taking rest in their camp.

36. Desirous of putting an end to that sinful man's evil policy, they had sent spies in all directions on the field of battle.

37. All the soldiers, however, that had been despatched on that mission, returned to the camp together and informed the just king Yudhishthira that they could not find out the king Duryodhana.

38. Hearing those words of the messengers who had come back, O Bharata-chief, king Yudhishthira was stricken with great anxiety and began to sigh heavily.

39—40. While the Pandavas, O best of Bharata's race, were thus disapointed those hunters, O lord, came speedily from the banks of that lake, and arrived at the camp filled with joy at having found out Duryodhana. Though forbidden, they still entered the camp, before the very presence of Bhimasena.

41. Having approached that powerful son of Pandu, Bhimasena, they described everything to him about what they had seen and heard.

42. Then Vrikodara, that scorcher of foes, O king, giving them immense wealth, described everything to the righteous king Yudhishthira saying,

43. "Duryodhana, O king, has been found out by the hunters that supply me with meat. He, O king, for whom you are sorry, now lies within a lake whose waters have been turned solid by him."

44. Hearing those pleasant words of Bhimasena, O king, Yudhishthira was, with all his brothers, filled with joy.

45. Having learnt that the great bowman Duryodhana had entered into the waters of a lake, the king went there quickly with Janarddana at the head.

46. Then a tumult arose, O king, from among the Pandavas and the Panchalas all of whom were filled with joy.

47. The warriors sent forth leonine roars, O foremost of Bharata's race, and cried loudly. All the Kshatriyas, O king, went quickly towards that lake called Dwaipayana.

48. The Somakas rejoiced all around and exclaimed,—"The sinful son of Dhritarashtra has been discovered."

49. The noise made by the cars of those quickly-proceeding warriors became very loud, O king, and touched the very sky.

50. Although their animals were exhausted all of them still proceeded quickly behind king Yudhishthira who was determined upon finding out Duryodhana.

51—52. Arjuna, and Bhimasena, the two sons of Madri by Pandu, the Panchala prince Dhrishtadyumna, the invincible Shikshandin, Uttamaujas, Yudhamnyu, the great car-warrior Satyaki, the five sons of Draupadi, and those amongst the Panchalas, O king, that were yet alive, and all the Pandavas, and all their elephants, and infantry by hundreds all accompained Yudhishthira.

53. Brave and righteous king Yudhishthira, O king, reached the lake Dwaipayana within which Duryodhana then was. Wide as the ocean itself, its view was delightful and its waters were cool and transparent.

54. Making the waters solid by means of his wonderful power of illusion, your son Duryodhana, O Bharata, lived within that lake.

55. Indeed, within those waters lay, O lord, that king, armed with his mace, who, could not be defeated by any man.

56. Living within the waters of that lake, king Duryodhana heard the tumult of the Pandava army which resembled the muttering of the clouds.

57. Yudhishthira then, O king, with his brothers, went to that lake for killing Duryodhana.

58. Raising a thick dust, that son of Pandu made the earth tremble with the sounds of his car-wheels and the loud blare of his conch.

59—60. Hearing the noise made by the army of Yudhishthira, those great car-warriors, viz, Kritavarman, Kripa and the son of Drona, said to the Kuru king:—"Elated with joy and desiring for vicrory the Pandavas are coming here, you know. We will, therefore, leave this place."

61. Hearing those words of those active heroes, he answered them, saying,—"Let it be so," and remained as before within the waters, having, O lord, turned them solid by his power of illusion.

62. Those car-warriors, headed by Kripa, filled with grief, took leave of the king, and went away to a remote place.

63. Having proceeded far, they beheld a banian tree under whose shade they stopped, greatly exhausted and exceedingly anxious about the king, and thinking thus.

64. "Having solidified the waters of the lake, the powerful son of Dhritarashtra lives at the bed. The Pandavas have reached there from desire of battle.

65. How will the battle take place? What will become of the king? How will the Pandavas discover the King?"

66. Thinking of these things, O king, those heroes, viz,, Kripa and others, unyoked their horses from their cars and prepared to rest there for some time.

CHATER XXXI.

(SHALYA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. 'After those three car-warriors had left that place the Pandavas arrived at that lake within which Duryodhana was taking rest.

2. Having arrived at the banks of the Dwaipayana lake, O best of Kuru's race, they saw that reservoir of waters enchanted by your son. Then Yudhishthira said to Vasudeva.

3. "Behold, the son of Dhritarashtra has enchanted these waters by his power of illusion. Having enchanted the waters, he lives within them. He entertains no fear of injury from man.

4. Having exercised his power of illusion he is now within the waters. By an act of deception, that deceiptful man has betaken to this refuge. He shall not however escape me alive.

5. Even if the holder of the thunderbolt himself helps him in battle, people, O Madhava, shall yet see him killed today."

Vasudeva said:

6. With your own power of illusion, O Bharata, destroy this illusion of Duryodhana who is an expert in it. One conversant with illusion should be killed with illusion. This indeed is the truth, O Yudhishthira.

7. By applying your power of illusion to these waters kill, O chief of the Bharatas, this Suyodhana who is the master of illusion.

8. By his illusory power Indra himself killed the Daityas and the Danavas. Vali himself was bound by that great one, viz., Upendra, with the aid of his illusory power.

9. The great Asura Hiranyaksha, as also that one, viz., Hiranyakashipu, was killed by the same power. Forsooth, O king, Vritra also was slain by the power of illusion.

10. Similarly was the Rakshasa Ravana of Pulastya's race, with his relatives and followers, killed by Rama. Relying upon your illusory power do you also display your prowesss.

11. Those two highly energetic and ancient Daityas, viz., Taraka, and Viprachitti were, in ancient time, O king, slain by the help of illusion.

12. Likewise Vatapi and Ilwala, and Trishiras, O lord, and the Asuras Sunda and Upasunda were all killed by the aid of illusion.

13. Indra himself enjoys heaven by the power of illusion. Action is very efficacious O king, and nothing else is so, O Yudhishthira.

14. Daityas and Danavas and Rakshasas and kings have been slain by the same. Do you, therefore, act.'

Sanjaya continued:—

15. 'Thus addressed by Vasudeva, Pandu's son of rigid vows, smillingly addressed, O monarch, your powerful son who, O Bharata, was then within the waters of that lake, saying.

16. "Why, O Suyodhana, have you charmed these waters, after having caused all the Kshatriyas to die and after having, O king, brought about the extinction of your family?

17. Why have you entered into this lake today, with a view to save your own life? Arise, O king, and fight us, O Suyodhana.

18. Where, O best of men, has your sense of honor now gone, since, O king, you have enchanted these waters and are now lying within them?

19. All men describe you in assemblies as a hero. All that, however, is entirely false, I think, since you are now living concealed within these waters.

20. Arise, O king, and fight, for you are a Kshatriya born in a noble family. You are a Kauraveya. Remember your birth.

21. How do you boast of your birth in Kuru's family, when you have concealed yourself within the depths of this lake, having fled away from battle in fear?

22. This is not the duty of a Kshatriya. Flight from battle, O king, is not the practice of honorable men, nor it leads to heaven.

23—24. How is it that without having terminated this war, though you were filled with the desire of victory, you live now within this lake,; after having brought about the destruction of your sons and brothers and sires and relatives and friends and maternal uncles and kinsmen.

25. Though always vaunting of your courage, you are however, not a hero. Falsely you describe yourself, O Bharata, before all men as a hero, O wicked wight.

26. They, that are heroes, never fly away from their foes. Or tell us, O hero, about the nature of that courage by which you have fled from battle.

27—28. Arise, O prince, and fight fearlessly. Having caused all your troops and

brothers to be killed O Suyodhana, you should not, if you are an honest man, think now of saving your life. A Kshatriya, O Suyodhana, like yourself, should not act in this way.

29. Relying upon Karna as also upon Shakuni the son of Suvala, you considered yourself immortal and could not understand your own self.

30. Having committed such a grievous iniquity fight now, O Bharata. How is it that you prefer flight from the field. Surely, you forget yourself.

31. Where is that manliness of yours, O sire, and where, O Suyodhana, is that your pride? Where is your prowess and energy gone?

32. Where is that your mastery in weapons? Why do you live within this lake now? Arise, O Bharata, and fight, following the duties of a Kshatriya.

33. Either govern the wide earth after defeating us, or sleep, O Bharata, on the naked earth slain by us.

34. Even this is your highest duty, as laid down by the illustrious Creator himself. Act according to the injunctions of the scriptures, and be a king, O great car-warrior.

Sanjaya continued :—

35. 'Thus addressed, O king, by the intelligent son of Dharma, your son answered him from within the waters in these words.

Duryodhana said :—

36. It is not at all surprising O king, that fear should possess the hearts of living creatures. As regards myself, however, O Bharata, I have not fled from the field of battle for the fear of life.

37. My car and quivers were destroyed and my parshni drivers were slain. I was alone, without a single follower to help me in battle. It was for this that I wanted a little rest.

38. It was not for the sake of saving my life, it was not for fear, it was not from grief, O king, that I entered this lake. It was only out of fatigue that I did so.

39. Do you, O son of Kunti, take a little rest with your followers. Rising from this lake I will surely fight all of you in battle.

Yudhishthira said :—

40. All of us have taken enough of rest. We searched you for a long while. Rise then now, O Suyodhana, and give us battle.

41. Either killing the Parthas in battle make this prosperous kingdom your own, or killed by us in battle go to the region reserved for heroes.

Duryodhana said :—

42. The Kurus, O son of Kuru's race, for whose sake I desired sovereignty, those brothers of mine, O king, all lie dead on the field.

43. I do not like to enjoy any longer the Earth that does not contain wealth and best of Kshatriyas, and that has accordingly become like a widow.

44. I, however, still hope to defeat you, O Yudhishthira, after checking the pride, O foremost of Bharata's race, of the Panchalas and the Pandus.

45. There is, however, no longer any need for battle when Drona and Karna have been killed and when our grandfather Brishma has been slain.

46. This empty Earth, O king, is now intended for you. What king would like to rule a kingdom divested of friends and allies?

47. Having caused friends such as I had and even sons and brothers and sires, to be slain and seeing my kingdom possessed by you, who is there like myself that would like to live?

48. Clad in deer-skins I would enter into woods. I have no desire for kingdom, shorn as I am of friends and allies, O Bharata.

49. Deprived entirely of friends and allies, of horses and elephants, this Earth exists for you, O king. Do you enjoy her now cheerfully.

50. As for myself, clad in deer-skins, I shall go to the forest. Friendless, as I am, I have no desire, O king, for even life.

51. Go, O king, and rule the Earth destitute of kings, warriors, wealth, and without citadels, as you like.

Sanjaya continued :—

52—53. Hearing those words of piercing anguish, the illustrious Yudhishthira said to your son Duryodhana who was still within the lake, saying,—" Do not utter such ravings of sorrow, O sire, from within the lake. I do not, like Shakuni, feel any pity for you, O king, for such words as these.

54. You may now, O Suyodhana, be willing to make a gift of the Earth to me, I, however, do not wish to rule the Earth as a gift from you.

55. I cannot sinfully accept this Earth as a gift from you. Acceptance of a gift, O king, is not the duty of a Kshatriya.

56. I do not, therefore, wish to have the Earth as a gift from you. I shall, on the other hand, enjoy the Earth after defeating you in battle.

57. You are not now the lord of the Earth. Why then do you wish to make a gift of that over which you have no right? Why, O king, did you not then give us the Earth when we, observing the rules of honesty and desirous of the welfare of our family, begged you for our portion?

58. Having first refused the request of the great Krishna, why do you now desire to give away the Earth? What is this folly of yours?

59. What king is there who, attacked by foes, would like to give away his kingdom, O son of Kuru's race. You have not the power today to give away the Earth.

60. Why then do you wish to make a gift of that over which you have no right? Defeating me in battle, rule you this Earth.

61. You did not formerly agree to give me even a portion of the Earth covered by the point of a needle.

62. How then, O king, do you make me a gift of the whole Earth? How is it that you, who couldst not formerly give up even that much of land which the point of a needle would cover, now wish to make over the entire Earth.

63. What fool would, after having got such prosperity and governed the entire Earth, think of giving over that Earth to his foes.

64. Fool as you are, you do not see the impropriety of this! Although you wish to give away the Earth, you shall not yet escape me with life.

65. Either rule the Earth after having defeated us, or go to the celestial regions after being slain by us.

66. If both of us, that is, yourself and myself, be alive, then all creatures will remain in doubt as to whom the victory belongs.

67. Your life, O indiscreet man, now depends upon me. If I like, I can allow you to live, but you are not capable of saving your own life.

68. At one time you tried to burn us to death and to take our lives by means of snakes and other kinds of poison and by sinking us in water.

69. We were also, O king, deprived by you of our kingdom. You spoke harsh words to us, and maltreated Draupadi.

70. For these reasons, O wretch, your life must be taken. Rise, rise, and fight us. That will benefit you.'

Sanjaya continued :—

71. In this way, O king, those heroes, viz., the Pandavas, elated with victory, repeatedly spoke there.'

CHATER XXXII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA.)

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Thus remonstrated with by his enemy, how, indeed, did that scorcher of enemies, my heroic and royal son, who was angry by nature, then act.

2. He had never before brooked such a chastisement. He had before been treated by all respectfully like a king.

3. He who could not formerly stand in the shade of an umbrella, thinking he had taken another's shelter,—he who could not endure the very effulgence of the Sun, on account of his pride, how could he brooke these words of his enemies?

4. You have with your own eyes, O Sanjaya, seen the whole earth, with even her Mlecchas and nomad tribes, depend upon his grace.

5—6. Chastised there by the sons of Paudu, while lying concealed in such a solitary place after having been deprived of his followers and attendants, alas, how did he answer the Pandavas upon hearing such bitter and repeated rebukes from his victorious enemies. Tell me everything, O Sanjaya, about it.'

Sanjaya continued :—

7—9. 'Thus chastised, O king, by Yudhishthira and his brothers, your royal son lying within the lake, O king of kings, heard those bitter words and became very wretched. Sighing heavily the king moved his arms again and again and making up his mind to fight, thus answered from within the lake, the royal son of Pandu.

Duryodhana said :—

10. Ye Parthas, all of you have friends cars, and animals. I, however, am alone, today without a car, and without an animal.

11. Alone as I am, and shorn of weapons, how can I dare fight on foot, against

numberless foes all well-armed and possessed of cars.

12—13. Do you, however, O Yudhishthira, fight me one at a time. It is not proper that one should in battle fight with many, especially when that one is without armour, is fatigued, stricken with calamity, greatly wounded, and shorn of both animals and troops.

14—15. I do not cherish the least fear, O king, of either you or Vrikodara, the son of Pritha, or Phalguna, or Vasudeva or all the Panchalas, or the twins, or Yuyudhana, or all the warriors you have. Standing in battle alone I shall resist all of you.

16. The fame, O king, of all righteous men depends on righteousness. I say all this to you who are both righteous and illustrious.

17. Rising I shall fight all of you in battle. Like the year that one by one meets with all the seasons, I shall meet with all of you in fight.

18. Wait, ye Pandavas. Like the snn destroying by his effulgence the light of all the stars at dawn, I shall to day, though weaponless and carless, kill all of you possessed of cars and horses.

19—21. Today I shall release myself from the debt I woe to the many illustrious Kshatriyas, to Valhika and Drona and Bhishma and the great Karna, to the heroic Jayadratha and Bhagadatta, to Shalya the ruler of the Madras and Bhurishravas, to my sons, O best of Bharata's race, and Shakuni the son of Suvala, to all my friends and well-wishers and relatives.

22. Today I shall release myself from that debt by killiug you with your brothers. Having said these words, he stopped.

Yudhishthira said :—

23. By good luck, O Suyodhana, you are conversant with the duties of a Kshatriya. By good luck, O mighty-armed heroe, your heart is bent on a battle.

24. By good luck, you are a hero, O you of Kuru's race, and by good luck, you are conversant with battle, since, alone, you wish to give all of us a battle.

25. Fight any one of us taking whatever weapon you like. All of us will fight.

26. I grant you also, O hero, this other wish yours viz., that if you kill any one of us you shall then become king. Otherwise, killed by us, go to heaven.

Duryodhana said :—

27. Brave as you are, if you allow me the option of fighting only one of you, this mace, that I have in my hand, is the weapon that I select.

28. Let any of you, who thinks that he is a match for me, come forward and fight with me on foot, armed with mace.

29. Many wonderful single combats have takes place on cars. Let this one great and wonderful encounter with the mace take place today.

30. Men wish to change weapons only in a battle. Let the mode of fight be changed today, with your permission.

31. O you of great arms, I shall, with my mace, defeat you today with all your younger brothers, as also all the Panchalas and the Srinjayas and all the other troops you still possess. I do not entertain the least fear, O Yudhishthira, of even Shakra himself.

Yudhishthira said.—

32. Rise, rise, O son of Gandhari, and fight me, O Suyodhana. Alone as you are fight us, meeting one at a time, O you of great might, armed with your mace.

33. Be a man, O son of Gandhari, and fight carefully. Today you shall have to lose your life even if Indra becomes your ally.

Sanjaya continued :—

34. 'That foremost of men, your son, could not brooke those words of Yudhishthira. He sighed heavily from within the water like a huge snake from within its hole.

35. Struck repeatedly with such wordy goads, he could not bear at all like a horse of high breed that cannot bear the strokes of a whip.

36. Agitating the waters with great force that brave warrior rose like a prince of elephants from within the lake, sighing heavily in rage, and armed with his heavy and strong mace of adamant decked with gold.

37. Cutting through the solidified waters your son rose, carrying his mace made of iron at his shoulders, like the sun himself consuming everything with his rays.

38. Highly powerful your intelligent son began to handle his heavy mace made of iron and equipt with a sling.

39. Seeing him with the mace and resembling a mountain crest or the trident wielding Rudra himself casting angry looks on living beings they marked that Bharata chief to shed a lustre around like the scorching sun himself in the sky. Indeed, all

creaturas then regarded that mighty-armed chastiser of foes, as he stood with his mace on his shoulders after rising from the waters, to look like the Death himself armed with his rod.

42. Indeed, all the Panchalas then saw your royal son, resembling the thunder-wielding Indra or the trident-wielding Hara.

43. Seeing him, however, rise from within the lake, all the Panchalas and the Pandavas began to rejoice and seize each other's hands.

44—46. Your son Duryodhana considered that action of the onlookers to be an insult to him. Rolling his eyes in anger, and as if consuming the Pandavas with his looks, and contracting his brow into three furrows, and repeatedly biting his nether lip, he addressed the Pandavas with Keshava in their midst, saying,—"Ye Pandavas, you shall have to bear the consequences of these insults! Killed by me today, you shall, with the Panchalas, have to go to the abode of Yama."

Sanjaya continued :—

47. Rising from the water, your son Duryodhana stood there, with his mace, and with limbs covered with blood.

48. Covered with blood and wet with water, his body resembled a mountain discharging water from within it.

49. As he stood with his mace, the Pandavas took him for the angry son of Surya himself armed with his bludgeon called Kinkara.

50. With voice deep as the mutterings of the clouds or of a bull roaring in joy, the highly powerful Duryodhana then, armed with his mace, asked the Parthas for battle.

Duryodhana said :—

51—52. Ye will have, O Yudhishthira, to meet me one at a time. It is not meet that one hero should fight with many at the same time, especially when he is divested of armour, worn out with fatigue, covered with water, greatly wounded, and without cars, animals and troops.

53. Let the celestials see me fight alone deprived of even armour, weapons and other necessary implements.

54. I shall forsooth fight all of you. You will act as a judge, as you have the necessary qualificattons for judging the propriety and impropriety of everything.

Yudhishthira said :—

55. How is it, O Duryodhana, that you had not this knowledge when many great car-warriors, in a body, killed Abhimanyu in battle.

56. The duties of a Kshatriya are highly cruel, shorn of all considerations, and feelings of pity. Otherwise, how could you kill Abhimanyu under those circumstances.

57. All of you were acquainted with the rules of fair fight. All of you were heroes. All of you were ready to sacrifice your lives in battle. The great aim for those that fight righteously is the attainment of the regions of Shakra.

58. If this be yaur duty, that one should not be killed by many, why is it then that Abhimanyu was killed by many, acting under your advice?

59. In difficulty, every one forgets considerations of virtue. They then see the portals of the other world as being closed.

60. Put on armour, O hero, and bind your locks. Take everything else, O Bharata, which you require.

61—62. O hero, I however grant you an additional, favour, namely, if you can slay him amongst the five Pandavas with whom you wish to fight, you shall then be the king Otherwise, killed by him, you will proceed to heaven. Save your life, O hero, tell us what boon we may give you.

Sanjaya continued :—

63. Then your son, O king, put on armour made of gold, and a beautiful head-gear adorned with pure gold.

64. Clad in bright armour of gold, he put on that head-gear. Indeed, O king, your son then looked resplendent like a golden summit.

65—67. Clad in armour, armed with mace, and accoutered with other equipments your son Duryodhana then, O king, standing on the field of battle, addressed all the Pandavas, saying,—"Amongst you five brothers let any one fight me, armed with mace. As regards myself, I am willing to fight either Sahadeva, or Bhima, or Nakula or Phalguna, or you today, O best of Bharata's race. If you give me battle, I will fight any one amongst yon and will surely gain the victory on the field.

68. Today I will terminate these hostilities, with the help, O foremost of men, of my mace wrapped in a cloth of gold.

69. I think there is none who can equal me in an encounter with the mace. With my mace I shall kill all of you one after another.

70. Amongst all of you there is no one who is able to fight fairly with me. It is not proper for me to vaunt thus about my own self. I shall, however, make these words of mine true before you.

71. Within this very hour, these words will either be proved or falsified. Let him amongst you take up the mace that will fight with me.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Whilst Duryodhana, O king, was repeatedly crying aloud in this way, Vasudeva, worked up with wrath, said to Yudhishthira.

2—3. What indiscreet words have you given vent to, O king, saying that killing one amongst us be you the king of Kurus. If, indeed, O Yudhishthira, Duryodhana selects you for battle, or Arjuna, or Nakula, or Sahadeva, (what will be the consequence?

4. With a view to kill Bhimasena, O king, Duryodhana has practised with the mace upon a statue of iron.

5. How then, O best of Bharata's race, will our object be accomplished? From pity, O best of kings, you have acted very indiscreetly.

6. I do not at this moment see any match for Duryodhana except Pritha's son Vrikodara. His practice again, with the mace, is not so great.

7. You have, therefore, once more given preference to a game of chance as that one formerly between yourself and Shakuni, O manarch.

8. Bhima is endued with might and prowess. King Suyodhana, however, is skillful. In a fight between might and skill, he, that is skillful, O king, always becomes successful.

9. Such an enemy, O king, you have, by your words placed in a comfortable and secure position. You have placed your ownself, however, in a difficult position. We have, for this, been placed in great peril.

10. Who is there that would relinquish sovereignty within grasp, after having defeated all his enemy and when he has only one foe to kill who even is sunk in difficulties?

11. I do not see such a man in the world today, be he a god, who is able to defeat the mace-armed Duryodhana in battle.

12. Neither you, nor Bhima, nor Nakula nor Sahadeva, nor Phalguna, is capable of defeating Duryodhana in fair fight. King Duryodhana is endued with great skill.

13. How then, O Bharata, can you address to such a foe words such as these viz., "Fight, selecting the mace as the weapon, and if you can kill one amengst us, you shall then be the king."

14. If Duryodhana meets Vrikodara amongst us wishing to fight fairly with him, even then our victory will hang in the balance. Duryodhana is highly powerful and skillful.

15. How could you say to him,—"Killing only one amongst us be you the king." Forsooth the children of Pandu and Kunti are not destined to enjoy kingdom. They have been born for passing their lives in continued exile in the forest or in mendicancy.

Bhimasena said:—

16. O killer of Madhu, do not, O delighter of the Yadus, grieve. However difficult it may be, I shall terminate these hostilities.

17. Forsooth, I shall kill Suyodhana in battle. It appears, O Krishna, that the victory of righteous Yudhishthira is certain.

18. This mace of mine is heavier by one and a half times than Duryodhana's. Do not, O Madhava, grieve.

19. I dare fight him, selecting the mace as the weapon. Let all of you, O Janarddana, witness this eccounter.

20. What do you say of Suyodhana, I would fight with the three worlds including the very celestials even if they be armed with every kind of weapon.

Sanjaya continued:—

21—22. 'After Vrikodara had said these words, Vasudeva, filled with glee, applauded him highly and said to him,—"Depending on you, O you of great arms, the righteous king Yudhishthira will, forsooth, get back his prosperity after the destruction of all his foes.

23. You have slain all the sons of Dhritarashtra in battle. At your hands many kings and princes and elephants have met with their death.

24. The Kalingas, the Magadhas, the Kauravas, the Westerners, and the Gandharvas have all been killed in dreadful battles, O son of Pandu,

25. Killing Duryodhana then, O son of Kunti, bestow the earth with her oceans upon the righteous Yudhishthira like Vishnu conferring the sovereignty of the three worlds upon the lord of Shachi.

26. Getting you for a foe in battle, the wretched son of Dhritarashtra, will forsooth meet with his death. You will certainly fulfill your promise by breaking his bones.

27. You should however, O son of Pritha, always fight with care with the son of Dhritarashtra. He is endued with both skill and strength and always finds delight in battle.

28. Then Satyaki, O king, applauded the son of Pandu.

29. The Panchalas and the Pandavas, also, headed by the righteous king Yudhishthira, all praised Bhimasena.

30—31. Then Bhima, of terrible might, addressed Yudhishthira who was standing amid the Srinjayas like the burning Sun himself, saying,—"I venture to fight with this man in battle. This wretch among men is not able to defeat me in fight.

32. Today I shall vomit that ire which has been rankling in my bosom against Suyodhana the son of Dhritarashtra like Arjuna throwing fire on the forest of Khandava.

33. I shall today pluck out the dart, O son of Pandu, that lay so long sticking to your heart. Be happy, O king, after I shall have struck down this wretch with my mace.

34. Today I shall recover, O sinless one, your garland of glory. Today Suyodhana shall renounce his life, his prosperity and his kingdom.

35. Today hearing of his son's death, king Dhritarashtra will remember all those wrongs that he did to us under Shakuni's advice."

36. Having said these words, that energetic prince, of Bharata's race, stood up for battle, like Shakra summoning Vritra to an encounter.

37. Unable to endure that call your highly energetic son, proceeded to the encounter, like one infuriate elephant proceeding to assail another.

38. The Pandavas saw your son, as he came armed with mace, as the summit of the mount Kailasa.

39. Verily beholding that powerful son of yours standing alone like a prince of elephants separated from the herd, the Pandavas were filled with joy.

40. Standing in battle like a very lion, Duryodhana had no fear, no pain, no anxiety.

41—42. Seeing him stand there with uplifted mace like the crested mountain of Kailasa, Bhimasena, O monarch, addressed him, saying,—"Remember all those wrongs that king Dhritarashtra and yourself have inflicted on us. Remember what took place at Varanavata.

Remember how Draupadi, while in her season, was maltreated in the midst of the assembly and how king Yudhishthira was defeated at dice through Shakuni's advice.

44. See now, O wicked man, the dreadful consequence of those acts as also of the other wrongs that you inflicted on the innocent Parthas.

45. It is for you that that illustrious chief of the Bharatas, the son of Ganga, the grandfather of us all, lies now on a bed of arrows.

46. Drona also has been killed. Karna has been killed. Shalya of great valour has been killed. Yonder Shakuni also, the root of these enmities, has been killed in battle.

47. Your heroic brothers and sons, with all your troops, have been killed. Other heroic kings also, who never retreated from battle, have been killed.

48. These and many other leading Kshatriyas, as also Pratikamin, that wretch who had seized the locks of Draupadi, have been killed.

49. You alone are still alive, O destroyer of your family, O wretch among men. I shall forsooth kill you today with my mace.

50. Today, O king, I shall, in battle, repress all your pride. I shall destroy also your hope of sovereignty, O king, and pay off all your misdeeds to the sons of Pandu.

Duryodhana said :—

51. What is the use of speaking too much? Fight now with me. Today O Vrikodara, I shall subdue your desire for battle.

52. Why do you not see me, O wretch, standing here for an encounter with the mace? Am I not armed with a formidable mace that looks like a summit of Himavat?

53. What enemy is there, O wretch, that would dare defeat me armed with this weapon? If it be a fair fight, Purandara, himself, amongst the celestials, is not capable of doing it.

54. For all those misdeeds of mine to which you have referred, you could not (hitherto) do me the slightest injury.

55. By my might, I caused you to live in the woods, to serve in another's house and to conceal yourselves in disguises.

56. Your friends and allies also have been killed. Our loss has been equal. If, then, I am killed in this battle, that would be highly praiseworthy. Or perhaps, time will be the cause.

57. Up to this day I have never been defeated in fair fight on the field of battle. If you defeat me deceitfully your fame will certainly last for ever. That act of yours will, forsooth, be unrighteous and infamous.

58. Do not, O son of Kunti, roar uselessly in this way like autumnal clouds shorn of water. Display all the strength you possess in battle now.

59. Hearing those words of his, the Pandavas with the Srinjayas, all filled with desire of victory, praised them highly.

60. Like men exciting an infuriate elephant with the clapping of hands, all of them then pleased king Duryodhana.

61. The elephants began to grunt and the horses to neigh repeatedly. The weapons of the Pandavas who were filled with the desire of victory shone there.'

CHAPTER XXXIV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. 'When that fierce encounter O king, was about to take place, and when all the great Pandavas had taken their seats indeed, having heard that a battle, between those two heroes, both of whom were his disciples, was about to begin, Rama, whose banner bore the emblem of the palmyra palm, and who had the plough for his weapon, came there.

3. Seeing him, the Pandavas, with Keshava, filled with joy, advanced towards him, and receiving him adored him properly.

4. After adoring him, they then, O king said to him these words,—" Witness, O Rama, the skill in battle of your two disciples."

5—6. Looking at Krishna and the Pandavas, and also at Duryodhana of Kuru's race who was standing there armed with mace, Rama then said,—" Two and forty days have passed since I left home. I had set out under the constellation Pushya and have come back under Shravana. I am desirous, O Madhava, of witnessing this encounter with the mace between these two disciples of mine."

7. At that time the two heroes, viz., Duryodhana and Vrikodara, shone effulgent on the field, both armed with maces.

8. Embracing him who had the plough for his weapon, king Yudhishthira duly enquired about his welfare and welcomed him.

9. Those two great bowmen, viz., the illustrious Krishnas, filled with joy, cheerfully saluted the hero who had the plough for his weapon and embraced him.

10. Similarly the two sons of Madri and the five sons of Draupadi saluted Rohini's powerful son and stood at a respectful distance.

11. Bhimasena of great strength and your son, O monarch, both with uplifted maces in their arms, adored Valadeva.

12. The other kings honored him by welcoming him and then all of them said to Rama,—" Witness this encounter, O you of mighty arms."—Even thus those mighty car-warriors said to the high-souled son of Rohini.

13. The highly energetic Rama, having embraced the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, enquired after the welfare of all the other kings. Likewise all of them, approaching him, enquired after his welfare.

14—15. Having in return saluted all the great Kshatriyas, and having made courteous enquiries about each according to their age, that heroe affectionately embraeed Janarddana and Satyaki. Smelling their heads, he enquired after their welfare.

16. Those two in return, O king, duly adored him, their superior, with great pleasure, like Indra and Upendra adoring Brahma the king of the celestials.

17. Then Dharma's son, O Bharata, said to that chastiser of foes, viz., the son of Rohini,—" Witness, O Rama, this dreadful encounter between the two brothers."

18. Thus adored by those great car-warriors, the mighty-armed elder brother of Keshava, of great beauty, took his seat amongst them.

19. Clad in blue robes and possessed of a fair complexion, Rama, as he sat amidst those kings, shone like the Moon in the sky encircled by a number of stars.

20. Then that dreadful and hair-standing enoounter took place between those two sons of yours O king, for terminating the long standing feud.

CHAPTER XXXV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Cohtinued.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. On the eve of the great battle (between the Kurus and the Pandus) Rama, with Keshava's permission, had left Dwaraka accompanied by many of the Vrishnis.

2. He had said to Keshava,—"I will help neither the son of Dhritarashtra nor the sons of Pandu, but will go whereever I like."

3. Having said so, Rama, that subduer of enemies, had gone away. O Brahmana, tell me everything about his return.

4. Tell me in full how Rama came there, and how he witnessed the battle. Indeed you are a skillful narrator.

Vaishampayana said :—

5. After the great Pandavas had taken up their post at Upaplavya, they sent Krishna to Dhritarashtra for the object of peace, O mighty-armed one, and for the behoof of all creatures.

6. Having gone to Hastinapura and met Dhritarashtra, Keshava spoke wholesome and sincere words.

7—8. The king, however, as I have told you before, did not pay heed to his advice. Unable to secure peace, the mighty-armed Krishna, that foremost of men, returned, O king, to Upaplavya.

9. Dismissed by Dhritarashtra's son Krishna came back, and uponthe failure of his mission, O foremost of kings, said to the Pandavas.

10. Urged by fate, the Kauravas have disregarded my words. Come, ye sons of Pandu, with me, under the constellation Pushya.

11. After this, while the troops of both parties were being collected and arrayed, the great son of Rohini, that foremost of all powerful persons, said to his brother Krishna.

12. "O mighty-armed one, O slayer of Madhu, let us help the Kurus." Krishna, however, did not pay heed to those words of his.

13. Enraged at this, that illustrious son of Yadu's race, viz., the wielder of the plough, then started on a pilgrimage o the Saraswati.

14. Accompanied by all the Yadavas, he set out under the conjunction of the asterism called Maitra, The Bhoja chief (Kritavarman), however, took the side o Duryodhana. Accompanied by Yuyudhana, Vasudeva took that of the Pandavas

15. After the heroic son of Rohini had started under the constellation Pushya, the slayer of Madhu, placing the Pandavas in his van, went against the Kurus.

16. While proceediing, Rama ordered his servants on the way, saying,—"Bring all the necessary articles of use for a pilgrimage. Bring the sacred fire that is at Dwaraka and our priests.

17. Bring gold, silver, kine, robes, horses, elephants, cars, mules, camels, and other beasts of burden.

18. Bring all these necessaries for a sojourn to the sacred waters, and proceed quickly towards the Saraswati.

19—21. Bring also some priests for the performance of a special rite, and hundreds and hundreds of best Brahmanas." Having given these orders to the servants, powerful Valadeva started on a pilgrimage at that time of great danger to the Kurus. Setting out towards the Saraswati, he visited all the sacred shrines along her course, accompanied by priests, friends, and many leading Brahmanas, as also with cars and elephants and horses and servants, O best of Bharata's race, and with many vehicles drawn by kine and mules and camels.

22. Various sorts of necessaries of life were distributed profusely in various countries amongst the weary and worn, children and the old, in response, O king, to their prayers.

23—24. Everywhere, O king, Brahmanas were sumptuously fed with whatever they wantad. At the command of Rohini's son, men, at different stages of the journey, stocked sufficient food and drink.

25. Costly garments and bedsteads and coverlets were distributed amongst the Brahmanas desirous of ease and comfort.

26. Whatever a Brahmana or Kshatriya wanted, it was given to him.

27—28. The party thus proceeded with great happiness and lived happily. Valarama's suite gave away vehicles to persons desirous of making journeys, drinks to them that were thirsty, and rich food to them that were hungry, as also raiments and ornaments, O best of Bharata's race, to many.

29. The road, O king, along which the party proceeded, looked resplendent, was

ighly comfortable for all, and resembled heaven itself.

30. There were rejoicings everywhere and rich food was procurable everywhere. There were shops and stalls and various objects were kept there for sale. The entire way was thronged with human beings. And it was decorated with various kinds of trees and creatures, and various kinds of gems.

31. The great Valadeva, observing rigid vows, distributed amongst the Brahmanas profuse wealth and plentiful sacrificial presents, O king, at various sacred spots.

32—33. That chief of Yadu's race also distributed thousands of milch kine covered with excellent cloths and having their horns coated with gold, many horses born in different countries, many vehicles, and many beautiful slaves.

34. Thus did the great Rama distribute wealth in various sacred shrines on the Saraswati. In course of his travels, that noble hero of matchless power at last came to Kurukshetra.

Janamejaya said :—

35. Describe to me, O foremost of men, the characteristics, the origin, and the merits of the several tirthas on the Saraswati and the rites to be performed while going there.

36. Tell me these, in their order, O illustrious man. My curiosity is not to be satisfiid, O foremost of all persons conversant with the knowledge of Brahman.

Vaishampayana said :—

37. The account of the characteristics and origin of all these tirthas, O king, is very lengthy. I shall, however, describe them to you. Listen to that sacred account, O king.

38—39. Accompanied by his priests and friends, Valadeva first went to the tirtha called Prabhasa. There, the Lord of the asterisms (viz., Soma), who had been suffering from phthisis, was freed from his disease. Regaining energy there, O king, he now lights up the universe. And because that foremost of tirthas on Earth had formerly invested Soma again with effulgence, it is, therefore, called Prabhasa.

Janamejaya said :—

40—41. "For what was the worshipful Soma afflicted with phthisis? How also did he bathe in that tirtha? How did he, having bathed in that sacred water, regain his lost power? Describe it to me fully, O great Muni.

Vaishampayana said:—

42. Daksha had twenty seven daughters, O king. These he gave away (in marriage) unto Soma.

43. Connected with the several constellations, those wives, O king, of Soma of glorious deeds, served to help men in calculating time.

44. Endued with large eyes, all of them were peerless in beauty in the world. In beauty however, Rohini excelled them all.

45. The worshipful Soma took a great fancy for her. She was very much liked by him, and therefore, he enjoyed the pleasures of her company alone.

46. Formerly, O king, Soma lived long with Rohini exclusively. For this, those other wives of his, the constellations, became displeased with that high-souled one.

47. Going to their father Daksha, that Lord of creation, they said to him,—"Soma does not live with us. He always lives with Rohini only.

48. All of us, therefore, O Lord of creatures, shall live in your house practising austere penances."

49. Hearing those words of theirs, Daksha saw Soma and said to him,—"Treat all your wives equally. Do not commit a great sin."

50. And Daksha then said to those daughters of his,—"Go, all of ye, to Sashin. At my command, he, surnamed Chandramas, will treat you all equally."

51. Dismissed by him, they then proceeded to the house of him having cool rays. Still the worshipful Soma, O king, behaved as before, for pleased with Rohini alone, he always lived in her company.

52. His other wives then once more came to the abode of their father and said to him,—"Serving you, we will live under your protection. Soma does not live with us and does not obey your commands."

53. Hearing those words of theirs, Daksha once more said to Soma,—"Treat all your wives equally. Let me not, O Virochana, curse you."

54. Disregarding, however, the behest of Daksha, the worshipful Soma continued to live with Rohini alone. At this, his other wives became once more angry.

55. Going to their father, they bowed to him by lowering their heads, and said,—"Soma does not live with us. Give us shelter.

56. The worshipful Chandramas always lives with Rohini exclusively. He does not value your words, and does not wish to

love us. Therefore, save us so that Soma may accept us all.'

57. Hearing those words, the worshipful Daksha, O king, became angry and imprecated the curse of phthisis upon Soma. Thus did that disease affect the king of stars.

58—59. Afflicted with phthisis, the moon began to waste away day by day. He tried much to get rid of that disease by celebrating various sacrifices, O king. The Moon, however, could not, free himself from that curse. On the other hand, he daily grew lean and emaciated.

60. On account, of the wasting of Soma the deciduous herbs failed to grow. Their juices dried up they became tasteless and all of them lost their virtues.

61. And on account of the absence of the deciduous herbs, living creatures also began to die. Indeed, owing to the wasting of Soma, all creatures grew emaciated.

62. Then all the celestials, approaching Soma, O king, asked him, saying,—"Why is it that your form is not so beautiful and resplendant as before? Tell us whence has originated this great calmity.

63. Hearing your answer, we shall do what is needed for removing your fear." Thus addressed, the god, having the hare for his mark, replied to them and informed them of the cause of the curse and of the phthisis with which he was attacked.

64. Having heard those words the celestials repaired to Daksha and said,—"Be pleased O worshipful one, with Soma. Withdraw your this curse.

65. The Moon is very emaciated. Only a small portion of his body is seen. On account of his wasting, O Lord of the celestials, all creatures also are wasting. Creepers and herbs of various sorts are also wasting.

66. By their waste we ourselves also are suffering emaciation. Without us, what will this universe be. Knowing this, O lord of the universe, it behoves you to be pleased with Soma."

67. Thus addressed, Daksha, that Lord of creatures, said:—'It is impossible to make my words prove otherwise.

68. By some contrivance, however, O celestials, my words may be withdrawn. Let the moon treat his wives equally.

69. Having bathed also in that foremost of tirthas on the Saraswati, the hare-emblemed god shall regain his strength. These words of mine are true.

70. For half the month Soma shall decrease every day, and for half the month following he will increase daily. These words of mine are true.

71. Proceeding to the western ocean at the spot where the Saraswati joins the ocean that vast repository of waters, let him worship that God of gods Mahadeva there. He will then regain his form and beauty."

72. Thus commanded by the Rishi Daksha, Soma then proceeded to the Saraswati. He reached the greatest of tirthas called Prabhasa belonging to the Saraswati.

73. Bathing there on the day of the new moon, that god of great energy and great effulgence regained his cool rays and began again to Illume the universe.

74. All the creatures also, O king, having gone to Prabhasa, returned with Soma amongst them to where Daksha was.

75—76. Receiving them properly that Lord of creatures then sent them away. Pleased with Soma, the worshipful Daksha once more addressed him, saying,—"Do not, O son, disregard women, and never disregard Brahmans. Go, and obey my commands."

77. Dismissed by him, Soma returned to his own abode. All creatures began to live joyously as before.

78. I have thus told you everything about how the Moon had been cursed, and how also Prabhasa became the best of all tirthas.

79. On every day of the new moon, O king, the god, having the hare for his mark, bathes in the excellent tirtha of Prabhasa ahd regains his form and beauty.

80. O lord of Earth, that tirtha is known by the name of Prabhasa, because bathing there the moon regained his great (Prabha) effulgence.

81. After this, the mighty and illustrious Valadeva proceeded to Chamasodbheda, that is to that tirtha which is called by that name.

82. Distributing many precious presents at that place, the hero, having the plough for his weapon, passed one night there and performed his abolutions duly.

83—84. The elder brother of Keshava then speedily repaired to Udapana. Although the Saraswati is not visible there, yet persons endued with ascetic success, on account of their obtaining great merits and sanctity of that spot, and also of the coolness of the herbs and of the land there, know that the river has an invisible current, O king, underneath the earth there."

CHAPTER XXXVI.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. Valadeva proceeded next to the tirtha Udapana in the Saraswati, that had formerly been the habitation, O king, of the illustrious ascetic Trita.

2. Having distributed profuse wealth and worshipped the Brahmanas, the hero, having the plough for his weapon, bathed there and was filled with joy.

3. The great and pious ascetic Trita had lived there. While in a hole that great man had drunk the Soma juice.

4. His two brothers, dashing him down into a pit, had returned home. That foremost of Brahmanas, viz., Trita, had thereupon cursed them both"

Janmenjaya said :—

5. "What is the origin of Udapana? How did the great ascetic Trita fall into a pit there? Why was that foremost of Brahmanas thrown into that pit by his brothers?

6. How did his brothers, after throwing him into that hole, come back to their home? How did Trita celebrate his sacrifice, and how did he drink Soma? Describe all this O Brahmana, if you think that I am worthy of listening to it.

Vaishampayana said :—

7. 'In a former cycle, O king, there were three ascetic brothers. They were called Ekata, Dwita, and Trita, and all three were effulgent like the sun.

8. They were like Lords of the creation and had children. Brahmavadins as they were they had, by their ascetic penances, acquired the privilege of attaining to the regions of Brahman after death.

9. For their penances, vows, and self-restraint, their father, the virtuous Gautama, became highly pleased with them.

10. Greatly pleased with his sons, the worshipful Gautama, after living a long life here, went at last to the rigion in the other world that was fit for him.

11. Those kings, however, O king, that were the disciples of Gautama, continued to worship Gautama's sons after his ascension to heaven.

12. Amongst them, however, Trita, by his acts and Vedic studies, O king, became the foremost, even like his father Gautama.

13. Then all the great and pious ascetics began to worship Trita as they had worshiped his father Gautama before him.

14. Once upon a time, the two brothers Etaka and Dwita thought of celebrating a sacrifice and became anxious fer wealth.

15—16. They thought that they would take Trita with them, and calling upon all their disciples and collecting the needful number of animals, they would joyfully drink the Soma juice and acquire the great merits of sacrifice. The three brothers, then O king, did as settled.

17. Calling upon all their disciples for animals, and helping them in their sacrifices and receiving a large number of animals from them as gifts for the priestly services rendered by them those high-souled and great Rishis came towards the east.

19. Trita, O king, was cheerfully walking before them. Ekata and Dwita were in his rear, conducting the animals.

20. Seeing that large herd of animals they began to think as to how they two could appropriate that property without giving a share to Trita.

21. Hear, O king, what those two sinful wretches, viz., Ekata and Dwita, said to each other.

22. They said,—"Trita is a clever priest. Trita is well read in the Vedas. Trita is capable of earning many other kine.

23. Let us two, therefore, go away, taking the kine with us. Let Trita go whereever he likes, without being in our company."

24. As they proceeded, they were benighted on the way. They then saw a wolf before them. Not far from that spot was a deep hole on the bank of the Saraswati.

25. Trita, who was going before, seeing the wolf, ran in fear and fell, into that hole.

26. That hole was deep and terrible and capable of stricking terror to all creatures. Then Trita, O king, that best of ascetics, from within that hole, began to bewail. His two brothers heard his cries.

27. Knowing that he had fallen into a pit, his brothers Ekata and Dwita, actuated by fear of the wolf as also by temptation, went on, leaving behind their brother.

28. Thus left behind by his two brothers who were tempted to appropriate those animals, the great ascetic Trita, O king, while within that lonely pit covered with dust,

29. Herbs and creepers, thought himself

sunk, O best of the Bharatas, into hell like a sinful person.

30. He was afraid of dying because he had not earned the merit of drinking *Soma* juice. Greatly wise as he was he began to think with the help of his intelligence as to how he could succeed in drinking *Soma* even there.

31. While thinking thus the great ascetic, standing in that pit, beheld a creeper hanging down into it.

32. Although the pit was dry still the sage perceived the existence of water and of sacrificial fires there. Imagining himself the sacrificial priest,

33. The great ascetic took the creeper for the *Soma* plant. He then mentally uttered the *Richs*, the *Yayushes* and the *Samans*.

34. The pebbles lying there were converted into grains of sugar (in imagination) by Trita. He, then, O king, (mentally) performed his ablutions. He took the water for the clarified butter.

35. He distributed amongst the celestials their respective shares (of those sacrificial offerings). Having next mentally drunk Soma, he began to make a great noise. Those sounds, O king, first uttered by the sacrificing Rishi, entered into heaven and Trita performed that sacrifice after the manner laid down by Brahmavadins.

36. During the celebration of that sacrifice of the great Trita, the entire region of the celestials was agitated. None knew, however, the cause. Vrihaspati heard that loud noise.

37. The priest of the celestials said to them :—"Trita is performing a sacrifice. We must go there, ye celestials.

38. He is gifted with great ascetic merit; if willing, he is capable of creating other celestials."

39. Hearing those words of Vrihaspati, all the gods, in a body, repaired where the sacrifice of Trita was going on.

40. Having proceeded to that spot, the gods beheld the great ascetic engaged in the performance of his sacrifice.

41. Beholding that great beautiful ascetic the gods addressed him, saying,—'We have come for our shares (in your offerings).'

42. The Rishi said to them,—'Behold me, ye denizens of heaven, fallen into this terrible pit almost deprived of my senses.'

43. Then Trita, O monarch, duly allotted to them their shares with proper mantras. The gods took them and were greatly delighted.

44. Having duly received their respective shares, the denizens of heaven, pleased with him, granted him the boons he wanted

45. The boon, however, that he prayed for was that the gods should relieve him from his painful condition.

46. He also said.—'Let him that bathes in this well, achieve the end that is attained by persons that have drunk Soma.'

47. Thereat, O king, the Saraswati. with her waves, appeared within that well. Raised above by her, Trita came up and worshipped the celestials.

48. The gods then said to him,—'B, it as you wish' All of them then, O king, returned to their respective habitations and Trita, filled with joy, proceeded to his owe abode.

49. Meeting with those two Rishis, viz., his brothers, he became enraged with themn Endued with ascetic merit, he spoke harshly to them and cursed them, saying,

50. 'Since, actuated by covetousness, ye ran away, leaving me, therefore, ye shall become dreadful wolves with sharp teeth and range the forest cursed by me on account of that sinful act of yours.

51. Your offspring will also consist of leopards and bears and apes!' After Trita had said these words, O monarch, his two brothers were soon transformed into tigers on account of the curse of that truthful sage.

52. The highly powerful Valadeva touched the waters of Udapana. And he gave away various kinds of wealth there and worshipped many Brahmanas.

53. Beholding Udapana and praising it repeatedly, Valadeva next proceeded to Vinashana which also was on the Saraswati.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

(GADAYUDDHYA PARVA) —*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Then Valadeva, O king, went to Vinashana where the Saraswati has disappeared out of view in consequence of her hatered for Shudras and Abhiras.

2. And because the Saraswati, on account of this contempt, is lost there the Rishis, O chief of the Bharatas, always name the place as Vinashana.

3. Having bathed in that tirtha of the Saraswati, the powerful Valadeva then went to Subhumika situate on the excellent bank of the same river.

4. There many fair-complexioned and beautiful-faced Apsaras are always engaged in innocent pastimes.

5. The celestials and the Gandharvas, every month, O king, go to that sacred shrine which is the resort of Brahman himself.

6. The Gandharvas and various clans of Apsaras are to be seen there, O king, passing their days happily.

7. There the celestials and departed manes in the midst of the showers of sacred and auspicious flowers sport in joy.

8. There all the creepers are covered with flowers. And because, O king, that spot is the beautiful sporting ground of those Apsaras, therefore is that shrine on the charming bank of the Saraswati is called Subhumika.

9. Valadeva of Madhu's race, having bathed in that tirtha and distributed immense riches amongst the Brahmanas, heard the sound of those celestial songs and musical instruments.

10. He also saw there many shadows of gods, Gandharvas, and Rakshasas. The son of Rohini then proceeded to the tirtha of the Gandharvas.

11. There many Gandharvas, headed by Vishwavasu and possessed of ascetic merit, pass their time in dance and singing many sweet songs.

12. Giving away various kinds of riches to the Brahmanas, as also goats and sheep and kine and mules and camels and gold and silver,

13. And feeding many Brahmanas and satisfying them with many rich gifts as desired by them, Valadeva, of Madhu's race, left that place accompanied by many Brahmanas and praised by them.

14. Leaving that tirtha the favourite haunt of the Gandharvas, that mighty-armed chastiser of foes, having but one ear-ring, then went to the famous tirtha called Gargashrota.

15.—16. There, in that sacred tirtha of the Saraswati, the illustrious and old Garga, having a soul cleaused by ascetic penances, O Janamejaya, had mastered the knowledge of time and its course, of the deviations of luminous bodies (in the sky), and of all auspicious and inauspicious portents.

17. That tirtha was called, after his name Gargashrota. There, O king, highly blessed Rishis of firm vows always waited upon Garga, O lord, for acquiring a knowledge of time.

18. Besmeared with white sandal-paste O king, Valadeva, going to that tirtha, duly distributed wealth amongst many ascetics of pure souls.

19. Having distributed also many sorts of rich food amongst the Brahmanas, that illustrious one, clad in blue robes, then went to the tirtha called Shankha.

20. There, on the bank of the Saraswati that powerful palmyra-emblemed hero beheld a gigantic tree called Mahashankha, tall as Meru, looking like the white-mountain, and resorted to by many Rishis.

21. There dwell Yakshas, and Vidyadharas, and Rakshasas of great energy, and Pishachas of incomparable might and Siddhas, in thousands.

22—23. Desisting from other kinds of food, all of them observe vows and regulations, and take at the proper time the fruits of that king of the forest for their sustenance and rove separately unseen by men, O foremost of men! That monarch of the forest, O king, is celebrated throughout the world.

24—25. That tree is the cause of this tirtha. Having given away many milch cows, vessels of copper and iron, and diverse sorts of other vessels, that foremost Yadu's race, viz., Valadeva, having the plough for his weapon, worshipped the Brahmanas and was adored by them in return. He then, O king, went to the Dwaita lake.

26. Arrived there, Vala saw various ascetics dressed diversely. Bathing in its waters, he adored the Brahmanas.

27. Having distributed profusely amongst the Brahmanas various articles of enjoyment Valadeva then, O king, went on along the southern bank of the Saraswati.

28. The mighty-armed and illustrious Rama, of pure soul and unmitigated glory, then proceeded to the tirtha called Nagadhanwana.

29. Abounding with snakes, O king, it was the abode of the highly effulgent Vasuki, the king of serpents. There four and then ten thousand Rishis also lived permanently.

30. Having come there in days of yore the celestials had, according to due rites, installed the great snake Vasuki as king of all the snakes. There is no fear of snakes in that place, O you of Kuru's race.

31. Duly distributing many valuable articles there amongst the Brahmanas,

Valadeva then set out with face towards the east and reached, one after another, hundreds and thousands of celebrated tirthas situated all around.

32—34. Bathing in all those tirthas, and observing fasts and other vows as sanctioned by the Rishis, and given away immense riches, and saluting all the ascetics who lived there, Valadeva once more set out, along the way pointed out to him by those ascetics for reaching that spot where the Saraswati turns in an eastward direction, like torrents of rain bent by the velocity of the storm. The river took that course for seeing the great Rishis dwelling in the forest of Naimisha.

35. Always smeared with white sandal-paste, Vala, having the plough for his weapon, seeing that great river change her course, was O king, filled with wonder.

Janamenjaya said :—

36. "Why O Brahmana, did the Saraswati bend her course there towards the east. O best of Addharyus, you should tell me everything regarding this.

37. Why was that delighter of the Yadus filled with wonder? Why, indeed, did that best of rivers thus change her course."

Vaishampayana said :—

38. "Formerly, in the Satya yuga, O king, the ascetics living in Naimisha were engaged in a great sacrifice extending for twelve years.

39—40. Many Rishis, O king, came to that sacrifice. Passing their time according to proper rites, in the celebration of that sacrifice, those great Rishis, after the termination of that twelve years' sacrifice at Naimisha, set out in large numbers for seeing the various sacred shrines.

41. On account of the number of the Rishis, O king, the tirthas on the southern banks of the Saraswati all looked like towns and cities.

42. Those foremost of Brahmanas, O foremost of men, being anxious to enjoy the merits of tirthas, took up their abodes on the bank of the river up to Samanta-panchaka.

43. The whole region was as if filled with loud Vedic recitations of those Rishis of pure souls, all engaged in pouring libations on sacrificial fires.

44. That best of rivers shone highly beautiful with those burning homa fires all around, over which those great ascetics poured libations of clarified butter.

45—47. Valikhillyas and Ashmakuttas, Dantolukhalinas, Samprakshyanas and other ascetics, as also those living on air and those living on water, and those living on dry leaves of trees, and various others who practised diverse kinds of vows, and those that lived on bare and hard earth, all came to that spot in the vicinity of the Saraswati. And they rendered that foremost of rivers highly beautiful like the celestials beautifying with their presence the heavenly rivers called Mandakini.

48. Hundreds of Rishis, all given to the observance of sacrifices, came there. Those observers of great vows could not find sufficient accomodation on the banks of the Saraswati.

49. Measuring small plots of land with their sacred threads, they celebrated Agnihotras and other rites.

50. The river Saraswati saw, O king, those Rishis filled with despair and anxiety for want of a commodious tirtha wherein to perform their rites.

51. Accordingly that best of streams came there, having made sufficient accomodation on her bank for those Rishis, out of compassion for them, O Janamejaya.

52—53. Having thus, O king, changed her course for their sake, the Saraswati, that best of rivers, once more flowed in a westerly direction, to make the arrival of the Rishis there successful. O king, the great river accomplished there this wonderful feat.

54. Thus those reservoirs of water, O king, were formed in Naimisha. There, at Kurukshetra, O Kuru chief, do you celebrate grand sacrifices and rites. Beholding those innumerable reservoirs of water and seeing that best of rivers change her course, the high-souled Rama was filled with wonder.

55—59. Bathing in those tirthas duly and distributing wealth and various other articles of enjoyment amongst the Brahmanas, that delighter of Yadu's race also gave away various kinds of food and desirable articles to them. Adored by those Rishis, Vala, O king, left that foremost of all tirthas on the Saraswati, (viz., Sapta-Saraswat). Numerous birds also lived there. And it abounded with Vadari, Inguda, Kacmaryya, Plahsha, Ashwattha, Vibhitaka, Kakkola, Palasha, Karira, Pilu, and various other kinds of trees that grow on the banks of the Saraswati.

60. And it was adorned with forests of Karushakas, Vilwas, and Amratakas, and Atimuktas and Kashandas and Parijatas.

61—62. It abounded with forests of plaintains pleasant to view and most charming. And it was haunted by various ascetics, some living on air, some on water, some on fruits, some on leaves, some on raw rice again which they husked with the aid only of stones, and some that were called Vaneyas. And it was filled with the chauntings of the Vadas, and abounded with diverse kinds of animals.

63. And it was the favourite abode of men shorn of malice and devoted to righteousness. Valadeva, having the plough for his weapon, arrived at that tirtha, called the Sapta-Saraswat, where the great ascetic Mankanaka had his penances successfully practised.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. " Why was that tirtha called Sapta-Saraswat? Who was the ascetic Mankanaka? How was that worshipful one successful? What were his vows and observances?

2. In whose family was he born? What books did that great Rishi study? I desire to hear all this, O foremost of Rishis.

Vaishampayana said :—

3. " O king, the seven Saraswatis cover this Universe. Whereever the Saraswati was called by the energetic Rishis, there she did go.

4. These are the seven forms of the Saraswati, viz., Suprabha, Kanchanakshi, Vishala, Manorama, Oghavati, Surenu, and Vimalodaka.

5. Brahma had at one time celebrated a great sacrifice. While that sacrifice was being celebrated on the site selected, many Rishis, crowned with ascetic success, came there.

6. The spot was filled with the sound of the recitation and the chaunting of the Vedas. Seeing those sacrificial rites, even the very gods lost their temper.

7—8. There, O' king, while the grandfather was initiated in the sacrifice and was performing the grand ceremony capable of granting prosperity and wished-for objects many great Rishis, conversant with virtue and profit, were present. As soon as they thought of necessary articles, they, O king, immediately came before the Rishis.

9. The Gandharvas sang and the Apsaras danced. And they played upon many celestial instruments.

10. The provisions collected in that sacrifice satisfied the very celestials. What shall I say then of men? The very celestials were filled with wonder.

11—12. During the progress of that sacrifice at Pushkara and in the presence of Brahma, the Rishis, O king, said,—" This sacrifice is not successful, since that foremost of rivers, viz., Saraswati, is not to be seen here." Hearing these words, the divine Brahman meditated on Saraswati.

13. Summoned at Pushkara by the grandfather engaged in the celebration of a sacrifice, Saraswati, O king, came there under the name of Suprava.

14. Seeing Saraswati pay that regard to the grandfather, the ascetics regarded that sacrifice with great esteem.

15. Thus that foremost of rivers, viz., Saraswati, made her appearance at Pushkara for pleasing the grandfather and the ascetics.

16. On another ocassion, O king, many Munis assembled at Naimisha. They had many discussions amongst them, O king, on the Vedas.

17. There those ascetics, conversant with various scriptures, thought of the Saraswati.

18—19. Thus thought of, O king, by those Rishis performing a sacrifice, the highly blessed and sacred Saraswati, for helping those great Munis, made her appearance at Naimisha and was accordingly called Kanchanakshi.

20—21. Worshipped of all, that best of rivers, thus came there, O Bharata. While king Gaya was engaged in the celebration of a great sacrifice at Gaya the foremost of rivers, Saraswti, summoned at Gaya's sacrifice, came there. The Rishis of rigid vows, that were present there, named her Vishala at Gaya.

22. That quick-coursing river originates from the side of Himavat. Ouddalaka had also, O Bharata, performed a sacrifice.

23. A number of ascetics were also assembled there. It was in the sacred north Koshala, O king, that that sacrifice of the great Ouddalaka was celebrated.

24. Before Ouddalaka began his sacrifice, he had thought of the Saraswati. That foremost of rivers came there for the sake of those Rishis.

25. Worshipped of all those Munis clad in barks and deer-skins, she passed by the name of Manorama as those Rishis mentally called her.

26. While, again the great Kuru was engaged in a sacrifice at Kurukshetra, that foremost of rivers, the highly sacred Saraswati, came there.

27. Summoned, O king, by the great Vashishtha who assisted Kuru in his sacrifice, the Saraswati, of celestial water, came to Kurukshetra and passed by the name of Oghavati.

28. Daksha at one time celebrated a sacrifice at the source of Ganga. The Saraswati appeared there under the name of the quick-coursing Surenu.

29. Once again, while Brahman was engaged in a sacrifice on the sacred forest of the Himavat mountains, the worshipful Saraswati, summoned by him, came there.

30. All these seven streams then came and joined together in that tirtha where Valadeva came. And because the seven joined together at that spot, therefore is that tirtha known on earth by the name of Sapta-saraswati.

31. Thus have I described to you the seven Saraswatis, according to their names. I have also given you an account of the sacred tirtha called Sapta-saraswat.

32—33. Listen now to a great deed of Mankanaka, who had from his youth led the life of a Brahmacharin. While performing his abolutions in the river, he saw one day, O Bharata, a damsel of beautiful features and fair brows, bathing in the river with her body uncovered. At this sight, O monarch, the seminal fluid of the Rishi dropped to the Saraswati.

34. The great ascetic took it up and kept it within his earthen pot. Deposited within that pot, the fluid was divided into seven parts.

35—36. From those seven portions were born seven Rishis, from whom originated the forty nine Maruts. The seven Rishis were named Vayuvega, Vayuhan, Vayumandala, Vayujata, Vayuretas, Vayuchakra. Thus were born those progenitors of the various Maruts.

37. Hear now of a more wonderful account O king, of a highly marvellous conduct of that great Rishi which is well known in the three worlds.

38. Formerly, after Mankanaka had become successful, O king, his hand became pierced with a Kusha blade. Thereupon a vegetable juice came out of the wound and not blood.

39. Seeing that vegetable juice, the Rishi was filled with joy and danced about there. Beholding him dance, all mobile and immobile creatures, O hero, overpowered by his energy, began to dance.

40. Then the celestials with Brahma at their head, and the Rishis, having asceticism for their wealth, O king, all approached Mahadeva and informed him of the doings of the Rishi (Mankanaka). And they said to him,—Thou shouldst, O god, do that which may prevent the Rishi from dancing."

41. Then Mahadeva, seeing the Rishi filled with great joy, and desirous of doing good to the celestials addressed him, saying.

42. 'Why, O Brahmana, do you dance in this way, you who know your duties well? What must be the cause of your joy, O sage, that being an ascetic, O best of Brahmanas, and walking in the path of virtue you should behave in this way?

The Rishi said:—

43. Do you not see that a vegetable juice is flowing from this my wound? Seeing this, O lord, I am dancing in great glee.

44. Laughing at the Rishi who was overpowered by passion, the god said,—"I do not, O Brahmana, at all wonder at this. Behold me!"

45. Having said this to that best of Rishis, the highly intelligent Mahadeva struck his thumb with the end of one of his fingers.

46. Thereupon, O king, ashes, white as snow, came out of that wound. Beholding this, the Rishi became ashamed, O monarch, and fell at the feet of the God.

47. He understood the deity to be none else than Mahadeva. Filled with wonder, he said,—'I do not think that thou art any one save Rudra, that great and Supreme being.

48. O wielder of the trident, thou art the refuge of this universe consisting of gods and demons. The wise say that this universe has been created by thee.

49. At the universal dissolution, everything once more enters thee. Thou art incapable of being known by the celestials, how then canst thou be known by me?

50. All creatures of the universe are seen in thee. The gods with Brahma at their head worship thee who dost give boons, O sinless one.

51. Thou art everything. Thou art the creator of the gods. Through thy grace, the gods pass their time joyously and fearlessly." Having lauded Mahadeva in this way, the Rishi bowed to him.

52. 'Let not my ridiculous childishness, that I displayed, O god, destroy my ascetic merit. I pray to thee for this.'

53. The god cheerfuly replied,—'Let your asceticism increase a thousandfold, O Brahmana, through my grace. I shall also always live with you in this hermitage.

54. The man that will adore me in this tirtha, viz., Sapta-saraswat, will attain everything here or hereafter. Forsooth, such a one shall go to the region called Saraswat in heaven, after death.'

55. This is the history of Mankanaka. He was begotten by the god of wind upon Sukanya.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Continued*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. 'Having passed one night there, Rama, having the plough for his weapon, adored the dwellers of that tirtha and showed great respect for Mankanaka.

2—3. Having distributed wealth amongst the Brahmanas and passed the night there the hero, having the plough for his weapon, was adored by the ascetics. Rising up in the morning, he took leave of all the ascetics, and having touched the sacred water, O Bharata, started quickly for other tirthas.

4—5. Valadeva then went to the tirtha known by the name of Ushanas. It is also called Kapalamochana. Formerly, Rama (the son of Dasharatha) slew a Rakshasa and threw his head to a great distance. That head, O king, fell upon the thigh of a great sage named Mahodara and stuck to it. Bathing in this tirtha, the great Rishi was freed from that burthen. The great (Shukra) had practised his ascetic penances there.

6. It was there that the science of politics and morals, that passes by Shukra's name, was revealed to him. While living there, Shukra meditated upon the war of the Daityas and the Danavas.

7. Arrived at that foremost of tirthas Valadeva, O king, duly made presents to the great Brahmanas.

Janamejaya said :—

8. 'Why is it called Kapalamochana, where the great Muni became freed (from the Rakshasa's head)? Why and how did that head stick to his thigh?'

Vaishampayana said :—

9. "Formerly, O foremost of kings, the great Rama (the son of Dasharatha) lived for sometime in the forest of Dandaka, for killing the Rakshasas.

10. At Janasthana he sundered the head of a wicked Rakshasa with a highly sharp razor-headed arrow. That head dropped in the deep forest.

11. That head, coursing at will through the sky, fell upon the thigh of Mahodara while the latter was walking in the woods. Piercing his thigh, O king, it stuck to it and remained there.

12. That head thus sticking to his thigh, the greatly wise Brahmana could not (with ease), proceed to tirthas and other sacred places.

13. Feeling great pain and with putrid matter flowing from his thigh, he travelled to all the tirthas of the earth, one after another, as heard by us.

14—16. He went to all the rivers and to the ocean as well. The great ascetic spoke of his pain to many Rishis of pure souls, about his having bathed in all the sacred spots without finding any relief. That best of Brahmanas then heard from those sages, about this foremost of tirthas situate on the Saraswati, known by the name of Ushanasha, which could cleanse every sin and was an excellent place for acquiring ascetic merits.

17. Then repairing to that Ushanasa tirtha, that Brahmana bathed in its waters. Thereat the Rakshasa's head, leaving the thigh, dropped into the water.

18. Freed from that head, the Rishi felt great ease. The head however was lost in the waters.

19. Then, O king, freed from the Rakshasa's head Mahodara gladly returned, with purified soul and all his sins cleansed, to his hermitage after attaining success.

20. Thus freed, after returning to his sacred hermitage the great ascetic, spoke of what had taken place to those Rishis of pure souls.

21. Having heard his story, those Rishis conferred the name of Kapalamochana on the tirtha.

22. Repairing once more to that foremost of tirthas, the great Rishi Mahodara, drank its water and acquired great ascetic success.

23. Having distributed much wealth amongst the Brahmanas and worshipped them, Valadeva then went to the hermitage of Rushangu.

24. There, O Bharata, Arshtishena had in days of yore practised austerest of penances. There the great (Kshatriya) Muni Vishwamitra became a Brahmana.

25. That great hermitage is capable of fructifying every wish. It is always, O lord, the asylum of ascetics and Brahmanas.

26. Surrounded by Brahmanas, then the beautiful Valadeva went to that spot, O king, where Rushangu had, formerly, renounced his body.

27. Rushangu, O Bharata, was an old Brahmana always devoted to penances. Determined to renounce his body, he thought for a long while.

28. A great ascetic as he was, he then summoned all his sons and asked them to take him to a spot where there was profuse water.

29. Knowing their father had become very old, those ascetics took him to a tirtha on the Saraswati.

30—31. Brought by his sons to the sacred Saraswati containing hundreds of tirthas and on whose banks lived Rishis disassociated from the world, that intelligent ascetic, of hard penances, bathed in that tirtha duly, and conversant as that best of Rishis was with the virtues of tirthas, then cheerfully said to all his sons who were dutifully waiting upon him these words.

32. 'He, that would renounce his body on the northern bank of the Saraswati containing profuse water, reciting mentally sacred mantras, would never again be visited by death.'

33. Touching the water of that tirtha and bathing in it, the righteous Valadeva distributed wealth amongst the Brahmanas.

34—35. Possessed of great might and great prowess, Valadeva then proceeded to that tirtha where the worshipful Brahma had created the mountains called Lokaloka, and where that best of Rishis, Arshtishena, of rigid vows, had by hard penances acquired the dignity of Brahmanhood, and where the royal saint Sindhudwipa, and the great ascetic Devapi, and the worshipful and illustrious Vishwamitra of hard penances and fierce energy, had all acquired a similar dignity.

CHAPTER XL.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. "Why did the worshipful Arshtishena practise the severest of penances? How also did Sindhudwipa acquire the dignity of a Brahmana?

2. How also did Devapi, O Brahmana, and how did Vishwamitra, O best of men, become Brahmanas. Tell me all this, O worshipful one! Great is my curiosity to hear of all this."

Vaishampayana said :—

3. "Formerly, in the Krita age, O king, there was a great Rishi called Arshtishena. Living in his preceptor's house, he attended to his lessons every day.

4. Although, O king, he lived long in the residence of his preceptor, he could not master any branch of learning or the Vedas, O monarch.

5. Greatly disappointed, O king, the great ascetic practised very rigid penances. By his penances he afterwards acquired the mastery of the Vedas which is best of all forms of learning.

6. Acquiring great learning and a mastery of the Vedas, that best of Rishis became highly successful in that tirtha. He then conferred three boons on that place.

7. He said,—'From this day, a person, by bathing in this tirtha of the great river Saraswati, shall reap the great fruit of a horse sacrifice.

8. From this day there will be no fear in this tirtha from serpents and wild beasts. By the slightest of endeavours, again, one shall reap great results here."

9. Having said these words, that energetic Rishi proceeded to heaven. Thus the worshipful Arshtishena became successful.

10. In that very tirtha, in the Krita age, the greatly energetic Sindhudwipa, and Devapi also, had acquired the dignity of Brahmanhood.

11. Similarly Kushika's ascetic son, having controlled his senses and practised austerities became a Brahmana.

12. There was a great Kshatriya, celebrated over the world, by the name of Gadhi. He had a son by the name of Vishwamitra of great prowess.

13—14. King Kaushika became a great ascetic. Possessed of great ascetic merit, he wished to place his son Vishwamitra on his throne, himself having made up his mind to renounce his body. His subjects, bowing unto him, said,—You should not go away, O you of great wisdom, and protect us from a great fear.'

15. Thus addressed, Gadhi replied to his subjects, saying,—'My son will be the protector of the vast universe.'

16. Having said these words and placed Vishwamitra on the throne, Gadhi, O king

,scended heaven, and Vishwamitra became king. He could not, however, protect the earth even trying his level best.

17. The king then heard of the fear of Rakshasa in his kingdom. With his four-fold forces, he went out of his capital.

18. Having proceeded far on his way, he reached the hermitage of Vashishtha. His troops, O king, caused immense mischief there.

19. The worshipful Brahmana Vashishtha, when he came to his hermitage, saw the vast forest devastated.

20. That best of Rishis, viz., Vashishtha O king, became angry with Vishwamitra. He commanded his own sacrificial cow, saying,—'Create a number of terrible Shavaras.

21. Thus addressed, the cow created a number of men of terrific visages. These fought with the army of Vishwamitra and made a great onslaught.

22. Seeing this, the troops fled away. Regarding ascetic austerities highly efficacious, Vishwamitra, the son of Gadhi, made up his mind to practise the same.

23. In this best of tirthas of the Saraswati, O king, he began to emaciate his own body by vows and fasts.

24. He lived on water, air and the fallen leaves of trees. He slept on the naked earth and practised other vows of the ascetics.

25. The celestials repeatedly attempted for obstructing the observance of his vows. He, however, did not desist from practising his promised vow.

26. Then having practised various austerities with great devotion, the son of Gadhi became effulgent like the Sun himself.

27. The boon-giving Brahmana, of great energy, resolved to grant Vishwamitra, when he had succeeded in his ascetic observances, the boon the latter wanted.

28. The boon that Vishwamitra prayed for was that he should be permitted to become a Brahmana. Brahman, the grand-father of all the worlds, said to him,—'So be it.'

29. Having by his severe penances gained the status of Brahmanhood, the illustrious Vishwamitra, after the fulfillment of his desire, travelled over the whole earth like a god.

30. Distributing various sorts of wealth in that best of tirthas, Rama also gladly gave away milch cows, vehicles, beds, ornaments, food and drink of the best kinds, O king, to many foremost of Brahmanas, after having adored them dully.

32. Then, O king, Rama proceeded to the hermitage of Vaka which was not very far from where he was, the hermitage in which, as heard by us, Dalvya-vaka had practised the hardest of penances."

CHAPTER XLI.

(GADAYUDDHYA PARVA) —*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said:—

1—2. "That delighter of the Yadus then proceeded to the hermitage (of Vaka) resonant with the chaunting of the Vedas. There the great ascetic, O king, named Dalvya-vaka, poured the kingdom of Dhritarashtra, the son of Vichitravirya, as a libation (on the sacrificial fire). By practising hard penances he emaciated his own body. The greatly energetic and virtuous Rishi did it being worked up with great wrath.

3. Formerly the Rishis, living in the Naimisha forest, had celebrated a sacrifice extending over twelve years. In the course of that sacrifice, after a particular one called Vishwajit had been completed, the Rishis started for the country of the Panchalas.

4. Going there, they requested the king to give them twenty one strong and healthy calves to be given away as Dakshina in the sacrifice they had finished.

5. Dalvya-vaka, then said to those Rishis,—'Do you divide those animals among ye! Giving away these (to ye), I shall beg a great king (for some more).'

6. Saying it the greatly energetic Vaka, that best of Brahmanas, then went to the palace of Dhritarastra.

7—8. Going before Dhritarashtra, Dalvya begged some animals of him. Finding that some of his kine had died without any cause, the king angrily said to him,—'Wretch of a Brahmana, take, if you wish, these (dead) kine.'

9. Hearing these words, the dutiful Rishi thought,—'Alas, he has spoken cruel words to me in the assembly.'

10. Having thought thus, that best of Brahmanas, filled with rage, made up his mind for destroying king Dhritarashtra.

11—12.—Cutting the flesh from the dead animals, that best of Rishis, having lighted a sacrificial fire on the tirtha of the Saraswati, poured those pieces as libations for the destruction of king Dhritarastra's

kingdom. The great ascetic Dalvya-vaka, O king, poured Dhritarashtra's kingdom as a libation on the fire.

13. Upon the commencement of that dreadfuf sacrifice with proper rites, the kingdom of Dhritarashtra, O king, began to dwindle.

14. Indeed, O lord, the kingdom of that monarch began to dwindle as a large forest gradually disappears when men cut it down with the axe. Overtaken by dangers, the kingdom began to lose its prosperity and vitality.

15. Seeing his kingdom thus afflicted the powerful king became very depressed and anxious.

16. Consulting with the Brahmanas, he began to make mighty endeavours for releasing his kingdom (from affliction). No good, however, came of his endeavours, for the kingdom continued to dwindle.

17—18. The king became very much depressed. The Brahmanas also, O sinless one, became filled with grief. When at last the king failed to save his kingdom, he consulted the ministers, O Janamejaya, (about the remedy). The ministers reminded him of the evil he had done regarding the dead kine.

19. And they said,—'The ascetic Vaka is pouring your kingdom as a libation on the fire with the help of the flesh (of those animals). Therefore is this dwindling away of your kingdom.

20. This is the fruit of ascetic rites. Thence is this great calamity! Go, O king, and propitiate that Rishi who is living on the bank of the Saraswati.'

21. Going to the bank of Saraswati, the king fell at his feet, touched them with his head, joined his hands and said,—'I propitiate you, O worshipful one, forgive me for my crime.

22. I am an insensate fool, a wretch filled with avarice. You are my refuge, and protector, you should extend to me your favour.'

23. Seeing him thus laden with grief and indulging in lamentations like these, Vaka felt compassion for him and freed his kingdom.

24. The Rishi became pleased with him, and cast off his anger. For freeing his kingdom, the sage again poured libations on the fire.

25. Havidg freed the kingdom from calamities and taken many kine as a gift he became pleased at heart and once more proceeded to the Naimisha forest.

26. The liberal and righteous king Dhritarashtra, with a cheerful heart, returned to his own prosperous capital.

27—28. In that tirtha, for the destruction of the Asuras and the prosperity of the celestials Vrihashpati also poured libations on the sacrificial fire, with the aid of flesh. Upon this, the Asuras began to waste away and were killed by the celestials, filled with desire of victory, in battle.

29—30. Having with due rites given to the Brahmanas horses and elephants and vehicles with mules yoked to them and precious jewels and immense wealth and profuse corn, the illustrious and mighty-armed Rama then proceeded, O king, to the tirtha called Yayata.

31. There, O king, at the sacrifice of the high-souled Yayati, the son of Nahusha, the Saraswati produced milk and clarified butter.

32. That foremost of men, king Yayati, having performed a sacrifice there, went to heaven and secured many blissful regions.

33. Once again, O lord, king Yayati, performed a sacrifice there. Beholding his great magnanimity of soul and his fixed devotion to herself, the river Saraswati gave to the Brahmanas present there everything they desired to have.

34. That foremost of rivers gave each of them that were invited to the sacrifice, where he was, houses and beds and food of the six different tastes and various other things.

35. The Brahmanas regarded those valuable gifts as presented by the king. Gladly they lauded the king and conferred their sacred blessings upon him.

36. The gods and the Gandharvas were all pleased with the numberless articles in that sacrifice. As regards men they were filled with wonder on seeing those articles.

37. The illustrious and righteous Valadeva, of cleansed soul, having the palmyra on his banner, and ever giving away the most valuable things, then proceeded to that tirtha of fierce current called Vashishthapavaha.

CHAPTER XLII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. "Why is the current of the tirtha known as Vashishthapavaha so rapid? For why did the foremost of rivers carry away Vashishtha?

2. What, O lord, was the cause of the quarrel between Vashishtha and Vishwamitra? Asked by me, O you of great wisdom, tell me all this. I am never satiated with hearing your account."

Vaishampayana said :—

3. A great enemity arose between Vishwamitra and Vashishtha, O Bharata, on account of their rivalry regarding ascetic penances.

4. The hermitage of Vashishtha was in the tirtha called Sthanu on the eastern bank of the Saraswati. On the opposite bank was the hermitage of the intelligent Vishwamitra.

5. There, in that tirtha, O king, Mahadeva had practised the hardest penances. Sages still speak of those penances.

6. Having performed a sacrifice there and adored the river Saraswati, Sthanu established that tirtha there. Therefore it is known by the name Sthanu-tirtha, O lord.

7. In that tirtha, the celestials had, formerly, O king, appointed Skanda, that destroyer of the enemies of the celestials, as the generalissimo of their army.

8. The great Rishi Vishwamitra, by the help of his austere penances, brought Vashishtha, to that tirtha of the Saraswati, listen to that account.

9. The two ascetics Vishwamitra and Vashishtha, O Bharata, competed keenly with each other in respect of the superiority of their penances.

10. Being jealous of the power of Vashishtha, the great Muni Vishwamitra began to think seriously.

11—12. Though devoted to the performance of his duties, O Bharata, he formed the resolution, viz., 'This Saraswati shall speedily bring, by force of her current, that foremost of ascetics, viz., Vashishtha, to my presence. After he shall have been brought hither, I shall forsooth kill that greatest of ascetics.

13. Having formed this resolution, the illustrious and great Rishi Vishwamitra, with eyes red in ire, thought of that foremost of rivers.

14. Thus remembered by the ascetic, she became exceedingly agitated. The fair lady, repaired to that energetic and wrathful Rishi.

15. Pale and trembling, Saraswati, with clasped hands, appeared before that best of sages.

16. Indeed, the lady was greatly afflicted with sorrow, even like a woman who has lost her powerful husband. And she said to that best of sages,—'Tell me what I can do for you.'

17. Filled with ire, the ascetic said to her,—Bring here Vashishtha without delay, so that I my kill him.' Hearing these words, the river became agitated.

18. With clasped hands the lotus-eyed lady began to tremble in fear, like a creeper shaken by the wind.

19. Beholding the great river in that condition, the ascetic said to her,—'Bring Vashishtha before me without any scruple.'

20—21. Hearing these words of his, and knowing the evil he meant, and acquainted also with the matchless power of Vashishtha she went to Vashishtha and informed him of what the intelligent Vishwamitra had said to her.

22. Fearing the curse of both, she trembled again and again. Indeed, she stood in fear of both.

23. Seeing her pale and anxious, the righteous Vashishtha, that foremost of men, O king, said to her.

Vashishtha said :—

24. 'O foremost of rivers, save yourself! O you of rapid current, bear me away, otherwise Vishwamitra will curse you! Do not feel the least scruple.'

25. Hearing these words of that compassionate Rishi, the river began to think, O Kuru-chief, as to what she should do.

26. The thought 'Vashishtha shows great mercy for me. It is proper for me that I should serve him.'

27—28. Seeing then that best of Rishis, viz., Vashishtha engaged in silent recitation of Mantras on her bank, and seeing Kushika's son Vishwamitra also engaged in homa, Saraswati thought, 'this is my opportunity.' Then that foremost of rivers, by her current, washed away one of her banks.

29—30. In washing away that bank, she carried away Vashishtha. While being borne away, O king, Vashishtha lauded the river saying :—'From Brahma's manasa-lake thou hast originated, O Saraswati! The entire earth is filled with thy pure waters!

31. Passing through the sky, O Goddess, thou impartest thy waters to the clouds! All the waters are thee! Through thee we exercise our thinking faculties!

32. Thou art Pushti, and Dyuti, Kiriti, and Siddhi, and Uma! Thou art Speech,

and thou art Swaha! This entire universe depends on thee. Thou dwellest in all creatures, in four forms.'

33. Thus lauded by that great Rishi, Saraswati, O king, speedily bore that Brahmana towards the hermitage of Vishwamitra and repeatedly announced to the latter the arrival of the former.

34. Seeing Vashishtha thus brought before him by Saraswati, Vishwamitra, worked up with ire, began to look for a weapon wherewith to kill that Brahmana.

35. Seeing him wrathful, the river, fearing to behold a Brahmana's slaughter, quickly bore Vashishtha away to her eastern bank once more. She thus had obeyed the words of both, although she deceived Vishwamitra by her act.

36. Seeing that best of Rishis, viz., Vashishtha, borne away, the vindictive Vishwamitra becoming enraged addressed Saraswati, saying :—

37. 'Since, O best of rivers, thou hast gone away and deceived me, let thy current be changed into blood liked of Rakshasas!'

38. Thus cursed by the intelligent Vishwamitra, Saraswati flowed for a whole year, bearing blood mixed with water.

39. Beholding the Saraswati in that plights the gods, the Gandharvas and the Apsaras became filled with great sorrow.

40. For this reason, O king, the tirtha passed by the name of Vashishthapavaha on Earth. The best of rivers, however, once more regained her own proper condition.

CHAPTER XLIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Cursed by the intelligent Vishwamitra in anger, Saraswati, in that sacred and best of tirthas, flowed in bloody current.

2. Then, O king, many Rakshasas came and lived happily there, drinking the blood that flowed.

3. Highly pleased with that blood, cheerfully and without anxiety of any kind, they danced and laughed there like persons that have (by virtue) attained to heaven.

4. After some time had passed away, some Rishis, having asceticism for their wealth, came to the Saraswati, O king, on pilgrimage.

5. Those foremost of ascetics, havin bathed in all the tirthas and obtained great delight, became desirous of acquiring more merit. Those learned sages at last came, O king, to that tirtha where the Saraswati flowed in a bloody current. Those highly blessed Rishis, arriving at that frightful tirtha,

7. Beheld the water of the Saraswati mixed with blood and numberless Rakshasas, O king, drinking it.

8. Seeing those Rakshasas, O king, those ascetics of rigid vows tried much for rescuing the Saraswati from that condition.

9—10. Arriving there, those Rishis invoked that foremost of rivers and said to her :—'Tell us the reason, O auspicious lady, why this lake in you has been distressed with such a plight. Hearing it, we shall use our efforts to restore its pristine condition.

11—12. Thus accosted, Saraswati, trembling as she spoke, informed them of everything that had taken place. Seeing her thus woe-begone, those ascetics told her,—'We have heard the cause. We have heard of your curse, O sinless lady! All of us shall try.'

13. Having said so to that foremost of rivers, they then consulted with one another,—'All of us shall release Saraswati from her curse.'

14—16. O king, adoring Mahadeva, that Lord of the universe and protector of all creatures, with penances, vows, fasts, abstenances and painful observances, all those Brahmanas emancipated that foremost of rivers, viz., the divine Saraswati.

17. Beholding the water of Saraswati purified by those ascetics, the Rakshasas (that lived there), stricken with hunger, sought the protection of those ascetics themselves.

18—19. Stricken with hunger, the Rakshasas, with clasped hands, repeatedly said to those ascetics filled with compassion viz.,—'All of us are hungry? We have deviated from the path of virtue! That we are sinful is not of our own free will!'

20—22. 'Through the want of your grace and our own evil deeds, as also for the sexual sins of our women, our sins multiply and we have become Brahma-Rakshasas! So amongst Vaishyas and Shudras, and Kshatriyas, those that hate and injure Brahmanas became Rakshasas.'

23. 'Ye best of Brahmanas, arrange then for our relief. You are capable of saving all the worlds!'

24—25. Hearing these words of theirs, those ascetics lauded the great river. For the rescue of those Rakshasas, with concentrated minds those ascetics said,—'The food over which one will sneeze, that in which there are worms and insects, that which may be mixed with refuges of food, that which is mixed with hair, that which is trampled, that which is mixed with tears,—shall make up the food of these Rakshasas!'

26. 'Knowing all this, the learned man shall carefully avoid these kinds of food. He that shall take such food shall be considered as prataking of the food of Rakshasas.'

27. Having thus purified the tirtha, those ascetics thus prayed to that river for the relief of those Rakshasas.

28. Understanding the wishes of those great Rishis, that best of rivers caused her body, O foremost of men, to assume a new form called Aruna.

29. Bathing in that new river the Rakshasas renounced their bodies and went to heaven.

30. Ascertaining all this, the king of the celestials, viz., Indra, of a hundred sacrifices, bathed in that best of tirthas and was freed of a grievous sin."

Janamejaya said :—

31. "Why was Indra affected with the sin of Brahmanicide! How also did he become freed by bathing in that tirtha?"

Vaishampayana said :—

32. "Listen to that history, O king, listen to those events as they took place. Hear how Indra formerly broke his treaty with Namuchi.

33—34. The Asura Namuchi, from fear of Vasava, had entered into a ray of the Sun. Indra then made friends with Namuchi and made a contract with him, saying,—'O king, of Asuras, I shall not kill you, O friend, with anything that is wet or dry. I shall not kill you in the night or in the day! Forsooth I swear this to you.'

35. Having made this understanding, the lord Indra one day beheld a fog. He then, O king, sundered Namuchi's head, using the foam of water as his weapon.

36. The severed head of Namuchi thereupon pursued Indra from behind, saying repeatedly from a near place—'O killer of a friend, O wretch!'

37. Thus addressed repeatedly by that ead, Indra went to the grandfather and informed him, sorrowfully of what had taken place.

38. The supreme lord of the universe said to him,—'Performing a sacrifice, bathe duly, O king of gods, in Aruna, the tirtha which saves all from the fear of sin!

39. The water of that river, O Shakra, has been sanctified by the ascetics! Formerly the river lay there concealed.

40. The divine Saraswati, repaired to the Aruna, and overflowed it with her waters. This confluence of Saraswati and Aruna is highly sacred!

41. There, O king of gods, perform a sacrifice. Distribute enough of presents. Performing thy ablutions there, you shall be freed off of your sin.'

42. Thus addressed, Indra, at these words of Brahman, O Janamejay, performed in that abode of Saraswati various sacrifices.

43. Distributing many presents and bathing in that tirtha, he of a hundred sacrifices, the destroyer of Vala, duly performed certain sacrifices and then bathed in the Aruna.

44. He became freed from the sin caused by Brahmanicide. The king of the celestial region, then returned to heaven with a joyful heart.

46. The head of Namuchi also dropped into that stream, O Bharata, and the Asura gained many blessed regions, O best of kings, that granted every wish."

Vaishampayana said :—

46. "The great Valadeva, having bathed in that tirtha and given away many kinds of gifts, acquired great virtue. Of righteous deeds, he then proceeded to the great tirtha of Soma.

47—48. There, formerly Soma himself, O emperor, had celebrated the Rajasuya sacrifice. The great Atri, that foremost of Brahmanas, endued with great intelligence, became the sacrificial priest in that grand sacrifice. Upon the termination of that sacrifice, a great battle took place between the gods and the Danavas, the Daityas, and the Rakshasas. That fierce battle known after the name of the Asura Taraka. In that battle Skanda killed Taraka.

49. There, on the occasion, Mahasena, that destroyer of Daityas, became the generalissimo of the celestial forces. In that tirtha is a huge Ashwatha tree. Under its shade, Kartikeya, otherwise called Kumara, always lives in person."

CHAPTER XLIV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. "You have described the merits of the Saraswati, O best of Brahmanas. You should, O Rishi, describe to me the investiture of Kumara by the gods.

2—3. Great is my curiosity. Tell me everything, therefore, about the time, place and manner in which the worshipful and powerful Skanda was appointed the commander-in-chief of the celestial hosts! Tell me also, O best of speakers, who invested him and who performed the actual rites, and how the celestial generalissimo killed the Daityas,"

Vaishampayana said :—

4. "Your curiosity indeed becomes a Kuru. The words that I shall speak, will, O Janamejaya, please you.

5. I shall describe to you the appointment of Kumara and the prowess of that high-souled one, since, O king, you wish to hear it.

6. In days of yore the vital seed of Maheshwara, dropped into a blazing fire. The consumer of everything, the worshipful Agni, could not burn that indestructible seed.

7. On the other hand, the carrier of sacrificial libations, for that seed, became possessed of great energy and splendour. He could not bear within himself that powerful seed.

8. At the behest of Brahma, the lord Agni, approaching the river Ganga, threw into her that divine seed effulgent like the Sun.

9. Ganga also, unable to hold it, threw it on the beautiful breast of Himavat adored of the celestials.

10. Thereupon Agni's son began to grow there, overpowering all the worlds by his energy. Meanwhile the six Krittikas saw that child of fiery splendour.

11. Seeing that powerful lord, that great son of Agni, lying on a clump of reeds, all the six Krittikas, who wanted to have a son, cried aloud, saying,—'This child is mine, this child is mine.'

12. Understanding the feelings of those six mothers, the worshipful lord Skanda sucked the breasts of all, having assumed six months.

13. Beholding that power of the child, the Krittikas, those beautiful goddesses, were stricken with wonder,

14. And because the adorable child had been thrown by the river Ganga upon the summit of Himavat, that mountain looked beautiful, having, O delighter of the Kurus, been transformed into gold.

15. With that growing child the whole Earth became beautiful, and it was therefore that mountains produced gold.

16. Possessed of great energy, the child passed by the name of Kartikeya. At first he had been called by the name of Gangeya. He was endued with high ascetic powers.

17. Possessed of self-restraint, asceticism and great energy, the child grew up, O king, into a person of highly charming features like Soma himself.

18. Highly beautiful the child lay on that excellent and golden clump of reeds, worshipped and lauded by Gandharvas and ascetics.

19. Thousands of celestial girls, of very handsome features, accomplished in celestial music and dance, lauded him and danced before him.

20. The best of all rivers, viz., Ganga, waited upon that god. The earth also, assuming great beauty, held the child on her lap.

21. The celestial priest Vrihaspati performed the usual rites consequent upon the birth, of that child. The Vedas, assuming a fourfold form, approached the child with clasped hands.

22. The science of arms, with its four divisions, and all the weapons, as also all kinds of arrows, came to him.

23. One day, the highly energetic child, saw that god of gods, viz., the lord of Uma, seated with the daughter of Himavat, amid a number of goblins.

24. Those goblins, of lean bodies, had wonderful features. They were ugly, both in person and in features, and bore on this person awkward ornaments and marks.

25. Their faces were like those of tigers and lions and bears and cats and makaras. Others had faces like those of scorpions; others had faces like those of elephant, and camels and owls. And some had faces like those of vultures and jackals.

26—27. And some had faces like those of cranes and pigeons and Kurus. And some had bodies like those of dogs and porcupines and iguanas and goats and sheep and cows. And some resembled mountains, and some, oceans, and some stood with uplifted discs and maces for their weapons. And some looked like masses of antimony, and some, like white moun-

tains. The seven matris also were present there, O king.

28—29. The Saddhyas, the Vishwedevas, the Maruts, the Vasus, the Pitris, the Rudras, the Adityas, the Siddhas, the Danavas, the birds, the self-create and worshipful Brahman with his sons, and Vishnu, and Shakra, all went there for beholding that child of ever-increasing glory.

30—31. And many leading celestials and Gandharvas, headed by Narada, and many celestial Rishis and Siddhas headed by Vrihaspati, and the guardian deities of the universe, those foremost ones, they that are regarded as gods of the gods, and the Yamas and the Dhamas, all went there.

32. Gifted with great strength and great ascetic power, the child proceeded before that lord of the gods, viz., Mahadeva, armed with trident and Pinaka.

33—34. Seeing the child coming, the thought entered the mind of Shiva, that of Himavat's daughter and that of Ganga and of Agni, as to whom amongst the four, the child would first approach for honoring him or her. Each of them thought,—'He will come to me.'

35. Understanding the desire of each of those four, he had recourse to his Yoga powers and assumed simultaneously four different forms.

36. The worshipful and powerful lord assumed those four forms in an instant. The three forms that stood behind were Shakra and Vishakha and Naigameya.

37. Having divided his self into four forms, he went towards the four that sat expecting him. The wonderful form called Skanda proceed where Rudra was sitting.

38. Vishakha went where the divine daughter of Himavat was. The adorable Shakha, which is Kartikeya's airy form, went towards Agni. Naigameya, that child of fiery splendour, went before Ganga.

39. All those four forms, of similar appearance, were highly effulgent. The four forms went calmly to the four gods and goddesses. It was indeed wonderful.

40. The gods, the Danavas, and the Rakshasas, made a loud noise seeing that exceedingly wonderful and hair stirring incident.

41. Then Rudra and the goddess Uma and Agni, and Ganga, all bowed unto Brahma, that lord of the universe.

42—43. Having duly bowed unto him, they said these words, O king, from desire of doing god unto Kartikeya:—'O Lord of the gods, for the sake of our happiness you should give this youth some kind of sovereignty that may suit him and that he may desire.'

44. Thereat, the worshipful grandfather of all the worlds, endued with great intelligence, began to think within his mind as to what he should confer on that youth.

45—46 He had formerly given away to the gods all kinds of wealth over which the great celestials, the Gandharvas, the Rakshasas, ghosts, Yakshas, birds, and snakes now reign. Brahman, therefore, considered that youth as fully qualified to have the dominion which had been bestowed upon the gods.

47. Having thought for a moment, the grandfather, always seeking the well-being of the celestials, conferred upon him the dignity of a generalissimo among all creatures, O Bharata.

48. He further ordered all those leading gods and other formless beings to wait upon him.

49. Then the gods headed by Brahman, taking that youth with them, came in a body to Himavat.

50. The site selected by them was the bank of the sacred and divine Saraswati, that foremost of rivers, taking her rise from Himavat, which is celebrated over the three worlds by the name of Samantapanchaka.

51. There, on the sacred bank of the Saraswati, the gods and the Gandharvas took their seats with gladness on account of the gratification of all their desires."

CHAPTER XLV.

(GADAYUDDHYA PARVA). —*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said:—

1. "Collecting all articles sanctioned by Shastras for the ceremony of investiture. Vrihaspati duly poured libations on the burning fire.

2. Himavat gave a seat which was set with many costly gems. Kartikeya was made a sit on that sacred and best of seats set with excellent gems.

3. The gods collected there all sorts of sacred articles, with due rites and mantras, that were necessary for the ceremony.

4—17. The various gods, viz., Indra, Vishnu, Surya, Chandramas, Dhatri, Vidhatri, Vayu, Agni, Pushan, Bhaga, Aryaman, Ansha, Vivaswat, Rudra, of great intelligence, Mitra, the eleven Rudras, the eight Vasus, the twelve Adityas, the

twin Ashwins, the Vishwedevas, the Maruts, the Saddhyas, the Pitris, the Gandharvas, the Apsaras, the Yakshas, the Rakshasas, the Pannagas, innumerable celestial Rishis, the Vaikhanasas, the Valikhillyas, those others among Rishis that live only on air and those that live on the rays of the Sun, the descendants of Bhrigu and Angiras, many great Yatis, all the Vidyadharas, all those that were crowned with ascetic success, the Grandfather, Pulastya, the great ascetic Pulaha, Angiras, Kashyapa, Atri, Marichi, Bhrigu, Kratu, Hara, Prachetas, Manu, Daksha, the Seasons, the Planets, and all the luminaries, O monarch, all the rivers in their embodied forms, the eternal Vedas, the Seas, the Lakes, the various Tirthas, the Earth, the Sky, the Cardinal and Subsidiary points of the compass, all the Trees, Aditi the mother of the gods, Hri, Shri, Swaha, Saraswati, Uma, Shachi, Sinivali, Anumati, Kuhu, the Day of the new Moon, the Day of the full Moon, the wives of the celestials, Himavat, Vindhya, Meru of many summits, Airavat with all his followers, the divisions of time called Kala, Kashtha, Fortnight, the Seasons, Night, and Day, O king, Ucchaishravas the king of horses, Vasuki the king of the Serpents, Aruna, Garuda, the Trees, the deciduous herbs, and the worshipful god Dharma, all came there in a body. And there came also Kala, Yama, Mrityu, and the followers of Yama.

18. I do not mention the various other gods that came there lest the list be a heavy one. All of them came to that ceremony for investing Kartikeya with the dignity of generalissimo.

19. All the celestials, O king, brought there every thing necessary for the ceremony and every sacred article.

20—21. Gladly the celestials made that great youth, that terror of the Asuras, the generalissimo of the celestial hosts, after pouring upon his head the sacred and excellent water of the Saraswati from golden jars that contained other sacred articles necessary for the purpose.

22. The Grandfather of the worlds, viz., Brahman, and Kashyapa of great energy, and all others, all poured water upon Skanda even as, O king, the gods had poured water on the head of Varuna, the lord of waters, when placing him in his dominion.

23. The lord Brahman then, with a pleased heart, gave to Skanda four powerful companions, gifted with speed of the wind, crowned with ascetic success, and gifted with energy which they could increase at will.

24. They were named Nandisena and Lohitaksha and Ghantakarna and Kumudamalin.

25. The lord Sthanu, O king, gave to Skanda a companion possessed of great impetuosity, capable of producing a hundred illusions, and gifted with might and energy that he could increase at will. And he was the great destroyer of Asuras.

26. In the great battle between the gods and the Asuras, this companion that Sthanu gave, worked up with ire killed with his hands alone, fourteen millions of Daityas of terrible deeds.

27. The gods then made over to Skanda the celestial host, invincible containing many celestial troops, capable of destroying the enemies of the gods, and of forms like that of Vishnu.

28. The gods then, with Vasava at their head, and the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the Rakshasas, the Munis, and the Pitris, all exclaimed,—'Victory to Skanda.'

29. Then Yama gave him two companions, both of whom resembled Death, viz., Unmatha and Pramatha, endued with great energy and splendour.

30. Endued with great prowess, Surya, gladly gave Kartikeya two of his followers named Subhraja and Bhaswara.

31. Soma also gave him two companions, viz., Mani and Sumani, both of whom looked like summits of the Kailasa mountain and always used white garlands and white unguents.

32. Agni gave him two heroic companions, grinders of hostile armies, who were named Jwalajihbha and Jyoti.

33. Ansha gave the intelligent Skanda five companions, Parigha, and Vata, and Bhima of great strength, and Dahati and Dahana both of whom were highly dreadful and energetic.

34. Vasava, that destroyer of hostile heroes, gave Agni's son two companions, viz., Utkrosha and Panchaka who were armed respectively with thunder-bolt and club. These had in battle killed many enemies of Indra.

35. The illustrious Vishnu gave Skanda three companions, viz., Chakra and Vikrama and Shankrama of great power.

36. The Ashwins, O foremost of Bharatas gladly, gave Skanda two companions, viz., Vardhana and Nandana, masters of all sciences.

37. The illustrious Dhatri gave that high-souled one five companions, viz., Kunda, Kushuma, Kumuda, Damvara and Adamvara.

38. Tashtri gave Skanda two companions named Chakra and Anuchakra both of whom were very powerful.

39. The lord Mitra gave the high-souled Kumara two illustrious companions named Suvrata and Satyasandha both of whom were highly learned and endued with ascetic merit, possessed of handsome features, capable of granting boons, and well known over the three worlds.

40. Vidhatri gave Kartikeya two companions, viz., the great Suprabha and Shubhakarman.

41. Pushan gave him two companions, viz., Panitraka and Kalika, both gifted with great powers of illusion.

42. Vayu gave him, O best of the Bharatas, two companions, viz., Vala and Ativala, possessed of great might and very an large mouths.

43. The truthful Varuna gave him Ghasa and Atighasa of great might and having a mouth like that of the Timi fish.

44. Himavat gave Agni's son two companions, O king, viz., Suvarchas and Ativarchas.

45. Meru, O Bharata, gave him two companions named Kanchana and Meghamalin.

46. Manu also gave Agni's son two others gifted with great strength and power, viz., Sthira and Asthira.

47. Vindhya gave Agni's son two companions named Ucchrita aud Agnishringa both of whom fought with stones.

48. Ocean gave him two powerful companions named Sangraha and Vigraha both armed with mace.

49. The beautiful Parvati gave Agni's son Unmada and Pusphadanta and Shankukarna.

50. Vashuki the king of the serpents, O king, gave the son of Agni two snakes named Jaya and Mahajaya.

51—52. Similarly the Saddhyas, the Rudras, the Vasus, the Pitris, the Seas, the Rivers, and the Mountains, gave commanders of forces, armed with lances and battle axes and adorned with various kinds of ornaments.

53. Listen now to the names of those other warriors armed with various weapons and clad in diverse kind of robes and ornaments, that Skanda got.

54—71 They were Shankukarna, Nikumbha, Padma, Kumud, Ananta, Dwadashakbhuja, Krishna, Upakrishna, Ghranashravas, Kapiskandha, Kanchanaksha, Jalandhama, Akshasantarjana, Kunadia, Tambobhrakrit, Ekaksha, Dwadashaksha, Ekajata, Sahashravahu, Vikata, Vyaghraksha, Kshitikampana, Punyanaman, Sunaman, Suvaktra, Priyadarshana, Parishruta, Kokonada, Priyamalyanulepana, Ajodara, Gajashiras, Skandhaksha, Shatalochana, Jwalajihbha, Karala, Shitakesha, Jati, Hari, Krishnakesha, Jatadhara, Chaturdanshtra, Ashtajibha, Meghanada, Prithushravas, Vidyutaksha, Dhanurvaktra, Jathara, Marutashana, Udaraksha, Rathaksha, Vajranabha, Vasuprabha, Samudravega, Shailakampin, Vrisha, Meshapravaha, Nanda, Upanandaka, Dhumra, Shweta, Kalinga, Siddhartha, Varada, Priyaka, Nanda, Gonanda, Ananda, Pramoda, Swastika, Dhruvaka, Kshemavaha, Suvaha, Siddhaptra, Goveraja, Kanakapida, Gapana, Hasana, Vana, Khadga, Vaitali, Atitali, Kathaka, Vatika, Hansaja, Pakshadigdhanga, Samudronmadana, Ranotkata, Prahasa, Shwetasiddha, Nandaka, Kalakantha, Prabhasa, Kumbhandaka, Kalakaksha, Shita, Bhutalonmathana, Yajnavaha, Pravaha, Devajaji, Somapa, Majjala, Kratha, Kratha. Tuhara, Tuhara, Shitradeva, Madhura, Suprasada, Kiritin, Vatsala, Madhuvarna, Kalasodara, Dharmada, Manmathakara, Shuchivaktra, Shwetavaktra, Suvaktra, Charuvaktra, Padura, Dandavahu, Suvahu, Rajas, Kokilaka, Achala, Kanakaksha, Valakarakshaka, Sancharaka, Kokanada, Gridhrapatra, Jambhuka, Lohajvaktra, Javana, Kumbhavaktra, Kumbhaka, Mundagriva, Krishnaujas, Hansavaktra, Chandrabha, Panikurchas, Shamvuka, Panchavaktra, Shikshaka, Chasavaktra, Jamvuka, Kharavaktra, and Kunchaka.

74. Besides these many other great and powerful companions, practising ascetic austerities and respecting Brahmanas, were given to him by the grandfather.

75. Some of them were young, some were old, and some, O Janamejaya, were green youths. Thousands and thousands of such came to Kartikeya.

76. They were possessed of various kinds of faces. Listen to me, O Janamejaya, as I describe them. Some had faces like those of tortoises, and some like those of cocks. The faces of some were very long, O Bharata.

77. Some again, had faces resembling those of dogs, and wolves, and hares, and owls, and asses, and camels, and hogs.

78. Some had human faces, and some had faces like those of sheep and jackals. Some were terrible, and had faces like those of Makaras, and porpoises.

79. Some had faces like those of cats and some like those of flies; and the faceh

of some were very long. Some had faces like those of the mungoose, the owl, and the crow.

80. Some had faces like those of mice and peacocks and fishes and goats and sheep and buffaloes.

81. Some had faces like those of bears and tigers and leopards and lions. Some had faces like those of elephants and crocodiles.

82. Some had faces like those of Garuda and the rhinoceros and the wolf. Some had faces like those of cows and mules and camels and cats.

83. Having, large stomachs large legs and limbs, the eyes of some were like stars. The faces of some were like those of pigeons and bulls.

84. Others had faces like those of kokilas and hawks and Tittiris and lizards. Some were clad in white dresses.

85. Some had faces like those of snakes. The faces of some were like those of porcupines. Some had frightful and some very handsome faces; some were clad in snakes. The faces as also the noses of some were like those of cows.

86. Some had large and protruding stomachs but other limbs very lean; some had large limbs but lean stomachs. The necks of some were very short and the ears of some were very large. Some had various kinds of snakes for their ornaments.

87. Some were clad in skins of large elephants. And some in black deer-skins. The mouths of some were on their shoulders.

88. Some had mouths on their stomachs, some on their backs, some on their cheeks, some on their calves, and some on their flanks, and the mouths of many were placed on other parts of their bodies.

89. The faces of some amongst those combatants were like those of insects and worms. The mouths of some amongst them were like those of various beasts of prey. Some had many arms and some many heads.

90. The arms of some resembled trees, and the heads of some were on their loins. The faces of some were tapering like the bodies of snakes. Many amongst them lived in various kinds of plants and herbs.

91. Some were clad in rags, some in various kinds of bones, some were diversely clad, and some wore various sorts of garlands and diverse kinds of unguents.

92. Dressed variously, some had skins or their robes. Some had head-gears; the brow of some were furrowed into lines the necks of some bore marks like those on conch-shells; some were highly effulgent.

93. Some had diadems, some had five tufts of hair on their heads, and the hair of some were very hard. Some had two tufts, some three, and some seven.

94. Some had feathers on their heads, some had crowns, some had heads that were perfectly bald, and some had matted locks. Some were bedecked with beautiful garlands, and the faces of some were covered with hairs.

95. They took great delight only in battle, and all of them were invincible by even the foremost ones amongst the gods. Many amongst them were dressed in various kinds of celestial robes. All were fond of battle.

96. Some were of dark colour, and the faces of some had no flesh on them. Some had very long backs, and some had no stomachs. The backs of some were very large while those of some were very short. Some had long stomachs and some had long limbs.

97. Some had long arms, and others had short ones. Some were dwarfs. Some were haunch-backed. Some had short hips. The ears and heads of some were like those of elephants.

98. Some had noses like those of tortoises, some, like those of wolves. Some had long lips, some had long hips, and some were terrific, having their faces downwards.

99. Some had very large teeth, some had very short teeth, and some had only four teeth. Thousands among them, O king, were highly terrific in appearance, looking like huge infuriate elephants.

100. Some were of symmetrical limbs, possessed of great lustre, and adorned with ornaments. Some had yellow eyes, some had ears like arrows, some had noses like gavials, O Bharata.

101. Some had broad teeth, some had broad lips, and some had green hair. Possessed of various sorts of feet and lips and teeth, they had various kinds of arms and heads.

102. Clad in various kinds of skins, they spoke different languages, O Bharata. Skilled in all provincial dialects, those powerful ones talked with one another.

103. Those powerful companions, filled with joy, moved about (around Kartikeya). Some were long-necked, some long-nailed,

some long-legged. Some amongst them were large-headed and some large-armed.

104. The eyes of some were yellow, the throats of some were blue, and the ears of some were long, O Bharata. The stomachs of some were like masses of antimony.

105. The eyes of some were white, the necks of some were red, and some had eyes of a twany hue. Many were dark in color, and many, O king, were of various colors, O Bharata.

106. Many were bedecked with ornaments that looked like yak-tails. Some bore white marks on their bodies, and some bore red marks. Some were of various colors and some were gold-hued, and some looked splendid like peacocks.

107. I shall describe to you the weapons that were taken by those that came last to Kartikeya. Listen to me.

108. Some had noses on their uplifted arms. Their faces were like those of tigers and asses. Their eyes were on their backs, their throats were blue, and their arms resembled spiked clubs.

109. Some were armed with Shataghnis and discs, and some had heavy and short clubs. Some had swords and mallets and some were armed with bludgeons, O Bharata.

110. Some, huge-bodied and powerful combatants, were armed with lances and scimitars. Some were armed with maces and Bhushundis and some had spears on their hands.

111. The powerful, noble. and energetic and quick-coursing companions had various kinds of terrible weapons in their arms.

112. Beholding the investiture of Kartikeya, those mighty and energetic followers, taking delight in battle and wearing on their persons rows of tinkling bells, danced round him joyfully.

113. These and many other powerful companions, O king, came to the great and illustrious Kartikeya.

114. Some belonged to the celestial regions, some to the aerial, and some to the Earth. All of them were gifted with speed of the wind. Commanded by the gods, those brave and powerful ones became the companions of Kartikeya.

115. Thousands and thousands, millions and millions, of such beings came there at the investiture of the great Kartikeya and stood envcircling him."

CHAPTER XLVI.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Cond.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. Listen now to the numbers of the mothers, those destroyer of foes, O hero, that became the companions of Kumara, as I name them.

2 Listen, O, Bharata, to the names of those illustrious mothers. The mobile and immobile universe is permeated by those auspicious ones.

3—29. They are Prabhabavati, Vishalakshi Palita, Gonasi, Shrimati, Vahula, Vahuputrika, Apsujata, Gopali, Vrihadamvalika, Jayavati, Malatika, Dhruvaratna, Bhayankari, Vasudama, Sudama, Vishoka, Nandini, Ekachuda, Mahachuda, Chakranemi, Uttejana, Jayatsena, Kamalakshi, Shobhana, Shatrunjaya, Krodhana, Shalabhi, Khari, Magadhi, Shubhavaktra, Tirthaseni, Gitipriya, Kalyani, Kodruroma, Amitashana, Meghaswana, Bhogavati, Shubhru, Kanakavati, Alatakshi, Viryavati, Viddyutjihbha, Padmabati, Sunakshatra, Kandara, Vahuyojana, Santanika, Kamala, Mahavala, Sudama, Vahudama, Suprabha, Jashaswini, Nrityapriya, Shatolukhalamekhala, Shataghantata, Shatananda, Bhagananda, Bhavini, Vapusmati, Chandrashita, Bhadrakali, Jhankarika, Nishkuntika, Vama, Chatwaravasini, Sumangala, Swastimati, Vriddhikama, Jayapriya, Ghanada, Suprsada, Bhavada, Janeswari, Edi, Bhedi, Samedi, Vetalojanani, Kanduti, Kalika, Devamitra, Tamvusi, Ketaki, Chitrasena, Achala, Kukkutika, Shankshalika, Shakunika, Kundarika, Kokilika, Kumbhika, Shatodari, Utkrathini, Jalela, Mahavega, Kankana, Manojava, Kantakini, Pradhasa, Putana, Kheshaya, Antarghati, Vama, Kroshana, Taditprabha, Mandodari, Tuhundi, Kotara, Meghavahini. Subhaga, Lamvini, Lamva, Vasuchuda, Vikathini, Urddhavenidhara, Pingakshi, Lohamekhala, Prithuvaktra, Madhulika, Madhukumbha, Yakshlika, Matsunika, Jarayu, Jarjjaranana, Khyata, Dahaha, Dhamadhama, Khandakhanda, Pushana, Manikuttitka, Amogha, Lamvapayodhara, Venuvinadhara, Pingakshi, Lohamekshala, Shasholukaumkhi, Krishna, Kharajangha, Mahajava, Shishumaramukhi, Shweta, Lohitakshi, Vibhishana, Jatalika, Kamachari, Dirghajihbha, Valotkata, Kalehika, Vamanika, Mukuta, Lohitakshi, Mahakaya, Harinpinda, Ekatwacha, Sukusuma, Krishnakarni, Kshurakarni, Shatushkarni, Karnapravarana, Shatushpathaniketa, Gokarni, Mahishanana, Kharakarni, Mahakarni, Bheriswanamahaswana, Shankshakumbhashrava, Bhagada, Gana, Sugana, Bhi[illegible],

Kamada, Chatuspatharata, Bhutirtha, Anyagochara, Pashuda, Vittada, Sukhada, Mahayasha, Payoda, Gomahishada, Suvishala, Pratishtha, Supratishtha, Rochamana, Surochana, Naukarni, Mukhakarni, Vashira, Manthini, Ekavaktra, Megharava, Meghamala, and Virochana.

30. These and many other mothers, O foremost of Bharata's race, numbering by thousands, of diverse forms, became the followers of Kartikeya.

31. Their nails were long, their teeth were large and their lips also, O Bharata, were projecting. Of straight forms and handsome features, all of them, endowed with youth, were adorned with ornaments.

32. Of ascetic merit, they were capable of assuming forms at will. Not having fleshy limbs, they were of fair complexions and endued with the lustre of gold.

33. Some amongst them were dark and looked like clouds in hue and some were of the color of smoke, O best of Bharata's race. And some were endued with the effulgence of the morning sun and were highly blessed. Possessed of long tresses, they were clad in white dresses.

34. The braids of some were tied upwards, and the eyes of some were twany and some had long girdles. Some had long stomachs, some had long ears, and some had long breasts.

35. Some had coppery eyes and coppery appearance, and the eyes of some were green. Capable of granting boons and of walking at will, they were always cheerful.

36. Possessed of great strength, some amongst them partook of the nature of Yama, some of Rudra, some of Soma, some of Kuvera, some of Varuna, some of Indra, and some of Agni, O destroyer of foes.

37. And some were of the nature of Vayu, some of Kumara, some of Brahman, O foremost of Bharata's race, and some of Vishnu, and some of Surya, and some of Varaha.

38. Of handsome and delightful features, they were beautiful like the Apsaras. In voice they resembled the kokila, and in wealth, Kuvera.

39. In battle, their energy resembled that of Shakra. In lustre they resembled fire. In battle they always struck terror to their enemies.

40. Capable of assuming any form at will, in fleetness they resembled the very wind. Of inconceivable power and great energy, their prowess also was inconceivable.

41. They live in trees and open spots and crossings of four roads. They live also in caves and crematoriums, mountains and springs.

42. Bedecked with various kinds of ornaments, they wear various kinds of dresses and speak different languages.

43. These and many other fairs (of the mothers), all capable of terrorising the enemies, followed, the great Kartikeya, at the command of the king of gods.

44. The worshipful chastiser of Paka, O foremost of kings, conferred on Kartikeya, a dart for the destruction of the enemies of the celestials.

45. That dart produces a loud sound, and is adorned with many large bells. Possessed of great lustre, it seemed to blaze with light. And Indra also gave him a banner effulgent as the morning sun.

46. Shiva gave him a large army, highly dreadful and armed with various kinds of weapons, and endued with great energy of ascetic penances.

47. Invincible and possessing all the qualities of a good army that force was known by the name of Dhananjaya. It was protected by thirty thousand warriors each of whom was powerful like Rudra himself. That force knew not how to fly from battle.

48. Vishnu gave him a triumphal garland that increases the power of the wearer. Uma gave him two pieces of cloth, effulgent like the sun.

49. With great pleasure Ganga gave Kumara a celestial water-pot, begotten of ambrosia, and Vrihaspati gave him a sacred stick.

50. Garuda gave him his favorite son, a peacock of beautiful feathers.

51. Aruna gave him a cock of sharp talons. The royal Varuna gave him a powerful shake.

52. The lord Brahma gave him, his devout devotee, a black deer-skin. And the Creator of all the worlds also gave him Victory in all battles.

53. Having obtained the command of the celestial forces, Skanda shone like a blazing fire of bright flames.

54. Accompanied by those companions and the mothers, he set out for the destruction of the demons, cheering up all the foremost of the celestials.

55. That terrible army of celestials, furnished with standards adorned with bells, and equipt with drums, and conchs and cymbals, and armed with weapons, and

decked with many banners, shone like the autumnal sky, bespangled with planets and stars.

56. Then that vast host of celestials and various other creatures began cheerfully to beat their drums and blow their conchs numbering in thousands.

57. And they also played on their Patahas and Jharjharas and Krikachas and cow-horns and Adamvaras and Gomukhas and Dindimas of loud sound.

58. All the gods, with Vasava at their head, lauded Kumara. The celestials and the Gandharvas sang, and the Apsaras danced.

59. Well pleased (with these attentions) Skanda granted a boon to all the celestials, saying,—I shall kill all your enemies, that wish to kill you.

60. Having got this boon from that best of celestials, the illustrious gods considered their enemies as already killed.

61. After Skanda had granted that boon a tremendous sound uprose from all those creatures full of joy, filling the three worlds.

62. Accompanied by that vast army, Skanda then started for the destruction of the Daityas and the protection of the celestial beings.

63. Exertion, and Victory, and Righteousness, and Success, and Prosperity, and Courage, and the Scriptures, (in their embodied forms) followed Kartikeya's army, O king.

64—65. With that awe-inspiring force, armed with lances and mallets and blazing hands and maces and heavy clubs and arrows and darts and spears, and bedecked with beautiful ornaments and armour, the divine Guha set out with leonine roars.

66. Beholding him, all the Daityas and Rakshasas and Danavas, overcome with fear, dispersed in all directions.

67. Armed with various weapons, the gods pursued them. Seeing the enemy flying away, the energetic and powerful Skanda, became swollen with anger.

68. He repeatedly hurled his terrible weapon, viz., the dart, he had received from Agni. The energy displayed by him then resembled a fire fed with libations of clarified butter.

69. While the dart was repeatedly hurled by Skanda of unfathomable energy, meteors, O king, dropped upon the Earth.

70. Thunder-bolts also, with tremendous noise, dropped upon the Earth. Everything looked terrible, O king, as on the day of the universal dissolution.

71. When that terrible dart was once hurled by the son of Agni, millions of darts came out of it, O best of Bharatas.

72. The powerful and worshipful Skanda filled with joy, at last killed Taraka, the chief of the Daityas, endued with great energy and prowess, and surrounded in that battle, by a hundred thousand heroic and powerful Daityas.

73. In that battle, he then fell down Mahisha, who was surrounded by eight Padmas of Daityas. He next killed Tripada who was surrounded by a thousand Ajutas of Daityas.

74. The powerful Skanda then overpowered Hradodara, who was encircled by ten Nikharvas of Daityas, with all his followers armed with various weapons.

75. Filling the ten points of the horizon, the followers of Kumara, O king, made a loud noise, while those Daityas were being killed, and danced and jumped and laughed in joy.

76. Thousands of Daityas, O king, were reduced to ashes by the flames that came out Skanda's arrow, while others died at the very roars of Skanda.

77. The three worlds were terrified at the yawns of Skanda's soldiers. The enemies were consumed with flames produced by Skanda. Many were killed by his roars only.

78. Some amongst the enemies of the celestials, struck with banners, were killed. Some, frightened by the sounds of bells, dropped on the face of the earth. Some wounded with weapons, fell down dead.

79. In this way the horoic and powerful Kartikeya killed numberless enemies of the gods, highly powerful that came to fight with him.

80. Then Vali's powerful son Vana, getting upon the Krauncha mountain, fought with the celestial army.

81. Highly intelligent, the great generalissimo Skanda rushed against that enemy of the gods. Fearing Kartikeya, he took shelter within the Krauncha mountain.

82. Worked up with ire, the worshipful Kartikeya then pierced that mountain with that dart given him by Agni. The mountain was called Krauncha (crane), for the sound it always produced resembled the cry of a crane.

83. That mountain was variegated with Shala trees. The monkey and elephants that lived on it were frightened. The birds

that had lived there rose up and wheeled around in the sky. The serpents began to dart down its sides.

84. It resounded also with the cries of a large number of leopards and bears that ran hither and thither in fright. Other forests on it rang with the cries of hundreds of animals.

85. Sharabhas and lions suddenly run out. On account of all this, that mountain though it was reduced to a very pitiable condition still shone very beautiful.

86. Vidyadharas living on its summits soared into the air. The Kinnaras also became very anxious, bewildered by the fear caused by the fall of Skanda's arrow.

87—88. The Daityas then, by hundreds and thousands, came out of that burning mountain, all bedecked with beautiful ornaments and garlands. The followers of Kumara, overpowering them in battle, killed them all, the worshipful Skanda worked up with ire, killed the son of the Daitya chief (Vali) along with his younger brother as Indra had killed Vritra formerly.

89. That destroyer of hostile heroes, *viz.*, Agni's son, pierced with his dart the Krauncha mountain, dividing his own-self sometimes into many and sometimes aggregating them all into one.

90. Repeatedly discharged by him, the arrow repeatedly came back to him. Indeed such was the power and glory of the worshipful son of Agni.

91. With redoubled heroism, energy, fame and success, the god pierced the mountain and killed hundreds of Daityas.

92. Having thus slain the enemies of the celestials, the worshipful god was worshipped and honored by the latter and was greatly delighted.

93. After the Krauncha mountain had been pierced and after the son of Chanda had been killed drums were beat, O king, and conchs were blown.

94. The celestial ladies showered flowers continually upon that divine lord of Yogins.

95. Auspicious winds began to blow, carrying divine perfumes. The Gandharvas and great Rishis always engaged in the performance of sacrifices, sang his praises.

96. Some spoke of him as the powerful son of the Grandsire, *viz.*, Sanatkumara, the eldest of all the sons of Bramhan.

97. Some described him as the son of Maheshwara, and some as that of Agni. Some spoke of him as the son of Uma or of Krittakas or of Ganga,

98. Hundreds and thousands of people described that Lord of Yogins of shining form and great might, as the son of one of those, or of either of two of those, or of any one of four of those.

99. "I have thus told you, O king, everything about the installation of Kartikeya. Listen now to the history of the sanctity of that best of Tirthas, on the Saraswati.

100. That best of Tirthas, O king after the enemies of the celestials had been killed, became a second heaven.

101. The powerful son of Agni gave to each of those leading celestials various kinds of dominion and wealth and at last the sovereignty of the three worlds.

102. Thus, O king, was that adorable destroyer of the Daityas installed by the gods as their generalissimo.

103. That other Tirtha, O best of Bharatas, where in days of Yore, Varuna, the Lord of waters had been installed by the celestials, is known by the name of Taijasa.

104. Having bathed in that Tirtha and adored Skanda, Rama gave to the Brahmans gold and clothes and ornaments and many other things.

105. Passing one night there, that killer of hostile heroes, *viz.*, Madhava, lauding that foremost of Tirthas and touching its water, became cheerful and happy.

106. I have now told you everything about which you had enquired, *viz.*, how the divine Skanda was installed by the celestials.

CHAPTER XLVII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Cond.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. "This history, O Rishi, that I have heard from you is highly wonderful, namely this detailed description of the installation according to due rites of Skanda.

2. O you having asceticism for your wealth, I consider myself cleansed by having listened to this account. My hair stands on end and my mind has become cheerful.

3. Having heard the history of the installation of Kumara and the destruction of the Daityas, I have been greatly pleased, I feel a curiosity, however, regarding another subject,

4. How was the king of the waters installed by the celestials in that Tirtha formerly. O best of men, tell me all that, for you are highly wise and are a skilled narrator.

Vaishampayana said :—

5. "Listen, O king, to this wonderful history as it took place in a previous Kalpa. In days of Yore, in the Satya Yuga, O king, all the celestials, duly approaching Varuna, said to him these words.

6. 'As Indra the king of gods always protects us from every fear, similarly be you the Lord of all the rivers.

7. You always live, O god, in the Ocean, that home of Makaras. This Ocean, the lord of rivers, will then be under you.

8. You will then increase and decreases with Soma!'—Varuna answered them saying—'Let it be so.'

9. All the celestials then assembled together, made Varuna living in the Ocean the Lord of all the waters, according to the rites sanctioned by the Scriptures.

10. Having installed Varuna as the Lord of all acquatic animals and worshipping him duly, the celestials, returned to their respective habitations.

11. Installed by the celestials, the illustrious Varuna began to duly protect seas and lakes and rivers and others reservoirs of water as Indra protects the gods.

12. Bathing in that Tirtha also, and giving away various kinds of presents, Valadeva, the destroyer of Pralamva, endued with great wisdom, then proceeded to Agni Tirtha, where the eater of the clarified butter, disappearing from the view, became concealed within the entrails of the Shami word.

13. When the light of all the worlds thus disappeared, O sinless one, the gods then went to the Grandsire of the universe.

14. And they said,—'The worshipful Agni has disappered. We do not know the reason. Let not creation go to destruction. Create fire, O powerful Lord'?"

Janamejaya said :—

15. "For what reason did Agni, the Creator of all the worlds, disappear? How also was he found out by the celestials? Tell me all this fully."

Vaishampayana said :—

16. The highly powerful Agni became very much frightened at the curse of Bhrigu. Concealing himself within the entrails of the Shami wood, that worshipful god disappeared from the view.

17. Upon the disappearance of Agni, all the gods led by Vasava, in great affliction, searched for the missing god.

18. Finding Agni then, they saw that god lying within the entrails of the Shami wood.

19. The celestials, O foremost of kings, with Vrihaspati at their head, having found out the god, became very glad with Vasava amongst them.

20. They then returned to their respective abodes. Agni also, from Bhrighu's curse, became an eater of every thing as said by the Bramhavadin.

21. The intelligent Valarama, having bathed there, then went to Bramhayoni where the worshipful Grandsire of all the worlds had created the world.

22. Formerly the Lord Bramhan having with all the gods bathed in that Tirtha, created all the Tirthas according to due rites, for the celestials.

23. Bathing there and distributing various kinds of gifts, Valadeva then proceeded to the Tirtha called Kauvera where the powerful Ailavila, having practised severe austerities, became the king of riches.

24. While he dwelt there (practising austerities), all kinds of wealth and all the precious gems, came to him of their own accord. Valadeva, having gone to that Tirtha and bathed in its waters, distributed immeuse wealth amongst the Bramhanas with due rites.

25. Rama saw at that spot the excellent woods of Kuvera. In days of yore, the great Kuvera the king of the Yakshas, having practised the severest austerities there, obtained many boons.

26. There were the lordship of all riches, the friendship of powerful Rudra, the status of a god, the regency over a particular quarter (the north), and a son named Nalakuvara. These the king of the Yakshas speedily obtained there.

27. The Maruts, coming there, installed him duly (in his sovereignty). He also obtained for a vehicle a well-equipt celestial car, fleet as thought, as also as all the prosperity of a god.

28. Bathing in that Tirtha and giving away immense wealth, Vala using white unguents thence went speedily to another Tirtha.

29. Abounding in various creatures, that Tirtha is known by the name of

Vadarapachana. There the fruits of every reason are always available and flowers and fruits of every kind are always abundant."

CHAPTER XLVIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Cond.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. Rama then proceeded to the Tirtha called Vadarapachana where dwell many ascetics and Siddhas. There the daughter of Bharadwaja peerless on Earth for beauty, named Shruvavati, practised severe austerities. She was a maiden who led the life of a Bramhacharini.

3. That beautiful damsel, observing various kinds of vows, practised the austerest of penances, moved by the desire of obtaining the Lord of the celestials for her husband.

4. Many years passed away, O chief of Kuru's race, during which that damsel continually practised those various kinds of vows exceedingly difficult for women to practise.

5. The worshipful chastiser of Paka at last became pleased with her, for her penances and reverence shown to him.

6. The powerful Lord of the celestials then came to that hermitage, having assumed the form of the great Rishi Vashishtha.

7. Seeing that best of ascetics, viz., Vashishtha, of the austerest penances, she adored him, O Bharata, according to the rites observed by ascetics.

8. Conversant with vows, the auspicious and sweet-speeched damsel addressed him, saying,—'O worshipful one, O foremost of ascetics, tell me your commands, O lord.

9. O you of excellent vows, I shall serve you, asmuch as I can. I will, however, not be able to marry you, for I seek Shakra.

10. I am propitiating Shakra, the lord of the three worlds, with vows and rigid observances and ascetic penances.'

11—12. Thus addressed by her, the illustrious god, smiling as he looked at her, and knowing her observances, addressed her sweetly, saying,—'Your practices of penances is known to me, O you of excellent vows, the object cherished in your heart, for which you have been trying your best, O auspicious one, shall, be accomplished. Everything is attained by penances. Everything depends on penances.

14. All those sacred regions, O you beautiful damsel, that belong to the gods can be obtained by penances. Penances are the root of great happiness.

15. Those men that renounce their bodies after having practised austere penances, obtain the status of gods, O auspicious one. Remember these words of mine.

16—17. Do you now, O blessed damsel, boil these five jujubes, O you of excellent vows.' Having said these words, the worshipful slayer of Vala went away, taking leave, to recite mentally certain mantras at an excellent Tirtha not far from that hermitage. That Tirtha passed in the three worlds after the name of Indra, O giver of honors.

18. Indeed, it was for testing the damsel's devotion that the king of the celestials acted in that way for obstructing the boiling of the jujubes.

19. The damsel, O king, having purified himself, began her task; restraining speech and with fixed attention, she sat to her task, without experiencing the least fatigue.

20. Thus that damsel of high vows, O best of kings, began to boil those jujubes. As she sat employed in her work, O foremost of men, day was almost gone, yet those jujubes showed no signs of softening.

21. The fuel she had there was all consumed. Seeing the fire about to extinguish owing to want of fuel, she began to burn her own limbs.

22. The beautiful maiden first dropped her feet into the fire. The innocent damsel sat still while her feet began to be consumed.

23. The beautiful girl did not at all mind her burning feet. Though it was a hard work, she did it from desire of doing good to the Rishi that had been her guest.

24. Her face did not at all change its colour under its agony, nor did she fell sorrow for it. Having thrust her limbs into the fire, she felt as much joy as if she had put them into cool water.

25. The words of the Rishi, viz.,—Cook these jujubes well,—were remembered by her, O Bharata.

26. The auspicious damsel, recollecting those words of the great Rishi, began to cook those jujubes although the latter, O king, showed no signs of softening.

27. The worshipful Agni himself consumed her feet. For this, however, the maiden did not feel the slightest pain.

28. Beholding [illegible] of hers, the lord of the three worlds, became highly pleased. He then appeared in his own proper form before the damsel.

29. The king of the celestials then addressed that maiden of very austere vows, saying,—'I am pleased with your devotion, penances, and vows.

30. Your wish, therefore, O auspicious one, shall be accomplished. Renouncing body, O blessed one, you shall in heaven live with me.

31. This hermitage, again, shall become the foremost of Tirthas in the world, capable of cleansing from every sin, O you of fair eye-brows, and shall pass by the name of Vadarapachana. It shall be celebrated in the three worlds and shall be lauded by great Rishis.

32. In this very Tirtha, O auspicious, sinless, and highly blessed one, the seven Rishis had once left Arundhati (the wife of one of them) while they went to Himavat.

33. Those regenerate ones, of very rigid vows, had gone there for collecting fruits and roots for their sustenance.

34. While they thus lived in a forest of Himavat for procuring their food, a drought took place extending for twelve years.

35. Those ascetics, having made a hermitage for themselves, continued to live there. Meanwhile Arundhati devoted herself to ascetic penances.

36. Beholding Arundhati practising the austerest of vows, the boon-giving and three-eyed deity Mahadeva, highly gratified, came there.

37. Assuming the form of a Brahmana, the illustrious Mahadeva, came to her and said,—I desire alms, O auspicious one!

38. The beautiful Arundhati said to him,—Our food has been exhausted, O Brahmana. Do thou eat jujubes.

39. Mahadeva replied,—Cook these jujubes, O you of excellent vows. After these words, she began to cook those jujubes for pleasing that Brahmana.

40. Placing those jujubes on the fire, the celebrated Arundhati listened to various excellent and sound and sacred discourses (from the lips of Mahadeva). That twelve years, drought then passed away.

41. Without food, and employed in cooking and listening to those sacred topics, that terrible period passed away as if like a single day.

42—43. Having collected fruits from the mountain, the seven Rishis returned there. The worshipful Mahadeva, highly pleased with Arundhati, [illegible] to her,—Approach, as formerly, these Rishis, O righteous one! I have been satisfied with your penances and vows.

44. The adorable Hara appeared there in his own form. Pleased, he spoke to them about the noble conduct of Arundhati (in these words.)

45. The ascetic merit, ye Rishis, that this lady has acquired, is, I think, much greater than what you have earned on the breast of Himavat!

46. The penances practised by this lady have been highly austere, for she passed twelve years in cooking, herself fasting all the time.

47. Then, addressing Arundhati, Mahadeva said, Pray for any boon, O auspicious dame, you like.

48. Then that lady of large and red eyes addressed that god in the midst of the seven Rishis, saying,—If, O divine one, you are pleased with me, then let this place be an excellent Tirtha. Let it be known by the name of Vadarapachana and let it be the favorite resort of Siddhas and celestial Rishis!

49. May he, O god of gods, who observes a fast here and lives for three nights after having purified himself, obtain the fruit of a twelve years' fast.

50. The gods answered her, saying,—Let it be so. Lauded by the seven Rishis, the god then went to heaven.

51. Indeed, the Rishis has been stricken with wonder on seeing the god and the chaste Arundhati herself as hale and hearty and capable of bearing hunger and thirst.

52. Thus the pure-souled Arundhati, formerly, obtained the highest success, like you, O highly blessed lady, for my sake, O damsel of rigid vows!

53—55. O amiable maiden, you have practised severer penances. Gratified with your vows, I shall also grant you this especial boon, O auspicious one, a boon that is superior to what was granted to Arundhati. Through the power of the great god who had granted that boon to Arundhati and through your own energy, O amiable one, I shall duly grant you another boon now, viz., that the person who will live in this Tirtha for only one night and bathe here with his mind concentrated, will, after renouncing his body, obtain many blissful regions that are difficult of acquisition.

56. Having said these words to the pure Shruvavati, the thousand-eyed Shakra then went back to heaven.

57. After the wielder of the thunder-bolt, O king, had gone, a shower of celestial flowers of sweet fragrance fell there, O Bharata's chief.

58. Celestial kettle-drums also, of loud sound, were beat there. Auspicious and perfumed breezes also blew there, O king.

59. The auspicious Shruvavati then renouncing her body, became the wife of Indra. Obtaining that dignity through austere penances, she began to pass her time, sporting with him."

Janamejaya said :—

60. "Who was the mother of Shruvavati, and how was that fair damsel brought up. I desire to hear this, O Brahmana, for great is my curiosity."

Vaishampayana said :—

61. "The vital seed of the great Rishi Bharadwaja fell upon beholding the large eyed Apsara Ghritachi as the latter was passing by at one time.

62. That foremost of ascetics thereupon held it in his hand. It was then kept in a cup made of the leaves of a tree. In that cup was born the girl Shruvavati.

63. Having performed the usual birth rites, the great ascetic Bharadwaja, gave her a name.

64. The name the pious Rishi gave her n the presence of the gods and Rishis was Shruvavati. Leaving the girl in his hermitage, Bharadwaja went to the forests of Himavat.

65. That best of the Yadus, the heroic Valadeva, of great dignity, having bathed in that Tirtha and distributed much wealth amongst the Brahmanas, then went with a concentrated mind to the Tirtha of Shakra.'

CHAPTER XLIX.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "The powerful chief of the Yadus, having gone to Indra's Tirtha, bathed there according to due rites and distributed wealth and gems amongst the Brahmanas.

2. There the chief of the celestials had performed a hundred horse-sacrifices and given immense wealth to Vrihaspati.

3. Indeed, through the assistance of Brahmanas conversant with the Vedas, Shakra performed all those sacrifices there, according to rites sanctioned by the scriptures. Those sacrifices were performed on a liberal scale. Horses of all breeds were brought there. The gifts to Brahmanas were immense.

4. Having duly completed those hundred sacrifices, O chief of the Bharatas, Shakra passed by the name of Shatakratu.

5. That auspicious and sacred Tirtha, capable of dissipating every sin, came to be called after his name as Indra-Tirtha.

6. Having duly bathed there, Valadeva worshipped the Brahmanas with excellent food and raiments. He then went to that auspicious and foremost of Tirthas called after the name of Rama.

7. The highly blessed and ascetic Rama of Bhrigu's race, repeatedly conquered the Earth and killed all the foremost of Kshatriyas.

8. Then Rama performed in that Tirtha a Vajapeya sacrifice and a hundred horse-sacrifices through the assistance of his preceptor Kashyapa. There, as sacrificial fee, Rama gave to his preceptor the whole Earth with her oceans.

9. The great Rama, having duly bathed there, made presents to the Brahmanas, O Janamejaya, and adored them.

10. Having made diverse presents consisting of various kinds of gems, kine, elephants, female slaves, sheep and goats, he then retired into the woods.

11. Having bathed in that sacred and foremost of Tirthas that was the resort of gods and Rishis, Valadeva duly adored the ascetics there, and then went to the Tirtha called Yamuna.

12. The highly effulgent and blessed son of Aditi, Vuruna, had in days of yore performed in that Tirtha the Rajasuya sacrifice, O king.

13—14. Having in battle subjugated both men and celestials and Gandharvas and Rakshasas, Varuna, O king, that slayer of hostile heroes, celebrated his grand sacrifice in that Tirtha. Upon the commencement of that foremost of sacrifices a battle took place between the gods and the Danavas, terrorising the three worlds.

15. After the termination of that foremost of sacrifices, viz., the Rajasuya (of Varuna), a terrible battle, O Janamejaya, ensued amongst the Kshatriyas.

16. Having worshipped the Rishis there, the ever liberal and powerful Valadeva, made many presents to those that desired them.

17. Filled with joy and lauded by the great Rishis, Valadeva, that hero ever decked with garlands of wild flowers and

possessed of eyes like lotus leaves, then went to the Tirtha called Aditya.

18. There, O best of kings, having performed a sacrifice, the worshipful and effulgent Sun, obtained the sovereignty of all luminous bodies (in the universe) and acquired also his great energy.

19—22. There, in that Tirtha situate on the bank of that river, all the gods with Vasava at their head, the Vishwedevas, the Maruts, the Gandharvas, the Apsaras, the Island-born Vyasa, Shuka, Krishna the slayer of Madhu, the Yakshas, the Rakshasas, and the Pishachas, O king, and various others, thousands in numbers, all crowned with ascetic success, always live. Indeed, in that auspicious and sacred Tirtha of the Saraswati, Vishnu himself, having in days of yore slain the Asuras, Madhu and Kaitabha, had, O chief of the Bharatas, performed his ablutions.

23. The Island-born Vyasa also, O Bharata, having bathed in that Tirtha, acquired great Yoga powers and Siddhi.

24. Having bathed in that very Tirtha with a concentrated mind, the Rishi Asita-Deval also obtained great Yoga powers."

CHAPTER L.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "In this Tirtha lived formerly a virtuous Rishi, named Asita-Devala, leading the life of a house-holder.

2. He led a life of purity and self-restraint. Possessed of great ascetic merit, he was compassionate to all creatures and never injured any one. In word, deed, and thought, he behaved equally towards all creatures.

3. O monarch, censure and praise were equal to him who was without wrath, he was, like Yama himself, thoroughly impartial, treating all alike.

4. The great ascetic looked with an equal eye upon gold and pebbles. He daily worshipped the gods and guests, and the Brahmanas. Righteous himself he always practised the vow of Brahmacharya.

5. Once upon a time, an intelligent ascetic, O king, of the name of Jaigishavya, devoted to Yoga and rapt in meditation, and leading the life of a mendicant, came to Devala's hermitage.

6. That great ascetic ever practising Yoga, O monarch, while residing in Devala's hermitage became crowned with ascetic success.

7. Indeed, while the great Muni Jaigishavya lived there, Devala always paid him attention, never neglecting him at any time.

8. Thus, O king, they both lived long together. On one occasion, Devala lost sight of Jaigishavya, that foremost of ascetics.

9. At the hour, however, of dinner, O Janamejaya, the intelligent and righteous ascetic, leading a life of mendicancy, approached Devala for soliciting alms.

10. Seeing that great ascetic re-appear in the guise of a mendicant, Devala paid him great honors and expressed much gratification.

11. And Devala adored his guest, O Bharata, according to his might, after the rites laid down by the Rishis and with great attention for many years.

12. One day, however, O king, in the sight of that great Muni, a deep anxiety disturbed the mind of the high-souled Devala.

13—14. The latter thought within himself,—"Many years have I passed in adoring this ascetic. This idle mendicant, however, has not yet spoken to me a single word !'—Having thought thus the blessed Devala proceeded to the banks of the ocean through the sky, carrying his earthen pitcher.

15. Arrived at the coast of the Ocean, that lord of rivers, O Bharata, the righteous Devala saw Jaigishavya arrived there before him.

16. Thereat the lord Asita, became filled with wonder and thought within himself,—'How could the mendicant come to the ocean and perform his ablutions even before my arrival ?'

17. Thus thought the great Rishi Asita. Duly performing his ablutions there and purifying himself thereby, he then began to silently recite the sacred mantras.

18. Having finished his ablutions and silent prayers, the blessed Devala returned to his hermitage, O Janamejaya, taking with him his earthen pitcher filled with water.

19. As the ascetic, however, entered his own hermitage, he saw Jaigishavya seated there.

20. The great ascetic Jaigishavya never spoke a word to Devala but lived in the latter's hermitage like a log of wood.

21. Having seen that ascetic, who was an ocean of austerities, plunged in the waters of the ocean (before his own arrival there), Asita now saw him returned to his hermitage before his own return.

22. Witnessing this Yoga power, of Jaigishavya, the intelligent Asita-Devala, O king, began to think over the matter.

23. Indeed, that best of ascetics, O king, wondered much, saying,—'How could this one be seen in the ocean and again in my hermitage?'

24. While immersed in these thoughts, the ascetic Devala, conversant with mantras then soared aloft, O king, from his hermitage into the sky, for ascertaining who the mendicant Jaigishavya really was.

25. Devala saw numbers of sky-ranging Siddhas rapt in meditation, and Jaigishavya reverentially adored by them.

26. Devala became filled with wrath at the sight. He then saw Jaigishavya start for heaven.

27. He next saw him proceed to the region of the Pitris. Devala saw him then proceed to the region of Yama.

28. From Yama's region the great ascetic Jaigishavya was then seen to soar aloft and proceed to the region of Soma. He was then seen to proceed to the blessed regions of the performers of various rigid sacrifices.

29. Thence he proceeded to the regions of the Agnihotris and thence to the regions of those ascetics that perform the Darsha and the Paurnamasa sacrifices.

30. The intelligent Devala then beheld him go from those regions of persons performing sacrifices by killing animals to that pure region which is adored by the very gods.

31. Devala next saw the mendicant proceed to the place of those ascetics that perform the sacrifice called Chaturmasya and various others of the same kind. Thence he went to the region belonging to the performers of the Agnishtoma sacrifice.

32. Devala then saw his guest go to the place of those ascetics that perform the sacrifice called Agnishutta.

33. Devala next saw him in the regions of those highly wise men that perform that foremost of sacrifices, *viz.*, Vajapeya, and the other sacrifice in which enough of gold is necessary.

34. Then he saw Jaigishavya in the region of those that perform the Rajasuya and the Pundarika.

35. He then saw him in the regions of those foremost of men that perform the horse-sacrifice and the sacrifice in which human beings are killed.

36. Indeed, Devala saw Jaigishavya in the regions also of those that celebrate the sacrifice called Sautramani and that other in which the flesh of all living animals is required.

37. Jaigishavya was then seen in the regions of those that perform the sacrifice called Dadashaha and various others of a similar nature.

38. Asita next saw his guest sojourning in the region of Mitravaruna and then in that of Adityas.

39. Asita then saw his guest go through the regions of the Rudras, the Vasus, and Vrihaspati.

40. Having soared next into the blessed region called Golaka, Jaigishavya was next seen to pass into those of the Brahmasatris.

41. Having by his energy passed through three other regions, he was seen to go to those regions that are reserved for women that are chaste and devoted to their husbands.

41. At this point, O chastiser of foes, Asita lost sight of Jaigishavya that foremost of ascetics, who, rapt in Yoga, disappeared from his view.

43. The highly blessed Devala then reflected upon the power of Jaigishavya his vows and success in Yoga.

44—45. Then the self-restrained Asita, with joined hands and in a reverential spirit, enquired of those foremost of Siddhas in the regions of the Brahmasatris, saying—'I do not see Jaigishavya! Tell me where that energetic ascetic is! I desire to hear this, for great is my curiosity!'

Siddhas said :—

46. 'Listen, O Devala of rigid vows, we speak to you the truth! Jaigishavya has gone to the eternal region of Brahman!'

Vaishampayana said :—

47. "Hearing these words of those Siddhas, living in the regions of the Brahmasatris, Asita tried to soar aloft but he soon fell down.

48. The Siddhas then, once more addressing Devala said to him,—'You, O Devala, are not competent to proceed to the region of Brahman, where Jaigishavya has gone!'

Vaishampayana said :—

49. "Hearing those words of the Siddhas, Devala came down, descending from one region to another in due succession.

50. He repaired to his own sacred hermitage very quickly, like a winged insect. As soon as he entered his abode he beheld Jaigishavya seated there.

51—52. Then beholding his Yoga power Devala, reflected upon it with his righteous understanding, and approaching that great ascetic, O king, with humility, addressed the great Jaigishavya, saying,—'I desire, O adorable one, to acquire Moksha (Emancipation) !'

53. Hearing these words of his, Jaigishavya gave him lessons. And he also initiated him in the mysteries of Yoga and taught him the all important and obligatory duties of individuals as also their reverses.

54. The holy personage of hard austerities, seeing him thus determined, performed all the sacred rites according to the injunctions laid down for that purpose.

55. Then all creatures with the Pitris, seeing Devala determined to adopt the religion of emancipation began to weep, saying,—' Alas, who will hereafter offer us food !'

56. Hearing these lamentations of all creatures that resounded through all the points of horizon, Devala thought of renouncing the religion of emancipation.

57—58. Then all sorts of sacred fruits and roots, O Bharata, and thousands of flowers and deciduous herbs, began to weep, saying, 'the wicked and mean Devala will, forsooth, once more pluck and cut us ! Alas, having once promised all creatures no injury, he sees not the wrong that he thinks of doing.

59. Thereat that foremost of ascetics began to think with the help of his understanding, saying,—' Which of the two, *viz.*, the religion of Moksha or that of a householder, will be the better for me ?

60. Meditating on this, Devala, O king, relinquished the life of a house-holder and adopted that of Moksha.

61. Having thought thus, Devala, on account of his dertermination, acquired the highest success, O Bharata, and the highest Yoga.

62. The celestials then, led by Vrihaspati, praised Jaigishavya and the penances of that ascetic.

63. Then that best of ascetics, *viz.*, Narada, said to the gods—' There is no penance in Jaigishavya since he filled Asita with wonder !'

64. The inhabitants of heaven then said to Narada who had communicated such dangerous words.—' Do not say so about the great ascetic Jaigishavya !

65. There is no one superior or even equal to this great one in energy, penance and Yoga !

66. Such was the power of Jaigishavya as also of Asita. Here lived those two, and this is the Tirtha of those two great persons.

67. Bathing there and distributing wealth to the Brahmanas, the great wielder of the plough, of great deeds, acquired great merit and then went to the Tirtha of Soma."

CHAPTER LI.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "There, in that Tirtha, O Bharata, where the Moon had formerly celebrated the Rajasuya sacrifice, a great battle was fought in which Taraka was the root.

2—3. Bathing in that Tirtha and distributing many presents, the virtuous Vala of pure soul went to the Tirtha of the Muni named Saraswat. There, during a drought extending over twelve years, the sage Saraswat, formerly taught the Vedas unto many best of Brahmanas.

Janamejaya said :—

4. "Why did the sage Saraswat, O you of ascetic merit, teach the Vedas to the Rishis during a twelve years' drought ?

Vaishampayana said .—

5. Formerly, O king, there was an intelligent sage of great ascetic virtue. He was celebrated by the name of Dadhicha. Having governed his senses, he led the life of a Brahmacharin.

6. On account of his excessive ascetic austerities, Shakra was possessed by fear. The sage could not be dissuaded (from the practices of his penances) by the offer of even various kinds of rewards.

7. At last, for tempting the sage, the chastiser of Paka, sent to him the highly beautiful and celestial Apsara by name Alamvusha.

8. On the banks of the Saraswati the great sage was engaged in the worship of the gods, and there the celestial nymphs, O king, arrived.

9. Seeing that beautiful damsel the seminal fluid of that ascetic came out. Having fallen into the Saraswati, the latter preserved it with care.

10. Indeed, O foremost of men, the River, seeing that seed, held it in her womb. In time the seed developed into a fœtus and the great river kept it so that it might have life and grow into a child.

11. When the time came, the best of rivers delivered that child and then went, O lord, taking it with her, to that Rishi.

12—14. Seeing that best of Rishis in a conclave, Saraswati, O king, while handing over the child, said these words :—'O Rishi, this is your son whom I held out of respect for you! That seed of yours, which fell at seeing the nymph Alamvusha, had been held by me in my womb, O Rishi, through devotion for you, and knowing well that that your seed would never be destroyed.

15. Given by me, accept this faultless child of your own!' Thus addressed by her, the Rishi accepted the child and was highly pleased.

16. That best of Brahmanas then out of affection smelt the head of his son and embraced him closely, O best of Bharata, for some time.

17. Pleased with the River, the great ascetic Dadhicha then gave a boon to her, saying,—'The Vishwedevas, the Rishis, and all the clans of the Gandharvas, and the Apsaras, will henceforth, O blessed one, derive great happiness when oblations of your water are presented to them!'

18. Having said to that great river, the sage, pleased and filled with joy, then praised her in these words. Hear them duly, O king!

19. 'Thou hast sprung, O highly blessed one, from the lake of Brahman in days of old. All ascetics know thee, O best of rivers.

20. Highly beautiful, thou hast done me great good! This thy great child, O fair river, will be known by the name of Saraswat.

21. This thy son, capable of creating new worlds, will pass after thy name! That great ascetic will be known by the name of Saraswat!

22. During a drought extending over twelve years, this Saraswat, will teach the Vedas to many best of Brahmanas.

23. O blessed Saraswati, through my grace, thou shalt always become the best of all sacred rivers!'

24. Thus was the great River lauded by the sage after the latter had granted her boons. The River then, overjoyed went away, O best of Bharata's race, taking with her that child.

25. Meanwhile, during a war between the gods and demons Shakra travelled through the three worlds in search of weapons.

26. The king of the celestials, however, failed to find such weapons as were fit to kill the enemies of the celestials.

27. Shakra then said to the gods.—'The great Asuras are incapable of being defeated by me. Save with the bones of Dadhicha, our foes cannot be killed.

28. Ye best of celestials, go, therefore, to that best of Rishis and beg of him, saying,—Grant us, O Dadhicha, your bones! With them we will kill our enemies.'

29. Begged by them for his bones, that best of Rishis, O best of Kuru's race, unhesitatingly gave up his life. Having done what was agreeable to the celestials, the sage attained to the eternally blissful region.

30. With his bones, Shakra gladly made many kinds of weapons, such as thunderbolts, disci, heavy maces, and many kinds of clubs and bludgeons.

31. Equal to the Creator himself, Dadhicha, had been begotten by the penances of great Rishi Bhrigu. Strongly built and highly energetic Dadhicha had been made the strongest of men in the world. The powerful and glorious Dadhicha, became tall like the king of mountains. The chastiser of Paka had always been in dread of his power.

33. With the thunder-bolt created by Brahma, and inspired with mantras, O Bharata, Indra made a loud noise when he hurled it, and killed ninety-nine Daityas.

34. After a dreadful long time a drought, O king, took place that extended over twelve years.

35. During that drought extending over twelve years, the great Rishis fled away, O king, on all sides to maintain themselves.

36—37. Seeing them scattered on all sides, the sage Saraswat also set his heart on flight. The river Saraswati then said to him. 'You need not, O son, go away, for I will always supply you with food even here by giving you large fishes! Remain therefore, here!'

38. Thus addressed (by the river), the sage continued to live there and offer oblations of food to the Rishis and the celestials. He got also his daily food and thus

continued to support both himself and the gods.

39. After the termination of that twelve years' drought the great Rishis requested one another to deliver discourses on the Vedas.

40. While wandering hungrily the Rishis had forgotten the Vedas. There was, indeed, not even one amongst them that could interpret the Vedas.

41. It so happened that some one amongst them met Saraswat, that foremost of Rishis, while the latter was reading the Vedas with concentrated attention.

42. Returning to the assemblage of Rishis, he spoke to them of Saraswat, of his matchless effulgence and celestial appearance, and of deep concentration in the Vedas in a secluded forest.

43. Then all the great Rishis came there and in a body spoke to Saraswat, that best of ascetics, these words. :—' Teach us, O sage!' The ascetic replied, saying,—' Become my disciples duly!'

45. The host of ascetics answered,—' O son, you are too young.' Thereupon he answered the ascetics,—' I must act in such a way that my religious merit may not suffer decrease.

46. He that teaches improperly, and he that learns improperly, are both doomed to destruction and mutual hatred.

47. It is not age, or decrepitude, of wealth, or the number of kinsmen, by which the Rishis claim their merit. He only is great who is capable of reading and understanding the Vedas.'

48. Hearing these words of his, those ascetics duly became his disciples and learning again from him the Vedas began to practise their rites.

49. Sixty thousand ascetics became disciples of the great Rishi Saraswat for the sake of learning again the Vedas from him.

50. Obeying that beautiful Rishi though a boy, the ascetics each brought a handful of grass and offered it to him for his seat.

51. The powerful son of Rohini, and elder brother of Keshava, having distributed wealth in that Tirtha, then joyfully went to another where lived formerly an old virgin lady."

CHAPTER LII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. "Why, O Rishi did that maiden practise ascetic penances in days of yore. Why did she practise penances, and what was her vow?"

2. Matchless and mysterious is the topic that I have already heard from you. Describe particularly how that maid practised penances."

Vaishampayana said :—

3—4. "There was a highly illustrious and energetic Rishi, named Kuni-Garga. Having practised the austerest of penances, O king, that best of ascetics, created a fair-browed daughter by his desire. Seeing her, the celebrated ascetic Kuni-Garga was filled with joy. He renounced his body, O king, and then went to heaven.

5. Meanwhile, that faultless and amiable and fair-browed maiden, having eyes like lotus petals, continued to practise severe and very rigid penances. She adored the Pitris and the gods with fasts.

6. She passed a long time in the practice of such severe penances. Though her father had been for giving her away in marriage, yet she did not wish for it, for she saw no husband worthy of her.

7. Emaciating her body with austere penances, she began to worship the Pitris and the gods in that solitary forest.

8. Although engaged in such a hard task, O king, and although she emaciated herself by age and austerities, yet she thought herself happy.

9. At last when she became very old and physically incapable to move even a single step without being helped by any one, she made up her mind to depart to the other world.

10. Seeing her about to relinquish her body, Narada said to her,—"O sinless one, you cannot attain any blissful region since you have not cleansed yourself by the rite of marriage.

11. O you of great vows, we have heard this in heaven. Great has been your ascetic merit, but you have no claim to blissful regions.

12. Hearing these words of Narada, the old lady went to an assemblage of Rishis and said,—'I shall give him half my penances who will marry me.'

13—14. After she had said these words, the Galava's son, a Rishi known by the

name of Shringavat married her on the following condition.—'On this term, O fair one, I shall marry you, *viz.*, that you, shall live with me for only one night!' Having agreed to that term, she gave him her hand.

15. According to the rites, and having duly poured libations on the fire, Galava's son accepted her hand and married her.

16. On that night, she became a handsome young lady robed in celestial dress, decked in celestial ornaments, and smeared with celestial unguents and perfumes.

17—18. Seeing her beauty, Galava's son became very happy and passed one night in her company. In the morning she said to him,—the agreement, O Brahmana, I had made with you, has been satisfied, O best of ascetic! Blessed be you, I shall now leave you.'

19—20. After getting his permission, she once more said,—'He who will, with attention, pass one night in this Tirtha after having satisfied the celestials with oblations of water, shall obtain that merit which one, observing the vow of Brahmacharya for eight and fifty years, reaps.'

21. Having said these words, that chaste lady left for heaven. Her husband the Rishi, became very dispirited by thinking of her beauty.

22. On account of the agreement he had made, he accepted with difficulty half her penances. Casting off his body he soon followed her, O Bharata's chief, drawn by sorrow and her beauty.

23. This is the illustrious history of the old maid that I have narrated. This is the account of her Brahmacharya and her sacred departure for the celestial regions.

24. While there, Valadeva heard of the destruction of Shalya. Having made presents to the Brahmanas there, he bewailed, O destroyer of foes, for Shalya, who had been killed by the Pandavas in battle.

25. Then having come out of Samantapanchaka, Baladeva enquired of the Rishis about the results of the battle at Kurukshetra.

26. Asked by that Yadu's chief about the results of the battle at Kurukshetra, those great ones told him everything as it had taken place.

CHAPTER LIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

The Rishis said :—

1. "O Rama, this Samantapanchaka is the eternal northern altar of Brahman the Lord of all creatures. There the celestials, the givers of great boons, performed in days of yore a great sacrifice.

2. That foremost of royal sages, *viz.*, the great, intelligent and energetic Kuru, had cultivated this field for many years. Hence it came to be called Kurukshetra (the field of Kuru)!"

Rama said :—

3. "Why did the great Kuru cultivated this field? I desire to have this described by you, ye Rishis of great penances."

The Rishis said :—

4—7. "Formerly, O Rama, Kuru was engaged in perseveringly cultivating this field. Coming down from heaven Shakra asked him the reason, saying,—'Why, O king, art thou assiduously employed (in this task). What is your object, O royal sage, for the accomplishment of which you are tilling the soil?'—Thereupon Kuru replied, saying,—'O performer of a hundred sacrifices, they that will die upon this plain shall proceed to regions of blessedness after being freed of their sins!'—Ridiculing this, the lord Shakra, returned to heaven. Without being at all depressed, the royal sage Kuru, however, continued to till the soil.

8. Shakra repeatedly came to him and repeatedly receiving the same reply went away and ridiculed him. Kuru, however, was not at all depressed.

9. Seeing the king till the soil with great perseverance, Shakra summoned the celestials and informed them of the king's work.

10. Hearing Indra's words, the celestials said to their chief having thousand eyes,—'Stop the royal sage, O Shakra, by granting him a boon, if you can.

11—12. If only by dying there men were to come to heaven, without having performed sacrifices to us, our very existence will be imperilled'—Thus spoken to, Shakra returned to that royal saint and said,—'Do not work any more! Act according to my words!

13. Those men that will die here, having fasted with all their senses awake, and those that will die here in battle, shall, O king, come to heaven.

14—15. They shall enjoy the blessings of heaven, O king!'—Thus addressed, king Kuru! answered] Shakra, saying,—'So be it!'—Taking Kuru's leave, the slayer of Vala, *viz.*, Shakra, then, with a glad heart speedily returned to heaven.

16. Thus, O foremost of Yadu's race, that royal sage had, formerly cultivated this plain and Shakra had promised great merit to those that would give up their lives here.

17. It was so sanctioned by all the foremost celestials headed by Brahman, and by the sacred Rishis, that on Earth there should be no more sacred place than this.

18. Those men, that practise austere penances here, would all, after renouncing their bodies, repair to Brahman's region.

19. Those meritorious men, who would give away their wealth here, would soon have their wealth doubled.

20. Those who will, in expectation of good, live constantly here, will never have to behold the region of Yama.

21. Those kings that will perform great sacrifices here will live as long in heaven as Earth herself will exist.

22—24. The chief of the celestials, *viz.*, Shakra, had himself composed a poem here and sang it. Listen to it, O Valadeva!—The very dust of Kurukshetra, carried by the wind, shall free persons of wicked acts and take them to heaven!—The leading celestials and Brahmanas and kings of the Earth such as Nriga and others, having performed rich sacrifices here, have, after renouncing their bodies, proceeded to heaven.

25. The space between the Tarantuka and the Arantuka and the lakes of Rama and Chamachakra is known as Kurukshetra. Samantapanchaka is called the northern (sacrificial) altar of Brahman, the Lord of all creatures.

26. This place endued with all virtues is auspicious and highly sacred, and is much respected by the celestials. It is for this that Kshatriyas slain in battle here obtain sacred and blissful regions.

27. This was said by Shakra] himself about the glory of Kurukshetra. All that Shakra said was again approved and sanctioned by Brahman, Vishnu, and Maheswara.

CHAPTER LIV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Having visited Kurukshetra and distributed wealth there, the Satwata hero then proceeded, O Janamejaya, to a large and exceedingly beautiful hermitage.

2. That hermitage was overgrown with Madhuka and mango trees, and abounded with Plakshas and Nyagrodhas. And it contained many Vilwas and many excellent jack and Arjuna trees.

3. Seeing that beautiful hermitage Valadeva asked the Rishis as to whom it belonged.

4. Those great ones, O king, said Valadeva,—'Listen in full, O Rama, as to whose asylum this was formerly.

5. Here the god Vishnu formerly practised austere penances. Here he celebrated duly all the eternal sacrifices.

6. Here leading from youth the vow of Brahmacharya, a Brahmani maiden, was crowned with ascetic success. Ultimately possessed of Yoga powers, that ascetic lady went to heaven.

7. The great Shandilya, O king, had a beautiful daughter who was chaste, observant of severe vows self-restrained, and led a life of celibacy.

8. Having practised the hardest of penances such as are incapable of being performed by women, the blessed lady at last went to heaven, adored by the gods and Brahmanas. Having heard these words of the Rishis, Valadeva entered that hermitage.

9. Bidding a farewell to the Rishis, Valadeva performed all the rites and ceremonies of the evening on the side of Himavat and then began to ascend mountain.

10. The powerful Valarama having the emblem of the palmyra on his banner had not ascended far when he saw a sacred and goodly Tirtha and was stricken with wonder at the sight.

11. Seeing the glory of the Saraswati as also the Tirtha called Plakshaprasaravana, Vala next reached another excellent and foremost of Tirthas called Karavapana.

12. Having made many presents there, the powerful Valadeva; bathed in the cool, clear, sacred, and sin-cleansing water (of that Tirtha)

13. Passing one night there with the ascetics and the Brahmanas, Rama then

went to the sacred hermitage of the Mitravarunas.

14. From Karavapana he proceeded to that spot on the Yamuna where formerly Indra and Agni and Aryaman had obtained great felicity.

15. Bathing there, that Yadu's chief of pious soul, obtained great happiness. The hero then sat himself down with the Rishis and the Siddhas there for listening to their excellent discourses.

16. There where Rama sat in the midst of that assemblage the adorable Rishi Narada came while rambling.

17. Wearing matted locks and shining like gold, he carried in his hands, O king, a golden staff and a waterpot.

18. Accomplished in song and dance and worshipped of gods and Brahmanas, he had with him a beautiful Vina of sweet notes, made of the tortoise-shell.

19. A creator of quarrels and ever fond of quarrel, the celestial Rishi came where the handsome Rama was resting.

20. Standing up and greatly honoring the celestial Rishi of restricted vows, Rama asked him about all that had befallen the Kurus.

21. Conversant with duty and practices, Narada then, O king, told him everything, as it had occurred, about the dreadful destruction of the Kurus.

22. The Rohini's son then, in sorrowful words, enquired of the Rishi, saying,—'What is the state of the field? How are those kings now that had assembled there?

23. I have heard everything before, O Rishi, but my curiosity is great for hearing it in detail!'

Narada said :—

24. 'Already Bhishma and Drona and the lord of the Sindhus have died! Vikartana's son Karna also has been killed, with his sons.

25—26. Bhurishravas too, O son of Rohini, and the brave chief of the Madras have died! These and many other great heroes that had assembled there, ready to sacrifice this dear life itself for the victory of Duryodhana,—have all fallen!

27. Listen now to me, O Madhava, about those that are yet alive! In the army of Dhritarashtra's son, only three yet survive.

28. They are Kripa and Kritavarman and the powerful son of Drona! These also, O Rama, have from fear fled away on all sides!

29. After Shalya's fall and the flight of Kripa and the others, Duryodhana, in great sorrow had entered the Dwaipayana lake.

30. While resting at the bottom of the lake after solidifying its waters, Duryodhana was approached by the Pandavas with Krishna and cut to the quick by their cruel words.

31. Cut with wordy darts, O Rama, from every side, the powerful and heroic Duryodhana has risen from the lake, armed with his heavy mace.

32. He has come forward for fighting Bhima for the present. Their terrible encounter, O Rama, will take place to-day!

33. If you feel any curiosity, then hasten O Madhava, without delay! Go, if you like and witness that terrible battle between your two disciples!'

Vaishampayana said :—

34. "Hearing Narada, Rama bade a respectful farewell to those great Brahmanas and sent away all those that had accompanied him (in his pilgrimage).

35. He ordered his attendants saying,—'Return ye to Dwaraka!' He then got down from that prince of mountains and that fair hermitage called Plakshaprashravana.

36. Having listened to the discourse of the sages about the great merits of Tirthas, Rama sang this verse in the midst of the Brahmanas.

37. 'Where is such happiness as is obtainable by living by the Saraswati? Where else such merits as those obtainable by living by the Saraswati? Men have departed for heaven, having approached the Saraswati! All should ever remember the Saraswati! Saraswati is the most sacred of all rivers.

38. Saraswati always confers the greates happiness on men! After approaching the Saraswati, men will not have to grieve for their sins either here or hereafter!'

39. Repeatedly looking with joy at the Saraswati, that destroyer of foes then ascended an excellent car to which were yoked beautiful horses.

40. Journeying then on that highly fleet car Valadeva, that best of Yadu's race, desirous of seeing the approaching encounter of his two disciples, arrived on the field."

CHAPTER LV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said:—

1. "Thus, O Janamejaya, did that terrible battle take place. King Dhritarashtra, in great sorrow, said thus about it.

Dhritarashtra said:—

2. 'Beholding Rama approach that spot, when the mace-fight was about to take place, how, O Sanjaya, did my son fight with Bhima?'

Sanjaya said:—

3. 'Beholding the presence of Rama, your valiant son Duryodhana of mighty arms, desirous of battle, was gladdened.

4. Seeing Vala, king Yudhishthira, O Bharata, stood up and duly and gladly honored him. He gave him a seat and enquired after his welfare.

5—6. Rama then answered Yudhishthira, in these sweet and righteous words, *viz.*,—I have heard it said by the Rishis, O best of kings, that Kurukshetra is a highly sacred and sin-destroying spot, equal to heaven itself, worshipped of gods and Rishis and great Brahmanas.

7. Those men that renounce their bodies, while engaged in battle on this field, are sure to live in heaven with Shakra himself.

8. I shall, for this, O king, speedily proceed to Samantapanchaka. In the celestial region that spot is known as the northern (sacrificial) altar of Brahman, the Lord of all creatures.

9. He that breathes his last in battle on that eternal and most sacred of spots in the three worlds, will surely obtain heaven.

10. Saying,—So be it.—O king, Kunt 's brave son, the lord Yudhishthira, proceeded towards Samantapanchaka.

11. King Duryodhana also, taking up his gigantic mace, angrily went on foot with the Pandavas.

12. While going thus, armed with mace and clad in armour, the celestials in the sky applauded him, saying,—Excellent, Excellent! Seeing the Kuru king, the Charanas became filled with delight.

13. Surrounded by the Pandavas, your son, the Kuru king, proceeded, like an infuriate elephant.

14. All the points of the compass were filled with the blare of conchs and the sounds of drums and the leonine roars of heroes.

15. Proceeding with face westwards to the appointed spot, with your son (in their midst), they spread themselves on all sides when they reached it.

16. That was an excellent Tirtha on the southern side of the Saraswati. The ground there was not sandy, and was, therefore, selected for the battle.

17. Clad in armour, and armed with his gigantic thick mace Bhima, O king, assumed the form of the mighty Garuda.

18. With head-gear on his head, and wearing a golden armour licking the corners of his mouth, O king, with eyes reddened in wrath, and breathing hard, your son on that field, O king, shone like the golden Sumeru.

19. Taking up his mace, the highly energetic king Duryodhana, looking at Bhimasena, challenged him to the encounter like an elephant challenging a rival elephant.

20. Likewise the brave Bhima, taking up his adamantine mace, challenged the king like a lion challenging a lion.

21. Duryodhana and Bhima, with uplifted maces, shone in that battle like two mountains with tall summits.

22—23. Both of them were highly worked up with anger; both were possessed of awful prowess; in mace encounters both were disciples of Rohini's intelligent son;-both resembled each other in their feat and looked like Maya and Vasava. Ens dued with great strength, both resembled Varuna in achievements.

24. Each resembling Vasudeva, or Rama or Vishravana's son (Ravana), they appeared O king, like Madhu and Kaitabha.

25. They looked like Sunda and Upasunda or Rama and Ravana or Vali and Sugriva.

26—27. Those two scorchers of foes appeared like Kala and Mrityu. They then ran towards each other like two infuriate elephants, elated with pride and maddened with passion in the season of autumn and longing for the companionship of a she-elephant in her season. Each appeared to vomit upon the other the poison of his wrath like two fiery serpents.

28. Those two chastisers of foes looked angrily upon each other. Both were foremost of Bharata's race, endued with great prowess.

29. In mace encounters those two scorchers of foes were invincible like lion. Indeed, O Bharata's chief, inspired with desire of victory, they looked like two infuriate elephants.

30—36. Those heroes were unbearable like two tigers having teeth and claws. They were like two uncrossable and furious oceans, or like two angry Suns risen for consuming everything. Those two powerful car-warriors looked like an Eastern and a Western cloud agitated by the wind, roaring awfully and pouring torrents of rain in the rainy season. Those two great and powerful heroes, both possessed of great effulgence, looked like two Suns risen at the hour of the Universal dissolution. Looking like two enraged tigers or like two roaring masses of clouds, they became glad like two maned lions. Like two angry or two blazing fires, those two great ones appeared like two mountains with tall summits. With lips swelling with rage and looking upon each other, those two heroes, armed with maces, met each other. Both were elated with joy and each regarded the other as a worthy opponent.

37. Duryodhana and Vrikodara then resembled two good horses neighing at each other, or two elephants grunting at each other.

38—39. Those two foremost of men then shone like a couple of Daityas swelling with pride. Then Duryodhana, O king, said these haughty words unto Yudhishthira in the midst of his brothers and of the great Krishna and Rama.

40—41. Protected by the Kaikeyas and the Srinjayas and the great Panchalas, behold ye with all these leading kings, seated together, this encounter that is about to take place between me and Bhima!—Hearing these words of Duryodhana, they did as requested.

42. Then those kings sat down and shone like celestials in heaven.

43. In the midst of that assemblage the mighty-armed and beautiful elder brother of Keshava, O king, as he sat down, was all adored by all around him.

44. In the midst of those kings, Valadeva clad in blue raiment and possessed of a fair complexion shone like the full moon surrounded in the night by thousands of stars.

45. Meanwhile those two heroes, O king, both armed with maces, and both unbearable by foes, stood there, exasperating each other with fierce speeches.

46. Having addressed each other with unpleasant words, those two heroes of Kuru's race stood, looking angrily upon each other, like Shakra and Vritra in fight."

CHAPTER LVI.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "At the outset, O Janamejaya, a dreadful encounter of words took place between the two heroes. With respect to that, king Dhritarashtra, filled with grief, said this :—

2. 'Oh, fie, on man, who has such an end! My son, O sinless one, had been the master of eleven hosts of troops!

3. He had all the kings under his command and had enjoyed the sovereignty of the whole Earth! Alas, he that had been so, was now reduced to a warrior proceeding to battle, on foot, shouldering his mace.

4. My poor son, who had before been the lord of the universe, was now himself without help! Alas, he had, then, to proceed on foot, shouldering his mace! What can it be but Destiny? Alas, O Sanjaya, great was the grief that was felt by my son now! 'Having uttered these words, the king afflicted with great sorrow became silent.

Sanjaya said :—

6. Having a voice deep like a cloud, Duryodhana then roared from joy like a bull. Possessed of great energy, he challenged the son of Pritha to battle.

7. When the great king of the Kurus thus summoned Bhima to the encounter, various awful portents appeared there.

8. Fierce winds began to blow with loud noises at intervals, and a shower of dust fell. All the points of the compass were covered with a thick darkness.

9. Thunder-bolts of loud noise dropped on all sides, causing a great confusion and making the very hair to stand on end. Hundreds of meteors fell, with a loud noise from the sky.

10. Rahu devoured the Sun most untimely, O king! The Earth with her forest and trees shook violently.

11. Hot winds blew, carrying showers of hard pebbles along the ground. The summits of mountains dropped down on the Earth's surface.

12. Various Animals were seen to run in various directions. Terrible and fierce jackals, with firing mouths, yelled piteously.

13. Loud and terrific hair-stirring sounds were heard on every side, the four quarters seemed to be on fire, and many animals of ill omen became visible.

14. The water in the wells on all sides swelled up. Loud sounds came from every side without, O king, none to utter them being visible.

15. Beholding these and other evil omens Vrikodara said to his eldest brother, king Yudhishthira :—

16—17. This wicked Suyodhana is not able to defeat me in battle. I shall to-day vomit that vie, which I have been cherishing for a long time in the recesses of my heart, upon this lord of the Kurus like Arjuna throwing fire upon the forest of Khandava! To-day, O son of Pandu, I shall take out the dart that lies sticking to thy heart!

18. Killing with my mace this sinful wretch of Kuru's race, I shall to-day, place around your neck the garland of Fame!

19. Killing this sinful person with my mace on the field of battle, I shall to-day, with this very mace of mine, break his body into a hundred pieces!

20. He shall not have again to enter the city of Hastinapur!

21—23. The setting of serpents at us while we were sleeping, the giving of venom to us while we were eating, the casting of our body into the water at Pramanakoti, the attempt to burn us at the house of lac, the insult given to us at the assembly, the robbing us of all our wealth, the whole year of our living in concealment, our exile into the forest, O sinless one, of all these misfortunes, O best of Bharata's race, I shall terminate to-day, O Bharata's chief! Killing this wretch, I shall, in one single day, pay off all the debts I owe him.

24. To-day the lease of life, of this wicked son of Dhritarashtra, of impure soul, has reached its end, O Bharata's chief. After this day he shall not again look at his father and mother!

25. To-day, O king, the happiness of this wicked king of the Kurus has terminated. After this day, O king, he shall not again see a beautiful damsel!

26. To-day this disgrace of Shantanu's race shall sleep on the naked Earth, his life, his prosperity, and his kingdom gone!

27. Hearing of the fall of his son to-day, king Dhritarashtra also shall recollect all those evil acts that were the creations of Shakuni!'

28. Having said these words, O foremost of kings, the highly energetic, Vrikodara armed with mace, stood for fight, like Shakra challenging the Asura Vritra.

29—30. Seeing Duryodhana also standing with uplifted mace like mount Kailasa, Bhimasena, worked up with ire, once more addressed him, saying,—'Remember that misdeed of yourself and king Dhritarashtra that occurred at Varnavata!

31. Remember the ill-treatment of Draupadi, while in her season, in the midst of the assembly! Remember how yourself and Suvala's son deprived the king at dice.

32. Remember the great misfortune suffered by us, for you, in the forest, as also in Virata's city, as if we had once more entered the womb! I shall avenge them all to-day. By good luck, I see you to-day!

33. It is for you that foremost of car-warriors, *viz*., the highly powerful son of Ganga, struck down by Yajnasena's son, sleeps on a bed of arrows.

34. Drona also has been killed, and Karna, and Shalya of great prowess! Suvala's son Shakuni too, that root of all this evil has been killed!

35. The wretched Pratikamin, who had seized Draupadi by her hair, has been killed! All your brave brothers also, who fought with great valour, have been killed!

36. These and many other kings have been killed through your fault! I shall kill you to-day with my mace! There is not the least doubt about it!'

37—38. While Vrikodara, O king, was uttering these words in a loud voice, your fearless son answered him, saying,—'What is the use of braging? Fight me, O Vrikodara! O wretch, to-day I shall satiate your desire of fight!

39. Mean as you are, know that Duryodhana is not capable, like an ordinary person, of being terrified by a person like you!

40. For a long time have I cherished this desire! For a long time I have been cherishing this desire! By good fortune the gods have at last brought it about!

41—42. What is the use of long talks and idle brag, O wicked man! Carry out these words of yours into acts! Do not delay at all!—Hearing these words of his, the Somakas and the other kings that were present there, all praised them highly.

43. Lauded by all, Duryodha's hair stood erect with joy, and he made up his mind for fight.

44. The kings present once again cheered your wrathful son with claps like persons exciting a mad elephant to a fight.

45. Then uplifting his mace, the great

Vrikodara, the son of Pandu, rushed furiously at your high-souled son.

46. The elephants present there grunted aloud and the horses neighed repeatedly. The weapons of the Pandavas, who were eager for victory, shone resplendent with their own luster.

CHAPTER LVII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. Seeing Bhimasena in that state, Duryodhana rushed furiously against him uttering a loud roar.

2. They met each other like two bulls encountering each other with their horns. The strokes of their maces produced loud sounds like those of thunder-bolts.

3. Each seeking victory, the battle that took place between them was terrible, making the hair stand erect, like that between Indra and Pralada.

4. All their limbs covered with blood, the two great and energetic warriors both armed with maces, looked like two Kinshukas decked with flowers.

5. During the onset of that great and awful encounter, the sky looked beautiful as if it swarmed with fire-flies.

6. After that fierce and terrible battle had lasted for some time, both of them were exhausted.

7. Having rested for sometime those two destroyers of foes, taking up their handsome maces, once again began to prevent each other's attacks.

8. Indeed, when those two highly energetic warriors, those two foremost of men, both possessed of great strength, once more met each other after having rested a little, they looked like two infuriate elephants attacking each other for obtaining an elephantess in season.

9. Seeing those two heroes, both armed with maces and equalling each other in energy, the gods and Gandharvas and men were filled with wonder.

10. Beholding Duryodhana and Vrikodara both armed with mace, all creatures became doubtful as to who amongst them would come off victorious.

11. Rushing each other and desiring to take advantage of each other's weakness, those two great cousins waited each watching the other.

12. People, O king, saw each armed with his uplifted mace, that was heavy, dreadful and killing, and that resembled the bludgeon of Yama, or the thunder-bolt of Indra.

13. While Bhimasena whirled his weapon, it produced a loud and dreadful sound.

14. Seeing his foe, the son of Pandu, thus whirling his mace, the impetuous Duryodhana was amazed.

15. Indeed, the heroic Vrikodara, O Bharata, as he moved about in various courses, shone highly beautiful.

16. Both bent upon carefully protecting themselves, as they approached, they repeatedly wounded each other like two cats, fighting for a piece of meat.

17. Bhimasena performed various kinds of evolutions. He moved about in beautiful circles, advanced, and receded.

18. He dealt blows and warded off those of his opponent, with wonderful dexterity. He took up various kinds of offensive and defensive position. He made attacks and warded off those of his opponent. He ran at his enemy now turning to the right and now to the left.

19. He advanced straight against the foe. He made various tricks for drawing his foe. He stood immoveable, bent upon attacking his enemy as soon as the latter would expose himself to attack. He went round his foe, and prevented his foe from circumambulating him. He avoided the attacks of his enemy by moving away in bent postures or jumping up.

20. Facing his enemy he struck, or dealt back-thrusts while moving away from him. Both experts in mace-fighting, Bhima and Duryodhana thus moved about and fought, and struck each other.

21. Those two leading Kuru's heroes fared thus, each avoiding the other's attacks. Indeed, those two great warriors thus moved about in circles and seemed to play with each other.

22—23. Displaying in that encounter their skill in battle, those two destroyers of foes sometimes suddenly attacked each other with their weapons, like two elephants attacking each other with their tusks. Bathed in blood, they looked very beautiful, O king, on the field.

24. Thus took place that dreadful battle before the very eyes of a large multitude, towards the close of the day, like the battle between Vritra and Vasava. Armed with maces, both began to move about in circles.

25. Duryodhana, O king, adopted the right mandala, while Bhimasena adopted the left mandala.

26. While Bhima was thus moving about in circles on the field of battle, Duryodhana, O king, suddenly struck him a fierce blow on one of his flanks.

27. Struck by your son, Bhima began to whirl his heavy mace for returning the same.

28. People, O king, saw that mace of Bhimasena look as terrible as Indra's thunder-bolt or Yama's rod.

29. Seeing Bhima whirl his mace, your son, took up his own terrible weapon, and struck him again.

30. A loud sound, O Bharata, was caused by the fall of your son's mace. So quick was that fall that it caused a flame of fire in the sky.

31. Coursing in circles, adopting each motion at the proper time, the energetic Suyodhana, once more seemed to prevail over Bhima.

32. Meanwhile the massive mace of Bhimasena, whirled with his entire force, produced a tremendous sound with valleys of smoke, and sparks and flames of fire.

33. Seeing Bhimasena whirling his mace, Suyodhana also whirled his heavy and adamantine mace, and appeared highly beautiful.

34. Marking the vehemence of the wind, caused by the whirl of Duryodhana's mace, the Pandus and the Somakas were stricken with great fear.

35—36.—Meanwhile showing on every side their skill in battle those two chastisers of foes continued to strike each other with their maces, like two elephants stricking each other with their tusks. Both of them, O king, covered with blood, shone highly beautiful.

37. Thus that dreadful battle went on before the very eyes of thousands of spectators at the close of day, like the fierce battle that took place between Vritra and Vasava.

38. Seeing Bhima firmly stationed on the field, your powerful son, moving about, rushed towards that son of Kunti.

39. Worked up with wrath Bhima struck the mace, endued with great impetuousity and adorned with gold, of the angry Duryodhana.

40. That clash of the two maces produced a loud sound with sparks of fire, which resembled the clash of two thunder-bolts from opposite directions.

41. Discharged by Bhimasena, his impetuous mace, as it dropped down, shook the very Earth.

42. The Kuru prince could not see his own mace thus baffled in that attack. He was enraged like an infuriate elephant at the sight of a rival elephant.

43. Adopting the left mandala, O king, and whirling his mace, Suyodhana, then struck the son of Kunti on the head with his terrible weapon.

44. Thus struck by your son, Bhima, the son of Pandu, did not even quake, O king, and the sight filled all present with wonder.

45. That wonderful patience, O king, of Bhimasena, who did not move an inch, though struck so violently, was praised by all the combatants present there.

46. Then Bhima hurled at Duryodhana his own heavy and shining mace adorned with gold.

47. The powerful and fearless Duryodhana prevented that blow by his activity. Seeing this the spectators were filled with great wonder.

48. That mace, hurled by Bhima, O king, produced a loud sound like that of the thunder-bolt, and shook the very Earth.

49. Adopting the manœver called Kaushika, and jumping up again and again, Duryodhana, properly marking the fall of Bhima's mace, made the latter useless.

50. Baffling Bhimasena thus, the highly powerful Kuru king, at last in anger struck the former in the chest.

51. Struck very forcibly by your son in that dreadful battle, Bhimasena was stupefied, and for a time knew not what to do.

52. At that time, O king, the Somakas and the Pandavas were greatly disappointed and dispirited.

53. Worked up with anger at that blow, Bhima then rushed at your son like an elephant rushing against an elephant.

54. With uplifted mace, Bhima rushed furiously at Duryodhana like a lion rushing against a wild elephant.

55. Approaching the Kuru king, the son of Pandu, O king, an expert in the use of the mace, began to whirl his weapon, aiming at your son.

56. Bhimasena then struck Duryodhana on one of his sides. Stupefied at that blow, the latter dropped down on the Earth, supporting himself on his knees.

57. When that Kuru's hero fell upon his knees, a loud cry arose from among the Srinjayas, O king!

58. Hearing that cry of the Srinjayas, O foremost of men, your son was worked up with rage.

59. Rising up, the mighty-armed hero began to breathe like a powerful snake, and seemed to burn Bhimasena by looking upon him.

60. That best of the line of Bharata then rushed at Bhimasena, as if he would crush the head of his opponent in that battle.

61. The great and highly powerful Duryodhana, then struck the high-souled Bhimasena on the forehead. The latter, however, stirred not an inch but stood fixed like a mountain.

62. Thus struck in that battle, the son of Pritha, O king, looked beautiful, as he bled profusely, like an elephant with temporal juice trickling down its temples.

63. Then, taking up his hero-killing mace made of iron and producing a sound loud as that of the thunder-bolt, the elder brother of Dhananjaya struck his opponent with great force.

64. Struck by Bhimasena, your son dropped down, his bodying trembling all over, like a gigantic Shala in the forest, decked with flowers, uprooted by a tempest.

65. See your son laid on the Earth, the Pandavas became highly glad and uttered loud cries.

66. Regaining his consciousness your son then rose, like an elephant from a lake.

66. That angry king and great car-warrior then, moving about with great skill, struck Bhimasena who was before him. Thereat, the son of Pandu, with weakened limbs, dropped down on the Earth.

67. Having by his power struck down Bhimasena on the ground, the Kuru prince sent up a leonine roar. By the fall of his mace, whose vehemence was like that of the thunder, he had, broken Bhima's coat-of-mail.

68. A loud uproar was then heard in the sky made by the celestials and the Apsaras. A shower of flowers of sweet fragrance, rained by the celestials, poured in.

69. Seeing Bhima prostrated on the Earth, and seeing his coat-of-mail cut open, a great fear possessed the hearts of our foes.

70. Regaining his senses in a moment, and wiping his face which had been covered with blood, and gathering patience, Vrikodara stood up, with rolling eyes."

CHAPTER LVIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—2. "Seeing that fight thus ranging between those two greatest heroes of Kuru's race, Arjuna said to Vasudeva,—'Who, in your opinion, is superior between these two? What is their respective merit. Tell me this, O Janarddana !'—

Vashudeva said :—

3. 'The instruction received by them has been equal. Bhima, however, is possessed of greater strength while Duryodhana is possessed of greater skill and has worked harder.

4. If he were to fight fairly, Bhimasena will never succeed in gaining victory. If, however, he fights unfairly, he will surely be able to kill Duryodhana.

5. The Asuras were defeated by the gods deceptively. We have heard this. Virochana was defeated by Shakra with the aid of deception.

6. The destroyer of Vala deprived Vritra his energy by an act of deception. Therefore, let Bhimasena put forth his prowess, by means of deception!

7. At the time of the gambling, O Dhananjaya, Bhima promised to break the thighs of Suyodhana with his mace in battle.

8. Let this destroyer of foes, therefore, fulfil his vow. Let him, deceiptively kill the Kuru king who is made of deception!

9. If depending upon his might alone, Bhima were to fight fairly, king Yudhishthira will meet with great peril.

10. I tell you again, O son of Pandu, listen to me! It is through the fault of king Yudhishthira alone that danger has once more befallen us.

11. Having performed great feats by the destruction of Bhishma and the other Kurus, the king had gained victory and glory, and had almost terminated the hostilities.

12—13. Having thus gained the victory, he placed himself once more in a doubtful and perilous situation. This has been a great mistake on the part of Yudhishthira, O Pandava, since he has made the result of the battle depend upon the victory or the defeat of only one warrior! Suyodhana is an expert, he is a hero; he is of firm determination.

14. We have all heard the old verse utered by Ushanas. Hear I recite it to you with its true sense and meaning!

15. The remnant of a hostile force routed and flying away for life that rally and come back to the fight, should always be feared, for they are of fixed determination and singleness of purpose!

16. Shakra himself, O Dhananjaya, cannot stand before them who rush in fury, giving up all hopes of life.

17. This Suyodhana has been routed and fled. All his troops had been slain. He had entered the lake. He had been defeated, and, therefore, he had wished to retire into forest, having given up all hope of retaining his kingdom. What wise man is there, that would challenge such a person to a single-combat?

18. I do not know whether Duryodhana will regain the kingdom that had already become ours! For full thirteen years he practised with the mace with great firmness. Even now, for killing Bhimasena, he jumps up and down!

19—20. If the mighty-armed Bhima do not kill him unfairly, the son of Dhritarashtra will surely retain kingdom!"—Having heard those words of the great Keshava, Dhananjaya struck his own left thigh before the gaze of Bhimasena.

21. Understanding that sign, Bhima began to move about with his uplifted mace, making many kinds of manœveres.

22. Sometimes adopting the right mandala, sometimes the left mandala, and sometimes Gomutraka, the son of Pandu began to move about, O king, stupefying his foe.

23. Likewise your son, O king, who was an adept in the mace fight, moved about beautifully and with great activity, for killing Bhimasena.

24. Whirling their terrible maces which were smeared with sandal-paste and other unguents, the two heroes, desirous of terminating their hostilities, moved about in that battle like two angry Yamas.

25. Desirous of killing each other, those two best of men, possessed of great heroism, fought like two Gaduras desirous of catching the same snake.

26. While the king and Bhima moved about in beautiful circles, their maces clashed, which created sparks of fire.

27. Those two heroic and powerful warriors struck each other equally in that battle. They then resembled, O king, two oceans agitated by the tempest.

28. Striking each other equally like two infuriate elephants, their clashing maces produced sounds like peals of thunder.

29. During the onset of that dreadful battle, both those chastisers of foes, while fighting became exhausted.

30. Having rested for a while, those two destroyers of foes, filled with rage and uplifting their maces, once more began to fight with each other.

31. When, O king, by the repeated falls of their maces, they wounded each other, the battle became exceedingly dreadful and perfectly unrestrained.

32. Rushing at each other in that fight, those two heroes, having eyes like those of bulls and gifted with great activity, struck each other fiercely like two buffaloes in the mire.

33. All their limbs wounded and bruised, and bathed in blood from head to foot, they looked like a couple of Kinshukas on the breast of Himavat.

34. During the onset of the fight, when Vrikodara seemed to give Duryodhana an opportunity, the latter, smiling a little, advanced forward.

35. Well-skilled in battle, the powerful Vrikodara, seeing his adversary come up, suddenly hurled his mace at him.

36. Seeing the mace thrown at him, your son, O king, moved away from that place at which the weapon fell down baffled

37. Having warded off that blow, your son, that foremost one of Kuru's race, quickly struck Bhimasena with his weapon.

38. A large quantity of blood being, drawn by that blow, as also owing to its violence, Bhimasena became stupefied.

39 Duryodhana, however, could not perceive that Pandu's son was so afflicted at that moment. Though deeply afflicted, Bhima kept himself, summoning all his patience.

40. Duryodhana, therefore, thought that he was all right and ready to return the blow. It was, therefore, that your son did not then strike him again.

41. Having taken rest for a little while, the brave Bhimasena rushed furiously, O king, at Duryodhana who was standing near.

42—43. Seeing the energetic Bhimasena, filled with rage and rushing towards him your high-souled son, O Bharata's chief, desiring to thwart his blow, thought of showing the manœvre called Avasthana. He, therefore, desired to jump upwards, O king, for beguiling Vrikodara.

44—45. Bhimasena fully understood the object of his opponent. Rushing at him, with a loud leonine roar, he fiercely dropped

his mace at the thighs of the Kuru king, as the latter had jumped up for making the first aim useless.

46. That mace, strong like thunder and hurled by Bhima broke the two handsome thighs of Duryodhana.

47. That foremost of men, *viz.*, your son, after his thighs had been broken by Bhimasena, fell down, resounding the Earth.

48. Fierce winds began to blow, with loud sounds. Showers of dust dropped. The Earth, with her trees and mountains, began to tremble.

49. Upon the fall of that hero who was the head of all kings, fierce and fiery winds blew with a loud noise and with thunder falling frequently. When that lord of Earth fell, large meteors dropped down from the welkin.

50. Bloody and dusty showers, fell, O Bharata! These were poured by Indra, upon the fall of your son.

51. A loud noise was heard, O Bharata's chief, in the sky, caused by the Yakshas, Rakshasas and the Pishachas.

52. At that terrible sound thousands of beasts and birds began to yell hideously on every side.

53. Those horses, elephants and men, forming the remnant of the Pandava's army, uttered loud cries when your son fell. Loud blare of conchs and the peal of drums and cymbals were heard.

54. A terrific noise seemed to come from the very bowels of the earth. Upon the fall of your son, O king, headless beings of dreadful appearance, possessed of many legs and many arms, and striking terror to all creatures, began to dance and cover the earth on all sides.

55. Warriors, O king, who stood with standards or weapons in their arms, began to tremble, O king, when your son fell.

56. Lakes and wells, O best of kings, vomited forth blood. Swift coursing rivers flowed in opposite directions.

57. Women seemed to look like men, and men like women, when your son Duryodhana fell.

58. Seeing those wonderful portents, the Panchalas and the Pandavas, O Bharata's chief, were filled with anxiety.

59. The gods and the Gandharvas went away to their wished-for regions, talking and discoursing on that wonderful battle between your sons.

60. Similarly the Siddhas and the quick-coursing Charanas went to those places from which they had come, praising these two best of men.

CHAPTER LIX.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. Seeing Duryodhana struck down on Earth like a gigantic Shala uprooted by the storm, the Pandavas were filled with delight. The Somakas also saw, with their hair standing erect, the Kuru king felled upon the Earth, like an infuriate elephant felled by a lion.

3—5. Having struck Duryodhana down the brave Bhimasena, approaching the Kuru chief, addressed him, saying,—O wretch, formerly laughing at Draupadi who had no cloth in the midst of the assembly, you, O fool, called us Cows. Bear now the consequences of that insult. Saying so, he struck the head of his fallen foe, with his left foot. Indeed, he struck the head of that best of kings with his foot.

6—9. With eyes reddened in wrath, Bhimasena, that grinder of hostile armies, once more said these words. 'Listen to them, O king, we will now dance and call them Cows!—who formerly insulted us by calling us so. We have no deceipt, no fire, no match at dice, no deception! Depending upon the strength of our own arms we resist and check our foes!—Having brought those fierce hostilities to a close, Vrikodara once more slowly and laughingly said these words unto Yudhisthira and Keshava and the Shrinjayas and Dhananjaya and the two sons of Madri.

10. Let them who had dragged Draupadi, while she was in her period, into the assembly, and had made her nacked there, behold those Dhartarashtras slain in battle by the Pandavas through the ascetic penances of Yajnasena's daughter.

11—12. Those wicked sons of king Dhritarashtra who had called us Sessame seeds without kernel, have all been killed by us with their relatives and followers! It is a matter of no consequence whether we go to heaven or hell!—Once more, uplifting the mace that was on his shoulders he struck with his left, foot the head of the king who was lying on Earth, and addressing the deceitful Duryodhana said,

13. Seeing the foot of the rejoicing but mean Bhimasena placed upon the head of that foremost one of Kuru's race, many of the leading warriors among the Somaka did not a all approve of it.

14—15. After having struck down your son, while Vrikodara was thus vaunting and dancing madly, king Yudhisthira said to him,—'You have wreaked your vengeance (on Duryodhana) and gained your ends by means fair or foul! Cease now, O Bhima.

16. Do not crush his head with your foot! Do not act sinfully! Duryodhana is a king! He is, again, your kinsman! He is fallen! Your conduct, O sinless one, is not becoming.

17. Duryodhana was the lord of eleven *Akshauhinis* of troops. He was the king of the Kurus! Do not, O Bhima, strike a king and a kinsman with your foot!

18. His relatives are killed! His friends and counsellors are all slain! His troops have been destroyed! He has been struck down in battle! He is to be pitied in every respect! He deserves not to be insulted, for remember that he is a king!

19. He is ruined! His friends and kinsmen have been killed! His brothers have been slain! His sons too have been killed! His funeral cake has been taken away! He is our brother! Your conduct towards him is not proper!

20—22. Bhimasena is a righteous man! People used to say this before of thee! Why then, O Bhimasena, do you insult the king in this way?' Saying this to Bhimasena, Yudhishthira, with voice suppressed with tears, and afflicted with sorrow approached Duryodhana, and said to him, 'O brother, you should not give way to anger nor grieve for yourself! Forsooth, you suffer the dreadful consequences of your own former acts!

23. Forsooth, this sad and woful result had been ordained by the Creator himself, *viz.*, that we should harm you and you should injure us, O foremost one of Kuru's race!

24. Through thy own fault, avarice and pride and folly this great calamity has befallen you, O Bharata!

25. Having brought about the death of your companions and brothers and sires and sons and grandsons and others you now meet with your own death!

26. For your folly your brothers, mighty car-warriors all, and your kinsmen, have been killed by us! I think all this is the work of irresistible Destiny!

27. You are not to be pitied! On the other hand, your death, O sinless one, is enviable! It is we that are objects of pity, O Kaurava! We shall have to carry on a miserable existence, shorn of all our dear friends and kinsmen!

28. Alas, how shall I see the widows, of my brothers and sons and grandsons, all overwhelmed with grief and stricken down with sorrow.

29. You are, O king, departing from this world! You will surely go to heaven! We are, on the other hand, creatures of hell, and shall continue to suffer the bitterest grief!

30. The wives of Dhritarashtra's sons and grandsons striken with grief will, forsooth, curse us all!'

31. Saying these words, Dharma's son Yudhishthira, deeply afflicted with grief, began to sigh heavily and bewail."

CHAPTER LX.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Seeing the (Kuru) king struck down unfairly, what, O charioteer, did the powerful Valadeva, that Madhu's chief, say.

2. "Tell me, O Sanjaya, what Rohini's son, well-skilled in mace encounters and well acquainted with all its rules did on that occasion!"

Sanjaya said :—

3. "Seeing your son struck at the thighs, the powerful Rama, that best of smiters, became highly angry.

4. Raising his arms up, the hero having the plough for his weapon, sorrowfully said in the midst of those kings,—'Oh, fie on Bhima, fie on Bhima.

5. Oh, fie, that in such a fair fight a blow has been inflicted below the navel! Never before has such an act, as has been done by Vrikodara, been seen in an encounter with the mace!

6. No limb below the navel should be struck. This is the rule laid down in treatises! This Bhima, however, is an ignorant wretch, unacquainted with the code of war! He, therefore, acteth as he likes.'

7. Uttering these words, Rama became very angry. The powerful Valadeva then, uplifting his plough, rushed towards Bhimasena.

8. The great warrior with uplifted arms appeared like the huge mountain of Kailasa variegated with various kinds of metals.

9. The powerful Keshava, however, ever bending with humility, caught the rushing Rama, with his massive and well-formed arms.

10. Those two Yadu heroes, the one dark in complexion and the other fair, shone exceedingly beautiful at that moment, like the Sun and the Moon, O king, on the evening sky.

11. For pacifying the angry Rama, Keshava addressed him, saying,—'There aresix sorts of advancement that a person may seek, *viz.*, one's own advancement, the advancement of one's friends, the advancement of one's friends' friends, the destruction of one' enemy, the destruction of one's enemy's friends, and the destruction of one's enemy's friends' friends.

12. When misfortunes befall one's own self or one's friends, it is a sign that one's fall is near, and, therefore, one should at such times seek for the remedy.

13. The Pandavas are our natural friends. They are the children of our own father's sister! They had been greatly assailed by their enemies.

14. The fulfilment of one's promise is one's duty. Formerly Bhima had promised in the midst of the assembly that he would in great battle break with his mace the thighs of Duryodhana.

15. The great Rishi Maitreya also had formerly imprecated Duryodhana, saying, Bhima will, with his mace, break you thighs.

16. For all this, I do not see any fault in Bhima! Do not yield to anger, O slayer of Pralamva! Our relationship with the Pandavas is based on birth, blood and love.

17—18. On their advancement depends our own. Do not, therefore, give way to anger, O foremost of men!'—Hearing these words of Vasudeva the wielder of the plough, who was well read in the Ethical lore, said, 'Morality is always followed by the good. 'Morality is always followed by two motives, *viz.*, the desire for Profit cherished by those that follow it, or the desire for Pleasure.

19. Whoever, without making distinction between Morality and Profit, or Morality and Pleasure, or Pleasure and Profit, follows all three, *viz.*, Morality, Profit and Pleasure, always succeeds in obtaining great happiness.

20—21. It is because Bhimasena, has deviated from morality this harmony, of which I have spoken, has been disturbed, inspite, O Govinda, of all your aruments to me!' Krishna replied, saying,—'You are always described as shorn of wrath, and devoted to righteousness! Pacify yourself, therefore, and do not yield to wrath!

22. Know that the Kali age is at hand. Remember also the promise made by the son of Pandu! Let, therefore, the son of Pandu be regarded to have requited the debt he owed to his enemy and to have carried out his promise."

Sanjaya Continued :—

23—24. "Hearing this fallacious argument from Keshava, O king, Rama failed to remove his anger and become cheerful. He then said in that assembly, 'having unfairly killed the righteous king Suyodhana, the son of Pandu shall be known in the world as a wily warrior!

25. The righteous Duryodhana, on the other hand, shall acquire eternal blessedness! Dhritarashtra's royal son, who has been struck down, is a fair warrior!

26—27. Having made all possible arrangements for the Sacrifice of battle, and having performed the initiatory rites on the field, and lastly, having poured his life as a libation upon the fire of foes, Duryodhana has duly completed his Sacrifice by the final ablutions of glory!" Having said these words, the brave son of Rohini, looking like a white cloud, got upon his chariot and went towards Dwaraka.

28. The Panchalas, the Vrishnis and the Pandavas, O king, became rather dispirited after Rama had started for Dwaravati.

29. Then approaching Yudhishthira, who was exceedingly melancholy and anxious, and who hung down his head and knew not what to do in the great affliction of his heart, Vasudeva, said to him these words.

Vasudeva said :—

30—31. 'O Yudhishthira why do you allow such a wrong act, since you suffer the head of the insensible and fallen Duryodhana whose relatives and friends have all been killed to be thus struck by Bhima with his foot? Conversant as thou art with the rules of Ethics, why do you, O king, look at this act with indifference?'

Yudishthira answered :—

32. 'This act, O Krishna, of Vrikodara's angrily touching the head of the king with his foot, is not pleasant to me, nor am I glad at this extermination of my race!

33. By guile were we always imposed on by the sons of Dhritarashtra! They spoke many harsh words to us. We were again exiled into the forest by them.

34. On account of all those acts great grief exists in Bhimasena's heart! Thinking of all this, O hero of the Vrishnis's race, I looked on with indifference!

35. Having killed the covetous, foolish and passionate Dhuryodhana, let the son of Pandu satisfy his desire, be it by means fair or foul.

Sanjaya continued :—

36—37. 'After Yudhishthira had said this, Vasudeva, said with difficulty,—Let it be so! After Vasudeva had been addressed in those words by Yudhishthira, the former, who, always wished what was pleasant to, and beneficial for, Bhima, insooth, approved all those acts that Bhima had done in battle.

38. Having struck down your son in battle, the wrathful Bhimasena, his heart overflowing with joy, stood with joined hands before Yudhishthira and saluted him duly.

39—40. With eyes expanded in joy and proud of the victory he had acquired, the energetic Vrikodara, O king, said to his eldest brother, saying,—'The Earth belongs to-day to you, O king, without quarrels to disturb her and with all her thorns gone! Govern her, O king, and observe the duties of your order.

41. He, who was the root of these hostilities, and who fomented them by means of his wilyness, that wretched being, lies struck down, on the bare ground, O lord of Earth.

42. All those wretches led by Dusshasana, who used to utter cruel words, as also those other enemies of yours, *viz.*, the son of Radha, and Shakuni, have been killed.

43. Filled with all sorts of gems, the Earth, with her forests and mountains, O king, once more approaches you who have no foes alive.'

Yudhishthira said :—

44. 'Hostilities have been closed! King Suyodhana has been struck down! The Earth has been conquered (by us), under the advice of Krishna.

45. By good luck, you had paid off your debt to your mother and to your wrath! By good luck, you have been victorious, O invincible hero, and by good luck, your enemy has been killed.'

CHAPTER LXI.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Seeing Duryodhana struck down in battle by Bhimasena, what, O Sanjaya did the Pandavas and the Sanjayas do?"

Sanjaya said :—

2—4. "Seeing Duryodhana killed by Bhimasena in battle, O king, like a wild elephant slain by a lion the Pandavas with Krishna were filled with joy upon the fall of the Kuru king. The Panchalas and the Shrinjayas also waved their upper garments (in the air) and sent up leonine roars. Even the Earth could not bear those rejoicing warriors.

5. Some stretched their bows; others drew their bowstrings. Some blew their huge conchs; others beat their drums.

6.—7. Some sported and jumped about others laughed aloud. Many heroes repeatedly said these words to Bhimasena—'Highly difficult and great has been the feat that you have performed to-day in battle, by having struck down the Kuru king, himself a great warrior, with your mace!

8. This slaughter of your enemy is considered like that of Vritra by Indra himself!

9. Who else, but you, O Vrikodara, could kill the heroic Duryodhana while moving about in various ways and performing various manœvres.

10. You have brought these hostilities, to a close which none could do! This feat of yours is incapable of being done by any other warrior!

11. By good luck, you have, O hero, like an infuriate elephant, crushed with your foot the head of Duryodhana on the field of battle!

12. By good luck, O sinless one, you have quaffed the blood of Dushasana, like a lion quaffing the blood of a buffalo!

13. By good luck, you have by your own energy, placed your foot on the head of all those that had injured the just king Yudhisthira!

14. For your having defeated the foes and having slain Duryodhana, by good luck, O Bhima, your fame has extended over the whole world.

15. Bards and eulogists praised Shakra after the fall of Vritra as we are now applauding you, O Bharata, after the fall of your foes.

16. Know O Bharata, that the joy we felt upon the fall of Duryodhana has not yet decreased the least.' The assembled eulogists on that occasion addressed to Bhimasena these words.

17—18. Whilst, *viz.*, the Panchalas and the Pandavas, all filled with joy were thus expressing themselves, the slayer of Madhu addressed them, saying,—'Ye kings, it is not becoming to kill a slain foe with such cruel words repeatedly. This wicked man has already been slain.

19—20. This sinful, shameless, and covetous wretch, surrounded by sinful counsellors and ever malignant of the advice of wise friends, encountered his death even then when he refused, though repeatedly urged to the contrary by Vidura, Drona, Kripa and Sanjaya, to give to the sons of Pandu their paternal share in the kingdom which they had begged of him.

21. This wretch is not to be regarded either as a friend or an enemy! What use in using harsh words to him who has now become a piece of wood.

22—23. Get your cars quickly, ye kings, for we should leave this place! By good luck, this sinful wretch has been killed with his counsellors and kinsmen and friends.' Thus chastised by Krishna, king Duryodhana, O king, gave way to wrath and endeavoured to rise.

24. Sitting on his haunches and supporting himself on his two arms, he contracted his eye-brows and looked angrily at Vasudeva.

25. Duryodhana whose body was half raised, looked like a poisonous snake, O Bharata, shorn of its tail.

26—28. Forgetting his poignant and nbearable pains, Duryodhana began to assail Vasudeva with keen and bitter words.—'O son of Kansa's slave, it seems you have no shame, for you have forgotten that I have been struck down most unfairly, according to the rules of mace-fighting? It was you who unfairly caused this act by reminding Bhima about the breaking of my thighs. Do you think I did not mark it when Arjuna (under your advice hinted to it to Bhima?

29. Having caused the destruction of thousands of kings, who always fought fairly through various kinds of unfair means, do you not feel any shame or abhorence for those acts?

30. Having daily bought about a great carnage of heroic warriors, you at last caused the grandshire to be slain by placing Shikhandin to the front.

31. Having again caused an elephant of the same name of Ashwathama to be killed, O ye of vicious principle, you made the preceptor lay aside his weapons. Do you think that this is not known to me?

32. While again that brave hero was about to be killed by this cruel Dhristadyumna, you did not dissuade the latter!

33. The dart that had been begged (of Shakra as a boon) by Karna for the destruction of Arjuna, was baffled by you through Ghatotkach! Who is there that is more sinful than you?

34. Likewise powerful Bhurishravas, with one of his arms cut off and while observing the *Praya* vow, was caused to be slain by you through the great Satyaki.

35. Karna had done a great feat for defeating Partha. You frustrated the object of Ashwasena, the son of that prince of snakes (*viz.*, Takshaka).

36. When again the wheel of Karna's car sank in mire and Karna was assisted with calamity and almost defeated on that account, and—when, he became anxious to free his wheel,—you caused that Karna to be then slain!

37. If he had fought me and Karna and Bhisma and Drona by fair means, victory then, forsooth, would never had been yours.

38. By adopting the most wily and unfair means you have caused the death of many kings observant of the duties of their order and of ourselves as well.'

Vasudeva said :—

39. 'You, O son of Gandhari, have been killed with your brothers, sons, kinsmen, friends, and followers, for the sinful path you followed.

40. Through your deeds those two heroes, *viz.*, Bhishma and Drona, have been killed. Karna has been slain for having followed your conduct!

41. Requested by me, O fool, you did not, from avarice, give the Pandavas their paternal share, under the advice of Shakuni.

42. You gave poison to Bhimasena! You, O wicked man, tried to burn all the Pandavas with their mother at the palace of lac!

43. While gambling, you insulted the daughter of Yajnasena, while in her season, in the midst of the assembly! Shameless as you are, you should have been killed there and then!

44. Through Suvala's son an expert in dice, you unfairly defeated the virtuous Yudhishthira who was unskilled in gambling! For that are you killed.

45. Through the sinful Jayadratha again, Krishna was on another occasion insulted when the the Pandavas, her lords, had gone out a thunting towards the hermitage of Trinavindu!

46. Causing Abhimanyu, who was a child and alone, to be surrounded by many, you did kill that hero. For this sin, O sinful wretch, you are slain!

47. All those sinful deeds which you attribute to us have in reality been perpetrated by you in consequence of your sinful nature!

48. You had never listened to the advice of Vrihaspati and Ushanas! You had never respected the old! You had never heard the beneficial words!

49. Possessed by ungovernable covetousness and thirst of gain, you committed many unrighteous acts. Suffer now the consequences thereof.'

Duryodhana said:—

50. 'I have made various studies, made presents according to the ordinance, governed the wide Earth with her seas, and trumpted over the heads of my foes. Who is there so fortunate as myself?

51. That end again which is sought by Kshatriyas observant of the duties of their own order, *viz.*, death in battle, I have also met with mine. Who, therefore, is so fortunate as myself?

52. I have enjoyed pleasures, such as were worthy of the very gods and such as could with difficulty, be obtained by other kings. I have attained the highest prosperity. Who then is so fortunate as myself?

53. With all my well-wishers, and my younger brothers, I am going to heaven! As regards yourselves, with your baffled purposes and racked with grief, live ye in this unhappy world.'

Sanjaya continued:—

54—56. 'After the intelligent king of the Kurus, have said these words, a thick shower of fragrant flowers dropped from the sky. The Gandharvas beat many charming musical instruments. The Apsaras in a chorus sang the glory of king Duryodhana. The Siddhas cried,—Praise to king Duryodhana! Sweet and delicious breezes mildly blew on all sides. All the quarters became clear and the firmament looked blue as the *lapis lazuli*.

57. Beholding these good signs, and this worship offered to Duryodhana, the Pandavas, with Vasudeva at their head, were put to shame.

53. Hearing the invisible voice that Bhishma and Drona and Karna and Bhurishravas were killed unfairly, they were afflicted with remorse and wept in grief.

59—60. Seeing the Pandavas striken with anxiety and grief, Krishna addressed them in a voice deep as that of the clouds or the drum, saying,—"All of them were great car-warriors and quick hands in weapons! If ye had displayed all your prowess, even then ye could never have killed them in battle by a fair fight.

61. King Duryodhana also could never be killed in a fair fight! The same is the case with all those powerful car-warriors led by Bhishma.

62. For doing you good, I repeatedly applied my illusory powers and caused them to be killed by various means in battle.

63. If I had not adopted such deceitfu ways in battle, you would never have been victorious, nor could have gained kingdom or wealth.

64. Those four were very great warriors and regarded as Atirathas in the world, The very Regents of the Earth could not kill them in fair fight.

65. Likewise, the son of Dhritarashtra, when armed with the mace, could not be killed in fair fight by Yama himself, armed with his bludgeon.

66. Ye should not mind that this enemy of yours has been killed deceitfully. When the number of one's enemies becomes great, then destruction should be brought about by wily ways.

67. The gods themselves, in killing the Asuras, have followed same path. The way, that was followed by the celestials, may be followed by all.

68. We have been crowned with success. It is evening. We had better retire to our tents. Let us all, ye kings, take rest, with our horses and elephants and cars!'

69. Hearing these words of Vasudeva, the Pandavas and the Panchalas filled with joy, roared like a number of lions.

70. All of them blew their conchs and Madhava himself blew his Panchajanya, seeing Duryodhana struck down in battle.'"

CHAPTER LXII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1. "All those kings, having arms resembling spiked bludgeons, then went towards

their tents, overflowing with joy and blowing ther conchs on their way.

2—3. The Pandavas also, O king, proceeded towards our tents. The great bowman Yuyutsu followed them, as also Satyaki, and Dhrishtadyumna, and Shikhandin, and the five sons of Draupadi. The other great bowmen also went towards our tents.

4. The Parthas then entered the tent of Duryodhana, shorn of its splendours and bereft of its master, and looking like a pleasure-ground deserted by spectators.

5. That pavilion looked like a city void of festivities, or a lake without its elephant. It was filled with women and eunuchs and aged counsellors.

6. Duryodhana and other heroes, dressed in yellow raiments, formerly used, O king, to wait reverentially, with joined hands, on those old counsellers.

7. Arriving at the pavilion of the Kuru king, the Pandavas, those foremost of car-warriors, O king, got down from their cars.

8—9. Ever engaged, in the good of his friend, Keshava, addressed the holder of Gandiva, saying,—'Take down your Gandiva as also the two inexhaustible quivers. I shall get down after you, O best of the Bharatas.

10. Get down, for this is for your own good, O sinless one!'—Pandu's brave son, Dhananjaya, did as he was directed.

11. Leaving the reins of the horses the intelligent Krishna then got down from the car of Dhananjaya.

12. After the great Lord of all creatures had got down from that car, the celestial Ape that was on the standard of Arjuna's car disappeared there and then.

13. That great car then, which had before been burnt by Drona and Karna with their celestial weapons, quickly caught fire, O king, without any thing being seen there.

14. Indeed, the car of Dhananjaya, with its quivers, reins, horses, yoke, and shaft, fell down, all reduced to ashes.

15—16. Seeing the vehicle thus reduced to ashes, O lord, the sons of Pandu filled with wonder, and Arjuna, O king, having saluted Krishna and bowed unto him, said these words, with joined hands, 'O Govinda, O divine one, why has this car been consumed by fire?

17. What is this highly wonderful incident that has taken place before our eyes? O you of mighty arms, if you think that I can hear it without injury then tell me everything.'

Vasudeva said :—

18. "That car, O Arjuna, had already been consumed by various sorts of weapons. It was because I had sat upon it during battle that it did not break into pieces, O destroyer of foes.

19. Previously consumed by the power of Brahma weapons, it has been reduced to ashes upon my leaving it after you had achieved your object.'

20—23. Then, with a little pride, Lord Keshava embracing king Yudhishthira, said to him, 'By good luck, you have gained the victory, O son of Kunti! By good luck, your enemies have been defeated! By good luck, the holder of Gandiva and Bhimasena the son of Pandu, and yourself, O king, and the two sons of Madri have escaped alive from this battle so destructive of heroes, after having killed all your foes! Speedily do, O Bharata, what should now be done!

24—26. After I had arrived at Upaplavya, you the holder of Gandiva, gave me honey and the customary ingredients, and said, O Lord, This Dhananjaya, O Krishna, is your brother and friend! He should, therefore, be protected by you in all dangers!—To your these words I answered saying,—So be it!—That Savyasachin has always been protected by me. You have also gained victory, O king.

27—28. With his brothers, O king of kings, that truly powerful hero, has come out alive of this dreadful battle, so destructive of heroes.'—Thus addressed by Krishna, king Yudhishthira with his hairs standing erect, O king, said to Janarddana.

Yudishthira said :—

29—30 'Who else, except you, O destroyer of foes, not even thunder-holding Purandara himself, could have withstood the Brahma weapons discharged by Drona and Karna!

30. It was through your favour that the Samsaptakas were vanquished! It was through your favour that Partha had never to turn back from even the fiercest of battles!

31—32. It was through your favour O mighty-armed one, that I myself, with my descendants, have, by performing various feats, obtained the auspicious end of prowess and energy! At Upaplavya, the Rishi Krishna-Dwaipayana told me that where there is Krishna righteousness and victory will be there."

Sanjaya continued :—

33—35. 'After this conversation, those heroes entered your son's encampment, and secured the weapons of chest, many jewels, and much wealth, and silver and gold and gems and pearls and many rich ornaments and blankets and skins, and innumerble slaves male and female, and many other things required by kings. Having secured that inexhaustible wealth belonging to you, O foremost of Bharata's race, those highly-blessed ones, whose enemies had been killed, uttered loud cries of joy.

36. Having unyoked their animals, the Pandavas and Satyaki took rest there awhile.

37—38. Then the illustrious Vasudeva said. 'We should, as the first sacred act, remain out of the camp for this night. Saying 'So be it !'—the Pandavas and Satyaki, accompanied by Vasudeva, went out of the camp for doing this auspicious act.

39—40. Arrived on the banks of the sacred stream Oghavati, O king, the Pandavas, who had no enemies took up their quarters there for that night. They then sent Keshava to Hastinapura. The highly powerful Vasudeva causing Daruka to get upon his car, proceeded very quickly to that place where the royal son of Amvica was.

41—42. While about to start on his car, having Shaivya and Sugriva yoked to it, (the Pandavas) said to him,—'Comfort the helpless Gandhari who has lost all her sons.'—Thus addressed by the Pandavas, that chief of the Satwatas then set out for Hastinapura and arrived before Gandhari who had all her sons slain."

CHAPTER LXIII.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Janamejaya said :—

1—2. "Why did that best of kings, *viz.*, the righteous Yudhishthira, send that scorcher of foes, *viz.*, Vasudeva, to Gandhari? Krishna had at first gone to the Kauravas for the sake of bringing about peace. He was not successful. For this the battle took place.

3—4. When all the warriors were killed and Duryodhana was struck down, when for the battle the empire of Pandu's son became perfectly safe, when all the (Kuru) camp became empty, when the son of Pandu won great glory, what was the cause for which Krishna had once again to go (to Hastinapura)?

5. It seems to me, O Brahmana, that the cause could not be an insignificant one, since it was Janarddana had himself to make the journey.

6. O foremost of all Adhyaryus, tell me in full what was the reason for undertaking such a mission."

Vaishampayana said :—

7—11. "The question you have put, O king, is, indeed, worthy of you! I will tell you everything truly as it happened. See Duryodhana, the powerful son of Dhritarashtra, struck down by Bhimasena against the rule of fair fight, and beholding the Kuru king slain unfairly, O Bharata, Yudhishthira, O monarch, was filled with great fear, thinking of the highly-blessed and ascetic Gandhari—'She has practised severe ascetic austerities and can, therefore, consume the three worlds,' this was the thought of the son of Pandu. By sending Krishna, the angry Gandhari, would be comforted before Yudhishthira's own arrival.

12. 'Hearing of the death of her son in such a way, she will, in anger, with the fire of her mind, reduce us to ashes.

13—14. How will Gandhari bear such poignant grief, after hearing of her son, who always fought fairly, being slain unfairly by us?' Having thought thus for a long while, king Yudhishthira filled with fear and grief said these words to Vasudeva.

15—16. 'Through your kindness, O Govinda, my kingdom has been freed from pests. We have gained now what we could not even imagine. O mighty-armed one, in battle, making the very hair to stand on end, thou hadst to bear violent blows before my very eyes, O delighter of the Yadavas.

17. Formerly in the battle between the gods and the Asuras, thou hadst, lent your help for the destruction of the foes of the celestials, and those enemies were killed.

18. Similarly, O mighty-armed one, you have helped us, O you of unfading glory. By agreeing to act as our charioteer, O Vrishni-hero, you have all along protected us.

19. If you had not protected Phalguna in dreadful battle, this sea of troops would not have been vanquished?

20. You have suffered many blows of the mace, and many strokes of spiked

bludgeons' and dart and short arrows and lances and battle-axes.

21. For our sake, O Krishna, you also put up with many harsh words and endure the violent fall of weapons in battle.

22. On account of Duryodhana's death, all this has not been fruitless, O you of unfading glory. Act again in such a way that the fruit of all those acts may not be spoiled.

23. Although we have gained victory, O Krishna, our heart, however, is yet trembling in doubt. Know, O Madhava, that Gandhari's wrath, has been excited.

24. That highly-blessed lady is always weakening herself with the austerest of penances. Hearing of the death of her sons and grandsons, she will, forsooth, reduce us to ashes. It is time, O hero, I think, for pacifying her.

25. Save you, O foremost of men, what other person is there that can even face that lady of red and ranging eyes and greatly overwhelmed with the misfortunes of her children.

26. O Madhava, I think it is better for you to go, for pacifying Gandhari, O chastiser of foes, who is blazing with wrath. You are the Creator and the Destroyer. You are the first cause of all the worlds, yourself being eternal.

27. With reasonable words, you will quickly, O you of great wisdom, be able to pacify Gandhari.

28—29. Our grandsire, the holy Krishna-Dwaipayana, will be there. O mighty-armed one, it is your duty to remove by all means in thy power, the anger of Gandhari.' Hearing these words of king Yudhishthira, the Yadu-hero summoning Daruka, said, —'Get my car ready.'

30. Having received Keshava's command, Daruka speedily returned and represented to his great master that the car was ready.

31. That destroyer of foes and chief of Yadu's race, *viz.*, the Lord Keshava, having got upon the car, proceeded speedily to the city of the Kurus.

32. The worshipful Madhava then, mounting his vehicle, proceeded, and arrived at Hastinapur.

33. Making the city resound with the rattle of his car-wheels as he entered it, he sent word to Dhritarashtra and then got down from his car and entered the palace of the old king.

34—35. He there saw that best of Rishis, (*viz.*, Dwaipayana), arrived before him. Embracing the feet of both Vyasa and Dhritarashtra, Janarddana quietly saluted Gandhari also. Then the best of the Yadavas, *viz.*, Vishnu, holding Dhritarashtra by the hand, O king, began to weep.

36—37. Having wept for a while, he washed his eyes and his face with water according to rules. He then said sweetly to Dhritarashtra,—' Nothing is unknown to you, O Bharata, about the past and the future. You are well-acquainted, O lord, with the course of time.

39. Out of respect for you the Pandavas had tried to prevent the destruction of their family and the extermination of the Kshatriyas, O Bharata.

40. Having made a compact with his brothers, the virtuous Yudhishthira had lived peacefully. He even went to exile after the unfair defeat at dice.

41. With his brothers he lived in concealment and disguise. They also suffered various miseries as if they were quite helpless.

42. On the eve of battle I myself came, and before all begged of you only five villages.

43. Out of covetousness, and as Destiny would have it, you did not grant my request. Through your folly, O king, all the Kshatriyas have been exterminated.

44. Bhisma, and Somadatta, and Valhika, and Kripa, and Drona, and his son and the wise Vidura, always begged you for peace. You did not, however, follow their advice.

45. Every one, it seems, loses sense under the influence of Destiny, O Bharata, since even you, O king, as regards this matter, did act so foolishly.

46. What else can it be but the effect of Time? Indeed, Destiny always reigns supreme! Do not, O you of great wisdom, attribute any fault to the Pandavas.

47. Judged by the standard of Ethics or reason or affection, the Pandavas have not committed the slightest offence, O scorcher of foes.

48. Knowing all this to be the fruit of you own folly, it is proper for you not to entertain any ill feeling towards the Pandavas.

49. The perpetuity of race, the offering of funeral cake, and every thing else that depends upon offspring, now depend on the Pandavas as regards both yourself and Gandhari.

50. Both you and the renowned Gandhar also, should not entertain malice towards the Pandavas.

51. Thinking of all this, and thinking also of your own sins, cherish good feelings towards the Pandavas. I bow to you, O Bharata chief.

52. You know, O mighty armed one, the devotion of king Yudhisthira and his affection towards you.

53. Having caused this destruction of foes that wronged him so, he is burning day and night in grief and does not enjoy peace of mind.

54. Grieving for you and for Gandhari, he does not enjoy any happiness.

55—57. Out of shame he does not appear before you who are burning with grief on account of your children and whose understanding and senses have been bewildered.'—Having said these words to Dhritarashtra, that foremost one of Yadu's race, O king, addressed the grief-stricken Gandhari in these words of great significance,—'O daughter of Suvala, O you of excellent vows, hear what I say. O auspicious dame, there is no lady like you in the world.

58. You remember, O queen, those just and fair words which you gave utterance to in the assembly before me, words that were beneficial to both the parties,—but which your sons, O auspicious lady, did not pay any heed to.

60—61. Duryodhana, who coveted victory was reprimanded by you. You told him then,—Listen, O fool, to these eternal words, *viz.*, victory follows righteousness —your words, O princess, have now been fulfilled. Knowing all this, O auspicious lady, do not grieve.

62. Let not your heart be bent towards the destruction of the Pandavas. On account of the power of your penances, you are able, O highly blessed one, to consume with your eyes, burning in anger, the whole Earth with her mobile and immobile creatures.'

63. Hearing these words of Vasudeva, Gandhari said,—'O Keshava, what you say is true!

64. My heart, burning in grief, had been unfixed. After hearing what you said, however, that heart, O Janarddana, has been settled.

65. Regarding the blind old king, who had now become childless, O foremost of men, you and the sons of Pandu, are his refuge.'

66. Having said so Gandhari, burning in grief for the death of her sons, covered her face with her cloth and began to weep aloud.

67. The mighty-armed lord Keshava then solaced the grief-stricken princess with reasonable words and examples.

68. Having comforted Gandhari and Dhritarashtra, Keshava of Madhu's race, came to know the evil that was thought of by Drona's son.

69—70. Rising up quickly after worshipping the feet of Vyasa with his head, Keshava, O king, addressed Dhritarashtra, saying,—'I take your leave, O foremost of Kuru's race! Do not grieve. The son of Drona has an evil desire. It is for this that I rise so suddenly.

71—72. It seems that he has formed a plan for destroying the Pandavas during the night.'—Hearing these words, both Gandhari and Dhritarashtra said Keshava, the destroyer of Keshin, these words:—'Go quickly, O mighty-armed one, and protect the Pandavas.

73. See us again soon, O Janarddana!' —Then Keshava of unfading glory proceeded with Daruka.

74. After Vasudeva had gone, O king, Vyasa, worshipped of the whole world, began to comfort king Dhritarashtra.

75. The righteous Vasudeva departed, having gained his object successfully, from Hastinapura, for seeing the camp and the Pandavas.

76. Arrived at the camp, he went to the Pandavas, Informing them of everything he took his seat with them."

CHAPTER LXIV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said:—

1. "Struck on the head, his thighs broken, laid low on the ground, exceedingly proud, what, O Sanjaya, did my son then say?

2. King Duryodhana was highly wrathful and his enmity to the sons of Pandu was deep-seated. When, therefore, this great calamity befell him, what did he next say on the field?"

Sanjaya said:—

3. "Hear me, O king, as I describe what took place. Listen, O king, to what Duryodhana said when possessed by misfortune.

4. With his thighs broken, the king, O king, covered with dust, collected his flowing locks, looking on all sides.

5. Having with difficulty gathered his locks, he began to sigh like a serpent. Filled with ire and with tears flowing quickly from his eyes, he looked at me. He struck his arms against the Earth for some time like an infuriate elephant.

6—8. Shaking his loose locks, and gnashing his teeth, he began to blame the eldest son of Pandu. Sighing heavily, he then said to me,—'Alas, I who had Shantanu's son Bhishma for my protector, and Karna, that foremost of all warriors, Gotama's son, Shakuni, Drona, Ashwatthaman, the heroic Shalya, and Kritavarman, have been reduced to this plight. It seems that Destiny is all powerful.

9. I was the master of eleven Chamus of troops and yet I have come by this plight. O mighty-armed one, no one can control Destiny.

10. Those of my side that have escaped alive from this battle should be informed how I have been struck down by Bhimasena against the rules of fair fight.

11. Many unfair and sinful acts have been perpetrated towards Bhurishravas, Bhishma, and Drona.

12. This is another very unfair act that the cruel Pandavas have perpetrated, for which, I am certain, they will incur the censure of all righteous men.

13. What pleasure can a pious man enjoy after having gained a victory by unfair acts? What wise man would approve of a person's disregarding the rules of equity?

14. What learned man would rejoice after having gained victory by such unfair means as that vile wretch, Vrikodara, the son of Pandu, is rejoicing himselt in glee.

15. What can be more surprising than this, *viz.*, that Bhimasena in anger should with his foot touch the head of one like me while lying with my thighs broken.

16. Is that person, O Sanjaya, an honorable man who behaves thus towards a great man, endued with prosperity, living in the midst of friends?

17—18. My parents are not ignorant of the rules of warfare. As directed by me, O Sanjaya, tell them that are afflicted with grief these words:—I have celebrated sacrifices, maintained a large number of servants properly, governed the whole Earth with her seas; I stood on the heads of my living enemies.

19. I gave wealth to my kinsmen to the best of my power and I did what my friends liked. I withstood all my enemies. Who is there that is more fortunate than myself?

20. I have marched through enemy's kingdoms and commanded kings as slaves I have acted lovingly towards all I loved and liked. Who is there more fortunate than myself!

21. I honored all my relations and looked to the well-being of all my dependants. I have observed the three objects of human existence, *viz.*, Religion, Profit, and Pleasure. Who is there more fortunate than myself?

22. I commanded great kings, and acquired honor, unattainable by others, I always drove on the back of the very best of horses. Who is there more fortunate than myself?

23. I studied the Vêdas and made gifts according to the ordinance. I have passed my life in happiness. By observing the duties of my own order, I have secured for myself many abodes of blessedness in the regions of eternity. Who is there more fortunate than myself?

24. By good luck, I have not been defeated in battle and subjected to the necessity of serving my foes as slaves. By good luck, O lord, it is only after my death that my rising Prosperity leaves me for waiting upon another!

25. I have met with that death which is desired by good Kshatriyas observant of the duties of their order. Who is there so fortunate as myself?

26—27. By good luck, I was not defeated like an ordinary person. By good luck, I have not been defeated after I had done some mean act. Like killing a person who is asleep or who is heedless, like killing one with poison, my destruction has taken place, for I have been killed unfairly against the rules of fair fight.

28—30. The highly blessed Ashwatthaman, and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, and Sharadwat's son Kripa, should be told these words of mine, *viz.*—You should never place any confidence upon the Pandavas, those violaters of rules who have committed many unrighteous acts.—After this, your royal and truly powerful son addressed our message-bearers in these words:—I have, in battle, been killed by Bhimasena most unfairly.

31—34. I am now like a moneyless wayfarer and shall follow suit with Drona who has already gone to heaven, with Karna and Shalya, with Vrishasena of great energy, with Shakuni the son of Suvala, with Jalasandha of great valour, with king Bhagadatta, with Somadatta's son that mighty bowman, with Jayadratha the king of the Sindhus, with all my brothers headed by Dusshasana and equal

unto myself, with Dusshasana's son of great prowess, and with Lakshmana my son, and thousands of others that fought for me.

35. Alas, how shall my sister, laden with grief, live sorrowfully, after hearing of the death of her brothers and her husband.

36. Alas, what shall be the condition of the old king, my father, with Gandhari, and his daughters-in-law and grand-daughter-in-law!

37. Forsooth, the beautiful and large-eyed mother of Lakshmana, rendered sonless and husbandless, will soon die.

38. If Charvaka, the mendicant devotee, who is a master of speech, learns everything he will forsooth avenge my death.

39—40. By dying upon the sacred field of Samantapanchaka, celebrated over the three worlds, I shall, forsooth, go to the blessed abode of eternity.'—Then, having heard these lamentations of the king, O sire, thousands of men, with eyes full of tears, fled away in all directions.

41. The whole earth, with her forests and seas, with all her mobile and immobile creatures, began to shake and produce a loud noise. All the points of the horizon were covered with darkness.

42. Repairing to Drona's son, the messengers communicated to him all that had taken place regarding the conduct of the mace-fight and the fall of the king.

43. Having represented everything to Drona's son, O Bharata, all of them remained in a pensive mood for a long time and then went away, laden with grief, to the places whence they came."

CHAPTER LXV.

(GADAYUDDHA PARVA).—*Concld.*

Sanjaya said :—

1—5. "Having heard of Duryodhana's fall from the messengers, those powerful car-warriors, the remnant of the Kaurava army greatly wounded with keen arrows and maces and lances and darts,—those three, *viz.* Ashwathaman and Kripa and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, riding at breakneck pace on their swift chargers came to the field of battle. They saw there the high-souled son of Dhritarashtra lying low on the ground, like a gigantic Shala tree laid low in the forest by a storm. They saw him suffering on the mother Earth and covered with blood like a powerful elephant in the forest laid low by a hunter. They saw him suffering and bleeding profusely.

6—7. Indeed, they saw him lying on the ground like the Sun dropped on the Earth or like the Ocean dried by a mighty wind, or like the Full Moon in the sky with his disc covered with fog. Like an elephant in prowess and possessing long arms, the king lay on the Earth, covered with dust.

8. Around him were many terrible creatures and carnivorous animals, like satellites seeking wealth around a king in state.

9. His forehead was contracted into furrows of rage and his eyes were rolling in anger. They saw the king, that foremost of men, full of rage, like a tiger struck down (by hunters).

10. Seeing the king laid low on the Earth, those great bow-men, *viz.*, Kripa and others became stupefied.

11. Getting down from their cars, they ran towards the king. Seeing Duryodhana, all of them sat on the Earth around him.

12. Then Drona's son, O king, with eyes full of tears and sighing like a snake, said these words to that chief of Bharata's race, that foremost of all the kings on Earth.

13. Forsooth, there is nothing permanent in the world of men, since you, O foremost of men, lie on the mother Earth covered with dust.

14. You were a king who had issued your commands to all the world! Why then, O foremost of kings, do you lie alone on the bare ground?

15. I do not see Dusshana by you, nor the great car-warrior Karna, nor those hundreds of your friends. What is this, O foremost of men?

16. Forsooth, it is difficult to learn the ways of Yama, since you, O lord of all the world, thus lie on the bare ground covered with dust.

17. Alas, this destroyer of foes used to trample at the head of all Kshatriyas that had their locks sprinkled with holy water at the time of coronation. Alas, he now eats the dust. Witness the reverses of fortune that time brings.

18. Where is that pure white umbrella of yours? Where is that fanning yak-tail also, O king? Where is that vast army of yours now gone, O best of kings?

19. The course of events is, forsooth, a mystery, since you, who were the master of the world, have been reduced to this state.

20. Forsooth, the prosperity of all mortals is very unstable, since you, who were equal unto Shakra himself, have now been reduced to such a miserable condition.'

21. Hearing these words of Ashwatthaman your son answered him in words that were suited to the occasion.

22—23. He wiped his eyes with his hands and shed tears of grief again. The king then addressed all those heroes headed by Kripa and said,—'Subjection to death has been ordained by the Creator himself. Death comes to all in course of Time.

24. That death has now come to me, before you all. I, who governed the whole Earth, I have now been reduced to this miserable state.

25. By good luck, I never turned back from battle, whatever misfortunes overtook me. By good luck, I have been killed by those sinful men, by the help of deceptive means.

26. By good luck, while engaged in hostilities, I always showed courage and perseverance. By good luck, I am killed in battle, along with all my relatives and friends.

27. By good luck, I see you escaped alive from this great destruction, and are safe and sound! Thfs is highly pleasing to me!

28. Do not, from love grieve for my death! If the Vedas are in any way authoritative, I have certainly acquired many eternal regions!

29. I am not ignorant of the glory of Krishna. He has not made me disregard the Kshatriya duties!

30—31. I have obtained him! No one should grieve for me. Ye have done what persons like ye should do. Ye have always tried for my success. Destiny, however, is incapable of being defeated.'—Having said all this the King, with eyes bathed in tears, became silent, O king, agitated as he was with pain.

32. Seeing the king in tear and grief, Drona's son burned in anger like the fire at the universal dissolution.

33. Beside himself with anger he squeezed his hands, and addressing the king in a voice choked with tears, he said, —'My father was killed by those wretches with a cruel contrivance. That act, however, do not pain me so keenly as this condition to which you have been reduced, O king. Listen to these words of mine which I swear by truth itself, O lord, and by all my acts of piety, all my gifts, my religon and the religious merits I have won.

36—38. I shall to-day, in the very presence of Vasudeva, despatch all the Panchalas, by all means in my power, to the abode of Yama. You should, O king, grant me permission.'—Hearing these words of Drona's son, that were highly peasant, the Kuru king addressed Kripa, saying,—'O preceptor, bring me soon a pot full of water.'—At these words of the king, that foremost of Brahmanas, soon brought a vessel full of water.

39. Your son then, O king, said to Kripa, —'Let the son of Drona, O foremost of Brahmanas, blessed be you, if you wish to do me good, be, at my command, appointed as generalissimo.

40—41. At the command of the king, even the Brahmana may fight, especially one who leads the life of Kshatriya. Those learned in the scriptures say this.'—Hearing these words of the king Kripa, the son of Sharadwat, installed Drona's son as generalissimo, at the mandate of the king.

42. After the ceremony, O King, Ashwathaman embraced that best of kings and left the place, having resounded the ten cardinal points with his war-cry.

43. That best of kings, *viz.*, Duryodhana, bathed in blood, began to pass there that night so dreadful to all creatures,

44. Leaving quickly the a field of battle, O king, those horses, with hearts shaken by grief, began to think anxiously and earnestly.

ENDS OF SHALYA PARVA.

A PROSE ENGLISH TRANSLATION

OF

THE MAHABHARATA.

(TRANSLATED LITERALLY FROM THE ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT.)

SAUPTIKA PARVA.

EDITED BY

MANMATHA NATH DUTT, (*Shastri*) **M.A., M.R.A.S.**

RECTOR, KESHUB ACADEMY;

Author of the English Translations of the Ramayana, Vishnu Puranam, Srimadbhagavatam, Kamandakiya Nitisara, Bhagavat Gita, and many other works.

PUBLISHED BY

RASH MOHUN SIRCAR.

40, Nayan Chand Dutt's Street, Calcutta.

CALCUTTA:

PRINTED BY H. C. DASS, ELYSIUM PRESS,

40, Nayan Chand Dutt's Street.

1902.

SAUPTIKA PARVA.

CONTENTS.

THE MAHABHARATA.

(IN ENGLISH.)

SAUPTIKA PARVA.

CHAPTER I.

Having saluted Narayana, and Nara the foremost of all male beings, as also the goddess of learning Saraswati, let us cry success.

Sanjaya said :—

1. "Those heroes then in a body went towards the south. At sunset they reached a spot near the (Kuru) encampment.

2. Letting loose their animals, they became very much frightened. Reaching then a forest, they secretly entered it.

3. They took up their quarters there near the encampment. Wounded with many keen weapons, they breathed and sighed heavily, thinking of the Pandavas.

4. Hearing the loud noise set up by the victorious Pandavas, they feared a pursuit and therefore fled towards the east.

5. Having gone for sometime, their animals became tired and they themselves were stricken with thirst. Beside themselves with anger and vindictiveness, those great bowmen could not bear what had taken place, burning as they did with grief at the slaughter of the king. They, however, rested for a while."

Dhritarashtra said :—

6. "The feat, O Sanjaya, that Bhima performed seems to be incredible, since my son who was struck down was endued with the strength of ten thousand elephants.

7—10. In the prime of life and having an adamantine body, he was not capable of being slain by any creature. Alas, even such a son of mine was struck down by the Pandavas in battle. Forsooth, O Sanjaya, my heart is made of adamant, because it does not break into a thousand pieces even after hearing of the death of my hundred sons. Alas, what will be the condition of myself and my wife, an old couple, deprived of all children. I dare, not dwell in the kingdom of Pandu's son.

11. Having been the father of a king and a king myself, O Sanjaya, how shall I pass my days as a slave obeying the commands of Pandu's son.

12. Having commanded once the entire Earth and having trampled over the heads of all, O Sanjaya, how shall I live now as a wretched slave.

13. How shall I be able, O Sanjaya, to endure the words of Bhima who has alone killed a full hundred sons of mine?

14. The words of the great Vidura are now realised. Alas, my son, O Sanjaya, did not listen to those words.

15. What, however, did Kritavarman and Kripa and Drona's son do after my son Duryodhana had been unfairly killed."

Sanjaya said :—

16. "They had not proceeded far, O king, when they stopped, on seeing a dense forest covered with trees and creepers.

17. Having rested for a little while, they entered that great forest, proceeding on their cars drawn by their excellent horses whose thirst had been satisfied.

18. That forest abounded with various kinds of animals, and various species of birds. And it was covered with many trees and creepers and was filled with numerous carnivorous creatures.

19. It was covered with many pools of water, adorned with various kinds of flowers, and lakes overgrown with blue lotuses.

20. Having entered that dense forest they looked about saw a gigantic banian tree with thousands of branches.

21. Repairing to the shade of that banian, those great car-warriors, O king, those foremost of men, found that to be the biggest tree in that forest.

22. Getting down from their cars, and letting loose their animals, they washed themselves and said their evening prayers.

23. The Sun then reached the setting hill, and Night, the mother of the universe, came. The sky, bespangled mith planets and stars, shone like an ornamented piece of brocade and presented a beautiful sight.

25. Creatures, ranging in the night, began to howl and utter their cries at will, while they that range in the day began to sleep.

26. The night-ranging animals set up a dreadful noise. The carnivorous creatures were full of joy, and the night, as it advanced, became awful.

27. At that time filled with grief and sorrow, Kritavarman and Kripa and Drona's son all sat down together.

28. Seated under that banian, they began to express their sorrow regarding the destruction that had taken place of both the Kurus and the Pandavas.

29. Feeling asleep they laid themselves down on the bare Earth. They had been greatly exhausted and greatly wounded with arrows.

30. The two great car-warriors, Kripa and Kritavarman, began to sleep. They ever deserving of happiness and undeserving of misery, slept on the bare ground.

31. Indeed, O King, they, who had always slept on costly beds, now slept, like helpless persons, on the bare ground, worn out with fatigue and grief.

32. Subject to warth and revenge, Drona's son, however, O Bharata, could not sleep, but continued to breathe like a snake.

33. Burning with rage he could not sleep. That mighty hero looked on all sides of that terrible forest.

34. As he surveyed that forest filled with various kinds of creatures, the great warrior beheld a large banian tree covered with crows.

35. On that banian thousands of crows roosted in the night. Each perching separately from its neighbour, those crows slept easily, O Kuru Chief.

36. As, however, those birds were sleeping in security on every side, Ashwatthaman beheld a terrible owl suddenly appeared there.

37. Of frightful cries and huge body, with green eyes and tawny plumage, its nose was very large and its talons were Gng. And its speed was like that of oaruda.

38. Crying softly that winged creature O Bharata, secretly approached the branches of that banian tree.

39. That sky-ranger, that slayer of crows, alighting on one of the branches of the banian, killed a large number of his sleeping enemies.

40. He tore the wings of some and cut off the heads of others with his sharp talons and broke the legs of many. Highly strong as he was, he killed many that fell down before his eyes.

41. With the limbs and bodies, O king, of the slain crows, the ground covered by the spreading branches of the banian, was overspread on all sides.

42. Having killed those crows, the owl became overjoyed like a slayer of foes after having dealt with his foes according to his pleasure.

43. Witnessing that deed perpetrated in the night by the owl, Drona's son began to reflect on it, desirous of guiding his own conduct after that example.

44. He said to himself,—'This owl teaches me a lesson in battle. Bent as I am upon the destruction of the enemy, the time for action is come.

45. The victorious Pandavas are incapable of being killed by me! They are possessed of power and perseverance, sure of aim, and skilled in smiting.

46. In the presence, however, of the king I have promised to destroy them. I have thus promised to perform a deed that would bring on my own destruction like an insect trying to rush into a burning fire.

47. If I were to fight fairly with them, I shall, forsooth, have to lay down my life! By deceitful act, however, I may yet get success and a great destruction may overtake my enemies.

48. People generally, as also those well-read in the scriptures, alway prefer means which are certain to those which are uncertain.

49. Censure and bad name, which soever this act may engender, ought to be incurred by a person who leads the life of a Kshatriya.

50. The sinful Pandavas have, at every step, perpetrated very ugly, censurable and deceitful acts.

51. Regarding this matter, certain ancient verses, full of truth, are heard, sung by truth-seeing and righteous persons.

52. They are :—The enemy's force, even which fatigued, or wounded, or while eating, or when retiring, or when resting within their camp, should be beaten.

53—54. They should be equally treated when sleeping at dead of night, or when reft of commanders, or when routed, or when labouring under an error.'—Having thought thus, the valiant son of Drona formed the resolution of killing during the night the sleeping Pandavas and the Panchalas.

55. Having formed this wicked resolution and and promised to execute it, he awoke both his maternal uncle and the chief of the Bhojas.

56. Awakened from sleep, those two illustrious and powerful persons, *viz.*, Kripa and the Bhoja chief, heard Ashwatthaman's scheme. Filled with shame, both of them could not give a suitable reply.

57—58. Having reflected for a short time Ashwatthaman said with tearful eyes. —'King Duryodhana, the only hero of great might, for whose sake we were fighting with the Pandavas, has been killed. Deserted and alone though he was, the master of eleven Akshauhinis of soldiers that hero of unsullied prowess has been struck down by Bhimasena in battle.

59. Another wicked act hath been perpetrated by the mean Vrikodara for the latter has touched with his foot the head of a crowned person.

60. The Panchalas are sending up loud roars and cries and loud bursts of laughter. Overjoyed, they are blowing their conchs and beating their drums.

61. The loud sound of their instruments, mingled with the blare of conchs, is fearful to the ear, and carried by the winds, is filling all the points of the horizon.

62. Loud also is the neighing of their steeds and the grunting of their elephants and the roaring of their warriors.

63. That deafening noise made by the rejoicing warriors as they are going to their quarters, as also the clatter of their car-wheels, comes to us from the east.

64. So great has been the havoc made by the Pandavas on the Dhartarashtras that we three are the only survivors.

65. Some were gifted with the strength of a hundred elephants and some were masters of all weapons. Yet they have been killed by the son of Pandu. I consider this to be an instance of the reverses caused by Destiny.

66. Truly, this is the end to which such acts leads. Although the Pandavas have achieved such difficult feats, yet this should be the result of those feats.

67. If you have not lost your wisdom out of stupefaction, then say what is proper for us to do under these circumstances."

CHAPTER II.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Kripa said :—

1. "We have heard all that you have said, O powerful one! Listen, now, to a few words of mine, O mighty-armed one!

2. All men are subjected to, and governed by, these two forces, *viz.*, Destiny and Manliness. There is nothing superior to these two.

3. Success is not the out come of destiny alone nor of manliness alone, O best of men! Success results from the union of the two.

4. All objects great and low, result from a union of those two. In the whole world, it is through these two that men either act or abstain.

5. No result is produced by the clouds pouring upon a mountain. But mighty results are produced by their pouring upon a cultivated field.

6. Manliness, where destiny is not auspicious, and want of manliness, where destiny is auspicious, both these are fruitless. What I have said before (about the union of the two) is all true.

7. If the rains properly moisten a well-cultivated field the seed produces great results. Such is human success.

8. Sometimes, having settled a course of events, destiny acts of itself. For all that, the wise, always take recourse to manliness.

9. All human acts, O foremost of men, are accomplished by the aid of these two together. Influenced by these two, men either act or abstain.

10. Recourse may be had to manliness. But manliness succeeds through destiny. By the influence of destiny one who sets himself to work, attains to success.

11. The exertion, however, of even a capable man, even when well-directed, is, without the help of destiny, seen to be fruitless in the world.

12. Idle and dull men in this world disapprove of manliness. This, however, is not the view of the wise.

13. Generally no act ever becomes fruitless in the world. The want of manliness again produces grave misery.

14. There is hardly seen a person who obtains something of itself without having made any exertion, as also one who does not obtain anything even after exertion.

15. One who is active is capable of supporting life. He, who is idle, is always unhappy. It is generally seen in this world that active men are always inspired by the desire of earning good.

16. If an active man succeeds in gaining his object or fails to obtain the fruit of his acts, he does not become the butt of censure in any way.

17. If, however, any one in the world luxuriously enjoys the fruits of action without exerting for the same, he generally incurs ridicule and becomes an object of hatred.

18. He, who, neglecting this rule about action, liveth otherwise, is said to injure himself. This is the opinion held by the intelligent.

19. Exertion generally becomes fruitless, because of these reasons, *viz.*, destiny without manliness, and manliness without destiny.

20. Without manliness, no act in this world becomes successful. An active and clever man however, who, having bowed down to the celestials, seeks to achieve his object, is never lost.

21. Similarly a person is crowned with success, who duly waits upon the aged, asks of them what is for his good, and obeys their good advice.

22. One engaged in a work should seek the advice of those approved by the aged. These men are the means, and success depends on means.

23. He who exerts after listening to the words of the old, soon reaps abundant fruits.

24. He, who, without reverence and respect for persons competent to give him good advice, seeks to accomplish his object under the influence of anger, fear, and avarice, soon loses his prosperity.

25. Moved by covetousness and deprived of foresight, this Duryodhana had, without taking advice, foolishly sought the accomplishment of an ill-formed object.

26. Disregarding all his well-wishers and under the advice of only the evil-minded, he had, though dissuaded, created enmities with the Pandavas, who are his superiors in all good qualities.

27. He had, from the very commencement been very wicked. He could not check himself. He did not satisfy the wishes of friends. For all that, he is now sunk in grief and calamity.

28. Regarding ourselves, since we have followed that sinful wretch, this great calamity has, therefore befallen us.

29. This great calamity has burnt my good sense. Plunged in thought I fail to see what is for our good.

30. A man that is beside himself should seek the advice of his friends. In friends consists his understanding, his humility and his prosperity.

31. His actions should be guided by them. He should do which his intelligent friends, having settled by their understanding, should advise.

32. Let us, therefore, repair to Dhritarashtra and Gandhari and the great Vidura, and ask them as what we should do.

33. Asked by us, they will advise us regarding our good. We should do what they say, this is my resolution.

34. Those men whose acts do not succeed even after the exertion, should, forsooth, be regarded as afflicted by destiny."

CHAPTER III.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. "Hearing these auspicious, moral and profitable words of Kripa, Ashwatthaman, O king, became beside himself with sorrow and grief.

2—3. Burning with grief, as if with fire, he formed a wicked resolution and then addressed them both, saying,—'understanding is different in different men. Each man, however, is pleased with his own understanding.

4. Every man considers himself more intelligent than others. Every one respects and praises his own understanding.

5. Every one praises his own wisdom. Every one speaks ill of the wisdom of others, and well of his own, in all cases.

6. Men whose opinions agree with regard to any that is not achieved, become gratified with and praise one another.

7. Again the opinions of the same persons, overwhelmed with reverses brought on by the influence of time, become opposed to one another.

8. On account of the diversity of human intellects, judgments necessarily differ.

9—10. As a skilful physician, having duly diagnosed a disease, prescribes a medicine by his intelligence for effecting a cure, so men, for the accomplishment of their works, use their intelligence, helped by their own wisdom. What they do is not approved by others.

11. A man, in youth, has one kind of understanding. In middle age, he has not the same, and in the period of decay, a different kind of understanding prevails in him.

12—13. When fallen into terrible misfortune or when enjoying great prosperity, the understanding of a person, O chief of the Bhojas, undergoes changes. In one and the same person, want of wisdom, the understanding becomes different at different times. Understanding which at one time is good becomes quite the opposite at another time.

14. Having resolved, however, according to one's wisdom, he should try to carry out his resolution. Such resolution, therefore, should make him display his manliness.

15. All persons, O chief of the Bhojas, gladly undertake enterprises that lead to death, in the belief that those enterprises will be accomplished by them.

16. All men, relying on their own judgment and wisdom, try to accomplish various objects, knowing them to be beneficial.

17. The resolution that I have formed in my mind to-day for our great calamity and which will despell my grief, I will now disclose to both of you.

18. Having created his creatures, the Creator assigned to each his occupation. As regards the different castes he gave to each a portion of excellence.

19. To Brahmanas he assigned that foremost of all things, *viz.*, the Veda. To the Kshatriya he gave superior energy. To the Vaishya he gave skill, and unto the Shudra he gave the duty of serving the three other castes.

20. Hence a Brahmana without self-restraint is an object of censure. A Kshatriya who has no energy is mean. A Vaishya without skill is an object of blame, as also a Shudra who is void of humility.

21. I am born in a worshipful and high family of Brahmanas. Through ill-luck, however, I am leading the life of a Kshatriya.

22. If, conversant as I am with Kshatria duties, I revert now to the order of a Brahmana and achieve a great object (by assuming self-restraint under such injuries), that course would not be compatible.

23. I hold an excellent bow and excellent weapons in battle. If I do not avenge the death of my father, how shall I be able to speak in the assembly of men?

24. Following Kshatriya duties, therefore, without hesitation, I shall to-day walk in the steps of my great father and the king.

25. The Panchalas, elated with victory, will sleep in confidence to-night, having put off their armour and in great joy at the thought of the victory they have gained, and exhausted with toil and exertion.

26. While sleeping easily during the night within their own camp, I shall make a great and terrible assault upon their camp.

27. Like Indra killing the Danavas, I shall, attacking them while dead in sleep in their camp, kill them all, by my power.

28. Like a burning fire consuming a heap of dry grass, I shall kill all of them collected in one place with their leader Dhrishtadyumna. Having killed the Panchalas, I shall obtain peace of mind, O best of men.

29. While engaged in the act of destruction, I shall move about in their midst like the holder of Pinaka, *viz.*, the angry Rudra himself, among living creatures!

30. Having cut off and killed all the Panahalas to-day, I shall then, in joy, assail the sons of Pandu in battle!

31. Taking their lives one after another and causing the Earth to be covered with the bodies of all the Panchalas, I shall satisfy the debt I owe to my father!

32. I shall to-day make the Panchalas follow Duryodhana and Karna and Bhishma and the King of the Sindhus!

33. Displaying my power, I shall to-night grind the head, like that of any animal, of Dhrishtadyumna the king of the Panchalas.

34. I shall to-night, O son of Gotama, strike with my sharp sword, in battle, the sleeping sons of the Panchalas and the Pandavas.

35. Having rooted out the Panchala army to-night while asleep, I shall, enjoy great happiness and consider myself to have done my duty!' "

CHAPTER IV.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Kripa said :—

1. " By good luck, O you of great glory, your heart is bent to-day on vengeance ! The holder of the thunder himself will not succeed in dissuading you to-day.

2. Both of us, however, shall accompany you in the morning putting off armours and taking down your standard rest for this night. I shall, clad in mail and riding on our cars, accompany you as also Kritavarman of the Satwata race, while you will proceed against the foe.

3. United with ourselves, you will kill the enemey, *viz.*, the Panchalas with all their followers, tomorrow in battle, displaying your prowess, O best of car-warriors.

4. If you display your energy your quite competent to achieve that feat ! Take rest, therefore, for this night. You have kept up many a night.

5. Having rested and slept, and having become quite refreshed, O giver of honors, meet the enemy in battle ! Forsooth, you will kill then the enemy.

6. No one, not even Vasava amongst the celestials, would venture to defeat you armed with best of weapons, O foremost of car-warriors.

7. Who is there that would, even if he be the king of the gods himself, fight Drona's son when the latter goes, accompanied by Kripa and protected by Kritavarman.

8. Therefore, having rested and slept this night, and removed fatigue, we shall kill the foe tomorrow morning.

9. You are a master of celestial weapons. I also am so. This hero of Satwata's race is a great bowman, always skilled in battle.

11. All of us, in a body, O son, shall succeed in killing our assembled foes in battle by displaying our powers. Great shall be our happiness then. Removing your anxiety, rest for this night and sleep happily.

12. Myself and Kritavarman, both armed with bows and capable of consuming our enemies, will, clad in mail, follow you, O best of men, while you will move on your car against the enemy.

13. Proceeding to their camp, and announcing your name in battle, you will then make a great destruction of the foe.

14. Having caused tomorrow morning, a great slaughter among them you will sport like Indra after the destruction of great Asuras.

15. You are quite competent to defeat the army of the Panchalas in battle, like the destroyer of the Danavas in defeating in anger the Danava army.

16. United with myself in battle and protected by Kritavarman, you are incapable of being defeated by the the holder of the thunder-bolt himself.

17. Neither I, O son, nor Kritavarman will ever retreat from battle without having defeated the Pandus.

18. Having killed the angry Panchalas along with the Pandavas, we shall come away, or killed by them, we shall go to heaven.

19—21. By every means in our power, we two shall help you in battle tomorrow morning. O you of mighty-arms, I tell you the truth, O innocent one."—Addressed in these wholesome words by his maternal uncle, the son of Drona, with eyes reddened in anger answered his uncle, O king, saying,—" Can a person who is afflicted, or one who is under the influence of anger, or one whose heart is always engaged in making plans for the acquisition of wealth, or one who is under the power of lust, get sleep.

22. See, all these four causes are present in my case. Any one of these, can singly spoil sleep.

23. How great is the sorrow of that person who is always thinking of the death of his father. My heart is now burning day and night ! I cannot enjoy peace.

24. The way in which my father was particularly killed by those sinful wretches has been seen by you all. The thought of that destruction is cutting me to the quick.

25. How could a person like me live for even a moment after hearing the Panchalas say that they have killed my father ?

26. I cannot bear the thought of maintaining life without having killed Dhristadyumna in battle ! For the slaughter of my father, he and those who are with him should be killed by me.

27. Who is there so hard-hearted that would not fire up after having heard the cries of the king lying with broken thighs ?

28. Who is there so merciless whose eyes would not be filled with tears after hearing such words uttered by the king with broken thighs.

29. They, whom, I sided have been defeated. The thought of this increases my sorrow as a rush of waters increases the occean,

30. Protected, as they are by Vasudeva, and Arjuna, I consider, them O uncle, as irresistible by the great Indra himself.

31. I am unable to check this rising anger in my heart. I do not see the man in this world that can suppress this wrath of mine.

32. I am informed by the messengers of the defeat of my friends and the victory of the Pandavas. That is consuming my heart.

83. Having, however, caused a destruction of my enemies during their sleep, I shall then take rest and shall then sleep without anxiety."

CHAPTER V.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Kripa said :—

1. "A person who is not intelligent and who has not controlled, his passions, cannot, even if he waits dutifully upon his superiors, understand morality. This is my opinion.

2. In the same way an intelligent person, who does not practise humility, cannot understand morality.

3. By waiting all his life upon a learned person, a brave man, void of understanding, cannot know his duties like a wooden ladle unable to taste the soup.

4. By waiting upon a learned person for even a moment, the wiseman, however, succeeds in understanding his duties like the tongue tasting the soup.

5. An intelligent person who waits upon his superiors and who has controlled his passions succeeds in understaing all the rules of morality and never disputes what is accepted by all.

6. A sinful person of ungovernable, irreverent, wicked soul, commits sin in seeking his welfare by neglecting destiny.

7. Well-wishers try to restrain a friend from committing sin. He who allows himself to be dissuaded succeeds in gaining prosperity. He, that does otherwise suffers misery.

8. As a person who has lost his brains is restrained by soothing words, so should a friend be restrained by well-wishers. He that allows himself to be so restrained, never suffers misery.

9. When a wise friend is about to commit a wicked act, wise well-wishers repeatedly, and according to the best of their power, try to restrain him. Making up your mind to do what is really beneficial, and restraining yourself by your own self, do my command, O son, so that you may not have to repent afterwards.

11. In this world the destruction of sleeping persons is not praised and sanctioned by religion. The same is the case with persons that have thrown off their arms and come down from cars and horses.

12. They should not also be killed who say—we are yours—and also they who surrender themselves, and they whose locks are dishevelled, and they whose animals have been killed under them or whose cars have been broken.

13. All the Panchalas taking of their armours will sleep to-night, O lord. When asleep, they will be like dead man.

14. That wicked man who would injure them then, would sink in deep and limitless hell without a raft to save himself.

15. In this world you are celebrated as the foremost of all persons knowing the use of weapons, you have not as yet committed even a minute sin.

16. When the sun rises next morning and light shall clear up all things, you, like a second effulgent sun will vanquish the foe in battle.

17. This culpable deed, so imposible in one like you, will appear like a red spot on a white sheet. This is my opinion."

Ashwatthaman said :—

18. "Forsooth what you say, O maternal uncle, is true. The Pandavas, however, have, before this, deviated from the path of righteousness.

19. Before all the kings, before your eyes also, my father after he had laid down his weapons, was killed by Dhrishtadyumna.

20. Karna also, that best of car-warriors after the wheel of his car had sunk and he had been assailed by great distress, was killed by the holder of Gandiva.

21. Similarly Shantanu's son Bhishma, after he had laid aside his weapons was killed by Arjuna with Shikhandin placed in his rear.

22. So also, the great bowman Bhurishravas, while observing the Praya vow on the field of battle, was killed by Yuyudhana, disregarding the voice of all the kings.

23. Having met Bhima in battle with the mace, Duryodhana too has been killed unfairly by the former in the very presence of all the kings.

24. The king was all alone in the midst of a great number of powerful car-warriors standing around him. Under such circumstances was that king killed by Bhimasena.

25. The lamentations of the king, lying prostrate on the Earth with his thighs broken, that I have heard from the messengers circulating the news, are cutting me to the quick.

26. The unrighteous and sinful Panchalas, who have trumpeted virtue, are even such. Why do you not blame them who have transgressed the law of virtue.

27. Having killed the Panchalas, those destroyers of my father in the night when they are buried in sleep, I care not if I am born as a warm or an insect in my next birth.

28. My resolution is pressing me for its accomplishment. Urged on by it, how can I enjoy sleep and happiness.

29. That man is not yet born in the world, nor will be, who will be able to frustrate this resolution of mine."

Sanjaya continued :—

30. "Having said so, O king, the brave son of Drona yoked his horses to his car at a corner and started towards the direction of his enemies.

31. Then Bhoja and Sharadwat's son, those great persons, addressed him saying, —' Why do you yoke the horses to your car? What do you want to do?

32. We are determined to accompany you tomorrow, O foremost of men! We sympathise with you in weal and woe. You should not mistrust us.'

33. Remembering the slaughter of his father, Ashwatthaman in anger told them truly about the work that he had resolved to accomplish.

34. 'When my father having killed hundreds and thousands of warriors with sharp arrows, had thrown out his weapons, he was then killed by Dhrishtadyumna.

35. I shall kill that slayer to-day under similar circumstances. I shall to-day slay the sinful son of the king of the Panchalas by a sinful act.

36. It is my determination to slay like an animal that sinful prince of the Panchalas in such a way that he may not attain to regions gained by persons killed with weapons.'

37—38. Put on your coats of mail soon and take your bows and swords, and wait for me here, O foremost of car-warriors.'. —Having said so, Ashwatthaman got upon his car and started towards the enemy. Then Kripa, O king, and Kritavarman of the Satwata race, both followed him.

39. While the three went on against the enemy, they shone like three blazing fires in a sacrifice, fed with libations of clarified butter.

40. They proceeded, O lord, towards the encampment of the Panchalas within which everybody was asleep. Having approached the gate, Drona's son, that great car-warrior, stopped."

CHAPTER VI.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Seeing Drona's son stop at the gate of the camp, what, O Sanjaya, did those two great car-warriors, *viz.*, Kripa and Kritavarman, do? Tell me this."

Sanjaya said :—

2. "Inviting Kritavarman as also the great car-warrior Kripa, Drona's son, worked up with rage, approached the gate of the camp.

3. He there saw a being of huge frame capable of making the very hair erect and endued with the effulgence of the Sun or the Moon, guarding the entrance.

4. Round his loins was a tiger-skin covered with blood, and he had a black deer for his upper garment. He had for his sacred thread a large snake.

5. His arms were long and massive, and held many sorts of uplifted weapons. He had for his armlet a huge snake wound round his upper arm. His mouth was ablaze with flames of fire.

6. His teeth made his face terrible to look at. His mouth was open and dreadful. His face had a thousand of beautiful eyes.

7. His body and his dress were beyond description. Upon seeing him the very mountains would split into a thousand pieces.

7. Blazing flames of fire came out of his mouth and nose and ears and all those thousans of eyes.

9. From those blazing flames hundreds and thousands of Hrishikeshas came out armed with conchs and discs and maces.

9. Seeing that extraordinary being capable of striking terror to the entire world, Drona's son, without any fear covered him

with showers of celestial weapons. That being, however, devoured all those arrows discharged by Drona's son.

11. Like the Vadava fire devouring the waters of the ocean, that being devoured the arrows discharged by the son of Drona.

12. Seeing his arrowy showers prove fruitless, Ashwatthaman discharged at him a long dart burning like fire.

13. That blazing dart striking against that being, broke into pieces like a huge meteor at the end of a cycle breaking and falling down from the sky after striking against the Sun.

14. Without losing a moment Ashwatthaman drew from its sheath an excellent sky-coloured scimitar having a golden hilt. The scimitar came out like a snake from its whole.

15. The intelligent son of Drona then threw that excellent scimitar at that being. Approaching that being the weapon disappeared within his body like a mungoose disappearing in its hole.

16. W[illegible] up with anger the son of [illegible] Drona th[illegible] a blazing mace huge as [illegible] a pole se[illegible]nor of Indra. That being [illegible] devoure[illegible]ce also.

17. [illegible] [illegible]en all his weapons were exhausted, [illegible]wattthaman, looking around, saw the entire sky densely crowded with images of Janarddana.

18. Seeing that wonderful spectacle Drona's son, divested of weapons, recollected the words of Kripa, and burning with grief, said,—' He who hears not the beneficial words of friends, repents being overwhelmed with calamity, as does my foolish self for having disregarded my two well-wishers.

20. That fool who, disregarding the way laid down by the scriptures, tries to kill his enemies, falls off from the path of righteousness and is lost in sin.

21. One should not use weapons against kine, Brahmans, kings, women, friends, one's own mother, one's own preceptor, a weak man, an idiot, a blind man, a sleeping man, a terrified man, one just got up from sleep, an intoxicated person, a lunatic, and one that is careless. The ancient preceptors always preached this truth to men.

23. By neglecting the eternal way pointed out by the scriptures and by trying to follow a wrong path I have, however, fallen into a dreadful distress.

24. It is described by the wise as a terrible calamity when one through fear, cannot achieve a great feat after having tried to do the same.

25. By using my skill and power, I am unable to achieve that which I have promised? Human exertion is never more powerful than destiny.

26. If any action of a man that is undertaken becomes unsuccessful through destiny, the actor becomes like one who deviating from the path of virtue is lost in the wilderness of sin.

27. The wise describe defeat as foolishness when one having undertaken a task abandons it from fear.

28. For the wickedness of my attempt, this great calamity has befallen me, otherwise Drona's son would never had been compelled to hold back from battle.

29, Again this being, who is before me, is most wonderful. He stands there like the uplifted rod of divine punishment. Thinking much even, I cannot recognise this being.

30. Forsooth, that being is the dreadful outcome of this my sinful determination which I had attempted to achieve by unfair means, He stands there for baffling my resolution.

31. It seems, therefore, that my ceasing from fight had been ordained by destiny. It is useless for me to try to accomplish my resolution unless destiny becomes favorable.

32. I shall, therefore, at this hour, seek the protection of the powerful Mahadeva. He will remove this dreadful rod of divine punishment uplifted before me.

33. I will seek refuge with that god, that source of all good, *viz.*, the lord of Uma, otherwise called Kaparddin, adorned with a garland of human skulls, that plucker of Bhaga's eyes, called also, Rudra and Hara.

34. In ascetic practices and power, he far excells all the gods. I shall, therefore, seek refuge with Girisha armed with trident.' "

CHAPTER VII.

(SAUPITKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said:—

1—4. "Having reflected thus, the son of Drona, O king, got down from his car and stood, bending his head to that supreme god, and said,—' I seek the protection of fierce, Sthanu, Shiva, Rudra, Sarva, Ishana, Ishwara, Girisha, of that boon-giving god who is the Creator and lord of the universe; of the blue-throated deity,

who is without birth, who is called Shakra, who destroyed the sacrifice of Daksha, and who is called Hara; of Him whose form is the universe, who has three eyes, who has many forms, and who is the lord of Uma; of Him who lives in crematoriums, who is energetic, who is the master of ghosts and who is endued with undecaying prosperity and power; of Him who holds a club having a skull on the top, who is called Rudra, who bears matted locks on his head, and who is a Brahmacharin.

5. Purifying my soul, and possessing small energy, I adore the Destroyer of the three cities, and offer myself as the victim.

6. I sing thy glory. Thy purposes are never baffled. Thou art clad in skin; thou hast red hair on thy head; thou art blue-throated; thou art unbearable; thou art irresistible.

7—11. Thou art pure; thou art the Creator of Brahman; thou art Bramah; thou art a Brahmacharin; thou art an observer of vows; thou art given to ascetic austerities; thou art infinite; thou art the refuge of all hermits; thou hast many forms; thou art the master of ghosts; thou art three-eyed; thou art fond of thy companions; thou art always seen by Kuvera; thou art dear to Gauri's heart; thou art the father of Kumara; thou art twany; thou hast a bull for thy carrier; thou art clad in a subtile dress; thou are most dreadful; thou art eager to adorn Uma; thou art higher than all that is high; thou art higher than everything; there is nothing higher than thou; thou art the holder of weapons; thou art immeasurable, and thou art the protector of all quarters; thou art clad in golden armour; thou art divine; thou hast the moon as an ornament on thy brow. With fixed attention, I seek refuge with thee, O god!

12. In order that I may successfully tide over this calamity, I sacrifice unto thee, the purest of the pure, offering for thy acceptance the five elements of which my body is made.'

13. Knowing this to be his resolution for accomplishing his object, a golden altar appeared before the great son of Drona.

14. Upon the altar, O king, appeared a blazing fire, filling all the points of the horizon, cardinal and subsidiary, with its effulgence.

15—16. Many powerful beings also, of burning mouths and eyes, of many feet, heads, and arms, adorned with arm-lets set with gems, and with uplifted arms, and looking like elephants and mountains, appeared there. Their faces resembled those of hares, boars, camels, horses, jackals, cows, bears, cats, tigers, pards, crows, apes and parrots.

18—20. And the faces of some were like those of snakes, and others had faces like those of ducks. And all of them were highly effulgent. And the faces of some were like those of wood-peckers, and jays; of tortoises, alligators, porpoises, huge sharks, and whales; of lions, cranes, pigeons, elephants, and shags.

21. Some had faces like those of ravens and hawks; some had ears on their hands; some had thousand eyes; some had huge stomachs; and some had no flesh.

22. And some, O king, had no heads, and some had faces like those of bears. The eyes of some were like fire, and some had fiery features.

23. The hair on the heads and bodies of some were burning, and some had four arms, and some, O king, had faces like those of sheep and goats.

24. The color of some was like that of conchs, and some had faces like conchs, and the ears of some were like [illegible]i some wore garlands made of as also the the voices of some resembled 's son, wor- conchs. d the gate

25. Some had matted lo[illegible] on their heads, and some had five tufts of hair or the head, and some had bald heads. Some had lean stomachs; some had four teeth, some had four tongues, some had ears straight like arrows, and some had diadems on their brows.

26. Some had strings of grass on their bodies, O king, and some had cruly locks. Some had head-gears made of cloth, some had coronets, some had beautiful faces, and some were bedecked with ornaments.

27. Some had ornaments made of lotuses, and some were adorned with flowers. They were hundreds and thousands in number.

28. Some were armed with Sataghnis, some with thunder, and some had mushalas in their hands. Some had Bhushundis, some had nooses, and some had maces in their hands.

29. Some had quivers containing best arrows on their backs, and all were dreadful in battle. Some had standard containing banners and bells, and some were armed with battle-axes.

30. Some had large nooses in their hands, and some had clubs and bludgeons. Some had strong posts in their hands, some had scimitars, and some had snakes with raised hood for their crowns.

31. Some had huge snakes for armlets, and some had beautiful ornaments on their body. Some were covered with dust, some with mire, and all were clad in white robes and garment. Some had blue limbs while others had tawny limbs. And some were beardless.

32. Those beings, called companions, having golden complexions, and filled with joy, played upon drums, horns, cymbals, Jharjharas, Anakas and Gomukhas.

33. And some sang and some danced about crying hideously, and some leapt forward and cut capers and jumped sideways.

34. Quick in their motions, they ran about most dreadfully, the hair on their heads waving in the air, like huge infuriate elephants and frequently sending up loud roars.

35. Terrible, and armed with lances and battle-axes, they were clad in robes of various colors and decked with beautiful garlands and unguents.

36. Adorned with Angadas set with gems, and [illegible]ith uplifted arms, they were po[illegible] great courage. Capable of k[illegible]s by force, they were irres[illegible]ess.

37. [illegible]ks of blood and fat and other animal matter, they lived on the flesh and entrails of animals. Some had their locks tied up above their heads. Some had single tufts on their heads; some had rings on their ears; and some had stomachs resembling earthen cooking vessels.

38. Some were of very short statures, and some were very high. Some were tall and very dreadful. Some had grim features, some had long lips, and some had long gential organs.

39. Some had rich and various kinds of crowns upon their heads; and some had bald heads, and the heads of others were covered with matted locks. They could bring down the sky with the sun, moon, and stars, on Earth, and exterminating the four orders of created things.

40. They know not fear, and are capable of enduring the frowns of Hara.

41. They always act as they like and are the masters of the lord of the three worlds. Always playing merrily they are perfect masters of speech and are entirely shorn of pride.

42. Having got the eight sorts of divine attributes, they are never elated with pride. The divine Hara always wonders at their feats.

43. They are devout worshippers of Mahadeva. Worshipped by them in thought, speech, and deed, the great god protects those worshippers of his, regarding them, in thought, speech, and deed, as his own children.

44. Worked up with rage, they always drink the blood and fat of all haters of Brahma. They always drink also the Soma juice having four kind of taste.

45. Having worshipped the trident-handed deity with Vedic recitations, with Brahmacharya, with ascetic austerities, and with self-restraint, they have secured the companionship of Bhava.

46. The divine Maheshwara, that lord of the past, the present, and the future, as also Parvati, eat with those various clans of powerful beings that partake of their own nature.

47. Causing the universe resound with the sound of various kinds of instruments, with noise of laughter, with loud sounds and cries and leonine roars, they approached Ashwatthaman.

48—49. Landing Mahadeva and spreading an effulgence all around, desirous of increasing the honor of Ashwatthaman and the glory of the great Hara, and wishing to ascertain the extent of Ashwatthaman's power, and desirous also of witnessing the destruction during the hour of sleep, armed with terrible and fierce bludgeons and fiery wheels and battle-axes, that host of strange beings, having terrible forms, came from all sides.

50. They were capable of striking terror to the three worlds by their sight. Beholding them, the, powerful Ashwatthaman however, felt no fear.

51. Armed with bow, and fingers cased in fences made of iguana skins, Drona's son himself offered up his own self as a victim to Mahadeva.

52. Bows were the fuel, and sharp arrows were the ladles, and his own great soul was the libation, in that act of sacrifice.

53. The brave and angry son of Drona then, with mantras offered up his own soul as the victim.

54. Having with dreadful rites worshipped Rudra, of dreadful deeds, Ashwatthaman, with joined hands said to that high-souled deity,—

Ashwattaman said:—

55. 'Born in Angira's family I am about to pour my soul, O god, as a libation on this fire. Accept, O lord, this victim.

56. In this hour of distress, O Soul of the universe, I offer up my own self as the victim, from devotion to thee and with heart fixed in meditation.

57. All creatures exist in thee and thou dost exist in all creatures. Thou art a combination of all high attributes.

58. O lord, O thou that art the refuge of all creatures, I wait as a libation for thee, since I am unable to defeat my enemies. Accept me, O god.'

59. Having said so, Drona's son, ascending that sacrificial altar on which a fire was burning, offered himself up as the victim and entered that burning fire.

60—62. Seeing him stand fixed and with uplifted hands and as an offering unto himself, the divine Mahadeva appeared personally and smilingly said—'With truth, purity, sincerity, resignation, ascetic practices, vows, forgiveness, devotion, patience, thought and word, I have been duly worshipped by Krishna of pure deeds. For this there is none dearer to me than Krishna.

63. For honoring him and at his request I have protected the Panchalas and displayed various sorts of illusion.

64. By protecting the Panchalas I have honored him. They have, however, been assailed by Time. The lease of their lives is over.'

65. Having said so to the great Ashwatthaman, the divine Mahadeva entered Ashwatthaman's body after giving him an excellent and polished sword.

66. Possessed by that divine being, Drona's son was worked up with energy. On account of that energy derived from god-head, he became all powerful in battle.

67. Many invisible beings and Rakshasas went along his right and his left as he started like the lord Mahadeva himself, for entering the camp of his enemies,"

CHAPTER VIII.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "While Drona's son, that great car-warrior, thus proceeded towards the enemy's camp, did Kripa and Bhoja stop from fear.

2. I hope those two great car-warriors, stopped by mean guards, did not fly away secretly, considering their opponents irresistible.

3. Or, have they, after despoiling the camp, the Somakas, and the Pandavas, followed, while still fighting, the highly illustrious path in which Duryodhana has gone.

4. Are those heroes, killed by the Panchalas, sleeping on the naked Earth? Did they perform any feat? Tell me all this, O Sanjaya."

Sanjaya said :—

5. "When the great son of Drona proceeded towards the camp, Kripa and Kritavarman waited at the gate.

6. Seeing them ready to work Ashwatthaman was over-joyed, and addressing them whisperingly, O king, said,—'If you two exert, you can exterminate all the Kshariyas.

7. What should I say, therefore, of this remnant of the (Pandava) army, particularly when it is asleep.

8. I shall enter the camp and move about like Yama. I am sure that you two will act in such a way that no man may escape alive.'

9. Having said so, the sos also the entered the extensive camp of s son, wor-. Shorn of fear, he entered into d the gate where there was no door.

10. Having entered the camp the great hero proceeded, guided by signs, very softly towards Dhrishtadyumna's quarters.

11. Having displayed great feats the Panchalas had been much exhausted in battle. They were sleeping confidently collected together, and by the side of one another.

12. Entering into Dhrishtadyumna's apartment, O Bharata, Drona's son saw the prince of the Panchalas sleeping before him on his bed.

13. He lay on a beautiful sheet of silk upon a rich and excellent bed. Excellent wreaths of flowers were scattered upon that bed and it was perfumed with the powder of incense.

14. Having received a kick from Ashwatthaman the high-souled prince who was sleeping trustfully and fearlessly on his bed, awoke.

15. Feeling that kick, the great prince, irresistible in battle, got up and recognised Drona's son standing before him.

16. As he was rising from his bed, the great Ashwatthaman caught him by the hair of his head and began to press him down on the Earth with his hands.

17. Thus pressed] by Ashwatthaman with great force the prince, from fear as also from sleepiness, was not able to exert his might at that time.

18. Striking him with his foot, O king, on both his throat and breast while his victim roared, Drona's son tried to kill him as if he were an animal.

19. The Panchala prince tore Ashwatthaman with his nails and at last slowly said,—' O preceptor's son, kill me with a weapon, do not delay, O best of men, let me, through you go to the blessed regions.'

20. Having said this much, that slayer of foes, *viz.*, the son of the Panchala king, assailed by that great hero, became silent.

21. Hearing those indistinct sounds of his, Drona's son said,—'O wretch of your race, there is no region for those that kill their preceptor. For this, O wicked man, you do not deserve to be killed with any weapon.'

22. While saying so, Ashwatthaman, worked up with rage, began to strike the vital parts of his victim with his heels, and killed his f[illegible] like a lion killing an infuriate e[illegible]

27. I[illegible]

[illegible]ing of [illegible]e cries of that hero, while he w[illegible]aving,—[illegible]ain, his wives and guards that were in [illegible] ent all got up, O king.

24. Seeing some body crushing the prince with superhuman force, they took the assailant for a supernatural being, and, therefore, made no noise from fear.

26. Having sent him to Yama's abode by such means the greatly energetic Ashwatthaman went out and getting upon his beautiful car waited there.

26. Indeed, coming out of Dhrishtadyumna's camp, O king, Ashwatthman made all the points of the horizon resound with his roars, and then proceeded on his car to other parts of the camp for killing his enemies.

27. After Drona's son, that great car-warrior, had gone away, the women and all the guards began to bewail.

28. Seeing their king killed, all the wives of Dhrishtadyumna, cried aloud sorrowfully.

29. Hearing their lamentations many powerful, Kshatriyas, awaking, put on their armour and came there for enquiring after the cause of their lamentations.

30. Terrified at seeing Ashwatthaman, those ladies in piteous tones asked the men to follow him without delay.

31. They said, we know not whether he is a Rakshasa or a human being. Having killed the Panchala king he waits there.

32. Thereat those foremost of warriors suddenly surrounded Drona's son. The latter killed them all by means of the Rudra weapon.

33. Having killed Dhrishtadyumna and all those followers of his, he saw Uttamaujas sleeping on his bed.

34. Attacking him with his foot on the throat and chest, Drona's son killed that great hero also while the latter suffered greatly.

35. Coming up and taking his comrade for being slain by a Rakshasa, Yudhamanyu speedily struck Drona's son in the chest with a mace.

36. Rushing towards him, Ashwatthaman seized him and brought him down to the ground and killed him like an animal while the latter cried aloud.

37. Having killed Yudhamanyu thus, that hero went against the other car-warriors of the king, who were all asleep.

38. He killed those trembling heroes like animals in a sacrifice. Taking up his sword then, he killed many others.

39. Proceeding along the various roads of the camp one after another, Ashwatthaman, an expert in the use of the sword, saw various Gulmas and killed in no time the unarmed and tired warriors sleeping within them.

40. With that excellent sword he cut off combatants and horses and elephants. Bathed in blood, he appeared like death himself commissioned by Time.

41. Making his foes to tremble by the repeated blows of his sword, Ashwatthaman was covered with blood.

42. Covered as he was with blood, and holding a blazing sword, his form, as he moved about in battle, became exceedingly terrible and superhuman.

43. Those who got up from sleep, O Kuru-hero, became stupefied with the loud noise they heard. Seeing Drona's son, they looked at each other's faces and trembled with fear.

44. Seeing the form of that crusher of foes, those Kshatriyas took him to be a Rakshasa and shut up their eyes.

45. Of terrible form, he moved about in the camp like Yama himself, and at last saw the sons of Draupadi and the residue of the Somakas.

46. Terrified by the noise, and learning that Dhrishtadyumna had been killed those great car-warriors, *viz.*, the sons of

Draupadi, armed with bows, shot arrows on Drona's son.

47. Aroused by their noise the Prabhadrakas with Shikhandin at their head, began to strike the son of Drona with their arrows.

48. Seeing them cast their arrows on him, Drona's son uttered a loud roar and became desirous of killing those great car-warriors.

49. Remembering the death of his father, Ashwatthaman became furious with rage, getting down from his car, he made a desperate rush against his enemies.

50. Taking up his bright shield decked with a thousand moons and his massive and celestial sword decked with gold, the great Ashwatthaman rushed against the sons of Draupadi.

51. Then that foremost of men, in that dreadful battle, struck Prativindhya in the abdomen at which the latter, O king, fell down lifeless on the Earth.

52. Having pierced the son of Drona with a lance, the brave Sutasoma rushed at him with his uplifted sword.

53. Ashwatthaman, however, cut off Sutasoma's hand holding the sword, and once more struck him on the back. Thereat Sutasoma dropped down dead.

54. Taking up a car-wheel with his two hands, the brave Shatanika, the son of Nakula, violently struck Ashwatthaman on the breast.

55. The great Ashwatthaman violently assailed Shatanika after he had discharged that car-wheel. Exceedingly agitated, Nakula's son dropped down upon the earth, upon which Drona's son severed his head from his body.

56. Then taking up a spiked bludgeon, Shrutakarman attacked Ashwatthaman. Furiously rushing at Drona's son, he struck him violently on the left part of his forehead.

57. Ashwatthaman struck Shrutakarman with his excellent sword on the face. Senseless and his face disfigured, he dropped down dead on the Earth.

58. At this noise, the heroic Shrutakirti, that great car-warrior, coming up, made a downpour of arrows on Ashwatthaman.

59. Counteracting those arrowy showers with his shield, Ashwatthaman sundered from his enemy's trunk his beautiful head bedecked with ear-rings.

60. Then the destroyer of Bhishma, *viz.*, the great Shikhandin, with all the Prabhadrakas, assailed the hero from every side with various sorts of weapons. Shikhandin struck Ashwatthaman with an arrow in the midst of his two eye-brows.

61. Worked up with anger at this, the powerful son of Drona, approached Shikhandin and cut him in two parts with his sword.

62. Having killed Shikhandin, Ashwatthaman, filled with rage, rushed furiously against the other Prabhadrakas. He proceeded also against the residue of Virata's force.

63. Gifted with great strength, Drona's son killed the sons, the grandsons, and the followers of Drupada, taking them out one after another.

64. An expert in the use of the sword, Ashwatthaman then, rushing against other warriors, cut them down with his sword.

65—66. The warriors in the Pandava camp saw that embodiment as representing Death-night, of black visage, and having bloody mouth and bloody eyes, wearing crimson garlands and smeared with crimson unguents, clad in a single piece of red cloth, with a noose in h[illegible] and resembling an elderly lady, [illegible]s also the dreadful song, and standing er[illegible]s son, wor[illegible] their eyes, and about to lead a[illegible] the gate and horses and elephants all b[illegible] a strong rope.

67. She appeared to take away various kinds of spirits, with dishevelled hair and bound together in a chord, as also, O king, many powerful car-warriors divested of their weapons.

68. On previous days, O sire the leading warriors, of the Pandava camp used to see in their dreams that figure carrying away the sleeping warriors and Drona's son striking them behind.

69. The Pandava soldiers dreamt that lady and Drona's son every night from the day when the battle between the Kurus and the Pandavas first began.

70. Assailed before by Destiny, they were now struck by Drona's son who terrified them all with the dreadful cries.

71. Assailed by Destiny, and remembering the spectacle they had dreamt, the brave warriors of the Pandava camp, identified it with what they now saw.

72. At the noise made, hundreds and thousands of Pandava bowmen in the camp awoke from their sleep.

73. Ashwatthaman cut off the legs of some, and the hips of others, and cut some in their back, moving about like the Destroyer himself let loose by Time.

74. The Earth, O lord, was soon strewn with human beings that were disfigured or trampled down by elephants and horses.

75. Many of them loudly cried—What is this?—Who is this one?—What is this noise?—Who is doing what?—While crying thus Drona's son killed them.

76. That best of strikers, *viz.*, the son of Drona, sent to the abode of Yama all those Pandus and Srinjayas who were deprived of armour and weapons.

77. Terrified at that noise many got up from sleep. Stricken with fear, and beside themselves with sleep, those warriors seemed to disappear before the fury of Ashwatthaman.

78. The thighs of many were paralysed and some were so stupefied that they lost their energy. Crying and stricken with fear, they began to kill one another.

79. Drona's son once more mounted his car, and taking up his bow sent many with his arrows to Yama's abode.

80. Other brave warriors and foremost of men that got up from sleep, as they [illegible]ds Ashwatthaman, were killed [illegible] could approach him and were [illegible]s victims to that Death-night.

81. [illegible]hing many with that best of cars, he moved through the encampment, and enshrouded his foes with repeated showers of arrows.

82. Again with that beautiful shield of his, bedecked with a hundred moons, and with that sky-colored sword of his, he moved about amidst his enemies.

83. Like an elephant agitating a large lake, Drona's son, who cannot be checked in battle, agitated the camp of the Pandavas.

84. Awaked by the noise, O king, many warriors, still possessed by sleep and fear ran hither and thither.

85. Many cried and many uttered unmeaning jargon. Many could not secure their weapons and armour.

86. The hairs of many were dishevelled, and many could not recognise one another. Having got up from sleep, many fell down, fatigued; some walked purposely here and there.

87. Breaking their chords, elephants and horses passed excreta and urine.

88. Many, huddled together, set up a great confusion, some stricken with fear, prostrated themselves on the Earth. The animals of the camp crushed them there.

89. While the camp was in this state of confusion, Rakshasas, O king, cried aloud in joy, O Bharata-chief.

90. That loud noise, O king, of the ghostly beings, filled all the points of the horizon and the sky.

91. Hearing the piteous cries of elephants, horses, breaking their chords, rushed hither and thither, crushing the warriors in the camp.

92. As those animals rushed here and there, the dust raised by them made the night doubly dark.

93. When that thick darkness set in, the warriors in the camp became perfectly bewildered; fathers recognised not their sons, brothers recognised not their brothers.

94. Elephants, striking riderless elephants, and horses, striking riderless horses, assailed and broke and crushed the people that stood in their way.

95. Confused combatants rushed and killed one another, and felling those that stood in their way crushed them into pieces.

96. Senseless and overcome with sleep, and covered with darkness, men, urged on by fate, killed their own comrades.

97. The guards, living the gates iu their charge, and those at duty at the outposts leaving their posts, fled away for their lives, senseless, and not knowing where they proceeded.

98. They killed one another, the slayers, O lord, not recognising the killed. Assailed by fate, they cried after their fathers and sons.

99. While they fled, leaving behind their friends and relatives, they called upon one another, mentioning their families and names.

100. Uttering cries of lamentation others dropped down on the Earth. In the thick of the batle Drona's son, recognising them, killed them all.

101. While being killed, other Kshatriyas lost their senses, and, striken with fear, tried to fly away from the camps.

102. Those men that tried to fly away from the camp for saving their lives were killed by Kritavarman and Kripa at the gate.

103. Having no weapons, instruments and armour, and with dishevelled hair, they clasped their hands. Trembling with fear, they stood on the ground, The two Kuru-warriors. however, (who were on their cars) gave none an opportunity.

104. None amongst those that escaped from the camp was allowed to go by those

two wicked persons, *viz.*, Kripa and Kritavarman.

105. Then again for pleasing Drona's son, those two set fire to the Pandava camp in three places.

106. When the camp was lighted, Ashwatthaman, O king, moved about sword in hand, and crushing his foes with great skill.

107. Some of his brave enemies rushed furiously towards him and some ran here and there. That foremost of men, with his sword, deprived all of them of their lives.

108. Filled with rage the brave son of Drona, struck down some of the warriors, cutting them in two with his sword like sessame stalks.

109. The Earth, O Chief of Bharata was covered with the bodies of foremost of men, and horses and elephants huddled together and bewailing.

110. When thousands of men had fallen down lifeless, numberless headless trunks stood up and fell down.

111. Ashwatthaman, O Bharata, cut off arms, adorned with armlets and holding weapons, and heads, and things resembling trunks of elephants, and hands, and feet.

112. The great son of Drona wounded the backs of some, cut off the heads of some, and caused some to retreat from the fight.

113. He cut off some at the middle, and cut off the ears of others, and struck others on the shoulders, and pressed down the heads of some into their trunks.

114. As Ashwatthaman moved about in this way killing thousands of men, the deep night became more dreadful for the darkness that set in.

115. The Earth became terrible to look at, covered with thousads of human beings, dead and dying, and numberless horses and elephants.

116. Severed by the angry son of Drona, his enemies dropped down on the Earth that was then covered with Yakshas and Rakshasas and rendered frightful with (broken) cars and killed horses and elephants.

117. Some called upon their brothers, and some upon their fathers and some upon their sons. And some said—'The son of Dhritarastra in anger could never perform such acts in battle as these which wicked Rakshasas have done during the hour of our sleep! It is only for the absence of the Parthas that this great destruction is going on!

119. That son of Kunti who had Janarddana for his protector, is incapable of being defeated even by celestials, Asuras, Gandharvas, Yakshas, and Rakshasas.

120. Devoted to Brahma, truthful in speech, self-controlled, and kind to all creatures, that son of Pritha, called Dhananjaya never kills one who is asleep, or one who is careless, or one who has thrown off his weapons, or one who joins his hands for protection, or one who is retreating, or one whose hairs have been dishevelled.

121. Alas, they are wicked Rakshasas, who are perpetrating such terrible acts upon ourselves!'—Saying so, many laid themselves down.

122. The loud sound caused by the cries and groans of men stopped, within a short time.

123. The earth being drenched with blood, O king, that thick and dreadful dust soon disappeared.

124. Thousands of men who were writhing in agnoy, stricken with anxiety, and filled with despair, were killed by Ashwatthaman like Rudra k[illegible] animals.

125. Many who laid them[illegible] on the ground clasping one a[illegible], and many who tried to fly away, and many who tried to hide themselves, and many who fought, were all killed by the son of Drona.

126. Burnt by fire and killed by Ashwatthaman, the men, beside themselves, killed one another.

127. Before half the night was over, the son of Drona, O king, killed the large army of the Pandavas.

128. That night, so terrible and destructive of men and elephants and horses filled with joy all creatures that range in darkness.

129. Many Rakshasas and Pishachas were seen there, eating human flesh and drinking the blood.

130. They were dreadful, tawny-colored, terrible, of admantine teeth, and covered with blood. With matted locks on their heads, their thighs were long and massive; they had five feet, their stomachs were huge.

131. Their fingers were set backwards. They had harsh temper and ugly features, and their voice was loud and terrible. They had rows of tinkling bells tied to their persons. They had blue throats, they looked very frightful.

132, High cruel and incapable of being looked at, without fear, and hating nothing,

they came there with their children and wives. Rakshasas of various forms that came there.

133. Drinking the blood that flowed in streams, they were filled with joy and began to dance in separate parties.—"This is excellent!—This is pure!—This is very sweet!"—these were the words they gave expression to.

134. Having lived upon fat, marrow, bones and blood, others carnivorous creatures, began to eat the delicate parts of corpses.

135—136. Others, drinking the fat that ran in streams, ran about naked over the field. Tens of thousands and millions of other carnivorous beings having different faces of great ferocity, and living upon dead flesh, came there. Grim and gigantic Rakshasas came there in numerous bands.

137. Other ghostly creatures overjoyed with eating enough also came there in that dreadful carnage.

138. When morning came, Ashwatthaman wanted to leave the camp.

[illegible] 27. I was then covered with human [illegible]ing of K[illegible]he held the sword so firmly that [illegible]aving,—[illegible]d sword, O king, became one.

140. Having walked in the path of wicked warriors, Ashwatthaman, after that destruction, looked like the blazing fire at the end of the cycle, reducing all creatures to ashes.

141. Having perpetrated that massacre according to his promise, and having troddenn that untrodden way, Drona's son, O king, forgot his sorrow for the death of his father.

142. The Pandava camp, was perfectly calm when Drona's son had entered it in the night, because all the inmates were asleep. After the slaughter of the night, when all became once more quiet, Ashwatthaman came out from it.

143. Having come out of the encampment, the brave Ashwatthaman met his two companions and, filled with joy, communicated to them his achievment gladdening them, O king, by the news.

144. Those two, in return, who always sought his good, gave him the pleasant news of how they also had killed thousands of Panchalas and Srinjayas at the gates.

145. Thus did that night bring on the destruction of the Somakas who were carelessly sunk in sleep.

146. The course of time, forsooth, is irresistible. Those who had rooted us out were themselves exterminated now."

Dhritarashtra said :—

147. "Why is it that that great car-warrior, *viz.*, the son of Drona, did not perform such an act before, although he had tried his best for conferring victory upon Duryodhana?

48. Why did that great bowman do this after the death of the wretched Duryodhana? You should tell me all this!"

Sanjaya said :—

149. "Through fear of the Parthas, O descendant of Kuru, Ashwatthaman could not perform such a feat then! It was for the absence of the Partha and the intelligent Keshava as also of Satyaki, that Drona's son could achieve it.

150. Who is there, not even excluding the lord Indra, that can kill them before these heroes? Besides, O king, Ashwatthaman could achieve this only because the men were all asleep.

151—153. Having caused that great destruction of the Pandava forces, those three great car-warriors, *viz.*, Ashwatthaman and Kripa and Kritavarman, meeting together, said,—'Good luck.'—His two companions congratulated Ashwatthaman, and embraced him. Joyfully the latter said :—'All the Panchalas, as also all the sons of Draupadi, have been killed. All the Somakas and the remnant of the Matsyas, have been killed by me.

154. Crowned with success, let us soon go there where the king is! If the king be still alive, we will communicate to him this joyful news.'"

CHAPTER IX.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Sanjaya said :—

1. "Having killed all the Panchalas and the sons of Draupadi, the three Kuru heroes together came where Duryodhana was lying, struck down by the enemy.

2. Arrived there, they found that life had not been wholly extinct in the king. Getting down from their cars, they encircled your son.

3. The Kuru king, O Sire, was lying there with broken thighs. Almost senseless, his life was about to pass away. He was vomiting blood at times, stretching downwards.

4. He was then encircled by a large number of carnivorous animals of dread-

ful forms, and by wolves and hyenas, that stood near for feeding upon his body.

5. With great difficulty the king was keeping off those beasts of prey that waited there for feasting upon his body. He was suffering great pain.

6. Seeing him thus lying on the Earth, covered with blood, the three heroes who were the only remnant of his army, *viz*, Ashwatthaman, Kripa and Kritavarman, were possessed with grief and sat surrounding him.

7. Encircled by those three great car-warriors who were covered with blood and who sighed heavily, the Kuru king looked like a sacrificial altar surrounded by the three heroes weeping in sorrow.

9. Wiping the blood from off his face with their hands, they bewailed piteously in the hearing of the king lying prostate on the field of battle.

Kripa said :—

10. 'There is nothing difficult which Destiny cannot bring about, since even this king Duryodhana who was the master of eleven Akshauhinis of troops, sleeps on the naked ground, struck down by the foe and bathed in blood.

11. See, fond as he was of the mace, that mace made of pure gold is still by the side of the king whose lustre still resembles that of pure gold.

12. In no battle did that mace leave this hero! Even now, when he is about to go to heaven, that weapon abandons not this illustrious hero.

13. See that weapon, made of pure gold, is still by the side of this hero like a loving wife by the side of her husband stretched on his bed in his chamber of sleep.

14. Witness the misfortunes brought about by Time! This destroyer of enemies who used to walk at the head of all crowned kings, is now covered with the dust.

15. He who had formerly struck down many enemies and caused them lie on the naked earth that king of the Kurus, lies to-day on the bare ground, struck down by enemies.

16. He to whom hundreds of kings used to bow down in fear, lies to-day on the battle-field, encircled by beasts of prey!

17. The Brahmanas formerly used to wait upon this lord for money. Alas, beasts of prey wait upon him to-day for feasting upon his body.'

Sanjaya said :—

18. Seeing that Kuru's Chief lying on the earth Aswatthaman, O best of the Bharatas, bewailed thus piteously.—'O foremost of kings, all people recognised you as the best of all bowmen! People also said that in mace fight you, a disciple of Shankarshana, were like Kuvera himself.

20. How then, O sinless one, could Bhima find any defect in you. You were ever powerful and skilful. He on the other hand, O king, is a wicked man.

21. Forsooth, O king, time in this world is more powerful than every thing else, for we see even you struck down by Bhimasena in battle.

22. Alas, how could the wretched and mean Vrikodara unfairly strike you down, righteous as you always were in all your action. Forsooth! Time is irresistible.

23. Alas, having invited you to a fair fight, Bhimasena, displaying his power broke your thighs.

24. Fie on that wretched [illegible]ira also the [illegible] who allowed the head of one son, wor[illegible] unfairly in battle to be touch[illegible] the gat[illegible] foot.

25. In all battles warriors will certainly censure Vrikodara as long as the world will exist. Forsooth, you have been struck down unrighteously.

26. The valiant Rama of Yadu's family, O king, always used to see that there is no one equal to Duryodhana.

27. The Vrishni hero in mace fight, O Bharata, used to boast of you, O lord, in every assembly. Saying, Duryodhana, of the race of Kuru, is a worthy disciple of mine.

28. You have achieved that end which Rishis consider to be the mete of a Kshatriya killed in battle facing the foe.

29. I do not, O foremost of men, grieve for you, O Duryodhana! I grieve only for your mother Gandhari and your father, childless as they now are.

30. Stricken with grief, they will have to travel over the Earth, begging their food! Fie on the Vrishni hero Krishna, and on wicked Arjuna.

31. They consider themselves as moral, yet both of them were indifferent while you were killed! How will the other Pandavas, shameless as they are, O king, speak of the manner in which they have brought about your death?

32. You are highly fortunate, O son of Gandhari, since you have been killed on

he field of battle, O foremost of men, while fighting fairly with the enemy.

33. Alas, what will be the condition of Gandhari who is now childless, and who had lost all her kinsmen and relatives what also will be the condition of the blind king.

34. Fie on Kritavarma, on myself, as also on the powerful car-warrior Kripa, since we have not yet gone to heaven with your royal self.

35. Fie on us, mean as we are, since we do not follow you—the grantor of all wishes, the protector of all men, and the benefactor of all your subjects.

36. Through you the houses of Kripa, of myself, and of my father, as well as those of our dependants, are full of riches.

37. Through your grace, ourselves with our friends and relatives have celebrated many leading sacrifices with profuse presents to Brahmanas.

38. Where shall such sinful persons as ourselves now go, since you have gone to hea[illegible]ng with you all the kings of the E[illegible] 27. I [illegible]ing of Kuse we three, O king, do not to[illegible]ving,—who are about to achieve the highest end (of life), we are bewailing thus.

40. Deprived of your company, of wealth, alas, what will be our lot since we do not follow you.

41. Forsooth, O Kuru king, we shall have to rove in sorrow on the Earth! Deprived of you, O king, where can we enjoy peace and where can we have happiness.

42. Going from this world, O king, and meeting with those powerful car-warriors gone before you, show your respect to them, at my request, according to their rank and age.

43. Having adored your preceptor, that foremost of bowmen, tell him, O king, that Dhrishtadyumna has been killed by me.

44—45. Embrace king Valhika, that great car-warrior, as also the king of the Sindhus, and Somadatta, and Bhurishravas, and the other foremost of kings gone before you to heaven. At my request, embrace all of them and enquire after their well-being.

Sanjaya continued:—

46—47. Having addressed thus the senseless king, and who was lying with broken thighs, Ashwatthaman once more looked at him and said:—' If, O Duryodhana, you have any vitality in you still, listen to these agreeable words. On the side of the Pandavas, only seven are alive, and among the Dhartarashtras, only we three survive.

48. The seven on their side are the five brothers and Vasudeva and Satyaki; on our side, we three are myself and Kripa and Kritavarman.

49. All the sons of Draupadi as also all the children of Dhrishtadyumna have been killed. All the Panchalas too, as also the remnant of the Matsyas, O Bharata, have been killed.

50. Mark the vengeance taken for their offence. The Pandavas are now childless. While asleep, the men and animals in their camp have all been killed.

51. Entering into their camp in the night, O king, I have killed the sinful Dhrishtadyumna, as one kills an animal.'

52—53. Having heard these words that were so agreeable to his heart, Duryodhana regained his consciousness and replied:— ' That which neither Ganga's son, nor Karna, nor your father, could accomplish, you have done to-day, accompanied by Kripa and Bhoja.

54. You have killed that mean wretch, *viz.*, Dhrishtadyumna, who was the Commander of the Pandava forces, as also Shikhandin. For this I regard myself equal to Indra himself.

55. Good be to you all. May you prosper. All of us will again meet together in heaven.'—Having said this the great king of the Kurus became silent.

56. Casting off his sorrow for all his killed kinsmen, he then breathed his last. His soul went to holy heaven, while his body only remained on Earth.

57. Thus, O king, your son Duryodhana died. Having caused the battle first, he was killed by his enemies.

58. The three heroes repeatedly embraced the king and looked steadfastly at him. They then got upon their cars.

59. Having heard the piteous cries of Drona's son, I came away early in the morning towards the city.

60. Thus the armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas have been killed. Great and terrible has been that destruction, O king, brought on by your evil policy.

61. After your son's death, I was striken with grief and the spiritual insight which the Rishi gave, has been lost by me."

Vaishampayana said :—

62. "Hearing of his son's death, the king, sighed heavily and was stricken with great anxiety."

CHAPTER X.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "After the termination of the night, the driver of Dhrishtadyumna's car communicated to king Yudhishthira the great slaughter that had been caused during the hour of sleep.

The Driver said :—

2. 'The sons of Draupadi, O king, have been killed, with all the children of Drupada himself, while they were carelessly and trustfully asleep in their own camp.

3. During the night, O king, your camp has been exterminated by the cruel Kritavarman, and Kripa the son of Gotama, and the sinful Ashwatthaman.

4. Killing thousands of men and elephants and horses with lances and darts and battle-axes, those men have rooted out your army.

5. While your army was being killed like a forest hewn down with axes, a loud cry of lamentation was heard rising from your camp.

6. I am the sole survivor, O king, of that vast host. I have escaped with difficulty from Kritavarman at a time when he was careless.

7. Hearing this evil news, Kunti's son Yudhishthira, however endued with fortitude, dropped down on the Earth, stricken with grief at the loss of his sons.

8. Going forward, Satyaki clasped the king. Bhimasena and Arjuna and the two sons of Madri also stretched out their arms.

9. Having regained his senses, the son of Kunti bewailed in grief. 'Alas, having defeated the enemy, we have ourselves been defeated in the end.

10. The course of events cannot even be ascertained even by persons possessing spiritual insight. The enemies who were defeated have become victorious. Ourselves, again, while victorious are defeated.

11. Having killed brothers and friends, fathers, sons, well-wishers, kinsmen, counsellors, and having defeated them all, we ourselves are defeated at last.

12. Misery appears like prosperity, and prosperity looks like misery. This our victory is twined into defeat. Our victory therefore, has terminated in defeat.

13. Having gained the victory, I am obliged to grieve as an afflicted wretch. How, can I consider it as a victory? In sooth, I have been doubly defeated by the enemy.

14. They for whose sake we gained the sinful victory by killing our kinsmen and friends, after acquiring victory, have been defeated by vanquished foes that were heedful.

15—16. Alas, through carelessness have they been killed who had escaped from even Karna, that warrior who had barbed arrows and nalikas for his teeth, the sword for his tongue, the bow for his mouth, and the twang of the bow, and the sound of palms for his roars,—that angry Karna who never took to heels from battle, and who was foremost of men.

17—18. Alas, those princes who succeeded in crossing, by boats made by their own excellent weapons, the great D[illegible] lso the [illegible] having cars for its deep lakes, [illegible]n, wor[illegible] its waves, the ornaments of war [illegible]e gat[illegible] gems, car-horses for its animals, [illegible] and swords for its fishes, elephants for its alligators, bows for its whirlpools, powerful weapons for its foam, and the sign of battle for its moonrise causing it to swell with energy, and the twang of the bow and the sound of palms for its roar,—alas, even those princes have been killed from carelessness.

19. There is, in this world, no greater cause of death, for men, than carelessness. Prosperity leaves off a careless man from every side, and every kind of misery befalls him.

20—21. The tall standard with beautiful top that stood on his car was the wreath of smoke that certainly indicated the Bhishma-fire. Arrows formed its flames, and anger was the wind that fanned it. The twang of his terrible bow and the sound of his palms formed the roar of that fire. Armour and various kinds of weapons were the homa libations that were poured into it. The huge hostile army was the heap of dry grass that was consumed by that fire. Alas, even they who had borne that fierce fire whose terrible power was represented by the mighty weapons in Bhishma's hands, have at last fallen through carelessness.

22. A careless person can never gain knowledge, asceticism, prosperity, or fame. See, Indra has acquired great felicity after killing all his enemies carefully.

23. See, the few survivors among our enemies have, through our carelessness, killed so many sons and grandsons of kings each of whom resembled Indra himself. Alas, they have died like merchants with rich good, dying through carelessness in a shallow river after having crossed the great deep.

24. They whose bodies are now lying on the naked ground, killed by those vindictive wretches, have, forsooth, gone to heaven. I lament for the princess Krishna. Alas, she will be drowned to-day in a sea of sorrow.

25. Hearing of the destruction of her brothers and sons and her revered father, the king of the Panchalas, forsooth, she will drop down senseless on the Earth. She will not rise again with her body emaciated by grief.

26. Unable to bear such affliction, and ever worthy of happiness, alas, what will be her condition. Pained greatly by the destruction of her sons and brothers, she will be like one scorched by fire.

27. Bewailing thus with sorrow, that king of Kuru's race, then addressed Nakula, saying,—'Go and bring the hapless princess Draupadi here with all her maternal relations.'

28. Following that mandate of the king who was righteous like Yama himself, Nakula speedily proceeded on his car to the palace of Draupapi where that princess lived with all the wives of the Panchala king.

29. Having sent the son of Madri, Yudhishthira, moved by grief, proceeded, with tearful eyes and accompanied by his friends to the field on which his sons had fought and which was filled with various kinds of creatures.

30. Having entered that cursed field, containing many dreadful sights, the king saw his sons, well-wishers, and friends, all lying on the ground, bathed in blood, their bodies wounded, and heads severed from their trunks.

31. Seeing them in that condition, Yudhishthira, that best of pious men, became deeply afflicted. That Kuru chief then began to weep aloud and dropped down on the Earth, senseless, along with all his followers."

CHAPTER XI.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Seeing his sons, grandsons, and friends, all killed in battle, the king was filled with great grief, O Janamejaya.

2. Recollecting those sons and grandsons and brothers and allies, the king was stricken with a deep sorrow.

3. Senseless and trembling, his eyes were full of tears. His friends then, began anxiously to comfort him.

4. At that time, Nakula, a skilful messenger, arrived there on his car effulgent like the sun, accompanied by the princess Krishna in great affliction.

5. She had been living at Upaplavya. Having heard that heart-rending news about the destruction of all her sons, she became exceedingly moved.

6. Trembling like a plantain tree shaken by the wind, the princess Krishna, arrived before Yudhishthira, and fell down afflicted with sorrow.

7. Her face, having eyes like full-blown lotuses, seemed to be darkened by sorrow like the Sun himself when covered with darkness.

8. Seeing her prostrate on the Earth, the wrathful Vrikodara, advancing hastily, raised her up and clasped her with his arms.

9—10. The beautiful lady, comforted by Bhimasena, began to weep, and addressing Yudhishthira with his brothers, said,—'By good luck, O king, having obtained the whole Earth, you will enjoy her after the death of your brave sons while observing the Kshatriya duties.

11. By good luck, O son of Pritha, you are happy to think that you have obtained the whole Earth. By good luck, your thoughts do not dwell on Subhadra's son whose movement was like that of an infuriate elephant.

12. By good luck, you do not, like myself while living at Upaplavya, recollect your heroic sons killed while following Kshatriya duties.

13. O son of Pritha, hearing of the slaughter of those sleeping heroes by Drona's sinful son, grief burns me as if I were in the midst of fire.

14—15. If Drona's son is not compelled to reap the fruit of his sinful deed,—if, displaying your prowess in battle, you do not kill that sinful wretch, along with his

followers,—then, listen to me, ye Pandavas, I shall sit here in Praya.'

16. Saying so, the helpless Krishna, the daughter of Yajnasena, sat by the side of king Yudhishthira the just.

17—18. Seeing his dear queen sit in Praya, the royal and pious sage Yudhishthira addressed her, saying,—'O auspicious lady, you do not follow the code of morality, your sons and brothers have met with a noble death. You should not grieve for them.

19. Regarding Drona's son, he has gone to a distant forest, O beautiful princess. How can you then, O lady, bring about his fall in battle.'

Draupadi answered :—

20. 'I have heard that Drona's son has a gem on his head, born with him. I shall see that gem brought to me after his death in battle. Placing that gem on your head, O king, I shall live. This is my resolution.'

21—22. Having said these words to the royal son of Pandu, the beautiful Krishna approached Bhimasena and said these important words to him :—'Remembering the duties of a Kshatriya, O Bhima, you should help me. Kill that sinful wretch like Magavat slaying Shamvara.

23—24. There is no one in this world equal to you in prowess. It is known throughout the world how during a great calamity you became at the town of Varanavata the refuge of all the Parthas. When again we were seen by Hidimva, it was you who rescued us.

25. Like Indra rescuing his wife, the daughter of Puloma, you saved me in Virata's city, from a great danger.

26—27. Like those great deeds, O Partha, performed by you formerly, kill now, O slayer of foes, the son of Drona and be happy.'—Hearing these and other piteous cries of the princess, Kunti's son the powerful Bhima, could not bear them.

28. He got upon his great golden car, and took his beautiful bow with its arrow fixed on the string.

29. Making Nakula his charioteer, and determined upon killing the son of Drona, he began to draw his bow and made his horses to be urged without delay.

30. Those horses, fleet as the wind, urged, run at a furious speed.

31. Brave and energetic as he was, Bhima started from the Pandava camp and proceeded quickly along the track of Ashwatthaman's car.'

CHAPTER XII.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. "After the brave Bhimasena had started, that Yadu hero, having eyes like lotus petals, addressed Kuru's son, Yudhishthira, saying,—O son of Pandu, beside himself with grief at the death of his sons, this brother of yours, goes alone to battle for killing the son of Drona,

3. O Bharata chief, of all your brothers, Bhima is dearest. Seeing him in a great danger, why do you not stir yourself.

4. The weapon called Brahmashira, which Drona, gave his son, is capable of consuming the whole world.

5. Pleased with Dhananjaya, the illustrious preceptor, that foremost of all wielders of bows, had given him that very weapon.

6. His only son also then begged it of him. Unwillingly he communicated the knowledge of that weapon to Ashwatthaman.

7—8. The illustrious Drona knew very well the restlessness of his son, and accordingly commanded him, saying,—Even when overtaken by the greatest calamity, O child, in the midst of battle, you should never use this weapon, specially against men.

9. Thus the preceptor Drona spoke to his son. Some time after he again spoke, saying,—O foremost of men, it seems, you will not, follow the path of the righteous.

10. Hearing those bitter words of his father the wicked Ashwatthaman, giving up all hopes of prosperity, began to wander sorrowfully over the Earth.

11. Then, O Kuru chief, while you were living in the forest, he came to Dwaraka and lived there, adored of the Vrishnis.

12—14. One day, after he had settled in Dwaraka, he came to me, alone when I myself was also alone on the sea-coast, and there smilingly said,—O Krishna, that weapon, called Brahmashira adored of gods and Gandharvas, which my father the preceptor of the Bharatas, having prowess incapable of being baffled, had obtained from Agastya after practising the severest penances, is now with me, as it is with my father.

15. O foremost one of Yadu, in exchange for that celestial weapon, give me your discus which is capable of killing all enemies in battle.

16—17. While with joined hands he thus begged of me my discus, myself, for pleasing him, told him these words,—Gods, Danavas, Gandharvas, men, birds and snakes, assembled together, cannot equal even a hundredth part of my energy.

18. I have this bow, this arrow, this discus, and this mace! I will give you whichever amongst them you wish to have from me.

19. Without giving me the weapon you wish to give, take from among these weapons of mine that which you will be able to wield and use in battle.

20. Thus addressed, the illustrious son of Drona, as if challenging me, wanted my discus of excellent nave and hard as thunder, having a thousand spokes, and made of iron.

21. I said to him take it. Thus spoken to, he rose all on a sudden and seized the discus with his left hand.

22. He could not, however, even move the weapon from the spot where it lay. He then tried to catch it with his right-hand.

23—24. Having caught it then very firmly and displaying all his strength, he still failed to either wield or move it. At this, Drona's son became sorry. Being worn out with the exertions he stopped.

25—29 When he ceased cherishing that desire I addressed the anxious and senseless Ashwatthaman and said,—He who is always known as the best of all men that holder of Gandiva, that warrior having white horses yoked to his car, that hero having the emblem of a monkey on his standard, that hero who, desirous of defeating in a wrestling encounter the god of gods, *viz.*, the blue-throated lord of Uma, pleased the great Shankara himself, that Phalguna than whom I have no dearer friend on Earth, that friend to whom there is nothing that I cannot give including my very wives and children, that dear friend Partha of pure deeds, never said unto me, O Brahmana, such words as these which you have said.

30—32. That son whom I got by practising ascetic penances and observing the austere Brahmacharya for twelve years on the Himavat where I had gone for the purpose, that son of mine, *viz.*, the energetic Pradyumna a portion of Sanatkumara himself, begotten by me upon my wife Rukmini who had practised vows as austere as mine, that hero even never wanted this best of objects, *viz.*, this peerless discus, which you foolish, as you are, have wanted.

33. The highly powerful Rama never said such words to me! Neither Gada nor Shamva, have ever asked for this.

34. None among the other great car-warriors of the Vrishni and the Andhaka race living in Dwaraka has ever asked this of me.

35. You are the son of the preceptor of the Bharatas, you are esteemed by all the Yadavas! Let me ask you, O best of car-warriors, with whom do you wish to fight with this weapon?'

36. Thus addressed by me, Drona's son replied, saying,—'After adoring you O Krishna, it was my desire to fight with you, you of unfading glory.

37. It was for this, O Krishna, that I prayed for your discus which is worshipped by gods and Danavas! Had I got it I would then have become invincible in the world.

38. Having failed, O Keshava, to my almost unattainable desire, I wish to leave you, O Govinda! Address me plainly now.

39. This terrible weapon is with you, who are the foremost of all terrible persons! You are unrivalled for this weapon. There is none else in this world capable of having it.'

40. Having said so the son of Drona taking many horses and much wealth and various kinds of gems, left Dwaraka.

41. He is wrathful, wicked, restless, and very cruel. He knows the use of the weapon called Brahmashira. Vrikodara should be saved."

CHAPTER XIII.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Having said so that foremost of all wielders of weapons, *viz.*, that delighter of all the Yadavas, got on his excellent car, well furnished with all sorts of powerful weapons.

2. Two pairs of best horses of the Kamvoja breed were yoked to that car and they were adorned with garlands of gold. The Dhur of that best of cars was of the colour of the morning sun.

3. On the right was yoked the horse known as Shaivya; on the left was placed Sugriva; the Parshni was drawn by two others called Meghapushpa and Valahaka.

4. There was on that car a celestial standard adorned with gems and gold and

made by the celestial Architect, and standing high like the Maya of Vishnu.

5. Upon that standard was Vinata's son, Garuda, that enemy of snakes perched on the standard-top of Keshava who is the embodiment of truth.

6. Then Hrishikesha, that foremost of all bowmen, got upon that car. After him Arjuna of irresistible deeds and Yudhishthira the king of the Kurus, got upon the same car.

7. Seated on that car, by the side of that Dasharha's hero, who held the bow called Sharnga, the two sons of Pandu shone highly beautiful, like the two Ashwins seated by the side of Vasava.

8. Making them got on that car of his which was adored by all the world, the Dasharha hero urged those best of fleet horses.

9. Those horses then suddenly ran taking after them that excellent vehicle ridden by the two sons of Pandu and by that foremost of Yadu's race.

10. Greatly quick-coursing, as those animals were, bore away the wielder of Sharnga, a loud noise was caused by their motion, like that of birds passing through the air.

11. Running very quickly, they soon met, O foremost of Bharata's race, the mighty bowman Bhimasena in whose wake they had followed.

12. Although those great car-warriors met Bhima, they could not stop that son of Kunti, for filled with anger, he proceeded fiercely towards the enemy.

13. Before the very presence of those illustrious and firm bowmen, Bhima, by means of his very quick-coursing horses, proceeded towards the bank of the river Bhagirathi.

14. He saw the great and illustrious and dark-complexioned and island-born Vyasa sitting near the edge of the water encircled by many Rishis.

15. And he also saw Drona's wicked son sitting by them, covered with dust, clad in a piece of cloth made of Kusha grass, and smeared all over with clarified butter.

16. Taking up his bow with arrows on it, the mighty-armed Bhimasena, the son of Kunti, rushed towards Ashwatthaman, and said,—'Wait, wait!'

17. Seeing that terrible bowman coming towards him bow in hand, and his two brothers on Janarddana's car, Drona's son became exceedingly anxious and thought his end was nigh. Never to be depressed, he thought of that high weapon which he had obtained from his father.

19. He then took up a blade of grass with his left hand. Overcome with misfortune, he inspired that blade of grass with proper mantras and converted it into that powerful celestial weapon.

20. Unable to bear the arrows of the Pandavas and the presence of those wielders of celestial weapons, he cried in anger saying,—' For the destruction of the Pandavas.'

21. Having said these words, O foremost of kings, the brave son of Drona discharged that weapon for stupefying all the worlds.

22. A fire then was begotten of that blade of grass, which appeared capable of destroying the three worlds like the all-destroying Yama at the end of the cycle."

CHAPTER XIV.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Continued.*

Vaishampayana said:—

1—2. "In the very beginning the powerful hero of Dasharha's, race understood from signs the intention of Drona's son. He said to Arjuna, O son of Pandu, the time is come for the use of that celestial weapon, the use of which you remember and the knowledge of which was given to you by Drona.

3. For protecting yourself as also your brothers, O Bharata, discharge in this battle that weapon which is capable of counteracting all other weapons.

4. Thus addressed by Keshava, Arjuna that destroyer of hostile heroes, quickly got down from the car, taking with him his bow with arrow fixed on the string.

5—6. Wishing good to the preceptor's son to himself, and to all his brothers, that destroyer of foes then bowed to all the gods and all his superiors and discharged his weapon, thinking of the well-being of all the worlds and saying,—'Let this weapon neutralise Ashwatthaman's weapon.'

7. Quickly discharged by the wielder of Gandiva, that weapon blazed up with fierce flames like the all-destroying fire that appears at the end of a cycle.

8. Likewise, the weapon that had been discharged by Drona's energetic son, blazed up with dreadful flames within a huge sphere of fire.

9. Peals of thunder were heard; thousands of meteors, dropped down and all living creatures were filled with great fear.

10. The entire sky was filled with noise and put on a terrible appearance with those flames of fire. The entire earth shook with her mountains, rivers and trees.

11—12. Seeing those two weapons consuming the three worlds, the two great Rishis, *viz.*, Narada who is the soul of every creature, and Vyasa, the grandfather of all the Bharata princes, came there. The two Rishis tried to pacify the two heroes, Ashwatthaman and Dhananjaya.

13. Cognizant of all duties and desirous of the well-being of all creatures, the two energetic sages, stood in the midst of those two blazing weapons.

14. Incapable of being moved by any force, those two great Rishis, placing themselves between the two weapons, stood like two burning fires.

15. Incapable of being checked by any living creature, and worshipped of gods and Danavas, they two acted in this way, counteracting the power of the two weapons and doing good to all the world.

The two Rishis said :—

16. 'Those great car-warriors who have died in this battle were masters of diverse kinds of weapons. They, however, never shot such a weapon upon men. What rash act is this, O heroes, that you have done.' "

CHAPTER XV.

(SAUPITKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "O foremost of men, seeing those two Rishis effulgent like fire, Dhananjaya quickly resolved to withdraw his celestial arrows.

2. Joining his hands, he said to those Rishis,—'I discharged this weapon, saying, —Let it neutralise the enemy's weapon.

3. If I withdraw this great weapon, Drona's sinful son will then, forsooth, consume us all with the power of his weapon.

4—5. You two are like gods. You should find out some means by which our well-being, as also that of the three worlds may be secured.'—Saying so Dhananjaya withdrew his weapon. The withdrawl of that weapon can with difficulty be made by the gods themselves in battle.

6. Not excepting the great Indra himself, there was none save the son of Pandu, who could withdraw that high weapon after it had once been discharged.

7. That weapon was begotten of Brahma energy. No person of impure soul can withdraw it after it is once discharged. Only one who leads the life of a Brahmacharin can do it.

8. If one who has not practised the vow of Brahmacharya tries to withdraw it after having shot it, it strikes off his own head and kills him with all his equipments.

9. Arjuna was a Brahmacharin and an observer of vows. Having secured that almost unattainable weapon, he had never used it even when put into the greatest of difficulties.

10. Truthful, heroic, and leading the life of a Brahmacharin, the son of Pandu was ever obedient to all his superiors. It was for this that he could withdraw his weapon.

11. Seeing those two Rishis standing before him, Drona's son could not by his energy withdraw his own dreadful weapon.

12. Unable to withdraw the great weapon in battle, Drona's son, O king, with a depressed heart, said to the Rishi, Vyasa.

13. In fear of a great calamity, and desirous of saving my life, I discharged this weapon, through fear of Bhimasena, O Sage.

14. This Bhimasena acted sinfully, and dishonestly while killing the son of Dhritarashtra in battle.

15. It is for this, O Rishi, I discharged this weapon ! I dare not, however, withdraw it now.

16. Having put into this irresistible and celestial weapon the energy of fire, I discharged it for the destruction of the Pandavas.

17. Discharged for the destruction of the Pandavas, this weapon, therefore, will take away the lives of all the sons of Pandu.

18. O Rishi, I have, under the influence of anger, done this sinful deed ! I invoked this weapon in battle for the destruction of the Pandavas !'

Vyasa said :—

19. ' Pritha's son Dhananjaya, O child, knew the use of the weapon called Brahmashira. Neither from anger, nor for your destruction in battle, did he discharge that weapon.

20. Arjuna, on the other hand, let it off for baffling your weapon. He has again withdrawn it.

21. Having obtained even the Brahma weapon through your father's instructions

the powerful Dhananjaya did not deviate from a Kshatriya's duties.

22. Arjuna is endued with such patience, and honesty. He is, besides, a master of every weapon. Why do you try to bring about the destruction of such a man with all his brothers.

23. The region where the weapon Brahmashira is counteracted by another high weapon, suffers from a drought for twelve years, for the clouds do not pour a drop of water there.

24. Therefore the mighty-armed son of Pandu, although he had the power, would not still, for doing good to living creatures, baffle your weapon with his.

25. The Pandavas should be protected; your self should be protected; the kingdom also should be protected. Therefore, withdraw this your celestial weapon.

26. Drive away from your heart, and let the Pandavas be safe! The royal sage Yudhishthira never wishes to gain victory by perpetrating any sinful act.

27. Give them that gem which is on your head. Taking that, the Pandavas will grant in return your life.'

Drona's son said :—

28. 'This my gem is more valuable than all the wealth that has ever been acquired by the Pandavas and the Kauravas.

29. Whenever this gem is used, the wearer entertains no fear from weapons or disease or hunger. He ceases to have any fear of celestials and Danavas and Nagas.

30. He does not fear the Rakshasas and the robbers, these are the virtues of my gem.

31—33. I cannot, by any means, part with it. Whatever, O holy one, you command me, should be done by me. Here is this gem! Here is myself! This blade of grass, converted into a dreadful weapon, will, however, fall into the wombs of the Pandava women, for this weapon is high and powerful, and cannot be baffled. O Rishi, I am unable to withdraw it, having once discharged it. I will now throw this weapon into the wombs of the Pandava women. As regards your other commands, O Rishi, I will obey them.'

Vyasa said :—

34. 'Do then this. Do not, however, cherish any other purpose. O sinless one. Stop throwing this weapon into the wombs of the Pandava women.'

Vaishampayana said :—

35. Having heard these words of Dwaipayana Vyasa, the son of Drona threw that uplifted weapon into the wombs of the Pandava women.

CHAPTER XVI.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said .—

1—3. "Knowing that that weapon was thrown into the wombs of the Pandava women by Drona's sinful son, Hrishikesha, with a cheerful heart, said these words to him :—'Seeing Virata's daughter who is now daughter-in-law to Arjuna, while she was at Upaplavya, a certain pious Brahmana said, while the Kuru line will become extinct, a son will be born to you. This your son, for that reason, will be called by the name of Parikshit.

4. The words of that pious man shall be fulfilled. The Pandavas shall have a son called Parikshit.'

5—6. While Govinda, that foremost one of the Satwata race, saying these words, Drona's son, filled with anger, replied, saying,—'This, O Keshava, which you say from your partiality for the Pandavas, shall never take place. O you having eyes like lotus petals, my words cannot but be fulfilled.

7. Taken up by me, this weapon of mine shall fall on the fœtus that is in the womb of Virata's daughter,—which, O Krishna, you are so desirous of protecting.'

Krishna said :—

8. 'The fall of this mighty weapon will not be useless. The fœtus will die. But being dead, it will revive and have a long life.

9. As regards yourself, all wise men know you as a coward and a sinful wretch. Always engaged in sinful deeds, you are the slayer of children. Therefore, you must have to bear the fruit of your sinful deeds.

10. For three thousand years you shall have to wander over this earth, without a companion and without being able to talk with any one.

11. Alone, and without any one with you, you shall wander through various countries, O wretch, you shall have to live outside the pale of human society.

12. The stench of puss and blood shall come out from your body, and you shall live in dense forest and dreary moors!

Thou shall wander over the earth, O sinful wight, suffering from all diseases.

13. Coming of age and acquiring a knowledge of the Vedas, the heroic Parikshit, shall obtain all weapons from the son of Sharadwat.

14. Having acquired a knowledge of all high weapons and observing all Kshatriya duties, that righteous king shall rule the earth for sixty years.

15. Moreover, that boy shall become the powerful king of the Kurus, known by the name of Parikshit, before your very eyes, O wicked man.

16. Though burnt by the energy of your weapon's fire, I shall revive him. O lowest of men, witness the power of my austerities and my truth.'

Vyasa said :—

17—18. 'Since, obeying us, you have committed this highly cruel act, and since your conduct is such, although you are a good Brahmana by birth, therefore, those excellent words that Devaki's son has said, will, forsooth, be fulfilled regarding you, because you are living the life of a Kshatriya.'

Ashwatthaman said :—

19. 'With yourself among all men, O Rishi, I shall reside. Let the words of this illustrious and foremost of men prove true.'

Vaishampayana continued :—

20. "Having made over his gem to the great Pandavas, Drona's son cheerlessly proceeded, in their presence, to the forest.

21—22. The Pandavas, who had killed all their foes, put Govinda and the Krishna-Dwaipayana and the great ascetic Narada at their head, and taking the gem that was born with Ashwatthaman, quickly returned to the intelligent Draupadi who was observing the Praya vow."

Vaishampayana said :—

23. "Those foremost of men, borne by their excellent horses, quick-coursing like the wind, came back with Dasharha hero, to their encampment.

24. Quickly getting down from their cars, those great car-warriors, themselves much more afflicted, saw Drupada's daugter Krishna stricken with misery.

25. Approaching the cheerless princess laden with sorrow and grief, the Pandavas with Keshava, sat round her.

26—27. Then the powerful Bhimasena, desired by the king, gave that celestial gem to her and said these words :—'This gem, O amiable lady, is yours. The slayer of your sons has been defeated. Rise, shake off your sorrow, and recollect the duties of a Kshatriya lady.

28. O you of black eyes, when Vasudeva was about to start [from Upaplavya] on his mission of peace, you had said these words to the slayer of Madhu.

29. I have no husbands. I have no sons, nor brothers. Nor are you alive, O Govinda, since the king seeks peace.

30. Those bitter words were addressed by you to Krishna, that foremost of persons. You should recollect these words that were so consistent with Kshatriya usages.

31. The wretched Duryodhana, that thorn in the way of our sovereignty, has been killed. I have quaffed the blood of the living Dusshasana.

32. We have satisfied the debt we owed to our enemy! People, will not able to blame us any longer! Having defeated Drona's son, we have released him for his being a Brahmana and for the respect that should be shown to our deceased preceptor.

33. His fame has been spoiled, O goddess, only his body remains! He has been divested of his gem and on Earth he has been deprived of his weapons."

Draupadi said :—

34. 'I desired only to satisfy our debt for the injury we have suffered. The preceptor's son deserves my respect as the preceptor himself.

35. Let the king put this gem on his head, O Bharata!'—The king then, taking that gem, placed it on his head, as desired by Draupadi and taking it as a gift from the preceptor.

36. Holding on his head that excellent and celestial gem, the powerful king shone like a mountain with the moon above it.

37. Though laden with grief for the death of her sons, the princess Draupadi, possessed of great mental strength, gave up her vow. Then king Yudhishthira enquired of the powerful Krishna, saying the followingwords."

CHAPTER XVII.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—3. "After all the soldiers had been killed during the hour of sleep by those

three car-warriors, king Yudhishthira sorrowfully said to Krishna :—'How, O Krishna, could my sons, all of whom were great car-warriors, be killed by the sinful and wretched Ashwatthman who is not an expert in battle?

3. How also could Drona's son kill the children of Drupada, all of whom were masters of weapons, powerful and capable of fighting with hundreds of thousands of enemies?

4. How could he kill that best of car-warriors, *viz.*, Dhrishtadyumna, before whom the great bowman Drona himself could not appear?

5. What act was done by the preceptors' son, O foremost of men, for which he succeeded in killing, single-handed, all our men in battle?'

Krishna said :—

6. 'Drona's son had sought the help of that highest of all the gods, the eternal Mahadeva! For this he could kill single-handed, so large a number of warriors.

7. If Mahadeva is pleased he can grant even immortality! Girisha can give such courage as will succeed in checking Indra himself.

8. I know Mahadeva truly, O foremost of Bharata's race! I know also his various former deeds.

9. He, is the beginning, the middle, and the end of all creatures! This universe acts and moves through his power.

10—11. The powerful Grandfather, desirous of creating living animals saw Rudra; and the Grandfather asked him, saying,—Create living creatures immediately.—Thus addressed the twany haired Rudra said,—So be it!—and plunged himself into the water and practised austerities for a long time, because he was sensible of the defects of living creatures.

12. Having waited for Rudra for a very long time, the Grandfather by his will-power called into being another living being for the purpose of propagating his species.

13. Seeing Girisha plunged into the waters, this (second) being, said to his father,—If there be no other being born before me, then I shall multiply my self.

14. His father replied, saying,—There is no other born before you! Shiva has plunged himself into the water! Go and create living creatures, without any fear.

15. He then created many living creatures, having Daksha for their first, who created all these four-fold creatures.

16. As soon, as they were born, they ran, O king, towards their father, stricken with hunger and desirous of eating him up.

17. The second being whom Brahman had created, thereupon ran towards him, seeking protection from his own offspring. And he said to the Grandfather,—O illustrious one, save me from these, and let these creatures have their food.

18. Then the Grandfather gave herbs and plants and other vegetables as their food, and assigned for the strong the weaker creatures as their food.

19. Their means of sustenance having been thus settled, the newly created creatures all went away where they liked, and cheerfully multiplied their respective species.

20. After the creatures had multiplied and Brahma had become well gratified, the first-born rose from water and saw the living creation.

21—23. He saw that various kinds of creatures had been created and that they had multiplied themselves. Seeing it, Rudra became angry and made his generative organ disappear in the bowels of the Earth. Then soothing him by soft words, Brahman said to him,—O Sarva, what were you doing so long within the water? Why have you made your generetive organ disappear in the bowels of the Earth?

24. Thus accosted, that lord of the universe angrily answered the lord Brahman,—Somebody else has created all these creatures. What purpose then would be fulfilled by this organ of mine.

25. I have, by my active penances, O Grandfather, created food for all these creatures. These herbs and plants also will multiply like those that will live upon them.

26. Saying so, Bhava went away, dispirited and angry, to the foot of the Munjavat mountains for practising austere penances."

CHAPTER XVIII.

(SAUPTIKA PARVA).—*Concluded.*

The holy one said :—

1. "After the Satya yuga had passed away, the gods, desirous of celebrating a sacrifice, made preparations according to the Vedic prescription.

2. They collected clarified butter and the other necessary articles. And they not

only collected the requisites of their sacrifice, but also determined those amongst themselves that should partake of the sacrificial offerings.

3. Not knowing Rudra truly, the gods, O king, reserved no share for the divine Sthanu.

4. Seeing that the celestials reserved no share for him in the sacrificial offerings, Sthanu, clad in deer skins, desired to destroy that Sacrifice and with that object made a bow.

5. There are four sorts of Sacrifices, *viz.*, the Loka-Sacrifice, the Sacrifice of especial rites, the eternal domestic Sacrifice, and the Sacrifice consisting in the gratification of man from his enjoyment of the five elemental substances and their compounds. From these four sorts of Sacrifice that the universe has emanated.

6. Kaparddin made that bow out of the materials of the first and the fourth kinds of Sacrifices. The length of that bow was five cubits.

7. The sacred (mantra) Vashat, O Bharata, was made its string. The four parts, of which a Sacrifice consists, became the ornaments of that bow.

8. Then Mahadeva, worked up with rage, and taking up that bow proceeded to that spot where the celestials were celebrating the Sacrifice.

9. Seeing the illustrious Rudra arrive there dressed as a Brahmacharin and armed with that bow, the goddess Earth shrank with fear and the mountains began to shake.

10. The wind ceased to move, and fire itself, though fed, did not burn. The stars in the sky, in fear, moved irregularly.

11. The Sun's effulgence decreased. The disc of the Moon lost its beauty. The entire sky was covered with a thick darkness.

12. The celestials did not know what to do. Their Sacrifice ceased to blaze forth. The gods were all terrified.

13. Rudra then cut the embodiment of Sacrifice with a dreadful arrow in the heart. Assuming the shape of a deer, the embodied form of Sacrifice, fled away with the god god of fire.

14. Approaching heaven in that form, he shone in beauty. Rudra, however, O Yudhishthira, pursued him through the sky.

15. After Sacrifice had fled away, the gods lost their beauty. Having lost their senses, the gods were bewildered.

16. Then the three-eyed Mahadeva, with his bow, broke in anger the arms of Savitri, and plucked out the eyes of Bhaga and the teeth of pushna.

17. The gods and the several parts of Sacrifice fled away. Some amongst them reeling dropped down senseless.

18. Having agitated them thus the blue-throated Rudra, laughed aloud and whirling his bow, paralysed them.

19. The celestials then cried aloud. At their command, the string of the bow broke. The string having broken, the bow became straight as a line.

20. The gods then came to the god of gods, and, with the embodied form of Sacrifice, sought the protection of the powerful Mahadeva and tried to please him.

21. Pleased, the great god threw his anger into the water. O king, assuming the form of fire, that wrath is always busy with consuming water.

22. He then gave to Savitri his arms, Bhaga his eyes, and Pushna his teeth. And he also restored the Sacrifices themselves, O Pandava.

23. The world was once more saved. The gods assigned to Mahadeva all the libations of clarified butter as his share of sacrificial offerings.

24. O monarch, when Mahadeva had become angry, the whole world was thus agitated, and, when he became gratified, everything was safe. Highly powerful, the god Mahadeva was pleased with Ashwatthaman.

25. Therefore your sons, those great car-warriors, could be killed by that warrior. And therefore also many other heroes, *viz.*, the Panchala's, with all their followers, could be killed by him.

26. You should not think of it. It was not Drona's son that performed that act. It was done through the power of Mahadeva. Do now what should be done next,"

FINISH SAUPTIKA PARVA.

THE MAHABHARATA.

(IN ENGLISH.)

STREE PARVA.

CHAPTER I.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA.)

Having saluted the Supreme Deity (Narayana) and the highest of all male beings (Nara) and also the goddess of learning (Saraswati) let us cry success.

Janamejaya said :—

1. "After Duryodhana, and all the warriors had fallen, what, O sage, did king Dhritarashtra do after hearing of it.

2. What also did the great Kuru king Yudhishthira the son of Dharma do? What did the three survivors (of the Kuru army, *viz.*,) Kripa and the others do?

3. I have heard everything about the deeds of Ashwatthaman. Tell me what took place after that mutual denunciation of curses. Tell me all that Sanjaya said to the blind old king!"

Vaishampayana said :—

4. "After he had lost his hundred sons, king Dhritarashtra, stricken with grief on that account, dejected, and looking like a tree shorn of its branches, became stupefied with anxiety and lost his power of speech.

5. Possessed of great wisdom, approaching the king the greatly wise Sanjaya, addressed him, saying,—Why do you grieve, O monarch? Grief is absolutely useless.

6. Eight and ten Akshauhinis of warriors, O king, have been killed. The Earth has become desolate, and is almost empty now.

7. Kings of various countries, united with your son, and have all been killed.

8. Let now the obsequial rites of your fathers, sons, grandsons, kinsmen and friends and preceptors be performed duly.

Vaishampayana continued :—

9. Deprived of sons, counsellors and all his friends, the energetic king Dhritarashtra suddenly dropped down on the Earth like a tree uprooted by the wind.

Dhritarashtra said :—

10. Deprived as I am of sons, counsellors and all my friends, I shall, forsooth, have to rove about sorrowfully over the Earth.

11. What necessity have I now of life itself, deprived as I am of relatives and friends. I am like a bird shorn of its wings and afflicted with decrepitude?

12. Deprived of kingdom, deprived of relatives, and shorn of eyes, I cannot, O you of great wisdom, shine any longer on Earth like a luminary divested of its splendour.

13. I did not follow the advice of friends, of Jamadagni's son, of the celestial Rishi Narada, and of Krishna-Dwaipayana.

14. In the midst of the assembly, Krishna told me what was for my good, saying,—Do away with hostilities, O king! Let your son take the entire kingdom. I did not foolishly follow that advice, and I am now obliged to repent.

15—16. I did not listen to the good counsels of Bhishma. Alas, having heard of the destruction of Duryodhana whose roars were as deep as those of a bull, of the death of Dusshasana and the extinction of Karna and the setting of the Drona-sun, my heart is not sundered into pieces.

17. I do not, O Sanjaya, remember any evil act committed by me in my pristine birth, consequences of which fool as I am, I am now suffering.

18. Forsooth, I committed great sins in my previous lives, for which the great God has made me suffer such a grief.

19. This destruction of all my relatives, well-wishers and friends, at this old age

has been brought about by Destiny. Who is there on Earth more afflicted than my wretched self.

20. Therefore, let the Pandavas come and see me this very day determined upon following the long way that leads to the regions of Brahman."

Vaishampayana continued :—

21. "While king Dhritarashtra was thus bewailing, Sanjaya addressed him in the following words for driving away his grief.

22. 'Cast off your grief, O king! You have heard the teachings of the Vedas and various scriptures, from the lips of the old, O king! You have heard those words which the sages said to Srinjaya while the latter was stricken with grief on account of the death of his son.

23. When your son, O king, grew elated with pride, you did not accept the advice offered to you by your well-wisher. You did not, through covetousness, do what was really for your good.

24. Your own intelligence, like a sharp sword, has cut you. You only sought the company of wicked men.

25. Your son had Dusshasana, the wicked son of Radha, the equally wicked Shakuni, Chritrasena and Shalya for his counseller. Your son made the entire world his enemy.

26. Your son, O Bharata, did not follow the words of Bhishma the reverend chief of the Kurus, of Gandhari and Vidura, of Drona, O king, of Kripa the son of Sharadwat, of the mighty-armed Krishna, of the intelligent Narada, of many other Rishis, and of Vyasa himself.

28. Though powerful your son was of little intelligence, proud, always anxious to fight, wicked, ungovernable, and discontented.

29. You are learned, intelligent, and always truthful. Righteous and intelligent persons like yourself, are never stupefied by grief.

30. For this the Kshatriya order has been exterminated, because they did not care for virtue, and always talked of battle, and the fame of your foes enhanced.

31. You had occupied the position of an umpire, but you did not utter a word of wholesome advice. Unfitted as you were for the work, you did not hold the scales evenly.

32. Every one should, at the beginning follow such a line of action that he may not have, in the end, to repent for something already done by him.

33. Out of affection for your son, O king, you did what was agreeable to Duryodhana. You are obliged to repent for that now. You should not, however, grieve.

34. The man who always looks at the honey without seeing the fall, meets with destruction through his covetousness for honey. Such a man is obliged to repent like yourself.

35. The man who indulges in grief never acquires wealth. By grieving one loses the fruits he seeks for. Grief again stands in the way of the acquision of objects dear to us. The man who grieves loses even his salvation.

36. The man who keeps a burning coal within the folds of his cloth and is burnt by the fire thereof is surely called a fool if he grieves for his injuries.

37. You and your son, had with your words fanned the Partha-fire, and with your covetousness as clarified butter made that fire blaze forth into burning flames.

38. Your sons fell into that burning fire like insects. You should not, however, grieve for them now that they have all been burnt in the fire of the enemy's arrows.

39. The shedding of tears, O king, is not approved by the scriptures or praised by the wise.

40. These tears, like sparks of fire, consume the dead for whom they are shed. Drive away your grief with your intelligence, and cheer yourself up with your mental strength.

41. Thus was the king consoled by the great Sanjaya. Vidura then, O scorcher of foes, once again addressed the king, showing great intelligence."

CHAPTER II.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Listen, O Janamejaya, to the nectarlike words that Vidura said to the son of Vichitravirya and by which he pleased that foremost of men.

Vidura said :—

2. 'Rise, O king! Why are you lying on the Earth. Cheer yourself up. O king, this is the final end of all living creatures.

3. Everything is liable to destruction; everything that is high is sure to fall down. Union is sure to end in separation; life is sure to end in death.

4. The Destroyer, O Bharata, takes both the hero and the coward. Why then, O foremost of Kshatriyas, should not Kshatriyas engage themselves in battle.

5. He, who never fights has been seen to die, while he who engages himself in battle has been seen to escape alive.

6. As regards living creatures, they did not exist at first. They exist in the intervening period. In the end they once more become non-existent. Why should then one grieve for the same?

7. The man who grieves does not succeed in meeting with the dead. By grieving one does not himself die. While such is the course of the world, why do you indulge in grief.

8. Death drags all creatures, even the gods. There is none dear or hateful to death, O Kuru chief.

9. As the wind tears off all the blades of grass, even so, O foremost of Bharata's race, Death rules over all creatures.

10. All creatures are like members of a caravan bound for the same country. When death will overtake all, it is immaterial whom he meets first.

11. O king, you should not grieve for those who have been killed in battle. If the scriptures are authoritative all of them must have obtained the highest end.

12. All of them were well read in the Vedas; all of them had practised vows. All of them have met with death after fighting with the enemy. What is there to be sorry in this.

13. They had been invisible before birth. Having come from that unknown region, they have again become invisible. They are not yours, nor are you theirs. Why should you grieve then for such disappearance?

14. If killed, one acquires heaven. By killing, fame is acquired. Both of these, produce great merit. Battle, therefore, is not unproductive of good.

15. Forsooth, Indra will give them regions capable of granting every wish. These, O foremost of men, become the guests of Indra.

16. By celebrating sacrifices with profuse gifts, by ascetic penances and by learning, men cannot, go so quickly to heaven as heroes killed in battle.

17. On the bodies of hostile heroes who were like the sacrificial fire, they poured libations of arrows. Highly energetic, they had in return to bear the arrowy libations poured upon them by their foes.

18. I tell you, O king, that for a Kshatriya in this world there is not a better way to heaven than battle.

19. They were all great Kshatriyas; brave as they were, they were ornaments of assemblies. They have attained highest of blessed regions. They are not persons for whom we should be sorry.

20. Solacing yourself, by your own self, cease to grieve, O best of men. You should not allow yourself to be overwhelmed with sorrow and to give up all action.

21. There are thousands of mothers and fathers and sons and wives in this world. Whose are they, and whose are we?

22. Thousands of causes spring up daily for sorrow and thousands for fear. These, howevor, affect the ignorant and not the wise.

23. There is none dear or hateful to Time, O Kuru chief. Time is indifferent to none. All are equally dragged by time.

24. Time makes all creatures grow, and it is Time that destroys all. When all else is asleep, Time is awake. Time is irresistible.

25. Youth, beauty, life, wealth, health, and friends, are all unstable. The wise will never seek any of these.

26. You should not grieve for what is universal. By indulging in grief a person may himself die, but grief itself by being indulged in, never becomes light.

27. If you feel any grief heavily, it should be overcome by not indulging in it. This is the only remedy for grief, *viz*, that one should not indulge in it.

28. By indulging in it, one cannot lesson it. On the other hand, it increases when being indulged in. When any evil or when bereavement of some dear one, comes on, only they that are of little intelligence allow their minds to be laden with grief.

29. This is neither Profit, nor Religion, nor Happiness, of which you are thinking.

30—31. The indulgence of grief is the sure means of one's losing one's objects. Through it, one deviates from the three great ends of life. They, who are not contented are stupefied by the vicissitudes of fortune. The wise, are, on the other hand, unaffected by such changes. One should destroy mental grief by wisdom, as physical grief should be destroyed by medicine. Wisdom has this power. They, however, that are foolish, can never acquire equanimity of mind.

32. Pristine actions closely follow a man, so much so that they lie by him when he lies down, stand by him when he stands, and run with him when he runs.

33. As a man acts well or ill, so he enjoys or suffers the fruit thereof.

34. In physical actions also one enjoys or suffers the fruits according to his acts.

35. One's own self is one's own friend, again one's own self is one's own enemy. One's own self is the witness of one's good and evil acts.

36. Good acts beget a state of happiness, and sinful deeds bring on woe. One always reaps the fruit of one's acts. One never enjoys or suffers happiness or misery that is not the outcome of one's own acts.

37. Intelligent persons like you, O king, never commit sinful deeds, that are disapproved by knowledge and that strike at the very root of virtue and happiness."

CHAPTER III.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "O you of great wisdom, my grief has been removed by your excellent words. I wish you, however, to speak again.

2. How, indeed, do the wise free themselves from mental grief begotten by evil deeds and the bereavement of dear objects."

Vidura said :—

3. 'He that is wise enjoys peace by subduing both grief and joy by means by which one may escape from grief and joy.

4. Every thing we are anxious for, O foremost of men, is ephemeral. The world is like a weak plantain tree.

5—6. Since the wise and the ignorant the rich and the poor, all, shorn of their anxieties, sleep on the crematorium, with bodies devoid of flesh and full of naked bones, and sinews, whom amongst them will the survivors regard as possessed of distinguishing marks by which the attributes of birth and beauty may be determined? Since every thing is equal in death why should men, whose understandings are always deceived covet one another's rank and position.

7. The learned say that the bodies of men are like houses, which are destroyed in time. There is one being, however, that is eternal.

8. As a person casting off an old cloth puts on a fresh one, so is the case with the bodies of all embodied beings.

9. O son of Vichitravirja, creatures reap happiness or misery, as the fruit of their own acts.

10. By their acts they secure heaven, O Bharata, or happiness, or misery. Whether competent or otherwise, they have to bear their burdens which are the result of their own acts.

11—13. As amongst earthen pots some break while still on the potter's wheel, some while partially shaped, some as soon as shaped, some after removal from the wheel, some while in course of being removed, some after removal, some while wet, some while dry, some while being burnt, some while being removed from the kiln, some after removal therefrom, and some while being used, so is the case with the bodies of embodied creatures.

14—15. Some are destroyed while in embryo, some after coming out of the womb, some on the day after, some after a fortnight or a month, some on after a year or two, some in youth, some in middle age, and some when old.

16. Creatures are born or destroyed according to their pristine acts. When such is the course of the world, why do you grieve?

17—18. As men, while swimming, sometimes dive and sometimes emerge, so, O king, creatures sink and emerge in life's stream. They that are of limited understanding suffer or meet with death as the result of their own acts.

19. They, however, that are wise, virtuous and desirous of doing good to all living creatures, who are acquainted with the real nature of beings in this world, attain at last to the highest end."

CHAPTER IV.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "O best of speakers, how may the wilderness of this world be known? I wish to hear this. Accosted by me, tell me this."

Vidura said :—

2. "I will describe to you all the acts of creatures from the very beginning. In the beginning it lives in the mixture of blood and semen. Then it grows little by little. Then on the expiration of the fifth month it puts on a shape.

3. It next becomes a fœtus with all its limbs made up, and lives in a dirty place, covered with flesh and blood.

4. Then, by the action of the wind, its lower limbs are turned upwards and the head comes downwards. Getting by this posture at the mouth of the uterus, it suffers manifold miseries.

5. On account of the contraction of the uterus, the creature then comes out of it, bearing the results of all his pristine acts. He then meets in this world with other evils that beset him. Misfortunes go to him like dogs drawn by the scent of meat.

6. Next various diseases assail him while he is enchained by his pristine acts.

7. Bound by the fetters of lust and women and wealth and other sweets of life, various evil practises also approach him then, O king!

8. Caught by these, he never enjoys happiness. At that time he does not obtain the fruit of his acts, right or wrong. They, however, fix their minds on reflection, succeed in protecting their souls.

9. The person overcome by his senses does not know that death has come at his door. At last, dragged by the messengers of the Destroyer, he meets with death at the appointed time.

10. Overcome by his senses, he does good and evil at the very commencement. Having enjoyed or suffered the fruits of these, he again becomes indifferent to his acts of self-destruction.

11. Alas, the world is deceived, and covetousness subdues it. Deprived of sense by covetousness, anger, and fear, one knows not one's own self!

12. Proud of his high birth, one is seen to speak ill of those that are not high-born. Elated with pride of wealth, one is seen to hate the poor.

13. One considers others as ignorant fools, but seldom gauges his own self. One attributes faults to others, but never wishes to punish his own self.

14—16. Since the wise and the ignorant, the rich and the poor, the high-born and the low-born, the honored and the dishonored, all go to the place of the dead and sleep there shorn of anxiety, with bodies divested of flesh and full only of bones and dried up tendons, whom amongst them would the survivors regard as standing superior to others and by what marks would they determine the attributes of birth and beauty?

17. When all shall sleep likewise on the bare ground, why then should men, foolishly, desire to deceive one another.

18. He who, looking at this scriptural injunction with his own eyes or hearing it from others, practises virtue in this unstable world of life and sticks to it from early age, attains to the highest end.

19. Learning all this, he that sticks to Truth, O king, gets over all paths."

CHAPTER V.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Describe fully to me the ways of that intelligence by which this wilderness of duties may be safely crossed.

Vidura said :—

2. "Having saluted the Self-create, I will obey your command by telling you how the great sages speak of the wilderness of life.

3. A certain Brahmana, living in the great world, found himself on one occasion in a large inaccessible forest abounding with beasts of prey.

4. It was full of lions and tigers and other animals looking like elephants, all of which were roaring aloud. Such was the view of that forest that Yama himself would be frightened.

5. Seeing the forest, the heart of the Brahmana was greatly agitated. His hairs stood erect, and other signs of fear manifested themselves, O destroyer of enemies.

6. Entering it, he began to run hither and thither, looking every side for finding out somebody whose shelter he might seek.

7. Wishing to avoid those terrible creatures, he ran about in fear. He could not go far away from them or free himself from their presence.

8. He then saw that that terrible forest was surrounded with a net, and that a dreadful woman stood there, stretching her arms.

9. That large forest was also beset with many five-headed snakes of dreadful forms, tall as mountain summits touching the very sky.

10. Within it was a pit whose mouth was covered with many hard and strong creepers and herbs.

11—12. While wandering the Brahmana dropped into that invisible pit. He was

entangled in those creepers that were interwoven with one another, like the large fruit of a jack tree hanging by its stalk. He remained there hanging with feet upwards and head downwards.

13. While in that state, he was visited by various other calamities. He saw a large and mighty snake within the pit. He also saw a gigantic elephant near its mouth.

14. That elephant, was dark coloured and had six faces and twelve feet. And the animal gradually approached that pit overgrown with creepers and trees.

15. About the twigs of the tree which was at the mouth of the pit, moved about many bees of dreadful forms, engaged from before in drinking the honey gathered in their comb.

16. They repeatedly desired, O foremost of Bharata's race, to taste that honey which though sweet to all creatures could, however, attract children only.

17. The honey (in the comb) fell in many jets below. The person who was hanging in the pit continually drank those jets.

18. Drinking that honey in such a pitiable condition, his thirst, however, was not appeased. Unsatiated with repeatedly drinking the same the person desired for more.

19. Even then, O king, he could not give up hopes of life. Still, the man expected to live. A number of black and white rats were eating away the roots of that tree.

20—21. There was fear from the beasts of prey, from that dreadful woman on the outskirts of that forest, from that snake at the bottom of the well, from that elephant near its top, from the fall of the tree brought about by the rats, and lastly from those bees flying about for drinking the honey.

22. He lived in that condition, deprived of his senses, in that forest, never losing at any time the hope of continuing his life."

CHAPTER VI.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Alas great was the misery of that person and very painful his life. Tell me, O best of speakers, whence his attachment to life and whence his happiness was.

2. Where is that region, so inimical to the practice of virtue, where that person lives. Oh, tell me how that man will be freed from all those great dangers?

3. Tell me all this. We shall then try our best for him. I am stricken with pity on account of the difficulties that lie in the way of his release."

Vidura said :—

4. O king, they that are conversant with the religion of Moksha cite this as a simile. Understanding this properly, a person may attain to blissful regions hereafter.

5. That which is described as the forest is the great world. The inaccessible forest within it is the limited sphere of a man's life.

6—7. Those described as beasts of prey are the diseases. The huge woman living in the forest, is identified by the wise with Decrepitude which destroys complexion and beauty. The pit is the body of embodied creatures.

8. The huge snake living in the bottom of that pit is Time, the destroyer of all embodied beings. It is, indeed, the universal destroyer.

9. The cluster of creepers growing in that pit and by whose spreading stems the man hangs down is the desire for life which every creature entertains.

10. The six-faced elephant, O king, which runs towards the tree standing at the mouth of the pit is the year. Its six faces are the seasons and its twelve feet are the twelve months.

11. The rats and the snakes that are eating up the tree are the days and nights that are continually lessening the periods of life of all creatures. The bees are our desires.

12. The numerous jets that are pouring honey are the pleasures derived from the gratification of our desires and to which men are strongly addicted.

13. The wise know life's course to be such. Through that knowledge they succeed in snapping its fetters."

CHAPTER VII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1. "Excellent is this parable which you have described. Indeed, you are acquain-

ted with Truth. Having listened to your nectar-like speech, I desire to hear more.'

Vidura said :—

2. "Listen to me, O king, I shall once more fully describe the means an acquaintance with which enables the wise to free themselves from the fetters of the world.

3—4. As a person, O king, who has to travel a long distance, is sometimes obliged to halt for being fatigued so, O Bharata, they that are of little understanding travelling along the long way of life, have to make frequent halts in the shape of repeated births. The wise are, however, freed from that obligation.

6. Men well read in scriptures, describe for this life's course as a long way. The wise also describe life's way with all its difficulties as a forest.

6. Creatures, O Bharata-chief, whether mobile or immobile, have to repeatedly return to the world. The wise alone escape.

7. The diseases, mental and physical, to which mortals are subject, whether visible or invisible, are described as beasts of prey by the wise.

8. Men are always assailed by them, O Bharata. Again, those dreadful beasts of prey, which are their own acts in life, never cause any anxiety to the foolish.

9. If any person, O king, somehow escapes from diseases, Decrepitude, that destroyer of beauty, assails him afterwards.

10. Plunged in a slough by the objects of senses, *viz.*, sound, form, taste, touch and scent, man remains there without anything to save him from there.

11. Meanwhile, the years, the seasons, the months, the fortnights, the days and the nights, coming one after another, gradually deprive him of beauty and lessen the period of life.

12. These all are harbingers of death. The foolish do not regard them as such. The wise say that all creatures are ruled by the Ordainer through their acts.

13. The body of a creature is called the car. The vital principle is the driver of that car. The senses are the horses. Our acts and the understanding are the traces.

14. He who follows after those running horses, has to come repeatedly by re-births.

15. He, however, who, being self-restrained, restrains them by his understanding, has not to return.

16. They, however, who are not stupefied while following this wheel of life that is revolving like a real wheel, do not come by re-births.

17. He that is wise should certainly prevent the coming of re-birth. One should not neglect it, for indifference may subject us to it repeatedly.

18. The Man, O king, who has controlled his senses and subdued anger and covetousness, who is contented, and truthful in speech, obtains peace.

19. This body is called the car of Yama. The foolish are stupefied by it. Such a person, O king, would obtain that which you have obtained.

20. The loss of kingdom of friends, and of children, O Bharata, and such other things, visit him who is still under the influence of desire.

21. The wise should apply the medicine of intelligence to all great sorrows. Securing the medicine of wisdom, which is truly very efficacious and is almost unattainable) the self-controlled man would kill that serious disease called sorrow.

22. Neither power, nor riches, nor friends, nor well-wishers, can cure a man of his grief so successfully as the control of self. Therefore not injuring others and cherishing friendship for all creatures, be of pious behaviour, O Bharata!

23. Self-restraint, renunciation, and carefulness, are the three horses of Brahman. He who rides on the car of his soul, to which are yoked these horses with the help of traces furnished by good conduct, and drives it, shaking off all fear of death, goes, O king, to the regions of Brahma.

24. That person, O king, who gives to all creatures promise of his harmlessness, goes to the best of regions, *viz.*, the blessed one of Vishnu.

25. The fruit that one reaps by giving an assurance unto all creatures of his harmlessness cannot be obtained by celebrating a thousand sacrifices or by daily fasts.

26. Of all things there is certainly nothing dearer than self. Death is, forsooth, disliked by all creatures, O Bharata. Therefore, pity should certainly be shown to all.

27. Possessed by various kinds of mistakes, entangled by the net of their own intelligence, they that are wicked and are of good vision, visit repeatedly this Earth. The wise secure a union with Brahma."

CHAPTER VIII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "After hearing the words of Vidura, the chief of the Kurus, stricken with grief on account of the death of his sons, dropped down senseless on the Earth.

2—3. Seeing him fall down in that state, his friends as also the island-born Vyasa, Vidura, Sanjaya, and other well-wishers, and the trustworthy attendants who used to wait at the gates, sprinkled cool water over his body, and fanned him with palm leaves, and gently rubbed him with their hands. For a long while they solaced the king while in that state.

4. Regaining his senses, after a long time the monarch, wept for a long time, overwhelmed with grief on account of the death of his sons.

5. He said:—'Fie on the humanity. Fie on the human body. The miseries that we suffer in this life frequently originate from the very state of humanity.

6. Alas, O lord, great is the grief, like poison or fire, that one suffers at the loss of sons, of riches, of kinsmen, and relatives.

7. That grief consumes our limbs, and wisdom. Stricken with that grief, a person welcomes death.

8. This calamity that has befallen me through ill-luck is like that. It will, I see, terminate with life itself. O best of sages, I shall, therefore, put an end to my life this very day.'

9. Saying so to his great sire, that foremost of all persons conversant with Brahma, Dhritarashtra, laden with grief, became stupefied. The king, O monarch, thinking of his miseries, became silent.

10. Hearing these words of his, the powerful Vyasa thus spoke to his son stricken with grief on account of the death of his children.

Vyasa said :—

11. "O mighty-armed Dhritarashtra, hear what I say. You are learned, intelligent, and yuo, O powerful one, are skilled in understanding duties.

12. Everything is known to you, O scorcher of foes. Forsooth, you know the instability of all things doomed to death.

13. When this life is fickle, when this world itself is not eternal, when life is sure to end in death, why then, O Bharata, do you grieve?

14. Before your very eyes, O king, Time, making your son the cause, created this enmity.

15. This destruction of the Kurus, O king, was inevitable. Why then do you grieve for those heroes that have achieved the highest end?

16. The high-souled Vidura knew every thing. He had tried his best, O king, to bring about peace.

17. I think the course marked by Destiny cannot be controlled by any one, even if one struggles for ever.

18. The course that was settled by the celestials was known to me direct. I will recite it to you, so that you may enjoy peace of mind.

19. Once before, I went very quickly to the court of Indra. There I saw all the inhabitants of heaven assembled together.

20. There were, O sinless one, all the celestial Rishis also, headed by Narada. There, O king, I saw also the Earth in her embodied form.

21—22. The latter had gone to the gods for the accomplishment of a particular mission. Approaching the gods, she said, —While you were in Brahman's abode you you promised to do all for me. Let that be accomplished soon.

23—24. Hearing these words of hers, Vishnu, adored of all the worlds, smilingly addressed her in the midst of the celestials, saying,—The eldest of the hundred sons of Dhritarashtra, *viz.*, Duryodhana, will accomplish your work. Through that king your object will be achieved.

25. For his sake, many kings will assemble together on the field of Kuru, They will cause one another to be killed through hard weapons.

26. It is evident, O goddess, that your burden will then be lightened in battle. Go quickly to your own station and continue to bear the weight of creatures, O beautiful damsel.

27. From this you should know, O king, that your son Duryodhana, born in Gandhari's womb, was a portion of Kali, born for bringing about a universal slaughter.

28. He was vindictive, restless, wrathful, and difficult of being pleased. Through the influence of Destiny his brothers also took after him.

29. Shakuni became his maternal uncle, and Karna his great friend. Many other kings were born on Earth for helping him in the work of destruction.

30. As the king is, so are his subjects.

If the king becomes pious, even unrighteousness becomes incarnate in his kingdom.

31. Servants, forsooth, are affected by the merits and demerits of their masters. O king, having obtained a bad king, your other sons have all been destroyed.

32. Conversant with truth, Narada knew all this. Through their own faults, your sons have been destroyed, O king! Do not grieve for them, O king. There is no cause for grief.

33. The Pandavas are not to be blamed, O Bharata, in the least, for what has taken place. Your sons were all wicked. It is they that caused this destruction on Earth.

34—35. Narada had truly spoken out to Yudhishthira, all this in his court at the time of the Rajasuya sacrifice, saying,—'The Pandavas and the Kauravas, meeting with each other, will be destroyed. Do that, O son of Kunti, which you should.

36. Hearing these words of Narada, the Pandavas were filled with grief. I have thus communicated to you, an eternal secret of the celestials.

37. This will dispell your sorrow and restore to you a love of life, and make you love the Pandavas, for all that has taken place has been due to what had been preordained by the gods.

38. O you, of mighty-arms, I had learnt all this sometime before. I also spoke of it to king Yudhishthira the just at the time of the Rajasuya sacrifice.

39. When I secretly informed him of all this, Dharma's son, tried his best for preserving peace with the Kauravas. That, however, which is ordained by the gods proved too strong for him to defeat.

40. The determination, O king, of the Destroyer, cannot be baffled any how by mobile and immobile creatures.

41. You are virtuous and highly intelligent, O Bharata! You know also that which all creatures should do and that which they should not do.

42. If king Yudhishthira learns that you are overwhelmed with grief and losing your senses frequently, he will put an end to his life.

43. He is always compassionate and wise. His kindness is displayed even towards all the inferior creatures. How is it possible, O king, that he will not show compassion to you, O king.

44. At my behest, and knowing that that which is ordained is inevitable, as also out of love for the Pandavas, live, O Bharata!

45. If you live thus, your fame will travel all over the world. You will then acquire a knowledge of all duties and find many years for acquiring ascetic merit.

46. This grief consequent on the death of your sons that has arisen in your heart, like a blazing fire, should always be extinguished, O king, by the water of wisdom."

Vaishampayana said :—

47—48. "Hearing these words of the energetic Vyasa and reflecting upon them for a little while, Dhritarashtra said,—'O best of Rishis, I am greatly stricken with grief. I am repeatedly losing consciousness and I am unable to bear up my own self,

49. Hearing, however, these your words about what had been ordained by the gods, I shall not think of putting an end to my life and shall live and act without indulging in grief.'

50. Hearing these words of Dhritarashtra, O king, Satyavati's son Vyasa, disappeared then and there."

CHAPTER IX.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Janamejaya said :—

1. "After the holy Vyasa had gone away, what, O Rishi, did king Dhritarashtra do? You should tell me this.

2. What also did the Kuru king, the great son of Dharma, do? And what did those three, *viz.*, Kripa and others do?

3. I have heard of the wonderful deeds of Ashwatthaman and the exchange of curses. Tell me what took place next, and what Sanjaya next said to the old king."

Vaishampayana said :—

4. "After Duryodhana and all his soldiers had been killed, Sanjaya, deprived of spiritual sight, returned to Dhritarashtra.

Sanjaya said :—

5. 'The kings of various races, that came from various kingdoms, have all, O king, gone to the abode of Death along with your sons.

6. Your son, O king, who had constantly been requested (for peace) but who always desired to terminate his hostility after killing the Pandavas has caused the Earth to be exterminated.

7. Do you, O king, cause the obsequia

rites of your sons and grandsons and fathers to be duly performed."

Vaishampayana said :—

8. "Hearing these dreadful words of Sanjaya, the king dropped down on the Earth and lay unconscious like one deprived of life.

9—10. Approaching the king, who was lying prostrate on the Earth, Vidura, conversant with all forms of duty, said :—'Rise, O king, why do you lie down thus? Do not grieve, O foremost of Bharata's! This O king, is the final end of all creatures.

11. In the beginning creatures are non-existent. In the middle, O Bharata, they become existent. At the end, they once more become non-existent. What is there to be sorry for in all this.

12. By grieving one cannot get back the dead. By indulging in grief, one cannot die himself. When such is the course of the world, why do you grieve?

13. One may die without fighting in battle. One also escapes alive after having engaged in battle. When one's appointed Time comes, O king, he cannot escape.

14. Time drags all creatures. There is none dear or loathsome to Time, O Kuru's chief.

15. As the wind tears off the ends of all blades of grass, so all creatures, O Bharata chief, are subjected by Time under its influence.

16. All creatures are like members of the same caravan bound for one destination. What is there to be sorry for if Time meets with one a little earlier than with another.

17. Those again, O king, that have fallen in battle and for whom you bewail, are not really objects of your grief, since all those illustrious persons have gone to heaven.

18. By celebrating sacrifices with enough presents, by practising ascetic austerities, and by knowledge, people cannot so easily go to heaven as heroes by displaying courage in battle.

19. All those heroes were conversant with the Vedas; all of them were observant of vows: all of them have died, fighting the foe in battle. What is there to be sorry for then.

20. They poured their libations of arrows upon the bodies of their brave enemies as upon a fire. Great as they were, they bore in return the libations of arrows poured upon themselves.

21. I tell you, O king, that there is no superior way to heaven for a Kshatriya to one through battle.

22. All of them were great Kshatriyas, all of them were heroes and ornaments of assemblies. They have attained to a highly blessed state. One should not grieve for them.

23. Do you comfort your ownself. Do not grieve, O foremost of men. You should not allow yourself to be overwhelmed with sorrow and give up all work."

CHAPTER X.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. "Hearing these words of Vidura, that foremost of Bharata's race, *viz.*, Dhritarashtra, ordered for his car. The king once more said,—'Bring Gandhari here forthwith, and all the Bharata ladies. Bring here Kunti also, as well as all the other ladies with her.'

3. Having said these words to Vidura conversant with every duty, the pious Dhritarashtra, deprived of his senses by sorrow got on his car.

4. Then Gandhari, stricken with grief consequent on the death of his sons, accompanied by Kunti and the other ladies of the royal household, came, as ordered by her lord, where the latter was waiting for her.

5. Stricken with great grief, they came together to the king. As they met, they addressed each other and cried aloud.

6. Then Vidura, who had become more afflicted than those ladies, began to solace them. Placing those weeping ladies on the cars that stood ready for them, he left the city.

7. At that time a loud cry of sorrow arose from every Kuru house. The whole city, including the very children, were stricken with grief.

8. Those ladies who had not before this been seen by the very celestails were now helpless as they were in the absence of their lords, seen by the common people.

9. With their beautiful but dishevelled hairs, and their ornaments thrown off, those ladies, each clad in a single piece of cloth, proceeded most sorrowfully.

10. Indeed, they came out of their houses looking like white mountains, like a herd of deer from their mountain caves after the fall of their leader.

11. Those bevies of fair damsels, O king, came out filled with sorrow, and ran here and there like a herd of fillies on a circus yard.

12. Seizing each other's hands, they began to bewail aloud after their sons, brothers, and fathers. They presented a spectacle that takes place on the occasion of the universal destruction at the end of a cycle.

13. Weeping and crying and running here and there, and deprived of their senses by sorrow, they knew not what to do.

14. Those ladies who formerly felt abashed even in the presence of companions of their own sex, now felt no shame, though scantily clad, in coming out before their mothers-in-law.

15. Formerly they used to console each other while stricken with even slightest grief, Stupefied by grief, they, O king, could not look upon each other.

16. Surrounded by those thousands of wailing ladies, the king issued out of the city in great depression and proceeded quickly towards the battle-field.

17. Issuing out of the city, artizans and traders and Vaishyas and, all kinds of mechanics, followed the king.

18. As those ladies, afflicted by the entire destruction of the Kurus, cried in sorrow, a loud wail arose from among them that pierced all the worlds.

19. All creatures that heard that cry thought that the hour of universal destruction was near at hand when all things would be devoured by the fire that arises at the end of the cycle.

20. The citizens also of Hastinapura devoted to the Kurus, with hearts filled with anxiety at the destruction of their rulers, O king, cried aloud like those ladies."

CHAPTER XI.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd*

Vaishampayana said:—

1. "Within two miles after his departure Dhritarashtra, met with those three great car-warriors, *viz.*, Sharadwat's son Kripa, Drona's son (Ashwatthaman), and Kritavarman.

2—3. As soon as the latter saw the blind king, possessed of great power, the three heroes sighed in grief and with voices choked in tears weepingly said,—'Your royal son, O king, having performed the most difficult feats, has, with all his followers, gone to the region of Indra.

4. We are the only three car-warriors of Duryodhana's army that are yet alive. All the others, O foremost of Bharata's race, have died.'

5—6. Having said these words to the king, Sharadwat's son Kripa, addressing the grief-stricken Gandhari, said to her,—'Your sons have fallen, performing heroic and wonderful deeds, in the battle-field.

7. Forsooth having, obtained those bright worlds that are attainable only by the use of weapons, they are playing there like celestials, having assumed shinning forms.

8. Amongst those heroes there was no one that fled from battle-field. Every one of them has fallen at the end of weapons. None of them joined his hands, and prayed for mercy.

9. Death in battle by weapons has been described by the ancients as the best that a Kshatriya can obtain. You should not, therefore, grieve for any of them.

10. Their enemies, O queen, *viz.*, the Pandavas, too, have not been more fortunate. Hear, what we, headed by Ashwatthaman, have done to them.

11. Learning that your son had been killed unrighteously by Bhima, we massacred the Pandavas when asleep after entering these camp.

12. All the Panchalas have heen killed. Indeed, all the sons of Drupada, as also all the sons of Draupadi, have been massacred.

13. Having caused this massacre of the sons of our foes, we are flying away because we three cannot fight with them.

14. Our enemies, the Pandavas, are all heroes and great bowmen. They will soon attack us, filled with rage, for taking vengeance on us.

15. Informed of the massacre of their sons, those foremost of men, infuriate with rage,—those heroes,—O illustrious lady, will soon pursue us.

16. Having caused this massacre we dare not stay. Grant us premission, O queen. You should not grieve.

17. Grant us your permission also, O king! Summon fortitude, and observe the duties of a Kshatriya in their highest form.'

18—19. Having said so to the king, and going round him, Kripa and Kritavar-t man and Drona's son, O Bharata, withou being able to take away their eyes from

the wise king Dhritarashtra, urged their horses towards the banks of the Ganges.

20. Leaving that place, O king, those great car-warriors, with hearts stricken with anxiety, took one another's leave and separated from one another.

21. Sharadwat's son Kripa went to Hastinapura; Hridika's son went to his own kingdom; while the son of Drona started for the hermitage of Vyasa.

22. Thus those heroes, who had offended the great sons of Pandu, respectively proceeded to the places they selected, assailed with fear and casting their eyes on one another.

23. Having met the king thus, those heroes, went away before the sunrise, O king, to the places they selected.

24. It was after this, O king, that the sons of Pandu, those great car-warriors, met the son of Drona, and displaying their prowess, defeated him, O king."

CHAPTER XII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "After all the warriors had been massacred, king Yudhishthira heard that his uncle Dhritarashtra had left the city of Hastinapura.

2. Afflicted with grief consequent on the death of his sons, Yudhishthira, O king, accompanied by his brothers, set out for meeting his uncle who was filled with sorrow for the death of his (hundred) sons.

3. The son of Kunti was followed by the great and heroic Krishna of Dasharha's race, by Yuyudhana, as also by Yuyutsu.

4. The princess Draupadi also, laden with grief, and accompanied by those Panchala ladies that were with her, sorrowfully followed her husband.

5. Yudhishthira saw near the banks of the Ganges, O king, the crowd of Bharata ladies afflicted with sorrow and crying like a flight of she-ospreys.

6—7. The king was soon surrounded by those thousands of ladies who with arms raised up in grief, were bewailing aloud and uttering all sorts of words, agreeable and disagreeable.

7. 'Where, indeed, is that righteousness of the king, where his truth and pity, since he has killed sires and brothers and preceptors and sons and friends.

8. How, O mighty-armed one, has your heart become tranquil after killing Drona, and your grandsire Bhishma, and Jayadratha.

9. What is the use of sovereignty to you, after having seen your sires and brothers, O Bharata, and the irresistible Abhimanyu and the sons of Draupadi, thus killed.

10. Leaving those ladies crying like a flight of she-ospreys, the mighty-armed king Yudhishthira the just bowed to the feet of his eldest uncle.

11. Having saluted their sire duly, those slayer of foes, *viz.*, the Pandavas, announced themselves to him, each uttering his own name.

12. Greatly stricken with grief for the slaughter of his sons, Dhritarashtra unwillingly embraced the eldest son of Pandu, who was the cause of that slaughter.

13. Having embraced Yudhishthira and spoken a few solacing words to him, O Bharata, the wicked Dhritarashtra sought for Bhima, like a burning fire ready to burn everything that would approach it.

14. Indeed, the fire of his anger, fanned by the wind of his grief, seemed then to be ready to consume the Bhima-forest.

15. Understanding the wicked intentions towards Bhima, Krishna, dragging away the real Bhima, presented an iron statue of the second son of Pandu to the old king.

16. The highly intelligent, Krishna had, in the very beginning understood the object of Dhritarashtra, and had, therefore, kept such a contrivance ready for baffling them.

17. Holding with his two arms that iron Bhima, the powerful king Dhritarashtra, endued with great stength, broke it into pieces, taking it for the real Bhima.

18. Possessed of the strength of ten thousands elephants, the king broke that statue into pieces. His own breast, however, was considerably bruised and he began to vomit blood.

19. Covered with blood the king dropped down on the ground like a blossoming Parijata tree.

20. His learned charioteer, Sanjaya the son of Gavalgana raised the king and soothing and comforting him, said—'Do not act so.'

21. Having cast off his wrath and regained his true nature the king then became filled with grief and began to weep aloud, saying,—'Alas, Oh Bhima, Alas, Oh Bhima!'

22—23. Knowing that he was no longer under the influence of anger, and that he was truly sorry for having (as he believed) slain Bhima, Vasudeva, that foremost of men, said,—'Do not grieve, O Dhritarashtra, for you have not killed Bhimasena. That is an iron statue, O king, which has been broken by you.

24. Knowing that you were filled with anger, O foremost of Bharata's race, I dragged Bhima away from within the jaws of Death.

25. O best of kings, there is none equal to you in physical strength. Who is there, O mighty-armed one, that would bear the pressure of your arms.

26. As no one can escape alive from a struggle with Death himself, so no body can come out safe from within your embrace.

27. Therefore that iron statue of Bhima, which had been made by your son, had been kept ready for you.

28. On account of the sorrow for the death of your sons, your mind has been filled with spite. Therefore, O great king, you seek to kill Bhimasena.

29. The destruction of Bhima, however, O king, would do you no good. Your sons, O king, would not be revived by it.

30. Therefore, approve of what we have done to secure peace, and do not grieve any longer."

CHAPTER XIII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—2. "Thereupon a few maid-servants came to the king for washing him. After he had been properly washed, Krishna again addressed him, saying. 'You are, O king, well read in the Vedas and various scriptures. You have heard all old histories, and everything relating to the duties of kings.

3. You are learned, wise and can understand strength and weakness. Why are you then angry when all that has befallen you is the outcome of your own folly.

4. I spoke this to you before the battle. Both Bhishma and Drona, O Bharata, did the same, as also Vidura and Sanjaya. You did not, however, then care to follow our advice.

5. Although requested by us, you did not act according to the advice we offered, knowing that the Pandavas were superior to you and yours, O Kuru chief in strength and bravery!

6. The king who sees his own shortcomings and knows the distinctions of place and time, enjoys great prosperity.

7. That man, however, who, though advised by his well-wishers, does not follow their words, suffers miseries and is obliged to grieve for his evil policy.

8. Follow a different course of life now, O Bharata! You did not control your self but suffered yourself to be ruled by Duryodhana.

9. That which has befallen you is due to your own fault. Why then do you seek to kill Bhima? Remembering your own folly govern your anger now.

10. That mean wretch who had, from haughtiness caused the princess of Panchala to be brought into the court, has been justly killed by Bhimasena.

11. Look at your own evil deeds as also at those of your wicked-souled son. The sons of Pandu are perfectly innocent. Yet they have been treated most ruthlessly by you and him.' "

Vaishampayana continued :—

12. "After he had thus been told the truth by Krishna, O king, Dhritarashtra replied to Devaki's son, saying. 'It is just so, O you of mighty arms! What you say, O Madhava, is perfectly true! It is father's affection that made me deviate from the path of righteousness.

14. By good luck, that foremost of men, the mighty Bhima of true prowess, protected by you, came not within my embrace.

15. Now, I am free from wrath and fever. I wish eagerly, O Madhava to embrace that hero.

16. When all the kings have been killed when my children are no more, my well-being and happiness depend upon the sons of Pandu,

17. Having said so, the old king then embraced those beautiful princes, *viz.*, Bhima and Dhananjaya and those two foremost of men, *viz.*, the two sons of Madri, and wept, and comforted and blessed them."

CHAPTER XIV.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Ordered by Dhritarashtra, those foremost of Kuru's race, *viz.*, the Pandava

brothers, accompanied by Keshava, then went to see Gandhari.

2. The innocent Gandhari, stricken with grief on account of the death of her hundred sons, thought that king Yudhishthira the just had killed all his enemies, and wished to curse him.

3. Knowing her evil intentions towards the Pandavas, the Vyasa made himself ready for counteracting them at the very beginning.

4. Having cleansed himself by the sacred and fresh water of the Ganges, the great Rishi, capable of going everywhere at will as quickly as the mind, came there.

5. Capable of seeing the heart of every one with his spiritual vision and desirous of doing the same, the sage came there.

6. Endued with great ascetic merit and ever intent on saying what was for the good of creatures, the Rishi said to his daughter-in-law at the proper moment. 'Do not at this time imprecate a curse! Rather make a good use of this hour for showing your forgiveness.

7. Thou should not be angry with the Pandavas, O Gandhari! Set your heart on peace! Restrain the words that are about to drop from your lips! Listen to my advice.

8—10. Your son, seeking victory had requested you every day for the eighteen days of the battle, saying,—'O mother bless me who am fighting with my foes!' Solicited thus every day by your son desirous of victory, you always answered him saying, —'victory is there where righteousness is.' I do not, O Gandhari, remember that your words, have ever been falsified! Those words, therefore, which you, requested by Duryodhana, said to him, could not be false. You are always engaged in the well-being of all creatures.

11. Having undoubtedly reached the other shore in that dreadful battle of Kshatriyas, the sons of Pandu have certainly gained the victory and greater a righteousness.

12. You formerly observed the virtue of forgiveness. Why would you not observe it now? Restrain unrighteousness, O you who are ever righteousness. There is victory where righteousness is.

13—14. Remembering your own righteousness and the words spoken by your self, check your wrath, O Gandhari! Do not act otherwise, O beautiful speeched lady!' Hearing these words, Gandhari said,—'O holy one, I do not entertain any ill feelings towards the Pandavas, nor do I wish that they should die. Out of grief for the death of my sons, my heart is greatly shaken.

15. I know that I should protect the Pandavas with as much care as Kunti does, and that Dhritarashtra also should protect them as I should.

16. For the folly of Duryodhana and of Shakuni the son of Suvala, and through the action of Karna and Dushasana, this extinction of the Kurus has taken place.

17. In this matter Vibhatsu or Pritha's son Vrikodara, or Nakula or Sahadeva, or Yudhishthira himself is not to blame in the least.

18. While engaged in battle, the Kauravas, puffed up with arrogance and pride have perished with many others who helped them. I am not grieved at this.

19. But there has been one act done by Bhima in the very presence of Vasudeva that excites my anger. Having challenged Duryodhana to a dreadful mace encounter, and having come to know that my son, while making diverse kinds of motion in the battle, was superior to him in skill, the great Vrikodara struck the latter below the navel.

21. It is this that excites my anger. Why should heroes, for the sake of their lives, forget their duties that have been determined by great persons conversant with every duty?'

CHAPTER XV.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said:—

1—2. "Hearing these words of Gandhari, Bhimasena, in fear said these words for solacing her. 'The deed may be fair or unfair, I did it through fear and for the object of protecting my own self! you should, therefore, forgive me now!

3. Your powerful son was incapable of being killed by anybody in a fair and righteous battle. And therefore I did what was unfair.

4. Duryodhana himself had formerly defeated Yudhishthira unfairly. He always acted treacherously towards us. It was therefore that I had recourse to an unfair act.

5. Your son was then the only unslain warrior of his party. In order that that brave prince might not kill me in the mace-encounter and once more deprive us of our kingdom, I acted in that way.

6. You know what your son had said to the princess of Panchala while the latter, in her seasons, was clad in a single piece of cloth.

7. Without having killed Suyodhana it was impossible for us to rule peacefully the whole Earth with seas. And therefore I acted in that way.

8. Your son wronged us in many ways. In the court he had shown his left thigh to Draupadi.

9. For that wicked conduct of his your son deserved to be killed by us even then. However, commanded by king Yudhishthira the just, we allowed ourselves to be restrained by the agreement that had been made.

10. By this means, O queen, your son excited deadly hostilities with us. We suffered great miseries in the forest. Remembering all this, I acted in that way!

11. Having killed Duryodhana in battle, we have terminated our hostilities. Yudhishthira has regained his kingdom, and we also have been freed from anger!'

12. Hearing these words of Bhima, Gandhari said,—'As you praise my son thus he did not deserve such a death! He, however, did all that you describe!

13. When Vrishasena, however, had deprived Nakula of his horses, O Bharata, you drank in battle the blood from Dusshasana's body!

14. Such an act is cruel and is spoken ill of by the good. It becomes a most disrespectable person. It was a wicked act, O Vrikodara, which you then perpetrated. You should not have done it.'

15. Bhima replied,—'It is improper to drink the blood of even a stranger, what then need be said about quaffing the blood of one's own self. One's brother, again, is like his own self. There is no difference between them.

16. The blood, however, did not, O mother, pass down my lips aud teeth. Karna knew this well. My hands only were covered with Dusshasana's blood.

17. Seeing Nakula deprived of his horses by Vrishasena in battle, I caused the rejoicing Kaurava brothers to be filled with fear.

18. When after the gambling match the hairs of Draupadi were seized, I gave vent to certain words in anger. I do still remember those words.

19. I would for all years to come, have been regarded to have neglected the duties of a Kshatriya if I had left that promise unfulfilled. It was for this, O queen, that I did that act.

20. You should not, O Gandhari, attribute any fault to me. Without having checked your sons formerly, should you attribute any fault to our innocent selves.

Gandhari said:—

21. "Unvanquished by any one, you have killed a hundred sons of this old man! Oh, why did you not spare, O child, even one son of this old couple deprived of kingdom. Who had not committed a greater offence?

22. Why did you not leave even one crutch for this blind couple?

23. O child, although you live unscathed, having killed all my sons, yet I would not have been sorry, if you had followed the path of righteousness in killing them.'"

Vaishampayana continued:—

24. "Having said so, Gandhari, filled with anger at the slaughter of all her sons and grandsons enquired after Yudhishthira, saying,—'Where is the king?'

25—26. After she had said these words, king Yudhishthira, trembling and with joined hands, approached her and said, 'Here is Yudhishthira, O goddess, that cruel destroyer of your sons! I deserve your curses, for I am the root of this universal destruction! Oh curse me!

27. I do not care for life, for kingdom, for wealth! Having brought about the destruction of such friends, I have proved myself to be a great fool and a hater of friend.

28. *Gandhari, sighing heavily,* said nothing to Yudhisthira—who spoke such words, who was overcome with fear, and who stood in her presence.

29—30. Conversant with the rules of righteousness, the Kuru queen, possessed of great foresight, turned her eyes from within the folds of the cloth that covered them, to the tip of Yudhisthira's toe, as the prince with body bent forwards, was about to fall down at her feet. At this, the king, whose nails had before this been all very beautiful, got a sore nail on his toe.

31. Seeing this, Arjuna went behind Vasudeva, and the other sons of Pandu became restless and moved about from one place to another.

32. Gandhari then, having shaken off her anger, comforted the Pandavas as a mother should. With her permission those broad-chested heroes then proceeded

together to present themselves to their mother.

33. Having seen her sons after a long time, Kunti who had been filled with anxiety for them, covered her face with her cloth and began to weep.

34. Having wept for sometime with her children, Pritha saw the wounds and scars of many weapons on their bodies.

35. She then repeatedly embraced and patted each of her sons, and stricken with grief wept with Draupadi who had lost all her children and whom she saw lying on the naked Earth, piteously bewailing.

Draupadi said :—

36. 'O Venerable lady, where have all your grandsons, with Abhimanyu among them, gone? Seeing you in such distress why are they delaying in coming before you. Deprived as I am of my children, what need have I of kingdom.'

37. Raising the grief-stricken princess of Panchala who was weeping thus, Pritha began to solace that lady having of large eyes.

38. Then Kunti, accompanied by the princess of Panchala, and followed by her sons proceeded towards the grief-afflicted Gandhari, though she herself was also in great sorrow.

39. Seeing that illustrious lady with her daughter-in-law, Gandhari said,—' Do not, O daughter, grieve so. See, I too am much afflicted with sorrow as you.

40. I think, this universal destruction has been caused by the irresistible course of Time. This dreadful slaughter was inevitable, since it has not been brought about by human agency!

41. What Vidura of great wisdom foretold, after Krishna's sueing in vain for peace, has now come to pass!

42. Do not, therefore, grieve in a matter that was inevitable, especially when it has taken place! Having been dead in battle they should not be grieved for!

43. I am in the same situation as you are! (If you act thus) who then will comfort us? Through my fault, this foremost of races has been ruined.' "

CHAPTER XVI.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. " Having said so, Gandhari, though standing on that spot which was distant from the field of battle, saw with her spiritual eye, the slaughter of the Kurus.

2. Devoted to her lord, that highly blessed lady always practised high vows. Practising the severest penances, she was always truthful in her speech.

3. By virtue of the gift of the boon by the great *Rishi* Vyasa of pure deeds, she came by spiritual knowledge and power. The lady then piteously bewailed.

4. The highly intelligent Kuru dame saw, from a distance, but as if from a near point, that field of battle, terrible to look at and full of wonderful sights, of those foremost of warriors.

5. Strewn with bones and hair, and covered with streams of blood, that field was filled with thousands upon thousands of dead bodies on every side.

6. Covered with the blood of elephants and horses and car-warriors and various warriors, it was filled with headless trunks and trunkless heads.

7. And it resounded with the cries of elephants and horses and men and women, and abounded with jackals and cranes and ravens and *Kankas* and crows.

8. And it was the sporting ground of Rakshasas living on human flesh. And it was filled with ospreys and vultures and resounded with the inauspicious yells of jackals.

9—10. Then at the command of Vyasa king Dhritarashtra and all the sons of Pandu led by Yudhishthira, with Vasudeva and all the Kuru ladies, went to the battle-field.

11—12. Having reached Kurukshetra, those widowed ladies beheld their killed brothers and sons and sires and husbands lying on earth, as their bodies were being devoured by beasts of prey and wolves and ravens and crows and ghosts and Pishchas and Rakshasas and various other night-rangers.

13. Seeing that onslaught which resembled the spectacles seen on the sporting ground of Rudra, the ladies cried and quickly got down from their costly cars.

14. Witnessing sights the like of which they had never before seen, the Bharata ladies felt their limbs to be deprived of strength and dropped down on the ground.

15. Others became so stupefied that they lost their consciousness. Indeed, the Panchala and the Kuru ladies were plunged into indescribable distress.

16—18. Seeing that dreadful field of battle filled on all sides with the cries of those grief-stricken ladies, the daughter of

Suvala, acquainted with all forms of duty, addressed the lotus-eyed Keshava that foremost of all men. Beholding that universal destruction of the Kurus and filled with grief at the sight, she said,—'Look, O lotus-eyed Madhava, at these daughters-in-law of mine! Deprived of their husbands they are with dishevelled hair, crying piteously like a flight of she-ospreys.

19. Seeing those dead bodies, they are remembering the great Bharata chiefs! They are running here and those in a body towards their sons and brothers and sires and husbands.

20. See, O mighty-armed one, the field is covered with mothers of heroes, all of whom, however, have been deprived of children! There, that part is covered with wives of heroes, who have, however, been bereaved of their husbands.

21. See the field of battle is adorned with those foremost of men, *viz.*, Bhishma and Karna and Abhimanyu and Drona and Drupada and Shalya.

22. See it is adorned also with the golden coats of mail, and with the precious gems, of high-souled warriors, and with their Angadas and Keyuras and garlands.

23. Behold, it is covered with darts and spikes discharged by heroic hands, and swords and various kinds of keen arrows and bows.

24. Beasts of prey, in a body, are standing or sporting or lying down according to their pleasure.

25. Behold, O powerful hero, the field of battle in this state! At this sight, O Janarddana, I am burning with grief.

26. With the destruction of the Panchalas and the Kurus, O slayer of Madhu, I think, the five elements have been destroyed.

27. Dreadful vultures and thousands of other birds, are dragging those bodies stained with blood and seizing them by their armour, are devouring them.

28. Who is there that could even imagine the death of such heroes as Jayadratha, Karna, Drona, Bhishma and Abhimanyu.

29. Alas, though incapable of being killed they have yet been killed, O slayer of Madhu! Behold, vultures, Kankas, ravens hawks, dogs and jackals are feasting upon them.

30. There, those foremost of men, who fought on Duryodhana's side, and went to the field in anger are now lying like extinguished fires.

31. All of them deserve sleeping on soft and clean beds. But alas, in a distressful condition they are sleeping to-day on the naked ground.

32. Recounting their praises poets used to please them before at proper times. They are now listening to the fierce and inauspicious yells of jackals.

33. Those great heroes who used formerly to sleep on rich beds with their limbs smeared with sandal-paste and powdered alone, are now sleeping on the dust.

34. These vultures, wolves and ravens are now their ornaments. Uttering again and again inauspicious and fierce cries, those creatures are now dragging their bodies.

35. Those heroes, look even cheerful, now, and have still beside them their keen arrows, well-tempered swords, and bright maces, as if life has not yet left them!

36. Many leading heroes, possessed of beauty and fair complexions and bedecked with garlands of gold, are sleeping on the ground! Look beasts of prey are dragging and tearing them.

37. Some with massive arms, are sleeping with maces under them as if those were beloved wives.

38. Others with armour on, are holding in their hands their effulgent weapons. Beasts of prey are not tearing them, O Janarddana, thinking them to be still alive.

39. The beautiful golden garlands on the necks of other illustrious heroes, as the latter are being dragged by carnivorous creatures, are scattered about on all sides.

40. There, thousands of fierce wolves, are draging the golden chains round the necks of many illustrious but dead heroes.

41—42. Many, whom clever bards formerly used with their hymns and panegyris, to delight every morning, are now surrounded by fair ladies stricken with grief and weeping and crying around them in distress, O foremost of Vrishni's race.

43. The faces of those beautiful ladies, O Keshava, though pale, still shine like red lotuses.

44. Those Kuru ladies have ceased weeping with their followers and companions. They are all filled with anxiety. Bewildered with sorrow, they are running here and there.

45. The faces of those fair ladies have, with weeping and ire, become effulgent as the morning sun, or gold, or burnished copper.

46. Hearing each other's unmeaning lamentations those ladies, on account of the loud cries of woe coming from every side, are unable to understand each other's meaning.

47. Some amongst them, heavily sighing and repeatedly bewailing, are stupefied by grief and are giving up their lives.

48. Many of them, seeing the bodies [of their sons, husbands, or sires,] are weeping and lamenting. Others are striking their heads with their own soft hands.

49. The Earth, filled with heaps of heads and hands and other limbs, the sights of destruction, looks resplendent.

50. Seeing many headless trunks of great beauty, and many heads without trunks, those fair ladies are lying unconscious on the ground for a long while.

51. Joining particular heads with particular trunks, those ladies, beside themselves with grief, are again discovering their mistakes, and saying,—This is not this one's,—and are weeping more bitterly.

52. Others, uniting arms and thighs and feet, cut off with arrows, are grieving and losing their consciousness repeatedly.

53. Some amongst the Bharata ladies, beholding the bodies of their husbands, mangled by animals and birds and shorn of heads,—are not recognising them.

54. Others, seeing their brothers, sires, sons, and husbands killed by enemies, are, O slayer of Madhu, striking their heads with their own hands.

55. Covered with flesh and blood, the Earth has become impassable with arms still holding swords and with heads adorned with ear-rings.

56. Seeing the field covered with the dead bodies of their brothers and sires, and sons, those faultless ladies, who had never before experiened the least distress, are now plunged into indescribable misery.

57. Look, O Janarddana, at those Dhritarashtra's daughters-in-law, resembling a number of beautiful fillies adorned with excellent manes.

58. O Keshava, is there a more sorrowful sight for me to see than that presented by those ladies of fair forms who are put into such a miserable plight? I must, forsooth, have perpetrated great sins in my previous existence, since I am beholding, O Keshava, my sons and grandsons and brothers all killed by foes.' While thus bewailing Gandhari saw the dead body of her son Duryodhana."

CHAPTER XVII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1. "Seeing Duryodhana, Gandhari, deprived of her senses by grief, suddenly dropped down on the Earth like an uprooted plantain tree.

2. Having regained her consciousness soon, she began to weep and lament seeing her son lying on the bare ground, bathed in blood.

3. Embracing her son, Gandhari bewailed piteously. Stricken with grief, and growing unconscious, the Kuru queen exclaimed,—'Alas, O son!' 'Alas, O son.'

4—6. Burning with grief, the queen wetted with her tears the body of her son, possessed of massive and broad shoulders, and adorned with garlands and collar. Addressing Hrishikesha, who stood by her, she said,—'On the eve of this battle, O powerful one, that has exterminated this race, this foremost of kings, O Vrishny-hero, said to me,—In this civil battle, O mother, wish me success!—When he said these words, myself, knowing that a great calamity had befallen us, told him, O foremost of men, Victory is there where righteousness is.

7. And since, O son, you are bent upon fighting a batttle, you will, forsooth, obtain those regions that can be gained by weapons and sport there like a celestial.

8. These were the words that I then said to him. I did not then grieve for my son. I am, however, sorry for the helpless Dhritarashtra deprived of friends and kinsmen.

9. Look, O Madhava, at my son, that best of warriors, wrathful, expert in weapons, and irresistible in battle, sleeping on the bed of heroes.

10. See the reverses brought about by Time. This subduer of enemies that used formerly to walk at the head of all kings now sleeps on the dust.

11. Forsooth, the heroic Duryodhana, when he sleeps on that bed of the heroes, has attained to the best end.

12. Inauspicious jackals are now pleasing that prince sleeping on the heroe's bed, who was formerly counted by the fairest of ladies sitting round him.

13. He who was formerly encircled by kings who competed with one another to give him pleasure, alas, is now slain and lying on the ground, encircled by vultures.

14. He who was formerly fanned with beautiful fans by fair damsels, is now fanned by [carnivorous] birds with flaps of their wings.

15. Endued with great strength and true prowess, this mighty-armed prince, killed by Bhimasena in battle, sleeps like an elephant killed by a lion.

16. Look at Duryodhana, O Krishna, lying on the naked Earth, bathed in blood, killed by Bhimasena with his mace.

17. That mighty-armed one who had in battle collected together eleven Akshauhinis of soldiers, O Keshava, has on account of his own evil policy, been now killed.

18. Alas, there that great bowman and powerful car-warrior sleeps, killed by Bhimasena, like a tiger killed by a lion.

19. Having disobeyed Vidura, and his own father, this reckless, foolish, and wicked prince has met with death, on account of his disregard of the old.

20. He who had unrivalled sway over the Earth, for thirteen years, alas, that prince, that son of mine, sleeps to-day on the naked Earth, killed by his foes.

21. Not long before, O Krishna, I saw the Earth, full of elephants and kine and horses, ruled by Duryodhana.

22. To-day, O you of mighty-arms, I see her governed by another, and destitute of elephants and kine and horses. What need have I, O Madhava, of life?

23. Again, look at this sight, of these fair ladies weeping by the side of the killed heroes, that is more painful than the death of my son.

24. Behold, O Krishna, the mother of Lakshmana, that lady having large hips, with her hairs dishevelled, that dear wife of Duryodhana, resembling a golden sacrificial altar.

25. While her mighty-armed husband was formerly alive, this highly intelligent damsel used to sport within the embrace of her lord's beautiful arms.

26. Why, indeed, does not my heart break into a hundred pieces seeing my son and grandson killed in battle.

27. Alas, that innocent lady now smells her son covered with blood. Again, that lady having beautiful thighs is gently rubbing Duryodhana's body with her fair hand.

28. At one time she is grieving for her husband, and again for her son. At one time she looks on her lord, and again on her son.

29. See, O Madhava, striking her head with her hands, she falls upon the breast of her heroic husband, the king of the Kurus.

30. Having a complexion like that of the filaments of the lotus, she looks beautiful like a lotus. The hapless princess, now rubs the face of her son, and again that of her husband.

31. If the scriptures and the Shrutis be true, forsooth, this king has obtained the blessed region that one may acquire by the use of weapons'."

CHAPTER XVIII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "See, O Madhava, my hundred sons, who never knew fatigue in battle, have all been killed by Bhimasena with his mace in battle.

2. That which pains me more to-day is that these my young daughters-in-law, deprived of sons and with dishevelled hairs, are wandering on the field to-day.

3. Alas, they who formerly walked only on the terraces of magnificent edifices with feet decorated with many ornaments, are now, in great misery, obliged to touch with those feet of theirs this hard Earth, covered with blood.

4. Reeling in sorrow, they are moving about like drunk persons, driving away with difficulty vultures and jackals and crows.

4. Behold, seeing this terrible destruction, that lady of beautiful limbs, and slender waist, falls down, laden with grief.

6. Beholding this princess, this mother of Lakshmana, O you of mighty-arms, my heart is torn with sorrow.

7. Some seeing their brothers, some their husbands, and some their sons, lying down dead on the naked earth, these beautiful ladies of fair arms, are themselves falling down, catching the arms of the killed.

8. Hear, O unvanquished one, the loud lamentations of those elderly ladies and those others of middle age on witnessing this terrible destruction.

9. See, O you of great might, thos dames, exhausted with fatigue, are taking rest, supporting themselves against broken boxes of cars and the bodies of slain elephants and steeds.

10. See, O Krishna, taking up some relative's severed head adorned with beautiful nose and ear-rings, some one amongst them, is standing sorrowfully.

11—12. I think, O sinless one, they and myself of little understanding must have perpetrated great iniquities in our previous lives, since, O Janarddana, all our relatives and kinsmen have thus been killed by king Yudhishthira. Our acts, fair or unfair, must bear fruits, O you of Vrishni's race.

13—14. See, O Madhava, those young ladies having beautiful breasts and abdomen, born in respectable families, of great modesty, having black eye-lashes and tressess of the same color on their heads, having voice sweet and dear like that of swans, are falling down, unconscious from great grief and crying piteously like flights of cranes.

15. See, O lotus-eyed hero, their beautiful faces resembling full-blown lotuses, are scorched by the sun.

16. Alas, O Vasudeva, the wives of my proud children who were powerful like infuriate elephants, are now being looked at by common people.

17—18. See, O Govinda, the shields decked with hundred moons, the sunny standards, the golden coats of mail, and the golen collars and cuirasses, and the head-gears, of my sons, scattered on the Earth, are shining like sacrificial fires over which have been poured libations of clarified butter.

19. There, Dusshasana sleeps, killed by Bhima, having the blood of all his limbs drunk by that heroic slayer of foes.

20. Look at that other son of mine, O Madhava, killed by Bhima with his mace, actuated by Draupadi and the memory of his woes at the time of the match at dice.

21—22. Addressing the princess of Panchala, in the midst of the assembly, who had been won by dice, this Dusshasana, desirous of pleasing his [elder] brother and Karna, O Janarddana, had said,—You are now the wife of a slave! With Sahadeva and Nakula and Arjuna, O lady, enter our household now.

23. At that time, O Krishna, I said to king Duryodhana,—O son, discard the wrathful Shakuni.

24. Know your maternal uncle to be very wicked and greatly fond of quarrel. Discard him forthwith and make peace with the Pandavas, O son.

25. O fool, do you not think of Bhimasena filled with anger. You are cutting him with your wordy arrows like a person striking an elephant with burning brands.

26. Alas, neglecting my words, he vomitted his poison of words at them, who had already been cut with wordy arrows, like a snake vomiting his poison at a bull.

27. There that Dusshasana sleeps stretching his two massive arms, killed by Bhimasena like a powerful elephant by a lion.

28. The very angry Bhimasena perpetrated a most dreadful deed by drinking in battle the blood of his foe."

CHAPTER XIX.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "There, O Madhava, my son Vikarna, praised by the wise, lies on the naked earth, killed by Bhima and wounded horribly.

2. O destroyer of Madhu, Vikarna lies there dead in the midst of [slain] elephants like the moon in the autumnal sky surrounded by blue clouds.

3. His broad palm, covered with leathern fence, and scarred by constant holding of the bow, is pierced with difficulty by vultures desirous of eating it up.

4. His helpless young wife, O Madhava, is continually but unsuccessfully trying to drive away those vultures desirous of feeding on carrion.

5. The youthful, brave and beautiful Vikarna, O foremost of men, reared in luxury and worthy of every kind of happiness, now sleeps on dust, O Madhava.

6. Though all his vital parts have been cut with cloth-yard and bearded arrows and nalikas, yet the natural beauty of his body has not left this best of the Bharatas.

7. There, my son Durmuksha, that destroyer of a great number of enemies, sleeps facing the enemy, slain by the heroic Bhimasena in satisfaction of his promise.

8. His face, O Krishna, half eaten away by beasts of prey, looks more beautiful like the moon on the seventh day of the light fortnight.

9. Look, O Krishna, at the face of that heroic son of mine. How could that son of mine be killed by enemies and thus made to eat the dust.

10. O amiable one, how could that Durmukha, before whom no enemy could stand be killed, by foes.

11. Look, O slayer of Madhu, at that other son of Dhritarashtra, *viz.*, Chitrasena, the best of all bowmen, slain and lying on the ground.

12. Those young ladies, stricken with grief and crying piteously are now sitting, with beasts of prey, around his beautiful body bedecked with wreaths and garlands.

13. The piteous lamentations of women, and these cries and roars of beasts of prey, appear highly wonderful to me, O Krishna.

14. Young and beautiful, and always waited upon and served by the most handsome ladies, my son Vivinshati, O Madhava, sleeps there, covered with dust.

15. His armour has been cut with arrows. Killed in the general destruction, the heroic Vivingshati is now encircled and waited upon by vultures.

16. Having in battle penetrated the ranks of the Pandava army, that hero now sleeps on the bed of a most exalted and heroic Kshatriya.

17. Look, O Krishna, at his very beautiful and smiling face, having excellent nose and beautiful eyebrows, and resembling the shining Moon himself.

18. Formerly a body of the most beautiful ladies used to wait upon him, like thousands of celestial girls upon a sporting Gandharva.

19. Who again could stand before my son Dussaha, that destroyer of heroic enemies, that hero, that ornament of assemblies, that irresistible warrior, that resister of foes.

20. The body of Dussaha, covered with shafts, shines like a mountain overgrown with blossoming Karnikaras.

21. With his golden garland and his bright armour, Dussaha, though dead, shines yet, like a white mountain or fire."

CHAPTER XX.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1—2. "He whose power and bravery were regarded, O Keshava, as a one and half times superior to those of his father and you, he who took after a dreadful and proud lion, he who alone pierced the impenetrable army of my son, he who killed many, alas, he now sleeps there, himself dead.

3. I see, O Krishna, the splendour of that son of Arjuna, of that great hero, *viz.*, Abhimanyu, has not diminished even in death.

4. There, the daughter of Virata, the daughter-in-law of Arjuna, that girl of faultless beauty, stricken with grief on seeing her heroic husband, is bewailing.

5. Approaching her husband, that young wife, *viz.*, the daughter of Virata, is gently rubbing him, O Krishna, with her hand.

6—7. Formerly, that highly intelligent and beautiful girl, inebriate with honied wines, used bashfully to embrace her lord, and kiss the face of Subhadra's son, resembling a fullblown lotus and supported on a neck bearing three lines like those of a conch-shell.

8. Taking off her husband's golden armour, O hero, that damsel is now looking on the body of her husband covered with blood.

9. Beholding her lord, O Krishna, that girl addresses you saying :—'O lotus-eyed one, this hero whose eyes resembled yours, has been killed.

10. In power, energy, and prowess, he was your equal, O sinless one! He resembled you very much in beauty. Yet he sleeps on the ground, killed by the enemy.'

11. Addressing her own husband, she says again,—'You were reared up in every luxury. You used to sleep on soft skins of the Ranku deer. Alas, does not your body feel pain to-day by lying thus on this naked Earth.

12—13. Stretching your massive arms decorated with golden Angadas, resembling a couple of elephant's trunks, and coated with skin hardened by constant use of the bow, sleep you, O lord, peacefully, as if worn out with the fatigue of too much exercise. Alas, why do you not speak to me that am weeping so?

14. I do not remember to have ever offended you. Why do you not speak to me then? Formerly, you used to address me even when you would see me at a distance.

15. Where will you go, leaving behind you the much-respected Subhadra, these your sires who take after the very celestials, and my own wretched self distracted with grief.

16—17. See, O Krishna, collecting with her hands the blood-dyed hairs of her husband and placing his head on her lap, the beautiful lady is addressing him as if he were alive,—How could those great car-warriors kill you in the midst of battle,—

you who are the sister's son of Vasudeva and the son of the holder of Gandiva?

18. Alas, fie on those wicked warriors, Kripa, Karna, Jayadratha, Drona and Drona's son, by whom you were killed!

19. What did those great car-warriors think at that time when they surrounded you, a warrior of tender years, and killed you to my grief?

20. How could you, O hero, who had so many protectors, be killed so helplessly before the very eyes of the Pandavas and the Panchalas?

21. Seeing thee, O hero, killed in battle by many warriors in a body, how is that foremost of men, that son of Pandu, *viz.*, your father, able to bear the burden of life?

22. Neither the acquisition of a vast territory, nor the discomfiture of their foes, gives joy to the Parthas bereft of you, O lotus-eyed one.

23. By the practice of virtue and self-restraint, I shall very soon go to those blissful regions which you have acquired by the use of weapons. Protect me, O hero, when I go there.

24. Untill the appointed time comes, one cannot die, since, wretched that I am, I am still alive after seeing you killed in battle.

25. Having gone to the region of the departed manes, whom else, like me, do you address now, O foremost of men, in sweet and smiling words.

26. Forsooth, you will agitate the hearts of the Apsaras in heaven, with your great beauty and soft and smiling words.

27. Having attained the regions reserved for pious persons, you are now united, O son of Subhadra, with the Apsaras. While playing with them, recollect now and then my good acts towards you.

28. Your union with me in this world had, it seems, been ordained for only six months, for on the seventh, O hero, you lost your life.

29. O Krishna, the ladies of the royal house of Matsya are dragging away the sorrowful Uttara, disappointed, and even lamenting in this way.

30. Dragging away the sorrow-stricken Uttara, those ladies, themselves still more aggrieved than that girl, are weeping and bewailing aloud at sight of the slain Virata.

31. Wounded with the weapons and arrows of Drona, lying down on earth, and bathed in blood, Virata is encompassed by screaming vultures and yelling jackals and crowing ravens.

32. Those black-eyed ladies, approaching the dead body of the Matsya king over which carnivorous birds are uttering cries of joy, are trying to turn the body. Weakened by grief, they are unable to do what they wish.

33. Scorched by the Sun, and exhausted with fatigue and toil, their faces have become colourless and pale.

34. See also, O Madhava, those other children, besides Abhimanyu, *viz.*, Uttara, Sudakshina the prince of the Kamvojas, and the beautiful Lakshmana, all lying on the field of battle.' "

CHAPTER XXI.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "There the powerful Karna, that great bowman, lies prostrate on the earth. In battle he was like a burning fire. That fire, however, has now been put out by the power of Partha.

2. See, Vikartana's son Karna, after having killed many Atirathas, has been prostrated on the naked Earth and is covered with blood.

3. Wrathful and energetic, he was a great bowman and a powerful car-warrior. Killed in battle by the holder of Gandiva, that hero now sleeps on the ground.

4. My sons, those powerful car-warriors, from fear of the Pandavas, fought, led by Karna, like a herd of elephants with its leader standing first.

5. Alas, like a tiger killed by a lion, or an elephant by an infuriate elephant, that warrior has been killed in battle by Savyasachin.

6. Collected together, O foremost of men, the wives of that warrior, with dishevelled hairs and loud cries of grief, are sitting around that fallen hero.

7. Anxious about that warrior, king Yudhishthira the just could not sleep for thirteen years.

8. Incapable of being restrained by foes in battle like Indra himself who is invincible by enemies, Karna was like the all-destroying fire of dreadful flames at the end of a cycle, and immoveable like Himavat himself.

9. That hero became the protector of Dhritarashtra's son, O Madhava! Alas,

killed, he now lies on the bare ground, like a tree struck down by the wind.

10. Behold, the wife of Karna and mother of Vrishasena, is bewailing piteously and crying and weeping and falling upon the ground.

11. Even now she exclaims,—Forsooth your preceptor's curse has followed you. When the wheel of your car was sunk in the Earth, the cruel Dhananjaya cut off your head with a shaft.

12. That lady, the mother of Sushena, greatly stricken with woe and uttering cries of woe, is falling down, unconscious at the sight of the mighty-armed and brave Karna prostrated on the Earth, with his waist still encircled with a golden belt.

13. Feasting on the body of that illustrious hero, carnivorous animals, have reduced it greatly. This spectacle is indeed pitiable, like that of the moon on the fourteenth night of the dark dark-fortnight.

14. Falling down on the ground, the cheerless lady is rising up again. Filled with grief for the death of her son also, she comes and smelleth the face of her husband."

CHAPTER XXII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "See, killed by Bhimasena, the king of Avanti lies there. Vultures and jackals and crows are feasting upon that hero. Though possessed of many friends, he lies now perfectly helpless.

2. See, O slayer of Madhu, having made a great onslaught of enemies, that warrior is now lying on the bed of a hero, bathed in blood.

3. Jackals, and Kankas, and other carnivorous animals of various kinds, are dragging him now. Mark the reverses caused by Time.

4. His wives, all are crying in grief, and sitting around that hero who while alive was a terrible slayer of enemies but who now lies on the bed of a hero.

5. See, Pratipa's son Valhika, that powerful and highly energetic bowman, slain with a broad-headed shaft, is now lying on the ground like a sleeping tiger.

6. Though dead, the color of his face is still highly bright, like that of the full moon, risen on the fifteenth day of the light fortnight.

7. Burning with grief on account of the death of his son, and desirous of fulfilling his vow, Indra's son Arjuna has killed there that son of Vriddhakshatra.

8. Behold that Jayadratha, who was protected by the illustrious Drona, killed by Partha bent on making good his promise, after penetrating through eleven Akshauhinis of soldiers.

9. Inauspicious vultures, O Janarddana, are feasting upon Jayadratha, the proud and energetic lord of the Sindhu-Sauviras.

10. See, O Achyuta, carnivorous creatures are dragging his body away to a neighbouring jungle, though his devoted wives are trying to protect it.

11. The Kamvoja and Yavana wives of that powerful king of the Sindhus and the Sauviras are waiting upon him for protecting his body.

12. At that time, O Janarddana, when Jayadratha, assisted by the Kekayas, tried to ravish Draupadi, he should have been killed by the Pandavas.

13. Out of respect, for Dusshala, they liberated him on that occasion. Why, O Krishna, did they not show some respect for that Dusshala once more.

14. That young daughter of mine, is now crying sorrowfully. She is striking her body with her own hands and blaming the Pandavas.

15. What, O Krishna, can be a greater grief to me than that my young daughter should be a widow and all my daughters-in-law should equally be so.

16. Alas, alas, see, my daughter Dusshala having cast off her grief and fears, is running about in search of the head of her husband.

17. After killing a vast army, he who had restrained all the Pandavas desirous of rescuing their son, at last himself yeilded to death.

18. Alas, those wives of his, with faces as beautiful as the moon, are crying, sitting around that irresistible hero who took after an infuriate elephant."

CHAPTER XXIII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "There lies Shalya, the maternal uncle himself of Nakula, killed in battle, by the pious and virtuous Yudhishthira.

2. He used everywhere, O foremost of men, to boast of his equality with you. That powerful car-warrior, *viz.*, the king of the Madras, now lies dead.

3. When he accepted the drivership of Karna's car in battle, he tried to depress Karna for securing victory for the sons of Pandu.

4. Alas, alas, look at the smooth face of Shalya, beautiful as the moon, and having eyes resembling lotus petals, eaten away by crows.

5. There, the tongue of that king, beautiful like molten gold, lolling out of his mouth, is, O Krishna, being devoured by carnivorous birds.

6. The ladies of the royal house of Madra, crying aloud, are sitting around the body of that king, that ornament of assemblies, killed by Yudhishthira.

7—8. Those ladies are sitting around that fallen hero like a herd of she-elephants in their season around their leader sunk in mud.

9. Look at the brave Shalya, the great protector and the foremost of car-warriors, stretched on the bed of heroes, his body wounded with arrows.

10. There the highly powerful king Bhagadatta, the king of a mountainous kingdom, the foremost of all holders of good, lies dead on the Earth.

11. Look at the golden and shining garland that he still wears on his head. Though the body is being devoroured by beasts of prey, that garland still adorns the beautiful hairs on his head.

12. Dreadful was the battle that took place between this king and Partha, making the hairs stand erect, like that between Shakra and the Asura Vritra.

13. Having fought Dhananjaya the son of Pritha, and brought him to a perilous condition, this mighty-armed one, was at last killed by his antagonist.

14. He who had no equal on Earth in heroism and energy, that achiever of dreadful feasts in battle, *viz.*, Bhishma, lies there dead.

15. Behold the son of Shantanu, O Krishna, that hero effulgent like the sun, stretched on the Earth, like the Sun himself dropped off the sky at the end of the Yuga.

16. Having scorched his enemies with the fire of his weapons in battle, that brave warrior, that Sun among men, O Keshava, has set like the real Sun at evening.

17. Look at that hero, O Krishna, who in knowledge of duty was equal to Devapi himself, now lying on a bed of arrows, worthy of heroes.

18. Having spread his bed of barbed and unbarbed arrows, that hero lieth on it like Skanda on a clump of reeds.

19. Indeed, the son of Ganga lies there, resting his head on that excellent pillow, consisting of three arrows,—given him by Arjuna.

20. For obeying the mandate of his father, this illustrious one drew up his vital seed. Peerless in battle, that son of Shantanu lies there, O Madhava.

21. Pious and acquainted with all forms of duty, by the help of his knowledge of both the worlds, that hero, though mortal, is still alive like an immortal.

22. When Shantanu's son lies to-day, struck down with arrows, it seems that no other person alive on Earth who is learned and powerful and who is competent to perform great feats in battle.

23. Solicited by the Pandavas, this truthful, righteous, and virtuous hero, communicate to them the means of his own death.

24. Alas, he who had revived the extinct line of Kuru, that illustrious and highly intelligent person, has left the world with all the Kurus in his company.

25. From whom, O Madhava, will the Kurus recieve instructions on religion and duty after that foremost of men, *viz.*, Devavrata, who resembles a god, shall have gone to heaven?

26. See Drona, that best of Brahmanas, that preceptor of Arjuna, of Satyaki, and of the Kurus, is lying on the ground.

27. The highly energetic Drona, O Madhava, was as a master of the four kinds of arms like Shukra of Vrigu's race.

28. Through his favour, Vibhatsu the son of Pandu has achieved the most difficult feats. He now lies dead on the ground. Weapons refused to come at last at his command.

29. Placing him at their head, the Kauravas had challenged the Pandavas. That foremost of all warriors was in the end wounded with weapons.

30. As he moved about in battle, scorching his enemies in every direction, his movement resembled that of a blazing fire. Alas, he now lies dead on the ground, like an extinguished fire.

31. The handle of the bow is yet in his grasp. The leathern fences, O Madhava,

are still on his fingers. Though killed, he still looks as if alive.

32. The four Vedas, and all kinds, of weapons, O Keshava, did not leave that hero even as they do not the Lord Prajapati.

33. His auspicious feet, worthy of adoration and adored before by bards and eulogists, and worshipped by disciples, are now being dragged by jackals.

34. Senseless with sorrow, Kripi sorrowfully attends, O destroyer of Madhu, on that Drona who has been killed by Drupada's son.

35. Look at that sorrow-stricken lady, fallen upon the Earth, with dishevelled hair and face hanging down. Alas, she serves sorrowfully her lifeless husband, that best of all holders of weapons, lying on the ground.

36. Many Brahmana saints, with matted locks on their head, are serving the body of Drona that is cased in armour cut asunder, O Keshava, with the arrows of Dhrishtadyumna.

37. The illustrious and delicate Kripi, depressed and sorrow-stricken, is trying to perform the last rites on the body of her husband killed in battle.

38. There, having placed the body of Drona on the funeral pyre and having put fire with due rites those reciters of *Samans* are singing the three verses.

39. Those Brahmana saints, with matted locks on their head, have made the funeral pyre of that Brahmana with bows and arrows and car-boxes, O Madhava.

40. Having collected various other sorts of arrows, that highly energetic hero is being consumed by them. Having placed his body on the pyre, they are singing and weeping.

41—42. Others are reciting the three well-known *Saman* verses that are used on such occasions. Burning the dead body of Drona on that fire, like fire in fire, those those saintly disciples of his, are proceeding towards the banks of Ganga, along the left side of the pyre and having placed Kripi at their head."

CHAPTER XXIV.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "See the son of Somadatta, who was killed by Yuyudhana, is being cut by a large number of birds.

2. Burning with sorrow at the death of his son, Somadatta, O Janarddana, seems to blame the great bowman Yuyudhana.

3—4. There the mother of Bhurishravas that faultless lady, beside herself with grief, is addressing her lord Somadatta, saying, —By good luck, O king, you do not witness this terrible destruction of the Bharatas, this extermination of the Kurus, this sight resembling the spectacles occurring at the end of a cycle.

5. By good luck, you do not see your heroic son, who bore the device of the sacrificial stake on his banner and who celebrated numberless sacrifices with profuse presents to all, killed on the field of battle.

6. By good luck, you do not hear those dreadful wails of woe uttered amidst this destruction by your daughters-in-law like the screams of a flight of cranes on the sea.

7. Your daughters-in-law, deprived of both husbands and sons, are running about, each clad in a single piece of cloth and each with her black hairs all dishevelled.

8. By good luck, you do not see your son, that foremost of men, deprived of one of his arms, killed by Arjuna, and now being devoured by beasts of prey.

9. By good luck, you do not see to-day your son Shala killed in battle, and Bhurishravas deprived of life, and your widowed daughters-in-law plunged into grief.

10. By good luck, you do not see the golden umbrella of that illustrious hero who had the sacrificial stake as his emblem on his banner, torn and broken on the terrace of his car.

11. There the black-eyed wives of Bhurishravas are bewailing piteously surrounding their lord killed by Satyaki.

12. Stricken with sorrow on account of the slaughter of their husband, those ladies bewailing piteously, are falling down on the Earth with their faces towards the ground, and slowly approaching you, O Keshava!

13. Alas, why did Arjuna of pure deeds commit such a heinous crime, since he cut off the arm of a heedless warrior who was brave and used to perform sacrifices.

14. Alas, Satyaki perpetrated a still more sinful act, for he killed a person of restrained soul while sitting in the observance of the praya vow.

15. Alas, O righteous one, you are lying on the ground, killed unfairly by two foes. —Thus, O Madhava, those wives of Bhurishravas are crying aloud in sorrow.

16—17. There, those wives of that warrior, all having slender waists, are placing upon their laps the cut off arm of their husband and weeping bitterly.—Here is that arm which used to attack the girdles, grind the deep bosoms and touch the navel, the thighs, and the hips, of fair ladies, and loosen the ties of the drawers worn by them.

18. Here is that arm which killed enemies and dispelled the fears of friends, which gave thousands of kine and rooted out the Kshatriyas in battle.

19. In the presence of Vasudeva himself, Arjuna of pure deeds cut it off while you were heedless and engaged with another in battle.

20—21. How wilt you, O Janarddana, describe this great fear of Arjuna while speaking of it in the midst of assemblies. What also will the diadem-decked Arjuna himself say of it?—Censuring you in this way, that best of ladies has stopped at last. The co-wives of that lady are lamenting piteously with her as if she were their daughter-in-law.

23. "There the powerful Shakuni, the king of the Gandharas, having irresistible prowess, has been killed by Sahadeva, the maternal uncle by the sister's son.

23. Formerly, he used to be fanned with a two gold-handed fans. Alas, now, this boy lounging on the ground is being fanned by birds with their wings.

24. He used to assume hundreds and thousands of forms. All the illusions, however, of that man possessed of great illusory powers, have been burnt by the energy of the son of Pandu.

25. Highly wily, he had defeated Yudhishthira in the assembly by his power of deception and won from him his vast kingdom. The son of Pandu, however, has now conquered Shakuni's life-breaths.

26. Look, O Krishna, a number of birds is now sitting around Shakuni. An expert in dice, alas, he had also mastered the means for the destruction of my sons.

27. This fire of hostility with the Pandavas had been lighted by Shakuni, for the destruction of my children as also of himself and his followers and relatives.

28. Like those gained by my sons, O powerful one, by the use of arms, this man too, however wicked-souled, has obtained many blissful regions by the use of weapons.

29. My fear, O destroyer of Madhu, is that that wily man may not create dissensions even there between my children, all of whom are simple and confiding.

CHAPTER XXV.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Gandhari said :—

1. "Behold that irresistible king of the Kamvojas, that bull-necked hero, lying in the dust, O Madhava, though worthy of sleeping comfortably on Kamvoja blankets.

2. Stricken with great sorrow, his wife is weeping bitterly at sight of his arms covered with blood, which, however, formerly used to be smeared with sandal-paste.

3. Indeed, the beautiful lady exclaims, —Even now adorned with beautiful palms and fingers, these two arms of yours resemble a couple of spiked maces, entering into whose clasp joy never left me for a moment.

4. How shall I fare, O king, when I am deprived of you.—Possessing a ... voice, the Kamvoja queen is weeping ...lessly and trembling with emotion.

5. Look at that bevy of fair ladies. Although tired with toil and worn out ... heat, yet beauty does not leave them ... the beauty of the garlands worn by celestials although exposed to the Sun.

6. Behold, O destroyer of Madhu, the heroic king of the Kalingas lying there on the ground, with his mighty arms bedecked with a couple of Angadas.

7. Behold, O Janarddana, those Magadha ladies crying and standing around Jayatsena the king of the Magadhas.

8. The charming and sweet cries of those large-eyed and sweet-voiced damsels, O Krishna, are stupefying my heart greatly.

9. Having all their ornaments displaced, crying, and stricken with sorrow, alas, those ladies of Magadha, worthy of sleeping on costly beds, are now lying down on the naked earth.

10. Surrounding their lord, the king of the Koshalas, *viz.*, prince Vrihadvala, those other ladies are crying aloud.

11. Engaged in taking out from his person the arrows with which it was pierced by Abhimanyu with the full force of his arms, those ladies are again and again losing their consciousness.

12. The faces of those beautiful damsels, O Madhava, exhausted with toil and scorched by the rays of the Sun, are appearing like faded lotuses.

13. ... sons of Dhrishtadyumna, young in age, and bedecked with

garlands of gold and beautiful Angadas, are lying, killed by Drona.

14. Like insects on a burning fire, they have all been consumed by falling upon Drona whose car was the chamber of fire, having the bow for its flames and arrows and darts and maces for its fuel.

15. Likewise, the five brave Kekaya brothers, adorned with beautiful Angadas, are lying on earth killed by Drona and with their faces turned towards that hero.

16. Their coats of mail, shining like molten gold, and their tall standards and cars and garlands all made of gold, are shedding a bright lustre on the Earth like so many burning fires.

17. Look, O Madhava, at king Drupada overthrown in battle by Drona, like a mighty elephant in the forest killed by a huge lion.

18. The bright and white umbrella, of the king of the Panchalas, shines, O lotus-eyed one, like the moon in the autumnal sky.

19. Having burnt his body on the funeral pyre, the daughters-in-law and the wives of the old king, stricken with sorrow, are proceeding, keeping the pyre to their right.

20. There, those ladies, beside themselves with sorrow, are removing the brave and great bowman, *viz.*, Dhrishtaketu, that foremost of the Chedis, killed by Drona.

21. Having counteracted many weapons of Drona, this destroyer of foes, O slayer of Madhu, this great bowman lies there, dead, like a tree uprooted by the wind.

22. After having slain thousands of enemies, that brave king of the Chedis, that mighty car-warrior, *viz.*, Dhrishtaketu ..., himself deprived of life.

23. There, O Hrishikesha, the wives of ... king of the Chedis are sitting around ... body still decked with beautiful hairs ... ear-rings, though torn by carnivorous ...rds.

24. Placing upon their laps the prostrate ...rm of the heroic Dhrishtaketu of Dashar... race, those foremost of ladies, are crying in sorrow.

... Behold, O Hrishikesh, the son of Dhrishtaketu, having fair locks and ...lent ear-rings, cut in battle by Drona ... his arrows.

26. He never deserted his father while ...e latter fought with his enemies. Mark, O destroyer of Madhu, he does not, even in death, leave the side of that heroic father.

27. Thus also, my grandson, that slayer of hostile heroes, *viz.*, the mighty-armed Lakshmana, has followed his father Duryodhana.

28. Look, O Keshava, at the two brothers of Avanti, *viz.*, Vinda and Anuvinda, lying there on the field, like two blossoming Shala trees in the spring uprooted by the wind.

29. Clad in golden armour and bedecked with golden Angadas, they are still armed with swords and bows. Having eyes like those of a bull, and decked with shining garlands, both of them are lying on the field.

30—31. The Pandavas, O Krishna, as well as yourself, are surely unslayable, since they and you have escaped from Drona, Bhishma, Karna the son of Vikartana, Kripa, Duryodhana, the son of Drona, the mighty car-warrior Jayadratha, Somadatta, Vikarna, and from the brave Kritavarman.

32. Mark the reverses created by Time. Those leading warriors who could slay the very celestials by force of their arms have themselves been killed.

33. Forsooth, O Madhava, there is nothing difficult for destiny to bring about, since these leading men, these heroes, have been killed by Kshatriya warriors!

34. I considered my energetic sons as slain even then, O Krishna, when you came back unsuccessful to Upaplavya!

35. Shantanu's son and the wise Vidura told me then,—withdraw your love for your children.

36. The interviews of those persons could never be useless. Soon, O Janarddana, have my sons been reduced to ashes!' "

Vaishampayana said :—

37. "Having said so, Gandhari, beside herself with grief, dropped down on the Earth. Losing her fortitude, she became overwhelmed with grief.

38. Filled with anger and sorrow at the death of her sons, Gandhari, with agitated heart, attributed every fault to Keshava."

Gandhari said :—

39. "The Pandavas and the Dhartarashtras, O Krishna, have both been consumed. Whilst they were thus being rooted out, O Janarddana, why were you indifferent to them.

40. You could prevent the slaughter, for you have a large following and a vast army. You had eloquence, and you had the power of making peace.

41. Since deliberately, O slayer of Madhu, you were indifferent to this universal destruction, therefore, O mighty-armed one, you should feel the consequences of this act.

42. By the little merit I have acquired by serving dutifully my husband, by that merit so difficult to attain, I shall curse you, O holder of the discus and the mace.

43. Since you were indifferent to the Kurus and the Pandavas whilst they killed each other, therefore, O Govinda, you will be the destroyer of your own kinsmen.

44. On the thirty-sixth year from this, O destroyer of Madhu, you will, after bringing about the death of your kinsmen and friends and sons, perish by disgustful means within the forest.

45. The ladies of your family, deprived of sons, kinsmen, and friends, shall weep and cry even as these ladies of the Bharata family."

Vaishampayana continued :—

46—47. "Hearing these words, the great Krishna, addressing the worshipful Gandhari, said to her these words, smilingly,—'There is none in the world, save myself, who can exterminate the Vrishnis. I know this well. I am trying to bring it about. In imprecating this curse, O you of excellent vows, you have helped me in the accomplishment of that work.

48. The Vrishnis are incapable of being killed by others, whether human beings or gods or Danavas. The Yadavas, therefore, shall be killed by one another.

49. After the Dasharha hero had said so, the Pandavas became stupefied. Stricken, with anxiety, all of them became hopeless of life."

CHAPTER XXVI.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Krishna said :—

1. "Arise, arise, O Gandhari, do not grieve. Through your fault, this huge destruction has taken place.

2. Your son Duryodhana, was wicked, envious, and exceedingly arrogant. Praising his wicked acts, you thought them to be good.

3. Highly ruthless, he was the embodiment of hostilities and disobedient to the commands of the old. Why do you then attribute your own faults to me?

4. Dead or lost, the person who grieves for what has already taken place, and suffers greater grief. By grieving one increases it twofold.

5. A saintly woman bears children for the practice of austerities; the cow brings forth offspring for bearing burden; the mare brings forth her young for acquiring speed of motion; the Shudra woman bears a child for increasing the number of servitors; the Vaishaya woman for increasing the number of keepers of cattle. A princess, however, like you, brings forth sons for being killed."

Vaishampayana said :—

6. "Hearing these words of Vasudeva that were unpleasant to her, Gandhari, with heart stricken greatly with grief, remained silent.

7—8. Restraining the grief that originates from folly, the royal sage Dhritarashtra, enquired of Yudhishthira the just, saying,—'If, O son of Pandu, you know it, tell me the number of those that have been killed in this battle, as also of those that have escaped alive.'

Yudhishthira answered :—

9. 'One billion six hundred and sixty millions and tewenty thousand men have been killed in this battle.

10. The number is twenty-four thousand one hundred and sixty five heroes that have escaped.'

Dhritarashtra said :—

11. 'Tell me, O mighty-armed one, for you know everything, what ends those foremost of men have attained to.'

Yudhishthira said :—

12. 'Those truly powerful warriors that have cheerfully met with death in fierce battle, have all attained to regions like those of Indra.

13. Knowing death to be certain, they that have met it cheerlessly, have attained to the region of the *Gandharvas*.

14. Those warriors that have been killed by weapons, while turning away from the field or begging for quarter, have reached the region of the *Guhyakas*.

15—16. Those great warriors who, observing the duties of Kshatriyas and regarding flight from battle to be disgraceful, have fallen, wounded with keen weapons, while rushing fearlessly against their foes, have all assumed bright forms and reached the regions of Brahman!

17. The remaining warriors, that have anyhow been killed on the field of battle, have attained to the region of the Uttara-Kurus.'

Dhritarashtra said :—

18. 'By what knowledge, O son, you see these things like one crowned with ascetic success? Tell me this, O mighty-armed one, if you think that I can listen to it properly!'

Yudhishthira said .—

19. 'While at your behest I wandered in the forest, I obtained this boon at the time of sojourning to the sacred places!

20. I met with the celestial *Rishi* Lomasha and acquired from him the boon of spiritual vision. Again on another occasion I obtained second sight through the power of knowledge!

Dhritarashtra said :—

21. 'Is it necessary that our people should burn duly the dead bodies of both who have friends and who have not?

22. What shall we do with those that have none to look after them and that have no sacred fires? We have many duties to perform. Who are those whose (funeral) rites we should perform?

23. O Yudhishthira, will they obtain blissful regions by the merit of their deeds, they whose bodies are now being torn and dragged by vultures and other birds?'"

Vaishampayana said :—

24—26. "Thus addressed, Kunti's son the highly wise Yudhishthira commanded Sudharman (the priest of the Kauravas), Dhaumya, Sanjaya of the *Suta* order, Vidura of great wisdom, and Yuyutsu of Kuru's race, and all his servants headed by Indrasena, and all the other *Sutas* that were with him, saying,—' Cause the funeral rites of the killed, numbering by thousands, to be duly performed, so that no body may die for want of men to take care of them!

27—30. Thus commanded by king Yudhishthira the just, Vidura, Sanjaya, Sudharman, Dhaumya and Indrasena and others, procuring sandal and other kinds of wood used on such occasions, as also clarified butter and oil and perfumes and rich silken robes and other kinds of cloth, and large heaps of dry wood, and broken cars and various kinds of weapons, caused funeral pyres to be duly made and lighted and then without delay burnt duly, the dead bodies of [illegible]

31—38. They properly burnt upon those fires burning with libations of clarified butter poured in torrents over them, the bodies of Duryodhana and his hundred brothers, of Shalya, and Shala, and king Bhurishravas; of king Jayadratha and Abhimanyu, O Bharata; of Dusshasana's son and Lakshmana and king Dhrishtaketu; of Vrihanta and Somadatta and the hundreds of Srinjayas; of king Khemadhanwan and Virata and Drupada; of Shikhandin the prince of the Panchalas, and Dhrishtadyumna of Prishata's race; of the valiant Yudhamanyu and Uttamaujas; of the ruler of the Koshalas, the sons of Draupadi, and Shakuni the son of Suvala; of Achala and Vrishaka, and king Bhagadatta; of Karna and his son of great wrath; of those great bowmen, *viz.*, the Kekaya princes, and those mighty car-warriors, *viz.*, the Trigartas; of Ghatotkacha the prince of *Rakshasas*, and the brother of Vaka; of Alamvusha, that best of *Rakshasas*, and king Jalasandha; and of hundreds and thousands of other kings.

39. The Pitri-medha rites in honor of some of the great persons who were dead were performed there, while some sang *Samans*, and some cried for the dead.

40. With the loud sound of *Samans* and *Richs*, and the cries of the women, all creatures became stupefied that night.

41. The funeral fires, smokeless and burning brightly looked like shining planets in the sky enveloped by clouds.

42—43. Those among the dead that had hailed from various kingdoms and had no friends, were collected together in thousands of heaps and, at the command of Yudhishthira, were caused to be burnt by Vidura with the help a large number of persons acting coolly out of good-will and affection, on pyres made of dry wood.

44. Having performed their last rites, the Kuru king Yudhishthira, placing Dhritarashtra at his head, proceeded towards the river Ganga."

CHAPTER XXVII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—3. Arrived at the holy Ganga full of sacred water, containing many lakes, adorned with high banks and broad shores, and having a vast bed, they threw off their ornaments, upper garments, and belts and girdles. The Kuru ladies, crying and

stricken with great sorrow offered oblations of water to their fathers and grandsons and brothers and kinsmen and sons and seniors and husbands. Conversant with duties, they also performed the water-rite for their friends.

4. While those wives of heroes were performing this rite in honour of their heroic husband, the access to the stream became easy, although the paths [carved out by feet] disappeared afterwards.

5. The shores of the river though crowded with those wives of heroes, looked as broad as the ocean and presented a sorrow of sorrow and cheerlessness.

6. Then Kunti, O king, laden with grief, weepingly addressed her sons in these soft words.

7—12. That hero and great bowman, that chief of many car-divisions, that heroic warrior who has been killed by Arjuna in battle, that warrior whom, ye sons of Pandu, you knew as the son of the charioteer Radha, that hero who shone in the midst of his army like the Sun himself, who fought with all of you and your followers, who shone as he commanded the vast army of Duryodhana, who had no equal on Earth in energy, that hero who preferred glory to life, that brave warrior firm in truth and never fatigued with exertion, was your eldest brother! Offer oblations of water to that eldest brother of yours who was born of me by the Sun! That hero was born with a pair of ear-rings and clad in armour, and took after the Sun-God himself in effulgence.

13. Hearing these painful words of their mother, the Pandavas began to grieve for Karna. Indeed, they became more afflicted than ever.

14—16. Then that foremost of men, *viz*, the heroic Yudhisthira, sighing like a snake asked his mother,—'Were you the mother of that Karna who was like a sea having arrows for his billows, his tall standard for his vortex, his own mighty arms for a couple of huge alligators, his large car for his deep lake, and the sound of his palms for his tempestous roar, and whose force none could withstand except Dhananjaya? How was that son, resembling a very god born of you in former days?

17. The power of his arms scorched all of us! How, O mother, could you conceal him like a person concealing a fire within the folds of his cloth?

18. His might of arms was always adored by the Dhartarashtras even as we always worship the might of the wielder of Gandiva.

19. How was that foremost of powerful men, that first of car-warriors, who fought the united force of all the kings in battle, how was he a son of yours?

20. Was that foremost of all holders of weapons our eldest brother? How did you give birth to that child of wonderful prowess?

21. Alas, for your concealing this fact we have been undone! By the death of Karna, ourselves with all our friends have been greatly sorry.

22—23. The grief I feel at Karna's death is a hundred times greater than that felt for the death of Abhimanyu and the sons of Draupadi, and the destruction of the Panchalas and the Kurus! Thinking of Karna, I am burning with grief, like a person thrown into a burning fire.

24. Nothing could have been unattainable by us, not excepting things belonging to the celestial region. Alas, this terrible carnage, so destructive of the Kurus, would not have taken place.

25. Thus bewailing, king Yudhishthira the just uttered loud wails of woe. The powerful king then offered oblations of water to his deceased elder brother.

26. Then all the ladies that crowded the shores of the river suddenly cried aloud.

27. The intelligent king of the Kurus, *viz*, Yudhishthira, had the wives and members of Karna's family brought before him.

28. The righteous-souled king performed, with them, the water-rite in honor of his eldest brother. Having finished the ceremony, the king, with his mind greatly agitated, rose from the waters of Ganga."

FINISH STREE PARVA.

17. The remaining warriors, that have anyhow been killed on the field of battle, have attained to the region of the Uttara-Kurus.'

Dhritarashtra said :—

18. 'By what knowledge, O son, you see these things like one crowned with ascetic success? Tell me this, O mighty-armed one, if you think that I can listen to it properly!'

Yudhishthira said :—

19. 'While at your behest I wandered in the forest, I obtained this boon at the time of sojourning to the sacred places!

20. I met with the celestial *Rishi* Lomasha and acquired from him the boon of spiritual vision. Again on another occasion I obtained second sight through the power of knowledge!

Dhritarashtra said :—

21. 'Is it necessary that our people should burn duly the dead bodies of both who have friends and who have not?

22. What shall we do with those that have none to look after them and that have no sacred fires? We have many duties to perform. Who are those whose (funeral) rites we should perform?

23. O Yudhishthira, will they obtain blissful regions by the merit of their deeds, they whose bodies are now being torn and dragged by vultures and other birds?'"

Vaishampayana said :—

24—26. "Thus addressed, Kunti's son the highly wise Yudhishthira commanded Sudharman (the priest of the Kauravas), Dhaumya, Sanjaya of the *Suta* order, Vidura of great wisdom, and Yuyutsu of Kuru's race, and all his servants headed by Indrasena, and all the other *Sutas* that were with him, saying,—'Cause the funeral rites of the killed, numbering by thousands, to be duly performed, so that no body may die for want of men to take care of them!

27—30. Thus commanded by king Yudhishthira the just, Vidura, Sanjaya, Sudharman, Dhaumya and Indrasena and others, procuring sandal and other kinds of wood used on such occasions, as also clarified butter and oil and perfumes and rich silken robes and other kinds of cloth, and large heaps of dry wood, and broken cars and various kinds of weapons, caused funeral pyres to be duly made and lighted and then without delay burnt duly, the dead bodies of the kings.

31—38. They properly burnt upon those fires burning with libations of clarified butter poured in torrents over them, the bodies of Duryodhana and his hundred brothers, of Shalya, and Shala, and king Bhurishravas; of king Jayadratha and Abhimanyu, O Bharata; of Dusshasana's son and Lakshmana and king Dhrishtaketu; of Vrihanta and Somadatta and the hundreds of Srinjayas; of king Khemadhanwan and Virata and Drupada; of Shikhandin the prince of the Panchalas, and Dhrishtadyumna of Prishata's race; of the valiant Yudhamanyu and Uttamaujas; of the ruler of the Koshalas, the sons of Draupadi, and Shakuni the son of Suvala; of Achala and Vrishaka, and king Bhagadatta; of Karna and his son of great wrath; of those great bowmen, *viz.*, the Kekaya princes, and those mighty car-warriors, *viz.*, the Trigartas; of Ghatotkacha the prince of *Rakshasas*, and the brother of Vaka; of Alamvusha, that best of *Rakshasas*, and king Jalasandha; and of hundreds and thousands of other kings.

39. The Pitri-medha rites in honor of some of the great persons who were dead were performed there, while some sang *Samans*, and some cried for the dead.

40. With the loud sound of *Samans* and *Richs*, and the cries of the women, all creatures became stupefied that night.

41. The funeral fires, smokeless and burning brightly looked like shining planets in the sky enveloped by clouds.

42—43. Those among the dead that had hailed from various kingdoms and had no friends, were collected together in thousands of heaps and, at the command of Yudhishthira, were caused to be burnt by Vidura with the help a large number of persons acting coolly out of good-will and affection, on pyres made of dry wood.

44. Having performed their last rites, the Kuru king Yudhishthira, placing Dhritarashtra at his head, proceeded towards the river Ganga."

CHAPTER XXVII.

(JALAPRADANIKA PARVA).—*Contd.*

Vaishampayana said :—

1—3. Arrived at the holy Ganga full of sacred water, containing many lakes, adorned with high banks and broad shores, and having a vast bed, they threw off their ornaments, upper garments, and belts and girdles. The Kuru ladies, crying and

stricken with great sorrow offered oblations of water to their fathers and grandsons and brothers and kinsmen and sons and seniors and husbands. Conversant with duties, they also performed the water-rite for their friends.

4. While those wives of heroes were performing this rite in honour of their heroic husband, the access to the stream became easy, although the paths [carved out by feet] disappeared afterwards.

5. The shores of the river though crowded with those wives of heroes, looked as broad as the ocean and presented a sorrow of sorrow and cheerlessness.

6. Then Kunti, O king, laden with grief, weepingly addressed her sons in these soft words.

7—12. That hero and great bowman, that chief of many car-divisions, that heroic warrior who has been killed by Arjuna in battle, that warrior whom, ye sons of Pandu, you knew as the son of the charioteer Radha, that hero who shone in the midst of his army like the Sun himself, who fought with all of you and your followers, who shone as he commanded the vast army of Duryodhana, who had no equal on Earth in energy, that hero who preferred glory to life, that brave warrior firm in truth and never fatigued with exertion, was your eldest brother! Offer oblations of water to that eldest brother of yours who was born of me by the Sun! That hero was born with a pair of ear-rings and clad in armour, and took after the Sun-God himself in effulgence.

13. Hearing these painful words of their mother, the Pandavas began to grieve for Karna. Indeed, they became more afflicted than ever.

14—16. Then that foremost of men, *viz*, the heroic Yudhisthira, sighing like a snake asked his mother,—'Were you the mother of that Karna who was like a sea having arrows for his billows, his tall standard for his vortex, his own mighty arms for a couple of huge alligators, his large car for his deep lake, and the sound of his palms for his tempestous roar, and whose force none could withstand except Dhananjaya? How was that son, resembling a very go born of you in former days?

17. The power of his arms scorched all of us! How, O mother, could you conceal him like a person concealing a fire within the folds of his cloth?

18. His might of arms was always adored by the Dhartarashtras even as we always worship the might of the wielder of Gandiva.

19. How was that foremost of powerful men, that first of car-warriors, who fought the united force of all the kings in battle, how was he a son of yours?

20. Was that foremost of all holders of weapons our eldest brother? How did you give birth to that child of wonderful prowess?

21. Alas, for your concealing this fact we have been undone! By the death of Karna, ourselves with all our friends have been greatly sorry.

22—23. The grief I feel at Karna's death is a hundred times greater than that felt for the death of Abhimanyu and the sons of Draupadi, and the destruction of the Panchalas and the Kurus! Thinking of Karna, I am burning with grief, like a person thrown into a burning fire.

24. Nothing could have been unattainable by us, not excepting things belonging to the celestial region. Alas, this terrible carnage, so destructive of the Kurus, would not have taken place.

25. Thus bewailing, king Yudhishthira the just uttered loud wails of woe. The powerful king then offered oblations of water to his deceased elder brother.

26. Then all the ladies that crowded the shores of the river suddenly cried aloud.

27. The intelligent king of the Kurus, *viz*, Yudhishthira, had the wives and members of Karna's family brought before him.

28. The righteous-souled king performed, with them, the water-rite in honor of his eldest brother. Having finished the ceremony, the king, with his mind greatly agitated, rose from the waters of Ganga."



...adanirama ya, Krishna, ...hini, Bramhini, Moha-...hitropala, Chitraratha, ... Mandakini, Vaitarini, ...Suktimati, Ananga, Push-...vati, Lohitya, Karatoya ...Kumari, Rishikullya, Marisha, ...and Mondakini, Supanya, ... O descendant of Bharata, all ...he mother of the universe and ...e great merit.

... these rivers, there are hundreds ...usands of rivers that have no ... O king, I have mentioned to ... the rivers that I remember

...-66. Hear now the names of various ...tries. They are the Kuru-Panchala, the ...vas, the Madreyas, the Jungalas, the ...rasenas, the Kalingas, the Vadas, the ...alas, the Matsyas, the Sakutyas, the ...avualyas, the Kuntalas, the Kasi Kosalas, ... Chedis, the Kurusas, the Bhojas, the ...hus, the Pulindakas, the Uttamas, the ...nas, the Makhalas, the Utkalas, the

Karishakas, ... the Vatyanas, the Ro... the Kachas, the Gopalaka... varnakas the Kiratas, the Vadras ... Seddhas, the Vaidehas, the Tarmaleptas, the Audras, the Paundras, the Saisikatas, and the Parvatyas. O best of the Bharata race, there are other kingdoms, such as, the Dravidas, the Keralas, the Prachyas the Mushikas, the Vanavashikas, the Karna-takas, the Mahisakas, the Vikalpas, the Mushakas, the Jhellakas, the Kuntalas the Souhridas, the Nalakananas, the Kankdutakas, the cholas, the Malavavakas, the Samangas, the Kanakas, the Kukkuras the Angaramurishas, the Mareshas, the Dhwajinas. the utsavas, the Sanketas, the Trigartas, the Salwasenis, the Vahas, the Kokarakas, the Pasetris, the Lahmavega-vasas, the Vindyachulakas, the Pulindas, the Valkalas, the Malavas, the Vallavas, the further Vallavas, the Kulindas, the Kalavas, the Kuntakas, the Karatas, the Mrishakas, the Tanavalas, the Saniyas, the Rishikas, the Vidarvas, the Kakas, the

...4. Destroyin... days that slayer of heroes, having ...hieved most difficult feats, has now set ... the sun.

...5—16. As the result of my evil counsels, ...t scion of the Bharata race, scattering ... Indra himself an inexhaustible shower ...rrows, killed in battle one hundred milli-...of warriors in ten days. He now lies on ... bare ground though he deserved it not ...he field of battle deprived of life like a ...t tree uprooted by the wind.

...7. Seeing the son of Shantanu, Bhishma ...arful prowess, how could the army of ... Panchalas strike him down ?

...8. How did the Pandavas fight with ...ishma ? O Sanjaya, how is it that Bhisma ...uld not conquer when Drona is still alive.

...19. When Kripa was near him, when ...rona was there, how could Bhisma that ...emost of warriors be killed ?

...20. How could Bhisma, who was an ...*iratha* and who could not be resisted even ... the celestials be killed in battle by the ...anchala Prince Shikhandin ?

... opposed, as the shore ... that chastiser of foes, who was ... ocean of arrows and weapons, an ocean ... which arrows were the terrible crocodiles, bows were the waves, maces and swords were the sharks, steeds and elephants were the eddies, the foot soliders were like so many thousands fishes, and the sounds of conchs and drums its roars,—an inexhausti-ble and agitated ocean without an island and without a raft to cross it, an ocean that swallowed up horses and elephants and foot soldiers by millions,—an ocean that drowned all hostile heroes, and that con-sumed in wrath,—the wrath which was its ocean fire ?

33. Who were in his front when that chastiser of foes Bhisma achieved great feats in battle for the good of Duryodhana ?

34. Who were they that protected the right of that immeasurably powerful warrior ? Who were they that resisted the enemy's warriors from his rear with patience and energy ?

Kas... that... the...

P... k...

h... C... io...

bit... In... cal...

...g...

...j...

o... p... n... h...

C...

w... S... th...

J...

...espec... stand ... silence...

22. riding ... self in ... vas, ca... sions.

23. ... jayas c... car-warr... and of g... in to ma...

24. ...

...re ...the ...outh. ...aga ...two ...re. ...a, ...e ...it

...fifteenth chapter, the ...en Duryodhana and Dusha-*sana in the Bhagavatat Gita of the Bhisma Parva.*

CHAPTER XVI

(BHAGAVATGITA PARVA)—

Continued.

Sanjaya said :—

1. When the night passed away loud was the noise made by the kings by their all shouting "Array, array".

2—3. O descendant of Bharata, the blowings of conchs, the sounds of drums, the neighing of horses, the clatter of car-wheels, the roarings of rushing elephants, and the shouts of heroes, clapping of arm-pits and the cries of the warriors made everywhere a tremendous noise.

4. O king, rising at sunrise, the large armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas made all their arrangements complete.

5—6. When the sun rose, the fearful weapons of offence and deffence and the armours of your sons and those of the sons of Pandu became fully visible.

Kekaya brothers, the ruler of ... Sudhakdhina, Srutayudha, the ruler ... Kalingas, king Yayatsena, Vrihadvala, th... ruler of Koshala and Kritavarman of th... Satwata race,—these ten foremost of me... possessing great bravery and arms lik... maces,—these (ten) performers of sacrific... with large Dhakshinas stood each at th... head of one Akshauhini soldiers.

18—20. These and many other kings a... princes all great car-warriors, skilful ... policy, obedient to the commands of Duryo... dhana, clad in armour, cased in black dee... skins, endued with great strength, accom... plished in war, ready for Duryodhana's sak... to go to the abode of Brahma, stood there... the head of ten Akshauhinis of soldiers.

21. The eleventh great division of ... Kuru army stood in advance (of all other... at the head of these troops stood the son ... Shantanu Bhishma.

22. O king, with his white head dress... with his white umbrella, and with his white... armour, we saw greatly powerful Bhisma... look like the rising moon.

24. The great bowmen amongst the Srinjayas, Dhristadumna and others looked like so many little animals when they see before them a great yawning lion.

..., the descrip- ... the Yamvukhanda ... Bhisma Parva.

CHAPTER X.

(JAMVUKHANDA VINIRMANA PARVA)—*Continued.*

Dhritarashtra said :—

1—2. O Sanjaya, O Suta, tell me in detail the length of life, the strength, the good and bad things, the past, present and future of the dwellers of the Bharata Varsa and of the Haimavat Varsa and also of Harivarsa.

Sanjaya said :—

3. O best of the Bharata race, there are four Yugas in Bharatavarsa, namely Krita, Treta, Dwapara and Kali.

14. O king, the men ... Yuga possess little energ... highly wrathful, covetous a...

15. Jealousy, pride, ang... malice, covetousness, O desce... rata, are the characteristics o... Kali age.

16. O king, O ruler of men, ... of the Dwapara Yuga that still ... very small. The Varsa called ... is superior to Harivarsa in all attri...

Thus ends the tenth chapter, the desc... of the duration of life in Bharatava... the Jamvukhanda Vinirmana of the Bh... Parva.

... warrior, that great ... that wise and virtuous man ... the duties of his order and learned in all the Vedas and their branches, the hero in whose birth Shantanu was freed from all grief, melancholy and sorrow, has been killed?

45. Skilled in every weapon, possessing himself gentleness, and great energy with passions under complete control, hearing that such son of Shantanu (Bhisma) is killed, I consider the rest of my army as already slain.

46. In my opinion, impiety has now become stronger than piety, for the Pandavas desire sovereignty even killing their venerable Guru.

47. In the days of yore, Rama, the son of Jamadagni, skilled in every weapon and whom none excelled, was vanquished by Bhisma in battle when fighting on behalf of Amva.

48. You tell me that Bhisma who is the foremost of all warriors and who is equal

... are bewail... ... of Bhisma. Sanjaya, my heart is surely made of stone...

58. For it does not burst even ... hearing the death of Bhisma that foremos... all men, in whom were intelligence a... policy and skill in arms.

59. How has that invincible warr... been killed in battle? Neither by weapo... nor by courage, nor by ascetic merit, ... by intelligence,

60. Nor by firmness, nor by gift, ... a man free himself from death. The gre... powerful Time cannot be transgressed ... any thing in the world,

61—65. When, O Sanjaya, as you ... me the son of Shantanu Bhisma is de... Burning with grief for my sons, nay ov... whelmed with great sorrow I hoped f... relief from the son of Shantanu, Bhisma. Sanjaya, when he saw Shantanu's son lyi... dead on the ground like a sun (dropp... from the sky) whom did Duryodhana ma... his refuge? O Sanjaya, reflecting (all ... can) with the help of my understanding, ... do not see what the end will be of all thos...

...rata ...ough ...und ...he ...ta

...vinsati ... horses, ... troops

...te that ...dversary ...he felled ...vinsati.

...elephant ... puissant ...ed down ...d been

...on ...is ...t

... of ... sun

... 1 ... high ... Yo

... b ... si

..., in which the balls have been made by the men, elephants and horses, in which arrows and javelins and swords and darts have formed the dice, who were those clutched gamblers that gamble, by taking their very lives who won, who lost, who cast the dice with success and who else have been killed besides the son of Shantanu, Bhisma. Tell me all, O Sanjaya, for hearing that Devavrata (of his men) that father of mine, that hero of fearful deeds, that ornament of battle, Bhisma is killed, peace cannot come to me. Thinking that all my sons would be killed, I am affected with the greatest anguish.

75—76. O Sanjaya, you make my that grief blaze forth as fire with *Ghee*. Seeing Bhisma, celebrated in all the worlds, who undertook a great task, killed, I am sure, my sons are lamenting. I desire to hear their sorrows that have been produced by Duryodhana's act.

77. Therefore, O Sanjaya, tell me all that had happened in the battle, the result of my wicked son's folly.

78—79. O Sanjaya, ill or well, tell me every thing. Tell me all in full and in detail,—all that was achieved in the battle by Bhisma ever desirous of victory,—by that great warrior skilled in all weapons. How did the battle take place between the

of horses and elephants ... powerful kings, all that which ... by the help of Yoga power. Do not grieve. All this was pre-ordained.

7—10. Bowing down my head to your father (Vyasa) that wise son of Parasara, through whose grace I have acquired excellent and celestial vision, the power of seeing and hearing from a great distance, and knowing other peoples' hearts and also the past and the future,—the delightful power of going through the sky, also the knowledge of all the persons that violate the ordinances and also the power of not being cut by weapons in battle, I shall narrate to you the romantic and the highly wonderful and hair-stirring battle that was fought amongst the Bharatas,—now listen to me.

11. When the troops were arrayed according to the rule, when they were all ready for battle, O king, Duryodhana thus spoke to Dushasana.

12. "O Dushasana, let cars be immediately ordered for the protection of Bhisma. Speedily urge all our troops to advance.

13. What I have been thinking for many years has now come to me;—namely the meeting of the Pandavas and the Kurus at the head of their respective armies.